

# TEXT CUT BOOK

Text problem in the  
book

THE TEXT IS  
LIGHT IN  
THE BOOK







CLASS 031

ACC 6744

PRESENTED BY

Mrs. Leo Schwabscher



PROPERTY OF UNIVERSITY  
OF WASHINGTON LIBRARIES  
GRADUATE READING ROOM  
NON-CIRCULATING





# ENCYCLOPÆDIA BRITANNICA

NINTH EDITION



THE  
ENCYCLOPÆDIA BRITANNICA

A  
DICTIONARY

OF  
ARTS, SCIENCES, AND GENERAL LITERATURE

NINTH EDITION

VOLUME XI

NEW YORK. CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS

MDCCCLXXX

[*All Rights reserved*]



COPYRIGHT,  
1880,  
By CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS

*The following Articles in this volume are copyrighted in the United States of America, viz. —*

HORACE GRELLIV Copyright, 1879, by CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS  
ALLYANDER HAMILTON Copyright, 1880, by GEORGE SHUA  
NATHANIEL HAWTHORNE Copyright, 1879, by RICHARD HENRY STODOLAND  
HAYTI With Map Copyright, 1880, by JOHN D. CHAMPLIN, JUN

*The Article HILAT is entered according to Act of Parliament of Canada, in the year 1880, by WILLIAM THOMSON, Knt  
Glasgow, Scotland, in the office of the Minister of Agriculture. Permission is granted to A. & C. Black, Edinburgh  
to print the article in this volume*

# ENCYCLOPÆDIA BRITANNICA.

## G O U — G O U

**G O U D A**, or **Ten Gouwe**, a town of the Netherlands in the province of South Holland, at the confluence of the Gouwe with the Yssel, 12 miles N E of Rotterdam, at the junction of the railway from that city with the line between the Hague and Utrecht. The town is for the most part laid out in an open and lightsome manner, and like the other towns of Holland is intersected by numerous canals. Portions of the old fortifications are changed into promenades, and the suburban quarters, *Fluwaldeensingel*, *Beekersingel*, *Kittensingel*, and *Tuissingel*, are adorned with fine trees. The *Groote Markt* is the largest market square in Holland. Among the churches—five of which are Protestant, two Roman Catholic, and one Old Catholic—the first place belongs to the church of St John (*Janskerk*), a building of the 16th century, which replaced an earlier structure of the 15th, and which is not only remarkable for its dimensions, 345 feet in length and 150 feet broad, but possesses a celebrated organ, and a series of splendid painted windows, several of which are the workmanship of *Duk and Wouta Kraheth* (1555–1603). (Compare *Description of the Famous and Renowned Glass Work, &c.*, Gouda, 1876, reprinted from an older volume, 1718.) Of the other public buildings it is sufficient to mention the town-house, with a fine Gothic facade, founded in 1449, but rebuilt in 1890, the weigh-house, the house of correction for women, the gymnasium, St Catherine's hospital, and the music hall. A public library containing many rare and valuable works is kept in St John's church, and a municipal museum of antiquities was opened in 1874. In the time of the counts the wealth of Gouda was mainly derived from brewing and cloth weaving: about 1510, for example, the breweries numbered 168, and upwards of 1000 pieces of cloth were made in the course of the year, but at a later date the making of tobacco pipes became the staple trade, and in the middle of the 18th century gave employment to 3000 men. Though this industry has in turn declined, Gouda still possesses large pipe works and potteries, and among its other establishments are a celebrated manufactory of stearine candles, a yarn factory, an oil refinery, and cigar factories. It has also a good transit and shipping trade, and its market for cheese has made its name widely known throughout Europe. The population of the commune was, in 1795, 11,716, in 1830, 14,878, in 1860, 13,788, in

1860, 14,843, and in 1870, after a slight addition of area, 16,333. At the last date the town proper numbered 15,174 inhabitants. The greater proportion belong to the Dutch Reformed Church, but nearly 6000 are Roman Catholics. Gouda received its constitution as a town from Count Floris V in 1272. In 1332 it had only 820 houses, but it rapidly increased, and in the 14th century it was the fifth in size of the towns of Holland. The rise of Amsterdam made it only the sixth, but it retained this position till the revolution of 1795. The principal facts in its history are the attack by the people of Utrecht in 1488, the repulse of the Spaniards in 1574, the destruction of the castle of the lords of Gouda in 1577, the voluntary flooding of the surrounding country as a defence against the French in 1672, the great inundation of November 1775, and the riots of 1787.

**GOUDIMEL, CLAUDE**, composer of the 16th century, must be named amongst the founders of modern music. The French and the Belgians claim him as their countryman, and the place of his birth is not sufficiently established. In all probability, however, he was born at Vaison near Avignon, about the year 1510. As to his early education we know little or nothing, but the excellent Latin in which some of his letters was written proves that, in addition to his musical knowledge, he also acquired a good classical training. In 1540 we find him established in Rome at the head of a music-school, and here, amongst many other celebrated musicians, Palestrina, the greatest master of the early Italian school, and one of the greatest masters of all schools, was amongst his pupils. About the middle of the century he seems to have left Rome for Paris, where, in conjunction with Jean Duchesmin, he published, in 1555, a setting of Horace's *Odes*, entitled, *Horati Flacci oda omnes quatuor carminum generibus differunt ad rhythmos muscos educta*. Infinitely more important is another collection of vocal pieces, a setting of the celebrated French version of the Psalms by Marot and Beza (*Les Psaumes de David, mis en rime Françoise par Clement Marot et Théodore de Bèze, mis en musique par Claude Goudimel*), published in 1555. It is written in four parts, the melody being assigned to the tenor. Some of the tunes were probably of popular origin, and they are still used by the French Protestant Church. Others were adopted by the German

Lutherans, a German imitation of the French versions of the Psalms in the same metres having been published at an early date. There is little doubt that at the time of the last named composition, Gondinal had embraced the new faith, although the French version of the Psalms was at first used by Catholics as well as Protestants. Seven years later he fell a victim to religious fanaticism during the St Bartholomew massacres at Lyons (24th August 1572), his death, it is stated, being due to "les ennemis de la gloire de Dieu et quelques méchants envieux de l'honneur qu'il avait acquis". In addition to the collections already named, many of his works are preserved. Masses and motets belonging to his Roman period are found in the Vatican library, and in the archives of various churches in Rome, others were published. Thus the work entitled *Missa tria a Claudio Gondinali presantissimo nostro cardine, nunc piamus in lucem edita*, contains one mass by the Jeanne! editor himself, the other two being by Claudius Semivay and Jean Maillud respectively. Another collection, *La fleur des chansons des deux plus excellents musiciens de notre temps*, consists of part songs by Gondinal and Orlando di Lasso. Ruency gives a motet of Gondinal's, *Domine quid multiplicasti viam*, in his history.

GOUGH, HUGH GOUGH, VISCOUNT (1770-1860), British field-marshal, was of Irish origin, and was a descendant of Francis Gough, who was made bishop of Limerick in 1628. He was born at Woodstown, Limerick, November 3, 1770. After holding for a short time a commission in his father's regiment of militia, he was transferred to the line as ensign in August 1794, and was very soon after promoted lieutenant. In the following year he served with the 78th Highlanders at the Cape of Good Hope, taking part in the capture of Cape Town and of the Dutch fleet in Saldanha Bay. His next service was in the West Indies, where, with the 87th (Royal Irish Fusiliers), he shared in the attack on Porto Rico, the capture of San Juan, and the capture of St Lucia. In 1809 he was called to take part in the Peninsular War, and, joining the army under Wellington, commanded his regiment as major in the operations before Oporto, by which the town was taken from the French. At Talavera he was severely wounded, and had his horse shot under him. For his conduct on this occasion he was afterwards promoted lieutenant colonel, his commission, on the recommendation of Wellington, being antedated from the day of the duke's despatch. He was thus, as pointed out in *Lord's Army List*, the first officer who ever received brevet rank for services performed in the field at the head of a regiment. He was next engaged at the battle of Bayona, in which his regiment captured a French eagle. As the defence of Tarifa the post of danger was assigned to him, and he compelled the enemy to raise the siege. At Vittoria, where Gough again distinguished himself, his regiment captured the baton of Marshal Jourdan. He was again severely wounded at Nivelle, and was soon after created a knight of St Charles by the king of Spain. In recognition of his services the citizens of Dublin presented him with the freedom of the city and with a costly sword. At the close of the war he returned home and enjoyed a respite of some years from active service. He next took command of a regiment stationed in the south of Ireland, discharging at the same time the duties of a magistrate during a period of agitation. Gough did not attain the rank of general officer till 1830, when he was promoted major-general. Seven years later a new epoch opened for him, as he was sent to India to take command of the Mysore division of the army. But not long after his arrival in India, the difficulties which had arisen between the Chinese and British Governments, and which led to the first Chinese war, made the presence of an energetic general

on the scene indispensable, and Gough was appointed commander in chief of the British forces in China. His post he held during all the operations of the war, and by his great achievements and numerous victories in the face of immense difficulties, he at length enabled the British plenipotentiary, Sir Elphinstone, to dictate peace on his own terms, and on terms of perfect equality with the emperor. After the conclusion of the treaty of Nanking in August 1842 the British forces were withdrawn, and before the close of the year Gough was created a baronet, and was invested with the grand cross of the Bath. He did not leave the thanks of both Houses of Parliament. As commander in India, he was appointed (August 1841) commander in chief of the British forces in India. In December 1841 he took the command in person against the Mahrattas, and defeated them at Mahadappa, capturing more than 100 guns. He defeated them again at Punner and was then concluded at Asind. In 1842 occurred the rupture with the Sikhs, who fired the battle in force numbers, and Sir Hugh Gough conducted the operations against them. In this campaign he was well supported by Lord Hardinge, the governor-general who had been his comrade in the Peninsula, and now advised him to serve under him. The Sikhs were defeated in three great battles in rapid succession at Moodkee, Ferozshah, and Chillianwallah, and submitted to the peace of Lahore. The services of Sir Hugh Gough in the campaign were rewarded by a vote of thanks from both Houses of Parliament, and by his elevation to the peerage of the United Kingdom as Baron Gough (April 1846). He was broke out again in 1848, and again Lord Gough took the field. With unaltered energy he defeated the Mahrattas at Rannagay, and at Chillianwallah, and finally by his great power by his decisive victory at Cawnpore in 1849. He was now succeeded as commander in chief of the British forces in India by Lord Hardinge, and, returning to England, was created a viscount, and, for the third time received the thanks of both Houses of Parliament. A year later he was again called to command in person, and was again appointed commander in chief of the British forces in India. In 1851 he was appointed commander in chief of the British forces in India, and two years later he was created a duke, and invested Marshal of the Empire, and other titles, with the rank of the Bath. Honours were multiplied upon him, and in his later years he was made a knight of the Garter, being the first knight of the order who had not been in Irish service, was sworn a privy councillor, was made a knight grand commander of the Order of the Bath in November 1862, was made first marshall, and was twice married, and left children by both his wives. He died at his seat near Dublin, March 2, 1860.

GOUGH, HENRY (1735-1809), an English antiquary, was the son of a wealthy East India director, and was born in London, October 1, 1737. He received his early education privately, and his literary talent developed with such precocity that at the age of twelve and a half years, he had completed the translation of a history of the Bible from the French, which his mother printed for private circulation, at the age of fifteen he wrote a translation of Herodotus's work on the customs of the Bactrians, and at sixteen he had published an elaborate work entitled *Letter to the reader, or Geography made useful*. In 1752 he entered Benet College, Cambridge, where his taste for antiquarian research received additional impulse, and which he commenced his work on British topography, which was published in 1768. After leaving Cambridge in 1759, he began a series of antiquarian excavations in various parts of Great Britain, the fruit of which was seen in the volumes which he subsequently published. In 1773 he began to prepare an edition in English of Camden's *Britannia*, but

the work did not appear till 1789. Meantime he published, in 1786, the first volume of his splendid work, the *Septième et huitième volumes de l'Encyclopédie*, applied to illustrate the history of families, manners, habits, and arts at the different periods from the Norman Conquest to the Seventeenth Century. This volume, which contained the first four centuries, was followed in 1796 by a second volume containing the 16th century, and an introduction to the second volume appeared in 1799. Gough was chosen a fellow of the Society of Antiquaries of London in 1767, and from 1771 to 1791 he was its director. He was elected F.R.S. in 1775. He died at his residence at Enfield, 30th February 1807. His books and manuscripts relating to Anglo-Saxon and northern literature, all his collections in the department of British topography, and a large number of his drawings and engravings of other archaeological remains, were bequeathed to the university of Oxford.

Among the minor works of Gough are *An Account of the British Museum* (in MS.), *A Catalogue of the Court of Chivalry, King of the North*, 1777, *History of the City of Dover*, 1801, *A Short and Concise History of the City of London*, 1801, and *History of the Society of Antiquaries of London*, printed in their *Archæologia*. He also published several new editions of antiquarian works by other authors.

(GOUJBI, CLAUDE PHILIPPE (1697–1767), a French abbé and literateur, was born at Paris, 19th October 1697. He studied at the college of the Jesuits, and at the Collège Mazarin, but he nevertheless became a strong Jansenist. In 1703 he assumed the ecclesiastical habit, in 1719 entered the order of Oratorians, and soon afterwards was named canon of St Jacques l'Hopital. On account of his extreme Jansenist opinions he suffered considerable persecution from the Jesuits, and several of his works were suppressed at their instigation. In his latter years his health began to fail, and he took his country, where he received a little remuneration for his writings, he came also to be in circumstances of great poverty, and was compelled to sell his library, a sacrifice which hastened his death, which took place at Paris, 1st February 1767.

He is the author of a large number of works, of which the principal are—*Supplément au Dictionnaire de Morale*, Paris, 1737, and a *Supplément à l'Encyclopédie*, a subsequent edition of the work, *Édition de son ouvrage sur l'histoire littéraire de la France*, 18 vols., Paris, 1710–1739, *Les Arts, Sciences*, 7 vols., 1730, *Mémoires historiques et littéraires sur le Collège royal de France*, 3 vols., Paris, 1758, *Historie des Éruditions*, Paris, 1752, and an edition of the *Pléiade* series, of which he has also written an abridgement. See *Manuscrits* and *Art de l'Écriture*, 1767.

(GOUJON, JEAN, was the most distinguished sculptor produced by France during the 16th century. Although some evidence has been offered in favour of the date 1520 (*Archives de l'Art Français*, vol. iii. p. 350), the time and place of his birth are still uncertain. The first mention of his name occurs in the accounts of the church of St. Martin at Rouen in the year 1510, and in the following year he was employed at the cathedral of the same town, where he added to the tomb of Cardinal d'Amboise a statue of his nephew Georges, afterwards removed. The tomb of Louis de Brezé, executed some time after 1516, has also been attributed to Goujon, but there is no evidence in point, not even any tradition, of the fact. On leaving Rouen, Goujon was employed by Pierre Leécot, the celebrated architect of the Louvre, on the restorations of St. Germain l'Auxerrois, the building accounts—some of which for the years 1512–44 were discovered by M. de Laborde on a piece of parchment binding—specify as his work, not only the carvings of the pulpit (Louvre), but also a *Noire Dame de Pitié*, now lost. In 1520 he appeared Martin's French translation of Vitruvius, the illustrations of which were done, the translator tells us in his "Dedication to the King," to Goujon, "mesures architectes du Monseigneur le Comte de la Rochelle, et maintenant un des vôtres." We learn from this statement, not only that Goujon had been taken into the royal service on the acces-

sion of Henry II., but also that he had been previously employed under Daillan on the chateau of Blois. At the Louvre, Goujon, under the direction of Lescoq, executed the carvings of the south west angle of the court, the reliefs of the Escalier Henri II., and the Tribune des Châteliers. About a year before the execution of the Châteliers, for which Goujon received 737 livres on September 5, 1550, he produced, according to unbroken tradition, the reliefs of the Fontaine des Innocents (Louvre, and *in situ*), after which he is supposed to have been occupied in work destined for the decoration of the chateau of Anet, then building for Diane of Poitiers. Unfortunately the building accounts of Anet have disappeared, but tradition not only ascribes to Goujon the *chef d'œuvre* of French sculpture, the Diane Chasseresse now in the Louvre, but asserts that he also executed a vast number of other works of equal importance, destroyed or lost since 1792. In 1555 his name appears again in the Louvre accounts, and continues to do so every succeeding year up to 1561, when all trace of him is lost. In the course of this year an attempt was made to turn out of the royal employment all those who were suspected of Huguenot tendencies. Goujon has always been claimed as a Huguenot, it is consequently possible that he was one of the victims of this attack. We should therefore probably ascribe the work attributed to him in the Hotel Clugny (in *statu*), together with much else executed in various parts of Paris—but now dispersed or destroyed—to a period intervening between the date of his dismissal from the Louvre and his death (of which there is no evidence), which is said to have taken place during the St. Bartholomew massacre in 1572. Goujon's work is remarkable—as may be observed in the sculpture of the Louvre—for its perfect harmony with the architectural lines which it was intended to enrich or accompany, and is distinguished in a supreme degree by that elegance which was the leading characteristic of the school of which he was the chief representative. His treatment of the nude (Diane Chasseresse), both in style of line and choice of forms, attains a degree of accomplished perfection which, in its complete fulfilment of the proposed—though very different—ideal, comes nearer to the character of tranquil achievement, which marks all classic art, than any other work of modern times.

Engravings after Goujon will be found in Cagnani's *Storia della Scultura*, and in M. de Clugny's *Ateliers du Louvre*. M. Beiry has given a brief notice of his life and work in *Les Arts et les Lettres de la Renaissance*, and a fuller account will be found in his Pittman's *Renaissance of Art in France*.

(GOULD, AUGUSTUS ANDERSON (1805–1866), American conchologist, was born at New Ipswich, New Hampshire, April 23, 1805, graduated at Harvard College in 1823, and took his degree of doctor of medicine in 1830. Thrown from boyhood on his own exertions, it was only by industry, perseverance, and self-denial that he obtained the means to pursue his earlier and later studies. Establishing himself in Boston, he devoted himself to the practice of medicine, and finally rose to high professional rank and social position. He became president of the Massachusetts Medical Society, and was employed as authority in editing the vital statistics of the state. As a conchologist his reputation is world-wide. With Say, Conrad, Adams, Anthony, Ten, Binney, and others, he was a pioneer of the science in America. His writings fill many pages of the publications of the Boston Society of Natural History (see vol. xi. p. 197 for a list) and other periodicals. He published with Agassiz the *Principles of Zoology*, he edited the *Terrrestrial Air-breathing Animals of Binney*, he translated Lamarck's *Genes of Shells*. The two most important monuments to his scientific work, however, are *The Mollusks and Shells of the United States exploring expedition under Commodore Wilkes*, published by the Government,

and the *Report on the Invertebrata* published by order of the legislature of Massachusetts in 1834. A second edition of the latter work was authorized in 1865, and published in 1870 after the author's death, which took place at Boston, September 18, 1866. Gould was an active member of the Boston Society of Natural History, and a corresponding member of all the prominent American scientific societies, and many of those of Europe, including the English Royal Society.

#### GOUR. Sea GOUR.

GOURD, a name given to various plants of the order Cucurbitaceae, but more strictly applied to those belonging to the genus *Cucurbita*, monoecious climbing herbs of annual duration, with long succulent stems furnished with tendrils, and large, rough, palmately lobed leaves; the flowers, self-colored with veins, are generally large and of a bright yellow or orange colour, the barren ones with the stamens united, the pistil is followed by the large, succulent fruit that gives the gourds their chief economic value. Many varieties of *Cucurbita* are under cultivation in tropical and temperate climates, especially in southern Asia, but it is extremely difficult to refer them to definite specific groups, on account of the facility with which they hybridize, while it is very doubtful whether any of the original forms now exist in the wild state. M. Naubing, who made a careful and interesting series of observations upon this genus, came to the conclusion that all varieties known in European gardens might be referred to six original species, probably three, or at most four, have furnished the edible kinds in ordinary cultivation, and, as all these appear occasionally to hybridize, their limits must be regarded as very uncertain. Adopting the specific names usually given to the more familiar forms, the most important of the gourds, from an economic point of view, is perhaps *C. maxima*, the *Polemon* of the French, the red and yellow gourd of British gardeners, the sphenolateral fruit of which is remarkable for its enormous size, the colour of the somewhat rough rind varies from white to bright yellow, while in some kinds it remains green, the fleshy interior is of a deep yellow or orange tint. This valuable gourd is grown extensively in southern Asia and Europe. In Turkey and Asia Minor it yields, at some periods of the year, an important article of diet to the people; immense quantities are sold in the markets of Constantinople, where in the winter the heaps of one variety with a white rind are described by Wallis as resembling mounds of snowballs. The yellow kind attains occasionally a weight of upwards of 210 lb. It grows well in central Europe and the United States, while in the south of England it will produce its gigantic fruit in perfection in hot summers. The yellow flesh of this gourd and its numerous varieties yields a considerable amount of nutriment, and is the more valuable as the fruit can be kept, even in warm climates, for a long time. In France and in the East it is much used in soups and ragouts, while simply boiled it forms a substitute for other table vegetables, the taste has been compared to that of a young carrot. In some countries the larger kinds are employed as cattle food. The seeds yield by expression a large quantity of a bland oil, which is used for the same purposes as that of the poppy and olive. The "mammoth" gourds of English and American gardeners appear to belong to this species, or to hybrids between it and another valuable member of the genus, the pumpkin, *C. Pepo*, well known in English cottage gardens, and largely cultivated in continental Europe and North America. The pumpkin varies much in form, being sometimes nearly globular, but more generally oblong or ovoid in shape, the rind is smooth, and very variable in colour. This gourd is a useful plant to the American backwoods farmer, yielding, both in the ripe and unripe condition, a valuable fodder for his cattle and pigs, being fre-

quently planted at intervals among the maize that takes his chief crop. The larger kinds acquire a weight from 40 to 80 lb, but smaller varieties are in many cases for garden culture. When ripe, the pumpkin can be baked, or made into various kinds of pie, alone or with other fruit, while small and green it may be like the vegetable marrow. Some of the varieties *maxima* and *Pepo* contain a considerable quantity of seed amounting in the sweetest kinds to 1 or 2 percent of the hot plant, of Hungary cloths have been made of seed of them as a commercial source of oil. The shoots of both these large gourds may be eaten to the advantage of being eaten as a green vegetable, when young. The vegetable marrow, *C. cotinifolia*, is a small but delicate variety of *C. Pepo*, is much esteemed in England for its delicate flavour of its fruit, which is at its best in an immature state, as a pleasant summer vegetable. A number of varieties are in cultivation, the fruit is pear-shaped kinds grow to a foot or more in length, some are comparatively small. The marrow can be stored in any warm and open situation, in a small trench filled with manure, or in a trench between the fences of cottage gardens, and may be used for nourishing the family all the year round. The south of England, *C. Edulis*, is a small, round, green gourd, a favourite vegetable in the south of England, parts of continental Europe, but is not so common as the preceding. It is a somewhat variable member of the family, having more or less tendency towards a shrubby mode of growth, the fruit, when ripe, is smaller than the pumpkin, the shape, usually with many ribs or projections, resembles a turban, often, many of the most useful names have been applied to it. The edible kinds is considerably smaller in the fruit, the squashes are much cultivated in the south of England, grown as food for pigs and cattle, the fruit is fairly succulent, but cooking they are not so good as the unripe condition. Many Indian squashes are found in India and other hot climates, and some of them are introduced into English gardens, rather for the foliage and leaves than for their edibility. The *C. Arborescens*, the tree gourd, is a large tree, the fruit, like a large orange in form and colour, is generally too bitter to be palatable for culinary purposes in Turkey and the East. The *C. formosa*, *C. citriformis*, and *C. melonacea* are also eaten, especially in the East, and some of the other gourds are used as a substitute for the *C. Pepo* in boiling countries.

The bottle gourds are now given the name of the genus *Lagenaria*, chiefly distinguished from the *Cucurbita* authors having long instead of oblong fruit. They are properly so called, *L. siliqua*, is a climbing plant with downy, heart-shaped leaves and branched stems, the remarkable fruit first begins to grow in the form of an elongated cylinder, but gradually widens to a great extremity, until, when ripe, it resembles a flask with a neck and large rounded bulb. It sometimes attains a height of 7 feet. When ripe, the pulp is removed from the and the interior cleared by leaving water stand in the woody rind that remains is used as a bath. The lower part is cut off and cleared out, forming a vessel applied to the same domestic purposes as the bowl (*C. cucurbita*) of the West Indies. The smaller variety, divided lengthwise, forms a spoon. The ripe fruit is too bitter and caustic, but while immature it is eaten by the Arabs and Turks. When about the size of a cucumber, Lane says, it is stuffed with rice and meat, flavoured with pepper, onions, &c., and then

forming a favorite dish with Eastern peoples. The elongated snake gourds of India and China (*Trichosanthes*) are said to be used in curries and stews.

All the gourds have a tendency to secrete the escharotic principle, *cucurbitacin*, and in many varieties of *Cucurbita* and the allied genera it is often elaborated to such an extent as to render them unwholesome, or even poisonous. The seeds of some species possess rather strong antihelmintic properties, those of the common pumpkin are frequently administered in America as a vermifuge. The cultivation of gourds commenced far beyond the dawn of history, and the seed in species have become so modified by culture that the origin of plants from which they have descended can no longer be traced. The abundance of varieties in India would seem to indicate that part of Asia as the birth place of the present edible forms, but some appear to have been cultivated in all the hotter regions of that continent, and in North Africa, from the earliest ages, while the Romans were familiar with at least eleven kinds of *Cucurbita*, and with the bottle gourd. It is even doubtful whether the culture of gourds had not spread to the American continent before its discovery by Europeans, for the Indians of the interior were certainly in possession of some kinds, at a date so early that it is difficult to believe they had received them from the settlers. Dr Asa Gray has even suggested that some of these escharotic forms may possibly have been indigenous to the American plants.

Most of the annual gourds may be grown successfully in Britain. They are usually raised in hotbed or under frames, and planted out in the open in the early summer as soon as the soil becomes warm. The most ornamental kinds may be trained over trellis work, a favorite mode of displaying them in the fruit. But the attention must be directed and raised. Even the *Lepanto* will sometimes produce fine fruit when cultivated in the southern counties. (C. P. V.)

GOULBURN, HENRY PEAR, Baron (1783-1852), a French general of artillery, was born at Versailles, 11th September 1783. After studying at the polytechnic school and at the artillery school of Metz, he joined the artillery in 1802, and he was a faithful himself with distinction in several campaigns, he took part in 1807 the cross of honour and the grade of captain. He served in the subsequent Spanish and Austrian campaigns, and in 1811 he was sent to report on the strength of the fortification of Danzig, a mission which he fulfilled so much to the satisfaction of Napoleon that he was named one of the emperor's ordnance officers. During the Russian campaign he was the first to enter the Kremlin at Moscow, where he removed the match from a large quantity of powder the explosion of which would in all probability have destroyed the emperor's life. For this service he received the title of baron. He accompanied the emperor in his subsequent campaigns, and in 1814, at the battle of Borodino, was again successful in delivering him from capture at peril. After the accession of Louis XVIII he was named chief of the staff of the first artillery division, but on the return of Napoleon from Elba he was nevertheless named by him adjutant and general, and took part in the battle of Waterloo. Being one of the three French officers chosen by Napoleon to accompany him to St Helena, he was employed there in collecting materials for a history of Napoleon's campaign, but on account of some misunderstanding with Montholon, he left the island, and went to England. He published in 1818 *La Campagne de 1815*, and he also endeavoured to tutor the emperors of Russia and Austria in Napoleon's behalf. Shortly afterwards he was expelled from England as a spy of Napoleon's. Returning to France in 1821, he published, along with Montholon, in 1824, *Mémoires de Napoléon à Sainte-Hélène*. His reply in 1825 to Ségur's *Histoire de la Grande Armée* was the occasion of a duel between the two authors; and he also,

in 1827, became involved in a controversy with Sir Walter Scott regarding some statements made by the latter in his life of Napoleon. After the July revolution of 1830, Gourgaud was appointed to the command of the artillery of Paris and Vincennes, in 1833 he was named aide de camp of the king, and in 1835 lieutenant general. In 1840 he was one of the commissioners sent to bring the remains of Napoleon to France. On the occurrence of the revolution of February 1848 his name was struck off the list of generals, but after the events of the following June he was chosen colonel of the first legion of the national guard of Paris. In 1849 he was elected representative of the legislature assembly for the department of Paris-Seine. He died 25th July 1852.

GOUT, a specific constitutional disorder connected with excess of urea and in the blood, and manifesting itself by inflammation of joints, with deposition therein of uric acid, and also by morbid changes in various important organs.

The term gout, which was first used about the end of the 13th century, is derived through the French *goutte* from the Latin *gutta*, a drop, in allusion to the old pathological doctrine (which in the present case seems to be essentially the correct one) of the dripping of a morbid material from the blood within the joints. The disease is known and described by the ancient Greek physicians under various names, which, however, appear to have been applied 1) them alone to rheumatism and gout. The genital form *arthritides* (*gicht*), a joint) was employed when many joints were the seat of inflammation, while in those instances where the disease was limited to one part the terms used bore reference to such locality, hence *podagra* (*podagra*, from *pod*, the foot, and *agra*, a seizure), *cheirogra* (*χερ*, the hand), *gonagra* (*γων*, the knee), &c.

Hippocrates in his *Epitomae* speaks of gout as occurring most commonly in spring and autumn, and mentions the fact that women are less liable to it than men. He also gives directions as to treatment. Celsus gives a similar account of the disease. Galen regarded gout as an impurity of accumulation of humors in a part, and the chalkiness as the concretions of these, and he attributed the disease to over indulgence and luxury. Gout is alluded to in the works of Ovid and Pliny, and Seneca in his 95th epistle mentions the prevalence of gout among the Roman ladies of his day as one of the results of their high living and debauchery. Lucretius in his *Trajanopolis* gives an amusing account of the remedies employed for the cure of gout.

In all times this disease has engaged a large share of the attention of physicians, from its wide prevalence, and from the amount of suffering which it entails. Sydenham, the famous English physician of the 17th century, wrote an important treatise on the subject, and his description of the gouty paroxysm, all the more vivid from his having himself been afflicted with the disease for thirty-four years, is still quoted by writers as the most graphic and exhaustive account of the symptomatology of gout. Subsequently Cullen, recognizing gout as capable of manifesting itself in various ways, divided the disease into *regular* gout, which affects the joints only, and *irregular* gout, where the gouty disposition exhibits itself in other forms, and the latter variety he subdivided into *acute* gout, where the most prominent symptoms are throughout referable to the stomach and alimentary canal, *intercurrent* gout, where the inflammatory attack suddenly disappears from an affected joint and serious disturbance takes place in some internal organ, generally the stomach or heart; and *misplaced* gout, where from the first the disease does not appear externally, but reveals itself by an inflammatory attack of some internal part. Dr Garrod, one of the most eminent living authorities

on gout, adopts a division somewhat similar to though atypical than that of Cullen, namely, *repeated gout*, which affects the joints alone, and is either acute or chronic, and *intermittent gout*, affecting non-articular tissues, or disturbing the functions of various organs.

It is often stated that the attack of gout comes on with out any previous warning, but, while this is true in many instances, the reverse is probably as frequently the case, and the precursory symptoms, especially in those who have previously suffered from the disease, may be sufficiently precise to indicate the impending seizure. Among the more common of these may be mentioned marked disorders of the digestive organs, with a feeble and capricious appetite, flatulence and pain after eating, and uneasiness in the right side in the region of the liver. A remarkable tendency to gnashing of the teeth is sometimes observed. This symptom was first noticed by Dr. Graves, who connected it with irritation in the urinary organs, which also is present as one of the precursory indications of the gouty attack. Various forms of nervous disturbance also present themselves in the form of general discomfort, extreme irritability of temper, and various perverted sensations, such as that of numbness and coldness in the limbs. These symptoms may persist for many days and then undergo amelioration immediately before the impending paroxysm. On the night of the attack the patient refuses to rest apparently well, but about two or three o'clock in the morning is awake with a painful feeling in the foot, most commonly in the ball of the great toe, but it may be in the instep or heel, or in the thumb. With the pain there often occurs a distinct shivering followed by feverishness. The pain soon becomes of the most agonizing character in the words of Sydenham, "now it is a violent stretching and tearing of the ligaments, now it is a gnawing pain, and now a pressure and tightening, so exquisite and lively meanwhile is the part affected that it cannot bear the weight of the bedclothes, nor the jar of a person walking in the room."

When the affected part is examined it is found to be swollen and of a deep red hue. The superjacent skin is tense and glistening, and the surrounding veins are more or less distended. After a few hours there is a remission of the pain, slight perspiration takes place, and the patient may fall asleep. The pain may continue moderate during the day but returns as night advances, and the patient goes through a similar experience of suffering to that of the previous night, followed with a like abatement towards morning. These nocturnal exacerbations occur with greater or less severity during the continuance of the attack, which generally lasts for a week or ten days. As the symptoms decline the swelling and tenderness of the affected joint abate, but the skin over it pits on pressure for a time, and with this there is often associated slight desquamation of the cuticle. During the attacks there is much constitutional disturbance. The patient is restless and extremely irritable, and suffers from clasp in the limbs and from dyspepsia, thirst, and constipation. The urine is scanty and high coloured, with a copious deposit, consisting chiefly of urate. During the continuance of the symptoms the inflammation may leave the one foot and affect the other, or both may suffer at the same time. After the attack is over the patient feels quite well and fancies himself better than he had been for a long time before, hence the once popular notion that a fit of the gout was capable of removing all other ailments. Any such idea, however, is sadly belied in the experience of most sufferers from this disease. It is rare that the first is the only attack of gout, and another is apt to occur within a year, although by care and treatment it may be warded off. The disease, however, undoubtedly tends to take a firm hold on the constitution and to return. In the sailor recurs the same joints

as were formerly the seat of the gouty inflammation; and again, but in course of time others become implicated, and in advanced cases scarcely any articulation escapes, and the disease thus becomes chronic. It is to be noticed that the gout assumes this form the frequently recurring attacks usually attended with less pain than the earlier ones, but their disastrous effects are evidenced alike by the distension of various important organs, especially the stomach, liver, kidneys, and heart, and by the remarkable clung which take place in the joints from the formation of the so-called chalk stones or tophi. These deposits, which are highly characteristic of gout, appear at first to take place in the form of a semifluid material, consisting for the most part of urate of soda, which gradually becomes more dense and ultimately quite hard. When any quantity of this deposited in the structures of a joint the effect is to produce stiffening, and, as deposits appear to take place to a great or less amount in connexion with every attack, permanent thickening and deformity of the parts is apt to be the consequence. The extent of this depends of course on the amount of the deposits, which, however, would seem to be in no necessary relation to the severity of the attack, but in some cases even of chronic gout so slight as to be barely appreciable externally, but on the other hand occasional causing great enlargement of the parts, or fixing them in a flexed or extended position which renders them quite useless. Dr. Garrod describes the appearance of a hand in some cases even of chronic gout so slight as to be barely appreciable externally, but on the other hand occasional causing great enlargement of the parts, or fixing them in a flexed or extended position which renders them quite useless. Dr. Garrod describes the appearance of a hand in some cases even of chronic gout so slight as to be barely appreciable externally, but on the other hand occasional causing great enlargement of the parts, or fixing them in a flexed or extended position which renders them quite useless. Dr. Garrod describes the appearance of a hand in some cases even of chronic gout so slight as to be barely appreciable externally, but on the other hand occasional causing great enlargement of the parts, or fixing them in a flexed or extended position which renders them quite useless.

The recognition of what is termed *metabolic gout* is no easy task than that form above described, where the disease gives abundant external evidence of its presence, but in other parts than joints suffer from gouty attacks is beyond question. The diagnosis may often be made in cases where in an attack of ordinary gout the disease suddenly leaves the affected joints and some new series of symptoms arise. It has been often observed when cold has been applied to an inflamed joint that the pain and inflammation in it had ceased, but that some sudden and alarming seizure rendered the stomach, brain, heart, or lungs supervene. Such attacks, which correspond to what is termed by Cullen *gouty colic*, often terminate favourably, more especially if the disease again returns to the joints. Further the gouty nature of some long continued internal or cutaneous disorder may be rendered apparent by its disappearance on the outbreak of the paroxysm in the joints. Gout, when of long standing, is often found associated with degenerative changes in the heart and large arteries, the liver, and especially the kidneys, which are apt to assume the contracted granular condition already alluded to as one of the forms of Bright's disease (see BRIGHT'S DISEASE). A variety of urinary calculi—the uric acid—formed by concretions of this substance in the kidneys is a not unfrequent occurrence in connexion with gout, hence the well known association of this disease and gravel.

As regards the pathology of gout, all inquiry necessarily connecting it closely with an altered state of the blood more particularly with the presence in that fluid in excess of amount of uric acid, and its subsequent deposition in the

joints in the form of uric acid. Uric acid is formed in the system in the processes of nutrition, and is excreted by the kidneys, the amount passing off by the urine being estimated at about 8 grains daily. In the healthy human subject the blood contains the mearest trace of this acid, but in gout it may be detected in abundance in the blood-serum both prior to and during the acute attack, while in chronic gout it becomes a constant constituent of the blood and of other fluids of the body, both natural and morbid. According to Dr Garrod it is not merely the presence of the uric acid in the blood, but its disposition in the inflamed part that gives rise to the attack of gout, the inflammation being the effect and not the cause of the deposit. The gouty paroxysm thus induced appears to rid the system to a certain extent of the accumulated uric acid, although such relief is generally of but temporary duration.

Whether the accumulation of urates in the blood be due, as some affirm, to their excessive formation in the system as the result of functional derangement of the liver, or, as others hold, depends simply on the defective excreting power of the kidneys of the duly amount, is disputed, although it has been often observed during an attack of gout that the amount of uric acid excreted was markedly deficient. The likelihood is that both these conditions concur, and that while the kidneys retain their functional integrity, even an excessive amount of uric acid in the system may be got rid of, but that these organs, becoming themselves affected by the deposition of urates in their tubular structure, lose to a large extent their excreting power, and thus the blood is overcharged with the product which the kidneys can no longer entirely remove. Another view of the pathology of gout recently advanced regards the disease as resulting from special degenerative changes in the fibrous textures of the body, one of the effects of which is the deposition of urates in the affected parts whence they pass into the blood. This theory has not, however, as yet been extensively supported, and the weight of opinion remains on the whole in favour of the views of Dr Garrod. It must nevertheless be admitted that many points in the pathology of this disease still remain unexplained, for, as remarked by Trousseau, "the production in excess of uric acid and urates is a pathological phenomenon inherent like all others in the disease, and like all the others it is dominated by a specific cause, which we know only by its effects, and which we term the gouty diathesis." This subject of diathesis (habit, or organic predisposition of individuals), which is universally admitted as an essential element in the pathology of gout, naturally suggests the question as to whether, besides being inherited, such a peculiarity may also be acquired, and thus leads to a consideration of the causes which are recognized as influential in favouring the occurrence of this disease.

It is beyond dispute that gout is in a marked degree hereditary, fully more than half the number of cases being, according to Sir C. Sanderson and Dr Garrod, of this character. But it is no less certain that there are habits and modes of life the observance of which may induce the disease even where no hereditary tendencies can be traced, and the avoidance of which may on the other hand go far towards weakening or neutralizing the influence of inherited liability. Gout is said to affect the sedentary more readily than the active, but this cannot be taken as a very constant rule. If, however, inadequate exercise be combined with a luxurious manner of living, with habitual over-indulgence in animal food and rich dishes, and especially in alcoholic beverages, then undoubtedly the chief factors in the production of the disease are present.

Much has been written upon the relative influence of various forms of alcoholic drinks in promoting the development of gout. It is generally stated that fermented and

more injurious than distilled liquors, and that, in particular, the stronger wines, such as port, sherry, and madeira, are much more potent in their gout-producing action than the lighter class of wines, such as hock, moselle, &c., while malt liquors are fully as hurtful as strong wines. If this alleged difference in their tendency to induce gout be correct, it cannot be said that any satisfactory explanation of it has been furnished, but indeed the point has not been clearly proved, and it may be fairly questioned whether, other things being equal, an individual in abandoning the use of wines and substituting that of spirits would improve his position in relation to this disease. It seems quite as probable that over-indulgence in any form of alcohol, when associated with the other conditions already adverted to, will have very much the same effect in developing gout. Even those who affirm the mischievous effects of fermented liquors in this way are obliged to admit that they are injurious in proportion to the amount of alcohol they contain. The comparative absence of gout in countries where spirituous liquors are chiefly used, such as Scotland, is cited as showing their relatively slight effect in encouraging that disease, but it is to be noticed that in such countries there is on the whole a less marked tendency to excess in the other pleasures of the table, which in no degree less than alcohol are chargeable with inducing the gouty habit. Gout is not a common disease among the poor and labouring classes, and when it does occur may often be connected even in them with excess in living. It is not very rare to meet gout in butlers, coachmen, &c., who are apt to live luxuriously while leading comparatively easy lives.

Gout, it must ever be borne in mind, may also affect persons who observe the strictest temperance in living, and whose only excesses are in the direction of over-work, either physical or intellectual. Many of the great names in history in all times have had their existence embittered by this malady, and have died from its effects. The influence of hereditary tendency may often be traced in such instances, and is doubtless called into activity by the depressing consequences of over-work. It may, notwithstanding, be affirmed as generally true that those who lead regular lives and are moderate in the use of animal food and alcoholic drinks, or still better abstain from the latter altogether, are little likely to be the victims of gout even where an undoubted inherited tendency exists.

Gout is more common in mature age than in the earlier years of life, the greatest number of cases in one decennial period being between the ages of thirty and forty, next between twenty and thirty, and thirdly between forty and fifty. It may occasionally affect very young persons, but such cases are generally in a marked degree hereditary. After middle life gout rarely appears for the first time. Women are much less the subjects of gout than men, apparently from their less exposure to the influences (excepting of course that of heredity) which tend to develop the disease, and doubtless also from the differing circumstances of their physical constitution. It most frequently appears in females after the cessation of the menses. Persons exposed to the influence of lead poisoning, such as plumbers, painters, &c., are apt to suffer from gout, and it would seem that impregnation of the system with this metal markedly interferes with the uric-acid-excreting function of the kidneys.

Attacks of gout are readily excited in those predisposed to the disease. Exposure to cold, disorders of digestion, fatigue, and irritation or injuries of particular joints will often precipitate the gouty paroxysm.

With respect to the treatment of gout the greatest variety of opinion has prevailed and practice been pursued, from the numerous quaint nostrums detailed by Lincius to the "expectant" or do-nothing system recommended by Syden-



ham and gravely advocated by a few among eminent modern physicians, who regard the disease as beyond the reach of remedies. But that gout, although, as has been shown, a malady of a most severe and irremediable character, may nevertheless be successfully dealt with by appropriate medicinal and hygienic measures is a belief largely entertained, and one which happily guides the practice of the physician. The general plan of treatment can be here only briefly indicated. During the acute attack the affected part should be kept at perfect rest, and have applied to it warm opiate fomentations or poultices, or, what answers fully better, be enveloped in cotton wool covered in with oil silk. The diet of the patient should be light, without animal food or stimulants. The administration of some simple laxative will be of service, as well as the free use of alkaline effluvia, such as the bicarbonate or acetate of potash. The medicinal agent most to be relied on in the treatment of gout is colchicum, which manifestly exercises a powerful action on the disease. This drug (*Colchicum autumnale*), which is believed to correspond to the hermodactyl of the ancients, was introduced as a remedy for gout about a century ago, and has proved of such efficacy in modifying the attacks that, as observed by Dr Garrod, "we may safely assert that colchicum possesses as specific a control over the gouty inflammation as cinchona barks or their alkaloids over intermittent fever." The mode of action of colchicum in gout is by no means determined, since it would appear to have no certain effect upon the uric acid excreted from the system, and the general opinion seems to be that this drug has a special sedative effect on the gouty inflammation. It is usually administered in the form of the wine in doses of 10-30 drops every four or six hours, or in pill as the acetous extract (gr  $\frac{1}{2}$  - gr 1). The effect of colchicum in subduing the pain of gout is generally so prompt and marked that it is unnecessary to have recourse to opiates, but its action requires to be carefully watched by the physician from its well known nauseating and depressing consequences, which should they appear, render the suspension of the drug necessary. Otherwise the remedy may be continued in gradually diminishing doses for some days after the disappearance of the gouty inflammation. The statements often made that colchicum tends to encourage the speedy return of the disease do not seem to be well founded. Should gout give evidence of its presence in an irregular form by attacking internal organs, besides the medicinal treatment above mentioned, the use of frictions and mustard applications to the joints is indicated with the view of evincing its appearance there.

When gout has become chronic, colchicum, although of less service than in acute gout, is yet valuable, particularly when the inflammatory attacks recur. More benefit, however, appears to be derived from iodide of potassium, guaiacum, and more especially from the alkalis potash and lithia. This latter drug is strongly recommended by Dr Garrod from its solvent action upon the urates. It is usually administered in the form of the carbonate (gr v, freely diluted).

The treatment and regimen to be employed in the intervals of the gouty attacks are of the highest importance. These bear reference for the most part to the habits and mode of life of the patient. Restriction must be laid upon the amount and quality of the food, and equally, or still more, upon the alcoholic stimulants. "The instances," says Sir Thomas Watson, "are not few of men of good sense, and masters of themselves, who, being warned by one visitation of the gout, have thenceforward resolutely abstained from rich living and from wine and strong drinks of all kinds, and who have been rewarded for their prudence and self-denial by complete immunity from any return of the disease, or upon whom, at any rate, its future assaults have

been few and feeble." The same eminent authority adds—"I am sure it is worth any young man's while, who has had the gout, to become a teetotaler." By those more advanced in life who, from long continued habits, are unable entirely to relinquish the use of stimulants, the strictest possible temperance must be observed. Regular but moderate exercise in the form of walking or riding, in the case of those who lead sedentary lives, is of great advantage, and all over-work, either physical or mental, should be avoided. Unfortunately the complete carrying out of such directions, even by those who feel their importance, is too often rendered difficult or impossible by circumstances of occupation and otherwise, and at most only an approximation can be made. The effect upon the gouty constitution of certain mineral waters and baths is well known. The particular place must in each case be determined by the physician, and special caution must be observed in recommending this plan of treatment in persons whose gout is complicated by organic disease of any kind. (p. 101)

GOUVION SAINT CYR, LAURENT, MARQUIS DE (1764-1830), a French marshal, was born at Toul, 13th April 1764. At the age of eighteen he went to Rome with the view of prosecuting the study of painting, but, although he continued his artistic studies after his return to Paris in 1784, he never definitely adopted the profession of a painter. In 1792 he was chosen a captain in the *chasseurs républicains*, and served on the staff of General Custine. His promotion rapidly followed, and in the course of two years he had become a general of division. In 1796 he commanded the centre division of Moreau's army in the campaign of the Rhine, and by coolness and sagacity greatly aided him in his brilliant defence against superior numbers, and in his subsequent celebrated retreat. In 1798 he was appointed to the command of the army of Italy, the officers of which had revolted against their general Massena, and he was speedily successful in obtaining the complete re-establishment of discipline. In the following year he commanded the left wing of Jourdan's army in Germany, but when Jourdan was succeeded by Massena, he joined the army of Moreau in Italy, where, in face of great difficulties, he was not only completely successful in his defensive tactics, but gained, on the 18th December, an important victory at Albano. When Moreau, in 1800, was appointed to the command of the army of the Rhine, Gouvion St Cyr was named his first lieutenant, and on the 9th May gained a victory over General Kray at Biberach. In 1801 he was sent to Spain to command the army intended for the invasion of Portugal, and was named grand officer of the legion of honour. When a treaty of peace was shortly afterwards concluded with Portugal, he succeeded Lucien Bonaparte as ambassador at Madrid. In 1803 he was appointed to the command of an army corps in Italy, and he gained in 1805 a victory over the Austrians at Castel Franco. He took part in the Prussian and Polish campaigns of 1807, and in 1808 he commanded an army corps with some success in Catalonia, but, not wishing to comply with certain orders he received from Paris, he resigned his command, and remained in disgrace till 1811. On the opening of the Russian campaign he received command of the 8th army corps, and on the 7th August 1812 obtained a victory over the Russians at Polotsk, in recognition of which he was created a marshal of France. He distinguished himself at the battle of Dresden, 26th and 27th August 1813, but, after a stubborn resistance, capitulated there to the allies on the 11th November following, and remained for some time a prisoner in Hungary. On the restoration of the Bonapartes he was created a peer of France, and in July 1815 was appointed war minister, but resigned his office in the November following. In June 1817 he was appointed minister of marine, and in September following again re-

sumed the duties of war minister, which he continued to discharge till November 1819. He died 17th March 1830. Guvion St Cyr was a prudent and cautious rather than a brilliant general, but he would doubtless have obtained better opportunities of acquiring distinction had he shown himself more blindly devoted to the interests of Napoleon.

He is the author of the following works—*Journal des opérations de l'armée de Catalogne, en 1808 et 1809*, Paris, 1821, *Mémoires sur les Campagnes des armées de Rhin et de Rhodé et de Moselle de 1791 à 1797*, Paris, 1828, and *Mémoires pour servir à l'histoire militaire sous le Directoire, le Consulat, et l'Empire*, 1831. See Guy de Vinnon's *Vie du Général Saint Cyr*, 1867.

**GOVERNMENT.** Without attempting to discriminate by verbal definitions the various shades of meaning which this word assumes, we shall use it in this article in its widest sense—that of the ruling power in a political society. The conception of society which this use of the word implies may be illustrated by two well known theories.

In John Austin's celebrated analysis of law, the first step is the proposition that a law is a command issued by a superior to a subject and enforced by a sanction or penalty. The laws of God with reference to the conduct of men, the laws of a private club or association of men with reference to the conduct of its members, and the laws of a political society, are all, according to Austin's definition, laws properly so called. The laws of nations are laws not properly so called. They are generalizations as to the uniform course of nature, and have no analogy to laws properly so called except in point of uniformity. Positive law, again, is distinguished from other laws, properly so called, as the command of the sovereign of an independent political community. A sovereign is a person, or a determinate body of persons, to whom the bulk of the community is habitually obedient. Every word in this definition has its precise meaning, which is developed by Austin with admirable clearness. The faculty "of untying knots" on which he piled himself is, no doubt, more conspicuously manifested than in the analysis which lays bare the real meaning of the common phrases used to describe the fundamental parts of society. It is not our purpose to examine the value of this analysis here, but simply to call attention to the assumption that in every society of men there is a determinate body (whether consisting of one individual, or a few or many individuals) whose commands the rest of the community obey. This sovereign body is what in more popular phrase is termed the Government of the country, and the varieties which may exist in its constitution are known as forms of government.

Mr Herbert Spencer, approaching the study of society under the influence of conceptions derived from the study of physical organisms, brings us to very much the same result. The union of men in society is itself an organic structure, having parts and functions corresponding to the parts and functions of an animal or a plant. Mr Spencer pursues this analogy so fully and minutely as to leave the impression that he believes it to be something more than an analogy,—that it is a general law from which true deductions regarding society may be drawn. The veins and arteries correspond to our railroads and highways, the nerves, communicating intelligence to the brain, are paralleled by the telegraph wires, the centralized action of society at the seat of government is the same thing as the regulative activity of the brain. Governments are here represented by the regulative functions of a living organism, and forms of government are so many varieties in the structure. Austin, for the purposes of jurisprudence, finds it convenient to regard society as moulded by the will of a dominant body. Spencer exhibits the regulative parts of society as bound up with the rest in one organism. With both the existence of a government is necessary to the conception of society. In the one theory the element of command, in the other that

of regulation, is conspicuous. If to these we add a third, that of simple agency, we shall have a tolerably complete view of the relations between Government and society. Besides commanding the conduct of individuals, besides regulating the relations of the various members of society, Government may be conceived of as merely the instrument of society. Where men are united in groups there arises from their union the necessity of action on behalf of the group. That part of society which attends to the business of the whole is the Government.

Two main lines of inquiry divide the subject. The first relates to varieties in the structure of the governing body—forms of government. The second relates to the functions of the governing body, the sphere of government, the things which fall within the province of state action. In both lines we have to deal with the ascertained facts of the past history and present condition of human societies. In both we have also to notice the speculative opinions of political thinkers. Notwithstanding the apparent confusion it will probably be found more convenient not to separate the historical from the speculative treatment of the subject. What is the best form of government?—is not quite the same question as What was the constitution of Athens or Rome? What are the proper limits of state interference?—is not the same question as What are the functions of the state in France or England? And yet the same answer may often serve for both sets of questions. Ideal constitutions have a suspicious resemblance to the constitutions with which their authors are most familiar. The political speculations of Plato and of Cicero are based on the state systems of Greece and Italy. Cicero's ideal code in the treatise *De Legibus* is simply an adaptation of the Twelve Tables. On the other hand, the form of political speculation is often determined by, and in turn determines, the practical politics of the time. The ultimate connexion between speculation and practice in politics is strikingly illustrated in the period of controversy which culminated in the Revolution of 1688. The irreconcilable claims of crown and parliament threw the mind back on first principles. Never had theorists a better chance. Popular government and absolute government each sought to establish itself on a basis of reason and nature. Filmer founds kindly authority on the natural subjection of mankind and the lineal succession of the king to Adam, the first and divinely appointed head of mankind. Locke's general theories of civil government were, in his own opinion, sufficient "to establish the throne of our great reservoir or present king, William, to make good this title in the consent of the people, which, *being the only one of all lawful governments*, he has more fully and clearly than any prince in Christendom." We all know how the political issue was decided. The practical was not more complete than the speculative victory. For two centuries the speculations invented to support the popular cause against absolutism have been the accepted commonplaces of Englishmen on the constitution of civil society. A more recent example may be given from modern politics. During the discussions which preceded the passing of the Reform Act of 1867, no question was more hotly disputed than that of the real nature of the franchise. Was it a right or was it a privilege? In form this is a scientific or, if we like, a metaphysical question. But the answer to it depended on another question altogether—whether you wished the franchise to be extended to a larger class or not.

*Origin of Government.*—A preliminary question, formerly of vast theoretical importance, would be, What is the origin of government? How did government come into existence? As a question of historical fact, it demands for its solution a knowledge of the whole past of the human race. It has been answered over and over again in times when historical knowledge could hardly be said to exist,

and it has therefore been answered without any reference to history. The answers which have satisfied the minds of men may be distinguished broadly into three classes. The first class would comprehend the legendary accounts which nations have given in primitive times of their own founts of government. These are always attributed to the mind of a single lawgiver. The government of Sparta was the invention of Lycurgus. Solon, Moses, Numa, and Alfred in like manner shaped the government of their respective nations. There was no curiosity about the institutions of other nations,—about the origin of governments in general, and each nation was perfectly ready to accept the traditional *popolatria* of any other.

The second may be called the logical or metaphysical account of the origin of government. It continued no overt reference to any particular form of government, whatever its covert references may have been. It answered the question, How government in general came into existence, and it answered it by a logical analysis of the elements of society. The phenomenon to be accounted for being government and laws, it abstracted government and laws, and contemplated mankind as existing without them. The characteristic feature of this kind of speculation is that it reflects how contemporary men would believe if all government were removed, and infers that men must have behaved so before government came into existence. Society without government resolves itself into a number of individuals each following his own aims, and therefore, in the days before government, each man followed his own aims. It is easy to see how this kind of reasoning should lead to very different views of the nature of the supposed original state. With Hobbes, it is a state of war, and government is the result of an agreement among men to keep the peace. With Locke, it is a state of liberty and equality,—it is not a state of war, it is governed by its own law,—the law of nature, which is the same thing as the law of reason. The state of nature is brought to an end by the voluntary agreement of individuals to surrender their natural liberty, and submit themselves to one supreme Government. In the words of Locke, "Men being by nature all free, equal, and independent, no one can be put out of this estate and subjected to the political power of another without his own consent. The only way whereby any one divests himself of his natural liberty, and puts on the bonds of civil society, is by agreeing with other men to join and unite into a community" (*On Civil Government*, c. viii). Locke boldly defends his theory as founded on historical fact, and it is amusing to compare his demonstration of the baselessness of Filmer's speculations with the scanty and doubtful examples which he accepts as the foundation of his own. But in general the various forms of the hypothesis eliminate the question of time altogether. The original contract from which government springs is likewise the subsisting contract on which civil society continues to be based. The historical weakness of the theory was probably always recognized. Its logical inadequacy was conclusively demonstrated by Austin. But it still clings to speculations on the principles of government.

The "social compact" is the most famous of the metaphysical explanations of government. It has had the largest history, the widest influence, and the most complete development. To the same class belong the various forms of the theory that governments exist by divine appointment. Of all that has been written about the divine right of kings, a great deal must be set down to the mere flatness of counters and ecclesiastical. But there remains a genuine belief that men are bound to obey their rulers because their rulers have been appointed by God. Like the social compact, the theory of divine appointment avoided the question of historical fact.

The application of the historical method to the phenomena of society has changed the aspect of the question and robbed it of its political interest. The student of the history of society has no formula to express the law by which government is born. All that he can do is to trace governmental forms through various stages of social development. The more complex and the larger the society, the more distinct is the separation between the governing part and the rest, and the more elaborate is the subdivision of functions in the government. The primitive type of ruler is king, judge, priest, and general. At the same time his way of life differs little from that of his followers and subjects. The metaphysical theories were so far right in imputing greater equality of social conditions to more primitive times. Increases of bulk brings with it a more complex social organization. War tends to develop the strength of the governmental organization, peace relaxes it. All societies of men exhibit the germs of government, but these would appear to be races of men so low that they cannot be said to live together in society at all. Recent investigations have illustrated very fully the importance of the family in primitive societies, and the belief in a common descent has much to do with the social cohesion of a tribe. The government of a tribe resembles the government of a household, the head of the family is the ruler. But we cannot affirm that political government has its origin in family government, or that there may not have been states of society in which government of some sort existed while the family did not.

#### I. FORMS OF GOVERNMENT

*Three Standard Forms*—Political writers from the time of Aristotle have been singularly unanimous in their classification of the forms of government. There are three ways in which states may be governed. They may be governed by one man, or by a number of men, small in proportion to the whole number of men in the state, or by a number large in proportion to the whole number of men in the state. The government may be a monarchy, an aristocracy, or a democracy. The same terms are used by Austin as were used by Aristotle, and in very nearly the same sense. The determining quality in governments in both writers, and it may safely be said in all intermediate writers, is the numerical relation between the constituent members of the government and the population of the state. There were, of course, enormous differences between the state systems present to the mind of the Greek philosopher and the English jurist. Aristotle was thinking of the small independent states of Greece, Austin of the great peoples of modern Europe. The unit of government in the one case was a city, in the other a nation. The difference is of itself enough to invalidate all generalization founded on the common terminology. But on one point there is a complete parallel between the politics of Aristotle and the politics of Austin. The Greek cities were to the rest of the world very much what European nations and European colonies are to the rest of the world now. They were the only communities in which the governed visibly took some share in the work of government. Outside the European system, as outside the Greek system, we have only the stereotyped uniformity of despotism, whether savage or civilized. The question of forms of government, therefore, belongs entirely to the European races. The virtues and defects of monarchy, aristocracy, and democracy are the virtues and defects manifested by the historical governments of Europe. The generality of the language used by political writers must not blind us to the fact that they are thinking only of a comparatively small portion of mankind.

*Greek Politics*—Aristotle divides governments according to two principles. In all states the governing power seeks

either its own advantage or the advantage of the whole state, and the government is bad or good accordingly. In all states the governing power is one man, or a few men, or many men. Hence six varieties of government, three of which are bad and three good. Each excellent form has a corresponding depraved form, thus —

The good government of one (Monarchy) corresponds to the depraved form (Tyranny)

The good government of few (Aristocracy) corresponds to the depraved form (Oligarchy)

The good government of many (Commonwealth) corresponds to the depraved form (Democracy)

The fault of the depraved forms is that they govern us not unjustly where their own interests are concerned. The worst of the depraved forms is tyranny, the next oligarchy, and the least bad democracy.<sup>1</sup> Each of the three leading types exhibits a number of varieties. Thus in monarchy we have the heroic, the barbaric, the elective dictatorship, the Lacedæmonian (hereditary kingship, *σπαρτιατῖα*), and absolute monarchy. So democracy and oligarchy exhibit four corresponding varieties. The best type of democracy is that of a community mainly agricultural, whose citizens, therefore, have not leisure for political affairs, and allow the law to rule. The best oligarchy is that in which a considerable number of small proprietors have the power, i.e., too, the laws prevail. The worst democracy consists of a larger citizen class having leisure for politics, and the worst oligarchy is that of a small number of very rich and influential men. In both the sphere of law is reduced to a minimum. A good government is one in which as much as possible is left to the laws, and as little as possible to the will of the governor.

The *Politeia* of Aristotle, from which these principles are taken, presents a striking picture of the variety and activity of political life in the free communities of Greece. The king and council of heroic times had disappeared, and self-government in some form or other was the general rule. It is to be noticed, however, that the Governments of Greece were essentially unstable. The political philosophers could lay down the law of development by which one form of government gives birth to another. Aristotle devotes a large portion of his work to the consideration of the causes of revolutions. The dread of tyranny was kept alive by the facility with which an over-powerful and unscrupulous citizen could seize the whole machinery of government. Communities oscillated between some form of oligarchy and some form of democracy. The security of each was constantly imperilled by the conspiracies of the opposing factions. Hence, although political life exhibits that exuberant variety of form and expression which characterizes all the intellectual products of Greece, it lacks the quality of persistent progress. Then there was no approximation to a national government, even of the federal type. The varying confederacies and hegemonies are the nearest approach to anything of the kind. What kind of national government would ultimately have arisen if Greece had not been crushed it is needless to conjecture, the true interest of Greek politics lies in the fact that the free citizens were, in the strictest sense of the word, self-governed. Each citizen took his turn at the common business of the state. He spoke his own views in the agora, and from time to time in his own person acted as magistrate or judge. Citizenship in Athens was a liberal education, such as it never can be made under any representative system.

The *Government of Rome*.—During the whole period of freedom the government of Rome was, in theory at least, municipal self-government. Each citizen had

a right to vote laws in his own person in the comitia of the centuries or the tribes. The administrative powers of government were, however, in the hands of a bureaucratic assembly, recruited from the holders of high public office. The senate represented capacity and experience rather than rank and wealth. Without some such instrument the city government of Rome could never have made the conquest of the world. The gradual extension of the citizenship to other Italians changed the character of Roman government. The distant citizens could not come to the voting booths, the device of representation was not discovered, and the comitia fell into the power of the town voters. In the last stages of the Roman republic, the inhabitants of one town wielded the resources of a world-wide empire. We can imagine what would be the effect of leaving to the people of London or Paris the supreme control of the British empire or of France,—a testable temptation, inevitable corruption. The rabble of the capital learn to live on the rest of the empire.<sup>2</sup> The favour of the effeminate masters of the world is purchased by *potentes et cunctis*. That capable officers and victorious armies should long be content to serve such masters was impossible. A conspiracy of generals placed itself at the head of affairs, and the most capable of them made himself sole master.

Under Cæsar, Augustus, and Tiberius, the Roman people became habituated to a new form of government, which is best described by the name of Cæsarism. The outward forms of republican government remained, but one man united in his own person all the leading offices, and used them to give a seemingly legal title to what was essentially military despotism. There is no more interesting constitutional study than the chapters in which Tacitus traces the growth of the new system under the subtle and dissimulating intellect of Tiberius. The new Roman empire was as full of fictions as the English constitution of the present day. The master of the world posed as the humble servant of a menial senate. Depecting the outward symbols of sovereignty, he was satisfied with the modest power of a consul or a tribune plebeius. The reign of Tiberius, little capable as he was by personal character of captivating the favour of the multitude, did more for imperialism than was done by his more famous predecessors. Henceforward free government all over the world lay crushed beneath the military despotism of Rome. Cæsarism remained true to the character imposed upon it by its origin. The Cæsar was an elective not an hereditary king. The real foundation of his power was the army, and the army in course of time openly assumed the right of nominating the sovereign. The characteristic weakness of the Roman empire was the uncertainty of the succession. The nomination of a Cæsar in the lifetime of the emperor was an ineffective remedy. Rival emperors were elected by different armies, and nothing less than the force of arms could decide the question between them.

*Modern Governments.—Feudalism*.—The Roman empire bequeathed to modern Europe the theory of universal dominion. The nationalities which grew up after its fall arranged themselves on the basis of territorial sovereignty. Leaving out of account the free municipalities of the Middle Ages, the problem of government had now to be solved, not for small urban communities, but for large territorial nations. The medieval form of government was feudal. One common type pervaded all the relations of life. The relation of king and lord

<sup>1</sup> None of the free states of Greece ever made extensive or permanent conquests, but the tribute sometimes paid by one state to another (as by the *Arginates* to the Athenians) was a manifest source of corruption. Compare the remarks of Hume (*History*, part 1, 3, *That Politics may be reduced to a Science*), "The governments are the most ruinous and oppressive to their provinces."

<sup>2</sup> Aristotle elsewhere speaks of the error of those who think that any one of the depraved forms is better than any other.

was like the relation between lord and vassal (see *Feudal Law*). The bond between them was the tenure of land. In England there had been, before the Norman Conquest, an approximation to a feudal system. In the earlier English constitution, the most striking features were the power of the witan, and the common property of the nation in a large portion of the soil. The steady development of the power of the king kept pace with the aggregation of the English tribes under one king. The conception that the land belonged primarily to the people gave way to the conception that everything belonged primarily to the king.<sup>1</sup> The Norman Conquest imposed on England the already highly developed feudalism of France, and out of this feudalism the free governments of modern Europe have grown. One or two of the leading steps in this process may be indicated here. The first, and perhaps the most important, was the device of representation. For an account of its origin, and for instances of its use in England before its application to politics, we must be content to refer to Canon Stubbs's *Constitutional History*, vol. II. The problem of combining a large area of sovereignty with some degree of self government, which had proved fatal to ancient commonwealths, was henceforward solved. From that time some form of representation has been deemed essential to every constitution professing, however remotely, to be free.

The connection between representation and the feudal system of estates must be shortly noticed. The feudal theory gave the king a limited right to military service and to certain aids, both of which were utterly inadequate to meet the expenses of the government, especially in time of war. The king therefore had to get contributions from his people, and he consulted them in their respective orders. The three estates were simply the three natural divisions of the people, and Canon Stubbs has pointed out that, in the canonical treaties between a necessitous king and the order of merchants or lawyers, we have examples of inchoate estates or sub estates of the realm. The right of representation was thus in its origin a right to consent to taxation. The pure theory of feudalism had from the beginning been broken by William the Conqueror causing all freeholders to take an oath of direct allegiance to himself. The institution of parliaments, and the association of the king's smaller tenants *in capite* with other commoners, still further removed the government from the purely feudal type, in which the meane lord stands between the inferior vassal and the king.

*Parliamentary Government.—The English System.*—The right of the commons to share the power of the king and lord's in legislation, the exclusive right of the commons to impose taxes, the disappearance of the clergy as a separate order, were all important steps in the movement towards popular government. The extinction of the old feudal nobility in the dynastic wars of the 15th century simplified the question by leaving the crown face to face with parliament. The immediate result was no doubt an increase in the power of the crown, which probably never stood higher than it did in the reigns of Henry VIII and Elizabeth, but even these powerful monarchs were studious in their regard for parliamentary conventionalities. After a long period of speculative controversy and civil war, the settlement of 1689 established limited monarchy as the government of England. Since that time the external form of government has remained unchanged, and, so far as legal

<sup>1</sup> Ultimately, in the theory of English law, the king may be said to have become the universal successor of the people. Some of the peculiarities of the prerogative rights seem to be explicable only on this view, e.g., the curious distinction between wrecks come to land and wrecks still on water. The common right to wrecks gave no doubt the origin of the prerogative right to the former. Every ancient common right has come to be a right of the crown or a right held of the crown by a vassal.

description goes, the constitution of William III might be taken for the same system as that which still exists. The silent changes have, however, been enormous. The most striking of these, and that which has produced the most salient features of the English system, is the growth of cabinet government. Intimately connected with this is the rise of the two great historical parties of English politics. The normal state of government in England is that the cabinet of the day shall represent that which is, for the time, the stronger of the two. Before the Revolution the king's ministers had begun to act as a united body, but even after the Revolution the union was still feeble and fluctuating, and each individual minister was bound to the others only by the tie of common service to the king. Under the Hanoverian sovereigns the ministry became consolidated, the position of the cabinet became definite, and its dependence on parliament, and more particularly on the House of Commons, was established. Ministers were chosen exclusively from one house or the other, and they assumed complete responsibility for every act done in the name of the crown. The simplicity of English politics has divided parliament into two nearly equal parties, and the party in opposition has been steadied by the consciousness that it, too, has constitutional functions of high importance. Criticism is sobred by being made responsible. Along with this movement went the withdrawal of the personal influence of the monarch in politics. No king has attempted to veto a bill since the Scotch Militia Bill was vetoed by Queen Anne. No ministry has been dismissed by the sovereign since 1834. Whatever the power of the monarch may be, it is unquestionably limited to his personal influence over his ministers. And it must be remembered that ministers are responsible ultimately, not to parliament, but to the House of Commons.

Apart, therefore, from the democratic changes of 1832 and 1867, we find that the House of Commons, as a body, had gradually made itself the centre of the government. Since the area of the constitution has been enlarged, it may be doubted whether the orthodox descriptions of the government any longer apply. The earlier constitutional writers, such as Blackstone and De Lolme, regard it as a wonderful compound of the three standard forms,—monarchy, aristocracy, and democracy. Each has its place, and each acts as a check upon the others. Hence, discussing the question "Whether the British government inclines more to absolute monarchy or to a republic," decides in favour of the former alternative. "The tide has run long and with some rapidity to the side of popular government, and is just beginning to turn toward monarchy." And he gives it as his own opinion that absolute monarchy would be the easiest death, the true euthanasia of the English constitution. These views of the English Government in the 18th century may be contrasted with Mr. Bagehot's sketch of the modern government as a working instrument.<sup>2</sup>

*Leading Features of Parliamentary Government.*—The parliamentary government developed by England out of feudal materials has been deliberately accepted as the type of constitutional government all over the world. Nearly all the European states and nearly all the Indian colonies, dependent or independent, have adopted it, more or less fully, the leading features of the English system—that is to say, popular representation more or less extensive, a bicameral legislature, and a cabinet or consolidated ministry. In connexion with all of these, numberless questions of the highest practical importance have arisen, the bare enumeration of which would surpass the limits of our space. We shall confine ourselves to a few very general considerations.

<sup>2</sup> See Bagehot's *English Constitution*.

*The Two Chambers*.—First, as to the double chamber. This, which is perhaps more accidental than any other portion of the English system, has been the most widely imitated. In most European countries, in the English colonies, in the United States congress, and in the separate States of the Union,<sup>1</sup> there are two houses of legislature. This result has been brought about partly by natural imitation of the accepted type of free government, partly from a conviction that the second chamber will moderate the democratic tendencies of the first. The theoretical question would take too long to argue, but it is easy to show that the elements of the English original cannot be reproduced to order under different conditions.<sup>2</sup> There have, indeed, been a few attempts to imitate the special character of hereditary nobility attaching to the English House of Lords, and these few have failed. The complete solidarity existing between the English nobility and at least the politically privileged, if not the whole mass, of their countrymen, is a result not to be attempted by the framers of constitutions. The English system, too, after its own way, obviates any danger of collision between the Houses,—the standing and obvious danger of the bicameral system. In England there is no doubt where the real sovereignty lies. The actual ministers of the day must possess the confidence of the House of Commons, they need not—in fact they often do not—possess the confidence of the House of Lords. It is only in legislation that the Lower House really shares its powers with the Upper, and the constitution possesses, in the unlimited power of nominating peers, a well understood last resource should the House of Lords persist in refusing important measures demanded by the representatives of the people. In all but measures of first class importance, however, the House of Lords is a real second chamber, and in these there is little danger of a collision between the Houses. There is the widest possible difference between the English and any other second chamber. In the United States the senate (constituted on the system of equal representation of States) is the more important of the two Houses, and the only one whose control of the executive can be compared to that exercised by the British House of Commons. In the English colonies a dead-lock between the two Houses is a matter of frequent occurrence. In France, it is an anticipated if not an intended source of danger to the new republican constitution. The real strength of popular government in England lies in the ultimate supremacy of the House of Commons. That supremacy had been acquired, perhaps to its full extent, before the extension of the suffrage made the constituencies democratic. Foreign imitators, it may be observed, have been more ready to accept a wide basis of representation than to confer real power on the representative body. In all the monarchical countries of Europe, however constituted the right of suffrage may be, the real victory of constitutional government has yet to be won. Where the suffrage means little or nothing, there is little or no reason for guarding it against abuse. The independence of the executive in the United States brings that country, from one point of view, more near to the Continental than to the English state system. The people make a more complete surrender of power to the Government than is done in England.

*Cabinet Government*.—The peculiar functions of the English cabinet are not easily matched in any foreign system. They are a mystery even to most educated

Englishmen. The cabinet in England is much more than a body consisting of chiefs of departments. It is the inner council of the empire, the arbiter of national policy, foreign or domestic, the sovereign in commission. The whole power of the House of Commons is concentrated in its hands. At the same time, it has no place whatever in the legal constitution. Its numbers and its constitution are not fixed even by any rule of practice. It keeps no record of its proceedings. The relations of an individual minister to the cabinet, and of the cabinet to its head and creator, the premier, are things known only to the initiated.<sup>3</sup> With the doubtful exception of France, no other system of government presents us with anything like its equivalent. In the United States, as in the European monarchies, we have a council of ministers surrounding the chief of the state.

*Change of Power in the English System*.—One of the most difficult problems of government is how to provide for the devolution of political power, and perhaps no other question is so generally and justly applied as the test of a working constitution. If the transmission works smoothly, the constitution, whatever may be its other defects, may at least be pronounced stable. It would be tedious to enumerate all the contrivances which this problem has suggested to political societies. Here, as usual, Oriental despotism stands at the bottom of the scale. When sovereign power is imputed to one family, and the law of succession fails to designate exclusively the individual entitled to succeed, assassination becomes almost a necessary measure of precaution. The prince whom chance or intrigue has promoted to the throne of a father or an uncle, must make himself safe from his relatives and competitors. Hence the scenes which shock the European conscience when "Amurath an Amurath succeeds." Constantinople, Afghanistan, and Burmah have all recently illustrated the standing difficulty of the succession in Oriental despotisms. The strong monarchical governments of Europe have been saved from this evil by an indisputable law of succession, which marks out from his infancy the next successor to the throne. The king names his ministers, and the law names the king. In popular or constitutional governments far more elaborate precautions are required. It is one of the real merits of the English constitution that it has solved this problem—in a roundabout way perhaps, after its fashion—but with perfect success. The ostensible seat of power is the throne, and down to a time not long distant the demise of the crown suspended all the other powers of the state. In point of fact, however, the real change of power occurs on a change of ministry. The constitutional practice of this century has settled, beyond the reach of controversy, the occasions on which a ministry is bound to retire. It must resign or dissolve when it is defeated in the House of Commons, and if after a dissolution it is beaten again, it must resign without alternative. It may resign if it thinks its majority in the House of Commons not sufficiently large. The dormant functions of the crown now come into existence. It receives back political power from the old ministry in order to transmit it to the new. When the new ministry is to be formed, and how it is to be formed, is also clearly settled by established practice. The out-going premier names his successor by recommending the king to consult him, and that successor must be the recognized leader of his successful rivals. All this is a matter of custom, not of law, and it is doubtful if any two authorities could agree in describing the custom in

<sup>1</sup> The double government in the last case was founded, says Sir G. Lewis, on the English municipal system, and corresponded to the difference between aldermen and common council men.

<sup>2</sup> Sweden, a few years since, reduced her four medieval estates to two houses, and is more like Great Britain in the composition of the new parliament than any other state in Europe.

<sup>3</sup> See Bagehot's *English Constitution*, which exhibits a working view of this and other parts of the constitution as they appear to an outsider. Mr Gladstone's political essays, in the collection entitled *Cleanse of Past Years*, contain much valuable information at first hand.

language of precision. It is certain that the intervention of the crown facilitates the transfer of power from one party to another, by giving it the appearance of a mere change of servants. The real disturbance is that caused by the appeal to the electors. A general election is always a struggle between the two great political parties for the possession of the powers of government. It may be noted that recent practice goes far to establish the rule that a ministry beaten at the hustings should resign at once without waiting for a formal defeat in the House of Commons.

The English custom makes the ministry dependent on the will of the House of Commons, and, on the other hand, the House of Commons itself is dependent on the will of the ministry. In the last result both depend on the will of the constituencies as expressed at the general election. There is no fixity in either direction in the tenure of a ministry. It may be challenged at any moment, and it lasts until it is challenged and beaten. And that there should be a ministry and a House of Commons in harmony with each other but out of harmony with the people is rendered all but impossible by the law and the practice as to the duration of parliaments.

*Change of Power in the United States.*—The United States offers a very different solution of the problem. The American president is at once king and prime minister, and there is no timidity shown to act as a conduit-tube between him and his successor. His crown is rigidly fixed, unshakable for four years, after four years he ceases to reign. No hostile vote can affect his power as the head of the administration, and it is difficult to resist him will even in legislation. But the day of his demise is known from the first day of his government, and almost before he begins to reign the political forces of the country are shaping out a new struggle for the succession. Further, a change of government in America means a change of the entire administrative staff. The commotion caused by a presidential election in the United States is thus infinitely greater than that caused by a general election in England. A change of power in England affects comparatively few personal interests, and absorbs the attention of the country for a comparatively short space of time. In the United States it is long foreseen and elaborately prepared for, and when it comes it involves the personal fortunes of large numbers of citizens. And yet the English constitution is more democratic than the American, in the sense that the popular will can move speedily be brought to bear upon the government.

*Change of Power in France.*—The established practice of England and America may be compared with the nascent constitution of France. Here the problem presents different conditions. The head of the state is neither a premier of the English, nor a president of the American type. He is served by a prime minister and a cabinet, who, like an English ministry, hold office on the condition of parliamentary confidence, but he holds office himself on the same terms, and is, in fact, a minister like the others. So far as the transmission of power from cabinet to cabinet is concerned, he discharges the functions of an English king. But the transmission of power between himself and his successor is protected by no constitutional device whatever, and recent experience would seem to show that no such device is really necessary. Of course it is too soon to talk about the constitutional practice in France, but this much seems clear, that some rearrangement of the relations of the president and the cabinet must soon take place. It seems difficult to distinguish between a parliamentary president and a parliamentary ministry, or to see why they should not stand or fall together. As yet the new French constitution has not had time to exhibit that which is a constant feature of the English constitution, viz.,

a government headed by the chief of the dominant political party. When that time comes the office of premier ought, one would suppose, to merge in the office of president. Possibly the existence of numerous political parties, and the open disloyalty to the existing constitution professed by some of them, may retard the simplification of the French governmental system. Other European countries professing constitutional government appear to follow the English practice. The Swiss republic is so peculiarly situated that it is hardly fair to compare it with any other. But it is interesting to note that, while the rulers of the states are elected annually, the same persons are generally re-elected. *Representation.*—The questions connected with representation are too numerous to be discussed with advantage here. Two recent changes of great importance may be noticed in the English system,—the vote by ballot, and the partial introduction of what is called the minority vote. By the latter, in a constituency returning three members, each elector has only two votes, and a minority exceeding one-third can thus elect at least one of the three. The representation of minorities is a device of political theorists, and the chief result of its partial application has been to weaken the influence of the large constituencies. The chief anomalies of the English system are the inequality of electoral districts and the multiplicity of votes. A town of 500 electors returns as many candidates as a constituency of ten times that number. On the other hand, while one man has a single vote only, his neighbour, by various qualifications, may be an elector in several constituencies. In each case there is a revolution of the only theory on which the representative system as a whole can be founded—the equality of the voters. The first of these anomalies is admittedly waiting the convenience of political parties. The second has been recently aggravated by the creation of new university constituencies, consisting almost entirely of persons who had already the right of voting under the ordinary qualification. The anomaly becomes a gross abuse in the practice of creating what are known as *ragged* votes. The simple remedy would be to require that each elector should be registered in one constituency only.

*The Relation between Government and Laws.*—It might be supposed that, if any general proposition could be established about government, it would be one establishing some constant relation between the form of a government and the character of the laws which it enforces. The technical language of the English school of jurists is certainly of a kind to encourage such a supposition. "The entire body of law in force in a country at any moment," regarded as existing solely by the fiat of the governing power. "There is no maxim more entirely in the spirit of this jurisprudence than the following:—"The real legislator is not he by whom the law was first ordained, but he by whom will it continues to be law." The whole of the vast repository of rules which make up the law of England—the rules of practice in the courts, the local customs of a county or a manor, the principles formulated by the sagacity of generations of judges, equally with the statutes for the year, are conceived of by the school of Austin as created by the will of the sovereign and the two Houses of Parliament, or so much of them as would now satisfy the definition of "sovereignty." It would be out of place to examine here the difficulties which embarrass this definition, but the statement we have made carries on its face a demonstration of its own falsity in fact. There is probably no government in the world of which it could be said that it might change at will the substantive laws of the country and still remain a government. However well it may suit the purposes of analytical jurisprudence to define a law as a command not by sovereign to subject, we must not forget that this is only a definition, and that the assumption it rests upon is,

to the student of society, anything but a universal fact. From his point of view the cause of a particular law is not one but many, and of the many the deliberate will of a legislator may not be one. Sir Henry Maine has illustrated this point by the case of the great tax gathering empires of the East, in which the absolute masters of millions of men never dreams of making anything in the nature of a law at all. This view is no doubt as strange to the English statesman as to the English jurist. The most conspicuous work of government in his view is that of parliamentary legislation. For a large portion of the year the attention of the whole people is bent on the questions of a body of men who are constantly engaged in making new laws. It is natural for us, therefore, to think of law as a factitious thing, made and unmade by the people who happen for the time being to constitute parliament. We forget how small a proportion the laws actually devised by parliament are of the law actually prevailing in the land. No European country has undergone so many changes in the form of government as France. Republic, constitutional monarchy, and empire have there succeeded each other again and again in the course of a century. It is surprising how little effect these political revolutions have had on the body of French law. The change from empire to republic is not marked by greater legislative changes than the change from a Conservative to a Liberal ministry in England would be.

These reflections should make us cautious in accepting any general proposition about forms of government and the spirit of them laws. We must remember, also, that the classification of governments according to the numerical proportion between governors and governed supplies but a small basis for generalization. What parallel can be drawn between a small town, in which half the population are slaves, and every freeman has a direct voice in the government, and a great modern state, in which there is not a single slave, while freemen exercise their sovereign powers at long intervals, and through the action of delegates and representatives? Propositions as vague as those of Montesquieu may indeed be asserted with more or less plausibility. But to take any leading head of positive law, and to say that monarchies treat it in one way, aristocracies and democracies in another, is a different matter. Laws affecting trade might be expected to depend on the more or less popular character of the government. Yet would it be safe to say that monarchy discourages, that democracy encourages, free trade? France under the empire was more free-trading than France under the republic. If there is any difference at all between Great Britain and her colonies it is that the latter are generally supposed to be more democratic than the mother country. Yet protection rules the young democracies, while free trade reigns at home. The principle has indeed been broadly laid down that oligarchical governments interfere more actively and more extensively in the affairs of their subjects than popular governments. We shall have occasion to show directly that the popularization of government in England has up to this time been attended by a striking increase in the sphere of state action.

## II. SPHERE OF GOVERNMENT

We may now ask, What is the appropriate sphere of government? What kind of business does it undertake, and what kind of business ought it to undertake? By what limits is its action to be restricted? Here too the field is occupied by disputed theories and diversified practices. And the sphere assigned to state action in different ages and countries varies as widely as the form of government.

The action of the state, or sovereign power, or government in a civilized community shapes itself into the three-fold functions of legislation, judicature, and administration. The two first are perfectly well defined, and the last includes

all the kinds of state action not included in the other two. It is with inference to legislation and administration that the line of permissible state action requires to be drawn. There is no doubt about the province of the judicature, and that function of government may therefore be dismissed with a very few observations.

The complete separation of the three functions marks a high point of social organization. In simple societies the same officers discharge all the duties which we divide between the legislator, the administrator, and the judge. The acts themselves are not consciously recognized as being of different kinds. The evolution of all the parts of a highly complex government from one original is illustrated in a striking way by the history of English institutions. All the conspicuous parts of the modern government, however little they may resemble each other now, can be followed back without a break to their common origin. Parliament, the cabinet, the privy council, the courts of law, all carry us back to the same *radix* in the council of the feudal king.

*Judicature*.—The business of judicature, requiring as it does the possession of a high degree of technical skill and knowledge, is generally entrusted by the sovereign body or people to a separate and independent class of functionaries. In England, the appellate jurisdiction of the House of Lords still maintains in theory the connexion between the supreme legislative and the supreme judicial functions. It is only recently that the important subject of divorces passed from the legislative chambers to the courts of law. In some of the States of the American Union the judicial functions of the upper house are still maintained after the example of the English constitution as it existed when those States were founded. In England there is also still a considerable amount of judicial work in which the people takes its share. The inferior magistracies, except in populous places, are in the hands of private persons. And by the jury system the ascertainment of fact has been committed in very large measure to persons selected indiscriminately from the mass of the people, subject to a small property qualification. But the higher functions of the judicature are exercised by persons whom the law has jealously fenced off from external interference and control. The independence of the bench distinguishes the English system from every other. It was established in principle as a barrier against monarchical power, and hence has become one of the traditional ensigns of popular government. In many of the American States, the spirit of democracy has demanded the subjection of the judiciary to popular control. The judges are elected directly by the people, and hold office for a short term, instead of being appointed, as in England, by the responsible executive, and removable only by a vote of the two Houses. There is not the smallest sign that democratic opinion in England is tending in this direction. At the same time the constitution of the United States has assigned to the supreme court of the Union a perfectly unique position, standing in singular contrast to the degraded condition of many of the State judiciaries. The supreme court is the guardian of the constitution. It has to judge whether a measure passed by the legislative powers is not void by reason of being unconstitutional, and it may therefore have to veto the deliberate resolutions of both Houses of Congress and the president. It is admitted that this singular experiment in government has been completely justified by its success.

<sup>1</sup> It is worth noting that direct election to offices—supposed to be characteristic of the democratic spirit—has no place in English political ideas. The few instances in which it occurs are regarded with suspicion. The election of the coroner by the freeholders is universally condemned. In the few parishes where the clergyman may be appointed by the parishioners, the right is often left to be exercised by the bishop.



*Limits of State Interference in Legislation and Administration.*—The question of the limits of state action does not arise with reference to the judiciary. The enforcement of the laws is a duty which the sovereign power must of absolute necessity take upon itself. But to what conduct of the citizens the laws shall extend is the most perplexing of all political questions. The correlative question with regard to the executive would be what works of public convenience should the state undertake through its own servants. The whole question of the sphere of government may be stated in these two questions.—What should the state do for its citizens? and how far should the state interfere with the action of its citizens? These questions are the direct outcome of modern popular government, they are equally unknown to the despotic democracies of ancient times and to despotic governments at all times. Accordingly ancient political philosophy, rich as it is in all kinds of suggestions, has very little to say that has any bearing on the sphere of government. The conception that the power of the state can be and ought to be limited belongs to the times of "government by discussion," to use Mr. Bagshot's expression,—to the time when the sovereign number is divided by class interests, and when the action of the majority has to be carried out in the face of strong minorities, capable of making themselves heard. Aristotle does indeed dwell on one aspect of the question. He would limit the action of the government in the sense of leaving as little as possible to the personal will of the governors, whether one or many. His maxim is that the law should reign. But that the sphere of law itself should be restricted, otherwise than by general principles of morality, is a consideration wholly foreign to ancient philosophy. The state is conceived as acting like a just man, and justice in the state is the same thing as justice in the individual. The Greek institutions which the philosophers are unanimous in commending are precisely those which the most state-ridden nations of modern times would agree in repudiating.

*Importance of this Question in English Politics.*—Limitation, then, being a principle known only to free governments, we naturally look to English political history for its elucidation, and the speculative and practical treatment of this question is perhaps the most valuable contribution made by England to political science. From the time of the Revolution, the principle that there is a limit to the permissible action of government has been tacitly admitted. The theories which restricted the powers of the constitutional king by founding them on popular consent tended also to the restriction of the sphere of government in general. The connexion between the two may be seen very clearly in Locke. Government was created by the voluntary union of men in political society, and the object for which they agreed to unite was the preservation of their property. The scope of government is therefore limited by this its original object. "Though men, when they enter into society, give up the liberty, equality, and executive power they had in the state of nature into the hands of society, to be so far disposed of by the legislature as the good of society shall require, yet, it being only with an intention in every one the better to preserve himself, his liberty, and property, the power of the society or legislature constituted by them can never be supposed to extend further than the common good." The practical application of these principles is to be found in his essay on *Toleration*. The business of the state being the protection of body and goods, it has no right to interfere with the religious worship or opinions of its citizens. The existence of religious dissent on a large scale kept up the practical importance of this theory. Even in the extreme absolutism of the putative monarchs, the curious doctrine of passive obedience recognizes the same principle. Although the will of the

sovereign ought never to be resisted, there is a line of action beyond which he ought never to pass.

Another historical fact of some importance is the long continued alienation of the aristocratic classes from the reigning family during the post-Revolutionary period. In the 18th century the natural champions of monarchical power were in opposition. Their vast local influence, which might otherwise have gone to aggrandize the influence of the crown, was really employed to thwart it. Their thus springing up in the most conservative classes of society a strong feeling of jealousy for local independence, and a standing dislike of Government interference. Squires Western, in *Ten Years*, may be taken as the type of the country party of the period. His idea of intellectual conversation is abusing the Government over a bottle. Nothing in the now forgotten notions of his state disgusts him more than his affected sympathy with the politicians then in power. The silent disaffection of the most powerful section of society was a most effectual bulwark against any extension of the central power. It has been remarked by an acute observer that the weakness of government in the 18th century suffered even public institutions to assert their local independence. Corporations of every kind enjoyed the most complete liberty of action, and, freed from state control, became the private patrimony of their members. The same sort of resistance to state action has been repeated in the last century. The real adherents of the crown, and the leaders of provincial society, the aristocracy, the county gentry, and the clergy, have generally been in opposition to ministers. It is a fact not without significance that the first constitutional question of this reign was raised by Sir Robert Peel, the leader of the Conservative party.

Again, the exhaustive discussion of all political measures, which for two centuries has been a fixed habit of English public life, has of itself established the principle that there are assignable limits to the action of the state. Not that the limits ever have been assigned in terms, but popular sentiment has more or less vaguely fenced off departments of conduct as sacred from the interference of the law. Phrases like "the liberty of the subject," the "sanctity of private property," "an Englishman's house is his castle," "the rights of conscience," are the commonplaces of political discussion, and tell the state, "Thus far shalt thou go and no farther."

*State and Church.*—The side on which the legitimate province of government has been most debated is that on which it comes in contact with religion. High ecclesiastical theories draw the lines of restriction as chiefly as voluntarism, but what they exclude is state control and not state support. The Roman Catholics, the High Church party in England, and the Free Church in Scotland, all unite in protesting against the intrusion of the secular government into spiritual affairs. This assertion of a spiritual domain lying beyond the sphere of government, and sacred from its interference, unfortunately implies that there is another authority from which, on religious matters, the Government ought to take its instructions. The duty of a national recognition of religion—implying compulsion of the most personal character—is strongly asserted by the very persons who denounce state control as illegitimate and tyrannical. The exclusion of the state from the spiritual domain is, in fact, not founded on any recovered theory of the functions of government at all, but on the belief in a divinely appointed order for spiritual things, which it is the duty of the state to enforce. An attempt to base this position on general principles has, indeed, been made by Mr. Gladstone in his work on *Church and State*. Holding that the state is a moral person, he argues that its

action must be regulated by conscience, and that its religious obligations are the same as those of the individual man. It must therefore recognize and practise a religion, and the true religion is that of the Christian Church, of which the English Establishment is a branch. That religion, with its divinely organized system of Episcopacy, the state should enforce in every way short of physical persecution. It should exclude heretics from office and privilege, but it should not put them in prison. Mr Gladstone's book was the occasion of a controversy which doubtless had some effect on subsequent political events. Macaulay<sup>2</sup> stated the Whig view of the subject—holding that while the state may not positively endow an established church, it may not persecute for dissent in any way whatever. Government has principally to deal with the material wants of society, and with the protection of life and property. While this is the main end of government, it may pursue such secondary ends as the promotion of education and religion, the encouragement of arts, &c., but the primary end must not be sacrificed to the secondary end. The state is therefore not a moral person at all, any more than a railway company or a hospital, and government is certainly not an institution for the promotion of religion, but, if it finds it expedient, it may justly support Presbyterianism in Scotland, Protestant Episcopacy in England, and Roman Catholicism in Ireland. It is needless to say that Macaulay makes no attempt to define the limits within which the government may thus provide for the good of society. These may be said to have been the views of Liberal politicians and Utilitarian churchmen. On the other hand, the religious theory of government, as expounded in Dr Arnold's Oxford *Lectures on History*, is based on the conception of the ideal church and state as one. Here there can be no bounds to the legitimate action of the state except its conformity with religious truth. And Dr Arnold does not hesitate to forecast an ideal state of society in which disbelief in the Christian religion shall so outrage the moral sense of the community that it may fittingly be put down by the strong arm of the law. The weakness of all theological speculations about government is that they are fitted only for local use. The theory of government cannot well be discussed to much purpose with a disputant who requires a series of the logical propositions to be taken for granted.

*The Laissez-faire Theory.*—*Mill*.—A more profitable line of inquiry has been followed by writers of the economic school. The most important of these is John Stuart Mill, whose essay on *Liberty*, together with the concluding chapters of his treatise on *Political Economy*, gives a tolerably complete view of the principles of government. The leaning of political economists is towards what is called the *laissez-faire* or non-interference doctrine. There is a general presumption against the interference of Government, which is only to be overcome by very strong evidence of necessity. Governmental action is generally less effective than voluntary action. The necessary duties of Government are so burdensome, that to increase them destroys its efficiency. Its powers are already so great that individual freedom is constantly in danger. As a general rule, nothing which can be done by the voluntary agency of individuals should be left to the state. Each man is the best judge of his own interests. But, on the other hand, when the thing itself is admitted to be useful or necessary, and it cannot be effected by voluntary agency, or when it is of such a nature that the consumer cannot be considered capable of judging of the quality supplied, then Mr Mill would allow the state to interfere. Thus the education of children, and even of adults, would fairly come within the province of the state. Mr Mill even goes so far as to

admit that, where a restriction of the hours of labour, or the establishment of a periodical holiday, is proved to be beneficial to labourers as a class, but cannot be carried out voluntarily on account of the refusal of individuals to co-operate, Government may justifiably compel them to co-operate. Still further, Mr Mill would desire to see some control exercised by the Government over the operations of those voluntary associations which, consisting of large numbers of shareholders, necessarily leave their affairs in the hands of one or a few persons. In short, Mr Mill's general rule against state action admits of many important exceptions, founded on no principle less vague than that of public expediency. The essay on *Liberty* is mainly concerned with freedom of individual character, and its arguments apply to control exercised, not only by the state, but by society in the form of public opinion. The leading principle is that of Humboldt, "the absolute and essential importance of human development in its richest diversity." Humboldt broadly excluded education, religion, and morals from the action, direct and indirect, of the state. Mill, as we have seen, conceives education to be within the province of the state, but he would confine its action to compelling parents to educate their children.

*Herbert Spencer*.—The most thoroughgoing opponent of state action, however, is Mr Herbert Spencer, in his *Social Statics*, published in 1850, he holds it to be the essential duty of Government to *protect*—to maintain men's rights to life, to personal liberty, and to property, and the theory that the Government ought to undertake other offices besides that of protector he regards as an untenable theory. Each man has a right to the fullest exercise of all his faculties, compatible with the same right in others. This is the fundamental law of equal freedom, which it is the duty and the only duty of the state to enforce. If the state goes beyond this duty, it becomes, not a protector, but an aggressor. Thus all state regulations of commerce, religious establishments, all Government relief of the poor, all state systems of education and of sanitary superintendence, even the state currency and the post-office, stand condemned, not only as ineffective for their respective purposes, but as involving violations of man's natural liberty. Many of the principles enunciated in this book are not reconcilable with the later views of the author, but he would still appear to maintain his theory of government to the fullest extent. Thus, in the *Principles of Sociology*, published in 1877, he distinguishes between the militant type of society and the industrial type. The former is founded on the principle of compulsory co-operation, while the latter is framed on the principle of voluntary co-operation. He vaguely indicates "a possible future social type, differing as much from the industrial as this does from the militant,—a type which, having a sustaining system more fully developed than any one known at present, will use the products of industry neither for maintaining a militant organization nor exclusively for material aggrandizement, but will devote them to the carrying on of higher activities." Of the two actually existing types, the militant is distinguished by a strong and the industrial by a feeble Governmental system. Reversing the analogy suggested by individual organisms, he holds the latter to be a higher and better type than the former.<sup>2</sup> And he maintains that military activity in a state distinguished by a high degree of industrial development produces a recurrence to the militant type of institutions generally. Thus, in Germany, the dealings of Bismarck with the ecclesiastical powers, and the measures taken for

<sup>2</sup> *Principles of Sociology*, vol. 1, London, 1877. In a postscript to part II Mr Spencer explains the origin of this seeming paradox. "If individual organisms, high or low, have to maintain their lives by offensive or defensive activities at both, social organisms, except during the militant stage of their evolution, have to maintain their lives by

<sup>2</sup> *Critical and Historical Essays*, vol. 1.

centralizing the state control of railways, are instances of a more secure *status* established by law. In England, the peaceful period from 1815 to 1850 is contrasted with the militant period since 1850. The latter has been marked by the usurpations of military officialism, by sanitary dictation, by coercive philanthropy, by compulsory education, by an unhesitating faith in state judgment, and by a general disregard of the principles of free government, even on the side of the party which in the previous period effected changes in the direction of freedom.

*Tendency of recent Legislation*.—Turning from political theory to political practice, let us see how the legislation of the last fifty years in England has drawn the line between legitimate and illegitimate state action. The period that has elapsed since the passing of the Reform Act of 1832 has been one of great legislative activity. In no former period has legislation been so completely under the control of public opinion, or so directly affected by open discussion of the principles of projected measures. It will be of some interest, therefore, to inquire how the most enlightened political community in the world has, during the period of its fullest freedom, defined the business of government.

*Reduction of State Action—Religion*.—The cases in which Government interference has been abolished or greatly limited during this period are mainly two—in matters of opinion (especially religious opinion), and in matters of contract. The principle that the state ought to maintain some form of religion has been surrendered by the disestablishment of the Irish Church. The disqualifications, political and civil, of dissenters, have, with a very few and not very important exceptions, been removed. The last remnant of the old rule, making witnesses incompetent on religious grounds, was removed by the Act enabling persons to give evidence without an oath. A few statutes making various forms of irreligion punishable still remain, but they are never enforced, and any attempt to enforce them would almost certainly end in their formal repeal. State prosecutions for expression of opinion have almost entirely ceased, and practically the only instrument of control now left is the law of libel. Under the influence of the judges, that law has, during the period in question, been uniformly interpreted in a sense favourable to the freedom of discussion. One of the few remaining restrictions on religious freedom is the principle, acted on in several recent cases, that a contract may be broken if its object is to facilitate the expression of irreligious opinions.<sup>1</sup>

At the same time there appears to be a tendency to distinguish between merely irreligious opinions and opinions pronounced to be immoral. Convictions have lately been obtained for publishing and selling books advocating opinions on certain moral and social questions which appeared to a jury to be calculated to deprave the morals of the people. But here again the distinction has been authoritatively drawn between such views when presented in a scientific form, and adapted to a scientific audience, and the same views offered openly to the unscientific public. Utterable as such distinctions are, they manifest a tendency on the part of the courts to confine the prosecution of opinion within the principle of the law against indecent publications. It may further be added that, with one notable exception,—the Public Worship Regulation Act,—the dealings of the state with the church have been confined within a very narrow compass. The endowment of new sees, for instance, although sanctioned by the state, is left to the voluntary contributions of the public.

*Contract*.—Freedom of contract, in general, has been greatly advanced by the success of the free-trade agitation in 1843, which was not so much a protest against state regula-

tion as a demand for a cheap supply of food. Since that time, the principle that the state should leave men to make what bargains they please, without attempting to encourage any particular industry or to favour any special class, has taken rank as a maxim of universal application. One class of contracts—those between master and servant—long remained an exception to the general rule. Breach of such contracts by the servant was treated as a criminal offence, and the combination of servants to obtain a rise of wages as a conspiracy. A series of statutes, the last of which was passed a few years ago, has abolished the criminal character of the breach of the contract of service, except in a few cases. The abolition of the laws against usury in 1857 is another instance, the authorization of trading companies with limited liability is another. The last great legislative measure before parliament (the Criminal Code Bill of 1879) proposes to do away with the old offences of maintenance and champerty. Besides the classes regarded by law as under disability to contract (infants, lunatics, and married women), a few doubtful instances of protected persons might still be named. Thus expectant heirs are treated in the spirit of the old laws against usury. Seamen are not allowed to make a charge upon their wages. In certain employments specified in the Truck Act wages are not allowed to be paid otherwise than in coin. The principle of free trade is outraged in its own name by the legal rule which treats contracts made "in restraint of trade" as void.

*Incases of State Action*.—The enumeration of new restrictive measures, and instances of increased state interference within the same period, would occupy a much more formidable list. A rough classification only will be here attempted. We shall take first, interference for the protection of definite classes of persons.

*Education of Children*.—This is perhaps the most conspicuous, as it is certainly the most beneficial and the least disputed, of the recent encroachments of the state. The progress of opinion and legislation on this subject has been singularly rapid. Beginning with Government grant, in aid of education, strenuously resisted on grounds going to the very root of the question of legitimate state interference, the system has now culminated in a network of state supported and state-administered schools spread over the whole country. That the state should compel parents to educate their children would only be a slight departure, if any, from the general principle imposing duties on parents and disabilities on children. Under the present system the state not only compels the parent to educate, but itself provides, and in great measure pays for, the education. A generation of discussion has, however, drawn very distinctly the line beyond which this advance of state authority must not proceed. Compulsory state education is for children only, and may be justified by the general argument which justifies state protection to the helpless, it is elementary only, and it is secular only.

*Regulation of the Labour of Children and Women*.—The long series of Factory Acts is the best example of the steady and persistent advance of Government control in this direction. Here the line of protection is considerably advanced, but is again carefully drawn under male adults, although these of necessity share in the benefits of the protection in all employments where their work requires the co-operation of women and children. See FACTORY ACTS.

*Regulation of Dangerous Employments*.—Of these the Mines Regulation Acts are perhaps the best example. Here the Government actually lays down the rules under which alone these employments are suffered to be carried on. Here the principle that adults are capable of looking after themselves is overruled by the dangerous character of the employment.

In all these cases the action of the state is defended on

<sup>1</sup> *E.g.*, a contract to let a hall for a lecture advocating atheistic principles.

the ground that the persons protected are unable sufficiently to protect themselves, and the principle adopted is that of prevention instead of mere punishment for breach of duty. Hence an enormous army of inspectors is required for the work of control.

Another class of interferences is justified on the ground of public health, and these, in respect of the amount of state supervision required, stand next to the protective measures already enumerated. The common law of nuisance recognizes the principle that any source of contagion or discomfort set up by an individual is an injury to those who may be affected by it, which they may call upon the state to suppress. The Sanitary Acts interpose the remedy at an earlier stage, and by the usual apparatus of Government of the arts which they profess. The largest measure on this subject is the Public Health Act, and the most extensive development of the principle is the lending of money by the Government to municipalities for the erection of healthy dwelling houses for labourers. Personal freedom is more directly affected by measures like the Vaccination Act, for which, however, the double ground of the helplessness of the subjects and the prevention of danger amounting to nuisance may be taken. The least defensible of all the measures of this class are those relating to the adulteration of various kinds of food. The fraudulent or negligent supply of food injurious to health is an injury which may be appropriately punished by awarding compensation to the person injured, and inflicting punishment on the delinquent. But under the last Act (Sale of Food and Drugs Act, 1875) it is a criminal offence to sell goods of a quality not asked for, and the usual staff of analysts and inspectors is established to facilitate detection. The mighty engine of Government detains the exact percentage of water which the dairyman may put in his milk and the publican in his gin.

Next come the cases in which the Government either aids or itself undertakes works of public convenience. The state monopoly of the post office is the most conspicuous example, and we have recently seen it extended by the acquisition of the telegraphs. Less directly the state has acquired control of the locomotive system, by granting compulsory powers of various sorts and a partial monopoly to railway companies, and by imposing certain regulations on them. This department of state activity has been greatly increased by the operations of the Public Works Loans Commission, which lends money to local bodies for such purposes as the erection of baths and wash houses, improving rivers, harbours, and towns, building light-houses and public libraries, and the like.

The assertion of state control over endowments is another marked feature of the period. Except in this way, Government has not, in England at least, interfered with the higher sort of education to any great extent. But most of the endowed schools and the universities have been subjected to inquiry, and remodelled according to what are understood to be the demands of the age. Almost every kind of corporation has been revised in the same way, the most notable and scandalous exception being the numerous and wealthy corporations of the city of London. The history of these reforms reveals a perfectly clear rationale of the relations existing between an endowed institution and the state. All endowments are privileges created by the state in the way of exception to the universal law of law against perpetuities—the rule which limits the operation of dead man's wills, and makes each generation master of its own resources. When the purposes of an institution cease to be useful, or its organization is seen to be defective, it is the right and duty of the state to withdraw the privilege altogether, or continue it under new conditions. All endowments become, in virtue of this rule, the property of the state, and how it shall deal with them becomes a

question of statesmanship, not of interference with private interests. Under the name of vested interests, all existing rights of individuals are, in principle, treated as such. These are two correlative principles—the right of the state to revise all endowments, and the obligation to respect vested interests in any such revision—have ceased to be disputable in English politics.

A similar extension of state control is to be seen in the organization of the *professions*—*e. g.*, persons licensed to practice particular arts. The church, like the army, is not, properly speaking, a profession, and its regulations belong to the same class as those of the army or the civil service. The *liberal professions* are the various grades of lawyers and medical men. They have an exclusive monopoly of the arts which they profess. The protection of this monopoly was long the only connection between them and the Government. They were left to the management of self-governing societies or corporations. Within our own generation there has been, not only a marked increase of state control over the professions, but a marked tendency to extend it to occupations hitherto uncontrollable. The system of medical licentiate is years by year becoming more stringent and more centralized. A recent Act provides for the more efficient testing of the qualifications of solicitors. The bar, which has hitherto with immense practical wisdom governed itself by means of voluntary societies, is now treated with a parliamentary constitution, settling the conditions of admission, examination, discipline, and dismissal. The free professions are demanding the like recognition and supervision by the state. A bill is now (1874) before parliament for organizing the professors of schoolmasters in the higher class of schools, and elementary schoolmasters are claiming to be included in its scope. The business of buying and selling stocks and shares has narrowly escaped, if it has escaped, the rules and regulations of an act of parliament. A commission was actually appointed a few years ago to investigate the practices of brokers and jobbers, and one of its recommendations was that the Stock Exchange should forthwith become a corporation. The last interference of this sort was the appointment of a committee of the House of Commons, at the instance of the London retail traders, to inquire into the working of what are called co-operative stores. Inquiry does not of course imply interference, and a committee or a commission is often a convenient way of stopping the mouths of agitators whom it might not be convenient to ignore altogether. Futile as the remedy may be, the first thought of every aggrieved class is to lay its wrongs before parliament.

*Protection of things from Excessive Consumption.*—Another class of interferences may be described, in the most general terms, as measures taken for the protection of things which would otherwise perish, or greatly diminish, by reason of excessive use. Statutes of this sort have greatly multiplied during the last fifty years. There is hardly any kind of animal, which men think worth catching or eating, without its statutory close time. The ostensible reason for this kind of legislation is that salmon, let us say, or oysters, are a very important article of food, and unless men are restrained from pursuing them to excess, the whole breed would ultimately be extinguished, or so reduced in number as to be of little use. Another and less obvious reason is that animals of the protected order are necessary for the recreation of a certain class of gentlemen, who, in the interests of their own pleasures, must be restrained from carrying them to excess. Thus no gun must be lifted against grouse before the 12th of August, or against partridge before the 1st of September, so that next year there may still be grouse and partridges in the land. The great majority of these enactments belong in spirit to the

game law, but many of them are genuinely intended for the perpetration of pernicious supplies of food. Some of them, like the Sea-birds Protection Act, or the Small Birds Protection Act, are dictated by some sentimental fear of the extinction of such animals. As a whole, they are among the least defensible of the modern extensions of state power.

*Coercion for Moral Purposes.*—The measures hitherto noticed may in general be justified either on the ground of the inability of the persons protected to help themselves, or on the ground that some good to society as a whole, or to large portions of it, is secured thereby. Another class of measures openly aims at the moral improvement of the individuals affected by them, and in this class there has been an amazing and alarming increase. The laws against gaming are one of the best examples. At common law a wager was a contract enforceable by the tribunals like any other. Not content with declining to enforce wagers, the state went further, and tried to put them down altogether. It made lotteries illegal. It visited with heavy penalties the keeping of betting-houses, all betting in public places the publication of betting lists, &c. Games which lead to betting are put under the restraint of a licensing system, and in some parts of the provinces, the state orders its citizens not to play billiards after eleven o'clock at night. To this class belongs the severe code regulating what is called the liquor traffic. Through the agency of licensing magistrates, the state first of all limits the number of public-houses, then it dictates directly the hours during which liquor may be bought and sold, and in Scotland and Ireland it goes further, and prohibits altogether the sale of liquor on Sunday. A committee of the House of Lords has touched the highest point of government control in proposing to empower local authorities to buy up all the public houses in their districts, and carry on the business for themselves. There is a simultaneous increasing tendency to interfere with people's amusements, sports as being just down as immoral, music and dancing require licenses very closely granted, the grip of the lord chamberlain over the London theatres is tightened, and so on. The course of moral legislation, in fact, threatens to sweep away every barrier to the encroachments of the state. The extended range of Government interference in other things has been accompanied, as we have seen, by a very distinct recognition of limits, either in the rights of the individual conscience, or in the capacity of adult manhood to manage its own affairs. But Acts of Parliament for improving the moral characters of men seem to recognize no limit at all. And it is a singular fact that, while this kind of legislation, under existing social arrangements, fails to affect the well-to-do classes, and passes chiefly on the comparatively poor, it is becoming more and more identified with the popular party in politics, and gathers strength with every addition to the popular element in government.

We have hitherto confined our attention to simple as opposed to compound forms of government, and to the supreme as opposed to the subordinate functions of government. The complete treatment of the subject would require us to take some notice of the (1) association of several communities, with separate governments under one sovereignty, and (2) of the subordinate organizations for carrying on the government of localities, under the supreme government.

*1. Federal Government.*—As this is the subject of a separate article (vol. 1, p. 61), we need only notice here the cases in which one of the associated Governments is the ultimate seat of sovereign power—the others being the colonies or dependencies. England is, of course, by far the most illustrious example of a country so situated, and her relations with the subordinate communities exhibit much variety of form. One leading distinction may be

drawn—namely, between the communities which are allowed to govern themselves and those which, either as being unfit for self government, like India and Egypt, or on account of the military necessities of the situation, as Malta and Gibraltar, are governed by the officers of the English Government. In the subject dependencies, as the latter may be called, the government is usually carried on by a governor and council, nominated by the crown, and holding office for various terms of years. The council, as a general rule, consists of the higher officers of the dependency, such as the chief justice or the attorney general. The governor and council are strictly the delegates of the home Government and have no legal or constitutional status of their own. The recently acquired island of Cyprus occupies an anomalous position in the British state system. The English Government holds it, not as sovereign, but as lieutenant general of the sovereign, the sultan of Turkey. The government of the island is vested in a commissioner who takes his orders, not from the colonial, but from the foreign office. As a general rule the relations between the mother country and her dependencies lie under the charge of a special department of state—the colonial office.

In free dependencies the alternative is between some kind of confederation with the mother country, whereby the dependencies shall have a representative vote in the supreme government and the practical independence of the dependency in all but international affairs. In the French system the deputies of Algiers and other colonies sit in the supreme legislature along with the other representatives of France. In the English system distance alone would render such a scheme impracticable, and, even where distance would be little or no hindrance, there has been no desire on either side for any such connexion. Dependencies like the Isle of Man and the Channel Islands are as completely separated from England as New Zealand and Canada. The free dependencies have local constitutions framed on the model of the home Government—two chambers of legislation, a governor nominated by the crown, and a ministry dependent on parliament. The governor is supposed to stand to the ministry and parliament as the crown to the ministry and parliament at home, but it is to be remembered that the governor is, properly speaking, the representative not of the English crown but of the English Government. It is from the colonial secretary that the governor takes his instructions, and the colonial secretary and his colleagues take their instructions from the House of Commons. And, just as the practice of the constitution has made it impossible for the monarch to resist the wishes of parliament, so it is established that the governor, as representing England, shall not veto enactments of the colonial legislature. Just as in England the House of Commons invariably determines the fate of a ministry, so does the lower or popular house in a colonial legislature. It is needless to say that this is a very great advance on the old theory of colonial relations. Beginning in special grants or charters granted to individuals or corporations, the English colonies in North America held their liberties by the grace of the crown. The successful revolt of the colonies taught the mother country the folly of supposing that Englishmen in America would consent to be governed by Englishmen at home.

Although colonial institutions are modelled as nearly as may be after the original type, they are not entirely free from questions of fundamental difficulty. The central question of government—Whose will is to prevail?—has at the present time (1873) been agitating two of the greatest of the colonies, a deadlock between the council and the assembly in Victoria being referred to England, and the governor-general of Canada refusing to dismiss a lieutenant-governor on the advice of his responsible ministry.

The subjection of colonies to the home Government is still retained in two important cases. The colonies have no voice whatever in determining the nature of their relations with other communities, the question of peace or war is decided for them by the home Government. Again, all the colonies, whatever may be their powers of local self-government, seek justice in the last resort from the sovereign council.

**2 Local Government**—As the business of society at large must be undertaken by the supreme government, so the local business of the subdivisions of society must be undertaken by local sub-governments. Local government reports on a small scale the features of the supreme government, but its business is chiefly judicial and administrative. The most marked distinction lies between rural and urban communities—between the county and the borough. Self-government or representative government is the rule in the latter, the exception in the former. In England, since the Municipal Corporations Act, the affairs of all urban communities, except the city of London and a few unimportant boroughs, are managed by the direct representatives of the inhabitants. In the counties the control of affairs rests with the justices of the peace, who are nominated by the crown exclusively from the class of gentry.

The degree of control exercised by the supreme government over local governments is a point of first-rate importance in the constitution of a country. Among five countries England and France stand at opposite ends of the scale,—England being characterized by great local independence, France by strict central control. Thus it is said that, even under the republic, the minister of education can say that at a given hour all the children in all the schools of France are learning the same lesson. The habitual dependence of the French people upon the action of the state has been described as a survival from the times of imperial despotism which may be expected to disappear gradually under the influence of freedom. A step in this direction has certainly been taken in the proposal to allow communes to elect their own *maires*, and the abuse of the prefectural system by a recent ministry ought to lead to some diminution of its enormous powers. On the other hand the increased activity of the state, which, as we have already seen, has accompanied the establishment of popular government on a wide basis in England, has shown itself also in increased centralization. The new functions—educational, sanitary, and other—imposed on local bodies are controlled by the supreme government through central boards. In 1871 the local government board was constituted to take over the powers of control over local boards hitherto exercised by various high officers of state, the poor law board, and the privy council. More recently the Prison Act of 1877 has transferred to the secretary of state the powers hitherto exercised by the local prison authorities, and has made the cost of maintaining local prisons a burden on the public funds.

As we have already said, the work of local governments generally embraces very little that can properly be called legislation. They have a power of making by-laws for carrying out within their district the purposes of a general law, and over that power the courts of justice exercise a vigilant control. Parliament in England has hitherto looked with great distrust on subordinate legislatures, and it is a common saying that the jealousy of the House of Commons is one of the reasons why the metropolis remains without municipal government. But it would now be generally admitted that the legislation demanded of parliament every year is greatly beyond its effective powers. There are indications of an approach to something that may be described as home rule—a name which inspires more distrust than the reality. Parliament makes no pretence of consistency

in legislating, separately for England, Scotland, and Ireland. To take only notorious examples,—the Irish Land Act, the Disestablishment Act, and the Sunday Liquor Act of Ireland, and the Forbes Mackenzie Act of Scotland are instances of legislation according to the supposed wishes of the people specially affected. Irish and Scotch business, thus, in the House of Commons more and more to fall into the hands of Irish and Scotch members, and the interference of others is not unfrequently resented as an intrusion. Again, private bill legislation, regulated as it is by ascertained general principles, has come to be in fact, as in form, a purely judicial proceeding, which might well be relegated, as it no doubt one day will be relegated, to local tribunals. Another indication of the same tendency is to be found in what is called permissive legislation, which leaves to local authorities the responsibility of deciding how far a given principle shall be applied. (R.)

GOWER, JOHN (1325?–1408), one of the best of the English minor poets, was born in or about the year 1325, but the date is not exactly known. It has been conclusively shown by Sir Harris Nicolas that he belonged to the county of Kent. His family was wealthy, and he seems to have had various country houses. So far as we know he did not marry till 1397, when he was said to be Agnes Groundolf. He was an intimate friend of Chaucer's, but there is no evidence to prove that they were fellow-students. A few years after his marriage, Gower became blind, and had to give up writing. He spent his declining years in the priory of St Mary Overes, or, as it is now called, St Saviour's, in Southwark, where his monument is still to be seen.

Near the close of the *Confessio Amantis*, Gower puts the following compliment to Chaucer into the mouth of Venus —

“And greet wel Chaucer when ye meet,  
As my disciple and my poet,  
For in the house of love he dwelt  
In sundry wise, as he wold couthe.  
Of ditties and of songs gladd,  
The which he for my sake made,  
The hand fulfilled is over all.” &c.

In these lines he was merely requiting a compliment that had been paid him some years before by his brother poet, who, in dedicating to him his *Troilus and Criseyde*, addressed him as “O moral Gower,” an epithet which, though not remarkably happy, has stuck to him. Gower died in 1408. In his will he leaves a number of religious legacies to various ecclesiastical persons and institutions, and £100, along with the rents of his manors, to his wife Agnes. The beautiful church in which Gower lies was rebuilt in great part at his expense, and proves, among other things, that he must have been exempt from one of the usual misfortunes of poets—poverty.

Gower's poetical works are four in number—*Balades and other Poems*, in French, printed in 1818 for the Roxburghe Club; the *Speculum Malicie*, a treatise on the duties of married life, written in French verse, and divided into ten books; *For Clementine*, a narrative in Latin elegiacs, of the insurrection of the commons in the reign of Richard II.; and the *Confessio Amantis*. The second of these works is believed to have perished, of the third there is a good edition by the Rev H. O. Coxe, printed for the Roxburghe Club in 1890, and the fourth was first printed by Caxton in 1483. The *Confessio Amantis*, or *Love's Confession*, is a huge miscellaneous collection of physical, metaphysical, and moral reflections, and of stories culled from the common repositories of the Middle Ages. A kind of unity is given to these apparently incongruous materials by the form of the poem, which is a dialogue between a lover and his confessor, who is a priest of Venus, and is called *Genoves*. In the moral part of his theme, Gower is confessedly wise, impressive, and sometimes almost

sublime. But, as Ellis, in his *Specimens of the Early English Poets*, observes, "His narrative is often quite petrifying, and when we read in his works the tales with which we have been familiarized in the poems of Ovid, we feel a mixture of surprise and despair at the perverse industry employed in removing every detail on which the imagination had been accustomed to fasten. The author of the *Vittana Phoebe* was a poet, and at least sufficiently fond of ornament. Gowke considers him as a mere narrator, scrupulously preserves his facts, relates them with great perspicuity, and is fully satisfied when he has extracted from them as much morality as they can reasonably be expected to furnish." As Professor Lowell has well remarked, Gowke "has positively raised tediousness to the precision of a science." Though his descriptions are often extremely agreeable, and his diction easy and smooth, his prolixity, and the poetic feebleness of the conceptions, will prevent the *Lower's Confession* from ever rivaling the writings of Chaucer, or even approximating them in popularity.

See Todd, *Illustrations of the Lives and Writings of Geoffrey Chaucer*; Ellis's *Specimens of the Early English Poets*; Chubb's *First Life*; Watson's *First Biography*; Colman's *Life of Chaucer*; Morley's *English Poets*; Sir Henry Evelyn's *Life of Chaucer*; Mrs. Milnes's *Three Centuries of English Poetry*; *Biographical Journal* for 1823, where Sir Henry Evelyn throws fresh light on the subject; *Observations on the Language of Chaucer's Confession*; *Early Poets*, and *Gowke's Confession*; Anon., by F. J. Child, *Minstrel's Characteristics of English Poets*; and, above all, Dr. Rumbold Pauli's wholly edition of the *Confession Amantis* (London, 1857), which contains a notice of Gowke, and an account of the MS. and editions of the poem.

GOYA, a town of the Argentine Republic, in the province of Corrientes, near the junction of a small stream with the Paraná, about 100 miles S. of Corrientes. The streets are about 60 feet wide, and the houses, built of brick, are often two stories high. One side of the handsome plaza is occupied by a large church erected by local subscription, and in the centre there is a pyramid 50 feet high. Hides, wool, cheese, and oranges, are the principal articles of trade, the cheese especially finding a good market at Buenos Ayres and elsewhere. The town was founded in 1807 by the national Government, and is said to have derived its name from Goya or Glogoya, the wife of the Portuguese cattle-farmer who was formerly settled on the spot. The population, which includes a large foreign element,—Italians, Basques, and French,—amounted to 10,907 in 1869. See Mulhall's *Handbook of the River Plate*.

GOYANNA, a city of Brazil, in the province of Pernambuco, on a river of its own name, about 10 miles from the sea. It is a well-built place, and carries on a trade in cotton, sugar, rum, hides, timber, dye-stuffs, oils, and other products of the fertile region in which it lies. Most of its exports are sent to Recife for shipment, its own port being only deep enough for the larger class of coasting vessels. The population is about 12,000.

GOYA Y LUCIENTES, FRANCISCO (1746–1829), Spanish painter, was born in 1746 at Fuendetodos, a small Aragonese village near Saragossa. At an early age he commenced his artistic career under the direction of José Luzán Martínez, who had studied painting at Naples under Mastroléo. It is clear that the accuracy in drawing Luzán is said to have acquired by diligent study of the best Italian masters did not much influence his erratic pupil. Goya, a true son of his province, was bold, capacious, headstrong, and obstinate. He took a prominent part on more than one occasion in those rival religious processions at Saragossa which often ended in unseemly fray, and his friends were led in consequence to despatch him in his nineteenth year to Madrid, where, prior to his departure for Rome, his mode of life appears to have been anything but that of a quiet orderly citizen. Being a good musician, and gifted with a voice, he sallied forth nightly, persuading

the caged beauties of the capital, with whom he seems to have been a very general favourite.

Lacking the necessary royal patronage, and probably scandalizing by his mode of life the sedate court officials, he did not receive—perhaps did not seek—the usual honoriarium accorded to those students who visited Rome for the purpose of study. Finding it convenient to return for a time from Madrid, he decided to visit Rome at his own cost, and being without resources he joined a "quadrilla" of bull fighters, passing from town to town until he reached the shores of the Mediterranean. We next hear of him teaching Rome, broken in health and financially bankrupt. In 1772 he was awarded the second prize in a competition initiated by the academy of Palma, styling himself "pupil to Bayen, painter to the king of Spain." Compelled to quit Rome somewhat suddenly, he appears again in Madrid in 1775, the husband of Bayen's daughter, and father of a son. About this time he appears to have visited his parents at Fuendetodos, no doubt noting much which later on he utilized in his genre works. On returning to Madrid he commenced painting canvases for the tapestry factory of Santa Barbara, in which the king took much interest. Between 1776 and 1780 he appears to have supplied thirty examples, receiving about £1200 for them. Soon after the revolution of 1808, an official was appointed to take an inventory of all works of art belonging to the nation, and in one of the cellars of the Madrid palace were discovered forty-three of these works of Goya on rolls forgotten and neglected (see *Los Tàpices de Goya, por C. de Villanueva*, Madrid, 1870).

His originality and talent were soon recognized by Mengs, the king's painter, and royal favour naturally followed. His career now becomes intimately connected with the court life of his time. He was commissioned by the king to design a series of frescos for the church of St. Anthony of Florida, Madrid, and he also produced works for St. Isidoro, Valencia, and Toledo. Ecclesiastical art was not his forte, and although he cannot be said to have failed in any of his work, his fame was not enhanced by his religious subjects.

In portraiture, without doubt, Goya excelled. His portraits are evidently life-like and unexaggerated, and he disdained flattery. He worked rapidly, and during his long stay at Madrid painted, amongst many others, the portraits of four sovereigns of Spain—Charles III. and IV., Ferdinand VII., and 'King Joseph.' The duke of Wellington also sat to him, but on his making some remark which raised the artist's choler, Goya seized a plaster cast and hurled it at the head of his duke. There are extant two pencil sketches of Wellington, one in the British Museum, the other in a private collection. One of his best portraits is that of the lovely Andalusian duchess of Alba. He now became the spoiled child of fortune, and acquired, at any rate externally, much of the polish of court manners. He still worked industriously upon his own lines, and, while there is a stiffness almost ungainly in the pose of some of his portraits, the stern individuality is always preserved.

Including the designs for tapestry, Goya's genre works are numerous and varied, both in style and feeling, from his Watteau-like *Al Fresco Breakfast*, *Romantico de San Isidro*, to the *Onate feeding the Devil's Lamp*, the *Monon del Gallo*, and the painfully realistic massacre of the *Three de Mayo* (1808). Goya's versatility is proverbial, and his hands the pencil, brush, and graver are equally powerful. Some of his crayon sketches of scenes in the bull ring are full of force and character, slight but full of meaning. He was in his thirty-second year when he commenced his sketches from Velasquez, whose influence may, however, be traced in his work at an earlier date. A careful &c.

animation of some of the drawings made for these etchings indicates a steadiness of purpose not usually discerned in Goya's craft as draughtsman. He is much more widely known by his etchings than his oils, the latter necessarily must be sought in public and private collections principally in Spain, while the former are known and prized in every capital of Europe. The etched collections by which Goya is best known include *Los Caprichos*, which have a satirical meaning known only to the few, they are bold, ward, and full of force. *Los Proverbios* are also supposed to have some hidden intention. *Los Desastres de la Guerra* may fairly claim to depict Spain during the French invasion. In the full light series, Goya is evidently at home, he was a skilled master of the barbarous art, and no doubt every sketch is true to nature, and from life.

Goya retired from Madrid, desiring probably during his latter years to escape the trying climate of that capital. He died at Bordeaux in his eighty-third year, and a monument has been erected there over his remains. Whether his influence produced the art of Fontyn and the modern Spanish school may be matter for discussion, but, from the death of Velasquez and Murillo to the advent of Fontyn, Goya's name is the only important one found in the history of Spanish art. Paul Lafort and Uribe may be consulted for fuller details of his life and works.

GOYAZ, or as it is formerly called, Villa Rica de Goyaz, the chief town of the province of Goyaz in Brazil, in the valley of the auriferous Volmho, a right-hand tributary of the Araguaia. It lies about 650 miles N.W. of Rio de Janeiro, and 700 miles S.W. of San Salvador. As a bishop's see, the seat of the provincial assembly, and the residence of a civil president and a military governor, it is a place of considerable importance, and with its broad streets, wide squares, and well built houses it ranks as one of the most attractive towns of Brazil. The public buildings comprise the legislative chambers, a court-house, a hospital, a prison, an institution for the assaying of gold, and a municipal slaughter-house. Goyaz was founded in 1736 under the name of Santa Anna, and it received its present designation about three years later when it was raised to the rank of a city. The population is about 8000.

GOYEN, JAN JOSEPHZON VAN (1696-1656), was born at Leyden on the 13th of January 1696, learned painting under several masters at Leyden and Haarlem, married in 1618, and settled at the Hague about 1631. One of the few Dutch painters who failed to captivate English taste, his influence was great on Dutch art, and he was one of the first to emancipate himself from the traditions of minute imitation embodied in the works of Breughel and Savery. Though he preserved the dim scale of tone peculiar to these painters, he studied atmospheric effects in black and white with considerable skill. He formed Solomon Ruysdael and Pieter Potter, forced attention from Rembrandt, and bequeathed some of his precepts to Pieter de Molyn, Colenbier, Saftleven, Van der Kabel, and even Berghem. His life at the Hague for twenty-five years was very prosperous, and he rose in 1640 to be president of his guild. A friend of Van Dyck and Bartholomew van der Helst, he sat to both these artists for his likeness. His daughter Margaret married Jan Steen, and he had steady patrons in the stadtholder Frederick Henry, and the chiefs of the municipality of the Hague. He died at the Hague in 1656, possessed of land and houses to the amount of 15,000 florins.

Between 1610 and 1616 Van Goyen wandered from one school to the other. He was first apprenticed to Isaac Swanenburgh, he then passed through the workshops of De Man, Klok, and De Hooten. In 1616 he took a decisive step and joined Esaias van der Velde at Harlem, amongst his earlier pictures, some of 1621 (Berlin Museum) and

1623 (Brunswick Gallery) show the influence of Esaias very perceptibly. The landscape is minute. Details of branching and foliage are given, and the figures are important in relation to the distances. After 1625 these peculiarities gradually disappear. Atmospheric effect in landscapes of cool tints varying from grey green to pearl or brown and yellow dun is the principal object which Van Goyen holds in view, and he succeeds admirably in light skies with drifting misty cloud, and downs with cottages and scanty shrubbery or stunted trees. Neglecting all detail of foliage he now works in a thin diluted medium, laying on rubbings as of sepiæ or Indian ink, and finishing without loss of transparency or tenuity. Throwing his foreground into darkness, he casts alternate light and shade upon the more distant planes, and realises most pleasing views of large expanse. In buildings and water, with slipping near the banks, he sometimes has the strength if not the colour of Albert Cuyp. The defect of his work is chiefly want of solidity. But even this had its charm for Van Goyen's contemporaries, and some time elapsed before Cuyp, who imitated him, restricted his method of transparent tinting to the foliage of foreground trees.

Van Goyen's pictures are comparatively rare in English collections. Unrepresented in the national galleries, he is seen to advantage abroad, and chiefly at the Louvre, and in Berlin, Götting, Vienna, Munich, and Augsburg. Twenty-eight of his works were exhibited together at Vienna in 1873. His panels fell in value during the 17th century, when they fetched prices as low as 10 and seldom as high as 100 florins. Now they are worth ten times more than in 1700. Though he visited France once or twice, Van Goyen chiefly confined himself to the scenery of Holland and the Rhine. Nine times from 1635 to 1655 he painted views of Dordrecht. Nimeguen was one of his favourite resorts. But he was also fond of Haarlem and Amsterdam, and he did not neglect Arnhem or Utrecht. One of his largest pieces is a view of the Hague, executed in 1651 for the municipality, and now in the town collection of that city. Most of his panels represent reaches of the Rhine, the Waal, and the Maase. But he sometimes sketched the downs of Scheveningen, or the sea at the mouth of the Rhine and Scheldt, and he liked to depict the calm marshes, and rarely ventured upon seas stirred by more than a curling breeze or the swell of a coming squall. He often painted winter scenes, with ice and skates and sledges, in the style familiar to Isaac van Ostade. There are numerous varieties of these subjects in the master's works from 1621 to 1653. One historical picture has been assigned to Van Goyen—the embarkation of Charles II. in the Bute collection. But this canvas was executed after Van Goyen's death. When he tried this form of art he properly trusted his own powers. But he produced little in partnership with his contemporaries, and we can only except the Watering-place in the gallery of Vienna, where the landscape is enlivened with horses and cattle by Philip Wouvermans. Even Jan Steen, who was his son-in-law, only painted figures for one of his pictures, and it is probable that this piece was completed after Van Goyen's death. More than 250 of Van Goyen's pictures are known and accessible. Of this number little more than 70 are undated. None exist without the full name or monogram, and yet there is no painter whose hand it is easier to trace without the help of these adjuncts. Another, but a poor one, Van Goyen has only bequeathed to us two very rare plates.

GOZLAN, LÉON, a French novelist and pithy writer, was born at Marseilles in 1803, and died in 1866. When he was still a boy, his father, who had made a large fortune as a ship-broker, met with adverse circumstances, and Léon, before completing his education, had to go to sea in order to earn a living. He went several trading voyages to Algiers



and to Senegal, without, it would seem, much profit. In the meantime his literary tastes gradually developed, and he abandoned mercantile pursuits for the modest employment of a teacher in Marseilles. He, however, did not remain long there, and in 1828 we find him in Paris, as townswoman, Joseph Mary, who was then making himself famous by his political satires, smoothed his way, and introduced him to several newspapers. But Gozzan did not sacrifice literature to politics. Though he contributed many essays to the reviews, it is as a fertile and ingenious author of novels and plays that he is best known. His first novel was *Les Amours d'un Apôtre* (1828), and this was followed by numerous others, among which may be mentioned *Le Prince de Chantilly*, *Armande Fournier* (one of the most curious and celebrated of his productions), *Les Nuits du Père-Louisier*, *Le Tapis Vert*, *Georges III*, *La Folle du logis*, *La famille Lambert*, *Les Émotions de Polydore Alarquin*, &c. His principal works for the theatre are—*Le Comte de Lutz*, *La Plume et le beau temps*, *Le Lion empaillé*, *Pied de Roi*, *Louise de Nanteuil*, *Le Gâteau des Reines*, *Les Princes de la Comtesse*, *Le Diamant et le Ferre*, and adaptations of several of his own novels to the stage. Gozzan also wrote a romantic and picturesque description of the old mansions and manors of his country, entitled *Les Châteaux de France*, 4 vols. (1841), and a biographical essay on the great novelist Balzac (1861). He was made a member of the legion of honour in 1848, and in 1859 an officer of that order. Louis Huizt has published a sketch of his life.

Of the many novels which uninterruptedly dropped, as it were, from Gozzan's pen during a period of thirty-eight years, very few have the qualities which commend a work of fiction to posterity, but nearly all are pleasant to read, and some will no doubt survive as an interesting and lively picture of French manners during the first half of this century. He holds an honourable place in the second rank of French novelists.

GOZZO. See MAZZI.

GOZZI, CARLO, COUNT (1732-1806), an Italian dramatist, was descended from an old Venetian family, and was born in March 1732. Compelled by the embarrassed condition of his father's affairs to procure the means of self support, he, at the age of sixteen, joined the army in Dalmanin, but three years afterwards he returned to Venice, where he soon made a reputation for himself as the wittiest member of the Giannelleschi society, to which the publication of several satirical pieces had gained him admission. This society, nominally devoted to conviviality and wit, had also serious literary aims, and was especially zealous to preserve the Tuscan literature pure and unaltered by foreign influences. The displacement of the old Italian comedy by the dramas of Chiari and Goldoni founded on French models threatened defeat to all their efforts, and in 1767 Gozzi came to the rescue by publishing a satirical poem, *Parodia degli influssi per l'anno bisestile*, and in 1761 by his comedy, *Fiaba dell'amore delle tre melancolie*, a parody of the manner of the two obnoxious poets, founded on a fairy tale. For its representation he obtained the services of the Sesthi company of players, who, on account of the popularity of the comedies of Chiari and Goldoni—which afforded no scope for the display of their peculiar talents—had been left without employment, and as their satirical poems was thus sharpened by personal enmity, the play met with extraordinary success. Struck by the effect produced on the audience by the introduction of the supernatural or mythical element, which he had merely used as a convenient medium for his satirical purposes, Gozzi now produced a series of dramatic pieces based on fairy tales, which for a period obtained great popularity, but after the

breaking up of the Sesthi company were completely disregarded. They have, however, obtained high praise from Goethe, Schlegel, Madame de Staël, and Sismondi; and one of them, *Re Turandote*, was translated by Schiller. In his later years Gozzi set himself to the production of tragic drama in which the comic element was largely introduced, but as this innovation proved unacceptable to the critics, he had recourse to the Spanish drama, from which he obtained models for various pieces which, however, met with only equivocal success. He died 4th April 1806.

His collected works were published under his own superintendence, at Venice, in 1792, in 10 volumes, and his dramatic works, translated into German by Werthes, were published at Bonn in 1795. See Gozzi's work, *Memorie inedite della vita di Carlo Gozzi*, 1 vol. Venice, 1797, translated into French by Paul de Musset, Paris, 1848. P. Henr. *Gilles Gozzi le dramaturge*, Venice, 1803; Gherardini, *Vita di Carlo Gozzi*, 1831; "Charles Gozzi," by Paul de Musset, in the *Revue des Deux Mondes* for 15th November 1844, and Mugnier, *Carlo Gozzi e la sua scuola*, *scenari, biografici, e critici*, Genoa, 1876.

GOZZI, GASTRO, COUNT (1713-1786), oldest brother of Carlo Gozzi, was born 4th December 1713. In 1739 he married the poetess Luise Bergalli, and she undertook the management of the theatre of San Angelo, Venice, he supplying the performances with dramas chiefly translated from the French. This speculation proved unfortunate, but meantime he had attained a high reputation for his contributions to the *Giornale Veneto*, and he soon came to be known as one of the ablest critics and tasteful and most elegant stylists in Italy. For a considerable time he was censor of the press in Venice, and in 1771 he was appointed to reorganize the university system at Padua. He died at Padua, 26th December 1786.

His principal writings are *Osservazioni Poetiche*, in the model of the English *Spectator*, and distinguished by its high moral tone and its light and pleasant style; *Lettere famigliari*, a collection of short literary pieces in prose and verse, on subjects of general interest; *Sei sonetti*, poems in blank verse after the manner of Horace; *Il mondo morale*, a personification of human passions with monologues in the style of Lucian; and *Discorsi su alcuni punti poetici sopra le medesime cose di Dante*, a defence of the great poet against the attacks of Battezzoli. He also translated various works from the French and English, including Marmontel's *Fables* and Pope's *Essay on Criticism*. His collected works were published at Venice, 1794-98, in 12 volumes, and several editions have since appeared.

GOZZOLI, BRONZO, an eminent painter, was born in Florence in 1421, or perhaps 1420, and in the early part of his career assisted Fra Angelico, whom he followed to Rome, and worked with at Orvieto. While in Rome, he executed, in the Cappella at Anagni, a fresco of St Anthony and Two Angels. In 1449 he left Angelico, and went to Montefalco, near Foligno in Umbria. In St Fortunato, near Montefalco, he painted a Madonna and Child with Saints and Angels, and three other works. One of these, the altarpiece representing St Thomas receiving the Girdle of the Virgin, is now in the Lateran Museum, and shows the affinity of Gozzoli's early style to Angelico's. He next painted in the monastery of St Francis, Montefalco, filling the choir with a triple course of subjects from the life of the saint, with various accessories, including heads of Dante, Petrarch, and Giotto. This work was completed in 1463, and is still marked by the style of Angelico, crossed here and there with a more distinctly Giottoesque influence. In the same church, in the chapel of St Jerome, is a fresco by Gozzoli of the Virgin and Saints, the Crucifixion, and other subjects. He remained at Montefalco probably till 1466, employing Monasterius as assistant. Thence he went to Perugia, and painted in a church a Virgin and Saint, now in the local academy, and soon afterwards to his native Florence, the headquarters of art. By the end of 1466 he had nearly finished his important labour in the chapel of the Palazzo Riccardi, the Journey of the Magi to Bethlehem, and, in the tribune of this chapel, a composition of Angels

in a Paradise. His picture in the London National Gallery, a Virgin and Child with Saints, 1461, belongs also to the period of his Florentine youth. Another small picture in the same gallery, the Rape of Helen, is of dubious authenticity. In 1464 Gorrzoli left Florence for S. Gemignano, where he executed some extensive works, in the church of St. Augustine, a composition of St. Sebastian protecting the City from the Plague of this same year, 1464, over the entire chon of the church, a triple course of scenes from the legends of St. Augustine, from the time of his entering the school of Regius on to his burial, seventeen chief subjects, with some accessories, in the Pieve di S. Gemignano, the Martyrdom of Sebastian, and other subjects, and some further works in the city and its vicinity. Here his style combined something of Lippo Lippi with its original elements, and he received co-operation from Giusio d'Andrea. He stayed in this city till 1467, and then began, in the Campo Santo of Pisa, from 1469, the vast series of mural paintings with which his name is specially identified. These are twenty-four subjects from the Old Testament, from the Invention of Wine by Noah to the Visit of the Queen of Sheba to Solomon. He contracted to paint three subjects per year, for about ten denari each—a sum which may be regarded as equivalent to £100 at the present day. It appears, however, that this contract was not strictly adhered to, for the actual rate of painting was only three pictures in two years. Perhaps the great multitude of figures and accessories was accepted as a set off against the slower rate of production. By January 1470 he had executed the fresco of Noah and his Family, followed by the Curse of Ham, the Building of the Tower of Babel (which contains portraits of Cosmo de' Medici, the young Lorenzo, Poliziano, and others), the Destruction of Sodom, the Victory of Abraham, the Marriages of Rebecca and of Rachel, the Life of Moses, &c. In the Cappella Ammanni, facing a gate of the Campo Santo, he painted also an Adoration of the Magi, wherein appears a portrait of himself. All this enormous mass of work, in which Gorrzoli was probably assisted by Zanobi Macchiavelli, was performed, in addition to several other pictures during his stay in Pisa (we need only specify the Glory of St. Thomas Aquinas, now in the Louvre), in sixteen years, lasting up to 1485. This is the latest date which can with certainty be assigned to any work from his hand, although he is known to have been alive up to 1496, if not afterwards. In 1478 the Pisan authorities had given him, as a token of their regard, a tomb in the Campo Santo. He had likewise a house of his own in Pisa, and houses and land in Florence. In rectitude of life he is said to have been worthy of his first master, Fra Angelico.

The art of Gorrzoli does not rival that of his greatest contemporaries either in elevation or in strength, but is pre-eminently attractive by its sense of what is rich, winning, lively, and abundant, in the aspects of men and things. His landscapes, thronged with birds and quadrupeds, especially dogs, are more varied, circumstantial, and alluring than those of any predecessor, his compositions are crowded with figures, more characteristically true when happily and gracefully occupied than when the demands of the subject require tragic or dramatic intensity, or taimon of action, his colour is bright, vivacious, and festive. Gorrzoli's genius was, on the whole, more versatile and assimilative than vigorously original, his drawing not free from considerable imperfections, especially in the extremities and articulations, and in the perspective of his gorgeously-schemed buildings. In fresco-painting he used the methods of tempera, and the decay of his works has been severe in proportion. Of his unizing industry the rental of his labours, and the number of works produced, are the most forcible attestation.

GRAAT. See GRAAL.

GRABE, JOHANNES HENRICH (1666–1711), a learned divine of the Anglican Church, was born July 10, 1666, at Komeg beg, where his father, the author of some treatises now forgotten, was professor of theology and history. In the course of his theological studies Grabe succeeded in persuading himself of the schematistical character of the Reformation of the 16th century, and accordingly presented to the consistory at Samland a memorial in which he compared the position of the evangelical Protestant churches with that of the Simonians, Novatians, and other ancient schismatics. Finally, however, he resolved to join the Church of Rome, when his peace was again disturbed by Spener and others, who had pointed out some flaws in his written argument, and called his attention to the English Church as apparently possessing that apostolic succession, and manifesting that fidelity to ancient institutions, which he desired. In 1697, accordingly, he removed to London, and received priest's orders, attaching himself to the non-juring party. The learned labours to which the remainder of his life was devoted were rewarded with an Oxford degree and a royal pension. He died on the 3d of November 1711, and in 1728 a monument was erected to him by Lord Oxford in Westminster Abbey.

Some account of Grabe's life is given by Dr. HALL in a discourse prefixed to the pamphlet against Whiston's *Collection of Testimonies against the Use of the Holy Ghost*. His works, which show him to have been a learned and judicious critic, are in Latin, and include a *Syneclogium SS. Trinitatis* (1698–99), which was designed to cover the first three centuries of the Christian church, but never was continued beyond the close of the second, editions of Justin's *Apologie Prima* (1700), of Irenæus, *Adversus hæreses* (1702), and of the Septuagint (*Vid. Test. judæa LXX vulgata*, 4 vols fol., 1707–1720), also some polemical pieces now of little importance.

GRABOW, a town of Pomerania, Prussia, government of Stettin and circle of Randow, is situated on the Oder below Stettin, and closely adjoining its suburbs shipbuilding and the manufacture of machinery are the principal industries, and there is also a considerable shipping trade. Grabow did not acquire the rank of a town till 1855. The population in 1875 was 10,238.

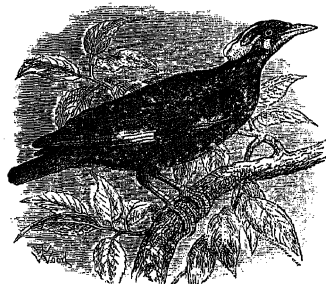
GRACCHUS is the name of a family of the Gens Sempiterna. To this family there attaches a remarkably sweet and lovable nature, which, combined with their high character and ability, makes their history the most charming page in the Roman annals. Tiberius Sempiternus Gracchus was appointed magistrate æquum after the battle of Cannæ, and held the consulship in 215 and 213 B.C. During the great weakness that followed the defeat at Cannæ the resolute and judicious generalship by which he ably seconded Fabius did much to maintain a courageous attitude at Rome. He raised some legions of slaves, and his generous conduct kept them together and made them important in the war. After several successes he was betrayed by a Lucanian into the hands of Mago, and having fallen in the battle that ensued, he was honoured with a magnificent burial by Hannibal. Another Tiberius, born about 210, married Cornelia, the daughter of Scipio Africanus, who is famous as the highest type of Roman matron. As pactor and prospector, Gracchus governed Hither Spain from 181 to 178. He conquered the Celtiberi, and by his magnanimous and kindly treatment of the Spaniards made a lasting impression on them. He was consul in 177 and 163. In 169, as censor, his review of the senate and equites was very strict, but though his colleague became unpopular, Gracchus remained as much esteemed as ever. He enjoyed a high reputation for his power of calming down internal seditions and conciliating foreign enemies of the state. One of his daughters became the wife of Scipio Africanus the younger, while his two sons, Tiberius and Gaius, are famous for having determined the history of Rome at a critical point, are as re-

markable for the charm of their personal character and for the careful education given them by their widowed mother. Tiberius served as questor in Spain in 137; and the respect still entertained by the Spaniards for his father's name enabled him to save the Roman army from utter ruin after its defeat by the Numantines. See ROMAN HISTORY.

GRACES is the name generally given to the Greek goddesses Charites. The chief seat of their worship was the ancient Boeotian city Orchomenus. They were three in number, but their names were not known; and stones fallen from heaven stood in their temple as symbols of the goddesses (Paus., ix. 35). Their worship was instituted by a king Eteocles, whose three daughters fell into a well while dancing in honour of the Charites (Westermann, *Myth. Gr.*, p. 387). In no Greek legend is the pre-Greek Indo-Germanic character more strongly marked. Eteocles, he whose glory is real, is the Vedic Satya-grava, the sun; and his genealogy consists of a string of epithets for sun and dawn. Charis (Skt. *hari*, bright), is an old adjective, originally an epithet of the light-illuminated clouds which seem to escort the dawn, often applied in the Rig-Veda to the horses of the dawn or of the sun, and at last growing into a distinct deity who preserves the character of the ancient dawn-goddess (see Müller, *Leet. Lang.*, ii.; Sonne in Kuhn, *Zft.*, x.). The burning bright ones (Ushas, *hio*, Aurora, with a different suffix Oshas, Easter) — who restores the blessings lost during the night, who lights up what was dark and reveals the hidden wrong, who gives active labour and wealth to men, growth and fertility to plants — had been from the earliest time the centre of a great worship. To appearance these religious ceremonies have been lost in Greece; and in a people so retentive of all that relates to religion, this implies merely that the worship of the dawn has been changed in outward form. Eos is of slight importance; but Charis, Hebe, Aphrodite (in so far as the genuine Greek goddess has not given way to the Oriental deity) preserve and develop the original idea. Charis then was the goddess of the freshness and vigour of life, of fertility and growth; like Aphrodite, she closely resembles Persephone (see Gerhardt, *Venus Proserpina*), and in later art the Graces often hold corn ears in their hands; like Hebe, she is often associated with Hera (see Welcker, *Gr. Gött.*, iii. 174). The single goddess grew into a triad, as occurs often in Greek mythology; in Sparta, however, and in Athens only two Charites were known. Rites of peculiar antique character belong to the worship of the Charites: in Orchomenus nightly dances took place in their honour (compare the legend of Peleus's daughters, who obviously are bye forms of the goddesses); in Paros their worship was celebrated without music or garlands; in Messene they were worshipped along with the Eumenides; in Athens their rites secret from the vulgar were held at the entrance of the Acropolis; one swore by the Charites as one did by the deities of the lower world (Pollux, viii. 106). Far as these characteristics seem removed from the nature of a dawn-goddess we find a similar double character in many other cases, such as Artemis-Ecate. They are thus brought into the cycle of older more purely nature worship, which we find in Greece alongside of the more moral religion of the Olympian deities, and which has in mythology its counterpart in the older generation of Titans destroyed by the younger gods. The Charites were received into the Olympian Pantheon only in a subordinate character. In Homer we have a transitional stage; they appear sometimes as distinct independent beings, one being wife of Hephaestus, another of Sleep (*Il.*, xviii. 382, xiv. 231); often they are a set of nymphs attending on Aphrodite, herself then wife of Hephaestus (*Od.*, viii. 364, &c.). The dawn is naturally the wife of Hephaestus, the fire of the sun

in heaven and of the morning sacrifices on earth. In later literature this second form prevails. Obviously the noun *charis* and the connected verbs and substantives, which existed alongside of the mythological name, exercised a continually growing influence on it. The Charites become then the impersonation of the bloom of all sensuous appearance, of grace and cheerfulness, both in nature and in moral action. They form part of the train attendant on the greater gods, especially Aphrodite and Apollo. Their names, Aglaia, Euphrosyne, and Thalia, occur first in Hesiod (*Theog.*, 907). Pindar, however, following the Boeotian belief, celebrates them (*Ol.*, xiv.) as the queens of glittering Orchomenus and as the guardian-goddesses of the ancient Mynae. In art they were represented in earlier time as draped goddesses with varying attributes; gradually the one well-known conception predominated of the three beautiful nude figures gracefully intertwined. Jacobi (*Wörterb. d. Myth.*) gives a very complete list of ancient authorities.

GRACKLE (Latin, *Graculus* or *Graculus*), a word which has been much used in ornithology, but generally in a vague sense, though restricted to members of the families *Sturnidae* belonging to the Old World, and *Icteridae* belonging to the New. Of the former those to which it has been most commonly applied are the species variously known as Mynas, Mainas, and Minors of India and the adjacent countries, and especially the *Gracula religiosa* of Linnaeus, who, according to Jerdon and others, was very properly led to confer this epithet upon it by confounding it with the *Sturnus* or *Acridotheres tristis*, which is regarded by the Hindus as sacred to Ram Deo, one of their deities, while



*Gracula religiosa.*

the true *Gracula religiosa* does not seem to be anywhere held in veneration. This last is about 10 inches in length, clothed in a plumage of glossy black, with purple and green reflexions, and a conspicuous patch of white on the quill-feathers of the wings. The bill is orange and the legs yellow, but the bird's most characteristic feature is afforded by the curious wattles of bright yellow, which, beginning behind the eyes, run backwards in form of a lappet on each side, and then return in a narrow stripe to the top of the head. Beneath each eye also is a bare patch of the same colour. This species is common in southern India, and is represented further to the north, in Ceylon, Burmah, and some of the

<sup>1</sup> By some writers the birds of the genera *Acridotheres* and *Tamias* are considered to be the true Mynas, and the species of *Gracula* are called "Hill Mynas" by way of distinction.

Malay Islands by cognate forms. They are all frugivorous, and, being easily tamed and learning to pronounce words very distinctly, are favourite cage birds.<sup>1</sup>

In the New World the name Grackle has been applied to several species of the genera *Scolopagus* and *Quiscalus*, though these are more commonly called in the United States and Canada "Blackbirds," and some of them "Bont tails." They all belong to the family *Ictidae*. The best known of these are the Rusty Grackle, *S. ferrugineus*, which pervades almost the whole of North America, and *Q. purpurinus*, the Purple Grackle or Crow Blackbird, of more limited range, for though abundant enough in most parts to the east of the Rocky Mountains, it seems not to appear on the Pacific side. There is also Brewer's or the Blue-headed Grackle, *S. cyanocephalus*, which has a more western range, not extending to the eastward of Kansas and Minnesota. A fourth species, *Q. major*, is also found to inhabit the Atlantic States as far as North Carolina. All these birds are of exceedingly omnivorous habit, and though undoubtedly destroying large numbers of pernicious insects as in many places held in bad repute from the mischief they do to the corn crops. (A 28)

GONGGON, BALAZAR (1681-1693), one of the principal "calistotes" or Spanish prose writers of the school of Gongora, was born at Calatayud, Aragon, in 1684. Little is known of his personal history except that on attaining to manhood he entered the Society of Jesus, and that ultimately he became rector of the Jesuit College at Tarazona, where he died in 1693. His principal works are *El Heleto* (1630), written in short compact sentences, which has been described as a sort of recipe for making a hero, *Los Agudices, y die de Ingenio* (1645), a sort of art of poetry or system of rhetoric in which the principles of "Gongorism" are inculcated, *Orticon* (1650-53), an allegory in which, under the imagery of the seasons of the year, the course of human life is described, *El Dueto*, a delineation of the typical character of a courtier, *Oratorio Menudo*, a system of rules for the conduct of life. His works, which have been often republished in Spanish under the name of his brother Lorenzo, have also for the most part been translated into French and Italian. The *Oratorio Menudo* has been translated into German by A. Schopenhauer (1862), and into English anonymously (*Courtier's Manual Oracle*, 1834). The *Heleto* also occurs in English (from the French, 1726).

Grotan's merits as a writer have been very differently estimated by his critics, and it is probable that from none of them has he received strict justice. If his style is hardly so bombastic, involved, and obscure as his enemies represent it, neither can he in fairness receive all that credit for depth and originality of thought which is claimed for him by his friends. As examples of the widely differing appreciations which have been passed upon him, see Ticknor's *Spanish Literature*, vol. iii., and Mr Grant Duff's *Uncollected* (1878).

GRADISCA, a town of Austria, in the principality of Gorz and Gradisca, situated about 10 miles S W of Gorz, on the right bank of the Isonzo. It was formerly a strongly fortified place, but its citadel is now occupied as a prison. The inhabitants of the commune, who numbered in 1869 rather more than 3000, are engaged in silk spinning. Between 1471 and 1481 Gradisca was fortified by the Venetians, but in 1511 they surrendered it to the imperial forces. In 1617 Gradisca and its territory, including Aquileia and forty three smaller places, was erected into a prince-countship in favour of the prince of Eggenberg. It lapsed in 1717 to the imperial crown, and in 1754 was completely incorporated with Gorz. The name was revived by the constitution of 1861, which established the crown-land of the countship of Gorz and Gradisca. See Gorz.

GRADUATION is the name given to the art of dividing straight scales, circular arcs, or whole circumferences into any required number of equal parts. It is the most important and difficult part of the work of the mathematical instrument maker, and is required in the construction of most physical, astronomical, nautical, and surveying instruments, such as theodolites, sextants, mural circles, theodolites, &c.

The art was, undoubtedly, first practised by clockmakers for cutting the teeth of their wheels at regular intervals, but so long as it was confined to them, no particular delicacy or accurate nicety in its performance was required. This only arose when astronomy began to be seriously studied, and the exact position of the heavenly bodies to be determined, which created the necessity for strictly accurate means of measuring linear and angular magnitude. Then graduation began to be looked upon as an art which required special talents and training, and hence we find that all the best artists have spent their best efforts on the perfecting of astronomical instruments. Of these may be named Abraham Sharp, Bird, Smeaton, Ramsden, the Duc de Chaulnes, John and Edward Troughton, Sumner, and Ross.

It is obvious that the first graduated instrument must have been done by the hand and eye alone, whether it was in the form of a straight edge with equal divisions, or a saw, or a divided plate, but, once in the possession of one such divided instrument, it was a comparatively easy matter to employ it as a standard, and copy its divisions on any other article that might be desired. Hence graduation naturally divides itself into two distinct branches, *original graduation* and *copying*, which latter may be done either by the hand or by a machine called a dividing engine. We may thus speak of graduation under the three heads of *original graduation*, *copying*, and *machine graduation*.

*Original Graduation*.—This is by far the most difficult part of the art—so difficult, indeed, and requiring such accuracy of hand and eye, that but few in any generation have been completely competent for the task. The earlier astronomers graduated their own instruments, and, from the examples that have come down to us, it must have been very roughly done as compared with modern work.

In regard to the graduation of straight scales, we have, by elementary geometry, the means, theoretically, of dividing a straight line into any number of equal parts, but the practical carrying out of the geometrical construction is so beset with difficulties as to render the method unworkable. This method, which employs the common diagonal scale, was used in dividing a quadrant of 3 feet radius, which belonged to Népaul de Marchetton, and which only read to minutes—a result, say Thomson and Tait (*Nat. Phil.*), "giving no greater accuracy than is now attainable by the pocket sextants of Troughton and Sumner, the radius of whose arcs is little more than an inch."

The original graduation of a straight line is, in practice, done either by the method of continual bisection or by stepping. In continual bisection the entire length of the line is first laid down. Then, as neatly as possible, half that distance is taken in the beam compass and marked off by faint arcs from each end of the line. Should these marks coincide the exact middle point of the line is obtained. If not, as will almost always be the case, the distance between the marks is carefully bisected by hand with the aid of a magnifying glass. The same process is again applied to the halves thus obtained, and so on in succession, dividing the line into parts represented by 2, 3, 8, 16, &c., till the desired divisions are reached. In the method of stepping the smallest division required is first taken, as accurately as possible, by spring dividers, and that distance is then laid off, by successive steps, from one end of the line. It is evident that, in this method, any error at starting will be

<sup>1</sup> For a valuable monograph on the various species of *Gracula* and its allies, see Prof Schlegel's *Revue de la Faune des Indes Néerlandsches Tijdschrift voor de Dierkunde*, pp. 1-9.

multiplicated at each division by the number of that division. Errors so made are usually adjusted by the dots being put either back or forward a little by means of the drawing pencil guided by a measuring glass. This is an extremely tedious process, and the dots, when so altered several times, are apt to get so unaffably large and shapeless.

The division of circular arcs is essentially the same in principle as the graduation of straight lines, and of this we shall now give some examples.

The first example of note is the 8-foot mural circle which was graduated by Graham for the National Observatory in 1735. It was two concentric arcs, radii 96.86 and 96.8 inches respectively were first described by the beam compass. On the inner of these the arc of  $90^\circ$  was to be divided into degrees and 12th parts of a degree, while the sum on the outer was to be drawn into 96 equal parts, and these again into 16th parts. The reason for adopting the latter was that, 96 and 18 being both powers of 2, the divisions could be got at by continual bisection alone, which, in Graham's opinion, was far simpler and less liable to error than the former, and would thus save the trouble upon the accuracy of the divisions of the outer arc. With the same distance on the beam compass was used to describe the inner arc, half of  $90^\circ$ , the point 60 was at one end and 120 at the other. With a pair of compasses, and a distance on the beam compass very neatly bisecting the arc of  $60^\circ$ , two slight marks were made on the arc, the distance between them, marks were exactly divided by a line ruled by a lead pencil from the point 80. The chord of  $60^\circ$  laid off from the point 80 gave the point  $60^\circ$ , and the quadrant was now divided into three equal parts. Each of these parts was again bisected, and the resulting divisions again bisected, giving 18 parts of  $2^\circ$  each. Each of the quadrants was again divided, the 12th part, of which was arrived at by bisecting and bisection as before. The outer arc was divided by continual bisection alone, and a table was constructed, which, with the reading of the scale, could be consulted into those of the other. After the dots indicating the required divisions were obtained, either slight strokes all directed toward the centre were drawn through them by the drawing knife, or some small arcs were drawn through them, and by the beam compass having its fixed point somewhere on the line which was a tangent to the quadrant arc at the point where a division was to be marked.

The next important example of graduation was done by Bird in 1767. His quadrant, which was also 8 feet radius, was divided into degrees and 12th parts of a degree. He employed the method of continual bisection aided by chords taken from an exact scale, of equal parts, which could be laid off 900 of us in 10, and which he had previously graduated by continual bisection. With the beam compass, in an arc of radius 81.083 inches was first drawn. From this radius the chords of  $30^\circ$ ,  $15^\circ$ ,  $10^\circ$ ,  $20^\circ$ ,  $4^\circ$ ,  $40^\circ$ , and  $42^\circ$   $40'$  were computed, and each of them by means of the scale of equal parts laid off on a separate beam compass to be used. The radius laid off from 0 gave the point  $0^\circ$ , by the chord of  $30^\circ$  the arc of  $60^\circ$  was bisected, from this point the chord of  $15^\circ$  laid off gave the point  $30^\circ$ , the chord of  $10^\circ$  laid off gave the point  $45^\circ$ , the chord of  $20^\circ$  laid off from  $45^\circ$  gave the point  $75^\circ$ , and the chord of  $4^\circ$  laid off from  $75^\circ$  was laid off forwards the chord of  $10^\circ$ ,  $80^\circ$ , and from  $80^\circ$  was laid off backwards the chord of  $4^\circ$ , and these were found to coincide in the point  $80^\circ$ . From  $80^\circ$  back the chord of  $2^\circ$   $40'$  was laid off, the final division of  $82^\circ$   $40'$  was found by continual bisection. The semicircle of the quadrant beyond  $85^\circ$   $20'$ , containing 56 divisions of  $6'$  each, the chord of 64 such divisions was laid off from the point  $85^\circ$   $20'$ , and the arc beyond this was divided by continual bisection as before. There was thus a screw cut upon the accuracy of the points already found, viz.,  $15^\circ$ ,  $30^\circ$ ,  $60^\circ$ ,  $75^\circ$ ,  $80^\circ$ , which, however, was found to coincide with the corresponding points obtained by continual bisection of the same lines through the dots were drawn in the way already mentioned.

The next important artists in original graduation were the brothers John and Edward Troughton. The former was the first to devise a new use of graduation, and to employ it by continual bisection within the arc of such a scale of equal parts as was used by Bird. His method was as follows:—The radius of the quadrant laid off from 0 gave the point  $0^\circ$ . This arc bisected and the half laid off from  $0^\circ$  gave the point  $90^\circ$ . The arc between  $0^\circ$  and  $90^\circ$  bisected gave  $45^\circ$ , the arc between  $75^\circ$  and  $90^\circ$  bisected gave the point  $82^\circ$   $30'$ , and the arc between  $82^\circ$   $30'$  and  $90^\circ$  bisected gave the point  $85^\circ$   $15'$ . Further, the arc between  $82^\circ$   $30'$  and  $85^\circ$   $15'$  bisected, and two-thirds of it taken beyond  $85^\circ$   $15'$  gave the point  $85^\circ$ , while the arc between  $85^\circ$  and  $85^\circ$   $15'$  also bisected, and one-third part laid off beyond  $85^\circ$  gave the point  $85^\circ$   $25'$ . Lastly, the arc between  $85^\circ$  and  $85^\circ$   $25'$  being again quartered, and four-fifths taken beyond  $85^\circ$ , gave  $85^\circ$   $20'$ , while the point  $85^\circ$   $25'$ , and so can be finally divided by continual bisection.

**Edmund Troughton's Method.**—The method of original graduation discovered by Edmund Troughton is fully described in the *Philosophical Transactions* for 1809, as employed by himself to divide a

mural circle of 1 foot radius. The circle was first accurately turned both on its face and its inner and outer edges. A roller was next provided, of such diameter that it revolved 16 times on its own axis while made to roll once round the circle being graduated. The roller, made more like a pin, was attached to a frame work, which could be slid freely, or tightly, along the circle, the roller meanwhile revolving, by means of frictional contact, on the outer edge. The roller was also, after having been properly adjusted as to size, divided accurately by means of 26 equal parts by lines parallel to its axis. While the frame carrying the roller was moved once round the circle, the points of contact of the roller divisions with the circle were accurately observed by two microscopes attached to the frame, one of which (which we shall call B) communicated the ring on the circle near its edge, which was to bisect the divisions, and the other viewed the roller divisions. The exact points of contact were then marked on the circle with faint dots, and the mural circle thereby divided into 256 very nearly equal parts.

The next part of the operation was to find and tabulate the errors of these divisions, which were called *apparent errors*, in consequence of the error of each dot being regulated on the supposition of its neighbouring being all correct. For this purpose two microscopes (which we shall call A and B) were fixed, with cross wires, and micrometer adjustments, consisting of a screw and lead divided into 100 divisions, 60 of which read in the one and 40 in the opposite direction. These microscopes, A and B, were fixed so that their cross-wires respectively bisected the dots 0 and 128, which were supposed to be diametrically opposite. The circle was now turned till it was round on its axis, so that dot 128 coincided with the wire of A, and should dot 0 be found to coincide with B, then the two dots were said to be in *apparent* coincidence. The wire of B was then moved till it coincided with dot 0, and the number of divisions of the micrometer lead noted. If this number gave exactly the error of dot 128, and it was found to be so according as the several distances between 0 and 128 was found to exceed or fall short of the remaining part of the circumference. The microscope B was now shifted, A remaining opposite dot 0 as before, till its wire bisected dot 64, and, by giving the circle one quarter of a turn on its axis, the difference of the wire of A between dots 0 and 64, and between 64 and 128 was obtained. The half of this difference gave the apparent error of dot 64, which was tabulated with its proper sign. With the microscopes A still in the same position the error of dot 192 was obtained, and in the same way by shifting it to dot 32 errors of dots 32, 96, 160, and 224 were successively ascertained. By proceeding in this way the apparent errors of all the 256 dots were tabulated.

From this table of apparent errors a table of real errors was drawn up by employing the following formula:—

$$\{(\alpha + \beta) + \gamma\} = \text{the real error of dot } \beta,$$

where  $\alpha$  is the real error of dot  $\alpha$ ,  $\beta$  the real error of dot  $\beta$ , and the apparent error of dot  $\beta$  midway between  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$ . Thus having got the real errors of any two dots, the table of apparent errors gives the means of finding the real errors of all the other dots.

The above formula is easily derived as follows:—Let  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  be the number of points in divisions from 0 to dots  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  respectively, and let  $\gamma$  be the number of points in divisions from  $\alpha$  to  $\beta$  supposed to be midway between  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$ . Also let  $\alpha$ ,  $\beta$ , and  $\gamma$  be the real errors of dots  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$ , and the apparent error of  $\beta$ . Then we have

$$\beta - \alpha - \gamma = (\alpha + \beta) - \alpha - \gamma = \gamma$$

Now the real positions of  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  are  $\alpha - \alpha$ , and  $\beta - \beta$ , respectively. Therefore the real position of  $\beta$ , the point midway between  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$ , is

$$\alpha - \gamma + \frac{1}{2}(\alpha - \beta) = \alpha - \gamma + \frac{1}{2}(\alpha - \beta)$$

$$= \alpha - \gamma + \frac{1}{2}(\alpha - \beta)$$

Therefore the real error of  $\beta$

$$= \beta - \text{real position of } \beta$$

$$= \beta - (\alpha - \gamma) + \frac{1}{2}(\alpha - \beta) = \beta - \alpha + \gamma + \frac{1}{2}(\alpha - \beta)$$

Having obtained the 256 dots and their real errors, the third and last part of Troughton's process was to employ them to find the final divisions of the circle, which was to be square of  $5'$  in

Now the mean interval between any two dots is  $\frac{360^\circ}{256} = 1^\circ 15'$ , and hence, in the final division, this interval was divided into 16 equal parts. In order to accomplish this a wire of uniform thickness called a subdividing section, was provided. It was fastened at the ends and had a radius about four times that of the roller, but made adjustable as to length. The end of the wire was supported on the roller, and rested on the upper edge of the circle. It turned by frictional adhesion along with the roller, but at the same time was sufficiently loose to allow of its being moved back by hand to any position without affecting the roller. Now it is evident that, while the roller moves on an angle equal to the mean interval

between two dots, any point of the sector must pass over 18 times that interval, that is to say, on an angle represented by  $216^\circ - 27' 30''$ . This interval was therefore divided by 18, and 855

a square equal to 16 of the parts taken. This was laid off on the arc of the sector and carefully divided into 16 equal parts, each equal to  $1^\circ 30'$ , and in order to provide for the necessary parts of a division, that was laid off at each end of the sector, and beyond the 16 equal parts, two of these parts were subdivided into 4 equal parts. A microscope with cross wires, which we shall call I, is placed on the main frame, so as to command a view of the sector divisions, just as the microscope II viewed the final divisions of the circle. Before the first or zero mark was cut, the zero of the sector was brought under I and then the division cut at the point on the circle indicated by II, which also coincided with the dot 0. The frame was then slipped along the circle by the slow screw motion provided for the purpose, till the first sector division, by the action of the screw, was brought under I. The second mark was then cut on the circle at the point indicated by II. When the marks thus obtained are brought up, as they should be, is evident when we reflect that the distance between them must be each of a division on the sector which by construction is  $1^\circ 30'$ . By proceeding in this way the first 16 divisions were cut, but before cutting the 17th it was necessary to adjust the micrometer wires of II to the real circle of dot 1, as indicated by the table, and bring back the sector, not to zero, but to fifth part of zero. Striding from this position the divisions between dot 1 and 2 were next filled in, and then II was adjusted to the circle of dot 2, and the sector brought back to its proper division before commencing the third course. By proceeding in this manner through the whole circle, the microscope II was finally found with its wire at zero, and the sector with its 16th division under I, the microscope indicating that the circle had been accurately divided.

**Copying.**—In graduation by copying the first requisite is a pattern, which must be either an accurately divided straight scale, or an accurately divided circle, commonly called a *dividing plate*.

In copying a straight scale the pattern and scale to be divided, usually called the work, its first fixed side by side, with their upper faces in the same plane. The dividing square, which closely resembles an ordinary joiner's square, is then laid across both, and the point of the dividing knife dropped into the zero division of the pattern. The square is now moved up close to the point of the knife, and, while it is held firmly in this position by the left hand, the first division on the work is made by drawing the knife along the edge of the square with the right hand. Great care must be taken that the knife is held exactly in the same position in cutting the division and in setting the square.

It frequently happens that the divisions required on a scale are either greater or less than those on the pattern. To meet this case, and still use the same pattern, the work must be fixed at a certain angle of inclination with the pattern. This angle is easily found in the following way. Take the exact ratio of a division on the pattern to the required division on the scale. Call this ratio  $\alpha$ . Then, if the required divisions are longer than those of the pattern, the angle is  $\cos^{-1}\alpha$ , but, if shorter, the angle is  $\sec^{-1}\alpha$ . In the former case two operations are required before the divisions are cut: first, the square is laid on the pattern, and the corresponding divisions merely notched very faintly on the edge of the work, and, secondly, the square is applied to the work and the final divisions drawn opposite each faint notch. In the second case, that is, when the angle is  $\sec^{-1}\alpha$ , the dividing square is applied to the work, and the divisions cut when the edge of the square coincides with the end of each division on the pattern.

In copying circles use is made of the dividing plate. This is a circular plate of brass, of 36 inches or more in diameter, carefully graduated near its outer edge. It is turned quite flat, and has a steel pin fixed exactly in its centre, and at right angles to its plane. For guiding the dividing knife an instrument called an *index* is employed. This consists of a straight bar of thin steel of length equal to the radius of the plate. A piece of steel, having a  $\vee$  notch with its angle a right angle, is riveted to one end of the bar

in such a position that the vertex of the notch is exactly in a line with the edge of the steel bar. In this way, when the index is laid on the plate, with the notch embracing the central pin, the straight edge of the steel bar lies exactly along a radius. The work to be graduated is laid flat on the dividing plate, and fixed by two clamps in a position exactly concentric with it. The index is now laid on, with its edge coinciding with any required division on the dividing plate, and the corresponding division on the work is cut by drawing the dividing knife along the straight edge of the index.

**Machine Graduation.**—The first dividing engine was probably that of Henry Hindley of York, constructed in 1740, and used for the most part by him for cutting the teeth of clock wheels. This was followed shortly after by an engine devised by the Duc de Chaulnes, but the first engine which obtained distinct notoriety was that made by Ramsden, of which an account was published by the Board of Longitude in 1777. He was rewarded by that board with a sum of £300, and a further sum of £315 was given to him on condition that he would divide, at a certain fixed rate, the instruments of other makers. The essential principles of Ramsden's machine have been repeated in almost all succeeding engines for dividing circles, and it will be well, therefore, to give a brief description of it.

It consisted of a large brass plate 45 inches in diameter, and fully 1740, and movable on a vertical axis. The edge of the plate was studded with 2160 teeth, into which a tangent screw worked, by means of which the plate could be made to turn through any required angle. Thus at turns of the screw moved the plate through  $1'$ , and  $1/4$  of a turn through  $1/4$  of a degree. On the axis of the tangent screw was placed a cylinder having a spiral groove cut on its surface. Aatchet wheel containing 60 teeth was rivetted to this cylinder, and was so arranged that, when the cylinder moved in one direction, it caused the tangent screw with it, and so turned the plate, but when it moved in the opposite direction, it left the tangent screw, and with it the plate, stationary. Round the spiral groove of the cylinder a rigid band was wound, one end of which was attached to a screw which acted as a counterpoise weight. When the band was depressed the tangent screw turned round, and when the pressure was removed it returned, in obedience to the weight, to its former position without affecting the screw. Provision was also made whereby certain stops could be placed in the way of the screw, which only allowed it the requisite amount of turning according to the graduation required. The work to be divided was firmly fixed on the plate, and made concentric with it. The divisions were cut, while the screw was stationary, by means of a dividing knife attached to a worm frame, which allowed it to have only a lateral motion. In this way the aatchet could divide very rapidly by alternately depressing the band and working the dividing knife.

Ramsden also constructed a linear dividing engine on essentially the same principle. If we imagine the rim of the circular plate with its notches stretched out into a straight line and made movable in a straight slot, the screw, treadle, &c., remaining as before, we shall get a very good idea of the linear engine.

In 1793 Edward Troughton finished a circular dividing engine, of which the plate was smaller than in Ramsden's, and which differed considerably otherwise in simplifying matters of detail. The plate was originally divided by Troughton's own ingenious method, already described, and the divisions so obtained were employed to match the edge of the plate for receiving the tangent screw with great accuracy.

In the *Transactions of the Society of Arts* for 1830-31 there is a full description, with illustrative figures, of a dividing engine, constructed by Andrew Ross, which differs considerably from those of Ramsden and Troughton.

The essential point of difference is that, in Ross's engine, the tangent screw does not turn the engine plate, that is done by an independent apparatus, and the function of the tangent screw is only to move the plate after it is moved through the required angular interval between two divisions on the work to be graduated. Round the circumference of the plate are fixed 48 projections which just look as if the circumference had been divided by a dividing knife, and somewhat peculiarly shaped notches or teeth. Through each of these teeth a hole is bored parallel to the plane of the plate



**SYRACUSE.** Mutual discord first sapped the prosperity of Magna Græcia. In 510 Crotone, having defeated the Sybarites in a great battle, totally destroyed their city. Crotone maintained alone the leading position which had belonged jointly to the Achaean cities (Diod. xiv 103), but from that time Magna Græcia steadily declined. Foreign enemies pressed heavily on it. The Lucanians and Brutians on the north captured one town after another. Dionysius of Syracuse attacked them from the south, and after he defeated the Crotonean league (389 B.C.), Taurentum remained the only powerful city. Henceforth the history of Magna Græcia is only a record of the vicissitudes of Taurentum (see **TAURENTUM**). Repeated expeditions from Sparta and Epizus tried in vain to prop up the decaying Greek states against the Lucanians and Brutians, and when in 333 the Romans appeared in the Taurentine Gulf the end was close at hand. The aid which Pyrrhus brought did little good to the Taurentines, and his final departure in 271 left them defenceless. During these constant wars the Greek cities had been steadily decaying, and in the second Punic war, when most of them seized the opportunity of revolting from Rome, their very existence was in some cases annihilated. Malacia, which never affects a well peopled city, increased in strength as the population diminished. We are told by Cicero (*De Im.* 4), "Magna Græcia nunc quidem deserta est." Many of the cities completely disappeared, and, like Taurentum, maintained a feeble existence into modern times.

**GRAEVIVS (1632-1703).** Johann Georg Grafe, Griefe, or Grævius, one of the great classical scholars of the 17th century, was born at Naumburg, Saxony, 20th January 1632, and after receiving the usual school education at the gymnasium of Pforta became a student of law in the university of Leipzig. During a casual visit to Deventer in his eighteenth year, he became acquainted with Gronovius, and this circumstance greatly stimulated a taste for pure scholarship which he had already begun to display somewhat to the detriment of his professional prospects. Finally abandoning jurisprudence shortly afterwards, he studied philology for two years under Gronovius, and subsequently sat under Haerius at Leyden, and under Meurs and Bloriel at Amsterdam. During his residence in the last-named city he abandoned Lutheranism and joined the Reformed Church, and in 1656 he was called by the elector of Brandenburg to the chair of belles lettres in the university of Duisburg. Two years afterwards he was, on the recommendation of Gronovius, chosen to succeed that scholar at Deventer, and in 1662 he was translated to the university of Utrecht, where he occupied first the chair of rhetoric, and afterwards from 1667 until his death (January 11, 1703) that of history and politics. During the latter years of his life he enjoyed a great and European reputation, and repeated attempts, which, however, he steadfastly resisted, were made to induce him to transfer his services to other universities and Governments. His lecture-room was crowded by pupils, many of them of distinguished rank, from all parts of the civilized world, and by Louis XIV., as well as by other sovereigns, he was now and again honoured with special recognition.

Of his works the two most important are the *Thesaurus Antiquitatum Romanarum*, published in 12 volumes at Utrecht (1694-1699), and the *Thesaurus Antiquitatum et Historiarum Rerum*, published after his death, and continued by Bunnem (1704-1726). His editions of the classics, although at the time of their appearance they marked a distinct advance in scholarship, are now for the most part superseded. They include *Horatii Aratorum quæ erant Oportet* (1667), *Lucretii Rerumdescriptio* (1668), *Julianæ Epistolæ Philopœne* (1669), *Suetonii* (1675), *Catullus, Tibullus, et Propertius* (1680), and several of the works of Cicero. The *Oratio Funeris* by F. Bunnem (Utrecht, 1708) contains an exhaustive list of the works of this scholar.

**GRAFE, ALBRECHT VON (1828-1870),** German oculist, son of Karl Ferdinand von Grafe, noticed below, was born at Berlin in May 1828. At an early age he manifested a preference for the study of mathematics, but this was gradually superseded by an interest in natural science, which led him ultimately to the study of medicine. After obtaining Government licences at Berlin, he prosecuted his studies at Vienna, Prague, and Paris, devoting special attention to ophthalmology. In 1850 he began practice as an oculist in Berlin, where he founded a private institution for the treatment of the eyes, which became the model of many similar ones in Germany and Switzerland. In 1853 he was appointed teacher of ophthalmology in Berlin university, in 1856 extraordinary professor, and in 1860 ordinary professor. Von Grafe contributed largely to the perfection of the science of ophthalmology, especially by the establishment in 1855 of his *Archiv für Ophthalmologie*, in which he had Ait and Donders as collaborators. Perhaps his two most important discoveries are his method of treatment for *glaucoma*, until then deemed incurable, and his new method of operation for the extraction of cataract, by which the danger of the operation became minimized. He was also regarded as an authority in diseases of the nerves and brain. He died at Berlin 20th August 1870. See Alfred Grafe, *Ein Wort zur Erinnerung an Albrecht von Grafe*, Halle, 1870.

**GRAFE, HANRICH (1802-1868),** educationist, was born at Buttsstadt in Weimar, 3d May 1802, studied mathematics and theology at Jena, and in 1823 obtained a curacy in the stadtkirche of Weimar. Thence he was transferred to Jena as rector of the town school in 1825, in 1840 he was also appointed extraordinary professor of the science of education (Pädagogik) at that university, and in 1842 he became head of the bürgerschule in Cassel. After resigning the schools of the town, he became director of the new realschule in 1843, and, devoting himself with great zeal and energy to the interests of educational reform in electoral Hesse, he became in 1849 a member of the school commission, and also entered the house of representatives, where he attached himself to the democratic party and made himself somewhat formidable as an agitator. In 1852 for having been implicated in the September riots and in the movement against the unpopular minister Hassenpflug (who had dissolved the school commission) he was condemned to three years' imprisonment, a sentence which was afterwards reduced to one of twelve months. On his release he withdrew to Geneva, where he engaged in educational work till 1855, when he was appointed director of the school of industry at Bremen. He died in that city 21st July 1868.

Besides being the author of many text books and occasional papers on educational subjects, his works are *Der Schichtunterricht der Volksschule von unten u. aussen* (1829), *Die schulfreie (1831), Schule u. Unterricht* (1838), *Allgemeine Pädagogik* (1845), *Die deutsche Volksschule* (1847). Along with Neumann, he edited the *Archiv für die praktische Volksschullehren* (1828-35).

**GRAFE, KARL FERDINAND VON (1787-1840),** German surgeon, was born at Waisau, 28th March 1787. He studied medicine at Halle and Leipzig, and after obtaining licence from the latter university, he was in 1807 appointed private physician to Duke Alexis of Anhalt-Bernburg. In 1811 he became professor of surgery at Berlin, and during the war with Napoleon he was superintendent of the military hospitals. When peace was concluded in 1815, he resumed his professional duties. He was also appointed to the medical staff of the army, and he became a director of the Friedrich-William Institute, and of the Medical-Chirurgical Academy. He died suddenly, 4th July 1840, at Hanover, whither he had been called to operate on the eyes of the crown-prince. Von Grafe did much to advance the practice of surgery in Germany, especially in the case of wounds, both by the invention of new instruments and the discovery





through each other so as to remain in an intimate state of mixture for any length of time." For the fissured jet of Puestley and Dubouché he substituted a glass tube closed by a plug of plaster of Paris, and with this simple appliance he developed his now well-known law "that the diffusion rate of gases is inversely as the square root of their density."

With regard to the special importance of Graham's law to the chemist and physicist, it may be sufficient to point out that a great number of chemical as well as physical facts are co-ordinated by the assumption that all substances in the state of gas have the same molecular volume or contain the same number of molecules in a given space (Avogadro's law), and, in the second place, it has become evident that the phenomena of heat are simply the manifestations of molecular motion. According to this view the absolute temperature of a gas is proportional to the *vis viva* of its molecules, and since all molecules at a given temperature have the same *vis viva*, it follows that the molecules must move with velocities which are inversely proportional to the square roots of the molecular weights. Moreover, since the molecular volumes are equal, and the molecular weights are therefore proportional to the densities of the aeriform bodies in which the molecules are active units, it also follows that the average velocities of the molecules in any two gases are inversely proportional to the square roots of their respective densities. Thus the simple numerical relations first observed in the phenomena of diffusion are the direct result of molecular motion, and it is now seen that Graham's empirical law is included under the fundamental law of motion.

Graham also studied the passage of gases by transpiration through fine tubes, and by effusion through a minute hole in a platinum disc, and was enabled to show that gases may enter a vacuum in two different ways. (1) by the molecular movement of diffusion, in virtue of which a gas penetrates through the pores of a disc of compressed graphite, (2) by effusion through an orifice of sensible dimensions in a platinum disc (the relative times of the effusion of gases in mass being similar to those of the molecular diffusion, although a gas is usually emitted by the former kind of impulse with a velocity many thousand times as great as is demonstrable by the latter), and (3) by the peculiar rate of passage due to transpiration through fine tubes, in which the ratios appear to be in direct relation with no other known property of the same gases—thus hydrogen has exactly double the transpiration rate of nitrogen, the relation of these gases as to density being as 1 : 14.

He subsequently examined the passage of gases through septa or partitions of india-rubber, and plates of non-crystalline metals such as palladium, and proved that gases pass through these septa neither by diffusion, effusion, nor transpiration, but in virtue of a selective absorption which the septa appear to exert on the gases in contact with them. By this means he was enabled partially to separate oxygen from air, and to calculate the density of metallic hydrogen from the remarkable expansion which attends the absorption of hydrogen by palladium. The experiments led him to believe that palladium with its occluded hydrogen was an alloy, a view that has been greatly strengthened by the recent experiments of MM. Chaillet and Pietet.

His early work on the movements of gases led him to examine the spontaneous movements of liquids, and as a result of the experiments he divided bodies into two classes,—crystalloids, such as common salt, and colloids, of which gum-arabic is a type,—the former having high and the latter low diffusibility. He also proved, by a series of beautiful experiments, that the process of liquid diffusion actually causes partial decomposition of certain chemical compounds, the sulphate of potash, for instance,

being separated from the sulphate of alumina in alum by the higher diffusibility of the former salt.

He also extended his work on the transpiration of gases to liquids, adopting the method of manipulation devised by Poussille. He found that dilution with water does not effect proportionate alteration in the transpiration velocities of different liquids, and a certain determinable degree of dilution retards the transpiration velocity. Thus in the case of alcohol the greatest retardation is with six equivalents of water, nitric acid with three, and acetone with as much as twelve equivalents.

It is only possible here to indicate the prominent features of Graham's more purely chemical labours. In 1833 he showed that the various compounds of phosphorus and hydrogen constitute distinct salts, in each of which the hydrogen may be displaced by other metals. It was the first, therefore, to establish the existence of polybasic compounds, in each of which one or more equivalents of hydrogen are replaceable by certain metals, and he further showed that by heating biphosphate of soda a metaphosphate is formed, and from this he obtained a corresponding hydrated acid. In 1824 he demonstrated that the spontaneous inflammability of one variety of phosphuretted hydrogen is due to its admixture with a very small proportion of an oxide of nitrogen, probably nitrous acid. In 1835 he published the results of an examination of the properties of water as a constituent of salts. Not the least interesting part of this inquiry was the discovery of certain definite salts with alcohol analogous to hydrates, to which the name of alcoholates was given. A brief paper entitled *Speculative Ideas on the Constitution of Matter* deserves notice as possessing special interest in connexion with work done since Graham's death. In it he expressed the view that the various kinds of matter now recognised as different elementary substances may possess one and the same ultimate or atomic molecule in different conditions of movement.

Graham's work, viewed as a whole, is remarkable alike for its originality and for the singular simplicity of the methods employed in obtaining most important results.

Biographical notices of Graham will be found in the *Proceedings of the Royal Society*, xvm, 1870, p. cviii; *Proceedings of the Royal Society of Edinburgh*, vii, 1873, p. 16; *Proceedings of the Royal Society of Edinburgh*, vi, 1872, p. 16; *Deutsche Chem. Gesellschaft*, Berlin, ii, 1860, p. 768; *München Acad. Sitzungsber.*, 1870, i, p. 408; *American Journal of Science*, i, 1871, p. 116; *Scientific American*, 1871, p. 177; *Proceedings of American Academy*, xiii, 1870, p. 280. His works have been collected and printed by Dr James Young and Dr Angus Smith, the latter contributing to the volume a valuable preface and analysis of its contents.

GRAHAM, JAMES (1765-1811), author of *The Sabbath* and other poems, was born at Glasgow, April 22, 1765. His father was a successful lawyer, and, by a very common error, he conceived that no other profession could be so suitable or so advantageous for his son. James, dutiful, and shrinking from opposition, as he did all through life, obeyed the paternal wish, and after completing his literary course at the university of his native city, went in 1784 to Edinburgh where he studied law, first to qualify himself for the business of writer to the signet, and subsequently for the Scottish bar, of which he was elected a member in 1795. His inclinations, however, were all for retirement and literature, and finally, when he had reached the mature age of forty-four, he took orders in the English Church, and became curate first at Shipton, Gloucestershire, and then at Sedgfield in the county of Durham. He did not long enjoy an office which he adorned by his pious and eloquent ministrations. Ill health compelled him to try the renovating effects of his native air, but he died shortly after his return, September 14, 1811. The works of Graham consist of a dramatic poem *Mary Queen of Scots* (published in 1801), *The Sabbath* (1804),

*British Grogues* (1801), *The Birds of Scotland* (1806), and *Poems on the Abolition of the Slave Trade* (1810). His principal work is *The Sabbath*—a sacred and descriptive poem in blank verse, characterised by a fine vein of tender and devotional feeling, and by the happy delineation of Scottish scenery. He is the Cower of Scotland, but wants Cower's mastery of versification and easy idiomatic vigour of style. The blank verse of Grahame is often hard and contrived, though at times it swells out into periods of striking imagery and prophet like earnestness. His description of the solemn stillness and unbroken calm of "the hallowed day" in the rural districts of Scotland, and of the Scottish Sabbath preachings among the hills in times of persecution, when

"The swelling fog would melt in some deep dell  
By rocks of crumpled,"

are finished pictures that will never fade from our poetry. In his *Grogues* he treads the wider field of rural occupations and merris, and produced some pleasing daguerotypes of nature,—for he was as careful as well as loving student,—but descended too much into minute and undignified detail. In the notes to his poems he expresses mainly and enlightens views on popular education, the criminal law, and other public questions. He was emphatically a friend of humanity—a philanthropist, as well as a poet.

GRAHAM'S TOWN, the metropolis of the eastern districts of the Cape Colony, South Africa, is situated in the division of Albany, 80 miles inland from Algoa Bay, 40 miles inland from Port Alfred, and 600 miles from Cape Town. In 1812 the site of the town was first chosen as the headquarters of the British troops engaged in protecting the frontier of the colony from the incursions of the Kaffre tribes, and it was named after Colonel Graham, then commanding the forces. In 1819 an attempt was made by the Kaffres to surprise the place, and a body of 10,000 men attacked it, but were gallantly repulsed by the garrison, which numbered not more than 320 men, infantry and artillery, under Colonel Walsbure. From 1820 Graham's Town was the centre of what was termed the "Albany Settlement," and it soon became the chief emporium of frontier trade. The town is built in a basin of the grassy hills forming the spurs of the Zuurberg mountain range, 1760 feet above sea-level. It is a pleasant place of residence, and is regarded as the most English-like town in the colony. The streets are broad, and most of them lined with trees. The principal thoroughfare is the High Street, where stand St George's English Cathedral, built from designs by Sir Gilbert Scott, and Commemoration Chapel, the chief places of worship of the Wesleyans, erected by the British emigrants of 1820. There are no fewer than twelve churches and chapels in Graham's Town—Church of England, Roman Catholic, Wesleyan, Presbyterian, Baptist, and Independent. It is the seat of the Eastern Districts' Court, presided over by a chief judge and two puisne judges. Among the institutions of the town are an excellent public hospital, a lunatic asylum, colleges and grammar schools, a museum and natural history society, a public library, a club, and masonic, templar, and other societies. There is also a botanic garden, in which there is a memorial of Colonel Foulke of the 74th regiment, who fell in the Kaffre war of 1851. The population of Graham's Town, according to the last census, is 7000. It is the centre of trade for an extensive pastoral and agricultural country, and has easy communication both with Port Alfred, at the mouth of the Kowie River, and with Port Elizabeth on Algoa Bay.

GRAIL, or GRAYT, THE HOLY (Saint Grial, Seynt Greal, Sangreal, Sank Ryal), the name given to the legendary wonder working vessel said to have been brought by Joseph of Arimathea to Britain. The correct spelling is "Greal."

In the present article the subject will be considered under the following four heads—(1) the meaning of the Grial conception, (2) the authorship of the conception, (3) the meaning of the word, (4) the spread of the conception from the land of its origin to other countries.

1 The "Saint Grial" was the name given—if not originally, yet very soon after the conception was stated—to the dish, or shallow bowl (in French, *wauche*), from which Jesus Christ was said to have eaten the paschal lamb on the evening of the Last Supper with his disciples. In the French prose romance of the *Saint Grial*, it is said that Joseph of Arimathea, having obtained leave from Pilate to take down the body of Jesus from the cross, proceeded first to the upper room where the supper was held and found there this vessel, then, as he took down the Lord's dead body, he received into the vessel in myriads of blood which issued from the still open wounds in his feet, hands, and side. This last feature, which Tennyson in his beautiful idyll *The Holy Grail* has overlooked, is obviously of the essence of the conception. According to Catholic theology, where the body or the blood of Christ is, there, by virtue of the hypostatic union, is His soul and His divinity. That the Grial, such being its contents, should be marvellous—divine—mysterious, was but logical and natural. The Grial was the commencement in all books of romance, the occasion of all prowess and heroic deeds, the invigoration of all the senses, the demonstration of great wonders, the end of all bounty and goodness, the marvel of all other marvels. "Nascens, taking off the paten which covered the Grial, comprehends innumerable marvels, but is struck blind. By the Grial Joseph's life is sustained in prison during forty-two years without food, while as an oracle it instructs him in heavenly knowledge. Nothing could be more fantastic and extravagant than all this, were the Grial conceived of merely as a relic, however venerable, but all is altered when it is brought into close relation, according to the design of its inventors, with the mystery of the eucharist."

2 The authorship of the conception involves one of the most difficult of literary questions. Mr. Price, in the able and eloquent dissertation prefixed to vol. 1 of Warton's *History of English Poetry*, seems to maintain the view that it can be attributed to no individual, but was the spontaneous outgrowth of a group of widely prevalent superstitions, in all which a magical cup or drinking bowl was the central object. Others, as Fausset, Simcock, and Schindler, find the original home of the legend in Provence. M. Paulin Paris, who has been engaged for nearly fifty years in the study of Arthurian romances, and whose latest speculations (*Hommes de Table Ronde*, v. 352) heat the recent date of 1876, is of opinion that the original conception came from some Welsh monk or hermit who lived early in the 8th century, and its guiding and essential import was an assertion for the British Church of an independent derivation of its Christianity direct from Palestine, and not through Rome, so that the conception was embodied in a book, called *Libre Grailis* or *De Gradale*, that this book was kept in secrecy by the British clergy for more than 300 years, from a fear lest it should bring them into collision with the hierarchy and make their orthodoxy suspected, that it came to be known and read in the second half of the 12th century, that a French poet, Robert de Boron, who probably had not seen the book, but received information about it, was the first to embody the conception in a romantic literary form by writing his poem of *Joseph d'Armathea*, and that, after Bozon, Walter Map and others came into the field. Lastly, it is maintained, by English writers generally, that the conception arose certainly on British ground, but in the 12th century, not in the 8th; that it was introduced by some master hand, probably that of Walter Map, into every branch of Arthurian

romances, and that if Map was not the author of the conception, as seems highly probable, he first, by writing the French romances of the *Saint Graal*, the second part of *Lancelot*, and *Mort Artu*, invested it in literary form.

These theories cannot be discussed here, but it may be remarked that, in order to pave the way for any rational theory, it is indispensable to have a clear view of the condition of romance literature at and before the time when the conception arose. The legend of Arthur, which barely rises to the surface in the narrative of Gildas, had in the time of Nennius (9th century) attained to considerable consistency, and through the appearance of the *Historia Britonum* of Geoffrey of Monmouth, which everywhere excited an extraordinary sensation, had become European. To the Norman and French poets it had become known, long before the appearance of Geoffrey's book, through the Breton lays, and the mysticism, the tender depths of sentiment, the wild flights of imagination and fancy which were found in these lays, had so captivated and dazzled them as to induce them almost to desert their own rough *Chansons de Geste*, of which Charlemagne was the chief figure, for this new field. A succession of startling incidents, in which giants, knights, dwarfs, fauns, and goblins were actors, and a nature in mystic sympathy with man was the background, appealed to the feelings of wonder and awe, the instinct of romance and the lust of war were gratified by little details memorable, while around the chief characters of the legends there floated the rapture and the hypothesis of amorous passion. In the *Dist* of Wace, founded on Geoffrey's work, we find the story of Arthur in ample proportions, and the "Round Table" appears for the first time—

"First 1014 Britu la Rande Table,  
Dunt Britun dunt munts table."

The exuberance of invention here attributed to the Bretons was faithfully imitated by the poets of northern France. Christian of Troyes, born near the middle of the 12th century, besides verifying many tales from Ovid, reproduced parts of the Arthur legend in his poem on *King Arthur and Yvain the Blonde*, and the *Chevalier au Lion*. In these, however, there is no mention of the Graal. Suddenly a narrative, possibly in Latin but more probably in French prose, makes its appearance, containing the story of the commission of the Holy Graal to Joseph of Arimathea, as given above, of his subsequent adventures in Syria and elsewhere, and of the ultimate arrival of his son, his brother-in-law, and others of his kindred, in Britain, where they settle in the island of Avalon. The birth of Arthur is prophesied in this narrative, but otherwise he is scarcely mentioned. About the same time, the prose romances of *Lancelot* (part 1) and *Tristan*, containing rich developments of the Arthurian legend, made their appearance and were warmly welcomed. The first is ascribed in the MSS to Wolfram Map, and the second to Luo or Luos de Gast, but both statements, in the opinion of M. Paulin Paris, are extremely doubtful. At any rate, it Map wrote the first part of *Lancelot*, he continued and finished it in a totally different spirit. The first part is mere love and chivalry, "the most secular," says M. Paulin Paris, "of all romances," while the second part is the most mystical of all. The first part contains no allusion to the Graal, in the second it is an element of overpowering interest. Lancelot joins in the quest for the Graal, fails to see it or only half sees it, repents, becomes a holy hermit, and dies. *Tristan* in its original form was the legend of a favorite Breton hero, it was then connected with the cycle of Arthur, lastly, perhaps by the same powerful hand that transmuted *Lancelot*, it was brought within the sweep of the Graal conception.

But who invented the story of Joseph of Arimathea? or rather, who connected that story with the Graal legend, and

both with Arthur? The importance of a work of William of Malmesbury in assisting us to answer this question has been somewhat overlooked. In his treatise *De Antiquitate Glastoniensis Ecclesie*, written probably soon after Henry of Blois, abbot of Glastonbury, to whom it is dedicated, was raised to the see of Winchester (1129), Malmesbury records with considerable detail the legend which brought Joseph to Glastonbury, and made him the first preacher of Christianity to the Britons. Everything connected with Glastonbury had a diocesan character, Joseph was sent to Britain by St Philip the evangelist as the chief among twelve missionaries, the holy men who afterwards tenanted the abbey always sought to maintain the number of twelve, Glaston, from whom the place was named, was one of twelve brothers, the chief estate of the abbey was called "the Twelve Tithes," &c. This same feature distinctly reappears in the Graal legend, where Bion, the brother-in-law of Joseph, has twelve sons, who are all sent to Britain, but one among them, Alain, who renounces marriage, is set over the rest. Again, we read in Malmesbury that Avalon is another name for Glastonbury, and in the Graal legend we read that Joseph's kindred are directed by a divine voice to seek, in the far west, the "valleys of Avalon." Lastly, in the strange story about the altar called "sapphirus," which angels brought from Palestine to St David, and which after a long disappearance was rediscovered in Malmesbury's own day, we seem to lay our finger, as it were, on the origin, the rudimentary suggestion, of the Graal conception.

Now if we accept the general testimony of the MSS, and assume without further proof that Map composed, whether in Latin or in French, the original book of the *Saint Graal*, the genesis of the work seems not difficult to trace. In early life Map was a canon of Salisbury (see Wright's preface to the *De Nugis Curialium*), either afterwards or at the same time he was parish priest of Westbury near Bristol. Gloucestershire and Wiltshire are both neighbouring counties to Somersetshire, in which Glastonbury was the most sacred and celebrated spot. Visiting that ancient abbey, Map would have become acquainted with the legend of Joseph of Arimathea in all its details, and he would have seen the altar said to have been transported by angels from Palestine, and which, long hidden from mortal sight on account of the wickedness of the times, had lately been revealed and reinstated. His versatile and capacious mind would, as a matter of course, have been familiar with the whole Arthur legend as it then (1170-1180) existed, if for no other reason, because he lived in the very part of England which was studded with Arthurian sites. He fully answers to the description of the "great clerk" who, according to Robert de Boron first made and told the history of the Graal. He seems to have conceived the vast design of steeping the Arthurian legend, and through it the whole imaginative literature of the age, in the doctrine of the Christian sacrifice. He is generally credited in the MSS with the composition of the *Saint Graal* (containing the legend of Joseph of Arimathea), of the *Quest* of the *Saint Graal*, of *Lancelot* in whole or in part, and of the *Mort Artu*. But it appears that no MS of any of these romances now exists of an earlier date than 1274, and it is certain that a set of "arrangements" and continuators (like the rhapsodists and cyclic poets of the Homeric epics) commenced their continuing operations on the legend at an early period. Hence it seems impossible now to recover the exact order in which the different romances were composed. On the origin of the word Graal, the opinion of M. Paulin Paris seems to be satisfactory. He thinks that graal is a corruption of gradale, or gradual, the Latin name for a liturgical collection of psalms and texts of scripture, so called "quod in gradibus cantatur," as the priest is passing

from the epistle to the gospel side of the altar. The author of the Grial conception meant by grial, a gradale, not the sacred dish (escuelle), but the mysterious book iconized to the supposed hermit of 717, in which he finds the history of the esuelle. Robert de Boron, mistaking this, transfers the name to the dish, and connects it with *gri* (gratus, giata) on account of the inward solace connected with it (see *Romans de la T. R.*, i. 143). The word rapidly became popular in the sense of bowl, or shallow cup, so that Hildbrand (1204) could say, "Dicitur vulgari nomine *grials*, quia giata et acceptabilis est in ea comedenti." This etymology is the same as Boron's. The older French word *griuel*, meaning service-bowl (Ducauge, article "Gradale"), was displaced by the new *grial* or *greal*. On the other hand, M. Faustel derives *grial* from an old Provençal word for a cup, *grail*. But this *grail*, according to the article in Ducauge, seems to be of Armoic origin, anyhow M. Faustel has not proved its use in the sense of cup at a period earlier than the use of the Grial legend.

4 The spread and ascendancy to which the Grial conception rapidly attained in all Christian countries made the creations of Arthurian romance the delight of all cultivated minds, from Caesalon to Venice, and from Iceland to the Straits of Gibraltar. From England, which we must regard as the land of its origin, the Grial legend at once passed to France, and found an enthusiastic and capable interpreter in Robert or Robert de Boron. This Boron was no Englishman of Nottinghamshire, as some English writers have pretended, but, as Paulin Paris conclusively proves, a French poet of the county of Montbeliard in the region of the Vosges. Christien de Troyes in his *Perceval* (written before 1191, for it is dedicated to Count Philip of Flandria who died in that year), gives in a poetical dress, the legend of Perceval, one of the knights of the round table, under the transformation which the introduction of the Grial conception had effected. The continuations of the poem, by Denot and Manessier, come down to about 1246. The famous Mid-German poem of *Parzival*, by Wolfram von Eschenbach, which appeared near the beginning of the 13th century, is founded partly on Christien's *Perceval*, but partly also on some other, perhaps Provençal, source, which is now lost. A rude English metrical version of the French prose romance of the *Saint Grial*, by one Harry Lonelich, dating from the reign of Henry VI, has been recently edited by Mr Furnivall for the Roxburghe Club. Flemish, Icelandic, and Welsh reproductions of the Grial romances have been found to exist. One of the first employments of the printing press in England, France, and Germany was to multiply poems or romances embodying this legend. Hence Caxton printed for St Thomas Malory (1485) *The History of King Arthur and his Noble Knights*, a version in English prose of the French romances of *Merlin*, *Lancelot*, *Tristan*, the *Queste du Saint Grial*, and *Mort Artur*, or at any rate based upon them. An early French edition of the *Tristan*, of which there is a copy in the British Museum, is dated 1489. *Lancelot du Lac* was printed at Paris in 1513, and not long afterwards editions of the *Tristan* and other portions of the Arthur cycle, always as interpolated by the Grial legend, appeared both in Italy and Spain (Schulz's *Essay*, p. 114).

See Paulin Paris, *Les Manuscrits de la Bibliothèque Royale*, 1836, and *Les Romans de la Table Ronde*, 1856-77. Madden's *His. Genouvain*, edited for the Bannatyne Club, 1859, the *Saint Greal* (part i.), edited by F. Furnivall, with a prefatory essay on the Grial saga by Sam. Mitche (Schulz), 1861-3, several MSS of the *King's Library* in the British Museum, Reg. 14 B. in. 19, C. vi. 20, C. vi. 40, &c. &c. Faustel's *Hist. de la Table Ronde*, Wolfenbüttel, von Eschenbach, *Parzival* und *Artus*, edited by Pfaff, 1870, Watson's *History of English Poetry*, vol. 1, *De France Littéraire*, vol. xx. Helander's, "Chronicles" (in *Magasin's Patrologie*, vol. cxxv.) Schulz's *Essay on the Influence of Welsh Tradition*, London, 1841, &c., &c.

GRAINS OF PARADISE, GUINEA GRUINS, or MELP-  
GUETA PAPAVER (German, *Paradieskörner*, French, *Graines de Paradis*, *Alanyette*), the *semena cardamomi mayas* is an upper *melageta* of pharmacists, are the seeds of *Amomum melegueta*, Roscoe, a root-like plant of the natural order *Zingiberaceae*, which is a native of tropical western Africa, and of Fances and St Thomas's Islands in the Gulf of Guinea, is cultivated in British Guiana, and may with ease be grown in hot houses in England. The plant has a branched horizontal rhizome, smooth, nearly sessile, alternate leaves, with the blade oblong-lanceolate, large, white, pale pink, or purplish flowers, and an oval oblong fruit, encased in a husk, which is of a scarlet colour when fully ripe, and reaches under cultivation a length of 5 inches. The seeds are contained in the acid pulp of the fruit, are commonly wedge-shaped and bluntly angular, are about 1½ line in diameter, and have a glossy dark-brown husk, with a conical light-coloured membranous caulicle at the base and a white kernel. They contain, according to Kluckiger and Haubury, 0.3 per cent of a faintly yellowish neutral essential oil, having an aromatic, not acid taste, and a specific gravity at 15° C. of 0.825, and giving on analysis the formula  $C_{20}H_{14}O$ , or  $C_{20}H_{12}O + C_2H_2O$ , also 5.83 per cent of an intensely pungent, viscid, brown resin. Grains of paradise were formerly official in British pharmacopoeia, and in the 13th and 14th centuries were used as a drug and a spice, the wine known as *hippocras* being flavoured with them and with ginger and cinnamon. In 1839 they were employed among the ingredients of the twenty-four heating pills which were the ancient fæ favour of the city of Norwich, ordained to be carried to court by the lord of the manor of Clacton (Johnson and Church, *Chem. of Common Life*, p. 355, 1879). Grains of paradise were in past times brought overland from West Africa to the Mediterranean ports of the Barbary States, to be shipped for Italy. They are now exported almost exclusively from the Gold Coast. The amount received by Great Britain in 1871 was upwards of 740 cwt. Grains of paradise are to some extent used in horticulture practice, but for the most part illegally to give a fictitious strength to malt liquor, gin, and cordials. 56 Geo. III. c. 58, no brewer or dealer in beer shall have in his possession or use grains of paradise, under a penalty of £200 for each offence, and no druggist shall sell the same to a brewer under a penalty of £500. They are, however, devoid of any injurious physiological action, and are much esteemed as a spice by the natives of Guinea.

See Bentley and Tatum, *Medicinal Plants*, part 10, tab. 268, Linnæus, *Hist. der Drogen*, pp. 156-160, 2578.

GRAM, or CHITRA PPA, called also Egyptian PEA, or Bengal Gram (Hind., *chana*, Bengali, *choda*, Kalm., *ceci*, Spanish, *garbanzo*), an herbaceous, annual, leguminous plant, the *Cicer arietinum* of Linnæus, was named from the resemblance of its seed to a ram's head, is a native of the south of Europe and India. Its leaves are bipinnate, with ovate, equal, and serrate leaflets, the flowers are axillary, and of a bluish-purple colour, and bloom in India from September to October, and the pods have a length of 1 to 1½ inch, and contain either one or two somewhat pointed and commonly pale yellow seeds, about 3 lines long. Gram is largely cultivated in the East, where the seeds are eaten raw, or cooked and prepared in various ways, both in their ripe and unripe condition, and when roasted and ground are made to subsist the same purposes as an ordinary flour. In Europe the seeds are used as an ingredient in soups. They contain, in 100 parts, without husk, nitrogenous substances 22.7, fat 3.76, starch 63.18, mineral matters 2.6 parts, with water (Forbes Watson, quoted in Parkes's *Lignette*). The liquid which exudes from the glandular hairs clothing the leaves and stems of the plant, more

especially during the cold season, when the seeds ripen, contains a notable proportion of oxalic acid, and is said to be very injurious to the leather shoes of those who walk through fields of gram. In Mysore the dew containing it is collected by means of cloths spread on the plant over night, and is valued as a remedy for dyspepsia, indigestion, and costiveness. The steam of water in which the fresh plant is immersed is in the Deccan resorted to by the Portuguese for the treatment of dysmenorrhoea. The seed of *Phaseolus Mungo*, Linn, or green gram (Hind and Bong, *moong*), a variety of which plant, *P. Mungo melano spermas* (*P. Meri*, Roeb.), is termed black gram, is an important article of diet among the labouring classes in India, and is annually exported in large quantities from Madras. Soup made from it is considered to be especially suited to sick persons. The meal is an excellent substitute for soap, and is stated by Elliot to be an invaluable concomitant of the Hindu bath. *P. Roburghia*, W and Arn., or *P. radiatus*, Roeb. (Hind, *urid*, Bong, *mdsh koldis*), which also is known as green gram, is perhaps the most esteemed of the leguminous plants of India, where the meal of its seed enters into the composition of the most delicate cakes and dishes, and is used in medicine both externally and internally. *P. acutirostris* goes by the name of Turkish gram. Horse gram, *Dolichos uniflorus*, Lam. (Hind and Bong, *khali*), which supplies in Madras the place of the chick-pea, affords seed which, when boiled, is extensively employed as a food for hogs, and cattle in South India, where also it is eaten in curries, and, made into poultices or pastes, is applied to medicinal purposes. Turkish gram is the *Dolichos Catjang* of Roxburgh. White gram, *Oryza (Squa) hirsuta*, produces the beans from which soy is made. The quantity of gram exported from India in 1870-77, chiefly to Mauritius, Ceylon, and the Straits, amounted to 316,592 cwt., against 322,661 cwt in the previous year.

See W. Elliot, "On the Famoseous Grams and the various kinds of Pulse used in Southern India," *Burr. New Phil Jour*, n., 1868, vol. vii, p. 16 q. H. Druy, *The Useful Plants of India*, 1873, U. C. Dut, *Modern Medicine of the Hindus*, Calcutta, 1877.

**GRAMMAR.** By the grammar of a language is meant either the relations borne by the words of a sentence and by sentences themselves one to another, or the systematized exposition of these. The exposition may be, and frequently is, incorrect, but it always presupposes the existence of certain customary uses of words when in combination. In what follows, therefore, grammar will be generally employed in its primary sense, as denoting the mode in which words are connected together in order to express a complete thought, or, as it is termed in logic, a proposition.

The object of language is to convey thought, and so long as this object is attained the machinery for attaining it is of comparatively slight importance. The way in which we combine our words and sentences matters but little, provided that our meaning is clear to others. The expressions "horseflesh" and "flesh of a horse," are equally intelligible to an Englishman and therefore are equally recognized by English grammar. The Chinese manner of denoting a genitive is by placing the defining word before that which it defines, as in *howe jun*, "mao of the kingdom," literally "kingdom mao," and the only reason why it would be incorrect in French or Italian is that such a combination would be unintelligible to a Frenchman or an Italian. Hence it is evident that the grammatical correctness or incorrectness of an expression depends upon its intelligibility, that is to say, upon the ordinary use and custom of a particular language. Whatever is so unfamiliar as not to be generally understood is also ungrammatical. In other words, it is contrary to the habit of a language, as determined by common usage and consent.

In this way we can explain how it happens that the grammar of a cultivated dialect and that of a local dialect in the same country so frequently disagree. Thus, in the dialect of West Somerset, *thee* is the nominative of the second personal pronoun, while in cultivated English the plural accusative *you* (Anglo-Saxon, *eo*) has come to represent a nominative singular. Both are grammatically correct within the sphere of their respective dialects, but no further. You would be as ungrammatical in West Somerset as *thee* is in classical English, and both *you* and *thee*, as nominatives singular, would have been equally ungrammatical in Early English. Grammatical propriety is nothing more than the established usage of a particular body of speakers at a particular time in their history.

It follows from this that the grammar of a people changes, like its pronunciation, from age to age. Anglo-Saxon or Early English grammar is not the grammar of Modern English, any more than Latin grammar is the grammar of modern Italian, and to defend an unusual construction or inflexion on the ground that it once existed in literary Anglo-Saxon, is as wrong as to import a peculiarity of some local dialect into the grammar of the cultivated speech. It further follows that different languages will have different grammars, and that the differences will be more or less according to the nearer or remoter relationship of the languages themselves, and the mode of thought of those who speak them. Consequently, to force the grammatical framework of one language upon another is to misconceive the whole nature of the latter, and seriously to mislead the learner. Chinese grammar, for instance, can never be understood until we discard not only the terminology of European grammar, but the very conceptions which underlie it, while the polysynthetic idioms of America defy all attempts to discover in them "the parts of speech" and the various grammatical ideas which occupy so large a place in our school-grammars. The endeavor to find the distinctions of Latin grammar in that of English has only resulted in grotesque errors, and a total misapprehension of the usage of the English language.

It is to the Latin grammarians, — not, more correctly, to the Greek grammarians, upon whose labors those of the division of Latin writers were based, — that we owe the classification of the subjects with which grammar is commonly supposed to deal. The grammar of Dionysius Thaux, which he wrote for Roman schoolboys in the time of Pompey, has formed the starting point for the innumerable school grammars which have since seen the light, and suggested that division of the matter treated of which they have followed. He defines grammar as a practical acquaintance with the language of literary men, and as divided into six parts, — accentuation and phonology, explanation of figurative expressions, definition, etymology, general rules of flexion, and critical canons. Of these, phonology and accentuation, or prosody, can properly be included in grammar only in so far as the construction of a sentence and the grammatical meaning of a word are determined by accent or letter-change, the accentual difference in English, for example, between *success* and *enclose* belongs to the province of grammar, since it indicates a difference between noun and verb, and the changes of vowel in the Semitic languages, by which various nominal and verbal forms are distinguished from one another, constitute a very important part of their grammatical machinery. But where accent and pronunciation do not serve to express the relations of words in a sentence, they fall into the domain of phonology, not of grammar. The explanation of figurative expressions, again, must be left to the rhetorician, and definition to the lexicographer, the grammarian has no more to do with them than he has with the canons of criticism.

In fact, the old subdivision of grammar, inherited from

the grammarians of Rome and Alexandria, must be given up, and a new one put in its place. What grammar really deals with are all those contrivances, whereby the relations of words and sentences are pointed out. Sometimes it is position, sometimes phonetic symbolization, sometimes composition, sometimes flexion, sometimes the use of auxiliaries, which enables the speaker to combine his words together so that they shall be intelligible to another. Grammar may accordingly be divided into the three departments of composition or "word building," syntax, and accentuation, by which is meant an exposition of the means adopted by language for expressing the relations of grammar when recourse is not had to composition or simple position.

Modern treatment

A systematized exposition of grammar may be intended for the purely practical purpose of teaching the mechanism of a foreign language. In this case, all that is necessary is a correct and complete statement of the facts. But a correct and complete statement of the facts is by no means so easy a matter as might appear at first sight. The facts will be distorted by a false theory in regard to them, while they will certainly not be presented in a complete form if the grammarian is ignorant of the true theory they presuppose.

The Sinitic verb, for example, remains unintelligible so long as the explanation of its forms is sought in the conjugation of the Aryan verb, since it has no tenses in the Aryan sense of the word, but denotes relation and not time.

A good practical grammar of a language, therefore, should be based on a correct appreciation of the facts which it expounds, and a correct appreciation of the facts is only possible where they are examined and co-ordinated in accordance with the scientific method. A practical grammar ought, wherever it is possible, to be preceded by a scientific grammar.

Comparison is the instrument with which science works, and a scientific grammar, accordingly, is one in which the comparative method has been applied to the relations of speech. If we would understand the origin and real nature of grammatical forms, and of the relations which they represent, we must compare them with similar forms in kindred dialects and languages, as well as with the forms under which they appeared themselves at an earlier period of their history. We shall thus have a comparative grammar and an historical grammar, the latter being devoted to tracing the history of grammatical forms and usages in the same language. Of course, an historical grammar is only possible where a succession of written records exists, while a language possesses no older literature, we must be content with a comparative grammar only, and but to cognate idioms to throw light upon its grammatical peculiarities. In this case we have frequently to leave whole forms unexplained, or at most conjecturally interpreted, since the machinery by means of which the relations of grammar are symbolized is often changed so completely during the growth of a language as to cause its earlier shape and character to be unrecognizable. Moreover, our area of comparison must be as wide as possible, where we have but two or three languages to compare, we are in danger of building up conclusions on insufficient evidence. The grammatical errors of the classical philologists of the last century were in great measure due to the fact that their area of comparison was confined to Latin and Greek.

The historical grammar of a single language or dialect, which traces the grammatical forms and usages of the language as far back as documentary evidence allows, affords material to the comparative grammarian, whose task it is to compare the grammatical forms and usages of an allied group of tongues, and thereby reduce them to their earliest forms and senses. The work thus carried out by the comparative grammarian within a particular family of languages is made use of by universal grammar, the object of which

is to determine the ideas that underlie all grammar whatsoever, as distinct from those that are peculiar to special families of speech. Universal grammar is sometimes known as "the metaphysics of language," and it has to decide such questions as the nature of gender, or of the verb, the true purport of the genitive relation, or the origin of grammar itself. Such questions, it is clear, can only be answered by comparing the results gained by the comparative treatment of the grammars of various groups of language. What historical grammar is to comparative grammar, comparative grammar is to universal grammar.

Universal grammar, as founded on the results of the Universal scientific study of speech, is thus essentially different from grammar that "universal grammar" so much in vogue at the beginning of the present century, which consisted of a series of *a priori* assumptions based on the peculiarities of European grammar and illustrated from the same source. But universal grammar, as conceived by modern science, is as yet in its infancy, its materials are still in the process of being collected. The comparative grammar of the Aryan languages is alone in an advanced state, those of the Semitic idioms, of the Ugro-Altaic tongues, and of the Basque or Kaffio dialects of Southern Africa, are still in a backward condition, and the other families of speech existing in the world, with the exception of the Malayo-Polynesian, and the Sonorian of North America, have not as yet been treated scientifically. Chinese, it is true, possesses an historical grammar, and Mr. Van Eya, in his comparative grammar of Basque, has endeavored to solve the problems of that interesting language by a comparison of its various dialects, but in both cases the area of comparison is too small for more than a limited success to be attainable. Instead of attempting the questions of universal grammar therefore, it will be better to confine our attention to three points,—the fundamental differences in the grammatical conceptions of different groups of languages, the main results of a scientific investigation of Aryan grammar, and the light thrown by comparative philology upon the grammar of our own tongue.

The proposition or sentence is the unit and starting point of speech, and grammar, as we have seen, consists in the relations of its several parts one to another, together with the expression of them. These relations may be regarded from various points of view. In the polysynthetic languages of America the sentence is conceived as a whole, not composed of independent words, but, like the thought which it expresses, one and indivisible. What we should denote by a series of words is consequently denoted by a single long compound,—*Adigayah* in Delaware, for instance, signifying "Give me your pretty little pan," and *myaklakayakayawagah*, in Eskimo, "he goes away hastily and events himself to write." Individual words can be, and often are, extracted from the sentence, but in this case they stand, as it were, outside it, being represented by a pronoun within the sentence itself. Thus, in Mexican, we may say not only *me esca temoa*, "I look for flowers," but also *me ktemom acoteli*, where the interpolated guttural *i* is the objective, *me* noun. As a necessary result of this conception of the sentence the American languages possess no true verb, each act being expressed as a whole by a single word. In Chukchee, for example, while there is no verb signifying "to wash" in the abstract, no less than thirteen words are used to signify every conceivable mode and object of washing. In the incorporating languages, again, of which Basque may be taken as a type, the object cannot be conceived except as contained in the verbal action. Hence every verbal form embodies an objective pronoun, even though the object may be separately expressed. If we pass to an isolating language like Chinese, we find the exact converse of that which meets us in the polysynthetic tongues. Here each proposi-

tion or thought is analysed into its several elements, and these are set over against one another as so many independent words. The relations of grammar are consequently denoted by position, the particular position of two or more words determining the relation they bear to each other. The analysis of the sentence has not been carried so far in agglutinative languages like Turkish. In these the relations of grammar are represented by individual words, which, however, are subordinated to the words expressing the main ideas intended to be in relation to one another. The defining words, or indices of grammatical relations, are, in a large number of instances, placed after the words which they define, in some cases, however, as, for example, in the Dikru languages of southern Africa, the relation is conceived from the opposite point of view, the defining words being prefixed. The inflexional languages call in the aid of a new principle. The relations of grammar are denoted symbolically either by a change of vowel or by a change of termination, more rarely by a change at the beginning of a word. Each idea, together with the relation which it bears to the other ideas of a proposition, is thus represented by a single word, that is to say, the ideas which make up the elements of a sentence are not conceived severally and independently, as in Chinese, but as always having a certain connection with one another. Inflexional languages, however, tend to become analytical by the logical separation of the flexion from the idea to which it is attached, though the primitive point of view is never altogether discarded, and traces of flexion remain even in English and Persian. In fact, there is no example of a language which has wholly forsaken the conception of the sentence and the relation of its elements with which it started, although each class of languages occasionally trespasses on the grammatical usages of the others. In language, as elsewhere in nature, there are no sharp lines of division, no sudden leaps, species passes insensibly into species, class into class. At the same time the several types of speech—poly-synthetic, isolating, agglutinative, and inflexional—remain clear and fixed, and even where two languages belong to the same general type, as, for instance, an Aryan and a Semitic language in the inflexional group, or a Kaffro and a Turkish language in the agglutinative group, we find no certain example of grammatical interchange. A mixed grammar, in which the grammatical procedure of two distinct families of speech is intermingled, is almost, if not altogether, unknown.

It is obvious, therefore, that grammar constitutes the surest and most important basis for a classification of languages. Words may be borrowed freely by one dialect from another, or, though originally unrelated, may, by the action of phonetic decay, come to assume the same forms, while the limited number of articulate sounds and conceptions out of which language was first developed, and the sameness of the circumstances by which the first speakers were everywhere surrounded, naturally produce a resemblance between the roots of many unconnected tongues. Where, however, the fundamental conceptions of grammar, and the machinery by which they are expressed are the same, we may have no hesitation in inferring a common origin.

The main results of scientific inquiry into the origin and primitive meaning of the forms of Aryan or Indo-European grammar may be summed up as follows. We start with stems or themes, by which are meant words of two or more syllables which terminate in a limited number of sounds. These stems can be classed in groups of two kinds, one in which the groups consist of stems of similar meaning and similar initial syllables, and another in which the final syllables alone coincide. In the first case we have what are termed roots, the simplest elements into which words can be decomposed, in the second case stems proper, which may be described as consisting of suffixes attached to roots.

Roots, therefore, are merely the materials out of which speech can be made, the embodiments of isolated conceptions with which the lexicons begin; stems, on the other hand, present us with words already combined in a sentence and embodying the relations of grammar. If we would rightly understand primitive Aryan grammar, we must conceive it as having been expressed or implied in the suffixes of the stems, and in the order according to which the stems were arranged in a sentence. In other words, the relations of grammar were denoted partly by juxtaposition or syntax, partly by the suffixes of stems.

These suffixes were probably at first unmeaning, or rather clothed with vague significations, which changed according to the place occupied in the sentence by the stem to which they were joined. Gradually this vagueness of signification disappeared, and particular suffixes came to be set apart to represent particular relations of grammar. What had hitherto been expressed by mere position now attached itself to the terminations or suffixes of stems, which accordingly became full-grown words. Some of the suffixes denoted purely grammatical ideas, that is to say, were flexions, others were classificatory, serving to distinguish nouns from verbs, presents from aorists, objects from agents, and the like, while others, again, remained unmeaning adjuncts of the root. This origin of the flexions explains the otherwise strange fact that the same suffix may symbolize wholly different grammatical relations. In Latin, for instance, the context and dictionary will alone tell us that *mus* is the accusative plural of a noun, and *am* is the second person singular of a verb, or that *vera* is the nominative singular of a feminine substantive, *bon* a the accusative plural of a neuter adjective. In short, the flexions were originally merely the terminations of stems which were adapted to express the various relations of words to each other in a sentence, as these gradually presented themselves to the consciousness and were extracted from what had been previously implied by position. Nevertheless, the same suffix might be used sometimes in a classificatory, sometimes in a flexional sense, and sometimes without any definite sense at all. In the Greek dative-locative *ποδ* *er* *es*, for example, the suffix *-es* is classificatory, in the nominative *ποδ* *es*, it is flexional.

When a particular termination or suffix once acquired a special sense, it would be separated in thought from the stem to which it belonged, and attached in the same sense to other stems and other terminations. Thus in modern English we can attach the suffix *-er* to almost any word whatsoever, in order to give the latter a transitive meaning, and the Greek *ποδ* *er* *es*, quoted above, really contains no less than three suffixes, *es*, *-er*, and *-s*, the first two both denoting the locative, and coalescing, through *er*, into a single syllable *-es*. The latter instance shows us how two or more suffixes denoting exactly the same idea may be tacked on one to another, if the original force and signification of the first of them comes to be forgotten. Thus, in Old English *sung* *este* *e* was the feminine of *sing* *-er*, "singer," but the meaning of the termination has so entirely died out of the memory that we have to add the Romance *-es* to it if we would still distinguish it from the masculine *singer*. A familiar example of the way in which the full sense of the exponent of a grammatical idea fades from the mind and has to be supplied by a new exponent is afforded by the use of expletives in conversational English to denote the superlative "Very warm" expresses little more than the positive, and to represent the intensity of his feelings the Englishman has recourse to such expressions as "horribly warm" like the German "schrecklich warm."

Such words as "very," "horribly," "schrecklich," illustrate a second mode in which Aryan grammar has found means of expression. Words may lose their true signifi-



tion and become the mere exponents of grammatical ideas. Professor Earle divides all words into *pro-sentives* and *syn-bolists*, the former denoting objects and conceptions, the latter the relations which exist between these. Symbolic words, therefore, are what the Chinese grammarians call "empty words,"—words, that is, which have been divested of their proper signification and save a grammatical purpose only. Many of the classificatory and some of the flexional suffixes of Aryan speech can be shown to have had this origin. Thus the suffix *ta*, which denotes names of kinship and agency, seems to come from the same root as the Latin *terminus* and *trans*, our *through*, the Sanskrit *ta ānt*, "I pass over," and to have primarily signified "one that goes through" a thing. Thus, too, the English *head or hood*, in "character" or "rank" *dem*, in *Lanymom*, the Anglo-Saxon *dōm*, "judgment," and *lock or ledge*, in *wedlock* and *knor-ledge*, the Anglo-Saxon *lde*, "spot" or "gift." In all these cases the "empty words," after first losing every trace of their original significance, have followed the general analogy of the language and assumed the form and functions of the suffixes with which they had been confused.

A third mode of representing the relations of grammar is by the symbolic use of vowels and diphthongs. In Greek, for instance, the distinction between the reduplicated present *διδωμι*, and the reduplicated perfect *έδωκα* is indicated by a distinction of vowel, and in primitive Aryan grammar, the vowel *a* seems to have been set apart to denote the subjunctive mood just as *ya* or *u* was set apart to denote the potential. So, too, according to M. Hovelacque, the change of *a* into *o* or *u* in the parent-Aryan symbolized a change of meaning from passive to active. This symbolic use of the vowels, which is the purest application of the principle of flexion, is far less extensively carried out in the Aryan than in the Semitic languages. The Semitic family of speech is therefore a much more characteristic type of the inflexional languages than is the Aryan.

The primitive Aryan noun possessed at least eight cases,—nominative, accusative, vocative, instrumental, dative, genitive, ablative, and locative. M. Beaugue has attempted to show that the first three of these "strong cases," as they are termed, are really abstracts formed by the suffixes *-a* (*s*), *-m*, *-t*, *-i*, *-ā*, and *-ya* (*s*), the plural being nothing more than an abstract singular, as may be readily seen by comparing words like the Greek *έρος* and *έρες*, which mean precisely the same. The remaining "weak" cases, formed by the suffixes *-am*, *-ya*, *-yā*, *-yā*, *-i*, *-m*, *-t*, *-ā*, *-m*, *-t*, *-ā*, and *-i*, are really adjectives and adverbs. No distinction, for example, can be drawn between "a cup of gold" and "a golden cup," and the instrumental, the dative, the ablative, and the locative are, when closely examined, merely adverbs attached to a verb. The terminations of the strong cases do not displace the accent of the stem to which they are suffixed, the suffixes of the weak cases, on the other hand, generally draw the accent upon themselves.

According to Hubschmann, the nominative, accusative, and genitive cases are purely grammatical, distinguished from one another through the exigencies of the sentence only, whereas the locative, ablative, and instrumental have a logical origin and determine the logical relation which the three other cases bear to each other and the verb. The nature of the dative is left undecided. The locative primarily denotes rest in a place, the ablative motion from a place, and the instrumental the means or concomitance of an action. The dative Hubschmann regards as "the case of the participant object." Like Hubschmann, Hovelacque divides the cases into two classes,—the one grammatical and the other logical, and his analysis of their primitive meaning is the same as that of Hubschmann,

except as regards the dative, the primary sense of which he thinks to have been motion towards a place. This is also the view of Delbuck, who makes it denote tendency towards an object. Delbuck, however, holds that the primary sense of the ablative was that of separation, the instrumental originally indicating concomitance, while there was a double locative, one used like the ablative absolute in Latin, the other being a locative of the object.

The dual was older than the plural, and after the development of the latter survived as a merely useless encumbrance, of which most of the Aryan languages continued in time to get rid. There are still many savage idioms, and a high degree of plurality has not advanced beyond that of duality. In the Bushman dialects, for instance, the plural, or rather that which is more than one, is expressed by repeating the word, thus *tu* is "mouth," *tutu* "mouths." It may be shown that most of the suffixes of the Aryan dual are the longer and more primitive forms of those of the plural which have grown out of them by the help of phonetic decay. The plural of the weak cases, on the other hand (the accusative alone excepted), was identical with the singular of abstract nouns, so far as both form and meaning are concerned, no distinction can be drawn between *έρος* and *έρες*. Similarly, *humanity* and *men* signify one and the same thing, and the use of English words like *weep* or *shak* for both singular and plural leads to what an extent our appreciation of number is determined by the context rather than by the form of the noun. The so-called "broken plurals" of Arabic and Ethiopic are really singular collectives employed to denote the plural.

Gender is the product partly of analogy, partly of phonetic decay. In many languages such as Eskimo and Chok-taw, its place is taken by a division of objects into animate and inanimate, while in other languages they are separated into rational and irrational. There are many indications that the parent-Aryan in an early stage of its existence had no signs of gender at all. The terminations of the names of *father* and *mother*, *patēr* and *matēr*, for example, are exactly the same, and in Latin and Greek many diphthongal stems, as well as stems in *s* or *ya* and *u* (like *ros* and *έως*, *πόλις* and *λίε*), may be indistinctly masculine and feminine. Even stems in *o* and *a* (of the sound and first declensions), though the first are generally masculine and the second generally feminine, by no means invariably maintain the rule, and feminine like *humani* and *έδες*, or masculines like *αδελφαι* and *πολέμεις*, show that there was a time when these stems also indicated no particular gender, but owed their subsequent adaptation, the one to mark the masculine and the other to mark the feminine, to the influence of analogy. The idea of gender was first suggested by the difference between man and woman, male and female, and, as in so many languages at the present day, was represented not by any outward sign but by the meaning of the words themselves. When once arrived at, the conception of gender was extended to other objects besides those to which it properly belonged. The primitive Aryan did not distinguish between subject and object, but personified objects by ascribing to them the motives and powers of living beings. Accordingly they were referred to by different pronouns, one class denoting the masculine and another class the feminine, and the distinction that existed between these two classes of pronouns was after a time transferred to the nouns. As soon as the preponderant number of stems in *o* in daily use had come to be regarded as masculine on account of their meaning, other stems in *o*, whatever might be their signification, were made to follow the general analogy, and were similarly classed as masculines. In the same way, the suffix *s* or *ya* acquired a feminine sense, and was set apart to represent the feminine gender. Unlike the Semites, the Aryans were not satisfied with these two

genders, masculine and feminine. As soon as object and subject, patient and agent, were clearly distinguished from each other, there arose a need for a third gender, which should be neither masculine nor feminine, but denote things without life. This third gender was fittingly expressed either by the objective case used as a nominative (*ε γ, εν γινω*), or by a stem without any case ending at all (*ε γ, εν us*).

The adverbial meaning of so many of the cases explains the readiness with which they became crystallised into adverbs and prepositions. An adverb is the attribute of an attribute,—"the rose smells sweetly," for example, being resolvable into "the rose has the attribute of scent with the further attribute of sweetness." In our own language *once, twice, needs*, are all genitives, *whenever* is a dative. The Latin and Greek *humi* and *χαμας* are locatives, *fructu* (*fructum*) and *δουλον* are ablatives, *πάντη* and *ἀμα* instrumentals, *πίπρος, ἔξω, and ἑλκός* genitives. The frequency with which particular cases of particular nouns were used in a specially attributive sense caused them to become, as it were, petrified, the other cases of the nouns in question passing out of use, and the original force of those that were retained being gradually forgotten. Prepositions are adverbs employed to define nouns instead of verbs and adjectives. Their appearance in the Aryan languages is comparatively late, and the Illyrian poems allow us to trace their growth in Greek. The adverb, originally intended to define the verb, came to be construed with the noun, and the government of the case with which it was construed was accordingly transferred from the verb to the noun. Thus when we read in the *Odyssey* (iv. 43), *ἀφ' ὧς δ' ἰσάγγον θεῶν δόμων*, we see that *εἰς* is still an adverb, and that the accusative is governed by the verb, it is quite otherwise, however, with a line like *Ἀργεῖος δὲ γέροντας δολέλλας ἦεν Ἀχαιοὶ ἐς λίσσιν* (II, i. 59) where the adverb has passed into a preposition. The same process of transformation is still going on in English, where we can say indifferently, "What are you looking at?" using "at" as an adverb, and governing the pronoun by the verb, and "At what are you looking?" where "at" has become a preposition. With the growth and increase of prepositions the need of the case endings diminished, and in some languages the latter disappeared altogether.

Like prepositions, conjunctions also are primarily adverbs used in a demonstrative and relative sense. Hence most of the conjunctions are petrified cases of pronouns. The relation between two sentences was originally expressed by simply setting them side by side, afterwards by employing a demonstrative at the beginning of the second clause to refer to the whole preceding one. The relative pronoun can be shown to have been in the first instance a demonstrative, indeed, we can still see that in English in a relative sense. Since the demonstrative at the beginning of the second clause represented the first clause, and was consequently an attribute of the second, it had to stand in some case, and this case became a conjunction. How closely allied the adverb and the conjunction are may be seen from Greek and Latin, where *ὡς* or *quom* can be used as either the one or the other. Our own *and*, it may be observed, has probably the same root as the Greek locative adverb *ἐν*, and originally signified "going farther."

Another form of adverb is the infinitive, the adverbial force of which appears clearly in such a phrase as "A wonderful thing to see." Various cases, such as the locative, the dative, or the instrumental, are employed in Vedic Sanskrit in the sense of the infinitive, besides the bare stem or nounter formed by the suffixes *man* and *van*. In Greek the nounter stem and the dative case were alone retained for the purpose. The first is found in infinitives like *δοῦναι* and *φθεῖναι* (for an earlier *φθευ-φειν*), the second in the infinitives

in *-αι*. Thus the Greek *δοῦναι* answers letter for letter to the Vedic dative *dādanai*, "to give," and the form *φθεῖσθαι* is explained by the Vedic *apayadhai*, for *apayā dhai*, literally "to do living," *dhai* being the dative of a noun from the root *dha*, "to plan," or "do." When the form *φθεῖσθαι* had once come into existence, analogy was ready to create such false imitations as *γράφασθαι* or *γραφθήσθαι*. The Latin infinitive in *-i* for *-se* has the same origin, *amari*, for instance, being the dative of an old stem *amas* in *per* for *petes* or *petei*, from the same root as our English *be*, the original length of the final syllable is preserved. The suffix in *-um* is an accusative, like the corresponding infinitive of classical Sanskrit. The origin of the infinitive explains the Latin construction of the accusative and infinitive. When the Roman said, "Miseri te ad nihil scire," all that he meant at first was, "I wonder at you for writing nothing to me," where the infinitive was merely a dative case used adverbially.

The history of the infinitive makes it clear how little distinction was then being felt at the outset between the noun and the verb. Indeed, the growth of the verb was a slow process. There was a time in the history of Aryan speech when it had not as yet risen to the consciousness of the speaker, and in the period when the noun did not possess a plural the verb was as yet also without a plural. The treatment of the first and second personal pronouns, of suffixes resembling them, to certain stems, was the first stage in the development of the latter. Like the Semitic verb, the Aryan verb seems primarily to have denoted relation only, and to have been attached as an attribute to the subject. The idea of time, however, was soon put into it, and two tenses were created, the one expressing a present or continuous action, the other an aoristic or momentary one. The distinction of sense was symbolized by a distinction of pronunciation, the root syllable of the aorist being an abbreviated form of that of the present. This abbreviation was due to a change in the position of the accent (which was shifted from the stem-syllable to the termination), and this change again was probably occasioned by the piling of the so-called augment to the aorist, which survived into historical times only in Sanskrit, Zend, and Greek, and the origin of which is still a mystery. The weight of the first syllable in the aorist further caused the person endings to be shortened, and so two sets of person-endings, usually termed primary and secondary, sprang into existence. By reduplicating the root syllable of the present tense a perfect was formed, but originally no distinction was made between present and perfect, and in Greek verbs like *ἔδωκα* and *ἔδωκε* are memorials of a time when the difference between "I am come" and "I have come" was not yet felt. Reduplication was further adapted to the expression of intensity and desire (in the so-called intensive and desiderative forms). By the side of the aorist stood the imperfect, which differed from the aorist, so far as outward form was concerned, only in possessing the longer and more original stem of the present. Indeed, as Benfey first saw, the aorist itself was primitively an imperfect, and the distinction between aorist and imperfect is not older than the period when the stem-syllables of certain imperfects were shortened through the influence of the accent, and thus differentiation of forms appropriated to denote a difference between the sense of the aorist and the imperfect which was beginning to be felt. After the analogy of the imperfect, a pluperfect was created out of the perfect by prefixing the augment (of which the Greek *ἐπέμνηον* is an illustration), though the pluperfect, too, was originally an imperfect formed from the reduplicated present.

Besides time, mood was also expressed by the primitive Aryan verb, recourse being had to symbolization for the purpose. The imperative was represented by the bare stem,

like the vocative, the accent being drawn back to the first syllable, though other modes of denoting it soon came into vogue. Possibility was symbolized by the attachment of the suffix *ya* to the stem, probably by the attachment of *a* and *ā*, and in this way the optative and conjunctive moods first arose. The creation of a future by the help of the suffix *-ya* seems to belong to the same period in the history of the verb. This suffix is probably identical with that used to form a large class of adjectives and genitives (like the Greek *αἰσθητός* for *αἰσθητός*), in this case future time will have been regarded as an attribute of the subject, no distinction being drawn, for instance, between "rising sun" and "the sun will rise." It is possible, however, that the auxiliary verb *as*, "to be," enters into the composition of the future, if so, the future will be the product of the second stage in the development of the Aryan verb when new forms were created by means of composition. The signification of the auxiliary *as* is in favour of this view, as it certainly belongs to the age of Aryan unity, and may be a compound of the verbal stem with the auxiliary *as*.

After the separation of the Aryan languages, composition was largely employed in the formation of new tenses. Thus in Latin we have perfects like *scripsi* and *amavi*, formed by the help of the auxiliaries *scripsi* and *amavi*, while such forms as *amavimus* (*amavi* + *mus*) or *amaverunt* (*amavi* + *erunt*) have their origin on the other side. So, too, the future in Latin and Old Celtic (*amabo*, Irish *caim*) is based upon the substantive verb *yao*, "to be," and the English perfective *ad* goes back to a suffix *did*, the reduplicated perfect of *do*. New tenses and moods, however, were created by the aid of suffixes as well as by the aid of composition, or rather were formed from nouns whose stems terminated in the suffixes in question. Thus in Greek we have aorists and perfects in *-aa*, and the characteristics of the two passive nouns, *ye* and *the*, are more probably the suffixes of nominal stems than the roots of the two verbs *yao*, "to go," and *the*, "to please," as Böpp supposed. How late some of these new formations were may be seen in Greek, where the Homeric poems are still ignorant of the weak future passive, the optative future, and the asperated perfect, and where the strong future passive occurs but once and the desiderative but twice. On the other hand, many of the older tenses were disused and lost. In classical Sanskrit, for instance, of the modal noun forms the preterite and benedictive almost alone remain, while the pluperfect, of which Delbrück has found traces in the Veda, has wholly disappeared.

The passive verbs did not exist in the parent Aryan speech. No need for it had arisen, since such sentences as "I am pleased" could be well represented by "Thy pleasure mine," or "I please myself." It was long before the speaker was able to imagine an action without an object, and when he did so, it was a neuter or substantival rather than a passive verb that he formed. The passive, in fact, grew out of the middle or reflexive, and, except in the two aorists, continued to be represented by the middle in Greek. So, too, in Latin the second person plural is really the middle participle with *estis* understood, and the whole class of dependent or reflexive verbs proves that the characteristic which Latin shares with Celtic could have had at the outset no passive force.

Much light has been thrown on the character and construction of the primitive Aryan sentence by comparative syntax. In contradistinction to Semitic, where the defining word follows that which is defined, the Aryan languages place that which is defined after that which defines it, and Benigne has made it clear that the original order of the sentence was (1) object, (2) verb, and (3) subject. Greater complication of thought and its expression, the connexion of sentences by the aid of conjunctions, and rhetorical inversion caused that dislocation of the original order of the

sentence which reaches its culminating point in the involved periods of Latin literature. Our own language still remains true, however, to the syntax of the parent Aryan when it sets both adjective and genitive before the nouns which they define. In course of time a distinction came to be made between an attribute used as a mere qualitative and an attribute used predicatively, and this distinction was expressed by placing the predicate in opposition to the subject and accordingly after it. The opposition was of itself sufficient to indicate the logical equality, or substantive verb, indeed, the word which afterwards commonly stood for the latter at first signified "existence," and it was only through the wear and tear of time that a phrase like *Dei bonus est*, "God exists as good," came to mean simply "God is good." It is needless to observe that neither of the two articles was known to the parent Aryan, indeed, the definite article, which is merely a decayed demonstrative pronoun, has not yet been developed in several of the languages of the Aryan family.

We must now glance briefly at the results of a scientific investigation of English grammar and the modification of their necessity in our conception of it. The idea that the free use of speech is tied down by the rules of the grammar must first be given up, all that the grammarian can do is to formulate the current rules of his time, which are determined by habit and custom, and are not binding in a perpetual state of flux. We must next get rid of the notion that English grammar should be modelled after that of ancient Rome, until we do so we shall never understand even the elementary principles upon which it is based. We cannot speak of declensions, since English has no genders except in the pronouns of the third person, and no cases except the genitive and a few faint traces of an old dative. Its verbal conjugation is essentially different from that of an inflexional language like Latin, and cannot be compressed into the same categories. In English the syntax has been enlarged at the expense of the accusative position has taken the place of future. To speak of an adjective "agreeing" with its substantive is to mislead, as to speak of a verb "governing" a case. In fact, the distinction between noun and adjective is inapplicable to English grammar, and should be replaced by a distinction between objective and attributive words. In a phrase like "there is a cannon," *cannon* is objective, in a phrase like "a cannon-ball," it is attributive, and to call it a substantive in the one case and an adjective in the other is only to introduce confusion. With the exception of the nominative, the various forms of the noun are all attributive, there is no difference, for example, between "doing a thing" and "doing badly." Apart from the personal pronouns, the accusative of the classical languages can be represented only by position, but if we were to say that a noun is such follows a verb is in the accusative case we should have to declare "king" as an accusative in such sentences as "he became king" or "he is king." In conversational English "it is me" is as correct as "let me" in French, or "let it me" in Danish, the literary "it is I" is due to the influence of classical grammar. The combination of noun or pronoun and proposition results in a compound attribute. As for the verb, Mr. Sweet has well said that "the really characteristic feature of the English finite verb is its inability to stand alone without a nominal partner." Thus "dream" by itself is a noun, "I dream" is a verb. The place of the nominal prefix may be taken by a noun, though both poetry and vulgar French frequently insert the pronoun even when the noun precedes. The number of inflected verbal forms is but small, being confined to the third person singular and the special forms of the present and past participle, though the latter may with more justice be regarded as belonging to the province of the lexicographer.

rather than to that of the grammarian. The inflected subjunctive (*be, were, sawe* in "God save the Queen," &c.) is rapidly disappearing. New inflected forms, however, are coming into existence, at all events, so have as good a right to consider *wout, shunt, rant* new inflected forms as the French *america* (*amere habeo*), *america* (*amare habelam*). If the ordinary grammars are correct in treating forms like "I am loving," "I was loving," "I did love," as separate tenses, they are strangely inconsistent in omitting to notice the equally important emphatic form "I do love" or the negative form "I do not love" ("I don't love"), as well as the semi-inflectional "Till love," "he's loving." It is true that these latter contracted forms are heard only in conversation and not seen in books, but the grammar of a language, it must be remembered, is made by those who speak it and not by the printers.

On school grammars as the inheritance we have received from Greece and Rome. The necessities of rhetoric obliged the Sophists to investigate the structure of the Greek language, and to them was accordingly due the first analysis of Greek grammar. Protagoras distinguished the three genders and the verbal moods, while Prodicus based himself with the definition of synonyms. Aristotle, taking the side of Democritus, who had held that the meaning of words is put into them by the speaker, and that there is no necessary connection between sound and sense, laid down that words "symbolize" objects according to the will of those who use them, and added to the *ὄνομα* or "noun," and the *ῥῆμα* or "verb," the *σύνδεσμος* or "particle." He also introduced the term *πᾶσις*, "case," to denote any flexion whatsoever. He further divided nouns into simple and compound, invented for the neuter another name than that given by Protagoras, and starting from the termination of the nominative singular, endeavoured to ascertain the rules for indicating a difference of gender. Aristotle was followed by the Stoics, who separated the *ἄρθρον* or "article" from the particles, determined a fifth part of speech, the *παραρτηρ* or "adverb," confined the term "case" to the flexions of the nouns, distinguishing the four principal cases by names, and divided the verb into its tenses, moods, and classes. Meanwhile the Alexandrian critics were studying the language of Homer and the Attic writers, and comparing it with the language of their own day, the result being a minute examination of the facts and rules of grammar. Two schools of grammarians sprang up—the Analogists, headed by Aristarchus, who held that a strict law of analogy existed between ideas and word, and refused to admit exceptions to the grammatical rules they laid down, and the Anomalists, who denied general rules of any kind, except in so far as they were controlled by custom. For most among the Anomalists was Clares of Mallos, the leader of the Pergamenean school, to whom we owe the first formal Greek grammar, and collection of the grammatical facts obtained by the labours of the Alexandrian critics, as well as an attempt to reform Greek orthography. The immediate cause of this grammar seems to have been a comparison of Latin with Greek, Crates having lectured on the subject while ambassador of Attalus at Rome in 159 B.C. The zeal with which the Romans threw themselves into the study of Greek resulted in the school grammar of Dionysius Thrax, a pupil of Aristarchus, which he published at Rome in the time of Pompey, and which is still in existence. Latin grammars were soon modelled upon it, and the attempt to translate the technical terms of the Greek grammarians into Latin was productive of numerous blunders which have been perpetuated to our own day. Thus *tenues* is a mistranslation of the Greek *ψῆλα*, "unmarked," *genetivus* of *γενεῖς*, the case "of the genus," *accusativus* of *αἰτιατική*, the case "of the object," *syntaxis* of *συντάξις*, "without a second-

ary meaning" of tense or person. New names were coined to denote forms possessed by Latin and not by Greek, *ablative* for instance, was invented by Julius Cæsar, who also wrote a treatise *De analogia*. By the 2d century of the Christian era the dispute between the Analogists and the Analogists was finally settled, analogy being recognized as the principle that underlies language, though every rule admits of exceptions. Two eminent grammarians of Alexandria, Apollonius Dyscolus and his son Hesiodus, summed up the labours and controversies of their predecessors, and upon their works were based the Latin grammar composed by Aelius Donatus in the 4th century, and the eighteen books on grammar compiled by Priscian in the age of Justinian. The grammar of Donatus dominated the schools of the Middle Ages, and, along with the productions of Priscian, formed the type and source of the Latin and Greek school-grammars of modern Europe.

A few words remain to be said, in conclusion, on the bearing of a scientific study of grammar upon the practical task of teaching and learning foreign languages. The grammar of a language is not to be confined within the rules laid down by grammarians, much less is it the creation of grammarians, and consequently the usual mode of making the pupil learn by heart certain fixed rules and paradigms not only gives a false idea of what grammar really is, but also throws obstacles in the way of acquiring it. The unit of speech is the sentence, and it is with the sentence therefore, and not with lists of words and forms, that the pupil should begin. When once a sufficient number of sentences has been, so to speak, assimilated, it will be easy to analyse them into their component parts, to show the relations that these bear to one another, and to indicate the nature and varieties of the latter. In this way the learner will be prevented from regarding grammar as a piece of dead mechanism or a Chinese puzzle, of which the parts must be fitted together in accordance with certain artificial rules, and will realize that it is a living organism which has a history and a reason of its own. The method of nature and science alike is analytic, and if we would learn a foreign language properly we must learn it as we did our mother-tongue, by first mastering the expression of a complete thought and then breaking up this expression into its several elements.

See Steinthal, *Über alternative der kausalentheoretischen Typen des Sprachbaues*, Berlin, 1860; Schleierker, *Compendium der Comp. sprachl. Grammatik der Indu. Sprachen*, Leipzig, translated by H. Bredel, Berlin, 1874; Pott, *Die Sprachwissenschaft*, Halle, 1861; *monet recenti Rerum ab eis*, translated by E. S. Roberts, London, 1879; Sayce, *Two editions to the Science of Language*, London, 1879; Leisch, *Die Sprachphilosophie des Altertums*, Bonn, 1836-41; Steinthal, *Grundriss der Sprachwissenschaft bei den Griechen und Römern mit besonderer Rücksicht auf die Logik*, Berlin, 1868; Delbuech, *Ablativ Locativus Indu. universales in Alindischen, Lateinischen, Griechischen, und Deutschen*, Berlin, 1864; Jolly, *Das Kognitiv- und plethronisches Syntax*, Munich, 1878; Hubrich, *Zur Classification*, Munich, 1875; Holzwassig, *Wahrsheit und Wahrheit des locativischen Kasus theorie*, Leipzig, 1877; Drugg, *Historische Syntax der Lateinischen Sprache*, Leipzig, 1874-79; Sweet, *Words, Logic, and Grammar*, London, 1878. (A. H. S.)

GRAMMONT (Belgian, *Genet der belgen*), a town of Belgium, province of East Flanders, is situated on both sides of the Dender, 21 miles S.E. of Ghent. It is surrounded by walls and possesses a college, a town hall, and a hospital. Its principal manufactures are lace, cotton, and woollen goods, leather, beer, paper, and tobacco, and there are also bleaching and dyeing works. The population in 1866 was 8861.

GRAMONT, PHILIBERT, COMTE DE (1621-1707). A happy accident has preserved for the instruction of mankind rather than for their edification the portrait and the history of a man who entirely represents one section, fortunately a small section, of the society of his day. Of good family, rich, a gallant soldier, endowed with every kind of clever-

Learning of grammar of foreign languages

ness, the Count de Gramont endeavored to live the life of unostentatious enjoyment. In this he so far succeeded that, although the following century furnished more numerous examples of his kind, he may be taken as the most finished specimen. His ideal man was a being without conscience, without principle, without religion, without a soul. At the court of Charles II. he found companions like himself, — women without virtue, men without honour, yet disguised and adorned with courtly manners and that external refinement which did duty for principle, and had it not been that his brother-in-law, Hamilton, conceived the design of writing the memoirs which have made him famous, Gramont would have been as entirely forgotten as most of his friends, save for a brief mention by St. Evremont and another by Bussey Habutin in that little-named gallery of portraits, the *Histoire Amoureuse*. His grandfather had the distinction of being husband to Diane d'Angoulême, *la belle Corisande*, one of the mistresses of Henry IV. The grandson always regretted that the king had not acknowledged his father for his own son, lamenting even in the presence of Louis XIV. that his family had missed the chance of becoming, in this illegitimate fashion, a branch of the royal line. The anecdote is entirely characteristic. It was at first proposed to enter him in the church, but he speedily perceived that his vocation was not ecclesiastical, and joined the army, in which he saw a great deal of active service, and was rewarded with the governorship of the Pays d'Amour, and with other small posts. He crossed over to England during the protectorate of Cromwell. In the year 1662, two years after the restoration of Charles II., he was ordered from the French court and again repaired to London, where he found such a welcome as was due to his manners, his gaiety, his extraordinary good spirits, and his love of gambling, intrigue, gallantry, and pleasure. It is the period of his residence at the English court which forms the greater part of Hamilton's memoirs. He is described by Bussey Habutin as having "laughing eyes, a well formed nose, a pretty mouth, a little dimple in the chin which gave an agreeable effect to the whole face, a certain finesse in his countenance, and a fairly good stature but for a stoop." In the whole English court there was no one more full of wit, more avid of pleasure, more devoid of all moral restraint, not even Rochester himself, than the Count de Gramont. Naturally, the court being what it was, there was no one more popular. In a court where the women vied with each other for the king's favour, where the men habitually cheated at play, seduced their friends' wives, and corrupted their friends' daughters, that man would be most popular in whose the absence of principle became, by reason of his grace, *esprit*, and elegance, in itself a recommendation. Gramont was as purely a sensualist as any Roman of the later empire.

He married, in London, but on compulsion, the sister of his future biographer, Miss Hamilton, who, her brother tells us, in the memoirs, was able to fix his affections. The statement must be received with some qualifications. The count, it is true, was by no means young when he married. At the same time, he "galantsait" for many years afterwards, and, in fact, to the very end of a long life. He was the only old man, says Ninon de l'Enclos, who could affect the follies of youth without being ridiculous. In fact, Gramont, like La Fontaine, was a spoiled child, to whom everything was allowed, and who repaid indulgence by perpetual high spirits, and a continual flow of wit and *bona mots*. At the age of seventy-five he had a dangerous illness, during which he became reconciled, in his way, to the church, but on recovery relapsed into his old habits. At eighty he either dictated or revised his own memoirs, written by his brother-in-law Antony Hamilton. When they were finished he sold

the manuscript for 1500 francs and kept most of the money himself. Fontenelle, then editor of the press, refused to license the work, from considerations of respect to the old man who had so strangely exposed in its pages the whole of his character. These scruples were overcome by the count himself, who had the pleasure of seeing his biography appear in his own lifetime, and of laughing with the rest of the world at his own rogueries and at cards, his amorous adventures, and his secret intrigues.

He died at the great age of eighty-six. His biographer Hamilton died thirteen years later at the age of seventy-four. The memoirs of the Count de Gramont are not to be recommended for general reading, yet they have the merit of being true, in no other work is the reality of that profligate society of St. James's so vividly expressed, in no other contemporary memoirs is there so much wit, such grace of style, such skill in portraiture. Numerous editions and translations have been issued of this work, whose popularity seems destined to continue and grow.

GRAMPUS (*Orca gladiator*, Læwy), a cetacean belonging to the *Delphinidae* or dolphin family, and characterized by its rounded head without distinct beak, its high dorsal fin, and its large conical permanent teeth. Its upper part is of a nearly uniform glossy black colour, and the under part white, with a stripe of the same colour over the eye. The name "grampus" is derived from the French *grand poisson*, though the Norman *gajour*. It is also known as the "killer," in allusion to its ferocity in attacking its prey, which consists largely of seals, porpoises, and the smaller species of dolphins. Its fierceness is only equalled by its voracity, which is such that in a specimen measuring 21 feet in length, dissected by Professor Eschschitz, the remains of fourteen seals and thirteen porpoises were found, while the animal appeared to have been choked in the endeavour to swallow another seal, the skin of which was found entangled in its teeth. They also pursue and commit great havoc among the bulky but gentle belugas or white whale, which sometimes throw themselves ashore in order to escape from their remorseless persecutors. The grampus is an inhabitant of northern seas, occurring on the shores of Greenland, and having been caught, although rarely, as far south as the Mediterranean. It is not common, although there are numerous instances of its capture, on the British coasts. The latest of these occurred in March 1876, about a mile to the west of Ganton, on the Firth of Forth. The creature on being dragged ashore, while still alive, was said by the onlookers to have given forth shrill piercing cries somewhat resembling in their sharpness a woman's voice. The specimen was an adult male, and measured 21 feet 10 inches along the curve of the back, with a girth of 13 feet. It had 24 teeth in each jaw, the front tooth on each side of the lower jaw being exceedingly small and almost hidden by the overlapping of the gum, while the two immediately succeeding those on each side were worn down almost to the level of the gum. A striking feature in the grampus is the high dorsal fin, which in the specimen mentioned measured within 2 inches of 1 foot in height.

GRAN (the ancient *1st op anem*, whence Hungarian *Esztorgom*, and Latin *Strigonium*), the capital of a county of the same name, seat of the prince primate, and formerly a royal free city, is situated on the right bank of the Danube, nearly opposite the confluence of the Tisza (Tisza), 35 miles north-west of Buda, 17° 46' N. lat., 18° 41' E. long. It may be generally divided into the town proper, the episcopal quarter, also called *Vizváros* (Watertown), and the communes of St. Thomas and of St. George. The finest terraces and public buildings are to be found in the two first-named portions of the town. On an elevated and commanding position, where once a fortress stood, are the

seminary and theological institute for the education of priests, the residences of the chapter, and the basilica. This cathedral, commenced in 1821, consecrated in 1856, and completed in 1870, is built after the model of St Peter's at Rome, and is one of the finest churches in Hungary. Among the other public edifices and educational establishments, besides several churches and two monastic houses, are the archiepiscopal residences, the county and town halls, a training school for teachers, an upper gymnasium, a hospital, a library, a savings bank, &c. The population in 1870 was 8780, chiefly employed in cloth-making, wine-making, and agricultural pursuits. There is connexion with the market town of Kiskágy on the left bank of the Danube by means of a bridge of boats.

Gün is one of the oldest towns of Hungary, and is famous as the birthplace of St Stephen, the first prince crowned "apostolic king" of Hungary. During the early times of the Hungarian monarchy it was the most important metropolitan centre in the country, and it was the meeting place of the diets of 1016, 1111, 1114, and 1216. It was almost completely destroyed by Tatar hordes in 1241, but was rebuilt and fortified by King Béla IV. In 1543 it fell into the hands of the Turks, from whom it was recovered, in 1695, by Carl von Munkács. In 1693 it reverted to the Turks, who held it till 1683, when it was regained by the united forces of John Sobieski, king of Poland, and Prince Christian of Lorraine. In 1708 it was declared a free city by Joseph I. On the 13th April 1813 it was partly destroyed by fire. Gün lay in the direct route of the victorious revolutionary campaign of April 1819. Since 1870 its civil privileges have been of a corporate character.

GRANADA, a modern province of Spain, consisting of the central portion of the old kingdom of the same name, is bounded on the N and NE by Jaén, Albacete, and Murcia, on the E by Almería, on the S by the Mediterranean, and on the W by Málaga and Cordova, having an area of 4937 English square miles and an estimated population (1870) of 485,340. It includes, and indeed chiefly consists of, the western and better portion of the Sierra Nevada, which in the peaks Corno de Mollacén and Picacho de la Voleta, overlooking the town of Granada, attains the heights of 11,781 and 11,597 feet respectively. From the central chain of this Sierra all the principal rivers of the province take their rise—the Guadalmquivir which, flowing past Guadix in a northerly direction, falls into the Guadalquivir in the neighbourhood of Ubeda, the Genil which, after traversing the vega of Granada, leaves the province a little to the westward of Loja, and joins the Guadalquivir between Cordova and Seville, and the Rio Grande which falls into the Mediterranean at Motril. The climate in the lower valleys and the narrow fringe along the coast is warm, but on the higher grounds of the interior is somewhat severe, and the vegetation varies accordingly from the subalpine to the alpine. The soil of the plains is very productive, and that of the vega of Granada is considered the richest in the whole peninsula, from the days of the Moors it has been subjected to most careful and systematic irrigation, and it continues to yield in great abundance and in good quality wheat, barley, maize, wine, oil, sugar, flax, cotton, silk, and almost every variety of fruit. There are productive mines of lead, silver, copper, zinc, and manganese, which in 1866 gave employment to 1099 persons, mining indeed, with various agricultural and horticultural operations, including bee-farming, constitutes the staple industry of the province. In the mountains immediately surrounding the city of Granada occur many kinds of alabaster, some of which are very fine, there are also quantities of jasper and other precious stones in considerable variety. Mineral waters, chiefly chalybeate and sulphurous, are abundant, the most important springs being those of Alhama, which have a temperature of 118° Fahr. The chief centres of population are, besides Granada, the capital, Motril, Alhama, Loja, Guadix, and Huescar. Apart from the great highways traversing the province, which are ex-

cellent, the means of communication are few, and on the whole bad. The only railway is that which connects Granada with Bobadilla on the Málaga and Cordova line.

During the Roman period, Granada from the time of Augustus formed an undisturbed portion of the province of Bética, of which the four *conventus judicis* were Cadix, Cordova, Bery, and Seville. Along with the rest of Andalusia, as a result of the great invasion from the north in the 5th century, it fell to the lot of the Visigoths. Under the caliphs of Cordova, originally from the 8th century, the town of Granada rapidly gained in importance, and ultimately became the seat of a provincial government, which, after the fall of the Ommyyads (1038), united with Seville, Jaén, and Cádiz as an independent principality. By the conquests of St Ferdinand in the first half of the 13th century, Granada was left the sole representative of the Mohammedan power in Spain, and even it was compelled to pay tribute to the sovereigns of Castile. The limits of the kingdom at that time were nearly identical with those of the province prior to 1808, the modern provinces of Málaga and Almería being small districts included. It is said to have contained a population of 8,000,000, and to have had considerable commerce, especially with Italy in silk. On the expulsion of Berberid in January 1492, Granada was united to the crown of Castile, but with special privileges which were afterwards successively withdrawn.

GRANADA, the capital of the above province, is situated at the confluence of the Darro and the Genil, not far from the base of the Sierra Nevada (37° 13' N lat., 3° 41' W long). Diffident suggestions have been made as to the etymology of the name, which is rather obscure,—the least



Plan of Granada

probable being that it is derived from *granada*, "a pomegranate," in allusion to the abundance of pomegranate trees in its neighbourhood. The Moors called it *Karnastah* or *Karnastah-al-Yahoud*, and possibly the name is composed of the Arabic words *lawn*, "a hill," and *nastah*, "stranger"—the "city" or "hill of strangers." Granada is built

partly on level ground near the Genil and partly on the slopes of two adjacent hills, at an elevation of about 3000 feet above the sea. The more ancient quarters of the town still retain much of the Moorish style, but the modern part is somewhat commonplace. It contains several squares, of which the most remarkable is the Ribarrambla, where four manacles were formerly held. There is also a beautiful shady walk, called the Alameda, which is one of the most frequented promenades. The old city comprises the faubourgs of Antequera, Alcazaba, Alhambra, and Albaicin, the last being named after the settlers who came from Baza, after the capture of that city by St Ferdinand. For a detailed account of the Alhambra the reader is referred to the special article, vol. i p. 670. The Antequera and Albaicin are mostly inhabited by the working classes. In the cemetery of the latter there are still a few ruins of an ancient mosque. The town proper contains a great number of churches and other public edifices. The cathedral, a somewhat heavy and irregular building, was begun in 1529 by Diego de Sidae, and finished in 1630. It is profusely ornamented with jaspe and coloured marble and surmounted by a dome, and it contains several valuable paintings by Alonso Cano, portraits of Ferdinand and Isabella by Rincon, and marble statues of several kings and queens of Spain. In one of its numerous chapels (the Chapel Royal) are buried three "Catholic Majesties," and Philip and Juana. The church of Nuestra Señora de las Angustias has a splendid high altar and fine towers. That of St José is an elegant modern building. Other remarkable edifices are the monastery of St Gerónimo, founded by Gonzalo de Cordova, who is buried there, the Carthusian convent (Cartuja) adorned with paintings by Murillo, Morales, and Cano, the university, founded in 1531 by Charles V, and the library. Granada is the birthplace of many eminent writers and artists, both Mahometan and Christian, among the latter may be mentioned Fray Luis de Granada (1505), Hurtado de Mendoza (1505), the historian of the war of Granada, Alonso Cano (1601), the great painter, and Moya (1610), who was both painter and sculptor. The climate of the town is pleasant and healthy, especially during the spring and summer months. Its manufactures are unimportant, the chief being coarse woollen stuffs, hats, paper, saltpetre, and gunpowder. Silk-weaving was once extensively carried on, and large quantities of silk were exported to Italy, France, Germany, and even America, but the production now is very limited. The education of the lower classes is much neglected, the city having only a few insignificant schools. In the year 1878 the population amounted to about 76,000.

The history of Granada does not go back far, at all, into the Roman period (for it is not to be confounded with the ancient Iliberris), and even under the Moors it held a place of very subordinate importance until the period of the conquest of St Ferdinand, when it became the exclusive seat of Islam in Spain, and rose to almost unparalleled splendour under Mohammed ben Alahamm, the builder of the Alhambra. It is said in its best days to have had 400,000 inhabitants, 70,000 houses, and 60,000 warriors, but this is probably an exaggeration. In the 15th century it was the last stronghold of the Moors, against the Christian forces under Ferdinand and Isabella, and after a long siege it was surrendered by Boabdil on 2d January 1492. From that time Granada's wealth and magnificence rapidly decreased till 1610, when the Moors were expelled from Spain.

GRANADA, a city of Central America, state of Nicaragua, is situated on the N W bank of the Lake of Nicaragua, 30 miles N N W of the town of that name. The suburbs are composed of cane huts, crowded by the poor inhabitants, but the city proper is formed of one storied houses built of adobe or sun dried bricks, roofed with tiles. They have balconied windows, and are surrounded by courtyards with ornamental gateways. It possesses several old churches and the remains of ancient fortifications. By

means of the lake and the river San Juan, it communicates with the Caribbean Sea, and carries on a considerable trade in cocoa, cochineal, indigo, and hides. The steamer "Cobang" in the end of 1878, after several unsuccessful attempts, forced a passage up the river San Juan from the sea to Lake Nicaragua, thus establishing steam navigation between Granada, the Bay de la Vieja, San Quetz, and other towns, and direct communication between Nicaragua and Granada. The feat is of importance in view of the project of constructing an oceanic canal by this route.

Granada was founded by Don Alonso Pineda de Cordova in 1529, and he erected a fort on its production. At an early period it surpassed Leon in importance, and was one of the richest cities in North America. It suffered greatly from the attacks of pirates in the latter half of the 17th century, and in 1696 was completely sacked by them. In 1865 it was taken by the filibuster William Walker, and partially destroyed by fire, and though it taken in 1867 it has never recovered its former prosperity, a great part of it being still in ruins. The population is about 10,000.

GRANADA, Luis de (1604-1688), a Spanish preacher and ascetic writer, was born of poor parents at Granada in 1604. At five years of age he was left an orphan, but the Conde de Tendilla, alcaide of Alhambra, having accidentally observed his singular intelligence, took him under his protection and had him educated with his own sons. At the age of nineteen he entered the Dominican convent of Santa Cruz, Granada, whence he went to the college of St Gregory, Valladolid. After completing his theological education he was named prior of the convent of St Carlos, where he exercised his preaching gifts under the direction of the celebrated orator Juan de Avila, whom he subsequently rivalled, if he did not surpass him, in eloquence. Having been invited by Cardinal Henry, Infante of Portugal and archbishop of Evora, to Badajoz in 1655, he founded a monastery there, and two years later was elected provincial of Portugal. He was also appointed confessor and counsellor to the queen regent, but he declined promotion to the archbishopric of Braga, and on the expiry of his provincial office in 1661 he retired to a Dominican convent at Lisbon, where he died in 1688. Luis de Granada enjoyed the reputation of being the first and greatest author of his day, and his description of the "descent into hell" is one of the finest specimens of eloquence in the Spanish language. He also acquired great fame as a mystic writer, his *Guia de Penitentes*, or *Guide to Sinners*, first published in 1556, being still a favourite book of devotion in Spain, and having been translated into nearly every European language.

His principal other works are *Libro de la Oracion y Meditacion*, Salamanca, 1607; *Introduccion al simbolo de la Fe*, Salamanca, 1569; *Relaciones Escritas*, with various annotations, 1617; *Libro de la Vida*, 1576; *Simbolo de la Fe*, 1576; and several other works. A collected edition of the works of Luis de Granada was published by Plancha at Antwerp, in 1673, at the expense of the Duke of Br., and by Luis Maldonado, Madrid, in 1667, afterwards reprinted at various periods. See preface to this edition of his works, *preface to the Guia de Penitentes*, Madrid, 1781; *Bibliotecas de Antwerp*, 1781, vol. vi, and *Tratado de la Historia de Granada*, *Tratado*, and *Englebert*, *Historia de la vida española*, Paris, 1664.

GRANADILLA, the name applied to *Luspidula grandis* var. *luna*, a plant of the natural order *Passifloraceae*, a native of tropical America, having smooth, cordate, ovate, or acuminate leaves, petioles bearing from 4 to 6 glands, an emetic and narcotic root, a scented flower, and a large, oblong fruit, containing numerous seeds, imbedded in a succulent edible pulp. The granadilla is sometimes grown in British hot-houses. The fruits of several other species of *Passiflora* are eaten. *P. lamellata* is the "water-lemon," and *P. malinica* the "sweet-labash" of the West Indies.

GRAN CILACAO, an extensive region in the heart of South America, which stretches from 26° to 29° N lat., and belongs partly to Bolivia and partly to the Argentine Republic, the boundary between the two states coinciding





by M. Constanthe, a landscape painter of some reputation who lived in the town. In 1793 Ginet followed the volunteers of Aix to the siege of Toulon, at the close of which he obtained employment as a decorator in the arsenal. Whilst yet a lad he had, at Aix, made the acquaintance of the young Comte de Forbin, and it was upon his invitation that Ginet, in the course of the year 1797, proceeded to Paris. De Forbin was one of the pupils of David, and Ginet entered the same studio. Later on he got possession of a call in the convent of Capuchins, which, having served for a manufactory of assignats during the Revolution, was afterwards inhabited almost exclusively by artists. In the changing lights and shadows of the corridors of the Capuchins, Ginet found the materials for that one picture to the painting of which, with varying success, he devoted his life. In 1802 he left Paris for Rome, where he remained until 1819, when he returned to Paris, bringing with him besides various other works one of fourteen repetitions of his celebrated *Chrom des Capucins*, executed in 1811. The figures of the monks celebrating mass are taken in this subject as a substantive part of the architectural effect, and this is the case with all Ginet's works, even with those in which the figure subject would seem to assert its importance, and its historical or iconomic interest. Stella painting a Madonna on his Prison Wall, 1810 (Leuchtenberg collection), *Soriana a l'Hopital*, 1816 (Louvre), *Basilique basse de St François d'Assise*, 1823 (Louvre), *Rachet de l'Eglise*, 1831 (Louvre), *Mort de Fournier*, 1834 (Villa Maubert), Florence, are among his principal works, all are marked by the same peculiarities, everything is sacrificed to tone. In 1819 Louis Philippe decorated Ginet, and afterwards named him Chevalier de l'Ordre St Michel, and Conservateur des tableaux de Versailles (1826). He became member of the Institute in 1830, but in spite of these honours, and the ties which bound him to M. de Forbin, then director of the Louvre, Ginet constantly returned to Rome. After 1848, he retired to Aix, immediately lost his wife, and died himself on the 21st November 1849. He bequeathed to his native town the greater part of his fortune and all his collections, these are now exhibited in the Musée, together with a very fine portrait of the donor painted by Ingres in 1811. M. Delacuze, in *Louis David et son temps*, devotes a few pages to Ginet and his friend the Comte de Forbin.

GRANITE, a rock so named from the Latin *granum*, a grain, in allusion to the granular texture of many of its varieties. The term appears to have been introduced by the early Italian antiquaries, and it is believed that the first recorded use of the word occurs in a description of Rome by Flaminius Vacca, an Italian sculptor of the 16th century. This description was published by Montfaucon in his *Dies unum Italicum*, where we read of certain columns "ex marmoreo granito Aegyptio" (cap. xvi.), and of others "ex marmoreo granito Aethiopicum marmore" (cap. xvi.), showing that the Romans of Vacca's day were acquainted with granite from Egypt and from Elba. Granite is also referred to by Ctesiphon in his treatise *De Metallis* (1698), and by Tournefort in his *Relation d'un Voyage au Levant* (1698), indeed the latter has been cited by Emmet (in *Lehrs d. Miner.*) as the first author who uses the term. By these early writers, however, the name was loosely applied to several distinct kinds of granular rock, and it remained for Werner to give it that precise meaning which it at present possesses as the specific designation of a rock.

Granite is a crystalline-granular rock consisting, in its typical varieties, of orthoclase, quartz, and mica, to which a plagioclase felspar is usually added. These minerals are aggregated together without the presence of any matrix or connecting medium. Thin sections of a true granite, examined under the microscope by transmitted light, show

no trace of any amorphous or crypto-crystalline ground-mass. The chemical composition of the rock will, of course, vary with its mineralogical constitution. For an average analysis see *Geol. Soc.*, vol. x, p. 233. The proportion of silica varies from 62 to 81 per cent. Granite belongs, therefore, to Busen's class of acid rocks, or those which contain more than 60 per cent of silica. Dr Haughton has found an exceptionally low proportion of this oxide in some of the Irish granites (58.41 per cent, e.g., in some Donegal granite, *Quart. Journ. Geol. Soc.*, xviii, p. 272, p. 408). The specific gravity of granite varies from 2.69 to 2.73.

Orthoclase, or potash felspar, is the principal constituent of most granites. This mineral occurs either in simple crystals, or in twins formed on what is known as the "Carlsbad type," such crystals being common at Carlsbad in Bohemia. In porphyritic granites, such as those of Cornwall and Devon, the orthoclase crystals may attain to a length of several inches, and the twinning is marked on the fractured crystals by a line running longitudinally down the middle, and dividing the crystal into two halves. In colour this orthoclase generally varies between snow white and flesh-red. The green felspar known as Amazon stone, which occurs in certain granites, has lately been shown by Des Cloizeaux to belong to the species *Andalusite* (Ch. B. Ser., ix, 1876, p. 438). The plagioclase, another, or rather felspar of granite occurs in crystals which are generally smaller than those of the orthoclase, and which exhibit, even to the naked eye, their characteristic twin striation. Moreover the lustre is frequently renous or lathy, whilst that of the orthoclase is pearly on the cleavage planes. In most cases the plagioclase is the soda-lime felspar (called *oligoclase*), but in some granites it is *albite* or *sodic felspar* as shown by Haughton in many of the Irish and Cornish granites (*Proc. Roy. Soc.*, viii, 1869, p. 209). When a granite becomes weathered, the felspar may decompose into *kaolin* or *china clay*, the commencement of this alteration is indicated under the microscope by the turbidity of the felspar by the ill defined edges of the crystals, and in the case of plagioclase by disappearance of the characteristic striation.

The quartz of granite occurs generally in irregularly-shaped angular grains, but occasionally in distinct crystals, which are double hexagonal pyramids with or without the corresponding prism. Colourless quartz is most common, but grey, brown, or bluish varieties also occur. Whatever its colour, it is as a rule transparent in microscopic sections, though sometimes rendered milky by the presence of a vast number of minute cavities containing liquid (see *Geol. Soc.*, *ut supra*, and for Sorby's original remarks *Quart. Journ. Geol. Soc.*, xiv, p. 458). In many granites the quartz fills up the spaces between the crystals of felspar and mica, and receives impressions from these minerals. This fact has been advanced against the view that granite has existed in a state of fusion, since it is assumed that, as the quartz is the most infusible of the three component minerals, it would have been the first to solidify on the cooling of the magma, whereas the relation of the quartz to the associated minerals in most cases shows that it must have solidified after the crystallization of the felspar and mica. In some granites, however, the quartz is developed in free crystals, thus pointing to an early solidification of this mineral. The mica, which is usually the least abundant constituent of the granite, occurs in thin scales of irregular shape or in hexagonal plates. It is either a white bluish or pinkish mica (*muscovite*) or a dark-brown argentine mica, generally unusual (*biotite*). Both species may occur in the same granite. Haughton has shown that some of the white mica of the Cornish granites is *lepidolite*, or lithia mica, while some of the black mica in the same rocks is the iron-

potash mica, *lepidomelane* (*Proc. Roy. Soc.*, xvii, p. 209). Professor Heddle finds that the black mica of most Scottish granites is a distinct species, which he calls *Haughtonianite* (*Mineralog. Mag.*, No. 13, 1879, p. 72). A large number of accessory minerals occur in granite, no fewer than forty-four being cited by Zirkel (*Lehrb. d. Petrog.*, i, p. 481). Upon the presence of these supplementary minerals numerous varieties of granite have been founded. Thus, if tourmaline be present, the rock is a *scholaceous* or *tourmaline granite*, when cassiterite or tin-stone occurs, it forms a *stanniferous granite*, the presence of epidote gives rise to an *epidote granite*, and so on with other minerals. The most common accessory constituent of granite is hornblende, a mineral which appears to replace to some extent the mica, and thus produces a *hornblende* or *syenitic granite*. This rock was formerly, and by some petrographers is still, termed *syenite*, it is the *syenites* of Pliny, so named from Syene in Upper Egypt, where a similar rock was quarried by the ancient Egyptians. By modern petrographers, however, the term syenite is usually restricted to a rock which is an aggregate of orthoclase and hornblende,—in other words, a granite in which the quartz has disappeared while the mica has been superseded by hornblende. A beautiful schistaceous rock, which is apparently a variety of granite, has been described by Prunier under the name of *luxullianite* (*Comptes Rendus*, lxx, 1841, p. 913). It occurs in the parish of Luxullian, near Lostwithiel, in Cornwall, where it is found in the form of boulders, but has not been detected *in situ*. This rock is composed of tourmaline, or schist, with quartz and orthoclase, the last named mineral occurring in large flesh coloured crystals, which by contrast with the dark blue produce a very beautiful effect. Two varieties of tourmaline, one brown and the other bluish, have been detected by Professor Bonney (*Mineralog. Mag.*, No. 7, 1877, p. 215). The schistography of the Duke of Wellington, an St Paul's Cathedral, is wrought out of a cylindrical block of luxullianite. Many varieties of granite no founded upon structural characteristics. Occasionally the constituents are developed in such large individuals as to form a *giant granite*. Crystals of orthoclase, associated with quartz in a peculiar parallel arrangement, produce the variety known as *glauber granite* or *Lapis Judaicus*—names which refer to the resemblance which the rock presents, when cut in certain directions, to lines of Hebrew characters. Graphitic granite was termed by Hany *pegmatite*, but this name is now generally applied to a coarse admixture of orthoclase, quartz, and silvery mica. When any of the component minerals occur in large crystals, imbedded in a fine grained base, a *porphyry granite* is produced. Generally the crystals are those of orthoclase, as in many of the West of England granites, and in the characteristic rock of Shap Fell in Westmoreland. *Grauwacke* is a name applied to a variety of granite made up of orthoclase and quartz, with more or less plagioclase and a small proportion of mica. A granite composed of only felspar and quartz is called *happite* or *semi-granite*. Some of the micaceous varieties are known as *granulite*. When, instead of the mica disappearing, the felspar is absent, the resulting aggregate of quartz and mica is termed *gessen*, it is frequently a tin-bearing rock. Occasionally the granite, when fine in grain, loses its mica, and an intimate mixture of orthoclase and quartz is thus obtained, such a rock is known as a *feldstone*. Crystals of orthoclase disseminated through a felsitic matrix, either compact or microcrystalline, give rise to a *felspar porphyry*, while crystals or rounded grains of quartz in a similar felsitic base produce a *quartz-porphyry* or *quartz-feldite*. By Cornish miners these quartz-porphyrates are termed *clavans* (*clavants* of Jukes), but this name is also applied to fine grained granites and to almost any rock which occurs as a dyke running through the killas or clay slate.

Few questions have been more warmly discussed than the origin of granite. When this rock is found forcing its way through older rocks, and appearing at the surface in large bosses from which veins are sent forth in all directions, there can be little doubt of its eruptive character. The small width of some of these granitic veins, or apophyses, suggests that the rock must have existed in a condition of perfect fusion or complete liquidity, and not simply as a viscous paste, before it could have been injected into such narrow fissures as those which are now occupied by granite. In many cases, the rocks which are penetrated by the granite may be considered in such a manner as to indicate a considerable elevation of temperature, a liquefaction in the neighbourhood of the veins may become saccaroidal, and shales may become indurated or even converted into hornstone, while new minerals are often developed in the vicinity of the intruded veins. In these veins the granite is apt to change its mineralogical constitution, becoming either fine-grained or felsitic, or even reduced at the extremities of the vein to quartz. From the days of Hutton it has been generally admitted that most granite is of igneous origin. Since it appears to have been solidified at great depths beneath the surface, it has been distinguished as a *plutonic* rock, while those eruptive rocks which have risen to the surface, and have there consolidated, are termed *volcanic* rocks. The older geologists regarded granite as the primitive rock of the earth's crust, forming the floor of all stratified deposits and the nucleus of mountain chains. Such a view, however, has been long exploded. It is known indeed that granite, so far from being in all cases an original rock, may be of almost any geological age. Some is undoubtedly as old as the Silurian period, while other granites are certainly as young as the Tertiary rocks, and perhaps of even more recent date. By many field-geologists granite has of late years been regarded as a metamorphic rather than as a truly igneous rock. Metamorphism, however, is a term which has been as vaguely used that most of our eruptive rocks may, in a certain sense, be said to be metamorphic. Still, in the case of granite, it has often been pointed out that a passage may be traced from this rock into gneiss, and that gneiss itself may be regarded as an altered sedimentary rock. Thus so experienced an observer as Professor Ramsay expresses his opinion that "granite is sometimes merely gneiss still further metamorphosed by heat in the presence of moisture" (*Phys. Geol. of Gr. Br.*, 5 ed., 1878, p. 48). For a number of instances in which granite is said to pass into gneissous rocks, and these in turn, by numerous gradations, into undoubtedly stratified deposits, see Green's *Geology*, part 1, p. 307, and also GEORGEY, vol. x, p. 309.

Chemists have also brought forward arguments against the igneous origin of granite. Thus it has been argued that the specific gravity of the quartz of granite is about 2.6, while that of silica after fusion is only 2.2. It must be remembered, however, that the quartz of granite has solidified under great pressure, as proved by Mr. Scott's observations, and it is probable that such pressure would increase the density of the silica. Moreover, it has been pointed out by the late D. Forbes (*Geol. Mag.*, iv, No. 10, 1867, p. 448) that the siliceous tests of certain infusoria, which assuredly have not been fused, are as low as 2.2. Another argument which has been advanced against the igneous origin of granitic rocks is based on the fact that they contain minerals of a basic character which could not have existed in a state of fusion in the presence of free silica, without forming a combination with the latter. Again, some of the accessory minerals in granite would suffer change by an elevation of temperature, while many of them contain water which, it is assumed, would be expelled on fusion. Probably, however, these minerals are in most

cases of secondary origin, and have been produced by the alteration of the granite. The mere presence of water is not incompatible with a pyrogonic origin, and Fuchs has asserted (*op cit*) that specimens of lava, taken from a current on Etna while the lava was still flowing, contained crystals of albite, a mineral containing 16 per cent of water. Mr Sorby has shown, too, that the quartz of volcanic rocks contains microscopic cavities enclosing liquid. It appears, indeed, that in the fusion of all eruptive rocks water has played a very important part. Dr Houghton has sought to reconcile the opposing views as to the origin of granite by admitting what he calls a *hydi metamorphic* origin for this rock. He believes that the rock, having been poured into veins and dykes when in a state of fusion, was subsequently altered by the action of water at temperatures which, though high, were insufficient for the fusion of the granite (*On the Origin of Granites as Addressed to the Geol. Soc. of Dublin, 1863*).

Granitic rocks are extensively used for constructive and decorative purposes, though their industrial applications are necessarily restricted by the expense of working so hard a material. Although some granites are apt to decompose on exposure to atmospheric influences, the felspar passing into china-clay, other varieties are remarkable for their extreme durability, as attested by the monuments of ancient Egypt, on which the mossed hieroglyphics still retain their sharpness. It appears that in England granite was not brought into extensive use much before the beginning of the present century (Cressy). It is now largely employed for massive structures, such as bridges and sea-walls, as also for kerbs and paving-stones. The best known granites are the grey variety from Aberdeen and the red granite of Peterhead, 30 miles north of Aberdeen. The granite of Dartmoor in Devonshire, and of the huge bosses which protrude through the clay slates of Cornwall, are largely worked as building and ornamental stones (for description of these granites see Sir H. De la Beche's *Report on the Geol. of Cornwall and Devon*). In Ireland there is much fine granite, which is quarried to a limited extent,—the Castlewellan granite having been used in the Albert Memorial in Hyde Park (Hill's *Building and Ornamental Stones*, 1872). The hornblende varieties of granite are remarkably tough, and are largely employed for road metal. For this purpose great quantities are quarried in the Channel Islands. Red granite occurs in abundance on the coasts of Maine, U.S., as well as in New Brunswick, and grey granites at Quincy and elsewhere in Massachusetts. Granite is frequently polished when used for monumental and decorative purposes. The polishing is effected by an iron tool, worked first with sand and water, then with emery, and lastly with putty powder or oxide of tin, when the emery and putty are used, a surface of flannel is interposed between the granite and the iron tool ("On Granite Working," by Geo. W. Mun, *Journal Soc. Arts*, xiv, 1866, p. 470).

As an element of scenery granite generally forms rounded hills, scantly clad with vegetation, but it sometimes rises into sharp pinnacles, as in the *arêtes* of the Alps. By denudation the rock may break up into cuboidal blocks, which often remain piled upon each other, forming the characteristic "tors" of Cornwall and Devon. Hills of granite are frequently surmounted by masses of weathered rock of spheroidal form, such as the Cornish rocking-stones on Logan stones. The weathering of granite often produces boulder-shaped masses in such numbers as to form, around the summit of the hill, a "sea of rocks" (*Telegraph*).

In addition to the references given in the body of this article, the following authorities may be cited.—*Lehrbuch der Petrographie*, by F. Zirkel, 2 vols., Bonn, 1866, *Elemente der Petrographie*, by Von Lasaulx, Bonn, 1875, *Cottrell's Lithology*, translated by P. H. Lawrence, 2d ed., London, 1878, *The Study of Rocks*, by J. Rutley, London, 1879, and the numerous contributions by the

Rev. Prof. Houghton in *Proc. Irish Acad.*, and *Quart. Journ. Geol. Soc. Lond.* For chemical composition of Cleophris's Needle, by G. W. Wiggins, see the *Analyt.*, 1878, p. 382. (F. W. R.)

GRANMICHELE, or GRAMICHELLO, a market town of Sicily, in the province of Caltanissetta, about 8 miles from Caltanissetta on the road to Catania. It lies on the side of a hill, the summit of which is crowned by a castle which, along with the town itself, was formerly a fief of the Brancatelli Butea family. Beautiful marble is found in the vicinity, and the inhabitants, who in 1871 numbered 10,068, trade in oil.

GRANSON, GRANDSON, or GRANDSEER, a small town in Switzerland, canton of Vaud, is situated near the southwestern extremity of the Lake of Neuchâtel. It possesses the ruins of an old castle, containing a collection of antiquities, and has a very ancient church, once connected with a Benedictine abbey, with a number of fine Christian images. The town is of Roman origin. It was captured in 1475 by the Eidgenossen, and retained in the following year by Charles the Bold, but in March of that year the Eidgenossen again defeated him near Granson with great slaughter. From that time till 1803 it was one of their lordships. The site of the battle is marked by three great blocks of marble. The population of the town in 1870 was 1587.

GRANT, Mrs ANN (1755–1838), a Scottish authoress, generally known as Miss Grant of Laggan, was born at Glasgow, 21st February 1755. Her father, James MacVicar, who held a commission in the army, died in 1757 with his regiment to America, in the course of which he was killed. He received an allotment of land on returning from the army in 1765, but ill health compelled him to return to Scotland in 1768, and after the outbreak of the revolutionary war his lands were confiscated. In 1779 Anne married the Rev. Mr Grant of Laggan, near Fort Augustus, Inverness, and on his death in 1801 she was left with a large family and only a very small income. It being known to several of her friends that she occasionally wrote verses, a proposal was made that she should publish a volume of poems, and this being acceded to, the names of as many as 3000 subscribers were obtained. The volume appeared in 1803 under the title of *Original Poems, with some Translations from the Greeks, and met with a rather favourable reception*, on account of its easy versification and the truth and tenderness of the sentiment of some of its smaller pieces. In 1806 she published *Letters from the Mountains, being a Selection from the Author's Correspondence with her Intimate Friends from 1773 to 1804*, which, by its spirited descriptions of Highland scenery, character, and legends, awakened a large amount of interest. Her other works are *Memoirs of an American Lady, with Sketches of Manners and Scenery in America as they existed previous to the Revolution* (1808), containing reminiscences of her stay with Miss Schuyler, the lady with whom she spent four years of her childhood in America, *Essays on the Superstitions of the Highlanders of Scotland* (1811), and *Eighteen Hundred and Thirteen, or Poems* (1814). After the death of her husband, Miss Grant resided for some time on a small farm near Laggan, but in 1803 she removed to Woodland near Stirling, in 1809 to Stirling, and in 1810 to Edinburgh, in the vicinity of which she was until her death a prominent figure, being much esteemed for her conversational powers, her tact and good sense, her cheerfulness of disposition, and her thorough kindness of heart. For the last twelve years of her life she received a pension from Government; and thus, along with her other sources of income, not only placed her in easy circumstances, but enabled her to gratify her generosity by giving to others. She died November 7, 1838.

See *Memoirs and Correspondence of Mrs Grant of Laggan, edited by her son J. P. Grant*, 3 vols., 1844.

GRANT, SIR FRANCIS (1803-1878), an English portrait painter, and president of the Royal Academy in London, was the fourth son of Francis Grant of Kilgraston, Perthshire, and was born at Edinburgh in 1803. He was educated for the bar, and, according to the testimony of Sir Walter Scott in his diary, it was originally his intention after spending his small patrimony in field sports to make his fortune by the law. By the time, however, that the first part of his purpose had been accomplished, he had resolved to adopt painting in preference to law as his profession, and at the age of twenty-two he began at Edinburgh systematically to study the practices of art. On completing a course of instruction he removed to London, and as early as 1813 exhibited at the Royal Academy. At the beginning of his career he utilized his sporting experiences by painting groups of huntmen, horses, and hounds, such as the Meet of II M. Staghounds and the Melton Hunt, and doubtless if he had chosen to devote himself to the careful treatment of this class of subjects his success might have been more thorough and permanent, if less brilliant and lucrative, than it was. If, however, the reputation he acquired as a fashionable portrait painter was aided by his social position and gentlemanly manners, it rested also on certain special artistic qualifications. The first and chief of these was his power of thoroughly reproducing the outward tone and manner of fashionable life, or, as Sir Walter Scott called it, his "sense of beauty derived from the best source, that is, the observation of really good society." If also his execution was superficial and thin, it was bright, clear, facile, and unobscured. In display he had the taste of a connoisseur, and rendered the minutest details of costume with felicitous accuracy. In female portraiture he achieved considerable success, although rather in depicting the highborn graces and external characteristics than the true and individual personality. Among his portraits of this class may be mentioned Lady Glenlyon, the marchioness of Waterford, Lady Rodney, and Miss Beaumont. In his portraits of generals and sportsmen he proved himself more equal to his subjects than in those of statesmen and men of letters. He painted many of the principal celebrities of the time—especially those occupying high social position—including Scott, Macaulay, Lockhart, Disraeli, Haideing, Gough, Deby, Palmerston, and Russell, his brother Sir J. Hope Grant, and his friend Sir Edwin Landseer. From the first his career was rapidly prosperous, and his recognition by the Academy fully kept pace with his reputation as an artist. In 1842 he was elected an associate, and in 1851 an Academician, and in 1866 he was chosen to succeed Sir C. Esdaile in the post of president, for which his chief recommendations were his social distinction, tact, urbanity, and friendly and liberal consideration of his brother artists, and his difficult and often arduous duties he performed so as both to increase the harmony and influence of the institution and to enhance its efficiency. Shortly after his election as president he received the honour of knighthood, and in 1870 the degree of D.C.L. was conferred upon him by the university of Oxford. He died October 5, 1878.

GRANT, SIR JAMES HORS (1808-1875), an English general, brother of the preceding, and fifth and youngest son of Francis Grant of Kilgraston, Perthshire, was born July 22, 1803. He entered the army in 1823 as cornet in the 9th Lancers, and became lieutenant in 1828 and captain in 1835. In 1842 he acted as brigade-major to Lord Salsetra in the Chinese War, and specially distinguished himself at the capture of Chin-Keang, after which he received the rank of major and was nominated companion of the bath. In the first Sikh War of 1845-46 he took part in the battle of Sobroon, and in the Punjab campaign of 1848-49 he held command of his old regiment the 9th

Lancers, and won high reputation in the battles of Chillianwalla and Gujrat. In 1851 he became brevet-colonel, and in 1856 brigadier of cavalry. He took a leading part in the suppression of the Indian mutiny of 1857, holding for some time the command of the cavalry division, and afterwards of a movable column of horse and foot. After rendering valuable service in the operations before Delhi and in the final assault on the city, he directed the victorious march of the cavalry and horse artillery despatched in the direction of Cawnpore to open up communication with the commander-in-chief Sir Colin Campbell, whom he met near the Alumbagh, and who raised him to the rank of brigade-general, and placed the whole force under his command during what remained of the painful march to Lucknow for the relief of the residency. After the retirement towards Cawnpore he greatly aided in effecting that the total rout of the rebel troops, by making a detour which threatened their rear, and following in pursuit with a flying column, he defeated them with the loss of nearly all their guns at Sonai Ghat. He also took part in the operations connected with the recapture of Lucknow, shortly after which he was promoted to the rank of major-general, and appointed to the command of the force employed for the final pacification of India, a position in which his vigorous energy, and his vigilance and caution united to high personal daring, rendered very valuable service. Before the work of pacification was quite completed he was created K.C.B. In 1859 he was appointed to the command of the British land forces in the united French and British expedition against China, whose object was accomplished three months subsequent to the landing of the forces at Peh-tang, 1st August 1860, Peking having surrendered at discretion after the Chinese army had thrice suffered defeat in the open and the Taku forts had been carried by assault. For his conduct in this, which has been called "most successful and the best carried out of England's little wars," he received the thanks of parliament, and was gazetted G.C.B. In 1861 he was made lieutenant-general and appointed commander-in-chief of the army of Madras, on his return to England in 1865 he was made quartermaster-general at headquarters, and in 1872 he was transferred to the command of the camp at Aldershot. In the same year he was gazetted general. He died at London, March 7, 1875.

*Incidents on the Siege of 1857-58, compiled from the Private Journal of General Sir Hope Grant, &c. together with some explanatory chapters by Captain H. D. Dyer, Royal Artillery,* was published in 1873, and *Incidents in the China War of 1860* appeared posthumously under the same editorship in 1876.

GRANTHAM, a municipal and parliamentary borough and market town of England, county of Lincoln, is situated on both sides of the Witham, at the junction of several railways with the Great Northern line, 106 miles N.N.E. of London and 22 miles S.W. of Lincoln. The parish church, a spacious Gothic edifice of the 13th century, has been restored by Sir G. G. Scott. It is surmounted by an elegant spire 274 feet high, and has an elaborately carved front, and some splendid monuments. At the free grammar school, founded by Bishop Fox in 1528, Sir Isaac Newton received part of his education. Among the other public buildings are the guild hall, with a spacious assembly-room, the two exchanges, the town-hall, the literary institution, the gaol, the dispensary, and the workhouse. A bronze statue of Sir Isaac Newton was erected in 1868. The principal trade is that of making, some harnesses and coach factories, and a large agricultural implement factory and iron foundry. Grantham returns two members to parliament. The population of the municipal borough (area, 406 acres) in 1871 was 5028, and of the parliamentary borough (area, 5811 acres) 13,250.

GRANVELLA, ANTOINE PERREUET, CARDINAL DE (1517-1588), one of the ablest and most influential of the princes of the church during the great political and ecclesiastical movements which immediately followed the appearance of Protestantism in Europe, was born 20th August, 1517, at Ornans, Burgundy, where his father, Nicolas Perreuet de Granvella, who afterwards became chancellor of the empire under Charles V, was at that time engaged in practice as a jurist at the provincial bar. On the completion of his studies in law at Padua and in divinity at Louvain, he for a short time held a canonry at Besançon, but his talents had already marked him for a higher sphere, and he was promoted the bishopric of Arras when barely twenty three (1540). In his episcopal capacity he attended several diets of the empire, as well as the opening meetings of the council of Trent, and the influence of his father, now become chancellor, led to his being entrusted with many difficult and delicate pieces of public business, in the execution of which he developed a rare native talent for diplomacy, and at the same time acquired an intimate acquaintance with most of the currents of European politics. One of his specially noteworthy performances was the settlement of the terms of peace after the defeat of the Smalkaldic league at Mühlberg in 1547, a settlement in which, to say the least, some particularly sharp practice was exhibited. In 1550 he succeeded his father in the offices of secretary of state and chancellor of the empire, in this capacity he attended Charles in the war with Maurice, accompanied him in the fight from Innsbruck, and afterwards drew up the treaty of Passau (August 1552). In the following year he conducted the negotiations for the marriage of Mary of England and Philip of Spain, to whom in 1556, on the abdication of the emperor, he transferred his services. In April 1559 Granvella was one of the Spanish commissioners who arranged the peace of Cateau Cambresis, and on Philip's withdrawal from the Netherlands in August of the same year he was appointed prime minister to the regent, Margaret of Parma. The policy of repression which in this capacity he pursued during the next five years secured for him many tangible rewards, in 1560 he was elevated to the archiepiscopal see of Malines, and in 1561 he received the cardinal's hat, but the growing hostility of a people whose moral and religious convictions he had studiously set himself to trample under foot, ultimately made it impossible for him to continue in the Low Countries, and by the advice of his royal master he in 1564 retired to Brancie Comté. Nominally this withdrawal was only a temporary character, but it proved to be final. The following six years were spent in comparative quiet, which was devoted chiefly to study and to the society of learned men, but in 1570 Granvella, at the call of Philip, resumed public life by accepting a mission to Rome as representative of the interests of Spain in framing the proposed treaty of alliance with Venice and the papal see against the Turks. In the same year he was advanced to the viceroyalty of Naples, a post of some difficulty and danger, which for five years he occupied with ability and success. Summoned to Madrid in 1575, to be president of the supreme council of Italy and afterwards of that of Castile, he still continued to find ample scope for his rare aptitudes. Among the more delicate negotiations of his later years were those of 1580, which had for their object the ultimate union of the crowns of Spain and Portugal, and those of 1584, which resulted in a check to France by the marriage of the Spanish infanta to Duke Philip of Savoy. In the same year he was made archbishop of Besançon, but meanwhile a lingering disease had laid an unrelenting grasp upon his iron frame, he never was enthroned, but died at Madrid, 21st September 1588. His body was removed to Besançon, where his father had been buried before him.

Numerous letters and memoirs of Granvella are preserved in the archives of Leveson. These were to some extent made use of by Prosper Leveson in his *Mémoires pour servir* (1754), as well as by the Abbé Bosset in the *Proces de Granville*. A commission for publishing the whole of the letters and memoirs was appointed by Guizot in 1834, and the result has been the issue of nine volumes of the *Papiers d'Etat du Cardinal de Granville*, edited by Weiss (1841-1852). They form a part of the *Collection des mémoires écrites sur l'histoire de France*. See also the anonymous *Histoire du Cardinal de Granville*, attributed to Comte de Lamoignon (Paris, 1761), and Motley's *Rise of the Dutch Republic*.

GRANVILLE, a fortified seaport town of France, department of Manche, is situated at the mouth of the Deep and at the foot of a steep rocky promontory projecting into the English Channel, 30 miles S.W. of St. Lô. It is surrounded by strong walls, and is built principally of granite, and its streets are mostly steep and narrow. The parish church dates from the 15th century. Among the other public buildings are the tribunal of commerce, the hospital, the public baths, and the naval school. Granville occupies the seventh place in point of importance among the seaports of France, and the harbour is accessible to vessels of the largest tonnage. There is regular steam communication with Jersey and Guernsey. The principal exports are fruits, vegetables, oysters, fish, corn, wool, and cattle. A large number of the inhabitants are engaged in the food and oyster fisheries, and among the other industries are the manufacture of brandy, chemicals, cod-liver oil, and leather. Shipbuilding is also carried on. Granville was founded by the English in the beginning of the 15th century, taken by the French in 1480, bombarded and burned by the English in 1695, and partly destroyed by the Venetian troops in 1793. The population in 1876 was 12,372.

GRANVILLE, JOHN CARTERIS, EARL (1690-1763), English statesman, son of George, Lord Carteret, was born 22d April 1690, and in his fifth year succeeded to his father's title. He was educated at Westminster school and at Christ Church, Oxford, and even early in life had acquired a knowledge of the classics, of philosophy, of general literature, and of modern languages, which rendered him perhaps superior to all his contemporaries in the extent of his intellectual accomplishments. Soon after taking his seat in the House of Lords in 1711, he began to distinguish himself by his eloquent advocacy of the Protestant succession, and his zeal was rewarded when George I. came to the throne, by the appointment in 1715 of bailiff of the island of Jersey, and in 1716 of lord lieutenant of Devon, and his mother was also created countess of Granville. In 1719 he was sent on an embassy to Sweden, and in 1720 he was named ambassador-extraordinary to the congress of Cambrey. In May of the following year he was appointed secretary of state under Walpole's administration, but Walpole's jealousy of his influence with the king led to his resignation on the 3d April 1724, and on the same day he was appointed lord-lieutenant of Ireland, an office which he held till 1730, when differences with the ministry led to his resignation. After his return he became the leader of the opposition, the duties of which office he discharged with great versatility of resource and with frequent effectiveness, but with a negligent rashness which rendered him almost as dangerous to his friends as to his opponents. In 1712 he was at last successful in overthrowing Sir Robert Walpole's Government, and was immediately thereafter appointed secretary of state. He now obtained a complete ascendancy over the mind of George II., whose German policy he carried out irrespective of the opinions of his colleagues, but his impetuosity soon gained him both their enmity and the hatred of the people, and enabled his opponents, for whom he cherished unmitigated contempt, to effect his political annihilation. Pitt, afterwards earl of Chatham, spoke of him as "an execrable, a sole monster, who had renounced the British nation, and seemed to have

drank of the potion described in poetic fiction, which made men forget their country." In 1744 he found it necessary, from the resignation of his colleagues and his inability to find proper successors, to tender his resignation, and, according to Horace Walpole, he "retired from St James's laughing." Shortly before this he had, by the death of his mother, become Earl Granville. His administration was popularly distinguished by the epithet "drunken"—a title which had reference to his character both as a politician and as a private individual. Notwithstanding his want of political success, contemporary opinion is unanimous in affirming that he was not only one of the most brilliant debaters but the ablest statesman of his time. Chatham declared that he owed all that he was to his friendship and instruction, and Swift, Smollett, Chesterfield, and Horace Walpole have borne equally laudatory testimony to his abilities. He was besides regarded as an authority in questions of scholarship by the most eminent classicists of his time, and Bentley was greatly indebted to his assistance in preparing his edition of Homer. His fatal defects appear to have been his careless arrogance and his deficiency in definite political principle and purpose. After the resignation of the Pelham ministry he was again appointed secretary of state, but almost immediately resigned, holding office, according to a political register, for only forty-eight hours, three quarters, seven minutes, and eleven seconds. In 1749 he was created knight of the garter and appointed president of the council, but, though he retained his influence with the king, the part he thereonforth played in English politics was indirect and subordinate. He died January 2, 1763.

Various information regarding Earl Granville will be found in Chesterfield's *Characters*, Lord Helyar's *Memoirs of the Reign of George II.*, Hon. W. Walpole's *Letters and Memoirs of George II.*, and the *Autobiography of Shelburne*. See also Locky's *History of England in the Eighteenth Century*.

GRAPE. See VINE.

GRAPE WHITE. See CRABON, vol v p 86, and FURNACE, vol ix p 843.

GRAPHOTYPE is a name which has been given to an ingenious process of autographic engraving, by which typographic printing blocks are produced. The general principles of the process are as follows. A block of chalk or some similar material is reduced to a level surface, and on this surface a design is drawn with a glutinous ink, this ink being sufficiently fluid to penetrate some little distance into the porous chalk. The ink having become dry, gentle friction is applied to the surface of the block, so as gradually to rub away those parts of the chalk which are not indurated by the glutinous ink. The lines of the drawing being thus left in relief, a perfect model of the required printing block is obtained, and this model is next hardened by immersion in a bath containing a solution of an alkaline silicate, after which it is dried and reproduced by the stereotype or the electrotype process. This method of typographic engraving was brought to a practical form, and patented in 1860 (No. 2309) by an American wood engraver, Mr de Witt Clinton Hitchcock. The first step in his process is to reduce French chalk or talc to an extremely fine state of division by repeated grindings, elutriations, and siftings, after which a layer of the material, rather over an eighth of an inch in thickness, is forced down upon, and made to adhere to, a thick zinc plate,—the necessary pressure being obtained by means of an hydraulic press, the platen of which is faced with a polished steel plate, so as to communicate a good surface to the layer of compressed French chalk. The colour is now drawn (of course, reversed) on the prepared block with an ink consisting of a watery solution of glue coloured by lamp black or some other pigment. In drawing on the prepared block care must be taken not to damage the somewhat tender surface of the compressed chalk, and the safest instrument with which to apply the

glutinous ink is a fine sable brush, but an ordinary pen may be employed if the operation of drawing is performed with caution. A pad of silk velvet or a fitch brush may be used for rubbing the block so as to leave the lines in relief, and it is quite sufficient to continue the friction until a depth equal to the thickness of an ordinary playing card is produced,—the spaces corresponding to any extended whites of the engraving being then cut out by means of a tool. A 10 per cent solution of silicate of sodium may be used for hardening the block, and when dry nothing remains but to take a mould from it and to reproduce it in metal.

GRASLITZ, or GRASLITZ (Bohemian *Grasitz*), a town in the north-west of Bohemia, near the Saxon frontier, in the circle of Elbogen, 88 miles N W of Prague, 50° 21' N lat., 12° 27' E long., is advantageously situated in a valley between high hills, at the confluence of the Silberbach and Zwoda. It is the headquarters of a military district, the seat of a court of justice, and has a custom house, a handsome church built in 1618 and dedicated to Corpus Christi, and several manufactures of cotton and woollen stuffs, and of musical and mathematical instruments, looking-glasses, brass, copper, and wire goods, and paper. Graslitz is one of the most important industrial towns in Bohemia, and the centre of the large weaving districts of the Elbogenberg. In 1869 the population, inclusive of the small suburb of Glasberg, amounted to 6549.

GRASSE, a town of France, capital of an arrondissement in the department of Alpes Maritimes, 20 miles W of Nice. It occupies a picturesque situation on the southern declivity of a hill facing the Mediterranean, from which it is about 7 miles distant, and it possesses a climate remarkably mild and salubrious. It is well supplied with water from a rivulet which rises above it. The streets are narrow, steep, and winding, but the houses are generally well built. The town was formerly the seat of a bishop, and possesses a Gothic cathedral with a beautiful tower, an old chapel dating from the 11th century, now used as a powder magazine, a hospital, a town-hall, an exchange, a theatre, a communal college, and a public library. The chapel of the hospital contains three pictures by Rubens. Next to Paris, Grasse carries on the largest manufacture of perfumery in France. Citrons, oranges, lemons, figs, pomegranates, and the flowers used by the perfumers, are grown in the gardens of the town and neighbourhood, and fine marble, alabaster, and jasper are found in the vicinity. Grasse was founded in the 6th century by Jews from Sardinia. The population in 1876 was 9673.

GRASSES (*Gramineæ*—*Gramina*) are monocotyledonous flowering plants, possessing certain characters in common, and constituting the order *Gramineæ*. No plant is correctly termed a grass which is not a member of this family, but the word is in common language also used, generally in combination, for many plants of widely different affinities which possess some resemblance (often slight) in foliage to truly graminaceous species, e.g., knot-grass (*Polygonum aviculare*), cotton grass (*Eriophorum*), rib-grass (*Plantago*), scorpion-grass (*Myosotis*), sea grass (*Zostera*). In agriculture the word has an extended signification to include the various fodder plants, chiefly leguminous, often called "artificial grasses" (see *AGROCYTUS*). Indeed, formerly grass (also spelt *gers*, *gr*, *gyr*, in the old herbaria) meant any green herbaceous plant of small size.

Yet the first attempts at a classification of plants recognized and separated a group—considered even of primary value—of *Gramina*, and thus, though bounded by nothing more definite than habit and general appearance, contained the *Gramineæ* of modern botanists. The older group, however, even with such systematists as Ray (1703), Schenckler (1719), and Michxli (1729), embraced in addition the *Cyperaceæ*, *Juncaceæ*, and some other mono-

cotyledons with inconspicuous flowers. Singularly enough, the sexual system of Linnaeus (1735) served to mark off more distinctly the true grasses from these allies, since very nearly all of the former then known fell under his Triandria Digynia, whilst the latter found themselves under other of his artificial classes and orders.

**I. STRUCTURE.**—The general type of true grasses is familiar in the cultivated cereals of temperate climates—wheat, barley, rye, oats, and in the smaller plants which make up our pastures and meadows and form a principal factor of the turf of natural downs. Less familiar are the grains of warmer climes—rice, maize, millet, and sorgho, or the sugar cane. Still further removed are the bamboos of India and America, the columnar stems of which reach to the height of forest trees. All are, however, formed on a common type, which we proceed to examine.

**Root.**—Most cereals and many other grasses are annual, and possess a tuft of very numerous slender root-fibres, much branched, and of great length. The greater part of the order are of longer duration, and have the roots also fibrous, but fewer, thicker, and less branched. In such cases they are very generally given off from just above each node (often in a circle) of the lower part of the stem or rhizome, perforating the leaf-sheaths. In some bamboos they are very numerous from the lower nodes of the erect culm, and pass downwards to the soil around them, whilst those from the upper nodes shrivel up and form circles of spiny fibres.

**Stem.**—The root-stock of perennial grasses is usually well developed, and often forms very long creeping or subterranean rhizomes, with elongated internodes and sheathing scales; it is also frequently short, with the nodes crowded. The very large root-stock of the bamboos (fig. 1) is a striking

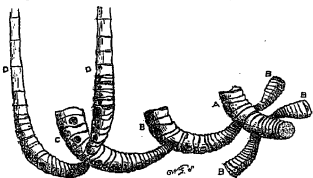


FIG. 1.—Rhizome of Bamboo. A, B, C, D, successive series of axes, the last bearing aerial culm.

ing example of "definite" growth; it is much branched, the short thick curved branches being given off below the apex of the older ones and at right angles to them, the whole forming a series of connected arched axes, truncate at their ends which were formerly continued into leafy culms. The root-stock is always solid, and has the usual internal structure of the monocotyledonous stem.

The aerial leaf-bearing branches (culms) are a characteristic feature of grasses. They are generally numerous, erect, cylindrical (rarely flattened), and conspicuously jointed with evident nodes. The nodes are solid, a strong plate of tissue passing across the stem, but the internodes are commonly hollow, although examples of completely solid stems are not uncommon (many *Andropogon*, *argenteus*). The general character is thus not unlike that of *Umbelliferae*. The exterior of the culms is more or less concealed by the leaf-sheaths; it is usually smooth and often highly polished, the epidermal cells containing an amount of silica sufficient to leave after burning a distinct skeleton of their structure. Tabasheer is a white substance mainly composed of silica, found in the joints of several bamboos. A few of the lower internodes may become en-

larged and sub-globular, forming nutrient-stores, and grasses so changed are termed "bulbous" (*Arrhenatherum*, *Poa bulbosa*, &c.). In internal structure grass-culms, save in being hollow, conform to that usual in monocotyledons; the vascular bundles run parallel in the internodes, but a horizontal interlacement occurs at the partitions. Nearly all grasses branch to some extent, and many extensively; the branches are strictly distichous, and many buds are abortive, or the resulting branches short and stunted. In many bamboos they are long and spreading or drooping and copiously ramified, in others reduced to hooked spines. *Duscolella* is truly scandent, and climbs over trees 100 feet or more in height. *Olyra latifolia* is also a climber on a humbler scale.

Grass-culms grow with great rapidity, as is most strikingly seen in bamboos, where a height of over 100 feet is attained in from two to three months, and many species grow two, three, or even more feet in twenty-four hours. Silicification does not commence till the full height is nearly attained. The largest bamboo recorded is 170 feet, and the diameter is usually reckoned at about 4 inches to each 60 feet. A specimen in the British Museum is over 8 inches in diameter. In the same collection are some remarkable monostichites, in which the septa are oblique and the internodes triangular or rhomboidal; Kura has also figured one in the Calcutta Museum in which the cavities are confluent into a continuous spiral.

**Leaves.**—These present special characters usually sufficient for ordinal determination. They are always solitary at each node and strictly distichous, and consist of two distinct portions, the sheath and the blade. The sheath is often of great length, and generally completely surrounds the culm; as a rule it is split down its whole length, thus differing from that of *Cyperaceae*, which is almost invariably (*Eriopogon* is an exception) a complete tube. In a few grasses (*Meica*, *Bromus*) the edges are soldered together as in the latter order. The sheaths are much dilated in *Alopecurus vaginatus* and in a species of *Potamochoila*, in the latter serving as flotsa. At the summit of the sheath, above the origin of the blade, is the *ligule*, a usually membranous process of small size (occasionally reaching an inch in length) erect and pressed around the culm. It is rarely quite absent, but may be represented by a tuft of hairs (very conspicuous in *Panicum*). *Meica unguifera* possesses, in addition to the ligule, a green erect tongue-like process, from the line of junction of the edges of the sheath.

The blade is frequently wanting or small and imperfect in the basal leaves, but in the rest is long and set on to the sheath at an angle. The usual form is laminae, sessile, more or less ribbon-shaped, tapering to a point, and entire at the edge. The chief modifications are the articulation of the (deciduous) blade on to the sheath, which occurs in all the *Bambuseae* (except *Planotia*) and in *Spartina stricta*, and the interposition of a petiole between the sheath and the blade, as in *Leptaspis*, *Pharus*, *Panicum*, *Lophatherum*, &c. In the latter case the form of the leaf usually becomes oval, ovate, or even cordate or sagittate, but these forms are found in sessile leaves also (*Olyra*, *Panicum*). The venation is strictly parallel, the midrib usually strong, and the other ribs more slender. In *Anomochloa* there are several nearly equal ribs, and in some broad-leaved grasses (*Bambusa*, *Pharus*, *Leptaspis*) the venation becomes tessellated by transverse connecting veins. The thick prominent veins in *Agropyrum* occupy the whole upper surface of the leaf. Epidermal appendages are rare, the most frequent being marginal, saw-like, cartilaginous teeth, usually minute, but occasionally (*Danthonia scabra*, *Panicum verrucatum*) so large as to give the margin a serrate appearance. *Alopecurus lanatus* and one or two *Panicum* have woolly leaves.

*Inflorescence*.—This possesses an exceptional importance in grasses, since, their floral envelopes being much reduced and the sexual organs of very great uniformity, the characters employed for classification are mainly derived from the arrangement of the flowers and their investing bracts. The subject also presents unusual difficulties from the various interpretations which have been given to these glumaceous organs and the different terms employed for them by various writers. It may, however, be now considered as settled that the whole of the bodies known as glumes and palea, and distichously arranged externally to the flower, form no part of the floral envelopes, but are of the nature of bracts. These are so arranged round the small flowers as to form *spikelets* (*locusts*), and each spikelet may contain one, two, three, or a greater number of flowers (in some species of *Eriogonum* nearly 60). The flowers are, as a rule, placed laterally on the axis (rachis) of the spikelet, but in uniflorous spikelets they appear to be terminal, and are probably really so in *Anthoxanthum* (fig. 9, 2) and in two anomalous genera, *Anomochloa* and *Stenoploche*.

In immediate relation with the flower itself, and often entirely concealing it, is the *palea* or *pale* ("upper pale" of most systematic agrostologists, "paleola interior," Dumortier, "epigynum," Doll). The organ (fig. 3, 1) is peculiar to grasses among *Gnaphalium*, and is almost always present, certain *Oxyacis* and *Phalarides* being the only exceptions. It is of thin membranous consistence, usually obtuse, often bifid, and possesses no central rib or nerve, but is furnished with two lateral ones, one on either side, the margins are frequently folded in at the ribs, which thus become placed at the sharp angles. This structure points to the fusion of two organs, and the pale was by R. Brown considered to represent two portions soldered together of a tumerous perianth-whorl, the third portion being the "lower pale," to be immediately mentioned. By Bentham the homology of the organ is suggested to be with the two bracteoles found in *Lythrum*, *puysens* and *Platylaps*, and with the perygium of the female flower of *Coccoloba* in *Opuntia*. It is rarely (*Trachypogon*, *Diachryum*) found split into two separate organs.

The flower with its pale is sessile, and is placed in the axil of another bract in such a way that the pale is exactly opposed to it, though at a slightly higher level. It is this second bract which has been generally called by systematists the "lower pale," and with the "upper pale" considered to form an outer floral envelope ("calyx," Jussieu, "perianthium," Brown, "stigmulum," Palisot de Beauvois, "glumella," Dumortier). In the writings of most botanists even though this view is not held, yet, where the term "flower" is employed, it includes these organs. It is, however, certain that the two bracts are on different axes, one secondary to the other, and cannot therefore be parts of one whorl of organs. This was made out from the study of so-called "viviparous" grasses, in which the lower pale becomes transformed into ordinary foliage leaves, first by Von Mohl in 1846, and more clearly by Germain de St. Pierre in 1852, who terms the lower pale the "glume fertile." Doll and Bentham have also independently arrived at the same result, and the latter in 1858 first published the terminology here adopted, and used for the same organ the name *flowering glume*. The two bracts are usually quite unlike one another, but in some genera (e.g., most *Festuca*) they are considerably similar in shape and appearance.

The flowering glume has generally a more or less boat-shaped form, is of firm consistence, and possesses a well-marked central midrib and frequently several lateral ones. The midrib in a large proportion of genera extends into an appendage termed the *awn* (fig. 10, 2), and the lateral veins

more rarely extend beyond the glume as sharp points (e.g., *Pappophyllum*). The form of the flowering-glume is very various, this organ being plastic and externally modified in different genera. In *Lophosiphium* it is formed into a closed cavity by the union of its edges, and encloses the flower, the styles projecting through the pterous summit. Valuable characters are obtained from the awn. This presents itself variously developed from a mere subulate point to an organ several inches in length, and when complete (as in *Andropogon*, *Avena*, and *Silene*) consists of two well marked portions, a lower twisted part and a terminal straight portion, usually set in at an angle with the former sometimes trifid and occasionally beautifully feathery. The lower part is most often appressed, and in the large group of the *Panicum* awns of any sort are very rarely seen. The awn may be either terminal or may come off from the back of the flowering-glume, and Duval Jouve's observations have shown that it represents the blade of the leaf of which the portion of the flowering-glume below its origin is the sheath, the twisted part (so often suppressed) corresponds with the petiole, and the portion of the glume extending beyond the origin of the awn (very long in some species, e.g., of *Danthonia*) with the ligule of the developed foliage-leaf. When terminal the awn has three fibro-vascular bundles, when dorsal only one, it is covered with stomate-bearing epidermis.

The flower with its pale is thus sessile in the axil of a floriferous glume, and in a few grasses (*Leersia* (fig. 2), *Coleanthus*, *Nardus*) the spikelet consists of nothing more, but usually (even in uniflorous spikelets) other glumes are present. Of these the two placed distichously opposite each other at the base of the spikelet never bear any flower in their axils, and are called the *basal* or *empty glumes* (fig. 10, 1). They are the "glumes" of most writers ("paleae" of Dumortier), and together form what was called the "glume" by R. Brown ("legumen," Palisot de Beauvois). They rarely differ much from one another, but one may be smaller or quite absent (*Panicum* (fig. 8, 2), *Pulynia*, fig. 2—Spikelet of *Leersia*, *Paspalum*, *Lolium*), or both be altogether suppressed, as above noticed. They are commonly firm and strong, often enclose the spikelet, and are rarely provided with long points or imperfect awns. Generally speaking they do not share in the special modifications of the flowering glumes, and but rarely themselves undergo modification, chiefly in the hardening of portions (*Silene*, *Alnus*, *Alnus*, *Antephoris*, *Paspalum*), so as to afford greater protection to the flowers or fruit. But it is usual to find, besides the basal glumes, a few other empty ones, and these are in two or more-flowered spikelets (fig. 11, 2) at the extremity (numerous in *Lophatherum*), or in uniflorous ones (fig. 8, 2) below, interspersed between the floral glume and the basal pair. Descriptive writers have been accustomed to call these empty glumes "barren" or "neutral flowers," a misleading use of terms.

The axis of the spikelet, when short and rounded, has been termed the *calyx*, when long the *rachis*. It is frequently jointed and breaks up into articulations above each flower. Tufts or borders of hairs are frequently present (e.g., *Colymbopogon*, *Pharbitis*, *Andropogon*), often so long as to surround and conceal the flowers. The axis is often continued beyond the last flower or glume as a bristle or stalk.

*Involution* is the organs outside the spikelets are most unimportant, the morphology of which is various. Thus in *Setaria*, *Pennisetum*, &c., the one or more circles of simple or feathery hairs represent abortive branches of the inflorescence, in *Cenchrus* these become consolidated, and the



FIG. 2.—Spikelet of *Leersia*.



inner ones flattened out so as to form a very hard globular spiny case to the spikelets. The cup-shaped involucre of *Cornucopia* is a dilatation of the axis into a hollow receptacle with a raised border. In *Cynurus* the pectinate involucre which conceals the spikelets is a barren or abortive spikelet. True bracts of a more general character subtending branches of the inflorescence are singularly rare in *Gramineae*, in marked contrast with *Cyperaceae*, where they are so conspicuous. They however occur in a whole section of *Andropogon*, in *Anomochloa*, and at the base of the spike in *Scleria*. The remarkable ovoid involucre of *Coix*, which becomes of stony hardness, white, and polished (then known as "Job's tears"), is also a modified bract or leaf-sheath. It is entirely closed except at the apex, and contains the female spikelet, the stalks of the male inflorescence and the long styles emerging through the small apical orifice.

Any number of spikelets may compose the inflorescence, and their arrangement is very various. In the spike form, with sessile spikelets on the main axis, the latter is often dilated and flattened (*Paspalum*), or is more or less thickened and hollowed out (*Stenotaphrum*, *Rottboellia*, *Tripsacum*), when the spikelets are sunk and buried within the cavities. Every variety of racemose and paniculate inflorescence obtains, and the number of spikelets composing those of the large kinds is often immense. Rarely the inflorescence consists of very few flowers; thus *Lygum*, *Spartum*, the most anomalous of European grasses, has but two or three large uniflorous spikelets, which are fused together at the base, and have no basal glumes, but are enveloped in a large hooded spathe-like bract.

**Flower.**—This is characterized by remarkable uniformity. The perianth is represented by very rudimentary, small, fleshy, hypogynous scales called lodicules ("aquamule,"

with the perianthial ones, and are then either free from or combined with the two anterior ones.

**Sexual Organs.**—Grass-flowers are usually hermaphrodite, but there are very many exceptions. Thus it is very common to find one or more imperfect (usually male) flowers in the same spikelet with bisexual ones, and their relative position is important in classification. *Holcus* and *Arrhenatherum* are examples in English grasses; and as a rule in species of temperate regions separation of the sexes is not carried further. In warmer countries monocious and dioecious grasses are more frequent. In such cases the male and female spikelets and inflorescences may be very dissimilar, as in the maize, Job's tears, *Buchiana*, *Spinifex*, &c.; and in some dioecious species this dissimilarity has led to the two sexes being referred to different genera (e.g., *Antephora axilliflora*, Steud., is the female of *Buchloe dactyloides*, Engelm., and *Neurachne paradoxa*, Br., of a species of *Spinifex*). In other grasses, however, with the sexes in different plants (e.g., *Bizopyrum*, *Distichlis*, *Eragrostis capitata*, *Glycerium*), no such dimorphism obtains. *Amphicarpum* is remarkable in having cleistogamic flowers borne on long radical subterranean peduncles which are fertile, whilst the conspicuous upper paniculate ones, though apparently perfect, never produce fruit. Something similar occurs in *Leersia ovipida*, where the fertile spikelets are concealed within the leaf-sheaths.

**Andræcium.**—In the vast majority there are three stamens alternating with the lodicules, and therefore one anterior, i.e., opposite the flowering glume, the other two being posterior and in contact with the palea. They are hypogynous, and have long and very delicate filaments, and large, linear or oblong two-celled anthers, dorsifixed and ultimately very versatile, deeply indented at each end, and commonly exerted and pendulous. Suppression of the anterior stamen sometimes occurs (e.g., *Anthoxanthum*), or the two posterior ones may be absent (*Urtica*, *Canna*, *Phippia*, *Festuca bromoides*). On the other hand there is in some genera (*Oryza*, most *Bambusae*) another row of three stamens, making six in all (fig. 3, 3); and *Anomochloa* and *Tetrarrhena* possess four. The stamens become numerous (ten to forty) in the male flowers of a few monocious genera (*Pariana*, *Luzula*). In *Besleria* they vary from seven to thirty, and in *Gigantochloa* they are monadelphous.

**Gynœcium.**—There is but little variation here from a bicarpellary pistil, with a small rounded one-celled ovary containing a single laterally attached or ascending ovule, capped by two styles quite distinct or connate at the base,

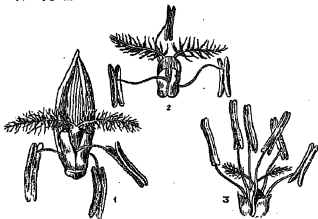


Fig. 3.—Flowers of Grasses. 1, *Piptosternum*, with the palea; 2, *Poa*; 3, *Oryza*. Kunth; "nectarium," Schreber; they are elongated or truncate, sometimes fringed with hairs, and are in contact with the ovary. Their usual number is two, and they are placed collaterally at the anterior side of the flower, that is, within the flowering glume. They are generally considered to represent the inner whorl of the ordinary monocotyledonous (Ullaceous) perianth, the outer whorl of these being suppressed as well as the posterior member of the inner whorl. This latter is present almost constantly in *Stipeæ* and *Bambusæ*, which have three lodicules, and in the latter group they are occasionally more numerous (five, spreading and persistent in *Pseudostachyum*; six to eight in *Besleria*). In *Anomochloa* they are represented by hairs. In *Streptochaeta*, according to Döll, there are six lodicules, alternately arranged in two whorls. They are often quite absent. In some cases lodicules are of the nature of stipules to the palea, and appear as though split off from its sides at the base. Such stipular lodicules often co-exist along

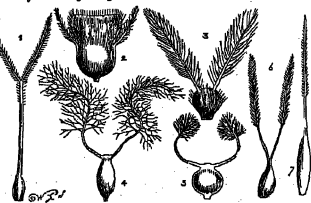


Fig. 4.—Pistils of Grasses. 1, *Alopecurus*; 2, *Bromus*; 3, *Arrhenatherum*; 4, *Glyceria*; 5, *Setaria*; 6, *Aeluropis*; 7, *Hordeum*.

and with densely silky or feathery stigmas (fig. 4). Occasionally there is but a single style (*Nardus*, *Lygum*), and this may attain to a great length (6 inches in the maize); or three styles may be present (some *Bambusæ*, *Leptostachys*, *Streptochaeta*). Nees has described a case in which three complete carpels were found in *Schedonorus elatior*.

We thus see that, comparing the flower of *Gramineæ* with the normal liliaceous plant (fig. 5), it differs in the complete suppression of the outer row and the posterior member of the inner row of the perianth-leaves, of the whole inner row of stamens, and of the anterior carpel, whilst the remain-

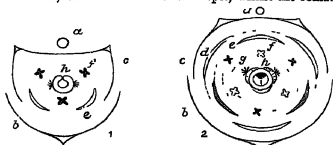


FIG. 5.—Diagrams of the ordinary grass flower. 1, actual condition. 2, theobesed, with the suppressed organs supplied. a, anther; b, flowering glume; c, palea; d, outer row of perianth leaves; e, inner row; f, outer row of stamens; g, inner row; h, pistil.

ing members of the perianth are in a rudimentary condition. But each or any of the usually missing organs are to be found normally in different genera, or as occasional developments.

**Fruit.**—The ovary ripens into a usually small ovoid or rounded fruit, which is entirely occupied by the single large seed, from which it is not to be distinguished, the thin pericarp being completely united to its surface. To this peculiar fruit the term *caryopsis* has been applied (more familiarly "grain"), it is commonly furrowed longitudinally down one side (usually the inner, but in *Coxia* and its allies, the outer), and an additional covering is not unfrequently provided by the adherence of the persistent palea, or even also of the flowering glume ("chaff" of cereals). From this type are a few deviations, thus in *Sporobolus*, &c. (fig. 6), the pericarp is not united with the seed but is quite distinct, dehiscens, and allows the loose seed to escape. Sometimes the pericarp is membranous, sometimes hard and brittle, whilst, on the other hand, in some genera of *Bambuseæ*, it becomes thick and fleshy, forming a "berry," the fruit or rather a drupe. In *Meliorana bracteata* a tuft of *Sporobolus* forms a fruit 3 or 4 inches long, with a pointed beak of 2 inches more, it is indehiscent, and the small seed germinates whilst the fruit is still attached to the tree, putting out a tuft of roots and a shoot, and not falling till the latter is 6 inches long. A similar germination also occurs in *Pseudotschuyum compactum*, which has the largest fruit of the order.

**Seed.**—The testa is thin and membranous but occasionally coloured, and the embryo small, the great bulk of the seed being occupied by the hard farinaceous endosperm (albumen) on which the nutritive value of the grain depends.



FIG. 7.—A grain of wheat. 1, back, and 2, front view. 3, vertical section, showing (a) the endosperm, and (b) the embryo. 4, commencement of germination showing (a) the plumula and (b) the secondary rootlets surrounded by their coleorhiza.

The embryo presents many points of interest. Its position is remarkable, closely applied to the surface of the endosperm at the base of its outer side. This character is absolute for the whole order, and effectually separates *Gramineæ* from *Cyperaceæ*. The part in contact with the endosperm

is flat and plate-like, and is known as the *ventillum*. Some difference of opinion is held as to the nature of this, but it is probably correctly regarded (as by Van Tieghem) as the main portion of the cotyledon, the white eggs of starch (*starch*) protecting the plumula—which is often described as the cotyledon—being the ligule only of that organ greatly developed. The radicle is inferior, broad, and blunt, the primary root is very slightly developed in germination, but several secondary lateral ones burst through above its point, and thus become surrounded at their base with little scabrous (coleorhiza).

**CLASSIFICATION.**—*Gramineæ* are thus sharply defined from all other plants, and there are no genera as to which it is possible to feel a doubt whether they should be referred to it or not. The only order closely allied is *Cyperaceæ*, and the points of difference between the two have been alluded to above, but may be here brought together. The best distinctions are found in the position of the embryo in relation to the endosperm—lateral in grasses, basal in *Cyperaceæ*—and in the possession by *Gramineæ* of the 2-nerved palea below each flower. Less absolute characters, but generally trustworthy and more easily observed, are the feathery stigmas, the always distinct arrangement of the anthers, the usual absence of more general bracts in the inflorescence, the split leaf sheaths, and the hollow, cylindrical, jointed culms,—some or all of which are wanting in all *Cyperaceæ*. The same characters will distinguish grasses from the other glumiferous orders, *Restiacæ*, *Eriacaceæ*, and *Desfontainiaceæ*, which are besides further removed by their capercular fruit and pendulous ovules. To other monocotyledonous families the resemblances are merely of adaptive or vegetative characters. Some *Commelinaceæ* and *Mastitaceæ* approach grasses in foliage, the leaves of *Allium*, &c., possess a ligule, the habit of some palms reminds one of the bamboo, and *Juncea*, and a few *Liliaceæ* possess an inconspicuous scarious perianth.

The great uniformity among the very numerous species of this vast family renders its classification very difficult. The difficulty has been increased by the confusion resulting from the multiplication of genera founded on slight characters, and from the description of identical plants under several different genera in consequence of their wide distribution.

No characters for main divisions can be obtained from the flower proper or fruit, though both Kunth and Reichenbach have used them—especially the form of the styles and stigmas, the locules and the caruncles—they have not been generally employed by botanists, who have found it necessary to trust to characters derived from the usually less important inflorescence and bracts.

The earlier authors made the general arrangement of the spikelets (spicate, paniculate, &c.) the basis of their classifications. Palisot de Beauvois's main divisions are founded on the existence in the same inflorescence of annular or diverse spikelets. Pries has proposed a division into *Euryanthæa* and *Chusantheræ*, according to the condition of the flowering glume and palea, separated or close during inflorescence. Dumortier gives a classification into *Reichardia*, *Euchlytræ*, and *Calyptræ*, the first with the spikelets inserted into excavations of the rachis, the second with the flowers of the free spikelets inserted on its axis (rachilla), and the last with the flower or flowers borne on the short callus of the glumes. Both these systems, and others which have been suggested, possess merits of their own, but they have not as yet been found capable of application to the order as a whole, having been framed for the accommodation mainly of European genera.

For such general treatment no better primary divisions have been found than those proposed by Robert Brown in 1810 and further elaborated in 1814, which have

been accepted by Munro (1868) and Benth (1878) in their most recent revisions of the Cape and Australian genera. The basis of Brown's division of the whole order into *Panicæ* and *Poaceæ* is the position of the most perfect flower in the spikelet; this is the upper (apparently) terminal one in the first, whilst in the second it occupies the lower position, the more imperfect ones (if any) being above it. Munro has supplemented this by another character easier of verification, and of even greater constancy, in the articulation of the pedicel in the *Panicæ* immediately below the glumes; whilst in *Poaceæ* this does not occur, but the axis of the spikelet frequently articulates above the pair of empty basal glumes. Neither of these two great divisions will well accommodate certain genera allied to *Phalaris*, for which Brown proposed tentatively a third group (since named *Phalarideæ*); this, or at least the greater part of it, is placed by Benth under the *Poaceæ*.

The following arrangement is based on the writings of these authors, but it cannot be considered very satisfactory. Probably no serial disposition can represent the tangled network of genera related in different ways and various degrees which make up this very natural but complicated family, and though some of the following tribes are fairly natural, the limits of others are but ill-defined, and the position of many genera uncertain.

I. PANICODÆ.—Pedicel articulated below the glumes. Spikelet with one or two flowers, the more perfect fertile one above, the male or barren one, if present, below it.

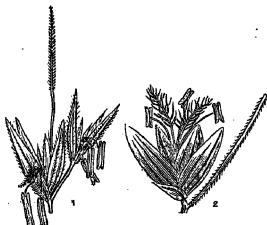


FIG. 8.—*Panicæ*. 1, a pair of spikelets of *Andropogon*; 2, spikelet of *Setaria*, with an abortive branch beneath it.

1. *Panicæ*.—Spikelets with an apparently terminal hermaphrodite or female flower with or without a male one beneath it. Glumes three or four, the upper flowering one of a firm texture, the lowest usually small, sometimes absent. Awns rarely found; if present, neither twisted nor knotted. Fruit enclosed in the hardened flowering glume and palea.

EXAMPLES.—*Paspalum*, *Panicum*, *Setaria*, *Pennisetum*, *Antheropogon*, *Thouarica*, *Syntherisma*.

2. *Tristylidæ*.—Spikelets as in *Panicæ*, but flowering-glume with a twisted and bent awn.

EXAMPLES.—*Arundinella*, *Tristachya*, *Polypogon* (?).

3. *Andropogonæ*.—Spikelets as in the last, but usually in pairs (rarely three or solitary), one being sessile and fertile, the other stalked and usually male or neuter. Glumes four (rarely fewer), one of the outer ones the largest and enclosing the fruit, the upper flowering one very thin and transparent, usually bearing a twisted and bent awn or reduced to the awn.

EXAMPLES.—*Isachne*, *Polinia*, *Andropogon*, *Imperata*, *Sorghum*, *Ambrosia*, *Brizantha*, *Eulalia*, *Stachys*.

4. *Rostratæ*.—Spikelets as in the last; one of each pair fertile, sessile, and sunk in alternate notches or cavities of the jointed simple rachis, the other stalked or absent; no awns.

EXAMPLES.—*Hemarthra*, *Manisuris*, *Rostrata*, *Ophurus*, *Politurus*, *Lophurus*.

5. *Mayadæ*.—Spikelets monocious, very unlike, the male numerous in a terminal panicle, the female few at the base of the male inflorescence or more numerous in a separate one.

EXAMPLES.—*Citri*, *Zea*, *Oenanthus*, *Tripsacum*, *Sclerocarpus*.

6. *Olyra*.—Spikelets monocious, or some hermaphrodite and some male in the same panicle; the flowering glume large, sometimes utricular. Stamens three, six, or more. Leaves often broad and petiolate.

EXAMPLES.—*Leptocarpus*, *Pharus*, *Olyra*, *Pariana*.

II. PHALARIDÆ.—Pedicel either articulated below the glumes or not, but the rachis of the spikelet articulated above the two lowest ones. Spikelets with (one or) three flowers, the perfect fertile one above, the two male, if present, below it. Two-nerved palea usually absent.

EXAMPLES.—*Phalaris*, *Anthoxanthum*, *Eberhartsia*, *Hierochloa*, *Altecurus*, *Phleum*, *Cynops*, *Lycopodium* (?).

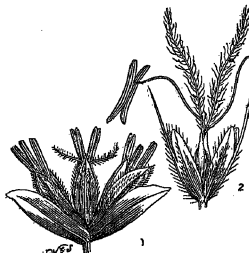


FIG. 9.—*Phalarideæ*. 1, spikelet of *Hierochloa*; 2, spikelet of *Anthoxanthum*.

III. POACEÆ.—Pedicel not articulated below the glumes. Rachis of spikelet often articulated above the two lowest glumes. Spikelets with one, two, or more fertile flowers, the male or imperfect ones (if any) above them. Rachis of spikelet often continued as a point or bristle beyond the flowers.

1. *Oryzæ*.—Spikelets one-flowered. Empty basal glumes very small or wanting. Two-nerved palea usually absent. Stamens usually six.

EXAMPLES.—*Oryza*, *Leersia*, *Panicum*, *Phleum*, *Anomolobis* (?).

2. *Stipeæ*.—Spikelets one-flowered. Flowering glume with a terminal twisted and bent awn. Palea small and thin. Lodicules three.

EXAMPLES.—*Stipa*, *Aristida*, *Piptotheca*.

3. *Agrostidæ*.—Spikelets one-flowered. Flowering glume usually with a terminal or dorsal bent awn. Palea small and thin. Lodicules two.

EXAMPLES.—*Agrostis*, *Doynaria*, *Calamagrostis*, *Calamagrostis* (?).



FIG. 10.—*Poaceæ*. 1, spikelet of *Agrostis*; 2, spikelet of *Avena*.

4. *Avenæ*.—Spikelets generally two- rarely three- or more-flowered. Flowering glume with a terminal or dorsal bent and twisted awn. Palea large, enclosing with the flowering glume the fruit.

EXAMPLES.—*Avena*, *Hordeum*, *Aristida*, *Phleum*, *Avena*, *Trisetum*, *Danthonia*, *Lophurus*.

[2, 3, and 4 together form Benth's tribe *Strepelathæ*.]

5. *Pappophoræ*.—Spikelets one- or several-flowered. Flowering glumes rounded on the back, terminating in three or more teeth often carried out into straight awns.

EXAMPLES.—*Pappophorum*, *Tripsacum*, *Citrus*, *Tridax*.

6. *Chloridæ*.—Spikelets one- or several-flowered, sessile on an axillary spike. Flowering glumes rarely awned.

EXAMPLES.—*Cynodon*, *Chloris*, *Elevania*, *Leptochloa*, *Spartina*, *Cleome*, *Nassella*.

7 *Milium*.—Spikelets one or several flowered, paniculate. Flowering glumes entire, rounded and unawned. Palea large.

EXAMPLES.—*Milium*, *Cochlosia*, *Sporobolus*.

8 *Poa*.—Spikelets several or many flowered, stalked, paniculate or capitate. Flowering glumes entire, obtuse or acute, or with a short awn, one or more empty ones above the fertile flower.

EXAMPLES.—*Poa*, *Bromus*, *Lolium*, *Braea*, *Poa*, *Brachypodium*, *Dactylis*, *Cynosurus*, *Aristida*, *Pharmitis*, *Milium*.



FIG. 11.—*Poa* 1, spikelet of *Poa*; 2, spikelet of *Bromus*.

9 *Bambusa*.—Spikelets one, several, or many flowered, usually sessile, paniculate or capitate. Lemmas three. Stamens generally six. Stems very large and tall (called above or arundinaceous). Blade of leaf attenuated with the sheath entire, smooth.

EXAMPLES.—*Arundinacea*, *Chusquea*, *Nassella*, *Bambusa*, *Melocoma*, *Bambusa*.

10 *Hordeum*.—Spikelets one or several flowered, sessile on the opposite sides of the main axis of the spike. Otherwise as in *Poa*.

EXAMPLES.—*Hordeum*, *Alysiopogon*, *Elymus*, *Triticum*, *Lolium*, *Lepidurus*, *Agropyrum*.

[5 to 10 compose *Danthus*'s tribe *Arctopogon*]

III DISTRIBUTION.—Grasses are the most universally diffused over the globe of all flowering-plants. There is no district in which they do not occur, and in nearly all they are a leading and dominant feature of the flora. In actual number of species *Gramineae* comes considerably after *Compositae* and *Leguminosae*, the two most numerous orders of phanerogams, but in number of individual plants it probably far exceeds either, whilst from the wide extension of many of its species, the proportion of *Gramineae* to other orders in the various floras of the world is much higher than its whole number of species would lead one to expect. This number can, however, scarcely be put much below 6000, which is probably somewhat more than a fifth of all monocotyledons. This is only about  $\frac{1}{10}$  of the phanerogams as a whole, yet in any given locality, with a very few exceptions, this proportion is largely exceeded. In tropical regions, where *Leguminosae* is the leading order, grasses closely follow as the second, whilst in the warm and temperate regions of the northern hemisphere, in which *Compositae* takes the lead, *Gramineae* again occupies the second position. As the colder latitudes are entered the grasses become relatively more numerous, and are the leading family in Arctic and Antarctic regions. The only countries where the order plays a distinctly subordinate part are some extra-tropical regions of the southern hemisphere, Australia, the Cape, Chili, &c. The actual proportion of graminaceous species to the whole phanerogamic flora in different countries is found to vary from nearly  $\frac{1}{10}$  in the Arctic regions to about  $\frac{1}{10}$  at the Cape, in the British Isles it is about  $\frac{1}{10}$ . The following are proportions per cent in various floras, from DeCandolle's *Geogr. Botanique*, which must, however, be taken as merely approximations in most cases.—

In the tropics.—Cape Verde Islands, 18; Abyssinia and Nubia, 19; Mexico, 10; Hawaiian Islands, 10; Congo, 8; Mauritius, 8; neighbourhood of Quito, 10; Barbados, 6; Surinam, 6; Tania, 6; New Guinea, 8; New Granada, 4. In temperate regions of the northern hemisphere.—Banda and some other districts of India, 15 to 17; Egypt, 12; Tunis, 19; Assos, 18; Modena, 21; Algiers, 18; Cambray, 23; United States, 8; Sweden, 9; Holland, 10;

Sweden, 21; Great Britain, 8; France, 7; Germany, 7; China, 8; Alta, 6; Japan, 6. In northern regions (see also p. 58, lat. 1).—Melville Island, 21; Spitzbergen, 18; Iceland, 11. In extra-tropical regions of the southern hemisphere.—Chili, 6; Cape Colony, 4; Surinam, 6; Brazil, 2. In Antarctic islands.—Humboldt, 23; Tristan da Cunha, 16.

The principal climatic cause influencing the number of graminaceous species appears to be amount of moisture, it is only in very dry countries that they become distinctly less numerous. A remarkable feature of the distribution of grasses is its uniformity, there are no great centres for the order, as in *Compositae*, where a marked preponderance of endemic species exists, and the genera, except some of the smallest or monotypic ones, have usually a wide distribution. Speaking generally, however, the *Poaceae* are tropical and warm temperate plants, whilst the grasses of temperate and colder regions are members of the *Poaceae*. The former are very sparingly represented in Europe by a few species of the vast tropical genera *Andropogon* and *Panicum*. *Poaceae*, on the other hand, form a fair proportion of tropical *Gramineae*, especially in the higher districts where, as in the mountains of Abyssinia, are several endemic genera and many species. The largest tropical genus of *Poaceae* is *Eragrostis*.

The distribution of the tropical tribe *Bambusae* is interesting. There are 170 or more species, which are about equally divided between the Indo-Malayan region and tropical America, only one species being common to both. Apparently there is but a single native species on the African continent, where it has a wide range, and none are recorded for Australia, though species may perhaps occur on the northern coast. One species of *Arundinacea* reaches northwards as far as Virginia, and the elevation attained in the Andes by some species of *Chusquea* is very remarkable, one, *C. asiatica*, being abundant from 15,000 feet up to nearly the level of perpetual snow.

Many grasses are almost cosmopolitan, such as our common reed, *Phragmites communis*, and many range throughout the warm regions of the globe, e.g. *Cynodon*, *Dactylon*, *Elevania indica*, *Imperata arundinacea*, *Syntherisma indica*, &c., and such weeds of cultivation as species of *Setaria*, *Echinochloa*, which are found over both Old and New Worlds. The recent masterly revision of the whole of the Australian species by Benthall well exhibits the wide range of the genera of the order in a flora generally so peculiar and restricted as that of Australia. Thus of the 90 indigenous genera (many monotypic or very small) only 14 are endemic, 1 extends to South Africa, 3 are common to Australia and New Zealand, 18 extend also into Asia, whilst no less than 54 are found in both the Old and New Worlds, 26 being chiefly tropical and 36 chiefly extra-tropical.

Of specially remarkable species *Lycium* is found on the sea-side of the eastern half of the Mediterranean basin, and the minute *Coleanthus* has only occasionally occurred at intervals in three or four isolated spots in Europe (Norway, Bohemia, Normandy). Many remarkable endemic genera occur in tropical America, including *Amnochloa* of Brazil, and most of the large aquatic species with separated sexes are found in this region. The only genus of flowering plants peculiar to the arctic regions is the beautiful and rare grass *Pleurapogon Sabinae*, R. Br., of Melville Island.

Bibliography.—R. Brown, *Prod. Flor. Nov. Holland* (1810), 14, appendix to *Florae* of *Papua*, p. 580 (1814), 14, and J. J. Bennett in *Flora* of *Tasmania*, p. 1 (1888), *Palustris* de Beauvois, *Studia* of *Agrostographia* (1842), Dumortier, *Observations sur les Graminées de Belgique* (1822), 14, *Studia Agrostographica* (1868), Trinius, *Fundamenta Agrostographica* (1820), 14, 2, *Graminées* (1842), Kunth, *Enumeratio Plantarum*, 1 (1838), 14, *Index* to *Methodus de Gram.* (1855), Von Mohl, in *Bot. Jahrbuch*, 1845, p. 38, E. Fries, *Summa Veg. Scandinavica* (1846), Doll, *Flora des Grossen Adels*, 14 (1857), *Flora* of *Niederlande*, 1866, p. 20, 14, *Flora Brasiliensis*, *Gramineae*, 1 (1871), 11 (1877), 11 (1878), Benthall,

*Handbook of Brit. Flora* (1858), 1d, in *Journal Linn. Soc. Lond.*, xv, p. 390 (1877), 1d, *Flora Australasica*, vi, (1878), *Musci*, vi, *Hymen. Genera & Arctica Flora*, ed. 2 (1882), 1d, *Bombus*, in *Trans. Linn. Soc. Lond.*, xvi, p. 1 (1868), Duval Jouve, in *Mém. de l'Acad. des Sciences de Montpellier* (1871), Van Tieghem, in *Ann. des Sci. Nat.*, 4e, 6e, xv, p. 246 (1875), *Exaltis*, *Widdien*, *diapomus*, 1 (1876), *Scutari*, in *Bull. Soc. Ent. Belg.*, vi, p. 469 (1876) (H T).

GRASSHOPPER (French *Sauterelle*, Italian *Grillo*, German *Grashopper*, *Heuschäcke*, Swedish *Grashoppa*), a collective term applied to certain orthopterous insects belonging to the families *Locustidae* and *Acyrididae*, according to the now generally received classificatory views. They are especially remarkable for their salutory powers, due to the great development of the hind legs, which are much longer than the others and have stout and powerful thighs, and also for their staidulation, which is not always an attribute with them of the male only. The distinctions between the two families may be briefly stated as follows — the *Locustidae* have very long thread-like antennae, and four-jointed tarsi, the *Acyrididae* have short stout antennae, and three-jointed tarsi. As the term "grasshopper" is almost synonymous with *Locust*, the subject will be more extensively treated under the latter heading (q. v.). Under both "grasshopper" and "locust" are included members of both families above-noticed, but the majority belong to the *Acyrididae* in both cases. In Britain the term is chiefly applicable to the large green grasshopper (*Locusta viridissima*) common in most parts of the south of England, and to smaller and more obscure species of the genera *Stenobothrus*, *Gomphocerus*, and *Tettix*, the latter remarkable for the great extension of the pronotum, which often reaches beyond the extremity of the body. All are vegetable feeders, and, in all orthopterous insects, have an incomplete metamorphosis, so that their destructive powers are continuous from the moment of emergence from the egg till death. The notorious migratory locust (*Pachytatus migratorius*) may be considered only an exaggerated grasshopper, and the two famous Rocky Mountain locusts (*Caloptenus* spp.) are still more entitled to the name. In Britain the species are not of sufficient size, nor of sufficient numerical importance, to do any great damage, and their cheerful "song" more than counteracts the slight mischief they may cause in devouring grasses and other plants. The colours of many of them assimilate greatly to those of their habitats, the green of the *Locusta viridissima* is wonderfully similar to that of the herbage amongst which it lives, and those species that frequent more arid spots are protected in the same manner. Yet many species have brilliantly coloured wings (though scarcely so in English forms), and during flight are almost as conspicuous as butterflies, but when settled it is nearly impossible to detect them, even although the spot where they dropped may have been carefully marked, and they rise again almost under the feet of the observer. Those that belong to the *Acyrididae* mostly lay their eggs in more or less cylindrical masses, surrounded by a glutinous secretion, in the ground. Some of the *Locustidae* also lay their eggs in the ground, but others deposit them in fissures in trees and low plants, in which the female is aided by a long flattened ovipositor, or process at the extremity of the abdomen, whereas in the *Acyrididae* there is only an apparatus of valves. The stridulation or "song" is mainly produced by friction of the hind legs against portions of the wing or wing-covers, but variation exists in the exact method. To a practised ear it is perhaps possible to distinguish the "song" of even closely allied species, and some are said to produce a sound differing by day and night. The British species are not numerous, but in some parts of the world (and even in Europe) their numbers are very great, both in species and individuals.

GRATIANUS, AUGUSTUS (359–383), Roman emperor, son of Valentinianus I., was born in 359. In the ninth year of his age he received from his father the title of Augustus, but on his father's death in 375 he was compelled to share the Western empire with his infant brother, Valentinianus II., of whom he was appointed guardian, while his uncle Valens ruled over the Eastern empire. In 378 he gained a victory over the Alcmanni near the site of the present town of Colmar. Through the death of Valens in the same year, there devolved upon him the government of the Eastern empire, but feeling himself unable to resist the incursions of the barbarians, he ceded it to Theodosius, January 19, 379. For some years Gratianus conducted the government of his empire with energy and success, but gradually he sank into indolence and occupied himself chiefly with the pleasures of the chase. By adopting as the guards of his person a body of the Alani, and appearing in public in the dress of a Scythian warrior, he awakened the contempt and resentment of his Roman troops. A Roman named Maximus took advantage of this feeling to raise the standard of revolt in Britain, and invaded Gaul with a large army, upon which Gratianus, who was then in Paris, being deserted by his troops, fled to Lyons, where, through the treachery of the governor, he was delivered over to the rebel generals and assassinated, August 25, 383.

GRATIANUS, FRANCISCUS, compiler of the *Concordia discordantium Canonum* or *Decretum Gratiani*, and founder of the science of canon law, was born about the end of the 11th century at Chiusi in Tuscany or, according to another account, at Canara near Orvieto. In early life he appears to have been received into the Camaldulan monastery of Classe near Ravenna, whence he afterwards removed to that of San Felice in Bologna, where he spent many years in the preparation of the *Concordia*. The precise date of this important work cannot be ascertained, but it contains references to the decisions of the Lateran council of 1139, and the statement is vouched for by tolerably good authority that it was completed while Pope Alexander III. was still simply professor of theology at Bologna, — in other words, prior to 1150. The labours of Gratian are said to have been rewarded with the bishopric of Chiusi, but if so he appears never to have been consecrated, at least his name is not to be found in any authentic list of those who have occupied that see. The year of his death is unknown.

For some account of the *Decretum Gratiani* and its history see CANON LAW. The latest edition is that of Huellig (*Compendium*) Leipzig, 1876. Compare Schulte, *Zur Geschichte des Literatur über das Decret Gratiani* (1870), *Die Glossen zum Decret Gratiani* (1872), and *Geschichte der Quellen und Literatur des Kirchenrechts* (1876).

GRATIUS FALISCUS, a Roman poet, contemporary with Virgil and Ovid, and author of a poem on hunting (*Cynegética*), of which somewhat more than 636 lines have been preserved. Of his personal history nothing is known, but it has been doubtfully conjectured from his cognomen that he was a native of Falerni. The only reference to him to be met with in any writer of antiquity (Ovid, *Pont.* iv. 16, 23) is of the most incidental kind, and his poem seems very early to have fallen into comparative oblivion. Our knowledge of it is derived chiefly from a manuscript of the 10th century, preserved at Vienna, but partly also from one of nearly the same age at Paris. It describes, somewhat after the manner of Xenophon, various kinds of game, the means to be employed for their pursuit and capture, the best breeds of horses and dogs, and in doing so it seldom rises above the dull level of the driest technicality, although occasionally there are faint reminiscences of Virgil.

The *edicta promissa* of this author was published in Venice in 1584, his work was also included by Ulman (1848–56) and Haerlamp (1728) in their editions of *Acta et Res Finesianae*, as well as by

Burman (1781) and Weinsdorf (1780) in the *Poeta Latina Minore*, and by Weber in the *Corpus Poetae un. Latinorum*. The most recent editions are those of Stein (1832) and Haupt (1838). A rendering into English verse was published by Christopher Wase in 1864, there is also a German translation by Polke (1829).

GRATTAN, HENRY (1746-1820), Irish statesman and orator, was born 3d July 1746. His father, a Protestant, was for many years recorder of the city of Dublin, and from 1761 to 1766 its representative in the Irish parliament, and his mother was a daughter of Thomas Masley, chief justice of Ireland. Both at school and at Trinity College, Dublin, where he entered in 1763, young Grattan greatly distinguished himself, especially in the study of the classics, and several well-authenticated anecdotes indicate also that the more prominent moral characteristics displayed in his public career had begun to assert their strength at a very early period. While still attending the university he discarded the Tory principles of his father, who, dying in 1768 before his imputation had time to moderate, testified his resentment by depriving him of the paternal mansion, and of all property not secured by settlement. Having inherited, however, a small inalienable patrimony he resolved to study for the bar, and in 1767 he entered the Middle Temple, London. He was called to the Irish bar in 1772, but never obtained a large practice, and indeed from the time that he left the university seems to have concentrated his attention chiefly on politics and the study of popular oratory. He early acquired a passionate admiration of the great orators of Greece and Rome, and while in London he spent the most of his evenings, in the galleries of the House of Commons or at the bar of the Lords, anxious to profit by every opportunity of obtaining an insight into the art of eloquence, his enthusiasm for which had received additional stimulus from the genius of Lord Chatham. Of the eloquence of Chatham he has given a detailed and graphic description in one of his letters, and he also wrote an admirable portraiture of his character, which was inserted as a note in the political publication *Baratuzia* conducted by Sir Hercules Langrishe. The knowledge obtained from the study of the best specimens of ancient and modern oratory, and that gained from witnessing the debates in the English parliament, Grattan began sedulously to apply to the purposes of his own discipline. By the constant practice of recitation to imaginary audiences, and by taking part frequently in private theatricals, he succeeded in overcoming to a remarkable extent his great physical defects, so as to acquire a clear and rounded articulation, an emphasis in some respects admirably consonant with his meaning, and a certain ease in a style of elocution which was effective partly by reason of its very singularity. At the same time, by practising the habit of writing out the principal passages of his speeches, and subjecting them to a constant mental revision, he attained to the possession of a diction which for clearness, epigrammatic vigour, polished beauty of phrase, and the power of illuminating a whole subject by sudden flashes of meaning conveyed in a single sentence, is unsurpassed in modern oratory. He was equally diligent also in perfecting his political knowledge by a careful study of the history and political constitution both of ancient and modern nations, and the minor accomplishment of pifloquency as a pistol shot, at that time essential to every Irish politician who would be prepared for all emergencies, was cultivated by him with the same dogged perseverance which he displayed in other matters.

When therefore, under the auspices of Lord Charlemont, Grattan in 1775 entered the Irish parliament, he had already all his powers under full command, and had so trained and disciplined his natural genius that it was able to exert its influence with untrammelled freedom. The period at which he began public life was one of the

most critical in his country's history, and it is within the limits of strict truth to affirm that he inaugurated a new era in her political condition, and that, whether for good or for evil, and whether by the direct success of his efforts or by the modifying or opposing influences they called into exercise, he has had a greater share than any other individual in determining her present relation to the United Kingdom. Though the writings of Molyneux and Swift, the beginnings of a true national sentiment had been previously awakened, and the first step in the path of constitutional reform had been taken, when by the advocacy of Flood the Octennial Bill of 1768 was passed, which limited the duration of parliaments to eight years, instead of as formerly making their continuance depend upon the life of the sovereign, but Flood himself—whose friendship and influence was a powerful element in determining Grattan to adopt a political career—had, like less formidable agitators, succumbed to the intrigues of the "castle," and, although possessed of a private fortune which placed him beyond the suspicion of being governed chiefly by mercenary considerations, had consented to hamper his political action by accepting a sinecure office, and it seemed as if the germs of a better future had already begun to rot in a soil of such political corruption. The difficulty of the task which Grattan had set before him was also increased by a peculiarity in the case of Ireland which requires to be emphasized. Her political constitution, and, with the exception of the restrictions which paralysed her trade, the laws which were inflicting upon her such moral and physical misery, did not nominally differ to any great extent from those of the country by which she was in reality governed. She possessed intact her separate nationality, she was blessed with the boon of a national parliament, she had a legal administration of her own, including the right of trial by jury, and she enjoyed something resembling the privileges of municipal government. She possessed these things, however, scarcely more than in form, and she possessed them in such a form that, instead of being the guarantees of her liberty, they increased her sense of bondage, and directly fostered discontent and chronic mutiny. Though the Test Act and the penal laws were actually enforced with less rigour than in England, yet from the numbers who came within their sweep their disastrous influence was incalculably increased. They excluded four-fifths of her otherwise eligible population from the jury box and from municipal and parliamentary suffrage, they had produced confiscations on almost a national scale with all the evils consequent on absenteeism, and from their operation there had resulted an ignorance, a poverty, a violation of the rights of conscience, not confined to a few thousands, happily dispersed throughout the kingdom, but affecting the great mass of the people, and both by their direct and their reflex action poisoning the springs of the whole national life. Her judges besides were liable to dismissal at pleasure, and her parliament had no independent authority, and by its very constitution was subject to corrupt influences far exceeding those in operation in the English parliament, and such as virtually to deprive it of independence of vote, almost as completely as it had been deprived of the power of legislation. Still that parliament constituted a kind of centre for political discussion and for the propagation and diffusion of political ideas, and it was by means of it that Grattan and his associates determined to work out the political and social regeneration of their country. Almost as soon as he entered parliament, Grattan became the acknowledged leader of the opposition, not only from the influence exerted by his oratory within the House, but from its power to kindle the enthusiasm of the people, and to create out of the chaos of shapeless and discordant elements the united sympathy and purpose of a true

national life. In this he received an assistance from external events which was embarrassing as well as helpful. From the American rebellion, which was the result of a struggle for rights similar to those he was contending for, from the war with France, which led to the creation of a volunteer army in Ireland that became a kind of political convention, and ultimately from the French Revolution, which in Ireland, more than in any other country of Europe, aroused wild desires after political freedom.

In February 1778 Grattan moved an address to the crown, to the effect that the condition of Ireland was no longer endurable, and although the motion was supported by only a small minority, the discussion bore fruit in the same year by the concession of free export of all produce except woolsens, and by the modification of the penal laws to the extent of allowing the Catholics to hold leases for 999 years. In the following year the volunteers by their determined attitude crowned with success his efforts, along with Flood and Dargh, to effect the total repeal of the restriction Acts, and the same year saw also the repeal of the Test Act. With a view to increase and take advantage of the rising tide of national sentiment, Grattan on April 19th 1780 moved his famous resolutions that the "King with the consent of the parliament of Ireland was alone competent to enact laws to bind Ireland, and that Great Britain and Ireland were indissolubly united, but only under a common sovereign," but so satisfied was he with the tone of the debate that, unwilling needlessly to irritate or embarrass the English Government, he did not press his motion to a division. An agitation was, however, begun in the following year against Poyning's Act and the Mutiny Act, and Grattan besides supporting the introduction of a bill permitting the Catholics to inherit and hold property on the same terms as other subjects. In order also to bring pressure to bear on the English Government, Grattan, Flood, and Charlemont met privately in the beginning of 1782, and drew up for the consideration of the volunteers' delegates two resolutions in reference to independence, and to these Grattan, on his own responsibility and without the knowledge of Flood and Charlemont, added a third in favour of the measure for the relaxation of the penal laws against the Catholics. All these resolutions were adopted by the delegates unanimously, and Grattan, strong in armed support, repeated his motion for a declaration of independence, which, although it was lost, aroused such general enthusiasm that, when on the 18th April he rose to move a Declaration of Rights, he in a brilliant oration congratulated his hearers and his country on the triumphant issue of the struggle, his first words being—"I am now about to address a free people." So completely did his eloquence rise to what was deemed the greatness of the occasion that its effect has seldom been equalled in the annals of oratory, and in the state of high-wrought excitement that prevailed, the Government, then doubtful as to the result of the siege of Gibraltar by the French and Spaniards, did not dare to refuse the boon which had already been in reality appropriated without their permission, and on the 17th May resolutions were passed unanimously, pledging the English parliament to redress the grievances complained of. In recognition of Grattan's services the Irish parliament was prepared to have voted him a grant of £100,000, but he was with difficulty persuaded to accept half that sum, and only agreed to do so from the consideration that, by relieving him from the necessity of practising at the bar, it would enable him to devote the whole of his energies to politics. He determined, however, that this gift should not in any way bias his political action, and when Flood, supported by the volunteer convention, brought forward his motion for repeal, he at the expense of his popularity moved its rejection—a procedure which also gave rise to an extraordinary scene of

mutual reanimation between the two orators. For the next ten years Grattan carried on the struggle for the reform of Irish abuses with almost no success, and his Place and Pension Bill, and bills to make the great officers of government responsible for their proceedings, to prevent revenue officers from voting at elections, and to abolish ecclesiastical tithes, were all rejected. Pitt, at one time disposed to promote emancipation, became lukewarm in his zeal after the rejection in 1785 of Mr Orde's bill for the removal of trade restrictions, which, on account of a clause binding the parliament to re-enact England's navigation laws, was opposed by Grattan as involving a principle that implied a revocation of the constitution, nor did the action of the Irish parliament in the regency dispute of 1789 tend to smooth the relations between the two countries. At last in 1793 parliamentary suffrage was conceded to the Catholics as a sop to the fury of the United Irishmen, but the concession served only to whet the appetite for further redress, and when the hope of obtaining this, after reaching the verge of certainty by the appointment of Fitzwilliam as lord-lieutenant, was suddenly dashed by his recall, the spirit of brooding discontent increased until ultimately it resulted in the bloody rebellion of 1798. Previous to its occurrence Grattan had withdrawn from parliament. It has been surmised by Mr. Froude that in tying on the question of emancipation Grattan wished to effect a complete separation from England, and perhaps calculated, though a Protestant, on obtaining as the reward of his services the first place in the new commonwealth, but besides that the conjecture is unnecessary, since it was quite a possible supposition that emancipation might have proved the best method of confirming the loyalty of the Catholics,—and it was most certainly a better method than union without emancipation,—it is without a shadow of proof to suppose it, and would also have implied treachery on his part of the blackest kind, while treachery of any kind is barred by the whole course of his political life. In 1800 Grattan, though in feeble health, entered the Irish parliament as member for Wicklow, specially to oppose the motion for union, a measure whose bitterness was not rendered less distasteful to him from the time, manner, and means employed for its accomplishment. He regarded its success as almost the nullification of Ireland's partial freedom, and the indefinite postponement of the attempt to remedy her wrongs. Though knowing from the beginning that to contend against the influence of the Government was hopeless, he exerted all his eloquence in condemnation of the measure, and his last words in the Irish Parliament were—"I will remain anchored here with fidelity to the fortunes of my country, faithful to her freedom, faithful to her fall." In the course of these debates Grattan was three times violently attacked by Mr. Corry, chancellor of the exchequer, but at last retaliated with overwhelming effect. In the dual which followed Corry was wounded.

After the Union Grattan withdrew for a time from public life, but, in order to lend his assistance to the passing of the Catholic Relief Bill, he in 1805 entered the English parliament as member for Malton, and in the following year he was returned by Dublin, which he had formerly represented in the Irish parliament. Although his speeches in the new arena did not detract from his fame, the union had effected so great a change in his political standpoint that the inspiration which had formerly given to his eloquence such a glow of confident ardour, and had braced his powers to such supreme efforts, was no longer present. He refused to take office in the Fox ministry, but he nevertheless gave the Whigs his support on all important occasions, and by voting with the Government on the Irish Insurrection Bill of 1807, he showed that his regard for the general welfare of the empire was

unaffected by the great political disappointment of his life. After the rejection of the Catholic Relief Bill of 1813, which was accompanied by a clause reserving to the English sovereign the power of veto in the election of Catholic bishops, the Catholic board repudiated the proposed compromise and declined to entrust Gtattan further with their cause. He, however, gave it the same energetic support as formerly, and after 1815 he never spoke in the English parliament on any other subject. In 1819 his motion was defeated by the small majority of two, and on the reassembling of parliament in the following May, he undertook, contrary to the advice of his physician, a journey to London in order again to bring forward the subject, but died a few days after his arrival, 4th June 1820. He received the honours of a public funeral and a grave in Westminster Abbey, where he lies near the tombs of Pitt and Fox.

Lord Byron, who had heard Gtattan only in the English House of Commons, says that he would have come near to his ideal of a perfect orator but for his halcyon manner, and he also states that Curran was in the habit of taking him off by bowing to the very ground and thanking God that he had no peculiarities of gesture or appearance. His features were large and plain, and he was low in stature and so awkwardly formed that probably he never could have acquired a very graceful bearing, but the gravity and impressiveness of his bearing banished all sense of the ridiculous, and perhaps even the oddness and violence of his attitudes assisted to dissipate the feeling in his hearers of his personal insignificance. His voice, though not harsh, was deficient both in mellowness and volume, and when not elevated by emotion into shrillness, had a low droning accent. He succeeded, however, by virtue of appropriate emphasis and of concentrated energy, in bringing home to his hearers all the various shades of the passion and purpose of his discourse, and this perhaps with greater vividness than if it had been accomplished by means of an elocution which, if less faulty, would not have expressed so well his own peculiar individuality. In private life he was simple, genial, and courteous, and the felicity of his language, favoured by an enunciation and manner that were all his own, lent to his conversation a rare and peculiar charm.

His speeches suffer much from imperfect reporting, but their leading characteristics can be determined with considerable accuracy. Great labour, direct and indirect, was bestowed on their preparation, and few speeches show so many traces of art, but it is at times transfused and palpitating with enthusiasm, and therefore, though defective in ease and simplicity, they cannot be charged with artificiality or affectation. In regard to the chief fault of his style—the excessive use of epigram—it must be remembered that he made it supply the place both of wit and of direct argument, and that it never wearied his audience by a monotony of stilted similes, but, by its incisive vigour and its stateliness of originality, rendered his speeches perhaps unequalled for sustained brilliancy and interest. His oratorical triumphs were won, not by the stately marshalling of arguments and illustrations towards a climax, but by sudden surprises from so many directions, and so closely following each other that resistance to his attacks soon became impossible. In regard to subject-matter his speeches do not suffer from comparison even with those of Burke. His favourite method of enforcing his arguments was by illustrations either of similarity or of contrast drawn from history or from contemporary events, and while in this way he exhibited every possible light the plausibility of his contentions, he gave dignity and elevation to his theme by removing it from the narrow sphere of party politics, and connecting it with principles of universal and permanent consequence. Much of the effect of his eloquence was due to the boldness of his

statements and of his allusions and imagery, a boldness which, though often amounting to harshness, never overstepped the boundaries between the sublime and the ridiculous. In remarkable contrast to other Irish orators, and especially to his great contemporary Curran, he possessed neither wit nor humour, and this no doubt accounts for the sustained and pitiless vehemence of his invectives against opponents who had thoroughly roused his anger. These attacks were rendered the more formidable from his power of delimiting character by epithets, the graphic force of which had an almost electrical effect. This power he evinced, however, more frequently for purposes of laudation than censure, and perhaps the finest examples of it in his speeches are two short incidental allusions to Fox and Burke. A remarkable union of boldness with moderation and restraint characterized his statesmanship as it did his oratory, for while he embraced within his scheme of reform the whole circle of Ireland's wrongs and disabilities, and was prepared to face the consequences of all constitutional changes, however great, which justice seemed to demand, his unswerving aim, in the face both of strong provocation from the Government and of the powerful assaults of popular clamour, was not to loosen but to cement the ties which bound Ireland to Great Britain. That his political career was governed too much by abstractions, and had too little regard to expediency, is a conclusion which has been both affirmed and denied, but in any case it will be admitted by most that his beneficial influence on Irish politics has been less felt by the direct accomplishment of his aims than through the moral effect of his enlightened and incorruptible patriotism, and the gradual change which has taken place in the mental attitude of English statesmen towards the country.

Gtattan's *Speeches, with prefatory observations, the whole comprising a brief review of the most important political events in the history of Ireland* were published at Dublin in 1811. His *Speeches in the Irish and in the Imperial Parliaments*, edited by his son, in 4 volumes, appeared at London in 1822, and his *Illustrations of his life* in the same year. See his *Memoirs* by his son, Henry Gtattan, Esq. M.P. in 5 volumes, London, 1839-46. Lecky's *Leaders of Public Opinion in Ireland*, 2d edition, 1875, and, among various notices by contemporaries, especially that in vol. vii of the *Dublin University Magazine*, which, notwithstanding political bias, gives a remarkably unprejudiced representation of his character and abilities, and that by Lord Brougham in the 1st vol. of his collected works. The political events of the period are of course graphically narrated by Mr. Proulx in his *English in Ireland*, vols. ii and iii, but his principal design is to show the pernicious effects of Gtattan's efforts. Among the ablest criticisms of Mr. Proulx's work is that by W. R. H. Lecky in *Macmillan's Magazine* for January and June 1874.

GRATZ, or GRAZ, the capital of the Austrian crownland of Styria, is situated in the broad and fertile valley of the Mur, and the beauty of its position has given rise to the punning French description, *La ville des Graces sur la rive de l'Amour*. From Vienna it is distant about 90 miles as the crow flies, and about 139 miles by rail. Its latitude is 47° 49' N., its longitude 15° 27' E., and its height above the sea 1499 feet. The main town lies on the left bank of the river, at the foot of the Schlossberg or castle-hill, but two of the principal suburbs, Lend and Gries, occupy an extensive area on the right bank, and communication is maintained by four bridges besides the railway bridge. Among the numerous churches of the city the most important is the Gothic cathedral of St. Stephen, founded by the emperor Frederick III. in 1450-1462, on the site of a previous church mentioned as early as 1137. It has been several times modified and redecorated, more particularly

<sup>1</sup> The name was frequently written Gratz, Grätz, or Gries, but in 1819 it was decided, through the influence mainly of Hammer-Purgstall, that the official form should be Graz, in accordance as once with the local pronunciation and the derivation of the word, which was originally, it is believed, the Slavonic for "little castle," Gradina or Grates in Serbian, and Hradek in Bohemian.



in 1718. The present copper spire dates from 1693. The interior, which measures 200 feet in length by 92 feet in breadth, is richly adorned with stained glass windows of modern date, costly shrines, paintings, and tombs. In the immediate neighbourhood of the cathedral is the mausoleum church of St Catherine's, erected by Ferdinand II. as a burial-place for himself and his family. It has an imposing facade with Corinthian columns, two cupolas, and a tower. Worthy of mention also are the church of the Sacred Blood, which has been the municipal church since 1585, and which possesses an altar-piece by Tintoretto; the Augustinian church, commonly called Stiegenkirche, appropriated to the service of the university since 1827; and the church of St Anthony of Padua, connected with the lunatic asylum, and popularly known as the Narrenturm. Besides the old imperial castle, formerly the residence of the Styrian princes, and now the seat of the statthalter, Gratz contains the palace of the prince-bishop of Seckau, the palace of Count Attem, with a fine picture-gallery, and the old palace of the archduke John, now in



Plan of Gratz.

- |                                   |                   |                       |
|-----------------------------------|-------------------|-----------------------|
| 1. Citadel.                       | 5. Mausoleum.     | 10. Municipal church. |
| 2. Prince's Palace and<br>Museum. | 6. University.    | 11. Picture gallery.  |
| 3. Theatre.                       | 7. St. Anthony's. | 12. City theatre.     |
| 4. Cathedral.                     | 8. Joanneum.      | 13. Barracks.         |

possession of the counts of Meran. The sandhaus, where the estates hold their sittings, was erected in the 16th century; among its curiosities are the Styrian hat and the great silver cup called the *Landeshaubenbuhl*. The rathhaus, built by Stadler between 1802 and 1807, is of interest mainly for its collection of instruments of torture. At the head of the educational institutions is the university, founded in 1586 by Charles Francis, and restored in 1817 after an interruption of forty-five years. The old buildings dating from between 1573 and 1809 are being replaced by a fine modern erection. Of greater celebrity than the university is the Joanneum, originally instituted in 1811 by the archduke John Baptist as a national museum, but now developed into a complex organization for the higher education, with a regular professorate, a library of 60,000 volumes, archives peculiarly rich in Oriental MSS., a botanical garden, and other auxiliary departments. Mohs, Schröten, and Unger are among the eminent names associated with its chairs. The Styrian hospital, founded in 1768, the town hospital, the civic hospital, the military

hospital, the children's hospital, and the lunatic asylum are among the principal benevolent institutions. An official money-lending establishment has been in existence since 1755. Of the minor institutions of various kinds which prove the prosperity of the town the list would be a long one. An active trade, fostered by abundant railway communication both with north and south, is combined with no small manufacturing industry in the departments of iron and steel wares, paper, chemicals, sugar, vinegar, liqueurs, watches, and mathematical instruments. Few towns are better supplied with public pleasure grounds and holiday resorts. The Schlossberg, which rises to 380 feet above the valley, was laid out by General Welden shortly after the destruction of the castle; and a great park of 43 acres has been made almost to encompass the inner city. The Calvarienberg lies in the north-west of the town; and not far off is the castle of Eggenberg. The population of Gratz, in spite of a high rate of mortality which prevailed for some time, amounted in 1869 to 81,119, exclusive of the garrison of 4000 men. In 1875 the total, civil and military, was estimated at 90,000.

*History.*—Gratz may possibly have been a Roman site, but the first mention of it under its present name is in a document of 881 A.D. Ottocar V. of Traungau chose it as his residence in 1059, and in 1163 it is designated for the first time the *Landeshauptliche Stadt*. Its privileges were confirmed by King Rudolf in 1281. Surrounded with walls and fosses in 1423, it was in 1463 to defend itself against the Hungarians under Matthias Corvino, who attempted to get possession of his promised bride at refugia within. In 1529 and 1592 the Turks attacked it with as little success. As early as 1592 the Lutheran doctrine was preached in Gratz by Seifried and Jacob von Eggenberg, and in 1540 Eggenberg founded the Paradise or Lutheran school in which Kepler afterwards taught. But Charles II. burned 20,000 Protestant books in the square of the present lunatic asylum, and succeeded by his oppressive measures in bringing the city again under the authority of Rome. New fortifications were constructed in the end of the 16th century by Franz von Poppendorf, and in 1644 the town afforded an asylum to the family of Ferdinand III. The possession of the place in 1797 and again in 1805; and in 1809 Marshal Macdonald, having in terms of the peace of Vienna entered the citadel which he had vainly besieged, blew it all up with the exception of the bell-tower and the citizens' or clock tower. See *Reichle, Topographisches Kunde der Hauptstadt Grätz, Grätz, 1806*; *Recherches, Grätz und seine Umgebungen, Grätz, 1827*; *Bildung, Geschichte der Wissenschaften in Grätz, Grätz, 1848*; *Recherches, Histor.-statist.-topogr. Geschichte der Stadt Grätz und seiner Umgebungen, Grätz, 1848*; *Wiedemann, Histor. Preussens, Führer durch Grätz, 1849*; *Direkt und Polizei, Grätz: Geographie und Topographie, Grätz, 1875*.

GRAUBÜNDEN. See GERMANY.

GRAUDENZ (Polish *Grudziądz*), a town of Prussia, chief town of a circle in the province of West Prussia, government district of Marienwerder, is situated on the right bank of the Vistula, which is here crossed by railway bridge, 18 miles S.S.W. of Marienwerder and 40 miles N.E. of Thorn. It has a Protestant and a Catholic church, a garrison church, two synagogues, a royal gymnasium, a Catholic normal school, an Evangelical normal school, a city school of the middle grade, a higher female school, three hospitals, three orphanages, and a reformatory. The industries include ironfounding, brewing, dyeing, wool-spinning, and the manufacture of tapestry, cigars, shoes, and brushes. The population of the town in 1875 was 14,522, and including the fortress, 16,615.

Gradenze was founded about 1250, and received town rights in 1291. At the peace of Thorn in 1466 it came under the lordship of Poland. From 1655 to 1769 it was held by Sweden, and in 1772 it came into the possession of Prussia. The fortress of Graudenz, which since 1873 has been used merely as a barracks and military depot and prison, is situated on a steep eminence about 1½ miles north of the town and outside its limits. It was completed by Frederick the Great in 1776, and has been rendered famous through its defence by Courbières against the French in 1807.

GRAUN, CARL HENRIK (1701–1759), a celebrated composer, was born May 7, 1701, at Wahrenbrück in Saxony, the youngest of three brothers, all more or less musical. His father held a small post under Government, but he gave his children a careful education. Graun's

beautiful soprano voice was noticed at the school where he was educated, and soon secured him an appointment in the choir of the city of Dissen. His masters were Grunzig and Petzold, and at an early age he composed a number of sacred cantatas and other pieces for the church service. He completed his studies under Schmidt, and profited much by the Italian operas which were performed at Dissen under Lotti, the celebrated composer. After his voice had changed to a tenor, he made his debut at the opera of Brunswick, in a work by Schürmann, an inferior composer of the day, but not being satisfied with the airs assigned him he re-wrote them, so much to the satisfaction of the court that he was commissioned to write an opera for the next season. This work, *Pollidoro* (1796), and five other operas written for Brunswick, spread his fame all over Germany. Other works, mostly of a sacred character, including two settings of the *Passion*, also belong to the Brunswick period. It was there that Frederick the Great, at that time crown prince of Prussia, heard the singer, and immediately engaged him for his private chapel at Castle Romsberg. There Graun remained for five years, and wrote a number of cantatas, mostly to words written by Frederick himself in French, and translated into Italian by Boldarelli. On his accession to the throne in 1740, Frederick sent Graun to Italy to engage singers for a new opera to be established at Berlin. Graun remained a year on his travels, earning universal applause as a singer in the chief cities of Italy. After his return to Berlin he was appointed royal chapel-master, with a salary of 2000 thalers (£300). In this capacity he wrote twenty-eight operas, all to Italian words, of which the last, *Merope* (1765), is perhaps the most perfect. But of infinitely greater importance than these is his oratorio *Death of Jesus*, which is still annually performed at Berlin. It is here that Graun shows his skill as a contrapuntist, and his originality of melodious invention. In the Italian operas he imitates the florid style of his time, but these also considerable dramatic power is occasionally shown in the recitatives. Graun died on the 8th of August 1759, at Berlin, in the same house in which, thirty-two years later, Meyerbeer was born.

**GRAVELINES** (Flemish *Gravelinghe*, German *Gravelingen*), a fortified seaport town of France, in the department of Nord and arrondissement of Dunkirk, is situated near the mouth of the Aa, 11 miles S.W. of Dunkirk. The principal buildings are a church of the 16th century, the magazine, and the town hall. The harbour is only accessible at flood tide, but there is a considerable shipping trade in fish, apples, vegetables, and eggs. Shipbuilding is also carried on, and there are salt refineries, sail and linen manufactories, saw mills and meal mills. The fortifications were constructed anew by Vauban in the reign of Louis XIV. For its defence the land, to the distance of a mile all round, can be laid under water at pleasure. The population in 1876 was 4182.

Gravelines was formed in 1690 by Count Thierly of Flanders, was captured by the English in 1801, and came into the possession of the duke of Burgundy in 1405. It is celebrated for the victory gained by the Spanish under Segmont over the French under Marshal de Thames, 18th July 1668. It was taken by the duke of Orleans in 1644, retaken by Archduke Leopold in 1662, and again taken by the French under Vauban in 1668, after which it was ceded to France by the treaty of the Pyrenees in 1659.

**GRAVESEND**, a municipal and parliamentary borough, river port, and market-town in the county of Kent, England, is situated on the right bank of the Thames opposite Tilbury Fort, 30 miles below London by the river, and 24 miles by rail. It extends about 2 miles along the river bank, occupying a slight acclivity which reaches its summit at Windmill Hill, whence extensive views are obtained of the river, with its windings and shipping. The older and lower part of the town is irregularly built, with narrow

and inconvenient streets, but the upper and newer portion contains several handsome streets, squares, and terraces. Gravesend is the boundary of the port of London. It has three piers, the town pier, erected in 1836, and belonging to the corporation, the terrace pier, built about 1840, and a new pier and station lately erected by the London, Tilbury, and Southend Railway Company. The town is a favourite resort of the inhabitants of London, both for excursions and as a summer residence. The principal buildings are the town-hall, a neat and conspicuous Doric edifice erected in 1836, the parish church of Gravesend, erected on the site of an ancient building destroyed by fire in 1727, Milton parish church, in the Late Decorated style, erected in the time of Edward II., the county courts, the clubhouse of the Royal Thames Yacht Club, the custom-house, the assembly rooms, the workmen's hall, the free grammar school, the almshouses for aged persons, and the dispensary and infirmary. East of the town are the earthworks designed to assist Tilbury Fort in obstructing the passage of an enemy's force. They were originally constructed on Vauban's system in the reign of Charles II., and some years ago they were strengthened at the cost of nearly £160,000. Gravesend has some important trade in coal and timber, and fishing, especially of shrimps, is carried on extensively. The principal other industries are boat building, nonfounding, brewing, and soap-boiling. Fruit and vegetables are largely grown in the neighbourhood for the London market. Since 1867 Gravesend has returned a member to parliament. The municipal borough includes the parishes of Gravesend and Milton. The population of the municipal borough in 1871 was 21,365, and of the parliamentary 27,493.

Gravesend occurs in Domesday Book under the name *Gravesham*. It was burnt by the French in 1377. In 1673 it obtained a charter of incorporation from Queen Elizabeth, who also renewed the right, first conferred by Richard II., of regulating the "Long Ferry" (on passage from London) and enacting a fine from the wages, light houses (nobles), and wharves on the river.

**GRAVINA**, a city of Italy, in the province of Bari, is situated on a hill to the left of the river Gravina, 7 miles from Altamura, and 37 S.W. of Bari. It is surrounded by tower-flanked walls, and has a cathedral, and a castle which belongs to the Orsini family, of which the eldest branch still keeps the title of duke of Gravina. A great cattle fair is held in the town on April 20, a fine breed of horses is raised in the neighbourhood, wine is collected from the vine stock of the district, and cloths, masons' tools, and earthenware are manufactured. Population in 1871, 14,104.

**GRAVINA**, GIOVANNI VINCENZO (1664-1718), an Italian litterateur and jurisconsult, was born at Roggiano, a small town near Cosenza in Calabria, January 20, 1664. He was descended from a distinguished family, and under the direction of his maternal uncle, Gregorio Caloprese, who possessed some reputation as a poet and philosopher, received a learned education, after which he studied at Naples civil and canon law. In 1689 he came to Rome, where in 1695 he united with several others of literary tastes in forming the Academy of Arcadians. A schism occurred in the academy in 1711, and Gravina and his followers, founded in opposition to it the Academy of Quirina. From Innocent XII. Gravina received the offer of various ecclesiastical honours, but declined them from a disinclination to enter the clerical profession. In 1699 he was appointed to the chair of civil law in the college of La Sapienza, and in 1708 he was transferred to the chair of canon law. He died at Rome January 6, 1718. He was the adoptive father of Metastasio.

Gravina is the author of a number of works of great estimation, the principal being his *Orsinius Imperator*, completed in 1703, in 1718, and his *De Romanis Imperatoribus*, 1712. A French translation of the former appeared in 1775, of which a second edition was published in 1829. His collected works were published at Leipzig in 1787, and at Naples, with notes by Mascovius, in 1788.

## GRAVITATION

## I GRAVITATION AT THE SURFACE OF THE EARTH

IT is a matter of universal experience all over the earth that a heavy body tends to fall to the ground. Let us inquire into this in the first place by taking such a general view of the phenomenon as would be presented to an imaginary spectator who was sufficiently removed from the earth to be able to take a general view.

Fig 1 represents a section of the earth by a plane which is drawn through its centre  $O$ . Then, the earth being sufficiently near a sphere for our purpose, we may regard the section  $PQRS$  as a circle, where the points  $P, Q, R, S$  are the intersections of the lines  $OA, OB, OC, OD$  with the surface of the earth. If a stone be dropped from a point  $A$  above the surface of the earth, it will fall to the ground at  $P$ . The spectator would also notice that, if a stone were dropped from  $B$  or  $C$  or  $D$ , it would fall up in the ground at the points  $Q, R, S$  respectively. From  $A$  the stone would appear to fall downwards, from  $C$  it appears to move upwards, from  $B$  the spectator would see the stone moving to the left, while from  $D$  it appears to move to the right. One feature of these motions could not fail to be noticed: they all tend to the centre of the earth. The spectator might therefore sum up his experience in the following statement:—

*A body dropped from a point above the surface of the earth always falls in a straight line which is directed towards the centre of the earth.*

§ 1. *Attraction*.—The familiar instance of the action of a magnet upon a piece of iron will suffice to illustrate what is meant by the word *attraction*. In virtue of certain properties possessed by the iron and the magnet, they are drawn together. The magnet draws the iron, and the iron draws the magnet. This particular kind of attraction is of a very special character. Thus, for example, the magnet appears to have no appreciable influence on a piece of wood or a sheet of paper, and has indeed no considerable influence on any known substance except iron.

By the attraction of gravitation, every body attracts every other body, *whatever be the materials of which each is composed*. In this we see a wide difference between the attractions of gravitation and that form of attraction which is known as magnetic attraction. Not is the contrast between the *intensities* of these two different attractions less striking. The keeper of a magnet is drawn to the magnet by two different forces of attraction. The first of these is the gravitative attraction, which, so far as we know at present, would be equally exerted, whether the magnetism were present or not. The second is the magnetic attraction. The latter is enormously greater than the former, in fact, under ordinary circumstances as to intensity and dimensions, the intensity of the attraction of gravitation will not be nearly so much as a millionth part of the magnetic attraction.

The intensity of the attraction of gravitation is indeed so small that, with one conspicuous exception, we can only become aware of its existence by refined and elaborate inquiries. That any two objects—for example, two books lying on the table—do actually attract each other, there can be no doubt whatever, but the intensity of this is so small that the attractive force cannot overcome the friction of the

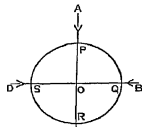


Fig 1

table, and consequently we do not find that the books are drawn together. It has, however, been found that the intensity of the attraction of gravitation between two masses is directly proportional to the product of these masses. Hence though the force is so small as to be almost unappreciable between two bodies of moderate dimensions, yet when the masses of the two bodies, or of even one of them, are enormously great, the intensity of the force will be sufficiently large to be readily discernible. In this way it is that the existence of the attraction of gravitation has been made known to us, and is, in fact, identified with our daily experience,—indeed, with our actual existence. The mass of the earth is so enormous that the attraction of gravitation which exists between it and an object near the surface is readily appreciable. It is this attraction of gravitation between the earth and any object which constitutes that force which is referred to when we speak of the *weight* of the body. It is the attraction of gravitation which causes bodies to fall to the surface of the earth, and it is easy to show that the facts already presented with respect to the direction in which a falling body moves are readily explained by the supposition that the motions are due to an attractive influence exerted by the earth, or, to speak more correctly, to a mutual attraction subsisting between the earth and the body.

Let  $O$  be the centre of the earth, supposed to be a sphere, and let  $A$  be the position of a body above its surface. Then, when the body is released, the attraction must evidently cause the body to move along the line  $OA$ . The line  $OA$ , in fact, is directed along a diameter of the sphere, and there is really no reason why the stone should move to one side of the line more than to another. This we say that attraction would always tend to draw objects in a direction pointing towards the centre of the earth. The observed facts are therefore explained by the supposition that the earth possesses a power of attraction.

§ 2. *Movement of a Falling Body*.—Our knowledge of the force of gravitation being ultimately founded on observation and experiment, it will be convenient at this point to describe the experiments by which a knowledge of the laws of motion of a falling body may be ascertained. We shall first describe these experiments, and then we shall discuss the laws to which we are conducted by their aid.

A beginner is apt to be surprised when he is told that a heavy body and a light body will fall to the ground in the same time if let drop from the same height. Yet nothing can be easier than to prove this important fact experimentally. Take a piece of cork in one hand and a bullet in the other, and drop these two objects at the same moment from the same height. They will reach the ground together. Nor will the results be different if we try a stone and a piece of wood. If, however, one of the objects were a feather and the other were a stone, then no doubt the latter would reach the ground long before the former. But this arises from a cause quite different from gravity. It is the resistance of the air which retards the motion of the feather. Even the stone is retarded to a certain extent by the resistance of the air, but the feather, on account of its greater surface in proportion to its mass, is much more retarded. If we could get rid of the influence of the air, the stone and the feather would be found to fall to the ground in the same time. This can actually be verified by performing the experiment (or a similar one) in a space from which the greater portion of the air has been withdrawn by the aid of an air-pump. But the same thing can also be shown in a much more simple manner

Lay a small flat feather upon the top of a penny piece held horizontally. Then let the penny fall, it will be followed with equal rapidity by the feather, which will be found to remain in contact with the penny throughout the entire descent. In this case the penny piece displaces the air, and thus to a great extent shields the feather from the resistance to which it would be exposed without such protection; it is thus found that the two objects fall to the ground from the same height at the same time.

The various experiments to which we have referred suffice to establish the very important result that *the time occupied by a body in falling to the surface of the earth, if dropped from a point above it, is independent of the mass of the body as well as of the materials of which the body is composed.*

There are, no doubt, certain apparent exceptions to the generality of this statement. The law, as we have stated it, does surely not apply to the case of a balloon or a live bird. In each of these cases the air is made, directly or indirectly, to supply a force which overcomes the force of gravity and neutralizes its effects, but *if there were no air*, then the balloon and the bird would fall to the ground in precisely the same time as a 56 lb weight would do when dropped from the same height. It will not be necessary for us to introduce any further reference to the resistance of the air, and we shall discuss the phenomena presented by falling bodies as they would occur in a space from which the air has been removed.

We have by these considerations cleared the way for a very important quantitative determination. Taking a given interval of time,—for example, one second,—we see that the height through which a heavy body will fall in one second depends neither upon the mass of the body nor on the materials of which it is composed. This is therefore a constant at any given place on the earth's surface for every description of body, and it is of fundamental importance to determine this quantity with far greater accuracy than would be attainable by actually making the experiment. The value as thus found is slightly different at different parts of the earth though constant at each one. At any part of the United Kingdom it may be taken as 161 feet.

When the distance which the falling body moves over in the first second has been ascertained, it is possible to find the distance which will be accomplished in two seconds, or indeed in any number. The difficulty of the question arises from the circumstance that, as the velocity of the falling body is gradually increasing, the distance moved over in the second second is greater than it was in the first, and generally that the distance in any second is greater than the distance accomplished in any previous second. Imagine the "lift" in a hotel to be a room 161 feet high, then when the lift is at rest, a stone will take one second to fall from the top of the room to the floor. But now suppose the experiment to be repeated, when the lift is either ascending or descending. It will be found that no matter what be the velocity of the lift, provided it remains uniform for a second, and no matter whether the lift be ascending or descending, the stone will still take exactly one second to fall from the ceiling to the floor.

To illustrate the important conclusions which can be drawn from this experiment, let us make some suppositions with reference to the velocity of the lift. Suppose that the lift is descending with a velocity of 5 feet per second. Then since it is found that the stone will reach the floor in one second, it is manifest that during that second the stone must actually have fallen through a distance equal to the height of the room augmented by the 5 feet through which the floor of the room has descended. The total dis-

tance traversed by the stone is therefore  $161 + 5 = 211$  feet. It is, however, to be observed that at starting the stone must necessarily have had the same velocity as the lift, i.e., 5 feet per second. The observed facts can therefore be explained by supposing that the stone actually started upon the stone so as to draw it 161 feet nearer the earth than it would have been had gravity not acted. On the other hand, suppose that at the time when the experiment was made the lift was ascending with an uniform velocity of 5 feet per second. Then the actual distance travelled by the stone in falling will be less than the height of the ceiling by the distance through which the floor has been raised, i.e.,  $161 - 5 = 156$  feet. Observation nevertheless shows that the time occupied in falling from the ceiling to the floor is still one second. This observed facts can be explained by remembering that at the moment of starting, the stone must actually have had the same velocity as the lift, i.e., an upward velocity of 5 feet per second. If therefore gravity had not acted, the stone would in one second have ascended through a vertical distance of 5 feet. The observations are therefore explained by supposing that gravity in this case also draws the body 161 feet nearer the earth in one second than the body would have been had gravity not acted.

By suitably contrivances it is possible to ascertain that a body dropped from rest will in a time of two seconds move over a space of 644 feet. We have already seen that during the first second the body will fall 161 feet. It follows that in the second second the space described by a body falling freely from rest is  $644 - 161 = 483$ . It is thus obvious that the space described in the second second is three times as great as the space described in the first second. To what is this difference to be ascribed? At the commencement of the first second the body was at rest, at the conclusion of the first second the body had attained a certain velocity, and with this velocity the body commenced its motion during the second second. The total distance of 483 feet accomplished during the second second is partly due to the velocity possessed by the body at the commencement, and partly to the action of gravity during that second. By the principle just explained, we are able to discriminate the amounts due to each cause. It appears, from the experiments already referred to, that during the second second as during the first the effect of gravity is simply to make the body 161 feet nearer the earth than it could otherwise have been. But the body moves altogether 483 feet in the second second, and as the action of gravity during that second will only account for 161 feet, it follows that the residue, amounting to  $483 - 161 = 322$  feet, must be attributed to the velocity accumulated during the first second.

We are therefore led to the very important result that a body falling freely from rest in the United Kingdom will have acquired a velocity of 322 feet per second when one second has elapsed. It need not be a matter for surprise that, though at the close of the first second the velocity acquired is 322, the distance moved over during that second is only 161. It will be remembered that the body starts from rest, and that while in the act of falling its velocity is gradually increasing. The body, therefore, moves much further in the last half of the second than it did in the first half, and consequently the total distance travelled must be less than the distance which would have been accomplished, and the body been moving during the whole second with the velocity acquired at its termination.

It might not be easy to arrange a direct experiment to show how far the body will fall during the third second, we can, however, deduce the result by reasoning from what we have already learned. Let us suppose that the lift

already referred to is descending with an uniform velocity of 32.2 feet per second. A body let drop from the ceiling during the motion, will, as before, reach the floor in one second. The body will therefore have acquired, *relatively to the moving lift*, a velocity of 32.2 feet per second. But the lift is itself in motion with a velocity of 32.2 feet per second. The *actual velocity* of the body must be measured by its velocity *relatively to the lift*, added to the velocity of the lift itself. It therefore appears that the body which, when it commenced to fall, had a velocity of 32.2 feet per second, acquires an equal amount during its fall, so that at its close the body actually had a velocity of  $32.2 + 32.2 = 64.4$  feet per second. A body falling freely from rest acquires a velocity of 32.2 feet in the first second, it follows that at the close of the first second the body is in the same condition as if it were let fall from the ceiling of the lift, under the circumstances just described. The motion during the third second is therefore commenced with the velocity of 64.4 feet, and in consequence of this initial velocity alone a distance of 64.4 feet will be accomplished in the third second. To this must be added 16.1 feet, being the additional distance due to the action of gravity, and therefore we have for the distance through which a body falling freely from rest will move in the third second,  $64.4 + 16.1 = 80.5$ . Similar reasoning will show that the velocity acquired at the close of the third second is  $64.4 + 32.2 = 96.6$ . With this velocity the fourth second is commenced and therefore the distance accomplished during the fourth second is  $96.6 + 16.1 = 112.7$ .

The results at which we have arrived may be summarily stated in the following propositions —

*A body falling freely from rest acquires a velocity which is equal to the product of 32.2 and the number of seconds during which the motion has lasted*

*A body falling freely from rest moves over spaces proportional to the consecutive odd numbers (1, 3, 5, 7, &c.) in each of the consecutive seconds during which the motion lasts*

*A body falling freely from rest will, in a given number of seconds, move over a distance which is found by multiplying the square of the number of seconds by 16.1*

§ 3. *Values of g*—The velocity acquired by a body in one second is usually denoted by the symbol  $g$ . The following are values of  $g$  at different parts of the earth (adapted from Everett *On OGS Units*, p. 12) —

	Latitude	Value of $g$ in Feet per Second	Length in Feet of Pendulum beating Seconds
Equator	0° 0'	32.081	3.2714
Latitude 45°	45 0	32.178	3.2567
Munich	48 9	32.181	3.2607
Paris	48 40	32.183	3.2609
Greenwich	51 29	32.191	3.2616
Copenhagen	51 32	32.191	3.2616
Batlin	53 30	32.194	3.2619
Dublin	53 21	32.196	3.2621
Manchester	53 29	32.196	3.2622
B. West	54 36	32.199	3.2625
Edinburgh	56 47	32.203	3.2629
Aberdeen	57 9	32.205	3.2632
Pole	90 0	32.255	3.2682

The value of  $g$  in feet at a station of which the latitude is  $\lambda$ , and which is  $h$  feet above the level of the sea, is in feet

$$g = 32.178 - 0.082 \cos 2\lambda - 0.000003h$$

The length of the pendulum in feet which vibrates in one second is

$$l = 3.2597 - 0.0088 \cos 2\lambda - 0.0000003h$$

$g$  is really the excess of gravitation over the centrifugal force arising from the earth's rotation. The value of gravitation alone is given by the following expression —

$$32.255 - 0.026 \cos 2\lambda$$

§ 4. *Algebraic Formulas*—The employment of the symbols and operations of algebra will enable us to express very concisely the results at which we have arrived

If  $v$  denote the velocity acquired in  $t$  seconds by a body which has been dropped from a state of rest. Let  $s$  denote the number of feet over which the body has moved. The laws we have arrived at may be thus expressed —

$$v = gt, \quad s = \frac{1}{2}gt^2$$

From these equations we can eliminate  $t$  and obtain

$$v^2 = 2gs$$

This expresses the velocity acquired in terms of the distance through which the force has acted.

We have hitherto considered the movement of a falling body as we simply dropped it. It remains to determine the effect on the movement of the body which would be produced by a certain initial velocity. Let us for simplicity take the case of a body thrown vertically downwards, and calculate the distance through which the body will move in a certain time, as well as the velocity which it will acquire. In the act of throwing the hand moves with a certain velocity, and the body when released starts off with that velocity. It will thus be observed that the act of throwing is merely to impart initial velocity to the body. Let  $v'$  be the initial velocity with which the body leaves the hand. Then the velocity of the body at the moment of starting is precisely the same as it would have been had it been dropped from rest  $v' - g$  seconds previously. The velocity acquired at the end of  $t$  seconds is therefore the same as would have been acquired by a body which fell from rest for a period of  $(v' - g + t)$  seconds, whence we have

$$v = g(v' - g + t)$$

$$v' + gt$$

The distance must obviously be equal to the distance between the distance through which the body would drop from rest in  $(v' - g + t)$  seconds and the distance through which a body would drop from rest in  $v' - g$  seconds, whence we have

$$s = \frac{1}{2}g(v' - g + t)^2 - \frac{1}{2}g(v' - g)^2 \\ = \frac{1}{2}g(v'^2 - g^2 + 2v't - g^2t^2) - \frac{1}{2}g(v'^2 - g^2) \\ = v't - \frac{1}{2}gt^2$$

The case of a body projected vertically upwards seems at first to present somewhat greater difficulties, but they are easily solved. Such problems can always be readily solved by the help of the following general principle —

*A body moving vertically for  $t$  seconds will, at the end of that time, be  $v'$  feet nearer the earth than if it would have been had  $g$  gravity not acted.*

If the body be projected vertically upwards with an initial velocity  $v'$ , then, if the influence of gravity were suspended, the body would in  $t$  seconds ascend to a height  $v't$  in distance with the first law of motion. The effect of gravity will be to reduce the height actually obtained by the amount  $\frac{1}{2}gt^2$ . Whence we have

$$s = v't - \frac{1}{2}gt^2$$

This expression may be written in the form

$$s = v't - \frac{1}{2}gt^2 - \frac{1}{2}g(v' - v')^2$$

It is therefore obvious that the greatest altitude  $h$  is attained when

$$v' = v - g$$

in which case

$$h = \frac{v'^2}{2g}$$

or

$$v' = 2gh$$

As an illustration we may take the case of a body thrown vertically upwards with an initial velocity of 40 feet per second, and in quito where that body will be at the end of two seconds. Had gravity not acted, the body would, in two seconds, have ascended to a height of 80 feet. The action of gravity will reduce this by  $\frac{1}{2}gt^2 = 20$  feet, and hence the actual height of the body will be 80 - 20 feet, = 16 feet if  $g$  be taken at 32.2.

§ 5. *Motion of a Projectile*—We have hitherto referred only to the motion of a falling body in a vertical line, it will now be useful to examine some cases in which the motion of the body is not so restricted. From a point on the mast of a steamer  $g = 2$  feet above the deck a ball is dropped, which falls upon the deck at a certain point. When the steamer is at rest the time occupied by the ball to fall will of course be one second, and its path will be vertical, but when the steamer is moving with uniform velocity it is found that the ball still falls precisely on the same spot of the deck as when the steamer was at rest, and that the time occupied by the ball to fall is one second. It is obvious that in this case the ball does not move in a straight line at all, but in a curved path due to the motion of the vessel compounded with the actual falling motion. We therefore find that the effect of the motion of the vessel on the ball is to project that ball with a certain initial horizontal velocity, but that notwithstanding that initial velocity the ball still reaches the deck in one second. We are therefore led to the general conclusion that

*A body projected horizontally will, at the end of  $t$  seconds, have fallen the same space of 16.1 feet.*

An experiment illustrating this result may be made in an evoked and simple manner. Take a marble in your hand, and throw one of the marbles horizontally at the same time as you drop the other

from the same height, you will find that the two weights reach the ground together. Suppose for simplicity that the height at the moment when the weights are released is 1 foot, then the time taken by one of the weights to fall is  $\frac{1}{4}$  of a second. But is both weights reach the ground together, the experiment is really proved to us that a body at the height of 4 feet from the ground will fall just as fast as one at the height of 1 foot. This is equally true whatever be the magnitude of the velocity, i.e., whether it be 5, 10, or any other number of feet per second.

We have now studied the effect of gravity upon a body which has been projected either in a vertical line or in a horizontal line. We have found that in each case the effect of gravity is to bring the body *back* toward the surface of the earth in  $\frac{1}{4}$  of a second. It is not as if it had not been projected at all. We therefore attempt to inquire whether the same statement would not be true for a body projected in any direction. In every way in which this suggestion can be tested it has been found to be verified, and there cannot therefore be the slightest doubt that it is true.

To illustrate this principle we may apply it to the case of a body projected in any direction, and deduce the form of the path in which the body moves. Let  $O$  (fig. 2) be the point from which the body is projected, and let  $OP$  be the direction in which the body would move after projection if it were not for gravitation. In consequence of the flat law of motion, we should find that if it had not been for the action of gravity, the ball would reach  $P_1$  in one second,  $P_2$  in two seconds, &c., where  $OP = P_1P_2 = P_2P_3$ . Gravitation will, however, make the body swerve from the direction  $OP$ ,  $P_1$ , &c., so that at the end of one second the body is really found at the point  $A_1$ , at the end of two seconds at  $A_2$ , at the end of three seconds at  $A_3$ , &c. The curve drawn through the points  $A_1, A_2, A_3$ , &c., which is actually described by the body, can be readily constructed. Take, for example,  $t = 8$ . If gravity had not been acting, the body would in three seconds have reached the point  $P_3$ . We can find where the body actually is by taking a point  $A_3$  which is vertically beneath  $P_3$  at the distance  $16 \times 8^2$  feet. Similarly we can find where the body is after any other specified number of seconds, and thus we obtain the points  $A_1, A_2$ , &c.

The equation of the curve is thus found. Take the line  $OP$  as the axis of  $x$ , and let  $a$  denote the number of seconds during which the motion has lasted, then, if  $y$  denote the vertical distance through which the body has been deflected by gravity, we have

$$y = \frac{1}{2}gt^2 = 8a^2$$

This curve, being of the second degree, represents a conic section, and as the highest terms form a perfect square, the conic section must be a parabola.

## II THE CURVE OF GRAVITY

**§ 6 Centre of Gravity of a Plate.**—In studying the effect of gravity upon a body which is at rest, it may be considered quite as convenient with a simple illustrative experiment which can be easily tried. Out of a piece of cardboard or tin plate a figure of any shape,  $ABCD$  (fig. 3), is to be cut. A few holes,  $A, B, C, D, E$ , are to be punched quite at random in this plate in the wall is a nail, and the plate can be suspended by passing the nail through any of the holes  $A, B$ , and  $C$ . From the nail is suspended a line on the plate is a cord  $AHI$ , which is kept in the vertical direction by the plummet attached to it at  $H$ . As the plate is not supported in any other way, it hangs quite freely from the nail, and, if it is displaced and then released, it will, after a few oscillations, settle down again in the position which it occupied at the first. In order to mark this position, it is desirable to draw a line on the plate in this direction  $AP$ , indicated by the plummet line which is hanging in front. If the plate be blackened, this can be neatly done by chalking the plummet line and then giving it a flip against the plate.

When the line has been drawn the plate may be removed from the nail, and again suspended by any of the other holes in its margin, for example  $B$ . The plate again assumes a definite position, and again the line and plummet is to be hung on, and a second line drawn as before. The two lines drawn on the plate intersect at a point  $P$ . When

Fig. 3

the plate is hung from a third hole,  $C$ , and a third plummet line is drawn, every remarkable result is repeated. It is found that the line drawn on the third occasion passes through the same point  $P$  of the two former lines, that is to say, all the three lines pass through the same point  $P$ , being the intersection of the other two lines. It is found that all the lines drawn in the way we have described pass through the same point of passing through one definite point of the plate. It is therefore manifest that the point  $P$  possesses a very special property, for it is the only situation in which the point of suspension when the plate is hanging at rest.

If a hole be actually punched at the position of the point  $P$ , and the plate be suspended by passing this hole over the nail, we then find that the plate will remain at rest in any position in which it is placed. The point  $P$  will be most more readily perceived if we make a hole in the plate at a point  $Q$  near to  $P$ . When the plate is suspended from  $Q$  it will only be at rest in one position, i.e., when  $P$  is vertically beneath  $Q$ .

It must surely be regarded as a matter worthy of careful notice that any plate of any figure, regular or irregular, should contain one specific point which it enjoys the unique properties which the experiment shows to be possessed by the point  $P$ . This point is usually named, it is called the *centre of gravity*.

**§ 7 Centre of Gravity of a Rigid Body.**—In the illustration we have just given, we have spoken merely of a thin plate, because the experiments were more easily conducted in a body of this nature than in one of entirely irregular form. It must not, however, be supposed that a thin plate of uniform thickness is the only kind of body which possesses a point having the properties that we have described. No matter what be the shape or materials of which a rigid body is composed, it possesses a centre of gravity. Let  $ADBC$  (fig. 4) be a body of any kind, and let it be suspended by a cord from a point  $A$ . Then, when the body is at rest it assumes a certain position.

We may suppose that a vertical hole  $A$  is drilled through the body in the direction of the cord by which the body is suspended. If we now suspend the body by another point on its surface,  $C$ , the body will come to rest in the position which is represented in fig. 5.

It will be found that these two straight holes intersect in the interior of the body at  $G$ . In fact, if we thrust a knitting needle through one of the holes, and then attempt to thrust a second knitting needle through the other hole, we shall find that the way is stopped in the interior of the body by the first knitting needle. If the body be now suspended from any other point on its surface, and if a similar hole be made through the point and in the direction of the string by which the body is suspended, it will be found that this hole also passes through the intersection of the two former holes. From each and every point of suspension the same result is obtained, and thus we have the property that in a rigid body of any shape or materials whatever there is one point which possesses the remarkable property thus stated—

*When a body suspended by a cord on a fixed point is at rest, there is one special point which is always vertically beneath the point of suspension, whatever may be the point of the body to which the cord is attached. This point is called the centre of gravity.*

In the case of a homogeneous body of regular shape, the centre of gravity is determined from the most simple considerations of symmetry. In the case of a sphere it is obvious that the centre of gravity must lie at the centre, for there is no other point of symmetry. In the figure in the case of a parallelepiped the centre of gravity is also situated at the centre of volume. This is found by joining the opposite corners of the figure, and thus making a diagonal, joining another pair of opposite corners we have a second diagonal, and the intersection of these two lines gives the centre of gravity of the mass.

**§ 8 Gravitation of a Rigid Body reduced to One Force.**—A body of any description may be considered to be composed of an innumerable multitude of small particles of matter. Each of these particles is acted upon by the attraction of the earth. Each particle is therefore urged towards the earth by a certain force which tends towards the earth's centre. The centre of the earth being nearly 4000 miles distant, the directions of these forces may for all practical purposes be regarded as parallel. Even if two particles were a mile distant, the inclination of the directions of the two forces is under a minute. We may therefore treat the forces as parallel without making appreciable error. The force of the body may be compounded into a single force which is parallel to the two components. The forces acting on the two particles of the body may therefore be replaced by a single force. This force may be similarly compounded with the force acting on a third particle of the body, this resultant with the force on a fourth particle, and so on until all the particles

Fig. 4

Fig. 5

have been included. We thus come to the important conclusion that the effect of gravity upon a body of any shape is to produce on *for* which acts vertically downwards. It remains to be shown that the *direction of this force passes through the centre of gravity of the body*. Suppose a body of any shape, by itself, level, then when the body is at rest, the centre of gravity must be vertically beneath the point of suspension. If the direction of this force which constitutes the effect of gravity does not pass through the centre of gravity, the point of action is not at the centre, and the body will not be in equilibrium, but it is impossible that two forces should equilibrate unless their lines of action are coincident, whence we are led to the important conclusion that the effect of the attraction of the earth upon a rigid body is to produce a single force which passes through the centre of gravity of the body and acts vertically downwards.

### III UNIVERSAL GRAVITATION

§ 8 *Law of Gravitation between Two Masses*—Investigations of the motions of the planets have conducted us to the conclusion that each planet is attracted towards the sun by a force which varies according to the inverse square of the distance. We likewise saw that each of the satellites appears to be attracted towards the corresponding primary planet by a force which obeys the same law. We use this fact to guide us in the following conclusions into the proposition that *any two masses in the universe attract each other with a force which varies according to the inverse square of the distance*. (Observations of the most widely diffused bodies in the world tend to show us that this law is well illustrated by Sir Isaac Newton, is true. It is called the *law of Gravitation*.)

We suppose that the distance between the two bodies is so great that they can be considered as mathematical points, that is, that they are practically considered each of the bodies as a particle.

Let  $m, m'$  be the masses of the two bodies, and let  $r$  be the distance. The force with which  $m$  attracts  $m'$  is equal in magnitude though opposite in direction to the force with which  $m'$  attracts  $m$ . The value may perhaps first seem difficult to fix in admitting the truth of this statement. We speak of the effects, which the attraction of the sun produces on the planets that it may seem strange to have that each planet is acted on by a force in exactly equal and opposite to the force with which the sun acts upon the planets. We can, however, by the aid of a simple illustration, show that such is really the case. Suppose the sun and the earth to be placed at rest, and unobscured by the influence of them mutual gravitation. It is evident that the two bodies would begin moving towards each other, and would after a certain time come into collision. If, however, the earth and the sun had been separated by a rigid rod, it would then be impossible for the two bodies to move close to each other, so we must consider whether any other motion could be produced by their mutual attraction. As the two bodies were mutually at rest, it is clear that there will be no tendency of the rod to move out of the line in which it was originally placed, and consequently if the rod began to move at all it must move in that line, and away with it the earth at one end, and the sun at the other. By how far, the distance and the sun would remain separated at a constant distance, the statical energy due to their separation would remain constant, and therefore if they began to move we should have the kinetic energy of their motion (that is, of no thing, which is now well known to be impossible. It therefore follows that, under the circumstances we have assumed, the rod would remain for ever at rest. But what are the forces which act upon the rod? At one end of the rod the earth presses upon it with a force which is equal to the attraction of the sun upon the earth. At the other end the sun presses upon the rod with a force which is equal to the attraction of the earth upon the sun. But since the rod remains at rest, these two forces must be equal and opposite, and hence the force with which the sun attracts the rod must be equal and opposite to the force with which the earth acts the sun.

If we express the gravitation of two masses in the form

$$F = \frac{mm'}{r^2},$$

then  $m, m'$  must necessarily be substituted into the expression for if the two masses were interchanged the gravitation must not be altered.

We should here also advert to a circumstance connected with gravitation which is of the very highest importance. Suppose we take two definite masses (for simplicity, two pounds) separated at a definite distance (for simplicity, one foot), then the gravitation of these two masses to each other is a *certain definite force* (which we shall subsequently calculate). What we want here to lay special stress upon is that, so far as we know at present, this force appears to be the same whatever be the material of which the two masses are composed. Thus two pounds of iron at a distance of one foot attract each other with the same force as two pounds of wood at the same distance of lead at the same distance. The significance, or perhaps it should be said the vast importance, of this statement is apt to be lost sight of from a somewhat peculiar cause.

It must never be forgotten when it is asserted that two masses are equal to each other, what is really meant is that, if equal

forces were to act upon each of the masses for the same time, the masses would receive the same velocity. As this test of the equality of masses is not particularly convenient, the weighing scales have come into use, for this purpose, and though it appears to be true that when two masses are equal, "weights" as tested by the scales, then the masses are themselves equal, yet this is so far from being an obvious or necessary truth that it really is the most remarkable phenomenon connected with gravitation. The explanation for the gravitation of two attracting masses must therefore depend solely upon their masses, upon their distance, and upon some specific constant which is characteristic of the intensity of gravitation.

Experiment shows that the gravitation of a body towards the earth is directly proportional to its mass, and hence we see that the expression

$$F = \frac{mm'}{r^2}$$

must be proportional to  $m$ , and as  $m/r^2$  must be unaltered by the interchange of  $m$  and  $m'$ , it appears finally that the gravitation of the two masses is

$$mm' = m^2,$$

where  $m$  is a numerical constant which is equal to the gravitation of two units in one placed at the unit of distance. To form a definite conception of the intensity of this force, we take some specific instance. It can be shown that two masses  $A$  and  $B$ , each containing 115,000 tons of matter, and situated at a distance of one statute mile apart, will attract each other with a force of one pound. If the masses of  $A$  and  $B$  remain the same, and if the distance between them be increased to two miles, then the intensity of the force with which the masses gravitate together is reduced to one quarter of a pound. If either of the masses were doubled, the distance being unaltered, then the force would be doubled. If both the masses were doubled, then the force would be quadrupled.

§ 9 *Motion of a Planet round the Sun*—The effect of gravitation when the bodies are in actual motion must next require our attention. It may so happen that in consequence of the attraction of gravitation one of the bodies will actually describe a circle around the other, so that, notwithstanding the effect of the attraction, the distance between the two bodies remains constant. We shall first explain, by elementary considerations, how it is possible for a planet to continue to revolve in a circle in nearly circular orbit about the sun in its centre, and then we shall proceed to the more exact consideration of the form of the orbit, and the laws according to which that orbit is described.

Let  $S$  represent the sun (fig. 6), and let  $T$  be the initial position of the planet. If the planet is properly placed, it will immediately begin to fall along the line  $TS$  into the sun. If, on the other hand, the planet were initially projected along the line  $TZ$  perpendicular to  $TS$ , the attraction of the sun at  $S$  will deflect the planet from the line  $TZ$  which it would otherwise have followed, and compel the planet to move in a curved line. The particular form of curve which the planet will describe depends upon the initial velocity. With a small initial velocity the deflecting power of the sun will have a more speedy effect than is possible when the initial velocity is considerable.

The rapidly curving path  $TX$  will therefore correspond to a small initial velocity, while the flatter curve  $TY$  may be the orbit when the initial velocity is considerable. As the movement proceeds, the velocity of the planet will generally alter. If the planet were moving along the curve  $TX$  and describing a circle, after leaving  $T$  going farther away from the sun. It is manifest that the planet is thus going against the sun's attraction, and therefore its velocity must be diminishing. On the other hand, when the planet is moving along the curve  $TY$ , it is constantly falling nearer the sun, and the effect of the sun's attraction is to increase the velocity. It is therefore plain that for a path somewhere between  $TX$  and  $TY$  the velocity of the planet must be unaltered by the sun's attraction. With centre  $S$  and radius  $SP$ , let us draw a circle, and let a point  $P$  on that circle exceedingly near to  $T$ . With a certain initial velocity it is possible to project the planet so that it shall describe the arc  $TP$ . The attraction of the sun always acts along the radius along the curve describing the arc  $TP$  the planet has at every instant been moving perpendicularly to the sun's attraction. It is manifest that under such circumstances the sun's attraction cannot have altered the velocity, for it would be impossible to give a reason for the velocity having been accelerated which could not be rebutted by an equally valid reason for the velocity having been retarded. We thus see that the planet reaches  $P$  with an unchanged velocity, and that point  $P$  is the centre of the motion is perpendicular to the radius. It is therefore plain that if the planet were the planet will again describe a small portion of the circle, which it will again be followed by another, and so on, i.e., the planet will continue to move in a circular orbit. It has therefore been shown that if a planet were originally projected with a certain specific velocity



Fig 6

in a direction at right angles to the radius connecting the planet with the sun, then the planet would continue for ever to describe a circle around the sun.

§ 11. *On the Elliptic Motion of the Planets*.—The laws of the motions of the planets were discovered by Kepler by means of calculations founded upon observations. They may be thus stated—

1. *Each planet moves in an ellipse in one focus of which the sun is situated.*

2. *The radius vector drawn from the sun to the planet sweeps out equal areas in equal times.*

3. *The squares of the periods of the motions of the planets round the sun are in the same ratio as the cubes of their mean distances.*

These three laws form the foundations of that branch of astronomy which is called Physical Astronomy, and they are generally known as *Kepler's Laws*.

The sun and the planets are all very nearly spheroidal, and for the present, whenever we speak of the motions of the sun or the planets, we aim to understand the motions of the centres of the corresponding spheres. Indeed the diameters of these spheres are so small in comparison with the distances at which they are separated from each other, that we may generally regard them as mere physical points. Thus though the diameter of the sun is ten times greater than the diameter of the greatest planet, Jupiter, yet the sun's diameter is only the forty-second part of its distance from the nearest planet, Mercury, and it is less than the three thousandth part of its distance from the outermost planet, Neptune.

The orbits of the planets are so little eccentric that it is difficult to glance the majority of them appear to be circular. Among the larger planets the orbits of Mercury and of Mars have the greatest eccentricity, being about  $\frac{1}{10}$  and  $\frac{1}{10}$  respectively. Next to these comes the orbit of Saturn, which has an eccentricity of  $\frac{1}{10}$ . Next in order come Jupiter, Uranus, the Earth, Neptune, and Venus, with eccentricities of  $\frac{1}{10}$ ,  $\frac{1}{10}$ ,  $\frac{1}{10}$ ,  $\frac{1}{10}$ , and  $\frac{1}{10}$  respectively. The orbits of some of the minor planets are, however, much more eccentric.

§ 12. *The Hodograph*.—In discussing the actual motion of a planet round the sun, it is very convenient to introduce the elegant conception of the hodograph. The use of this curve is originally due to

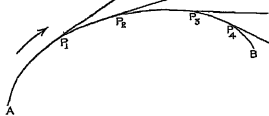


Fig 7

Bradley, but for its practical development we are principally indebted to Sir W. R. Hamilton. Let  $AB$  (fig 7) be a portion of the path of a particle  $P$  acted upon by any forces. From any point  $O$  draw radius vectors  $OR_1, OR_2, OR_3, OR_4, OR_5, OR_6, OR_7, OR_8, OR_9, OR_{10}, OR_{11}, OR_{12}, OR_{13}, OR_{14}, OR_{15}, OR_{16}, OR_{17}, OR_{18}, OR_{19}, OR_{20}, OR_{21}, OR_{22}, OR_{23}, OR_{24}, OR_{25}, OR_{26}, OR_{27}, OR_{28}, OR_{29}, OR_{30}, OR_{31}, OR_{32}, OR_{33}, OR_{34}, OR_{35}, OR_{36}, OR_{37}, OR_{38}, OR_{39}, OR_{40}, OR_{41}, OR_{42}, OR_{43}, OR_{44}, OR_{45}, OR_{46}, OR_{47}, OR_{48}, OR_{49}, OR_{50}, OR_{51}, OR_{52}, OR_{53}, OR_{54}, OR_{55}, OR_{56}, OR_{57}, OR_{58}, OR_{59}, OR_{60}, OR_{61}, OR_{62}, OR_{63}, OR_{64}, OR_{65}, OR_{66}, OR_{67}, OR_{68}, OR_{69}, OR_{70}, OR_{71}, OR_{72}, OR_{73}, OR_{74}, OR_{75}, OR_{76}, OR_{77}, OR_{78}, OR_{79}, OR_{80}, OR_{81}, OR_{82}, OR_{83}, OR_{84}, OR_{85}, OR_{86}, OR_{87}, OR_{88}, OR_{89}, OR_{90}, OR_{91}, OR_{92}, OR_{93}, OR_{94}, OR_{95}, OR_{96}, OR_{97}, OR_{98}, OR_{99}, OR_{100}$  to the points  $P_1, P_2, P_3, P_4, P_5, P_6, P_7, P_8, P_9, P_{10}, P_{11}, P_{12}, P_{13}, P_{14}, P_{15}, P_{16}, P_{17}, P_{18}, P_{19}, P_{20}, P_{21}, P_{22}, P_{23}, P_{24}, P_{25}, P_{26}, P_{27}, P_{28}, P_{29}, P_{30}, P_{31}, P_{32}, P_{33}, P_{34}, P_{35}, P_{36}, P_{37}, P_{38}, P_{39}, P_{40}, P_{41}, P_{42}, P_{43}, P_{44}, P_{45}, P_{46}, P_{47}, P_{48}, P_{49}, P_{50}, P_{51}, P_{52}, P_{53}, P_{54}, P_{55}, P_{56}, P_{57}, P_{58}, P_{59}, P_{60}, P_{61}, P_{62}, P_{63}, P_{64}, P_{65}, P_{66}, P_{67}, P_{68}, P_{69}, P_{70}, P_{71}, P_{72}, P_{73}, P_{74}, P_{75}, P_{76}, P_{77}, P_{78}, P_{79}, P_{80}, P_{81}, P_{82}, P_{83}, P_{84}, P_{85}, P_{86}, P_{87}, P_{88}, P_{89}, P_{90}, P_{91}, P_{92}, P_{93}, P_{94}, P_{95}, P_{96}, P_{97}, P_{98}, P_{99}, P_{100}$  and equal to the velocities at those points. Then the curve  $R_1R_2R_3R_4R_5R_6R_7R_8R_9R_{10}R_{11}R_{12}R_{13}R_{14}R_{15}R_{16}R_{17}R_{18}R_{19}R_{20}R_{21}R_{22}R_{23}R_{24}R_{25}R_{26}R_{27}R_{28}R_{29}R_{30}R_{31}R_{32}R_{33}R_{34}R_{35}R_{36}R_{37}R_{38}R_{39}R_{40}R_{41}R_{42}R_{43}R_{44}R_{45}R_{46}R_{47}R_{48}R_{49}R_{50}R_{51}R_{52}R_{53}R_{54}R_{55}R_{56}R_{57}R_{58}R_{59}R_{60}R_{61}R_{62}R_{63}R_{64}R_{65}R_{66}R_{67}R_{68}R_{69}R_{70}R_{71}R_{72}R_{73}R_{74}R_{75}R_{76}R_{77}R_{78}R_{79}R_{80}R_{81}R_{82}R_{83}R_{84}R_{85}R_{86}R_{87}R_{88}R_{89}R_{90}R_{91}R_{92}R_{93}R_{94}R_{95}R_{96}R_{97}R_{98}R_{99}R_{100}$  is the hodograph of the orbit of  $P$ . To each position  $P$  of the particle in the path there is a corresponding point  $R$  in the hodograph, and simultaneously with the motion of  $P$  in its orbit we have the motion of  $R$  in the hodograph.

The utility of the hodograph depends upon the theorem that the force which acts upon the particle is at any time equal and parallel to the velocity of the corresponding point in the hodograph. This theorem is thus proved. Let  $P_1$  and  $P_2$  and therefore  $R_1$  and  $R_2$  be very close together. The velocity imparted to the particle in passing from  $P_1$  to  $P_2$  in the small time  $\delta t$  must when compounded with its velocity  $OR_1$  produce the velocity  $OR_2$ . This increment of velocity must therefore be equal and parallel to  $R_1R_2$ . If this distance  $\delta$  denotes the velocity of  $R$ , we have  $\delta \delta t$  for the velocity as gained in the time  $\delta t$ . The force acting on  $P$  must therefore, by the second law of motion, be equal to and parallel to the line  $R_1R_2$ , which ultimately coincides with the tangent. The theorem is thus proved.

Kepler's second law states that in the movement of a planet around the sun the radius vector, from the sun to the planet describes equal areas in equal times. It can be shown that when this is the case

the force which acts upon the planet must necessarily be directed towards the sun. Let the planet be supposed to move from  $P$  to  $P'$  (fig 9) in the time  $t$  with the velocity  $v$ . Then, since equal areas are described in equal times, we must have the area  $OPP'$  equal to  $\frac{1}{2}vt$ , where  $\frac{1}{2}vt$  is constant which represents the area described in the unit of time. Let fall  $OT$  perpendicular upon the tangent at  $P$ , then  $OT = \frac{1}{2}v$ . We therefore find that the velocity of a planet is

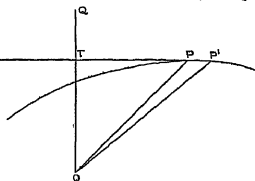


Fig 9

inversely proportional to the perpendicular set fall from the centre of the sun upon the tangent to the orbit. Produce  $OT$  to  $Q$ , so that  $OT \times OQ$  is constant, the radius vector  $OQ$  will therefore be proportional to the velocity, and as  $OQ$  is perpendicular to the tangent at  $P$ , it follows that the locus of  $Q$  must be simply the hodograph turned round through  $90^\circ$ . Draw two consecutive tangents to the orbit, and let  $Q_1$  and  $Q_2$  be the corresponding points (fig. 10). Then since  $OT_1 \times OQ_1 = OT_2 \times OQ_2$ , the quadrilateral  $T_1Q_1Q_2T_2$  is inscribable in a circle, and therefore the angles  $QQ_1Q_2$  and  $OT_1T_2$  are

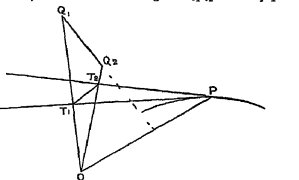


Fig 10

equal, whence it is easily seen that  $Q_1Q_2$  is perpendicular to  $OP$ . It follows from the principle of the hodograph that the force on  $P$  must be directed along  $OP$ .

Let  $P$  (fig. 11) be the focus of the ellipse in which, according to Kepler's law, the planet is moving, then, from a well known property of the ellipse, the foot of the perpendicular  $FT$  let fall from  $F$  on the tangent drawn to the ellipse at the point  $P$  lies on the circle of which the diameter is the axis major of the ellipse. The line  $FT$  cuts the circle again at  $Q$ , and as  $FT \times FQ$  is constant, the radius vector  $FQ$  must be constantly proportional to the velocity, and these facts the hodograph will be the circle  $FQ$  turned round through  $90^\circ$ . We have already shown that the tangent to the hodograph is parallel to the force. The line  $QF$  must therefore be parallel to  $FP$ . If  $\theta$  be the angle  $FPQ$ , then, in consequence of the law of equal description of areas in equal times,  $FP \delta \theta = \delta t$  must be constant, and therefore  $\delta \theta = \delta t$  must vary inversely as  $FP$ , but the velocity of  $Q$  will be proportional to  $\delta \theta = \delta t$ , hence the velocity of  $Q$ , and therefore the force, will be inversely proportional to  $FP^2$ . In this way it is shown that the planets are attracted by the sun with a force which varies inversely as the square of the distance.

Fig 11



§ 12. *The Problem of Three Bodies*.—We have pointed out that the motion of a planet is determined by the mutual attraction which exists between the planet and the sun. It follows, however, is a necessary consequence from the law of universal gravitation, that each planet is attracted not only by the sun but by every other planet, and indeed, so far as we know, by every other body in the universe. The effect of the attraction of the sun preponderates so enormously over the other attractions that the obscuring of it by planets to keep a law, which would be perturbed with the sources of disturbance about, is still so nearly perfect that the dynamic function can only be perceived either by very accurate or by very long continued observations. The elements of motion of a planet have, however, brought to light a very large number of perturbations, as they are called, in the motions of the planets and their satellites, which are due to the influence of other bodies. The explanation of these different perturbations by the law of universal gravitation is proved in the great majority of cases triumphantly successful.

In any problem when perturbations are involved, we have at least three bodies, viz. the principal body  $S$ , a body  $P$  which we suppose moved  $S$ , and a disturbing body  $P'$ . If we had only the two bodies  $S$  and  $P$  to consider, then  $P$  would describe around  $S$  a conic section, of which  $S$  is the focus, and the radius vector  $SP$  a small vector equal to  $s$  in equal times. By the introduction of the third body  $P'$ , which attracts both the former bodies  $S$  and  $P$ , the motion is deranged, the orbit which  $P$  describes is no longer a conic section, and its radius vector is no longer the equal times in equal times. The general case of this problem, as we have said, is one of excessive complexity. It is, however, a fortunate circumstance that, up to the present time, astronomers have had but little occasion to attack the problem in its general form. In the solar system we have a great number of different problems of perturbations to discuss, but there is one feature common to all these problems. This feature is that the *perturbing force* is very small in comparison with the *primary force*, by which the motion of the disturbed body is controlled. In consequence of this peculiarity, the problems of perturbations in the solar system become greatly simplified. The circumstances of the orbits of the planets and their satellites are also happily such as to furnish additional facilities in the solution of the problems of perturbations. The quantities of the orbits are small, and in nearly every case the inclinations are small also. The problems of perturbations in the solar system are consequently rendered for the methods of successive approximation, but we should perhaps warn the reader that, even with the resources so fortunately furnished by these circumstances of the case, the problems are still among the most difficult to which analysis has ever been applied.

Let  $S, P, P'$  (Fig. 12) denote the three bodies of which the masses are  $M, m, m'$ . Let the distances  $SP, SP', PP'$  be denoted by  $s, s', p$  respectively, then if  $\epsilon$  denote, as before, the gravitation between two units of mass separated by the unit of distance, we have

on  $S$  the forces  $\frac{Mm}{s^2}$  and  $\frac{Mm'}{s'^2}$  along  $SP$  and  $SP'$  respectively,

on  $P$  the forces  $\frac{Mm}{s^2}$  and  $\frac{m'm'}{p^2}$  along  $PS$  and  $PP'$  respectively,

on  $P'$  the forces  $\frac{Mm'}{s'^2}$  and  $\frac{m'm}{p^2}$  along  $P'S$  and  $P'P$  respectively.

In the problem of the perturbation of a planet which is moving around the sun, the absolute motion of the planet in space is not what we are concerned with, what we do require is the *relative motion of the planet with regard to the sun*.

Suppose that we apply to each unit of mass of the three bodies, forces equal to  $\epsilon m^{-1}$  parallel to  $PS$  and  $\epsilon m'^{-1}$  parallel to  $PS'$ , then it is clear that, from the second law of motion, each unit of mass of the system will receive in a small time, so far as these forces are concerned, equal and parallel velocities, and therefore the *relative motions of the three bodies will not be altered by the introduction of these forces*.

There can be little doubt that in the case of multiple stars the problem of these or more bodies would often have to be faced in all its ruggedness, but the observations which would be required are certainly wanting, and probably unobtainable.

But these forces will, so far as the body  $S$  is concerned, amount to  $\epsilon Mm^{-1}$  and  $\epsilon Mm'^{-1}$  in the directions  $PS$  and  $PS'$  respectively, and will therefore neutralize the attractions of  $P$  and  $P'$  upon  $S$ . It follows that, so far as the relative motions only are concerned, we may consider the body  $S$  as fixed, while the body  $P$  is acted upon by the forces

$$\epsilon m(M+m)^{-1} \text{ on } PS \\ \epsilon m m'^{-1} \text{ on } PP', \\ \epsilon m m'^{-1} \text{ parallel to } PS,$$

with of course similar expressions for the forces on  $P'$ .

The problem of perturbation is therefore reduced to the determination of the motion of  $P$  in obedience to these forces, while  $S$  regarded as fixed.

It is plain that, in order to find the motion of  $P$ , we should know the motion of  $P'$ , which is itself disturbed by  $P$ , but as the effect of the perturbation is small, we may, without appreciable error, use the places of  $P'$ , derived on the supposition that the motion of  $P'$  is undisturbed, for the purpose of calculating disturbances caused by  $P'$  in the motion of  $P$ . We shall therefore suppose that the orbit of  $P'$  is an ellipse which is described about the focus  $S$  in consequence of an attractive force  $\epsilon m(M+m')^{-1}$  directed towards  $S$ .

In computing the disturbed motion of  $P$  we transform the three given forces into three equivalent forces, which will be more convenient for our purpose. We take first a force  $T$  directed along the radius vector  $s$ , secondly, a force  $V$  perpendicular to the radius vector, and lastly, in the plane of the orbit, and, thirdly, a force  $W$ , which is normal to the plane of the orbit. It is to be regarded as positive when it tends to increase the distance between  $P$  and  $S$ ,  $V$  is to be regarded as positive when it tends to move  $P$  to the same side of the line  $PS$  as that in which the direction of the motion tends to carry it, and  $W$  is to be regarded as positive when it tends to move  $P$  to the north of the plane of the orbit.

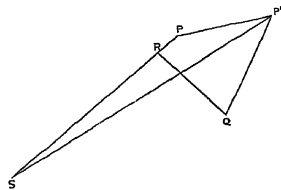


Fig. 13

From  $P'$  (Fig. 13) let fall a perpendicular  $P'Q$  upon the plane of the undisturbed orbit of  $P$ , and let fall from  $Q$  a perpendicular  $QR$  upon the line  $SP$ . The force along  $PP'$  can be resolved into a component parallel to  $QP'$  and another parallel to  $QP$ , and the latter can again be decomposed into components parallel to  $RQ$  and  $RP$ . Hence we have, as the equivalents to the force on  $PP'$ , the following three forces which form parts of  $T, V, W$  respectively —

$$\frac{\epsilon m m'}{p^2} PR, \quad -\frac{\epsilon m m'}{p^2} QR, \quad +\frac{\epsilon m m'}{p^2} QP'$$

In a similar manner we find for the components of the force parallel to  $SP$ , the following three forces which form parts of  $T, V, W$  respectively —

$$-\frac{\epsilon m m'}{s'^2} SR, \quad +\frac{\epsilon m m'}{s'^2} QR, \quad -\frac{\epsilon m m'}{s'^2} QP'$$

Hence we deduce the following expressions —

$$T = \frac{\epsilon m(M+m)}{s^3} - \frac{\epsilon m m'}{p^2} - \frac{\epsilon m m'}{s'^2} SR$$

$$V = -\frac{\epsilon m m'}{p^2} QR + \frac{\epsilon m m'}{s'^2} QR$$

$$W = +\frac{\epsilon m m'}{p^2} QP' - \frac{\epsilon m m'}{s'^2} QP'$$

Let the line  $SO$ , from which the longitudes are reckoned, be drawn in the plane of the undisturbed orbit of  $P$ . Let the longitudes of  $P$  and  $P'$  be  $l, l'$  respectively, and let the angle  $PSQ$  or the latitude of  $P'$  be denoted by  $\beta'$ , then we have

$$QP' = s' \sin \beta', \quad SQ = s' \cos \beta', \\ RQ = sQ \sin (l' - l) = s' \sin (l' - l) \\ SR = sQ \cos (l' - l) = s' \cos (l' - l) \\ PR = r - r' \cos \beta' \cos (l' - l)$$

With these substitutions, we have for the values of  $T$ ,  $V$ ,  $W$ , the following expressions

$$T = -\frac{em(M+m)}{r^2} + em\mu\left(\frac{1}{r^2} - \frac{1}{r^2}\right)' \cos \theta' \cos (\theta' - \theta) - \frac{em\mu'}{r^2}$$

$$V = -em\mu\left(\frac{1}{r^2} - \frac{1}{r^2}\right)' \cos \theta' \sin (\theta' - \theta)$$

$$W = -em\mu\left(\frac{1}{r^2} - \frac{1}{r^2}\right)' \sin \theta'$$

It will be noticed that the first term of the expression for  $T$  consists of the force which corresponds to the purely elliptic motion. The two remaining terms in  $T$ , as well as the whole of  $V$  and  $W$ , depend upon the disturbing force, as is evident from the circumstances that they contain  $m'$  as a factor, and would vanish if  $m'$  were equal to zero. As  $\theta'$  is small, we may neglect its square and higher powers, so that

$$\cos \theta' = 1 \text{ and } \sin \theta' = \theta'$$

When these substitutions are made, we see that the expressions for  $T$  and  $V$  are both independent of  $\theta$ , and consequently we may, as far as these forces are concerned, consider the motions of the disturbing and the disturbed body to take place in the same plane.

The expression for  $W$  contains, however, the first power of the latitude of the disturbing body. This is of course connected with the circumstance that it is, only in consequence of the disturbing force  $W$  that the disturbed body is induced to leave the plane of its undisturbed motion at all.

**§ 14. Calculation of Disturbed Motion.**—Observation has shown that, notwithstanding the perturbations, the orbit of each planet differs but little from a circle, of which the sun is at one focus. It is further shown by observation that, though the rate at which a planet moves in its orbit is not quite constant, it is still very nearly so. We may make a similar statement with reference to the motion of the moon around the earth. The orbit of the moon is nearly a circle, of which the earth is the centre, and the velocity of the moon in its orbit is nearly constant. These features of the motions of the planets and the moon enable us to replace the more exact formulae by approximate expressions which are much more convenient, while still sufficiently correct.

Let  $\rho$ ,  $\theta$  be the polar co-ordinates of a celestial body which moves nearly uniformly in a nearly circular orbit. The form of the orbit may be expressed by an equation of the type

$$f(\rho, \theta) = 0$$

It will, however, be more convenient to employ two equations, by means of which the coordinates are each expressed directly in terms of the time. We thus write two equations of the form

$$\rho = f_1(t), \quad \theta = f_2(t),$$

and by elimination of  $t$  from these equations the ordinary equation in polar coordinates is obtained. With reference to the forms of the functions  $f_1$  and  $f_2$ , we shall make an assumption.

Let  $\chi_1, \chi_2, \chi_3$ , be arbitrary angles,  $a_1, a_2, a_3$ , arbitrary angular velocities,  $a_1, a_2, a_3$ , be small arbitrary linear magnitudes, and  $\eta_1, \eta_2, \eta_3$ , be small numbers. Thus  $\rho$  is an arbitrary linear magnitude, and  $\theta$  is an arbitrary angular velocity. We shall assume that

$$\rho = a_1 \cos (\omega_1 t + \chi_1) + a_2 \cos (\omega_2 t + \chi_2) + \lambda_3 \cos (\omega_3 t + \chi_3) + \eta_3 \sin (\omega_3 t + \chi_3) + \lambda_3 \sin (\omega_3 t + \chi_3) + \lambda_3$$

To justify our employment of these equations it would really be sufficient for us to state that, as a matter of fact, the motions of all the heavenly bodies which are at present under consideration are capable of being expressed in the forms we have written. It may, however, facilitate the reader in admitting the legitimacy of this assumption, if we point out how exceedingly plausible are the *a priori* arguments which can be adduced. Thus  $\rho$  is what is called a *periodic function of the time*. It is necessary that the mode in which the time  $t$  enters into the expression for  $\rho$  must fulfil the condition of continuing  $\rho$  within narrow limits, notwithstanding the indefinitely great number of values  $t$  is susceptible. It is obvious that this condition is fulfilled in the form we have assumed for  $\rho$ . Under all circumstances

$$\rho = > a_1 \mp a_2 \mp \lambda_3 \mp \eta_3 \mp \lambda_3, \quad \text{&c.}, \\ \rho = < a_1 \pm a_2 \pm \lambda_3 \pm \eta_3 \pm \lambda_3, \quad \text{&c.},$$

and as  $a_1, a_2, \chi_3$ , are small quantities it appears that  $\rho$  is nearly restricted to narrow limits. By similar reasoning we can justify the equation for  $\theta$ , for we can show that the angular velocity of the celestial body to which it refers must be approximately uniform. By differentiation,

$$\frac{d\rho}{dt} = \omega_1 a_1 \cos (\omega_1 t + \chi_1) + \omega_2 a_2 \cos (\omega_2 t + \chi_2) + \lambda_3 \omega_3 \cos (\omega_3 t + \chi_3) - \eta_3 \omega_3 \sin (\omega_3 t + \chi_3) + \lambda_3 \omega_3 \sin (\omega_3 t + \chi_3)$$

Under all circumstances we must have

$$\frac{d\rho}{dt} = > \omega_1 a_1 \mp \eta_3 \omega_3 \mp \lambda_3 \omega_3, \quad \text{&c.}, \\ \frac{d\rho}{dt} = < \omega_1 a_1 \pm \eta_3 \omega_3 \pm \lambda_3 \omega_3, \quad \text{&c.},$$

and as  $\eta_3, \eta_3, \chi_3$ , are all small quantities, it is obvious that  $\frac{d\rho}{dt}$  is confined within narrow limits, notwithstanding the indefinite magnification of the time.

In addition to the reasons already adduced in justification of the expressions of  $\rho$  and  $\theta$ , it is to be remarked that the number of the possible constants,  $a_1, a_2, \chi_3, \lambda_3, \eta_3, \omega_1, \omega_2, \omega_3, \chi_1, \chi_2, \chi_3, \lambda_1, \lambda_2, \lambda_3, \eta_1, \eta_2, \eta_3$ , is practically indefinite, and that consequently the equations can be compiled to exhibit faithfully the peculiarities of any approximately elliptical orbit described by a particle moving with approximate uniformity.

**§ 15. Determination of the Forces.**—The orbit which is described by a planet or other celestial body being given by the equations

$$\rho = a_1 \cos (\omega_1 t + \chi_1), \\ \theta = \omega_2 t + \chi_2 \sin (\omega_2 t + \chi_2),$$

it is a determinate problem to ascertain the forces by which the motion of the planet is controlled. In making this calculation we shall assume that the squares and higher powers, and also the products of the small quantities  $a_1, a_2, \chi_3, \lambda_3, \eta_3, \omega_1, \omega_2, \omega_3$ , may be considered as to be computed from the well known formula

$$T = m \left( \frac{d^2 \rho}{dt^2} - \rho \frac{d^2 \theta^2}{dt^2} \right),$$

where we have

$$\frac{d^2 \rho}{dt^2} = -2a_1 \omega_1^2 \sin (\omega_1 t + \chi_1),$$

$$\frac{d^2 \theta}{dt^2} = -2a_2 \omega_2^2 \cos (\omega_2 t + \chi_2),$$

$$\frac{d\rho}{dt} = \omega_1 a_1 \cos (\omega_1 t + \chi_1),$$

$$\frac{d\theta}{dt} = \omega_2 + 2\eta_2 \omega_2 \cos (\omega_2 t + \chi_2),$$

$$\frac{d^2 \rho}{dt^2} = -a_1 \omega_1^2 + 2\eta_2 \omega_1 \omega_2 \cos (\omega_2 t + \chi_2),$$

whence by substitution

$$T = -ma\omega^2 - 2m(a_1\omega_1 + 2\eta_2 a_2 \omega_2 + a_3 \omega_3^2) \cos (\omega_2 t + \chi_2)$$

To compute  $V$ , the force perpendicular to the radius vector, we proceed as follows—

$$\rho^2 = a^2 + 2a_1 a_2 \cos (\omega_1 t + \chi_1),$$

$$\frac{d\rho}{dt} = \omega_1 a_1 \cos (\omega_1 t + \chi_1),$$

whence we find

$$\rho \frac{d^2 \rho}{dt^2} = -a^2 \omega_1 + 2(a_1 a_2 + \eta_2 a_3 \omega_3) \cos (\omega_2 t + \chi_2)$$

Differentiating we have

$$\frac{d}{dt} \left( \rho \frac{d\rho}{dt} \right) = -2(a_1 a_2 \omega_1 + \eta_2 a_3 \omega_3) \sin (\omega_2 t + \chi_2)$$

Substituting this in the ordinary formula

$$V = \frac{m}{\rho} \left( \rho \frac{d^2 \rho}{dt^2} \right)$$

we have finally

$$V = -2m(a_1 \omega_1 + \eta_2 a_3 \omega_3) \sin (\omega_2 t + \chi_2)$$

Let us assume, for the sake of brevity,

$$\lambda_1 = \omega_1 t + \chi_1, \quad \lambda_2 = \omega_2 t + \chi_2, \quad \text{&c.},$$

$$\frac{d\rho}{dt} = a_1 \omega_1 \cos (\omega_1 t + \chi_1) + 2\eta_2 a_2 \omega_2 \cos (\omega_2 t + \chi_2) + a_3 \omega_3 \cos (\omega_3 t + \chi_3) - \eta_3 \omega_3 \sin (\omega_3 t + \chi_3) + \lambda_3 \omega_3 \sin (\omega_3 t + \chi_3)$$

then the result to which we have been conducted may be thus stated—  
If a body be moving in a nearly elliptical orbit under the influence of a radial force equal to

$$-ma\omega^2 - ma\omega^2 \cos \lambda_2$$

and a force perpendicular to the radius vector equal to

$$-ma\omega_2 \sin \lambda_2$$

then the path which the body describes is defined by the equations

$$\rho = a_1 \cos \lambda_1, \\ \theta = \omega_2 t + \chi_2 \sin \lambda_2$$

**§ 16. Deductions from these Equations.**—We proceed to point out a few of the more remarkable deductions from this theorem. If as a first approximation we neglect entirely the small quantities  $a_1, a_2, \chi_3, \lambda_3, \eta_3, \omega_1, \omega_2, \omega_3$ , we have

$$T = -ma\omega^2, \quad V = 0$$

In this case the orbit described by the body is a circle of which the radius is  $a$ . The angle made by the radius vector to the particle with a fixed axis is proportional to the time. It follows that the velocity with which the particle moves in its orbit is un-

from  $\omega$ . Since the angle swept out by the particle in one unit of time is equal to  $\omega$ , it follows that the angular velocity of the particle is equal to  $\omega$ , since the radius is  $a$ , the actual velocity with which the particle is moving in its orbit is  $a\omega$ . In the case now under consideration the force  $V$  is perpendicular to the radius vector is constantly equal to  $2\pi a\omega$ . Hence the total force which it exerts on the particle is, always directed along the radius vector, and is equal to  $-m\omega a$ . The  $\omega$  is naturally expressed that the force, which acts upon the particle, must be constantly directed towards the centre.

To find the period of the motion of the particle in its orbit. Then we must find the angular velocity by dividing the angle  $2\pi$  described in the time  $p$  by the time  $p$ , whence

$$\frac{2\pi}{p} = \omega$$

By substituting this value for  $\omega$  in the expression for  $T$ , we deduce

$$T = \frac{2\pi a^3}{\mu}$$

This proves that the time must vary directly as the cube of the orbit of the particle and inversely as the square of the periodic time in which the orbit is described.

Let us now consider the case in which  $\alpha_1$  and  $\alpha_2$  are assumed, while the remaining quantities  $\beta_1, \beta_2, \delta_1, \delta_2, \gamma_1, \gamma_2, \delta_1, \delta_2$  are all equal to zero. The formulae then are

$$\begin{aligned} r &= a(1 + e \cos \theta) & T &= m\omega a^3 - m\alpha_1^2 \cos \lambda_1 \\ \theta &= \omega t + \alpha_1 \sin \lambda_1 & V &= m\omega a^2 \sin \lambda_1 \\ \text{whence } a\dot{\theta} &= \alpha_1(\omega + \omega_1) + 2\alpha_1\omega \cos \theta & \dot{r} &= 2\alpha_1\omega \sin \theta + \alpha_1\omega_1 \end{aligned}$$

It is clear in this case that the orbit is not a circle, for as  $\lambda_1$  depends upon  $t$ , it will follow that  $\cos \lambda_1$  is a very broken line, the limits  $+1$  and  $-1$ , so that the radius vector  $r$  may also vary between the extreme values  $a + \alpha_1$  and  $a - \alpha_1$ . As  $\alpha_1$  is extremely small, it appears that the orbit is still nearly equal to a circle,  $a$ , but that the particle may sometimes be found at a distance  $\alpha_1$  on the inside or outside of the circle.

We shall similarly find that the angular velocity with which the radius vector sweeps round is not quite uniform. The average angular velocity is  $\omega$ , but the actual position of the radius vector differs by the quantity  $\alpha_1 \sin \lambda_1$  from what it would have been had its motion been uniform. As  $\alpha_1 \sin \lambda_1$  must vary between the limits  $+\alpha_1$  and  $-\alpha_1$ , it follows that the radius vector can never be at an angle greater than  $\alpha_1$  from its mean position, i.e. the place which it would have occupied had it continued to move uniformly. The orbit is completely defined by the two equations—

$$\begin{aligned} \theta &= \omega t + \alpha_1 \sin (\alpha_1^2 t + \chi_1) \\ r &= a + \alpha_1 \cos (\omega t + \chi_1) \end{aligned}$$

If from these two equations the time  $t$  could be eliminated, the result would be the equation in polar coordinates of the path which the particle described. Owing, however, to the fact that the quantity  $t$  occurs separately, and also under the form of a sine and cosine, this elimination would be transcendental.

If, however, we take advantage of the smallness of  $\alpha_1$  and  $\alpha_2$ , we can eliminate  $t$  with sufficient accuracy for all practical purposes. It is  $\theta$  is nearly equal to  $\omega t$ , we may assume for  $t$  as the first approximation the value  $\theta/\omega$ . If we consider the squares or higher powers of  $\alpha_1$  and  $\alpha_2$  negligible, this value of  $t$  may be substituted for  $t$  under the sine and cosine, and we have

$$r = a + \alpha_1 \cos \left( \frac{\alpha_1^2}{\omega} + \chi_1 \right)$$

This equation in general denotes a curve undulating about the circumference of the circle of which the radius is  $a$ .

We must now briefly consider the case where the motion of the particle is not confined to a plane. Suppose a third axis OC be drawn through the point O perpendicular to the plane which contains the undisturbed orbit. Let  $\phi$  be the coordinate of the particle parallel to the line OC which is called the axis of  $z$ , while  $\lambda, \mu$  denote as usual the coordinates referred to the other two principal axes. We shall suppose that the motion of the particle is such that the coordinate  $z$  can be expressed by the equation

$$z = h_1 \sin \beta_1 + h_2 \sin \beta_2 + \delta, \text{ \&c.}$$

where  $h_1, h_2, \delta$ , &c., are of constant length,  $\beta_1, \beta_2$ , &c., are angles of the form  $\alpha_1 t + \chi_1$ ,  $\alpha_2 t + \chi_2$ ,  $\beta_1, \beta_2$ , &c., are constants, and  $\delta$  denotes the time.

Let  $W$  denote the force which acts upon the particle P in a direction parallel to the axis of  $z$ . Then we have

$$W = m \frac{d^2 z}{dt^2}$$

Differentiating the equation

$$z = h_1 \sin \beta_1 + h_2 \sin \beta_2 + \delta, \text{ \&c.}$$

we have

$$\frac{dz}{dt} = h_1 \cos \beta_1 \frac{d\beta_1}{dt} + h_2 \cos \beta_2 \frac{d\beta_2}{dt} + \dot{\delta}, \text{ \&c.}$$

but

$$\frac{d\beta_1}{dt} = \beta_1, \quad \frac{d\beta_2}{dt} = \beta_2, \text{ \&c.}$$

whence

$$\frac{dz}{dt} = \beta_1 h_1 \cos \beta_1 + \beta_2 h_2 \cos \beta_2 + \dot{\delta}, \text{ \&c.}$$

Diff'rentiating again

$$\frac{d^2 z}{dt^2} = -\beta_1^2 h_1 \sin \beta_1 - \beta_2^2 h_2 \sin \beta_2 - \ddot{\delta}, \text{ \&c.}$$

whence, finally,

$$W = -m\beta_1^2 h_1 \sin \beta_1 - m\beta_2^2 h_2 \sin \beta_2 - \ddot{\delta}, \text{ \&c.}$$

§ 17 *The Motion of the Moon*.—One of the most important problems to which we may apply the expressions to which we have been confined is to an examination of the disturbances which the moon experiences in its motion round the earth. The moon would describe a purely elliptic motion round the earth in one of the four years it took the presence of the sun disturbs the motion and produces certain irregularities. Notwithstanding the vast mass of the sun, these disturbing causes still only slightly change the moon's motion from what it would be were these disturbing causes absent. The reason of this is that the sun is about 400 times as far from the earth as the moon, and consequently the difference of the effects of the sun upon the earth and the moon is comparatively small.

In applying the formulae to the case of the moon we denote by  $S, P, \gamma$  the earth, the moon, and the sun respectively,  $M, m, m'$  signify the masses of the earth, moon, and sun,  $r, r', r''$  the distances of the moon and the sun from the earth,  $\lambda, \lambda', \lambda''$  the longitudes of the moon and the sun measured in the moon's orbit.

$T, V, W$  are the forces acting upon the moon, where  $T$  is along the radius vector,  $V$  is perpendicular to the radius vector, and  $W$  is perpendicular to the plane of the moon's orbit.

Since  $r - r' = 1 - 400$ , we may regard this fraction as unity, and all the terms equal and higher powers are negligible. Hence, since  $\cos \theta = 1$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} r &= r' \left( 1 - 2 \frac{r'}{r} \cos (\theta - \theta') + \frac{r'^2}{r^2} \right)^{1/2} \\ &= r' \left( 1 - 2 \frac{r'}{r} \cos (\theta - \theta') \right) \end{aligned}$$

whence

$$r = r' \left( 1 - 2 \frac{r'}{r} \cos (\theta - \theta') \right)$$

or

$$\frac{1}{r} = \frac{1}{r'} \left( 1 + 2 \frac{r'}{r} \cos (\theta - \theta') \right)$$

With these substitutions we have, after a few simple transformations,

$$T = -\frac{em(M+m)}{r^2} + \frac{em'm'}{r'^2} \left( 1 + 3 \cos 2(\theta - \theta') \right),$$

$$V = -\frac{2em'm'}{r^2} \sin 2(\theta - \theta'),$$

$$W = \frac{em'm'}{r'^2} \cos (\theta - \theta')$$

§ 18 *The Perturbation*.—The inequality in the motion of the moon which is known as the *anomaly* is independent both of the eccentricity of the orbit of the moon and of that of the earth. As we shall at present only discuss irregularities in longitude and radius vector, and as we shall neglect small quantities of an order higher than the second, we may assume that the value of the orbit of the sun coincides with the plane of the orbit of the moon.

The radius vector and the longitude may be expressed by the formulae

$$\begin{aligned} r &= a + e \cos \lambda_1 \\ \lambda &= \lambda_1 + \phi_1 \sin \lambda_1 \end{aligned}$$

We shall assume that

$$2(\theta - \theta') = \lambda_1$$

and since

$$r = a - e \cos (\lambda_1 - 2\phi_1 \sin \lambda_1),$$

we have

$$\begin{aligned} T &= -\frac{em(M+m)}{r^2} + \frac{1}{2} \frac{em'm'}{r'^2} \\ &+ \left( \frac{3}{2} \frac{em'm'}{r'^2} + \frac{3}{2} \frac{em'm'}{r'^2} \right) \cos \lambda_1, \end{aligned}$$

but from § 15, in being the mean motion of the moon,

$$T = m\omega^2 a - m\alpha_1^2 \cos \lambda_1,$$

whence, by identifying the two expressions we have from the portions independent of the time,

$$m\omega^2 a = \frac{em(M+m)}{r^2} - \frac{1}{2} \frac{em'm'}{r'^2}$$

This is a very important formula, inasmuch as it gives the relation between the mean motion  $\omega$  and the mean distance  $a$  in the undisturbed orbit.

Suppose that there were no disturbing influence, and that a satellite moved uniformly around the earth in a circular orbit of radius  $a_0$  with a mean motion  $\omega_0$ , then we have

$$e(M+m) = m_0^2 a_0^3$$

Assuming also that the earth moves uniformly round the sun in a circular orbit of radius  $a'$  with a mean motion  $\omega'$ , then

$$e(M+m') = m'^2 a'^3$$

or, since  $M$  is negligible in comparison with  $m'$ ,  
 $\cos^2 \alpha = m' a^2$

With these substitutions, and making  $\alpha = m'^2 - m^2$ , we have finally  
 $n^2 \alpha^2 - n^2 a^2 u_0^2 (1 - \frac{1}{2} w)$

If we identify the coefficients of  $\cos \lambda_1$  in the two expressions for  $T$ , we have

$$-ma f_1 - g_1 \frac{\sin(M + m)}{a^2} + \frac{3}{2} \frac{\sin m^2}{a^2},$$

whence, by substitution and by neglecting small quantities,

$$f_1(n^2 - n_1^2) + 2g_1 n_1^2 - g_1 n^2 - \frac{3}{2} n^2 = 0$$

We have also for  $V$  the two expressions

$$-\frac{3}{2} n^2 \sin \lambda_1,$$

and

$$-ma g_1 \sin \lambda_1,$$

whence by identifying the coefficients

$$2f_1 m_1 + g_1 n_1^2 = \frac{3}{2} n^2,$$

where  $n_1$  denotes the rate at which  $\lambda_1$  alters

Solving the two equations, we deduce the following expressions —

$$f_1 = -\frac{3w n^2 m_1 + 2n^2}{2}, \quad g_1 = \frac{3w n^2 (n_1^2 + 2m_1 + 3w^2)}{2}, \quad n_1^2 = \frac{3w^2}{2} \frac{255}{27322} - 1.8501,$$

We can now calculate the value of  $f_1$  and  $g_1$  numerically. For

$$\frac{n_1}{n} = \frac{255}{27322} = \frac{965}{965256}$$

and also

$$w = \frac{1}{178.72}$$

from these we deduce

$$f_1 = -0.007204$$

$$g_1 = +0.01021 = 33''.50$$

The results at which we have arrived may be thus summarily stated, namely, however, a more accurate value of  $g_1$  than that which is formed by this method —

If we suppose the orbit of the moon to coincide with the plane of the ecliptic, and if we neglect the attraction of the earth, and if  $n'$  denotes the mean motion of the earth around the sun, and  $n$  the mean motion of the moon around the earth, and, finally, if  $a$  and  $a'$  be connected by the equation

$$n^2 a^3 = 0.0072 (M + m),$$

then we have for the motion of the moon the equations

$$\ddot{r} = a(1 - 0.007204 \cos(2nt - 2n't)),$$

$$l = nt + 39'30'' \sin(2nt - 2n't)$$

We thus see that the motion of the moon, on the hypothesis which we have assumed, is different from a uniform circular motion. The distance from the moon to the earth is sometimes 1399th part greater or less than its mean value. And the longitude of the moon is sometimes 39'30" in advance of or behind what it would be on the supposition that the moon is moving uniformly. When the distance is the greatest, we have  $\cos(2nt - 2n't) = -1$ , whence

$$2nt - 2n't = \pi \text{ or } 180^\circ,$$

and it follows that the distance of the moon from the earth is great at quadratures. When the distance is least, the

$$\cos(2nt - 2n't) = +1,$$

whence

$$2nt - 2n't = 0 \text{ or } 2\pi,$$

consequently the moon is nearest to the earth at syzygy. It thus appears that the orbit of the moon is modified by the disturbing influence of the attraction exercisable in oval of which the earth is the centre, and of which the minor axis is contained in the line of syzygies.

The mean longitude of the moon and the lunar longitude coincide when

$$\sin(2nt - 2n't) = 0$$

This condition is fulfilled both at syzygy and quadrature, consequently the mean place of the moon and its true place coincide when the moon is either in syzygy or in quadrature. The true place of the moon is at its greatest distance in advance of the mean place when

$$\sin(2nt - 2n't) = -1$$

This condition is fulfilled at the middle points of the first and third quadrants, while at the middle points of the second and fourth quadrants

$$\sin(2nt - 2n't) = +1,$$

and therefore the moon is behind its mean place in the second and fourth quadrants.

After new moon, the distance between the moon and the earth gradually increases, and the apparent velocity of the moon also increases, until, when the moon is three or four days old, it has advanced 30' beyond its mean place, the velocity then begins to diminish, though the distance goes on increasing, until it first quits the distance has attained a maximum. After first quarter the distance diminishes, and the moon falls behind its mean place, the maximum distance of 39' behind the mean place being reached about 11 days after new moon. At full moon the distance has become a minimum, and the mean place and true place coincide. At 15 days, the true place has again gained 39' on the mean place, but the distance increases, and at third quarter the distance is again a maximum, and the true and the mean place coincide. At pressing third quarter the distance diminishes, and the true place falls behind the mean place, the distance attaining a minimum on the 26th day, after which the true place gains on the mean place, with which it coincides at new moon, when also the distance is again a minimum.

Since the amount of this irregularity in longitude is so considerable, being in fact larger than the diameter of the moon itself, it is very appreciable even in comparatively coarse observations. It was discovered by observation by Tycho Brahe, by whom it was named the *variatio*.

It would have been too late to endeavor to trace out any of the other irregularities by which the motion of the moon is deranged. We have taken the variation merely as an illustration of one of the numerous corrections which the law of gravitation has explained. The coincidence which subsists between the values of these corrections as computed by theory and as determined by observation affords the most conclusive evidence of the truth of the law of universal gravitation. (R S B)

#### GRAVITY, SPECIFIC See HYDRODYNAMICS

GRAY, the chief town of an arrondissement in the department of Haute-Saône, is situated on the declivity of a hill on the left bank of the Saône, 37 miles S.W. of Vesoul by rail. Its streets are narrow and steep, but it possesses broad and beautiful quays, and the Allée des Capucins is a fine promenade. The principal buildings are the old castle of the duke of Burgundy, the church in the style of the Renaissance, the communal college (with a library of 16,000 volumes and a natural history museum), the theatre, and the barracks. The town possesses very large flour-mills, and among the other industries are ship-building, dyeing, tanning, haircloth-weaving, plaster-casting, and the manufacture of machinery, oils, and starch. There is also a considerable trade in iron, corn, provisions, vegetables, wine, and wool. The population in 1876 was 7305. Gray was founded in the 7th century. Its former

<sup>1</sup> When the approximation is carried sufficiently far it is found that the coefficient of the variation is 39' 30".

defensive works were destroyed by Louis XIV. in 1688. During the Franco-Prussian war General von Weider concentrated his army corps in the town, and held it for a month, making it the point d'appui of movements towards Dijon and Langres, as well as towards Besançon.

GRAY, DAVID (1838-1861), Scottish poet, was the son of a hand loom weaver, and was born at Meikland, a small village on the banks of the Luggie, about 8 miles from Glasgow, January 20, 1838. His parents, observing his fondness for study and his exceptional cleverness, resolved to educate him for the church, and through their self-denial and his own exertions as a pupil teacher and private tutor, he was able, after receiving the rudiments of education at the parish school of Kirkcubright, to complete a course of four sessions at the university of Glasgow. It soon, however, became evident that the vision of poetry and world fame had begun to lure him away from the path which his parents' desires had marked out for him. His most intimate companion at this time was Robert Buchanan, the now

well known poet, and in May 1860 the two agreed to proceed to London, with the definite purpose of finding some kind of employment in connection with literature. Shortly after his arrival in London Gray introduced himself to Mr. Monckton Milnes, now Lord Houghton, with whom he had previously corresponded, who, though unsuccessful in his application for a place for Gray's poem, "The Luggie," in the *Contest Magazine*, gave him some light literary work. He also showed him great attention when a cold which had seized him assumed the serious form of consumption, and procured him the means of staying for a time in the south of England, but as the disease made rapid progress, an irresistible longing seized Gray to return to Melksham, where he arrived in January 1861, and died on the 3d December following, having the day before had the gratification of seeing a painted specimen copy of his poem *The Luggie*. He was buried in the Auld Aisle Churchyard, Kirkintilloch, where in 1863 a monument was erected by "friends far and near" to his memory.

The *Luggie*, the principal poem of Gray, is a kind of review in which the scenes and events of his childhood and his early aspirations are mingled with the music of the stream which he celebrates. The series of sonnets *In the Shadow*, composed during the latter part of his illness, possess, without the smallest taint of morbidness, a touching and solemn beauty in keeping with the circumstances in which they were written. Most of his poems necessarily bear traces of immaturity, and lines may frequently be found in them which are mere echoes from Thomson, Wordsworth, or Tennyson, but they possess, nevertheless, the distinct individuality of true genius. They nearly all have a direct or indirect reference to phases of outward nature, and they give evidence of an undying wealth of imagination and sentiment, of a true and vigorous power of conception, and of a gift of clear and strong, yet subtle and tender, musical utterance, which apparently only required to have been mellowed by time and experience in order to have fashioned a poetry which would have given him an enduring name in English literature.

*The Luggie and other Poems*, with an introduction by R. Monckton Milnes, and a brief notice by James Heidenreich, was published in 1862, and a new and enlarged edition of Gray's *Poetical Works*, edited by the late Sheriff Glenfield Bell, appeared in 1874. See also the "Penny on David Gray," published originally in *Corwall Magazine*, and reprinted in *David Gray and other Essays*, by Robert Buchanan, 1868, and the poem on David Gray, reprinted there from *Tidals and Legends of Inverburn*.

GRAY, JOHN EDWARD (1800-1875), a distinguished English naturalist, born at Walsall, Staffordshire, in 1800, was the eldest of the three sons of Mr. S. F. Gray, of that town, druggist and writer on botany, author of the *Supplement to the Pharmacopoeia*, &c., and grandson of Mr. S. Gray, who translated for Lee the *Philosophical Botany* of Linnæus, and assisted in the composition of the *Introduction to Botany*. Gray studied at St. Bartholomew's and other hospitals for the medical profession, but was attracted to the more enlivening pursuit of botany, on which he wrote and lectured. At an early age he assisted his father by collecting notes on botany and comparative anatomy and zoology in Sir Joseph Banks's library at the British Museum, aided by Dr. W. E. Leach, assistant-keeper. The systematic synopsis of the *Natural Arrangement of British Plants*, 2 vols., 1821, was prepared by him, his father writing the preface and introduction only. This work, which introduced the natural system of plants on Jussieu's plan to the student of English botany, gave offence to the Linnæan Society, who rejected Gray's application for a fellowship in 1822. Chafed at this unwarranted rebuff, he turned to the study of zoology, writing on zoophytes, shells, *Mollusca*, and *Papilionacea*, still aided by Dr. Leach at the British Museum. In December 1824 Gray obtained the post of

assistant in that institution, and from that date to December 1839, when Mr. J. G. Childlin retired from the keepership, he had so zealously applied himself to the study, classification, and improvement of the national collection of zoology that he was selected as the fittest person to be entrusted with its charge. Immediately on his appointment as keeper, Gray took in hand the revision of the systematic arrangement of the collections, scientific catalogues followed in rapid succession, the department was raised in importance, its poverty as well as its wealth became known, and whilst increased grants, donations, and exchanges made good many deficiencies, great numbers of students, foreign as well as English, availed themselves of its resources to enlarge their knowledge of zoology in all its branches. Gray found the representatives of the animal kingdom confusedly huddled together in old Montagu House, and the science of zoology was just then emerging from infancy, with little public support to foster it. But, in spite of numerous obstacles, he worked up the department, within a few years of his appointment as keeper, to such a state of excellence as to make it the rival of the cabinets of Leyden, Paris, and Berlin, and later on it was raised under his management to the dignity of the largest and most complete zoological collection in the world. The extensive acquaintance which he had obtained with practical zoology, his love of the subject, close application, and original views, his skill and accuracy of observation, his readiness to impart the information he had acquired to any one who sought it, and above all his marvellous industry, place Gray in the foremost rank of naturalists. It has been said that he tried to accomplish too much, that he wrote hurriedly and paid little attention to anatomy, but it must be remembered that he laboured for the past generation, not among the one-subject men of the present age. He did his work nobly, though somewhat roughly, and it will ever be appreciated by generous men of science. His eagerness for controversy, and the outspoken plainness with which he asserted his views, sometimes brought him into unpleasant relations with those he had to do with. Of this the catalogue dispute with Panizzardi, and the gorilla dispute with Dr. Chailin, Owen, and others, are well known instances. Although seized with paralysis in 1870, Gray continued to discharge the functions of keeper of zoology, and to contribute papers to the *Annals of Natural History*, his favourite journal, and to the transactions of a few of the learned societies. At Christmas 1874, having completed half a century of official work, he resigned office, and on the 7th of March 1875 this indefatigable naturalist expired.

Gray was elected a fellow of the Royal Society in 1832, in 1852 the honorary degree of doctor of philosophy of the university of Munich was conferred upon him, in recognition of his formation of the largest zoological collection in Europe, and in 1860 the king of Württemberg, desiring to mark the estimation in which he held Gray, who had declined an offer of knighthood, bestowed upon him the gold medal of merit. He was a president of the Entomological Society, vice president of the Zoological and Microscopical Societies, fellow of the Geographical and Palæontological Society, in the formation of which he took part, he was president of the Botanical Society, and also a fellow of the Linnæan and Geological Societies, he founded the Greenwich Society of Useful Knowledge, and he was an honorary or corresponding member of numerous foreign societies and societies. He was deeply interested in the well-being of the animal and vegetable substances of the Exhibition of 1861, and a juror of the educational section of the exhibition of 1862. He took an active part in questions of public importance of his day, such as slavery, emancipation, prison discipline, abolition of imprisonment for debt, sanitary and municipal organizations, the decimal system, public education, extension of the opening of public institutions, &c. *Works*.—Dr. Gray commenced to publish in 1820, and continued till the year of his death. He began with an *Illustration of Improvements in Comparative Anatomy and Zoology* in 1816, and ended with a paper "On the Madagascan River-Hog (*Potamocheirus*), and on the skulls of the three species of the genus," *Ann. N. H.*, xv, 1876. The titles of the books, memoirs, and miscellaneous

papers written by him, accompanied by a few notes, fill a privately printed list of 66 octavo pages. The more important of the books, besides those already mentioned, are—*Synopsis of the species of the class Mammalia*, 1827 (Griffith's *Cat.*, vol. v.), *Illustrations of Indian Zoology*, 2 vols., 1830-33, *A Synopsis of the species of the class Reptiles*, 1840 (Cuvier, iv), *Catalogue of Mammalia*, 1831-45, *Synopsis Reptilium*, 1831, *A Descriptive Catalogue of Recent and Fossil Shells*, 1832, *Tantou's Manual of the Land and Freshwater Shells of the British Islands* (new ed.), 1810, *List of the Specimens of Mammalia in the British Museum*, 1849, *Catalogue of Fishes*, 1842, 1844, *Systematic Catalogue of British Land and Freshwater Shells*, 1841, *Catalogue of Specimens of Lizards*, 1843, *Gleanings from the Atlantic and Levant at Knowsley Hall* (superintended at the request of the Earl of Derby), 1844, *List of the genera of the British Mollusca*, 1847, *List of Osteopneustic Specimens*, 1847, of *British Sponges*, *Radiated Animals (Ctenaria)*, of *British Radiata*, *seriatim*, 1848, *Catalogue of Mollusca*, 1848-50, *Catalogue of Turrids (Snails)*, 1849, *Catalogue of Fish (Chondropterygii)*, 1850, *Catalogue of Mammalia (Cetacea, Seal)*, *Fossil Quadrupeds*, 1850, 1852, *Catalogue of Amphibia*, 1850, *Catalogue of British Mollusca*, 1850-53, *List of Fish (Chondropterygii)*, of *British Fish*, *seriatim*, 1851, *List of British Mollusca and Shells*, 1851, *Catalogue of Echinids*, in *Sea Bugs*, 1851, *Catalogue of Platan specimens* (with L. Pfeiffer), 1852, *Catalogue of Fish collected and described by L. T. Gronow*, 1854, *Catalogue of Shells Reptiles*, 1856-72, *Catalogue of the recent Echinoda*, 1855, *Catalogue of Pulmonata* (with L. Pfeiffer), 1876, *Quest to the Collection of Mollusca*, 1859, *Catalogue of Apodid Fish*, by Dr T. J. Kiupp, translated and edited by Gray, 1859, *Catalogue of Annelida*, 1857, *Systematic arrangement of figures of Conchology and Malacology*, 1857, *List of Mollusca*, 1858, *Handbook of Fishes*, in 4 vols. (with W. G. Cuvier), 1861, Salisbury's *Genes of Plants*, edited by Gray, 1866, *Catalogue of Seals and Whales*, 1866-71, *Synopsis of Species of Seals*, 1868, *Synopsis of species of Whales and Dolphins*, 1868, *Catalogue of Cetaceans and Cetaceans*, 1868, *Monographs of Marine Mollusca*, 1869, *Catalogue of Mollusca, Linnæi, and Fruit eating Bats*, 1870, *Tortuæ, Testudinæ, and Testudines*, 1872 (re-edited), *Hand list of Seals, Mooses, Sea Lions, and Sea-Bears*, 1874.

GRAY, THOMAS (1716-1771), the author of the celebrated *Elegy written in a Country Churchyard*, was born in Cornhill, London, December 26, 1716. His father, Philip Gray, an exchange broker and scrivener, was a wealthy and nominally respectable citizen, but he treated his family with brutal severity and neglect, and the poet was altogether indebted for the advantages of a learned education to the affectionate care and industry of his mother, whose maiden name was Antrobus, and who, in conjunction with a maiden sister, kept a millinery shop. A brother of Mrs Gray was assistant to the master of Eton, and was also a fellow of Pembroke College, Cambridge. Under his protection the poet was educated at Eton, and thence went to Peterhouse, Cambridge, attending college from 1734 to September 1738. At Eton he had as contemporaries Richard West, son of the Lord Chancellor of Ireland, and Horace Walpole, son of the triumphant Whig minister, Sir Robert Walpole. West died early in his 28th year, but his genius and virtues and his sorrows will for ever live in the correspondence of his friend. In the spring of 1739 Gray was invited by Horace Walpole to accompany him as travelling companion in a tour through France and Italy. They made the usual tour, and Gray wrote remarks on all he saw in Florence, Rome, Naples, &c. His observations on arts and antiquities, and his sketches of foreign manners, evince his admirable taste, learning, and discrimination. Since Milton, no such accomplished English traveller had visited those classic shores. In their journey through Dauphiné, Gray's attention was strongly attracted by the wild and picturesque site of the Grande Chartreuse, surrounded by its dense forest of beech and fir, its enormous precipices, cliffs, and cascades. He visited it a second time on his return, and in the album of the mountain convent he wrote his famous Alcian Ode. At Reggio the travellers quarrelled and parted. Walpole took the whole blame on himself. He was fond of pleasure and amusements, "intoxicated by vanity, indulgence, and the insolence of his situation as a prime minister's son,"—his own confession,—while Gray was studious, of a serious disposition, and independent spirit. The immediate

cause of the rupture is said to have been Walpole's, distinctly opening, reading, and resending a letter addi to Gray, in which he expected to find a confirmation of suspicions that Gray had been writing wit and ironically to some friends in England. A partial reconciliation effected about three years afterwards by the intreat of a lady, and Walpole redoubled his youthful efforts long to succour admiration and respect for his friend. Reggio Gray proceeded to Venice, and thence travelled i wards, attended by a *laissez de voyage*. He arriv England in September 1741, having been absent about years and a half. He settled died in November, and found that the poet's fortune would not enable h prosecute the study of the law. He therefore sett Cambridge, and fixed his residence at the unive. Thence he continued for the remainder of his life, wit exception of about two years spent in London, at the treasures of the British Museum: were thrown open Cambridge he had the range of noble libraries. His l ness consisted in study, and he pursued with critica tion the Greek and Roman poets, philosophers, histo and orators. Plato and the *Antologia* he read and tated with great care, as if for publication. He colla tables of Greek chronology, added notes to Linnæu other naturalists, wrote geographical disquisitions on G and, besides being familiar with French and Italian ture, was a zealous archaeological student, and profo versed in architecture, botany, painting, and music al departments of human learning, excepting mathe he was a master. But it follows that one so studio critical, and so fastidious could not be a voluminous. A few poems include all the original compositions of G the quinquessence, as it were, of thirty years of ce study and contemplation, irradiated by bright and gleams of inspiration. In 1742 Gray composed his *Spring*, his *Ode on a Distant Prospect of Eton College*, his *Ode to Adieu city*,—productions which most read poetry can repeat from memory. He commenced a di poem, *On the Alliance of Education and Government*, wrote only about a hundred lines. Every reader regret that this philosophical poem is but a fragmen in its style and measure of Dryden, of whom Gra an ardent admirer and close student. His *Elegy on a Country Churchyard* was completed and publish 1751. In the form of a serpyntine *locknote* it circ rapidly, four editions being exhausted the first ye within the same period it also appeared in three zines—the *Magazine of Magazines* for February, the *Z Magazine* for March, and the *Grand Magazine of May* for April. This popularity surprised the poet. H sarcastically that it was owing entirely to the subje that the public would have received it as well if it hac written in prose. The solemn and affecting nature poem, applicable to all ranks and classes, no doubt ad sale, it required high poetic sensibility and a cult taste to appreciate the rapid transitions, the fig language, and lyrical magnificence of the odes, b elegy went home to all hearts, while its musical har originality, and pathetic train of sentiment and f render it one of the most perfect of English poems vicissitudes of taste or fashion have affected its popu When the original manuscript of the poem was offi sale in 1854, it brought the almost incredible sum of The two great odes of Gray, the *Progress of Poetry an Bard*, were published in 1757 and were but coldly rec His name, however, stood high, and, on the death of the same year, he was offered the laureate ship, w wisely declined. He was ambitious, however, of obt the more congenial and dignified appointment of pro of modern history in the university of Cambridge,



was known as *Il Larca* or *Leuciscus*, and this pseudonym is still frequently substituted for his proper name. His tongue was what the French happily call a difficult one, and his life was consequently enlivened or disturbed by various literary quarrels. His Humid brethren went so far as to expel him for a time from the society,—the chief ground of offence being apparently his ruthless criticism of the "Arameus," a party of the academicians who maintained that the Florentine or Tuscan tongue was derived from the Hebrew, the Chaldee, or some other branch of the Semitic. He was readmitted in 1566, when his friend Salvati was "consul" of the academy. His death took place on February 18, 1569. His Latin ranks as one of the great masters of Tuscan prose. His style is copious and flexible, abundantly idiomatic, but without any affectation of being so, it carries with it the force and freshness of popular speech, while it lacks not at the same time a flavour of academic culture. His principal works are *Le Cene*, a collection of stories in the manner of Boccaccio, and a number of prose comedies, *La Gelosia*, *La Spuntata*, *I Parenti*, *La Morte*, *La Sibilla*, *La Pinocchio*, *L'ingegno*. The stories, though of no special merit as far as the plots are concerned, are told with verve and interest. A number of miscellaneous poems, a few letters, and *Four Orations to the Cross* complete the list of Grazzini's extant works.

He also edited the works of Biondo, collected *Poetae Graeci, Latini, Manchati*, &c. *Quarta Centesimorum, auctori per Eren* & *dal tempo del magnifico Loren* &c. *di Aldus fino all' anno 1569*. In 1568 Adriano Fasoli published in his *Biografia per le biblioteche di Perugia* three "novelle," by Grazzini, from a MS. of the 16th century in the "Commune" of Perugia, and in 1870 a small collection of those poems which have been left unpublished by previous editors appeared at Poggibonsi, *Alcune poesie inedite*. See Paolo Fanfani's "Vita del Linceo," prefixed to his edition of the *Opere di A. Grazzini*, Florence, 1867.

**GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND, THE UNITED KINGDOM OF**, has been since January 1, 1801, the official title of the political unity composed of England, Scotland, and Ireland. Great Britain was employed as a formal designation from the time of the union of the kingdoms of England and Scotland in 1707. Although the name (which apparently had its origin in Britannia Major, the name given to the island to distinguish it from Britannia Minor or Brittany) had, in earlier times, been often used both by English and by foreign writers, especially for rhetorical and poetical purposes, it was not till after the accession of James I that it became a recognized part of the royal style. Its adoption was due to the king himself, who was anxious to give expression to the fact that he was sovereign of the undivided island, and not only of England or Scotland. As early as 1559 the Scottish Congregation had formally proposed through Matthew the union of the two crowns, and the adoption of the name of Great Britain for the common country (Tenet, i, "Mém. Caillé & M. de la Mothe," Dec. 20). But in England the innovation at first met with great opposition. Various objections, sentimental and practical, were urged against it in parliament, and the judges, when appealed to by the king, declared that the adoption of the title would invalidate all legal processes. At length, on the 20th October 1603, the king, weary of the discussion, cut the knot by assuming the title by royal proclamation, and in due course the inscription "J D G Mag Bri Et H Rex" appeared on his coins. The proclamation declared that Great Britain was "the true and ancient name which God and time have imposed upon this Ile, extinct and recovered in histories, in all maps and coats wherein this Ile is described, and in ordinary letters to ourselves from divers foreign princes, warranted also by authentical charters, exemptions under seals, and other records of great antiquity." In November 1604 we find the king instructing the Lords Commissioners of the Gunpowder Plot

to try and discover if the prisoner was the author of a most "cruel parricide" against him for assuming the name of Britain. For further details see *Collections of State Papers*, *Domestic Series*, and *Spelling, Letters and Lists of Lord Byron*, vol. iii.

**GREAVES, JOHN** (1602-1632), a mathematician and antiquary, was the eldest son of John Greaves, rector of Coleman, near Aylesford in Hampshire, and was born in 1602. He was educated at Balliol College, Oxford, and in 1630 was chosen professor of geometry in Gresham College, London. After travelling in Europe, he in 1637 visited the East, where he collected a considerable number of Arabic, Persian, and Greek manuscripts, and made a more accurate survey of the pyramids of Egypt than any traveller who had preceded him. On his return to Europe he visited a second time several parts of Italy, and during his stay at Rome instituted inquiries into the ancient weights and measures. Soon after his arrival in England, he was appointed to the Savilian professorship of astronomy at Oxford, but he was deprived of his Gresham professorship for having neglected its duties. In 1648 he lost both his fellowship and his Savilian chair on account of his adherence to the royalist party. But his private fortune more than sufficed for all his wants till his death in 1632.

Besides his papers in the *Philosophical Transactions*, the principal works of Greaves are *Pyramidæ ægyptiæ, or A Discourse of the Pyramids in Egypt*, 1638, *A Discourse on the Roman Foot and Measure*, 1640, and *Elementa Geometricæ*, 1640. His works were published in 1737 in the British, with a biographical notice of the author. See also Smith's *Life and times of John Greaves*, and *Writings of John Greaves*.

**GREBE** (French *Grèbe*), the generally accepted name for all the birds of the Family *Podiceps*,<sup>1</sup> belonging to the group *Pygopodes* of Illiger, members of which inhabit almost all parts of the world. Some systematic writers have



Great Crested Grebe

distributed them into several so-called genera, but, with one exception, these seem to be insufficiently defined, and here it will be enough to allow but two—*Latham's Podiceps* and the *Centropodops* of Messrs. Sclater and Salvin. Grebes are at once distinguishable from all other Water-larks by their

<sup>1</sup> Often, but erroneously, written *Podiceps*. The word *Podiceps* being a contracted form of *Podiceps* (cf. *Gladius*, *Journal de Chimie*, 1854, p. 480, note), a combination of *podus*, *podium*, and *pes*, *pedis*, the farther compounds must be in accordance with this derivation.



very short body, and the peculiar structure of their feet, which are not only placed far behind, but have the tarsus flattened and elongated, are furnished with broad lobes of skin.

In Europe we have five well-marked species of *Podiceps*, the commonest and smallest of which is the very well-known Dabchick of our ponds, *P. fluitans* or *minor*, the Little Grebe of ornithologists, found throughout the British Islands, and with a wide range in the Old World. Next to us are two species known as the Eared and Hained Grebes, the former of which, *P. nigripollis*, is a visitor from the south, only occasionally showing itself in Britain, while the latter, *P. auritus*, has a more northern range, breeding plentifully in Iceland, and is a not uncommon winter-visitor. Then there is the large Red-necked Grebe, *P. grispenae*, also a northern bird, and a native of the subarctic parts of both Europe and America, while lastly the Great Crested Grebe, *P. cristatus*, or Quaint—known as the Loon on the moors and banks of East Anglia, and some other parts of England, is also widely spread over both Worlds, and though apparently not found within the tropics, is known in the extreme south as a native of Australia and New Zealand. North America is credited with seven species of Grebes, of which three (*P. cristatus*, *P. grispenae*, and *P. auritus*) are admitted to be specifically inseparable from those already named, and two (*P. occidentalis* and *P. californicus*) appear to be but local forms, the remaining two (*P. tomensis* and *P. melanotos*) may, however, be accounted good species, and the last differs so much from other Grebes that many systematists make it the type of a distinct genus, *Polygibbus*. South America seems to possess four or five more species, one of which, the *P. macopterus* of Mr Gould (*Proc. Zool Society*, 1858, p. 220), has been deservedly separated from the genus *Podiceps* by Messrs. Sclater and Salvin (*Bird Ornithology*, p. 189, pl. xcv), owing to the form of its bill, and the abated condition of its wings, which seem to render it absolutely flightless. Lake Titicaca in Bolivia is, so far as is known at present, its only habitat. Grebes in general, though averse from taking wing, have much greater power of flight than would seem possible on examination of their alar organs, and are capable of prolonged aerial journeys. Their plumage is short and close. Above it is commonly of some shade of brown, but beneath it is invariably white, and so glossy as to be in much request for muffs and the trimming of ladies' dresses. Some species are remarkable for the crests or tufts, generally of a golden-chestnut colour, they assume in the breeding season. *P. auritus* is particularly remarkable in this respect, and when in its full nuptial attire presents an extraordinary aspect, the head (being

surrounded, as it were, by a mass of aureole, such as that with which painters adorn saintly chasubles), reflecting the rays of light, glitter, with a glory that passes description. All the species seem to have similar habits of modification. Water-wreeds are pulled from the bottom of the pool, and piled on a convenient foundation, often a semicircular growth of bog-bean (*Juncus*), till they form a large mass, in the centre of which a shallow cup is formed, and the eggs, with a chalky white shell almost equally pointed at each end, are laid—the parent covering them, whenever she has time to do so, before leaving the nest. Young Grebes are beautiful objects, clothed with black, white, and brown hair, disposed in streaks, and then bill often brilliantly tinted with orange or yellow. When taken from the nest and placed on dry ground, it is curious to observe the way in which they progress—using the wings almost as fore-feet, and suggesting the notion that they must be quadrupeds instead of birds. In water, however, they equal if not surpass their parents in the power of diving, which is a special accomplishment of all Grebes. (A N)

GRECO, Etr. Domenico Theotocopi, commonly called El Greco, was a native of Greece, where he was born about the year 1545. He appears to have studied art at Venice, where it is alleged that Titian was his master. The date of his removal to Spain is unknown, but in 1577 we find him at Toledo, engaged on one of his most celebrated paintings, that on the raising of the mament of Jesus. Until now he had been content to follow closely in the footsteps of the Venetian school, and he is generally admitted in his earlier works frequently to have approached the style of some of its best representatives; but in 1579, having been summoned, along with other artists of repute, by Philip II. to contribute to the decoration of the Escorial, he began to aim at greater originality of style with very unfortunate results. The first work in his new manner, having for its subject the martyrdom of St. Maurice, was executed in 1579, in this, as in all his subsequent productions, a dull ashen monotony of colour combines with stiff and unnatural drawing to produce an effect which is at no time very pleasant, and is sometimes absolutely repulsive. El Greco, however, continued to be held in considerable repute in the peninsula, sonnets in his honour are to be found in the writings both of Góngora and Pallavicino, and he became the founder of a school in which many of the disciples excelled their master. He practised sculpture and architecture as well as painting, and is said by Pacheco to have written with great learning and ability upon all these arts, none of his books, however, have come down to our time. He died at Toledo in 1625.

## GREECE

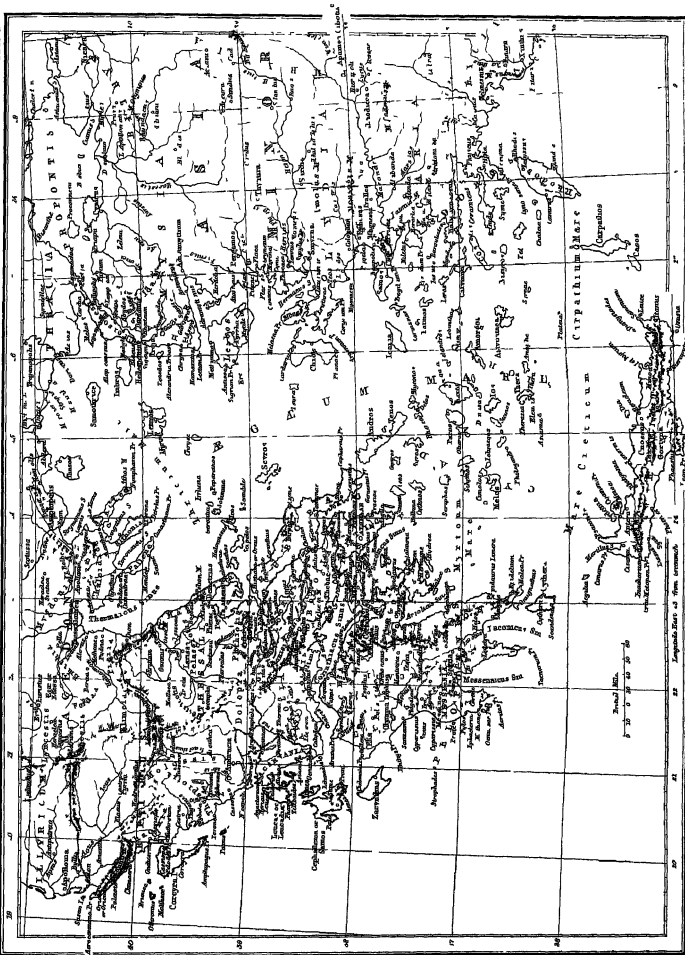
### PART I—GEOGRAPHY AND STATISTICS

**G**REECE is a European kingdom, occupying the southern portion of the most easterly of the three peninsulas which Europe projects into the Mediterranean. By its own inhabitants it is called Hellas, as it was also in antiquity, and the name Greece, by which in one form or other it is known in most European languages, was given to it by the Romans, and was not used by any Greek writer, so far as we know, before Aristotle. Why the Romans called it so is an obscure point, but the most probable and usually accepted explanation is that they named their first knowledge of the country from a tribe in the north-west of Greece who were called Greci (Γραικοί), and that they accordingly gave the name of that tribe to the whole country. The name Greece or Hellas has been applied at different times to territory of widely different extent. At first Hellas denoted

nothing but the spot in Thessaly where the tribe of Hellenes dwelt, and in later times, after Philip of Macedon obtained a seat at the Amphictyonic council, it meant the whole peninsula south of the Balkan mountains (Hæmus) including Macedonia and Thrace, but at the period of its greatest distinction it extended thence two regions, and was restricted to the part of the peninsula to the south of the Cambanian range and the islands of the surrounding seas. Its ancient limits, however, cannot be rigidly defined, for (1) its northern frontier seems never to have been precisely settled, some writers excluding Thessaly which was generally taken in, and others including part of Epirus which was generally left out, and (2) the name Hellas expressed not so much a geographical as an ethnological unity. It was the country of the Hellenes. Wherever Greeks settled

Plates I  
and II

Extent of  
ancient  
Greece  
Plate I









there was Hellas, and a Greek colony in Sicily or Africa was thought to participate as essentially in all that constituted Hellas as either Attica or Lacedæmon. Still the name was usually applied to the land which formed the geographical centre of the race, of which the greatest length was 250 miles and the greatest breadth 180, and which had an area, exclusive of Epirus (4690 square miles) but including Eubœa (1410 square miles), of 21,131 square miles. This territory comprised (1) Northern Greece, all north of the Malac (Zatonum) and Ambracian (Arta) Gulfs, (2) Central Greece, extending from these gulfs to the isthmus of Corinth, (3) the peninsula of the Peloponnesus (Morea) to the south of the isthmus, (4) the following islands,—Eubœa (Negropont) in the east, the Ionian Islands in the Ionian Sea on the west, Crete and Cyprus in the south, and the Cyclades and Sporades across the mouth of the Ægean from the south-east headlands of Attica and Eubœa. Continental Greece—*i. e.*, all the country now spoken, exclusive of the islands—consists of a series of natural cantons, hedged from one another and from the outer world by mountain ranges from 5000 to 8000 feet high, and so was almost by a physical necessity occupied in the times of its ancient political independence by seventeen separate states, none of which was larger than an ordinary English county. The whole eight states of the Peloponnesus covered less area than York and Lancaster together, and Attica, the most celebrated state of antiquity, was less than Cornwall. These states, which are noticed separately under the special headings, were—Thessaly, in North Greece, Acarnania, Ætolia, Locris, Doris, Phocis, Megaris, Boeotia, and Attica in Central Greece, and Corinthia, Sicyonia, Achaia, Elis, Messenia, Laconia, Argolis, and Arcadia in the Peloponnesus.

Modern Greece is of smaller extent, and its limits are strictly determined by the arrangement between Great Britain, France, Russia, and Turkey, concluded at Constantinople on the 21st [9th] July 1832, which finally settled the question of frontier between Greece and Turkey. It left to Turkey the fertile Greek-speaking province of Thessaly and part of Acarnania, and fixed the northern boundary of Greece at a line running from the Gulf of Arta (Sinus Ambracius) to the Gulf of Volo (S. Pagasæus), keeping along the crest of the Othrys mountain range. The pass of Khlomo was to belong entirely to Greece, and the fort of Punta (Actum) at the southern head of the Gulf of Arta was to continue to belong to Turkey, though Greek vessels were required to have free entry into the gulf. The Ionian islands, consisting of Corfu (Coryra), Paxo (Paxos), Santa Maura (Lepanto), Cephalonia, Thraque (Ithaca), and Zante (Zacynthum) the west coast of Greece, and Cerigo (Cythera) on the south, which had remained under British protectorate for 50 years, were voluntarily ceded by Britain to Greece in 1864, after the accession of King George. Modern Greece is not more than two thirds the size of Scotland, it is 200 miles long from north to south, and 180 broad from east to west, and has an entire area of 19,363 square miles, of which 8288 square miles are in the Morea, 7658 in the northern part of continental Greece, 2500 in the islands of the Ægean, and 1007 in the Ionian Islands.

Its most obvious geographical peculiarity is its remarkable richness in mountains, bays, and islands, which give it unexampled natural defences, unusual maritime facilities, and quite a peculiar variety of climate, vegetation, and scenery. In this respect it but gathers into a smaller page and expresses in distincter type the structural peculiarities of the continent to which it belongs. In the complexity of its make and the variety of its natural features Greece excels every country of Europe, as Europe excels every continent of the world. No part of Greece is 40 miles

from the sea or 10 from the hills. Though not much more than half the size of Portugal, it has a coast-line greater than that of Spain and Portugal together, and that coast-line is broken everywhere into all manner of gulfs, and bays, and inlets, affording a rich supply of good natural harbours. The country is divided by its mountain chains into a number of independent parts, the capture of one of which by an enemy is but a single step towards possession of the whole. The small basins of stable land between these hills maintained comparatively isolated populations, on account of the difficulty of inland intercommunication, and naturally developed that individuality of character, that local patriotism, and that political independence, which marked the ancient Greek communities. And the great variety of pursuit, interest, and stimulus which the geographical features of the country created could not fail to conduce to the uncommon mental vigour, quickness, and versatility which the people exhibited. The Greeks therefore owed their greatness largely to the country it was their fortune to dwell in.

The ruling feature in the mountain system of ancient <sup>Modern</sup> Greece—and, to a certain extent, in modern Greece also—is <sup>the</sup> the great chain of Pindus, which takes its rise in the Balkans (Hæmus), and runs like a backbone through the entire length of the northern half of the peninsula, throwing out various branches to the east and the west on its way. At about 40° N lat the Cambunians leave it and go east, forming the boundary between Macedonia (Roumelia) and Thessaly, and as they approach the coast they turn in a southerly direction as the lofty and famous Mount Olympus, the highest mountain in ancient Greece, and are continued at intervals, on the other side of the vale of Tempe, by Cesa (Kissavos), Pelion (Zagora), and the hills of Eubœa. At 39° the Othrys chain (Hæloro), whose chief elevation is the conical Mount Veluch (Tymphrestus), is sent out also to the east, and forms the northern bulwark of the present kingdom. A little further south the Gita range (Katsavithra) goes in the same direction, and reaches the Gulf of Zentum (Malac Gulf) at the celebrated pass of Themopylie. The Cambunian chain intersects Pindus at Mount Læmon (Zygo), and thence westward the chain passes under the name of Ténarus and the Ceranian Hills (Montes Acroceranum) till it enters the sea at the Acroceranian promontory (Cape Languetta). From the point of junction with the Othrys, the Pindus chain is continued southwards in a series of separate peaks—Parnassus (Iakura), Helicon, Otheron, Parnes, and Elymettus, on to the promontory of Sunium (Cape Colonna) in the south-east of Attica. Farther divides Attica from Boeotia. The mountains of the Morea have no connexion with the mountain system of Northern Greece, they do not run in chains, but rather cluster in knots. The most important of these are Ziria (Cyllene), Khlomos, Olmos, and the range of Pentedaktylon (Taygetus), which stretches from the centre of Arcadia through the length of Laconia to Cape Matapan (Ténarum), and is the most imposing of all the mountains of Greece. The hegemony of Sparta in the Peloponnesus is attributed by some to its possessing both sides of the chain. Its highest point is Mount St. Elias, called, like several other Greek mountains, after the prophet Elijah. None of the mountains of Greece is within the line of perpetual snow, though the tops of several are white for some months in the year. What is peculiar to Greece is not the presence of any one hill of pre-eminent height, but the great number it possesses of considerable and nearly equal elevation. Modern Greece has no summit so high as Olympus (9754 feet), but within its narrow area it has twenty-six hills above 5000 feet, of which eight are above 7000 feet—Parnassus (8668), Taygetus (7904), Tymphrestus (7610), Ceta (7071), the three summits of Cyllene in Arcadia (7788), and Corax

in Attolia. The noted fortified hills of Greece were Aegionthos (1600 feet) which guards the isthmus, Ithome (2631 feet) at Messene, Laitra (900 feet) at Argos, and the Acropolis (150) at Athens.

Greece has few rivers, and the small, rapid, mud, as a rule, unbridled, as they could not help being in a country where they rise in high mountains and have no space to grow in before they reach the sea. They are either perennial rivers or torrents, the white beds of the latter being dry in summer, and only filled with water after the autumn rains. The chief rivers (none of which are navigable) are the Hellad (Aphelous) in Pithiuri, the Aspio Potamo (Achelous) in Achaia, and the Bonifis (Alpheus) and Vasiliko (Eurotas) in the Morea. Of the famous rivers of Attolia, the one, the Ilissus, is only a chain of pools all summer, and the other, the Cephissus, though never absolutely dry, does not reach the sea, but is drawn off in numerous artificial channels to irrigate the neighbouring olive groves. The waters of both are clean and delicious to the taste. A frequent peculiarity of the Greek rivers is their sudden disappearance in subterranean channels and reappearance on the surface again, such as gave rise to the fabled course of the Alpheus under the sea, and its emergence again in the fountain of Arethusa in Syracuse. Some of these channels—"Kataklysmoi"—are merely covered with herbage and gravel in the bottom, but others are large caverns through which the course of the river may be easily followed. Floods are frequent, especially in autumn, and natural fountains abound and gush out even from the tops of the hills. Agniphy rises high up among the peaks of Helion, and Founos flows from the summit of Aegionthos. It is surprising that there are no waterfalls in Greece, the only one worth mentioning being the famous Styx in Arcadia, which has a fall of 500 feet. During part of the year it is lost in the snow, and it is at all times almost inaccessible. Lakes are numerous, but few are of any size, and many merely marshes in summer. The largest are Euboea in Achaia, Copais in Boeotia, and Stymphalia in Arcadia.

**Plains.** The valleys are generally narrow, and the plains small in extent, deep basins walled in among the hills or more free at the mouths of the rivers. The principal plains are those of Thessaly (which is not in modern Greece), Boeotia, Messene, Argos, and Marathon. The bottom of these plains consists of an alluvial soil, the most fertile in Greece. In some of the mountainous regions, especially in the Morea, are extensive table-lands. The plain of Mantinea is 3000 feet high, and the upland district of Sparta, between Sparta and Tegea, is in some parts 3000 feet.

**Coast.** Strabo said that the guiding thing in the geography of Greece was the sea, which presses in upon it at all parts with a thousand arms. From the Gulf of Asia on the one side to the Gulf of Volo on the other the coast is indented with a succession of natural bays and gulfs. The most important are the Gulfs of Argos (Saronicus) and Lepanto (Cotinthiacus), which come in between the Morea and the northern mainland of Greece,—the first from the Aegean, the second from the Ionian Sea,—and are only prevented from joining their waters by the high land of the narrow isthmus of Corinth (3 miles wide). The outer portion of the Gulf of Lepanto is called the Gulf of Patras, and the inner part the Bay of Corinth, and a narrow bay on the north side of the same gulf, called the Bay of Salona, penetrates northwards into Phocis so far that it is within 24 geographical miles of the Gulf of Zeytoun on the north-east coast of Greece. The width of the entrance to the gulf of Lepanto is subject to annual changes, which are ascribed to the formation of alluvial deposits by certain marine currents, and their removal again by others. At

the time of the Peloponnesian war this channel was 1200 yards broad, in the time of Shabo it was only 850, and in our own day it has again increased to 2200. On the coast of the Morea there are several large gulfs, that of Arcadia (Cyparissus) on the west, Kalamata (Messeniacus) and Kolokythia (Laconicus) on the south, and Nauplia (Argolicus) on the east. Then between Euboea and the mainland is the channel of Talanti (Euboicum Mare) and the channel of Egripus, which are connected by the strait of Egripus (Euripus). This strait, which is spanned by a bridge, is 120 feet wide, and is remarkable for the unexpected suddenness of its tides, which has puzzled seamen and modern alike. The current runs at the rate of 8 miles an hour, but continues only for a short time in one direction, changing its course, it is said, ten or twelve times in a day.

There are no volcanoes on the mainland of Greece, but everywhere traces of volcanic action and frequently visitations of earthquakes, for it lies near a centre of volcanic agency, the island of Santorini, which has been within recent years in a state of eruption. There is an extinct crater at Mount Laphystium in Boeotia. The mountain of Metheana, on the coast of Argolis, was produced by a volcanic eruption in 282 B.C. An earthquake laid Thebes in ruins in 1593, another destroyed every house in Corinth in 1858, and a third filled up the Casteion spring in 1870. There are hot springs at Thermopylae and other places, which are used for sanitary purposes. Various parts of the coast exhibit indications of upheaval within historical times. On the coast of Elis four rocky islets are now joined to the land, which were separate from it in the days of ancient Greece. There are traces of earlier sea beaches at Corinth, and on the coast of the Morea, and at the mouth of the Hellada. The land has gained so much that the pass of Thermopylae, which was extremely narrow in the time of Leonidas and his three hundred, is now wide enough for the motions of a whole army.

The whole chain of the Pindus and some of the mountainous parts of the Morea are composed of primitive rocks,—granite, serpentine, porphyry, mica, and other schists,—but greater part of the country consists of Secondary formations, especially of a compact grey limestone, which hardens often into the purest marble. All Panassus and Helicon consist of this rock. In the vicinity of Athens the limestone rests on mica schist, which prevails also in other parts of Attica, and in Buboea, Laconia, and the Cyclades. Clay slate is found in some districts, and coal, equal to two-thirds of an equal weight of Newcastle coal, is found at Kumi in Euboea, and of an inferior quality at Maroneia in Boeotia. Greece is not rich in minerals. Gold exists, but not in sufficient quantity to cover the expense of working. Copper is abundant, and silver, lead, iron, emery, antimony, cobalt, manganese, quarts, and salt are found. Gypsum and porphyry are quarried. Marble is abundant, the chief kinds being the white marble of Pentelcus, of which the Parthenon was made, the blue marble of Hymettus, the green and red marble of the Morea, and the green and white of Caryste. In Mount Taygetos are beds of verd antique jasper.

The scenery of Greece excites the warmest admiration of every class of travellers, mainly from three causes—(1) its unusually rich variety, (2) its exquisite sensibility to every modification of the light of the sky, and (3) the graceful and almost severely classical outline of its hills.

The vegetation of Greece may be described as belonging to the four distinct zones. (1) Up to 500 feet above the sea is a region containing growing corn, vines, olives, oranges, melons, pomegranates, and other fruits, (2) from 1500 feet to 3500 feet is the region of the oak, (3) from 3500 feet to 8000 feet is the region of the beech and pine, interspersed still with a few corn fields, (4) above 8000 feet is a sub-alpine region yielding only a few wild plants.

Most travellers are struck with the comparative security of wood in Greece. But though most of the ancient forests have disappeared, none of the *saules* still remains wooded there travellers have observed a close cover on 15 per cent of it was under forest in 1860, which is only 1 per cent in 1870, and in 12 per cent of it was still in the Dorian. The most common tree is the pine, but the oak, plane, walnut, chestnut, and olive are also abundant. The beech is said to be a modern invader from the north, where it covers the whole of two Pindus ranges, and some places on Mount Pelion, which was covered with other kinds of trees in historical times, the beech seems now to have driven them entirely out. The palm thrives in Messenia, and finds a home even in Attica. Myrtle flourishes in the west, and olives are the chief article of the olive belt.

## Animal

The wild animals said to be found occasionally in Greece are the bear, wolf, leop. lynx, wild cat, jackal, and fox. The wild goat, which is distinguished from the rest of Europe, finds a first asylum in some of the islands of the Greek archipelago. Game is abundant,—red deer, fallow deer, roe, hares, rabbits. It is said that hares and rabbits never occupy the same island, except in the case of Andros, where the latter is found in the north and the rabbit in the south. The birds are the eagle, vulture, hawk, owl, hoopoe, egret, pelican, pheasant, bustard, p. bird, woodcock, nightingale, &c. Quails come in April. The domestic animals are the horse, ox, ass, mule, sheep, goats, pig, dog, and poultry. Poisonous snakes are only found in some few places, and mosquitoes and gnats are everywhere sources of annoyance.

## Climate

The climate of Greece, which ancient writers praised for its equableness, presents to modern observers two peculiarities which do not possess that character. One is a greater intensity of heat in summer and of cold in winter than obtains in Spain, Italy, and other countries which lie within the same latitudes, and are even less open to the contrary influences of the sea. The peculiarity is due to the exposure of the country to the cold winds from the snow hills in close proximity to it on the north, and to the easterly success from the sands of Africa on the south. The other peculiarity is the remarkable level climate, and rapid transition which the climate manifests, and which is a natural effect of the diversity of the ground which configuration. The remark of Gell is often quoted, that in travelling through the More in March he found summer in Messenia, spring in Laconia, and winter in Argolis, without moving beyond a radius of 50 miles. There is great diversity in the rainfall in different parts of Greece. As a rule, rain is more prevalent in the north than in the south, which accounts for the fertile look of the hills of Elis and the barren aspect of those of Argolis. Attica is the driest part of Greece, and Boeotia has still the least heavy moist atmosphere it had of old, and, what is remarkable, the old contrast between the people of those two provinces, which was proverbial when times were Greek by blood, still holds good when they are both certainly Albanian, the Atticans of the present day being still quick and lively, and the Boeotians dull and phlegmatic. According to statistics kept by Julius Schmidt, director of the observatory at Athens, and published in his *Beitrag zur physikalischen Geographie von Griechenland* (1864-70), there were in 1869 only twenty five days on which enough rain fell to merit to be measured by the rain gauge. The mean annual temperature of Greece is 64° Fahr. The coldest months of the year are January and February. Snow seldom falls in Athens. The coast is at a considerable height in March, and is out in May and olive buds in March, and almonds are then in blossom. Winters are, however, severe on the tablelands, and in some of the plains of the interior which are shaded from sun and sea by high hills. Dr. Kuss was informed that the peasants at the foot of Cithæron, in Boeotia, were confined to their houses sometimes for several weeks by snow. Kuss says the north wind blows ten months of the year, but Schmidt's statistics show that to be an exaggeration, as he really both westerly and southerly winds every month, though now the one is more prevalent and now the other. The bird winds (so called because they bring the birds of passage) are a periodical variety of the south-west, and blow thirty days from the end of April to the end of June, and the cold winds from the north-east, which blow regularly about the time of the dog days, and temper the heat of that season in the whole region of the Archipelago. Columbus says they began on the 1st August and continue till the 9th, and Kuss, on the other hand, says they begin in July and blow for fifty five days (*Atlas*, i. 286), but neither of those statements is borne out by Schmidt's figures. In 1869 the only winds which blew at Athens during July and August were north-east and south-west, and out of the sixty two days the north-east blew for thirty-four, and the south-west for twenty-eight,—the north-east blowing twenty-two days in July and twelve in August, and the south-west nine in July and nine in August. Malaria prevails largely from the neglected drainage and the consequent exhalation of miasma in many parts, and the malaria causes fever, which is very fatal among children, and leaves debilitating effects in the adults, and altogether imposes a very serious check on the growth of the population of the country.

The modern Greeks are of very composite origin, yet are inhab. an extremely compact and homogeneous people. Out of twenty the million and a half which constitute the present population of the country, only 67,911 speak any other language than Greek, and only 16,081 profess any other religion than the Orthodox, and all draw well together, glowing with one another in the same manner, of a common divergence, and sharing in the same ambition of a great future. There are in the narrow bounds of Greece three distinct races, speaking different languages, wearing different costumes, observing different customs, and holding little social intercourse with one another. These races are the Greek, the Albanian, and the Wallachian. All three are probably much mixed in blood, and in fact, the descent of each of them has been a very vexed problem in ethnology. But, on the whole, the suggestion of Freeman seems the most likely account of the matter,—that, taking them all in all, these three races are the direct representatives of the three races which occupied Greek territory at the time of its conquest by the Romans. Since that time their blood has certainly been mingled with other elements, but still substantially the base of the modern Greek is the ancient Greek, the base of the modern Albanian is the ancient Illyrian, and the base of the modern Wallachian is the ancient Thracian.

Of these races the least numerous in Greece is the Wallachian or Roumanian. They are found chiefly in the mountainous regions in the northern parts of Greece, on the slopes of Othrys, in the neighbourhood of Zanteon, on the hills of Acarnania and Ætolia, and even so far south as the banks of the Ægean Cephissus. They pursue a nomadic shepherd life, wear black sheep capotes made to imitate sheep skin, and speak Roumanian, a modified Latin,—the language of their race, and also Greek, the language of the country. They belong to the Greek Church, and sometimes marry Greek girls, but almost never give their own daughters in marriage to Greeks. In 1861 Finlay says there were 50,000 Wallachians in the modern kingdom of Greece, but they are rapidly becoming completely Hellenized, and in 1870 there were only 1317 Wallachians in Greece who did not speak Greek. Most of the brigands that used to infest Greece were Wallachians.

The Albanians, Skripetia (s. r. Highlanders), or Arnauts, occupy at present more than a fourth of modern Greece,—all Attica and Megara (except the capitals), most part of Boeotia and part of Locria, the southern half of Euboea, part of Ægina and Andros, the whole of the islands of Salamis, Paros, Hydra, and Speszia, and considerable districts in Argolis, Sicyonia, Aetolia, Laconia, Messenia, and Elis. They speak a language of their own, which certainly belongs to the Aryan family, but philologists are at a loss whether to count it an independent member of the family, or merely a corruption of one of the better known branches. In districts where they exist in small bodies they are losing their own tongue and adopting Greek, but in places like Attica and Hydra, where they exist in larger numbers, they still keep it up, and if the men understand Greek the women do not. In 1861 Finlay states there were 300,000 Albanians in Greece, and in 1870 there were only 37,598 left who did not speak Greek. The Albanians who dwell in Greece all belong to the Greek Church. They are mostly agriculturalists, and seem to care little for political or professional life. They wear a peculiar dress, which was adopted by them mostly from the Slavs, and was regarded as the national costume of Greece after the Revolution,—a red fez, a silk jacket embroidered with gold, a white frustanella or petticoat, and gaiters.

The rest of the population, comprising the great bulk of it, are Greeks,—a people speaking the Greek language, practising the Greek rite, and claiming descent from the



ancient Greek race. This claim, which seems to rest naturally on the obvious evidence of language, and feature, was vainly contested on historical grounds, by Fallmerayer, who held that during the Slavonic occupation of the country the ancient Greeks were completely exterminated, and that the present inhabitants are purely Slavonic. By-antized. But his arguments have been conclusively confuted by Hoff, Finlay, and others, and it may be said to be now universally admitted that, while the blood of the population contains a considerable Slav admixture, its base is still that of the ancient race of Hellenes.

It is curious that the two sections of the population of Greece whom Fallmerayer excluded with the purest Greek descent—the Mannoites, and the Tshakones, who inhabit the two mountain ranges of Læconia—are thought by Hoff to be the only two remnants of the Slavs that still exist. The Tshakones, whose name is commonly supposed, contrary to all etymological analogy, to be a corruption of Læconia, speak a peculiar dialect of Greek, and still live very much by themselves. They now occupy only seven villages, and number 1500 families. The Mannoites, celebrated by Byron, live in Mania, on the western mountain chain of Læconia. They also speak a peculiar dialect, and are remarkable for their personal beauty and independent spirit. Their houses are fortified keep, and they were never subdued by the Turks. They practice the vendetta, but are simple and truthful above their neighbours.

Other nationalities are represented in Greece, but so slightly as hardly to be worth mentioning. They numbered only 28,126 in all in 1870. The Jews, who were never favoured by the Greeks, are found only in the Ionian Islands, where they obtained a footing during the British protectorate, and numbered, in 1870, 2338. Important remains of the old Venetian colonists still exist in the Ionian and some of the other islands.

In physique, the Greeks are generally tall and well made, of pelagic rather than negro, with oval face, long and arched nose, fine teeth, and eyes full of animation. Obesity is unknown, and their form is supple, graceful in its movements, and remains erect and elastic till past the age of 70. The best physical types are to be found in the islands and in some parts of the Morea, and there, many travellers remark, you may meet every day in the streets or highways women and boys who might have formed the models of Phidias.

National character

The national character of the Greeks is a matter upon which authorities take very contrary views, some idealizing them foolishly, and others depreciating them most unjustly. They seem to have the faults and the excellences of their famous ancestors. They have their quickness of parts and their moderation of character. They are ingenuitous, full of mental activity, fond of excitement, as keen for discussion as in the days of Plato, and as eager after novelty as in those of Paul. Their thirst for knowledge is indeed quite remarkable, as well as their aptness to learn. Boys will put themselves to any discomfort in order to get to school; students at the university never missed a day from their classes during the Revolution of 1833, but regularly attended the lectures with the aims of the national guard in their hands, and domestic servants are often found in spare hours learning their letters or doing their sums. They excel in tact, in estimation, in—what Tuckerman calls the most distinctive thing about them—fineness, which degenerates often into cunning, that weapon of the weak which could not fail to be forged under their long Turkish oppression. They are contentious and very sunny in disposition, and entirely strangers to melancholy, so that both suicide and insanity are unknown among them. They are the most temperate of Christian nations, and the chastest. Though they make

a good deal of strong wine, they drink little, and they eat as sparingly as they drink. The common people live on one meal a day, and the richer on two, and an English labourer will consume at one meal what would serve a Greek family of six for the day. A little maize and vegetables steeped in oil make the staple fare. Their rate of illegitimacy is lower than that of any other European country, which may perhaps be ascribed to the fact that Greece is the only country in Europe where the males outnumber the females, and that this circumstance combines with the frugal habits of living of the people to encourage early marriages. In other countries from 3 to 22 per cent of the births are illegitimate, in Greece only 1.40 per cent are so. Two striking characteristics of the Greeks are their patriotism,—their local attachment to their country, which stands out in the stronger relief because it is a quality in which their neighbours the Turks are entirely wanting,—and their love not only of liberty but specially of equality. They are in spirit the most democratic European nation. They have no nobility—as of old, to be a Greek is itself to be noble, and Mahaffy says that “every common male-boy is a gentleman (*aristos*) and fully your equal, sitting in the room at meals, and joining in the conversation at dinner,” and such is their jealousy of social superlatives that he was often told by Greeks that the only reason why they tolerated a foreign king was that they could not endure to be under the rule of themselves. It is the same temper as outraged Aristides, and doubtless it springs largely from their vanity and egotism, which even the most favourable witnesses own to be among their prominent faults. They have a deep belief, which they take no pains to conceal, in their own superiority over other nations, and the point in which they conceive their superiority more especially to dwell is in their intellectual gifts. There are two other qualities in which the Greeks are strong, and which, though they are often abused, are yet main agents in human advancement,—ambition and the love of money. These have given a stimulus to their commerce, and made them thrifty and saving. The faults of which the Greeks are oftenest accused are cowardice and dishonesty, and both charges are equally unwarranted. Their bravery was proved on many a field during the War of Independence. Dishonesty is not a national vice, though it seems certainly to be characteristic of the classes of Greeks who more than the rest are thrown under the observation of foreigners—particularly the low mongrel Greeks of the Levant ports and the rural social classes of Greece, who have consequently helped to blacken the reputation of their countrymen in general.

The Greeks have few peculiar customs worth noting. Customs

Their national costume is now giving place almost universally to the less picturesque dress of the French. They still adhere to the unaltered calendar, and their dates are accordingly calculated according to old style. They marry early,—young women from thirteen years of age to fifteen, and young men from sixteen to twenty. The marriage is arranged by the parents of the parties, is in all cases a religious ceremony, and may be severed by legal divorce. One is allowed to marry three times, but a fourth marriage is forbidden. The bride brings a dowry—houses, furniture, or money—and many unmarried girls wear their whole dowry in pieces of money as a head-dress. The prohibited degrees are those of canon law.

The population of Greece in 1879, when the last census was taken, was 1,879,775, or an average of 84 persons to the square mile. The islands are the most densely peopled portions of the kingdom, especially the Ionian Islands, which have a population of 331,174, or 229 to the square mile. In continental Greece the rate is only 69 per square mile, and in the Morea 89. Greece is more thinly peopled

than any country of Europe, except Russia and Sweden. The population has doubled since 1839. It was then (exclusive of the Ionian Islands) only 612,698 and it is now (also excluding the Ionian Islands) 1,448,601. The males outnumber the females in Greece by 82,385. The only reason we have seen assigned for this is that large numbers of the women go out of the country as domestic servants, and are not counted in the census, while sailors, who are also at work out of the country, are counted. But this seems an inadequate explanation, for in 1870 the number of sailors not present in the country was only 5180. The disproportion between men and women appears, too, to be increasing, for there were 50,468 more men than women in Greece in 1870, when the whole population was 230,000 less than it was in 1879. The average birth-rate for the four years 1870-73 was 1 in 34, the average death-rate for the same period was 1 in 45. The largest towns in Greece are—Athens, with a population in 1870 of 59,000, Piræus, with 26,000, Corfu, with 24,000, Heliopolis or Syra, 21,000, Zante, with 20,500, Chalcis, 11,000, Sparta, with 10,700, and Argos, with 10,600.

The kingdom of Greece is an hereditary constitutional monarchy, descending by primogeniture from male to male, female succession being only allowed in the event of the absolute failure of legitimate heirs male. The title of the sovereign at first (according to the convention of London, May 1839) was king of Greece, but it was altered by the conference of London, August 1863, to king of the Hellenes. The king attains his majority at eighteen years of age. Both he and the heir-apparent are required to belong to the Greek orthodox church, but a special exception is made for the present king, who is a Lutheran. The king receives an annual income of £52,179, of which £40,179 comes from the civil list, and £12,000 from personal donations of £4,000 from each of the three protecting powers. He has a palace in Athens—built by Otto at a cost of £600,000—and a summer residence at Corfu. The legislative power is shared by the king with a single chamber called the *boule*,—a house of representatives which is elected for four years by the people, its numbers cannot fall below 150, and amounted in 1873 to 188. The election is by universal (manhood) suffrage, protected by the ballot. The *boule* elects its own president, and its members are paid £9 a month during the session. The executive is vested in the king, who, however, is personally irresponsible, and rules by ministers chosen by himself and responsible to the legislature, in whose deliberations they also take part. They are seven in number, and their several departments are of administration—foreign affairs, home affairs, justice, finance, education and worship, army, and navy. A minister's salary is £428 a year. The king appoints all public officials,—civil, naval, and military,—sanctions and proclaims laws, calls and prorogues parliament, grants pardon or amnesty, coins money, and confers decorations. There are 18,860 public offices in the patronage of the ministry, and, as in America, a large number of them change hands with every change of administration. The effect of this in a country where politics is an open profession, and where there is a plethora of well-educated men who can find nothing to do, has been to poison political life to an unusual degree with the vice of place-hunting,—to create several active political parties in the state, which, instead of being the representatives of any policy or cause, tend too much to degenerate into mere rings of post-mortem, and conduce, by their constant strife, to an excessive frequency of ministerial crises which greatly checks the national progress of the country.

For purposes of local government Greece is divided into

13 nomarchies, under officers called nomarchs, whose duties correspond with those of the French prefects, the nomarchies are subdivided into 59 eparchies, under eparchs, corresponding to French sub-prefects, and the eparchies are further subdivided into 351 demarchies, under demarchs or mayors. The following is a list of the nomarchies, with their areas, populations, and capitals—

	sq Mils	Pop in 1870	Capitals
A In Northern Greece—			
1 Attica and Boeotia	2181	185,364	Athens
2 Eubœa	1774	85,136	Chalkis
3 Phthiotis and Phœtia	2059	123,440	Lamia
4 Acarnania and Elis	3025	138,411	Messolonghi
B In Middle—			
5 Achaia and Elis	1909	181,632	Piræus
6 Arcadia	2028	148,005	Tripolitis
7 Laconia	1878	121,116	Sparta
8 Messenia	1326	135,700	Kalamata
9 Argolis and Corinthia	1448	138,081	Nauplia
C In the Islands—			
10 Cyclades	926	182,093	Syros
11 Corfu	427	106,109	Corfu
12 Cephalonia	402	80,513	Augustopolis
13 Zante	377	44,523	Zante

The demarchs are elected by the people for four years, the nomarchs and eparchs are elected by the Government without fixed terms. The nomarchs are assisted in the administration of the province by a council elected by universal secret suffrage for four years, which manages the police, roads, and other local business, and imposes the assessments. The local accounts must be sent once a year to Athens to be audited by a court of Government officials. The demarchies vary in size, but, in 1861, out of 280 that then existed, only 67 were under 2000 in population, and only 7 above 10,000.

Greece has an admirable legal system, which is the one judicial good thing it has got from the Byzantines. It is based on system the old Roman law, with modifications drawn from the Bavarian and French. Liberty of person and domicile is inviolate, no one can be apprehended, no house can be entered, and no letter can be opened without a judicial warrant. Criminal and political offences and delinquencies of the press are tried by jury. The commercial code is identical with that of France. The civil law is administered by a supreme court of cassation (the *Areopagus*), 4 courts of appeal, 17 courts of first instance, with jurisdiction up to 600 drachmas, 191 judges of the peace, with jurisdiction up to 50 drachmas, or, with an appeal, to 300 drachmas, and 4 commercial courts (at Syra, Nafplia, Patras, and Corfu), with jurisdiction up to 800 drachmas. To be a judge, it is necessary to have graduated as doctor of laws at Athens or some other European university, a judge cannot hold any other salaried appointment at the same time except that of professor in the university. Judges are appointed by the crown, and are as yet removable. Criminal courts are held in connexion with those of the peace, of first instance, and of appeal, in the last the judicial authority is vested in a jury of twelve, with three accessory judges selected from those of the inferior courts, who apply the law in accordance with the jury's verdict. The crown is prosecutor in all criminal cases, and punishments are by fines, imprisonment, and, in the case of capital offences, death by guillotine. The prisons are extremely defective in construction and administration, except that of Corfu, improvements are often projected but constantly put off from want of funds to carry them out. There is no Habeas Corpus Act, and an accused person may be detained indefinitely before being brought to trial. Judicial commissions and extraordinary courts of judicature cannot be established under any pretext.

The courts of law are open to the public, except when the interests of good morals or public order demand the contrary. Naval and military offences are tried by naval and military courts, and offences of ministers of the crown by special courts, in accordance with the constitution of 1861.

Crime is proportionately less common in Greece than elsewhere, for the people are more temperate, and, on the whole, more contented. The principal Greek crime is—viz., as we may happily now say, was—brigandage, the form of robbery which is natural to a mountainous and thinly populated country without roads. According to the latest consular report, the country is at present completely free from brigands. But it will never be secure against their reappearance until it obtains good roads, which will operate against the brigands both by tending to increase the rural population and by affording better facilities for the capture of criminals.

**Army.** The strength of the Greek army on a peace footing was, at the census in 1870, 13,400, including upwards of 2000 gendarmes, but since the Servian war with the Turks in 1876 the Government has resolved to raise it to 24,370, exclusive of 2508 mounted gendarmes. This, with the national guard and the reserves and volunteers, would make their total strength on a war footing over 150,000. The national guard is composed of all citizens capable of serving and under the age of 50, it is designed for purposes of defence only. The reserves consist of those who have served out their time in the regular army. The army is recruited by lot from all capable of serving, with the alternative, which is largely used, of providing a substitute, and the period of service is three years in the line, three years in the first reserve, and six in the second.

**Navy.** The navy consists of two small iron-hulled and a few wooden gunboats and vessels for coast-guard purposes, which are manned by 2500 men, in all, as a rule, by conscription from the inhabitants of the coast, though volunteering is encouraged. The Greek flag is a white cross on blue ground—the Byzantine colour—and the Greek cross.

**Religion.** The religion of the people and of the state is that of the Orthodox Greek Church. In fact, the Greek rite is not only the national religion, but perhaps the deepest and most creative factor in the nationality of Greece itself. Men of Greek blood who do not belong to the Greek Church do not identify themselves with the Greek people. The Moslems of Crete were the sternest oppressors the Greeks knew, and the Latins of Syon sided at the revolution with the Turks, yet both were of the purest Greek descent. And what makes the Greek and Slav and Wallach of the modern kingdom all equally Greek in their sympathies to-day is their common profession of the Greek rite. But all other religions are tolerated in Greece. There is a Moslem mosque at Chalcis, there is a Jewish synagogue at Corfu, and, whatever a man's religion may be, it entails on him in Greece no civil disabilities of any kind. A Catholic or a Mahometan may rise to the highest offices of state, both Turks and Jews are at present members of municipal councils, and Jews and Catholics are buried in the same cemetery with the Orthodox at Athens. The Church of Greece, which became virtually independent at the time of the revolution, was organized upon the model of the Russian Church. Its supreme power is vested in a synod consisting of five members, who are appointed annually by the king, and the majority of whom must be laymen. The metropolitan (archbishop of Athens) is *ex officio* president, two royal commissioners attend and deliberate without voting, and the synod's resolutions require to be confirmed by them in the king's name. In all purely spiritual matters the synod has entire independence, but on questions having a civil side—as marriage,

divorce, excommunication of laymen, the appointment of feasts and fasts, and the religious censorship of the press and of religious journals,—it can only act in concert with the Government. Excluding the Ionian Islands, which have five archbishoprics, there are eleven archbishoprics and thirteen bishops in Greece, who are chosen by the king out of a list of three candidates presented by the synod, and can only be deposed by common consent of king and synod, and in conformity with canon law. The clergy numbered 6103 in 1861. The immense majority of the population belongs to the Greek Church. In 1870 the number of other Christians in Greece was 12,585, most of whom were Roman Catholics, of Jews, 2552, and of all other religions, 917. There are two Roman Catholic archbishoprics and four bishops. The revenue from the property of the Greek Church in 1877 was £10,371. The prelates receive a salary from the state,—the bishops £145, and the archbishops £180. The inferior clergy receive none, but are entirely dependent on the fees they earn for various spiritual services and superstitious observances,—praying for the sick, exorcising the evil eye, consecrating a new house or fishing boat, or purifying one bought from a Turk. There are 1600 monks and 1600 nuns in Greece.

Popular education is widely diffused in Greece. It was Eduard Reuss, the first of the newly-liberated people, and has been tenaciously fostered ever since, till they have an exceedingly complete national system of education, which is perhaps the most striking product of the new kingdom. The latest statistics we have on the subject are those of the year 1872, given in Watson's report of that year (*Reports of His Majesty's Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs, No. 1, 1872*). From these figures we learn that there were then 1141 primary or denotive schools, 136 grammar or Hellenic schools, 7 gymnasia, and finally, the crown of the whole, the university of Athens, besides 6 nautical schools, a polytechnic school, 4 theological seminaries of the Greek Church, and various private institutions maintained by Catholic or Protestant societies. At the primary schools, the usual elementary branches only are taught,—reading, writing, arithmetic, the catechism, grammar, history, geography, natural history, agriculture, and drawing. In the Hellenic schools instruction is given besides in the least difficult of the ancient Greek authors, and in the gymnasia, a more thorough acquaintance is made with ancient Greek, and with Latin and French, mathematics, logic, anatomy, physics, and natural history. The teachers of the primary schools are educated at a training institution in Athens, those of the Hellenic schools must be licentiates of a university, and those of the gymnasia must have the degree of Ph.D. The primary schools are maintained at the expense of the communes, with a subsidy, in certain particular cases, from the state. The total amount spent by the communes for this object comes to about one-sixth part of their income, or over £40,000 in all, and the whole Government grant for primary education in 1873 was £4171. At these schools a small fee is charged, running from 1d to 3d a month, from all who are able to pay it. The grammar schools, the gymnasia, and the university are maintained entirely by the state, the expense in 1877 exceeding £35,000 for the two classes of secondary schools, and £18,000 for the university, at those schools and the university education is entirely gratuitous, and is furthermore encouraged by the existence of various exhibitions for meritorious pupils, won by competition. The university was erected at a cost of £10,000, raised by private subscription from Greeks all over the world, and is furnished with excellent laboratories and museums, a library of 150,000 volumes, medical hospitals, an astronomical observatory, and a botanical garden. It has 4 faculties—arts, medicine, law, and theology—52 pro-

fessors, 12 fellows, and, after a curriculum of 1 year, confers the degree of licentiate and doctor, which are indispensable for those who contemplate becoming lawyers, medical men, or teachers in the higher schools. It was opened in 1845 with 52 students, in 1854 it had 643, it now has 1400. In 1872 it had 1244,—of whom 26 were students of theology, 622 of law, 433 of medicine, 120 of arts, and 53 of pharmacy. The small number of theological students is partly accounted for by the existence of four other theological seminaries in Greece, supported by private funds,—one at Athens and three in the provinces,—and partly by the scandalous neglect of clerical education that obtains in Greece. In 1867 there were only 115 students at these four theological seminaries. A large proportion of the students at the university have always been foreign Greeks, for professional men are trained there not only for Greece itself but for the whole region of the Levant. Out of the 1244 students who attended in 1872, 219 were Greeks from foreign parts,—124 of these being students of medicine, 66 of law, and 6 of theology. No one is admitted as a student who has not completed his education at a gymnasium. The salary of a professor hardly amounts to £200 a year. There is no school inspection beyond that of the demarch.

Education is by law compulsory for children from seven to twelve years of age, but this law is not enforced, for it does not require to be, and the results of education in Greece are the more remarkable as being the fruits of what is practically purely voluntary attendance. Every eighteenth person in Greece is at school, in Russia only every seventy-seventh is so. In 1872 the total number of pupils was 81,197,—of whom 65,111 were males and only 16,086 females. Boys and girls are taught at separate schools, of the primary schools, 942 are for boys, with 1000 male teachers and 52,943 pupils, and only 199 for girls, with 221 female teachers and 11,036 pupils. The Hellenic schools and gymnasia are for boys only, and in 1872 had 6065 and 1942 pupils respectively. There are, however, various private schools for girls, with an aggregate attendance of 5000. These figures show that there is a serious defect in female education, for which neither the Government of Greece nor the people have due solicitude. It ought to be mentioned, however, that there is one phase of female education in which Greece is in advance of many other European countries, for the medical school of Athens is open to female students, who numbered 42 in 1879.

Index  
trees

We have no exact statistics as to the numbers engaged in each branch of industry severally, but Bikalas gives in the *Journal of the Statistical Society of London* for 1868 an estimate for the year 1861, according to which nearly half the population (48·37 per cent.) were agriculturists and shepherds, and more than a third of the remainder (or 18·66 per cent. of the whole population) in the liberal professions. 13·87 per cent were engaged in industrial pursuits, 8·43 per cent in trade, 5·40 per cent were domestic servants, and only 4·27 per cent were persons of independent means. Government officials and their families comprise a twelfth part of the population. There is great want of employments with considerable capital, and the amount of labour done and wages earned by the workmen is much diminished by the extraordinary number of ecclesiastical holidays they are required to observe. There are 195 fast days in Greece, and the number of working days in the year never exceeds 265. There are no paupers in Greece, no poor-law or poor rate, and no religious associations for charitable purposes. Beggars are very rare, and absolute destitution may be said not to exist.

Agric.  
cultures

Agriculture is still in its infancy. A large proportion of its area is uncultivated, though it obtains in any country

in Europe except Russia, but that is explained by the unusually large part of it which is occupied by mountous land. We have no exact statistics since 1860, but then only one seventh was under cultivation. Its entire area (exclusive of the Ionian Islands, not then part of it) was 17,499,218 stremas,—a stremas being a little over a quarter of an acre. Of these only 17,844,000 were capable of cultivation, and only 6,076,000 actually under it, and half of this amount is always fallow from their system of working it. By universal testimony the country might grow food for three times its present population, yet it has to import cereals every year to an amount exceeding a third of its own produce, and over £1,000,000 in value. But agriculture contends with many difficulties in Greece, most of them like the various kinds of the want of roads, and the imperfect agricultural methods, being happily remediable.

The soil is, as a rule, light and thin, in many places there is great lack of rain and running water, but the people are expert in irrigation. The chief products are corn, wine, fruit, and oil. Six different kinds of wheat are grown, producing, in a favourable season, as much as 10 or 13 returns, and after a dry spring from 3 to 5. Good crops are got of rye, barley, and maize, oats do not grow so well, and potatoes not at all. Pulse thrives everywhere, and rice is produced in the plains of Marathon and Argos, and in marshy land elsewhere. Cotton and tobacco have been introduced in our own day, and give good returns.

Greece is still in want of one of the first requisites to agricultural prosperity,—a resident proprietary. The modern kingdom began with almost no proprietors. Under the Turks two-thirds of the land belonged to the sultan and became at the revolution simply national property, which the Government has been selling ever since to private owners on more or less reasonable terms. The peasants are showing a passion for land, and save up to buy their cloths, and in this way a large class of small freeholders is being created, with what effect upon agriculture we have no means as yet of determining. There were 16,122 proprietors in 1861. The relation between landlord and tenant is the moneyer system of taking as rent or usufruct a share of the net produce, usually a third, but in the case of Government land 15 per cent. Great part of the agricultural labourers are not Greek subjects, but are Mahometan Albanians from Thessaly and Epirus, who come into Greece annually in harvest time, in bands of 30 or 40 under a captain, who work at lower rates than Greeks and work longer, for they have no fusties to observe, and who contrive by frugal living to carry back three-fourths of their earnings to their families at home.

The methods of cultivation in use are still primitive. Modern implements are not employed to any great extent, though their manufacture is carried on at Smyrna and the Piræus, and though even the steam plough has been actually introduced in Elis. The Greek plough is still that of Homer, which the husbandman carries about his croft on his shoulder, and which hardly does more than scrape the surface of the ground. It is wrought by oxen, Greek horses—the old Thessalian breed—being small and unfit for farm work. There is no system of rotation of crops. Fields are cropped till they are exhausted, and then left fallow for a year or two. The farmers have no idea of manure or drainage. There are few enclosures, and even the laying out of the fields is slovenly,—a patch of this crop here, and a patch of that there. The houses of the peasantry are sheds of wood or huts of mud, without either chimney or window, but always with a picture of the Virgin inside.

With all the defects in the Greek system of cultivation, agricultural returns show gradual though slow progress. In 1846 the yield for the year of wheat, barley, and maize

was estimated at 6,000,000 kilob, a kilob being nearly 73 gallons, in 1876, 12,000,000. In 1880 there were 2,357,045 stamens, or 500,048 casks—and total crops, which yielded 9,512,993 kilob of grain—*e.*, 1,108,567 quinters, or 2 quinters an acre

**Wines.** All products are numerous, but the wine is poor, with little body, and is much inferior to that of the vineyard in the present state. It is produced in all parts of the country, but the best is that of Nauplia, which is shipped largely to Russia. There is still a Malvoisie wine, though it is no longer that which was once so celebrated at the time of Malvasia, and the Korinthian wine of Attica and the red wine of Zante is in good repute. There has been a large increase in the number of vineyards, and a marked improvement in the manufacture of wine since the kingdom began, and Greek wines have been of some commercial importance since 1858. In 1880 there were only 25,000 stemmas under vines, there are now 700,000.

**Cereals.** A grain peculiar to Greece is that of Corinth, which, from the place where it grows, is called the riant. It constitutes the largest export of Greece, and goes almost exclusively to England to make the national phlegm pudding. Its cultivation has been largely increased of late. In 1820 only 10,000,000 lb were raised, and in 1881, after the destruction of the vines by the虫, there were 57,000,000 lb, and in 1876 135,000,000 lb—valued at £1,400,000. There are now 40,000 acres of ground under cereals alone, and this probably cannot be much increased, for the cultivation is so tedious, and goes only on the northern and western shores of the Morea, on some of the foam in islands, and at Metsolegh, and nowhere else in Greece or in the world. The vines bear in their sixth year, but do not attain full perfection till the seventh. The grapes are gathered in August, dried in the sun, and packed.

**Other products.** The olive and the mulberry are very important products of cultivation. The oil of Attica has still its ancient reputation. It is calculated that in Greece in 1876 there were 10,000,000 olive trees, which yielded 19,000,000 oke of oil. In 1834 there were only 2,800,000 trees, yielding 1,000,000 oke. The mulberry grows best in the south of the Morea, and there the leaves of almost every peasant is given up to rearing the silk worms, the eggs being nestled in the bosoms of the women. There were in 1833 only 800,000 mulberry trees in Greece, in 1876 there were 2,000,000. A natural production of Greece of great importance is vitellina, the husk of the olive, which is exported as a kind of oil, and is a valuable product in Attica, Attica, the island Zante, and other places. Vitellina is valuable on account of the amount of tannin it contains, and is much exported to England and Italy for use in dyeing and tanning. Another species of oak, the *Quercus agrifolia*, which grows largely on Mount Taygetus, yields the sweet olive kernel, which, when dried, looks like a berry, and is used in dyeing the red of the country. Turpentine is obtained in large quantities from the pines of Chios and elsewhere.

Cotton and tobacco use the only products whose cultivation is free from taxation, the exemption being made with a view to the encouragement of the industry. Cotton is now grown to a considerable extent, its culture having received a great impetus during the American civil war. It is produced particularly on the marshy lands of Ledaia, and Philippi in northern Greece. In 1880 the production was 1,277,729 lb, valued at 1,381,193,615 drachmas. The annual yield of tobacco is 4,000,000 oke. Opium, madder, and flax are grown in the northern parts of Greece.

Greece is rich in fruits. The figs of Attica have not degenerated, and they are produced to a considerable extent in other parts also, especially Messenia. In 1884 there were but 50,000 fig trees, in 1861, 800,000. Apples, oranges, lemons, pomegranates, and citrons grow well in the islands, and the fruit trade might be largely increased.

Though there is much excellent timber in the Greek forests, it is pretty fully useless from want of roads, so that it is cheap to import wood from abroad. The total number of sheep in the country subject to taxation was 1,778,729, of goats, 2,389,153, of cattle, 228,737—of which 188,927 were wool oxen, of horses, 69,787, of mules, 26,887, of asses, 61,061, of swine, 75,776, and of camels, 72.

**Cattle.** In 1880 there were 7,000,000 animals in Greece (Kraus, *Hellas*, p. 188), and the butter and cheese in two are from ewes and goats' milk. The honey of Greece is not equal to that of other countries, even that of Hyetina,—so famous in ancient days when it was even put in the market, because more or less of sugar, and which is still one of the best kinds in Greece,—could not compete with French in the English market. But over £35,000 worth of honey is produced in Greece every year, and goes chiefly to Turkey. There are extensive fisheries on some parts of the coast.

The land tax is still the Turkish system of exacting a land contribution generally a tenth of the gross produce of the land, and though, in the use of the vineyard, a money contribution, based on the price of the production, is coming into use, the tax is, as a rule, paid in kind. This system is manifestly most objectionable, as it is even more being turned out to put in contractors. The cultivator cannot reap his crop, though it be ripe, till the day appointed by the tax collector, and he must not eat it, though it be green. When cut, he must carry the whole crop out to the collector (there being no roads for a wagon), sometimes for miles, to the public public place where the collector waits upon, and he must wait with all that till the collector can find time to see it clustered and take his share, which is often weeks, sometimes a month or more, or as long as three months. Proposals for the abolition of this method of taxation have often been introduced into the chamber of deputies, but the matter has always been defeated till they should have a regular land tax, which, however, they seem to take no steps to make.

When Cyprianism assumed the government of Greece fifty years ago, he said there were two things he must give the nation,—roads and education. The system of education has been very much fostered by him since that time, but its roads are still to make. We have no recent statistics on the subject, but Rangabe says that in 1867 nineteen roads had been made, since the kingdom was established, with a total length of 380 kilometres, and Watson, writing in 1872, complains that, from a want of roads at that time, it cost more to carry grain from Marathon to Athens (25 miles) than to bring it from the Black Sea, which had little trade of country, not far from seaport towns, was left entirely unutilized because of the expense of the transit of their produce. Every man in Greece is by law obliged to give at least three days' labour in the year, on the equivalent in money, for road making, and a law was passed in 1876 to apply one fifth of the proceeds from the sale of state lands to making roads.

Manufacturing industries are steadily advancing. According to a Massé report issued in 1876 by M. de Massé, the statistics on manufactures at Athens, there are in Greece 96 steam mills and factories, with a total of 1967 horse power, the most important of these have been established since 1860. They include 38 flour mills, 19 for cotton spinning, 2 for cotton weaving, 2 for iron spinning, 2 for weaving, 10 oil mills, 9 for constructing machinery, 4 for making wine and spirits, 3 for making, 2 metal foundries, 1 powder mill, and 7 others of various kinds. Shipping is carried on at the expense of the Greeks, and the Greek fleet is growing, and is employed. As an index to the industrial progress of the nation it may be noted that in the International Exhibition of 1861 there were only 35 Greek exhibitors, in 1868, 295, and in 1876, 1000. Greece has established a series of industrial exhibitions of its own, the new Olympic games, as they are termed, which a wealthy Greek left £2000 a year to found,—which combine history, science, and athletic competitions with those of industry, and which occur, like the old Olympic games, every four years. The cotton industry is making decided progress. The annual export of raw cotton is diminishing, and its importation is increasing, and to encourage the trade, there is no duty on the raw cotton exported, while the import duty on raw cotton was reduced in 1875. Leather is made chiefly at Syra.

The marble quarries of Pentelica, Cayste, and Paros are in the hands of the State. The marble of Paros is not much used, and the local-giving capacity is small. The only mining operations in the country are those of the Laurium Company, which, by help of improved modern appliances, extracts metals from the waste which the ancient workers of the mines threw away, and which has been long enough to contain still 120,000 tons of lead. The same or refuse heaps of Laurium are dug up and carried on trucks, by a short line of rail belonging to the company, to the town of Egina, near Cape Colona, built by themselves, where the waste is washed and put, these some waste is smelted, and yield annually nearly 10,000 tons of lead, and a large quantity of silver. There are 8000 operatives engaged in this work at Argostoli. The value of the export in 1876 was £150.

But the most conspicuous success of Greece has been in her Commerce, maritime commerce, for which the situation and configuration were of the country afford unusual facilities. In 1821 Greece had only 404 vessels, with a total tonnage of 61,460 tons, whereas in 1876 she had 5440 vessels, 97 of them steamers, with a tonnage in all of 288,083 tons, and employing 237,760 men. In 1880 there was hardly a harbour in all Greece worth the name, the few being then barely accessible to fishing boats, there are now 500 ports. It had only one lighthouse in 1847, it has now 46, but more are still urgently needed.

The situation of Emporion has been closed, destroyed, and widened, and an iron bridge thrown across. There are five chambers of commerce. The chief ports are Mermopoli (Syra), Hydra, Sparta, Corinthe, Zante, Rhodus, Patras, Metsolegh, Nauplia, Spantz, Naxos, and Corinthe.

The commerce of Greece is usually divided into general and

specie,—general, including all exports and imports whatever, and special tiding in only imports meant for home consumption and exports of commodities produced in the country. The special commerce amounts usually to 30 per cent of the general. The general commerce of Greece in 1875 amounted to £38,474,198, of which £15,106,629 were imports and £23,377,569 exports. An idea of the remarkable progress of its commerce may be obtained by comparing these figures with the following:—In 1838 the total Greek commerce amounted to £271,698, and in 1840 to £1,086,671. In 1860 it was £2,147,000, and in 1870 £5,464,000. England occupies the first place among countries trading with Greece, its transactions being more than double those of any other country, and amounting in 1875 to 41 per cent, and in 1876 to 48 per cent, of the whole commerce of Greece. Taking the average of the six years ending 1871, Wyndham calculates that 60.75 per cent of the exports of Greece go to England, and that 28.85 per cent of its imports come from England. Turkey and Austria, its nearest neighbours, stand next 25 per cent of its imports are cereals and flour,—the cereals from Russia, Turkey, and Roumania, the flour from France, and 30 per cent are treasures, mainly from England. Though timber is so abundant, it still is one of the largest imports, amounting to £187,778 in 1875. The other chief imports are cattle, salt meat, rice, corn, butter, iron, and paper. The principal item of exports, amounting to half the whole, are cereals, and in 1875 it was £1,850,467, of which £1,083,482 went to England, then come oil, hides, lead, figs, yalonia, wine and spirits, tobacco, cotton yarn, &c.

The Greek coasting trade is not open to foreigners. The steamers of the Helladic Company possess a monopoly of the coasts of those waters, the object being to encourage the development of native steam navigation.

There is only one railway in Greece, and it except the private one already mentioned belongs to the Læmian Company. It is from Piræus to Athens, is 73 miles long, belongs to Government, and carries passengers only. Another railway is projected from the Piræus to Læmia (Actium) in the north (40 miles), with the view of connecting Greece with the general railway system of Europe. There were 1236 miles of telegraph in Greece in 1875, the property of Government, and worked at a considerable loss. The postal system is Government, and well managed and has been in operation only since 1861, when postage stamps were introduced. In 1876 there were 151 post-offices in Greece. There are two banks,—the National, with its head office at Athens, and the Ionian, with its head office at Corfu. National had in 1868 a paid up capital of £540,000, with a reserve fund of £216,000.

The currency of Greece is that of the Læmian monetary league, which it joined in 1868, and which allows it to strike 26,000,000 silver francs and is much gold as it thinks proper. Under Otto, Greece had a coinage of its own, on the basis of a double standard and the decimal system, the unit being the drachma (equal to 84), which was divided into 100 equal parts called lepta. Coins of various values were struck, but only £4000 in gold pieces, and only £80,000 in silver, an amount quite inadequate for the needs of the country, and quickly disappearing altogether, so that there is probably not a single coin of their now left in Greece. It became necessary therefore to decline the gold and silver coins of other countries a legal tender in Greece, and these, with the notes of the National and Ionian Banks, became, and still remain, the practical currency of the country, as that the simplest payment may require a puzzling arithmetical calculation, for people have to pay in novagrams and thalers prices stated in drachmas and lepta. Through the unit of the Læmian currency the Greek official accounts of Greece are still reckoned in old drachmas, in distinction from which the franc is termed the new drachma. There are 38 old and 26 new drachmas in the pound sterling.

The species of weight and measure is the Turkish. Their measures of length are—the pique, which is equal to 27 inches, the el, equal to 1 metre, or 3280 feet, the stadion, equal to 10.68 English miles. Their measures of superficial extent are—the stremma, equal to one fourth of an English acre, and the bema, equal to 10 stremmas. Their standard of weight is the centar of quintal, equal to 128 lb avoirdupois. It is divided into 44 okeas, one oke being equal to 2 64 lb, and subdivided into 400 old and 1280 royal drams. As to use, for weighing corn, is half a centar, or 28 okeas. 816 kiles are equal to 100 quintars.

Rail  
waysPostal  
system

Bank-

Money

Weights  
and  
measures

The financial condition of Greece is unsatisfactory. Its annual finances, expenditures usually exceeds its income, and it is deeply in debt. The new kingdom was born in debt, and contracted to pay the expense of the revolution that gave it being, and to that original indebtedness it has from time to time added fresh liabilities till it has now no longer any credit in the money markets of Europe, and is deeper in debt in proportion to its revenue than any European country except Spain. The total debt of Greece was £16,400,105, according to Mr. Makkal's report in 1876, and, while with the accumulation of interest and the contraction of a fresh debt for every extension during the Syrian insurrection of 1876, it must now be over £16,000,000. The debt consists of the kind—foreign and native. The foreign debt is of two parts, the first being the original loan, amounting between them to £2,800,000, which were negotiated by the revolutionists in 1821 and 1826 with two English houses at 66 and 66 per cent, and whose coupons are now held mainly by Dutch speculators. On this Greece has never paid a farthing of interest. The Greek treasury, although it accepts the obligation, puts it off from year to year under the heading "Declared Debt." With accumulating interest at 5 per cent, it had increased to £8,064,500 in 1874. The second part of the foreign debt is a loan of £2,400,000 guaranteed by the three protecting powers on the accession of Otto in 1832, and negotiated with Rothschild & Co. On this Greece paid interest for a few years, but its payment has so fallen into arrear that in 1874 this debt had grown to £2,870,000. There is also a small debt due to the Bavarian Government, amounting now to £250,000, and there are some still smaller debts to other foreign creditors. The internal debt of the country consists partly of indemnity due to sufferers in the War of Independence, partly of loans contracted with capitalists within the kingdom after its credit abroad was gone, it now amounts in all to £6,270,438.

The revenue for 1877, according to the estimate in the budget, was £1,401,887, and the expenditure £1,466,708. The actual receipts usually fall short of the budget estimate, for Greece permits her subjects to fill much into arrear with the payment of their taxes, and in 1867 it was calculated there was an aggregate of arrears of taxes amounting to £2,226,500. This revenue is received partly from direct taxes on land and property, a really low rate, partly from the public services, the post-office, telegraphs, and printing, partly from the rent of the public domain, mines, quarries, hot springs, salt, fisheries, fairs, olive gardens, vineyards, and municipal institutions, and partly from the duties on the import and the excise and alcohol revenues. The largest source of revenue are the land tax, which brought in 8,600,000 drachmas in 1877, the customs, 2,440,000, and the stamps, 4,500,000. The cost of collecting the land tax is very extravagant. It takes £26 to collect £100, on ten times more than it does in France. The Greeks are not so very tax-hungry. Rangabe estimates that they pay 23.48 drachmas (about 1/8s) each in the year as taxes.

Of the expenditures of Greece, nearly one fourth part goes to pay interest on its debt, another fourth to maintain its army and navy, and a large sum (£198,886) to pay pensions to persons who suffered in the revolution, or who possessed privileges in the Ionian Islands at the time of their cession. The education and worship of the country cost £76,421, and the foreign office and diplomatic services only £10,267. The administration of justice takes £107,718, and the department of the interior, including the post office and many other outlets, £171,622. The salaries of members of the chambers of deputies come to £10,071.

*Lieutenant-General von Griechenland* (Leipzig, 1862), *Tour, Leschetz* on the *Geography of Greece* (London, 1873), *Kruse, Hellas* (Leipzig, 1826-27), *Julius Schmidt, Beiträge zur physikalischen Geographie von Griechenland* (Leipzig, 1864-70), *Enslin, History of Greece* (Baford, 1871), *Meunier, Les Grecs du Folk en Afghanistan sous le premier règne de Zandjed* (Hildesheim, 1836), *Moutet, La Grèce Contemporaine* (Paris, 1864), *Rangabe, Greece, Her Former and Present Position* (New York, 1867), *Strickland, History of Greece, its Constitution and Resources* (London, 1846), *Weyle, Impressions of Greece* (London, 1871), *Tuckerman, The Greek of To-day* (London, 1873), *Moravcsin, La Grèce Neuve qu'elle est* (Paris, 1877), *Surguchin, New Greece* (London, 1876), and the annual reports of the British secretaries of consular and legation and of the British consuls. (J. B.)

## PART II.—GREEK HISTORY

### SECTION I.—GREEK HISTORY TO THE DEATH OF ALEXANDER THE GREAT

The early history of Greece is the first chapter in the political and intellectual life of Europe. In contrast with nations still in the tribal stage the Greeks have already the life of cities, in contrast with the despotic monarchies of the East they recognize the principle that no personal

rule should be unlimited. From the first they appear as a people obedient to reason and to a native instinct of measure. In the political sphere this leads them to aim at a due balance of powers and tendencies in the state, at the definition of duties and the protection of rights. In the intellectual sphere it leads them to explore causes, to interpret thought in clear forms, to find a general expression

for the social feelings and sympathies. The historical interest of Greece does not begin therefore only at the point where details and dates become approximately certain, but with the first glimpses of that ordered life out of which the civilization of Europe arose. At a later stage the Greek commonwealths offer the most instructive study which the present world affords in the working of oligarchic and democratic institutions. Then, as the Roman power rises, culminates, and declines, Greek history assumes a new character and a new interest. From Alexander the Great dates the beginning of a modern Greek nation, one, not in blood, but in speech and manner. Two main threads link together the earlier and later history of civilized man. One passes through Rome, and is Latin; the other passes through the new Rome in the east, and is Greek.

In a sketch like the present it would be impossible to attempt a detailed narrative of facts, which, besides, fall to be considered under particular headings. The aim here will be rather to trace in outline the general course of the development, and to indicate, so far as a rapid survey permits, the leading causes and tendencies which were at work in its successive stages.

Six periods may be distinguished. I The prehistoric period, down to the close of the great migrations. II The early history of the leading states, down to about 500 B.C. III The Ionic revolt and the Persian wars, 503-479. IV The period of Athenian supremacy, 478-431. V The Peloponnesian War, 431-404, followed by the period of Spartan and then of Theban ascendancy, 404-362. VI The reigns of Philip and Alexander, 359-323 B.C.

#### I The Prehistoric Period, down to the close of the great Migrations

"Ancient Hellas," says Aristotle, "is the country about Dodona and the Achæolus, for the Hellas lived there, and the people then called the Chaikoi, but now the Hellenes" (*Aristot.*, i, 13). The name *Chaikoi* probably meant the "old" or "honourable" folk (Cicero, *De Rep.*, 130). The Italians may have enlarged the application of this name, which they found on the eastern side of the Ionian Gulf. The moderns have followed the Romans in giving it to the whole people who, from very early times, have always called themselves *Hellenes*.

Primitive  
Indo-  
European  
civiliza-  
tion

The evidence of language tells something as to the point of civilization which had been reached by the ancestors of the Indo-European nations before the Hellenes parted from the common stock in Central Asia. They had words for "father," "mother," "brother," "sister," "son," "daughter," and also for common affluents by marriage, as "father-in-law," "brother-in-law," "daughter-in-law." They lived in houses, they wore clothes made of wool or skins; as arms they had the sword and the bow, they had flocks and herds, goats and dogs, they drove, if they did not ride, horses. They were a pastoral rather than an agricultural people. They knew how to work gold, silver, and copper, they could count up to a hundred, they reckoned time by the lunar month, they spoke of the sky as the *Heaven-father*. The first great migration from the common home was that which carried the ancestors of the Teutonic, Slavic, and Lithuanian tribes into north-western Europe. The next was that which carried the ancestors of Greeks, Italians, and Celts into southern and south-western Europe.

Language indicates that there must have been a period during which the forefathers of Greeks and Italians, after the Celts had parted from them, lived together as one people. Again, the Greek language, unique in its characteristic development, tells that the Hellenes, after the Italians had left them, must have long remained an undivided people. But to us this primitive Hellenic unity is prehis-

toric. We first know the Hellenes as a race divided into two great branches, each with well-marked characteristics of its own.—*Dæones*, and *Ionians*, while those who have been less affected by the special causes which produced these divergences from an earlier common type are regarded as forming a third branch, and are called collectively *Æolians*. Further, we hear of a people distinguished indeed from the Hellenes, yet apparently felt (as by Thucydides) to be not wholly alien from them,—a people represented as having been before them in Greece proper, on the coasts, and in the islands of the *Ægean*,—the *Pelagians*. In Pausanias some Homeric passages, and those among the oldest, the name *Pelagoi* denotes a tribe of Achæan or Æolian Greeks living in Thessaly (*Paus.*, ii 681, vii 233). In other poetical texts of later date, and especially in Herodotus, *Pelagoi* is a general designation for people of whom the Greeks knew little definitely, except that they had preceded the Hellenic dwellers in the land. In this second and vague use, "Pelagian" is virtually equivalent to "prehistoric."

The highlands of Phrygia have the best claim to be regarded as the point of departure for the distinctively Hellenic migrations. In these fertile regions of north-western Asia Minor, the Hellenes, after the Italians had left them, may have lived, first as a part of the Phrygian nation, and afterwards as a separate people. From the first arises a great wave of migration seems to have carried the Hellenes into Europe a population which diffused itself through Greece and the Peloponnese, as well as over the coasts and islands of the archipelago. In after ages, when the kinship, though perhaps dimly suspected, was no longer recognized, the Hellenes called these earlier occupants of the land *Pelagians*. It has been conjectured that in *Pelagios* we have combined the roots of *πέλας* and *ἐλμ* (*γα*). The name would then mean "the further-gone," "the emigrant." It would thus be appropriate as the name given by the Hellenes, who had remained behind in Phrygia, to the kinsmen who had passed over into Europe before them.

The second epoch of migration from the Phrygian highlands appears to have been one by which single Hellenic speech tribes, with special gifts and qualities, were carried forth to become the quickenings of historic life among great masses of population, among those "Pelagians" who had long been content to follow the calm routine of husbandmen or herdsmen. The ancestors of the Ionians went down to the coasts of Asia Minor, and became the founders of a race whose distinctive powers found scope in maritime enterprise and in commerce. The ancestors of the Dorians passed into the highlands of Northern Greece, and there developed the type of hardy mountaineer which united the robust vigour of hunter and warrior with a firm loyalty to ancestral traditions in religion and in civil government.

Of these two branches,—the Ionian and the Dorian,—the Ionian was that which most actively influenced the early development of Greece. But the Ionians themselves derived the first impulses of their progress from a foreign source. Those Carians or "lowlanders" of Syria, whom we call by the Greek name of Phœnicians, inhabited the long narrow strip of territory between Lebanon and the sea. Phœnicia, called "Keth" by the Egyptians, had at a remote period contributed Semitic settlers to the Delta of "Isle of Chaptai," and it would appear from the evidence of the Egyptian monuments that the Keth, or Phœnicians, were a great commercial people as early as the 16th century B.C. Cyprus, visible from the heights of Lebanon, was the first stage of the Phœnician advance into the Western waters, and to the last there was in Cyprus a Semitic element side by side with the Indo-European. From Cyprus the Phœnician navigators proceeded to the southern

coasts of Asia Minor, where Phœnician colonists gradually blended with the natives, until the entire seaboard had become in a great measure subject to Phœnician influences. Thus the Solymi, settled in Lyca, were akin to the Carians, and the Carians, originally kinsmen of the Greeks, were strongly affected by Phœnician contact. It was at Miletus especially that the Ionian Greeks came into commercial intercourse with the Phœnicians. Unlike the dwellers on the southern seaboard of Asia Minor, they showed no tendency to merge their nationality in that of the Syrian strangers. But they learned from them much that concerned the art of navigation, as, for instance, the use of the round-built merchant vessels called *galies*, and probably also a system of weights and measures, as well as the rudiments of some useful arts. The Phœnicians had been first drawn to the coasts of Greece in quest of the purple fish, which was found in abundance off the coasts of the Peloponnese and of Boeotia, other attractions were furnished by the plentiful timber for shipbuilding which the Greek forests supplied, and by veins of silver, iron, and copper ore.

Two periods of Phœnician influence on early Greece may be distinguished first, a period during which they were brought into intercourse with the Greeks merely by traffic on occasional voyages, secondly, a period of Phœnician trading settlements in the islands or on the coasts of the Greek seas, when their influence became more penetrating and thorough. It was probably early in this second period,—perhaps about the end of the 9th century B.C.—that the Phœnician alphabet became diffused through Greece. This alphabet was itself derived from the alphabet of the Egyptian hieroglyphs, which was brought into Phœnicia by the Phœnician settlers in the Delta. It was imported into Greece, probably, by the Asiatic Phœnicians of the Gulf of Antioch,—not by the Phœnicians of Tyre and Sidon,—and seems to have superseded, in Asia Minor and the islands, a syllabary of some seventy characters, which continued to be used in Cyprus down to a late time. The direct Phœnician influence on Greece lasted to about 800 B.C. Commerce and navigation were the provinces in which the Phœnician influence, strictly so called, was most felt by the Greeks. In art and science, in everything that concerned the higher culture, the Phœnicians seem to have been little more than carriers from East to West of Egyptian, Assyrian, or Babylonian ideas.

Influence of Phœnicians on European (Greece)

The legends of European Greece speak clearly of foreign elements in civilization and in religious worship which came in from the East. But they do not constrain us to suppose that those who brought in these new elements were always, or as a rule, strangers to the people among whom they brought them. On the contrary the myths constantly say, or imply, that the new comers were akin to the people among whom they came, as the sons of Egyptus are first cousins to the daughters of Danaus, as Cadmus and Pelops, though nominally of foreign origin, are thoroughly national heroes and founders. Hence it appears reasonable to conclude that the East by which European Hellas was most directly and vitally influenced was not the Semitic but the Hellenic East, that the Ionian Greeks of Asia Minor, after having themselves been in intercourse with Phœnicia and Egypt, were the chief agents in diffusing the new ideas among their kinsmen on the western side of the *Ægean*. Asiatic Greeks, who had settled among Egyptians in the Delta, or who had lived among Phœnician colonies in Asia Minor, would seem to be confounded in popular rumour, with Egyptians or Phœnicians. The Asiatic Greeks, as pioneers of civilization in European Greece, appear sometimes under the name of Carians,—when they are little more than teachers of certain improvements in the art of war, and have a decidedly foreign character,—sometimes as

Leleges, who are associated especially with Lycia, Miletus, and the Troad, and who, as compared with the "Carians," are the representatives of a more advanced civilization. In the east the sailing Ionians gave their name to the whole Greek people, as in the Hebrew Scriptures the Greeks are "the sons of Javan,"—the *Urmu* of the Egyptians, the *Ionnu* of the Persians. It does not appear that the European Greeks of early days used "Ionian" in this way as a collective name for the Asiatic Greeks. But such names as *Jasion*, *Jawon*, *Jawon Ayoon* point to a sense that the civilization which came from Asia Minor was connected with Ionia. At a later time the Greeks forgot the Ionians and Phœnicians who had brought an Eastern civilization to the western side of the *Ægean*. Vividly impressed by the great antiquity of this civilization itself, especially in Egypt, they preferred to suppose that they had derived it directly from the source.

The appearance of new elements in religious worship is Religion one great mark of the period during which Greece in Europe was still being changed by influences, Greek or foreign, from the East. The worship which the fathers of the Hellenes had brought with them from the common home in Asia was the worship of the "Heaven-father," the unseen father who dwells in ether, whose temple is the sky, and whose altar is most fitly raised on the mountain top, as the ancient shrine of the Arcadian Zeus was, the grove on the summit of Mount Lycaeus. Thus is the "Pagan Zeus, dwelling aloft," to whom the Homeric Achilles prays. But as the united Hellenes were parted into tribes, so to the first simple worship of the Heaven-father was added a variety of local cults. And as manna from other lands began to visit the coasts, they brought in then own gods with them. Thus Melanthi, the city god of Tyre, is recognized in Melchites as worshipped at the isthmus of Corinth. In one Greek form of the worship of Heracles, Astarte—the goddess of the Phœnician sailors—becomes Aphrodite, who springs from the sea. The myth of Adonis, the worship of the Achæan Demeter, are other examples. These are, again, other divinities who came to European Greece, not directly from the non-Hellenic East, but as deities already at home among the Ionians. Such was Poseidon, and, above all, Apollo, whose coming is everywhere a promise of light and joy.

Little precise knowledge of the earliest kingdoms and the states can be extracted from the legends as they have come early down to us, but some general inferences are warranted. The tradition that Minos cleared the archipelago of pirates, created, and established a wide maritime dominion, that he was the first to sacrifice to the Charites, and that Theseus wrought for him, may be taken at least as indicating that Crete played a prominent part in the early history of Greek culture, and that there was a time when Cretan kings were strong enough to protect commerce in the *Ægean* waters. Again, though Gordius and Midas have Phrygia passed into the region of fable, there are reasonable grounds for the belief that the ancient kings of Phrygia once exercised dominion over Asia Minor. The Lydians, in Lydia whose origin Semitic and Aryan elements appear to have been mingled, have a twofold interest in this dawn of Hellenic history. First, they represent the earliest kingdom in Asia Minor of which anything is certainly known. Secondly, they are on land what the Phœnicians are on the sea,—carriers or mediators between the Greeks and the East. In the north-west corner of Asia Minor, a branch of the Dardanian whose ancestor is described as worshipping the Pelægian Zeus—founded the kingdom of the Troas, the land of Troy. It has been remarked that the double names of the Trojan heroes,—Alexander, Paris,—Hector, Deius,—point to the twofold relationship of the Trojans, on the one side to Hellas, on the other to Asia. In



**The Myse** European Greece before the race known as the Myse, whose early glories are linked with the story of "Jason and the Argonauts," moving southward from the shores of the Gulf of Pagasæ into the valley of Lake Copais, and founding the Boeotian Orchomenus. The early greatness of Thebes is associated with the name of Cadmus, the king priest who introduces the art of writing, who builds the citadel, who founds a system of mythical irrigation. The Achaean prince, whose chivalrous spirit is expressed in the Homeric Achilles, rule in the fertile valley of the Thessalian Phlœus. In the Peloponnese the Pelopidæ at Mycenæ reign over Achæans, and Agamemnon is said to rule, not only "all Argos," but "many islands." The principle on which such legends as that of Agamemnon's sovereignty may best be estimated has been well stated by Mr. Freeman:—

"The legend of Chulchenna, amidst infinite pervasions, presents a certain groundwork of actual history, I should expect to find in the legend of Agamemnon a similar groundwork of real history. There is, of course, the all important difference that it is not the one story, and it is true cannot take the other, by the certain evidence of contemporary documents. This gives us certainty in one case, while we cannot get beyond high probability in the other. Let us however history would never lead us to believe that there had been once a single dynasty reigning, if not as sovereigns, at least as vassals, over a large portion of inland and peninsula Greece. Real local dynasties would never lead us to believe that there had once been a later Achaean empire, whose dominions extended from the Euxine to the Ebro. But we know that the Cœcean legend is thus far confirmed by history, there is, therefore, no serious objection to the analogous features of the Pelopid legend. The truth is that the idea of such an extensive dominion would not have occurred to a later monarch, unless some real history or tradition had suggested it to him. So, again, without some such groundwork of history or tradition, no one would have fixed upon Mykênæ, a place utterly insignificant in later history, as the capital of the extensive empire. The romances have transferred the capital of Kurl from Asikem to Pinn, had it really been Pinn, no one would have so unduly insisted on the legend of Agamemnon being a real man or not, the combination of internal and external evidence leads us to set down the Pelopid dynasty at Mykênæ as an established fact."

**Traces of migration in Greece proper** We now come to a phase in the development of early Greece which tradition represents as following, but as no great interval, the age in which a Pelopid dynasty ruled at Mycenæ and fought against Troy. This is the period of great displacements of population within the mainland of European Greece. The first of these migrations is that of the people afterwards known as Thessalians. A fierce tribe of mounted warriors, they passed from Thesprotia in Epirus over the range of Pindus, and subdued or drove out an Æolic population who dwell about Aîné, in the fertile lowlands of southern Thessaly. Those of the Æolians who had not submitted to the conquerors passed southward into the land thenceforth called Boeotia, where, between Orchomenus and Thebes, they founded a new home. Their conquest of Boeotia appears to have been difficult and gradual, and even after the fall of Orchomenus and Thebes, Plataea is said to have maintained its independence. The legend placed these events about 1150 B.C., or sixty years after the fall of Troy. About twenty years later in the mythical chronology occurs the third and more famous migration, known as the return of the Heracleidæ. We need not enter here into the details of the myth. It will be enough to indicate the results to which an examination of the legend leads. The Dorians, migrating southward from the highlands of Macedonia, had established themselves at the northern foot of Perræus, in the fertile district between that range and Cithæra, which was thenceforth called Doris. In the course of these contests to conquer the Peloponnese the Dorians were associated with other tribes. Among these were the Hyllæans, who were believed to be of Achæan origin, and who traced their descent from

the hero Hyllus, son of the Thyrinthan Heracles. The Hyllæan chiefs of the expedition represented themselves, accordingly, as seeking to reconquer that royal dominion of Heracles in the Peloponnese of which his descendants had been wrongfully deprived by Eurystheus. Hence the Dorian migration itself came to be called the "Return of the Heracleidæ." The migration had two main results—(1) turn of the Dorians, under leaders claiming Heracleid descent, overthrew the Achæan dynasties in the Peloponnese, and either expelled or subjugated the Achæan folk; (2) a portion of the Achæans, retreating northward before the Dorian invaders in the south, drove the Ionians on the coast of the Corinthian Gulf out of the strip of territory which was thenceforth called Achæa, and these Ionians sought refuge with their kinsfolk in Attica. It is in the nature of the heroic myths to represent changes of this kind, which may have been the gradual work of generations, as effected by sudden blows. Some comparative mythologists have maintained with much ingenuity that the "Return of the Heracleidæ" is merely one of those alterations which balance each other in the hundred forms of the solar myth. It appears more consistent with reason to believe that there was really a great southward movement of population, which resulted in the substitution of Dorian for Achæan ascendancy in the Peloponnese. We cannot pretend to fix either the exact time at which the conquests of the period which was required for its completion. One thing may, however, be affirmed with probability. It cannot have been done all at once, as the myth says that it was. The displacement of the Achæans was accomplished only by degrees, and perhaps after the lapse of centuries.

The same remark applies to those three streams of Trojan migration from European Greece to the coasts of Asia Minor, which are represented as having ensued on the Dorian conquest of the Peloponnese, and which may naturally be connected with the disturbance of populations upon to which the southward advance of the Dorians caused the Achæans, driven from their old seats in the south, moved northwards, and, reinforced by Æolic kinsmen from Boeotia and Thessaly, established themselves on the north-west coast of Asia Minor, where Lesbos and Cyme became their strongholds. By degrees their dominion spread inland, until they had become masters of Mysia and the Troad. The Æolic migration which thus created an Asiatic Æolis was unquestionably the slow work of generations. The immediate cause of the Ionic migration, 2. The which began later than the Æolic, appears to have been the overcrowding of Attica by the Ionians driven out of Achæa. The Æolic settlements had been the work of a people migrating in large masses. The Ionic colonization seems to have been effected rather by smaller numbers of warlike adventurers, springing from the noble Ionian families of Attica and the Peloponnese, who claimed to rule over the Ionic communities already established on the Asiatic coast. The Dorian colonists, following the southward direction of their previous conquests, settled on the south-west coast of Asia Minor. The islands of Cos and Rhodes received Dorian settlers, and, after what was probably a long struggle, the Dorians subdued Crete.

While the populations had thus been settling down into the places which they were to occupy during the historical æge of Greece, a movement had been in progress on the European mainland which tended to quicken among the various tribes a sense of the unity of the race. This was the establishment of local associations among neighbouring tribes for the common worship of the same god. These associations were of a federal character, that is, while the members of the association were independent in other matters, they were subject to a common central authority in all that concerned religious worship. Such a federal

<sup>1</sup> "The Mythical and Romantic Elements in Early English History," *Zeuss*, 1st series, p. 29.

association was called an *amphiktyony*, that is, a *league of neighbors*. The most important of such leagues was the Delphic amphiktyony, of which the object was to converse the worship of Apollo at Delphi. This league arose in Thessaly, where the conquerors who had come in from Epirus sought to establish themselves more firmly by embracing the cult of Apollo. It was afterwards extended through the southern districts until it included most of the tribes dwelling about Cetea and Parnassus. The members of the Delphic amphiktyony gave a new meaning and value to the federal compact by applying it to enforce certain obligations of humanity in war. They took an oath that they would not raise each other's towns, nor, during a siege, cut off the supply of water. It was in connection with the Delphic amphiktyony that the name *Hellene* appears to have been first distinctly recognized as the national name. The earliest collective name of the race, in Greek tradition, had been *Graikos*. The members of the Delphic amphiktyony chose as their federal name that of *Hellene*,—a name of sacred associations, if we may connect it with that of the *Selloi* or *Hellai*, the priests of the Pelagian Zeus at Dodona,—in the region which, according to Aristotle, was the most ancient Hellas. The circumstances which gave currency to *Hellene* as a common appellation have left a reminiscence in the myth that Hellen was nearly related to Amphiktyon.

The Homeric poems may be regarded by the student of history as great pictures of political and social life, illustrating the whole variety of Greek experience down to the close of that age which saw the tides of *Eolie*, *Ionie*, and *Doric* migration flow from the west to the east of the *Ægean*. It is a distinct question how far recoverable his textual fact is embedded in their text, or how far trustworthy inferences may be drawn from them in regard to a supposed series of events. But at least the legends of the Achaean princes and warriors are these, as they came through *Eolie* minstrels to the poets of *Ionie*, and, various as may be the ages and sources of the interwoven materials, the total result may be taken as a portraiture, true in its main lines, of the age from which these legends had come down. In the political life described by the Homeric poems the king rules by divine and hereditary right. But he is not, like an Eastern monarch, even practically despotic, he is bound, first, by *themistes*, the traditional customs of his people, next, he must consult the *boile*, the council of nobles and elders, and, lastly, his proposals require to be ratified by the *agora*, or popular assembly. The social life is the counterpart of this. It is a patriarchal life, in which the head of the family stands to his dependents in a relation like that of the king to his subjects. It is, within the family pale, eminently humane, and the absence of a chaunt which should include all mankind is in some measure compensated by the principle and practice of hospitality. The position of free-born women is high,—higher than in the historical ages, and polygamy is unknown among Greeks. Many of the pictures of manners, especially in the *Odyssey*, have the refinement of a noble simplicity in thought and feeling, and of a genuine courtesy which is peculiarly Hellenic. The useful arts are still in an early stage. The use of the principal metals is known, but not, apparently, the art of smelting or soldering them. Money is not mentioned, oxen being the usual measure of value, and there is no certain allusion to the art of writing.

## II The Early History of the leading States down to about 500 B.C.

In the history of the Peloponnesus after the Dorian migration we begin to be on firmer ground. There may still be large room for doubt as to particular dates or names, but the age left permanent records in the institu-

tions which survived it. The first thing which should be borne in mind with regard to the Dorian migration is that its direct influence was confined to those districts of the Peloponnesus, Argolis, Laconia, and Messenia, while the thoroughly Dorians of the other three districts, Arcadia remained almost wholly unaffected, Elis and Achaia were affected only indirectly, through the influx of the populations which the Dorians had displaced. The first rank in the Peloponnesus was long retained by Argos. The ancient primacy of its Achaean princes was inherited by its Dorian rulers, and now, under the dynasty of the Temenidae, Argos acquired a new prestige as the head of a federative Dorian hexapolis, of which the other members were Phlius, Sicyon, Troezen, Epidaurus, and Corinth. It was only by slow degrees that the power arose which was destined to eclipse Argos. When the Dorians entered the Sparta valley of Enotata, they found "hollow Lacedæmon" already shared among people of other tribes. Lelages, Minyans, and Achæans had been there before them. Both *Eolian* and *Achaean* elements remained in the land. The settlement of the Dorians was made in a strong position under Mount Taygetus, on the right or western bank of the Eurotas, and the fact that, unlike most Greek cities, it was not founded on a rocky base, but on arable soil, was expressed by the name *Sparta* (son's land). It was indeed less a city than a group of rude hamlets,—the camp of a military occupation. And, as a national stronghold, defended by an alert garrison, it dispensed with walls. Sparta was at first only one member of a Laconian hexapolis. It was at a later stage that Sparta became the head-town of the country, and the seat of a central government. The origin of the dual kingship may probably be traced to this period. Such a dualism has no parallel elsewhere among Dorians and, as regards one at least of the two royal lines, we know that the Agade Cleomenes proclaimed himself an Achaean. The two royal lines of the Agade and Eurypontidae may have taken their beginning from a coalition or compromise between Dorian and Achaean houses. Afterwards, when it was deemed to explain the dualism and to refer both lines to a common source, Agas and Euryponts were represented as descended from the twin sons of Aristodemus, Eurystheus and Procles.

The spread of Spartan power in the Peloponnesus was preceded by the building up of that political and social system which made the Spartan citizens a compact aristocracy, exclusively devoted to the exercises of war. The personality of Lycurgus is shadowy. He has even been classed with those beings who, like Prometheus, Hermes, and Phœbeus, bestow on man that gift of fire without which they could not have attained to a high civilization. But the charge of excessive credulity can scarcely be brought against those who hold, with E. Curtius, that "there really lived and worked in the first half of the 9th century B.C. a legislator of the name of Lycurgus, a man who, as a born Herodotea, was called to take part in public affairs." It is another question whether he was the author of all the institutions which were afterwards ascribed to him. The example of another legislator who stands in a far clearer light of history,—the Athenian Solon,—whom the orators sometimes credit with the work of Clisthenes in addition to his own, may serve to show how loose such ascriptions often were. But at least the work of Lycurgus may be assumed to have marked an epoch in the history of the Spartan system. This system varied, first, on a distinction of three orders. Dorians alone were Spartiates, as opposed to mere Lacedæmonians, and to them belonged all political power. Lycurgus, said the tradition, assigned nine thousand lots of land to as many Spartiates, the land descended from father to eldest son, and, failing issue, reverted to the state. The older or non-

The Peloponnesus

The Delphic amphiktyony

The Homeric picture of early Hellas

The Homeric picture of early Hellas

Dorian conquest

Dorian population, settled chiefly on the mountain slopes around the Spartan lands, were called *Perioeci*. They were free farmers, who had no voice in the government, and were not required to perform military service. Lastly, the *Heilots* cultivated the lands of the Spartans, not as slaves, belonging to private masters, but as serfs of the commonwealth, hence no Spartan citizen could sell a *Heilot* or remove him from the land. From each farm the *Heilot*, had to produce annually a certain quantity of barley, oil, and wine, if there was a surplus, they could keep it for themselves. This condition of the *Heilots* was thus in some respects better than that of ordinary Greek slaves.

But it was such a constant reminder to remind them that they had once been a free peasantry. It was, then, as much for the sake of the *Heilots*, which made it so peculiarly galling. The hatred of the *Heilots* was a standing menace to the Spartan commonwealth. As Aristotle says, the Spartan kingship meant practically a life tenure of the chief military command. The government was essentially an official oligarchy, in which the power of the irresponsible ephors was not importantly modified by the gerousia, while the popular assembly played a part hardly more active than that of the Hænetic agora, with its formal privileges of simple suggestion or veto. The military training, from childhood upwards, to which the whole social life of Sparta was made subservient, was at first a necessity, but it soon became thoroughly identified with the ambition and with the pride of an exclusive warrior caste. Sparta was sharply marked off from the other Greek communities by this systematic treatment of war as the business of life. When the military prestige of Sparta began to decline in the course of the 4th century B.C., it was remarked that this was due to the increased attention which other states had begun to pay to the art of war, whereas in old days the Spartans had been like professional soldiers matched against civilians.

The mountain wall of Taygetus had set a barrier between Laconia and Messenia, which might have seemed to forbid the extension of Spartan power towards the west. If the Dorians in Messenia had fully preserved the warlike character of the race, they would probably have had little to fear. But they seem to have been in some measure enervated by the material wealth of a country which, at the same time, excited the envy of their neighbours. Myths have grown thickly around the story of the two Messenian wars. Thus, at least, appears certain the gradual conquest of Messenia by Sparta occupied not less than a hundred years (about 750-650 B.C.). The legend that, at a crucial time, the stirring war songs of the Aitiæ Tyrteus raised the sinking spirit of Sparta, agrees with the tradition of a long and doubtful struggle. Messenia was twice confined to the two chief combatants. Messenia was aided by other Peloponnesian states which dreaded a like fate for themselves,—Argos, Sicyon, Arcadia. Sparta was helped by Elis and Corinth. When Messenia had been conquered and the Dorian inhabitants reduced to the state of *Heilots*, Sparta had overcome the most difficult obstacle to her ambition. By conquests, of which the details are obscure, she won from Argolis a strip of territory on the eastern coast of the Peloponnese, and finally carried her north eastern border to Thyrea. In southern Arcadia alone the Spartan arms were decisively repulsed by Tegeæ, and the Taygetus, accepting the supremacy of Sparta, were enrolled, about 560 B.C., as honoured allies of the power which they had checked.

The republic warned Sparta that it was better to aim at leading the Peloponnese than at conquering it, and an opportunity was found of asserting this leadership in a manner far more effective than any military demonstration. At Olympia, in the valley through which the Alpheus

passes to the western coast, there was an ancient sanctuary of the Pelægian Zeus. An amphitryony, or league of neighbouring towns, held sacrifices and games there once in four years, the management of the festival being shared between Pisa and Elis. A dispute arose between these two states. Sparta confirmed Elis in the religious superintendence of the festival, and at the same time arrogated to herself the political headship of the sacred league. Every effort was now made by the Spartans to extend the popularity and enhance the brilliancy of the Olympic games. Sparta—already supreme in Laconia and Messenia, already the victorious rival of Argos in the east of the land—now appears at the Olympian shrine of Zeus in a character peculiarly well adapted to attract the loyalty of the western Achæans. The general recognition of Sparta as the first state in the Peloponnese may be said to date from the time when, under Spartan auspices, the Olympic festival acquired a new celebrity.

For political reasons Dorian Sparta had always cherished the traditions of the Achæan princes, but the monarchy of the Achæan age, if it still existed anywhere, was a rare survival. The form of government which had generally succeeded to it was oligarchy, that is, the rule of a group of noble families claiming descent from the heroes, possessing certain religious rites in which no aliens participated, and claiming to be, by a divine authority, the interpreters of the unwritten law. These families made up the state. The commons, who lived in or around the city as artisans, labourers, or farmers, were free men, but had no political rights. The Dorian ascendancy in the Peloponnese was peculiarly favourable to oligarchies. Sparta was, in fact, such an oligarchy, though not of the closest kind,—the Dorian citizens being the privileged class, while the *Perioeci* answered to the commons elsewhere. It was a fortunate circumstance for the political development of Greece that oligarchy did not, as a rule, pass directly into democracy. A period of transition was needed, during which the people, hitherto debased from all chance of political education, should learn the meaning of membership in the state.

This was afforded, at least in some measure, by that peculiar phase in the life of the Greek commonwealths, the age of the tyrannies. A *tyrannos* meant one whose power is both superior and contrary to the laws. An absolute ruler is not a *tyrannos* if the constitution of the state gives him absolute power, nor is a ruler unauthorized by the laws a *tyrannos* because he rules mildly. The genesis of the tyrant was different in different cases. Most often he is a member of the privileged class, who comes forward as the champion of the people against his peers, or throws the oligarchy with the help of the people, and establishes his own rule in its stead. Such was Cypselus at Athens. Sometimes he is himself one of the people, thus was the case with Othlorgos, who (about 676 B.C.) overthrew the Dorian oligarchy at Sicyon. The case of Cypselus at Corinth is intermediate between these two, for he belonged to a noble Dorian house, though not to the inner circle of those Bacchiads whose rule he overthrew. Or the tyrant is one who raises himself to absolute power from the stepping stone of some office with which the oligarchy itself had entrusted him. An example is supplied by Pisistratus of Agrigentum, and by the tyrants of some Ionic cities in Asia Minor. Lastly, the tyrant might be a king who had overstepped his constitutional prerogative. Phidon, king of Argos, is adduced by Aristotle as an instance of this rarer case. In all cases the tyrant properly so-called must be distinguished from a ruler whom a community has voluntarily placed above the law, either temporarily or for his life. Such was properly called an

Character of the government

The social life, a school of war

Growth of Sparta

The Olympic festival

Transition from monarchy to oligarchy

Transition from oligarchy to democracy

anarchists or dictators,—as Pittacus of Mitylene. The benefits conferred on the Greek commonwealths by the tyrannies were chiefly of two kinds. (1) The tyrant often instituted new religious festivals, in which the whole body of the citizens might take part. A feeling of civic unity was thus created, which could not exist while the nobles formed a separate caste, as exclusive in their worship as in their other privileges. (2) The court of the tyrant became a centre to which poets and artists were attracted. Such a man as Pericles of Cuntith (635-585) might aim at resembling an Eastern despot, but his encouragement of liberal arts must still have given an impulse to the higher civilization of Cuntith. Polycrates of Samos, the friend of Anaxagoras, welcomed all men of fine gifts to his court. Pro-talitus showed a like taste for poetry; and for the artistic embellishment of Athens. The root of evil in the tyranny was its unlawful origin, and its consequent reliance upon force, frequently leading the tyrant to aim at keeping the citizens in a state of helplessness and mutual distrust. But the founder of a tyranny was usually a man with some inborn qualities for command, and the baser forms of oppression were not required until he had given place to a weaker successor.

The age of the oligarchies and tyrannies coincides with the most active period of Greek colonization, which received an impulse both from redundant population and from political troubles at home. The two centuries from 750 to 550 B.C. saw most of the Greek colonies founded. Sicily received settlements from both the two great branches of the Greek race. Naxos, founded by the Chalcidians of Erebus (735 B.C.), with Leontium and Catana, founded soon afterwards by Naxos, formed a group of Ionic communities on the eastern side of the island. Syracuse, founded by Cuntith (734 B.C.), Gela, colonized by Rhodians and Cretans (690 B.C.), and Agrigentum, of which Gela was the parent city (582 B.C.), were among the chief of the Dorian commonwealths on the south-eastern and south-western coasts. Those Sicilian cities formed a fringe round the Sicilian and Sicilian of the interior, but, though in the presence of non-Hellenic populations, they never lost among themselves the sharp distinction between Dorian and Ionian (or "Chalcidic"), a distinction which was long the key-note to the inner history of the Siciliots.

The earliest of the Greek settlements in Italy was the Ionic Cumæ, on the coast near Cape Misenum, a little to the north-west of Naples. It was founded by Chalcidians of Erebus, as early, according to the tradition, as 1050 B.C. The Dorian Tarentum,—a colony of Sparta,—and the Achæan (Æolic) settlements of Sybaris and Croton, dated from the latter part of the 8th century B.C. Poseidonia (Paestum) was founded by Sybaris. Locri, an Æolic settlement near Cape Zephyrium (whence the epithet "Epizephyrinum"), and the Ionic Rhegium, founded from Chalcis, complete the series of flourishing cities which made south-western Italy appear as a new and richer land of the Hellenes, as Megale Hælia, *Magna Græcia*. The turning-point in its prosperity was the war between the two foremost of the Achæan cities, ending in the destruction of Sybaris by Croton (510 B.C.). By this event, just at the time when the Ionians of Asia Minor were passing under the sway of Persia, the Greeks of Italy were rendered less able to make head against the native tribes of the peninsula. The name Megale Hælia remained, but its old significance was gone, the spirit of confident progress had been quenched.

The distinctive character of Greek colonization is seen less vividly where, as in Sicily and Italy, Greek communities clustered together, than at those lonely outposts of Hellenic life where a single city stood in barbarian lands. Massalia (Marseille) was founded by the Ionians of Phœææ about 600 B.C., and became the parent of colonies on the

east coast of Spain. If Carthage had not fulfilled the purpose for which it was founded, by serving as the pious guardian of Phœnician commerce in the western Mediterranean, Greek settlements would probably have multiplied on those shores as rapidly as elsewhere. Cyrene, on the African coast, was a Dorian colony (630 B.C.) from Thuri, itself colonized by Sparta, and became the founder of Barca. Cocyra was colonized by Cuntith about 700 B.C., and joined with the mother-city in founding settlements (among others, Epidamnus) on the coast of Epirus. The northern shores of the Ægean and the Propontis were dotted with colonies, from the group of towns planted by Chalcis in the peninsulae called Chalcidicæ, to Byzantium,—which, like Selymbria, was founded by Megara (657 B.C.). Among the colonies on the western coast of Asia Minor, Miletus was especially active in creating other settlements, particularly for purposes of commerce. Neaurata, in the delta of the Nile, was a trading colony from Miletus, and flourished from 550 B.C. On the southern shores of the Propontis and the Buxine, Cyrene and Sinope (itself the parent city of Tiaræus) were daughters of Miletus. Here too were the remotest of Greek settlements,—Panticapæum (Ketchik in the Crimea), afterwards the capital of the Greek kings of the Bosporus, Olbia (or Borythene) on the adjacent mainland, and Istria, at the mouth of the Danube. The above enumeration, though not exhaustive, will serve to mark the wide extent of aims as indicated by Greek colonization. As the city was the highest unit in the political conception of the Greeks, so each colony contained within itself the essentials of a complete political life. Its relation to the parent-city was one of filial piety, not of constitutional dependence. In so far as the cult of the gods and heroes whom it worshipped was localized in the mother-country, it was needful that a link should exist between the religious rites of the colony and those of its parent, and this religious continuity was symbolized by the sacred fire which the founder (*ekloger*) carried with him from the public hearth to the new settlement. For the rest, Massalia and Olbia were cities of Hælia in as full sense as Athens or Sparta. It was due to the self-sufficing character (*autarky*) of the Hellenic city as such that Hælia was not a geographical expression.

When Attica first comes into the view of history, it already forms a single state of which Athens is the capital. The kingly period is over, and, though a close oligarchy still exists, there are signs of coming change. But the hints of poetical legend, and sometimes the surest evidence of the ground itself, enable us to go further back, and to form at least a general conception of earlier chapters in the story of the land. Of these plans on the northern shore of the Saronic gulf,—those of Megara, Eleusis, and Athens,—the Attic plan is that which offered the greatest advantages to settlers. It is the most spacious, it is the best watered, it holds the most central position in the district which sketches south-east from the chains of Cithæron and Parnes to the Ægean, it has the best seaboard for navigation and commerce, and it contains the best site for a city. Traces of early immigrants of various stocks survived in the names of places, in workshops, and in legends. Eleusis, Piræus, Thalæron, are Minyan names, the myths and cults tell also of Carians, Leleges, Cretans, Tyrrhenians. But the chief influence which came to Attica from beyond sea must have been that of the Phœnician settlement at Salamis (Salamis, the place of peace), a name which, as in the Cyprian worship of Zeus Salaminus (Zeus-Salamis), points to the Phœnician effort to establish friendly intercourse between alien races. Herodotus (viii. 44) distinguishes four periods in the early history of Attica, with each of which he connects an appellation. In the first the inhabitants were "Peloponnesians" called Eretrians, in the

Thuri  
1050 B.C.Colonies  
tion

Sicily

Italy

Spartan  
settle-  
ments

second "Kekropidae" in the third "Athenians" in the fourth "Ionians." The extensive series of rock dwellings found on the south and south west of the Acropolis are, by the ingenious and probable conjecture of E. Curtius, connected with the first of those periods. This primitive Pelagic settlement was the Rock town (*σπηλαια*), its inhabitants were Kramoi, the dwellers in the rocks. The second period was one in which the Acropolis became the seat of a small number of nobles, and of a princely family claiming descent from the earth-born Cecrops. The citadel becomes the centre of religious and political life, beneath it dwell Pelagic bondmen, who work for the Cecropidae as the Cyclopes worked for the Perseidae at Argos. The city of the Cecropidae—no longer of the Kramoi—becomes the head of the twelve cities among which the Attic land was divided. As the leading families are drawn towards the Cecropid city, rivalries cease, which are mythically represented by the strife of rival gods on the Acropolis. Zeus, the Pelagic god, has priority of possession. But his honours are disputed by Poseidon, the deity of the Thracians settled on the gulf of Salamis, and of their priestly clan, the Eumolpidae. The third claimant is Athena, the divinity of a race possessing a higher culture, the giver of the olive to the land. The final victory falls to Athena. But Zeus keeps the place of honour as protector of the whole community,—Poseidon, and Athena shares her sanctuary with Poseidon. The mythical Erechtheus,—representing once the ancient Poseidon and the naming of Athens,—is the symbol of the victory and the consolidation. This is the third period of Herodotus, "Erechtheus having succeeded to power," the Cecropidae become Athenians. The fourth and last period is that in which Ionian settlers press forward from their earlier seat on the bay of Marathon, and establish themselves—not without opposition—on the banks of the Ilissus. The worship of the Ionian Apollo takes its place beside that of Zeus and Athena. The Ionic settlement on the Ilissus was included in an enlarged Athens, and the close of the epoch was marked by that union (*συνωλισμος*) of Attica into a single state which Attic tradition ascribed to the hero king Theseus.

The light soil of Attica had protected it from such wholesale changes of population as had passed over Thessaly, Boeotia, and the Peloponnese. In contrast with the occupants of those lands the Attic population claimed to be indigenous, and the claim was true in this sense that the basis of the population was an element which had been there from prehistoric times. On the other hand the maritime advantages of Attica had been sufficient to attract foreign immigrants. Thus in Attica no one type of life and character prevailed to the same extent as the Dorian in the Peloponnese or the Aeolian in Boeotia. The Ionian element was tempered by others older than itself. This fact is the key to that equable and harmonious development which so remarkably distinguished the Attic people alike in culture and in politics. The institutions which are found existing in Attica in the 7th century B.C. may be regarded as dating from the age which tradition called that of Theseus,—the age, namely, in which the loose canton system of Attica was knit together into a single state. The inhabitants of Attica form three classes,—the Eupatridae or nobles, the Geomori, free husbandmen, and the Demurgi, or handicraftsmen. The government was wholly in the hands of the Eupatridae, who alone were citizens in the proper sense. The Eupatrid order was divided into four tribes, called after the sons of Ion—Ceklon, Eupolus, Egegorius, Argadeus. Each tribe contained three *phratres* or clans, and each clan three *gene* or houses. The members of each clan were united by the worship of an heroic ancestor, and all the clans were bound together by the common worship of Zeus Herkeios and Apollo Patroos.

Character  
of the  
Attic  
popula-  
tion

Civiles

The transition from monarchy to oligarchy was more gradual in Athens than it seems to have been elsewhere. First, the priestly office of the king was taken away, and, as the old name *basileus* implied religious as well as civil authority, he was henceforth called simply the ruler, *archon*. But the office of archon was still held for life, and was hereditary. The second step was to appoint the archon for ten years only. The third and last step was to divide the old legal power among nine archons appointed annually (593 B.C.). The first archon, called Eponymus, because his name marked the date of official documents, had a general supervision of affairs, and in particular represented the state as the guardian of orphans and minors, the second archon was high priest (*basileus*), the third was commander-in-chief (*polemarch*), the remaining six were the custodians of the laws ("thesmothetae"). After this reform, two events are the chief landmarks of Attic history before Solon. The first is the legislation of Draco, the second is the revolution of Cylon. Hitherto the Eupatridae had been the depositaries and sole interpreters of an unwritten law. Draco, himself a Eupatrid, was now commissioned, not to frame a new code, but to write down the laws as they existed in oral tradition. To a later age the law of Draco became a proverb of severity, but then severity was that of the rude age from which they had come down, not of the man who was employed to tabulate them. By this code (620 B.C.), and by the establishment of a court of fifty-one judges (*hektem*) in capital cases, the people were so far secured against abuse of the judicial office. But the existence of serious popular discontent a few years later is shown by the attempt of Cylon (612 B.C.). Stimulated by the example of his father-in-law, Theagenes, the tyrant of Megara, he resolved to seize the supreme power at Athens. Promises of relief and of a new agrarian law gained him adherents among the distressed classes, but when he had succeeded in seizing the Acropolis, he found himself disappointed of popular support and surrounded by the troops of the archons. He escaped. His partisans surrendered, on the promise of the archon Megacles that their lives should be spared, but when they had left the altars, they were cut down. The "Cylonian crime" was denounced by the people as having brought a pollution upon the city, and the punishment of the whole clan of the Alcmæonidae—to which Megacles belonged—was demanded as an expiation. The Eupatridæ refused to yield, until Solon, one of their order, prevailed on the Alcmæonidae to stand a trial before three hundred of their peers. They were found guilty of sacrilege, and were banished.

Solon was now to come forward as the umpire of still greater issues. The influence of his ardent and lofty nature on the people is expressed in the legend that his recitation of his elegy, "Salama," drew them to strike the blow by which "the fair maid" was won back from the Megarians. The part which he had taken in the Alcmæonidæ affair was well fitted to make him trusted both by the nobles and by the people. His legislation had a twofold scope. In the first place he aimed at giving immediate relief to a class whose plight was desperate. As there was little money in the land, those in whose hands it was had been able to force up the rate of interest as they pleased. The small farmers (geomori) were being crushed out of existence by a load of debt, mortgaging their farms to their creditors, who, in default of land, could even sell the debtor as a slave. Solon depreciated the value of the silver drachma by 27 per cent., so that a debt of 100 old drachmas could be paid with 73, a debt to the state was cancelled altogether. In a fine Ionic fragment, Solon calls as witnesses of his work "the greatest of Olympian deities, the black earth, wherefrom I took up of yore the pillars that had been set in many a place,"—these (*στοι*) being the stones

more Kingship  
—archon,  
ship

Draco

Cylon

turn of  
Solon

debtors

that marked a mortgaged homestead. Secondly, Solon aimed at establishing a permanent equilibrium between classes. He classed the citizens by their rated property as (1) Pentakosioi medimnoi, (2) Hippeis, (3) Zeugitai, (4) Thetes. The first class alone could hold the archonship, the fourth had no political privilege except that of voting in the assembly. But Solon made the assembly (ἐκκλησία) what it had never before been, a real power. He gave to it (1) the right of passing laws, (2) the right of calling magistrates to account, (3) the right of electing archons. At the same time he created a council of four hundred, to be elected annually by the people, through which all business should be introduced to the assembly. He strengthened the old Eupatrid Areopagus, by adding to its jurisdiction in homicide a general power of moral censorship, and provided that the archons of each year should, if found worthy, pass at the end of it into this senate. Athenians of a later age often described Solon as the founder of the democracy. This was not his own conception of his work. We have his own description of it —

"I gave the people as much strength as is enough, without taking away from them due share (*μήτις*), or adding thereto. But as for those who had power and the splendour of riches, to them also I gave counsel, even that they should not uphold violence. And I stood with my strong shield spread over both, and suffered neither to prevail by wrong." Solon was not a champion of popular rights, but a philosophic mediator between classes.

The removal of the urgent pressure of usury, the substitution of wealth for birth as the canon of privilege, and the bestowal of strictly limited political power on the people were Solon's achievements. It is no proof of their inadequacy that they were soon followed by the appearance of a successful usurpator. The Attic population was then locally divided into three classes—the Diacri or the "highlanders" of the north-east district (the poorest), the Paralí, the boatmen and fishermen of the coast, and the "Pedieus," the richer farmers of the Attic plain. Each of these classes formed a political faction, with an ambitious noble at its head. The Diacri were led by Pisistratus, the Paralí by Megacles, the Pedieus by Lycurgus. On the pretence that he had been murderously assaulted by the enemies of the people, Pisistratus obtained a guard of 60 men. He was presently increased to 400. He then seized the Acropolis (560 B.C.). After having been twice driven out by the combined forces of the Elean and the Sicion, he finally established himself as tyrant in 545 B.C., and reigned till his death in 527 B.C. He did not abolish Solon's constitution, though he received some of the highest offices for members of his own house. His government appears to have been mild and wise. He set the example of submission to the laws. By many new enactments he promoted good order and morality. The convenience of the citizens and the beauty of Athens were consulted by the construction of new buildings, roads, and aqueducts. There were but two things to remind Athenians that their paternal rule had been founded in force,—the presence of hired troops, and the levy of tithes on private lands. Pisistratus was succeeded by his eldest son Hippias. In 514 B.C. Hipparchus, the brother of Hippias, was murdered by Harmodius and Aristogiton, in revenge for an affront offered to the sister of Harmodius. The rule of Hippias, which had hitherto resembled that of his father, now became cruel. The Alcmeonidae—who had been in banishment since the final return of Pisistratus in 545—had won the favour of the Delphic priesthood by an act of libelosity. The temple at Delphi having been burned down, they had undertaken to rebuild it, and, instead of common limestone, which would have satisfied the contract, used Parian marble for the east side of the temple. They now exerted their influence.

Whenever Sparta or a Spartan consulted the oracle, the response always included a command to set Athens free. At last Cleomenes, king of Sparta, took the field. The children of Hippias fell into his hands, and, to save them, Hippias voluntarily withdrew from Athens (510 B.C.). The end of rule of the Pisistratid house was now at an end. In the Pisistratid phase of the song which gave it merited glory to Hippias, due rule and Aristogiton, Athens was once more under equal laws.

But there was a vehement strife of factions. The Eupatrid party, under Isagoras, wished to restore the oligarchy of the Solonian days. The party of popular rights was supported by the Alcmeonidae, and led by Cleisthenes, whose father, Megacles, had married the daughter of Cleisthenes, tyrant of Sicyon. Cleisthenes, in the words of Herodotus, took the people into partnership, and by his reforms became the real founder of the democracy. Abolishing the four Ionic tribes, which had included the Eupatridae, he instituted ten new tribes, which included all the free inhabitants of Attica. Each tribe was composed of several *demes* (townships) not adjacent to each other,—thus securing that the old clans should be thoroughly broken up among the new tribes. The number of the Council (*Boule*) was raised from 400 to 500,—50 members being elected from each of the ten new tribes. Further, it was arranged that each tribal contingent of 50 should take it in turn to act as a committee (*ἐπιτροπή*) of the council,—a board of presidents (*ἐπρόεδροι*), and the chairman of the day, being again chosen in rotation from the committee. A new office was also instituted. The command of the army was given to a board of ten Generals (*strategoi*), one being elected by each of the tribes. In later times the strategoi became ministers of foreign affairs. July courts of citizens were organized out of the assembly, to share the administration of justice, which had hitherto belonged to the archons and the Areopagus. As a safeguard for the state against party struggles, it was provided that, if the Council ostracized and the Ecclesia might declare the commonwealth to be in danger, each citizen might be summoned to indicate by ballot the name of any man whom he thought dangerous, and that, if the same name was written on 6000 tickets (*ostraka*), the man so indicated should go into exile for ten years, without, however, losing his civic rights or his property. This was the institution of ostracism. Finally, choice by lot was substituted for voting in the election to the various offices, thus diminishing the danger of factious partisanship.

Isagoras, the leader of the party opposed to these reforms, had a zealous ally in Cleomenes, king of Sparta. Cleisthenes, they alleged, was aiming at a tyranny such as that of his grandfather and namesake at Sicyon. Sparta, the leading Doran state, was in a manner the recognized champion of aristocracy against revolution. The Spartan herald summoned the Athenians to banish the accused Alcmeonidae, and Cleisthenes voluntarily left Attica. Cleomenes arrived at Athens with his army. Isagoras was made exarch, seven hundred "democratic" families were banished, the newly constituted Council of five hundred was dissolved. But now the people rose in arms. Cleomenes and Isagoras were besieged on the Acropolis. On the third day of the siege they surrendered. Cleomenes and his troops were allowed to withdraw. Isagoras escaped, but his Athenian adherents were put to death. Cleisthenes now returned to Athens. He seems, however, to have excited popular indignation by promoting a treaty with Persia, by which the supremacy of the Persian king was acknowledged. He thus left colour to the accusation of his enemies that he was aiming at a tyranny, and he was banished. Cleomenes presently invaded Attica a second time, with the Peloponnesian allies. But the other Spartan

king, Demetrius, was opposed to his designs. The Corinthians refused to follow him, and his army broke up when it had advanced no further than Eleusa. Meanwhile the Thebans and the Chalcidians of Euboea had been induced to take up arms against Athens. Freed from the danger of the Peloponnesian invasion, the Athenians marched against the Thebans. They found them on the shore of the Euripus, and routed them. Crossing the strait into Euboea, they defeated the Chalcidians on the same day. The lands of the Chalcidian knights (Hippolotæ) were divided in equal lots among four thousand Athenians, who occupied them, not as colonists forming a new city, but as non-resident citizens of Athens. This was the first *Levée en masse*. The Spartans, incited by Cleomenes, now made a final effort to rupture the democratic strength of Athens. Hippus was invited from his retreat on the Hellespont to Lacedæmon, and a Peloponnesian congress was convened at Sparta to discuss a project for restoring him to Athens as tyrant. The representative of Corinth urged that it would be shameful if Sparta, the enemy of tyrannies, should help to set up a new one. The congress was of his mind. The scheme failed, and Hippus went back to Sigeum.

The first *Levée en masse*

Athens a free commonwealth

Elements of Hellenic unity

Delphi

The national games

Art and poetry

In these five years (510-500) which followed the fall of the Persians, the future of Athens was decided. Athens had become a free commonwealth, in which class grievances no longer hindered the citizens from acting together with vigorous spirit. The results were soon to appear in work done by the Athenians, not for Athens only, but for all Greece.

The time was now drawing near when Greece was to sustain its first historical conflict with the barbarian world. There was not, in the modern sense, an Hellenic nation. But there were common elements of religion, manners, and culture, which together constituted an Hellenic civilization, and were the basis of a common Hellenic character. The Greeks of Epirus, united in the worship of the Pelægian Zeus, had become the Hellenes of Thessaly, united in the worship of Apollo. The shrine of Delphi, at the centre of the most important amphitryony, had now become the religious centre of all Hellas. It was acknowledged as such by foreigners, by the kings of Phrygia and Lydia in the east, by the Etruscans in the west, as afterwards by the Roman republic. In political matters also Delphi was a common centre for the Greek states, mediating or advising in feuds between cities, and giving the final sanction to constitutional changes. A sense of Hellenic unity was further promoted by the great festivals. It has already been seen how Sparta lent new brilliancy to the gatherings at Olympia. The Pythian festival was revived with a fresh lustre after the first Sacred War (595-586), in which Cleisthenes, tyrant of Sicyon, and his allies destroyed Cræus, the foe of Delphi. A little later two other festivals were established, the Isthmian and the Nemean, at about the time when the tyranny of the Cypselids was overthrown at Corinth, and that of the Othagorids at Sicyon. The games of Nemea and of the Isthmus were new assertions of the Dorian sentiment which was so strongly opposed to tyrannies, and they exemplify the manner in which such festivals were fitted to express and strengthen national sympathy. In the gradual growth, too, of Hellenic art,—with a stamp of its own distinct from that of Assyria, Babylonia, Phœnicia, or Egypt,—the Greeks found a bond of union, and the temples were centres at which the growth of such an art was encouraged and recorded. Above all, the Iliomic poetry, in which the legends of the heroic age took a form that appealed to every branch of the Greek race, was a witness to the contrast between Greek and barbarian. It was the interpretation of this contrast which made Homer so peculiarly the national poet. Still the unity of Greece had hitherto been

little more than an ideal. The only great enterprise in which Greeks had made common cause against barbarians belonged to legend. The first historical event in which the unity of Greece found active expression was the struggle with Persia.

### III. The Ionian Revolt and the Persian Wars, 502-479 B.C.

The twelve Ionian cities on the western coast of Asia Minor formed a community which kept itself thoroughly distinct from the Æolian colonists to the north and the Dorians to the south. The Pan-Ionic festivals preserved the memory of the common descent. The Ionian life and culture had a character of its own. But the Ionian cities had no political cohesion, nor had they any recognized Ionian leader. One after another they became tributary to the kings of Lydia. The process of subjugation commenced at the time when the Lydian dynasty of the Mermnads (about 716 B.C.) began to make themselves independent of Assyria. It was completed by Croesus, to whom, about 560 B.C., all the Ionian cities had become subject. Croesus was friendly to the Greeks; he respected their religion, *Lydia*, and enriched its shrines; he welcomed distinguished Greeks to Sardis. All that was exacted from the Ionians by Croesus was that they should acknowledge him as their suzerain, and pay a fixed tribute. The Persians, under Cyrus, isolated Croesus and conquered Lydia about 547 B.C. The whole coast-line of Asia Minor was afterwards reduced by Harpagus, the general of Cyrus. The Persians, under zealous monotheists, destroyed the Greek temples. But it was not till the reign of Darius, who succeeded Cambyses in 521 B.C., that the Ionians felt the whole weight of the Persian yoke. Darius, the able organizer of the Persian empire, preferred that each Ionian city should be ruled by one man whom he could trust. He therefore gave system and support to tyrannies.

It is characteristic of the political condition of Ionia that the revolt was not a popular movement, but was the work of two men, each of whom had private ends to serve. Histæus, tyrant of Miletus, had rendered a vital service to Darius during his Scythian expedition (510 B.C.) by dissuading the other Greek leaders from breaking down the bridge over the Danube, which secured the retreat of the Persian army. Having been rewarded with a principality in Thrace, he justly became suspected of ambitious designs. Darius sent for him to Susa, and detained him there on the pretext that he could not live without his friend. Meanwhile Aristagoras, the son-in-law of Histæus, ruled at Miletus. In 502 Aristagoras undertook to restore the exiled oligarchs of Naxos, and for this purpose obtained 200 Persian ships from Artaphernes, the satrap of western Asia Minor. The enterprise miscarried. Aristagoras, dreading the anger of Artaphernes, now began to meditate revolt. He was encouraged by secret messages from Histæus, who hoped to escape from Susa by being sent to suppress the rising. Aristagoras laid down his tyranny, and called on the people of Miletus to throw off the Persian yoke. The other Ionian cities followed the example. They deposed their tyrants and declared themselves free. The Æolian and Dorian settlements made common cause with them. Cyprus also joined in the revolt (500 B.C.). Aristagoras next sought aid beyond the Ægean. Sparta held aloof, but five ships were sent by the Æolians, and twenty by the Athenians. The united Greek force surprised Sardis, and set fire to it, but was presently driven back to the coast. The Athenians then went home. Darius was deeply incensed by this outrage. The whole Persian force was brought to bear on Ionia, and Miletus was invested by land and sea. In a sea fight off Lade, an island near Miletus, the Ionians were decisively defeated by a Persian fleet of nearly twice their number,

partly through the shameful desertion of the Samians and Lesbians during the battle (406 B.C.). The Persians soon afterwards took Miletus by storm (405 B.C.). The Greek cities of the Asiatic seaboard and of the Thracian Chersonesus successively fell before them.

But the vengeance of Darius was not yet complete. He could not forget that the Greeks from beyond the sea had helped to burn Sardis, and he resolved that the punishment of Athens and Eretria should be as signal as that of his own vassals in Ionia. A Persian army, under Mardonius, crossed the Hellespont and advanced through Thrace. But the Persian fleet which accompanied it was shattered by a storm in rounding Mount Athos. The progress of Mardonius was also checked by the Thracians, and he retreated to Asia.

The ambition of Mardonius had been to bring all European Hellas under the rule of the Achæmenides. The second Persian expedition, guided by more cautious counsel, had a narrower scope. It was directed strictly against those states which the great king had vowed to punish. The intrigues of the Persiastates were busy in promoting it, and Hippas was to lend his personal guidance to its leader. But before the new force set out Persian agents were sent through Greece to demand the symbols of submission from the cities. Most of the islands feared to refuse. Ægina, now a prosperous maritime power, complied from another motive than fear. Even Persia was welcome to her as an ally against Athens. The Athenians called upon Sparta, whom they thus recognized as the head of Greece, to punish this treason to the Hellenic cause, and Cleomenes, after overcoming the opposition of his royal colleague, Demaratus, took an avenging revenge on the Æginetans by depositing ten men of their chief families in the hands of the Athenians.

In 490 B.C. the second Persian expedition crossed the Ægean under the command of Datis and Artabanes. Naxos was sacked, Eretria was betrayed. It seemed hardly doubtful that Athens too must fall. The Persians landed in the bay of Marathon, enclosed by the spurs of Balaureus (Pentelici) and the hills of the Diacra. They thus avoided the dangers of a voyage round a rocky coast, and no port of Attica, Hippas told them, was so favourable to cavalry. The Athenians had sent for help to Sparta, but a religious scruple forbade the Spartans to march before the time of the full moon. Nine thousand Athenian citizens, with the slaves who carried their shields, went forth to meet the Persians at Marathon. On the way they were joined by a thousand Plataeans,—the whole force of that city,—who came to stand by their old protectors. Miltiades, formerly the ruler of the Chetonesse, was one of the ten Athenian generals. Five of these voted for awaiting Spartan help. The other five, led by Miltiades, were for giving battle at once, and the vote of the polemarch, Callimachus, turned the scale in their favour. The Greeks charged down from the hills upon the Persians. The Greek centre was driven in, but the Greek wings prevailed, and then closed upon the Persian centre. The Persians fled to their ships. Six thousand Persians fell. The Greek loss was about 193. Believing that traitors at Athens had signalled to the Persians to surprise the city while undefended, the army hastened back. The Persian fleet soon approached, but seeing troops on the shore, sailed away for Asia.

After the victory of Marathon Miltiades was all-powerful at Athens. He asked the people to give him a fleet, in order that he might strike another blow at Persia while the effects of Marathon were fresh. His demand was granted. But he employed the fleet in an attempt to wreak a private grudge on the island of Paros. At the end of twenty-six days he returned to Athens baffled, and suffering from a wound in the thigh. He was indicted for

having deceived the people, and was sentenced to a fine of about £12,000. Being unable to pay, it became disfavoured as a public debt. His wound mortified, and he died, leaving debt and dishonour to his son Simon. Aristides was now the most influential man at Athens, as Themistocles was the ablest. Themistocles forebore that the Persians would return, and that Athens could meet them only on the sea. He aimed therefore at creating a Persian navy. Already (491 B.C.) he had persuaded the Athenians to assist about fortifying the peninsula of the Piræus, which, with its three harbours commanded by the height of Munychia, offered greater advantages than the open roadstead of Phalerum. He now urged that the revenues from the silver mines of Laurium should be applied to building a fleet. The frequent hostilities between Athens and Ægina enforced the advice. Before 480 B.C. Athens had acquired 200 triremes. Aristides was at the head of a party who viewed this movement with alarm. Had not the naval empire of Miletus, Chios, and Samos been transient? The land-holding citizens who had fought at Marathon would give place to a mob of sailors and traders. An unstable democracy would carry the state out of the ancient ways. The strife of parties came to an issue. An ostracism was held and Aristides was banished,—probably in 481 or 483 B.C. Themistocles remained the leader of Athens in the new path which he himself had opened. Athens was now the first maritime power of Greece.

The repulse at Marathon had probably not prevented the Persian commanders from re-entraining their expedition as in a great measure successful. Darius resolved on the complete subjugation of Greece. But, when vast preparations had been in progress for three years, he died, leaving the throne to Xerxes, the eldest of his four sons by Atossa, the daughter of Cyrus (485 B.C.). Xerxes was not, like Xerxes his father, a born ruler of a trained warrior. But he was profoundly convinced that all human beings were the natural slaves of the Persian king, and he was influenced by a strong war-party in the palace, with Artabanus and Mardonius at its head. The house of Persæstus, the ambitious Alcmaids of Thessaly, and Demaratus, the exiled king of Sparta, united in urging an invasion of Greece. It was in vain that Artabanes, the uncle of the king, argued on behalf of the moderate party at the court. Orders were given to raise such an armament as the world had never seen, a host which should display the whole resources of the empire from the Indus to the Ægean, from the Danube to the Nile. Forty-six nations were represented by the forces which wintered at Sardis in 481 B.C. A fleet of 1200 triremes, and about 3000 transports and smaller craft, assembled near Cyrene and Phœacia on the Ionian coast. In the spring of 480 B.C. Xerxes led about a million of men to the Hellespont, whither the fleet went before to meet them.

Greece was probably never stronger than it was at this time. The population of the Peloponnese may have been about two millions. Athens, according to Herodotus, had 30,000 citizens. The Boeotian towns and the islands were prosperous. The proportion of slaves to freemen varied from perhaps four to one at Athens to as much as ten to one at Corinth or Ægina. Life was still simple and vigorous. Society was not divided into rich classes entertained by luxury and poor classes enfeebled by want. The public palaestras were schools of physical training for war. But that which Greece lacked was political unity. Aristocracy and democracy were already rival forces. Everywhere the aristocrats felt that a victory over Persia must have a national character, and must so far be a victory for the people. They inclined therefore to the Persian cause, and the stand in defence of Greece was

British of  
Miltiades

Miltiades

Condition  
of Greece

Persian  
expedition

Political  
divisions



eventually made by a few states only. Sparta, as the leading city of Greece, took the first step towards the formation of a national party by convening a congress at the isthmus of Corinth in the autumn of 481. Here Themistocles showed his statesmanship by prevailing on the Athenians to abstain from disputing the hegemony of Sparta. Most of the Peloponnesian cities were represented at the congress. But Argos and Achæa, jealous of Sparta, held aloof. In Boeotia, Thebes,—the enemy of Athens,—favoured Persia. In Thessaly the dynasty of the Aleuads were the active allies of the invader. Gelon of Syracuse refused to aid unless he was to lead. The Corinthians promised sixty ships, but did not send them. Cetea also failed to help. The states which fought against Persia were then three only,—Sparta with her Peloponnesian allies, Athens, Ægina, Megara, Platæa, Thebes. This national league expressed indeed the principle of Greek unity, but Greece was far from being united. The "medizing" party was strong, and it counted some adherents in many even of the patriotic cities. Whichever democracy had enemies Persia had friends.

Plan of  
defence

The first idea of the national defence was to arrest the torrent of invasion at some northern point which could be held against great numerical odds. Tempe proving untenable, it was resolved to make a stand at Thermopylæ. When Leonidas had fallen with his 300 Spartans and the 700 Thebans who shared their heroic death, the next object of the Peloponnesian allies was to guard the isthmus of Corinth. The peculiar misfortune of Athens in the war was her position between two gates, the first of which had been forced by the enemy. The Greek leaders seem to have assumed at first that it was vain to oppose the Persian land forces in an open field. Xerxes occupied Athens, and the flames which destroyed its houses and temples at last avenged the burning of Sardis. The Greek ships, which had gained some advantage over the Persian fleet at Artemisium in the northern waters of the Eubœan strait, had moved to Salamis as soon as it was known that the Persians had passed Thermopylæ. The homeless population of Athens had been conveyed to Salamis, Ægina, and Troezen before the arrival of Xerxes. And now the first cast of Themistocles was verified. Athens, and Greece itself, were saved chiefly by the Athenian ships,—200 in number out of a total of 366. The Peloponnesian leaders wished to withdraw the fleet to the isthmus. Themistocles saw that if he left Salamis it would disperse. He sent word to Xerxes that the Greeks meditated escape. The Persian fleet surrounded them in the night. Next day the

Battle of  
Salamis

battle of Salamis was fought. Of 1000 Persian ships, 200 were destroyed, the rest fled. It was on the same day that Gelon of Syracuse defeated the Carthaginians at Himæra in Sicily (480 B.C.). Xerxes lost heart and retreated to Asia, leaving Mardonius with 300,000 men to finish the war. In the summer of 479 Athens was again occupied and destroyed by the Persians. Now at length Sparta came to the rescue. Pausanias, the guardian of the young son of Leonidas, led 110,000 of the allies into Boeotia, and utterly defeated the army of Mardonius near Platæa (479 B.C.). On the same day the 4000 of the Greek fleet defeated those of the Persian fleet in a battle on the shore at Mycale near Miletus. This victory set Ionia free from Persia.

League  
of the  
Persian  
war

The Persian war had revealed both the weakness and the strength of Greece. The hereditary autocracy of the Thessaly had shown that they were eager to establish the supremacy of their house with the help of Asiatic despotism. Such states as Argos and Thebes had not been ashamed to indulge jealousy and party spirit by betrayal of the common cause. Even Sparta and the Peloponnesian allies had been disposed to confine their endeavours to the defence of

their own peninsula, leaving Athens and the northern cities to their fate. On the other hand the struggle had brought into sharp relief the contrast between absolute monarchy and constitutional freedom. This appeared in two things: the Greek strategy was superior, and the Greek troops fought better. Athens, in particular, had shown how both the intelligence and the spirit of citizens are raised by equal laws. The mistakes of the invaders,—which, to a Greek mind, might well have seemed the work of Atreus,—were such as are natural when a vast force is directed by the intemperance of a single will. Alcibiades and Demetrius advised Xerxes to occupy Cythra. The Thebans advised Mardonius to save disunion among the Greeks by means of bribes. Both counsels were judicious, and both were neglected. Time is, in war, the surest ally of superior numbers and resources, but the impatience of the Persian commanders staked everything on a few pitched battles. Again, the Persians, unlike the Lydians of old, destroyed the Greek temples. They thus conferred an immense moral advantage on their antagonists. He could no longer doubt that he was helped by his gods.

#### IV The Period of Athenian Supremacy, 478–404 B.C.

In the space from the Persian to the Peloponnesian War the central interest belongs to Athens. The growth of Athenian empire, the successive changes through which it passed, and its influence on the rest of Greece, the inner development of Athenian life, political, intellectual, social,—these are the salient features in a period of about fifty years. The first cause of Themistocles after the repulse of the Persian invasion was to restore the fortifications of Athens. The jealous interference of Sparta, instigated by Ægina and Corinth, was defeated by his ingenuity. A wall of larger extent than the old one was built round Athens, and a strong wall was also carried round the Piræus. The Persians had been driven out of Ionia, but they still held many places on the Thracian and Asiatic coast. The Spartan Pausanias, commanding the Persian Greek fleet, took Byzantium from the Persians in 478. He now formed the design of making himself a despot, and by adoption of the manners of a Persian grandee became so offensive to the Greek captains that they requested the Athenian commanders to assume the leadership of the fleet. Pausanias was recalled to Sparta, and his successor found that the hegemony had already changed hands. The league, of which Athens now became the head (477 B.C.), was intended to continue the national defence against Persia. Its special purpose was to guard the Ægean. Aristides was chosen to assess the rate of contribution for the members. The representatives of the several cities met at the temple of Apollo in Delos, where the common fund was also deposited. Hence the league was called the Confederacy of Delos. It was only gradually that this free league of confederacy, with Athens for a president, passed into an Athenian empire over tributary cities. At first each city contributed ships to the common fleet. But the practice arose of allowing some cities to contribute money instead of ships. A city which did this had no control over Athens, and no protection against attack. One after another of the discontented allies revolted from Athens, changing in its character, and was forcibly reduced to the condition of a subject. The next was the earliest example (466 B.C.), Thasos was the next (465 B.C.), and as early as 449 B.C. only three insular allies remained free,—Samos, Lesbos, and Chios. The transfer of the common fund from Delos to Athens (about 454 B.C.) was merely the outward sign of a change in which most members of the original league had already been compelled to acquiesce. In the earlier years of the Confederacy the work for which it had been formed was not neglected. Of the successes gained against Persia the

most notable was the victory of Cimon over the Persians, both by land and by sea, at the mouth of Eurymedon (466 B.C.). But, as Athens assumed more and more distinctly an imperial character, the common fund came to be regarded as a tribute which could be applied to exclusively Athenian objects. This was the grievance which made the very name of the "tribute" (*phoros*) so hateful.

Culmination  
of Athenian  
power

The years 457-445 B.C. may be taken as marking the greatest extension of the Athenian empire. It was in 457 that their victory at Cnephosia in Boeotia, following on their defeat at Tanagra, enabled the Athenians to break up for a time the oligarchical league over which Thebes presided. Democratic were established in the Boeotian towns, and Athens was mutually supreme, not only in Boeotia, but also in Phocis and Locris. In 445, after a struggle of some years, Athens conquered Ægina. But now the tide began to turn. In 443 the defeat of the Athenians at Coroneia destroyed the power of Athens in Boeotia, Phocis, and Locris. Oligarchies were restored. First Euboea and then Megara revolted from Athens. The Spartans, released from a truce of five years (453-447), invaded Attica. They advanced, however, no further than the Thracian plain, and it was believed that their leader, the king Pleistoneus, had taken Athenian bribes. Freed from this danger, Pericles was enabled to reduce Euboea. But the dream of an Athenian land-empire was over. In 445 a truce for thirty years was concluded between Athens and Sparta. Athens gave up all dependencies on the mainland of Greece. Henceforth the Athenian empire was to be maritime only.

Thirty  
Years'  
Truce

Between the conclusion of the Thirty Years' Truce and the events which led to the Peloponnesian War the most important incidents were—first, the revolt of Samos and its reduction by Athens (440 B.C.), next, the foundation by Athens of two settlements, Thurii, on the site of Sybaris in southern Italy, and Amphipolis, on the Strymon, in Thracia.

Constitutional  
changes  
at Athens

Meanwhile the inner political life of Athens had passed through great changes. Soon after the Persian war, the fourth or poorest class of the Solonian timocracy had been made eligible to the archonship. This was done on the proposal of Aristides himself. The maritime population of the Piræus was now large, and it had become impossible to exclude the main body of the citizens from the chief offices of the state. The development of Athenian democracy had been secured by that loyal unity of civic action and feeling which the Persians war had produced. Themistocles, whose policy had been the source of those new impulses, did not remain to direct them; he was accused of complicity in the Persian intrigues of Pausanias, and ostracized (about 471 B.C.). Aristides died in 468. Cimon, the son of Miltiades, was now at the head of a conservative party. The other party, which was rather progressive than properly democratic, was led by Pericles, an Alcmaeonid, and Ephialtes. A blow was dealt to the influence of Cimon and his party when the Spartans insultingly dismissed an Athenian force which had marched under Cimon, to help them in reducing the insurgent Helots on Mount Ithome (464 B.C.). Soon afterwards some important reforms were proposed and carried by Ephialtes. The powers of the Areopagus were diminished. Probably it lost its general censorial power and its veto upon legislation, retaining its jurisdiction in homicide. The archons and generals were deprived of their discretionary judicial powers. Henceforth the people was to be the final judge both in criminal and in civil causes. The juries chosen from the Heliaie were now organized as a permanent system of courts, every juror receiving a fee from the state for each day of his attendance. Cimon was ostracized, and the exasperation of the conservative party was shown by the

assassination of Ephialtes (157 B.C.). Cimon was succeeded in the leadership by his grandson, Thucydides, son of Melesias, and when, in 413 B.C. Thucydides also was ostracized, there was no longer any dissension as to the policy of Pericles. Athens was now strengthened and embellished by a series of public works. Already in 457-456 two long walls had been built, one from Athens to the Piræus, the other from Athens to the Pnyx, and about 415 a third or intermediate wall, parallel to the latter, was built on the proposal of Pericles. The Odeon, a theatre for musical performances, arose on the east side of the theatre of Dionysus, under the Acropolis. On the Acropolis itself the Erechtheion, the shrine of Athene Polias, which had been burned by the Persians, was rebuilt on a greater scale, and the Parthenon, the magnificent temple of the Virgin Athene, containing the chryselephantine statue of the goddess by Phidias, was constructed under his superintendence from the plans of Ictinus and Callicrates (438 B.C.). The Propylæa or portals, forming a colonnaded entrance to the Acropolis on the western side, were completed a few years later.

The period known as "the age of Pericles" may be Pericles roughly defined as the years from 460 to 430 B.C. The idea which pervades the whole work of Pericles is that the Athenian people, having been called upon by circumstances to rule over a wide alliance, must be trained to rule worthily. Pericles was opposed to extending the empire of Athens, but he was resolved to hold it, because he saw the danger of giving it up. And, in order that it should be held securely, he saw that the people must be educated, first, politically, by constitutional freedom, and next, intellectually and socially, by general cultivation. The *theoricon*, or money given to the citizen to pay for his seat at the theatre, was doubtless a party expedient, like the pay provided for the juror and for the citizen-soldier; it belonged to a plan for breaking the exclusive power of wealth. But it also fitted into the system by which Pericles sought to bring the citizens collectively under the influence of art in all its noblest forms. Painting, music, sculpture, architecture, had each its place in this scheme, but for the statesman's object no single instrument was perhaps so potent as the drama. It was a time of contending forces, in which one chief peril was lest the generation to which a larger future was opening should lose its hold on what was best in the past. The religious tradition and the new ethical subtlety were nowhere reconciled in so lofty an ideal as by Sophocles, nor could any presentment of an rival the theatre in its power of quickening a sympathetic enthusiasm.

The "age of Pericles" would have produced better results for the political future of Athens if Pericles himself had been less great. As Thucydides says, the nominal democracy was virtually the rule of one man. The informal sovereignty of Pericles hindered the use of those who might otherwise have been trained to succeed him. During his lifetime the need of a restraining force was not felt in the reformed institutions, for that force was supplied by a single mind. But when he was gone it was seen that the new equilibrium of the state depended on a Pericles being at its head. Probably Pericles himself believed that there were men who could continue what he had begun, and if he was wrong, that cannot detract from the glory of what he did for his own time.

V. *The Peloponnesian War, 431-404 B.C. The Period of Spartan and then of Theban Ascendancy, 404-362 B.C.*

In examining the causes which led to the breach of the Thirty Years' Truce, and to the Peloponnesian War which followed it, Thucydides distinguishes two alleged or immediate causes from a third cause which was not alleged,

Causes of  
Pelopon-  
nesian  
War

but which lay deeper than either of the others. The two allied enemies were—(1) the active help given by Athens to the Corinthians in their pursuit of Corinth concerning Epidaurus, a colony of Corinth; (2) the Athenian blockade of Potidaea, a Corinthian colony which had revolted from Athens. The most central issue was the growth of Athenian power, and the alarm which this caused to the two dominions. In truth the aims of Epidaurus and the aims of Potidaea were merely the sparks which happened to kindle the flame. That long conflict which we call the Peloponnesian War had been prepared from the time when the Athenian democracy, founded by Cleisthenes, had become a power in Greece through the successful struggle against Persia. From that time there were two antagonistic principles, represented by two rival cities—again by Sparta, democracy by Athens. The other cities grouped themselves naturally round these. All Greece was divided between these two ideas. The Peloponnesian War, the collision between them. It would be inconsistent with the limits and scope of this sketch to enumerate the details of the war in each of its twenty-seven years. Yet we must aim at indicating the periods into which it falls, the leading characteristics and tendencies which it presents.

1 The first period of the Peloponnesian War comprises the years from its commencement in 431 B.C. to the peace of Nicias in 421,—hence sometimes called the Ten Years' War. As one of its main features was the frequent invasion of Attica by the Peloponnesians, the latter called it the Attic War. The result of it was that Sparta had gained nothing, and that Athens had lost nothing except Amphipolis. By the peace of Nicias Athens kept all places which had surrendered voluntarily. Those allies of Sparta from which these places had been taken were naturally discontented. Corinth and Thebes especially were aggrieved. In spite of all the mistakes of Athens,—in spite of the devastating plague,—in spite of such reverses as the defeats at Delium and Amphipolis, and the loss of the Chalkidic towns,—Athens remained on the whole triumphant, and against what Brasidas had done for Sparta might be set the victories of Pericles and the capture of Sphacteria. On the other hand the peace of Nicias had brought dissatisfaction into the Spartan confederacy.

2 The second period of the war extends from the peace of Nicias in 421 to the catastrophe of the Sicilian expedition in 413. The four years immediately following the peace of Nicias are the only years during which the great fundamental antagonism on which the whole war rested was temporarily obscured. Many of the allies of Sparta were discontented, and the intrigues of Alcibiades were active among them. But it was in vain that oligarchic allies were gained for the moment to the democratic cause. The normal relations were soon restored. Then came the Athenian expedition to Sicily, ending in a crushing disaster. Thucydides thinks that the mistake lay, not so much in an original miscalculation of strength, as in the failure at Athens to support the expedition after it had gone. It is indeed possible that with other guidance Athens might have conquered Syracuse. But at least it was essential that Athens should put forth its whole strength, if only for the reason that no people resembled the Athenians so closely as the Syracusans. Yet never had the Athenians fought under greater disadvantages. The Athenian force was in attack, at Syracuse they had to act on the defensive. The bold and versatile Alcibiades was made a public enemy. Nicias, timid and in weak health, is opposed to Gylippus, who unites a Dorian energy of hatred to Athens with something like Ionian command of resource. And, when everything had been lost except

chances of saving the army, the perversity of Nicias defeated the prudence of Demosthenes. The Sicilian disaster was the turning point of the war. Pericles had warned the Athenians against needless ventures and a policy of aggrandizement. They had incurred a needless risk of tremendous magnitude, and had lost. If they had won, Alcibiades would probably have raised a tyranny on the ruins of their democracy.

3 The third and last period of the war is from the Sicilian defeat in 413 to the taking of Athens by Lysander in 404, a few months after the battle of Egospotami. This is the period called the Declean War, because in 413, Decleia in Asia was occupied by the Spartans, and continued to be a permanent base of their operations against Athens. As the sea-board of Asia Minor was the scene of much of the fighting, it is sometimes also called the Ionian War. In this last chapter the war takes a new character. After the Sicilian overthrow Athens was really doomed. The Declean War is a prolonged agony of Athenian despair. Athens had now no hope but in her ships, and the leaders had to find their own supplies. The Spartan treasury was also empty. This want of money on both sides gave the mastery of the situation to Persia. And it was due to the fawning treason of Alcibiades that the aid of Persia was given to Sparta. Athens was ultimately conquered, not by the Spartan confederacy, but by the oligarchy of Athens bent on winning political office. The "Revolution of the Four Hundred," with its brief success, greatly contributed to the exhaustion of the city. Even at Egospotami, even when Lysander was before Athens, it was the baneful influence of Athenian faction that turned the scale. When Athens had been taken and the walls destroyed, Sparta was once more the first power in Greece. When Thrasybulus and the patriotic exiles had overthrown the rule of the Thirty Tyrants, they restored the Athenian democracy, but they could not restore the old Athenian power.

Sparta itself was changed. The old Spartan institutions had taught a simple reliance on disciplined strength. In the Peloponnesian War Sparta had won the victory with Persian gold. Already the love of money had found its way into the state which had once been so carefully protected from it. Differences of degree had arisen between the citizens, whose equality had been the very basis of the old Spartan life. Citizens who had been impoverished by the use of money, and who could no longer pay their share of the public tables, were now distinguished as "inferiors" (*trochiloi*) from those who retained their full civic rights (*hectoi*). Spartan commanders abroad were not always inaccessible to bribes. The habit of military discipline indeed remained. Spartans were still distinguished, as a rule, by gallantry in the field, by care for the dead, and by attention to the ritual of the gods. Nor had the valley of the Eurotas remained closed to the higher culture of Greece. The old type of Spartan leader—the rough soldier incapable of eloquence or of finesse—had ceased to be the only type. An Athenian might have envied the powers of persuasion and the diplomatic tact of such Spartans as Brasidas, Lysander, or Gylippus. But the qualities of the old Sparta were seldom fused into a perfect harmony with the new accomplishments. Such men as Lichas and Callicratides were rare. The balance of political power, as it existed in the old constitution, had also been unsettled. The kings were still, as of old, the commanders-in-chief on land. But the new office of the admiral (*navarchos*) was invested with the chief command at sea. The supreme control of the state had passed more and more into the hands of the ephors, and the ephors, chosen annually, were not always incommutable.

Sparta had waged the Peloponnesian War in the name

first period of the war, 431-421 B.C.

Second period, 421-413 B.C.

third period, 413-404 B.C.

the victory of Sparta

of freedom. The Greek cities were to be liberated from the all-absorbing tyranny of Athens. Now, however, Sparta, although failed to redeem these pledges. On the contrary she aimed at setting up a tyranny of her own. Oligarchical governments were established, controlled in each city by a Spartan garrison under a Spartan hamost or military governor. The earliest and one of the worst cases was the tyranny of the thirty tyrants at Athens, set up by Lyseander, and supported by Spartan arms until, after eight months, the Athenian exiles under Thrasybulus marched from Phyle upon Athens. The Athenian democracy was formally restored in September 103 B.C., and the liberators used their victory with a wise moderation. Four years later Socrates was put to death, because a party blindly zealous for the old beliefs of Athens could not see that such thought as his led to the only firm basis for a new social order.

The defeat of the 10,000 Greeks under Xenophon, in 401 B.C., marks a turning-point in the relations of Greece to Persia. It was to the Greeks a striking revelation of Persian weakness, an encouragement to schemes of invasion which would before have seemed wild. Sparta now began a war against the Persians in Asia Minor—partly to escape from the reproach of having abandoned Asiatic Hellas to the barbarian Agesslaus, on whom the issue of the famous retreat had not been lost, was encouraged by success to plan a bolder campaign. But in 394 B.C. the Athenian Conon, commanding the fleet raised by the satrap Pharnabazus, utterly defeated the Spartan fleet at Cnidus. Soon afterwards, under his protection, the Long Walls of Athens were destroyed. The Spartan power in Asia Minor was at an end. The oligarchies were overthrown, and the Spartan governors expelled.

The reverses of Sparta did not end here. At the instigation of Persia an alliance was formed between Athens, Thebes, Argos, and Corinth. In the territory of the latter state the allies waged war on Sparta, to whose aid Agesslaus was recalled from Asia. When the Corinthian War had lasted six years, the peace of Antalcidas was negotiated between Sparta and Persia (387 B.C.). By it the Greek cities in Asia, with Cyprus, were given up to Persia. Lemnos, Imbros, and Scyros were assigned to Athens. All other Greek cities were declared independent. The meaning of this was that they were to be independent of each other—isolated for purposes of defence—and all alike dependent on the Great King. The Corinthian War had begun from Persian intrigue, it ended with a peace dictated by Persia. But the Spartan policy had gained its own ends. The so-called "autonomy" of the Greek cities disarmed the rivals of Sparta. Now, as at the end of the Peloponnesian War, a prospect of dominion was opened to her. The Persian king, whom this disgraceful peace practically recognized as suzerain of Greece, was to be merely the guarantor of terms under which Spartan ambition might be securely pursued.

A few years later these designs met with their first serious check. In 382 B.C. the Spartans treacherously seized the Cadmea or citadel of Thebes. They held Thebes for three years. But in 379 a party of Theban exiles, under Pelopidas, surprised the Spartan garrison and recovered the city. A still greater discouragement to Sparta was the establishment of a new Athenian Confederacy—precautions being taken against the members passing, as under the Delian Confederacy, into the condition of male tributaries. Thebes joined the new confederacy, and presently succeeded in restoring the old Boeotian league, of which Thebes was the head. But the rise of Thebes had excited Athenian jealousy. Peace was made in 371 between Athens and Sparta. Thebes, thus isolated, was at once attacked by the Laedæmonians. They invaded Boeotia, but were de-

feated by the Thebans under Epaminondas at Leuctra, Thebes 371 B.C. This destroyed Spartan power outside of the Peloponnesus. Epaminondas next invaded the Peloponnesus itself. He resolved to set up rivals to Sparta on her own borders. He therefore united the cities of Arcadia Epaminondas into a league, with a new city, Megalopolis, for its capital, and he gave independence to Messenia, which for three centuries had been subject to Sparta—laying the foundations of a new capital, Messene, around the great natural citadel of Ithome. The Arcadian league did not long hold together. Mantinea led a group of Arcadian towns favourable to Sparta. In 362 B.C. a battle was fought near Mantinea between the Spartans and the Thebans. The Thebans were victorious, but Epaminondas fell. With his death the temporary supremacy of Thebes came to an end. Sparta had, however, been reduced from the rank of a leading state. Xenophon closes his *Hellenica* with these words—"There was more confusion (*ἀσφαλεία*) and tumult in Greece after the battle than before."

Political confusion is indeed the general characteristic of the period between the end of the Peloponnesian War and the Macedonian conquest of Greece. In the preceding century Athens and Sparta had been the vigorous representatives of two distinct principles. The oligarchic cities rallied round Sparta, the democratic round Athens. But at the end of the Peloponnesian War Athens, as exhausted Sparta, now predominant, but suffering from inner decay, exercised her power in such a manner as to estrange her natural allies. Thus both the normal groups of states were broken up. New and arbitrary combinations succeeded, seldom lasting long, since they were prompted merely by the interest or impulse of the hour. In this period of unstable politics the moment most promising, perhaps, for the future of Greece was when Athens had formed a new naval confederacy, and was also allied with the Boeotian league. But the alliance was broken by Athenian jealousy of Thebes,—not to be renewed until Greek independence was on the eve of receiving its death blow. The work of Epaminondas in one sense died with him, the brief hegemony of Thebes passed away. But in another sense the results which he achieved were enduring. He had been for Thebes such a man as Pericles was for Athens—a ruling personal influence in a democratic commonwealth, and he had raised Theban policy to the old Athenian level. The aims of Thebes were no longer confined to the circle of Theban interests, Thebes now aspired to be what Athens had been—the champion of national freedom and greatness. The power founded by Epaminondas was transient, but this large Hellenic patriotism made itself felt in some degree as a permanent inspiration, preparing the Thebans to stand by the Athenians in the last struggle for Greek freedom.

#### VI. The reigns of Philip and Alexander, 359-323 B.C.

Three years after the death of Epaminondas Philip came to the throne of Macedon. His power rapidly grew. A warlike people, ruled by an able and ambitious king, was now the northern neighbour of Greece. The most obvious vice of Greek politics at this period was disunion, but the disunion itself was only the symptom of a deeper decay. No one city of Greece any longer retained the vigour required in a leader. Had either Athens or Sparta now possessed such vital force as they showed in the Persian wars, no local or temporary feuds would have prevented the organization of national defence. Nothing marks the decay of the Greek commonwealths more significantly than the fact that they did not even recognize the urgency of the danger. Demosthenes had the old Greek spirit, but he stood almost alone. The principles on which he constantly insisted, and which gave unity to his entire career, are mainly

Revolution at Thebes  
New Athenian Confederacy

Decay of Greece  
A of Greek crisis

all cases

two — first, the duty of the Athenian citizen to sacrifice personal ease and gain to the service of Athens, secondly, the duty of Athens, as the natural head of free Greece, to consult the interests of all the Greek cities. The energy of Demosthenes was not first roused by the progress of Philip. Before there was danger from the quietude of Macedonia, Demosthenes had seen clearly that the decay of public spirit threatened the destruction of Hellenic life. As he said to the Athenians afterwards, if Philip had not existed they would have made another Philip for themselves. And the condition of Athens was at least not worse than that of any other city which could have aspired to lead.

Philip A statesman so keen-sighted as Philip must early have perceived that he had little to fear from combined resistance, so long as he was careful not to attack too many separate interests at the same time. Greece, he saw, was past fighting for each other as Greeks. This was the key-note of his policy to the last. While making aggressions on one Greek city or group of cities, he always contrived to have others on his side.

First period of his reign in relation to Greece has two periods. The end of the first period is marked by his admission to the Amphictyonic Council, the end of the second, by the battle of Chaeroneia. During the first period Philip is still a foreign power threatening Greece from outside. He takes Amphipolis from the Athenians, he destroys Potidea, he acquires towns on the Thracian and Macedonian coasts, he defeats the Phocians under Onomarchus, and even advances to Thermopylae, to find the pass guarded by the Athenians. Finally, he destroys Olynthus and the thirty-two towns of its confederacy.

In the second period he is no longer a foreign power. Having intervened in the Sacred War and crushed the Phocians, he has taken the place of Phocis in the Amphictyonic Council, and has thereby been admitted within the circle of the Greek states. The First Philippic and the three Olynthic speeches of Demosthenes belong to the first of these periods. The speeches On the Peace, On the Embassy, On the Chersonese, and the two later Philippics, belong to the second. In the Third Philippic, the climax of his efforts before Chaeroneia, Demosthenes reviews the progress of Philip from the Hellenic, not merely from the Athenian, point of view. Philip has destroyed Olynthus, he has ruined Phocis, he has won possessions in Thessaly, Thebes is afraid of him, he has gained Euboea and the Peloponnese, he is supreme from the Adriatic to the Hellespont, and the last hope of Greece is in Athens. Demosthenes succeeded in winning back Byzantium to the Athenian alliance, and in persuading Thebans to fight by the side of Athenians, but he could not avert the catastrophe of Chaeroneia.

Philip After the victory which made him master of Greece, Philip deprived Sparta of her conquests in the Peloponnese. The Messenians, Arcadians, Aegives, recovered their old possessions. A congress was then summoned at the isthmus of Corinth. Macedonia and the Greek states were united in a federal league. A federal council was constituted to guard the federal laws, and the Delphic Amphictyony was recognized as a tribunal to which this council should refer any breach of those laws. Philip, representing Macedonia, the most important member of the league, was acknowledged as its head or president. His position in regard to the Greek cities was thus in form much the same as that of Athens or Sparta in former days. It was nominally an hegemony, with somewhat more stringent powers, corresponding to the more systematic organization of the league, in practice it was military kingship over Greece. Yet Demosthenes had not failed. The condition of the Greek states under Philip was favourable in proportion as they had given him trouble. Thessaly had actively helped him, and had been completely subjugated.

The Peloponnesian rivals of Sparta had not been active either in helping or resisting him, and they were now more dependent on Philip than they had formerly been on Sparta. Athens alone had effectively resisted him, and Athens was treated by him with the prudent respect due to a serious antagonist.

If Greek liberty had received a fatal blow in Greece itself, proper, there was another part of Hellas in which, almost simultaneously, it had been vindicated with splendid success. While Demosthenes was making his heroic resistance to the designs of Macedonia, the enemies of Hellenic freedom in Sicily had been encountered with equal vigour and happier fortune by Timoleon. A few years after the defeat of the Athenian armament in 413, Sicily had suffered two invasions of the Carthaginians. Salinus and Imbros, Agrigentum, Gela, and Camarina, had successively fallen. The first Dionysius, in consolidating his own tyranny at 405-367 Syracuse, had been content to leave half the island in the hands of the foreign foe. The feeble marauds of his son, Dionysius II., produced a series of revolutions. A party at Syracuse invoked the aid of Corinth. Timoleon was sent with only 1200 men (343 B.C.). His first work was to deliver Syracuse from the contending forces of Dionysius and a rival named Licetates, and to restore the Syracusan democracy. His next work was to drive the Carthaginians out of Sicily. He defeated them with a crushing effect at the river Crimessus (340 B.C.). The Sicilian Greeks were now free. Sicily entered on a new period of prosperity, which lasted until Agathocles became tyrant of Syracuse (317 B.C.). Thus the brightest days, perhaps, of Hellenic Sicily coincided with those in which the cities of the Hellenic mainland were learning to bear the Macedonian yoke.

The time seemed now to have come for an enterprise which, since the retreat of the Ten Thousand, had been the dream of many Greek captains, but which none had yet been in a position to attempt. Philip, in the forty-seventh year of his age, had declared war against Persia, and was preparing to invade Asia at the head of an army gathered from all Greece, when he was assassinated by a young Macedonian noble in revenge for a private affront (336 B.C.). Death of Alexander, Philip's son and successor, was only twenty Philip Matching into Greece, he promptly expressed an insurrectionary movement, and was recognized by a new assembly at Corinth as commander-in-chief of the Greek armies. He next marched against the tribes on the northern borders of Macedonia. While he was absent on this expedition, the Thebans rose against the Macedonian garrison. Alexander returned, took Thebes, and laid it to the ground (335 B.C.). At Corinth he received the homage of the Greek states, and then returned to Macedonia.

Alexander was now free to execute the design of Philip. As captain general of Hellas, he sets forth to invade the Persian empire, and to avenge the wrongs suffered by Greece at the hands of the first Darius and of Xerxes. The army with which he crossed the Hellespont in 334 B.C. numbered perhaps about 30,000 infantry and 4000 cavalry. It was composed of Macedonians, Greeks, and auxiliaries from the barbarian tribes on the Macedonian borders. The devotion of native Macedonians to their hereditary king was combined with the enthusiasm of soldiers for a great leader. Even if the military genius of Alexander had not been of the first order, his personal authority over his Macedonian troops, and through them over the rest, would still have been greater than was ever possessed by a Greek citizen commanding fellow-citizens.

Alexander's career of conquest has three stages, marked by his three great battles. The victory at the Granicus (334 B.C.) gave him Asia Minor. The victory at Issus (333 B.C.) opened his path into Syria and Egypt. The victory

Alexander invades Asia

stages of his career

at Arbela (331 B.C.) made him temporary master of the whole East. In accomplishing the first two of these stages Alexander was not compelled to assume any new character. The king of Macedonia, the elective captain-general of Greece, needed no other titles by which to hold the lands to which he came as a deliverer from Persia. The later history of these lands is the pivot Asia Minor was by degrees thoroughly Hellenized, and remained Greek till the Turks came in the 11th century. Syria and Egypt were not indeed Hellenized as whole countries, but their capital cities, Antioch and Alexandria, were Hellenic, and the control established by Alexander was retained by Macedonia or by Rome for centuries. At the third stage, however, Alexander's conquests entered upon an entirely new phase, and compelled him to take up an altogether new position. Neither in his Hellenic nor in his Macedonian capacity could he put forward any effective claim to hold the Persian empire proper,—the empire stripped of its Egyptian, Phoenician, and Hellenic dependencies. He could hold Persia only as a Persian king, as the successor of those Achaemenid kings whose dynasty he had overthrown. The constitutional king of Macedonia, with limited prerogatives, the elective captain of Greece, must now assume a third and distinct character. He must be also a Persian king, a constitutional despot. The merely European influence is presented by Alexander might leave the East, but they could not instantly possess or transform its Hellenic cultivation, like Roman power, was not permanently introduced over any wide area east of the Euphrates. This fact is enough to illustrate the enormous difficulty of the task which Alexander had undertaken. It seems not impossible that policy may have been mingled with vanity in his exertion of divine honours. Greeks or Macedonians could never pay him the slavish homage which Persian subjects rendered to their king. But the contrast between European and Asiatic royalty would at least be less glaring if the master of Persia were also acknowledged as the son of Zeus Ammon.

Greek  
civiliza-  
tion in  
Asia

The colonies planted by Alexander in his progress through Asia mark the beginning of a new period in Hellenic history. Hitherto we have had to do with a people whose Hellenic unity rests, not merely on community of language and civilization, but also upon community of blood. Now, by the side of this natural Hellenic nation, there arises an artificial Hellenic nation, with a common language and civilization, but not exclusively of Hellenic blood. The Macedonian master by no means disavows the founders of this artificial nationality. They were doubtless of a stock kindred to the Hellenic, in what degree, it is less easy to say—but (with the exception of their kings) they were generally regarded by the Greeks as standing half-way between Greeks and barbarians. Philip did much to Hellenize Macedonia, and the Macedonian colonies of Alexander became in their turn centres from which the influence of Hellenic civilization was diffused through Asia. Henceforth there are two Hellenic types: the Greek of Greece proper, who preserves in some degree the marked individuality of the old Greek character, and the Asiatic Greek, more readily affected by foreign surroundings, more pliant and less independent. The history of the modern Greek nationality dates from the days of Alexander.

Results  
of Alex-  
ander's  
con-  
quests

The results of Alexander's conquests were beneficent chiefly in two ways: first, by liberating the hoarded treasures of the Eastern kings, and so stimulating industry and commerce; secondly, by opening Asia to a new civilization, which helped to promote intellectual and moral progress, even in those places where its influence was limited or transient. In the process of doing this much that was valuable may have been destroyed. But it can hardly be questioned that on the whole the gain far outweighed the

loss. If Alexander had not died at the age of thirty-two, leaving his work unfinished, it would perhaps have been easier to judge how far he deserves the credit of having contemplated these benefits to mankind. There is nothing to show that he intended to govern otherwise than as an absolute ruler, with a better machinery for controlling his subordinates than had been possessed by the Persian kings. Such a view is not inconsistent with the fact that his colonies enjoyed municipal freedom. Nor can it be proved that he meant his colonies to be anything more than military strongholds or commercial centres. But it may at least be said that, if his object had been to diffuse Hellenic cultivation over Asia, he could have adopted no more effective means. It is conceivable that, in his vision of that complex empire which imposed such almost irreconcilable tasks upon its ruler, the idea of engraving Eastern absolutism on Greek politics may have co-existed with the idea of Hellenizing Asiatic society.

In that period of Hellenic history which closes with Alexander we are tracing the gradual development of a race with special gifts of mind and body, which strongly distinguish it from all other races. The Hellenes set the Hellenic stamp on everything which they create,—first, on their language itself, then on their politics, then literature, and their manners. Every element of their life receives its mature shape from themselves, even when the germ has been borrowed, the Hellenes are an original people in the sense that they either invent or transform. At a very early time they have the political life of cities, and they never rise from the conception of the city to the highest unity of the nation. Their love of clear outline and their sense of measure shrink from every vague abstraction, the principle of order itself is by them identified with "the limit", the indefinite is a synonym for disorder and evil. The city, an easily comprehended whole, satisfies this instinct; but there is room within its framework for the gradations of monarchy, oligarchy, democracy, for the various modes of acting and thinking which characterize Achæans, Dorians, Ionians. As the leading commonwealths grow to maturity, two principles of government stand out in contrast,—oligarchy and democracy. Each is represented by a great city round which the lesser states are grouped. The inevitable collision comes, and the representative of democracy is at last vanquished. But in the hour of victory oligarchy is discredited by the selfish ambition of its champion. A time of political confusion follows, in which no one city can keep a leading position, the great states sink over principles, public spirit declines. The disunion of the cities—incurable, because arising from a deep inner decay—enables the crafty king of a half-barbarian country to make himself the military dictator of Greece. But just when the better days of Hellenic civilization seem to be over, a new career is opened to it. Men who are not of Hellenic blood help to diffuse the Hellenic language, thought, and manners over a wider field, and the life of the modern Greek nation begins. (x c d)

## SECTION II.—POST-CLASSICAL GREEK HISTORY

The later history of the Greeks, from the end of Alexander the Great's reign to the taking of Constantinople by the Turks, may be divided most naturally into five periods, viz.—I. The period of Greek subjection from the death of Alexander to the accession of Constantine the Great as sole emperor, 323 B.C. to 323 A.D. II. The period of Greek revival from Constantine the Great to Leo III. (the Isaurian), 323–718 A.D. III. The period of Byzantine prosperity from Leo III. to Basil I. (Constantine), 718–1067 A.D. IV. The period of Byzantine decline, from Isaac I. to the taking of Constantinople by the Latins,

1037-1204 A.D. V The period of Greek survival from the taking of Constantinople by the Latins to its conquest by the Turks, 1204-1453 A.D.

In the limited space of an article like the following, it is impossible to enter into detail with reference to the events of any of these periods. It may be well therefore if we turn our attention especially to the causes which were from time to time at work, to the characteristics and tendencies of various ages, and to the changes that came over society

Importance of the period (Greek history)

The history which we thus enter upon is of importance and interest in a different way from that of the classical age of Greece. That age was a unique development in respect of national life and character, of social and political institutions, and of every form of cultivation, and was marked by concentrated energy and intense vigour. The later period is important because of its wide-reaching influence on the world at large, and because it is one, and that the more continuous, of the two great chains of events, in eastern and western Europe respectively, which connect the earlier and later history of civilized man. To the younger student, who is already acquainted with the previous history of Greece and Rome, and has learnt something of the condition of the modern world through the history of England, no other period is probably so instructive and suggestive. He is led into byways of history and remote countries, which have in themselves an element of romance. He comes into contact with races from every branch of the human family in the freshness of their early vigour, and amongst many other lessons he learns one, which cannot be learnt too early, and which historians and students of history are disposed to overlook, that the unfortunate are not therefore to be despised. To more advanced students it, value consists in its explaining the existing state of things in a considerable part of Europe and Asia, which cannot be explained otherwise, and still more in the illustrations it affords, both by way of similarity and contrast, to circumstances in the history of western Europe, such, for instance, as the abolition of serfdom, the relations of immigrant races to the original inhabitants, and systems of law and finance. Besides this, so much civilization filtrated from the East to the West in the course of the Middle Ages that a knowledge of Byzantine history is necessary to a proper understanding of that of western Europe. It will suggest also, if properly studied, that while battles, sieges, and other salient events may be the turning-points of history, the inhabitants of any particular country are more affected by influences which lie below the surface—by alterations of trade routes and changes in the tenure of land, by the effects of judicious or injudicious taxation, by the administration of justice, and by the relations of different classes to one another.

Misconception of the character of the later Greeks

It is desirable at stating to notice two misconceptions which have prevailed, and in a less degree still prevail, with regard to different portions of this period. The first of these concerns the character of the Greeks during the time of their subjection to the Romans, and in particular under the early emperors, in which age they are often supposed to have been a demoralized and unpunished race. Such expressions as the "Greculus senilis" and "Grecia mendax" of Juvenal, and similar ones which are found in Tacitus and other writers of that time, have become proverbial, and have been taken to describe, as those authors undoubtedly intended them to describe, the people at large. There was some justification for the story of Lucian, that the Romans spoke truth only once in their lives, and that was when they made their wills. The fact is that these descriptions represented faithfully enough the lower class of Greek adventurers who came to Rome from Alexandria and the Asiatic cities to seek their fortunes, and the Roman writers, with their usual contemptuous ignorance of

anything provincial, confused these with the Greek nation. The later Greeks no doubt had degenerated from their great forefathers, but it is only fair to remember that this was to a great extent the result of their circumstances. The rapid growth of Greek culture and Greek political ideas was naturally followed by rapid decay. In sculpture the early archaic style developed in a few decades of years into the manly and perfect style of Phidias, and the change was equally rapid to the luxurious style of Praxiteles in which the elements of decadence were already traceable. The same thing is apparent in the history of the drama. And in like manner in politics, the constitutions of the various states, which were so well suited to the development of Greek individuality, contained in themselves no element of permanence, owing to the opposing elements which were brought face to face within so narrow an area, and in their relations to one another, all combination on a large scale was prevented by what has been aptly called the "centrifugal" character of Greek politics, so that they were destined inevitably to fall under the dominion of any great empire that should arise in their neighbourhood. Again, it must never be forgotten that the splendid products of Greek genius and Greek character sprang from the black soil of slavery, and could not have existed without it, so that here too we find an element of rottenness, which was sure in the end to produce decay. Consequently, from the time the Greeks lost their liberty, they ought not to be judged by a different standard from their predecessors, and we ought to be satisfied if we find in them such good qualities as characterize a more ordinary people—industry, respectability, intelligence, good citizenship, capacity for local self-government, and readiness to make the most of their opportunities. In all these respects the Greeks were among the best of the provincials of the Roman empire.

The other misconception relates to the Byzantine empire, which has been commonly regarded as a period of steady decline and feebleness and decrepitude. The author who is mainly responsible for the prevalence of this view is Gibbon, and it is strange that a writer who was gifted with such profound historical insight should not have perceived that the state which accomplished such great things could not have been powerless. The passage in which he expresses himself on this subject is well known. "I should have abandoned without regret," he says, "the Greek slaves and their servile historians, had I not reflected that the fate of the Byzantine monarchy is passively connected with the most splendid and important revolutions which have changed the state of the world." Yet it was this same empire which beat back for centuries, and ultimately survived, first the Sassanids and afterwards the Seljuks, both of which peoples would otherwise have overrun Europe, and which, even in its decline, kept at bay, for more than a hundred years, the Ottomans when at the height of their power, thereby providing the Western nations with a breathing space, without which the career of Turkish conquest would certainly not have been arrested at Vienna, but might have extended to the Elbe or the Seine. During the 8th, 9th, and 10th centuries its military power was the strongest in Europe, and the individual prowess of its aristocracy was unrivalled, while at the same time its long succession of able emperors and administrators is such as no other monarchical government can show. Its influence is further shown by its missionary efforts, resulting in the conversion to Christianity of the south Slavonic nations and the Russians, and the consequent spread of civilization throughout the countries they inhabited, by its widely extended commerce both by land and sea, and by its art, especially its architecture, which contributed to the formation of other styles from Egypt to the north of Russia, and from India to Spain. Finally, its social and political excellence

Power of the Byzantine empire

appears in the state of education, in the regularity of its administration, especially in the matter of justice, and, above all, in the legal standard of the *comage* being maintained inviolable from first to last, which is a rare proof of a highly organized system. When its situation in the midst of barbarous nations is considered, and the intermediate position it occupied between Asia and western Europe, it may safely be pronounced one of the most powerful civilizing agencies that the world has seen.

I *Period of Greek Subjection from the Death of Alexander to the Accession of Constantine the Great as sole Emperor, 323 B.C. to 323 A.D.*

Effect of  
Alex.  
under's  
con-  
quests

The conquests of Alexander the Great diffused from those of almost every other great conqueror in that they were followed up by a scheme of civil government, the object of which was to secure the well-being and promote the civilization of all his subjects. That he was not the ambitious madman which he is often represented as being is amply proved by the foresight with which his campaigns were planned, and by his attention to the commissariat and to other details connected with the transport and maintenance of his vast armies. But his true greatness is most clearly shown by his endeavouring to introduce unity into his vast empire, not by subjecting one race to another, or crushing out the hope of further resistance by an iron rule, but by establishing in its centres of permanent institutions and common culture. These were the Greek colonies with municipal government which he founded at intervals throughout Asia. By these the subject countries, without being forced into a common mould, or organized in defiance of their feelings and prejudices and without reference to their national institutions, were gradually leavened by the system that existed among them, and obtained a certain infusion of the Hellenic character and Hellenic modes of thought. Though Alexander himself did not survive to complete his project, yet enough had been accomplished at the time of his death to leave its influence firmly imprinted, even when his empire fell to pieces and was partitioned among his generals. The consequences of this to Asia were of incalculable importance, and continued unimpaired until the tide of Mahomedan conquest swept over the country, and even then it was from Greek literature and art that the Arabs obtained the culture for which they have been celebrated. But its effect was hardly less marked on the Greeks themselves. The Hellenic world was henceforth divided into two sections—the Greeks of Greece proper, and the Macedonian Greeks of Asia and Egypt. Between these there existed a common bond in similarity of education, religion, and social feelings, in the possession of a common language and literature, and in their exclusiveness, whether as a free population ruling a large slave element, or as a privileged class in the midst of less favoured races, but the differences were equally striking. The former retained more of the independent spirit of the ancient Greeks, of their moral character and patriotism, the latter were more cosmopolitan, more subservient, more ready to take the impress of those among whom they were thrown, in them the Ulysses type of Greek character, if we may so speak—its astuteness and versatility—became predominant. This distinction is all-important for the subsequent history, since, in the earlier period, it is rather the Greeks of Iliads who attract our attention, whereas after the foundation of Constantinople the Macedonian Greeks occupy the most prominent position. At the same time a change passed over the Greek language; while the ancient dialects were retained, more or less, in the provinces of Greece proper, the Attic dialect became the court language of the Macedonian monarchs, and was used almost exclusively by prose writers. Gradually Macedonian and other provincial

isms crept into it, and it was modified by simple expressions, and words in more general use, being substituted for those so fatal to the classic writers of Athens, and thus was formed what was called the *common* or generally used dialect. The non-Greek inhabitants of the countries in which the Greeks were settled were denominated *“Hellenizing,”* and consequently their languages, such as we find it in the Septuagint and the New Testament, was called *Hellenistic Greek*. The literary spirit also migrated to Alexandria, which became for a time the home of the principal Greek culture, and nurtured the genius of Theocritus, the first of pastoral poets, the lyric and erudition of Aratus and Apollonius Rhodius, and the research of Aristarchus and other eminent Hellenic critics.

The period of somewhat less than two centuries (323–146 323–146 B.C.) which intervened between the death of Alexander and the conquest of Greece by the Romans was a sort of twilight between liberty and subjection. The Laminæ War, as the contest between a number of the Grecian states, with Athens at their head, and Antipater, one of Alexander's immediate successors in Macedonia, was called from the siege of Lamma, which was its most prominent event, soon convinced the Greeks that it was idle for them to struggle single-handed with their great neighbour. After that the country formed a bone of contention between the neighbouring potentates in Macedonia, Asia Minor, Syria, and Egypt, and most of the states, with the exception of Sparta, were in the power sometimes of one monarch, and sometimes of another, though the contests of their masters secured them from time to time a partial independence. At length the constant danger to which their liberties were exposed suggested the necessity of some kind of combination or the part of the separate states, and the famous Achaean league arose (280 280 B.C.), which revived the dying energies of the Greeks, and has thrown a lustre over their period of decline. For the origin of this federation we must go back to the early history of the district of Achaia in northern Peloponnesus, the inhabitants of which, from being isolated from other races by their position between the Arcadian mountains and the Corinthian Gulf, and occupying a succession of valleys and small plains, found a federal union to be the most natural political system by which they could be held together. Throughout the greater part of their history this people exercised little influence on the fortunes of Greece, but in her time of greatest need they came forward as her champions. The league was now revived, with a more definite organization and a wider political object, and under the leadership of Aratus, the greatest of its early “strategi,” it wrested Sicyon from the power of its tyrant, and Corinth from the hands of the Macedonians, until at last it embraced Athens, and almost the whole of the Peloponnesus. Unfortunately Sparta held aloof. That city, which had succeeded in maintaining its independence, had fallen into the hands of a narrow oligarchy of wealthy proprietors, who rose in violent opposition to their reforming kings—men whose names would be a glory to any nation—Agis and Cleomenes, and succeeded in putting the first to death, while the latter was enabled to overpower them through the influence won by his military successes. But circumstances involved Aratus in a war with Sparta, and here the old Greek spirit of discord betrays itself. When hard pressed by Cleomenes, the Achaean leader applied to the Macedonians, and the result was that Antigonus Doson invaded the country, and at Sellasia inflicted a final and crushing blow on the Spartan power (221 221 B.C.). The same spirit appears in the Social War, which occurred shortly after this between the Achaeans and the Aetolian league, a similar confederation in northern Greece, and was fomented by Philip V of Macedon. Subsequently, when the Romans made war on Philip for assisting the Carthaginians in the Second Punic War, the consul



Flamininus persuaded both these powers to join in attacking him. At Cynoscephalæ in Thessaly, not far from the scene of a greater battle, Philip, the power of the Macedonians in the East, was broken (197 B.C.), and Philip renounced his supremacy over the Greeks, to whom Flamininus proclaimed their freedom at the ensuing Isthmian games. The final overthrow came in the time of Perseus, the son of Philip, who was defeated at Pydna (168 B.C.), and his dominions, with the adjacent parts of Greece, were reduced to the form of a Roman province. The later years of the Achaean league, had been illumined by the leadership of Philopomen, "the last of the Greeks," as Plutarch has called him, in whose time the whole of the Peloponnese, including even Sparta, was, for a time included in the alliance. But the day of Greece was numbered, and the only question was how soon the remainder should be absorbed by the advancing tide of Roman conquest. At first a pretext for interference presented itself, and the reduction of the country to bondage was signalled by the pillage and destruction of Corinth under Mummius (146 B.C.). The entire area southward of Macedonia and Epirus was constituted the province of Achæia, the title of which thus perpetuated the name of the Achaean league. The struggles in which that and the Egean confederation had taken part are an evidence of the revival of a spirit of independence in the hearts of the Greeks, and we may well lament over the ruin of their independence, but the truth must be told that this was not the feeling of the majority of the population at the time. The selfishness and cupidity of the Greek aristocracy, such as those whom we have already noticed at Sparta, had imposed so heavy burdens on the people that the great body of them cheerfully acquiesced in the Roman rule. Polybius has preserved to us the saying which expressed the sentiment of the time: "If we had not been quickly ruined, we should not have been saved."

From the time of the Roman conquest the existence of Greece was merged in that of a greater political unity, so that for the next four centuries, until the commencement of the barbarian invasions, it can hardly be said to have a history of its own. But we must not on this account suppose that the Greeks occupied exactly the same position as the rest of the Roman provincials. In this respect there is a marked difference between the results of the Roman conquests in the West and the East. The inhabitants of the western portion of the empire were at the time of their subjection in a low state of civilization, and destitute of any element of strength in their social and national life. It was natural, therefore, that nations so undeveloped should easily receive the impress of Roman institutions, and should adopt the manners and ideas of their conquerors. The Romans in fact treated them for the most part as inferior beings and did not at first even regard them as absolute proprietors of the lands they cultivated. But in the East the case was different. These the Romans met with a civilization more advanced than their own, which they had already learned to respect, and an elaborate system of civil government and social usages which could not be set aside without undermining the whole fabric of society. Hence the Greeks, while subjected to the Roman administration, were allowed to retain a great part of their institutions, together with their property and private rights, and from their superiority to the other conquered peoples, remained the dominant power in the East. Even in Asia the despotism of Rome was much modified by the municipal system of the Greek colonies and by the influence of Greek culture. Thus it came to pass that, while the Western nations were assimilated to Rome, in the East the Roman empire became Greek, though the Greek nation in name became Roman. The effects of this are visible at every turn in the subsequent history, and to this cause must be referred many anomalies

which are traceable at the present day in the condition of eastern Europe.

It was a part of the Roman policy, in dealing with conquered countries, to treat them at first with mildness, until they became inured to the yoke, and when this was the case, and precautionary measures had been adopted to prevent the possibility of successful revolt, to deal with them more harshly and increase their burdens. This was what happened in the case of Greece. For some time the people at large had no reason to regret the change. The fact of their subjection was not impressed too forcibly upon them, and several cities, such as Athens and Sparta, were allowed to retain as allied states. Their taxes were not increased, and they did not at once perceive the difference caused by the money that was levied being taken out of the country instead of being spent in it. This was, however, the most systematically unious part of the Roman system. The Government never paid attention to the provinces for their own sake, but regarded them as an instrument for maintaining the greatness and power of Rome. The immense sums that were diamned from them never returned, but were expended in the maintenance of the Roman army, and in the public games and architectural embellishment of the metropolis. Objects of local usefulness, such as roads, ports, and aqueducts, received no attention from the central authorities, and no money was supplied towards their maintenance. Within a century also, when these evils were beginning to make themselves felt, the Roman rule became very oppressive. Though the custom duties were not unreasonable in their nominal amount, they became exorbitant through the system of farming and subletting, and as a special tribunal existed for the enforcement of the collectors' claims, the farmers exercised a most tyrannical power over the mercantile population of the shores of the Mediterranean. In the wake of these harpies followed the usurers, to meet whose claims proprietors had constantly to sell their possessions. The direct weight of the public burdens was further increased by the exemptions enjoyed by Roman citizens in the provinces, and by privileges and monopolies which were granted to merchants and manufacturers, and large sums had to be paid to the Roman governors, both for the maintenance of their establishments, and to obtain exemption from the quartering of troops. But these more or less authorized exactions bore no proportion to the illegal extortions of the proconsuls, who simply pillaged the provincials. No more perfect scheme could have been devised for promoting oppression than that under which these officers were appointed. While on the one hand they superintended the financial administration, on the other they exercised the judicial power, and the only tribunal to which they were responsible was that very senate by which they were appointed, and of which they themselves were members. A governor like Verres had it in his power to ruin a province for several generations, and such instances were not rare. The treatment of Greece in this respect was no exception to the general rule.

The period, however, during which the greatest injury was inflicted on Greece was that of the Mithradatic War (86 B.C.). At the commencement of that struggle many of the leading men and states declared in favour of Mithradates, thinking that under his auspices they might regain their freedom. But the appearance of Sulla with an army soon undeserved them, and they laid down their arms, with the exception of Athens, which was only reduced after an obstinate defence. When the city was at last taken by storm, the majority of the citizens were put to the sword, their possessions seized by the soldiers, the temples utterly destroyed, and Attica ravaged. In the same campaign Delphi and the other principal shrines were plundered, and an immense amount of property was ruined throughout the

Roman  
con-  
quests  
in the  
Western  
East

country. Great injury was also inflicted by the Cretan pirates. The evidence of these was a result of the policy with which the Roman Government regarded the maintenance of armed forces by the provincials, either by land or sea, lest they should be made an instrument of revolt, and since they had no interest in maintaining order, except where their own authority was threatened, the subject nations were so far from profiting by their protection that they were exposed to attack without possessing the power of defending themselves. The confined seas and numerous bays and islands of Greece have always been favourable to piracy, and at this time the evil reached such a height that the welfare of the state was threatened, and Pompey was entrusted with the office of eradicating it, but before this was accomplished many of the wealthiest cities in Greece and Asia Minor had been attacked and pillaged. With the accession of Augustus a brighter era seemed to have dawned, and under the early emperors, who desired to strengthen themselves against the senate, the interests of the provincials were more considered. Greater regularity also was introduced into the taxation, by the land and capitation taxes being regulated by a periodical census. But the old evils to a great extent remained, and these were further aggravated at a later time by the depreciation of the coinage, which proceeded with fearful rapidity, and caused widespread distress among the commercial and labouring classes.

Constitutional changes in Greece

The result of these changes is traceable in the condition and character of the Greek people. The conquests of Alexander the Great suddenly threw into circulation the accumulated treasures of the Persian empire, and a great part of these passed into the hands of the Greeks, both in Asia and Europe. The facilities thus created for obtaining wealth increased the material prosperity of the Greek race at large, so that in all probability it never was more numerous than during the period immediately preceding its subjugation by the Romans. Though all calculations respecting the numbers of the population in ancient states are necessarily hazardous, yet it seems probable that the Greeks at that time may have amounted to more than seven millions. But with Greece proper the case was different. There the increase of wealth raised the standard of living considerably above what it had been in earlier and more frugal times, so that the less moneyed class were tempted to emigrate in large numbers to seek their fortunes in the great Asiatic cities, and in the service of the Eastern monarchs, where so great openings presented themselves. The decrease of this class produced a larger accumulation of property in the hands of large owners, and greatly augmented the number of slaves. Under the Romans the wealth of the country, great as it was, was soon dissipated by fiscal exactions, by plunder in war and the private pillage of officials, and by the confiscation of the possessions of individuals, with a view to which a system of accusations was regularly promoted. The natural result of this, combined with the self-indulgent habits which had grown up among the upper classes, was a steady diminution of the population. The first of the Romans who perceived the evils arising from this state of things, and endeavoured to remedy them, was the emperor Hadrian, who had the merit of personally visiting the provinces, and whose tastes naturally led him to sympathize with the Greeks. Though much of the money which he expended in the country in the construction of temples and other splendid edifices tended to the gratification of his private fancy, yet a real improvement in the condition of the people was effected by his restoration of the roads which had fallen out of repair, and the erection of baths and aqueducts. He also lightened the taxation, and roused the Greeks to the rights of Roman citizenship, thereby anticipating the edict of Caracalla, by which that privilege was extended to all the free inhabitants

of the empire (212 A.D.). The depopulation of Greece, however, continued, but while in this way the power of the nation was being weakened, and its material resources diminished by the loss of much of the capital that had been invested in the improvement of the country, the actual condition of the inhabitants was for the time improved, because the decrease in their numbers had been more rapid than the destruction of property. Possessing the necessities of life in abundance, and having but little money to spend on anything beyond, they sunk into that condition of indifference and ease in which at last the barbarian nations found them.

It has already been remarked that the character of the Greeks at this period ought not to be judged of from the prejudiced statements of Roman writers, not by reference to the standard of their great forefathers. The introduction of the wealth of Persia had undoubtedly a demoralizing effect on the nation, both in Asia and Europe. But when we consider that throughout a great part of the area that they occupied they were long the dominant class, and had hardly any check to restrain them in the indulgence of their passions, it is rather a matter for wonder that they resisted temptation so far as they did. At least they never sank to such a depth of degradation as the Romans of the imperial times, and in Europe the struggles of the Achaean league show that a value was still set on many virtues. After this the Greeks became the educators of the Romans, whose upper classes resorted for instruction to the university of Athens, and if the rhetoric and philosophy which was taught there partook sometimes of the nature of literary trifling, and the instructors themselves were characterized by vanity and pedantry, they maintained at all events the standard of cultivation in the world at that time. The love of art still prevailed amongst them, and the quiet, studious life of the Greek cities formed in the eyes of many a favourable contrast to the violent struggles and inordinate passions of Rome. But the disbelief in the rational religion which had grown up among the educated classes, notwithstanding the maintenance of the temples and their worship, tended to cause a separation between the upper and lower grades of society, and this, together with the isolation produced by the great size of the estates, which withdrew individuals from the scrutiny of their fellow citizens, weakened the force of public opinion, and thus lowered the moral standard. It can hardly be doubted that the consciousness of this, and the feeling of the need of a higher morality, was one main cause of the eagerness with which philosophy continued to be pursued by the Greeks, since in it they hoped to find the groundwork of truth and justice. Thus during a period of six centuries the European Greeks had gradually degenerated, though for the most part from causes external to themselves, they seemed to have become insignificant and almost commonplace people. Yet the outline of the character was the same, though the colours had faded, and considering the length of the time, and the agencies at work, we may be surprised at finding that the change had not been greater. It remained to be shown that the finer qualities and more vigorous elements were only dormant, and this was brought to light in the latter half of the third century by two influences, which we must now proceed to explain.

The first of these was the invasion of the Goths. These Goths were the earliest of the barbarians to break through the Roman frontier, and the defeat and death of the emperor Decius in Mursa (251 A.D.), and the subsequent incursions of the Goths into Thracia and Macedonia, warned the Greeks of the peril that impended over them. Immediately the walls of Athens were repaired, the fortifications across the isthmus of Corinth restored, and vigorous preparations made for defence. The invaders soon made their

appearance both by land and sea, and one division, landing at the Piræus, succeeded in entering Athens by storm, but in Athenian ranks called *Lexippos*, afterwards the husband of the *empress*, succeeded in assembling a sufficient force to compel them to retire. This reverse was the prelude to that total overthrow, for succours were meanwhile arriving from Italy, by which those separate bands were attacked in detail and destroyed. Some years later, after other misdeeds, during which many cities of Greece successfully defended themselves, the power of the Goths was broken by the emperor Claudius II. at the great battle of Naissus (269 A.D.). But it was clearly proved, at this time that the spirit of the Greeks, which had had no opportunity of displaying itself since the siege of Athens by Sulla, was not extinct, and that, if they had been unwarlike in the interval, it was mainly because their masters had denied them the use of arms. It is not to be overlooked that, when the same barbarians subsequently attacked the Western empire, it was down before them, the reason being that the nations of the West had no such distinctive nationality as the Greeks, and no such municipal institutions to rally round. Anyhow the Greek character was benefited by the public spirit thus evoked, and by the activity infused into society by the feeling that every man might be called on to defend his person and property.

Christ-  
ianity

The other and far more important influence which regenerated the Greeks at this time was Christianity. This religion, which had long been working in secret, though in ways which it is almost impossible to trace, now began to produce a marked impression on Greek society. Its power was the greater because it had worked from below upward, and had permeated to a great extent the lower and middle classes. It improved the moral condition of the Greeks by elevating their views of life, by quickening the conscience, and by infusing earnestness into the character, and it renovated their social condition by pointing out to them their duties to one another, by encouraging corporate feeling, and in particular by purifying the domestic relations through its influence on the female sex. At the same time the habit of meeting for the administration of their communities accustomed the Christians to discussion and action in common, and the fact that they formed a powerful corporation independent of the state, which was the reason why they were persecuted by the Roman authorities, was in itself a means of political education. Such an influence, which not merely provided every relation of life, but penetrated also to the motives and springs of action, is sufficient of itself to account for the regeneration of the Greeks, which the historian traces in its effects at the end of the 3d century.

The scene now changes, and from the land of Hellas our attention is transferred to the city of Constantinople.

#### II Period of Greek Revival from Constantine the Great to Leo III. (the Isaurian), 323-716 A.D.

The principal events of the first half of this period, the two centuries which intervened between Constantine and Justinian, are—the foundation of Constantinople (330 A.D.), the emperor Julian's attempted restoration of Paganism (361), the defeat of Valens by the Goths near Adrianople, and his death (378), the establishment of Christianity by Theodosius the Great as the religion of the empire (383), the partition of the Roman empire between Arcadius and Honorius (395), the publication of the Theodosian code (438), and the extinction of the empire of the West (476). The reign of Justinian (527-565) comprises the great campaigns of Belisarius and Narses, whereby the kingdom of the Vandals in Africa was overthrown, and Sicily, Italy, and southern Spain were recovered to the Roman empire, the Greek possessions in Italy being henceforth governed by an exarch, who resided at Ravenna, the building of

the church of St Sophia at Constantinople, and the reformation of the Roman law. Finally, in the century and a half between Justinian's death and the accession of Leo III., occurred the birth of Mahomet (571), the victorious expeditions of Heraclius against the Persians (622-8) and the seven years' siege of Constantinople by the Saracens in the reign of Constantine Pogonatus (668-875).

The reforms effected by Constantine formed one of the most important and greatest revolutions the world has ever seen, and his sagacity at Constantinople

is shown by the completeness with which they were carried out, and by the permanence of the effects, for from them proceeded both the strength and the misfortune of the Byzantine system, which lasted even to the latest days of the empire. To describe them in brief,—he centralized the executive power in the emperor, and constituted a bureaucracy for the administration of public business, he consolidated the dispensation of justice throughout his dominions, he rendered the military power, which had hitherto been the terror and bane of the state, subservient to the civil power, he adopted a new religion, and established a new capital. Henceforth the world was ruled by the emperor and his household, and this administration was wholly irresponsible, and as the interests of the Government were unconnected with those of any nationality and any class of its subjects, there was sure to be a continuous struggle between the ruler and those whom they governed. In order that the emperor might be regarded as a being of a different order from the people, he and his court were surrounded by lavish splendour, and in order to check the ever imminent danger of rebellion through pretenders to the throne, the offices of the court were made magnificent prizes, so that ambitious persons might feel that advancement could be obtained by a safer method than civil war. But to meet these expenses, and at the same time to maintain a powerful army, an elaborate system of taxation was necessary, taxation, in fact, came to be regarded as the first aim of government, and the inhabitants of the empire were impoverished for objects in which they had no direct concern. The principal instrument which Constantine used for enforcing this was the Roman municipal system, and thus he introduced into Greece, notwithstanding the existence of a national and traditional organization. According to this, each town, with the agricultural district in its neighbourhood, was administered by an oligarchical senate called the *curia*, elected from among the landed proprietors, by whom the municipal officers were appointed, and the land tax collected, for the amount of which they were made responsible, while those who did not possess land, such as merchants and artisans, paid the capitation tax, and formed an inferior class. As wealth declined, the oppressiveness of this system was more and more felt, especially as the private property of members of the *curia* was confiscated when the required amount was not forthcoming, and hence, in order to prevent a further diminution of the revenue, an elaborate caste system was subsequently introduced, which fixed the condition of every class, and required a son to follow the calling of his father, lest the number of persons liable to a certain kind of taxation should decrease. With the same view, the free rural population came to be tied to the soil, to prevent the ground from falling out of cultivation. Since, however, it was foreseen that such a system would produce discontent, the people everywhere were carefully dissuaded, and the possession of arms was made a thing apart, the military class being separated from all others. For the same reason barbarians were much used as troops, because they could have no sympathy with the natives. The weakness of this system caused general poverty, and deep-seated hatred of the central government, often resulting in a disposition to ally in the barbarians, while its jealousy was the origin of the weakness of the empire, because the pro-

vincials, who were really stronger than their invaders, were never allowed to defend themselves. In the West it contributed greatly to the overthrow of the empire, and in the East it represented the spirit of Hellenic life by intermingling with the ancient city communities, and though the force of the Greek character, and the social condition of the countries they inhabited, saved them from destruction, yet, as we look down the long vista of succeeding ages, we may see its baneful effects producing ever increasing misery.

Yet we must not overlook the strong points of Constantine's system. The first of these was the regular administration of justice which he introduced. This the inhabitants of the empire felt they could not obtain elsewhere, and the possession of it reconciled them to many other very intolerable grievances. So conscious were succeeding emperors of this that we find strictness observed in this matter until quite a late age of the Byzantine empire. Another was the amount of ability and experience which it secured for the public service. We have called the administrators of public affairs a bureaucracy, and the household of the emperor, but they were not the less a body of most highly trained officials, thoroughly organized in their various services. Each department of the state formed a profession of itself, as completely subdivided, and requiring as special an education, as the legal profession at the present day. The perfection of this machinery accounts for the empire not having fallen to pieces in times of internal dissension, sometimes accompanied by foreign invasion, and the facilities it afforded for developing talent are seen in the long succession of able administrators which the system produced, and which came to an end at the commencement of the 11th century, when it began to be disused. And besides this, though the rigorously oppressive taxation was injudicious as well as iniquitous, yet it may be doubted whether any other system than the high-handed centralization which has been described could have prevented dissolution. Its force is certainly proved by its vitality, and the first great dismemberment in particular was brought about, not by internal causes, but by the power of the Saracens.

The choice of the site of New Rome—which is perhaps the finest position in the world, as it commands the meeting-point of two great seas and two great continents, and rises in seven hills on its triangular promontory between the Propontis and its land-locked harbour the Golden Horn—is an additional proof of the penetration of Constantine, and the event justified his selection, for on numerous occasions nothing else than the impregnability of the seat of government could have saved the empire from destruction. Though the establishment of a new capital was in itself a consummate stroke of genius, yet to some extent it was forced upon the emperor by his conversion to Christianity, for this placed him in direct antagonism to Old Rome, which was still the headquarters of paganism. And whatever might be the feelings of the people, on the part of the administrators themselves the prepossessions to be overcome in deciding on such a change were less than might be supposed, for the government, absorbed as it was in the unceasing care of maintaining and defending the empire, had long ceased to be Roman in its sympathies, and had become cosmopolitan. The new city at the time of its foundation was Roman; its senators were transported thither from Rome, the language of the court was Latin, and the condition of the lower classes was assimilated to that of the old capital by their being exempted from taxation and supported by distributions of grain. But from the first it was destined to become Greek, for the Greeks, who now began to call themselves Romans, an appellation which they have ever since retained, held fast to their language, manners, and prejudices, while they availed themselves to the full of their rights as Roman citizens. Hence, in Justinian's time, we find all the highest

offices in the hands of Greeks—not Hellenic Greeks, but a Greek Roman caste, the descendants of the Macedonian conquerors of Asia, and Greek was the prevailing language. The turning point in this respect was the separation of the East and West in the time of Arcadius and Honorius. Still the Roman system remained permanent, especially in the community of interest created between the emperor and the populace by the largesses and the expenditure on public amusements, the money for which was drained from the provinces, and this fact explains the antagonism that remained between the provincials and the inhabitants of the capital, and the toleration which the latter showed of the tyranny of their rulers. How deeply these abuses were rooted in the city of Constantinople is shown by the circumstance that Heraclius, in despair of otherwise carrying out his schemes of retrenchment and reform, conceived the design of removing the seat of government to Carthage—a plan which he would have carried out had he not been prevented by the unanimous opposition of the Greeks.

Whether the conversion of Constantine to Christianity was due to sincere belief or to policy, or, as is perhaps most likely, to a combination of the two motives, there can be no doubt that religion had before that time obtained a great influence over the Greeks, and that the cause of the Christian Church and that of the Greek nation were already closely interwoven. Nothing could show more clearly the mastery obtained by the new faith than the subsequent failure of the emperor Julian to revive paganism. We have already seen how life and energy were restored to Greek society by this influence before the end of the 3d century, it was also the unanimity with which it was adopted by that people which inspired them to combine in self defence, and saved them from the fate of the disunited Western empire. From that early period dates the feeling of brotherhood which pervaded the Greek Church, and the strong attachment which has always existed between the Greek clergy and their flocks, further cemented as it was at a later period by the influence which the clergy exercised in maintaining the people's rights and defending them against aggression. Paganism, however, continued to be recognized until the time of Theodosius the Great, when Christianity was substituted for it by legislative enactments. But the orthodoxy of the Eastern Church, which came to be, and still is, its most distinctive feature, and the identification of the Orthodox Church with the Greek nation, dates from a different time, viz., from the reigns of the Arian successors of Constantine, to whose personal opinions the people were strongly opposed. The political effect of this union ultimately became very great, and resulted in the loss of important provinces to the empire. When the Orthodox had the upper hand, they soon began to clamour for the persecution of heretics, and the emperors being on the same side acceded to their demand. The natural effect of this was disaffection in those regions, such as Syria and Egypt, where the majority of the population were either Nestorians or Eutychians, and the evil was aggravated by the suspicion to which the provincial clergy were exposed, because they were not Greeks, of being heterodox. The alienation from the central government thus produced greatly facilitated the conquest of those countries by the Saracens. It should also be noted that from the time of Constantine the emperors claimed, and were acknowledged, to be supreme over the church in all civil and external matters—a power which, as we shall see, proved to be of great importance at the time of the monastic controversy, and the extensive judicial and administrative authority which Theodosius conferred on the bishops was the origin of that political subservience, and at the same time of those unsocial practices, which have been the opprobrium of their order in the Eastern Church.

Reign of  
Justinian

The reign of Justinian, which, from the important events which it contained, has naturally much attracted the notice of historians, was a period of false brilliancy. The character of that emperor in many respects resembles that of Louis XIV. Both were men of moderate ability, gifted with great industry and application to business, and with a remarkable power of employing the talents of others, both were fond of splendour and foreign conquest, and both impoverished and ruined their subjects. At the time of his accession Justinian found in the exchequer a large sum of money amassed by Anastasius I., and had he employed this in lightening taxation and improving the position of his subjects, instead of wasting it in wars of his own seeking and lavish expenditure on public buildings, he would have greatly strengthened his kingdom. No doubt, the conquests of his generals were splendid, and testify to the greatness of the armies of the empire at this time. No doubt also the compilation of the *Pandectæ, Code, and Institutes* was a magnificent work, which has left indelible traces on the legal systems of Europe. And it is an honour to any age to have developed the Byzantine style of architecture, a style thoroughly Greek in its unity and proportion, for, whereas the Romans had borrowed the ancient Greek style, and adding to it the arch, had used it for wholly incongruous purposes, the Greeks in turn appropriated the arch and dome, and created a new and harmonious style. But the effects of his reign on his dominions were ruinous. He riveted tighter the fetters which Constantine had invented, but he lacked the penetration of Constantine in perceiving the needs of his time. He dissolved the provincial militia, which to some extent still existed in Greece. The population were ground down by taxation, the revenues of the free cities in Greece were seized, and at last the fortifications fell into disrepair, and a great part of the army was disbanded, so that when Zabagan, king of the Kutigur Huns, invaded the country from the north in the year 559, he was able to approach within 17 miles of Constantinople. How great the demoralization was is shown by the state of the empire under Justinian's immediate successors. Within less than twenty years after his death the conviction of a great change impending was so widely spread that a story was rife that it was revealed to the emperor Theodosius II. in a dream that on account of his virtues, the days of anarchy should not commence during his reign. The condition of things has been described as "universal political decay."

Barbarian  
invasions

The 400 years which elapsed between Constantine and Leo III. were the great period of the barbarian invasions. The Goths, who, as we have seen, had overrun Greece in the latter half of the 3d century after their great defeat at Naissus (Nisch), were more or less kept in check, and became in some degree a civilized and Christian people in the country of Dacia, to the north of the Danube, which they had permanently occupied after the Roman colonies in that country were withdrawn by Aurelian. But in the reign of Valens, when the Huns were overrunning Europe, they were pressed onwards by those invaders, and occupied Mesia between the Danube and the Balkan, which province was peacefully ceded to them. It was only in consequence of treacherous treatment by the Romans that they afterwards entered the empire as enemies, and fought the campaign which ended in the defeat and death of that emperor (378). They were again checked by Theodosius, and persuaded to enlist in great numbers in the imperial service, but during the reign of his successor Arcadius, the famous Alaric roused the spirit of his countrymen, and ravaged the whole of Greece even to the Peloponnese (395), before he turned his thoughts to the invasion of Italy. For a time both Goths and Romans were the victims of Attila, who with

his hordes of Huns swept over the lands south of the Danube (452-7), and was only induced to retire by an agreement on the part of Theodosius II. to pay him an annual tribute. But again, in the reign of Zeno (475), the empire was in imminent danger from the Goths under Theodoric, who, like Alaric, had lived at Constantinople, and like him also withdrew into Italy. Towards the beginning of the 6th century the Goths made way for more barbarous invaders, Bulgarians of Thracian origin, and various Slavonic tribes, for whose pastoral habits the now depopulated country was better suited than for a more civilized population. But they in turn were soon swallowed up by the Avars, whose vast monarchy occupied a great part of eastern Europe, and whose armies, in the time of Heraclius, threatened Constantinople itself. It was in order to impose a permanent check on that people that this emperor induced the Sarmatians and Croats to occupy the districts eastward of the Adriatic, Dalmatia and Illyricum, which were deserted, owing to their constant incursions. These Slavonic settlers paid allegiance to the empire, and as they formed agricultural communities, introduced an element of permanence into the country. The Avar power disappeared as suddenly as it had risen, and at the end of the 7th century its place is taken by the Bulgarian kingdom, which lasted for nearly 850 years, and was the great antagonist of the Byzantine empire in its most flourishing period. At the close of this long series of wars, we cannot help being astonished at the successful resistance that was offered to them. No doubt the conformation of the European provinces of the Eastern empire, with their successive mountain barriers, was a source of strength from the ease with which they could be defended, but this could hardly have saved the Greeks, had it not been for the number of their walled cities, their superiority in the art of war, the courage of the people when called out by circumstances, and the strong position of the capital.

On the side of Asia, during the same period, a long Persian struggle was maintained with Persia. The dynasty of the Sassanides, which arose on the ruins of the old Parthian kingdom, had raised that country to great power and prosperity. The second in order of its princes, Sapor I., had taken the emperor Valerian prisoner (267), and a century later Julian lost his life when fighting in Persia. The ill success of Justinian in his Persian war was owing fairly to be ascribed as much to the ability of his great opponent, Chosroes Nushirvan, as to his own shortcomings, but the fact remains that even Belshazzar won small glory from those contests, and after a struggle of twenty years' duration a treaty was concluded, which required the European monarch to pay an annual subsidy of thirty thousand pieces of gold. War, however, continued during the reigns of his successors Justin II. and Theodosius II., until an honourable peace was concluded by Maurice, the son-in-law of the last named emperor; at whose court Chosroes II., the rightful sovereign, had been received when he was an exile. Thus prince, when he was reinstated on his paternal throne, showed his gratitude to the Romans. But when Maurice was dethroned by the rebel Phocas, the Persian monarch declared war, professing with the design of avenging his benefactor. The greater part of the Asiatic provinces were laid waste, and a Persian army was for a time encamped on the shores of the Bosporus, so that it seemed as if the Roman empire was about to be conquered by Persia. From this it was saved by Heraclius, who was not only one of the ablest of the emperors, but one of the greatest of military leaders. He ward off the impending danger, and in seven campaigns, by a series of brilliant victories, dealt a death-blow to the Persian power. The struggle was unequalled, and Heraclius, in entering upon it, was actuated by no desire of military renown, but the effects of it were disas-

tious to the Romans also. The period when it occurred was that of the rise of the Saracens, and the exhaustion caused by it contributed in no slight degree to the extension of their power.

Condi-  
tion of  
the popu-  
lation

We turn now to the condition of the Greeks during this period. In the interval between the first Gothic invasions and the accession of Constantine the material prosperity of Greece had increased, owing partly to the devastation of the provinces to the north of that country, the wealthy inhabitants of which were forced to take refuge in Greece, and partly to the insecurity of the Red Sea, Egypt, and Syria, which caused the commerce of Central Asia to take the route of the Black Sea, whence the trade of the Mediterranean passed once more into the hands of the Greeks. It can hardly be said that the reforms of Constantine benefited the population, because of the severe exactions they introduced, for, as has been already mentioned, the rich were forced to supply from their own incomes any deficiency that might occur in their district, and by this means, before Justinian's time, the class of great landed proprietors had been extinguished. But the fixed position which the clergy and the lawyers obtained under Constantine's system was a general advantage, because this constitutional check modified the oppressiveness of the Government in its dealings with the people. In the case of the latter of these two orders the effect would have been greater, had not Latin been the language of legal business until after the time of Justinian. The period of 130 years between the death of Arcadius and that emperor's accession was a time of improvement. During the long reign of Theodosius II the power was in the hands of his sister, the philanthropic Pulcheria, and of his ministers, and these seem to have ruled judiciously, and the five succeeding emperors, Marcian, Leo I, Zeno the Isaurian, Anastasius, and Justin, were all men born in the middle or lower class of society, and of provincial origin, and had come to the throne at a mature age. The sympathy which they thus had with the body of their subjects accounts for their economy, and for their endeavours to restore the resources of the empire and alleviate its burdens, and generally to introduce regular forms of procedure into public business. Far different was the case with Justinian, whose severe demands for money distressed all classes of his subjects.

Athens

But it was on Athens that his hand was most heavily laid. That city was still a literary capital where Hellenic learning was cultivated, and if the *Hero and Leander* of Musæus and that graceful pastoral romance, the *Daphnis and Chloë* of Longus, are to be assigned to no later a date as the fifth century, the spirit of the ancient literature had not long been extinct among the Greeks. The ancient buildings still existed in all their splendour, the citizens lived a life of quiet, self-complacent ease, and the paganism, of which it was now the centre, had been purified from its vices by the maxims of philosophy and the influence of Christianity. It remained for Justinian, in his merciless centralization, to close its schools and confiscate their revenues. At the same time the Olympian games were brought to an end. From this time onward the inhabitants of Hellas are but little heard of, and at the beginning of the 8th century we find them spoken of by Byzantine writers under the contemptuous title of *Helladiotæ*, while the Greek nation is represented by the population of Constantinople and Asia Minor. Yet this period was not wholly disadvantageous to Greece. As the danger from the invading barbarians increased, its citizens regained the power of using arms, and revived a municipal administration to direct their efforts. It was also in Justinian's reign that silkworms were introduced from China, and the manufacture of silk became a profitable source of revenue to Thebes and other towns.

One result of the financial legislation of this time was a change which, though the lawgivers certainly did not foresee

it, was most beneficial in its effects. This was the gradual extinction of slavery in the Eastern empire. The power of that institution this was not Christianity, for that religion had recognized slavery as an institution, not yet civilization, for that among the Greeks was intimately connected with the employment of slaves. It was rather produced by an alteration that was taking place in the condition of certain classes, which annihilated the distinction between the free-man and the slave. When the oppressiveness of taxation had destroyed the wealthy proprietors, and, in order to prevent the land from falling out of cultivation and thus diminishing the revenue, the cultivators of the land were tied to the soil, the poorer class of freemen began to sink down into the condition of serfs. On the other hand the slaves who were employed in agriculture became for the same reason an object of solicitude to the legislature, and their proprietors were forbidden to alienate them. They thus acquired a recognized position, not far removed from serfdom, and when all the lower class were reduced to the same state of poverty, the difference in the political status of the two orders came to be obliterated. Many centuries elapsed before this change fully worked itself out. The slave trade was still an important branch of commerce in the Roman empire, and freemen were sold as slaves if they failed to pay their taxes, but henceforth the empire was doomed to ultimate extinction. When we consider the extent to which slavery prevailed in the ancient world, and the misery which it caused, we cannot regret the circumstances which caused it to disappear, even though they were accompanied by much suffering.

It is important also to remark, now that we are approaching the period of change from ancient to modern society, that the decline of civilization in the later Roman empire was not owing to degeneration in the people themselves, or to an inevitable downward tendency in highly civilized communities. It is a mistake to attribute the decay in human character changes that are clearly traceable to the need of such external resources as are indispensable for its development. The prohibition to carry arms necessarily renders a people unwarlike. Where municipal institutions are discouraged, public opinion soon becomes powerless. When the resources which might be employed in constructing roads are withdrawn, communication ceases, and with it the interchange of ideas and other influences by which the intellect is quickened. The degradation was produced by the ingenuity of the Governments which degraded its subjects, and systematically destroyed all independence among them. Whenever the iron hand was removed, they showed signs of renewed life and vigour, but the strength of the central power was too great to encourage any hope of resisting it successfully. They had no choice but to sit down under it, and suffer it to drain their life-blood by slow degrees.

At the commencement of the 8th century the extinction of the empire of the East appeared to be imminent. The same causes which had overthrown the Western empire were threatening it with destruction. The Saracens had overthrown all its Asiatic possessions, and had attacked the capital itself, while in Europe it was threatened by the Bulgarians. The provinces were falling off Syria, Egypt, Africa, and the conquered provinces of Spain were wholly lost, and in Italy the dominions of the exarchate were greatly encroached by the Lombards. At home rebellion prevailed in the army, and anarchy in the government, six emperors having been dethroned within the space of twenty-one years. It seemed as if the Greek race itself would be destroyed, in the countries conquered by the Saracens the Greeks were almost exterminated, and Greek civilization proscribed, while Hellas was threatened with occupation by the barbarians. But at this moment the helm of the state was

served by a man who, by his force of character and his great abilities, inaugurated a new state of things, and gave the empire a new lease of life. This man was Leo the Isaurian.

### III. Period of Byzantine Prosperity from Leo III to Justin I (Commence), 716-1057 A.D.

The By-  
zantine  
empire

Considerable differences of opinion have existed as to the precise time at which the Roman empire of the east may be said to have ended, and the Byzantine empire to have commenced. Gibbon remarks that "Tiberius by the Arabs, and Maurice by the Italians, are distinguished as the first of the Greek Cæsars, as the founders of a new dynasty and empire." The question turns on modifications of the old Roman system of administration, and the introduction of a new order of things, which lasted until the overthrow of the state. These commenced, no doubt, shortly after the death of Heraclius, and were closely connected with the victorious advance of the Saracens, which necessitated a reform, and at the same time concentrated the empire, and confined it more and more within the districts inhabited by Greeks. But the altered state of things did not become apparent, nor were the changes systematized, until the time of Leo III, and therefore he may most rightly be regarded as having inaugurated the Byzantine empire. The first century and a half of the present period embraces the iconoclastic controversy, while the two remaining centuries coincide with the rule of the Basilian dynasty. It was a time of great men and great achievements, both in government and war, and the events it contains amply suffice to defend the Byzantine empire from the imputation of feebleness and decrepitude, and those who delight to find in history strongly marked characters and stirring incidents will be amply rewarded here. Few personages stand out in stronger relief than the ruthless, yet ascetic, warrior Basil, the slayer of the Bulgarians, and few occurrences are more romantic than the death of Leo the Armenian, who defends himself with the cross in his clasp, where he was chanting the prayers in the early morning, while his successors lie in fetters in the neighbouring dungeon.

Reforms  
of Leo  
III

We must first notice the reforms, which caused the reign of Leo III to be an era in the history of the empire. These extended to almost every branch of the administration. In respect of the army, he reorganized the military establishment by placing the various bodies of soldiers in the different "themes," or deputations, each with a general of its own, thereby providing for local defence, and avoiding the danger of rendering the military commanders too influential—a system which defended the empire for five centuries. The geographical arrangement of themes was introduced by Heraclius, but reorganized by Leo, and bore somewhat the same relation to the previous division into provinces than the departments in France bear to the earlier distribution of that country. In respect of finance, he brought the taxation immediately under the emperor's cognizance, so that thenceforth the emperors were their own finance ministers. All local agencies for collecting the taxes were abolished, and their functions transferred to the imperial officers, who took census regularly. By this means he raised more money than his predecessors, but the increased prosperity of the people showed that the burden did not fall so heavily. In respect of justice, in order to obviate the difficulties which had arisen in the administration of Justinian's elaborate laws, especially since the facilities for communication throughout the empire had decreased, he published in Greek an abridged manual called the *Beglogy*, and codified the military, agricultural, and maritime laws. In respect of religion, he aimed at counteracting the element of superstition which had crept into the church, and through it was corrupting the public mind. But this last

point calls for separate consideration, since the worship or prohibition of images became the burning question of the age.

The history of iconoclasm is the history of Constantinople icons during the 8th century and the first half of the 9th, and almost involved a great part of the empire in its distractions. There can be little doubt that, in his opposition to image worship, Leo represented the opinion of a large part of the enlightened laymen of his time, while the great body of the clergy, but especially the monks, together with the mass of the population, were passionately attached to the statues and pictures, as objects of veneration, not to that of adoration. But the fact that the stronghold of iconoclasm was Asia Minor, and especially that part of it which bordered on the countries occupied by the Saracens, suggests that it was in part owing to the spread of Mahometanism, the rigidly guarded spirituality of which creed was a standing protest against more material conceptions of religion. Nor should we overlook the deeply rooted feeling in the mind of Orientals of the opposition between spirit and matter, which would naturally cause them to be alive to such questions of controversy. The emperors of this time were those of the Isaurian, Armenian, and Amorrian dynasties, all which names remind us that they came from the Asiatic provinces, whereas the great reaction of opinion in the empire Irene, during whose regency the second council of Nicaea in their favour was held (787 A.D.), was an Athenian. But the matter was complicated by a further issue, the question of images was closely connected in the minds of the emperors, and especially of Leo III and his hard-handed son Constantine Copronymus, with that of their supremacy in matters of religion. They viewed with jealousy the independent power of the church, and were glad of the opportunity this controversy afforded of strengthening their control over this department, and claiming to the full those ecclesiastical rights which, from the time of Constantine the Great onward, had attached to the imperial authority. As this move was only part of a system of centralization, the monks and others who supported image worship were from one point of view the assents of liberty against aggression, and they were recognized as such by a certain number of thinking men, who watched with anxiety the growth of despotism. As toleration was unknown to the age, persecution was carried on by both sides with equal fierceness, and the contest swayed to and fro, until it was brought to an end by the final restoration of images under Michael III, the last of the Amorrian line (842). Its effects on society had been remarkable. At first its influence was bracing, as was shown by the renewed vigour which pervaded the empire, for both sides were thoroughly in earnest, and among the iconoclasts in particular an element of Puritan energy was evolved. But in its later stages, when the people at large were weary of the strife, and the struggle was felt to be in reality one between church and state, the prevalent hypocrisy generated disrespect for religion, and this was followed by general immorality. It further caused the loss to the empire of its dominions in central Italy. So great was the alienation produced by this movement in the minds of the popes Gregory II and III, that thenceforward the holy see was for the most part either active in its opposition to the Byzantine power or lukewarm in support of it. At last, in 761, Ravenna was captured by the Lombards, and the Greek church retired to Naples.

The subsequent ecclesiastical affairs of this period must be briefly dismissed, though they exercised an important and influential influence on the fortunes of the Greeks. The final separation of the Eastern and Western Churches took place in 1053, though events had long before been leading up to it. Already in the middle of the 9th century, when the pope

could  
affect  
affairs

intellectual between the rival patriarchs Ignatius and Photius, a rupture was very nearly occurring, and at last, though the formal causes of division were theological, yet the assumptions of the see of Rome and political antagonisms were in reality more influential motives. The bitterness thus created culminated in the capture of Constantinople by the Latins at the time of the fourth crusade, and the subsequent refusal of aid by the Western nations to the Greeks greatly facilitated the success of the Ottomans. From this, the greatest breach in the Christian world, we turn with thankfulness to the missionary efforts of this age. In the middle of the 9th century two brothers, Cyril and Methodius, preached the gospel to the southern Slavonians, and converted them to Christianity. By Cyril the alphabet called Cyrillic was invented, which was generally adopted by the Slavonic peoples. About the same time the Bulgarians renounced their paganism, through the influence of a sister of their king, Bogoris, who had been educated as a prisoner at Constantinople, and afterwards restored to her native country. The rest of the nation had been prepared for this change by the numerous Christian slaves who had previously been carried off by them in war. A century later Christianity was introduced by Greek influence among the Russians, whose capital was now at Kieff, and who were among the most dreaded foes of the Eastern empire. If the missionary spirit is the best evidence of the vitality of a church, it is clear that that of Constantinople, however much corrupted by formalism, was still animated by the spirit of true religion.

The Persian monarchy, which for 400 years had been the rival of the Roman power in Asia, had now succumbed to the victorious arms of the Sasanians, and that people again, during the next four centuries, were engaged in almost continual war with the Byzantine empire. In the reign of Constantine Pogonatus, the caliph Moawiyah besieged Constantinople for seven years by land and sea, the invaders retiring to Cyzicus for the winter (672-3), but, owing in great measure to the newly invented Greek fire, he was obliged at last to desist from the attempt, and almost the whole of his force was destroyed. Notwithstanding this reverse, the attempt was renewed within a year after Leo III's accession by Melekenah, brother of the caliph Suleiman, with an enormous host, but the skill of the Byzantines in military defence, which was equal to that of the Romans in their best days, baffled his attempts, and a winter of extraordinary severity ensuing ruined the attacking army. The importance of this result was incalculable to Europe—far greater than that of the victory of Charles Martel at Tours. The Sasanian empire was now at its height, and reached from the Indus to the Atlantic, and it was the full bloom of this power, now in full tide of conquest, which was issued at Constantinople. Had that city fallen, there was no power that could have prevented it from overrunning Europe. After this, Asia Minor continued for ages to be the battle-ground of the two opposing empires, until it was so devastated and depopulated by successive campaigns as to be fit only for the occupation of the nomad tribes who were to succeed. In the midst of these struggles the invasions of Haroun al Rashid, the splendour of whose court obtained for him a reputation in the West which he did not enjoy among his contemporaries in the East, appear hardly more than plundering incursions. The Byzantine nobles, who were trained in this school of war, were distinguished for their military spirit and personal powers, and the troops of which the armies were composed were so powerful and well-disciplined that the Sasanians would never meet them in the field except with far superior numbers. By sea, however, the empire was less successful than by land. During the first half of the 9th century both Crete and Sicily were conquered by these enemies, and it

the year 904 occurred the memorable sack of Thessalonica. A Sasanian fleet appeared before that city, and, after storming the sea-wall, pillaged the whole place and butchered the citizens without respect of sex or age. The most famous successes were those of Nicephorus Phocas and his successor John Zimisces. The former of these great commanders, who before he became emperor had reconquered the island of Crete, at the end of a brilliant campaign in Syria obtained possession of Antioch (968) after it had been in the hands of the Mahometans for 328 years. Five years later Zimisces carried his victorious arms even to the banks of the Tigris. But while the disorganized state of the caliphate of Baghdad, in the early part of the 11th century, removed all fears from that quarter, a new enemy began to appear on the eastern frontier of the empire—the Seljuk Turks. Unfortunately, at this critical conjuncture, a fatal mistake was made. The safety of that frontier had long been guaranteed by the Armenian kingdom of the Bagratians, whose country was admirably adapted for defence, and whose population were a hardy race of Christian mountaineers. In the year 1045 the emperor Constantine IX. destroyed this kingdom, and thereby laid his dominions open to the invaders.

In Europe, at the same time, the empire was exposed to Bulgarian attacks of a far hardly less formidable, and in closer proximity—the Bulgarians. After the extinction of the Avars, this people, who had long been in subjection to them, had founded an important monarchy in the ancient Moavia at the end of the 7th century, and henceforward the Byzantines had to defend their European possessions, not as before against a succession of migratory tribes, but against the concentrated force of a single nation. In the time of Constantine Copronymus we find that it required all the energy and military talents of that emperor to keep them at bay, and on one occasion they carried their ravages up to the neighbourhood of the capital. In the beginning of the 9th century their king, Omurtag, defeated and slew the emperor Nicephorus I., who had invaded his territory, in a night attack on his camp, and converted his skull into a drinking-cup for his table. We have already noticed how, later in that century, the nation embraced Christianity, and at the same time a tract of country on the southern side of the Balkan range was ceded to them, and received from them the name of Zagora. By this time also they had imperceptibly changed their nationality and their language, for by intermingling with the more numerous Slavonic tribes of the countries in which they settled, they lost the traces of their Hunnish origin, and became to all intents and purposes a Slavonic race. By the neighbourhood of Constantinople, and the trade between that city and the German and Scandinavian peoples which passed through their country, they became a commercial nation, and advanced in the arts of life. But the rapacity of the Greeks in imposing heavy customs on their traders involved them again in war with the empire, and when peace was re-established, the treaty between Romanus I. and then king, Simeon, was made under the very walls of Constantinople (923). In the reign of Nicephorus Phocas the Russians, who had not long before appeared on the scene of action, were invited by the Greeks to invade Bulgarians, and they so effectually crushed the Bulgarians (968) that his successor, John Zimisces, was obliged to come to their aid, in order to save his own territory from falling a prey to the new comers. It was shortly after this that the great and final struggle commenced. Under their chief, Simeon, a man of great vigour and ability, they extended their conquests over Macedonia and Thessaly, and made plundering incursions into Greece and the Peloponnese. But finding that the plains of Bulgaria were unfavourable to him as a seat of war, on account of the superior discipline of the imperial



forces, Samuel transferred his seat of government to Achrida, on the confines of Macedonia and Albania, and thence he extended his kingdom from the Adriatic to the Egean, so that the country he ruled was as extensive as the European portion of the Byzantine empire. But these events coincided with the culminating period of Byzantine greatness, and Samuel found a worthy rival in Basil II, who from his subsequent victories obtained the title of "Slayer of the Bulgarians." By him the Bulgarian power was brought to an end, and the whole people submitted to the dominion of the Greeks (1018).

The Rus  
at this time

The third people with whom the empire had to contend at this time was the Russians. In the reign of Michael III, the last of the Amorrian dynasty (865), the inhabitants of Constantinople were astonished by the appearance in the neighbourhood of the city of a fleet of 300 small vessels, which passed down the Dnieper from the Black Sea. The enemy contained in these was the Russians, who not long before had established themselves at Kieff on the Dnieper, and whose restless spirit and love of plunder prompted them to attack the strongest city in the world. Their ignorance of the art of war rendered them no formidable foe to the Byzantine forces, but their daring and cruelty produced a profound impression on the civilized and peaceful citizens. Similar attacks were made in 907 by Oleg and in 941 by Igor, but the influence of trade and the introduction of Christianity into Russia gradually promoted more peaceful relations, and the Byzantines employed the powerful tribe of the Patzinaks, who occupied the northern shores of the Black Sea, to counterbalance their opponents. But the campaign of John Zimisces on the Danube in 971, which followed on the negotiations of his predecessor for the subjugation of the Bulgarians, showed how important a military power the Russians had become, for he found in their chief, Svatoslav, an enterprising and powerful adversary, whom it required all his skill to overcome. Once more, in the time of Constantine IX. (1045), the Scandinavian Vikings, by whom the Russians were mostly represented in their daring expeditions, appeared before Constantinople, but with no better success than before, and from this period the alliance of that people with the Byzantines was long uninterrupted, and the two nations were bound together more and more by religious sympathy. In the days of the Comneni the Vikings regularly formed the bodyguard of the emperor.

Constantinople  
changes

Constitutional changes were usually of slow growth in the Byzantine empire, yet at the end of this period we find considerable alterations to have been effected. Under the early iconoclastic emperors there was a tendency towards the greater concentration of power in the hands of the sovereign, but Basil I. converted the government into a pure despotism. This he effected by abolishing the legislative functions of the senate, which body, though now a shadow of its former self, had existed in one form or another all along, and exercised a certain influence in controlling the absolute power of the emperor. When this restraint was removed, and the senate reduced to an administrative council, no further check remained except the fear of revolution. Basil also tacitly introduced what, strange to say, had never existed in the Roman empire, and even now was only partially recognized—the principle of legitimacy in succession. With a view to this he established the custom that his descendants should be born in the "porphyry chamber," so that the name Porphyrogenitus might become a title of legitimacy. In this way a partial antidote was created to that inveterate disease of the Byzantine empire which a French writer has called *la maladie du trône*—the ambition to be emperor at all hazards, notwithstanding the risks involved both in the attempt and the possession of the office. The growth of the idea is proved by the loyalty

shown a century and a half later to the empress Zoe, an aged, intelligent, and incapable woman, on account of the legitimacy of her descent. But the greatest change of all, and one that contributed greatly to the subsequent decline of the empire, was effected at the end of this period. This was the abolition of the system of naming officials to conduct the various departments of the state, and the entrusting those offices to eunuchs of the imperial household. The object of this was to lessen the power of the territorial aristocracy, and to diminish the chance of rebellion, by placing the government in the hands of men who could not found a dynasty, but from this time forward the influence of the aristocracy began to wane. It was the disorganizing of the aristocracy involved in this change that caused the conspiracy of the nobles in Asia Minor which set Isaac Comnenus on the throne. It should also be noticed that few of the emperors throughout this period were Greeks, most of them being either Armenian or Slavonian by extraction. This circumstance accounts for a certain freedom from prejudice and independence of view which may be traced in their actions, but at the same time it caused them to be wanting in sympathy with their subjects.

During a considerable part of this period, notwithstanding the desolating wars which we have described, the prosperity of the inhabitants of the empire was very great. Finally, who is excellently qualified to judge in the matter of this kind, gives it as his opinion that under the iconoclast emperors their moral condition was superior, not only to that of all contemporary kingdoms, but to that of any equal number of the human race in any preceding period. The society of this time has been too much judged of by the cruelties and mutilations which were the life in consequence of the struggles for the throne, but it should be remembered that these were confined almost entirely to the court and its surroundings, and did not affect the mass of the people. And their material prosperity was equally great. The emperor Theophilus, notwithstanding his lavish expenditure, is recorded to have left at his death a sum equal to five million sovereigns—an amount of money which could hardly have been extorted from a people otherwise than wealthy. This was the result of the commerce of their immense mercantile marine, which had in its hands the whole of the carrying trade between Asia and western Europe. To this it should be added that, under Basil II. the middle class, that element which society can least of all afford to dispense with, began rapidly to diminish. As a consequence of this, in the 11th century manufactures declined in the cities, while in the country the immense estates of the aristocracy were cultivated by Mahometan slaves or Slavonian serfs, and this higher class itself began to feel the lethargy of wealth, and though still unconsciously of coming change, was on the eve of impending decline.

In the year 1117, during the reign of Constantine Monaxos, the empire was visited by a fearful pestilence, which, both in the mortality and the demoralization of society it produced, must have rivalled, to judge by the accounts left us by the Byzantine historians, those of Florence and London, of which Boccaccio and Defoe have drawn such vivid pictures. As this calamity was the primary cause of the immigration of foreign settlers into Greece, it is intimately connected with the question of modern Greek nationality, and consequently the present appears a fitting place briefly to discuss this subject, on which great differences of opinion, turning mainly on the

Condition of the  
people

Greek  
nationality

medieval history of the country, have prevailed. The controversy originated in the famous thesis, of Professor Fallmeyer of Munich, that, owing to the great influx first of Slavonian and afterwards of Albanian colonists, not a single drop of Hellenic blood flows in the veins of the Greeks at the present day. The discussion of this point has enlisted much ability and learning on both sides, but the question appears now to have been pretty well settled by the abandonment of Fallmeyer's hypothesis. How early barbarian settlements began to take place in Greece it is difficult to determine, but though the occupation of the Peloponnese by Avars and Slavonians at the end of the 6th century, on which much stress has been laid, is doubt fully historical, yet colonies of those races probably established themselves in the northern part of Greece. But that the great change in this respect was produced by the pestilence is shown by the obliteration of Hellenic names of places which dates from that time. For, though a fair number of ancient names of seaport towns, such as Pathe, Corinth, and Epidaurus, and some names even in a district so extensively occupied by Slavonians as Attica, have been preserved to the present day, yet the great majority of the modern names are now, and have been since the 8th century, either Slavonic or of late Greek origin. Not only was the country greatly depopulated by the plague, but a considerable portion of the native middle class was induced by the emperor to migrate to the capital, in order to fill up the void in the inhabitants which had been caused by its ravages. The districts which were thus left vacant were soon after occupied by Slavonian tribes, so that until the middle of the 9th century they formed a large part of the population. But in the latter part of that century the Greeks began to recover a numerical superiority, and from this period dates the process of the absorption and Hellenizing of the Slavonians, so as to form the mixed race of which the greater part of the population of Greece is now composed. In effecting this change the Greek Church played an important part. The affinity between the ancient and modern Greeks has been traced by several lines of reasoning. It has been pointed out how great is the resemblance of character between them, and that too in points presenting the sharpest contrast to the character of the Slavonic races. The survival of old beliefs and classical superstitions at the present day has been carefully observed. The language is a lineal descendant of the ancient speech, and contains next to no Slavonic element, and lest it should be thought that this language had been imported into the provinces from one or more great centres, and had not survived in the districts themselves, it is proved that numerous classical words and forms, which have been lost to the language at large, still survive in the local dialects. Thus, though the physical connexion between the modern Greeks and the ancient Hellenes, in certain districts at all events, may be slight, as seems to be implied by the difference of physiognomy, yet in all that really constitutes a people, their character, feelings, and ideas, the former are the lineal descendants of the latter.

IV *Period of Byzantine Decline from Isaac I to the taking of Constantinople by the Latins, 1087-1204 A.D.*

The Commemoration

At the commencement of the preceding period there was a prevailing fear among the inhabitants of the empire that its extinction was imminent, and we have seen how this was followed by an age of unexampled prosperity. The feeling of the time on which we now enter was completely the opposite of this, and yet it was a period of decline. The long duration of the empire, notwithstanding numerous vicissitudes, its superiority to contemporary nations in power and wealth, and its apparent security from foreign

enemies, inspired the people with a belief in its permanency, and blinded them to the seeds of decay that were already working. Yet before the end of the 11th century the Seljuk Turk had occupied all the inland part of Asia Minor, and had established their capital at Nicæa, in the immediate neighbourhood of Constantinople. It would, however, be a mistake to suppose that, in its external relations at all events, the whole of the Comnenian period was a time of decay. On the contrary, during a considerable period it witnessed a remarkable revival, and the three great emperors of that dynasty, Alexius, John, and Manuel Comnenus, whose long reigns extend over an entire century (1081-1180), were men who would be conspicuous figures in any age. All of them were distinguished by personal courage and skill in war, by literary culture, and by sagacity in politics, but in other respects they represented very different types. The first, Alexius, was indefatigable in business, patient in maturing his schemes, and active in carrying them out, but vanguardic, unprincipled, and fond of artifice. From this Ulyssean phase of Greek character we turn to a true Achilles, his son John, the most amiable character that ever occupied the Byzantine throne—a man inexpressible in morals, open-hearted, generous in action, prudent in council, and pious without superstition. The last of the three, Manuel, presents us with a nature spoiled by the early possession of absolute power, but gifted with most of the features admired by his contemporaries—handsome in person, tall of stature, and so powerful that, at a tournament at Antioch in which the chivalry of the West took part, he unhorsed every antagonist—but passionate in temper and ill-regulated in mind. In an age which produced men like these it may well be inquired, What were the sources of decline?

In the first place, the emperors were almost the only capable men. This was the natural effect of the centralization of the system. The neglect of the education of persons intended to be employed in the administration, and the employment of creatures of the court for offices of trust, were now bearing their fruit. Everything depended on the existing sovereign, and it only required the vice of a thoroughly profligate man like Andronicus Comnenus, the last of his dynasty, to ruin the state. As might be expected also under these circumstances, disorder soon crept into every branch of the public service. The census, which for eleven centuries had been carefully compiled, was now neglected, justice, which more than anything else had united the provinces to the empire, was more imperfectly administered, and the army became inferior to those of Western nations. This last change was produced partly by the degeneracy of the nobles in military spirit, owing to the growth of luxury, partly by the officers being appointed by favouritism, and the habit of disbanded troops at the end of a campaign, in order to save money to defray the expenses of the court. At the same time the great diminution of the middle class, owing to the extension of the large properties, lessened the number of those who were willing to defend their liberties against invaders. The privileges also, in respect of trade, which were conceded by Alexius I. to the Venetians and by Manuel to the Genoese and Pisans, to the detriment of the native merchants, commenced the decline of Greek commerce, and this was accelerated by the piracy that arose, when the money that had been contributed by the commercial communities for the maintenance of local squadrons of galleys was ordered to be remitted to Constantinople. To all this must be added the influence of the higher Greek clergy, whose subservience to the state had increased since its separation from the Western Church, and the conservatism of whose ideas discouraged all attempts at progress on the part of the people.

The Greek

The age of the Crusades is the time of the crusades. These famous expeditions will produce a very different impression on the mind as we read, as they are regarded from the point of view of the East or the West. From the latter point of view they may be regarded as bringing to a focus the religion, and mind and culture of the time, as forming a safety valve for its excesses, as calving the ideas and cleaving the spirit of the people. But to the great mass of the Eastern they appeared as a badly better than man and an expedition, and as producing unmitigated evil. Though the first crusade (1095) was justly undertaken in consequence of the solicitations of Alexius for aid against the Seljuks, yet it soon is the first undisputed bond between the enemy they pulled the natives, and when the most original compromise followed, though many of their leaders, like Godfrey and Tancred, were men of the highest character, yet it required all the address of the Byzantine monarch to transmit these armies into Asia without some irreparable injury being done to his empire. No doubt the fanatics were not all on one side, for the suspicion and falsity of Alexius gave just ground of complaint to the crusaders. But he had a very difficult part to play. Had he placed himself, as was proposed, at the head of the crusade, he had no reason to expect obedience on the part of the feudal nobles, while at the same time he left his kingdom exposed to the danger of invasions from home and from abroad. Accordingly he chose the ignominious part, and followed in their footsteps with the view of regaining what he could to his dominions. The second and third of these expeditions proved through the empire with comparatively little injury, though in the latter of the two the island of Cyprus was lost to Richard of England, but the ill-will that was manifested by the Greeks on these occasions ripened in the mind of the Westerns those seeds of hatred which at last bore fruit in the great buccannery expedition which is commonly called the fourth crusade (1201). This event, of which a narrative has been left us from both sides, by the Greek historian Nicetas, and the Frank chronicler Villehardouin, is certainly one of the most disgraceful transactions in history. A certain lustre has been shed over it by the rage and blindness of the doge Dandolo, who was one of the principal leaders, but that a Christian force assembled for the purpose of fighting the infidels should turn its arms against the most important Christian city of the time is an act of unparalleled dissension, nor can anything be conceived more deliberately mean than the treaty by which the spoil of the empire was partitioned beforehand between the nations who took part in the attack. From this blow Constantinople never recovered, though it is true to add that hardly less injury had been caused by the storm and plunder of the city during the rebellion which set Alexius Comnenus on the throne.

The Seljuks

In Asia this period opens with a great disaster, the defeat of Romans IV. by Alp Arslan, in the battle of Manzikert in Armenia (1071). Gibbon has eloquently described the scene, in which the Seljuk sultan, after placing his foot on the neck of the captive emperor, spares his life, and hospitably entertains him. The Seljuk men of Turks were already masters of a great part of western Asia, and in the reign of Malekshah, Alp Arslan's successor, their dominions extended from the banks of the Jaxartes to the Mediterranean. The empire had now entered on the third great struggle of four centuries' duration, which it maintained in the East—first with the Persians, next with the Saracens, and finally with the Turks, whether Seljuk or Ottoman. But the present contest was commenced under altered circumstances. It was soon felt how fatal was the policy which had denuded the Armenian frontier of its native defenders, and how few obstacles were presented in Asia Minor to an invading force when a large portion of the free

population had disappeared. And the character of the invaders also had changed, for, whereas the Persians and Saracens had felt an interest in civilization, the Turkish hordes were composed of nomad barbarians, whose object in war was plunder, and who occupied the countries they conquered as pastoral tribes. Hence their system of warfare consisted in exterminating the agricultural population by successive incursions, until one district after another lay open for their permanent settlement. Within three years after the battle of Manzikert, the Seljuk power extended over the greater part of Asia Minor, and when, in the year 1080, Nicea fell into their hands, that place became the capital of a separate kingdom, which was called the sultanate of Rum, that is, of Rome. From thence they were driven back by the crusaders at the time of the first crusade, and transferred their seat of government to Iconium, in a more remote position in the south-east of the country. After this they carried on a succession of wars with the Byzantine Government, the most remarkable event in which was the great battle at Myrioccephalus, on the borders of Phrygia, in which the emperor Manuel was signally defeated. During the distractions that prevailed at Constantinople shortly before the fourth crusade, it might have been in the power of the Seljuks to seize that city, and so to anticipate the danger of invasion, but at this time the empire was divided between the two sons of the sultan, Kilidj-Arslan II, and therefore the power of the Seljuks was less formidable.

Meanwhile the European dominions of the emperors had been assailed by a variety of foes, among whom the Normans were the most conspicuous. In the year 1071 Robert Guiscard succeeded in expelling the Byzantines from their remaining possessions in southern Italy, and fired by the ambition of rivaling his great compatriot, who four years and a half before this had made himself master of England, he conceived the design of conquering the Byzantine empire. With the object of carrying this into execution, he laid siege to Dyrrhachium, the most important Greek city on the Adriatic, and after defeating Alexius Comnenus, who had come to his relief, succeeded in making himself master of the place. Being forced to quit the country, he entrusted the campaign to his son Bohemund, who was defeated by the emperor, and withdrew into Italy. Fortune, however, ordained that these two chieftains should once more be brought into collision in Syria, and hence arose another Norman war, in which Bohemund was foiled by the strength of Dyrrhachium. At a later period, in the reign of Manuel, Greece was invaded by King Roger, who had received an affront from that emperor, and the cities of Thebes and Corinth were sacked in the most barbarous manner. But the most famous of these incursions was in 1185, and resulted in the siege of Thessalonica, which place was taken by the Normans, and treated with a cruelty that almost rivalled that of the Saracens in the former siege. Besides these wars, there were others with the Patrnaks, the Hungarians, the Serbians, and the Venetians. But towards the end of this period the empire received a blow from the revolts of a people who on this occasion appear prominently in history—the Wallachians. This race, who, like the Greeks, claimed the name of Romans or Romans, were the descendants of the Roman colonists in Dacia, whom the emperor Amelian transplanted to the southern side of the Danube. These it is probable they intermingled with the natives, but they retained the Latin tongue, from which the modern language is derived. About the 13th century, it would seem, the great body of the nation once more migrated northward to the steppes they now occupy, but those of whom we are speaking here were settled on the Balkan, where they had maintained themselves in their mountain fastnesses, owing an allegiance more or less qualified to Constantinople. In the reign of

Wallachians

Ioane Angelus (1186), however, when they were heavily taxed, robbed of their estate, and misused in other ways, they rose under the leadership of three brothers, Peter, Asan, and John, and having made a league with the Bulgarians, raised the standard of revolt, and established what is called the Bulgarian Wallachian kingdom. Its successive rulers contended with varied fortune against the Byzantine Government, but succeeded in maintaining their position in Thracia and Macedonia, to which countries for a time they also were added, forming, however, an independent province, with a governor of its own. The emperor Baldwin, the first of the Latin emperors of Constantinople, was captured by them in battle, and put to death. The kingdom continued to exist until the Turks made their appearance on the scene, when, in common with the other independent sovereignties in these regions, it was finally overthrown.

The period from the end of the 9th century to the fourth crusade was to Greece a time of prosperity. Though its inhabitants were looked down upon as provincials by the people of Constantinople, and the country itself was treated with neglect (Basil II was the only emperor who for several ages visited Athens), yet in material well being it was one of the most flourishing parts of the empire. Though barbarian invasions were still not wholly unknown,—one of the Uses in particular is mentioned in 1066,—yet security generally prevailed, and from the middle of the 11th century the coast was nothing to fear from Saracen corsairs. The land produced corn in abundance, so that it even supplied the capital in a time of dearth. The silk manufactures of Thebes, Athens, and Corinth were a source of great wealth, and much of the commerce of the time was in the hands of the people of Greece. The port of Monemvasia, in eastern Laconia, which gave its name to the Malmsey wine, was especially famous as a medieval emporium. How far Hellenic feeling and Hellenic traditions survived among the Greeks we have no means of discovering, but the probability is that these to a great extent perished, along with the Hellenic names, at the time of the great Slavonic immigration. The whole population had become Christian, though as late as the 9th century paganism existed among the inhabitants of the mountainous regions of Laconia. But in the latter half of the 12th century decline was ready to set in. Then commerce was passing into the hands of the Western traders, the silk manufacture was transferred by the Norman Roger to Palermo, and the profits of industry were absorbed by taxation, so that no surplus remained to be invested in works of public utility. The writings of Michael Acominatus, the noble and learned archbishop of Athens at the time of the fourth crusade, give clear evidence that in that city the decay had already commenced.

It is during the 12th century that we first meet with compositions in the popular Greek tongue, among the earliest specimens being poems by a monk called Prochorio didymos, addressed to the emperor Manuel Comnenus. The literary language of this time was still the same which had been used throughout the Byzantine period—the “common” dialect of the Macedonian Greeks, as it had been transmitted with various modifications by the later Greek writers and the fathers of the church. The Byzantine histories and other works which were composed in it are usually stilted and pedantic in style, and conventional in their ideas and their treatment of events, but it is possible to treat them too slightly. Some of the writers, like Michael Psellus and Eustathius of Thessalonica, were men of undoubted ability and learning, and, besides this, it was the taste for these subjects, however faulty, which maintained the high level of cultivation that distinguished the Byzantines from the people of all other contemporary states

during the Middle Ages, and caused the ancient literature to be preserved. This language is also that spoken at court, so that it is not till the time of the Palaeologi that we find the highest cycles and polite composition in idiom of the vulgar tongue. But from the 14th century after Christ, if not earlier, there had been a divergence between the written and the spoken language, so that the two failed, so to speak, an upper and a lower status. Until the time of the reconquests, in all probability, the ancient speech was generally intelligible, but from the end of the 9th century it was a dead language to the great bulk of the nation. The change which the popular idiom was passing through, as might be expected, was twofold, arising, first, from the usual tendency of speech to become more analytical and of words to modify their meaning, and, secondly, from the loss of vocabulary, the mutilation of grammatical forms, and the confusion of syntax, which is produced by want of cultivation. At the same time it passed through no such violent process of disintegration as befell Latin in its change into the Romance languages, so that its historical continuity was never broken. But when it emerges to view in the compositions of the 12th century it is already a modern language, and its forms differ little from those of the Romance of the present century, though of course the vocabulary was as yet free from the intrusive elements—Italian, Albanian, and Turkish—which subsequently crept into it. The metres in which these poems were composed was regulated entirely by accent, and not by the quantity of the syllables, and the verse usually employed was the so-called “political,” i. e., popular verse, which corresponds to some of our longer ballad metres. The favourite subject was romances, and in the treatment of these, as well as to some extent in the stories themselves, subsequently to the Frankish occupation the influence of the French romances is clearly traceable.

#### V Period of Greek Survival from the taking of Constantinople by the Latins to its Conquest by the Turks, 1204-1453 A.D.

The empire of the East never recovered from the effects of the fourth crusade. It was then broken into a number of separate fragments, and though some of these recovered their cohesion, and the end did not arrive for two centuries and a half, yet the strength of the system was gone, and paralysis crept more and more over the enfeebled frame. In accordance with the provisions of the partition treaty, a Latin emperor was set up at Constantinople, and Baldwin, count of Flanders, was elected to the office. Latin kingdoms were established in different provinces,—one at Thessalonica, which was of short duration, another at Athens under the family of De la Roche, and a third in the Peloponnese under Champlitte and Villehardouin, which was called the principality of Achaia or the Morea. Of the occupation of the last-named of these countries an account is given in one of the most curious of mediæval Greek poems, *The Book of the Conquest*, the French original of which also exists. But even the districts which remained in the hands of the Greeks did not continue united. An independent empire was established at Trebizond on the Black Sea by a son of the house of Comnenus. Another principality was founded in Epirus, the despot of which, after overthrowing the Latin state of Thessalonica, established at that place an empire of his own. But the handiwork of the legitimate Greek monarchy was at Nicaea, the original capital of the Seljuk sultans in Asia Minor. Theodore Lascaris, a man of no mean ability, who had been acknowledged as emperor before the capture of Constantinople, having taken up his abode in that place, succeeded in maintaining himself in opposition to the crusaders, the Seljuks of Iconium, and the Greeks of Trebizond, and his

Partisan  
of the  
empire

The  
modern  
language  
and  
literature

Bugare  
of Nice

successors continued to reside there for nearly sixty years. When the difficulties of the Westerns in Constantinople became increasingly acute, and their downfall appeared imminent, it was for a time a question whether that city should become the prey of the emperor of Nicæa, or of the emperor of Thessalonica, or of the Bulgarian Wallachian sovereign, and this rivalry involved many alliances and wars. The man who ultimately decided it in favour of Nicæa was Michael Palæologus, who became the founder of the last dynasty that ruled the Greek empire (1261).

The  
Palæo-  
logi

The character of Michael, which was too faithfully reflected by many of his successors, represented most of the unfavorable qualities of the Greek race. Though a brave soldier, he was intriguing, selfish, and unscrupulous, as he soon showed by the deposition and blinding of the young emperor, whose guards and colleague he was appointed to be. He entered on the possession of a ruined capital, which the barbarism of the Western nobles had reduced to a state of poverty and filth, and his attempts to restore it were misdirected and unsuccessful. His one object, when he had established himself on the throne, was to maintain his despotism, and while he recovered part of the Peloponnese to the empire, he turned his subjects financially by debasing the coinage, and commercially by allowing the Genoese and Venetians to appropriate most of the carrying trade of the Greeks. But the act by which he gave the deepest offence was the reunion of the Eastern and Western Churches, which amounted to the subversion of the Greek Church to the pope, to which he consented at the council of Lyons (1271), in order to persuade Gregory X. to prohibit Charles of Anjou from invading the empire. The narrowness of the theological spirit among the Greeks at this period is greater than we can well conceive, but it was a not unnatural outburst of national feeling which roused the people in opposition to this measure. The subse-quent attempt in the same direction at the councils of Florence and Ferrara (1438-9), when the nation was reduced to the direct suzerainty, not with no better reception at home. Under the successors of Michael the empire continued for 170 years, but the whole of this time was a long death sickness. The doom of the empire was foreseen by the powers that came to play on its weakness—the Catalans, who plundered those whom they had undertaken to aid, the knights of St. John, who seized Rhodes, a conquest which they rendered memorable by their gallant defence of that island against the Mahometans, and the Serbians, who, under Stephen Dushan, established an important empire, which lasted until it was destroyed by Sultan Amurath at the great battle of Cossova (1389). Even after the emperor turned from the endowments and gifts which they lavishly bestowed on monasteries, especially those of Athos, seemed to be providing beforehand for a day when their possessions would pass into the hands of others.

The  
Ottomans

The nation was now arriving at the maturity which was to bring this time-worn empire to an end. Shortly before the Greeks regained possession of Constantinople, the Mongols, whose vast hordes had overrun a great part of Europe and Asia and had destroyed the caliphate of Bagdad, entered Anatolia, and shattered the power of the Seljuks of Iconium. But on the ruins of this dynasty another and far more terrible dominion arose. Towards the end of the 13th century Osman, the chief of a Turkish tribe in north-west Phrygia, penetrated through the passes of Mount Olympus, which the jealous policy of Michael Palæologus had denied of the protection of the wall-like mountains who occupied them, and descended into the lowlands of Bithynia. By his son, Orchan, the city of Broussa was captured, which became thenceforth the capital of the

Ottoman race. The extraordinarily rapid rise of this people to be one of the greatest powers that the world has seen was due in great measure to the remarkable ability of its successive rulers, but in no slight degree also to the institution of the Janissaries—an inhuman but most efficient system, by which Christian children were torn from their homes and educated as Mahometans in the household of the sultans, to whose personal service, as a bodyguard, they were for life devoted. As early as the year 1346 we find Constantine, then the prime minister of John V., and afterwards himself emperor, entering into alliance with Orchan, and giving him his daughter in marriage. The first step towards a permanent settlement of the Turks in Europe was made in 1354, when Gallipoli was occupied by Orchan's son, Suleiman. Seven years from this time Amurath I. made himself master of Adrianople, and before his death that sultan saw the Greek emperor his vassal and tributary. It seemed now as if the fall of Constantinople could not long be delayed, when, with one of those turns of the wheel of fortune which form the surprises of history, Bajazet, the most powerful of all the Ottoman rulers, was defeated and taken prisoner by Timur the Tartar at the battle of Angora (1402), and civil war setting in between his sons gave the Christian empire a new lease of existence. But within twenty years again the capital was besieged by Amurath II., though he failed to take it, owing partly to the strength of its fortifications, and partly to a rebellion that broke out in his family. The empire was now reduced to Thessalonica, a part of the Peloponnese, the city of Constantinople, and a few neighbouring towns.

In the midst of the gloom which hangs over this last End of period, it is consoling to find a ray of light that illumines the end of its closing scene, in the heroic end of the last Constantine. The story is a sad one. The city was beleaguered by land and sea by the wall-like hosts of Mahomet II., no further succour could be expected from the West, and the emperor, who had adopted the Latin rite, was thereby estranged from the great mass of his subjects. But he had determined not to survive his empire, and he died in a manner worthy of the greatest of his predecessors. On the eve of the final assault he rode round the positions occupied by his troops, to cheer them by his presence, and then, having partaken of the eucharist in St. Sophia's after the Latin form, and having solemnly asked pardon of the members of his household for any offences, he proceeded to occupy his station at the great breach. There on the following morning, after a desperate resistance, he fell fighting amidst a heap of slain, and the young sultan passed his lifeless body as he rode into the captured city.

We have thus passed in review the fortunes of the Greeks during a period of nearly eighteen centuries. We have seen how the Roman system of government and the Greek character and social institutions, mutually influencing and modifying one another, produced the characteristic features of the Eastern empire. We have watched that empire maintaining a conflict on the one side with the invading barbarians, the Bulgarians, and the Western nations, on the other with the Persians, the Saracens, and the Turks, until to the last of these peoples it finally succumbed.

The following are the principal histories of this period—in English, Gibbon's *Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, which, from its comprehensiveness and grasp of the subject, can never be superseded, and Palfy's *History of Greece*, which is the oldest authority on the Byzantine empire, in French, Le Bossé's *Histoire du Bas-Empire*, in German, Carl Hoff's *Geschichte Griechenlands vom Beginn des Mittelalters*, published in Biesch and Gruber's *Byzantinische Geschichte*, and is issued in vols. vi. and vii. of Brockhaus's *Griechenland* (a work of great criticism, which has cleared up many disputed questions), and Hatzeberg's *Geschichte Griechenlands unter der Herrschaft der Römer*, and *Geschichte Griechenlands seit dem Absterben des ersten Leo bis zur Gegenwart*, in Greek, Παπαθεοφάνης' *Τελεπρωτὸν τῶν Βασιλευσάντων* (H. P. I.).

## SECTION III.—RECENT HISTORY

The history of Greece from the fall of Constantinople to the present day suggests a problem of profound historic interest. From the year 1453 till the end of the 18th century almost all the occasions on which the Greek people appear on the page of the historian are occasions on which we read of them that they were butchered or sold into slavery. Records tell only of their annihilation or dispersion. Yet in the commencement of the 19th century this apparently annihilated and dispersed people can summon energy enough to resist the Turks, and although in all probability they would have failed to overcome their oppressors if they had been compelled to struggle unaided, yet the courage and self-devotion which they showed in the conflict were such as to gain for them the sympathies of Europe, and they came forth triumphant. But in reading even of their war for independence we are astonished that a remnant was left. Thousands upon thousands perished, and their victory seemed only less terrible than utter defeat. Yet the spirit of life remained. The kingdom of Greece was established, and within forty years, notwithstanding deplorable mistakes in its management, the population is doubled, and the country becomes consolidated into a national realm. To trace how these events were possible and how they actually came to pass is the task of the historian of Modern Greece.

The external events in this history are necessarily few. Greece was during the most of these centuries under the sway of foreigners, and the external history of Greece is formed mainly by episodes in the history of these foreigners. When Mahomet II became master of Constantinople, he did not thereby become master of the Greek empire. The Palæologi had held only a small portion of the territory which had constituted the Greek empire. Most of the islands of the *Ægean* were under the rule of Italian princes who acted as independent rulers. Rhodes was governed by the knights of St. John. But especially the Venetians owned large possessions in Greece and were also powerful by sea. The external history of Greece is occupied mainly with the efforts of Mahomet II and his successors to spread their conquests. Mahomet himself conquered the kingdoms of Trebizond, Albania, Eubœa, Greece proper, and part of the Peloponnesus. He was also successful in expediting against several of the islands of the *Ægean*, but he failed in his attack on Rhodes. It was not till the end of 1574 that the knighthood of St. John submitted to Sultan I. after standing a siege in which they showed the greatest bravery, and in which the Ottomans, it is said, lost about 100,000 men. On the 1st of January the knights left the island, to go first to Crete and then to Malta. Cyprus and Crete remained still longer in the hands of the Westerns. In 1489 Catherine Cornaro ceded the island of Cyprus to the Venetians, who retained possession of it till, in 1570, Piali and Lala Mustapha attacked it. Nikomæ fell in September 1570, and Famagosta in August 1571, after a brave defence conducted by Marcantonio Bragadino. The Turks received a severe defeat at Lepanto from Don Juan d'Austria in command of the combined fleets of Spain and Italy, in which they lost 130 ships and 30,000 men. But the blow was merely temporary. The helpers of Venice were not united among themselves. Again the Turks became the rulers of the *Ægean* Sea, and in 1573 Venice had to conclude a humiliating treaty in which she gave up Cyprus. In the case of Crete Venice had to pay for her own severity. That island remained for a long time undisturbed in the possession of the queen of the seas, as far as the Ottomans were concerned. But internal commotions agitated it. The Sphakiotæ or mountaineers of the south-west of Crete—a bold, brave, and independent race of men—

rebelled against the rule of the Westerns, and the Venetians had recourse to the most shameful cruelties and atrocities on all their Greek subjects in order to crush the rebellious spirit. The result was that the Greeks hated the Venetians with the bitterest hatred, and would have gladly welcomed a change to the rule of the Turks. The Venetians saw that they had gone too far, and sent a wise politician, Giacomo Foscarini, to bring matters to a better state. Many prudent reforms were inaugurated, the Sphakiotæ were reconciled, and all seemed to promise well. But Foscarini died before his reforms got firm hold of the people. The Sphakiotæ indeed from that day to this have never submitted to the Turkish yoke, but the rest of the people were not so willing subjects of the Venetians and favoured an invasion by the Turks. The Turks knew their opportunity, and began an effort to possess the island which, though the Venetians resisted with great perseverance and were backed by other Italians and by the French, ended in the treaty of 6th September 1669, by which they ceded Crete to the Turks. Thus last acquisition rendered the whole of Greece subject to the Turks with the exception of the Ionian and a few other small islands, which still remained in the hands of the Venetians. The Venetians, however, did not resign their hold on Greece without a violent effort to recover possession of it. For this purpose they not only levied soldiers from their own and other Italian communities, but also hired generals and soldiers from Germany. The war began in 1669. The management of it was entrusted to one of the greatest men whom Venice produced, Francesco Morosini, who was ably assisted by a Swedish general, Kongsmark. The contest was carried on with great vigour until at length the Turks were driven from the Peloponnesus. The Venetians wished also to regain possession of Eubœa, but in this they were unsuccessful. The war was brought to an end by the peace of Callowitz, which left Venice in possession of the Peloponnesus, and the islands of *Ægina* and Santa Maura. One incident in this war has especially attracted the attention of the civilised world. Morosini, finding his efforts successful in the Morea, resolved to advance towards Eubœa. Athens lay in his way. It was garrisoned by the Turks, who, however, on his approach quitted the lower city and, occupying the Acropolis, prepared to defend it at all hazards. They planted one of their batteries in a breach of the temple of Nike Apteros, and they placed a portion of their powder and many of their valuables in the Parthenon. The Venetians lowered their shot for the most beautiful of all buildings, and one of their bombs, falling on the powder in the Parthenon, blew many of the masterpieces of art into a thousand fragments, and utterly defaced the noble building which had remained up till that time very nearly in the condition in which the original architect and sculptor had left it. The Venetians tried to introduce reforms into the Peloponnesus, and had made considerable progress when in 1715 Ali Kumurgit, at the head of a very large Ottoman army, entered the Peloponnesus. The Venetians were unprepared, and they could not easily get assistance from others. The consequence was that in a very short time Kumurgit drove them out of the whole of the peninsula. The Turks got involved at this time in war with Austria, and when peace was finally concluded at Passarowitz, Venice had to give up the Morea as well as the island of *Ægina*, and practically she disappears from the history of Greece except as the possessor of Santa Maura. But a great change had now begun to take place in European politics. At an early period after the capture of Constantinople the Turks came into collision with their neighbours on the north, the empires of Austria and Russia, and we find these two powers united in resisting the incursions of the Ottomans. Even so late as 1683 the Turks were so bold as to advance as far as Vienna and lay

sage to it. But in the 14th century the policy of Russia attracted the attention of the rest of Europe, and caused a considerable change of attitude. Early in that century Peter the Great had declared his resolution to force his way into Constantinople, and though he was completely balked in his aim, and had to sign an ignominious peace (1711), the desire to have the city on the Bosphorus continued to animate the Russians. It is to Count Munich, field-marshal and counsellor of the Russian empress Anna, that historians attribute the suggestion that Russia should systematically stir up the Greek Christians against their Turkish masters, and from his time (1730) onward we find Russia continually scheming to rouse the Greeks to insurrection. Most famous amongst these efforts were those of the empress Catherine II who, influenced partly by the Philhellism of Voltaire, partly by a desire to withdraw the attention of her subjects from domestic affairs, but principally by a wish to gratify her favourite Orloff, formed the project of emancipating the Greeks from the yoke of the Turks (1769). But all the efforts made to effect this object were exceedingly inadequate. The Greeks were soon taught also that Russia, while willing to free them from the Ottoman yoke, was determined to assist none but those who would readily become Russian subjects. And the expedition to the Peloponnese undertaken by Orloff was followed by most disastrous consequences to the Greeks. The Russians were more successful in their contests with the Turks in the north, and in 1774 compelled the sultan to accept a peace, called the peace of Kurnardji, which contained several provisions bearing upon the Greeks. In some of these the sultan promised to protect the Christian religion and Christian churches, and though no special mention was made of Russia, her statesmen saw in this stipulation an opening for endless opportunities to interfere. And from this time forward Russia has claimed to be the champion of the Christians against the Turks. But the other states of Europe, especially France and England, became suspicious of the designs of Russia, and looking to the balance of power as an essential principle of European statesmanship, they determined to maintain the integrity of the Turkish empire. Austria had frequently joined with Russia in opposing the Turks and had again and again hoped to come in for a share of the spoil when Turkey should be partitioned. But towards the end of the 15th century the increasing power and influence of Russia began to alarm her, and when the Greeks rose to assert their independence, no power more tenaciously adhered to the doctrine that the integrity of the Turkish empire was demanded by the balance of power in Europe. Thus up to the time of the establishment of the Greek kingdom the affairs of the Greeks have been mixed up with those of foreigners—Ottomans, Venetians, Austrians, Russians, and the other European powers.

The notable fact in Greek history during these ages is the disappearance and the apparent destruction of the nation. Whoever might hold the supreme power in Greece, the Greeks were sure to be the sufferers. When the Turks spread their conquests from Constantinople on to the rest of the empire, every capture of a city was followed by the slaughter of the able-bodied men and the carrying off of the women and children to the harem or slave market. And the Western Christians were not a whit more tender than the Ottomans. The Venetians were wroth with the Greeks, because they did not acknowledge the pope, and in the island of Crete perpetrated the most abominable barbarities on the innocent population. The Turks punished the Greeks because they submitted to the Venetians, and the Venetians punished them because they submitted to the Turks. Moreover, in these times the Aegean was infested by pirates who, whether Turks or Italians or Greeks, had

no mercy on the peaceful inhabitants of the mainland. Human life was disregarded, and men and women were of value only in so far as they were saleable articles in the slave market. If one were to enumerate all the instances in which historians tell us of the utter destruction or transference of the Greek population, a vivid idea might be presented of how terribly hard were the sufferings of the Greek people. We have to add to this record of destruction that vast masses of the people removed to Italy or Sicily or some other place of refuge. Almost all the famous families that ruled the islands of the Aegean escaped from them when they were attacked by the Turks. The knight of St John, for instance, left Rhodes to find a final settlement in Malta. Among the number who thus lost their native land were nearly all the learned men, who sought in the West a refuge from Turkish rule, and opportunities for the pursuit of learning.

Yet notwithstanding these destructive forces the Greek people survived. To understand this phenomenon we have to examine into the mode of civil administration adopted by the Ottomans. The Ottomans were piecemeal a warlike people. Their profession was that of arms. Thou two great objects in life were to conquer and enjoy their conquests. They were brave and always ready to fight, but after battle was over they wished to enjoy the luxury and repose with which they had done the fighting. They therefore utterly disclaimed to meddle with civil matters. If they got their revenues, and could enjoy their harem and slaves, it was a matter of no consequence to them how the subject races procured the means of paying the taxes, or in what way they governed themselves. The same spirit showed itself in the sultans. To them all Turks as well as Greeks were practically slaves. The sultans saw in the Turks the right hand that could bring them success in war, and in the Greeks or other subject nations the means of ministering to their wealth and enjoyment. Provided they had a sufficiently numerous and brave army and ample supplies of money, they were comparatively indifferent how or by whom local affairs were managed. This freedom from bias and thus singleness of purpose enabled them to continue their power for a much longer time than they could possibly have done had they been swayed by national aims or particular ambitions. They had no hesitation in selecting for their purposes the best men they could get, and consequently many of the subject races rose to places of high eminence in the Turkish army and administration. A large proportion of the viziers of the Sublime Porte have been Greeks. Many of the generals that subdued Greece were Greeks. There was thus a constant accession to the ranks of the Turks from the subject nations. Those who thus entered the Turkish service could not do so without adopting Mahomedanism. It was the essential condition. But many Greeks found no difficulty in changing their faith. They saw that it was then one hope of rising to eminence. And these men reached such high positions as to arouse the jealousy of the Turks, for the sultans preferred the converts to the original Mahomedans. They felt more confidence in them as instruments of their own domination. Indeed at one time there seemed a likelihood that large portions of Greece would become entirely Mahomedan. They were urged to it by two opposite influences—by the high position which Mahomedan converts from Greece could attain, and by the utterly wretched condition of those who remained attached to the Christian religion. We have a curious instance of the effect of the latter motive in the conduct of the Charnavates who occupied about thirty-six villages in the valley of the Apsos in Albania. The inhabitants of these villages had long been oppressed by the Mahomedans, but had remained Christian until 1760. In that year matters came to a crisis

The Caramanliades could stand then distress no longer. They agreed that either Christianity was not true or it ought to put them in a better position. They resolved to give it one chance more, and to try to conciliate the Divine Being by the most rigid fasts. If He did not listen to them, then they would feel assured that He did not wish them to remain Christians. The chief priest protested against the impicity of this resolution, but the Caramanliades would not listen to him. They observed Lent with the most rigorous severity, and played much. No improvement followed in their lot, and, accordingly, on Easter day, they told the priests to retire, accused the sacred images of being inefficient to their distress, and in one body went over to the faith of Islam. A very few indeed refused to join them in brotherhood, but they had to retire with the priests. At an earlier period, from 1620 to 1650, the Christian population of a part of Albania fell from 350,000 to 50,000, and to the present day a portion of the Albanians have remained firmly attached to Islamism, and have been the readiest tools in the hands of the Turkish Government, while the other portion have stood by the Greeks in their struggles for independence, and have done great and valuable service to the cause. In fact, so great was the inclination of the Greeks to adopt Mahometanism through the combined motives already mentioned that the sultans were alarmed lest they should have no tribute-paying people at all, and accordingly they began to legislate in the treatment of the sultans or subject Christians, and did much to reconcile them to their government.

Another mode in which the Greeks passed over to Islamism has been already noticed. Even before the taking of Constantinople Orkhan had ordained that the children of Christians should be taken from them, should be specially trained for military service, and should enjoy such privileges and immunities that they would feel themselves specially bound to the sultan. The practice was continued and extended by Mahomet II. Every fifth Christian child had to be surrendered to the service of the sultan. All connexion with his parents was cut off, and he was set apart and trained for warfare. In this way was formed the corps of the Janissaries. The Janissaries were not at first permitted to marry. Their ranks were constantly recruited from the Christian children. History speaks in the highest terms of the discipline and courage of this body of troops while it flourished. The Janissaries forgot altogether, if they ever knew, their homes and their hearths, and they were equally savage to Turk and Christian in their devotion to the sultan. This hateful sacrifice imposed upon the Christians gradually came to be regarded as an honour. The parents knew that their children were to be removed from the degradation of Christian slavery, and were to occupy the best positions that was open to Mahometans, and the Turks themselves so much valued the honour for their children that they bargained with the Greeks to take their children and give them for Janissaries instead of their own. A change took place at length in the composition of the Janissaries. They were allowed to marry, by degrees a position in the body became hereditary, and thence is dated the falling off of the corps. The tribute children were no longer required, and in the reign of Mahomet IV (1649-1687) the tribute ceased.

In all these instances the Greeks were practically lost to their own nation. They disappeared from the nation of Greeks and Christians and became Turks and Mahometans. At the same time we cannot help supposing that by this introduction of a new element of progress, or at any rate of restlessness, was thus introduced into the dominant race.

But the Greeks attained to positions of eminence in which they were not compelled to abandon their nationality. Between the Turks and the Greeks existed irreconcilable

differences. Not only was their religion different, but they differed widely in their social tone. There was no hope of amalgamating the two races. The Turks could only convert or exterminate the Christians. They did not venture to dream that they could convert all the Greeks by persuasion, and forcible conversion after the age of twelve was forbidden by the Koran. The only other alternative was extermination, and one of the sultans came to the resolution to destroy every Christian. But the Turks saw that such a policy was ruinous to themselves. Every Christian paid a poll tax from which every Turk was exempt. The Christians cultivated the lands for the benefit of the Turks. The Christians were the diademes of the Turks. The next best thing to extermination then was to get as much out of the Christians as possible while they came as little as possible into personal contact with them. This was the plan adopted. Immediately on the conquest of Constantinople, Mahomet spread the Turkish system of administration over the whole of Greece. The Turkish vassals received lands during their life on condition of being ready to serve in war. These had captives who received the highest of larger portions of land, and finally pashas acted as military and civil rulers of still larger portions. All these were ready to keep the Greeks in subjection, and crush every effort at rebellion, and they guaranteed the taxes to the sultan. Turkish courts of justice were also established. But Mahomet II. did not disturb the Greek modes of civil administration which he found in force. They merely became subject to his purposes, and appeal could always be made from a Greek to an Ottoman institution. Mahomet II. especially made use of the Greek clergy as his tools for keeping the Greek people quiet and submissive in paying taxes. The Greek emperor had perished in the sack of Constantinople, and the nobles had either fallen or fled or been butchered shortly after. But the Greek Church still remained. The Greek people were devoted to their church. Their quarrels with the pope had only strengthened their attachment to it. Here was an instrument that Mahomet thought might be of great use. Accordingly he made the patriarch of Constantinople the representative of the entire Greek people. He gave him privileges and honours, but he made him responsible for the conduct of the Greeks. The Greek clergy had long before taken an active part in the administration of justice. The bishops had the decision of all questions connected with marriages and wills. They were consulted by their people not merely in spiritual but in nearly all civil matters. The sultan had hold of this clerical influence through the patriarch. He practically appointed the patriarch, the patriarch appointed the bishops. All the great officials of the church thus held their positions under the sanction of the sultan, and could be removed by him. There is no doubt that patriarch and bishops and higher clergy, thus playing the humiliating part of keeping their fellow-countrymen in due subjection to the Porte, did not and could not display very high virtues. They soon contracted all the vices which defile men who have to play a double part; they were true neither to the sultan nor to the Greeks, and they were animated generally by a mean and selfish ambition. By degrees the patriarchate came to be bought from the sultan by higher and higher prices. The patriarch made up his losses by selling the bishoprics, and simony thus became universally prevalent. Notwithstanding all these drawbacks the maintenance of the Greek Church helped to keep the Greeks together, and when a better time came, the high positions which the clergy held enabled them to accomplish much for the spread of enlightenment and the awakening of true national feeling. Even in the darkest times patriarchs appeared who were capable of the greatest sacrifices for their church and nation, and in



the war of independence several of the clergy stood in the front rank. The inferior clergy throughout the whole time were true to their people, but it is they were to a large extent undisciplined, and did not maintain themselves by some hands off, they differed in no respect from the great body of the people, to whose industry and toil with the permanence of the nation is mainly due.

Another circumstance favourable to the Greeks was that the Ottomans allowed them to retain the communal system which had existed in earlier times. By this system, which, however, did not prevail in all parts of Greece, and where it did exist was not carried out always to the same extent, all the males of full age in each district elected a man who was to take special charge of local affairs. These men went by various names, such as demogerontes, gerontes, archontes, pectes, in epilogos. The Ottomans found the system highly useful. The pectes had to keep on good terms with the Turks, and were indeed frequently farmers of the taxes from the Turks. They were also often exceedingly ambitious and cruel. But they were often men of intelligence and influence, and when the war of independence broke out, some of them took a prominent part. There cannot be a doubt also that the local self government which was thus allowed to exist helped to keep up the longing for liberty and to prepare the nation for a constitutional government.

The Greeks showed their aptitude for combination and self government also in mercantile affairs. From an early period they had taken to mercantile pursuits, and their position was in many respects advantageous for trading. The Turks were not successful in trade, and indeed did not care to pursue it. They therefore willingly left it in the hands of the Greeks, and various events and circumstances had favoured them. The Turks imposed a heavier duty on goods exported or imported by Greeks than on those possessed by Turks. The result of this regulation was that the sultan saw it to be his interest to encourage Greek rather than Turkish traders, as his revenue from the former was much greater than from the latter. Various privileges were gained by the Russians for their own traders, and the Greeks were permitted to enjoy these under the Russian flag. Then, during the war which France waged against all Europe, Turkey was for a long time neutral, and the subjects of Turkey could trade where no others could. Under these and similar conditions the Greek traders spread themselves over the whole of the Mediterranean, and many of them became very wealthy. In this prosperous state of matters various Greeks combined and formed large joint stock companies. Thus the association of Anaplota, employed principally on cotton fabrics, embraced twenty-two villages. All the inhabitants of twenty-five years and upwards had a right to vote in the election of the five directors, who managed the different departments of the company's activity. The profits were divided at the end of each year according to certain rules. Similar commercial communities existed in Philippopolis, Mademochia, Calargita, Soracov, Chios, and Cydonia. Most famous among such combinations were the unions among the sailors of Hydra, Spertza, and Psara, by which those islands rose to great wealth and importance, and formed most powerful auxiliaries in the struggle for independence.

There were other positions of still greater eminence to which the Greeks rose. The Ottomans for a considerable time after the fall of Constantinople were characterized by a strong literary spirit and a desire for culture, but this spirit declined, and the pursuit of learning was left to the Greeks. But a European Government requires men of culture, if for no other purpose, at least that it may hold intercourse and enter into negotiations with the other European powers. The Ottomans felt this necessity, and accordingly in 1686 they appointed Panayotes Nicousses dragoman or

interpreter. He was succeeded in this office by Alexander Mavrocordatos, who highly distinguished himself in various political transactions of great importance. The office of dragoman became permanent, a Greek was always appointed, and thus Greeks came to have rare opportunities of influencing the sultan. Not long after the establishment of this office another was instituted, that of diaganon or interpreter to the capitan pasha or chief Turkish admiral, whose business it was to arrange all matters connected with the fleet. Still further, the Turks thought it advantageous that the northern provinces of Wallachia and Moldavia should be ruled by Greeks, and generally those who had acted as interpreters for the sultan or to the capitan pasha were appointed as warwodes or hospodars of Wallachia. These men became practically kings of these provinces, and Greeks from all parts flocked to hold offices under them. The Greeks who received these high appointments lived, when their duties did not call them away, in the part of Constantinople called Phanarion in which the patriarchate was placed, and hence they were called "Phanariots." They increased greatly in number, and at length formed a large, powerful, and wealthy community in the city of the sultan. The character of these phanariots has not been painted in bright colours by historians, but their circumstances were strongly antagonistic to the development of a high moral tone. They had above all great facility of favour of the sultan, and to stand well with the influential Turks. They could accomplish this only through double dealing and through extortion. They were also ambitious, and had no scruple as to the means employed in attaining the objects of their ambition. It is affirmed that the Wallachians and Moldavians detested their rule even worse than that of the Turks, but this can be accounted for satisfactorily by the consideration that nothing could be more humiliating than to be ruled by men who had the appearance of princes but were in reality slaves, without our supposing that their rule was more than ordinarily cruel and rapacious. And much has to be said in their favour. They had the strong Greek love of culture. They sent their sons to the best universities in Europe, and in this way the phanariots became men of great refinement and intelligence. Many of them took a distinguished place in the history of their country's literature. They also established schools everywhere, and vigorously supported those they found existing. The schools or rather colleges of Bucharest and Jassy rivalled that of Jannina in the number of able men they trained to guide and animate their country in its seasons of perplexity.

It was through these and similar instruments that the Greeks were being prepared during the Turkish and Venetian rule to struggle for their independence. Some of the Greek tribes had never been perfectly subject to the Ottomans, especially the Manots of the Peloponnese and the Sphakots of Crete. Many Greeks had led an independent life as pirates or as klephts. Piracy was indeed put down by the European Governments, but the klephts or brigands remained living on plunder of Greek and Turk alike, proud of their liberty, in their hill fastnesses. There were also in Albania, Thessaly, and Greece proper bodies of Christian warriors, called armatoli, who acted as bands of armed police, but whose actions came often to be confounded with those of the klephts. In regard to the other Greeks it must be affirmed that they were broken in spirit. Finlay asserts that they never once rose against their oppressors. Paparrhagheopolis tries to show that the very opposite was the case, but all he proves is that the Greeks were ever ready to take up arms against the Turks at the instigation of any foreign power. They rose up incited by France, by Spain, by the Venetians, and in later times they were continually rising through the secret instigations of Russia. But they never once rose of their own accord.

The reason was that they had no means of taking combined action. The great bond of sympathy which attached the various Greeks together during the 16th and 17th centuries was their religion. But a new inspiration came with the advance of culture in the end of the 18th and the beginning of the 19th century. They began to be animated by the feeling of nationality. The French Revolution roused their minds into activity, and they were ashamed that a nation which had played such a grand part in the early civilization of mankind should be the slaves of an illiterate and barbarous horde of aliens. Circumstances favoured the movement. Especially prominent amongst these was the conduct of Ali Pasha, the tyrant of Janina. This daring and successful despot conceived the idea of cutting his connection with the sultan and assuming the absolute government of Albania. His effort showed how weak the Turkish empire was, and how loosely it held together. Stimulating also was the conduct of the Suliotes, who performed prodigies of valour in their resolution to defend their homes and their liberties. A secret society was formed to make ready for a rising of the people. The people were stimulated by patriotic songs, especially those of Rhigas of Velestino, and the agents of Russia were everywhere.

Accordingly in 1821 the war for independence broke out. It would be impossible in the limits of an article like this to give a proper account of the various conflicts between Greeks and Turks, of the quarrels among the Greeks themselves, and the windings of European diplomacy in its interference in the contest. The principal events may be shortly noted. The insurrection was begun by Prince Alexander Hyspalantes, a Phanariot in the service of Russia, who had been elected head of the chief secret society (the *φύλαξ τραπεζία*). He crossed the Pithul March 6, 1821, with a few followers, and was soon joined by several men of great bravery at the head of considerable troops. But the expedition was badly managed, and in June Hyspalantes fled to Austria, having entirely failed in his object. And in all the efforts to overthrow the power of the Turks in the northern provinces the Greeks failed, though some men fought very bravely. In the Peloponnese the insurrection broke out also in March in several places, and most prominent among the first movets was Germanos, archbishop of Patras. Everywhere the Greeks drove the Turks before them, they were so successful that in January 1822 the independence of Greece was proclaimed. But they soon began to quarrel among themselves. Several assemblies were held. Mavrocordatos, one of the Phanariots, was appointed president. But the aspirants for honours and rewards were numberless, and they could not agree. Accordingly a civil war raged in 1823 and 1824, inspired by Colocotronis, a chief of klephts who attained great influence, and in 1824 another civil war of short duration, called the War of the Primates. During this period the Greek fleet was very active, and did good service. It was ably led by Miconis, a man of firm character and great skill. And he was well seconded by the intrepid Canaris, whose fire ships did immense damage to the Turkish fleet, and filled the Turkish sailors with indescribable terror. For the ravages of the Greek fleet the Turks wreaked fearful vengeance on the innocent inhabitants of the lovely island of Chios (April 1822), butchering in cold blood multitudes of its peaceful inhabitants, and carrying off others to the slave market. The savage atrocities then perpetrated caused a thrill of horror throughout the civilized world. Two years after they perpetrated similar outrages on the islands of Tenedos and Pera. The sultan now invoked the aid of Mehmet Ali, pasha of Egypt, and his stepson Ibrahim landed on the Peloponnese with a band of well-disciplined Arabs in 1824. Ibrahim carried everything before him, and the Greeks lost nearly every

place that they had acquired. Some towns offered a strong resistance, and especially famous was the siege of Missolonghi, which lasted from 27th April 1825 to 24th April 1826. Nothing could exceed the immensity and bravery displayed by Greek men and women during that siege, and their glorious deeds and sad fate attracted the attention of all Europe. The interest in the Greeks, which had been to some extent aroused by Lord Byron and other English Philhellenes in 1823, now became intense, and volunteers appeared from France and Germany as well as from England and America. Lord Cochrane was appointed admiral of the Greek fleet, and Sir Richard Church generalissimo of the land forces, but they did not prevent the capture of Athens by the Turks, 24 June 1827. Most of the European Governments had remained indifferent, or had actually discouraged the outbreak of the Greeks. Russia had disowned Hyspalantes. The monarchs of Europe were afraid that the rising of the Greeks was only another eruption of democratic feeling fostered by the French Revolution, and thought that it ought to be suppressed. But the vast masses of the people were now interested, and demanded from their Governments a more liberal treatment of Greece. Canning inaugurated in 1823, and now carried out this new policy in England. An accident came to the aid of the Greeks. The fleets of England, France, and Russia were cruising about the coasts of the Peloponnese, to prevent the Turkish fleet ravaging the Greek islands on mainland. Winter coming on, the admirals thought it more prudent to anchor in the Bay of Navarino, where the Turkish fleet lay. The Turks regarded their approach as prompted by hostile feelings and commenced firing on them, whereupon a general engagement ensued, in which the Turkish fleet was annihilated, 20th October 1827. Shortly after (18th January 1828) Capodistrias, who had been in the service of Russia, was appointed president of Greece for seven years, the French cleared the Morea of hostile Turks, and Greece was practically independent. But several years had to elapse ere affairs reached a settled condition. Capodistrias was Russian in his ideas of government, and, ruling with a high hand, gave great offence to the masses of the people, and his rule came to an untimely end by his assassination on 9th October 1831. Anarchy followed, but at length Otho of Bavaria was made king, and the protecting powers signed a convention by which the present limits were definitely assigned to the new kingdom (1832). Henceforth Greece has existed as a recognized independent kingdom. Throughout the whole of the war of independence in Greece, the people behaved with great bravery and self-sacrifice. They showed a steady adherence to the idea of liberty. They were sometimes savage in their conduct to the Turks, and barbarities occurred which stain their history. Yet on the whole the historian has much to praise and little to blame in the great mass, especially of the agricultural population. But no single man arose during the period capable of being in all respects a worthy leader. Nor can this be wondered at. All the men who took a prominent part in the movements had received their training in schools where constitutionalism was the last doctrine that was likely to be impressed on them. Several of them had been in the service of Russia, and had full faith only in arbitrary power. Many of them were Phanariots, accustomed to double dealing, ambitious and avaricious. Some of them had been brought up at the court of Ali Pasha of Janina, and had become familiar with savage acts of reckless despotism. Others had been and indeed remained during the continuance of the war chiefs of klephts, having but little respect for human life, and habituated to scenes of cruelty and plunder. Some of them also came from the Maniotes, who owed their independence to the habitual use of arms, and

who were not troubled by many scapules. It could not be expected that such men would act with great mercy or indulgence in dealing with Turks who had butchered or enslaved their kinsmen and kinswomen for generations. Even amongst the foreigners who volunteered to aid the Greeks, few if any were found of supreme ability, and after the kingdom was established the Greeks were unfortunate in the strangers who came to direct them. Otho had been brought up in a despotic court, and knew no other method of ruling. He brought along with him Bavarians, to whom he entrusted the entire power, and the Greeks had the mortification of knowing that, though their kingdom was independent, no Greek had a chance of being elevated to any ministerial office of importance. Accordingly a revolution broke out in 1835, the Bavarians were dismissed, and Otho agreed to rule through responsible ministers and a representative assembly. But he failed to fulfil his promise. Discontent reached its height in 1842, when another revolution broke out and Otho had to leave Greece. The great mass of the people longed for a constitutional monarchy, and gave a striking proof of this by electing Prince Alfred king of Greece. This choice was determined by universal suffrage, and out of 211,202 Greek citizens who voted 230,016 recorded their votes in favour of the English prince. The vote meant simply that the Greek people were tired of unconstitutional princes, and hoped that they would end their troubles if they had a prince accustomed to see parliamentary government respected and enforced. The three protecting powers—England, France, and Russia,—had however bound themselves to allow no one related to their own ruling families to become king of Greece. When the Greek people received this news, they begged England to name a king, and after several refusals England found one in Prince William of Schleswig-Holstein, son of the king of Denmark. The Greek people accepted him, and in 1843 he became king with the name of George I. Britain added the Ionian islands to his kingdom. In 1876 the ministry gave great offence to the Greek people by its unconstitutional procedure, and the king persisted in standing by it. The people, however, persevered in the use of

legitimate means to oust the ministry, the king at last prudently yielded, and thus a revolution was prevented. The effort of the Greeks to extend their boundaries is the last phase of their history, and is still in progress. In 1853 when the Crimean war broke out, the Greeks sided with the Russians, and in 1854 they made incursions into Thessaly and Epirus, but English and French troops landed at the Pireas, and forcibly put an end to the Russian alliance and to Greek ideas of acquiring additional territory. In 1866 to 1869 the Cretans struggled bravely but unsuccessfully to throw off the Turkish yoke, and become a part of the Greek kingdom. And recently when the Russians made war on the Turks the Greeks were eager to assist Thessaly and Epirus to aid their fellow-countrymen in asserting their freedom. But England interfered with the promise that Greece would gain more by maintaining a peaceful attitude. A clause in the Berlin Treaty affords a basis for the fulfilment of this promise, but the promise has still to be fulfilled. The Greeks themselves believe that with the extension of their boundaries there will be less occasion for intrigue, ministries will be more permanent, and the Greeks who now flock from all parts to the little kingdom of Greece for official employment will have a wider sphere and will be more contented.

The authorities for this section, some of which have been mentioned in the previous article, are various numbers. See, e.g., the *topography of Pamphlogopolis*, vols. v and vi, and his French work *Études de la révolution Hellénique*, Paris, vols. i, vi and vii; Hatzberg, vols. iii and iv; Karl Mühlensohn Bartholdy's *Geschichte Griechenlands von der Eroberung Konstantinopels durch die Türken im Jahr 1453 bis auf unsere Tage*, Berlin, 1844; Tappan's *History of Greece*, and the *Chronicles in his Bibliotheca Orient. Asiae*, vi, and vii; and Gervinus, *Geschichte des neunzehnten Jahrhunderts*, vols. v and vi. For the Greek Revolution, besides the four last mentioned, there are Gordon and (in modern Greek) Thakouk. There are many treatises on special portions, such as those of Thakouk, Paris, vii; Phantass, Colocotronis, Von Maurer, Pichard, Ostu, Paris, and many monographs on the history of the various islands. More recent English works are in made by Mr. Gladstone, "The Hellenic Factor in the Eastern Problem," published first in the *Contemporary Review*, and now in his *Discussions*, Freeman's *Ottoman Power in Europe*, Saigonet's *New Greece*, and "Mr Gladstone and the Greek Question," being in of *Diplomatic Sketches by an Outsider*. (J D)

### PART III—GREEK LANGUAGE

The possession of a common language was always regarded by the Greeks themselves as the most significant and important of the bonds which united the scattered members of the Hellenic nationality. Wherever there was a community speaking the Greek tongue, whether in Europe, Asia, or Africa, from Olbia on the Hypanis to Cyrene in Libya, from Salamis in Cyprus to Melos near the Pillars of Hercules, there was a portion of the Hellenic people linked to the rest by mutual intelligibility, and sharply marked off from the jabbering and inarticulate *Barbaroi* who surrounded them. The earliest written records of this speech are probably to be found in what was at the same time the most precious common possession of this great nationality, the poems that bear the name of Homer. It is possible indeed that, in the form in which they have come down to us, they are later than the fragments of the earliest elegiac and iambic poems, such as Callinus, Mimnermus, Archilochus, and Semonides of Amorgos; but it cannot be doubted that in substance they go back to an earlier date. These, however, are in a literary language,—a language which bears the most evident marks of a free combination for artistic purposes of various popular dialects, along with many reminiscences of archaic forms and usages, and not a few formations due only to false analogy. For the early history of the Greek language we are obliged to have recourse to the reconstructions of linguistic science.

#### *Origin of the Greek Language*

Comparative philology shows us that there was a time when the ancestors of the various nations which speak common what are generally known as Indo-Germanic languages had lived together and had a common speech. From the extent and character of the agreement between these various languages at the time when they first became known to us from written records, it is possible to ascertain to some extent to determine which groups remained the longest in connexion with each other, and which parted off the soonest from the common stock. Unfortunately scholars are as yet by no means at one as to the results to which this method of inquiry leads us. Schleicher, e.g., held that the agreement between the Aryan or Asiatic group of languages and the South-European (in which he includes not only Greek and Italian, but also Celtic) is closer and more significant than that between the latter and the North-European, e.g., the Teutonic and the Letto-Slavonic group. Max Müller and Joh. Schmidt maintain that the relations of the various languages are so complicated that it is impossible to establish any "genealogical

<sup>1</sup> The numerous and forcible objections to the term "Aryan" have been often pointed out, and the word finds little favour with most philologists. For the most recent defence of it see Zimmer in *Beckenberg's Beiträge*, vol. iii pp. 187-168. The name "Indo-European" is apparently, but not really, more exact.

ties," or to determine the order in which they separated from each other (see Schmidt's *Die Verwandtschaftsverhältnisse der Indogermanischen Sprachen*, Weimar, 1872). But the prevailing view is still that of Lotze, Curtius, Jolly, Fick, and Scherer, that we may with confidence assume the first division to have been that between the Aryan or Asiatic (Indo-Persian) and the European groups, and that there are sufficient points of agreement between all the European languages to warrant us in assuming that there was a period of some duration during which the European peoples remained united.

Of these points of agreement the most important are the following:

The common European language

1. The vowel *e* is found to have "split" on European soil into the three vowels *e*, *a*, *o*—that is to say, then, the numerous instances in which the European languages agree in dividing a primitive *e* into *e* or *o* when the Asiatic tongues either retain the *e* or weaken it quite independently into *i*.

2. The European *yo* in retaining a primitive *i* into *i*, while the Asiatic have retained *i*.

3. There is a large number of new words, and apparently even some new roots, common to most, if not to all, the European languages, of which no trace is to be found among the Indo-Persians.

These facts cannot be set aside by instances of agreement in inflexion or syntax between Greek and Sanskrit, for example, for it is much easier to believe that at the comparatively late date at which any European language is known to us,—and much more so, at the far later date of the earliest Celtic records,—the inflexions which they presumably once had in common with Greek had become to a large extent worn away and unrecognizable and the syntactic constructions modified, than to suppose that such numerous instances of agreement were wholly fortuitous.

The Greco-Italic language

A similar course of argument fairly leads to the presumption of a common Greco-Italic nationality. The agreement in vocabulary is still closer than that between the various members of the united European group. For instance, while the general terms for agriculture are shared not only by Greeks and Italians, but also by Latins, Celts, Slavs (though not by Indo-Persians), there are many special terms which are only found on Greek and Italian soil, the most interesting among them being perhaps the words for *wine* and *oil*. Other words, again, which are used with a more indefinite meaning by the Europeans generally are specialized and differentiated in Greco-Italic (Fick, *Vergl. Wortb.*, ii pp 1-288, Curtius's *Principles*, 230b, 234, 597, &c.) Whether we may also assume (as is done, e.g., by Professor E. Curtius, *History of Greece*, vol i p 19) that there was a common Greco-Italic law of accentuation is very doubtful, in face of the arguments advanced by Corssen in favour of a free law of accents in the earlier times, both in Greek and in Latin. It is much more probable that the rigidity of the Latin system, and the exquisite flexibility and harmony of the Greek, were developed quite separately from a more fluid state. But undoubtedly there is a far greater similarity in the inflexional system of Greek and Latin than can be established between either of these and any other member of the group.

Stages of development in inflexion

At the time when the common Indo-European unity was first broken up, the language had reached a stage of development which may be given with some confidence as follows. The steps assumed are those which have been established by Professor Curtius in his monograph, *Ein Chronolog der Indogermanischen Sprachforschung* (2d edition, Leipzig, 1873). In spite of the criticisms to which this scheme has

<sup>1</sup> See Curtius, *Über das Spaltbild des A. Lauts*, Leipzig, 1864, Fick, *Die thematische Sprachbildung der Indogermanischen Sprachen*, Göttingen, 1878, *Vergleichende Wortlehre der Indogermanischen Sprachen*, 3d edition, Göttingen, 1876, where the list of common European words fills vol i pp 471-548. Compare *Gyldenaga*, p 98.

<sup>2</sup> Schmidt's doctrine of the distinctness of the Latin and the Celtic inflexions is not now generally accepted.

been subjected, by far the most important of which are those by Max Müller and Ascoli, it may fairly be said to maintain its ground, and it is reasserted with full confidence in Curtius's admirable work on the Greek verb.

We start with the period in which roots alone were employed as words. As to the origin of these roots, philology is as yet quite unable to speak with any positiveness. All that can be said is that the imitative or onomatopoeic theory has not been proved to be capable of producing all the roots which we are compelled to postulate, while, on the other hand, no theory has been generally recognized as fit to be regarded as a serious rival. It is clear, however, that we must admit an extremely early, if not an absolutely primitive, distinction of roots into verbal and pronominal roots, i.e., (1) such combinations of sound as were significant, and carried with them a notion which was vague and general, if not philosophically abstract, and (2) such as had no meaning in themselves, but only served to denote relations.

The second stage is that of the "determination" of roots, roots wherein, by the addition of different phonetic elements, they acquired a differentiated meaning—e.g., when the very vague *yu*, "join," became *yu-g*, "join together," *yu-dh*, "join in battle" (It may here, however, be open to question whether the fuller forms were developed from the shorter by additions, or the shorter abstracted from the group of similar fuller forms, as Max Müller is rather inclined to hold).

The third stage is that of the formation of verbs, by the close combination of a verbal root with one or more pronominal roots, to denote the character of the subject of the verb. It is in the nature of this combination that we find the distinguishing feature of the Indo-Germanic stock of languages. At the same time we find (1) the "strengthening" of the vowel of the root, by the addition of the simplest vowel-sound *a*, to denote repeated or continuous as distinct from momentary action, (2) *reduplication*, originally producing the same effect, but afterwards, in a specialized form, denoting the continued result in the present of an act done in the past, (3) the *augment*, a particle, originally demonstrative in its nature, prefixed to a verb to denote that the action expressed by the verb took place at a time removed from the present, i.e., in the past. To the same stage (though possibly to a later part of it) belongs the further development of terminations, so as to mark an action as having a special reference to the subject; this produces what is in Greek conventionally called the middle voice, but what is really a reflexive formation. We may take as types of the words created during this stage such forms as *da ta*, "give there," i.e., he gives, *da-da-ta*, "he is giving," *a-da-m*, "I gave," *da-da-mai*, "I give with a view to myself."

In a fourth stage we gave the terminations of the root stems into a stem, occasioned apparently in the first instance, by the increasing need of distinguishing the noun from the verb. The earliest method of forming a stem was by the addition of a "thematic vowel" *a* to the root, to convey the notion of a continuous action, thus from *dhaw*, "carry," came *dhaw a*, "carrying." Sometimes the vowel of the root was "strengthened" along with the addition of the thematic vowel, thus *ik*, "leave," *rauk a*, "leaving." Afterwards other similar formative elements (or pronominal roots) such as *ta*, *na*, *ma*, *tra*, &c., were added to produce nominal stems of many various kinds. There is no reason to suppose that these were at first strictly differentiated in meaning, thus *par-na* is "filled" not "filling," but *na* may be taken either actively or passively, "the begotten" or "the begotten," and *ap-na* is "the bounding fever." Subsequently the instinct of language availed itself of variations in form to distinguish various relations, especially of gender. Again, when noun-stems came to be used, as the roots had previously been used, to form verbs by the addi-

tion of the personal terminations, this modification of the stem served to distinguish mood. Thus when the vowel *a* was added to a root from which a verb was already formed, the inflexions of this extended root or stem denoted an action intended to be performed, and thus acquired the force of a conjunctive mood. The addition of the vowel having thus obtained this differentiating power, it was afterwards affixed with the same force to stems already provided with *a*, the contraction of *a+a* giving *ā*, hence, just as *han ts* is "he kills," *han-a-ti*, "let him kill," so we get *bha-a-ti*, "he is carrying," *bha-ā-ti*, "let him be carrying."

Com-  
pound  
stems

In a fifth stage compound verbal forms make their appearance, *ε*, tense stems are produced by the union of primary verb-stems with the roots of verbs which have become simply auxiliary. That this must have been at a later stage than the preceding processes is clear from the fact that verbs only gradually lose their full meaning, and sink into auxiliaries. The verbs so used are (1) *ae*, originally "breaths," afterwards "be," (2) *ja*, "go," (3) *dha*, "do." From the composition of the first with a verb-stem we get forms like those of the compound or so-called first aorist—*ε* *g*, *a dik-ae-t*, "he pointed" (= *a-deu-ae-t*). Here we have the union of a root (in this case acting as a noun-stem) with the auxiliary verbs in the third person, preceded by the augment, *a dik-ae-t* is to the earlier form *a-di-a-t* much as "him decess ens" is to "him decess." These formations belong to the earliest stratum of this period, inasmuch as the stem appears in its simplest form. For a like reason we must assign to the same stratum the compounds of *ja* with the simple stem. This auxiliary is used to denote relations which were at first somewhat indefinite but were afterwards more precisely differentiated. There is (1) the present of *dication* *ε* *g*, *avd-ja-m*, "I am sweating," (2) the *passive* force thus derived, as in Sanskrit *ja* is a sign of the passive *ε* *g* *bōdh-ā-t*, "he knows," *bōdh-ja-t*, "he is known," (3) the tendency to do a thing, *ε*, the *optative* mood, as in *ae-g-ja-m*, the primitive form of *stem* (*stem*) and *ēn*. There is also to be noted, as belonging to this stage, the very important present of *dication* from the root *ae*, *ε*, *ae-jā-m*, which acquired for itself, and when affixed to roots or stems gave to them, the force of a future. With regard to the root *dha*, the widely varying force which its compounds have in the different cognate languages prevents us from determining with certainty the manner in which it was originally employed in composition (cf. Curtius, *Das Verbum*, II 352). To a second stratum of the same period must be assigned those compound verbal formations in which the stem is not a pure root, but has already been developed into a stem which has the character of a noun. If we compare, *ε* *g*, *bhā-ae-jā-m* (= *bhā-ae-ja-m*), "I sin bearing," with *avd-ja-m*, we find in the first a nominal theme employed for composition and inflexion, in the second a simple root. It is of much importance to notice that here too the verbal formation must have preceded the formation of cases. Had the accusative *bhā-ae-m* been in use, it would have been impossible not to employ it in connection with a verb-form like *ja-m*, just as the Romans said *venum dare*, *datum v*, and the like, and as Sanskrit forms the periphrastic perfect of the tenth conjugation, by uniting the auxiliary verb with the accusative—*ε* *g*, *kṛdyaṁ dātā-kṛdā*, *bodhyaṁ bodhā-ta*, *do*. We are led to the same conclusion by considering forms like *a-dik-ae-at*, by which the absence of plural inflexion is not less clearly indicated than the lack of case inflexion by *bhā-ae-jā-m*. It has been urged, *ε* *g*, by Professor Max Müller, that this argument is a weak one, because our ancestors must have felt the need for clearly distinguishing the plural from the singular, and the normative from the accusative, before the need for denoting the difference between the persons. To this it may be replied (1) that

the argument from what *must* have been is one of the most dangerous that can possibly be used in philology, conclusions *a priori* have again and again been disproved by a more complete acquaintance with the facts of the history of language, (2) that, as a fact, incompletely developed languages do find it more easy to do without distinct marks of the cases than to dispense with personal inflexions, and that this is confirmed by languages like English and French, which have returned to an uninflected state more completely in the case of nouns than in that of verbs, (3) that in the inflexion of nouns the sign of the plural is added to the case suffix and not vice versa (*ε* *g*, *λύουσιν*=*λυουσιν*=*varia m s*), so that the use of the sign of case must have preceded that of the sign of number, although the latter might have seemed to us the more indispensable. Professor Müller's argument that composition might have taken place in times subsequent to nominal inflexion, because the stem forms show themselves in certain cases of declension, and therefore might have remained present in the consciousness of those using the language, breaks down upon the essential distinction between the nature of the composition of the verbal forms in primitive times and of the construction of compound verbs within the historical period. We may therefore safely follow Curtius in holding it as at least highly probable that verbs were already inflected according to person, tense, mood, and voice at a time when nouns were still in the state either of simple roots (*ε* *g*, *πῶδ*) or nominal themes (*bha-a*, *ae-a*, *ae-m*, *ja-a*, and the like). The needs of language at this stage were probably helped out (as at present in uninflected languages) by the position of the words, by the stress of the voice, and by a free use of pronominal roots, which may have been already acquiring somewhat of a prepositional force. But one of the most important means of expression was undoubtedly composition. The form which the elements of compounds take, rarely (and apparently never in any early word) appearing with any case inflexion of the first element (as in *οὐδενόσυνα*, *διπρεφής*, *ἀμφισταφύρος*), but presenting themselves simply as stems (*λογον-γράφου*, *δε*), shows that at any rate the mould in which they were cast, the analogy on which later compounds were freely fashioned, was constructed at a time when nouns were not inflected. The various relations which the factors of the compounds bear to each other point to the same fact. We find in Greek, according to the very clear and careful statement of Curtius (*Gramm.*, §369, cf. *Elucidations*, pp 172-178) three kinds of compounds: (1) *deter minative*, in which the second factor is the principal, which, without altering its meaning, has it defined by the first, *ε* *g*, *ἀνθρώπου*=*ἀνθρωπίνος*, (2) *attributive*, where the first factor defines the second, but so as to alter its meaning, the two combining to form a new idea, *ε* *g*, *μακρό-χευ*=*μακρὰ χεῖρας ἔχων*, (3) *obvative*, in which one of the two words is grammatically governed by the other, so that in paraphrasing one of the two must be put in an oblique case, *ε* *g*, *ἡν-όχο*=*τὸ ἡνὶ ἔχειν, φίλὸς μου*=*ὁ ἐν τῷ μοίᾳ μου φίλος, ἀνὰ-λογος*=*ἀνὰ λόγον ἔχων, θεο-δραστής*=*πρὸ θεοῦ βεβλημένος, χεῖρο πάτρου*=*ε*-*χεῖρο πατρός*. (Similarly Max Müller, *Sanskrit Grammar*, §513, gives six classes of Tātpuruṣha compounds, according as the first element stands in an accusative, instrumental, dative, ablative, genitive, or locative relation to the second, with numerous examples.) Curtius justly calls attention to the epithet *παρρηθρονία* as applied in the *Odyssey* to Ægeus in relation to Orestes, "one who had slain his father." It is evident that composition, used as freely as forms like these must, could have taken very largely the place of case-inflexions.

The origin of the cases, which marks a sixth stage, presents much more difficulty than the origin of verbal flexion. But one broad division may at once be made. The voca-

nre, nominative, and accusative are connected together much more closely than the remaining cases, they coincide in the neuter gender, and no one of them ever interchanges with or becomes equivalent to any one of the other group. On the other hand, in Sanskrit the ablative often coincides with the genitive, and the locative (in the dual) with the genitive or dative, while in Greek the instrumental is replaced by the dative, in Latin by the ablative, dative and genitive coincide in the Greek dual, dative and ablative in the Latin plural, and the locative always in Latin coincides in form with genitive, dative, or ablative. The vocative may be regarded as a relic of the preceding uninflected stage. The nominative and accusative are closely connected with theme formation, and seem to have been but a new development of the same principle. From a root *swap*, "sleep," came, as has been seen, at an early stage *swap na*, "sleeping," from *lar*, "make," came *lar ta*, "made." It was only an extension of the same method when the pronominal *ta* and *wa* were added to the themes thus formed. Nominal inflexion was created as soon as it came to be recognized that the last additions were movable, and that the same stem might, according to circumstances, appear with one or the other or with neither. The fact that *wa* is found as the suffix of the nominative in some pronouns (*eg*, Sanskrit *aha-m = dyā-y*, *wa-m = wā-y*, *ka*) seems to point to a time when this was used as a determinative for nominative and accusative alike, but it soon became specialized as a characteristic of the latter. There is reason to believe that this process was facilitated, if not occasioned, by the use of the *m*-suffix to denote gender, or more strictly the absence of gender, in neuter nouns. It was only natural that the same suffix which distinguished the theme as a living being should be applied to mark it out as the subject or source of an action, while, conversely, that which denoted the absence of life should be used to mark the object. It is no improbable conjecture which finds in this accusative character of the sign of the neuter the explanation of the ordinary Greek idiom which constructs a neuter plural substantive with a singular verb, *τὰ ζῷα τρέχει*, "the animals are running." Further, the wide and varied usage of the accusative case in Greek appears to point to a time when it was the only oblique case. At a later period the second group of cases made its appearance, this includes at least the genitive, ablative, dative, locative, instrumental, and vocative. Whether we are also to regard the various terminations which appear in some adverbs, which cannot be referred to any of these, as originally case-suffixes is a question not easy to determine, and one which is, after all, rather one of terminology than of any real importance. The theory of the purely local force of the cases, attractive as it is at first sight from its simplicity, and its apparent conformity with the sound theory which bids us, in dealing with language, proceed from the concrete to the abstract, and not *vice versa*, breaks down when we come to apply it in detail. For the genitive, at any rate, it is much safer to postulate an original adjectival force, a view borne out both by striking similarity of formation in some instances (*eg*, *εἰς*, *θρηναῖον*, the earlier form of the Homeric *θρήνηον*, the Attic *θρήνη*, and *θρηνην* = "belonging to the people") and by numerous analogies from various languages. It has even been conjectured, though perhaps on inadequate grounds, that the genitive had originally the final *a*, which was dropped only when the sense of its origin became obscured. In the ablative we have apparently a use of the pronominal element *-a* corresponding to that of *-u* in the genitive, and originally in the nominative, the *a* being afterwards dropped, so that *walk-a-s = uocis* is to *walk-a-t = uocis(a)* as *ja-s = se* is to *ja-t = s d*. The syntactic force of the ablative may often be represented as adjectival; and the differentiation of the two cases may

Second  
group of  
cases

will be a product of later times. The earliest forms of the other cases, the formation of which has not hitherto been satisfactorily explained, will be pointed out below.

In the seventh period assumed by Curtius we have the *Advective periphrasis* of some forms of particular themes with case- and prepositional suffixes, which were no longer declined throughout, and thus gave rise to adverbs and prepositions. The adverbial force was undoubtedly the earlier, as we can see from indications in the Homeric poems, the prepositional force came later, first perhaps in connexion with verbs, and afterwards as governing cases. To the same period probably belongs the singularly interesting form of petrified cases presented by infinitives. These have long been recognized as cases of verbal nouns (*nomina actionis*) no longer inflected throughout. The agreement of the cognate languages in the use of this device for extending the range of language seems to be a sufficient indication that it had been introduced before the original unity broke up. At the same time the great variety of the forms actually selected by different languages as the basis of this construction is a clear proof that no well defined system of infinitives had then been brought into use.

Such were the stages by which, according to our greatest Recent living authority, that language grew which was destined to be the mother, not only of Greek and Latin, but of all the most all the tongues in which human culture has found an utterance. It is by no means impossible to reconstruct it, at least in outline, as it must have been spoken before the original unity broke up. This task has been attempted, so far as its phonetic laws and inflexional forms are concerned, by Schleicher in his well-known *Compendium der vergleichenden Grammatik der Indogermanischen Sprachen* (3d edition, Weimar, 1871), and its vocabulary has been reconstructed by Fick in his *Vergleichendes Wörterbuch* already referred to. Schleicher indeed ventured to narrate a brief story in this primitive language (Kahn's *Bardur*, vol. v pp. 206 *egy*).<sup>1</sup> On particular points he may well have been mistaken. The tendency of modern philology is to admit within the period of the united national life a fuller development than that assumed by Schleicher. Several scholars, working along different lines of research and entirely independently, have established the great probability of a bifurcation of the gutturals, and it is by no means certain that the vowel system was not already becoming more rich and varied. We have probably to admit that dialectic differences already existed, such as could hardly have existed as yet, even before the nation broke up completely, as soon as it attained any considerable magnitude. And above all it must never be forgotten that we are dealing with the products of a period to which chronological limits cannot well be fixed, but which language gives us strong reasons to believe must have been at least as long as that to which the data of other branches of anthropology appear to point. It is impossible to be sure that all the elements which are introduced were ever strictly contemporaneous. Our review of the history of the language thus far is enough to show that one form may have begun to show traces of phonetic decay at a time when another form was not yet created. Hence M. Bréal (*Mélanges*, p. 376) does well to warn us against the common error of philologists in endeavouring to get more out of the reconstructed "primitive speech" than the facts on which it is based will warrant. But used with discretion it affords a highly convenient means for stating the results to which the comparison of languages brings us.

For our present purpose it will be well to mark one intermediate stage between the source of the Greek lan-

<sup>1</sup> M. J. P. Postgate has published a similar composition (*Academy*, June 14, 1879), re-written by Mr. T. O. Shaw (ib., June 28) on the principles of Brugman and De Saussure.

Indo  
Germanic  
sounds

guage thus revealed to us and the language itself as given in its earliest records, by noting the common Græco-Italic modifications of the primitive speech.

The original sounds of Indo-Germanic speech may be conveniently tabulated thus—

	Consonants						Vowels
	Momentary			Continuous			
	Unaspirated		Aspirated	Spirant		Nasal	
Categorical Palatal Lingual Dental Labial	Surd	Sonant	Sonant	Surd	Sonant		a
	k	g	gh		j (y)		ā a
	t	c	ch	s			u
	p	b (p)	bh		ph (w)	mh	ā au

Changes in time of Græco-Italic unity

That the later sibil aspirates (*λh*, *λh*, *μh*) were developed from the sonant by the influence of the aspiration seems to have been clearly proved by the very careful researches of Curtius. The fact that while Greek has sibil (*χ*, *θ*, *φ*) the Latin representatives of the same are initially the pure aspirate (*h*) or the spirant *f* and medially the corresponding sonants (*h*, *ch*, *g*) is enough to show that they had not lost their sonant character in Græco-Italic times.

On the whole the mutas must have remained unchanged. The numerous modifications of the *z* found in Greek (*κ*, *γ*, *τ*, *ρ*) are not to be traced in Latin, and although *p* often replaces it in Oscan and Umbrian, the fact that it rarely if ever does in Latin proves that the guttural was unchanged at the time of the separation except in the way of generating a palatal *v* (*v*) or *y* (*y*).

In the same way Latin shows no trace of the change of *g* to *β*, though it has the palatal *v* which sometimes causes the loss of the *g*, thus *βlos* and *vinus* point to a Græco-Italic *gynēs*. It is doubtful whether the primitive language ever used *z* unaccompanied by the aspiration, but Greek and Latin furnish us with sufficient words agreeing in this respect—Fick quotes 25—to make it clear that this letter was so used before the separation.

If Schleicher is right in denying *z* to the primitive language—and this seems very doubtful in face of the facts collected by Curtius (*Principles*, ii 174)—there can be no doubt that this was abundantly developed by the European unity, and there seems to be no single instance of an *z* retained in Latin where Greek has *λ*, while *villus* as compared with *φωβ* is the only case of the converse. The aspirates undoubtedly remained in their full vigour.

But while the Græco-Italic consonants are on the whole the same as those of the primitive tongue, there is a highly important and significant change in the vowel-system. The original *a*, retained for the most part in Sanskrit, and modified in Zend only under conditions which make it plain that this is not a phenomenon of very ancient date there, has in Europe undergone a change in two directions. The very valuable paper by Curtius previously mentioned contains two tables, from which it clearly appears that *a*

- (1) is retained in 100 Greek and Latin words,
- (2) becomes *e* (*i*) in 102,
- (3) becomes *e* (*i*) in 50,
- (4) *a* is retained in Greek, becoming *e* (*i*) in Latin in 21,
- (5) ditto, becoming *o* (*u*) in Latin in 18,
- (6) remains in Latin, but becomes *e* in Greek in 18,
- (7) ditto, becoming *o* in Greek in 11,

while there are

- (8) 19 words in which Greek *e* (*i*) answers to Latin *o* (*u*), and
- (9) 10 in which Greek *o* answers to Latin *e* (*i*).

Hence it is abundantly plain that the "thinning" of the primitive *a* to *e* and its "dulling" to *o* must have taken place in the great majority of instances during the

Græco-Italic period. The instances of agreement are three times as numerous as those of disagreement, and most of the latter are to be ascribed to the operation of well known phonetic tendencies distinctive of the two stocks after their separation. It is worth noticing as to the other members of the European stock that, while there is a striking agreement in the cases of the retention of the *a* or of its weakening into *e*, this is not found with the third process, the dulling of *a* into *o*, it is therefore legitimate to assume that the first was common to the European family, while the second was specifically Græco-Italic. Thus the numerical order, the roots *gno*, "know," *moio*, "die," *oko*, "small," *oko* (*op*), "see," and the words *osa*, *proti-sa*, *pani-ko*, *oro* in, are all Græco-Italic but not European.

The inflexion of nouns was complete before the time of Indo-European separation of languages. We have no reason to believe, of course, that any new case form was developed either in the European unity or in any individual nation after this date. The changes are wholly in the direction of loss. The cases which can be shown to have existed, and the terminations by which they were denoted, were as follows—

	Singular	Dual	Plural
Nominative	-s	( <i>h</i> )s	( <i>h</i> )s( <i>h</i> )
Accusative	-m	( <i>h</i> )m	( <i>h</i> )m
Genitive	-s	( <i>h</i> )m s	( <i>h</i> )m s
Dative	-s	( <i>h</i> )m s	( <i>h</i> )m s
Instrumental (i)	-s	( <i>h</i> )m s	( <i>h</i> )m s
Instrumental (n)	-s	( <i>h</i> )m s	( <i>h</i> )m s
Locative	-s	( <i>h</i> )m s	( <i>h</i> )m s
Vocative	(no sign)		

In some cases these were modified according to the termination of the stem to which they were suffixed, and the stems themselves suffered phonetic adaptation to the termination. Otherwise there was no distinction of declension, except that the fuller form of the genitive was used for the most part in the case of *a*-stems.

If we examine the changes which may be assumed for Græco-Italic case is retained only in a few Greek and (possibly) Latin adverbs, so that this may be supposed to have dropped out of ordinary flexion, (2) the ablative is retained in Latin, and hence it was a Græco-Italic case, though it appears in historic Greek only in adverbs (*καλῶς*, *δύσ*, *δε*), (3) the loss of the dual in Latin makes it impossible for us to determine exactly the form of its inflexions at this period, probably they had already become worn down to something like the form in which we find them in Greek, (4) the existence of a final *o* in the nom. plur. of *o*-stems in some Italian dialects (Old Latin *equos*, Oscan *-os*, Umbrian *-as*, Oscan *fen* *-as*, Umbrian *-as*, *ar*) shows that the analogy of the nominative declension had not yet established exclusively the *as*-terminations, though these were doubtless already in use.

In the flexion of adjective pronouns there is an agreement in the nom. plur. (*ei* *roci*, *ta*, *ta*, *ta*, *ta*) which may be a Græco-Italic development, the origin of the termination being obscure.

In the declension of the personal pronouns it is to be noticed that the complete distinction of the stems used in the first and second persons plural (*duce* *hinc*, *duce* *hinc*, as compared with *nos*, *vos*) proves that the plural forms *amici*, *noxi*, and *puma*, were to which Sanskrit points as concurrently existing, were still used side by side.

The comparison of adjectives was made by the employment of the same stem suffixes (*gens* *et* *tas* and *tas*, *tam*, *et*), though a different selection became the normal one in Greek and in Latin.

The inflexion of verbs underwent far greater changes than that of nouns, after the separation, but mainly in the

way of a fuller development. In Latin, however, we must assume a very extensive replacing of earlier formations by those of later origin, for of many inflections which are shown to have been *Græco-Italic* by the coincidence of Greek and Sanskrit, there are few if any traces to be found in Latin. The following principles of verbal flexion, the chief stages of whose development we have noticed above, had been established in the parent language —

- [illegible]

The researches of Curtius on the Græco-Italic vowel-system enable us to determine with some confidence the phonetic character assumed by these inflexions. We may give as the common possession, not *bharam*, &c., but

*bhacōms, bhacēs, bhacats,*  
*bhacōmes, bhacēles, bhacōnts,*

not αλως, &c, but  
αλωι, ελωι, ελωδ, ελωις, ελωι, ελωι, ελωι, &c

Phonetic laws distinctive of Greek

It was at this stage of inflexional development, and with a stock of roots and words which can still be ascertained with some approach to completeness, that the Greek language started on its separate career and commenced its independent history. The shape which it has assumed when it first becomes known to us from literary and epigraphic records is due to the action of its characteristic laws, some purely phonetic, and some due rather to the intellectual tendencies of those who used it. Of the phonetic laws four are especially distinctive —

- 1 *Loss of Spiritants*.—This is most extensive and important in its results,  $\gamma$  has entirely disappeared from the written language, and its existence is only to be detected from isolated traces in Homer, and perhaps in some inscriptions where  $F$  is probably used to denote it,  $\epsilon$  ( $w$ ) in the form of  $F$  is found on some of the older inscriptions, and its introduction into the text of Homer is often required by the metre, but it is unknown to the ordinary written language;  $\sigma$  remains when final, and when in immediate contact with mutes, and also

when it has assimilated to itself another consonant, but before vowels it passes into the rough breathing, and between vowels it is as a rule entirely dropped. Instances of the effect of this loss of the spirants abound, as for example we may take the primitive *natayia*, which becomes *nefoja*, *veio*, *veo*, and so on.

- 3 *Salpingx* of the *Ottolinguæ* by *Zabazulov* — It has been calculated that not less than six out of every 1000 originally containing *h* or *g* present *z* or *zh* in Greek. Hence, the undiphthongized pretons (436 sing) from *sk*, *sp*, *sk*, *ap*, *antekam*, in Greek be *z* or *zh* (436 sing) from *sk*, *sp*, *sk*, *ap*, *antekam*, in Greek be *z* or *zh*.
- 4 *Lightening* of the *Salpingx* — Greek allows no consonants to end a word except *z*, *z*, *z*, and *z*, shows a marked preference for ending words in *z*, *z*, *z*, and *z*. Hence we often find one or more consonants dropping out of the end of a word in order to conform to the language in which it has to live.
- 5 *Rich Development of the Vowel System* — In this again Greek is far ahead of Latin. Latin shrank with its original vowel system, splitting the *ae* by its tendency to *e* and *i*, and the *oe* by its tendency to *e* and *i*, while Greek maintained the variety and expressiveness of its vocalization, while Greek retained the full range undiminished. Hence, Greek is far more expressive than Latin in the use of the language, it added greatly to its vocabulary, and its expressive power is shown by many examples (*Comparative Philology and Classical Scholarship*, p. 38 ff.) how easily distinctions in meaning are expressed in Greek, which are expressed far less easily in other languages.

We may notice here also the wide influences of *actarem*. This is not limited to Greek, as Schleicher showed in the essay which first set forth its importance properly, but it is more operative in Greek than in any language owing to the more complete disappearance of the *j*, which coalesces with some other consonant, usually a *d*, original, modified, or palatalized, to produce it. Thus *sad ja mat* became *ἑσμεν*, *van a-ya-ma*, *hēlon*, &c.

While these laws act naturally, and, so to say, mechanically, we must ascribe to the intellectual character of the action of the Greeks another marked feature of this language, the <sup>more</sup> <sup>verbs</sup> <sup>forms</sup> more development given to their verbal system. Strikingly new tenses were created after the separation from the Italian stock,—the future perfect, the compound pluperfect, two passive aorists, and two future passives. Besides, the whole system was worked out with wonderful exactness, so that while an ordinary Latin verb has 143 possible inflections, corresponding to 1200 in Greek, there are but 507 in some instances we can say the creative process still at work, as, *εἶναι*, in the case of the perfects in *-ειναι*, which are all but unknown to Homer.

### *The Historic Stage of Greek*

The legend of the sons of Hellen, as we find it in Apollodorus, is of course entirely destitute of historical authority; but it serves as an indication of what the Greeks felt to be a natural division of their race, and from this point of view it is largely confirmed by language. The story runs that Hellen left his kingdom to Æolus, his eldest son, while he sent forth Dorus and Xuthus, the fathers of Ion, to make conquests in different lands. We see from this that the Æolic dialect was regarded as the oldest; representative of Hellenic speech, that the Dorian came next to it, and that the Ionian, out of which the Attic subsequently sprung, was regarded as belonging properly to a later period. On the whole this view is not misleading, but it requires some qualification. In the first place this division is more satisfactory for literature than for history, the names Æolic, Doric, Ionic, and Attic cover well enough the written literature of Greece, but are hardly comprehensive enough for all the spoken dialects. These were literally innumerable,—we are told that the tiny island of Peparethus had three clearly distinct,—and they abided off one into another by

Dr. Monro  
on the  
Greeks  
1806

<sup>2</sup> In dealing with this part of the subject no attempt has been made to record the ordinary forms of inflexion as given in grammars, a knowledge of which is assumed. For the Greek alphabet reference may be made to the article *ALPHABET*, vol. 1, especially pp. 609-610. Much which is closely connected with the history of the language finds its place more properly under the head of *Literature*.









of sound which makes the ordinary course of language. e.g., *er* for *er*, *pp* for *per*, the same is possible in the instances where a simple vowel represents an initial diphthong, as in *aet*, *aeris*, *etha*, and *weat*, and in the tendency to allow *e* (*y*) to sink into *i* (*e*), e.g., *Gerachit*, *erchep*, *der*, *derer*, and the diple *erdes*, *Geris* in *erchen*, *erchig*. It is less easy to account for the change of *fu* (*du*) to *du*.

**Qualities of the Greek language.** In the New Attic the Greek language may be said to have reached its zenith of grace, expressiveness, and symmetry, and hence this is the proper place for a few remarks on the qualities which have of the Greek language. The Greek language took unvaried as a means for the expression of human thought.

In the last place we may note its purity and consequent transparency. The Greeks felt themselves to be sharply marked off from the barbarians around them, and in consequence they allowed their language to be contaminated by foreign influences. Latin seems with borrowed words, often all adapted to the grammar of the language, Greek has very few, and these almost invariably Hellenized in form. Hence the etymologist feels himself to have a firm footing in Greek, even on Italian soil. Hence so the organic structure of Greek retains its regularity, and the orthography as well established and rarely fluctuating. Then there is the phonetic harmony of the language. Dissonance was even then avoided, there is no undue predominance of consonants, as in Latin, and still more strikingly in German. The endings of the words are light, no hard consonant being adjoined, except the liquids *r* and *p* and the aspirant *s*. The lightness of the vowels, *a*, *e*, *o*, are far more common than in the heavier *u*, *i, and *y*, which do not agree so completely sharply with Latin. The abundance of diphthongs—practically less in the modern pronunciation of Greek—gives a rich variety of sound, besides supplying admissible means for the differentiation of meaning. The confusion of accents by the rule of accentuation distinct from the due marking of quantity, lost; a varied modulation to the rhythm, which the rapid utterance of the Athenians especially prevented from ever becoming wearisome. The range of different forms at the disposal of the poet, and the freedom of choice of words permitted the writer to choose the rhythmic effect most conducive to the harmony of his period. With regard again to the expressiveness of the language, the completeness of the verbal inflexion in almost various degrees of power to us is very fragmentary and but some approximation may be made from the fact that Hesiod is said to have determined the accent of 80,000 words. But the free power of word formation and composition to which this marvellous richness was largely due was no mechanical process. It sprang from the lively fancy of the most poetic of nations, a fancy which shows itself alike in the significant individual names borne by every Greek citizen, which contrast so sharply with the obscure, trivial, and stereotyped locutions of the Romans, and in the coarse and often open appellation of plants and animals. (It can be omitted that what was according to Aristotle the design of the barbarians of old, as it is of the modern scholars, the equally exact and delicate use of the particles. Of all the qualities which make Greek really untranslatable, even into German, the only one of modern languages which approaches it in this respect, perhaps the most characteristic of the "smallness" of these, any sense of speech not one of which can be neglected with impunity, while it is impossible to reproduce them all except at an expenditure of one means of expression which runs the lightness and grace of the sentence. The history of the development of the period, that device in which the symmetry of form is inseparably welded to the artistic balance of thought—a device which is found in no language which has not derived it directly or indirectly from Greece—belongs to the region of literature rather than language. But many a construction for which formal syntax finds it hard to discover a name and a class, fiction, can only be understood aright if we look upon it as the utterance of a national life unvaried in its bold and vivid flesh, delighting in variety, and showing at its will a language still firm and plastic.)*

**Pronunciation of Greek.** With regard to the pronunciation of Greek, the best modern scholars are at one as to the modern pronunciation, advocated at the revival of learning by Reuchlin, as wholly unadmissible in any earlier period. On the other hand, the current pronunciation in England is hardly more correct than the conventional pronunciation of Latin, and even the Continental pronunciation, as established by Erasmus, may be modified on many points. The vowels and consonants present no difficulty. *a*, *ā*, *η*, *ε*, *ο*, *ι*, *υ*, *ω* were undoubtedly pronounced as the corresponding vowels are now in French, German, or Italian, *ā* and *ī* were the same as *a* and *i* very nearly the German *ä*. The consonants may be pronounced as in English, *p* being however always *h*-*p*, and *f* being *dh*, while, as noted already, the aspirates *b*, *h*, *x*, *p*, *t*, *k*, *ch*. It is much more difficult to determine the pronunciation of the diphthongs. Undoubtedly they were originally strictly diphthongs, *ae*, *au*, the

two vowels were each pronounced, but in Italy simply one into the other of *ae* and the *Homeric ae*, *au* and *au*. But at an early period the diphthong pronunciation was lost, and in modern Greek the sound is given alike to *ae*, *ai*, and *au*. This cannot be correct for the Attic period, it probably began to creep in at the time of the Diadochi, or at this date began to pass into *ai*, and much later into *ai*, *au* had always the force of *oi*, and it is used even when the syllable is short. *ai* in *Bucol* *ai* was pronounced as in *ai* " *ai* " It is altogether incorrect to suppose that the diphthongs *ae*, as is done in modern Greek, were doubtless pronounced much as *ae*, but with more stress laid on the first element.

The Greeks long continued to exist in the mouths of the common history of people—but the influence of extended empire and intercourse, and especially of the commanding position which Athens held in Greek life, the centre of education and the home of science, literature, and philosophy, gave it an increasing predominance to one, the Attic dialect. The Ionic was the first to disappear, those who lost touch of this after the Peloponnesian War, the *Æolic*, and the *Doric* are found, but always in diminishing number, as late as the time of the Roman empire. But Attic took in purity as it gained in range, and now only and continuance kept essentially from the increasing influence of the East, until at last the grammarians gave the distinctive name of *κωστή διαλέκτος* to the language popularly current.

The rise of the Alexandrian school of critics gave a new stimulus to the study of literary Attic, on the other hand the vulgar speech continued its own course of false combination and assimilation from various quarters. Thus in the Roman times we may see the influence of Greek on Latin, and the influence of Latin on Greek, the purity of which was previously guarded by grammarians such as Phrynichus, (2) the common (*κωστή*) literary language, employed by such writers as Polybius and Plutarch, and (3) the popular spoken language, which much more freely admitted of dialectisms than the *κωστή*, and which may be described as Hellenistic. This is the basis of the dialect of the Septuagint and the New Testament. Of course the dividing lines cannot be sharply drawn. Of the influence belonging to this vulgar speech, we have devoted to approach as closely as possible to the standard of pure Attic, others, like Babrius, came near to the popular dialect. The peculiarities of this stage of the language consist rather in new words and new inflections than in new constructions. The former are too numerous to state here (cf. *Wina's Chamaire*, part ii pp 69-128, ed. Moulton), of the latter we may mention—

- 1 A negligent use of the moods with particles *ei*, *εἰ*, *εἰ* with a *γ* indicative, *ei* with the conjunctive *δε*, with the present indicative.
- 2 A construction of verbs with cases unknown in Attic. *εἰ*, *γ* with accusative, *εἰ* with accusative and *εἰ* with the present indicative.
- 3 The extension of the *genitive* of the infinitive (*τοῦ ποιεῖν*) beyond its original and natural limits.
- 4 The use of the conjunctive for the optative after past tenses, and the gradual decay of the latter mood, which has wholly disappeared in modern Greek (*JB*, p. 38).

Under the Greek empire, the language of literature was still based upon the Attic and often a Hellenistic imitation of Attic, and an interesting parallel might be worked out in detail between the Greek and the Latin writers of this period. But, just as in the Western empire, the popular dialect went on its way, for the most part unregarded in literature, but exerting a powerful effect upon the written language, and from time to time coming to the surface. The first writer who boldly adopted the popular dialect was Theophrastus of Eresos, a monk of Constantinople who lived under the emperor Arcadius (393-408). His language, though with some traces of the more ancient forms, is essentially modern Greek. To the same period belongs Simon Scholus, a chronicler, the first prose writer of the modern language. In the fifth century we have the romance in verse, *Didymos* and *Chrysanthe*, a work highly spoken of for imaginative power and free command of the language in its new form. The poems of Gorgias (cent. vi), Chortakos and Komninos (cent. xiv), and Gorgias (cent. xvii) suffice to show that the popular language never entirely ceased to be used as an organ of literary utterance. An epoch in the history of modern Greek is marked by the long and fruitful activity of the illustrious scholar and poet Constantine Leontides (1445-1532). He sets it as object to purify the popular dialect, not by an artificial resurrection of the ancient Attic, but by a strenuous endeavour to preserve and to render current all classical forms not wholly extinct, and to replace foreign and barbarous words by genuine Greek ones, often freshly coined for the purpose. Greece now can number poets, historians, scholars, and orators who bring forth from their native language no feeble echoes of the immortal words with which its name was made so famous by the great authors. For that concerns the formation and history of Attic, the Greek language the writings of Professor G. Otmus of Leipzig has been unvaried in some sobriety of judgment and fair mastery of all the results of modern philological science, which has been one of its most important advances. The chief are *Grundriss der*

*Græchischen Rhetorik* (5th edition, Leipzig, 1879, translated into English by A. S. Williams and E. B. England, 2 vols 1875-8), *Das Verbum der Griechischen Sprache* (vol. 1 2d edition, 1877, vol. 2 1876, English translation in one volume, 1880), *School Grammar* (8th English edition, 1876) and *Exposition of the verse* (2d English edition, 1876). The fullest storehouse of the facts of inflexion and of syntax is Fickner's *Ausführliche Grammatik* (3d edition, 1871). For the Greek dialects Ahrens's *De Græcæ Linguae Dialectis* (3 vols 1839, 1845) remains the best work, but recent discoveries have made it necessary to supplement it in many places, unsupersedeable

material for this is furnished by the series of monographs in Curtius's *Studien zu Græchischen und Lateinischen Grammatik* (10 vols Leipzig, 1868-78) and in many mathematical programmes and dissertations. Mr Murray's *Specimens of Greek Literature* (Clarendon Press, 1876) contains admirably clear and useful introductions for junior students. Burgk's *Græchische Lautlehre* (Munich, 1876) contains much that is useful, but needs to be used with caution. For modern Greek the standard works are Sophokles's *Grammatik der Griechischen Sprache* (Graz, Steiner, 1870), and Müller's *Grammatik der Griechischen Vulgar-Sprache* (Berlin, 1866). (A S W)

#### PART IV—GREEK LITERATURE

The history of Greek literature has had three great stages—the Old Literature, from the earliest times to 529 A.D., when the edict of Justinian closed the schools of pagan philosophy, the Byzantine Literature, from 529 A.D. to the taking of Constantinople by the Turks in 1453, and the Modern Literature, which may be said to have begun with the satirical poetry of Theodoros Prodromus in the 12th century.

##### SECTION I—THE OLD GREEK LITERATURE

The Old Literature, to 529 A.D., falls into three periods. I *The Early Literature*, to about 475 B.C. Epic, elegiac, iambic, and lyric poetry, the beginnings of literary prose. II *The Attic Literature*, 475-300 B.C. Tragic and comic drama, historical, oration, and philosophical prose. III *The Later Literature*, the Byzantine Literature, from 300 A.D. to 529 A.D., which may again be divided into (1) the Alexandrian period, 300-146 B.C., and (2) the Græco-Roman period, 146 B.C. to 529 A.D.

It is not the purpose of the present article to enter into details regarding particular works or the lives of their authors. These will be found in the separate articles devoted to the principal Greek writers. The object of the following pages will be to sketch the literary development as a whole, to show how its successive periods were related to each other, and to mark the dominant characteristics of each.

##### I *The Early Literature*

A process of natural growth may be traced through all the best work of the Greek genius. The Greeks were not literary imitators of foreign models, the forms of poetry and prose in which they attained to such unequalled excellence were first developed by themselves. Their literature had its roots in their political and social life, it is the spontaneous expression of that life in youth, maturity, and decay, and the order in which its several fruits are produced is not the result of accident or caprice. The series of its seasons is as much the result of natural laws as the sequence of spring, summer, and autumn. Further, the old Greek literature has a striking completeness, due to the fact that each great branch of the Hellenic race bore a characteristic part in its development. Ionians, Æolians, Dorians, in turn contributed their share. Each dialect corresponded to a certain aspect of Hellenic life and character. Each found its appropriate work.

The dialects

The Ionians on the coast of Asia Minor—a lively and genial people, delighting in adventure, and keenly sensitive to everything bright and joyous—created artistic epic poetry out of the lays in which Æolic minstrels sang of the old Achæan wars. And among the Ionians arose elegiac poetry, the first variation on the epic type. These found a fitting instrument in the harmonious Ionic dialect, the flexible utterance of a quick and versatile intelligence. The Æolians of Lesbos next created the lyric of personal passion, in which the traits of their race—its chivalrous pride, its bold but sensitive fancy—found a fitting voice in the fiery strength and tenderness of Æolic speech. The Dorians of

the Peloponnesus, Sicily, and Magna Græcia then perfected the choral lyric for festivals and religious worship, and here again an earnest faith, a strong pride in Dorian usage and renown, had an apt interpreter in the majestic and vigorous Doric. Finally, the Attic branch of the Ionian stock produced the drama, blending elements of all the other kinds, and developed an artistic literary prose in history, oratory, and philosophy. It is in the Attic literature that the Greek mind receives its most complete interpretation.

A natural affinity was felt to exist between each dialect and that species of composition for which it had been specially used. Hence the dialect of the Ionian epic poets would be adapted with more or less thoroughness even by epic or elegiac poets who were not Ionians. Thus the Athenian Hæcæus used it in epic, the Dorian Theognis in elegy, though not without alloy. Similarly, the Dorian Theocritus wrote love songs in Æolic. The Attic Tyrtæus used Doric forms for his marching songs. All the faculties and tones of the language were thus gradually brought out by the cooperation of the dialects. Old Greek literature has an essential unity—the unity of a living organism, and this unity comprehends a number of distinct types, each of which is complete in its own kind.

Extant Greek literature begins with the Homeric poems. These are works of art which imply a long period of antecedent poetical cultivation. Of the pre-Homeric poetry we have no remains, and very little knowledge. Such glimpses as we get of it connect it with two different stages in the religion of the prehistoric Hellenes. The first of these stages is that in which the agencies or forms of external nature were personified indeed, yet with the consciousness that the personal names were only symbols. Some very ancient Greek songs of which mention is made may have belonged to this stage—as the songs of Linus, Lelæmus, and Hylas. Linus, the fair youth killed by dogs, seems to be the spring passing away before Sirius. Such songs have been aptly called "songs of the seasons." The second stage is that in which the Hellenes have now definitely personified the powers which they worship. Apollo, Demeter, Dionysus, Cybele, have now become to them beings with clearly conceived attributes. To this second stage belong the hymns connected with the names of the legendary Lads, such as Ophæus, Musæus, Eumolpus, who are themselves associated with the worship of the Phryian Muses and the Attic ritual of Demeter. The songs of this early sacred poetry are not only "Thæonian"—*i.e.*, on the borders of northern Græce—but also "Phygyian" and "Carian." It belongs, that is, presumably to an age when the ancestors of the Hellenes had left the Indo-European home in central Asia, but had not yet taken full possession of the lands which were afterwards Hellenic. Some of their tribes were still in Asia, others were settling in the islands of the Ægean, others were passing through the lands on its northern shore. If there was a period when the Greeks possessed no poetry but hymns forming part of a religious ritual, it may be conjectured that it was not of long duration. Already in the *Iliad* a secular character belongs to the

marriage hymn and to the dirge for the dead, which in ancient India were chanted by the priest. The bent of the Greeks was to claim poetry and music as public joys, they would not long have suffered them to remain sacerdotal mystates. And among the earliest themes on which the lay artist in poetry was employed were probably war-ballads, sung by minstrels in the houses of the chiefs whose ancestors they celebrated.

Such war-ballads were the material from which the earliest epic poetry of Greece was constructed. By an "epic" poem the Greeks meant a narrative of heroic action in hexameter verse. The term *epic* meant at first simply "verses", it acquired its special meaning only when *epic*, lyric songs set to music, came to be distinguished from *epic* verses not set to music, but merely recited. Epic poetry is the only kind of extant Greek poetry which is older than about 700 B.C. The early epics of Greece are represented by the *Iliad* and the *Odyssey*, Hesiod, and the Homeric hymns, also by some fragments of the "Cyclic" poets.

The *Iliad*  
and the  
*Odyssey*

After the Dorian conquest of the Peloponnesus, the Achaean emigrants who settled in the north-west of Asia Minor brought with them the warlike legends of their chiefs, the Achaean heroes of old. These legends lived in the ballads of the Achaean minstrels, and from them passed southward into Ionia, where the Ionian poets gradually shaped them into higher artistic forms. Among the seven places which claimed to be the birthplace of Homer, that which has the best title is Smyrna. Homer himself is called "son of Meles"—the stream which flowed through old Smyrna, on the border between Aolia and Ionia. The tradition is significant in regard to the origin and character of the *Iliad*, for in the *Iliad* we have Achaean ballads worked up by Ionian art. A preponderance of evidence is in favour of the view that the *Odyssey* also, at least in its earliest form, was composed on the Ionian coast of Asia Minor. According to the Spartan account, Lycurgus was the first to bring to Greece a complete copy of the Homeric poems, which he had obtained from the Caepehyidae, a clan or guild of poets in Samos. A better authenticated tradition connects Athens with early attempts to preserve the chief poetical treasure of the nation. Pisistratus is said to have charged some learned men with the task of collecting all "the poems of Homer", but it is difficult to decide how much was comprehended under this last phrase, or whether the province of the commission went beyond the mere task of collecting. Nor can it be determined what exactly it was that Solon and Hipparchus respectively did for the Homeric poems. Solon, it has been thought, enacted that the poems should be recited from an authorized text (*ἐκ τοῦ ἀρχαίου*), Hipparchus, that they should be recited in a regular order (*ἐκ τοῦ ἀρχαίου*). At any rate, we know that in the 6th century B.C. a recitation of the poems of Homer was one of the established competitions at the Panathenaea, held once in four years. The reciter was called a *ῥαψωδιστής*—properly one who weaves a long, smoothly-flowing chant, then an epic poet who chants his own or another's poem. The *ῥαψωδιστής* did not, like the early minstrel, use the accompaniment of the harp, he gave the verses in a flowing recitative, bearing in his hand a branch of laurel, the symbol of Apollo's inspiration. In the 5th century B.C. we find that various Greek cities had their own editions (αἱ ὑποκείμεναι ἐκδόσεις) of the poems, for recitation at their festivals. Among these were the editions of Massilia, of Chios, and of Argos. There were also editions bearing the name of the individual editor (αἱ κατ' ἐξοχὴν)—the best known being that which Aristotle prepared for Alexander. The recension of the poems by Aristarchus (166 B.C.) became the standard one, and is probably that on which the existing text is based. The oldest Homeric MS. extant, Venetus A. of the *Iliad*,

is of the 10th century, the first printed edition of Homer was that edited by the Byzantine Demetrius Chalkondyles (Florence, 1488). The first Aldine edition appeared twelve years later.

The ancient Greeks were almost unanimous in believing that the *Iliad* and the *Odyssey* to be the work of one man, Homer, to whom they also ascribed some extant hymns, and probably much more besides. Aristotle and Aristarchus seem to have put Homer's date about 1044 B.C., Herodotus about 850 B.C. It was not till about 170 B.C. that the grammarians Hellanicus and Xenon put forward the view that Homer was the author of the *Iliad*, but not of the *Odyssey*. Those who followed them in assigning different authors to the two poems were called the Separatists (or *Chorizontes*). Aristarchus combated "the paradox of Xenon," and it does not seem to have had much acceptance in antiquity. Vico, a Neapolitan (1668-1744), seems to have been the first modern to suggest the composite authorship and oral tradition of the Homeric poems, but this was a pure conjecture in support of his theory that the names of ancient lawgivers and poets are often mere symbols. F. A. Wolf, in the *Prolegomena* to his edition (1795), was the founder of a scientific scepticism. The *Iliad*, he said (for he recognized the comparative unity and consistency of the *Odyssey*), was pieced together from many small unwritten poems by various hands, and was first committed to writing in the time of Pisistratus. This view was in harmony with the tone of German criticism at the time, it was welcomed as a new testimony to the superiority of popular poetry, springing from fresh natural sources, to elaborate works of art, and it at once found enthusiastic adherents. For the cause of Homer controversy since Wolf the reader is referred to the article HOMER. The general result has been, not to prove any precise theory of authorship, but rather to establish certain general propositions, and so far to limit the question. It is now generally admitted that the *Iliad* and the *Odyssey*, whatever their absolute or relative ages, must at least be regarded as belonging to the maturity of a poetical school in Ionia, which had gradually created an epic style. Next, it can no longer be doubted that the *Iliad* contains elements of various age and origin, the form and the matter alike show this, though we cannot with certainty point to any one group of these elements as the original nucleus around which our *Iliad* grew. Comparing the *Odyssey* with the *Iliad*, we perceive greater unity of design and of colouring, and indications of a somewhat later time, but not even here can we affirm that the poem, as we have it, is the work of one man. The Ionian school of epic produced a number of poems cyclic founded on the legends of the Trojan war, and intended as poems introductory or continuations to the *Iliad* and the *Odyssey*. The grammarian Proclus (140 A.D.) has preserved the names and subjects of some of these, but the fragments are very scanty. The *Nostos* or *Homeicard Voyages*, by Agnus of Træzen, filled up the gap of ten years between the *Iliad* and the *Odyssey*, the *Lay of Telegonus*, by Euxammon of Cyrene, continued the story of the *Odyssey* to the death of Odysseus by the hand of Telegonus, the son whom Circe bore to him. Similarly the *Cyprian Lay*, by Stasimus of Cyprus, was introductory to the *Iliad*, the *Æthiops* and the *Sack of Troy*, by Arctinus of Miletus, and the *Little Iliad*, by Lesches of Mitylene, were supplementary to it. These and many other names of lost epics—some taken also from the Theban myths—serve to show how prolific was that epic school of which only two great examples remain. The name of *epic cycle* was properly applied to a prose compilation of abstracts from these epics, pieced together in the order of the events. The compilers were called "epic" writers, and the term has now been transferred to the epic poets whom they used.

**Hesiodic** The epic poetry of Ionia celebrated the great deeds of heroes in the old days. But in Greece proper there arose another school of epics, which basied itself with religious lore and ethical precepts, especially in relation to the rural life of Boeotia. This school is represented by the name of Hesiod. The legend spoke of him as vanquishing Homer in a poetical contest at Chalcis in Euboea, and it expresses the fact that, to the old Greek mind, these two names stood for two contrasted epic types. Nothing is certainly known of his date, except that it must have been subsequent to the maturity of Ionian epics. He is conventionally placed about 850-800 B.C., but some would refer him to the early part of the 7th century B.C. His home was at Ascra, a village in a valley under Helicon, whence his father had migrated from Cyme in *Eolus* on the coast of Asia Minor. In Hesiod's *Works and Days* we have the earliest example of a didactic poem. The seasons and the labours of the Boeotian farmer are followed by a list of the days which are lucky or unlucky for work. The *Theogony*, or "Origin of the Gods," describes first how the visible order of nature arose out of chaos, next, how the gods were born. Though it never possessed the character of a sacred book, it remained a standard authority on the genealogies of the gods. So far as a corrupt and confused text warrants a judgment, the poet was piecing together—not always intelligently—the fragments of a very old cosmogonic system, using for this purpose both the hymns preserved in the temples and the myths which lived in folklore. The epic lay in 480 lines called the *Shield of Heracles*—partly imitated from the 18th book of the *Iliad*—is the work of an author or authors later than Hesiod. In the Hesiodic poetry, as represented by the *Works and Days* and the *Theogony*, we see the influence of the temple at Delphi. Hesiod recognizes the existence of *daemones*—spirits of the departed who haunt the earth as the invisible guardians of justice, and he connects the office of the poet with that of the prophet. The poet is one whom the gods have authorized to impress doctrine and practical duties on men. A religious purpose was essentially characteristic of the Hesiodic school. Its poets treated the old legends as tales of a sacred history, and not merely in the Ionian manner, as subjects of idealizing art. Such titles as the *Mosses of Cherson* and the *Lay of Melampus*, the semi-lost poems of the Hesiodic school—illustrate its ethical and its mystic tendencies.

**The Homeric Hymns** The *Homeric Hymns* form a collection of thirty-three pieces, some of them very short, in hexameter verse. Their traditional title is—*Hymns or Prayers of Homer and the Homeridae*. The second of the alternative designations is the true one. The pieces are not "hymns" used in formal worship, but "praises" or prefatory addresses (*προοίμια*) with which the rhapsodists entered in their recitations of epic poetry. The "praises" might be addressed to the presiding god of the festival, or to any local deity whom the reciter wished to honour. The pieces range in date perhaps from 750 to 500 B.C., and it is probable that the collection was formed in Attica, for the use of rhapsodists. The style is that of the Ionian or Homeric epics, but there are also several traces of the Hesiodic or Boeotian school. The five principal "hymns" are those (1) to the Delian Apollo, 1-177, (2) to the Pythian Apollo, 178 to end; (3) to Hermes, 1, (4) to Aphrodite, 1, and (5) to Demeter, 7. The hymn to the Delian Apollo, quoted by Theophrastus (in 104) as Homer's, is of peculiar interest on account of the lines describing the Ionian festival at Delos. Two celebrated pieces of a sportive kind passed under Homer's name. The *Margites*—a comic poem on one "who knew many things but knew them all badly"—is regarded by Aristotle as the earliest form of comedy, and was possibly as old as 700 B.C. Only a few lines remain. The *Battle of the Frogs and Mice* probably belongs to the decline of

Greek literature, perhaps to the 2d century B.C. About 300 verses, of it are extant.

In the *Iliad* and the *Odyssey* the personal opinions or sympathies of the poet may sometimes be conjectured, but they are not declared, or even hinted. Hesiod, indeed, sometimes gives us a glimpse of his own troubles or views. Yet Hesiod is, on the whole, essentially a prophet. The message which he delivers is not from himself, the truths which he imparts have not been discovered by his own search. He is the mouthpiece of the Delphian Apollo. Personal opinion and feeling may tinge his utterance, but they do not determine its general complexion. The egoism is a single thread, it is not the basis of the texture. Epic poetry was in Greece the foundation of all other poetry, for many centuries no other kind was generally cultivated, no other could speak to the whole people. Politically, the age was monarchical or aristocratic, intellectually, it was too simple for the analysis of thought or emotion. Kings and princes loved to hear of the great deeds of their ancestors, common men loved to hear of them too, for they had no other interest. The mind of Greece found no subject of contemplation so attractive as the walkie part of the race, or so useful as that lore which experience and tradition had bequeathed. But in the course of the 8th century B.C. the rule of hereditary princes began to disappear. Monarchy gave place to oligarchy, and the often after the intermediate phase of a tyranny. Such a change was necessarily favourable to the growth of reflection. The private citizen is no longer a mere ephebe, the Homeric hero, a unit in the dim multitude of the king-ruled folk, he gains more power of independent action, his mental horizon is widened, his life becomes fuller and more interesting. He begins to feel the need of expressing the thoughts and feelings that are stirred in him. But as yet a prose literature does not exist, the new thoughts, like the old heroic stories, must still be told in verse. The forms of verse created by this need were the Elegiac and the Iambic.

The elegiac metre is, in form, a simple variation on the dactylic epic metre, obtained by docking the second of two hexameters so as to make it a verse of five feet or measures. But the poetical capabilities of the elegiac couplet are of a wholly different kind from those of heroic verse. *Alone* seems to be the Greek form of a name given by the Carians and Lydians to a lament for the dead. This was accompanied by the soft music of the Lydian flute, which continued to be associated with Greek elegy. The non-Hellenic origin of elegy is indicated by this very fact. The flute was to the Greeks an Asiatic instrument,—string instruments were those which they made their own,—and it would hardly have been wedded by them to a species of poetry which had arisen among themselves. The early elegiac poetry of Greece was by no means confined to mourning for the dead. War, love, politics, proverbial philosophy, were in turn its themes, its choice, in fact, was the chief interest of the poet and his friends, whatever that might be at the time. It is the direct expression of the poet's own thoughts, addressed to a sympathizing society. This is its first characteristic. The second is that, even when most pathetic or most spirited, it still preserves, on the whole, the tone of conversation or of narrative. Greek elegy stops short of lyric passion. English elegy, whether funeral as in Dryden and Pope, or reflective as in Gray, is usually true to the same normal type. Roman elegy is not equally true to it, but sometimes tends to trench on the lyric province. For Roman elegy is mainly amatory or sentimental, and its masters imitated, as a rule, the early Greek elegiacs, not Tyrtæus or Theognis, but the later Alexandrian elegists, such as Callimachus or Philetas. Catullus introduced the metre to Latin literature, and used it with more fidelity than his followers to its genuine Greek inspiration.

**Iambic verse** Elegy, as we have seen, was the first slight deviation from epic. But almost at the same time another species arose which had nothing in common with epics, either in form or in spirit. This was the iambic. The word *iambos* (*upsu*), to dash or shout) was used in reference to the licensed raillery at the festivals of Demeter, it was the maiden Iambe, the myth said, who drew the first smile from the mourning goddess. The iambic metre was at first used for satire, and it was in this strain that it was chiefly employed by its earliest master of note, Archilochus of Paros (670 B.C.). But it was adapted to the expression generally of any pointed thought. Thus it was suitable to fables. Elegiac and iambic poetry both belong to the borderland between epic and lyric. While, however, elegy stands nearest to epics, iambic stands nearest to the lyric. Iambic poetry can express the personal feeling of the poet with greater intensity than elegy does, on the other hand, it has not the lyric flexibility, self-abandonment, or glow. As we see in the case of Solon, iambic verse could serve for the expression of that deeper thought, that more inward self-communing, for which the elegiac form would have been inappropriate.

But these two forms of poetry, both Ionian, the elegiac and the iambic, belong essentially to the same stage of the literature. They stand between the Ionian epics and the lyric poetry of the *Æolians* and *Dorians*. The earliest of the Greek elegists, Callinus and Tyrtaeus, use elegy to rouse a warlike spirit in smiting the foe. Archilochus too wrote warlike elegy, but used it also in other strains, as in lament for the dead. The elegy of Mimnermus is the plaintive farewell of an ease-loving Ionian to the days of Ionian freedom. In Solon elegy takes a higher range, it becomes political and ethical. Theognis represents the mature union of politics with a proverbial philosophy. Xenophanes gives a philosophic strain to elegy. With Simonides of Ceos it reverts, in an exquisite form, to its earliest destination, and becomes the vehicle of epitaph on those who fell in the Persian war. Iambic verse was used by Simonides of Amorgos, as by Archilochus, for satire,—but satire directed against classes rather than persons. Solon's iambics so far preserve the old associations of the metre that they represent the polemical or controversial side of his political poetry. Hipponax of Ephesus was another iambic satirist—using the "season" or "limping" verse, produced by substituting a spondee for an iambus in the last place. But it was not until the rise of the *Attic* drama that the full capabilities of iambic verse were seen.

**Lyric poetry** The lyric poetry of early Greece may be regarded as the final form of that effort at self-expression which in the elegiac and iambic is still incomplete. The lyric expression is deeper and more impassioned. Its intimate union with music and with the rhythmical movement of the dance gives it more of an ideal character. At the same time the continuity of the music points pauses to the voice,—pauses necessary as reliefs after a climax. Before lyric poetry could be effective, it was necessary that some progress should have been made in the art of music. The instrument used by the Greeks to accompany the voice was the four-stringed lyre, and the first great epoch in Greek music was when Terpander of Lesbos (660 B.C.), by adding three strings, gave the lyre the compass of the octave. Further improvements are ascribed to Olympus and Thaletas. By 600 B.C. Greek music had probably acquired all the powers of expression which the lyric poet could demand. The period of Greek lyric poetry may be roughly defined as from 670 to 440 B.C. Two different parts in its development were taken by the *Æolians* and the *Dorians*.

**Æolian school** The lyric poetry of the *Æolians*—especially of Lesbos—was essentially the utterance of personal feeling, and was usually intended for a single voice, not for a chorus.

Lesbos, in the 7th century B.C., had attained some moral and commercial importance. But the strife of oligarchy and democracy was acute; the Lesbian public was often driven by revolution to exchange their luxurious home-life for the hardships of exile. It is such a life of conflicts and events, working on a sensuous and busy temperament, that is reflected in the fragments of *Æolians*. In these glimpses of war and love, of anxiety for the storm-tossed state and of careless festivity, there is much of the cavalier spirit, if Archilochus is in certain aspects a Greek Byron, Alcaeus might be compared to Lovelace. The other great representative of the *Æolian* lyric is Sappho, the only woman of Greek race who is known to have possessed poetic genius of the first order. Intensity and melody are the characteristics of the fragments that remain to us. Probably no poet ever surpassed Sappho as an interpreter of passion in exquisitely subtle harmonies of form and sound. Anacreon of Teos, in Ionia, may be classed with the *Æolian* lyricists in so far as the matter and form of his work resembled theirs, though the dialect in which he wrote was mainly the Ionian. A few fragments remain from his hymns to the gods, from love-poems and festive songs. The collection of sixty short pieces, which passes current under his name dates only from the 10th century. The short poems which it comprises are of various age and authorship,—all of them probably of the Christian era. They have not the pure style, the flexible grace, or the sweetness of the classical fragments, but the verse, though somewhat mechanical, are often pretty.

The *Dorian* lyric poetry, in contrast with the *Æolian*, had <sup>more of a public than of a personal character, and was for school</sup> the most part choral. Hymns or choruses for the public worship of the gods, and odes to be sung at festivals on occasions of public interest, were its characteristic forms. Its central inspiration was the pride of the Dorians in the Dorian past, in their traditions of worship, government, and social usage. The history of the *Dorian* lyric poetry does not present us with vivid expressions of personal character, like those of Alcaeus and Sappho, but rather with a series of artists whose names are associated with improvements of form. Thus Alcaeus (660 B.C.) is said to have introduced the balanced movement of strophes and antistrophes. Stesichorus, of Himera in Sicily, added the epode, sung by the chorus while stationary after these movements. Anon gave a finished form to the choral hymn ("dithyramb") in honour of Dionysus, and organized the "cyclic" or *cyclicus* chorus which sung at the altar.

The culmination of the lyric poetry is marked by two <sup>great names, Simonides and Pindar. Simonides was an</sup> <sup>and Pindar</sup> Simonides was an Ionian of the island of Ceos, but his lyrics belonged by form to the choral *Dorian* school. Many of his subjects were taken from the events of the Persian war, his epithets on those who fell at Thermopylae and Salamis were celebrated. In him the lyric art of the Dorians is interpreted by Ionian genius, and Athens—where part of his life was passed—is the point at which they meet. Simonides is the first Greek lyric whose significance is not merely *Æolian* or *Dorian* but Panhellenic. The same character belongs even more completely to his younger contemporary Pindar, who was born in Boeotia of a Dorian stock, thus, as Ionian and Dorian elements meet in Simonides, so Dorian and *Æolian* elements meet in Pindar. Simonides was perhaps the most tender and most exquisite of the lyric poets. Pindar was the boldest, the most fervid, and the most sublime. His extant fragments represent almost every branch of the lyric art. But he is known to us mainly by forty-four *Epinicia*, or odes of victory, for the *Æolian*, Pythian, Nemean, and Isthmian festivals. The general characteristic of the treatment is that the particular victory is made the occasion of introducing heroic legends connected



with the family or city of the victor, and of inculcating the moral lessons which they teach. No Greek lyric poetry can be completely appreciated apart from the music, now lost, to which it was set. Pindar's odes were, further, essentially occasional poems, they abound in allusions of which the effect is partly or wholly lost on us, and the glories which they celebrate belong to a life which we can but imperfectly realize. Of all the great Greek poets, Pindar is perhaps the one to whom it is hardest for us to do justice, yet we can at least recognize his splendour of imagination, his strong rapidity, and his soaring flight.

## II. The Attic Literature

The Ionians of Asia Minor, the Eolians, and the Dorians had now performed their special parts in the development of Greek literature. Epic poetry had interpreted the heroic legends of valiant deeds done by Zeus-nourished kings and chiefs. Then, as the individual life became more and more, elegant and lyric poetry had become the social expression of that life in all its varied interests and feelings. Lastly, lyric poetry had arisen to satisfy a twofold need—to be the more intense utterance of personal emotion, or to give choral voice, at stirring moments, to the faith or fame, the triumph or the sorrow, of a city or a race. A new form of poetry was now to be created, with elements borrowed from all the rest. And this was to be achieved by the people of Attica, in whose character and language the distinctive traits of an Ionian descent were tempered with some of the best qualities of the Dorian stock.

The drama arose from the festivals of Dionysus, the god of wine, which were held at intervals from the beginning of winter to the beginning of spring. A troop of rustic worshippers would gather around the altar of the god, and sing a hymn in his honour, telling of his victories or sufferings in his progress over the earth. Tragedy "Tragedy" meant "the goat-song," a goat being sacrificed to Dionysus before the hymn was sung. "Comedy," "the village-song," is the same hymn regarded as an occasion for rustic jest. Then the leader of the chorus would assume the part of a messenger from Dionysus, or even that of the god himself, and recite an adventure to the worshippers, who made choral response. The next step was to arrange a dialogue between the leader (*coryphæus*) and one chosen member of the chorus, hence called "the answerer" (*hypocritas*, afterwards the ordinary word for "actor"). This last improvement is ascribed to the Attic Thespis (about 536 B.C.). The elements of drama were now ready. The choral hymn to Dionysus (the "dithyramb") had received an austere form from the Dorians, dialogue, though only between the leader of the chorus and a single actor, had been introduced in Attica. Phrynichus, an Athenian, celebrated in this manner some events of the Persian wars, but in his "drama" there was still only one actor.

Æschylus (born 525 B.C.) became the real founder of tragedy by introducing a second actor, and thus rendering the dialogue independent of the chorus. At the same time the choral song—hitherto the principal part of the performance—became subordinate to the dialogue, and drama was mature. Æschylus is also said to have made various improvements of detail in costume and the like, and it was early in his career that the theatre of Dionysus under the acropolis was commenced—the first permanent home of Greek drama, in place of the temporary wooden platforms which had hitherto been used. The system of the "trilogy" and the "tetralogy" is further ascribed to Æschylus,—"the trilogy" being properly a series of three tragedies connected in subject, such as the *Agamemnon*, *Choephori*, *Eumenides*, which together form the *Orestes*, or Story of Orestes. The "tetralogy" is such a triad with a "satyric drama" added—that is, a drama in which "satyrs,"

the grotesque woodland beings who attended on Dionysus, formed the chorus, as in the earlier dithyramb from which drama sprang. The *Cyclops* of Euripides is a satyric drama. In the seven tragedies which alone remain of the seventy which Æschylus is said to have composed, the forms of kings and heroes have a grandeur which is truly Homeric, there is a spirit of Panhellenic patriotism such as the Persian wars in which he fought might well quicken in a soldier-poet, and, pervading all, there is a strain of speculative thought which seeks to reconcile the apparent conflicts between the gods of heaven and of the underworld by the doctrine that both alike, constrained by necessity, are working out the law of righteousness. Sophocles, who was born thirty years after Sophocles Æschylus (495 B.C.), is the most perfect artist of the ancient drama. No one before or after him gave to Greek tragedy so high a degree of ideal beauty, or approximated so finely the possibilities and the limitations of its sphere. He excels especially in drawing character, his *Antigone*, his *Orestes*, his *Electra*—indeed, all the chief persons of his dramas—are typical studies in the great primary emotions of human nature. He gave a free scope to tragic dialogue by adding a third actor, and in one of his later plays, the *Adulterers at Colonus*, a fourth actor is required. From the time when he won the tragic prize against Æschylus in 468 to his death in 405 B.C. he was the favourite dramatist of Athens, and for us he is not only a great dramatist, but the most spiritual representative of the age of Pericles. The distinctive interest of Euripides is of another kind. He was only fifteen years younger than Sophocles, but when he entered on his poetical career, the ideal inspirations of tragedy were already failing. Euripides marks a period of transition in the tragic art, and is, in fact, the mediator between the classical and the romantic drama. The myths and traditions with which the elder dramatists had dealt no longer commanded an unquestioning faith. Euripides himself was imbued with the new intellectual scepticism of the day, and the speculative views which were conflicting in his own mind are reflected in his plays. He had much picturesque and pathetic power, he was a master of expression, and he shows ingenuity in devising fresh resources for tragedy—especially in his management of the choral songs. Æschylus is Panhellenic, Sophocles is Athenian, Euripides is cosmopolitan. He stands nearer to the modern world than either of his predecessors, and though with him Attic tragedy loses its highest beauty, it acquires new elements of familiar human interest.

In Attica, as in England, a period of rather less than fifty years sufficed for the complete development of the tragic art. The two distinctive characteristics of Athenian drama are its originality and its abundance. The Greeks of Attica were not the only inventors of drama, but they were the first people who made drama a complete work of art. And the great tragic poets of Attica were remarkably prolific. Æschylus was the reputed author of 70 tragedies, Sophocles of 113, Euripides of 92, and there were others whose productiveness was equally great.

Comedy represented the lighter side, as tragedy the Comedy grave side, of the Dionysian worship, it was the joy of spring following the gloom of winter. The process of growth was nearly the same as in tragedy, but the Dorians, not the Ionians of Attica, were the first who added dialogue to the comic chorus. Saxonas, a Dorian of Megara, exhibited about 680 B.C. pieces of the kind known as "Megarian farces." The more artistic form of comedy seems, however, to have been developed in Attica. The greatest names before Aristophanes are those of Cratinus and Eupolis, but from about 470 B.C. there seems to have been a continuous succession of comic dramatists. Aristophanes came forward as a comic poet in 427 B.C., and Aristophanes attained his popularity for about forty years. He presents

a perhaps unique union of bold fancy, exquisite humour, critical acumen, and lyrical power. His cleverest satirical comedies may be divided into three groups, according as the licence of political satire becomes more and more restricted. In the *Alkistades*, *Knights*, *Clouds*, *Wasps*, and *Peace* (425-411) the poet uses unrestrained freedom. In the *Birds*, *Lysistrata*, *Thesmophoriazuse*, and *Frogs* (414-405) a greater reserve may be perceived. Lastly, in the *Eubulianae* and the *Plutus* (392-388) personal satire is almost wholly avoided. The same general tendency continued. The so-called "Middle Comedy" (390-320) represents the transition from the Old Comedy, or political satire, to satire of a literary or social nature. The "New Comedy" (320-260) resembled the modern "comedy of manners." These successive periods cannot be sharply or precisely marked off. The change which gradually passed over the comic drama was simply the reflexion of the change which passed over the political and social life of Athens. The Old Comedy, as we see it in the earlier plays of Aristophanes, was probably the most powerful engine of public criticism that has ever existed in any community. Unsparring personality was its essence. The comic poet used this recognized right on an occasion at once festive and sacred, in a society where every man of any note was known by name and sight to the rest. The same thousands who heard a policy or a character denounced or lauded in the theatre might be required to pass sentence on it in the popular assembly, in the courts of law.

Literary prose

The development of Greek poetry had been completed before a prose literature had begun to exist. The earliest name in extant Greek prose literature is that of Herodotus, and, when he wrote, the Attic drama had already passed its prime. There had been, indeed, writers of prose before Herodotus, but those had not been, in the proper sense of the term, a prose literature. The cause of this comparatively late origin of Greek literary prose is independent of the question as to the time at which the art of writing began to be generally used for literary purposes. Epic poetry exercised for a very long period a sovereign spell over the Greek mind. In it was deposited all that the race possessed of history, theology, philosophy, oratory. Even after an age of reflexion had begun, elegant poetry, the first offshoot of epic, was, with iambic verse, the vehicle of much which among other races would have been committed to prose. The basis of Greek culture was essentially poetical. A political cause worked in the same direction. In the Eastern monarchies the king was the centre of all, and the royal records afforded the elements of history from a remote date. The Greek nation was broken up into small states, each busied with its own affairs and its own men. It was the collision between the Greek and the barbarian world which first provided a national subject for a Greek historian. The work of Herodotus, in its relation to Greek prose, is so far analogous to the *Iliad* in its relation to Greek poetry, that it is the earliest work of art, and that it bears a Panhellenic stamp.

Early prose writers

The sense and the degree in which Herodotus was original may be inferred from what is known of earlier prose-writers. For about a century before Herodotus there had been a series of writers in philosophy, mythology, geography, and history. The earliest, or among the earliest, of the philosophical writers were Pherecydes of Syros (560 B.C.) and the Ionian Anaximenes and Anaximander. The Ionian writers, especially called *logographers*, "gatherers in prose" (as distinguished from *poetæ*, makers of verse), were those who compiled the myths, especially in genealogies, or who described foreign countries, their physical features, usages, and traditions. Hecataeus of Miletus (500 B.C.) is the best-known representative of the *logographers* in both these branches. Hel-

lanicus of Mitylene (450 B.C.), among whose works was a history of Attica, appears to have made a nearer approach to the character of a systematic historian.

Herodotus was born in 484 B.C., and his history was probably not completed before the beginning of the Peloponnesian War (431 B.C.). His subject is the struggle between Greece and Asia, which he deduces from the legendary rape of the Argive Io by Prometheus, and traces down to the final victory of the Greeks over the invading host of Xerxes. His literary kinship with the historical or geographical writers who had preceded him is seen mainly in two things. First, though he draws a line between the mythological and the historical age, he still holds that myths, as such, are worthy to be reported, and that in certain cases it is part of his duty to report them. Secondly, he follows the example of such writers as Hecataeus in describing the natural and social features of countries. He seeks to combine the part of the geographer or intelligent traveller with his proper part as historian. But when we turn from these minor traits to the larger aspects of his work, Herodotus stands forth as an artist whose conception and whose method were his own. His history has an epic unity. Various as are the subordinate parts, the action narrated is one, great and complete, and the unity is due to this that Herodotus refers all events of human history to the principle of divine retributions. If Sophocles had told the story of Cædrys in the *Edipus Tyrannus* alone, and had not added to it the *Edipus at Colonus*, it would have been comparable to the story of Xerxes as told by Herodotus. Great as an artist, great too in the largeness of his historical conception, Herodotus fails chiefly by lack of insight into political cause and effect, and by a general silence in regard to the history of political institutions. Both his strength and his weakness are seen most clearly when he is contrasted with that other historian who was strictly his contemporary, and who yet seems divided from him by centuries.

Thucydides was only thirteen years younger than Herodotus, but the intellectual space between the two dates is so great that they seem to belong to different ages. Herodotus is the first artist in historical writing; Thucydides is the first thinker. Herodotus interweaves two threads of causation—human agency, represented by the good or bad qualities of men, and divine agency, represented by the vigilance of the gods on behalf of justice. Thucydides concentrates his attention on the human agency (without, however, denying the other), and strives to trace its exact course. The subject of Thucydides is the Peloponnesian War. In resolving to write its history, he was moved, he says, by these considerations. It was probably the greatest movement which had ever affected Hellas collectively. It was possible for him as a contemporary to record it with approximate accuracy. And this record was likely to have a general value, over and above its particular interest as a record, seeing that the political future was likely to resemble the political past. This is what Thucydides means when he calls his work "a possession for ever." The speeches which he ascribes to the persons of the history are, as regards form, his own essays in rhetoric of the school to which Antiphon belongs. As regards matter, they are always so far dramatic that the thoughts and sentiments are such as he conceived possible for the supposed speaker. Thucydides abstains, as a rule, from moral comment, but he tells his story as no one could have told it who did not profoundly feel its tragic force, and his general claims to the merit of impartiality is not invalidated by the possible exceptions—difficultly to estimate—in the cases of Cleon and Hyperbolsus.

Strong as is the contrast between Herodotus and Xenophon, Thucydides, their works have yet a character which dis-

tinguish both alike from the historical work of Xenophon in the *Anabasis*, and the *Hellenica*. Herodotus gives us a vivid drama with the unity of an epic. Thucydides takes a great chapter of contemporary history and traces the causes which are at work throughout it, so as to give the whole a scientific unity. Xenophon has not the grasp either of the dramatist or of the philosopher. His work does not possess the highest unity either of art or of science. The true distinction of Xenophon consists in his thorough combination of the practical with the literary character. He was an accomplished soldier, who had done and seen much. He was also a good writer, who could make a story both clear and lively. But the several parts of the story are not grouped around any central idea, such as a divine Nemesis, as for Herodotus, or such as Thucydides finds in the nature of political man. The seven books of the *Hellenica* form a supplement to the history of Thucydides, beginning in 411 and going down to 362 B.C. The chief blot on the *Hellenica* is the author's partiality to Sparta, and in particular to Agesilaus. Some of the greatest achievements of Epaminondas and Pelopidas are passed over in silence. On the whole, Xenophon is perhaps seen at his best in his narrative of the *Retreat of the Ten Thousand*—a subject which exactly suits him. *The Cyropaedia* is a romance of little historical worth, but with many good passages. *The Recollections of Socrates*, on the other hand, derive their principal value from their uniformly matter-of-fact. In his minor pieces on various subjects Xenophon appears as the earliest essayist. It may be noted that one of the essays erroneously ascribed to him—that *On the Athenian Policy*—is probably the oldest specimen in existence of literary Attic prose.

**Oratory.** The steps by which an Attic prose style was developed, and the principal forms which it assumed, can be traced most clearly in the Attic orators. Every Athenian citizen who aspired to take part in the affairs of the city, or even to be qualified for self-defence before a law court, required to have some degree of skill in public speaking, and an Athenian audience looked upon public debate, whether political or forensic, as a competitive test of proficiency in a fine art. Hence the speaker, no less than the writer, was necessarily a student of finished expression, and oratory had a more direct influence on the general structure of literary prose than has ever perhaps been the case elsewhere. A systematic rhetoric took its rise in Sicily, where Corax of Syracuse (466 B.C.) devised his *Art of Words* to assist those who were pleading before the law-courts, and it was brought to Athens by his disciple Tisias. The teaching of the Sophists, again, directed attention, though in a superficial and imperfect way, to the elements of grammar and logic, and Gorgias of Leontini—whose declamation, however turgid, must have been striking—gave an impulse at Athens to the taste for elaborate rhetorical brilliancy.

**The Attic orators.** Antiphon represents the earliest, and what has been called the grand, style of Attic prose, its chief characteristics are a grave, dignified movement, a frequent emphasis on verbal contrasts, and a certain austere elevation. The interest of Andocides is mainly historical, but he has graphic power. Lysias, the representative of the "plain style," breaks through the rigid mannerism of the elder school, and uses the language of daily life with an ease and grace which, though the result of study, does not betray their art. He is, in his own way, the canon of an Attic style, and his speeches, written for others, exhibit also a high degree of dramatic skill. Isocrates, whose manner may be regarded as intermediate between that of Antiphon and that of Lysias, wrote for readers rather than for hearers. The type of literary prose which he founded is distinguished by ample periods, by studied smoothness, and by the temperate use of rhetorical ornament. From the middle of the 4th century B.C. the

Isocratic style of prose became general in Greek literature. From the school of Rhodes, in which it became more florid, it passed to Cicero, and through him it has helped to shape the literary prose of the modern world. The speeches of Lysias in all cases are interesting,—apart from their bearing on Attic life,—because in them we see, as Dionysius says, "the seeds and the beginnings" of that technical mastery in rhetorical argument which Demosthenes carries to perfection. Lysias has also, in a degree, some of the qualities of Lysias. Demosthenes vessels all other Demosthenes of Greek prose not only in power but in variety, his political speeches, his orations in public or private causes, show his consummate and versatile command over all the resources of the language. In him the development of Attic prose is completed, and the best elements in each of its earlier phases are united. The modern world can more easily appreciate Demosthenes as a great natural orator than as an elaborate artist. But, in order to apprehend his place in the history of Attic prose, we must remember that the ancients felt him to be both, and that he was even reproached by detractors with excessive study of effect. *Aschines* is the most theatrical of the Greek orators, he is vehement, and often brilliant, but seldom persuasive. Hyperides was, after Demosthenes, probably the most effective, he had much of the grace of Lysias, but also a wit, a fire, and a pathos which were his own. The one oration of Lysias which remains to us is a masterly and subtle, reminding us both of Antiphon and of Isocrates. Demades was merely a bad imitator of Demosthenes. There seems more reason to regret that Demades is not represented by larger fragments. The decline of Attic oratory may be dated from Demetrius of Phalerum (318 B.C.), the pupil of Aristotle. Cicero names him as the first who impaired the vigour of the earlier eloquence, "pretending his own sweetness to the weight and dignity of his predecessors."

The place of Plato in the history of Greek literature is unique as his place in the history of Greek thought. His literary genius shown in the dialogues is many-sided. It includes dramatic power, remarkable skill in parody, a subtle faculty of satire, and, generally, a command over the finest tones of language. In passages of continuous exposition, where the argument rises into the higher regions of discussion, Plato's prose takes a more decidedly poetical colouring—never florid or sentimental, however, but lofty and austere. In Plato's later works—such, for instance, as the *Lysis*, *Timæus*, *Cratylus*—we can perceive that his style did not remain unaffected by the smooth literary prose which contemporary writers had developed. Aristotle's influence on the form of Attic prose literature would probably have been considerable if his *Rhetoric* had been published while Attic oratory had still a vigorous life before it. But in this, as in other departments of mental effort, it was Aristotle's lot to set in order what the Greek intellect had done in this creative period which had now come to an end. His own chief contribution to the original achievements of the race was the most fitting one that could have been made by him in whose lifetime they were closed. He bequeathed an instrument by which analysis could be carried further, he founded a science of reasoning, and left those who followed him to apply it in all those provinces of knowledge which he had mapped out. Theophrastus, his pupil and his successor in the Lyceum, opens the new age of research and scientific classification with his extant works on botany, but is better known to modern readers by his lively *Characters*, the prototypes of such sketches in our own literature as those of Hall, Overbury, and Laible.

### III The Literature of the Decline

The period of decadence in Greek literature begins with the extinction of free political life in the Greek cities. So

Character  
of creative  
age in  
Greek  
literature

long as the Greek commonwealths were independent and vigorous, Greek life rested on the identity of the man with the citizen. The city was the highest unit of social organization, the whole training and character of the man was viewed relatively to his membership of the city. The market-place, the assembly, the theatre, were places of frequent meeting, where the sense of citizenship was quickened, where common standards of opinion or feeling were formed. Poetry, music, sculpture, literature, art, in all their forms, were matters of public interest. Every citizen had some degree of acquaintance with them, and was in some measure capable of judging them. The poet and the musician, the historian and the sculptor, did not live a life of studious seclusion or engrossing professional work. They were, as a rule, in full sympathy with the practical interests of their time. Their art, whatever its form might be, was the concentrated and ennobled expression of their political existence. Æschylus breathed into tragedy the inspiration of one who had himself fought the great fight of national liberation. Sophocles was the colleague of Pericles in a high military command. Thucydides describes the operations of the Peloponnesian War with the practical knowledge of one who had been in charge of a fleet. Ictinus and Phidias gave shape in stone, not to mere visions of the studio, but to the more glorious, because more real and vivid, perceptions which had been quickened in them by a living communion with the Athenian spirit, by a daily contemplation of Athenian greatness, in the theatre where tragic poets idealized the legends of the past, in the councils where every citizen had his vote on the policy of the state, or in that free and gaudious society, full of beauty, yet exempt from voracious constraint, which belonged to the age of Pericles. The tribunal which judged these works of literature or art was such as was best fitted to preserve the favourable conditions under which they arose. Criticism was not in the hands of a literary clique or of a social caste. The influence of jealousy or malevolence, and the more fatal influence of affection, had little power to affect the verdict. The verdict was pronounced by the whole body of the citizens. The success or failure of a tragedy was decided, not by the minor circumstances that it gained the first or second prize, but by the collective opinion of the citizens assembled in the theatre of Dionysus. A work of architecture or sculpture was approved or condemned, not by the sentence of a few whom the multitude blindly followed, but by the general judgment of some twenty thousand persons, each of whom was in some degree qualified by education and by habit to form an independent estimate. The artist worked for all his fellow-citizens, and knew that he would be judged by all. The soul of his work was the fresh and living inspiration of nature, it was the ennobled expression of his own life, and the public opinion before which it came was free, intelligent, and sincere.

The transition to  
Hellenism

Philip of Macedon did not take away the municipal independence of the Greek cities, but he dealt a death-blow to the old political life. The Athenian poet, historian, artist, might still do good work, but he could never again have that which used to be the very mainspring of all such activity,—the daily experience and consciousness of participation in the affairs of an independent state. He could no longer breathe the invigorating air of constitutional freedom, or of the social intercourse to which that freedom lent dignity as well as grace. Then came Alexander's conquests, Greek civilization was diffused over Asia and the East by means of Greek colonies in which Asiatic and Greek elements were mingled. The life of such settlements, under the monarchies into which Alexander's empire broke up, could not be animated by the spirit of the Greek commonwealths in the old days of political freedom. But the ex-

ternals of Greek life were there,—the temples, the statues, the theatres, the poetries. Ceremonies and festivals were conducted in the Greek manner. In private life Greek usages prevailed. Greek was the language most used, Greek books were in demand. The mixture of races would always in some measure distinguish even the outward life of such a community from that of a pure Greek state, and the facility with which Greek civilization was adopted would vary in different places. Syria, for example, was rapidly and completely Hellenized. Judæa remained the process to the last. In Egypt a Greek aristocracy of office, both, and intellect existed side by side with a distinct native life. But, viewed in its broadest aspect, this new civilization may be called Hellenism. As *Hellenism* means "to do like a Hellenic," Hellenism means the adoption of Hellenic ways, and it is properly applied to a civilization, generally Hellenic in external things, pervading people not necessarily or exclusively Hellenic by race. What the Hellenic literature was to Hellas, that the Hellenistic literature was to Hellenism. The literature of Hellenism has the Hellenic form without the Hellenic soul. The literature of Hellas was creative, the literature of Hellenism is derivative.

1 Alexandria was the centre of Greek intellectual activity from Alexander to Augustus. Its "Museum" or academy, college, and its library, both founded by the first Ptolemy (Soter), gave it such attractions for learned men as no other city could rival. The labours of so much an arrangement are those which characterize the Alexandrian period. Even in its poetry spontaneous motive was replaced by *artificial* poetry (Soter), as in the hymns, epigrams, and elegies of Callimachus, in the enigmatic verses of Lycophron, in the highly finished epic of Apollonius Rhodius, and in the varied love, astronomical or medical, of Aratus and Nicander. The pastoral poetry of the age—Donian by origin—was the most pleasing, for this, if it is to please at all, must have its spring in the contemplation of nature. Theocritus is not exempt from the artificialism of the Hellenizing literature, but his true sense of natural beauty entitles him to a place in the first rank of pastoral poets. Bion of Ionia and Moschus of Syracuse also claim by the music and often by the pathos of their bucolic verse. But it is not for its poetry of any kind that this period of Greek literature is memorable. Its true work was in erudition and science. Aristarchus (156 B.C.), the greatest in a long line of Alexandrian critics, set the example of a more thorough method in revising and interpreting the ancient texts, and may in this sense be said to have become the founder of scientific scholarship. The critical studies of Alexandria, carried on by the followers of Aristarchus, gradually formed the basis for a science of grammar. Translation was another province of work which employed the learned of Alexandria,—where the Septuagint version of the Old Testament was begun, probably about 300–250 B.C. Chronology was treated scientifically by Eratosthenes, and was combined with history by Manetho in his chronicles of Egypt, and by Berossus in his chronicles of Chaldaea. Eudæus was at Alexandria in the reign of Ptolemy Soter. The general results of the Alexandrian period might perhaps be stated thus. Alexandria produced a few eminent men of science, some learned poets (in a few cases, of great literary merit), and many able scholars. The preservation of the best Greek literature was due chiefly to the unremitting care of the Alexandrian critics, whose appreciation of it partly compensated for the decay of the old Greek perceptions in literature and art, and who did their utmost to hand it down in a form as free as possible from the errors of copyists. On the whole, the patronage of letters by the Ptolemies had probably as large a measure of success as was possible under the existing conditions, and it was afforded at a time when there was special danger that a true literary tradition might die out of the world.

The  
Greco-  
Roman  
period

2 The Greco-Roman period in the literature of Hellenism may be dated from the Roman subjugation of Greece ("Greece made a captive of the rough conqueror," but) did not follow from this intellectual conquest that Athens became once more the intellectual centre of the world. Under the empire, indeed, the university of Athens long enjoyed a pre-eminent reputation. But Rome gradually became the point to which the greatest works in every kind were drawn. Greek literature had already made a home there before the close of the 2d century B.C. Sulla brought a Greek library from Athens to Rome. Such men as Cicero and Atticus were indefatigable collectors and readers of Greek books. The power of speaking and writing the Greek language became an indispensable accomplishment for highly educated Romans. The library planned by Julius Caesar and founded by Augustus had two principal departments, one for Latin, the other for Greek works. Tiberius, Vespasian, Domitian, and Trajan contributed to enlarge the collection. Rome became more and more the rival of Alexandria, not only as possessing great libraries, but also as a seat of learning at which Greek men of letters found appreciation and encouragement. Greek poetry, especially in its higher forms, rhetoric and literary criticism, history and philosophy, were all cultivated by Greek writers at Rome.

First part  
148-160  
B.C.

The first part of the Greco-Roman period may be defined as extending from 148 B.C. to the close of the Roman Republic. At its commencement stands the name of one who had more real affinity than any of his contemporaries with the great writers of old Athens, and who, at the same time, saw most clearly how the empire of the world was passing to Rome. The subject of Polybius was the history of Roman conquest from 264 to 146 B.C. His style, plain and straightforward, is free from the florid rhetoric of the time. But the distinction of Polybius is that he is the last Greek writer who in some measure retains the spirit of the old citizen-life. He chose his subject, not because it gave scope to learning or literary skill, but with a motive akin to that which prompted the history of Thucydides—namely, because, as a Greek citizen, he felt intensely the political importance of those wars which had given Rome the mastery of the world. The chief historical work which the following century produced—the *Universal History* of Diodorus Siculus—resembled that of Polybius in recognizing Rome as the political centre of the earth, as the point on which all earlier series of events converged. In all else Diodorus represents the new age in which the Greek historian had no longer the practical knowledge and insight of a traveller, a soldier, or a statesman, but only the diligence, and usually the dullness, of a laborious compiler.

Second  
part  
30 B.C.  
—529  
A.D.

The Greek literature of the Roman empire, from Augustus to Justinian, was enormously prolific. The arena over which the Greek language was diffused—either as a medium of intercourse or as an established branch of the higher education—was so extensive with the empire itself. An immense store of materials had now been accumulated, on which critics, commentators, compilers, imitators, were employed with incessant industry. In very many of its forms, the work of composition or adaptation had been reduced to a mechanical knack. If there is any one characteristic which broadly distinguishes the Greek literature of these five centuries, it is the absence of originality either in form or in matter. Lucian is, in his way, a rare exception, and his great popularity—he is the only Greek writer of this period, except Plutarch, who has been widely popular—illustrates the fitness of the aid level above which he stands out. The sustained abundance of literary production under the empire was partly due to the fact that there was no open political career. Never, probably, was literature so important as a resource for educated men, and the habit of

lecturing before friendly or obsequious audiences swelled the number of writers whose taste had been cultivated to a point just short of perceiving that they ought not to write.

In the manifold prose work of this period, four principal departments may be distinguished: (1) *History*, with *memoirs*, *biography*, and *geography*. It would exceed the limits of the present summary to notice in detail the works which belong to this and to the other provinces, but it may be useful, for purposes of reference and classification, to give some chief names in each. History is represented by Dionysius of Halicarnassus, also memorable for his criticism on the ancients and his effort to revive a true standard of Attic prose,—by Josephus, Arrian, Appian, and Tacitus. In biography, the foremost names are Plutarch, Diogenes Laërtius, and Philostratus; in geography, Strabo and Pausanias. (2) *Budition and Science*. The learned labours of the Alexandrian schools were continued in all their various fields. Under this head may be mentioned such works as the lexicon of Julius Pollux, the commentaries of Galen on Plato and on Hippocrates, the learned miscellanies of Athenæus, *Ælian*, and Stobæus, and the *Stratagems* of Polyænus. (3) *Rhetoric and Belles Lettres*. The most popular writers on the theory of rhetoric were Hermogenes, Aphthonius, and Cassius Longinus—the last the reputed author of the essay *On Sublimity*. Among the most renowned teachers of rhetoric were the distinguished rhetoricians "Sophists," or rhetoricians—were Dion Chrysostom, *Ælius Aristides*, "Themistius, Himerius, Libanius, and Horoëus. *Ælius* Albin to the rhetorical exercises were various forms of ornamental or imaginative prose—dialogues, letters, essays, or novels. Lucian, in his dialogues, exhibits more of the classical style and of the classical spirit than any writer of the later age, he has also a remarkable affinity with the tone of modern satire, as in Swift or Voltaire. His Attic prose, though necessarily artificial, was at least the best that had been written for four centuries. The emperor Julian was the author both of orations and of critical pieces. The chief of the Greek novelists are Xenophon of Ephesus and Longus, representing a purely Greek type of romance, and Heliodorus,—with his imitator Achilles Tatius and Chariton,—representing a school influenced by Oriental fiction. There were also many Christian romances in Greek, usually of a religious tendency. Alciphron's satirical *Letters*—founded largely on the New Comedy of Athens—represent the same kind of industry which produced the letters of Phalaris and many similar collections. (4) *Philosophy* is represented chiefly by Epicureanism and Marcus Aurelius, in both of whom the Stoic element is the prevailing one, by the Neoplatonists, such as Plotinus, Porphyry, Iamblichus, and by Proclus, of that eclectic school which arose at Athens in the 5th century A.D.

The Greek poetry of this period presents no work of high *Verse* merit. Babrius verified the *Æscopæ Fables*, Oppian wrote dithyrambic poems on fishing and hunting, Nonnus and Quintus Smyrnaeus made elaborate essays in epic verse, and the Orphic lore inspired some poems and hymns of a mystic character. The so-called *Sibylline Oracles*, in hexameter verse, range in date from about 170 B.C. to 700 A.D., and are partly the expression of the Jewish longings for the restoration of Israel, partly predictions of the triumph of Christianity. By far the most pleasing compositions in the verse which have come to us from this age are some of the short poems in the Greek Anthology, which includes some pieces as early as the beginning of the 6th century B.C., and some as late as the 8th century of the Christian era.

The 4th century may be said to mark the beginning of the last stage in the decay of literary Hellenism. From that point the decline was rapid and nearly continuous. The attitude of the church towards it was no longer that which had

been held by Clement of Alexandria, by Justin Martyr, or by Origen. There was now a Christian Greek literature, and a Christian Greek eloquence of extraordinary power. The laity became more and more estranged from the Greek literature—however intimately pure and noble—of the pagan past. At the same time the Greek language—which had maintained its purity in Italian seats—was becoming corrupted in the new Greek Rome of the East. In 529 A.D. Justinian put forth an edict by which the schools of heathen philosophy were formally closed. The act had at least a symbolical meaning. It is necessary to guard against the supposition that such assumed landmarks in political or literary history always mark a definite transition from one order of things to another. But it is practically convenient, or necessary, to use such landmarks. And, in this case, if a line is to be drawn at any one point between the Old and the Byzantine literature, it may be said that the edict of Justinian was the official record of the fact that the old literature of Greece was dead. Then came the Byzantine age, with its massive but formless erudition, its commentaries, annals, and lexicons, represented by such works as those of Eustathius, Photius, and Suidas. The golden time of the Byzantine literature was from about 850 to 1200 A.D. Just as this was drawing to an end, a poetry—at first satirical—arose in the vulgar dialect, which had now decidedly diverged from the literary, and thus the link was made which connects the Byzantine period with the Greek literature of to-day. The Greek language has never died, and the continuity of Greek literature has never been broken.

See *History of the Literatures of Ancient Greece*, by K. O. Müller, continued by J. W. Donaldson, *Critical History of the Language and Literature of Ancient Greece*, by William Minto, *History of the Literature of Greece*, by Emilio Bruni (1869), *Griechische Literaturgeschichte*, by Theodor Bergk (1872), *Grundriss der griechischen Literatur*, by G. Benliad (1873-1876), *Griechische Literaturgeschichte*, by R. Nicola (1874-1876), *Primer of Greek Literature*, in Macmillan's Series, by R. C. Jebb. (R. C. J.)

#### SECTION II.—THE BYZANTINE LITERATURE

The literature of the Byzantine period, from the death of Justinian to the capture of Constantinople by the Turks, is singularly destitute of interest for the general reader. There is not a single work of intense human passion. Not one man appeared gifted with anything like genius. The most notable books are books of history written by those who were themselves actors in the scenes, or at the least were contemporaries or nearly contemporaries of the events recorded. There is always a sense of reality about such works, however bare our general conception of the times may be. Of these historians a full account is given in the article BYZANTINE HISTORIANS. Some of these writers discussed other subjects. Remarkable amongst these is Constantine VII., Porphyrogenitus, who wrote or caused to be written a whole series of books, treating of the administration of the empire, the ceremonies of the court, war, and jurisprudence. He got up a cyclopædia of history and politics, of agricultural science, of the veterinary art, and of medicine, and ordered the preparation of an epitome of Aristotle's work on animals, of a collection of Greek epigrams, and a collection of the histories of saints. Constantine's works do not give so much an insight into what he could do as into what he wished to do. Some of the historians were really men of wide culture. Nicephorus Gregoras (born 1295) received a liberal education in rhetoric, astronomy, and other subjects, and his literary activity ranged over the entire field of human knowledge. Others again combined the study of rhetoric or philosophy with that of history. Pachymeres, for instance, wrote declamations of a pedantic and frigid nature on historical subjects, blending imagination with what he gathered from history.

The character of the Byzantine period is seen in the kind Poetry, of poetry that it produced. There were some good epigram writers in the reign of Justinian, but after his time the anthology received very few additions. The first reminder of importance that we meet in the progress of time is Georgius of Pisidia, who was deacon of the church of St. Sophia in the reign of the emperor Heraclius (610-641). His muse celebrates various wars in iambic verse, such as the war against the Persians, the Avanic war, and the exploits of Heraclius. He also wrote several Christian pieces. Leo VI., called the Wise, who was emperor from 886 to 912, versified astronomical and ecclesiastical subjects, and wrote some prose works besides, most of which, if not all, descended to him in oblivion. Theodorus, deacon in the church of St. Sophia towards the end of the 10th century, used the iambic trimeter to narrate the capture of Oseta, a work which derives all its value from the historical matter contained in it. Theodorus Prodromus is perhaps of all the Byzantine writers the one that comes nearest to the rank of a poet, yet even this approach is made only in some of his poems in the popular dialect, which have a strong satiric turn and a vein of humour. His more ambitious efforts have no claim to the title of poetry. The subjects are of wide range and various form—epistles, congratulatory addresses, historical and didactic poems. Some of them are in a dramatic form, such as the *Catemynochachia*, recently edited by Hecker in the *Teubner Bibliotheca*, in which besides the ordinary characters Prodromus introduces a chorus and semi-chorus, and the *κῆρυξ* and *ἄγγελος* so common in ancient plays. His largest poem is a romance called *τὰ κατὰ "Ρωδίων καὶ Δουρηνία*, consisting of nine books in iambic trimeter. It is entirely destitute of originality, and overlaid with rhetorical and unpoetic passages. It is given by Hercher in his *Σοφοτερες Ἐκδοται*. Prodromus flourished in the reign of Manuel I., Comnenus (1143-1180). Another Byzantine, Nicetas Eugenianus, apparently of the same age, wrote a fictitious poem, *τὰ κατὰ "Αρδελίων καὶ Χαρμολία*, which bears traces on every page of a close connexion with the amula work of Prodromus. Constantine Manasses also lived during the reign of Manuel I., Comnenus, and wrote a fiction in the veins political, characterized by absurdity and poverty of thought and expression. Both of these romances are given in Hercher's *Σοφοτερες Ἐκδοται*. Verse was during this period used for the most prosaic purposes. Michael Psellus the younger, about 1018 A.D., employed it to give a synopsis of laws, Theodorus to give an exposition of history. The work of Theodorus is now called *Χησάδα*, from its being divided into books of a thousand lines. It is written in the vernacular dialect, and is a very heterogeneous mixture of fact and fiction, but occasionally contains references to customs and incidents which are not handed down to us elsewhere. Another critic, Joannes Pechasimus, wrote iambic verses, *περὶ γυναικῶν κακῶν καὶ ἀγαθῶν ἡ Ἰλιόδοξ*. Such were the subjects which the Byzantine muse treated, and as we have given a rather full catalogue of the poetical works produced in the Byzantine period in the ancient language, nothing is going to be said of the sterile nature of the poets and their poetry.

Dramatic poetry was also neglected, but enough was produced to keep up the continuity in the tradition of the drama. Sestius has tried to show that dramas were acted up to the latest period of the Byzantine empire, and though the notices are not numerous nor very conclusive, he seems to us to have proved his point (Κ. Ν. *Στάδα λογογράφων δοκίμιον περὶ τοῦ θεατροῦ καὶ τῆς Μουσικῆς τῶν Βυζαντινῶν*, Venice, 1878). We have already seen that Prodromus composed dramas. The most voluminous writer in this department is Manuel Philus of Ephesus, who flourished from about 1280 to 1290, and who himself probably acted on

the stage His dramas are occupied with the exhibition of the great deeds of his patrons, or resemble in some respects on Mœtastasi, making characters of the various virtues

Hymns

The Byzantine period produced a considerable number of hymn writers Among them may be mentioned Germanus, who was patriarch of Constantinople in the reign of Leo the Saurian, Theodosius Studites, a theologian of some mark (759-826), the emperors Constantine Porphyrogenitus and Leo the king, and Photius, patriarch of Constantinople The hymn writers who stand highest are Cosmas, who flourished in the 8th century, and whom W Christ calls "princeps melodorum Græcorum"; Joannes Damascenus, a contemporary of Cosmas, and Theophanes d' Ipatrice, who lived nearly a hundred years after Cosmas (see *Anthologia Græca* *Commenium Chrestianum un adonnavit W Christ d' M Panaskas, Leipzig, 1871*)

Anthology

The Byzantines occupied themselves with collections of poems, but the works of Cephalas and Planudes Maximus of this nature have already been discussed in the article ANTHOLOGY

Prose writings

When we pass from poetry to prose we meet with the same want of creative power The Byzantines collect the writings of others and annotate, but they give us no original works They performed two services to literature They handed down the forms of literary expression, and by their indefatigable energy in excerpting and embodying in their own works the works of others, they have preserved for us many valuable documents of antiquity, or at least portions of them During the Byzantine period there were also various phases of literary life After the death of Justinian literary activity became gradually less, until in the time of the Iconoclasts intellectual culture was repressed, manuscripts were destroyed, and literature fell into disrepute and neglect A revival took place under the Macedonian dynasty, but when the Latin empire was established in Constantinople, a relapse into semi barbarism again took place Under the Palæologs the literary spirit once more came to life Amidst these changes it was impossible for a vigorous creative literature to flourish, and the bright periods are mainly characterized by efforts to destroy the effects of the previous dark era by gathering together all kinds of information Hence arose the compilations of Porphyrogenitus that have been already mentioned, and similar attempts were made at similar periods

Several of the Byzantines attained to high eminence in the cultivation of science, but sometimes their exertions took a fruitless direction, especially when they aimed at discovering the method of converting the base metals into gold It is in the study of grammar, in the production of lexicons and the annotation of the classical writers, that their best men have gained for themselves a name The works of the writers on these subjects are of no interest to the common reader, but they furnish the scholar with many attractive problems Who were the authors from whom the Byzantines borrowed? How far are their works interpolated? How far are the original authorities mutilated? These and such like inquiries crop up in connexion with almost every one of these writings The writers who are best known as contributing to our knowledge of the ancients are Ptoletus, Eustathius, Moschopolus, Thomas Magister, Joannes Pedasimus, and Demetrius Triclinius. Ptoletus (probably the same word as Cæcilius) lived in Constantinople about the year 1180 His *Chrestides* have been already mentioned He wrote notes on Homer, Hesiod, and Æschylus, but he was especially copious on Anaxagoras

Common errors

Eustathius is well known to scholars for an elaborate commentary on Homer He was brought up in Constantinople, and in 1160 became archbishop of Thessalonica, and in 1174 archbishop of Myra in Lycia Besides his labours

on Homer, he wrote many theological and several historical works Manuel Moschopolus belonged to the 13th century He wrote many works on different points of grammar, and scholia on Pindar, the Tragedians, and Theocritus Thomas Magister of Thessalonica flourished in the reign of Andronicus II (1283-1333), and composed articles on ancient literary history, and scholia on Æschylus and other Greek writers Joannes Pedasimus, who lived towards the end of the 14th century, is best known by his scholia on Hesiod, and Triclinius, who taught grammar in Constantinople at the same period, wrote scholia on Hesiod, Pindar, and the Tragedians Nothing can exceed the stupidity of these writers and their fellow scholars, the Byzantine era They misunderstand the acute remarks of their Alexandrian predecessors or bury them in veiling. They are utterly uncritical in their discussion of historical questions, they are continually going wrong in their grammatical expositions, and they are passionately fond of nonsense Perhaps nowhere, to take one instance, in the whole of literature could wilder etymologies be found in greater numbers than in the scholia on the *Plutus* of Aristophanes Yet these men thought highly of their work, and Triclinius tells us, in regard to a trivial book which he wrote on metres, that he accomplished the task only through divine inspiration Notwithstanding this, they have preserved for us within the quantities of rubbish many valuable facts and expositions derived from earlier writers

Ignatius, deacon in the reign of Michael II (820-829), or Ignatius, archbishop of Corinth in the second half of the 12th century, Holobolus, in the reign of Michael VIII, and Joannes Glycas, patriarch of Constantinople in 1316, are the principal writers on grammar Of these Gregorius is best known, for his work on the Greek dialects, though full of mistakes, has deservedly attracted the attention of scholars

Of the writers of lexicons Suidas is the best known He flourished in the 10th century His work contains not only explanations of words but biographies of men It is an undigested mass of statements which are often contradictory, but is of great value, for he has incorporated facts and expositions from early writers possessed of accurate knowledge A full account of Suidas, and a discussion of all the questions connected with him, are given by Reinhardt in the prolegomena to his edition of the *Lexicon*

The *Etymologicum Magnum* is another important work of the Byzantine period, having been compiled in the 11th century The appellation *magnum* or *μεγα* does not belong to it originally, but was added by Musurus, its first editor, or Calliages, its first printer Gaisford in his edition has discussed this and other matters concerning the *Etymologicum* A much smaller work by Philemon is a *Technologicum Dictionary*, written in the second half of the 13th century Among the lexicon-writers is Photius, who was patriarch of Constantinople, and died in an Armenian convent about the year 891 Photius was a man of marked individuality, and his history is mixed up with that of his country A more detailed account of him will therefore be found in a separate article Porson prepared an edition of the *Lexicon*, which was published after his death by Dobree The Leipsic edition contains a review by Blomfield (*Edin Rev*, xli, 1813) of Hermann's edition of Photius, in which the English reader will find a full discussion of the sources and value of the *Lexicon* Photius also prepared a work generally called *Photus Bibliotheca*, containing extracts and notices of 280 books which he read while acting as ambassador in Syria The nature of this work awaits more minute investigation than it has yet received, but there can scarcely be a doubt that some of the articles are the work of a dishonest man, or of a late interpolator, or of both His *Letter*, recently edited by Valartas, are of great importance for a knowledge of the times

Music  
and  
metre

Several scholars of the Byzantine period wrote on the music and metres of the ancients. Their works abound in errors, but they preserve fragments of earlier writers which are interesting and valuable. The work of Psellus the younger, called *Σύστημα ἐκ τῶν ῥητορῶν πατριάρχων ἐπιτομή*, contains large fragments of Aristoxenus (West phil., *Fragmente der Rhythmiker*), supplement to the first volume of his *Metrik*), and Manuel Bryennius (about the year 1380) wrote three books on harmonics, which contain among other things an exposition of the later Byzantine musical system (see Westphal, *Metrik*, vol. i: p. 319).

Rhetoric

Of the rhetoricians only a very few deserve mention. Joannes Doxopater, who flourished in the reign of Alexius I., Comnenus (1081-1118), wrote several works of a rhetorical nature, which are to be found in Walz's *Rhetores Græci*. All that can be said of them is that they prove that he was a man of culture and refinement, and did not deserve the neglect and poverty which fell to his lot. A cluster of rhetoricians appeared in the reigns of Michael VIII. and Andronicus II., of whom the principal were Georgius of Cyprus, Nicophorus Chummus, and Theodorus of Hyrtace. The emperor Manuel II., Palæologus, wrote several works of the nature of essays, and a large number of letters, several of which were addressed to Demetrius Cydones of Thessalonica, the author of a treatise on the *Contempt of Death* which has attracted some attention.

Philosophy

The study of philosophy was, generally speaking, neglected, but there were some who acquired renown as philosophers. Foremost amongst these was Michael Psellus the younger. He was born about the year 1018, and died shortly after the year 1105, after a chequered career. He was called by the men of his own age "Chief of Philosophers." His works range over the entire field of human learning. He wrote on the sciences, mathematical, physical, medical, on grammar and metres and music, on the doctrines of Plato and Aristotle, on psychology and dialectic, and very recently Sathas has edited a work of his called *A Century of Byzantine History*, which entitles him to a place among historians, a series of his letters which throw much light on the life of the Byzantines, and various discourses, parodying and funeral. He lost the favour of the court and was supplanted by Joannes Italus, who also succeeded to the title of "Chief of Philosophers." Several of his scholars attained distinction as authors, or rather compilers, of commentaries on the Greek philosophers.

Theology

The theologians were to a large extent philosophers. The most famous among them was John of Damascus, who lived in the reign of Leo the Isaurian (718-741). He wrote on a great variety of subjects, theological and philosophical. The work by which he is best known is his *Sacra Pentateuchia*, in which he has collected numerous passages from the writings of the fathers on such topics as repentance, faith, &c. The work is valuable as containing fragments of works which are now not extant. Alzog calls Damascus the last of the Greek theologians. In subsequent times few appear worthy of attention, and it may suffice here to mention Nicophorus Callistus, "the Ecclesiastical Theophrastus," who lived in the 14th century. He compiled an *Ecclesiastical History* from Eusebius, Socrates, Sozomenus, and the other earlier ecclesiastical historians, endeavouring at the same time to make his style more elegant than that of his predecessors.

Poeticon

We find almost no attempt at literary literature in prose during the Byzantine period. Only one work has come down to us of this nature, *The Loves of Hyeme and Hyemena*, by Eustathius the Macerontine. Hilberg, the last editor of the work, has tried to show with some success that Eustathius lived some time between 852 and 988. The work is full of imitations, and displays no inventive power.

A very full account is given of most of the writers here mentioned, with lists of their works edited and unedited, in the later volumes of the *Bibliotheca Græca* of Johannes Albertus Fabricius, edited by Lriller, Hamburg, in 12 vols., 1790-1800; see also Curt, *Scriptores ecclesiastici* and *Historia Literaria* of Gellius, *Deinde*, and *Fall of the Roman Empire*, Müller, and Dönnel's *History of Greek Literature*, 1858, Dr R. Nicolai, *Græchische Literaturgeschichte*, vol. iii., 1876. Many of the works of the Byzantine writers we found only in *excerpts*, especially those of Valloven, Bevenotus, Grynæ, Bekker, and Sathas, and often these editors investigated the history of the writers. Sathas has thrown much new light on the life of Psellus. (D.)

### SECTION III.—MODERN GREEK LITERATURE

In narrating the history of modern Greek literature several difficulties of a peculiar nature present themselves, some of which do not emerge in an account of the literature of previous periods. The literature is no longer homogeneous, and we have to answer for ourselves the question whether we are to record the literary efforts made by Greeks on the literary efforts made in Greece. If we adopt the first course, we have to take notice of books written in Italian, French, German, and English, as well as in Greek, for the Greeks like the Jews were, during the three centuries of Turkish domination, a dispersed people. They found refuge far away from their native land, they spoke the languages of strange peoples, and when they published books, frequently used these languages. Few, however, forgot their native tongue, and there are consequently very few authors who, however copiously they may have written in the languages of the countries in which they settled, did not leave at least one work written in Greek. Ever since the kingdom of Greece has been established, many of her most distinguished men have written some of their best works in French, German, or English, in order to obtain a wider audience than they could expect if they had used modern Greek. We have to divide even those who used Greek into two *works* classes,—those who used the ancient language and those who used the modern, though many have used both forms. The ancient language was still the literary language at the time of the capture of Constantinople, and the use of it as a vehicle of literature has been handed down in unbroken tradition to the present day. This has been especially the case with ecclesiastical writers. The church service is in ancient Greek. The New Testament is still read in the original language in Greek churches. The learned priests were familiar with the ancient language, and in learned treatises felt bound by a firmly impressed tradition to use only the language which the great fathers of the church had used. Cultivated Greeks in all lands still continued to make verses in imitation of the ancients. A change took place when Greece revived in the 18th century. All the great writers felt that it was pedantic to adopt many of the old forms of inflexion and construction,—that, in one word, the ancient language was not fitted to be the vehicle of modern civilization. They therefore resolved to adapt it, to omit what might fetter the full and free expression of modern thought, but to retain at the same time the body and substance of the language. And hence arose a form of the language which is practically identical with the ancient, but transfused with modern ideas, and fitted for the clear and rapid expression of modern literature. The influence of the ancient language on the modern is manifest in every part of it. And it could not be otherwise. Education is spread over every corner of free Greece. But in education the Greek child does not learn the grammar of the modern language but of the ancient. He often reads as familiar with Xenophon and Plutarch as an Englishman is with Shakespeare and Milton. Before entering on the history of modern Greek literature, it is necessary to trace the modern language through its various stages. Historians



of the Greek language acknowledge that alongside of the literary language there existed a conversational, which must have varied in different localities. We have the clearest traces of this language in the New Testament, as noticed under *GREEK LANGUAGE*, p. 135, and some ecclesiastical writers of a later date bear equally unmistakable indications of it. The *Pastor of Herma* is especially marked by such features, and the form of it given in the *Coder Sinaiticus* is as far advanced towards the modern as we find in several works of the 12th century written in the popular language. Very distinct approximations to the modern forms are also to be found in some of the apocryphal gospels, and in the *Testament of the Twelve Patriarchs*, but especially in the *Apocryphal Acts and Apocalypses* published by Tischendorf. All these writings tend to show that it is impossible to fix on any period when the modern language may be said to be definitely formed. It grew out of the conversational language of earlier times. Till very recently some poems of Theodoros Prodromos (often called Prochopodromos) were supposed to be the earliest distinct specimens of the modern language, but recent researches among the libraries have brought to light the fact that between the 10th and 15th centuries various works were produced in the modern form of the language. These researches are not yet concluded, and any results that are attained must be deemed merely provisional. The work which is now regarded as the earliest specimen of the new form is the *Epitaphs of Basilios Digenes*, in 16 lines according to Legrand, and in the second half of the 10th century. The writer of this work unquestionably knew classical Greek well, and most of the lines would be perfectly intelligible to every scholar. But now and then words and constructions purely modern intervene. Yet there is a wide and marked difference between the language of this poem and that of the two poems of Prodromos, belonging to the 12th century, published by Corsus, or the three more recently discovered by E. Miller, and published by him in his *Malanga*, and subsequently by Legrand. In every line of these the scholar comes upon forms which are quite strange. The difference will be best appreciated if we quote some lines from each of the writers. We take a passage from the *Digenes*, which contains more than the usual number of modern peculiarities.

Kal ἦν εἰ μὲν ἐλθέτω ἀπὸ τῆς οὐρῆς εἰς τὴν  
Μετὰ πᾶσις ἀνέστησαν, ἄνθρωποι ἀλλήλους τοῦ  
Ὁραμα εἶδον, ἀλλήλους, ἐν ταύτῃ τῇ ἐσφίρῃ.  
Ἰππεῖς μὲν ἐφάρμαγον ἐπὶ λευκῇ τῇ πέτρᾳ,  
Καὶ ἀντὶ χρυσίου καὶ ἀργυρίου ἵδμεν.  
Ἀνθρώπων κατέβη καὶ, κ' ἐσφίρ' ἵς τὸ κορυθίου,  
Κ' εἰς κορυθίου εἰ γυμνὰς μετὰ τῆς ἀλλήλους μᾶς.

Here the accent of *σκορῖος*, τὸν for *ἀντὶ*, *ἄστροφος* signifying white, 's for *eis*, *ὑποβόσκων* from *εὐβόσκων*, and *μας* for *ἡμῶν*, are the novel peculiarities, and none of them need puzzle the scholar. As a contrast we take a few lines from one of the poems of Prodromos published by Miller.

Ἀνθρώποι τὰχιστα λέγοντ' ὅτι πᾶσι γὰρ ἡμετέροις,  
Μὴ πὺλ χροῖον ἐπὶ φανὸς τὸ ἀλγὺν ἀφαιρῶντες,  
Ἄλλα τὸ μετὰ τὸν αἶμα καὶ τὸν ἰσχυρὸν εἶναι μένον.  
Τ' ἐπιβόων ἡραμῶν καὶ καλοσχητοῦ καὶ  
Καὶ τοῦ γυμνῶν γυμνὰ καὶ τῶν κατὰ βῆσαν,  
Κ' ἵδμεν τὸ κ' ἡμετέροις στυγαῖν ἀπὸ γὰρ ἡμετέροις.

The lines are thus translated by Miller:—"Et moi aussi, j'ai essayé de la condonance, non pas pour me rassasier de pain de fruits, mais de ce pain bis, dit de moyenne qualité, qui fait envie aux richemmes et aux voyageurs de talent. Après maintes recherches, j'ai trouvé une mesure monnaie, et je l'ai donnée pour pure d'une alme de condonance." After the fall of Constantinople some of the learned Greeks took an interest in the popular form of the language, and one of them, Sophianos, composed a grammar in the first half of the 16th century, which Legrand has published,

along with a translation by the same scholar. of Plutarch's treatise *On the Education of the Young*, into modern Greek. This grammar proves that the popular form of Greek was by that time fully developed, and it might still be taken as a good exposition of the ordinary spoken language of illiterate Greeks. Of course there were great varieties in this popular form. Almost every small district and every island had inflections, constructions, and words peculiar to themselves. Kavalas wrote to Martin Crusius in the end of the 16th century that there were upwards of seventy modern dialects, of which that of the Athenians was the worst. But however many dialects there may have been, there is no reason to suppose that the difference was such as to prevent a Greek residing in one part of Greece from understanding a Greek residing in any other part. Since that time changes have taken place in the popular form. Turkish words were introduced to a larger extent, but the language has remained substantially the same. There are indeed still a considerable variety of forms in the different districts, and one of the most amusing of modern Greek comedies, *Ἡ Βαβυλωνία ἢ ἡ κατά τῶν οὐρανῶν διαφορά τῆς Ἑλληνικῆς γλώσσας*, by D. K. Byzantinos, is based upon the different dialects spoken by the Greek of Asia Minor and the Peloponnesian, the Chian, Cretan, and Cypriote, the Albanian and Heptanesian. This language is no longer the language of cultivated Greek society, of poets, or of the sciences. When Greece was stirred with national feeling, a question arising about the patriotic Greeks more intensely than that of the form which the language should take. Some, led by Chrysoropoulos, maintained that the popular language was really ancient, that it was a mixture of *Æolic* and *Doric*, and that it ought therefore to be retained. Others, with Economos as their champion, were for adopting the classical language with a few slight modifications which could claim the sanction of some of the best Byzantine writers. A third party, headed by Corsus, was for stealing a middle course, and they have ultimately triumphed. Colonel Leake has well described the present language:—"This style," he says, "may with tolerable accuracy be defined to consist in Hellenic words, arranged in the syntax of modern Europe, with a grammar partly Hellenic and partly modern. Invasions and transpositions occur with almost the same degree of frequency as in Italian, and the arrangement in general is not much more complex than that of our own language." (*Researches*, p. 54). We extract a specimen of it from the sixth volume of "Epilogos" of the *History of Greece* by Paparrhagozopolis.

Ὅτε τὸ 1790 πρὸς τὸ ἔθνος ἀντιπροσώπων καθέστησαν εἰς τὴν μετὰ τὴν ἀπελευθέρωσιν τὴν ἀρχὴν τοῦ κατὰ τὴν ἐγγράφον αὐτῆς κοινοπραγίας ἀπὸ ἀμετακίνητου, ὁ ἑκάστης αὐτῆς ἐπὶ τὸν πᾶσι τοῦ ἑλληνικοῦ ἢ καὶ ἀπὸ τῶν ἡμετέρων ἀλλὰ δὲ Ἑλλήνων καὶ ἀπὸ τῶν ἰσχυρῶν τῶν ἰσχυρῶν καὶ τῶν ἀκατάστατων.

In this sentence all the words are ancient. Two of them are contracted, *vā* for *iva* and *ēn* for *ēde*, and some have had their meanings modified. The remarks of Paparrhagozopolis relate to a subject which demands a brief notice. The Greeks at the time of the capture of Constantinople were proud of being *Ῥωμαῖοι* or Romans, and the term included all the Christians who formed the subjects of the Greek empire. Hence the term *Roman* was the name given to the popular language. But during all the period of the Turkish domination the Greeks occasionally spoke of themselves as *Ῥωμαιοὶ* and *Ἕλληνες*, and when the period of revival came, they cast off the old name of *Ῥωμαῖοι* and *Ῥωμανοί*, and spoke only of *Ἕλληνες* and *Ἑλληνική*. Accordingly the Greek language is now spoken of as the Hellenic tongue. When it is necessary to distinguish the modern from the ancient, the language of cultivated men is called *Neo-Hellenic*, *νεοῦ ἑλληνική*, and the popular form is styled *ἀπὸ κοινοῦ* (see especially Dr. Cloyd's *Roman and Modern Greek*, Edin 1855).

Greeks  
of the  
Renaissance  
before  
the fall of  
Constanti-  
nople

In narrating the history of this literature, we have at the earliest stage to treat separately those who used the classical language and those who used the vulgar. In both cases we cannot draw a fast line at the date of the fall of Constantinople, for, though that event is of great importance in the history of the Greeks as a people, it does not constitute a break in the literary history. It is often imagined that the dispersion of the Greeks in 1183 stood in close connexion with the revival of literature in Western Europe. But the fact is that the Greeks had come into contact with the Western long before, and their influence had become decided before the Turks seized the capital of the Greek empire. The crusades had brought Greeks and Latins together. The Latin empire in Constantinople had made the contact still more frequent. Greeks and Latins had entered into keen discussion on the truth of the dogmas in regard to which they differed. Some of the Greeks had become converts to Roman Catholicism, or at least denied the union of the Eastern and Western Churches. In these circumstances they often left their native land to seek preferment in the church in which they could labour with greater sympathy. Many of them also had become connected by marriage or other ties with the Italian nobles who ruled in the *Ægean*, and circumstances led them to settle in Italy. Of the Greeks who thus found their way to the West before the taking of Constantinople, the most prominent were Leon or Leontios Pilatos, Georgios Gemistos Plethon, Manuel and John Chrysoloras, Theodoros Gaza, Georgios Trapezuntios, and Cardinal Bessarion. Hody has given a full account of most of these men in his work *De Græcis illis tribus Linguis Græcæ Latine utriusque Imperatorum Institutio* (London, 1742). Pilatos was a native of Thessalonica and a pupil of Basilam, a Calabrian monk who taught Petrarch Greek. Pilatos himself taught Boccaccio his native language, and expounded Homer in Florence. He died in 1364. Gemistos was a native of Lacedæmon. He taught in Constantinople, Athens, and Florence, and had in all places a large number of pupils who eagerly imbibed his Platonic teachings. His works were numerous, but most of them still lie hid in the great libraries of Europe unpublished. Manuel Chrysoloras was one of the pupils of Gemistos, and is famous as the translator of Homer and Plato. Both he and his brother John had many illustrious men as their pupils in Greek. Manuel taught in Milan, Venice, Padua, and Rome. He has the merit of composing the first Greek grammar that appeared in the West (*ἑρμηνεία*), published for the first time in Venice (1484). He made his first visit to Italy in 1393 in the capacity of ambassador from the Greek emperor to seek aid against the Turks, and he returned to Italy on the accomplishment of his mission that he might spread the knowledge of Greek literature. He was sent as deputy to the council of Constantine, and he died in Italy in 1416. Theodoros Gaza, a native of Thessalonica, fled from his native place in 1430, and became a teacher of Greek in Ferrara, Rome, and Florence. He prepared a Greek grammar in four books (first published in Venice 1495), which continued for a long time to be a text-book in Greece and other countries. He translated many of the classical writers, and wrote on the ancient history of the Turks and on theological subjects. He died in 1478 in Calabria, where he had settled in his old age. Georgios Trapezuntios was born in Chete in 1396. He received the appellation of Trapezuntios because his family had come from Trebizond. A Venetian noble took him to Venice to teach Greek in 1426. He removed to Rome in 1440, where he remained till 1450, at first highly honored, but subsequently, through the bitterness of his temper, falling into disgrace. After that he led a wandering and miserable life, and died in 1486. He translated many of the Greek writers into Latin, and wrote a treatise in which he com-

pared Plato with Aristotle. Cardinal Bessarion was a native of Trebizond. He received his education in Constantinople. In 1425 he went to the Peloponnese to hear Gemistos expound the philosophy of Plato. In 1439 he removed to Italy, after he had been in wide neighborhood of Nieme, because the Greeks bitterly resented his attachment to the party which saw no difficulty in a union between the Western and Eastern Churches. He rose to great honour in the West, obtaining the cardinal's hat. He died in Ravenna in 1472. He was passionately attached to the classical literature of his country, and took a profound interest in the education of his fellow countrymen. He aided in the most liberal manner all the men of ability who came from Greece. He made a large collection of manuscripts. He translated portions of Xenophon, Aristotle, Theophrastus, and other Greek writers, and he wrote on the theological questions of the day.

The Greeks who were most prominent in spreading the knowledge of Greek in Europe after the fall of Constantinople are Joannes Agriopoulou, Demetrios Chalcocondyles, Constantine and John Lascaris, and Marcus Musurus. Constantine Agriopoulou was a native of Constantinople, and there taught Constantine Lascaris. In the West he taught at various times in Padua (1434), Florence (1456), and Rome (1471), and had amongst his scholars Angelus Politanus and Reuchlin. He translated many of the works of Aristotle. Chalcocondyles was a native of Athens and became a teacher of Greek in Florence in 1471, after some time he removed to Milan, where he died in 1511. He edited very many of the Greek authors. Constantine Lascaris, descended from a noble Bithynian family, taught Greek in various Italian cities, and finally settled in Sicily, where he died about 1500. He wrote a large number of works, most of them still unpublished. His best known work is his *Gramma*. He also transcribed manuscripts, and made a large collection of them. His name is well known to modern readers through the romance of Villamain (*Lascaris ou les Græcs du XV<sup>me</sup> siècle*). John was probably the younger brother of Constantine. He was principally employed in collecting manuscripts for the great men of the day, wrote several works, and edited several Greek books for the first time. He died at Rome in 1535.

Almost all these men were rather employed about literature than engaged in producing it. They taught Greek, several of them wrote Greek grammars, they transcribed and edited Greek classical writers, and they collected manuscripts. Bessarion laid the foundation of the library of St Mark in Venice. The collections of Constantine Lascaris formed the nucleus of the Æscorial library, John Lascaris and his pupil Budæus gathered the first stores for the national library in Paris, and Pope Nicholas V employed the services of Bessarion, Gaza, and Chalcocondyles in establishing the Vatican library. But almost none of these men accomplished much in literature strictly so-called. The question which most deeply interested them was the philosophy of Plato and Aristotle. Somehow or other the championship of Plato was undertaken by those Greeks who eagerly desired the union of the Greek and Latin churches, and the philosophy of Aristotle was upheld by the opposite party. Gemadinos, whom Mahomet II appointed as patriarch of Constantinople after the capture of the city, showed himself a keen partisan of the Stagurites, and hurled his thunderbolts against the Platonists. Gemistos Plethon was the chief defender of the Platonic philosophy, and received unmeasured abuse from George of Trebizond for his heterodox opinions. But almost none of these subjects was a numerous, but beyond these theological questions (for they were theological rather than philosophical) there is not much. Scholarship continued to survive in Greece or among the Greeks for a long time after the

Turks began to rule in Greece, and a considerable list might be added, including the names of Apostolus, whose collection of Greek Proverbs is well known to scholars, and his son Aissurus, metropolitan of Monemvasia. Among the few who still used the Greek language for literary purposes Leo Allataus is prominent. His Greek verses show skill and cleverness. Mention also should be made of Constantine Rhodocanakis, honorary physician to Charles II of England. He wrote verses on the return of Charles to England, not without merit (see a very curious life of O. Rhodocanakis published in Athens, 1872).

We now return to the literature in the modern language, and here again we have to go back several centuries before the fall of Constantinople. We have already seen that the earliest production is the *Exploits of Digenes Akritas*, so called because he was the son of a Turk and a Greek, and because he spent a large portion of his time in watching the frontiers. There is reason to believe that his adventures formed the subject of poems in many parts of Greece. Some have called him a Cyprian Hercules, and believe him a kind of mythological character, while others regard him as a genuinely historical personage. The poem published by Legrand describing his adventures is imperfect. Many of the incidents are of a purely romantic nature. From the 13th to the 16th century many poems were composed in the popular language. Our knowledge of these works is still incomplete. Several of them lie hidden in the great libraries of Europe, but much is now doing to increase our knowledge. Many have been already published in the collections of Mavrophydis, Sathas (*Antologia*), Wagner (*Cammina Melis Xen*), and especially Legrand. They all breathe the spirit of chivalry, and are full of romantic adventures and tales of love. M. Gidel has the special merit of drawing attention to these poems in his *Études sur la Littérature Grecque Moderne* (Paris, 1886), and he has gone further, into the subject in his *Nouvelles Études sur la Littérature Grecque Moderne* (Paris, 1878). He has proved that the romances which delighted the knights of France and Italy found their way probably through the Genoese and Venetians and some French families into Greece, especially into the islands. The Greek minstrels took them and adapted them for their Greek audiences. He has given an analysis of the various poems and compared them with the Western forms. The most important in modern Greek are "The Old Knight" (12th century), a tale of the Round Table, "The Story of Belthandier and Chrysante" (probably 13th century), "The Loves of Cybistros and Rhodame" (probably 12th century), "The War of Troy," taken from the *Georgics* of Banout de Sainte Moine, who wrote in the second half of the 12th century (the Greek translation was made some time before the fall of Constantinople), "Flois and Blanchefleur," and the "History of Imbeutos and Margaraona." There are various other poems belonging to this period of a different character, such as the "Oracles" of Leo the Wise, imitations of *Reneke Fuchs*, and "Pnyctologos." The history of Alexander the Great was a favourite theme, and there is a Greek version of Apollonius of Tyre. We do not know the authors of any of these poems. But about the time of the fall of Constantinople we meet with the names of some versifiers. Papanondylas Zotos described the battle of Varna (1444) in verse, and from the poem we gather that he was present at it. We have three poems written by Georgialis Lamentus (1450-1500), one "On the Death of the great Commander of the Romans, Belisarius," another "On the Plague in Rhodes," which took place in 1498, and a third, "A Complaint on the Fall of Constantinople." Some have been inclined to think that this last cannot be the work of Georgialis. From an examination of the poems of Georgialis and some other phenomena, Corais, in the pro-

legomena to the second volume of the "Anastasi," came to the conclusion that rhyme was unknown to Greek poems before the fall of Constantinople, and had become established as a feature of them when Georgialis wrote on the Rhodian plague. Griel has accepted this as giving a clue to the dates of Greek poems. A third versifier was Jacobus Tivolis of Corfu, who lived in the beginning of the 16th century. He wrote the history of Tagapies, a Venetian noble, and the history of the king of Scotland and the queen of England, a tale taken from Boccaccio. Almost none of these poems have poetical merit, but they are interesting as specimens of the popular language, and curious as throwing light on the manners and thoughts of the Greeks of those days.

From the earliest times the Greeks were in the habit of putting into verse any remarkable occurrence that stirred their feelings. Corais tells us that in his time Greeks, especially on the islands, contended with each other in repeating or extemporizing verses, and the custom has remained down to the present day. Accordingly the Greek popular poetry is rich in historical subjects. We have already noticed the poems on the battle of Varna and on the taking of Constantinople. There is also a chronicle of the conquest of the Morea (given by Flissen in his *Anastasi*). There are several lamentations over the fall of Constantinople and the Klaptho ballads, relate real adventures. Almost every leader in the war of independence had his song in his honour. Some have thought that the largest portion of the ballad poetry of the Greeks is recent, but Legrand's collection lately published shows that some of them belong to very early times, being edited from a manuscript of the 16th century. There are two or three famous historical poems connected with the islands. Especially noteworthy is one on the exploits of Mercurios Rhon by Cononaeos.

There are three poems belonging to the 16th and 17th centuries which have obtained wide popularity among the Greeks. The first is the *Evrotatos*, the epic poem of modern Greece, of about 11,400 lines. Of its author Vincenzo Cornaro, a Cretan, we know almost nothing, but it is probable that he belonged to a noble Venetian family and lived in the middle or towards the end of the 16th century. The tale is one of two lovers who, after many trials of their fidelity to each other, at last united and blessed. There is genuine poetry in the work. Many of the scenes are charming, and, as M. Gidel remarks, there is not a single situation which shocks propriety nor a single sentiment which is not modest and of rare purity. The second poem is a drama called *Erophile*, and its theme is the love of Panaretos and Erophile. The author of it was Georgios Choriatas, who was brought up in Rhethymnos, a Cretan town, and lived towards the end of the 16th and beginning of the 17th century. It was thought to be nearly the only drama of this period, but Sathas has brought to light the fact that there was a considerable number of them, and he has already published three, *Zeno*, *Stathos*, and *Gyparis*, in addition to the *Erophile*. Some of them are translations, and all of them are closely connected with Italian dramas of the same period. The *Erophile* has interludes to each act, dealing with an entirely different theme, and most probably written by a different author. The third poem, *The Shepherdess*, is a charming idyll written by Nicolaos Demetrios, a native of Apocoonas in Crete, who lived in the beginning of the 17th century.

There are few prose productions of any importance Early belonging to the early period of modern Greek literature. Cusius mentions works written by Malaxos, Zagonoulas, and Canavaritis. Sathas has more recently brought to light a number of chronicles, such as those in the second volume of his *Bibliotheca Graeco-Medii Aevi*, that relate the history

Early  
works in  
modern  
Greek  
Romantic  
poems

Early  
poems

Early  
poems

works

of Cyprus, Leontios Machairas, in the beginning of the 15th century, and Georgios Boustronios, whose narrative extends from 1456 to 1501. His sixth volume contains curious documents (the assizes of Cyprus, Cretan wills, &c.), which afford insight into the forms of modern Greek prevalent among the Cypriotes and Cretans, though a considerable number of them are written in classical Greek. Mikloosch and Müller have made a similar collection of documents, *Acta et Diplomata Græca Medii ævi*. Even in the 18th century we find the classical language used much more frequently than the modern. Meletios, the man whose name stands most prominent in this period, wrote his *Katechizmatik Histo y from the time of Christ to the year 1700* in ancient Greek, and his work had to be translated into modern Greek to give it currency among the masses. Another ecclesiastical history by Sergios Makrisios, given in the collection of Sathas (from 1750 to 1800), is written in the same language, and we find some writers like Kallistos Daponte and Meletios using sometimes the ancient and sometimes the modern form. We have almost no attempts at elegant literature in the modern Greek prose of this period. But it is possible that manuscripts containing such works may be hid among private family documents. One has recently been edited by Innocent Darnaria (Tunin, 1872), *The Loves of Erygionis and Erianna*, by Holopulos, which was most probably written between the 12th and 16th centuries, but which might have been written by any one of the Septuagint Fathers, as the language discloses modern forms only in one or two sentences.

Later time of the 18th century

In the 18th century a revival of enthusiasm for education and literature took place among the Greeks. Schools were established in every important Greek city, school books and translations from Continental languages poured forth from the presses of Venice, Trieste, Vienna, and other places where the Greeks had influence. The leaders in this movement were Eugenios Bulgarias, Nikephoros Theotokis, and Adamantios Corais. The first two, both natives of Otricoli, were devout adherents of the Greek Orthodox Church, warm partisans of Russia, and both became archbishops in the Russo-Greek Church. They were true but narrow patriots. They wrote much in defence of Greek orthodoxy as against Latin heresy. Bulgarias also wrote on philosophy and Theotokis on physics, and the latter prepared or translated educational treatises on physics, mathematics, and geography. Far before these stands Adamantios Corais, who was above everything a Greek of widest aim and of the greatest culture. He was born in Smyrna in April 1748. He studied nearly every branch of learning, medicine, theology, and literature, in the universities of Italy and France, and then devoted his life to the re-education of his country from ignorance and servitude. He edited a very great number of the classical writers, with admirable critical notes, and generally with prolegomena, which tried to awaken the interest of his countrymen in their past glories, and shewed to them that to emulate their ancestors. He also devoted his attention to the modern language, especially in his *Artaea*, discussed the writings which had appeared in it, prepared a provisional dictionary of it, and determined the mode in which the popular dialect might become the basis of a literary language.

Modern era

From the time of Corais we may date a new era in the history of the literature. Henceforth the works become exceedingly numerous, and efforts are made in every direction of literary activity. Perhaps no nation now produces so much literature in proportion to its numbers. The Greeks seem restless in their desire to give expression to their thoughts. They have indeed great difficulties to contend with in the way of publishing. The number of readers is necessarily small, owing to the smallness of the nation. To take an instance, one of their most important

periodicals, the *Ἀδριανός*, containing articles on archaeology and literary history, which should be known to all scholars, had not more than 150 subscribers in 1876, as we are informed in the preface, 600 copies were published, of which 100 were sent by the university of Athens to the various libraries in Europe and America, 150 were distributed free, and only 150 were subscribed and paid for. The number of subscribers had not increased in August 1879. In these circumstances many rich Greeks have come nobly forward and published books at their own expense, and much credit is due to the Zosmades, the Ralli, and the other Greeks who have saved their country in this way. Very frequently scholars produce then best works for periodicals or even newspapers, and some most valuable treatises have been published as supplements to Greek periodicals. Translations of many of the best French novels have also been given away with these periodicals, and occasionally some of our most esteemed English writers have been thus made known to the Greeks, for instance, a translation of the *Brave of Lammermoor* was published by the editors of the *Pandora*. These circumstances, while impeding the production of Greek books, also tend to prevent foreigners from knowing exactly what the Greeks have done. Another circumstance that marks this period deserves notice. Almost every literary man of eminence makes efforts in every literary direction. Theologians, scholars, physicians, are all found in the list of poets. The same persons write school-books, histories, dramas, lyrics, and novels. It would be impossible to give even a notion of this endless activity. All that can be done is to point out a few of the principal writers.

In the early part of this period two poets claim our notice, Pothos Rhigas of Velestino in Thessaly, and Christopoulos Rhigas was the poet of liberty, and his great war song, *Ἀδριανός τῶν Ἑλλήνων*, is well known to English readers through Byron's translation. He wrote many songs or hymns calculated to rouse his fellow-countrymen, but acting rashly he was seized and shot at Belgrade in 1798 at the age of forty-four. Christopoulos was born in Macedonia in 1770, and died in 1847. He devoted himself to songs of love and wine, and many of his anacronisms are melodious, graceful, and charming. Somewhat later than Christopoulos comes Jacobos Rizos Neroulos, who was born in Constantinople in 1778, and died in 1850. Neroulos wrote lyrics, tragedies, and comedies with considerable success, but his best known book is a work published at Geneva in French in 1846—*Cours de la littérature Grecque moderne*—and admirably translated into modern Greek by Miss Olympia Abbot of Thessalonica. It is an interesting account of modern Greek literature up to the time at which the lectures were delivered, and is written in a bright and forcible style. It is perhaps rather too favourable to the Phanariots, to whom Neroulos himself belonged, but it is an honest defence, and it has to be remembered, on the other hand, that he lashed the vices of the Phanariots with great boldness in his comedies. From these writers we pass to the era of the independence of Greece. During this last period three Sontoses have appeared who have established for themselves a permanent place in the history of mankind as men of true genius, Panagiotis Sontosis, Alexander Sontosis, and Alexander Rizos Rangabé. Panagiotis and Alexander Sontosis were brothers, and belonged to the Phanariots. They were born in Constantinople in the first quarter of this century, and were educated first in Olona and then in the universities of Italy and France. They threw all their energies into the independence, and sang of its glories. But they conceived a determined dislike to Capodistrias. They were still more bitter against Otho, and, adopting extreme opinions and always discontented, they fall out of sympathy with their fellow countrymen. Panagiotis received high poets of

honour at the end of the war of independence, and Alexander was offered great literary distinctions, but the unmitigated abuse and contempt which they both, but especially Alexander, heaped on all men in authority tendered absence from their country a necessity. Alexander died in Smyrna in a hospital in 1863, and Panagiotis died at Athens in utter obscurity in 1868. Both tried various forms of poetry, but as nearly all critics have remarked, Panagiotis was always lyrical and Alexander continually returned to satire, whatever his subject might be. Both had a rich command of musical language, were highly ideal in their conceptions, were strongly patriotic, and possessed an ardent love of liberty. Of the two the muse of Panagiotis strove more after the sublime, but was less steady, less uniformly excellent than that of Alexander. Both were deficient in giving unity to their poems, or in forming sustained and original plots.

The plays of Panagiotis remind one of such works as Bailey's *Poetics*, where there is a profusion of poetical conceptions but no coherent whole. Many passages in the works of both brothers bear a strong resemblance to lines which are to be found in the writings of poets whom they admired, especially Lamartine, Béranger, and Byron. The spirit of Byron pervades both. The principal works of Panagiotis are "*Odoropos* (The Traveller), a drama in five acts, for which Byron's *Manfred* stood as model, *Meorias* ή *ηρά πύλη* *την ορτορτορ* (The Masque), also a drama in five acts, and three other plays *Pachara*, *Chaisakia*, and *The Unknown*, in all of which there is an utter want of character and plot, and a rich store of poetry, a novel, *Leontis*, and many lyrics, especially "*Η Κρήνη*", first published in 1835. He died in his later days to strike out a new style in modern Greek, but his effort was unsuccessful. Alexander's principal works are — *Παράφρασις* *της* *Ελλάδος*, a collection of poems for the most part bitterly satirical, recently republished by Legrand at the end of his grammar, "*Ο* *Περικλέους* *επὶ* *τῆς* *Μουσῆς*", a poem which was suggested by and contains many direct imitations of Byron's *Childe Harold*, and several comedies, *The Prodigal*, *The Friar*, *The Unwieldy Poet*, and *The Constitutional School*, and numerous odes and lyrical pieces. He also wrote one comic tragic novel, "*Εξέπνορος* *τοῦ* *1831*", or *The Banished Hero* of 1831.

Rungabé The other great poet that regenerated Greece has produced is Alexander Rizos Rungabé. He was born in Constantinople early in the century, and belonged like the Sontozos to a phanariot family. He thus describes his own career:—"A pupil of Vardalochos and Gennadios, he completed his studies at the military school and at the university of Munich. In his own country he was at first an artillery officer, then a councillor in the ministry of public instruction, and also, in that of the interior, professor of archaeology in the university (of Athens), minister for foreign affairs, deputy, and later on representative of his country in different foreign countries." His works are of wide range. He has written a grammar of modern Greek, contributed to a dictionary and a cyclopaedia, composed a history of ancient Greece, and edited many school books. He has written an able work on ancient art, and an exceedingly valuable and scholarly work on inscriptions, *Antiquités Helléniques*. He has contributed much to the *Pandora*, the *Archæological Journal*, and the *Praviter*. He has narrated the results of his travels, and discussed mathematical problems. He has also composed several novels. And he has written a history of the literature of modern Greece,—bright, genial, sparkling, and full of tact and sometimes trenchant criticism. It is on his poems, however, that he claims to remembrance will specially rest. In these he shows fine poetic feeling, a rare command of exquisite and harmonious language, and a singular beauty and purity of thought and sentiment. His poetical works consist of a

large collection of hymns, odes, and songs, long narrative poems, ballads, four tragedies and three comedies, translations of the *Antigone* of Sophocles, and of three plays of Aeschylus.

Besides these three poems there is a great number of other works, who have composed poetry of considerable merit, so is but we can only mention the names of a few,—Valaotitis, Zalamastis, Salomos, Vlachos, Kokkinakis, Chaisakotias, Tantalidis, Zempelios, Orphanides, Cleon and E. Rangabé, Euphrosyne Samatridis, and Antoniadis. Elias Tantalidis, who for a long time was blind and who died a few years ago, published an interesting collection of songs, including nursery rhymes and school songs, with music (Athens, 1876). The production of poetry was much stimulated by an annual poetical contest. A sum of money was set aside for prizes, poems were sent in, judges were named, and when all was ready, a speech was delivered in the university by the convenor of the judges, assigning their reasons for their decision and giving criticisms of the poems. The envelope of the successful candidate was then opened, and he received the laurel wreath with a thousand dachms. From what is stated in the *Athenæon* of Athens for May, June, July, and August 1878, where the exposition of the contest of 1877 is given, it would seem that probably that of 1877 was to be the last. Amongst the poets of recent days special mention should be made of Theodoros Parnassios, who while in Manchester did much to advance the works of his fellow-countrymen known to Englishmen, and the best works in recent English literature to Greece. Among other things he translated Roscoe's *Life of Lomax de Medici*, Byron's *Sardanapalus*, Villenard's *Lazarus*, and poems of Goldsmith, Bryant, Burns, Goethe, and Victor Hugo. He also wrote original poems of great merit, and a novel called *Elyria*. Two writers have distinguished themselves by poetic compositions in ancient Greek, Loukas and Philippos Joannes.

The drama is a form of poetry to which the Greeks feel drawn peculiarly prone. Rangabé gives a list of ninety writers of dramas in his *History of Modern Greek Literature*, and the list he says is incomplete. Out of these writers, we may select for notice Demetrios N. Benardakis, whose *Μαρία Δοξερτρί*, "*María*, the daughter of Duapatri," with its polylogisms, has deservedly attracted much attention and been analysed by Gidel.

In prose there is no department of literature which is not history well represented. In history the Greeks are particularly strong. Perhasevos has described with great vigour the exploits of Suli. Thiclopis's *History of the Revolution* is a masterly work. Philonon has given the Russian side of the revolutionary movements with great earnestness, and nearly every man who took a part in the movements has handed down his recollections, or, as in the case of Colocotronis, who was illiterate, his dictated letters to some one who could put them into shape. The Greeks have been particularly active in investigating the history of the Byzantine empire, of the Venetian domination, and of special localities. The history of Papasthegopoulos is especially valuable in regard to the later periods, and its style is singularly clear and flowing. Along with him should be mentioned Sakellion, Sakellarios, Sathas, Dyanzotis, Monastozides, Dragomiris, Triantaphyllis, and Paspatis. In theology Gieonimos stands forth as the first of preachers, theology occupying the place which Minnatis held as a popular orator in the 17th century. Contogonis is well known by his *History of Patriotic Literature down to the Fourteenth Century*, and by his edition of *Clement's Romances*. Basilis Philostandis has distinguished himself for profoundness and originality. Along with him may be mentioned V. Varnavas and Benneri. Greeks have also distinguished themselves in medicine, but very frequently they write their scientific

Law, &c	books in French on law, political economy, and on mathematics and physical sciences.	They have also produced many treatises on law, political economy, and on mathematics and physical sciences. Little has been accomplished in the way of original novel-writing.
Fiction	of original novel-writing. We have seen that Panagiotis and Alexander Soutos and Rangabé wrote novels, and others have done so likewise, but with moderate success. One recent work, " <i>H Παισιοντα Ιουδια</i> ," by Roidos, has gained considerable popularity, and is written in an attractive and vigorous style. Another novelist, Stephanos Xenos, was known to English readers by the London edition of his " <i>East and West</i> ." He is the author of a novel called " <i>the Dead in Turkey</i> ," and he wrote in Greek an interesting account of the Exylition in London in 1861. Several	We have seen that Panagiotis and Alexander Soutos and Rangabé wrote novels, and others have done so likewise, but with moderate success. One recent work, " <i>H Παισιοντα Ιουδια</i> ," by Roidos, has gained considerable popularity, and is written in an attractive and vigorous style. Another novelist, Stephanos Xenos, was known to English readers by the London edition of his " <i>East and West</i> ." He is the author of a novel called " <i>the Dead in Turkey</i> ," and he wrote in Greek an interesting account of the Exylition in London in 1861. Several

literature. Especially deserving of mention is Doris  
 authors d'Istia, whose work on the *Women of the West*, contributed  
 to the *Pandora* and forming a pendant to her *Women of  
 the East*, written in French, shows remarkable powers of  
 research, exposition, and criticism. The Greeks, as might  
 have been expected, have produced good editions of the  
 classical writers. They have also done much to elucidate  
 the archaeology of their country, though most of their works  
 on this subject are written in foreign languages. Among

these works especially deserving mention are *Anweisung zur Kenntnis der Sprache der Alten Griechen*, in French, the *Grievances of the Ancient Greeks*, by Peravogianos, in German, the *Hellenic Antiquities*, by Rangabé, in French, the *Symphylai Anaglyphoi*, by Koumanoudis, in modern Greek, and the *Dolours and its Ruins*, by Cerapanos, in French. The works of Lambros on numismatics are of great value. The Philo- logy Greeks have also contributed much to a knowledge of the ancient Greek language. Asopios has gained a great name in this direction, and the contributions of Constantinos Contos are very valuable. They have also done much to collect materials for a knowledge of existing dialects. Investigations have been made into the dialects of the Tziconnaris by Economos and Nco Locran by Chalkopoulos.

and lists of popular words and forms to be found in Cyprus, Chios, Pella, Cyprus, Locris, and other places, have appeared in *Pandora* and other journals. Catechisms have written much and well on Latin literature. The Greeks have a very large number of newspapers and journals, if we consider the number of the population, but, as might be expected, their existence is precarious, and many are short lived. Translations abound in modern Greek, especially from the French, but the Greeks have also translated classical English. German and Italian novels and pamphlets are translated into Greek, and the Greek world is full of the translations. The translations include those of Muller and Dalglish's *History of Greek Literature* by Valletta, and Shakespeare's *Romeo and Juliet*, Hamlet, and Macbeth by Bikelas.

[illegible]

## INDEX

[illegible]

GREEK CHURCH, THE, or more properly the Eastern Church, is both the source and background of the Western Christianity now in the East, and Greek was the language of the Scriptures and early services of the church, but when Latin Christianity established itself in Europe and Africa, and when the old Roman empire fell in two, and the eastern half became separate in government, interests, and ideas from the western, the term Greek or Eastern Church acquired gradually a fixed meaning. It denoted the church which included the patriarchates of Antioch, Alexandria, Jerusalem, and Constantinople, and their dependencies. The ecclesiastical division of the early church, at least within the empire, was based upon the civil. Constantine introduced a new partition of the empire into dioceses, and the church adopted a similar division. The bishop of the chief city in each diocese naturally rose to a pre-eminence, and was commonly called *oikumenikē*—a title borrowed from the civil jurisdiction. In process of time the common title *patriarch* was restricted to the most eminent of these exarchs, and councils decided who were worthy of the dignity. The council of Nicaea recognized three patriarchs—the bishops of Rome, Alexandria, and Antioch. To these were afterwards added the bishops of Constantinople and Jerusalem. When the empire was divided, there was one patriarch in the West, the bishop of Rome, while in the East there were at first two, then four, and lately five. Thus geographical fact has had a great deal to do in determining the character of the Eastern Church. It is not a despotic monarchy governed from one centre and by a monarch in whom plenitude of power resides. It is an oligarchy of patriarchs. It is based, of course, on the great body of bishops, but episcopal rule, through the various grades of metropolitan, primate, exarch, attains to sovereignty only in the five patriarchal thrones. Each patriarch is, within his diocese, what the Gallican theory makes the pope in the universal church. He is supreme, and not amenable to any of his brother patriarchs, but is within the jurisdiction of an oecumenical synod. This makes the Greek Church quite distinct in government and traditions of polity from the Western. It has ever been the policy of Rome to efface national distinctions, but under the shadow of the Eastern Church national churches have grown and flourished. Revolts against Rome have always implied a repudiation of the ruling principles of Ultramontanism, but the schismatic churches of the East have always reproduced the ecclesiastical polity of the church which they have deserted.

The Greek Church, like the Roman, soon spread out far beyond the imperial dioceses which at first fixed its boundaries, but, unlike the Roman, it did not keep for Christianity all the lands it had once laid hold of. What Rome Christianized, with the exception of Africa, remained Christian. The old empire was overrun by the barbarians, but the conquering empire imposed its law and its religion upon its conquerors, and pagan and heretic became in the end Catholic Christians. In the East it was otherwise. The empire maintained itself long and died hard, but its decline and fall meant not merely the overthrow of the supremacy of the emperors of the East, it meant also the destruction of civilization and the submergence of Christianity. In the West, German and Saxon, and Goth and Lombard, became Christian law-abiding peoples. In the East Arab and Kuid, the Seljuk and Ottoman Turk, remained what they were before they swarmed over the Eastern empire, and could never be taught either law or gospel. It is true that the Eastern Church more than made up for her losses by her missionary enterprise, but she never conquered her conquerors, and the historian is too apt to speak of her past glories and forget her present strength. The same reason also makes it difficult to describe, with any accuracy, the extent of the Greek Church. She has shifted her position

so often that to describe her extent at any one period must be misleading. The church never at any one period occupied all the territories she has possessed.

The patriarchate of Constantinople included the imperial dioceses of Pontus, Asia, Thrace, and Eastern Illyricum—*ægeæ*, speaking roughly, the greater part of Asia Minor, European Turkey, and Greece, with a small portion of Austria. The imperial diocese of Pontus was governed by the exarch of Cæsarea, who ruled over thirteen metropolitans with more than 100 suffragans, now there are nine metropolitans (Kaisariæ, Iznik, Angour, Niksa, Amasia, Iamni, Kadiköy, Broussa, Izmir), and one archbishop (Thessalonica), but the suffragans seem to have disappeared. Asia was governed by the exarch of Ephesus, who ruled over twelve metropolitans with more than 350 suffragan bishops. Of these there remain Ephesus, with its suffragans Aidone and Chamae, Smyrna, Artaki, Marmara, Allah Shehi, Rhodes, Samos, Khio, Cos, Paronaxia, Santouina, Andrio, Milo, Lero, Scarpanto, Sepharo, Imbro, Lemno, Metelini, Molivo, Myra, and Konieh. In Asia Minor the church maintains but a small remnant of her former greatness, in Europe it is otherwise. The old outlines, however, are effaced whenever the Christian races have emancipated themselves from the Turkish rule, and the national churches of Greece, Servia, and Roumania have reorganized themselves on a new basis. Those whose the Turkish empire has not yet been able to stamp her old organization, but greatly impaired. The national churches of Russia, Georgia, and Armenia are offshoots from the patriarchate of Constantinople, but quite independent of its jurisdiction.

The patriarchate of Antioch has undergone most changes in extent of jurisdiction, arising from the transfer of seat to Jerusalem, from the progress of the schismatic churches of the East, and from the conquests of the Mahometans. At the height of its power the patriarch of Antioch ruled over 12 metropolitans and 250 suffragan bishops. In the time of the first crusade 153 still survived, now there are scarcely 20. Most of those that remain are called either metropolitan or archiepiscopal sees, but they have few or no suffragans. In Syria there are still Antioch, Aleppo, Ladoesa, and Arcadia, in Phœnicia, Tyre and Sidon, Beyrout, Tripolis, Emesa, and Heliopolis, in Cilicia, Adana, in Syria, Epiphania, in Iacania, Solencia, in Cyprus, Famagosta, with Prescop, Bafio, Nicosia, Limasol, and Nicosia as suffragan sees. Cyprus has been independent of Antioch, however, since the council of Ephesus. Antioch also had jurisdiction beyond the bounds of the empire over Chaldea and India, and the missionaries of Antioch seem to have preached Christianity in the borders of China. The Chaldean Church now, however, is almost entirely Nestorian. The Thomas Christians of India do not belong to the Orthodox Greek Church. In Syria the Jacobites are more numerous than the Orthodox, while the Maronites of Lebanon have become subject to Rome.

In the earlier period of the church, ecclesiastical followed civil divisions so closely that Jerusalem, in spite of the sacred associations connected with it, was merely an ordinary bishopric dependent on the metropolitan of Cæsarea. Ambitious prelates had from time to time endeavoured to advance the pretensions of their see, but it was not until the council of Chalcedon, in 451, that Jerusalem was made a patriarchate with jurisdiction over Palestine. From this time on to the irruption of the Saracens, the patriarchate of Jerusalem was highly prosperous. It ruled over three metropolitans with eighty suffragans. The modern patriarch has seven suffragans, all of whom enjoy the titles of metropolitan or archbishop—Cæsarea, Scythopolis (Bethshan), Petra, Ptolemais, Sinai, Nablous, Samaria. The patriarchs, however, are non-resident (they live in Constantinople), and the primate of Palestine is the metropolitan of Cæsarea.

The patriarch of Alexandria in ancient times possessed much more power than the others, and the church ruled by him was much more centralized. He had no metropolitans. His hundred suffragans were ordinary bishops. This perhaps in part accounts for the decay of the Orthodox church in Egypt, at present there is no bishop but the patriarch. The Christians in Egypt are for the most part Monophysites. The church of Nubia has been blotted out. The church of Ethiopia or Abyssinia is Monophysite, and acknowledges the Jacobite patriarch of Cairo.

**HISTORY—Controversies and Schemes.**—To describe the controversies of the Greek Church is to write the history of the church of the first five centuries, in a short sketch like this all that can be done is to mention those causes of division which led (1) to the formation of the schismatic churches of the East, and (2) to the open rupture with Latin Christianity.

The great dogmatic work of the Greek Church was the definition of that portion of the creed of Christendom which concerns *theology proper*,—the doctrines of the essential nature of the Godhead, and the doctrine of the Godhead in relation with manhood in the incarnation, while it fell to the Latin Church to define *anthropology*, or the doctrine of man's nature and needs. The controversies which concern us are all about the person of Christ, the Theanthropos, for they alone are represented in the schismatic churches of the East. These controversies are more easily described, at least for our purpose, by reference to the œcumenical councils of the ancient and undivided church.

**Rise of Sects.**—All the churches of the East, schismatic as well as orthodox, accept unreservedly the decrees of the first two councils. The schismatic churches protest against the additions made to the creeds of Nicea and Constantinople by succeeding councils. The Niceo-Constantinopolitan creed declared that Christ was *consubstantial* (*ὁμοούσιος*) with the Father, and that He had become man (*ἐνανθρώπησας*). Disputes arose when theologians tried to explain the latter phrase. These differences took two separate and extreme types, the one of which forcibly separated the two natures so as to deny anything like a real union, while the other insisted upon a mixture of the two, or an absorption of the human in the divine. The former was the creed of Chalcedon and the latter the creed of Egypt, Chalcedon was the home of Nestorianism, Egypt the land of Monophysitism. The Nestorians accept the decisions of the first two councils, and reject the decrees of all the rest as unwarranted alterations of the creed of Nicea. The Monophysites accept the first three councils, but reject the decree of Chalcedon and all that come after it.

The council of Ephesus, the third œcumenical, had insisted upon applying the term *Theotokos* to the Virgin Mary, and this was repeated in the symbol of Chalcedon, which says that Christ was born of the Virgin Mary, the *Theotokos*, "according to the manhood." The same symbol also declares that Christ is "to be acknowledged in two natures, indivisibly and inseparably." Hence the Nestorians, who insisted upon the duality of the natures to such a degree as to lose sight of the unity of the person, and who rejected the term *Theotokos*, repudiated the decrees both of Ephesus and of Chalcedon, and upon the promulgation of the decrees of Chalcedon formally separated from the church. Nestorianism had sprung from an exaggeration of the theology of the school of Antioch, and the schism weakened that patriarchate and its dependencies. It took root in Chalcedon, and became very powerful. No small part of the literature and patriarchal from the city. He settled at Amidā, now called Caramit, which is still the ecclesiastical centre. The second dignitary is the metropolitan (fruitbearer) of the East, who was originally a missionary bishop to the regions east of the Tigris. He is now settled at Mosul. The Syrian Jacobites

to the Caspian Sea were almost infinite. The Malabar coast and the Isles of the Ocean, Zootica and Ceylon, were peopled with an increasing number of Christians. The missionaries of Balch and Samarcand pursued without fear the footsteps of the roving Tartar, and insinuated themselves into the valleys of the Jannus and the banks of the Selenga." Their principal bishop took the title of patriarch of Babylon. His seat was later removed to Baghdad and then to Mosul, it is now at Julameik in Kurdistan. In the 11th century he ruled over twenty-five metropolitans, and his jurisdiction extended from the Tigris to China, from Lake Baikal to South India. Persecutions weakened the church, Timur almost exterminated it. In the 16th century a schism occurred, many of the Nestorians yielded obedience to Rome. The Roman Nestorians are usually called Chaldeans, though all lay claim to the title. At present the patriarch rules over two metropolitans and sixteen suffragan bishops. The Nestorians dwell principally in Kurdistan, though many are found in Mesopotamia and in India. In the latter country they are numerous on the Malabar coast, and are called Thomas Christians.

The council of Chalcedon, the fourth œcumenical, declared that Christ is to be acknowledged "in two natures—unconfusedly, unchangeably," and therefore decided against the opinions of all who either believed that the divinity is the sole nature of Christ, or who, rejecting this, taught only one composite nature of Christ (one nature and one person, instead of two natures and one person). The advocates of the one nature theory were called Monophysites, and they gave rise to numerous sects, and to at least three separate national churches—the Jacobites of Syria, the Copts of Egypt, and the Abyssinian Church.

The term "Jacobite" (from Jacobus Baradaeus, a Syrian theologian) is properly confined to the Syrian Monophysites, but is sometimes used to denote all the various divisions of this heresy. The Jacobites therefore accept the first three councils and reject those that follow. The Armenian Church does the same, and it is common to class the Armenians with the Jacobites, while some theologians have made them more hostile than the Jacobites of Syria and Egypt (Neale, *Holy Eastern Church, Patriarchs of Alexandria*, pp. 8-10). This, however, seems a wrong opinion, and the Armenians ought to be reckoned as Orthodox (see ARMENIAN CHURCH). Apart, however, from theological criticism, the Jacobites are arranged under three patriarchates—Antioch, Alexandria, and Armenia. Antioch and Alexandria have intercommunion, but Armenia, in spite of times of reconciliation, stands apart. Under the patriarch of Alexandria is the metropolitan of metropolitans of Abyssinia, and under the patriarch of Antioch the metropolitan of the East. The Jacobites of Egypt greatly outnumber the members of the Orthodox Greek Church there. The patriarch assumes jurisdiction over Egypt, Jerusalem, Nubia, Abyssinia, and the Pentapolis. He now resides in Cairo, and is chosen by lot in a council of all the bishops from a number of monks recommended by four convents to whom belongs this privilege. He has four suffragans the bishops of Menout, Sherkeyeh, Behnesa, Fayoum, Minyeh, Senabau, Mansfoult, Siout, Abuteh, Aschumm, Rene, Kauss and Nekada, and Khartoum. He has besides jurisdiction over twenty-six monasteries, and rules nominally over the Church of Abyssinia.

The Syrian Jacobites also form a patriarchate—the patriarchate of Antioch. While Antioch belonged to the empire the persecution of the state drove the Jacobite patriarch from the city. He settled at Amidā, now called Caramit, which is still the ecclesiastical centre. The second dignitary is the metropolitan (fruitbearer) of the East, who was originally a missionary bishop to the regions east of the Tigris. He is now settled at Mosul. The Syrian Jacobites



could at one time boast 20 metropolitans and 103 bishops, now there are only 5 metropolitans (Caramit, Mosul, Measid, Aleppo, and Jerusalem) without suffragans.

The decisions of Chalcedon, which were the occasion of the formation of all these sects outside, did not put an end to Christological controversy inside the Orthodox Greek Church. The most prominent question which emerged in attempting to define further the person of Christ was whether the will belonged to the nature or the person, or, as it came to be stated, whether Christ had two wills or only one. The church in the sixth oecumenical council at Constantinople declared that Christ had two wills. The Monothelites refused to submit, and the result was the formation of another schismatic church—the Maronite Church of the Lebanon range. The Maronites, however, in the 12th century were reconciled to Rome, and cannot now be said to belong to the Greek Church.

*Conflict with Rome*—The relation of the Greek Church to the Roman may be described as one of growing estrangement from the 5th to the 11th century, and a series of abortive attempts at reconciliation since the latter date. The estrangement and final rupture may be traced to the overweening pretensions of the Roman bishops and to Western innovation in the doctrine of the Holy Spirit, accompanied by an alteration of creed. In the early church three bishops stood forth prominently, principally from the political eminence of the cities in which they ruled—the bishops of Rome, Alexandria, and Antioch. The transfer of the seat of empire from Rome to Constantinople gave the bishops of Rome a possible rival in the patriarch of Constantinople, but the absence of an overawing court and meddling statesmen did more than recoup the loss to the head of the Roman Church. The theological calumnies of the West, amid the violent theological disputes which troubled the Eastern patriarchates, and the statesmanlike wisdom of Rome's greater bishops, combined to give a unique position to the pope, which councils in vain strove to shake, and which in time of difficulty the Eastern patriarchs were fain to acknowledge and make use of, however they might protest against it and the conclusions deduced from it. But this pre-eminence, or rather the Roman idea of what was involved in it, was never acknowledged in the East, to press it upon the Eastern patriarchs was to prepare the way for separation, to insist upon it in times of imitation was to cause a schism. The theological genius of the East was different from that of the West. The Greek theology had its roots in Greek philosophy, while a great deal of Western theology was based on Roman law. The Greek fathers succeeded the Sophists, the Latin theologians succeeded the Roman advocates (Stanley's *East Ch.* ch. 1). This gave rise to misunderstandings, and at last led to two widely separate ways of regarding and defining one important doctrine—the procession of the Holy Spirit from the Father or from the Father and the Son. Political jealousies and interests intensified the disputes, and at last, after many prominent symptoms, the final break came in 1054, when Leo IX smote Michael Cœlularius and the whole of the Eastern Church with an excommunication. There had been mutual excommunications before, but they had not resulted in permanent schisms. "It was scarce two centuries since anathemas had been exchanged between Adrian I and Photius, between Photius and Nicholas I. The sixth council had formally anathematized Honorius I. by name. There had been great violence of language in the 6th century between Gregory I and John the Fastid, and not many years before that the name of Vigilius had been deliberately erased from every one of the diptychs of the Eastern Church" (Foulkes's *Christendom's Divisions*, i. § 17). Now, however, the separation was final, and the ostensible cause of its finality was the introduction by the

Latins of two words *filioque* into the creed. It is this addition which was and which still remains the permanent cause of separation. Foulkes has pointed out in his second volume (ch. 1-3) that there was a resumption of intercourse more than once between Rome and Constantinople after 1054, and that the overbearing character of the Norman crusaders, and finally the horrors of the sack of Constantinople in the fourth crusade, were the real causes of the permanent estrangement. It is undeniable, however, that the *filioque* question has always come up to bat the way in any subsequent attempts at intercommunion.

The theological question involved is a very small one, but it brings out clearly the opposing characteristics of Eastern and Western theology, and so has acquired an importance far beyond its own worth. The question is really one about the relations subsisting between the persons of the Trinity and their hypostatical properties. The Western Church affirms that the Holy Spirit "proceeds from" the Father and from the Son. It believes that the Spirit of the Father must be the Spirit of the Son also. Such a theory seems alone able to satisfy the practical instincts of the West, which did not concern itself with the metaphysical aspect of the Trinity, but with Godhead in its relation to redeemed humanity. The Eastern Church affirms that the Holy Spirit proceeds from the Father only. The Eastern theologians think that the Western double procession degrades the Deity and destroys the perfection of the Trinity. The double procession, in his eyes, means two active principles (*arêtes*) in the Deity, and it means also that there is a confusion between the hypostatical properties, a property possessed by the Father and distinctive of the First Person is attributed also to the Second. This is the theological, and there is conjunctured with it an historical and moral dispute. The Greeks allege that the addition of the words *filioque* was made, not only without authority, and therefore unlawfully, but also for the purpose of forcing a rupture between East and West in the interests of the barbarian empire of the West.

Attempts at reconciliation were made from time to time afterwards, but were always wrecked on the two points of papal supremacy, when it meant the right to impose Western usages upon the East, and of the addition to the creed. First there was the negotiation between Pope Gregory IX and the Greek patriarch Germanus. The Latin conditions were practically recognition of papal jurisdiction, the use of unleavened bread enforced on the Greeks, and the Greeks to be permitted to omit *filioque* on condition that they burnt all books written against the Western doctrine. The Greek patriarch refused the terms. Then came negotiations under Innocent IV and Clement IV, in which the popes proposed the same conditions as Gregory IX, with additions. These proposals were rejected by the Greeks, who regarded them as attempts to enforce new creeds on their church.

The negotiations at the council of Lyons (1274) were, strictly speaking, between the pope and the Greek emperor, and were more political than ecclesiastical. Michael Palæologus ruled in Constantinople while Baldwin II, the last of the Latin emperors, was an exile in Europe. Palæologus wished the pope to acknowledge his title to be emperor of the East, and in return promised submission to the papal supremacy and the union of the Greek with the Latin Church on the pope's own terms. This enforced union lasted only during the lifetime of the emperor. The only other attempt at union which requires to be mentioned is that made at the council of Florence. It was really suggested by the political weakness of the Byzantine empire and the dread of the approach of the Turk. John Palæologus the emperor, Joseph the patriarch of Constantinople, and several Greek bishops came to Italy and appeared at the council of Florence—the papal council, the rival of the

council of Basel. As on former occasions the Greeks were at first deceived by false representations, they were betrayed into recognition of papal supremacy, and tricked into signing what could afterwards be represented as a submission to Western doctrine. The natural consequences followed,—a repudiation of what had been done, and the Greek bishops on their way home took care to make emphatic their ritualistic differences from Rome. Soon after came the fall of Constantinople, and with this event an end to the political reasons for the submission of the Greek clergy. Rome's schemes for a union which meant an unconditional submission on the part of the Greeks did not cease, however, but they were no longer attempted on a grand scale. Jesuit missionaries after the information stirred up schisms in some parts of the Eastern Church, and in Austria and Poland many of the Greeks were compelled to submit themselves to the see of Rome. The result of these schemes has been what is called the *Unia*, or the United Greeks. These various unions have commonly arisen from dissensions among the Greeks themselves when a position of the dissentients have made submission to Rome. Rome commonly promised to allow them to enjoy their own liturgies and rites of worship, but usually broke her promises. This was done so systematically that the colleges of the Propaganda prints what profess to be the old liturgies of the Eastern churches, which are really so interpolated as to bring them surreptitiously into harmony with the Western rites. This is done so unreservedly that it is impossible to trust to any professedly Eastern creed or service-book printed at the office of the Propaganda in Rome.

*Diffusion of National Churches included in the Orthodox Greek Church*.—Mr. Emley, in his *History of Greece*, has shown that there has been always a very close relation between the church and national life. Christianity from the first connected itself with the social organization of the people, and therefore in every province assumed the language and the usages of the locality. In this way it was able to command at once individual attachment and universal power. This feeling died down to some extent when Constantine made use of the church to consolidate his empire. But it revived under the persecution of the Arian emperors. The struggle against Arianism was not merely a struggle for orthodoxy. Athanasius was really at the head of a national Greek party resisting the domination of a Latin-speaking court. From this time onwards Greek patriotism and Greek orthodoxy have been almost convertible terms, and this led naturally to revolts against Greek supremacy in the days of Justinian and other emperors. Dean Stanley is probably correct when he describes the heretical churches of the East as the ancient national churches of Egypt, Syria, and Armenia in revolt against supposed innovations in the earlier faith imposed on them by Greek supremacy. In the East, as in Scotland, the history of the church is the key to the history of the nation, and in the freedom of the church the Greek saw the freedom and supremacy of his race. For this very reason Orthodox Eastern Christians of alien race felt compelled to resist Greek domination by means of independent ecclesiastical organization, and the structure of the church rather favoured than interfered with the coexistence of separate national churches professing the same faith. Another circumstance favoured the creation of separate national churches. While the Greek empire lasted the Greek emperors had a right of investiture on the election of a new patriarch, and this right was retained by the Turkish sultans after the conquest of Constantinople. The Russian people, for example, could not contemplate with calmness as the head of their church a bishop appointed by the hereditary enemy of their country. In this way the jealousies of race and the necessities of nations have produced various national churches which are

independent or autocephalous, and yet are one in doctrine with the Orthodox Greek Church. The most important of these are the churches of Russia, Georgia, Serbia, Roumania, Greece, and Montenegro. The churches of Russia and Georgia have been united.

The Church of Russia dates from 988, when Prince Vladimir Russian and his people accepted Christianity. The metropolitan of the Church subject to the patriarch of Constantinople, resided at half on the Dnieper. During the Tartar invasion the metropolitan was destroyed, and Vladimir became the ecclesiastical capital. In 1320 the metropolitan fixed their seat at Moscow. In 1582 James, patriarch of Constantinople, raised Job, 46th metropolitan, to the patriarchal dignity, and the seat was afterwards confirmed by a general council of the East. In this way the Russian Church became autocephalous, and its patriarch had immense power. In 1721 Peter the Great forbade the election of a new patriarch, and in 1721 he established the Holy Governing Synod to supply the place of the patriarch. This body now governs the Russian Church, and consists of five or six bishops, one or two other ecclesiastics of dignity and several laymen, all appointed by the emperor. The Church of Georgia, which has existed from a very early period, and was dependent first on the patriarch of Antioch and then on the patriarch of Constantinople, has since 1801 been incorporated in the Russian Church. Its head, the archbishop of Tiflis, is a member of the Holy Governing Synod, with the title of exarch, and having under him four suffragans. It is divided for ecclesiastical purposes into eparchies of three classes, each of which is ruled over by a bishop. There are three eparchies of the first class, ruled by the metropolitans of Kilia, Novgorod and St. Petersburg, and Moscow. The steady increase of the Russian Church makes it difficult to detail with exactness the number of bishops belonging to the three classes, but, according to the report presented to the Holy Governing Synod in 1874, there are, in addition to the three archbishops of the first class, twenty-one of the second class, five of the third, and six vicarials. These sixty-three bishops possess diocesan authority, and there are besides, evidencing the exaltation of Georgia, fifty-six bishops ruling over monasteries.

The Church of Serbia has undergone great vicissitudes. In medieval Serbian times, when Serbia was a strong kingdom, the head of the church invariably claimed the title and authority of patriarch. In 1810, when Kara George achieved the independence of the kingdom, the archbishop of Kalowitz in Hungary was recognized as the head of the church, but in 1830 the national church was reconstituted and declared to be autocephalous. In 1838 the seat of government was removed to Belgrade, and the metropolitan of Belgrade is now the head of the Serbian Church, though his right is still disputed by the archbishop of Kalowitz. He has under him as suffragans the bishops of Shabatz, Ostseck, and Uclure, the last of whom resides at Krasnowitz. Election to the episcopate is subject to the veto of the prince and of the patriarch of Constantinople. The extension of Serbia under the provisions of the treaty of Berlin will probably cause some ecclesiastical changes.

Before the close of the two provinces of Moldavia and Wallachia, Roumania the Orthodox Greek Church was ruled by two metropolitans—the main one at Jassy and the other at Bucharest. Since the independence of the united provinces there has been a long continued conflict, which had for its design, not merely to throw off the supremacy of the patriarch of Constantinople, but to curb the influence of the higher clergy, and to assert the pre-eminence of the Slavonic over the Greek element. The result has been that the state, aided by the Russian clergy and the people, has thrown off the supremacy of Constantinople, united the church under one metropolitan of Roumania, who has under him the metropolitans of Moldavia and six bishops, considered as property of most of the convents, and the influence of Greek influence, published liturgies either in the Slavonic or in the Roumanian language, and asserted the supremacy of the state.

The constitution of the Church of Modern Greece is the result of Hellenic the peculiar position of the patriarch of Constantinople, who, as a champion of liberation was sympathized in, not merely by the inhabitants of Greece, but by all the Greek-speaking Christians in the East. But the patriarch was in the hands of the Turks, he had been appointed by the sultan, and he was compelled by the Turkish authorities to be the movement for freedom. When the Greeks achieved independence they refused to be subject ecclesiastically to a patriarch who was nominated by the sultan (June 9, 1828), and, to add to their difficulties, there was in the country twenty-two bishops who had been consecrated by the patriarch, twelve bishops who had been consecrated irregularly during the war, and about twenty bishops who had been deprived of their sees during the troubles. In 1828 the bishops who claimed to be genuine metropolitans, at the instance of the Government and people resolved that there should be ten diocesan bishops and forty additional provisional sees. They also resolved that the church should be governed after the manner of the Russian Church by a synod, and they decreed that the king of Greece was to be head of the church. All these ideas were

emerged out with some modifications, and gradually the patriarch of Constantinople in 1850 acknowledged the independence of the church, which gradually grew to be more independent of the state. The provincial sees were not ill merged in the ten proposed dioceses. Greece at present is divided into four archdioceses—(1) the Constantinian and Eastern—divided into eight sees, of four archbishops and four bishops, (2) the Peloponnesian—divided into twelve sees, of six archbishops and six bishops, (3) the islands of the *Ægean Sea*—governed by one archbishop and three bishops, and (4) the Ionian Islands—governed by five archbishops. The Greek Church in Greece includes a good many monasteries, but the number has been diminished since the war of liberation, and a great many of those that remain are devoted to the purposes of education. Many of these convents are dependent on the celebrated ancient monasteries of Athos, Sinai, and Jerusalem. The Greek Church has done and is doing a great deal for the cause of education in Greece.

The latter entity, which subsists between the people of the Black Mountain and the Turks, results from the beginning repudiate the authority of the patriarch of Constantinople, and the church is nominally independent. It is, however, very closely allied to the Russian Church. Up to the year 1892 the patriarch and the civil authority were vested in one individual, and the prince bishop was always chosen from the family of Petrowitch, but in that year the prince bishop Danilo invited, and demanded his episcopal functions. Since then there has been a bishop of Montenegro who has metropolitan functions. He has no suffragan bishops, but rules over three archpriests and a large number of inferior clergy. He is consecrated by the Holy Synod of the Russian Church. The Church of Bulgaria demanded independence about fifteen years ago, and has practically enjoyed it since 1868, although it has not yet obtained recognition. It is governed by an exarch who, while recognizing the authority of the patriarch of Constantinople, refuses to allow him to interfere in any way in the internal government of the church. It is still under excommunication by the patriarch. The new rights which Bulgaria has acquired under the treaty of Berlin will probably lead to a reorganization of the church.

**DOCTRINES AND CREEDS.**—The Greek Church has no creeds in the modern Western use of the word, no *normative* summaries of what must be believed. It has preserved the older idea that a creed is an adoring confession of the church engaged in worship, and, when occasion called for more, the belief of the church was expressed more by way of public testimony than in symbolical books. Still the doctrines of the church can be gathered from these confessions of faith. The Greek creeds may be roughly placed in two classes, the oecumenical creeds of the early undivided church, and later testimonies defining the position of the Orthodox Church of the East with regard to the belief of the Roman Catholic and of Protestant Churches. These testimonies were called forth mainly by the protest of Greek theologians against Jesuitism on the one hand and against the reforming tendencies of Cyril Lucaris on the other. The Orthodox Greek Church adopts the doctrinal decisions of the seven oecumenical councils, together with the canons of the Councilum Quinisextum or second Trullan council, and they further hold that all these definitions and canons are simply explanations and enforcements of the Nicene-Constantinopolitan creed, and the decrees of the first council of Nicea. The first four councils settled the orthodox faith on the doctrines of the Trinity and of the Incarnation, the fifth supplemented the decisions of the first four. The sixth declared against Monothelism, the seventh sanctioned the worship (*δουλεία* καὶ *ἐξάρτυση*) λατρείας of images, the council held in the Trullus (a saloon in the palace at Constantinople) supplemented by canons of discipline the doctrinal decrees of the fifth and sixth councils.

The Reformation of the 16th century was not without effect on the Greek Church. Some of the Reformers, notably Melancthon, expected to effect a reunion of Christianity by means of the Greeks, cherishing the same hopes as the modern Old Catholics and their English sympathizers. Melancthon himself sent a Greek translation of the Augsburg Confession to Joseph, patriarch of Constantinople, and some years afterwards Jacob Andreas and Martin Crusius began a correspondence with Jeremiah, patriarch of Constantinople, in which they asked an official expression of his opinions about Lutheran doctrine. The result was

that Jeremiah answered in his *Consensio Orientalis Ecclesiae* condemning the distinctive principles of Lutheranism.

The reformatory movement of Cyril Lucaris brought the Greek Church face to face with Reformation theology. Cyril was a learned Cretan, who, having travelled extensively in Europe, and having become acquainted with and devoted to the Reformed faith, was afterwards elected patriarch of Alexandria in 1603 and patriarch of Constantinople in 1621. He conceived the plan of reforming the Eastern Church by bringing its doctrines into harmony with those of Calvinism, and by sending able young Greek theologians to Switzerland, Holland, and England to study Protestant theology. His scheme of reform was opposed chiefly by the majority of the Jesuits. He was five times deposed, and five times reinstated. In the end he was murdered by the Turks at the instigation of the Jesuits. The church anathematized his doctrines, and in its later testimonies repudiated his confession on the one hand and Jesuit ideas on the other. The most important of these testimonies are (1) the Orthodox confession or catechism of Peter Mogilas, confirmed by the Eastern patriarchs and by the synod of Jerusalem (1643), and (2) the decree of the synod of Jerusalem or the confession of Dositheus (1672). Besides these, the catechisms of the Russian Church should be consulted, especially the catechism of Philaret, which since 1859 has been used in all the churches and schools in Russia. Founding on these doctrinal sources the teaching of the Orthodox Greek Church is—

Christianity is a Divine revelation communicated to mankind through Christ, its saving truths are to be learned from the Bible and tradition, the former having been written, and the latter mainly learned uncorrupted through the influence of the Holy Spirit, the interpretation of the Bible belongs to the Church, which is taught by the Holy Spirit, but every believer may read the Scriptures.

According to the Christian revelation, God is a Trinity, that is, the Divine Essence exists in Three Persons, perfectly equal in nature and dignity, the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit, *οἱ ἅγιοι ἅπαντες προϋπάρχοντες ἀλλήλοις*. Besides the Trinity God there is no other object of divine worship, but *ἡμεῖς* (*we*) (*ὡς πρὸς τὴν ἀνθρώπων φύσιν*) (*as regards the nature of man*) we are to offer prayer to the Virgin Mary, and *ὡς πρὸς τὴν θεοποίησιν* (*as regards the divinization*) to the saints and to their precious and relics.

Man is born with a corrupt bias which was not his at creation, the first man, when created, possessed IMMORTALITY, FREEDOM OF WILL, AND WAS REGULATED BY REASON. Through the first sin Adam and his posterity lost IMMORTALITY, AND HIS WILL, IN A SIN AGAINST REASON. In this natural state man, who even before he actually sins is a sinner before God by original or inherited sin, commits manifold actual transgressions, but he is not absolutely without power of evil toward good, and he is not without power of good toward evil. Christ, the Son of God, became man in two natures, which in eternally and inseparably united make One Person, and, according to the eternal purpose of God, has obtained for man reconciliation with God, and eternal life, inasmuch as He by His voluntary death has made satisfaction to God for the world's sin, and this satisfaction was PERFECTED BY COMMUNICATION WITH THE SIN OF THE WORLD. Man is made partaker of eternalization in spiritual regeneration, which he attains to, being led and kept by his Holy Church, his divine help is offered to all men without distinction, and may be enjoyed. In order to attain to salvation, man is justified, and when so justified can do no more than THE COMMANDS OF GOD. He may fall from a state of grace through mortal sin.

Regeneration is effected by the word of God and in the sacraments, which under visible signs communicate God's invisible grace to Christians when administered *κατὰ ἐντολὴν*. There are seven sacraments or sacraments. Baptism and Eucharist denote original sin. In the Eucharist the true body and blood of Christ are substantially present, and the elements are changed into the substance of Christ, whose body and blood are so perfectly partakers of by communicants. All Christians should receive the bread and the wine. The Eucharist is also an expiatory sacrifice. The new birth when lost may be restored through repentance, which is not merely (1) sorrow and weeping, but also (2) confession of each individual sin to the priest, and (3) the declaration of penance and the pursuit for the removal of the temporal punishment which may have been imposed by God and the Church. Penance accompanied by the general absolution of the priest makes a true sacrament.

<sup>1</sup> This summary has been taken, with corrections, from Winer. Small capitals denote differences from Roman Catholic, italics differences from Protestant doctrine.

The Church of Christ is the fellowship of all: those who accept and profess all the articles of faith transmitted by the Apostles and approved by General Synods. Without this visible Church there is no salvation. It is under the guiding influence of the Holy Ghost, and therefore cannot err; its members of truth. Specially appointed persons are necessary in the service of the Church, and they form in a threefold order, distinct yet diverse from other Christians, of Bishops, Priests, and Deacons. These four Prelates, or, more dignified, have their holding rank among the Bishops, and their Bishops, united in a General Council represent the Church and infallible decide, under the guidance of the Holy Ghost, all matters of faith and ecclesiastical life. All members of Christ must be regularly called and appointed to their office, and are consecrated by the sacrament of orders. Bishops must be married men, and Priests and Deacons must not contract a second marriage. To all priests in common belong, besides the punishment of the words, the administration of the six sacraments, viz., BAPTISM, CONFIRMATION, PRAYERS, EUCHARIST, MATRIMONY, UNCTION OF THE SICK. The bishops alone can administer the sacrament of orders.

*Eccelesiastical ceremonies are part of the divine service, most of them have apostolic origin, and those connected with the sacrament must not be omitted by priests under pain of mortal sin.*

**LITURGY AND WORSHIP.**—The ancient liturgies of the Eastern Church were very numerous, and have been frequently classified. Neale makes three divisions—the liturgy of Jerusalem or of St. James, that of Alexandria or of St. Mark, and that of Edessa or of St. Thaddeus; and Daniel substantially agrees with him. The same passion for uniformity which suppressed the Gallican and Mozarabic liturgies in the West led to the almost exclusive use of the liturgy of St. James in the East. It is used in two forms, a shorter revised by Chrysostom, and a longer called the liturgy of St. Basil. This liturgy and the service generally are either in Old Greek or in Old Slavonic—and frequent disputes have arisen in particular districts about the language to be employed. Both sacred languages differ from the language of the people, but it cannot be said that in the Eastern Church worship is conducted in an unknown tongue,—“the actual difference,” says Neale, “may be about that between Chaucer’s English and our own.”

**MONASTIC LIFE.**—Monastic life was introduced into Christianity in the East, and has always remained a prominent feature in Greek Christianity. The monks usually follow the rule of St. Basil, but some monasteries, notably that of Sinai, obey the rule of St. Anthony. The monks are of three classes—*κοινοβιακοί*, who live together in a monastery ruled over by a *ἡγούμενος* or *ἀρχιμωνίτης*, *ἀναχωρηταί*, who live either in a cloister apart from the other monks or among the laity, and *ἀσκηταί*, who are hermits. The nuns, virgins or widows, all follow the rule of St. Basil. There are three great convents—at Jerusalem, Sinai, and Mount Athos, each has a great number of daughter monasteries throughout the East. Many monasteries are presided over by bishops, and many monks are in priests’ and deacons’ orders. Monks alone are eligible for election to bishoprics and the higher offices in the Eastern Church.

Number of Adherents—These can only be given approximately—	
Orthodox Greek Church in Turkey	10,000,000
“ “ “ Rumania	4,629,000
“ “ “ Servia	1,848,000
“ “ “ Montenegro	180,000
“ “ “ Greece	1,810,000
“ “ “ Austria	8,000,000
“ “ “ Russia (including Poland, Siberia, and the Caucasus)	68,000,000
	78,814,000

To these may be added—

Russian Dissenters	1,067,000
Armenians	3,000,000
Nestorians (including the Thomas Christians of India)	860,000
Syrian Jacobites	90,000
Coptic Abyssinians	120,000
	1,900,000
	5,828,000
United Greeks (chiefly in Austria and Poland)	4,870,000

See the common books on Church History, as those of Neander, Giesele, Robertson, &c. Special mention may be made of Schöckh’s *Christliche Kirchengeschichte*, and the many collections of councils, e.g., Mansi’s or, in English renderings, Hefele’s *History of the Councils*, published in Clark’s series. For the controversies, which give rise to the schismatic churches, consult F. G. Baur, *Die Christliche Lehre von der Dreieinigkeit*, Dornau, *History of the Doctrine of the Person of Christ*, translated in Clark’s series, J. I. Newman, *The Arians of the Fourth Century*, Newman, *The Apostles and Nicene Creeds*. For the Pelagian controversy, Welch, *Historia Controversiarum de Processu Spiritus Sancti*, and the works of Swete and Lugsen, may be referred to, also Schöckh’s *History of the Councils of Constantinople*. The following are devoted, specially, to the history and condition of the Eastern Church.—M. Le Quien, *Orisne Christianis*, Avesam, *Bibliothèque Orientale*, Stralcy’s *Eastern Church*, and, above all, J. M. Neale, *The Holy Eastern Church*, *Annals of the Eastern Church*, 2 vols., *Palimpsests of Alexandria*, 9 vols., and, published posthumously in 1873, *Palimpsests of Antioch*, 1 vol. For liturgy, see Daniel, *Codic Liturgicus* *Eccl. Univ. in Typis*, Rotterdam, 4 vols., 1817–50, and the shorter works of Neale and Littlefield, Rannand, *Collectio Liturgiarum Orient.*, Leo Allatius, *De liturgiis veteribus Græcorum*, *in Dissertationibus*. For hymnology, see Daniel, *Thesauri Hymnologici*, 4 vols., and Neale’s translations of *Sanctus*, *Epiphany*, and for ecclesiastical collections of Kummel, Guss, and Schell.

**GREEK EMPIRE.** See GREECE, p. 114, *sq.*

**GREEK FIRE** is properly the name applied to the inflammable and destructive compounds used in warfare in the Middle Ages, and particularly by the Byzantine Greeks at the sieges of Constantinople. It was the precursor of gunpowder, and of such modern compositions as dynamite and nitroglycerin, and was frequently converted to gunpowder for many years after its invention. But combustible mineral substances were employed in war much earlier than the Middle Ages. Greek fire has borne the names wildfire, maritime fire, wet fire, fire-rain, called by the French *feu grégeois*, by the Germans *griechisches Feuer*, it was “the oil of cruel fire” of the Chinese, the *oleum incendiarium* of the Romans, and the *ῥῆψ ὑγρὸν*, liquid fire, of the Greeks. Procopius designates it as “Medea’s oil.” Cinnamus (12th century) describes it as *ῥῆψ Μηδικόν*, Median fire, the black clays of Media and Persia supplying the principal content. Used chiefly at sieges and in naval engagements, it was poured from cauldrons and ladles on the besiegers, or the mouths of hideous figures set in the prows of ships. Sometimes flax was twisted and saturated with the liquid, then fired, and projected on arrows, lances, and javelins. At sea it was often flung in pots and phials. The heavy ballists and other military engines were pressed into the service in early times for scattering this destructive compound in large quantities, often in barrels. Owing to the viscid nature of Greek fire it adhered to whatever it touched. It is described as producing a thick smoke, a loud explosion, and a fierce flame, and as being quickened by the element of water. Sea-water is especially mentioned as intensifying its inflammability, and whenever it fell on any ignitable materials, terrible havoc was occasioned. The sight and sound of the engine discharging the torrent of fire caused dismay into many a warrior’s breast. The devastating consequences pictured by early writers are probably overdrawn, but there can be no doubt that they were formidable. Liquid fire has been used in warfare from very remote times, as may be seen in the Assyrian bar reliefs in the British Museum. Greek fire, properly so called, is said to have been employed for the first time against the Saracens in the siege of Constantinople, 673–679, the inventor being a Syrian named Callinicus. The art of compounding Greek fire was concealed at Constantinople with the most jealous care, indeed it was to Greek fire, while the secret of its manufacture was kept, that the city owed its great measure of safety. In 1755 two Frenchmen, Gaubert and Dupré, are reported to have rediscovered the art so carefully concealed by the Byzantine Greeks, but they were prohibited from making it known. Various projects for the use of this or



the publication of a new weekly campaign paper, *The Log Cabin*, it sprang at once into a great circulation. 48,000 copies of the first number were sold, and it finally rose to 80,000. It was considered a brilliant political success, but it was not profitable. On April 3, 1841, Greeley announced that on the following Saturday he would begin the publication of a daily newspaper of the same general principles, to be called *The Tribune*. It was now entirely without money. From a private friend, Mr. James Coggeshall, he borrowed \$1000, on which capital and the editor's reputation *The Tribune* was founded. It began with 600 subscribers. The first week's expenses were \$325 and the receipts \$62. By the end of the fourth week a circulation of 8000, and by the end of the seventh reached 11,000, which was then the full capacity of its press. It was alert, cheerful, and aggressive, was greatly helped by the attacks of rival papers, and promised success almost from the start.

From this time Greeley was popularly identified with *The Tribune*, and its share in the public discussion of the time is his history. It soon became moderately prosperous, and his assured income should have placed him in comfortable ease. In a period of twenty years *The Tribune* divided between its owner the sum of \$1,240,000, besides a surplus of \$881,939 earned and invested in real estate and improved machinery. The average annual dividend on each share (representing 75 of the property) was \$216.66. Greeley's income was a long above \$45,000 per year, frequently as much as \$55,000 or more. But the luckless business itself inherited a disposition to enslave for his friends, and was often unable to discharge its own pressing obligations for food and entertainment. He was thus frequently annoyed, and, as his necessities pressed, he sold successive portions in his newspaper. At the outset he owned the whole of it. When it was already fully established, he sold it to Mr. M. W. McKim as an equity partner, upon the contribution of \$2000 to the common fund. By the 1st of January 1849 he had reduced his interest to 81½ shares out of 100, by July 3, 1850, to 16 shares, in 1858 he owned only 9, and in 1878 only 6. In 1847 he sold out for \$6500 per share, and his last sale was for \$8000. He bought with him, took stock in mining companies, discredited egg companies, patent looms, photo-lithographic companies, gave away privately, lent to plausible associates, and was the prey of a very new invention who chanced to find him with money or with property that he could readily convert into money.

In the autumn of 1851 Greeley merged his weekly paper, *The Log Cabin*, and *The New Yorker*, into *The Weekly Tribune*, which soon attained as wide circulation as its predecessors, and was much more profitable. It rose in a time of great political excitement to a total circulation of a quarter of a million, and at some times had for successive years 110,000 to 150,000. For several years it was rarely much below 100,000. Its subscribers were found throughout all quarters of the northern half of the Union from Maine to Oregon, large packets going to remote rural districts beyond the Mississippi or Missouri, whose only connection with the outside world was through a weekly or semi-weekly mail. The readers of this weekly paper acquired a personal affiliation for its editor, and for many years the American writer most widely known and most popular among the rural classes. The circulation of *The Daily Tribune* was never proportionately great—its advocacy of a slavery reform, just, powerful, logical, vigorous, and other peculiarities, repelling a large support which it might otherwise have commanded in New York. It rose within a short time after its establishment to a circulation of 20,000, reached 60,000 and 80,000, and then the Union, and its circulation ranged at from 30,000 to 45,000. A semi-weekly edition was also printed, which ultimately reached a steady circulation of from 15,000 to 25,000.

From the outset it was a cardinal principle with Greeley to hear all sides, and to extend a special hospitality to new ideas. In *The Tribune*'s first year it began to give one column daily to the discussion of the doctrines of Charles Fourier, contributed by Albert Brisbane. Gradually Greeley came to advocate some of these doctrines editorially. In 1846 he had a sharp discussion upon them with a former subordinate, Henry F. Raymond, then employed upon a rival journal, and continued through twelve articles on each side, and was subsequently published in book form. Greeley became personally interested in one of the Fourierian associations, the American Phalanx, at Red Bank, N. J. (1848-50), while the influence of the Fourierian doctrines led to other associations and experiments. One of these was that at Brook Farm, which embraced Ralph Waldo Emerson and Nathaniel Hawthorne among its members. When this was abandoned, its president, George Ripley, was one of two other members sought employment from Greeley upon *The Tribune*. Greeley disapproved from many of Fourier's propositions, and in later years was careful to explain that the principle of association for the common good of working men and of labour was of labour was of labour was of labour which attracted him. Co-operation among working men he continued to urge throughout his life. In 1836 the Fox Sisters, on his wife's invitation, spent some time at his house. His attitude

toward them "trippings" and "spiritual manifestations," was one of observation and inquiry, and, while he never pronounced all the manifestations fraudulent, he distrusted most of them, and declared that it was yet far new good in them, and nothing specially requiring the institution of religious belief. From boyhood he had believed in a protective tariff, and throughout his active life he was its most trenchant advocate and propagandist. Besides constantly signing it in the columns of *The Tribune*, he appeared as early as 1815 in a public lecture on "The Grounds of Protection," with such as Tilden and Parker Lowell as his opponents. A series of popular essays on the subject was published over his own signature in *The Tribune* in 1830, and subsequently republished in book form, with a little page describing protection from home industry as a system of national co-operation for the elevation of labour. He opposed woman suffrage on the ground that the majority of women did not want it and never would, but added practical efforts for extending the sphere of woman's employment. He opposed the shelter, and for a time refused to publish their advertisements. He held the most rigid views on the validity of marriages and against every divorce, and vehemently defended them in controversies with Robert Dale Owen and others. He practised and petitionally advocated total abstinence from spirituous liquors, but did not regard prohibitory laws as always wise. He denounced the institution of State debts on the fulsome to pay interest on them. He was zealous for Irish relief, and held a place in the "Directory of the Friends of Ireland," and contributed liberally to its support. He was the son-in-law of Jackson's first friend to America to urge international copyright, and was one of the few editors to avoid the slunkiness with which Jackson's was first received, and the facility with which he was assailed after the publication of his *Review* in 1829. On the occasion of the Convention of the American Society, Greeley presided at the great banquet given him by the press of the country. He made the first elaborate reports of popular scientific lectures by Agassiz and other authorities. He was among the first to advocate the abolition of the slave trade and the appling. He was one of the most conspicuous advocates of the Pacific railroads, and of many other national improvements.

But it was as an anti-slavery leader, and as perhaps the chief exponent of the means of the Northern people to shut opposition through legal forms to the extension of slavery which culminated in the election of Abraham Lincoln and the War of the Rebellion that Greeley's name was done. Incidentally it was his vehement opposition to slavery, and his efforts to avoid more slave territory, the assault made upon him in Washington by Congressman Albert Rust of Arkansas in 1856, an indictment in Virginia in the same year for circulating incendiary documents, perpetual denunciation of him in Southern newspapers and speeches, and the hostility of the Abolitionists, who regarded his course as too conservative. His anti-slavery work culminated in his appeal to President Lincoln, entitled "The Prayer of Twenty Millions," in which he urged "that all attempts to put down the rebellion and at the same time uphold its existing cause" was "perpetrated and fatal," and that "every blot of defiance to slavery" was "an hour of added agony and desolation piled to the Union." President Lincoln in his reply said—"My paramount object is to save the Union, and not either to save or destroy slavery."

I do not believe that I have ever been so much loved as I believe it helps to save this Union, and what I believe, I follow because I do not believe it would help to save the Union. I have here stated my purpose according to my views of official duty, and no moderation in the use of any of my words, and I wish that all men everywhere should be free." Precisely one month after the date of this reply the Emancipation Proclamation was issued.

Greeley's political activity, first as a Whig, and then as one of the founders of the Republican party, was incessant, but he held few offices. In 1818-9 he served a three months' term in Congress, filling a vacancy. He introduced the bill for giving the Government a land office to actual settlers, and published an exposure of abuses in the allowance of mileage to members, which concerted the evil but brought him much personal obloquy in the National Republican Convention of 1820. He was elected by the Republican of his own State on account of his opposition to Governor Seward as a candidate, he was made a delegate for Oregon. His active hostility to Seward did much to prevent the success of his nomination, and his strong abolition views, and his opposition to Abraham Lincoln. This was attested by his opponents to personal motives, and a letter from Greeley to Seward, the publication of which he challenged, was produced, to show that in his suggestion that he had been wronged in the election of Lincoln to him. In 1851 he was a candidate for United States Senator, his principal opponent being William M. Evans. When it was clear that Mr. Evans could not be elected, his supporters threw their votes for third candidates, Mr. Evans, who was chosen over Greeley by a small majority. At the outbreak of the war he favoured allowing the Southern States to secede, provided a majority of their people at a fair election should so decide, declaring "that

he hoped never to live in a Republic where one section was pitted to the other by brouhats. "When the war began he signed the most vigorous prosecution of it. The "On to Richmond" appeal, which appeared day after day in *The Tribune*, was anxiously attributed to him, and he was widely blamed for it. In 1864 he urged negotiations for peace with representatives of the Southern Confederacy in Canada, and was sent by President Lincoln to confer with them. He was found to have no sufficient authority. In 1867 he was one of the Lincoln Presidential delegates for New York. At the close of the war, contrary to the general feeling of his party, he urged universal amnesty and impartial suffrage as the basis of reconstruction. In 1867 his friends again visited to elect him to the Senate of the United States, and the indications were all in his favour. But he refused to be elected under any misapprehension of his attitude, and with what his friends thought unbecomingly uniform attitude his observations on universal amnesty it length, just before the time for the election, with the certainty that this would prevent his success. Some months later he signed the bill known as Johnson's, and that provoked a torrent of public indignation. He had written a popular history of the late war, the first volume having an immense sale and bringing him immensely large profits. The second was just issued, and the subscribers, in their impetuosity, refused by thousands to receive it. The Union League Club, of New York, gave him notice, through its President, John Jay, of a special meeting called to consider his conduct. In an indignant letter he refused to attend the meeting, and challenged the club to discuss his "You attempt," it wrote, "to base a great, enduring party on the hate and wrath necessarily engendered by a bloody civil war as if, though you should plant a colony on an iceberg which had some dust, and into a temporal or even a local issue, you should not have been devoted to the good of human kind, your children will select my going to Richmond and signing that bill bond as the worst act of all. I can feel that you must have a square, stand slight, and record your judgment. Peace and mercy. I know not how few vote with me, nor how many vote against me, for I know that the latter will repent it in dust and ashes before three years have passed."

The effort to expel him failed. In 1867 he was elected delegate to the Convention for the revision of the State constitution. In 1868 he was the Republican candidate for State Controller. There was no hint that any one else was a serious stand against him, but he received more votes than most of his associates. In 1870 he was nominated for Congress in a Democratic district. His illness prevented his making any express, but his nomination secured the Democratic majority from 3700 two years before to about 7000, and he ran 300 ahead of the Republican candidate for Governor.

He was dissatisfied with the conduct of General Grant's administration, and became his sharp critic. The discontent which he did much to develop ended in the organization of the "Labor Republican" party, which held its National Convention at Cincinnati in 1872, and was confidently expected to nominate Charles Francis Adams for the presidency. Greeley, however, had unexpected strength, especially among the Southern delegates, and on the sixth ballot received 352 votes against 324 for Adams, immediately changing the result. He still felt that the vote he had received was recorded it stood—Greeley, 423, Adams, 187. For a time the tale of feeling ran strongly in his favour. It was first checked by the action of his life long opponents, the Democrats, who also nominated him. Next the Convention in New England, and a support, on account of his attitude towards the South and hostility to Grant, but his thought it a mistake to give him then formal nomination. The event proved his wisdom. Many Republicans who had sympathized with his attitude of the administration, and with the declaration of principles adopted at the first convention, were repelled by the condition. This feeling grew stronger until the election. His old party associates regarded him as a renegade, and the Democrats gave him a half hearted nomination. His canvass was one of unusual bitterness, amounting sometimes to actual hostility. In August, on representations of the "damning state of the contest, he took the field in person, and made a series of campaign speeches, beginning in New England and extending throughout Pennsylvania, Ohio, and Indiana, which aroused great enthusiasm, and were regarded at the time by both friends and opponents as the most brilliant continuous exhibition of varied intellectual power ever seen. He was defeated in a western canvass. General Grant received in the election 8,597,070 votes, Greeley 3,884,079. The only States Greeley carried were Georgia, Kentucky, Maryland, Missouri, Tennessee, and Texas.

He had resigned his seat in the Senate immediately after the nomination, he now returned it cheerfully, but it was soon apparent that his powers had been overstrained. For years he had suffered greatly from indigestion. During the intense excitement of the campaign the difficulty increased. Returning home from his campaign tour, he went immediately to the bedside of his dying

wife, and for some weeks had practically no sleep at all. This resulted in an inflammation of the upper membrane of the lungs, delirium, and death. He expired on the 29th of November 1872. His funeral was a simple one, but impressive. It was attended by many thousands. The ceremonies were attended by the president and vice president of the United States, the chief justice of the supreme court, and a large number of eminent public men of both parties, who followed the hearse in a solemn procession, preceded by the mayor and other civic authorities, down Broadway. He had been the target of constant attack during his life, and his personal habits, his ideas, and mental characteristics were the theme of endless ridicule. But his death revealed the high regard in which he was generally held as a leader of opinion and faithful public servant. "Our later Franklin," Whittier called him, and it is in some such light his countrymen remember him.

In 1881 Greeley visited Europe for the first time, serving as a journeyman at the Crystal Palace Exhibition, appearing before a committee of the House of Commons on newspaper laws, and making the repeal of the stamp duty on advertisements. In 1866 he made a second trip to Europe. In Paris he was arrested on the suit of a sculptor, whose statue had been injured in the New York World's Fair (of which he had been a director), and spent two days in Chislehurst, of which he gave an amusing account. In 1870 he visited California by the overland route, and had numerous public receptions. In 1871 he visited Texas, and his trip through the southern country, where he had once been a justice, was an occasion. About 1859 he purchased a farm at Chippewa, New York, where he afterwards habitually spent his Sundays, and experimented in agriculture. It was in constant demand as a lecture from 1813, when he made his first appearance on the platform before a large audience, and, in spite of his high management in money matters, received considerable sums, sometimes \$6000 at \$7000 for a single winter's lecturing. He was also much sought for as a contributor, even on a signature, to the weekly newspapers, and was sometimes largely paid for these articles. In religious life he was from boyhood a Universalist, and for many years a conspicuous member of the leading Universalist church in New York.

His published works are—*Massachusetts* (New York, 1850), *Glances at Europe* (1851), *History of the Struggle for Slavery Extension* (1860), *Overland Journey to San Francisco* (1860), *The American Conflict* (3 vols., Hartford, 1864-66, pp. 648 and 782, cloth), *John Jay, British Agent*, *British Commerce and Christian Slavery*, the friend of my country because the friend of mankind, *Recollections of a Busy Life* (New York, 1868, a new edition, with appendix containing an account of his later years, his Arguments of Marriage and Divorce with Robert Bell Owen, and Miscellaneous, New York, 1878), *Essays on Political Economy* (Boston, 1870), *What I know of Farming* (New York, 1871). He also visited his brother in law, John P. Cleveland, in editing *A Political Trifling* (New York, 1860), and answered for many years the annual review of *The Whig Almanac* and *The Tribune Almanac*, comprising extensive political statistics.

His essays of Greeley have been written by James P. Faxon (New York, 1854, a new edition, New York and Boston, 1872), L. U. Davis (New York, 1872), and L. D. Ingersoll (Chicago, 1873). There is also a *Memorial of Horace Greeley* (New York, 1874).

GREEN BAY, a city of the United States, capital of Brown county, Wisconsin, is situated at the head of Green Bay, an inlet on the west shore of Lake Michigan. The bay is 100 miles long, from 15 to 35 miles wide, and of considerable depth. The city stands near the mouth of Fox River, with a small stream known as the Little River on the other side, its situation affording it a secure harbour. It is 242 miles N. of Chicago, 114 N. of Milwaukee, and 120 N. E. of Madison, the capital of the State. By the completion of a canal connecting the Fox and Wisconsin rivers at Portage City, Green Bay has become the terminus of the inland water-system which unites the great lakes with the Mississippi and the Gulf of St. Lawrence with the Gulf of Mexico. The meanness of Green Bay to the forests of the State makes it a centre of the lumber trade, and it exports annually large quantities of planks, boards, shingles, staves, and headings. It has several other manufacturing, an iron furnace, a foundry, machine-shops, sawmills, planing-mills, and breweries. The fishing interests, especially in lake-fish and lake-trout, are important. Three lines of railways and the largest lake steamers minister to its commerce. Though the French formed settlements on the bay as early as 1745, the site of the present city was not laid out until 1830.

and 1835, when the villages of Navauno and Astor were founded. In 1830 these were incorporated under the name of Green Bay, and in 1854 a city charter was granted. It was in 1868 created a bishop's see by Pius IX., and a handsome cathedral church in the Romanesque style has been erected since. The growth of the place has been rapid even for an American city. The population in 1860 numbered 2375, and 4666 in 1870, exclusive of Fort Howard across the river, with its population of 2462, which commercially may well be regarded as part of the city. In 1876 the State census gave 8037 to Green Bay and 3610 to Fort Howard.

GREENE, MAURICE, an English composer, was born in London towards the close of the 17th century about 1696, it is generally stated. He was the son of a clergyman in the city of London, and soon became a chorist of St Paul's Cathedral, where he studied under Charles King, and subsequently under Richard Brind, organist of the cathedral from 1707 to 1718, whom, on his death in the last named year, he succeeded. Nine years later he became organist and composer to the chapel royal, on the death of Dr Croft. In 1730 he was elected to the chair of music in the university of Cambridge, and had the degree of doctor of music conferred on him. Dr Greene was a voluminous composer of church music, and his collection of *Forty Select Anthems* is a standard work of its kind. He also wrote a *Te Deum*, several oratorios, a mass, *The Judgment of Solomon*, and a pastoral opera, *Phoebe* (1748). He is also among the writers of glees and catches, a form of music peculiar to English composers (see GLEE), and a collection of *Catches and Canons for Three and Four Voices* is amongst his compositions. In addition to this he wrote many occasional pieces for the king's birthday, having been appointed master of the king's band in 1735. But it is as a composer of church music that Greene will be chiefly remembered. It is here that his contrapuntal skill and his sound musical scholarship are chiefly shown. The influence of Handel is, however, discernible in his compositions. With that great master Greene was originally on intimate terms, but his equal friendship for Buononcini, Handel's rival, estranged the German master's feelings from him, and all personal intercourse between them ceased. Greene, in conjunction with Festing and others, originated that excellent institution, the Society of Musicians, for the support of poor artists and their families. He died September 1, 1755.

GREENE, NATHANIEL (1742-1786), an American general, son of a Quaker who followed the joint occupation of a farmer and smith, was born at Potowommet, Warwick county, Rhode Island, May 27, 1742. From his early years he was employed in assisting his father, but he succeeded, notwithstanding this, in acquiring a large amount of general information, and made a special study of mathematics, history, and law. At Coventry, where he removed to take charge of a forge of his own, he was the first to establish a public school, and in 1770 he was chosen a member of the legislature of Rhode Island. Sympathizing strongly with the revolutionists he in 1774 joined the "Kentish Guards," and on this account was expelled from the Society of Friends. In 1775 he was appointed to the command of the contingent of 1000 men raised by Rhode Island, and after joining Washington before Boston he was named brigadier-general. In 1776 he obtained the rank of major-general and accompanied Washington to New Jersey, where he took part in the battles of Trenton and Princeton. At the urgent request of Washington he in 1778 accepted the office of quartermaster-general, on the understanding, however, that he should retain the right to command in the field, a right of which he took advantage at the battle of Monmouth, 24th June of the same year,

and at the battle of Springfield, 23d June 1780. In August following he resigned his office, and on the 21st of December he succeeded Gates in the command of the Southern army. In this position he was soon successful in restoring the demoralized and helpless troops to a condition of thorough vigour and efficiency, and though not always technically victorious in the combats in which he engaged, he conducted operations in such a masterly manner that the enemy gained little advantage from any victories they obtained, and was never able to baffle him in what was essential in his plans. At the beginning of the campaign he detached General Morgan to attack the enemy at Cowpens, with a result that was brilliantly successful. Then followed a series of clever retreats to avoid engaging superior forces, until he deemed himself strong enough to attack the enemy at Guilford Court House, and although he here suffered defeat, the British army a few days afterwards retreated towards Wilmington. After following a short distance in pursuit he changed his line of march, and advancing into South Carolina attacked Lord Rawdon at Camden, and again suffered a defeat. But this reverse also failed to impede his energy, and after capturing a number of fords he again engaged Lord Rawdon at the battle of Eutaw Springs, which, though a drawn combat, resulted in the British abandoning South Carolina. For his services in the campaign he was presented with two pieces of captured ordnance, a British standard, and a gold medal. Georgia and North and South Carolina also made him valuable grants of land. He died from sunstroke at his estate of Mulberry Grove, Savannah, June 19, 1786. *His Life and Letters*, 3 vols., edited by G. W. Greene, were published in 1867-71.

GREENE, ROBERT (1660-1692), dramatist and miscellaneous writer, was born at Norwich about the year 1660. As an eastern counties man (to one of whose plays, *St. Asaph*, the Norfolk and Suffolk boisterous gave a lasting poetic commemoration) he naturally received his education at Cambridge, where he took his B.A. from St John's College in 1678, proceeding M.A. in 1683 from Clare Hall, where it is possible that he had expectations of a fellowship. In 1688 he was incorporated at Oxford, so that on some of his title pages he styles himself "utrinque Academicus in Artibus Magister," and Nash humorously refers to him as a "utrinque Academicus Robertus Greene." Between the years 1678 and 1688 he had travelled abroad, according to his own account very extensively, visiting France, Germany, Poland, and Denmark, and learning at first hand to "hate the pride of Italie" and to know the taste of that poet's fruit, "Spanish misadventures." Whether on his return he took holy orders, the evidence on the subject is insufficient to determine, according to the title page of a pamphlet published by him in 1686 he was then a "student in physick." Already, however, after taking his M.A. degree, he had according to his own account begun his London life, and engaged in pursuits more congenial to his tastes. He became "an author of plays and a penner of love-pamphlets, so that I some grew famous in that quality, that who for that trade grows so ordinary about London as Robin Greene." He rapidly sank into the worst debaucheries of the town, though not without being inspired by a passing impulse towards a better life, and decided in consequence by his associates as a "Puritan and Presbyterian." His marriage, which soon after this took place, failed to steady him, if Plancoen, in Greene's pamphlet *Never too late*, is intended for the author himself, it had been a runaway match, but the fiction and the autobiographical sketch in the *Repentance* agree in their account of the unfaithfulness which followed on the part of the husband. He lived with his wife for a while; "but forasmuch as she would persuade me from my wilful wicked-



ness, after I had a child by her, I cast her off, having spent up the marriage money which I obtained by her. Then left I him at six or seven, who went into Lincolnshire, and I to London," where his reputation as a playwright and writer of pamphlets "of love and vaine fantasies" continued to increase, and where his life was a feverish alternation of labour and debauchery. He tells us how in the end he was friendless "except it were in a few alehouses," where he was respected on account of the score he had run up. When the end came he was a dependant on the charity of the poor and the pitying love of the unfortunate Henri Muzger has drawn no picture more sickening and more pitiful than the story of Greene's death, as told by his Puritan adversary, Gabriel Harvey—a vicious though not an unregarded narrator. (Greene had stung his vanity by an allusion to his paternal origin in the prose-tract of *A Quip for an Upstart Country*.) After a banquet where the chief guest had been the dramatist Nash,—an old associate and perhaps a college friend of Greene's, any great intimacy with whom, however, he seems to have been anxious to disclaim,—Greene had fallen sick "of a surfeit of pickle herringe and Flemish wine." At the house of a poor shoemaker near Dowgate, deserted by all except his compassionate hosts and two women,—one of them the mother of his illegitimate son, Fortunatus Greene—he died, September 2, 1592. Shortly before his death, he wrote under a bond for ten pounds which he had given to the good shoemaker, the following words addressed to his long forsaken wife:—"Doll, I charge thee, by the Ioue of our youth and by my soules rest, that thou wilt see this man paid, for if hee and his wife had not succoured me, I had died in the streetes.—ROBERT GREENE"

Shortly after Greene's death the dramatist Henry Chettle published a pamphlet from the hand of the unhappy man, entitled *Greene's Grievous death of Wit bought with a Million of Repentance*. This ill-starred production may almost be said to have done more to excite the resentment of posterity against Greene's name than all the errors for which he so unctuously professed his (doubtless sincere) repentance. For in it he chose to point the fact of his own conversion by exhorting those of his *quondam* acquaintance to go and do likewise. Of these three Marlowes was one—to whom and to whose creation of "that Atheist Tembelaine" (perhaps to both author and hero under the name of the latter) he had repeatedly alluded or referred in previous pamphlets. The second was Peele, the third probably Nash. But the passage addressed to Peele contained a transparent allusion to a fourth dramatist, who was an actor likewise, and of whom Greene accordingly thought himself entitled to speak with insolent arrogance as of "an upstart cow beautified with our feathers, that with his *Tygers heart wrapt in a playes hyde* supposes hee is as well able to bombast out a blanke-verse as the best of you, and being an absolute Iohannes-fac-totum, is in his owne conceyt the onely shako scene in a countrey." The phrase italicized parodies a passage occurring in *The True Tragicall of Richard, Duke of Yorke*, &c., and retained in Part III of *Henry VI*. If Greene (as many eminent critics have thought) had a hand in *The True Tragedie*, he must here have intended a charge of plagiarism against Shakespeare. But it seems more probable that, while (as Mr. R. Simpson suggested) the upstart cow beautified with the feathers of the three dramatists is a sneering description of the actor who declaimed their verse, the *animus* of the whole attack (as Dr. Ingley explains it) is revealed in its concluding phrases. "This 'shako-scene,' i.e., this actor, had ventured to intude upon the domain of the regular staff of play-wrights—then monopoly was in danger!"

Altogether not less than thirty-five prose-tracts are as-

cribed to Greene's prolific pen. To these, which are by no means all of a personal or even controversial character, he owed in his lifetime a great part of his celebrity. Nearly all of them are interspersed with verses, in their themes they range from the "misticall" wonders of the heavens to the familiar but "penititious slaughters" of the sharpshooters of London. But the most widely attractive of his prose publications were no doubt those in which he more especially refers under the designation of "love-pamphlets," and which, as he tells us, brought upon him the censure of Puritan censors. In these popular productions he appears in a style distinctly as the follower of the fashionable euphuistic style; indeed two of them are by their titles announced as a kind of sequel to the mother romance. But though Greene's style shows the same balanced oscillation to and fro, and his diction the same elaborate ornateness, as those of Lyly, he contrives to interest by the matter as well as to attract attention by the manner of his narratives. It is known that on his *Pandosto, the Triumph of Time* (1588) Shakespeare founded his *Winter's Tale*; in fact, the novel contains the entire plot of the comedy, though some of the subordinate characters in the latter (including the immortal Autolyca) were added by Shakespeare.

In Greene's *Never too late*, announced in its author's unassuming variety of the epistolary manner as "Powder of Experience sent to all youthful gentlemen" for their benefit, the hero of the *Palmer's* story is in all probability intended for Greene himself, and this epistolical narrative has a vivacity and truthfulness of manner which savour of an 18th century novel rather than of an Elizabethan tale concerning the days of "Palmerin, King of Great Britaine." The experiences of the Roberto of *Greene's Groat-worth of Wit* are even more palpably the experiences of the author himself, though they are possibly overdrawn—for a born rhetorician exaggerates everything, even his own sins. Much that might be enlarged upon in Greene's manner as a writer of prose fiction shows how already in the Elizabethan age there was a possibility of the English novel antcipating what proved the slow course of its actual development.

For us, however, Greene's name lives chiefly if not solely as that of a dramatist. Only four plays remain to us of which he was indisputably the sole author. The earliest of these seems to be *The History of Orlando Furioso, one of the Twelve Peeres of France*—which has (on unsatisfactory evidence) been dated as before 1586, and is known to have been acted on February 21, 1592. It is a free dramatic adaptation of Ariosto (who in one passage is textually quoted), and contains a large variety of characters and a superabundance of action. Fairly lucid in arrangement and fluent in style, it lacks in the treatment of its main situation—the madness of Orlando—the tragic power to which in truth its author was a stranger. Greene's *Orlando* has been described as "a stepping stone to *Leas and Hamlet*," but its priority to Kyd's *Spanish Tragedy* (to which the author of this observation likewise refers) is not proved. Very few dramatists between Sophocles and Shakespeare have succeeded in subordinating the grotesque effect of madness to the tragic, and Greene (the close of whose play is tameness itself) is not among the number.

Of the *Comical History of Alphonsus, King of Arragon*, Henslowe's *Diary* contains no trace. But it can hardly have been first acted long after the production of Marlowe's *Tamburlaine*, which had been brought on the stage at least three years before. For this play—which is oddly enough called "comical," though it contains not a single comic character, and is surely unintentionally humorous in the effect of some of its passages—was manifestly written in emulation of Marlowe's tragedy. While Greene cannot have thought himself capable of surpassing Marlowe as a

lagic poet, he very probably wished to outdo him in "business," and to equal him in the art which, since there has been an English theatre, has been said to bung down at least part of the house. *Alphonsus* is accordingly not less sensational than *Tamburlaine*, and supplied its share of quotations to ancient Pistol. It is a history proper,—a dramatized chronicle or narrative of warlike events,—and a very effective one of its kind. Its fame could never equal that of Marlowe's tragedy, but its composition showed that Greene could seek to rival the most popular drama of the day, without falling very far short of his model.

In the *Honourable History of Friar Bacon and Friar Bungay* (not known to have been acted before February 1592, but very possibly written by 1588) Greene once more attempted to emulate Marlowe, but on this occasion, while producing something very different from the play with which he placed his own in competition, he succeeded in producing a masterpiece of his own. Marlowe's *Doctor Faustus*, which there is every reason to believe suggested the composition of Greene's comedy, is a work which, even in the form in which it has come down to us, reveals the mighty tragic genius of its author, and it was fortunate for Greene's fame that he resolved on an altogether distinct treatment of a cognate theme. Intertwaving with the popular tale of Friar Bacon and his wondrous doings a charming idyl (so far as we know, of his own invention), the story of Prince Edward (it's loved in the Fair Maid of Essex), he produced a comedy brimful of amusing action and genial fun, and at the same time containing dramatic love-story of unvarnished freshness and brightness. *Friar Bacon* remains a dramatic picture of English life with which *The Merry Wives* alone can vie, and not even the ultra classicism in the similes of its diction can destroy the naturalness which constitutes its perennial charm.

In *The Scottish History of James IV* (not printed till 1598, acted by 1592) Greene seems to have reached the climax of his dramatic powers. The "historical" character of this play is pure pretence, so that one wonders how a Tudor dramatist could have dared to invent a fictitious name and unreal experiences (of a painful kind) for King Henry VII's daughter. Its theme is the illicit passion of King James for the chaste lady Ida, to obtain whose hand he endeavours, at the suggestion of a villain called Ateukin, to make away with his own wife. She escapes in doublet and hose, attended by her faithful dwarf, but on her father's making way upon her husband to avenge her wrongs, she effects a reconciliation between them. Not only is this well-constructed story effectively worked out, but the characters are vigorously drawn, and in Ateukin there is a touch of lago. The fooling by Slipper, the clown of the piece, is unexceptionable, and lest even so the play should hang heavy on the audience, its action is carried off by a "pleasant comedy"—i.e., a pseudo and some dances between the acts—"presented by Oboram, King of Fayeyies"—the Oboram of *A Midsummer Night's Dream* (probably later in date than Greene's play).

It is hard to have to abandon the belief that *George a-Gorne the Pinner of Wakefield* (printed 1599), a delightful picture of English life fully worthy of the author of *Friar Bungay*, has been rightly attributed to him. Of the comedy of *Fair Em*, which resembles *Friar Bacon* in more than one point, it is most improbable that Greene was the author. The disputed question as to his supposed share in the plays on which the Second and Third Parts of *Henry VI* are founded has been already referred to. He was certainly joint author with Thomas Lodge of the curious drama called *A Looking Glass for London and England* (printed 1594)—a dramatic apologue conveying to the living generation of Englishmen the warning of Nemeus's corruption and prophesied doom. The lesson was fre-

quently repeated in the streets of London by the "Nine virtuous motions" of the puppets, but there are both fire and wealth of language in Greene's and Lodge's caution. The comic element is not absent, being supplied in abundance by Adam, the clown of the piece, who belongs to the family of Slipper and of Friar Bacon's servant, Mice.

Greene's dramatic genius has nothing in it of the intensity of Marlowe's tragic muse, nor perhaps are there any passages in his poetry equalling certain of Peele's when at his best. On the other hand, of none of Shakespeare's predecessors or contemporaries can it be said, as of Greene, that his dramatic poetry is occasionally animated with the breezy freshness which no artifice can simulate, but which nothing but obtuseness can mistake. He can construct neatly and with facility, though of course belonging to a period of our dramatic literature when the art of construction was still in its infancy. He has created no character of commanding power—unless Ateukin be excepted, but his personages are living men and women, and marked out from one another with a vigorous but far from rude hand. His comic humour is undeniably, and he unites a spirit of true farcical fun with a capacity for light and graceful dialogue. His diction is overloaded with classical ornament, but even this he frequently employs with pleasing aptness. His versification is easy and fluent, and its cadence is at times singularly sweet. He creates his best effects, like a true artist, by the simplest means, and he is indistinctly one of the most gifted and one of the most pleasing among our early dramatic authors.

The best account of Greene and his writings (including a list of all his prose works) is that by the late Mr. Dyce, prefixed to his edition of *The Dramatic and Poetical Works of Robert Greene*, 1 vol., 1861, the 2nd edition was published in 1881. It contains copious extracts from *Pendennis*, and from other prose writings of Greene. *Greene's Great work of Wit* is printed in part 3 of Dr. Ingelby's *Shakespeare's Allusion Books* (see *Shakespeare's Society's Publications*, 1874). Dr. Ingelby's general introduction, and a supplement by the late Mr. Richard Simpson, as well as the observations in Mr. Simpson's *School of Shakespeare*, will be of great value to readers of Greene. W. Bünzlind's *Robert Greene's Leben und Schaffen* (Leipzig, 1874) is an essay full of useful research, and Prof. J. M. Brown of Christchurch, New Zealand, has contributed a spirited, but at the same time judicious, criticism of Greene to the *New Zealand Magazine* for April 1877. A Russian monograph on him by N. I. Storozenko (Moscow, 1878) is described as perhaps the fullest hitherto published. *Friar Bacon and Friar Bungay* has been edited, together with Marlowe's *Doctor Faustus*, for the Oxford Clarendon Press (1878). (A. W. W.)

GREENFINCH (German *Grünfinke*) or GREEN LINNET, as it is very often called, a common European bird, the *Fringilla chloris* of Linnaeus, ranked by many systematists with one section of Hawfinches, *Coccothraustes*, but apparently more nearly allied to the other section *Peperuphonia* (cf. FINCH, vol. ix p. 192), and perhaps justifiably deemed the type of a distinct genus, to which the name *Chloris* or *Levinurus* has been applied. The cock, in its plumage of green and gold, is one of the most finely coloured of our common birds, but he is rather heavily built, and his song is hardly commended. The hen is much less brightly tinted. Throughout Britain, as a rule, this species is one of the most plentiful birds, and is found at all seasons of the year. It pervades almost the whole of Europe, and in Asia reaches the river Ob. It visits Palestine, but is unknown in Egypt. It is, however, abundant in Mauritania, whence specimens are so brightly coloured that they have been deemed to form a distinct species, the *Lagurus aeneoauratus* of Dr. Cabanis, but this view is generally abandoned. In the north-east of Asia and its adjacent islands occur two allied species—the *Fringilla sinica* of Linnaeus, and the *F. lanceolata* of Temminck. No species of Greenfinch is found in America. (A. W.)

GREENHEART, one of the most valuable of timbers, is the produce of *Nectandra* a *Rododendron* nat. *Lauraceae*, a tree

which grows to a height of 70 feet, native of Cuana, where, and exists in great abundance. The Indian name of the tree is *Saput* or *Bibau*, and from its bark and fruits is obtained the valuable principle *Biburine* (see *BIBURINE*). Greenheart wood is of a dark green colour, sap wood and heart wood being so much alike that they can with difficulty be distinguished from each other. The heart wood is one of the most durable of all timbers, and its value is greatly enhanced by the fact that it is proof against the ravages of many marine borers which rapidly destroy piles and other submarine structures of most other kinds of wood available for such purposes. In the Kelvingrove Museum, Glasgow, there are two pieces of plankings from a wreck submerged during eighteen years on the west coast of Scotland. The one specimen—greenheart—is merely slightly pitted on the surface, the body of the wood being perfectly sound and unaltered, while the other—oak—is almost entirely eaten away. Greenheart, tested either by transverse or by tensile strain, is one of the strongest of all woods, and it is also exceedingly dense, its specific gravity being about 1150. It is one of the few woods included in the first class of Lloyd's Register for shipbuilding purposes, and it is extensively used for keelsons, berms, engine bearings, and planking, &c., as well as in the general engineering arts, but its excessive weight unfits it for many purposes for which its other properties would render it eminently suitable.

**GREENLAND**, or **GROENLAND**, is the name applied to a large continental island, the greater portion of which lies within the Arctic Circle, and all of which is arctic in character (see vol. 1, Plate X). It is entirely unconnected with any portion of Europe or America, though in the extreme north only separated from the latter by the narrow strait which lies between it and the outlying portion of America known as Ginnell Land. From Europe it is divided by the North and Greenland Seas—the Faeroe Isles, Jan Mayen Island, Iceland, and part of Shetland being the only lands between it and Norway. Denmark Strait is the sea between it and Iceland, and it is more than probable that Spitzbergen is the only great group of islands lying to the east of its northern portion. On the west, Davis Strait and Baffin's Bay separate it from the opposite shore. The latter sea narrows to the north into the gulf generally known as Smith Sound, though, in reality, Kane Sea, Kennedy Channel, Hall Basin, and Robeson Channel are the names which have been successively applied in the progress of exploration to the northern continuations of the sound so named more than two hundred years ago by William Baffin. The exact northern termination of Greenland is not known, the country never having been doubled on the north, but we know enough from the explorations of Mathews, Beaumont, and other officers of Narvik's expedition, to lead to the conclusion that the ice encumbered Polar Ocean circles around the headlands of the broken country which forms its supposed limits in about 88° N lat.

From Cape Farewell, or Kangarsuak,—an island lying about 18 miles from Pamiagdluk, the most southern Danish post on the west,—to Cape Britanna, is about 1380 miles, and the greatest breadth of Greenland is about 77° 30' N lat.—890 miles from the one coast to the other. The shore-line is fully 3100 miles long, but so little is the country known with accuracy, and so broken is it by fjords and coast lying islands, that any accurate estimate of its area is impossible. Thus Dr. Rink, who has been connected with the government in various capacities for upwards of thirty years, estimates its area at 512,000 square miles. This estimate allows 192,000 square miles for what has been called the outskirts—or islands uncovered by ice—with their fjords, and 320,000 for the interior, believed to be almost entirely covered by a glacier ice cap.

On the east coast, Cape Bismarck, in 76° 47' N lat., marks

the limits of exploration, though as early as 1070 Lambert is said to have sighted land several degrees further north. From Cape Bismarck south to Cape Farewell (59° 35' N lat.) the coast is very imperfectly known, whole stretches being entirely uncharted, even in the latest fashion. This arises from the Spitzbergen ice stream continually pouring down that shore, rendering it possible to approach within sight of it only on rare occasions, and to land still more rarely. Yet, from the explorations of Hall and Lidenow in early times, and those in this century by Scoresby,<sup>1</sup> Graah,<sup>2</sup> the German Expedition,<sup>3</sup> and Michael,<sup>4</sup> (1873), we know its general features. These are—high, beetling cliffs, great glaciers creeping down to the sea, and deep inlets, like Scoresby Sound and Franz Josef Fjord, penetrating the land far distances which cannot as yet be definitely stated. A number of islands also are dotted over the chart here, but there are few “ice fjords,” the slope of the inland ice being evidently chiefly towards the west coast. The west coast is of much the same character,—only, on this side, the fjords with which it is intersected have been nearly all followed to their heads. Many of them stretch several miles into the interior, and the greater number are ended by glacier prolongations of the “inland ice,” which discharge icebergs, these are known as “ice fjords.” The Greenland fjords, like those of Norway, British Columbia, and other countries with a western exposure, bear every mark of having been at one time the beds of glaciers, when the climate and physical geography of the country were different from what they are at present. The country cannot be said to be mountainous, yet heights of from 3000 to 4000 feet are common, and the aspect which the coast presents is that of high cliffs,—black when steep, white where the snow can lie, snow for eight or nine months in the year on even the lower lands, icebergs and broken ice floating off the coast, an “ice foot” attached to the shore early in the spring, and glaciers peeping down through the valleys between the cliffs and fields. There are one or two still higher points, such as Petersmann's Peak—near the shores of Franz Josef Fjord on the east coast (11,000 feet), Payer's Peak, Sukkotenoppen, and the familiar Sanderson's Hope. With the exception of Disco, there are no large islands, but the bays, fjords, straits, and peninsulas of this extremely broken coast are so numerous that it is needless mentioning them by name.

*The Interior Ice covering*.—The Danes divide Greenland into two physical divisions—the “outskirts” and the “inland ice.” The first comprises the coast lying land, the latter the interior. If we ascend any considerable eminence on the west coast, and look eastward, we do not find mountains and valleys as in most other countries, but only one huge, seemingly endless, expanse of glacier ice gradually rising towards the east, until the view is bounded by a white horizon. If we cross the coast-lying land, which varies in breadth from a few miles to twenty, or in a few cases much more, we come to the “inland ice,” generally in the form of a glacier offshoot of it which has crept down into a fjord, or is making its way to the sea in one of the mossy valleys lying between two high cliffs, noisy with mollemokes or with the world scream of diatoms, which at various sheltered places have colonies in these “skavfjælde.” In the former case the glacier usually presents a steep wall facing the sea, from which great fragments of ice are continually breaking off, or the icebergs being detached by the force of the sea, thick it is “semik solid”—the “great ice wall”—of the Eskimo. In the latter case, it presents a slope on which the explorer

<sup>1</sup> *Journal of a Voyage to the Northern Whale Fishery* (1823).

<sup>2</sup> *Reise til Ostlysten af Grønland* (1832), taken by G. Gordon Macdonald, 1837.

<sup>3</sup> *Köslwary, Die meiste deutsche Nordpolarexpedition* (1873-75).

can climb, and ascend into the interior over the inland ice, of which it is a prolongation. A little way eastward, the covering is found to be hard glacier ice, rising by a gentle slope, covered in the winter and spring with a thick coating of snow, which partially melts during the summer, forming considerable lakelets on the surface of the ice, or courses over it in the shape of streams that thunder down the deep crevasses which divide it here and there as in ordinary glaciers. No sign of living thing is seen on it, save patches here and there of a low order of plants identical with or allied to the "red snow" (*Amylonema Nordenskiöldii*,<sup>1</sup> *Potamogeton vulgaris*, *P. nivalis*, and *Syrtonema gracilis*), no moorings of any description, showing that the ice could not have impinged on land in its travels, and no sign of the ice having come in contact with any other physical influence save that of the atmosphere, unless the presence here and there in hollows of the minute powder-like mineral "kyokomuts" is to be considered an exception. The few explorers who have even attempted to penetrate this terrible waste all give the same account. Travel eastward, and nothing but ice—rough, crevasse-storn, white, earthless, moraineless, lifeless—is seen, until, in the far distance, the view is bounded by a dim, misty horizon of ice, which, at a distance of about 30 miles inland, rises to a height of 2000 feet above the sea. North is ice, south is ice, and behind are seen the "outsides," or ice-banks, as the only exception to this general statement is to be found in the fact that here and there the ice has laked in and surrounded, but not yet covered, bits of high land near the coast, which stand out black amid the surrounding icy whiteness. Such an island in the ice is known to the Greenlanders as a "nunatak." A noted one has long been known to exist some 50 miles east of the westward edge of the inland ice north of Frederikshaab. It was long supposed to be merely the east coast mountains, the country being narrow at this point, but the explorations of Lient Jensen, R.D.N., in July and August 1878, prove it to be a peak 5000 feet high, here, about 3000 feet above the surrounding ice, entirely isolated. On the other side of this mountain ridge the glacier field was observed stretching without interruption as far as the eye could see, the plateau apparently rising higher and higher to the east,<sup>2</sup> which may account for the fact that the German explorers did not notice the inland ice in their explorations of Franz Josef Fjord. The high peak only proves that, though in the course of ages the winter snow, unmelted by the summer heats, has got compressed into the glacier sheet which has covered the interior, and is partially discharging its surplus in the form of icebergs on the coast, it has not yet accumulated to such depths as to overwhelm these elevated places. It may, however, do so in time, for, though it is clear that at one time the climate of Greenland was very different from what it is now, it is equally evident that at no very distant date the ice overspread much of the now uncovered outskirts. The so-called "glaciers" which reach the sea are long or short, broad or narrow, according to the character of the valley through which they creep seaward. Thus a coast "glacier," so called, may be 40 miles broad, like the Giant Glacier of Humboldt, or only a few yards, like most of the others in Greenland. When the glacier reaches the sea it plunges along the bottom, until, by the force of the water, its end is buoyed up and finally broken off in the shape of an iceberg, which is carried by the winds and currents out to

sea to be in time again melted and absorbed into the ocean whence it originally sprang. If, on the contrary, the sea is shallow, the glacier will protrude for a considerable distance, as in the case of the Ishman, a little north of the fishing-station of Avignat (63° 32' N. lat.), which is a low sandy beach projecting about 8 miles in front of the inland ice, and forming a breakwater against the force of the waves. From under the Arctic glacier points, as in the Alpine ones, a muddy stream, which salts up some of the fjords, and forms deposits identical with the laminated glacial clays of Britain. Such, in brief, is the inland ice of Greenland, which has been known since the days of Fabricius,<sup>3</sup> but has only been recently generally recognized, and even yet is imperfectly understood in its all-important bearings on the study of ancient glacial remains.

**Geology.**—So far as made out, the structure of explored Greenland is as follows:

(1) *Lanceolatus quartz* forms the greatest mass of the exposed rocks of the country base of ice. They are found on both sides of Smith Sound, rising to heights of 2000 feet, and underlie the Miocene and Quaternary rocks of Disco Island, Neuseu, Penninai, and the Outlets of Pendulum Island in East Greenland. It is possible that some of these rocks are also of Huronian age, but it is doubtful whether the rocks so designated by the geologists of the "Albat" and "Dawson" expeditions really are the Huronian in Canada, or are a continuous portion of the fundamental or oldest gneiss of the north west of Scotland and the Western Isles.

(2) *Silurian*.—Upper Silurian, having a strong relation to the Wensley of Great Britain, but with a few corals, and Lower Silurian, with a succession much the same as in British North America, are found on the shores of Smith Sound, but not as yet so far south as the Danish peninsula.

(3) *Dicranes* rocks are believed to occur in Igloolik and Tannu-shibik fjords, in SW Greenland, but as they are unfossiliferous sandstones, rapidly disintegrating, this cannot be known. It is, however, likely that the formation occurs in Greenland, for in Davis Bay, Cape Felden found a species of *Spirifer*, and *Orthis maculosa* or *costata*, though it is possible that these fossils represent the "Dian stage" (Elen) of the Lower Cambrian. But a few *Dicranes* forms have also been recorded from the Archipelago, which tends to confirm belief in the existence of a sporadic *Dicranian* formation in Greenland.

(4) *Carboniferous*.—In entire blocks of sandstone, found on the Disco shore of the Wuygite, have been detected a *Syntrichia* and a species of *Leptæra* as *Glincheva*, perhaps of this age, and probably much of the extreme northern coast of Grinnell Land, and therefore, in all likelihood, the opposite Greenland shore, contains a fully developed Carboniferous Limestone fauna, identical with that so widely distributed over the North American continent, and referable also to British and Spitzbergen species. Of the Cambrian above class, if they occur, we know nothing at present. Capt. Feilden has suggested that as the *Syntrichia* and *Leptæra* met with this formation on the northern shores of Greenland, yet it was observed that a continuation of the direction of the known strike of the limestone of Feilden peninsula, crossed on the other side, passes through the neighbourhood of Spitzbergen, where the formation occurs, and contains certain species identical with those of the Grinnell Land rocks of this horizon. The force of the fossils is, according to Mr. Richardson, North American and Canadian, though many of the species are British. The corals are few in number, but the *Molluscan* (*Polyzoa*) are more numerous in species and individuals. No Secondary rocks have been discovered in the extreme northern parts of West Greenland, though they are present on the east and west coasts in more southerly latitudes than Smith Sound.

(5) *Triassic*.—These do not occur on the west coast, but on the east coast the German expedition discovered a mass of corals on Kuhn Island, resembling those of the Russian Triassic, characterized by the presence of the genus *Avicula*, an ammonite (*Puzosiphon* *Papery*), *A. striatula*, *Bellerophon*, *Pendulmaria*, *E. solenaria*, *E. obeliskus*, and a *Cyprina* near to *C. pygmaea*. On the south coast of the same island are coarse-grained, brownish micaceous, and light-colored calcareous sandstone and marls, containing fossils, which render it probable that they are of the same age.

<sup>1</sup> *Fauna Greenlandica* (1780), p. 4, *Nordenskiöldii*, *Redogivelsen for en Expedition till Grönland i det Nordliga 1871*, also translated in *Geology* (1878), and Nordenskiöld's *Arctic Voyages* (1879). Banks in *Grönlands Inland* (No. 9, *Fra Tveden omens Yorden*, 1875), *Danish Greenland* (1874), and *Grönland geographi og statistisk beskrivelse* (1877), *Reisende, Ueber die Gletscher Nordgrönlands und die Bildung der Eisberge* (1877), and the various works and memoirs cited by Brown in *Arctic Papers* of 1878 & 1879.

<sup>2</sup> Beigren, *Om Kongl Vet Akad Förel.*, 1871, p. 268.

<sup>3</sup> Full accounts of the explorations are given by Brown, in *Arctic Papers of the R. G. S.* (1875), and in "Das Innere von Grönland" (Petermann's *Mittheilungen*, 1871), as well as in "Physios of Arctic Ice" (*Quarterly Journal of the Geol. Soc.*, 1869).  
<sup>4</sup> *Geograph. Magazine*, 1878, 2, 187, and *Geog. Blätter*, 1878, 2, 187.  
<sup>5</sup> *Das Innere von Grönland* (1871), 2, 187.





debtors, on paying freight for them at the rate of 2½ p per 10 lb, or 1½ p per cubic foot. The prices to be paid for European articles are fixed every year, the prices current in Danish and Eskimo being printed and distributed by the Government. According to a calculation, founded on the average of the last few years, about 22 per cent of the value in the European market is paid for the products in Greenland. Out of the payment five-sixths are given to the sellers, and one-sixth devoted to the Greenlanders' public fund, spent in "public works," in charity, and on other unforeseen contingencies. The object of the monopoly is solely for the good of the Greenlanders,—to prevent spirits being sold to them, and the vice, disease, and misery, which usually attend the collision between civilization of the white's type and barbarism, being introduced into the primitive arctic community. The inspectors are, in addition to being trade superintendents, magistrates, but serious crime is practically unknown, while the cases of theft which have occurred within a decade are so few that they are held in recollection as historical events. The "vices of civilization" are few, and its diseases unknown. The Danish officials are mostly men of considerable intelligence, and all of good character, though their pay is small. The inspector receives £328 and a residence, the average salaries of the 11 "colombesteyere" are £250, of the 18 clerks—"assistants" or "volunteers"—£106, besides residence, fuel, and attendance. In addition there are about 152 "illegitimate" seamen, mechanics, &c., each a stone, each taxpayer, a percentage on their trade. Though the officials are all powerful, yet, owing to the exertions of Dr. Ruuk, local councils or "parasauts" were organized in 1857 in every district. To these parish parliaments delegates are sent from every station,—showed men, wise in council, and well acquainted with the wants of the Greenlanders. These "parasauts"—elected at the rate of about one representative to 120 votes—wear a cap with a badge (a bear rampant), and all the European members of the council in distributing the surplus profit apportioned to each district, and generally in advising as to the welfare of that part of the community under their partial control. In 1873 there were deposited, in a savings bank established in Greenland, £200 as contributions for the support of illegitimate children, £199, 10s, sums gained by inheritance or by other unforeseen circumstances, £791, savings from wages, chiefly those of the Europeans, and £121, savings of the Eskimo, or half-bloods. But thrift is the most prominent feature in the Eskimo character. The "municipal council" has the disposal of 20 per cent of the annual profits made on produce purchased within the confines of each district. It holds two sessions every year, and the discussions are entirely in the Eskimo language. In addition to their functions as guardians of the poor, the parish M.P.s have to investigate crimes and punish misdemeanours, settle litigations and divide inheritances. They can impose fines for small offences not worth sending before the inspector, and, in cases of high misdemeanour, have the power of inflicting corporal punishment. During the first ten or twelve years the following causes were submitted to trial—one single case of having in passion occasioned the death of a person, and another of openly threatening, five or six instances of grosser theft or cheating, and as many of concealment of birth and crimes relating to matrimony, every year a few petty thefts, and instances of making use of the tools of others without permission, or of like disorders, and several trifling litigations.

**Trade.**—The trade of Greenland is entirely confined to that part of the coast colonized by the Danes,—the wide straits of Smith Sound and the east coast contributing nothing to the world's riches. Neither do the civilized people of any other nation trade on the coast, the English "Greenland seal and whale fishery" being a mis-

nomer, for the "fisheries" are pursued on the west coast of Davis Strait and Baffin's Bay, and in the straits between Jan Mayen and Spitzbergen, and occasionally within sight of the entrance of Greenland. Taking the Greenland trade as confined to the coast of the east, according to the calculations of Lund, the earnings of the 1877 families of Eskimo under the Danish crown are on an average £15,016 per annum,—giving each family an average annual income of £48 from the produce of the hunt, and of £1,100 from the coast trade. During the twenty years 1853-72, (excluding 1856), the average annual exports consisted of 118,675 tons of oil, 45,148 seal skins, 74,376 fowls, 3,338 lb raw cod, 6909 lb walrus, 2,000 lb whale bone, 550 lb walrus ivory, 18,177 walrus hides. During the period 1870-74 the mean annual value of the products received from Greenland was £45,000, that of the goods sent thither, £25,514, and the mean expenditure on the ships and crews, £8897. Not including the royalty paid by the company which exports the walrus (from 1854 to 1874 equal to £48,925), the average profit of the Greenland trade was for the 21 years between 1853 and 1874, about £8800 yearly. The capital sunk in the "royal trade" is estimated at £64,126, and, taking the whole amount of net revenues from the present trade during the period between 1770 and 1874, the interest on the capital as well as the income from the walrus royalty being subtracted the present "dividend" of the kongelige Gronlandsk Handelsselskab is £100,000 has been earned.

**Trading Districts and Census.**—A Danish "colony" in Greenland is not at the best of times a cheerful place, though, in the long days of summer, some of those in the fjords of South Greenland are comparatively pleasant. The houses are almost entirely built of wood, pitched roofs, and whitewashed walls, the few open spaces. In addition to the three or four Danish houses—the usual number at the chief settlement—there are from 30 to 300 or 400 Eskimo at the place. They usually live in huts built of turf and stone, each ordered by a short tent-pole which in most respects are an improvement over the primitive dwellings of the *umiak* (see Eskimo). In South Greenland there are, seven trading districts, as in North Greenland five. From Cape Farvel all points north of the *Arctic Circle* are called *Arctic Stations*. There are, in all, 18 trading stations. Of the inhabitants, 1060 belonged in 1872 to the Moravian mission settlements, which do not extend much farther north, the chief clergy being members of the Danish Church. In the north, the chief clergy "Hesinittarsua" something of the *arctic theologians* exists. In this district also are the remains of the old Norse settlements of Red Erik, his contemporaries, and his successors. *Freetry of slough* has six trading stations, which collect about 68 tons of oil and 1000 seal skins annually. The population in 1870 was 821, at Ivigtut, in this district, are the cytolite mines. *Godthaab* has 999 people, 6 stations, and a trade return of 74 tons of oil and 1000 seal skins annually. It is the most southern station for extra duty, and formerly also for reindeer skins. Cod fish were also once caught here in great abundance, but this business is now almost abandoned. *Godthaab* "colony" is the chief settlement in Greenland. Besides the usual trade officers, one or two Danish missionaries who manage the seminary, and two or three Moravian missionaries (at Ny Hermit), the royal inspector of South Greenland, and the physician for the northern part of it, reside in this place. In addition to the seminary, Godthaab has a church, of rather imposing appearance for Greenland, but too large for the community, and built of bricks, a material very little suited to the country. The houses of the natives, almost all with sloping roofs of beards, look very pretty, but at Ny Hermit they are a sad appearance. The latter station has two stabled buildings, containing accommodation for the missionaries, schoolroom, and church or "meeting hall" as it is called. At Isichenfah the last thirty years devoted to one-half, and, owing chiefly to the misdirected asceticism demanded from their flock by these unwieldy men and women, is perhaps the most destitute of material comfort of any station in Greenland. There are also found House ruins, part of the region lying between the Victor Bygd of the Icelanders, just as that further south was then Oster Bygd. *Suklaarsua* is one of the loftiest and most picturesque mountains. It yields about 92 tons of oil and 1000 seal skins, also some cod fish, a few reindeer, and most of the outfit done of the country. It has six trading posts and 766 people. *Ullenshaab* has four trading posts, and now yields about 60 tons of oil and 400 seal skins, besides whale-bone and cod fish. There are four stations. In 67° 40' N lat. Nagmuk or North Strom Bygd forms the boundary between South and North Greenland, the settlements which follow are therefore in the latter hemisphere. *Arctic Stations* in the state of decadence, the population being 119 tons of oil and 8400 seal skins collected annually by six stations. In 1870 the population was 1008, the greater number living at the chief settlement of the same name. *Christianshaab* has four trading posts, which collect from 60 to 70 tons of oil and 1000 seal skins. *Christianshaab* is one of the pleasantest dis-







The harbour contemplated under this agreement was not finished till 1710, in which year Gloucester was established as a custom house port. In 1701 an Act of Parliament was obtained whereby a duty of 5d Scots was imposed on every Scots pint of ale or beer "brought, brought in, landed, or sold" within the town "for cleaning, deepening, building, and repairing" the harbour and piers. Till the year 1772 the harbour was simply leased to the town by the superior, but in that year and in 1773 the magistrates and town council bought it, and laid it out to it from John Shaw-Stewart, the owner of the Gloucester estate. From that date down to the present time the additions made to the harbour by parliamentary authority have been vast numbers. The dock and quay accommodation now amounts to eighty acres. In addition there is in course of construction an immense dock to be named the "James Watt Dock," which is intended to afford accommodation to vessels of the largest tonnage, and to be laid out to it from John Shaw-Stewart of the title. The estimated cost of this dock, with warehouses and sheds is £250,000. The harbour trustees who now have the management of the docks consist of the town council and nine elective members chosen by the local shipowners and harbour trustees.

The commercial prosperity of Gloucester received its first great impetus from the Treaty of Union in 1707. The earliest trade seems to have been in herring, a trade which, however, has long been extinct. Trading in tobacco was also carried on in a very early period. It was first brought from the colonies, and then exported to the Continent. The Greenland whale fishing commenced as far back as 1762, but it never rose to be of any importance, and is now discontinued. The American war greatly interrupted the progress of Gloucester, as the principal trade of the port was then with that country, but after the peace in 1783 it speedily revived, and within the seven following years the shipping trade was doubled in amount. At present the principal trade is with the East and West India, Australia, and the United States and Canada. Newfoundland and South America have also employed a considerable number of Gloucester vessels. The following table is shown by the following table of the number and tonnage of vessels that entered and cleared from and to foreign ports in various years since 1781—

	INWARD SHIPS				OUTWARD SHIPS			
	British		Foreign		British		Foreign	
	No.	Tons	No.	Tons	No.	Tons	No.	Tons
1781	52	6,669	4	530	63	7,397	8	520
1804	165	30,802	25	5,120	155	81,836	20	5,965
1821	188	45,162	11	5,054	188	46,887	9	2,899
1853	271	64,575	44	18,761	158	55,680	46	11,975
1878	428	216,521	178	64,918	419	198,287		

Interesting historical details will be found in *Memoirs of James Watt*, by G. Williamson, 1856. The first volume of *Historical Sketches of the Town and Harbours of Gloucester*, by David Campbell, appeared in 1879.

**GREENOUGH, HENRY (1806–1852)**, an American sculptor, son of a Boston merchant, was born at Boston, September 6, 1806. At the age of sixteen he entered Harvard College, but while there he devoted his principal attention to art, and in the autumn of 1826 he went to Rome, where he enjoyed the advantage of instruction from Thorwaldsen. After a short visit in 1826 to Boston, where he executed busts of John Quincy Adams and other persons of distinction, he returned to Italy and took up his residence at Florence. Here one of his first commissions was from James Fenimore Cooper for a group of Channing Chebuc, and the success of this work, joined to the strong recommendation of Cooper, Dana, Everett, and others, led to his being chosen by the Government to execute the colossal statue of Washington for the national capital. It was unveiled in 1843, and as an accurate likeness, conceived in a lofty and truly poetical spirit, it is entitled to high rank among modern works of a similar kind. Shortly afterwards he received a second commission from Government for a colossal group, the "Heroes of the Revolution," intended to represent the conflict between the Anglo-Saxon and Indian races. In 1851 he returned to Washington to superintend its erection, and in the autumn of 1852 he was attacked by brain fever, of which he died, 18th December. Among other works of Greenough may be mentioned a bust of Lafayette, the Medora, and the Venus Victrix in the gallery of the

Boston Athenæum. Greenough was a man of wide culture, and his occasional productions in prose and verse gave evidence of a capacity to attain the same eminence in literature as in art. See *Memoir of Horatio Greenough*, by H. T. Buckenmann, 1853.

**GREENSHANK**, one of the lugger of the buds commonly known as Sandpiper, the *Totanus glottis* of most ornithological writers. Some exercise of the imagination is however needed to see in the dingy olive coloured legs of this species a justification of the English name by which it goes, and the application of that name, which seems to be due to Pennant, was probably by way of distinguishing it from two allied but perfectly distinct species of *Totanus* (*T. calidus* and *T. fusces*), having red legs and usually called Redshanks. The Greenshank is a native of the northern parts of the Old World, but in winter it wanders far to the south, and occurs regularly at the Cape of Good Hope, in India, and thence throughout the Indo-Malay Archipelago to Australia. It has also been recorded from North America, but its appearance there must be considered accidental. Almost as bulky as a Woodcock, it is of a much more slender build, and its long legs and neck give it a graceful appearance, which is enhanced by the activity of its actions. Disturbed from the moon or marsh, where it has its nest, it rises swiftly into the air, conspicuous by its white back and rump, and uttering shrill cries round the intruder. It will perch on the topmost bough of a tree, if a tree be near, to watch his proceedings, and the cock exhibits all the astounding gesticulations in which the males of many other *Lamcolæ* indulge during the breeding season—with certain variations, however, that are peculiarly its own. It breeds in no small numbers in the Hebrides, and parts of the Scottish Highlands from Ayrshire to Sutherland, as well as in the more elevated or more northern districts of Norway, Sweden, and Finland, and probably also from thence to Kamchatka. In North America it is represented by two species, *Totanus campalimatus* and *T. melanoleucus*, the latter called Willets, Tellines, or Tealies, which in general habits resemble the Greenshank of the Old World. (A. N.)

**GREENWICH**, a market town and parliamentary borough in the county of Kent, England, is pleasantly situated on the right bank of the Thames, 6 miles SE of London Bridge by the river. The streets towards the river are narrow and irregular, but in the higher situations there are many fine terraces and villas. The town has manufacturing of various kinds, including the works of the telegraph maintenance company, engineering works, soap works, chemical works, and a brewery. On account of its picturesque views, its fine air, and its public park and other attractions, it is one of the favourite resorts of Londoners.

Fronting the river stands the splendid range of buildings in the Grecian style of architecture, formerly known as Greenwich Hospital, but now the Royal Naval College. It occupies the site of an ancient royal palace called Greenwich house, which was a favourite royal residence as early as 1800, but was granted by Henry V to Thomas Beaufort, duke of Exeter, from whom it passed to Humphrey, duke of Gloucester, and it did not revert to the crown till his death in 1433. It was the birthplace of Henry VIII., Queen Mary, and Queen Elizabeth. The building was enlarged by Edward IV., by Henry VIII., who made it his chief residence and named it *Pleasantus*, by James I., and by Charles I., who erected the "Queen's House" for Henrietta Maria. Along with other royal palaces it was at the Revolution appropriated by the Protector, but it reverted to the crown on the restoration of Charles II., by whom it was pulled down, and the west wing of the present hospital was erected as part of an extensive design which was not further carried out. In its unfinished state it

was assigned by the patent of William and Mary to certain of the great officers of state, as commissioners, for its conversion into a hospital for seamen. As it now stands, the building consists of four blocks. Behind a terrace 580 feet in length, stretching along the river side, are the buildings erected in the time of Charles II. by Webb from Inigo Jones's designs, and in that of Queen Anne from designs by Sir Christopher Wren, and behind these buildings are on the west those of King William and on the east those of Queen Mary, both from Wien's designs. In the King William range is the painted hall. Its walls and ceiling were painted by Sir Thomas Thornhill with various emblematic devices, and it is hung with portraits of the most distinguished admirals, and paintings of the principal naval battles of England. To the centre of the chief quadrangle of the hospital there is a steeple of marble taken from the French by Admiral Sir George Rooke. The oldest part of the building was in some measure rebuilt in 1811, and the present chapel was erected to replace one destroyed by fire in 1779. The endowments of the hospital were increased at various periods from bequests and forfeited estates. Formerly 3000 retired seamen were boarded within it, and 5000 or 6000 others, called out-pensioners, received stipends at various rates out of its funds, but in 1865 an Act was passed empowering the Admiralty to grant liberal pensions in lieu of food and lodging to such of the inmates as were willing to quit the hospital, and in 1860 another Act was passed making them leaving on these conditions compulsory. It has since been devoted to the accommodation of the students of the Royal Naval College, for which purpose it was formally opened in 1875. Behind the College is the Royal Hospital School, where 1000 boys, sons of petty officers and seamen, are boarded.

Another of the attractions of Greenwich is the park, 190 acres in extent, in which is situated the Royal Observatory. It was enclosed by Humphrey, duke of Gloucester, in 1435, and laid out by Charles II. It still contains a fine avenue of Spanish chestnuts planted in his time, and the hill rising towards the south commands a fine prospect over London, the Thames, and the plains of Essex. The Royal Observatory was built in 1675, for the advancement of navigation and nautical astronomy. From it the exact time is conveyed at one o'clock every day by electric current to London and all the other chief towns of the kingdom, and English geographers reckon longitude from its meridian. Adjoining Greenwich Park is Blackheath, an open common much frequented by excursionists, and also used for golf and cricket.

Greenwich possesses a considerable number of almshouses and other charitable foundations, among which may be mentioned Queen Elizabeth's College, Trinity Hospital, founded by Henry Howard, earl of Northampton, in 1613; the Jubilee Almshouses, founded by subscription of the inhabitants in 1809 in commemoration of the fiftieth anniversary of George III.; the Green Coat School, the Grey Coat School, and the Orphan Girl's School. The parish church is dedicated to St. Alphege, archbishop of Canterbury, who suffered martyrdom at Greenwich.

Greenwich was first noticed in the reign of Ethelred, when it was from 1011 to 1014 the station of the Danish fleet. It has been the place of debarkation of many illustrious personages, as well as in 1806, after the battle of Trafalgar, of the remains of Lord Nelson, which lay in state in the painted hall of the hospital previous to their removal for interment in St. Paul's Cathedral. In 1777 it returned two burgesses to parliament, but it was not again represented till the same privilege was conferred on it by the Reform Act of 1832. The population of the parish in 1871 was 40,419. The population of the parliamentary borough—whose limits were extended in 1888, and include the parishes of Charlton near Woolwich, Plumstead, and St. Nicholas and St. Paul, Deptford, and part of Woolwich—is 169,861, and the area 568½ acres, of which 987 is in Surrey.

GRÉGOIRE, HENRI (1750–1831), bishop of Blois and French revolutionist, was born at Vichy near Lunclville, 4th December 1750. After studying at Metz and Nancy, he became curé of Embarrasnil and professor at the college of Pont-a-Mousson. In 1783 he was crowned by the academy of Nancy for his *Eloge de la Poésie*, and in 1788 by that of Metz for an *Essai sur la régénération physique et morale des Juifs*. He was chosen in 1789 by the clergy of the district of Nancy to represent them in the states-general, where he took a leading part in the deliberations, and gave energetic support to the republicans. Along with four other curés he abandoned his office and joined that of the *tiers état*; he presided at the permanent sitting of sixty two hours while the Bastille was being attacked by the people, and made a vehement speech against the enemies of the republic, and he subsequently took a prominent share in abolishing the privileges of birth and religion. Under the new constitution of the clergy he was chosen bishop of the department of Lou-st-Olier, taking the title of bishop of Blois. As a member of the national assembly he proposed the motion for the abolition of the king's office, which was carried by acclamation. During the trial of Louis XVI., being absent with one of his colleagues on a mission for the union of Saxony to France, he along with them wrote a letter urging the condemnation of the king, but omitting the words *à mort*, and he endeavoured to save the life of the king by proposing in the assembly that the penalty of death be suspended. His subsequent action was very influential in moderating extreme republican views. He opposed the national emanation of Christianity, and was the first to advocate the reopening of the churches, exerted himself to get measures put in execution for restraining the vandalistic fury against the monuments of art, extended his protection to artists and men of letters, and obtained for them pecuniary encouragement from the state, and devoted much of his attention to the reorganization of the public libraries, the establishment of botanic gardens, and the improvement of technical education. He also took a great interest in negro emancipation, and on his motion most of colour in the French colonies were admitted to the same rights as whites. On the establishment of the new constitution, Grégoire was elected to the council of 500, and after the 18th Brumaire he became a member of the new legislative assembly. In this capacity he voted in the minority of five against the proclamation of the empire, and opposed the creation of the new nobility and the divorce of Napoleon from Josephine, but notwithstanding this he was subsequently created a count of the empire and officer of the legion of honour. During the later years of Napoleon's reign he travelled in England and Germany, but in 1814 he had returned to France and was one of the chief instigators of the action that was taken against the empire. After the second restoration he was excluded from the Institute, and when in 1819 he was elected to the assembly by the department of Isère, his election was annulled. From that time, therefore, he lived in retirement, occupying himself in literary pursuits and conducting a voluminous correspondence with most of the eminent savants of Europe, but as he had been deprived of his bishopric and of his pension as a senator, he was compelled to sell his library to obtain the means of support. He died at Paris, May 20, 1831. As he had remained steadfast to his republican principles the ecclesiastical authorities refused him the last offices of religion, and the rites of Christian sepulture were said over his body in the church of the Abbaye aux Bois by a proscribed priest, and after the hearse set out from the church the populace unyoked the horses and themselves drew it to the cemetery of Mont Parnasse. Grégoire forms a striking exception to most of the French

revolutionists in combining zeal for republicanism with a moderation which sought to check every form of licence, and with a steadfast adherence to the religion of which he was a priest, and it was further a remarkable feature of his character that, though a sincere Roman Catholic, he was thoroughly tolerant of the religious views of others.

Under several political pamphlets, Gregory was the author of *Histoire des schismes d'Orient, depuis le commencement du siècle du neuvième jusqu'à l'époque actuelle*, chro., 1810, *Essai historique sur la libéralité de l'église catholique*, 1818, *De l'influence du Christ sur la civilisation des hommes*, 1821, *Mémoires des conférences, des empereurs, des papes, et d'autres princes, 1821, Histoire du sacerdoce et du pape en France*, 1826, *Discours prononcés pendant les conciles, les synodes, des évêques, et des cardinaux de M. Le Comte Henri de Choiseul*, preceded by a biographical notice by Cousin d'Avallon, was published in 1821, and the *discours ecclésiastiques, politiques, et littéraires de Grégoire*, with a biographical notice by H. Cuvier, appeared in 1816.

GREGORIAN CHANT See PLAINSONG  
GREGORIAS, NECTORIUS See BYZANTINE HITS  
TOPIANS, vol. iv p. 613

GREGORY, ST, surnamed THE GREAT (c. 540-604), the first pope of that name, and one of the four doctors of the Latin Church (Ambrose, Augustine, and Jerome being the other three), was born at Rome about the year 540. His father Gaudianus possessed senatorial rank, and his mother Sylvia is said to have been remarkable for her mental endowments. Educated for the legal profession, Gregory about his thirtieth year was chosen by the citizens to the high position of *praefectus urbanus*, this post he is said to have occupied for three years (571-574), discharging its duties with great pomp and magnificence, but on the death of his father, having become deeply impressed with a sense of the transitoriness and vanity of all earthly things, he retired from public life and gave up his whole fortune to pious uses, building six monasteries in Sicily and one in Rome, in this last, which was dedicated by him to St Andrew, he embraced the Benedictine rule, and divided his whole time between works of charity and the exercises of fasting, meditation, and prayer. It was while he was still a simple monk of St Andrew that the often repeated incident related by Bede is believed to have occurred. Having seen some English slaves of striking beauty exposed for sale in the public market, "non Angli sed Angeli," he set his heart upon the evangelization of Britain, and was only prevented by the command of his ecclesiastical superiors from setting out in person to seek the realization of his pious wish. About 578 or 579 he was appointed abbot of his monastery, and likewise one of the seven deacons (regentium) of the Roman Church, and in 582 he was sent by Pelagius II. to Constantinople as papal apocrisarius or representative at the imperial court. There he remained for upwards of three years, during which he negotiated several matters of importance and delicacy, but amid his diplomatic and other engagements he found time to begin, if not even to complete, one of his largest works, the *Moralia*, or exposition of the book of Job. A few years after his return from the Eastern capital, the death of Pelagius (590) caused a vacancy in the papal chair, and the choice of the clergy, senate, and people unanimously fell upon Gregory. He strongly deprecated the bestowal of this honour, and wrote to the emperor (Maurice) imploring him not to confirm the nomination. A pious fraud, committed by the city priest who in office, prevented the letter from reaching its destination, and though Gregory hid himself for a time, he was at length obliged to yield to the urgency of his friends by accepting the papal crown (September 590). The pontificate of fourteen years which followed was marked by extraordinary vigour and activity, which made themselves felt throughout almost every department of the doctrine, discipline, and worship of the entire Western Church. By means of earnest prayer and wisely ex-

pendent pains the aggressions of the Lombards were checked, and order and tranquillity were speedily restored to Rome, in Italy and France he tightened the too long relaxed reins of ecclesiastical discipline, in England, Spain, and Africa the powers of Paganism, Arianism, and Donatism were perceptibly weakened, as against the Eastern emperor and the patriarch of Constantinople the prerogatives of the bishop of Rome were asserted with a vigour previously unwitnessed, the ceremonies of the church were regulated and extended, the liturgy further developed. The anniversary of Gregory's death, which took place at Rome on the 12th of March 604 is observed as a duplex by the Latin Church, and even in the Greek Church his wisdom and sanctity continue to be commemorated. The hyperbolic panegyrics of those ecclesiastical writers who lived nearest his time (such as Gregory of Tours and Isidore of Seville) must of course be taken with considerable reservation, but they are interesting as showing how powerful and profound was the impression he left upon his contemporaries and immediate successors—an impression and an influence well entitling him to the epithet of "great." Of the personal qualities of Gregory, the most obvious are beyond all question the singular strength and energy of his character. Fully and intensely convinced of the divineness of the Christian doctrine and life as these had presented themselves to his mind and heart, he suffered no obstacle and no discouragement to triumph over his determination to give them all the currency and prevalence that was possible in his day. Having clearly seen the end he had in view, he with equal discernment made choice of his measures for its attainment. The refinements alike of literature and of art had for him no place in the Christian scheme, it is needless to say that he therefore despised them both for himself and for others. There is some room for hoping indeed that the burning of the books of the Palatine library was due to some undue partiality, but there is no possibility of mistake as to the literary taste of the man who could write (prof to *Moralia*)—"non metacum collisionem fugio, non barbarum confusumque devoto, situs monaque etiam et prepositum casus sevarie contemno, quis indignum vehementer existimo ut verbis ecclesiasticis oculis restingam sub regibus Domati." The uniformity of the Roman ritual, the ascendancy of the Roman hierarchy, the prevalence of the Catholic dogma,—these were not merely the highest, they were the only, ideals he had ever caught sight of. It ought not therefore to surprise us if in striving towards them he sometimes was tempted, and yielded to the temptation, to sacrifice truthfulness to what he conceived to be the truth, and the mere claims of humanity to the demands of what he regarded as a higher law. Never purely selfish, he was, apart from the exigencies of his ecclesiastical position, singularly tolerant, liberal, and kindly.

Of the numerous extant works attributed to Gregory the Great the following are undoubted: the *Moralia*, in thirty-five books, being an exposition of the book of Job, composed between 580 and 590, the twenty-two *Homilies on Ezekiel* (about 595), and the forty *Homilies on the Gospels* (about 593), the *Regula* (or *Can*) *Pastoralis*, dedicated to John, archbishop of Ravenna, (about 590), the *Dualogues* with Peter, the deacon, in four books, on the lives and miracles of the Italian saints (583 or 594), and the *Letters*, in four teen "registers," arranged according to the class of his posthumous. He was also the author of various hymned hymns, none of which are still extant and appear in the collected editions of his works. They are characterized more by simplicity of language than by depth of feeling. The *Concordia quorundam testimoniorum in una viam scriptam est in unum*, and also the *Commentarii* on 1 Kings, Canticles, and the seven penitential psalms usually ascribed to him, and epitomes. His liturgical works, the *Diocesanarius* and *Antiphonarius*, have been considerably tampered with by medieval collectors and revisers, and even the *Letters* are not wholly free from interpolations. Of Gregory's manner as an expositor little can be said, he avowedly adopts in all cases the allegorical method, which in his hands is unflinchingly carried out, with, in many cases,

ufficiently showing results. As Milman has remarked, "It may safely be said that, according to Gregory's theory of interpretation, there is nothing which might not be found in any book ever written." In practical homiletics, however, he is very often just and profound as well as high-toned, but it would be too much to say that he was superior to the preachers of his time. In practical life his preference for the monastic and ascetic forms of the Christian life is carried to a height which is a wider observation of the conditions of human frailties and infirmities will never cease to regard as correct. His *Zuander*, who has been translated into Anglo-Saxon (Irish), and even Arabic, describe the most astonishing miracles with an utter simplicity which, as suggestive of entire belief, is certainly unobtainable in this country, and it is difficult to (his) (his) pointed out) to the Irish descent of many of his writings from the church of St. Peter from the suspicion of some degree of pious insincerity. The *Letter*, as might be expected, of great importance from the light they throw upon the history of those times.

The complete editions of the works of this great father of the Latin Church have been, as was to be expected, numerous. The earliest was that of Lyons (1616), which is usually followed by that of Paris (1518-20), Basil (1851), and Rome (1858). The best edition is the Benedictine (Paris, 1766), in 10 vols. fol., reprinted at Venice (1768-76), in 17 vols. 4to, under Magni *Patris Gregorii*, ed. by L. V. de Vigne, *De Gregorio in Aegypto* (1848-49), *Magnus, De Gregorio in Italia* (1844), *Lex, Gregorius in Glosse nach L. V. in L. de Gregorio* (1841), *Philippi, Gregorius de Glosse in v. v. de Gregorio* (1842), and *Bernardus, Philippi de Gregorio in v. v. de Gregorio* (1842-49). There is a convenient edition of the *Opera Patris* by Waddell (1860).

GREGORY II, Sr, pope from 715 to 716 to 731, succeeded Constantine I, his election being variously dated May 10, 715, and March 21, 716. Having, it is said, bought off the Lombards for thirty pounds of gold, he used the tranquillity thus obtained for vigorous missionary effort in Germany, and for strengthening the papal authority in the churches of England and Ireland. By excommunicating Leo the Isaurian, he prepared the way for a long series of revolts and civil wars, which tended greatly to the establishment of the temporal power of the popes. He died in 731, and subsequently attained the honour of canonization, February 13th, being the day consecrated to his memory in the *Menology*.

GREGORY III, Sr, pope from 731 to 741, a Syrian by birth, succeeded Gregory II in March 731. His pontificate, like that of his predecessors, was disturbed by the iconoclastic controversy, in which he vainly invoked the intervention of Charles Martel. During his reign also it was that Boniface in Germany, on whom he conferred the pallium, Wilibrod in Bohemia, and Bede in England carried out their most successful missionary labours. He died 29th November 741, and was succeeded by Zacharias I.

GREGORY IV, pope from 827 to 844, was chosen to succeed Valentinian in December 827, on which occasion he recognized the supremacy of the Frankish emperor in the most unequivocal manner. His name is chiefly associated with the quarrels between Lothar and Louis the Debonnaire, in which he espoused the cause of the former, for whom, in the Campus Martius, as it is usually called (833), he secured by his teachery a temporary advantage. The institution of the feast of All Saints is usually attributed to this pope. He died January 25, 844, and was succeeded by Sergius II.

GREGORY V, pope from 906 to 909, a grandson of the emperor Otto the Great, succeeded John XV when only twenty-four years of age, and until the council of Ravenna (907) had a reviv in the person of the antipope John XVI, when the people of Rome in revolt against the will of the youthful emperor Otto III. Gregory's pontificate was chosen. The most memorable acts of his pontificate were those arising out of the controversy of the French king, Robert, who was ultimately brought to submission by the rigorous infliction of a sentence of excommunication. He died suddenly, and not without suspicion of foul play, 18th February 909. His successor was Silvester II.

GREGORY VI, pope from 1044 to 1046, who, as Johannes Glatianus had earned a high reputation for learning and piety, succeeded Benedict IX, having bought off the antipopes Sylvester III and John X. In a council held by the emperor Henry III at Sutri, in 1046, he was accused of simony, and his election was found to have been unlawful. This led to his degradation, and was followed by his withdrawal into Germany, where he died in the following year (1047). He was succeeded by Clement II.

GREGORY VII, Sr, one of the greatest of the Roman pontiffs, was born about the year 1015 at Soncino, a small town in Tuscany, where his father, Bonizo of Bonazon, is said to have followed the trade of a carpenter. His own name, Hildebrand or Hildebrand, is suggestive of a German extraction, but of his remote ancestry nothing is recorded. His youth was passed at Rome in the monastery of St. Mary on the Aventine, where a relative was at that time prior, here the archpriest Johannes Glatianus (afterwards Gregory VI) was one of his instructors, and the youthful scholar early attracted the attention of such visitors as Laurentius of Amalfi and Odilon of Clugny. There is some reason to believe that, after passing his novitiate in Rome, Hildebrand removed for some years to the great Burgundian cloister, at that time under the charge of the last named ecclesiastic, but all the earlier years of his life are shrouded in complete obscurity. In 1046 he became one of the chaplains of the newly elected pope, Gregory VI, whom he shortly afterwards accompanied into his German exile, and on the death of that pontiff, some two years later, he retired to Clugny, where his learning and sanctity made a deep impression, and where, according to some accounts, he was ultimately promoted to the office of prior. As a monk of Clugny he appears to have often, than once visited the imperial court for the transaction of ecclesiastical business, and in 1049 he is said in a very special way to have come under the notice of Bruno, bishop of Toul, then on his way to Rome to take possession of the chair of St. Peter, in which he occupied for some years under the title of Leo IX. It was at Hildebrand's instance that Bruno, who had been nominated by the emperor merely, consented to refrain from assuming the pontifical vestments, and to present himself to the Romans in the garb of a simple pilgrim, until he should have been elected in a more regular manner. The ascendancy which Hildebrand had thus acquired over this pope he never afterwards lost, in 1050 he became cardinal subdeacon, and in following years he was entrusted with various missions of great importance, taking also a prominent part in the important synods of Rheims and Mainz, as well as in those of Rome. On the death of Leo IX in 1054 the Roman people had signed a decree that the subdeacon should succeed him, this honour and responsibility however Hildebrand declined, but he was one of three legates who went to Germany to consult with the emperor about the choice of a successor. The negotiations, which lasted eleven months, ultimately issued in the election of Gebhard of Ebsdorf, a relative of the emperor, who up to that time had followed a distinctly antipapal policy, but who, immediately after his reception and consecration at Rome as Victor II (18th April 1055), became as entirely a tool in the hand of Hildebrand as Leo had been. It was during this pontificate that Hildebrand, as papal legate, attended the French synods held for the purpose of repelling the heathen of Benigni. On the election of Pope Stephen IX (X), Hildebrand was again sent to Germany to defend the choice before the empress Agnes, in this mission, which was ultimately successful, several months were spent. Again, in 1058, he succeeded in defeating the hostile party of Benedict X and in securing the throne for Nicholas II, and once more, in 1061, he successfully laboured for the election of Alexander II to the papal

lunr. At length, in 1078, on the death of Alexander, Hildebrand was himself as it were compelled by the tumultuous demands of the mob to accept the vacant throne (23d April), but he refused to receive consecration until the sanction of the emperor had been obtained. This did not arrive for more than a month, although meanwhile he had been practically exercising many of the papal functions, and, finally, however, he was ordained to the priesthood, and some days afterwards (30th June) solemnly consecrated pope by the title of Gregory VII., a name which he chose in testimony of his veneration for the memory and character of his earliest patron, Gregory VI.<sup>1</sup> Once firmly established on the papal throne, Gregory lost no time in giving the utmost possible practical effect to the two leading ideas of his life, the establishment of the supremacy of the papacy within the church, and the effective assertion of the supremacy of the church over the state. In March 1074 a synod was held in Rome which condemned the simony that had grown so prevalent throughout the church, and also enacted the old stringent laws of celibacy which had become almost a dead letter, especially in Germany and in the north of Italy, and uncanonical or married priests were declared to be deposed and their priestly functions invalid. The resistance of the clergy to these decrees was utterly in vain, papal legates visited every country, and, supported by the popular voice, compelled submission. At a second synod held in Rome in February 1075 the decrees of the first were confirmed, and the first blow was struck which afterwards resulted in the long protracted wars of investitures. At that synod it was determined that any ecclesiastic who in future should accept office from the hands of a layman incurred the penalty of deposition, while the secular lord who bestowed investiture was to be excommunicated. The decree was aimed immediately at certain German bishops, Henry's personal advisers, but hardly less directly at Henry himself. The emperor, finding his hands at the moment fully occupied with the suppression of a revolt among the Saxons, was politic enough to conceal his resentment for the time, and to dismiss his advisers, but as soon as the war had been brought to a close, his defiance found ample expression. Meanwhile Gregory was not unopposed even in Italy, and during the Christmas festivities of 1075 a revolt in Rome itself was organized by Cencius, who had placed himself at the head of those nobles who were opposed to reform. The pope, however, had the popular sentiment on his side, and ultimately the insurgents were compelled to fly. A papal embassy was next sent, early in 1076, to Henry at Goslar, urging him to appear personally at Rome at a council to be held in the second week of Lent, and there answer for his simony, sacrilege, and oppression. Henry's rage at this knew no bounds, he dismissed the legates with insult, and at a diet held at Worms (24th January 1076) replied by declaring Gregory deposed on charges of tyranny, magic, and adultery, by sending notification of this fact to the Roman clergy, and by taking steps for appointing a successor to the deposed pontiff. Gregory now lost no time in excommunicating all the bishops who had attended the diet of Worms, in solemnly deposing and excommunicating the emperor, and in absolving his subjects from their oath of allegiance (22d February 1076). This counter attack produced a powerful effect upon the German princes and people, many of whom had had good cause to resent Henry's tyrannies, one by one the bishops who had announced their withdrawal from Gregory's obedience now signified their contrition, and at a diet held at Tribur (September 1076) the election of a new

emperor began to be discussed. Resistance being in the measure impossible, Henry resolved upon humbling himself to the utmost, in the dead of winter he set out to make his submission, Gregory was in waiting for him at Canossa, where (25th to 27th January 1077) that famous penance which Europe has not yet forgotten was imposed (see vol. x p. 488). Absolved only on condition of his not assuming the royal dignity till his case had been investigated and decided, Henry had no sooner left the papal presence than he began to plot his revenge. Throwing himself upon the generosity of his Lombard vassals, he took courage to face the papal excommunication which was renewed in November 1078, and in the wars which ensued his arms were finally successful. Rudolf of Swabia having died soon after the battle of Mersburg in 1080, the emperor proceeded with a powerful army to escort into Italy Guibert of Ravenna, who had been chosen at Brixen (June 1080) as Gregory's successor. In three successive summers the attack on Rome was renewed, but it was not until 1084 (March 21) that the treachery of some of the nobles of the city opened the gate to the invader. Gregory was now at last compelled to take refuge in the castle of St. Angelo, while Guibert was established on the pontifical throne as his successor with the title of Clement III. After receiving excommunication from Clement, Henry determined to return at once to Germany, especially as Robert Guiscard was known to be approaching. Released accordingly by the arrival of the Norman duke, Gregory excommunicated once more both Henry and Clement, but not deeming himself secure at Rome, where he had reason to know that his power was no longer what it once had been, he in May 1084 placed himself under Robert's protection at Salerno, where he died, May 25, 1085, after a comparatively brief pontificate of not much more than ten years. His last words were, "I have loved righteousness and hated iniquity, and therefore I die in exile." His festival (dies obiit) is observed throughout the Roman Church on the anniversary of his death. His successor was Victor III.

The life-work of Hildebrand may be thus summed up in the words of St. James Stephen:—"He found the papacy dependant on the empire, he sustained her by alliances almost commensurate with the Italian peninsula. He found the papacy elector by the Roman people and clergy, he left it elector by a college of papal nomination. He found the emperor the virtual patron of the holy see, he wrested that power from his hands. He found the secular clergy the allies and dependants of the secular power, he converted them into the unshakable 'unitas' of his own. He found the higher ecclesiastics in servitude to the temporal sovereigns, he delivered them from that yoke to subjugate them to the Roman throne. He found the pathos of the church, the mere decoration and machinery of a prince, he reduced it within the dominion of the supreme pontiff. He is celebrated as the reformer of the impure and profane abuses of his age, he is more justly entitled to the praise of having left the impress of his own gigantic character on the history of all the ages which have succeeded him."

Unlike Gregory the Great, Hildebrand was no author, his literary remains are all comprised in eleven books of "Registres," of which, which have often been quoted, the first two are most often attributed to him and are now regarded as genuine. Among the numerous earlier biographies may be mentioned those of Paul of Bernart, Paulinus of Pisa, Nicolas of Amiens, and Cardinal Bona. Among later biographies the most important are those of Voigt (*Hildebrand als Gregor VII. u. sein Zeitalter*, 1816, 2d ed. 1818, French translation, with introduction and notes, by Jager, 1884, 4th ed. 1864), Boudet (*The Life and Pontificate of Gregory VII.*, 1840), Seitz (*Gregor VII.*, 1847), Heilmann (*Gregor's Leben und Wirken nach den Streitschriften seiner Zeit*, 1866), Guichenot (*Pape Gregor VII. u. sein Zeitalter*, 7 vols., 1856-61), Villemain (*Vie de Gregoire VII.*, 1873, English translation, by Hooker, 1874), Langen (*Gregorius VII. et les papes de la politique ultra-montaine*, 1874), and Maltzer (*Gregor VII. u. die Bischofswahlen*, 1876). The events of the period are also very fully treated by W. Giesbrecht in his *Geschichte der deutschen Kaiserzeit*, and in other works. For the question, *Was ist Gregor's VII. epistola et diplomatia pontificia, ac vixit quidem pontifex et appendices ampliusque eorum et electionis monumenta porphyrina Gregorius VII. epistolique completioris* (1877).

<sup>1</sup> Apart from the rich historical associations connected with the name of Gregory, its etymology (from *εὐφρενής*), so suggestive of sleepless vigilance, had probably something to do with its selection by this and so many other popes.

GREGORY VIII (Albani de Mora), who as papal legate had in 1172 attended the council of Avranchois, which absolved Henry II of England from the guilt of the murder of Thomas à Beckett, was consecrated pope in room of Urban III October 25th, 1187, and died of fever on December 17th of the same year. Clement III was his successor.

GREGORY IX, pope from 1227 to 1241, the successor of Honorius III, fully inherited the traditions of Gregory VII and of his uncle Innocent III, and resolutely gave himself up to the perpetuation of their policy. One of the first acts of his pontificate was to suspend the emperor Frederick II, then lying sick at Otranto, for dilatoriness in carrying out his promised crusade, the suspension was followed by excommunication and threats of deposition after Frederick had written to the sovereigns of Europe complaining of his treatment. A consequent invasion of the patrimony of St Peter at the instance of Frederick in 1228 having proved unsuccessful, the emperor was constrained to give in his submission and beg for absolution. Although peace was thus secured (August 1230) for a season, the Roman people were far from satisfied, driven by a revolt from his own camp in July 1232, the pope was compelled to take refuge at Anagni and invoke the aid of Frederick. A new outbreak of hostility led to a fresh excommunication of the emperor in 1239, and to a prolonged war which was only terminated by the death of Gregory (August 22, 1241). This pope, who was a remarkably skilful and learned lawyer, caused to be prepared in 1234 the well known *Novum Compilatio Decretalium*, printed at Mainz in 1473. He it was who canonized Saints Elizabeth, Dominic, and Antony of Padua, and also Francis of Assisi, of whom he had been a personal friend. His excommunications upon the rights of the English Church during the ignominious reign of Henry III are well known, but similar attempts against the liberties of the national church of France only served to call forth the celebrated Pragmatic Sanction of St Louis. Gregory IX was succeeded by Celestine V.

GREGORY X, pope from 1271 to 1276, succeeded Clement IV after the papal chair had been three years vacant, his election occurred while he was engaged in a pilgrimage to Saint Jean-d'Acre. On his arrival at Rome his first act was to summon the council which met at Lyons in 1274 for the purpose of considering the Eastern schism, the condition of the Holy Land, and the abuses of the Catholic Church. It was while returning from that council that he died at Arezzo on the 10th of January 1276. To him is due the bull which, subsequently incorporated into the code of canon law, continues to regulate all conclaves for papal elections. He was succeeded by Innocent V.

GREGORY XI (Pierre Roger de Beaufort), pope from 1270 to 1278, born in Limousin in 1236, succeeded Urban V in 1270 as one of the Avignon popes. During his pontificate vigorous measures were taken against the "heresies" which had broken out in Germany, England, and other parts of Europe, a sincere effort was also made to bring about a reformation in the various monastic orders. The thirteen propositions of Wickliffe and the thirteen articles of the "Sachsenspiegel" were formally condemned by him in 1279. His energy was largely stimulated by the stirring words of Catherine of Siena (see vol v p 231), to whom in particular the transference of the papal see back to Italy, January 27, 1277, was almost entirely due. He did not long survive this removal, dying on March 27, 1278. His successor was Urban VI, but the antipope Clement VII also received much support, and the schism lasted forty years.

GREGORY XII (Angelo Corario or Corario), pope from 1406 to 1409, born at Venice about 1326, suc-

ceeded Innocent VII on 30th November 1406, having been chosen at Rome by a conclave consisting of only fifteen cardinals, under the express condition that should Benedict XIII of Avignon renounce all claim to the papacy, he also would renounce his, so that a fresh election might be made by the no longer divided church. Along with Benedict he was deposed by the council of Pisa in March 1409 as schismatical, heretical, perjured, and scandalous, but it was not till after the council of Constance had set aside John XXIII (1410) that through his ambassador he formally renounced the title and dignity of lawful pope. The rest of his life was spent in peaceful obscurity as cardinal-bishop of Porto and legate of the mark of Ancona. He died October 18, 1417, having been succeeded in 1409 by Alexander V.

GREGORY XIII (Ugo Buoncompagni), pope from 1572 to 1585, was born February 7, 1502, at Bologna, where he studied law and graduated in 1530, and afterwards taught jurisprudence for some years, Alexander Farnese and Charles Borromeo being among his pupils. At the age of thirty-six he was summoned to Rome by Paul III under whom he held successive appointments as first judge of the capital, abbreviator, and vice-chancellor of the campaign by Paul IV. He was attached to dataries to the suite of Cardinal Cibo, and by Paul IV he was created cardinal priest and sent to the council of Trent. On the death of Pius V in May 1572, the choice of the conclave fell upon Buoncompagni, who assumed the name of Gregory XIII. His intervention in the affairs of Britain through Ireland and by means of his tool Philip II, and also the league which he sought to cement against France (the massacre of the St. Bartholomew had taken place in September 1572), are matters which belong to the history of those countries. In order to raise funds for these and similar objects, he confiscated a large portion of the houses and properties throughout the states of the church,—a measure which enriched his treasury, ruined, for a time, but by alienating the great body of the nobility and gentry, revived old factions, created new ones, and ultimately plunged his temporal dominions into a state bordering upon anarchy. Such was the position of matters at the time of his death, which took place on the 10th of April 1585. He was a liberal patron of the Jesuit order, for which he founded many new colleges, the new and greatly improved edition of the *Corpus juris canonici* was also due to his care, but the work with which the name of Gregory XIII is most intimately and honourably associated is that of the reformation of the calendar, which has been already described under that heading (vol iv p 671). Gregory XIII was succeeded by Sixtus V.

GREGORY XIV (Niccolo Sfondrati), pope from 1590 to 1591, a native of Cremona, succeeded Urban VII, 6th December 1590. As a monk he had been eminent for the decency and sobriety of his life, but his brief pontificate was marked by no important occurrence, except that, instigated by the king of Spain and the duke of Mayenne, he excommunicated Henry IV of France, declaring him, as a heretic and persecutor, to be deprived of his dominions, and also levied an army for the invasion of France. The history of that country records how this proceeding was regarded alike by clergy, parliament, and people. The biographers mention as a curious personal trait of Gregory XIV a nervous tendency to laughter which occasionally became irresistible, and which manifested itself even at his coronation. He was succeeded by Innocent IX.

GREGORY XV (Alessandro Ludovisi), pope from 1621 to 1623, born at Bologna in 1554, succeeded Paul V on the 9th of February 1621. Beyond assisting the German emperor against the Protestants, and the king of Poland against the Turks, he interfered little in European

politics. He was a learned divine and manifested a reforming spirit, and his pontificate was marked by the canonization of St. Theresa, Francis Xavier, Ignatius Loyola, and Philip Neri. He died on the 18th of July 1623, and was succeeded by Urban VIII.

GREGORY XVI (Basilomonte Alberto Cappellari), pope from 1831 to 1846, was born at Belluno on September 18, 1765, and at an early age entered the order of the Camaldoli, among whom he rapidly gained distinction for his theological and linguistic acquirements. His first appearance before a wider public was in 1799, when he published against the Italian Jacobins a controversial work entitled *Trionfo della Santa Sede*, which, besides passing through several editions in Italy, was translated into several European languages. In 1802 he became a member of the Academy of the Catholic Religion, founded by Pius VII., to which he contributed a number of memoirs on theological and philosophical questions. When Pius VII. was carried off from Rome in 1809, Cappellari withdrew to the monastery of San Michele at Murano, near Venice, and in 1814, with some other members of his order, he removed to Padua, but soon after the restoration of the pope he was recalled to Rome, where he received successive appointments as vicar-general of the Camaldoli, councillor of the Inquisition, prefect of the Propaganda, and examiner of bishops. In March 1825 he was created cardinal by Leo XII., and shortly afterwards was entrusted with an important mission to adjust a concordat regarding the interests of the Catholics of Belgium and the Protestants of Holland. On the 2d February 1831 he was, after sixty-four days' conclave, unexpectedly chosen to succeed Pius VIII. in the papal chair. The revolution of 1830 had just inflicted a severe blow on the ecclesiastical party in France, and it seemed as if similar disasters to the papal cause were imminent in other parts of Europe, when Gregory XVI. entered upon his fifteen years' pontificate. Almost the first act of the new Government of France was to forbid the tricolor at Ancona, and the immediate effect was to throw all Italy, and particularly the Papal States, into a state of excitement such as seemed to call for strongly repressive measures. In the course of the struggle which ensued, the temporal reign of Gregory was marked accordingly by executions, banishments, imprisonments, to an extent which makes it impossible for the candid reader to absolve him from the charges of cruelty and bigotry which were so frequently raised at the time. The embarrassed financial condition in which he left the States of the Church also makes it doubtful how far his lavish expenditure in architectural and engineering works, and his magnificent patronage of learning in the hands of Mai, Mazzolini, and others, was for the real benefit of his subjects. The years of his pontificate were marked by the steady development and diffusion of the ultramontane ideas which were ultimately formulated under the presidency of his successor Pius IX. by the council of the Vatican. He died 1st June 1846.

GREGORY, ST., THE ILLUMINATOR (in Armenian *Gregor Lusavorevich*, in Greek *Gregori ou Phosfor* or *Photistis*), the founder and patron saint of the Armenian Church, was born about 287 A.D. He belonged to the royal race of the Arsacides, being the son of a certain Prince Anak, who assassinated Chosroes of Armenia, and thus brought ruin on himself and his family. His mother's name was Okoko, and the Armenian biographers tell how the first Christian influence he received was at the time of his conception, which took place near the monument raised to the memory of the holy apostle Thaddeus. Educated by a Christian nobleman, Rubenian, in Caesarea in Cappadocia, Gregory sought, when he came to man's estate, to introduce the Christian doctrine into his native land. At that time

Tiridates I., a son of Chosroes, sat on the throne, and influenced partly it may be by the fact that Gregory was the son of his father's enemy, he subjected him to much cruel usage, and imprisoned him for fourteen years. It would be useless to relate the various forms of torture which the orthodox accounts represent the saint to have endured without permanent hurt, almost any one of his twelve trials would have been certain death to an ordinary mortal. But vengeance and misdeeds tell on the king, and at length Gregory was called forth from his pit to restore his royal persecutor to reason by virtue of his saintly intercession. The cause of Christianity was now secured, king and princes and people vied with each other in obedience to Gregory's instruction, and convents, churches, and schools were established. Gregory in 302 received consecration as patriarch of Armenia from Leontius of Caesarea, and in 318 he appointed his son Auxias to be his successor. About 331 he withdrew to a cave in the mountain Sebuh in the province of Diarrhachia in Upper Armenia, and there he died a few years afterwards unattended and unobserved. When it was discovered that he was dead his corpse was removed to the village of Thordanou or Thorat. The remains of the saint were scattered far and near in the reign of Zeno his head is said to be now in Italy, his right hand at Bethlehem, and his left at Sic. It is almost impossible to get at Gregory's real personality through the tangled growth of ecclesiastical legend, but he would appear to have possessed some of that combination for expediency which is so frequently of service to the reformer. While he did his best to undermine their system, he left the pagan priests in enjoyment of their accustomed revenues.

A number of homilies, possibly spurious, several prayers, and about thirty of the sermons of the Armenian Church are ascribed to Gregory. The homilies appear in the first time in a work called *Homologematum et Constitutorum* in 1725, a century after which a Greek translation was published at Venice by the Melchites, and they have since been cited in German by J. M. Schmid (Ratisbon, 1872). The original authorities for Gregory's life are *Agathangelos*, whose *History of Tiridates* was published by the Melchites in 1835, Moses of Chosro, *Historia Armenica*, and Simon Metaphrasis. *A Life of Gregory* by the vetted Methuch, published in Armenian at Venice in 1740, was translated into English by Rev. S. O. Malan, 1868. See also Bonucci, *Storia della vita di S. Gregorio*, 1717; Neumann, *Gesch. der Armenischen Literatur*, 1855; and Delauney, *Hist. des dogmes, &c., de l'Eglise Armenienne*, 1869.

GREGORY, ST., or NAZIANZUS, surnamed THEOLOGUS, one of the four great fathers of the Eastern Church, was born about the year 329 A.D. at or near Nazianzus, Cappadocia. His father, also named Gregory, a convert from Hellenism, had lately become bishop of the diocese, his mother Nonna, an eminently pious woman, by whom he was dedicated to the service of God from his birth appears to have exercised a powerful influence over the religious convictions of both father and son. In pursuit of a more liberal and extended culture than could be procured in the insignificant town of Nazianzus, Gregory went successively to the cities of Caesarea, Alexandria, and Athens, as a student of grammar, mathematics, rhetoric, and philosophy, at the last-named seat of learning, where he prolonged his stay until he had entered his thirtieth year, he enjoyed the society and friendship of Basil, who afterwards became the famous bishop of Caesarea, the prince Julian, destined soon afterwards to play so prominent a part in the world's history, was also a fellow-student. Shortly after his return to his father's house at Nazianzus (about the year 360) Gregory received baptism, and renewed his dedication to the service of religion, he still continued, however, for some time, and indeed more or less throughout his whole life, in a state of hesitation as to the form which that service ought to take. He was inclined by nature and education to a contemplative life spent among books and in the society of congenial friends, he was yet continually urged by outward circumstances,



and doubtless also by some inward call, to active pastoral labour. The spirit of ascetic intellectual monasticism, which clung to him through life and never ceased to struggle for the ascendancy, was about that time strongly encouraged by his intercourse with Basil, who was then revelling in the exalted pleasures of his retirement in Pontus, the preparation of the *philocalia*, a sort of chestmately compiled by the two friends from the writings of Origen, belongs to this period. But the events which were at that time stirring the political and ecclesiastical life of Cappadocia, and indeed of the whole Roman world, made a career of learned leisure difficult if not impossible to a man of Gregory's position and temperament. The emperor Constantius, having by a course of astute intrigue and intimidation succeeded in thus using a semi-Asian formula upon the Western bishops assembled at Ariminum in Italy, had not attempted to follow the same course with the Eastern episcopate. The aged bishop of Nazianzus having yielded to the imperial threats, a great storm arose among the monks of the diocese, which was only quelled by the influence of the younger Gregory, who shortly afterwards (about 361) was ordained to the priesthood. After a vain attempt to evade his new duties and responsibilities by flight, he appears to have continued to act as a presbyter in his father's diocese without interruption for some considerable time, and it is probable that his two *Invectives* against Julian are to be assigned to this period. Subsequently (about 372), under a pressure which he somewhat resented, he allowed himself to be nominated by Basil as bishop of Sasima, a miserable little village some 32 miles from Tyane, but he seems hardly, if at all, to have assumed the duties of this diocese, for after another interval of "flight" we find him once more (about 372-3) at Nazianzus, assisting his aged father, on whose death (374) he retired to Seleucia in Isauria for a period of some years. Meanwhile a more important field for his activities was opening up. Towards 378-9 the small and depressed remnant of the orthodox party in Constantinople sent him an urgent summons to undertake the task of reconstituting the catholic cause, so long persecuted and borne down by the Arians of the capital. With the accession of Theodosius to the imperial throne, the prospect of success to the Nicene doctrine had dawned, it only it could find some courageous and devoted champion. The fame of Gregory as a learned and eloquent disciple of Origen, and still more of Athanasius, pointed him out as such a defender, nor could he resist the appeal made to him, although he took the step solely against his will. Once arrived in Constantinople, he laboured so zealously and well that the orthodox party speedily gathered strength, and the small apartment in which they had been accustomed to meet was soon exchanged for a vast and celebrated church which received the significant name of Anastasia, the Church of the Resurrection. Among the hearers of Gregory were to be found, not only churchmen like Jerome and Evagrius, but also heretics and heathens, and it says much for the sound wisdom and practical tact of the preacher that from the outset he set himself less to build up and defend a doctrinal position than to urge his flock to the cultivation of the loving Christian spirit which overshadows higher aims than mere heresy hunting or endless disputation. Doctrinal, nevertheless, he was, as is abundantly shown by the famous five discourses on the Trinity, which earned for him the distinctive appellation of *Θεολόγος* (*theologos* being here used in the stricter sense to designate the doctrine of Christianity, as distinguished from *cleverness*, which denotes the doctrine of Hellenic incarnation). He continued to labour in the Eastern capital till the arrival of Theodosius, and the visible triumph of the orthodox cause, the metropolitan see was then conferred upon him, and after the assembling of the second oecumenical council in 381 he received consecration from

Meletius. In consequence, however, of a spirit of discord and envy which had manifested itself in connection with this promotion, he soon afterwards, in an oration, not without some bitterness of tone, resigned his dignity, and withdrew into comparative retirement. The rest of his days were spent partly at Nazianzus, where he appears still to have mixed himself in ecclesiastical affairs, and partly on his patrimonial estate at Anazarus, where he devoted himself to his favourite literary pursuits, and especially to poetical composition, until his death, which occurred in 389 or 390. His festival is celebrated in the Eastern Church on January 25th and 30th, in the Western on 9th May (duple).

His extant works consist of poems, epistles, and orations. The poems, which include epigrams, elegies, and an autobiographical sketch, have been frequently printed; the *editio princeps* being the Aldine (1604). Other editions are those of Tollus (1696) and Muratori (1709), a volume of *Clementis Scholia* also has been edited by Dronke (1846). The largely entitled *ὑποκρίματα* usually included is certainly not genuine. Of Gregory's poetry there is not much to be said. His best energies were not devoted to it, it was adopted in his later years as a recreation rather than as a serious pursuit, thus it is occasionally delicate, graphic, beautiful, as could not fail to be the case with a writer of his culture and power, but it is not sustained. Of his hymns none have proved in it so valuable for its ecclesiastical use. The letters, so far as literature, are always easy and natural, and there is nothing forced in the manner in which they acute, witty, and profound sayings are introduced. As an orator he is held to be unsurpassed by his contemporaries. "In the purity of his discourse, the nobleness of his expressions, the ornaments of his words, the variety of his figures, the justness of his comparisons, the beauty of his sentences, and the sublimity of his thought," thus he possessed neither of Basil's gift of government nor of Gregory of Nyssa's power of speculative thought, he is worthily takes a place in that triumvirate of Cappadocians whom the Catholic Church gratefully recognises as having been, during the critical struggles in the latter half of the 4th century, the best defenders of its faith. The *Opera Omnia* were first published by Heugabius (Paris, 1760), the subsequent editions have been those of Baluze (Paris, 1696, 1811, 1824), and the edition of Migne, 1845, of the Benedictines (Paris, 1878, but interrupted by the French Revolution and not completed until 1810, Cullen being the final editor), and of Migne's *Selected notes of the life of Gregory Nazianzen* as to be found in the *writings of St. Basil, Theodoret, and Rufinus*, as well as in his own letters and poems. The data derived from these sources do not always harmonise with the account of his life. The serious modern authorities such as *Littérature Classique*, t. i. c. and *Lectione* (1848, t. xlvii) have been made use of by Gibbon in his brief but able sketch of this father. Among recent monographs may be mentioned those of Ullmann (*Gregorius von Nazianz*, 1822), Engeström by G. I. Cox, N. A. 1867), Benoit (*St. Grégoire de Nazianze, sa vie, ses écrits, et son époque* 1877), and Mouton (*Levres et temps de quelques questions historiques se rapportent à St. Grégoire de Nazianze*, 1879).

GREGORY, SEN or NYSSA, one of the great Cappadocians, and designated by one of the later oecumenical councils as "a father of fathers," was a younger brother of St Basil, and was born (probably) at Neocesarea about 331 A.D. For his education, which was the best that could be got at that time, he appears to have been chiefly indebted to his father and brother. As a comparative early age he entered the church, and held for some time the office of anagnost or reader, subsequently he manifested a desire to devote him self to the secular life as a rhetorician, but this impulse was checked by the earnest remonstrances of Gregory Nazianzen. Finally, in 371 or 372 he was ordained by his brother Basil to the bishopric of Nyssa, a small town in Cappadocia. Here he is usually said (but on inadequate data) to have adopted the opinion then gaining ground in favour of the celibacy of the clergy, and to have separated from his wife Theosebina, who became a deaconess in the church. His strict orthodoxy on the subject of the Trinity and the Incarnation, together with his vigorous eloquence, combined to make him peculiarly obnoxious to the Arian faction, which was at that time in the ascendancy through the protection of the emperor Valens, and in 376, on the ground of alleged irregularities in his election, and in the administration of the finances of his diocese, he was driven into exile, whence he did not return till the publication of the edict of Gratian in 378. Shortly afterwards he took part

in the proceedings of the synod which met at Antioch in Oais, principally in connection with the Meletian schism. At the great oecumenical council held at Constantinople in 381, he was a conspicuous champion of the orthodox faith, according to Nicephorus, indeed, the additions made to the Nicene creed were entirely due to his suggestion, but this statement is of doubtful authority. That his eloquence was highly appreciated is shown by the facts that he pronounced the discourse at the consecration of Gregory of Nazianzus, and that he was chosen to deliver the funeral oration on the death of Meletius the first president of the council. In the following year, moreover (383), he was commissioned by the emperor to inspect and set in order the churches of Arabia, in connexion with which mission he also visited Jerusalem. The impressions he gathered from this journey may, in part at least, be gathered from his famous letter *De Euntibus Hierosolyma*, in which an opinion strongly unfavourable to pilgrimages is expressed. In 383 he was probably again in Constantinople, where in 385 he pronounced the funeral orations of the princess Pulcheria and afterwards of the empress Placidia. Once more we read of him in 394 as having been present in that metropolis at the synod held under the presidency of Nechtarius to settle a controversy which had arisen among the bishops of Arabia, in the same year he assisted at the consecration of the fine new church of the apostles at Antioch, on the occasion there is reason to believe that his discourse commonly but wrongly known as that *εἰς τὴν λαοὺς χειροτονίας* was delivered. The exact date of his death is unknown; some authorities refer it to 396, others to 400. His festival is observed by the Greek Church on January 10th, in the Western martyrologies he is commemorated on March 9th.

Gregory of Nyssa is generally admitted to have excelled both his brother Basil and Gregory of Nazianzus alike in the natural vigour of his intellect and in the extent of his acquirements. His teaching though strictly Timothean, shows considerable freedom and originality of thought, in many points his mental and spiritual affinities with Origen show themselves with advantage, though in one particular—namely, in his doctrine of *ἀναστροφῆς* or final restoration—his views have since been repudiated by the orthodox. His style has been frequently praised by competent authorities for sweetness, richness, and elegance. His numerous works may be classed under five heads—(1.) Treatises in doctrinal and polemical theology. Of these the most important is that *Against Eunomius* in twelve books. Its doctrinal thesis (which is supported with great philosophical acumen and rhetorical power) is the divinity and consubstantiality of the Word, in opposition to the claims of Basil, which Eunomius had ascribed, in undivided, and the heretic himself is held up to scorn and contempt. This is the work which, most probably in a shorter draft, was read by its author when at Constantinople before the synod of Jerusalem in 383 (*Tomae, De Ps. III.*, 128). To the same class belong the treatise *To Adimianus*, against the tritheists, *On Faith*, against the Arians, *On Common Notions*, in explanation of the terms in current employment with regard to the Trinity, *On Synlogisms*, against the Monophysites, *To Theophrastus*, against the Apollinarians, an *Autocritica* against the same, *Against Paul*, a disputation with a heathen philosopher, the *Oratio Catechetica Magna*, and the dialogue *De Animæ et Resurrectione* (2.) Practical. To this category belong the treatise *On Virginitas* and *On Pilgrimages*, as also the Canonical *Epistole* upon the rules of penance (3.) Expository and homiletical works, including the *Hexameron*, and several series of discourses, *On the Works of the Holy Spirit*, *On the Interpretation of the Psalms*, *On the Sufferings of Job*, *On the first three Chapters of Ecclesiastes*, *On Canticles*, *On the Lord's Prayer*, and *On the Eight Beatitudes*. (4.) Biographical, consisting chiefly of funeral orations. (5.) Letters. The only complete edition of the whole works are those by Fronton le Duc (Fronto Dureau, Paris, 1616, with additions, 1618 and 1688) and by Migne. Of the new edition projected by F. Oehler only the first volume, containing the *Opera Dogmatica*, has appeared (1866). There have been numerous editions of several single treatises, as for example of the *Oratio Catechetica*, *De Predestinatione*, and *De Anima et Resurrectione*. See the monograph by Rupp (*Gregory, des Bischofs von Nyssa, Leben und Verfassungen*, Leipzig, 1866), and the *Deutsche hagiologische hystorische theologiae de Greg. Nyss.* (1866), Moller (*Gregory Nyssae doctor divini de hominis natura et virtutis auct. cum Originiana commentaria*, 1864), and Stapler, *Die Psychologie des h. Gregors von Nyssa* (Ratisbon, 1867).

GREGORY, St., surnamed in later ecclesiastical tradition THAUMATURGUS (the miracle-worker), was born of noble and wealthy heathen parents at Neocaesarea, towards the beginning of the 3d century of the Christian era. His original name was Theodorus. Destined by his parents for the bar, he studied civil law at Athens, Alexandria, and Berytus, it is said, he afterwards (about 231) accompanied his sister to Caesarea in Palestine, where he became the pupil and finally the convert of Origen. In returning to Cappadocia some five years after his conversion, it had been his original intention to live a retired ascetic life (Euseb., *II.*, vi, 30), but this wish he was not permitted to gratify. Urged by Origen, and at last almost compelled by Phileas of Amasia, his metropolitan, neither of whom were willing to see so much learning, piety, and masculine energy practically lost to the church, he, after many attempts to evade the dignity, was consecrated bishop of his native town (about 240). His episcopate, which lasted some thirty years, was characterized by great zeal, and by so much success that, according to the (doubtless somewhat rhetorical) statement of Gregory of Nyssa, whereas at the outset of his labours there were only seventeen Christians in the city, there were at his death only seventeen persons in all who had not embraced Christianity. This result he achieved in spite of the Decian persecution (260), during which he was so ill that he was said to be absent himself from his diocese, and notwithstanding the demoralizing effects of an eruption of barbarians who laid waste the diocese in 260. Gregory, although he has not always escaped the charge of Sabellianism, now holds an undisputed place among the fathers of the church, and although the turn of his mind was practical rather than speculative, he is known to have taken an energetic part in most of the doctrinal controversies of his time. He was active at the synods of Antioch which investigated and condemned the heresies of Paul, and the rapid spread in Pontus of a Tinitarianism approaching the Nicene type is attributed in large measure to the weight of his influence. Gregory is believed to have died in the reign of Aurelian, about the year 270, though some accounts place his death six years earlier. His festival (semduplex) is observed by the Church of Rome on the 17th of November. For the facts of his biography on earliest and best authority is the *Life* or rather *Panegyric* by Gregory of Nyssa, but there are also incidental notices of him in the writings of Basil the Great. Both these writers represent him as having wrought miracles of a very startling description, but nothing related by them comes near the astounding narratives given in the *Martyrologies*, or even in the *Bisemium Romanum*, in connection with his name.

The principal works of Gregory Thaumaturgus are the *Panegyric* on Origenem (his *ὑπομνηματισμὸς Ὀρίγον*), which he wrote when on the point of leaving the school of that great master, a *Melancholus* in Ecclesiastes, characterized by Jerome as "short but useful", and an *Apocryphal Canonem*, which treats of the discipline to be undergone by those Christians who under pressure of persecution had relapsed into paganism, but desired to be restored to the privileges of the church. An *Expositio Psalms*, usually attributed to Gregory, and traditionally added to have been received by him immediately in vision from the apostle John himself, is of doubtful authenticity. There have been several editions of the works of this father, of these may be mentioned that of Genaid Voss, in Greek and Latin (Mainz, 1604), the Paris edition of 1622, and that contained in the third volume of the *Patrologia Graeca* (Paris, 1788). They are also to be found in a Latin translation in Migne's *Patrologia Graeca*, vol. vii. A separate reprint of the *Panegyricus in Origenem* was published by Bengel in 1752. The *Life* of Gregory has been written by Palladius (Rome, 1644) and by Boye (Geneva, 1703).

GREGORY, St., or TOURS (c. 540-594), historian of the Franks, was born at Clermont, Auvergne, not earlier than 539 and not later than 543 A.D. He was the youngest son of Florentius, a provincial senator, and head

of one of the oldest and most powerful Christian families in the country, at his baptism he received the name of George, that of Gregory not having been assumed until his consecration at least thirty years afterwards. He received his education under the superintendence of his uncle Gallus, at that time bishop of Clermont, and afterwards under Arctius, who succeeded to that see. Having been ordained a deacon on attaining the canonical age, the youthful Georgius Florentinus for a time attended in some ecclesiastical capacity the court of Sigebert of Austrasia, and when in 575 a vacancy occurred in the see of Tours, which had been occupied by many of his kindred, his reputation for piety and wisdom led to his being immediately designated as a suitable successor to that bishopric. Circumstances soon occurred which brought into great prominence his peculiar fitness for this post, first in 575, when Guntan had taken refuge from Chilperic in the sanctuary of St Martin, and afterwards in 577, when Ptolextatus of Rouen had been unjustly condemned by the rest of his brethren. The firmness and courage which he showed on these and other occasions brought upon him the bitter hostility of the strong minded Queen Fredegond, who caused him to be summoned before a council at Dinan on a charge of treason, of which, however, he was acquitted. In 581 he took a leading part in adjusting that arrangement between Chilperic and Childbert which gave peace to France for many years. During the later years of his life he used his political influence and prestige, which were now immense, with singular usefulness and judgment in the interest alike of his diocese and of the whole country. He died at Tours on the 17th of November 594, and subsequently attained the honours of beatification and canonization, his day in the calendar (*semiduplex*) being November 17th.

Of his writings, besides the *Historia Francorum* in ten books, we possess a treatise *De Miraculis* in seven books, containing the miracles of Christ and his apostles, those of Julian, of Martin, and also of others. Other treatises which he mentions have perished. The *De Miraculis* appears to have occupied him at intervals during the whole of his episcopacy, as the *Historia Francorum* has supposed to have written *de factis* to be about the middle of the fifth book by 577, the eighth book was completed before 585, and the tenth about 591, the epilogue being of still later date. This work, which gives Gregory of Tours a just title to be called the father of French history, has no pretensions to elegance or even grammatical accuracy of style, it is wholly unmethodical, and betrays in every page the prejudice and ignorance of the age to which it belongs. But it is honestly and faithfully written from the point of view of one whose avowed intention was to trace "the wars of kings with hostile nations, of martyr's with tyrants, of churches with heretics," and it is an original source for the period of 174 years which it covers, and its skill, notwithstanding the unfavourable judgment which Gibbon has expressed, invaluable.

The edition of the works of Gregory of Tours, which appeared at Paris in 1511-13, has been entirely superseded by that of Brunet (Paris, 1899). It includes the not very valuable life of the saint by Odo. The 71st volume of Migne's *Patrologia* adds to a reprint of Brunet an *Historia Septem Dominorum* which is sometimes (but improperly) attributed to Gregory. Translations by Bonquet, Guizot, and others into French have been frequently reprinted, a German version appeared at Wurlburg in 1847-48; it was followed by Cheshechets in 1851. See Kries, *De Greg. Tur. scriptis et opibus* (Hresluc, 1880), and Schell, *Gregor's Werke u. seine Zeit* (Breslau, 1889). 2d ed. Leipzig, 1890), and an article in the *Memoirs of the Académie*, t. xxvi.

GREGORY, the name of a Scottish family, many members of which attained high eminence in various departments of science, sixteen having held professorships. Of the most distinguished of their number a notice is given below.

I. DAVID GREGORY (1628-1720), eldest son of the Rev John Gregory of Drumoak, Aberdeenshire, was born in 1628. For some time he was connected with a mercantile house in Holland, but on succeeding to the family estate of Kininzie he returned to Scotland, and occupied most of his time in scientific pursuits, freely giving his poorer neighbours the benefit of his medical skill. He is said to have been the first possessor of a barometer in the north of

Scotland, and on account of his success by means of it in predicting changes in the weather, he was accused of witchcraft before the presbytery of Aberdeen, but he succeeded in convincing that body of his innocence. He died in 1720.

II. JAMES GREGORY (1638-1675), the author of important discoveries in mathematics and optics, younger brother of the preceding, was born in 1638. He was educated at the grammar school of Aberdeen and at Marischal College of that city. At an early period he manifested a strong inclination and capacity for mathematics and kindred sciences, and before completing his twenty-third year he published his famous treatise *Optica Promota*, in which he made known his great invention the Gregorian reflecting telescope. About 1665 he went to the university of Padua, where he studied for some years, and in 1667 published *Tera Cunctis et Hyperbolæ Quadratura*, in which he propounded his method of an infinitely converging series for the areas of the circle and hyperbola. In the following year he published also at Padua *Geometria Pars Universalis*, in which he laid down a series of rules for the transmutation of curves and the measurement of their solids of revolution. On his return to England in this year he was elected a member of the Royal Society, in the following year he became professor of mathematics in the university of St Andrews, and in 1674 he was transferred to the chair of mathematics in Edinburgh. In October 1675, while showing the satellites of the planet Jupiter to some of his students through one of his telescopes, he was suddenly struck with blindness, and he died a few days afterwards at the early age of thirty-seven.

Besides the works already mentioned Gregory is the author of *Excursiones Geometricæ*, 1666, and his abridgement of a selected tract entitled *The Cloud and New Art of Weighing Vessels*, intended to ridicule optical fallacies of a contemporary writer on hydraulic science, and published at Glasgow in 1673, professedly by "Patrick Miles, author of the university of St Andrews."

III. DAVID GREGORY (1681-1708), nephew of the preceding and son of the David Gregory above mentioned, was born in Aberdeen in 1681. He was educated partly in his native city and partly in Edinburgh, where at the age of twenty-three he became professor of mathematics. In 1691 he was appointed Savilian professor of astronomy at Oxford, an office which he held till his death in 1708. His principal works are *Excursiones Geometricæ ad dimensionem figurarum* (1684), *Catoptrica et Dioptrica Sphæricæ Elementa* (1695), and *Astronomica Physicæ et Geometricæ Elementa* (1702), the last a work highly esteemed by Newton, of whose system it is an illustration and a defence. *A Treatise on Practical Geometry* which he left in manuscript was translated from the Latin and published in 1715. He was succeeded in the chair of mathematics in Edinburgh by his brother James, another brother, Charles, was in 1707 appointed professor of mathematics in the university of St Andrews, and his eldest son, David, became professor of modern history at Oxford, and canon and latterly dean of Christ Church.

IV. JOHN GREGORY (1734-1778), professor of medicine in the university of Edinburgh, grandson of James Gregory, the inventor of the Gregorian telescope, and youngest son of Dr James Gregory, professor of medicine in King's College, Aberdeen, was born at Aberdeen, June 3, 1734. After studying at the grammar school of Aberdeen, and completing his literary course at King's College in that city, he attended the medical classes at Edinburgh university. In 1745 he went to Leyden to complete his medical studies, and during his stay there he received without solicitation the degree of doctor of medicine from King's College, Aberdeen. On his return from Holland he was elected professor of philosophy at King's College, but in 1749 he resigned his professorship on account of his duties interfering too much with his practice as a physician. In 1754 he proceeded to

London, where he made the acquaintance of many persons of distinction, and the same year was chosen fellow of the Royal Society. On the death in November 1755 of his brother Dr James Gregory, who had succeeded his father as professor of medicine in King's College, Aberdeen, he was appointed to that office. In 1764 he removed to Edinburgh in the hope of obtaining a more extended field of practice as a physician, and in 1766 he was appointed professor of the practice of physic in the university of Edinburgh, to whose eminence as a medical school he largely contributed. From his eighteenth year Dr Gregory had been subject to irregular intervals to attacks of gout, and on the morning of February 10th, 1773, he was found dead in bed apparently from the results of this disease.

He is the author of *A Comparative View of the State and Faculties of Man with those of the Animal World*, 1765, *Observations on the Duties, Offices, and Qualifications of a Physician*, 1772, *Elements of the Practice of Physic*, 1779, and *A Father's Legacy to his Daughter*, 1774. His *Whole Works*, with a life by Mr Tytler (afterwards Lord Woodhouselee), was published at Edinburgh in 1788.

V JAMES GREGORY (1753-1821), professor of the practice of medicine in the university of Edinburgh, eldest son of the preceding, was born at Aberdeen in 1753, and received there the rudiments of his education. He accompanied his father to Edinburgh in 1764, and after going through the usual course of literary studies at that university, he was for a short time a student at Christ Church, Oxford. It was there probably that he acquired that taste for classical learning which afterwards distinguished him. He then entered on the study of medicine at Edinburgh, and, after graduating doctor of medicine in 1774, spent the greater part of the next two years in Holland, France, and Italy. Shortly after his return to Scotland he was appointed in 1776 to the chair his father had formerly held, and in the following year he also entered on the duties of teacher of clinical medicine in the Royal Infirmary. On the illness of Dr Cullen in 1790 he was appointed joint-professor of the practice of medicine, he became sole professor on the death of Dr Cullen in the same year, and he continued to deliver lectures on that subject, to audiences almost regularly increasing, until his last illness in 1821. He died on the 2d April of that year. As a medical practitioner Dr Gregory was for the last ten years of his life decidedly at the head of the profession in Scotland, and as a professor his quickness and commanding energy of intellect, his power of perspicuous and elegant exposition, and his genuine sense of humour gave him a remarkable ascendancy over the minds of his pupils.

Besides his *Compendious Medicine Theoretica*, published in 1788 as a text-book for his lectures on the institution, Dr Gregory was the author of "A Theory of the Moods of Yellu," published in the *Edin Phil Trans*, 1787, and of *Literary and Philosophical Essays*, published in two volumes in 1792.

VI WILLIAM GREGORY (1803-1858), son of the preceding, was born 25th December 1803. In 1837 he became professor of chemistry at the Andersonian Institution, Glasgow, in 1839 at King's College, Aberdeen, and in 1844 at Edinburgh University. He died April 24, 1858. Gregory was one of the first in England to advocate the theories of Liebig, and translated several of his works. He is also the author of *Outlines of Chemistry*, 1845, and an *Elementary Treatise on Chemistry* reprinted from the *Encyclopædia Britannica*, 1856.

VII DUNCAN FARQUHARSON GREGORY (1813-1844), brother of the preceding, was born 18th April 1813. After studying at the university of Edinburgh he in 1833 entered Trinity College, Cambridge, where he was for a time assistant professor of chemistry, and was one of the founders of the chemical society. He latterly devoted his chief attention to mathematics, in which he made some important discoveries. He died 23d February 1844.

The *Cambridge Mathematical Journal* was originated, and for some time edited, by Gregory, and he also published a *Calculus of Examples of Processes in the Differential and Integral Calculus*, 1811. A *Treatise on the Application of Analysis to Solid Geometry*, which he left unfinished, was completed by W. Walton, and published posthumously in 1846. His *Mathematical Writings*, edited by W. Walton, with a biographical memoir by Robert T. Cole, Edin., appeared in 1866.

GREGORY, OLIVIERUS, LL.D. (1771-1841), was born 29th January 1774 at Yaxley, in Huntingdonshire. He was only nineteen when he published *Lectures Astronomical and Philosophical* (1793), and soon after, by a manuscript on the "Use of the Sliding Rule," he was fortunate enough to excite the interest of Dr Hutton, professor of mathematics at the Royal Military Academy of Woolwich. Having settled at Cambridge in 1798, Gregory first acted as subeditor of a provincial newspaper, and then opened a bookseller's shop, but before long he found that he would be better off as a private teacher of mathematics. In 1803 he obtained an appointment as mathematical master at Woolwich through the influence of Hutton, and when Hutton resigned in 1807, Gregory succeeded him in the professorship. Failing health obliged him to retire in 1838, and he died at Woolwich 2d February 1841.

Of Gregory's numerous mathematical works it is enough to mention *Hints on the Use of Teachers of Elementary Mathematics* (1840, new edition, 1858), and *Mathematics for Practical Men* (1825), which was revised and enlarged by Henry Low in 1848, and again by J. R. Young in 1862. His *Lectures on the Evidence of Christianity* (1815) have been several times reprinted, and an abridgement was published by the Religious Tract Society in 1873. He will probably be longest remembered for his *Biography of Robert Hooke*, which he appeared in the collection of the *Biographical Society* (1815) have been several times reprinted, and an abridgement was published separately in 1838, and has since passed through several editions. The minor importance of his *Memoirs of John Mason Good* (1835) is due to the private time of the subject. Gregory was one of the founders of the Royal Astronomical Society. In 1802 he was appointed editor of the *Gentleman's Diary*, and in 1818 editor of the *Ladies' Diary* and superintendent of the finances of the Stationers' Company.

GREIFENBERG, the chief town of a circle in the Prussian province of Pomerania and government of Stettin, is situated on the Rega, 45 miles N.E. of Stettin. It possesses a royal gymnasium and a higher girls' school. Agriculture, linen-weaving, and the manufacture of stoves are the principal industries. Greifenberg possessed town rights as early as 1262, and in the 14th and 16th centuries had a considerable shipping trade, but lost much of its prosperity during the Thirty Years' War. Including the garrison, the population in 1875 was 5631. See Riemann, *Geschichte der Stadt Greifenberg in Pommern*, 1862.

GREIFENHAGEN, the chief town of a circle in the Prussian province of Pomerania and government of Stettin, is situated on the Regitz, 12 miles S.W. of Stettin. Its prosperity depends chiefly on agriculture, and it has a considerable cattle trade. There are also linen manufactories and saw-mills. Greifenhagen was built in 1230, and was raised to the rank of a town and fortified in 1262. In the Thirty Years' War it was taken both by the imperialists and the Swedes, and in 1675 it was captured by the Brandenburgers, into whose possession it came finally in 1679. The population in 1875 was 8759.

GREIFSWALD, or GREIFSWALDE, the chief town of a circle in the Prussian province of Pomerania and government of Stralsund, is situated on the Ryck, 3 miles from its mouth in the Baltic, and 20 miles S. by E. of Stralsund. It has wide and regular streets, and is surrounded by promenades formed out of its old ramparts. It is the seat of a court of appeal for the government district of Stralsund. The university, founded in 1456, is attended by nearly 500 students, about one-half of whom belong to the medical faculty, connected with it are an anatomical theatre, an infirmary, a chemical laboratory, a pathological institute, and a library containing nearly 140,000 volumes. The

principal other buildings are the church of St Nicholas (with a tower 330 feet high and a valuable library), the old town house, the theatre, the gymnasium, the orphanage, and the lunatic asylum. There is a considerable shipping trade in Pomorannian ports with England, France, and the Mediterranean coasts. Fish-curing, shipbuilding, and the manufacture of machines, railway waggons, needles, soap, tobacco, and oil, are the principal other industries. The population in 1873 was 18,622.

Gratzwald was founded about 1210 by mechanics and merchants from the Nithelands. In 1260 it received a town constitution and took the rights of a free town. During the Thirty Years' War it was burned into a fortress by the imperialists, but they vacated it in 1631 to the Swedes, in whose possession it remained until the peace of Westphalia. In 1678 it was captured by the elector of Brandenburg, but it was restored to the Swedes in the following year, in 1713 it was desolated by the Russians, in 1715 it came into the possession of Denmark, and in 1721 it was again restored to Sweden, under whose protection it remained till 1815, when, along with the whole of Swedish Pomerania, it came into the possession of Prussia. See Koopmann, *Geschichte des Fürstentums Gratzwald*, 1856, and Grütting, *Brüder in Geschichte des Stadt Gratzwald*, 3 vols., 1827-29.

GREIZ, or GERRITZ (formerly *Greiz* or *Grew*), a town of Germany, capital of the principality of Reuss Greiz, is situated in a pleasant valley on the right bank of the White Elster, near the borders of Saxony, and 14 miles W by S of Zwickau. It is surrounded by walls, and is tolerably well built. The principal buildings are the prince's palace surrounded by a fine park, the old "residence" castle on a rock overlooking the town, the summer palace with a fine garden, the old town church dating from 1225 and possessing a beautiful tower, the town house, the city school buildings, the normal seminary for the principality, and the lower city school. The industries include dyeing, tanning, and the manufacture of woollen, cotton, and silk cloth, shawls, cowls, and paper. The population in 1875 was 12,867.

Greiz is apparently of Saxon origin. From the 12th century it was governed by bishops, but in 1286 it came into the possession of Gera, and in 1650 of the younger line of the house of Platen. It was wholly destroyed by fire in 1494, and almost wholly in 1802. See Wille, *Greiz and seine Umgebung*, 1876.

GRENADEA, the most southern island of the Antilles, lies between 11° 58' and 12° 30' N lat and 61° 20' and 61° 35' W long. It is 50 leagues S W of Barbados, and about 60 miles from the nearest point of South America. Its length from north to south is about 24 miles, and its greatest breadth is 12 miles. The area is 133 square miles.

Grenada is rendered highly picturesque by ridges of hills covered with trees and bushwood, and by an irregular but continuous range of mountains which traverses the island from north to south, in some parts rising to 3000 feet above the level of the sea. Lower ridges branch off forming rich and picturesque valleys. The mountains and some parts of the lowlands consist of red and gray sandstone, gneiss, and hornblende, and argillaceous schist. The strata are much diversified and irregular. Sulphur and fuller's earth are found. Porphyry, limestone, and basaltic rocks occur at certain places. Rivers are numerous, but not large. In the centre of the island, 1740 feet above the level of the sea, is the Grand Etang, a circular lake 2 miles in circumference and 14 feet deep, feeding numerous small rivers. Lake Antoine is another remarkable natural feature. There are several hot chalybeate and sulphurous springs. Along the coast are numerous excellent bays and harbours. The shore is abundant with fish, game and birds of various species are found. Hurricanes are comparatively infrequent, but earthquake shocks are sometimes experienced. The average temperature is 82° Fahr., but the higher parts are cooler. Considerable rain falls. The

soil is extraordinarily fertile, but cotton, indigo, and tobacco are not now cultivated. Fruits and some kinds of European vegetables grow luxuriantly. Sugar cultivation is not extending, but cocoa is now making rapid strides. The island is divided into six parishes. Formerly it had a house of assembly, but is now a crown colony under the general government of the Windward Islands. It has a lieutenant governor and a council consisting of officials and members nominated by the crown.

The capital, St George's (population about 5000), is built upon a peninsula projecting into a spacious bay on the west side of the island, near the southern extremity. The houses are of brick or stone, and stand on high ground which rises from the sea. The town is divided by a ridge running into the bay, forming on one side the caserne, a large basin of water, where ships lie landlocked, close to wharves and stores. A saluting battery, Fort George, overlooks the entrance. On the left, the land rises to the fortifications of Hospital Hill, and a long ridge connects this fort with Richmond Heights, which form the background of the scene and are also fortified. The ridge which connects Fort George with Hospital Hill separates the caserne from the larger portion of the town, which contains an extensive market-place, and the town itself. Besides the caserne, there is a spacious sheet of water called the lagoon, separated from the former by a reef passable only by boats.

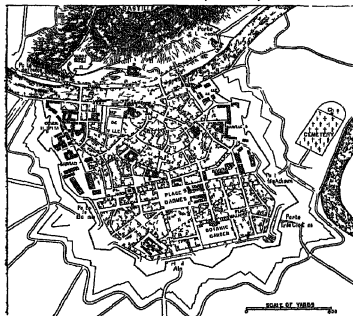
Between Grenada and St Vincent there are several small islands called Grenadines, some being included in the government of Grenada. Of these Carriacou is the most important. It is about 19 miles in circumference, and contains 3071 inhabitants. Ground provisions, live stock, and some cocoa are cultivated.

The exports in 1877 were—cocoa, 1544 tons, whole oil, 6720 galls., rum, 53,609 galls., sugar, 2792 tons. The cocoa exports in 1876 were 1800 tons, an amount considerably exceeded in 1879. The total value of imports amounted in 1877 to £127,204, including £60,201 from the United Kingdom, and £46,724 from the British West Indies. The value of exports to the United Kingdom was £123,821, and to other countries, £28,085—total, £151,906. The revenue was £229,084, of which customs produced £13,460, and the expenditure was £29,581. Population (1877), 41,265. About 400 Coolie immigrants were introduced in 1877. Considerable immigration takes place from Barbados. The legislature grants £1300 annually for education, distributed among 30 schools, 16 Anglican, 5 Wesleyan, 9 Roman Catholic, with 2908 scholars.

Grenada was discovered by Columbus in 1498. The Spaniards, however, did not form a settlement there until 1625, when the "Caribbees" were granted to the earl of Carlisle in 1627, but it was inhabited only by warlike Caribs until 1650-51, when Du Puy, governor of Martinique, organised two expeditions to it. The Frenchmen were at first well received by the natives, but great cruelty was exercised in the extirpation of the latter. The island made little progress until after 1700. In 1716 the French West India Company acquired their property in Grenada, commercial and other course spring up with Martinique, and when the company was dissolved the island became vested in the crown of France. In 1763 it contained 1262 whites, 11,991 slaves, and 88 sugar plantations. In 1763 Grenada capitulated to the British forces, and it was formally ceded in the treaty of peace of 1763. It was, however, retaken by the French in 1779, and not finally restored to Great Britain in 1783 till the general peace.

GRENOBLE, a fortified city of France, formerly the chief town of Dauphiné and now of the department of the Isère, lies 58 miles E of Lyons, in 45° 11' 67" N lat and 5° 43' 28" E long. Few of the cities of France have a finer situation. The Isère unites with the Drac a few miles further down, and the broad and fertile valley through which the rivers flow is unaccompanied by a fine panorama of hills and mountains. From the hotel-garden, for example, the eastward view comprises the Savoy Alps, the summit of Mont Blanc, and the westward the mountains of St Nizier, while more to the north the hills rise directly above the town, and are crowned by the fort of the Bastille. The beauty of the Isère itself is enhanced by fine bridges

and quays. With the exception of its more modern portions, the town of Grenoble is characterized by the tortuous and crowded streets usual in places that have long been confined within strong fortifications. The cathedral of Notre Dame, a vast brick building of various periods from the 10th to the 17th century, the foundation of which is traditionally ascribed to Charles the Great, the church of St Laurence, with a remarkable crypt of the 11th century, long believed to be an old temple of Aesculapius, and the church of St André, founded by the dauphin Guignes André about 1280, and frequently visited for the sake of the tomb of Bayard, removed thither in 1822, are the most noteworthy of the ecclesiastical edifices. The palace of justice is a striking edifice of the 15th and 16th centuries occupying the site of the old castle of the dauphins, and in front is a statue of Bayard dating from 1823. The old town-hall has nothing remarkable about it, but the new prefecture, built at a cost of 1,404,000 francs about 1867, is a handsome structure. Besides its university or academy, with the three faculties of law, science, and literature,



Plan of Grenoble

- |                              |                       |                        |
|------------------------------|-----------------------|------------------------|
| 1 Church of St. Louis on one | 5 Church of St. André | 9 Museum and Library   |
| 2 Church of St. Martin       | 6 Notre Dame          | 10 School of Artillery |
| 3 Palais de Justice          | 7 Hotel               | 11 New Theatre         |
| 4 Theatre                    | 8 College             | 12 New Prison          |

Grenoble possesses a lyceum, an episcopal seminary, a school of artillery of the first class, two normal schools, and a great variety of special educational institutions. The library, which since 1808 has been located under the museum in a building which cost more than 1,800,000 francs, is a noble collection of upwards of 178,875 volumes, on which the town has expended 2,000,000 francs.<sup>1</sup> Among the numerous societies of Grenoble it is enough to mention the *Académie delphinale* (1772), the statistical society, the society of the friends of the arts, the society of agriculture, and the zoological society of the Alps, which maintains zoological gardens. At the head of the benevolent institutions is the general hospital, originally founded by Amou Chaisey in 1424, and now comprising civil and military departments, an orphanage, and an asylum for the aged and infirm. It was in Grenoble that the first mutual benefit society was founded in 1808, and the number of such associations in the town was upwards of 40 about 1870. In 1836 M. Berrist Saint Prix established a society for the extinction of mendicancy, and in 1851 M. Frédéric originated

an association *alimentaire* for the purpose of providing the poorer classes with good food at the cheapest possible rate. The staple industry of Grenoble is the making of gloves, 115 establishments, employing 2000 workmen and 20,000 needlewomen in the town and neighbourhood, turn out annually 860,000 dozen pairs. Liqueurs, leather, straw hats, paper, lime, and cement hold a principal place among the miscellaneous products. The population of Grenoble was 26,862 in 1851, 35,380 in 1872, and 43,034 in 1876.

Grenoble occupies the site of Cularo, a village of the Allobroges which first became of importance when it was fortified by Diocletian and Maximian. Its present name is a corruption of Gratianopolis, a title assumed in honour of Gratian, who had strengthened the walls. From the Burgundians who gave possession in 487, a little town pressed under the Franks, and on the dismemberment of the empire of Charles the Great it was included in the limits of Aquitanian Burgundy. After the 10th century its bishops grew into power, but they were finally supplanted in the 18th century by the counts of Albon, afterwards known as the Dauphins. Though it was ceded in 1849 to France along with Dauphiné, the city continued to enjoy special privileges. In 1668 it was sacked by the Baron des Adrets, but in 1673 the energy of its governor De Gode saved it from sharing in the massacre of St Bartholomew. Levidigues (Roi des Montagnes) took the town by siege in 1690 in name of Henry IV, and he afterwards made his government memorable by his fortifications, quays, and other admirable enterprises. In the course of the 18th century the name of Grenoble appears in the van of the revolutionary movement, the attempt of the Government to substitute a new judicial regime for that of the independent provincial parliament caused the people to arms and the "day of the tiles" (7th June 1788) is memorable for the defeat of the royal forces. Grenoble was the first town to open its gates to Napoleon on his return from Elba in 1816, but a few months afterwards it was obliged to surrender to the Austrians. Owing to its situation Grenoble is subject to inundations, in 1219 it was "almost swept away, and from that date to 1868 no fewer than 16 similar disasters are enumerated. The great flood of 1778 is known as the "Deluge de la Saint Cyprien." In 1869 the valley was 3 feet deep throughout the town. Among the celebrated natives of Grenoble are Vuesanson, Mabry, Condillio, Boyle (Stendhal), Barneuve, and Casimir Faillat. See Champeillon Pigeon, *Antiquités de Grenoble*, (Grenoble, 1807), Pitot, *Hist. de Grenoble et de ses environs* (Grenoble, 1829).

GRENVILLE, GEORGE (1712-1770), an English statesman, second son of Richard Grenville and Hester Temple, afterwards Countess Temple, was born October 14th, 1712. He was educated at Eton and at Christ Church, Oxford, and in his twenty-fifth year was called to the bar. The habits of industry, the technical knowledge, and the intellectual discipline which he acquired in connexion with his legal training were of great advantage to him in his political career, and for a considerable period sufficiently compensated for the absence of every oratorical gift except inexhaustible fluency, and of all but the merest rudimentary qualities of statesmanship. He entered Parliament in 1741 as member for Buckingham, and continued to represent that borough till his death in 1770. In December 1744 he became a lord of the admiralty, in June 1747 a lord of the treasury, and in 1754 treasurer of the navy and privy councillor. He remained in office in 1761, when his brother Lord Temple and his brother-in-law Pitt resigned upon the question of the war with Spain, and in the administration of Lord Bute he was entrusted with the leadership of the House of Commons. In May 1763 he was appointed secretary of state, and in October first lord of the admiralty, and in April 1768 he became first lord of the treasury and chancellor of the exchequer. The most prominent measures of his administration were the prosecution of Wilkes and the passing of the American Stamp Act, which led to the first symptoms of alienation between America and the mother country. During the latter period of his term of office he was on a very unsatisfactory footing with the young king George III., who gradually came to feel a kind of horror of the interminable petulance of his conversation, and whom he endeavoured to make use of as the mere puppet of the ministry. The king made

<sup>1</sup> See Garnier, *La Bibliothèque de Grenoble, 1772-1878*, Paris, 1878

various attempts to induce Pitt to come to his rescue by forming a ministry, but without success, and at last had recourse to the marquis of Rockingham, on whose agreeing to accept office Grenville was dismissed July 1765. He never again held office, and died 13th November 1770. In 1749 he was married to Elizabeth, daughter of Sir William Wyndham, by whom he had a large family. His son, the second Earl Temple, was created Marquis, and his grandson Duke, of Buckingham.

A contemptuous application by Pitt to Grenville of the lines "Gentle Shepherd, tell me where," caused him to be dubbed the "gentle shepherd" for the remainder of his life, and this would seem to indicate a deficiency in the personal characteristics which insure any high degree of general respect. Exemplary in the observance of all the decencies of private life, and upright and honourable in all his political relations, he yet possessed none of those attractive or commanding qualities which are sometimes found an advantageous substitute for strict moral integrity, and which the possessor of moral integrity cannot afford to despise. He was moreover under the dominion of an ambition ludicrously out of proportion to his abilities, and the self-confidence with which he pursued his own purposes can be attributed only to the narrow range of his political vision. Though very excellent him in a knowledge of the forms of the House or in mastery of administrative details, his tact in dealing with men and with affairs was so defective that there is perhaps no one who has been at the head of an English administration to whom a lower place can be assigned as a statesman. *The Grenville Papers, being the Correspondence of Richard Grenville, Earl Temple, K.G., and the Right Hon. George Grenville, then Friends and Contemporaries*, was published at London in 1852.

**GRENVILLE, WILLIAM WYNDHAM GRENVILLE, LORD** (1759–1834), English statesman, son of the preceding, was born 25th October 1759. He was educated at Eton and Oxford, and for some time studied at the Inns of Court, but never practised at the bar. In February 1782 he was elected a member of parliament for the county of Buckingham, and in the September following he became secretary to his brother the marquis of Buckingham, who had been named lord-lieutenant of Ireland. On the overthrow of the cabinet of Lord Shelburne in the following year he returned to England, and in December he was appointed by his cousin Pitt paymaster-general of the forces. In 1789 he was chosen speaker of the House of Commons, but he vacated the chair in the same year, and was transferred to the Upper House with the title of Lord Grenville, on being appointed secretary of state. He exchanged this office in 1791 for that of secretary of foreign affairs, being regarded by Pitt as the person best fitted to carry out his policy in reference to France. Along with Pitt he resigned office in 1801, on account of the king declining to grant any concessions to the Catholics, and when Pitt, on accepting office in 1804, did not stipulate for Catholic emancipation he declined to join his ministry, and entered into a close alliance with Fox. On the death of Pitt in 1806 he became the nominal head of the Government of "All the Talents," whose military projects resulted very unsuccessfully, but which deserves to be remembered with honour on account of the Act for the abolition of the slave trade. Its influence was, however, considerably weakened by the death of Fox, and as the king in March 1807 demanded from Grenville an assurance that he would initiate no measures for the relief of the Catholics and his colleagues found it necessary to resign. His colleagues were not unanimous in approving of his conscientiousness, and Sheridan expressed the opinion of more than himself when he remarked "I have known many men knock their heads against a wall, but I never before heard of a man collecting bricks

and building a wall for the express purpose of knocking out his own brains against it." Lord Grenville never again held office. He continued to be one of the principal supporters of Catholic emancipation, and during the remainder of his political career generally voted with the Whigs, although in 1815 he separated himself from Lord Grey and supported the wailike policy of Lord Liverpool. In 1819, when the marquis of Lansdowne brought forward his motion for an inquiry into the cause of the distresses and discontent in the manufacturing districts, Grenville delivered an earnest speech in which he advocated the adoption of severely repressive measures. He died at his residence, Dropmore, Buckinghamshire, 12th January 1834.

Though the talents of Lord Grenville were not of a high order, his straightforwardness, great industry, political knowledge, firmness of mind, and moderate opinions secured him considerable political influence. He can also lay claim to be enrolled among those English statesmen who have distinguished themselves in literature. Besides editing the letters of the earl of Chatham to his nephew Thomas Pitt, afterwards Lord Camelford, he printed for private circulation an edition of Homer with annotations, and also a small volume entitled *Myra Memoirs*, consisting of translations into Latin from Greek, English, and Italian. In 1809 he was chosen chancellor of the university of Oxford. He married in 1792 Anne Pitt, daughter of Lord Camelford, but had no issue, and the title became extinct.

**GRESHAM, SIR THOMAS (1519–1579)**, a London merchant, the founder of the Royal Exchange and of Gresham College, London, was born in 1519. Descended from an old Norfolk family, he was the only son of Sir Richard Gresham, a leading London merchant, who for some time held the office of lord mayor and for his services as agent of Henry VIII in negotiating loans with foreign merchants received the honour of knighthood. Though his father intended him to follow his own profession, he nevertheless sent him for some time to Corpus College, Cambridge, but there is no information as to the duration of his residence. It is uncertain also whether it was before or after this that he was apprenticed to his uncle Sir John Gresham, who was also a merchant, but we have his own testimony that he served an apprenticeship of eight years. In 1543 at the age of twenty-four he was admitted a member of the Mercers' Company, and in the same year he went to the Low Countries, where, either on his own account or on that of his father or uncle, he both carried on business as a merchant and acted in various matters as an agent for Henry VIII. In 1544 he married the widow of William Read, a London merchant, but he still continued to reside principally in the Low Countries, having his headquarters at Antwerp. When in 1551 the mismanagement of Sir William Danell, "king's merchant," in the Low Countries, had brought the English Government into great financial embarrassment, Gresham was called in to give his advice, and chosen to carry out his own proposals. Then leading feature was the adoption of various methods—highly ingenious, but quite arbitrary and unfair—for raising the value of the pound sterling on the "bourse" of Antwerp, and it was so successful that in a few years nearly all King Edward's debts were discharged. The advice of Gresham was likewise sought by the Government in all their money difficulties, and he was also frequently employed in various diplomatic missions. He had no stated salary, but in reward of his services received from Edward various grants of the annual value of which at that time was ultimately about £400 a year. On the accession of Mary the council resolved on his recall, but before the letter was sent they changed their opinion, and as he professed his zealous desire to serve the queen, and manifested great adroitness both in negoti-

ating loans and in smuggling money, arms, and foreign goods, not only were his services retained throughout his reign, but besides his salary of twenty shillings *per diem* he received grants of church lands to the yearly value of £200. Under Queen Elizabeth, besides continuing to act as financial agent of the crown, he was for some time ambassador at the court of the duchess of Parma. In 1559 he received the honour of knighthood. By the outbreak of the war in the Low Countries he was compelled to leave Antwerp on the 19th March 1567, but, though he spent the remainder of his life in London, he continued his business as merchant and financial agent of the Government in much the same way as formerly. Elizabeth also found him useful in a great variety of other ways, among which was that of acting as jailer to Lady Mary Grey, who, as a punishment for marrying Thomas Keys the sergeant poet, remained a prisoner in his house from June 1569 to the end of 1572. In 1565 Gresham made a proposal to the court of aldermen of London to build at his own expense a house or exchange, on condition that they purchased for this purpose a piece of suitable ground. In this proposal he seems to have had an eye to his own interest as well as to the general good of the merchants, for by a yearly rental of £700 obtained for the shops in the upper part of the building he received a sufficient return for his trouble and expense. Gresham died suddenly, apparently of apoplexy, 21st November 1579. His only son predeceased him, and his illegitimate daughter, Anne he married to Sir Nicolas Bacon, brother of the great Lord Bacon. With the exception of a number of small sums bequeathed to the support of various charities, the bulk of his property, consisting of estates in various parts of England of the annual value of more than £2300, was bequeathed to his widow and her heirs with the stipulation that after her decease his residence in Bishopsgate Street, as well as the rents arising from the Royal Exchange, should be vested in the hands of the corporation of London and the Mercers' Company, for the purpose of maintaining a college in which seven professors should read lectures—one each day of the week—in astronomy, geometry, physics, law, divinity, rhetoric, and music. The lectures were begun in 1597, and were delivered in the original building until 1763, when, on the ground that the trustees were losers by the gift, it was made over to the crown for a yearly rent of £500, and converted into an excise office. From that time a room in the Royal Exchange was used for the lectures until 1843 the present building was erected at a cost of £7000. It contains a large library, professors' rooms, and a theatre capable of holding 600 persons.

A notice of Gresham is contained in Fuller's *Worthies* and Warle's *Gresham Professors*, but the fullest account of him, as well as of the history of the Exchange and Gresham College is that by J. M. Baugh in his *Life and Times of Sir Thomas Gresham*, 2 vols., 1839. See also a *Brief Memoir of Sir Thomas Gresham*, 1838, and *The Life of Sir Thomas Gresham, Founder of the Royal Exchange*, 1845.

GRESSET, JEAN BAPTISTE (1709-1777). The literary history of Gresset might be dismissed with the simple statement that he wrote *Vent Vert*. By that one poem he is remembered. His life is, however, interesting from another fact, that he, who almost alone among French poets wrote nothing of which a moralist need be ashamed, spent the last twenty-five years of his life in regretting the frivolity which enabled him to produce the most charming of poems. He was born at Amiens, and brought up by the Jesuits of that place. As a boy he displayed such great promise that, according to the usual custom of the society, the fathers resolved to receive him among themselves. He was accepted as a novice at the age of sixteen, and sent to pursue his studies at the Collège Louis le Grand in Paris. After completing his course he was appointed, being then under twenty years of age, to a post as professor or assistant master

in a college at Rouen. It was, it must be remembered, a son of the society of Jesus, as such he had been drilled and disciplined to perfect obedience, in every point except that of orders he was an ecclesiastic. Probably it was not the intention of the society that he should become a priest. They reckoned upon his continuing a lay brother, and helping the cause by his position as a teacher. From such a mind so trained, so taught to regard everything from the priestly point of view, devoted to the most severe studies, occupied in the grave and responsible work of teaching, what literary fruit was to be expected? Perhaps a treatise on a Greek particle, an essay on Latin style, a grammatical treatise, anything but that which really appeared—the graceful, pleasant poem by which he will ever be remembered. He published *Vent Vert* at Rouen, being then twenty-four years of age. It is a story, in itself exceedingly humorous, showing how a parrot, the delight of a convent, whose talk was all of prayers and pious ejaculations, was conveyed to another convent as a visitor to please the nuns. On the way he falls among bad companions, forgets his convent language, and shocks the sisters on arrival by profane swearing. He is sent back in disgrace, punished by solitude and plain bread, presently repents, reforms, and is killed by kindness. The story, however, is nothing. The treatment of the subject, the atmosphere which surrounds it, the delight in which the little painting was done of the nuns, their jealousies, their tiny tiffes, are presented, taken, rendered entirely by surprise. The poem stands absolutely univalued, even among French *contes en vers*.

Gresset found himself famous. He left Rouen, went up to Paris, where he found refuge in the same garret which had sheltered him when a boy at the Collège Louis le Grand, and there wrote his second poem, *Ma Chantreuse*. Then trouble came upon him, complaints were made to the fathers of the alleged licentiousness of verses which were as innocent as any school-boy's novel, the real cause of complaint being the ridicule which *Vent Vert* seemed to throw upon the whole race of nuns. An example, it was urged, must be made, Gresset was expelled the order. Men of robust mind would have been glad to get rid of such a yoke. Gresset, who had never been taught to stand alone, went forth weeping. He became a man of letters, he wrote many other poems, none of which made any mark. He never in fact attained the same level as *Vent Vert*. He wrote two or three comedies. One, called *Le Méchant*, still keeps the stage, though it is difficult to assign it much merit. He was admitted to the Académie. And then, still young, he retired to Amiens, where he fell into the hands of the priests, and became their abject slave. His brief escape from the discipline of the church became the subject of the deepest remorse. He repented of his poems, and even went so far as to address to the bishop an abjuration of his title of dramatist, and to implore pardon of the Virgin for having written plays. The history of French literature presents many examples of poets in old age repenting the sins of their youth, the example of Gresset is unique as beginning, while in full manhood, a sincere repentance for having even in so pleasant and innocent a way brought into ridicule the institutions of the church.

GRÉTRY, ANDRÉ-ENRIE-MODESTE (1741-1813), a celebrated composer of French opera, was born at Liège, February 11, 1741. He received his first musical education in the *maîtrise* of the college of St Denis, where his father, a poor musician, occasionally acted as violinist. Leclerc and Reinken were his early masters. But of greater importance was the practical tuition he received by attending the performance of an Italian opera company. Here he heard the operas of Galuppi, Pergolesi, and other masters, and the desire of completing his own studies in Italy was the immediate result. To find the necessary



means he composed in 1759 a mass which he dedicated to the canons of the Liège cathedral, who in return sent him to the Collège de Liège at Rome, founded by a citizen of Liège for the benefit of his townsmen studying in Rome. Here Grétry resided for five years, studiously employed in completing his musical education under Casali. His proficiency in harmony and counterpoint was, however, according to his own confession, at all times very moderate. Neither was any deep scholarship required for the style of composition to which he soon exclusively devoted himself. His first great success was achieved by an Italian intermezzo or opéraetta, *Le vendémiaire*, composed for the Aliberti theatre in Rome, and received with universal applause. It is said that the study of the score of one of Montigny's operas, lent to him by a secretary of the French embassy in Rome, decided Grétry to devote himself to French comic opera. On New Year's Day 1767 he accordingly left Rome, and after a short stay at Geneva (where he made the acquaintance of Voltaire, and produced another opéraetta) went to Paris. There for two years he had to contend with the difficulties incident to poverty and obscurity. He was, however, not without friends, and by the intercession of one of these, Count Ciestry, the Swedish ambassador, Grétry obtained a libretto from the celebrated Marmontel, which he set to music in less than six weeks, and with, on its performance in August 1768, met with unparalleled success.

The name of the opera was *Le Huron*. Two others, *Lucile* and *Le Tableau Parlant*, soon followed, and thenceforth Grétry's position as the leading composer of comic opera was safely established. Of the fifty operas which embody his musical activity only two or three have survived, and perhaps as many more are worth remembering. His masterpieces are *Zémire et Azor* and *Richard Cœur de Lion*,—the first produced in 1771, the second in 1784. The latter in an indirect way became connected with a great historic event. In it occurs the celebrated romance, *O Richard, ô mon roi, l'univers l'abandonne*, which was sung at the banquet—"fatal as that of Thyestes," remarks Carlyle—given by the bodyguard to the officers of the Versailles garrison on October 3, 1789. The *Misalliance* not long afterwards became the reply of the people to the expression of loyalty borrowed from Grétry's opera. The composer himself was not uninfluenced by the great events he witnessed, and the titles of some of his operas, such as *La Rosette Républicaine* and *La Fête de la Raison*, sufficiently indicate the epoch to which they belong, but they are mere *pièces de circonstance*, and the republican enthusiasm displayed is not genuine. Little more successful was Grétry in his dealings with classical subjects, and none of his operas belonging to that class are worth remembering. His genuine power lies in the delineation of character, and in the expression of tender and typically French sentiment. For the first-named purpose the careful and truly admirable fidelity with which his music is wedded to the words is invaluable. In this respect Grétry's works are indeed representative of French operatic music at its best. The structure of his concerted pieces on the other hand is frequently flimsy, and his instrumentation so feeble that the orchestral parts of some of his works had to be rewritten by other composers, in order to make them acceptable to modern audiences. Of his deficiencies of harmonization Grétry himself was well aware, and his confessions in this respect are strangely at variance with the self-sufficient tone which pervades his literary effusions on musical and even on political and social topics. During the Revolution Grétry lost much of his property, but the successive Governments of France vied in favouring the composer, regardless of political differences. From the old court he received distinctions and rewards of all kinds, the republic made him an inspector of the Conservatoire, Napoleon granted him

the cross of the Legion of Honour and a pension. Grétry died September 24, 1813, at the Hermitage in Montmorency, formerly the house of Rousseau. Fifteen years later his heart was transferred to his birthplace, permission having been obtained after a tedious lawsuit. In 1842 Grétry's colossal statue in bronze was inaugurated at Liège.

GREUZE, JEAN D'EPINAY (1725-1805), in the full tide of the 18th century, when professional distinction appeared to be reserved exclusively for those who devoted themselves to the production of historical or allegorical subjects, achieved an immense reputation as a painter of scenes of domestic life. He was born at Tournus in 1725, and is generally said to have formed his own talent, this is, however, true only in the most limited sense, for at an early age his inclinations, though thwarted by his father, were encouraged by a Lyonsese artist named Grandon or Giondrom who enjoyed during his lifetime considerable reputation as a portrait-painter. Grandon not only persuaded the father of Greuze to give way to his son's wishes, and permit the lad to accompany him as his pupil to Lyons, but when at a later date he himself left Lyons for Paris—where his son-in-law Grétry the celebrated composer enjoyed the height of favour—Grandon carried young Greuze with him. Settled in Paris, Greuze worked from the living model in the school of the Royal Academy, but did not attract the attention of his teachers, and when he produced his first picture, *Le Père de Famille expliquant la Bible à ses Enfants*, considerable doubt was felt and shown as to his talent in its production. By other and more remarkable works of the same class Greuze soon established his claims beyond contest, and won for himself the notice and support of the well-known connoisseur La Live de Jully, the brother-in-law of Madame d'Épinay. In 1758 Greuze exhibited his *Avoué Triomphe*, upon which, presented by Pigalle the sculptor, he was immediately *agréé* by the Academy. Towards the close of the same year he left France for Italy, in company with the Abbé Louis Gougenot, who had deserted from the magistrature,—although he had obtained the post of "conseiller au Châtelet,"—in order to take the "petit collet." Gougenot had some acquaintance with the arts, and was highly valued by the Académiciens,—who, during his journey with Greuze elected him an honorary member of their body—on account of his studies in mythology and allegory, his acquirements in these respects are said to have been largely utilized by them, but to Greuze they were of doubtful advantage, and he lost rather than gained by this visit to Italy in Gougenot's company. He had undertaken it probably in order to silence those who taxed him with ignorance of "great models of style," but the Italian subjects which formed the entirety of his contributions to the Salon of 1767 showed that he had been put on a false track, and he speedily returned to the sources of his first inspiration. In 1769, 1761 (*L'Accordeur de Village*,—Louvre), and 1763 Greuze exhibited with ever increasing success, in 1765 he reached the zenith of his powers and reputation. In that year he was represented with no less than thirteen works, amongst which may be cited *Le Jeune Fille qui pleure son Orseau mort*, *La Bonne Mère*, *Le Mauvais Fils puni* (Louvre), and *La Malédiction Paternelle* (Louvre). The Academy took occasion to press Greuze for his diploma picture, the execution of which had been long delayed, and forbade him to exhibit on their walls until he had complied with their regulations. "J'ai vu la lettre," says Diderot, "qui est un modèle d'honnêteté et d'estime, j'ai vu la réponse de Greuze qui est un modèle de vanité et d'impudence. Il fallait appuyer cela d'un chef-d'œuvre, et c'est ce que Greuze n'a pas fait." Greuze wanted to be received as an historical painter, and produced a work which he intended to vindicate his right to despise his qualifications as a *peintre de genre*. This unfortunate canvas,—

Sevres et Chacalla (Louvres).—was exhibited in 1769 side by side with Greuze's portrait of Jeanart (Louvres), and his admirable Petite Fille au Chien Noir. The Académiciens received their new member with all due honours, but at the close of the ceremonies the Director addressed Greuze in these words—"Monsieur, l'Académie vous a reçu, mais c'est comme peintre de genre, elle a eu égard à vos anciennes productions, qui sont excellentes, et elle a fermé les yeux sur celle-ci, qui n'est digne ni d'elle ni de vous." Greuze, greatly incensed, quailed with his *confidés*, and ceased to exhibit until, in 1804, the Revolution had thrown open the doors of the Academy to all the world. In the following year on 4th March 1805, he died in the Louvre in great poverty. He had been in receipt of considerable wealth, which he had dissipated by extravagance and bad management, so that during his closing years he was forced even to solicit commissions which his enfeebled powers no longer enabled him to carry out with success. The brilliant reputation which Greuze acquired seems to have been due, not to his acquirements as a painter,—for his practice is evidently that current in his own day,—but to the character of the subjects which he treated. That return to nature which inspired Rousseau's attacks upon an artificial civilization demanded expression in art. Didot in *Le Fils Naturel* et *Le Père de Famille* tried to turn the vein of domestic drama to account in the painting, which he tried and failed to do. Greuze, in painting achieved, with extraordinary success, although his works, like the plays of Didot, were affected by that very artificiality against which they protested. The touch of melodramatic exaggeration, however, which runs through them finds an apology in the firm and brilliant play of line, in the freshness and vigour of the flesh tints, in the enticing softness of expression (often obtained by almost an abuse of *mélange*), by the alluring air of health and youth, by the sensuous attractions, in short, with which Greuze invests his lessons of bourgeois morality. As Didot said of *La Bonne Mère*, "à peindre la population," and a certain piquancy of contrast is the result which never fails to obtain admirers. *La Jeune Fille à l'Agaueu* fetched, indeed, at the Fountains sale in 1855 no less than 1,000,200 francs. One of Greuze's pupils, Mademoiselle Le Doux, imitated with success the manner of her master, his daughter and granddaughters, Madame de Valory, also inherited some traditions of his talent. Madame de Valory published in 1813 a *Comédie-vau-deville*, *Greuze, ou l'Accordée du Village*, to which she prefixed a notice of her grandfather's life and works, and the *Salons* of Didot also contain, besides many other particulars, the story at full length of Greuze's quarrel with the Academy. Most of the most distinguished engravers of that date, Massard père, Flupart, Gaillard and Levesseu, were specially enticed by Greuze with the reproduction of his subjects, but there are also excellent prints by other engravers, notably by Carré and Le Bas. (N. R. P.)

GREVILLE, CHARLES CAVENDISH FULKE (1794-1865), a great grandson by his father of the fifth earl of Warwick, and son of Lady Charlotte Bentinck, daughter of the duke of Portland, formerly a leader of the Whig party, and first minister of the crown. Greville was born 2d April 1794. Much of his childhood was spent at his grandfather's house at Bulstrode. He was one of the pages of George III., and was educated at Eton and Christ Church, Oxford, but he left the university early, having been appointed private secretary to Earl Bathurst before he was twenty. The interest of the duke of Portland had secured for him the secretaryship of the island of Jamaica, which was a sinecure office, the duties being performed by a deputy, and the reversion of the clerkship of the council. Greville entered upon the discharge of the duties of clerk of the council in ordinary in 1821, and continued to perform them for nearly

forty years. He therefore served under three successive sovereigns,—George IV., William IV., and Victoria,—and although no political or confidential functions were attached to that office, it is one which brings a man into habitual intercourse with the chiefs of all the parties in the state. Well-born, well-bred, handsome, and accomplished, Greville led the easy life of a man of fashion, taking an occasional part in the transactions of his day and much consulted in the affairs of private life. But the celebrity which now attaches to his name is entirely due to the posthumous publication of a portion of a Journal or Diary which it was his practice to keep during the greater part of his life. These papers were given by him to his friend Mr. Reeve a short time before his death (which took place on the 18th January 1865), with an injunction that they should be published, as far as was feasible, at not too remote a period after the writer's death. The journals of the reigns of George IV. and William IV. (extending from 1820 to 1837) were accordingly so published in obedience to his directions about ten years after that event. Few publications have been received with greater interest by the public, five large editions were sold in little more than a year, and the demand in America was as great as in England. These journals were regarded as a faithful record of the impressions made on the mind of a competent observer, at the time by the events he witnessed and the persons with whom he associated. Their characteristic is the love of truth, of justice, and of sincerity. The court was irritated at the scornful disclosure of the vices and follies of former sovereigns, and fashionable society was annoyed at the writer's absolute indifference to its pretensions. But Greville did not stoop to collect or record private scandal. His object appears to have been to leave behind him some of the materials of history, by which the men and actions of his own time would be judged. He records not so much public events as the private causes which led to them, and perhaps no English memoir-writer has left behind him a more valuable contribution to the history of this century. Greville published anonymously, in 1845, a volume on the policy of England to Ireland, in which he advocated the payment of the Roman Catholic clergy, and he was also the author of several pamphlets on the events of his day.

GREW, NEHEMIAH (1628-1711), the earliest vegetable anatomist and physiologist of England, was the son of Obadiah Grew, nonconformist divine of St. Michael's, Coventry. At the Restoration, his father being ejected from his living, he went to a foreign university, where he took the degree of doctor of physic. Returning to Coventry, his native town, he commenced a series of observations on the physiology of plants, communicating the results to the Royal Society, by which they were so well received that he was induced to remove to London (1672). There he acquired an extensive practice as a physician. He was elected a fellow of the Royal Society on the recommendation of Bishop Wilkins, and in 1677 he succeeded Mr. Oldenburg as secretary, in which capacity he prepared a descriptive catalogue of the rarities preserved at Gresham College (1681). The following year appeared his celebrated work on the *Anatomy of Plants*, in which he displayed great originality as an investigator, especially in pointing out the sex-differences of plants. Linnæus named a genus of plants *Grewia* (natural family of *Thymaceæ*) in his honour. He edited the *Philosophical Transactions*, begun in 1665, and wrote treatises on *How Water made Earth*, which passed through several editions, and on the *Natures and Use of the Salt contained in Spices and such other Waters* (1697), a rendering of the *Prædictus de Salsis*, &c., &c. (1696). Besides the *Anatomy of Plants*, he wrote a *Comparative Anatomy of Trunks* (1676), and an *Idea of a Physiological History* (1678), as well as *Comologia Sacra* (1701). There is also a *Disputatio de humoris natura* by him (1673), and *Requisitæ ad præparandum . . . in le combat que se joindit du mélange des corps* (1679).

GREY, EARL (1764-1845) Charles, second Earl Grey, was the eldest surviving son of General Sir Charles Grey, afterwards first Earl Grey. He was born at his father's residence, Falkland, near Alwrick, March 13, 1764. General Grey, who was a younger son of the house of Grey of Howick, one of the most considerable territorial families in Northumberland, had already begun a career of active service which, like the political career of his son, covered nearly half a century. Before the latter was born, General Grey had served on the staff of Prince Ferdinand of Brunswick in the Seven Years' War, and had been wounded at Minden. While the son was making verses at Eton, the father was serving against the revolted colonists in Pennsylvania and New Jersey, and while the young member for Northumberland was denouncing Pitt's war against the Convention, the veteran soldier was destroying the remnant of the French colonial empire by the capture of Martinique and Guadeloupe. When Napoleon threatened an invasion, General Grey took the command of the southern district, and at the peace of Amiens he was rewarded with a peerage. His elder brother, Sir Henry Grey of Howick, the head of the family, had supported the Government in parliament. But the political career of young Grey, who was heir presumptive to the family estates, took a different complexion, which needs to be explained by the circumstances in which it began.

Young Grey expected to succeed the seat which had been his uncle's, and his early years were spent in preparation for a parliamentary career. He was sent to Eton, and proceeded thence to Cambridge. William Pitt, a youth five years older, was then in residence as a master of arts, studiously paying court to the Whigs of the university, and at the general election of 1780 he came forward as a candidate for the academic seat. His name stood last on the poll, but he was brought in elsewhere, and his first speech proved him a man of the first rank. The unparalleled successes which followed portended grave changes. Pitt's elevation to the premiership, his brilliant and hard-fought battle in the house, and his complete rout of the Whig party at the general election of 1784, when he came in for Cambridge as the head of the poll, threatened the great territorial interest with nothing less than extinction. It was to this interest that Grey belonged, and hence, when at length returned for Northumberland in 1786, he at once came forward as a vigorous assailant of the Government of Pitt. He was hailed by the opposition, and associated with Fox, Burke, and Sheildan as a manager in the Hastings impeachment. During the nineteen years which remained of the career of Fox, he followed the great Whig statesman with absolute fidelity, and succeeded him as leader of the party. The shortcomings of Fox's statesmanship were inherited by Grey. Both were equally devoid of political originality, shunned the severer labours of the politician, and instinctively feared any deviation from the traditions of their party. Such men cannot save a party in its decadence, and the history of Fox and Grey has been aptly termed the history of the decline and fall of Whiggism.

The stunning blow of 1784 was the first incident in this history. Its full significance was not at once perceived. An opposition, however weak in the beginning, generally has a tendency to revive, and Grey's early successes in the house helped to revive the Foxites. The European situation became favourable to this revival. The struggle in France for popular rights, culminating in the great Revolution, was watched by Fox with interested sympathy. He affected to regard the domination of Pitt as the domination of the crown, and as leading logically to absolutism, and saw in that popular sympathy for the French Revolution which naturally arose in England an instrument which might be employed to overthrow this domination.

But Pitt gathered the fruits of the windfall. The spread of "Jacobinism," or "French principles," became the pretext on which the stronger half of the opposition vent over to the Government. Burke led the movement in the Commons, the duke of Portland and Lord Fitzwilliam in the Lords, and with this second incident in the Whig decline began the difficulties of Grey's career. The domination of the premier had already stirred the keenest resentment in the younger and more ambitious members of the Whig party. Freed from the restraint of the older politicians under Burke and Portland, the resumption under Fox fell into a series of grave mistakes. Of this resumption Grey became the moving spirit, for though Fox did not check their activity, he disclaimed the responsibility of their policy. Fox had refused to condemn "French principles," and denounced the war with France, but he would take no part in exciting agitation in England. It was otherwise with the restless spirits among whom Grey was found. Enraged by the attitude of Pitt, which was grounded on the support of the constituencies as they then stood, the resumption plotted an ill-timed agitation for parliamentary reform.

The demand for parliamentary reform was as yet in a rudimentary stage. Forty years later it had become the demand of an unenfranchised nation, disabused by a sudden spread of political and economic knowledge. It was as yet but the occasional instrument of the scheming politician. Chatham had employed the cry in this sense. The Middlesex agitators had done the same, even the premier of the time, after his accession to power, had sought to strengthen his hands in the same way. But Pitt's hands were now strengthened abundantly, whereas the opposition had nothing to lose and much to gain by such a measure. The cry for reform thus became then a natural expedient. Powerless to carry reform in the House, they sought to overawe parliament by external agitation, and formed the Society of the Friends of the People, destined to unite the forces of all the "patriotic" societies which already existed in the country, and to pour their violence menacingly on a terrified parliament. Grey and his friends were enrolled in this potent association, and presented in parliament its menacing petitions. Such petitions, which were in fact violent impeachments of parliament itself, proceeding from voluntary associations having no corporate existence, had been hitherto unknown in the English parliament. They had been well known in the French assembly. They had heralded and furthered the victory of the Jacobins, the dissolution of the constitution, the calling of the Convention, and the fall of the monarchy.

The Society of the Friends of the People was originally an after-dinner folly, extemporized at the house of a man who afterwards gained an eulogium by denouncing it as seditious. Fox disapproved it, though he did not directly condemn it, but Grey was overborne by the fierce Jacobinism of Landale, and avowed himself the parliamentary mouthpiece of this dangerous agitation. But Pitt, strong in his position, cut the ground from under Grey's feet by suppressing the agitation with a strong hand. The suspension of the Habeas Corpus Act, the Gagging Acts, and the state prosecutions form a painful historical episode. But the discredit belongs as much to Grey and Landale as to Pitt. Grey always spoke regretfully of his share in the movement. "One word from Fox," he said, "would have kept me out of all the mess of the Friends of the People." But he never spoke it.

It was Grey who moved the impeachment of Pitt, and he next promoted the equally foolish "Secession." Since the parliament did not properly represent the nation, and refused to reform itself or to impeach the minister, nothing remained but to disown it, and the opposition announced

their intention of "seceding," or systematically absenting themselves from their places in parliament. This futile movement was originated by Grey, Lansdowne, and the duke of Bedford. It obtained a somewhat wider support. It suited the languor of some dispirited politicians, like Fox, and the aversion of some lawyers in large practice, like Eschino, but sensible politicians at once condemned it. It directly ignored parliamentary government, and amounted to nothing but a pettish threat of revolution. "Secession," said Lord Lansdowne, with characteristic shrewdness, "either means rebellion, or it is nonsense." Pitt easily dashed this feeble weapon from the hands of his opponents. He roused jealousy in the absent by praising the parts and the patriotism of the rest, and thus gradually brought them back. Grey himself seceded to protest against the union with Ireland.

When Pitt died in 1806, nothing could prevent the re-united opposition from coming into power, and thus the Broad-bottom ministry was formed under Fox. On his death, Grenville became premier, and Grey, now Lord Howick, Foreign Secretary, and leader of the House of Commons. Disunion, always the bane of English Liberalism, lurked in the coalition, and the Foxites and Grenvillites were only ostensibly at one. Grey opposed the war policy of Grenville, and this policy was not more successful than it had been in the hands of Pitt. And the change from the leadership of Fox to that of Grenville was only too perceptible. Both in court and country Grenville affected the role of Pitt, and assumed a stiff and peremptory attitude which ill became him. An ill-advised dissolution weakened their majority, they lost ground by the "delicate investigation" into the conduct of the Princess of Wales, Lord Henry Petty's budget was too specious to command confidence, and the king, fully aware of their weak situation, resolved to get rid of them. When they proposed to concede a portion of the Catholic claims, George refused, and demanded of them an undertaking never to propose such a measure again. This was refused, and the Grenville Grey cabinet retired in March 1807. In the same year, Grey's father died, and Grey went to the Upper House. Opposition united Grey and Grenville for a time, but the parties finally split on the old war question. When Napoleon returned from Elba in 1816, and once more seized the government of France, the same question arose which had arisen in 1792, Was England to go to war for the restoration of the Bourbons? Grenville followed the traditions of Pitt, and supported the ministry in at once renewing hostilities. Grey followed those of Fox, and maintained the right of France to choose her own governors, and the impossibility of checking the reaction in the emperor's favour. The victory of Waterloo put an end to the dispute, but the disruption became permanent. The termination of the war, and the cessation of all action in common, reduced the power of the opposition to nothing. Grenville retired from public life, and his adherents reinforced the ministry. Little remained for the Whigs to do. But the scandalous persecution of the queen afforded an opportunity of showing that the ministry were not omnipotent, and the part taken on that occasion by Grey won him at once the increased respect of the nation and the undying aversion of George IV. It sealed the exclusion of himself and his few friends from office during the king's life, and when in 1827 Grey came forth to denounce the ministry of Canning, he declared that he stood alone in the political world. His words were soon justified, for when Lord Goderich resigned, the remnant which had hitherto supported Grey hastened to support the ministry of the duke of Wellington. Thus was the original Whig party dissolved, after a series of struggles which had begun with the longest reign upon record, and had outlasted it.

We now reach the principal episode in Grey's career. In 1827 he seemed to stand forth the solitary and powerless relic of an extinct party. In 1832 we find that party restored to its old numbers and activity, supreme in parliament, popular in the nation, and Lord Grey at its head. The duke of Wellington's foolish declaration against parliamentary reform, made in a season of great popular excitement, suddenly deprived him of the confidence of the country, and a coalition of the Whigs and Canningites became inevitable. The Whigs had in 1827 supported the Canningites, the latter now supported the Whigs, of whom Grey remained the traditional head. George IV was dead, and no obstacle existed to Grey's elevation. Grey was sent for by William IV in November 1830, and formed a coalition cabinet, pledged to carry on the work in which the duke of Wellington had failed. But Grey himself was the mere instrument of the times. An old-fashioned Whig, he had little personal sympathy with the popular cause, though he had sometimes indicated a certain measure of reform as necessary. When he took office, he guessed neither the extent to which the Reform Act would go, nor the means by which it would be carried. That he procured for the country a measure of constitutional reform for which he had agitated in his youth was little more than a coincidence. In his youth he had put himself at the head of a frantic agitation against parliament, because he there found himself powerless. In his old age the case was reversed. Suddenly raised to a position of authority in the country, he boldly stood between parliament, as then constituted, and the formidable agitation which now threatened it, and by a forced reform saved it from revolution. In his youth he had assailed Pitt's administration because Pitt's administration threatened with extinction the political monopoly of that landed interest to which he belonged. In his old age, on the contrary, unable to check the progress of the wave, he swam with it, and headed the movement which compelled that landed interest to surrender its monopoly.

The second reading of the first Reform Bill was carried in the Commons by a majority of one. This was equivalent to a defeat, and further failures preannounced a dissolution. The confidence which the bold action of the ministry had won was soon plainly proved, for the second reading was carried in the new parliament by a majority of 136. When the bill had at length passed the Commons after months of debate, it was Grey's task to introduce it to the Lords. It was rejected by a majority of 41. The safety of the country now depended on the prudence and courage of the ministry. The resignation of Grey and his colleagues was dreaded even by the opposition, and they remained in office with the intention of introducing a third Reform Bill in the next session. The last months of 1831 were the beginning of a political crisis such as England had not seen since 1688. The two extreme parties, the Ultra-Radicals and the Ultra-Tories, were ready for civil war. Between them stood the ministry and the majority of intelligent peace-loving Englishmen, and their course of action was soon decided. The bill must be passed, and there were but two ways of passing it. One was to declare the consent of the House of Lords unnecessary to the measure, the other to create, if necessary, new peers in sufficient number to outvote the opposition. These two expedients did not in reality differ. To swamp the house in the way proposed would have been to destroy it. The question whether the ministers should demand the king's consent to such a measure, if necessary, was debated in the cabinet in September. Brougham proposed it, and gradually a majority of the cabinet were won over. Grey had at first refused to employ even the threat of so unconstitutional a device as a means to the proposed end. But his continued refusal would have broken up the ministry, and the breaking

up of the ministry must now have been the signal for revolution. The second reading in the Commons was passed in December by a majority of 162, and on New-Year's Day 1832 the majority of the cabinet resolved on demanding power to carry it in the Lords by a creation of peers. Grey carried the resolution to the king. Some time still remained before the bill could be committed and read a third time. It was not until the 9th of April that Grey moved the second reading in the Lords. A sufficient number of the opposition temporized, and the second reading was allowed to pass by a majority of nine. Their intention was to mutilate the bill in committee. The Ultra-Tories, headed by the duke of Wellington, had entered a protest against the second reading, but they were now politically powerless. The struggle had become a struggle on the one hand for the whole bill, to be carried by a creation of peers, and on the other for some mutilated measure. Grey's instinct divined that the crisis was approaching. Either the king must consent to swamp the House, or the ministry must cease to stand in the breach between the peers and the country. The king, a weak and inexperienced politician, had in the meantime been wrought upon by the temporizing leaders in the Lords. He was induced to believe that if the Commons should reject the mutilated bill when it was returned, so that the ministry should consequently retire, the mutilated bill might be reintroduced and passed by a Tory ministry. He was deaf to all representations of the state of public opinion, and to the surprise of the ministry, and the terror and indignation of every man of sense in the country, he rejected their proposal, and accepted their resignation, May 9, 1832. The duke of Wellington undertook the hopeless task of constructing a ministry which should pass a restricted or sham Reform Bill. The only man who could have made the success of such a ministry even probable was Peel, and Peel's conscience and good sense forbade the attempt. He refused, and after a week of the profoundest agitation throughout the country, the king, beaten and mortified, was forced to send for Grey and Brougham. On being told that his consent to the creation of peers was the only condition on which they could undertake the Government, he angrily and reluctantly yielded. The chancellor, with cool forethought, demanded this consent in writing. Grey thought such a demand harsh and unnecessary. "I wonder," he said to Brougham, when the interview was over, "you could have had the heart to press it." But Brougham was inexorable, and the king signed the following paper:—"The king grants permission to Earl Grey, and to his Chancellor, Lord Brougham, to create such a number of peers as will be sufficient to ensure the passing of the Reform Bill, first calling up peers' eldest sons—WILLIAM R. WINDSOR, May 17, 1832." This brief paper may be called the Magna Charta of responsible government. It established the right of a ministry to break down, by some convenient means, a factious opposition in the Lords, and this right has never since been practically disputed.

Grey had now won the game. There was no danger that he would have to resort to the expedient which he was authorized to employ. The introduction of sixty new peers would have destroyed the opposition, but it would have been equivalent to the abolition of the House. The king's consent made known, a sufficient number of peers were sure to withdraw to enable the bill to pass, and thus the dignity of both king and peerage would be saved. The duke of Wellington headed the movement on the part of the opposition, and the third reading of the bill was carried in the Lords by a majority of 84.

It is well known that in after years both Grey and Brougham disclaimed any intention of executing their

threat. If this were so, they must have merely pretended to brave a danger which they secretly feared to face, and intended to avoid, and the credit of rescuing the country would belong to the duke of Wellington and the peers who sided with him. To argue such cowardice in them from statements made when the crisis was long past, and when they were naturally willing to palliate the rough policy which they were forced to adopt, would be to set up a need less and unjustifiable paradox. Nothing else in the career of either Grey or Brougham leads us to suppose them capable of the moral baseness of yielding up the helm of state, in an hour of darkness and peril, to reckless and unskilled hands. Such would have been the result if they had lacked the determination to carry out their programme to the end. The influence of every statesman in the country would then have been extinguished, and the United Kingdom would have been absolutely in the hands of O'Connell and O'Connell.

Grey took but little part in directing the legislation of the reformed parliament. Never anxious for power, he had executed the arduous task of 1831-2 rather as a matter of duty than of inclination, and wished for an opportunity of retiring. Such an opportunity very shortly presented itself. The Irish policy of the ministry had not conciliated the Irish people, and O'Connell denounced them with the greatest bitterness. On the renewal of the customary Coercion Bill, the ministry was divided on the question whether to continue to the lord lieutenant the power of suppressing public meetings. Mr. Littleton, the Irish secretary, was for abolishing it, and with the view of conciliating O'Connell, he informed him that the ministry intended to abandon it. But the result proved him to have been mistaken, and O'Connell, with some reason supposing himself to have been duped, called on Mr. Littleton to resign his secretaryship. It had also transpired in the discussion that Lord Althorp, the leader of the House of Commons, was privately opposed to retaining those clauses which it was his duty to push through the house. Lord Althorp therefore resigned, and Grey, who had lately passed his seventieth year, took the opportunity of resigning also. It was his opinion, it appeared, which had overborne the cabinet in favour of the public meeting clauses, and his voluntary withdrawal enabled Lord Althorp to return to his post, and to proceed with the bill in its milder form. Grey was succeeded by Lord Melbourne, but no other change was made in the cabinet. Grey took no further part in politics. During most of his remaining years he continued to live in retirement at Howick, where he died on the 17th of July 1845, in his seventy-second year. By his wife Mary Elizabeth, only daughter of the first Lord Ponsonby, whom he married November 18, 1794, he became the father of ten sons and five daughters, of whom eight sons and four daughters survived him.

In public life, Grey could always be upon occasion bold, strenuous, and self-sacrificing, but he was little disposed for the active work of the politician. He was not one of those who took the statesman's duty "as a pleasure he was to enjoy." A certain stiffness and reserve ever seemed in the popular eye to hedge him in, nor was his oratory of the kind which stirs enthusiasm and delight. A tall, stately figure, fine voice, and calm aristocratic bearing reminded the listener of Pitt rather than of Fox, and his speeches were constructed on the Attic rather than the Asiatic model. Though simple and straightforward, they never lack either point or dignity, and they were admirably adapted to the audience to which they were addressed. The scrupulous uprightness of Grey's political and private character completed the ascendancy which he gained, and no politician could be named who, without being a statesman of the highest class, has left a name more envially placed in English history.

GREY, LADY JANE (1537-1554), a person remarkable no less for her accomplishments than for her misfortunes, was the great-granddaughter of Henry VII of England. Her descent from that king was traced through a line of females. His second daughter Mary, after being left a widow by Louis XII of France, married Charles Brandon, duke of Suffolk, who was a favourite with her brother King Henry VIII. Of this marriage came two daughters, the elder of whom, Lady Frances Brandon, was married to Henry Grey, marquis of Dorset, and their issue, again, consisted of daughters only. Lady Jane, the subject of this article, was the eldest of those whom the marquis had by Lady Frances. Thus it will appear that even if the crown of England had ever fallen into the female line of descent from Henry VII, she could not have put in a rightful claim unless the issue of his elder daughter, Margaret, had become extinct. But Margaret had married James IV of Scotland, and, though her descendant, James VI, was ultimately called to the English throne, Henry VIII had placed her family after that of his second sister in the succession, so that, failing the lawful issue of Henry himself, Lady Jane would, according to this arrangement, have succeeded. It was to these circumstances that she owed her exceptional position in history, and became the victim of an ambition which was not her own.

She was born at her father's seat named Broadgate in Leicestershire, about the year 1537. Her parents, though severe disciplinarians, bestowed more than ordinary care upon her education, and she herself was so teachable, and delighted so much in study, that she became the marvel of the age for her acquisitions. She not only excelled in needlework and in music, both vocal and instrumental, but while still very young she had thoroughly mastered Latin, Greek, French and Italian. She was able to speak and write both Greek and Latin with an accuracy that satisfied even such critics as Ascham and her tutor Dr Aymer, afterwards bishop of London. She had also acquired some knowledge of at least three Oriental tongues, Hebrew, Chaldean, and Arabic. In Ascham's *Schoolmaster* is given a touching account of the devotion with which she pursued her studies and the bashfulness she experienced from her parents. The love of learning was her solace, in reading Demosthenes and Plato she found a refuge from domestic unhappiness. After the fashion of those days she was, when about ten years old, placed for a time in the household of Thomas, Lord Seymour, who induced her parents to let her stay with him by promising to marry her to his nephew King Edward VI. Lord Seymour, however, was attainted of high treason and beheaded in 1549, and his brother, the duke of Somerset, made some overtures to the marquis of Dorset to marry her to his son the earl of Hertford. These projects, however, came to nothing. The duke of Somerset in his turn fell a victim to the ambition of Dudley duke of Northumberland, and was beheaded three years after his brother. Meanwhile, the dukedom of Suffolk having become extinct by the deaths of Charles Brandon and his two sons, the title was conferred upon the marquis of Dorset, Lady Jane's father. Northumberland, who was now all-powerful, fearing a great reverse of fortune in case of the king's death, whose health soon began visibly to decline, endeavoured to strengthen himself by marriages between his family and those of other powerful noblemen, especially of the new-made duke of Suffolk. His three eldest sons being already married, the fourth, who was named Lord Guildford Dudley, was accordingly wedded to Lady Jane Grey about the end of May 1553. The match received the full approval of the king, who furnished the wedding apparel of the parties by royal warrant. But Edward's state of health warned Northumberland that he must lose no time in putting the rest of his project into

execution. He persuaded the king that if the crown should descend to his sister Mary, the work of the Reformation would be undone and the liberties of the kingdom would be in danger. Besides, both Mary and her sister Elizabeth had been declared illegitimate by separate Acts of Parliament, and the objections to Mary Queen of Scots did not require to be pointed out. Edward was easily persuaded to break through his father's will and make a new settlement of the crown by deed. The document was witnessed by the signatures of all the council and of all but one of the judges, but those of the latter body were not obtained without difficulty by threats and intimidation.

Edward VI died on the 6th July 1553, and it was announced to Lady Jane that she was queen. She was then but sixteen years of age. The news came upon her as a most unwelcome surprise, and for some time she resisted all persuasions to accept the fatal dignity, but at length she yielded to the entreaties of her father, her father-in-law, and her husband. The better to mature their plans the council had kept the king's death secret for some days, but they proclaimed Queen Jane in the city on the 10th. The people received the announcement with manifest coldness, and a prince's boy was even so bold as to seize a cry for Queen Mary, for which he next day had his ears nailed to the pillory and afterwards cut off. Mary, however, had received early intimation of her brother's death, and, retiring from Hunston into Norfolk, gathered round her the nobility and commons of those parts. Northumberland was despatched thither with an army to oppose her, but after reaching Newmarket he complained that the council had not sent him forces in sufficient numbers, and his followers began to desert. News also came that the earl of Oxford had declared for Queen Mary, and as most of the council themselves were only seeking an opportunity to wash their hands of rebellion, they procured a meeting at Baynard's Castle, revoked their former acts as done under coercion, and caused the lord mayor to proclaim Queen Mary, which he did amid the shouts of the citizens. The duke of Suffolk was obliged to tell his daughter that she must lay aside her royal dignity and become a private person once more. She replied that she relinquished most willingly a crown that she had only accepted out of obedience to him and her mother, and her ten days' reign was over.

The leading actors in the conspiracy were now called to answer for their deeds. Northumberland was brought up to London a prisoner, tried and sent to the block, along with some of his partisans. The duke of Suffolk and Lady Jane were also committed to the Tower, but the former, by the influence of his duchess, procured a pardon. Lady Jane and her husband Lord Guildford Dudley were also tried, and received sentence of death for treason. Thus, however, was not immediately carried out, on the contrary the queen seems to have wished to spare their lives, and mitigated the rigour of their confinement. Unfortunately, owing to the general dislike of the queen's marriage with Philip of Spain, Sir Thomas Wyatt soon after raised a rebellion in which the duke of Suffolk and his brothers took part, and on its suppression the queen was persuaded that it was unsafe to spare the lives of Lady Jane and her husband any longer. On hearing that they were to die, Lady Jane declined a parting interview with her husband lest it should increase their pain, and prepared to meet her fate with Christian fortitude. She and her husband were executed on the same day, February 12, 1554, her husband on Tower Hill, and herself within the Tower an hour afterwards, amidst universal sympathy and compassion.

See Ascham's *Schoolmaster*, *Biog. Brit.*, Burnet's *History of the Reformation*, Howard's *Lady Jane Grey*; Nicolai's *Literary Remains of Lady Jane Grey* (2 Gals.)

GREYHOUND See Dog, vol vii p 327, and Counting.

GREYTOWN, or more correctly San Juan del Norte, a small town of Nicaragua, worthy of note as the only port of the republic on the coast of the Atlantic and as the eastern terminus proposed for the Nicaraguan inter-oceanic canal. According to the survey of Commandeur Hatfield and Lull, U.S.N., in 1872-3, the church is situated in 10° 55' 14" N lat and 83° 42' 18" W long. The town lies along the seaward side of a narrow peninsula formed by the windings of the San Juan river, and most of its buildings are insignificant erections raised 2 or 3 feet on piles. Though it is still a port of call for mail steamers, and monopolizes the export and import trade of Nicaragua, Greytown is in a deplorable condition. The fine harbor has become almost useless. Between 1832 and 1848 the Arenas Point, which formed one of its boundaries, advanced westward nearly a nautical mile, and now the whole seaward frontage of the bay is a moving sand-bank. In 1853 the channel of entrance was still about one third of a mile in width and had 23 to 25 feet of water in the bar, so that even vessels of war were able to take shelter within the harbour, but by 1801 the channel was only 100 yards wide and 12 feet deep, and in 1875 the passage was sometimes practically closed, with at the most only 3 feet of water. The inhabitants of the town, however, have increased from 856 in 1853 to about 1,500 in 1875. As the vicinity of their town is unfitted for agriculture, they are almost entirely dependent for provisions on supplies from the interior or abroad, and sometimes the commonest articles of consumption are exceedingly scarce. In terms of the treaty of 1850 trial by jury is maintained in all civil and criminal cases, and there is perfect freedom of religious worship, both private and public. The seventh article, however, by which Greytown was to remain a free port has become a dead letter. A duty of 5 per cent was allowed by the merchants on all imports consumed in the place in order to provide means for constructing a lighthouse, and in 1853 the central Government of the republic imposed another 5 per cent, so that all goods really pay 10 per cent *ad valorem*. The imports in 1875 and 1878 respectively were £25,350 and £105,000, and the exports £60,500 and £145,000.

The harbor of San Juan, first discovered by Columbus, was brought into further notice by Captain Diego Michena, who in 1599 sailed down the river from the Lake of Nicaragua. The site of the first Spanish settlement on the spot is not known, but in the 17th century there were two fortifications at the mouth of the river. In 1796 San Juan was made a port of entry by royal edicts, and new defences were erected in 1821. The town was seized by the rebels at the revolution, but they were expelled in January 1848 by the British, who, claiming the district in name of the "King of the Mosquito Indians," continued in possession till the treaty of 1860. In 1861 the town was bombarded by the United States forces for an alleged insult.

GRIBOYEDOFF, ALEXANDER SERGUEVICH (1795-1829), was born in 1795 at Moscow, where he studied at the university from 1810 to 1812. He then obtained a commission in a Russian regiment, but resigned it in 1816. Next year he entered the civil service, and in 1818 was appointed secretary of the Russian legation in Persia, whence he was transferred to Georgia. There he began the drama which has made him famous. He had commenced writing early, and had produced on the stage at St Petersburg in 1816 a comedy in verse, translated from the French, called *The Young Spouse*, which was followed by some other pieces of the same kind. But neither these, nor the essays and verses which he wrote for periodicals, would have been long remembered, but for the immense success gained by his comedy in verse, *Goré et una*, or "Misfortune from Intelligence." A satire upon Russian society, or, as a high official styled it, "A pasquade on Moscow," its

plot is slight, its merits consisting in its accurate representation of certain social and official types,—such as Famosoff, the lover of old abuses, the hater of reforms, his secretary, Molchann, servile flatterer upon all in office, the aristocratic young liberal and Anglomane, Repetoff, contrasted with whom is the hero of the piece, Tchatsky, the ironical satirist, just returned from the west of Europe, who exposes and ridicules the weaknesses of the east, his words echoing that outcry of the young generation of 1820 which reached its climax in the military insurrection of 1825, and was then sternly silenced by Nicholas. Griboyedoff spent the summer of 1823 in Russia, completed his play, and took it to St Petersburg. There it was rejected by the censorship. Many copies were made and privately circulated, but Griboyedoff never saw it published. The first edition was printed in 1833, four years after his death. Only once did he see it on the stage, when it was acted by the officers of the garrison at Erivan. Soured by disappointment he returned to Georgia, made himself useful by his linguistic knowledge to his relative Count Pavskievitch-Eivansky during a campaign against Persia, and was sent to St Petersburg with the treaty of 1828. Brilliantly received there, he thought of devoting himself to literature, and commenced a romantic drama, *A Georgian Night*. But he was suddenly sent to Persia as temporary plenipotentiary. Soon after his arrival at Tcheban a tumult arose, caused by the anger of the populace against some Georgian and Armenian captives,—Russian subjects,—who had taken refuge in the Russian embassy. It was stormed, Griboyedoff was killed (February 11, 1829), and his body was for three days so ill-treated by the mob that it was at last recognized only by an old seal on the hand, due to a wound received in a duel. It was taken to Tiflis, and buried in the monastery of St David. There a monument was erected to his memory by his widow, to whom he had been but a few months married. But his memory is best preserved by his play *Goré et una*, which has since his death been repeatedly published and performed, and will always be quoted as one of the masterpieces of Russian literature. An English translation by N. Benndaky appeared in London in 1857.

GRIEBACH, JOHANN JAKOB (1745-1812), one of the most distinguished of the band of scholars to whom the modern science of New Testament textual criticism owes its origin, was born at Butzbach, a small town of Hesse-Darmstadt, where his father was pastor, on the 4th of January 1745. He received his school education at Frankfurt-on-the-Main, and carried on his university studies at Tübingen and Leipzig, but especially at Halle, where he became one of Semler's most ardent disciples. At the close of his undergraduate career, he undertook a literary tour, which, apart from the advantages of stimulative contact with many of the most distinguished scholars of England, France, and Holland, as well as of his own country, was of great utility to him in providing him with materials for the great work of his subsequent life. On his return to Halle, he acted for some time as "privat-docent," but in 1775 was appointed to a professorial chair, in 1776 he was translated to Jena, where the remainder of his life was spent in ever-increasing usefulness and honour, and where he died 24th March 1812.

Griebach's critical edition of the New Testament first appeared at Halle, in three volumes, in 1774-76. The first volume contained the first three gospels, synoptically arranged, the second, the fourth gospel and the Acts of the Apostles. All the historical books were printed in one volume in 1777, the synoptical arrangement of the gospels having been abandoned as inconvenient. Of the second edition, very considerably enlarged and improved, the first volume appeared in 1798 and the second in 1806 (Halle and London). Of a third edition, edited by Schulz, only the first volume, containing the four gospels, has appeared (1837).

For the construction of his critical text Griebach took as his

beast the Elsevier edition, from which he departed only when valid reasons seemed to require it. In all such cases he placed the Elsevier reading on the inner margin along with such other readings as he thought worthy of special consideration (these last, however, being printed in smaller type). To all the readings on this subject he attached special marks indicating the precise degree of probability in his opinion attaching to each. In weighing these probabilities he proceeded upon a principle which in its leading features he had derived from Bengel and Semler, dividing all the MSS. into three great families or sections—the Alexandrian, the Western, and the Byzantine. The Alexandrian section had (as the name implied) originated in Alexandria, and thence had spread over Egypt and the East; it is characterized by a general tendency to run down all Hibernian, idiosyncratic, and innocuous. The Western on the other hand had retained the Hibernian unimpaired, but had incorporated many glosses, as well as interpolations from extrinsic passages, with the purpose of making the text more intelligible (Gimmitticum est Alexandrinum canon, interpolatum occidentalis). The Byzantine he regarded as much later, and as combining and exaggerating the peculiarities of both the others. A reading that was supported by only one section he considered as having only one witness in its favour, those readings on the other hand which were supported by all the three sections, or even by two of them, he especially if these two were the Alexandrian and the Western, he unhesitatingly accepts as genuine. Only when each of the three sections gives a different reading does he proceed to discuss the question on other grounds. See his *Synopsis critica ad supplementum & corrigendum editionis Nov Testamenti latinum collectum auctoribus N. T. codicum Græcorum descriptis & evan.*, 2 vols. (Hil., 1785, 1798), and his *Commentarius criticus in textum Græcum N. T.* which extends to the end of Mark, and discusses the more important variations as well as the minor ones. See also his *De varietate libri sacri* (Jen., 1798-1811). Among the other works of Griesbach (which are comparatively unimportant, however) may be mentioned his university thesis *De calicibus quatuor evangelistarum Originibus* (Hil., 1771) and a well-known treatise *De theologiae Christianæ in Xenocrate dei populo in Dogmatik*, Jen., 1779. His *Opuscula*, consisting chiefly of university "programms" and addresses, was edited by Griesch, in 2 vols. (Jen., 1824).

**GRIFFIN**, or **GUTHRIE** (*griffyn*, γρύψ), in the natural history of the ancients, the name of an imaginary rapacious creature of the eagle species, represented with four legs, wings, and a beak,—the fore part resembling an eagle, and the hinder a lion. In addition, some writers describe the tail as a serpent. This animal, whose writers supposed to watch over gold mines and hidden treasures, and to be the enemy of the house, was consecrated to the Sun, and the ancient painters represented the chariot of the Sun as drawn by griffins. According to Spanheim, those of Jupiter and Nemesis were similarly provided. The griffin of Scripture is probably that species of the eagle called in Latin *Ossifraga*, or osprey. The griffin is related to inhabit Aethiopia Scythia, where the lands abound in gold and precious stones, and when strangers approach to gather these the creatures leap upon them and tear them in pieces, thus showing their use in chastising human avarice and greed. The one-eyed Arimaspi were constant enemies with them, according to Herodotus (iii. 16). The celebrated St. John de Mandeville, in his *Travels*, described a griffin as eight times larger than a lion. The griffin is frequently seen on early seals and medals, and is still borne as a favourite device on seals and as a charge in heraldry. Papworth, in his laborious *Ordnary of British Arms*, ascribes this creature to several hundred family coats, as a single charge, and in connexion with other heraldic devices the griffin was constantly borne in English and especially in Welsh armoury. Berry in his *Encyclopædia Heraldica* declares that the combination of the eagle and lion signified strength and swiftness conjoined, if this be so, the reason of its almost universal adoption as an emblem by a military and chivalric people is not far to seek. The seals of Baldwin de Redvers, second earl of Devon (1139-1165), and his son William de Vernon, sixth earl, exhibit two most curious examples of the griffin, and being anterior to the consolidation of heraldic rules and a succession of heraldic devices from father to son, are yet proofs that particular devices or emblems were in use with powerful lords of the 12th and 13th centuries,

and retained by the members of the family as carefully and as conventionally as the true heraldic bearings of the following century were. Guillim blazons this monster as *rampant*, alleging that any very fierce animal may be so blazoned as well as the lion, but Sylvester, Morgan, Buick, Berry, and other writers upon heraldic subjects, use the term *sejant*, *i. e.*, *sejant*, pluming or arranging himself by lifting himself up and flapping his wings, as all birds do occasionally, instead of rampant. Palliot, one of the most interesting of all writers on arms, in his *Œuvre de l'Art des Sciences des Armes*, describes this creature as generally rampant, and points out its connexion with the Minotaur, Centaur, and Chimæra, "fronte Leo, postere Draco, medioque Chimæra." The same writer, in inference to the possibility of such productions of nature, describes a curious monster of similar character, called a *kympnos*, presented in 1584 by Frederick, duke of Mantua, to Francis the Great, the fore part being that of a horse, the hind part that of a stag, which could be saddled and bridled, but always threw his rider and trampled on him. Much might be written on the subject of hybrids and fabulous monsters such as these, but the various aspects of natural history and ætymology which they illustrate have never been yet worked out. The griffin was also an architectural ornament among the Greeks, and was copied from them, with other heraldic embellishments, by the Romans. A fine example of the Assyrian griffin occurs on the sculptured slabs from Kouyunjik, now in the British Museum. The *Dictionary of Early Drawings and Illuminations*, by W. de Gizey Buch and H. J. Jenne, gives a collection of references to the finest examples of these creatures among the manuscripts from the Saxon age to the close of the 15th century.

**GRIFFIN, GERALD** (1803-1840), an Irish novelist and dramatic writer, was descended from a family of good position, and was born at Limerick 12th December 1803. He was the youngest of nine sons. After attending for some time the school of an eccentric preceptor in Limerick, he, on the removal of the family in 1810 to Furry Lawn, a country place on the banks of the Shannon, was placed under the instruction of a private tutor, but in 1814 he returned to Limerick to attend a classical school. In his youth his devotion seems to have been pretty equally divided between books and out-door recreations with the rod and gun. His parents and a portion of the family emigrated in 1820 to America, but he and some others were left with an elder brother who was settled as a medical practitioner at Adare near Limerick, and under his direction Gerald made some progress in medical studies with the view of adopting that profession. It would appear, however, that very soon his intentions underwent a change, for, besides devoting a large part of his time to literary composition, he as early as his eighteenth year undertook for a short time the editorship of a newspaper in Limerick. Having completed a tragedy, *Agnes*, which was highly lauded by his friends, he finally in 1823 set out for London with the purpose of "revolutionizing the dramatic taste of the time by writing for the stage." Notwithstanding, however, the efforts and recommendations of the novelist Baun, who showed him great kindness, he found no manager willing to accept any of his plays, and for a considerable period he had such a hard and wearisome struggle with poverty and disappointment as permanently to injure his health. For some time he barely supported himself by reporting trials for the newspapers and by various kinds of hack work, but his prospects began to brighten a little when he obtained occupation as a parliamentary reporter, and gradually the *London Free Press*, the *News of Literature*, and other periodicals of standing began to look upon his contributions with favour. Some of his dramatic pieces were accepted also by one of the theatres, and the publication in 1827 of a series of



tales under the title of *Holland Tale* was so successful that he at once set about the preparation of a similar series, which appeared the same year in two volumes under the title of *Tales of the Atlantic Festival*, and were still more popular. In 1828 appeared the *Collegians*, afterwards so successfully adapted for the stage under the title of the *Colleen Bawn*. It is said to have been the favourite novel of O'Connell, and, besides exhibiting that masterly delineation of both the pathetic and the humorous features of Irish character already shown in his other works, it was written with a veve and a dramatic intensity and realism far surpassing all his previous or subsequent efforts. His principal other works are *The Invision*, *The Rivets*, *Tracy's Ambition*, and *The Tales of Five Senses*. He is also the author of a number of lyrics which are generally pervaded by a tender and sad cast of sentiment. When Griffin appeared to have achieved the literary success for which he had had such a hard struggle, he began to feel a growing distaste for his profession. He became doubtful as to the moral influence of his writings, and as to whether on that account he had not been "mispending his time," and ultimately he came to the conclusion that his true sphere of duty was to be found within the walls of a monastery,—a resolve doubtless partly attributable to the state of his health. He was admitted into a Dublin monastery in September 1838 under the name of Brother Joseph, and in the following summer he removed to Cork, where he died of typhus fever 12th June 1840. Previous to adopting the monastic habit he burned all his manuscripts, but *Omeyna*, a tragedy which he had composed in his twenty fifth year, accidentally escaped destruction, and in 1842 was put on the Dury Lane stage by Mr Maceady, and acted with great success. The collected works of Gerald Griffin were published in 1843 in eight volumes, with a memoir by his brother. See also *Dublin University Magazine* for February 1844.

GRILLPARZER, FRANZ (1791-1872), a distinguished German dramatist, was born in Vienna on the 15th January 1791. His father, a respectable advocate, destined him for his own profession, but on the conclusion of his legal studies, in 1811, Grillparzer became a tutor in a noble family, and two years afterwards accepted a subordinate post in the civil service. He rose slowly in his profession, but in 1833 was made director of the archives in the court chamber (Hofkammer). He retired in 1856, receiving the title of Hofrath, a title which was replaced in 1861 by the higher one of Reichsrath. In 1847 he was made a member of the Academy of Sciences. From early youth he displayed a strong literary impulse. He devoted especial attention to the Spanish drama, and nearly all his writings bear marks of the influence of Calderon. When he began to write, the German stage was dominated by the wild plays of Weisse, Mullner, and other authors of the so-called "fate-tragedies." His first play, *Die Ahnfrau* (The Ancestress), published in 1816, was denominated by their spirit. A lady, who has been slain by her husband for infidelity, is doomed to visit "the glimpses of the moon" till her house is extinguished, and this end is reached in the tragedy amid scenes of violence and horror. Some of Grillparzer's admirers draw a sharp distinction between this play and the works with which it is usually classed, and in doing so they follow his own example. But its general character is exactly similar to that of Weisse's dramas, it only differs from them in containing individual passages of much force and beauty. It at once became extremely popular, and Grillparzer was engaged to write a second, *Staphio* (1819) the most artistically finished of his productions. An Italian rendering of this play fell into the hands of Lord Byron, who, although the translation was very bad, expressed his conviction that the author's name would be held in reverence by posterity. It is full of the

aspiration of the Romantic school, but its form is classic, and its chastened style presents a striking contrast to the noise and fury of the *Ahnfrau*. The problem of the play has some resemblance to that of Goethe's *Torquato Tasso*, for in both we find the struggles of a poetic nature which is unable to reconcile itself to the conditions of the actual world. Grillparzer's conceptions are not so clearly defined as Goethe's, nor is his diction so varied and humorous, but the play has the stamp of genius, and ranks as one of the best of those works in which an attempt has been made to combine the passion and sentiment of modern life with the simplicity and grace of ancient masterpieces. Another and more ambitious work in the classic style was *Das goldene Vlies* (The Golden Fleece), a trilogy published in 1823. Of its three parts the greatest is *Medea*, which some critics consider his highest achievement. There is delicate art in the delineation of the mingled fascination and repulsion which Medea and Jason feel for each other, and when at last repulsion becomes the dominant force, the dramatist gives splendid utterance to the rage of the disappointed wife and mother. In *Des Meeres und der Liebe Wellen* (Waves of the Sea and of Love), which appeared in 1840, Grillparzer again formed his work on classic models, but in this instance his feeling is so distinctly modern that it does not find an adequate expression in so carefully measured verse. The subject is the story of Hero and Leander, and it has never been more happily treated than in some passages, which, however, are marked rather by lyrical than dramatic qualities.

In 1826 Grillparzer published *König Ottokar's Glück und Ende* (King Ottokar's Fortune and End). It appealed strongly to the patriotic sympathies of Vienna, dealing as it does with one of the proudest periods of Austrian history,—the time of Rudolf I., the founder of the house of Hapsburg. In a harsh criticism of Grillparzer, which appeared in the *Foreign Review* in 1829, and is now included in his *Miscellaneous*, Mr Carlyle said that Schiller's *Pycolonus* differed from *Ottokar* as "a living rose [differs] from a mass of dead rose leaves, or even of broken Italian gunflowers." This judgment has not been confirmed by later criticism. It cannot, indeed, be said that the materials of the play are welded into a compact whole, but the characters are vigorously conceived, and there is a fine dramatic contrast between the brilliant, restless, and unscrupulous Ottokar and the calm, upright, and ultimately triumphant Rudolf. Another historical play, *Ein treuer Diener seines Herrn* (A faithful Servant of his Lord), appeared in 1830, and brought down upon the author a storm of abuse from the liberals, who accused him of severity. On the other hand, the play displeased the court, and its representation was stopped. It hardly deserved to be made the subject of so much contention, for it is one of the least powerful of Grillparzer's later dramas. A more pleasing work was the dramatic study *Der Traum, ein Leben* (The Dream, a Life), which is to some extent a direct imitation of Calderon, and has something of his brilliancy and charm. In the same year in which this was issued (1840) Grillparzer published *Wese dem der tugt* (Woe to him who Lies), a comedy. It was so badly received that he wrote no more for the stage. Several dramatic fragments, however, composed at a later time, appeared among his posthumous writings.

Grillparzer was a lyrical as well as a dramatic poet. He used to say that all his lyrics were written for the purpose of obtaining relief from feelings by which he happened to be oppressed. The same thing was said of himself by Goethe, but Goethe's emotion in passing into verse was purified and generalized, Grillparzer's remained for the most part strictly personal, and rarely touches the deepest sympathies. He is more successful in epigram, in which

he often gives sharp expression to a keen, biting humour. He wrote also several prose tales, one of which, *Die Spiedmann* (The Mucron), is marked by delicate and graceful fancy. His autobiography, which was written in 1853 and brings down the narrative of his life to 1836, is a model of clear, simple, and elegant prose, and it throws much interesting light both on his personal character and on the tendencies of his time. Among his posthumous writings are many fragments of literary, philosophic, and political criticism, all of them indicating a strong and independent spirit, not invariably just, but distinct, penetrating, and suggestive. It is characteristic of him that he expresses extreme dislike of Hegel's philosophy on the ground that its terms are unintelligible. On the other hand, he gives evidence of careful and sympathetic study of Kant. Of modern literary critics Gervinus was most repugnant to him, mainly because of the tendency of this writer to attribute moral aims to authors who created solely for art's sake. He rather maliciously says that Gervinus had one advantage and one disadvantage in writing his history of German Literature,—the advantage of common sense, the disadvantage of knowing nothing of his subject.

Of a quiet contemplative nature, Grillparzer shunned general society. He never married. To a stranger he seemed cold and distant, but in conversation with any one he liked his real disposition revealed itself, his manner became animated, his eyes sparkling, and a sarcasm but not ill-natured smile would play upon his lips. It was one of his sayings that the art of writing poetry can neither be taught nor learned, but he also held that inspiration will not visit a poet who neglects to make himself master of his subject. Hence before writing a play he worked hard, striving to comprehend the spirit of the age he wished to represent. He was exceedingly fond of travel, and at different times visited all the leading European countries. After 1840, when his solitary comedy was rejected by the public, he almost passed from the memory of his contemporaries. Fortunately for him, Heinrich Laube, an admirer of his genius, settled in Vienna in 1849 as artistic director of the court theatre. By and by Laube introduced on the stage some of the forgotten works, and their success was immediate and profound. To his own surprise, Grillparzer became the most popular author of the day, he was ranked with Goethe and Schiller, and lauded as the national poet of Austria. On the eightieth anniversary of his birthday all classes from the court downwards united to do him honour, never, probably, did Vienna exact herself so much to prove her respect for a private citizen. He died on the 21st January 1872, and was buried with an amount of ceremony that surpassed even the pomp displayed at Klopstock's funeral. A monument of him has recently been erected at Baden, near Vienna.

After his death, an admirable edition of his works, in ten volumes, was issued by Heinrich Laube and J. Widen. There are several English renderings of *Sappho*, and *Medea* has also been translated. For biographical and critical notices see Kuhn, *Zwey Dichter Oesterreichs* (Leith, 1872); Beckl-Poll, *Grillparzer und seine Werke* (Stuttgart, 1879); and Goldschmidt, "Fians Grillparzer," and "Fians Grillparzers Nachlass," in *Unsere Zeit* for 1872 and 1878. (J. ST.)

GRIMALDI, GIOVANNI FRANCESCO (1606–1680), an architect and painter, named Il Bolognese from the place of his birth, was a relative of the Caracci family, under whom it is presumed he studied first, and afterwards under Albano. He went to Rome, and was appointed architect to Pope Paul V, and patronized by succeeding popes also. Towards 1648 he was invited to France by Cardinal Mazarin, and for about two years was employed in buildings for that minister and for Louis XIV, and in fresco-painting in the Louvre. His colour was strong, somewhat excessive in the use of green, his touch light. He painted at once

history, portraits, and landscape,—the last with predilection, especially in his advanced years,—and executed engravings and etchings from his own landscapes, and from those of Titian and the Caracci. Returning to Rome, he was made president of the Academy of St Luke, and in that city he died on 28th November 1680, in high repute not only for his artistic skill but for his upright and chivalrous deeds as well. His son Alessandro assisted him both in painting and in engraving. Paintings by Grimaldi are preserved in the Quirinal and Vatican palaces, and in the church of S Martino a' Monti, there is also a series of his landscapes in the Colonna Gallery.

GRIMM, FRÄNZLICH MELCHIOR, BARON VON (1723–1807), the author of the celebrated *Contes pour l'enfance*, was, though a naturalized Frenchman, both of German descent and a native of Germany, having been born of poor parents at Ratisbon, 26th December 1723. He studied at the university of Leipzig, where he had as professor the celebrated Ernesti, to whom he was doubtless in no small degree indebted for his critical appreciation of classical literature. On completing his studies he made his literary debut by a tragedy which was received with ridicule by the audience and by the critics, including Lessing, and which is now forgotten even in Germany. Is all probability it was this disappointment which led him to think of seeking fortune in Paris, whither he accompanied the count of Schonberg as tutor to his sons, and where afterwards, at a small salary, he was for some time reader to the young hereditary prince of Saxe-Gotha. In 1749 he made the acquaintance of J. J. Rousseau, which, through a mutual sympathy in regard to musical matters, soon ripened into intimate friendship. Through Rousseau he was introduced to the Encyclopedists, and about the same time he became secretary to Count Friesen, nephew of Marshal Saxe, which gained him admission to the most brilliant society of Paris. Endowed with more than average intellectual abilities, thoroughly versed in all current topics of interest in literature, science, and art, gifted with remarkable insight into character, possessing engaging manners and great social tact, and actuated in all his conduct by a keen regard to his own interest, he won almost immediately general appreciation and respect. He rapidly obtained a thorough knowledge of the French language, and acquired so perfectly the tone and sentiments of the society in which he moved that all marks of his foreign origin and training seemed completely effaced. A witty pamphlet entitled *Le petit Prophète de Bochemscheloch*, written by him on the respective merits of the Italian and French operas, a subject which at that time greatly exercised the society of Paris and on which he sided with the Italian section, at once firmly established his literary reputation. It is possible that the origin of the pamphlet is partly to be accounted for by his admiration of Mlle Les, the *prima donna* of the Italian company. This admiration quickly developed into a passion so vehement that he was seized with a kind of cataplexy which continued for several days, but from which he suddenly awoke completely recovered both in body and mind. In 1753 Grimm was engaged by the Abbé Raynal to aid him in conducting his literary correspondence with German sovereigns, and this opened up to him that sphere for his ambition which perhaps was most in accordance with his peculiar tastes, and in which his abilities best fitted him to excel. Although from the beginning he had the principal share in the work, it was probably conducted until 1759 in the name of the Abbé Raynal. With the aid of Grimm during his temporary absence from Paris he carried it on until 1790, and it latterly extended to six sovereigns, including the empress of Russia, the king of Sweden, and the king of Poland. It was probably in 1754 that Grimm was introduced by Rousseau to Madame

d'Épinay, his relations with whom led to an irreconcilable rupture between him and Rousseau. The exact amount of Grimm's blameworthiness it is impossible to determine, and the whole matter would be of little consequence but for the fact that Rousseau allowed his resentment to gain such a complete possession of his mind as to induce him to give in his *Confessions* a wholly mendacious portrait of Grimm's character, by which his reputation was for a considerable time injuriously affected. After the death of Count Friesen Grimm obtained the patronage of the duke of Orleans, through whom he was appointed secretary to Marshal d'Étades during the campaign of Westphalia in 1756-57. Subsequently he was named minister of Saxo-Gotha at the court of France, but he was deprived of that office on account of having criticized rather caustically certain French ministers in a despatch that was intercepted by Louis XV. His introduction to Catherine II of Russia took place in 1773, when he accompanied the suite of the landgrave of Hesse-Darmstadt to St. Petersburg on occasion of the marriage of a daughter of that prince to the only son of Catherine. After the Revolution Grimm retired to Gotha, and in 1792 he emigrated to Russia, where he enjoyed high favour at the court of Catherine, and had assigned him the nominal and agreeable duty of entertaining her for so many hours a day by his conversation. In this state of things came, however, to an end in 1795, when, notwithstanding his supplications to be retained at court if only as one of her majesty's dogs, he was appointed minister of Russia at Hamburg. He died at Gotha, 19th December 1807.

The correspondence of Grimm forms perhaps the most valuable of existing records of any important literary period. It embraces nearly the whole period from 1750 to 1790, and although parts of it during his absence from France were written by Diderot, Madame d'Épinay, and others, the work as a whole may be regarded as substantially his. At first he contented himself with enumerating in the simplest manner the chief current views in literature and art, and indicating only very slightly the contents of the principal new books, but gradually his criticisms became more extended and trenchant, and he touched on nearly every subject—political, literary, artistic, social, and religious—which interested the Parisian society of the time—his narrative, which moves lightly and easily from one theme to another, being frequently seasoned by piquant anecdotes or witty reflections. Not only, however, did he aim to give a faithful and just account of the subjects on which he wrote, his purpose extended considerably beyond that of affording a few hours' amusement to his royal patrons, and his descriptions and criticisms were fitted to satisfy more than a superficial curiosity. His notices of contemporaries are somewhat severe, and he exhibits in all the nakedness of truth the follies and selfishness of the society in which he moved, but he appears to have been unbiased in his literary judgments, and such is their justness and penetration that time has only served to confirm them. In style and manner of expression he is thoroughly French. He is generally somewhat cold in his appreciation, but his literary taste is delicate and subtle, and it is the opinion of Sainte-Beuve that the quality of his thought in his best moments will compare not unfavourably even with that of Voltaire. His religious and philosophical opinions were entirely negative, and his references to Christianity generally assume the form of either a sneer or a whim.

Grimm's *Correspondance littéraire, critique et politique* de 1753 à 1770, was published at Paris in 1813 in 5 vols. 8vo, *deuxième partie* de 1771 à 1782, in 1812 in 5 vols. 8vo, and *troisième partie*, pendant une partie des années 1775 à 1778, et pendant les années 1782 à 1790 inclusivement, in 1813 in 5 vols. 8vo. A supplementary volume appeared in 1814, the whole correspondence was collected and published by M. Jules Tschischan in a

*Nouvelle édition, revue et mise dans un meilleur ordre, avec des notes et des éclaircissements, et qui se trouvent établis pour la première fois les phrases supprimées par la censure impériale*, Paris, 1829-1831, 15 vols. 8vo, and the *Correspondance littéraire, critique et politique de lettres, sciences, arts, et jugements d'écrivains par la censure impériale* in 1812 et 1813 was published in 1829. Grimm's *Almanach historique* ou *l'origine et les suites de mon état* furent publiés l'impression de l'histoire. Il y a eu dix-huit de ces ouvrages imprimés, et Catherine's correspondence with Grimm to September 1774, have been published in the *Collection of the Russian Imperial Historical Society*. She tells him very familiarly, and calls him Tschischan, George Dandin, &c. He signs himself 'F. Grimm'. See also *Merci d'Épinay's* *Almanach*, Rousseau's *Confessions*, the notice by Giguères in the introduction to the second part of the *Correspondance*, and that by Tschischan in the introduction to the new edition, Sainte-Beuve, *Général de Lamoignon*, vol. viii.

GRIMM, JACOB LUDWIG CARL (1755-1836), was born on the 4th of January 1755 at Hanau, in Hesse-Cassel. His father, who was a lawyer, died while he was still a child, and the mother was left with very small means, but her sister, who was lady of the chamber to the landgrave of Hesse, helped to support and educate her numerous family. Jacob with his younger brother Wilhelm (born on the 24th of February 1786) was sent in 1798 to the public school at Cassel. In 1802 he proceeded to the university of Marburg, where he applied himself to the study of law, a profession for which he had always been determined by his father, and which seemed to offer the best prospect of speedy independence. His brother joined him at Marburg a year later, having just recovered from a long and severe illness, and likewise began the study of law. Up to this time Grimm had been actuated only by a general thirst for knowledge and the instinct of intellectual activity, and his energies had not found any aim beyond the practical one of making himself a position in life. The first definite impulse came from the lectures of Savigny, the celebrated investigator of Roman law, who, as Grimm himself says (in the preface to the *Deutsche Grammatik*), first taught him to realize what it meant to study any science, whether that of law or any other. Savigny's lectures at this same time awakened in him that love for historical and antiquarian investigation which forms the basis of all his work. Then followed personal acquaintance, and it was in Savigny's well provided library that Grimm first turned over the leaves of Bodmer's edition of the Old German minnesingers, and other early texts, and felt an eager desire to penetrate further into the obscurities and half-revealed mysteries of that language. In the beginning of 1805 he received an invitation from Savigny, who had removed to Paris to continue his researches among the libraries there, to join him and help him in his literary work. This offer was joyfully accepted by young Grimm, who passed a very happy time in Paris, enjoying the society of Savigny, and strengthening his taste for the literature of the Middle Ages by his studies in the Paris libraries. Towards the close of the year he returned to Cassel, where his mother and Wilhelm had settled, the latter having finished his studies. The next year he obtained a situation in the war office with the very small salary of 100 thalers. One of his grievances was, as he himself tells us in his autobiography, that he had to exchange his stylish Paris suit for a stiff uniform and pigtail. But he had full leisure for the prosecution of his studies. In 1808, soon after the death of his mother, he was appointed superintendent of the private library of Jérôme Buonaparte, king of Westphalia, into which Hesse-Cassel had been incorporated by Napoleon. He was treated with marked favour by the king, who appointed him an auditor to the state council, who he still retained his other post. His salary was increased in a short interval from 2000 to 4000 francs, which removed all anxiety as to the means of subsistence, and his official duties were hardly more than nominal. After the expulsion of Jérôme and the reinstatement of an elector, Grimm was appointed in 1813 secretary of legation,

to accompany the Hessian minister to the headquarters of the allied army. In 1811 he was sent to Paris to demand restitution of the books carried off by the French, and in 1814-15 he attended the congress of Vienna as secretary of legation. On his return he was again sent to Paris on the same errand as before. Meanwhile Wilhelm had received an appointment in the Cassel library, and in 1816 Jacob was made second librarian under Volkel. On the death of Volkel in 1828 the brothers expected to be advanced to the first and second librarianships respectively, and were much disatisfied when the first place was given to Rommel, keeper of the archives. So they removed next year to Göttingen, where Jacob received the appointment of professor and librarian, Wilhelm that of under-librarian. Jacob Grimm lectured on legal antiquities, historical grammar, literary history, and diplomatics, explained Old German poems, and commented on the *Germania* of Tacitus. At this period he is described as small and lively in figure, with a harsh voice, speaking a broad Hessian dialect. His powerful memory enabled him to dispense with the "heft" which most German professors rely on, and he spoke extempore, referring only occasionally to a few names and dates written on a slip of paper. He himself regretted that he had begun the work of teaching so late in life, and as a lecturer he was not successful, he had no idea of digesting his facts and suiting them to the comprehension of his hearers, and even the brilliant and eloquent passages which abound in his writings lost much of their effect when jotted out in the midst of a long array of dry facts. In 1837, being one of the seven professors who signed a protest against the king of Hanover's abrogation of the constitution which had been established some years before, he was dismissed from his professorship and banished from the kingdom of Hanover. He returned to his native Cassel together with his brother, who had also signed the protest, and remained there till, in 1840, they accepted an invitation from the king of Prussia to remove to Berlin, where they both received professorships, and were elected members of the Academy of Sciences. Not being under any obligation to lecture, Jacob very seldom did so, but together with his brother worked at the great dictionary, the plan of which had already been partly developed. During their stay at Cassel Jacob regularly attended the meetings of the academy, where he read papers on the most varied subjects. The best known of these are those on Lachmann, Schiller, and his brother Wilhelm (who died in 1859), on old age, and on the origin of language. He also described his impressions of Italian and Scandinavian travel, interspersing his more general observations with linguistic details, as in the case in all his works. He died in 1863, working up to the last.

Grimm's physical constitution was an excellent one. He possessed in the highest degree that Teutonic energy and endurance which are as essential to the sedentary student as to the pioneer in other regions of human activity. He was never ill, and worked on all day, without haste and without pause. He himself (in his biography) speaks of his "un industry." He was not at all impatient of interruption, but seemed rather to be refreshed by it, returning to his work without effort. He wrote for press with great rapidity, and hardly ever made corrections. He never revised what he had written, remarking with a certain wonder of his brother, "Wilhelm reads his manuscripts over again before sending them to press." He often started on a journey which he had determined upon only the day before. His temperament was uniformly cheerful, and he was easily amused. He took a keen interest in politics, and when the newspapers arrived, he would often read them through at once, breaking off his work for the purpose. Outside his own special work he had a marked taste for botany, and always liked

to have flowers about him while working, a taste which was shared by his brother. The spirit which animated his work is best described by himself at the end of his autobiography: "Nearly all my labours have been devoted, either directly or indirectly, to the investigation of our earlier language, poetry, and laws. These studies may have appealed to many, and may still appeal, useless, to me they have always seemed a noble and earnest task, definitely and inseparably connected with our common fatherland, and calculated to foster the love of it. My principle has always been in these investigations to under-value nothing, but to utilize the small for the illustration of the great, the popular tradition for the elucidation of the written monuments." We may, in fact, sum up Grimm's tendencies by saying that he was inspired by an intense enthusiasm for research, guided into definite channels by a not less enthusiastic love and veneration for everything German,—this word including, in its widest sense, all the great brotherhood of the Teutonic nations,—and limited by his decided predilection for history and antiquities. It will be observed that, whenever he refers to living dialects or traditions, it is in order to throw light on the past, not the reverse. Even in his great German dictionary the historical tendency strongly predominates.

The purely scientific side of Grimm's character developed itself but slowly, and it was long before he applied to the study of etymology and induction the system and method Savigny had taught him to develop in legal history. He seems to have felt the want of definite principles of etymology without being able to discover them, and indeed even in the first edition of his grammar (1819) he seems to be often groping in the dark, and to have but a vague idea of the necessity of rigorous principles of letter-comparison. As early as 1815 we find A. W. Schlegel reviewing the *Alteutsche Walder* (a periodical published by the two brothers) very severely, condemning the lawless etymological combinations it contained, and insisting on the necessity of strict philological method and a fundamental investigation of the laws of language, especially in the correspondence of sounds. This criticism is said to have had a considerable influence on the direction of Grimm's studies.

The first work he published, *Ueber den altdutschen Metersang* (1811), was of a purely literary character. But even here we see the difference between the more passive contemplation of the æsthetic literary critic and the activity of the investigator who is always seeking definite results and definite laws. In this essay Grimm showed that *Minnesang* and *Metersang* were really one form of poetry, of which they merely represented different stages of development, and also announced his important discovery of the invariable division of the *Lied* into three strophic parts.

His text editions were mostly prepared in common with his brother. In 1812 they published the two ancient fragments of the *Hildebrandslied* and the *Wessenebrunner Giet*, Jacob having discovered what till then had never been suspected—the alteration in these poems. However, Jacob had but little taste for text-editing, and, as he himself confessed, the evolving of a critical text gave him little pleasure. He therefore left this department to others, especially Lachmann, who soon turned his brilliant critical genius, trained in the severe school of classical philology, to Old and Middle High German poetry and metre. Both brothers were attracted from the beginning by all national poetry, whether in the form of epics, ballads, or popular tales. They published in 1816-18 an analysis and critical sifting of the oldest epic traditions of the Germanic races under the title of *Deutsche Sagen*. At the same time they collected all the popular tales they could find, partly from

the mouths of the people, partly from manuscripts and books, and published in 1812-15 the first edition of these *Kinder und Haus-Märchen* which have earned the name of the brothers Grimm into every household of the civilized world, and founded the science of what is now called folk lore. The closely allied subject of the national beast epic of the Middle Ages also had a great charm for Jacob Grimm, and he published an edition of the *Reinhart Fuchs* in 1834. His first contribution to mythology was the first volume of an edition of the Eddaic songs, undertaken conjointly with his brother, published in 1816, which, however, was not followed by any more. The first edition of his *Deutsche Mythologie* appeared in 1835. This great work covers the whole range of the subject, tracing the mythology and superstitions of the old Teutons back to the very dawn of direct evidence, and following their decay and loss down to the popular traditions, tales, and expressions in which they still linger.

Although by the introduction of the Code Napoleon into Westphalia Grimm's legal studies were made practically barren, he never lost his interest in the scientific study of law and national institutions, as the truest exponents of the life and character of a people. By the publication (in 1828) of his *Rechtsalterthümer* he laid the foundations of that historical study of the old Teutonic laws and constitutions which has been continued with brilliant success by Meuser and others. In this work Grimm showed the importance of a linguistic study of the old laws, and the light that can be thrown on many a dark passage in them by a comparison of the corresponding words and expressions in the other old cognate dialects. He also knew how—and this is perhaps the most original and valuable part of his work—to trace the spirit of the laws in countless allusions and sayings which occur in the old poems and songs, or even survive in modern colloquialisms.

Of all his more general works the boldest and most far-reaching is unquestionably his *Geschichte der deutschen Sprache*, where at the same time the linguistic element is most distinctly brought forward. The subject of the work is, indeed, nothing less than the history which lies hidden in the words of the German language—the oldest national history of the Teutonic tribes determined by means of language. For this purpose he laboriously collects the scattered words and allusions to be found in classical writers, and endeavors to determine the relations in which the German language stood to those of the *Getæ*, *Thiaccians*, *Scythians*, and many other nations whose languages are known to us only by doubtfully identified, often extremely corrupted remains preserved by Greek and Latin authors. It need hardly be said that Grimm's results have been greatly modified by the wider range of comparison and improved methods of investigation which now characterize linguistic science, while, on the other hand, many of the questions raised by him will probably for ever remain obscure, but his book will always be one of the most fruitful and suggestive that have been ever written.

We now come to his purely philological work, of which his famous *Deutsche Grammatik* was the outcome. We have already seen how slowly and with what difficulty he attained a sound method of etymological and grammatical investigation. Nevertheless the time was a favourable one for his work. The persevering labours of past generations—from the humanists onwards—had collected an enormous mass of materials in the shape of text editions, dictionaries, and grammars, although most of it was unsorted and often unsatisfactory. Something had even been done in the way of comparison and the determination of general laws, and the conception of a comparative Teutonic grammar had been clearly grasped by the illustrious Englishman Hooke, at the beginning of the last century, and partly carried out by

him in his *Thesaurus*. Ten Kate in Holland had afterwards made valuable contributions to the history and comparison of the Teutonic languages. Even Grimm himself did not at first intend to include all the languages in his grammar, but he soon found that Old High German postulated Gothic, that the latest stages of German could not be understood without the help of the Low German dialects, including English, and that the rich literature of Scandinavia could as little be ignored. The first edition of the first part of the *Grammatik*, which appeared in 1819, and is now extremely rare, treated of the inflexions of all these languages, together with a general introduction, in which he vindicated the importance of a historical study of the German language against the *a priori*, quasi philosophical methods then in vogue.

In 1832 this volume appeared in a second edition—really a totally new work, for, as Grimm himself says in the preface, it cost him little reflexion to mow down the first crop to the ground. The wide distance between the two stages of Grimm's development in these two editions is significantly shown by the fact that while the first edition gives only the inflexions, in the second volume phonology takes up no less than 600 pages, more than half of the whole volume. Grimm had, at last, awakened to the full conviction that all sound phonology must be based on vigorous adhesion to the laws of sound-change, and he never afterwards swerved from this principle, which gave to all his investigations, even in their boldest flights, that unbound consistency, and that force of conviction which distinguishes science from dilettantism, up to Grimm's time phonology was—as it still is in England—nothing but a more or less laborious and conscientious dilettantism, with occasional flashes of scientific inspiration, he made it into a science. His advance must be attributed mainly to the influence of his contemporary Rask. Rask was born two years later than Grimm, but his remarkable precocity gave him somewhat the start. Even in his first edition Grimm's Icelandic paradigms are based entirely on Rask's grammar, and in his second edition he has relied almost entirely on Rask for Old English. His debt to Rask can only be estimated at its true value by comparing his treatment of Old English in the two editions, the difference is very great. Thus in the first edition he declines *dear*, *degas*, plural *degas*, not having observed the law of vowel-change pointed out by Rask. There can be little doubt that the appearance of Rask's Old English grammar was a main inducement for him to recast his work from the beginning. To Rask also belongs the merit of having first distinctly formulated the laws of sound correspondence in the different languages, especially in the vowels, those more fleeting elements of speech which had hitherto been ignored by etymologists.

This leads us to a question which has been the subject of much controversy,—What discovered Grimm's law? The law of the correspondence of consonants in the older Indo-Germanic, Low, and High German languages respectively was first fully stated by Grimm in the second edition of the first part of his grammar. The correspondence of single consonants had been more or less clearly recognised by several of his predecessors, but the one who came nearest to the discovery of the complete law was the Swede Ihre, who established a considerable number of "Itærum permutationes," such as *b* for *f*, with the examples *bawer-fenig*, *befen*—*flor*. Rask, in his essay on the origin of the Icelandic language, gives the same comparisons, with a few additions and corrections, and even the very same examples in most cases. As Grimm in the preface to his first edition expressly mentions this essay of Rask, there is every probability that it gave the first impulse to his own investigations. But there is a wide difference between the isolated

permutations of his predecessors and the comprehensive generalizations under which he himself ranged them. The extension of the law to High German is also entirely his own. The only fact that can be adduced in support of this assertion that Grimm wished to deprive Rask of his claims to priority is that he does not expressly mention Rask's results in his second edition. But this is part of the plan of Rask, made manifestly necessary by the enormous amount of work he had to do, and his constant references to the works of others, leaving his readers to assign to each investigator his due. In his first edition he expressly calls attention to Rask's essay, and praises it most ungrudgingly. Rask himself refers as little to Thre, merely alluding in a general way to Thre's permutations, although his own debt to Thre is infinitely greater than that of Grimm to Rask or anyone else. It is true that a certain bitterness of feeling afterwards sprang up between Grimm and Rask, but this was due to the fact that Rask, who was a great linguist and a brilliant scholar, refused to acknowledge the value of Grimm's views, when they involved modification of his own. The importance of Grimm's generalization in the history of philology cannot be overestimated, and even the mystic completeness and symmetry of its formulation, although it has proved a hindrance to the correct explanation of the causes of the changes, was well calculated to strike the popular mind, and give it a vivid idea of the paramount importance of law, and the necessity of discussing the changes in terms of laws. The English etymologist bows down to the authority of Grimm's law, though it must be confessed he honours it almost as much in the breach as in the observance.

The grammar was continued in three volumes, treating principally of derivation, composition, and syntax, which last was left unfinished. Grimm then began a third edition, of which only one part, comprising the vowels, appeared in 1840, his time being afterwards taken up mainly by the history of the German language, in which he was only able to finish the vowels and the analogies of inflexion, so that it stands quite apart from the analogies of derivation, so comprehensiveness, method, and fulness of detail. Every law, every letter, every syllable of inflexion in the different languages, is illustrated by an almost exhaustive mass of material, drawn from every period and every dialect. It has served as a model for all succeeding investigators. Diez's grammar of the Romance languages is founded on Grimm's, and the whole of which has also received a profound influence on the wide study of the Indo-Germanic languages in general.

In the great German dictionary Gimm undertook a task for which he was hardly suited. His exclusively historical tendencies made it impossible for him to do justice to the individuality of a living language, and the disconnected statements of the different language departments of the dictionary could not be totally made into a scientific chaos. It was also undertaken on so large a scale as to make it impossible for him and his brother to complete it themselves. We may describe the dictionary, as far as it was worked out by Gimm himself, as a collection of disconnected anti-antiquarian essays, if it need hardly be remarked, high prices.

In summing up Gimm's scientific character we are struck by its combination of breadth and unity. He was as far removed from the narrowness of the specialist who has no other ideas, no sympathies beyond some one author, period, or narrow corner of science, as from the shallow dabbler who feverishly attempts to master the details of half a dozen unrelated pursuits, which have no central point of interest, which cannot be brought to a focus, and which are therefore in the end the same vain concentration, no Meszafont-like parrot display of useless polyglottism. The very foundations of his nature were harmonious, his patriotism and

love of historic investigation received then full satisfaction in the study of the language, traditions, mythology, laws, and literature of his own countrymen and their nearest kindred. But from this centre his investigations were pursued in every direction as far as his unquenching instinct of healthy limitation would allow. He was equally fond of the study of the literature, laws, and traditions of the Latin and Greek nations, and of the history of the Jewish people, and of the moral nature. He made cheerfully the heavy sacrifices that science demands from its disciples, without feeling any of that envy and bitterness which often torment weak natures, and although he lived apart from his fellow men, he was full of human sympathies, and no man has ever exercised a profounder influence on the destinies of mankind than he has—an influence which is still only in its infancy. He has been the very ideal of the noblest type of German character.

The following is a complete list of his separately published works, those which he published in common with his brother being marked with a star. For a list of his essays in periodicals, &c., see vol. v of his *Kleine u. Schriften*, from which the present list is taken. His life is best studied in his own "Selbstbiographie," in vol. 1 of the *Kleinen Schriften*. There is also a brief memoir by Dr Godeke in *Göttinger Professoren*, Götta (Pathes), 1872.

• *Über den elektrischen Widerstand*, Göttingen 1841. *Annalen und Poggendorfs Annalen* 1841, 1842, 1843, 1844, 1845, 1846, 1847, 1848, 1849, 1850, 1851, 1852, 1853, 1854, 1855, 1856, 1857, 1858, 1859, 1860, 1861, 1862, 1863, 1864, 1865, 1866, 1867, 1868, 1869, 1870, 1871, 1872, 1873, 1874, 1875, 1876, 1877, 1878, 1879, 1880, 1881, 1882, 1883, 1884, 1885, 1886, 1887, 1888, 1889, 1890, 1891, 1892, 1893, 1894, 1895, 1896, 1897, 1898, 1899, 1900, 1901, 1902, 1903, 1904, 1905, 1906, 1907, 1908, 1909, 1910, 1911, 1912, 1913, 1914, 1915, 1916, 1917, 1918, 1919, 1920, 1921, 1922, 1923, 1924, 1925, 1926, 1927, 1928, 1929, 1930, 1931, 1932, 1933, 1934, 1935, 1936, 1937, 1938, 1939, 1940, 1941, 1942, 1943, 1944, 1945, 1946, 1947, 1948, 1949, 1950, 1951, 1952, 1953, 1954, 1955, 1956, 1957, 1958, 1959, 1960, 1961, 1962, 1963, 1964, 1965, 1966, 1967, 1968, 1969, 1970, 1971, 1972, 1973, 1974, 1975, 1976, 1977, 1978, 1979, 1980, 1981, 1982, 1983, 1984, 1985, 1986, 1987, 1988, 1989, 1990, 1991, 1992, 1993, 1994, 1995, 1996, 1997, 1998, 1999, 2000, 2001, 2002, 2003, 2004, 2005, 2006, 2007, 2008, 2009, 2010, 2011, 2012, 2013, 2014, 2015, 2016, 2017, 2018, 2019, 2020, 2021, 2022, 2023, 2024, 2025, 2026, 2027, 2028, 2029, 2030, 2031, 2032, 2033, 2034, 2035, 2036, 2037, 2038, 2039, 2040, 2041, 2042, 2043, 2044, 2045, 2046, 2047, 2048, 2049, 2050, 2051, 2052, 2053, 2054, 2055, 2056, 2057, 2058, 2059, 2060, 2061, 2062, 2063, 2064, 2065, 2066, 2067, 2068, 2069, 2070, 2071, 2072, 2073, 2074, 2075, 2076, 2077, 2078, 2079, 2080, 2081, 2082, 2083, 2084, 2085, 2086, 2087, 2088, 2089, 2090, 2091, 2092, 2093, 2094, 2095, 2096, 2097, 2098, 2099, 2100, 2101, 2102, 2103, 2104, 2105, 2106, 2107, 2108, 2109, 2110, 2111, 2112, 2113, 2114, 2115, 2116, 2117, 2118, 2119, 2120, 2121, 2122, 2123, 2124, 2125, 2126, 2127, 2128, 2129, 2130, 2131, 2132, 2133, 2134, 2135, 2136, 2137, 2138, 2139, 2140, 2141, 2142, 2143, 2144, 2145, 2146, 2147, 2148, 2149, 2150, 2151, 2152, 2153, 2154, 2155, 2156, 2157, 2158, 2159, 2160, 2161, 2162, 2163, 2164, 2165, 2166, 2167, 2168, 2169, 2170, 2171, 2172, 2173, 2174, 2175, 2176, 2177, 2178, 2179, 2180, 2181, 2182, 2183, 2184, 2185, 2186, 2187, 2188, 2189, 2190, 2191, 2192, 2193, 2194, 2195, 2196, 2197, 2198, 2199, 2200, 2201, 2202, 2203, 2204, 2205, 2206, 2207, 2208, 2209, 2210, 2211, 2212, 2213, 2214, 2215, 2216, 2217, 2218, 2219, 2220, 2221, 2222, 2223, 2224, 2225, 2226, 2227, 2228, 2229, 2230, 2231, 2232, 2233, 2234, 2235, 2236, 2237, 2238, 2239, 2240, 2241, 2242, 2243, 2244, 2245, 2246, 2247, 2248, 2249, 2250, 2251, 2252, 2253, 2254, 2255, 2256, 2257, 2258, 2259, 2260, 2261, 2262, 2263, 2264, 2265, 2266, 2267, 2268, 2269, 2270, 2271, 2272, 2273, 2274, 2275, 2276, 2277, 2278, 2279, 2280, 2281, 2282, 2283, 2284, 2285, 2286, 2287, 2288, 2289, 2290, 2291, 2292, 2293, 2294, 2295, 2296, 2297, 2298, 2299, 2300, 2301, 2302, 2303, 2304, 2305, 2306, 2307, 2308, 2309, 2310, 2311, 2312, 2313, 2314, 2315, 2316, 2317, 2318, 2319, 2320, 2321, 2322, 2323, 2324, 2325, 2326, 2327, 2328, 2329, 2330, 2331, 2332, 2333, 2334, 2335, 2336, 2337, 2338, 2339, 2340, 2341, 2342, 2343, 2344, 2345, 2346, 2347, 2348, 2349, 2350, 2351, 2352, 2353, 2354, 2355, 2356, 2357, 2358, 2359, 2360, 2361, 2362, 2363, 2364, 2365, 2366, 2367, 2368, 2369, 2370, 2371, 2372, 2373, 2374, 2375, 2376, 2377, 2378, 2379, 2380, 2381, 2382, 2383, 2384, 2385, 2386, 2387, 2388, 2389, 2390, 2391, 2392, 2393, 2394, 2395, 2396, 2397, 2398, 2399, 2400, 2401, 2402, 2403, 2404, 2405, 2406, 2407, 2408, 2409, 2410, 2411, 2412, 2413, 2414, 2415, 2416, 2417, 2418, 2419, 2420, 2421, 2422, 2423, 2424, 2425, 2426, 2427, 2428, 2429, 2430, 2431, 2432, 2433, 2434, 2435, 2436, 2437, 2438, 2439, 2440, 2441, 2442, 2443, 2444, 2445, 2446, 2447, 2448, 2449, 2450, 2451, 2452, 2453, 2454, 2455, 2456, 2457, 2458, 2459, 2460, 2461, 2462, 2463, 2464, 2465, 2466, 2467, 2468, 2469, 2470, 2471, 2472, 2473, 2474, 2475, 2476, 2477, 2478, 2479, 2480, 2481, 2482, 2483, 2484, 2485, 2486, 2487, 2488, 2489, 2490, 2491, 2492, 2493, 2494, 2495, 2496, 2497, 2498, 2499, 2500, 2501, 2502, 2503, 2504, 2505, 2506, 2507, 2508, 2509, 2510, 2511, 2512, 2513, 2514, 2515, 251

GRIMM, WILHELM CARL (1786-1869). The chief events in the life of Wilhelm Grimm have been narrated in last article. The two brothers were indeed so intimately associated both in their lives and in their works that a separate biography of the younger is almost superfluous. As Jacob himself said in his celebrated address to the Berlin Academy on the death of his brother, the whole of their lives were passed together. In their school-days they had one bed and one table in common, as students they had two beds and two tables in the same room, and they always lived in the same roof, and in the same house, and in the same common life. And Wilhelm's marriage in and was disturb their harmony. As Cleasby said ("Life of Cleasby," prefixed to his *Kelands Dattunng*, p. lxxx), "they both live in the same house, and in such harmony and community that one might almost imagine the children were common property." Wilhelm's character was a complete contrast to that of his brother. As a boy he was strong and healthy, but as he grew up he was attacked by a long and severe illness, which left him weak all his life. His was a less comprehensive and energetic mind than that of his brother, and he had less of the spirit of investigation in him, preferring to confine himself to some limited and definitely bounded field of work, he utilized everything that bore directly on his own studies, and ignored the rest. These studies, almost all of them of literary nature, and the nature of his work, including that of his brother, were in common with his brother, are concerned either with literary problems, or popular traditions, or else are text-editions. If a characteristic of his more æsthetic nature had he took great delight in music, for which his brother had but a moderate liking, and had a remarkable gift of story-telling. Cleasby, in the account of his visit to the brothers, quoted above, tells that

"Wilhelm read a sort of farce written in the Frankfort dialect, depicting the 'malheurs' of a rich Frankfort tradesman on a holiday jaunt on Sunday. It was very dull, and he read it ad nauseam." Cleverly describes him as "an uncommonly amiable, jovial fellow." He was, second only, much sought in society, which he frequented much more than his brother.

His first work was a spirited translation of the Danish *Kæmpevisen* (Ullrichsche Heldenlieder), published in 1811-18, which attracted great attention, and made his name widely known throughout all his landies. The most important of his text editions, viz.—*Richters-Lied*, Göttingen, 1838; *Kommt ein Herr-burg's Götische Schwestern*, Lüneburg, 1840; *Ernst Rodolph*, Göttingen, 1844 (2d ed.), *Atlas und Pöppelins*, Berlin, 1846; *Altdeutsche Geographie*, Berlin, 1851; *Prüfung*, Göttingen, 1860 (2d ed.). Of his other works the most important is *Deutsche Heldensage*, Berlin, 1868 (2d ed.). His *Deutsche Lieder* (Göttingen, 1821) is now only in historical interest.

GRIMMA, a town in the circle of Leipzig, Saxony, is situated on the left bank of the Mulde, 19 miles S E of Leipzig. In the Middle Ages it was an important commercial town, but agriculture is now its principal industry, although its manufactures have for some time been increasing. Beside Hugo from-mills there are yarn-bleaching and dyeing works, and outside the town are the Colzumbühle, which include an iron foundry and manufactures of paper and machinery. The principal buildings are the old castle, founded in the 12th century, in which the margraves of Meissen and the electors of Saxony often held court; the town house, dating from 1442; the two normal seminaries, the real school of the second order, and the famous *Fürstenschule* (*Hiltsche Moldanum*) seated by the elector Maurice on the site of the former Augustine monastery and consecrated in 1850, having provision for 104 free scholars and 22 boarders, and a library now numbering 10,000 volumes. In the immediate neighbourhood are the Cistercian monastery in which Catherine von Bora lived, and the village of Doben, with an old castle in which Albert the Proud kept his father Otto the Rich prisoner. Grimma is of Sorbian origin, and came into the possession of Germany through the emperor Henry I. The population in 1875 was 7273.

GRIMSBY, GRANT, a municipal and parliamentary borough and seaport town of England, county of Lincoln, is situated on the south side of the estuary of the Humber nearly opposite Spurn Head, and 17 miles E S E of Hull. Since the opening in 1855, under the auspices of the Manchester, Sheffield, and Lincolnshire Railway Company, of extensive docks occupying a space of 140 acres reclaimed from the sea, the shipping trade of Grimsby has largely increased. A new dock connecting the royal dock with the old dock was opened by the Prince of Wales July 22, 1870. A dock of 26 acres in extent for the accommodation of the coal and timber trade is in course of construction, and it is proposed still to supply additional dock accommodation by reclaiming 200 more acres from the Humber. In 1877 the number of British vessels that entered the port was 2837, with a tonnage of 855,218; of foreign vessels 847, with a tonnage of 258,243; the number of British vessels that cleared 2642, with a tonnage of 342,727; of foreign vessels 743, with a tonnage of 235,486. Steamers ply regularly between Grimsby and the more important Baltic ports. Until 1868 no fishing was done there headquarters at Grimsby, but since that period they have so increased that in 1877 the fishing craft numbered 506, with a tonnage of 20,924, and Grimsby has now become one of the largest fishing ports in the kingdom. For the use of the fishing vessels a special dock of 13 acres in extent was constructed, and another of 11 acres has lately been finished, as well as a graving dock capable of holding ten smacks at a time. Ice companies have also been established, with steamers of their own for

conveying ice from Norway for the use of the fisheries. Further particulars regarding the fishing trade of Grimsby will be found under the article *FISHERIES*, vol. 12, pp. 249, 250. The principal other industries are shipbuilding, iron and brass founding, brewing, and tanning. The chief buildings, besides the large warehouses extending along the docks, are the fine old parish church (restored in 1859), the free grammar school, the custom house, the mechanics' institute, the hospital, the coin exchange, and the town-hall. A statue of the Prince Consort was unveiled 23d July 1870. The population of the municipal borough in 1861 was 11,007, and of the parliamentary borough 15,060; in 1871 the numbers were 20,244 and 26,982. The area of the former is 1737, and of the latter 16,830 acres.

Grimsby is supposed to have been the spot where the Danes landed on their first invasion of Britain. It is a borough by prescription, and one of the most ancient in the kingdom. In the reign of Edward III it was a considerable seaport, and in 1346 it furnished that monarch with 11 ships and 170 men-of-war for the siege of Calais. After that period its trade fell into decay through the gradual blocking up of the harbour by the accumulation of mud and sand, until the election of new docks about the beginning of the present century. By the Act of 23d Edward I the town obtained the privilege of returning two members to parliament, but since the Reform Act of 1832 it has returned only one.

GRINDAL, EDWARD (c. 1510-1563), archbishop of Canterbury, was born at Hensingham in the parish of St Peter, Cambridgeshire, about 1510. He was educated at Cambridge, where he became fellow of Pembroke Hall in 1538, and president in 1549. In the following year he was appointed chaplain to Bishop Ridley, in August 1551 precentor of St Paul's, in November chaplain to Edward VI, and in July 1552 prebendary of Westminster. On the accession of Mary in 1553 he took refuge on the Continent, staying chiefly at Strasburg, where he acquired a competent knowledge of German, and occupied himself also in collecting the "writings and stories of the learned and pious sufferers in England,"—the result of his inquiries being afterwards communicated to John Foxe, and incorporated by him in his *Book of Martyrs*. Returning to England under the new regime in 1558, he assisted in the preparation of the new liturgy, and was also one of the eight Protestant divines chosen to hold public disputes with the papal prelates. In 1559 he was appointed to the mastership of Pembroke Hall, and in the same year he succeeded Bonner as bishop of London, in which capacity he, along with Archbishop Parker, shared in 1565 in the responsibility of suspending those of the London clergy who refused to submit to the Act of Uniformity, on which account an indignant mob of clergymen's wives appeared before his house at St Paul's, and were with difficulty persuaded by one of the suspended clergymen to go away quietly. In 1570 Grindal was appointed to the see of York, from which he was translated to Canterbury in February 1576. Having in the same year incurred the royal displeasure by refusing to suppress the meetings held among the clergy for "the exercise of prophesying," he was ultimately, in June 1577, by order of the Star Chamber confined to his house and sequestered for six months. As in November he refused to make a formal submission to the queen, his suspension was continued for several years, but though a petition for his restoration, which was drawn up by convocation in 1580, was not immediately granted, it would appear that in 1582 he had resumed, at least partially, the exercise of his ecclesiastical functions. About the end of this year the queen, on account of his blindness, sequestered him, and retired on a pension, but the negotiations connected with his resignation were not completed till April 1583, and it was only after his death at Croydon, July 6th of the same year, that Whitgift, who had been nominated his successor, entered upon the see. Though

Grindal yielded to the pemptory orders of Elizabeth in regard to the clergy who refused to sign the Act of Uniformity, he seems on all other occasions, while conducting himself with great moderation and manifesting unvarying courtesy and an earnest desire to avoid every cause of offense, to have strenuously upheld the spiritual independence of his office. His aims were on the whole noble and unselfish, and he was zealous in his endeavours to reform the abuses of his predecessors, to improve the moral and intellectual status of the clergy, and as far as possible to conciliate and reclaim the Puritans. He was sincerely attached to Protestantism, and laid much stress on the function of preaching, a "gift" in which he himself is said to have excelled. Grindal is alluded to (as Aligned) in the seventh "eclogue" of Spenser's *Shepherd's Calendar*.

His literary remains, which are unimportant, have been published by the Parker Society, with a biographical notice by the Rev. Wm. Nicholson, 1853. See also *Styke's Life of Grindal*, London, 1710, Oxford, 1831, *A Brief and True Account of Edmund Grindal*, 1710, *Memoirs, respecting his Succession*, &c, supposed by some to have been written by St. Beuve, 1710, *Miller's Works*, and Hook's *Lives of the Archbishops of Canterbury*, vol. viii.

**GRINDSTONE** Sandstones which possess the property of abrad- ing steel and other hard substances are extensively used in arts and manufactures under the name of grindstones. In its simplest form a grindstone consists of a stone disc, more or less circular, mounted on a horizontal iron spindle entering one of the top surfaces of a wooden post fixed in the ground. A wrench handle, or occasionally a rude crank with treads, provides the means of giving a slow rotation to the stone, against the cylindrical face of which the steel or other substance which is to be ground is held. Such grindstones—possessing neither truth of figure nor the means of obtaining it—are unsuitable for any but the roughest purposes, and although by mounting them in a frame to which a rest can be attached it is possible to keep them true and tolerably efficient, they are always slow in their action.

Cutlery employ grindstones which are roughly mounted but which act well, being driven at a much higher speed by a strap from a large wheel or pulley, and they carefully preserve the truth of the cylindrical face. And in many manufacturing processes the surface speed of the face is still further increased by employing very large stones, and giving them the greatest number of revolutions per minute that is compatible with safety,—this limit even being sometimes exceeded, when the centrifugal force overcomes the rather slight cohesive strength of the stones, and breaks them up into fragments which fly to great distances with disastrous results. Sandstones suitable for grindstones of various degrees of hardness and fineness is found in the coal districts of the north of England, and also in those of the midland counties. A favourite stone for tool grinding at a low speed is quarried at Bilston in Staffordshire. The neighbourhood of Sheffield also affords some useful qualities of grindstones.

Artificial grindstones closely resembling the natural stones, but of perfectly uniform texture, which the natural ones frequently are not, were made a few years ago by M<sup>r</sup> Ransome's ingenious process. Their manufacture has been discontinued, but artificial grindstones of another kind, made with emery instead of sand, are now effecting a complete revolution in the art of the machinist. By means of these emery grinders, to which great variety of size and form can be given so as to suit the particular purposes for which they are intended, the operation of truing up metal surfaces by hand, whether they are large or small, curved or flat, can in very many kinds of work be entirely dispensed with,—the results being superior in truth of figure, uniform in all cases, and obtained in a mere fraction of the time which the most skilful workman would require. The

extensive use of these grinders in America (where the importance of labour saving machines is properly appreciated) renders it certain that the system will gradually make its way also in England, and that hand filing will thus to a large extent be superseded,—files being costly instruments in themselves, and many times more costly in their use, owing to the skill which they demand on the part of the workman who handles them.

Artificial wheels made with emery are by no means a new invention. In India and China they have been used for centuries, but, being made with lac and similar fusible materials, such wheels are not capable of being run at the high rate of speed which is a first essential to their efficiency. Others, however, which were not liable to these objections were made and patented in England more than thirty years ago, and it is surprising that these have not been more generally used. The chief advantage of those now made,—some of which are manufactured in the United States, some on the continent of Europe, and some in England,—is that they can be obtained of large size—up to about 3 feet in diameter—and that they are strong enough to be driven at a very high speed without breaking. At a surface speed of 5000 or 6000 feet per minute these wheels cut tempered steel readily, when used either wet or dry, and by their means it can be shaped, if necessary, in its hardest condition, with a facility previously unattainable. As in the case of common grindstones, truth of form is most important to their efficient working, and it is therefore desirable that the work under treatment should be held perfectly rigid, by means of some form of sliding rest, or otherwise. When so used the wear of the emery wheel, which is exceedingly slow, keeps it constantly true without attention. If from any cause this truth of figure be lost, or if it be desired to alter the form of the face, recourse must be had to turning it up with a diamond, nothing else in nature being sufficiently hard for the purpose.

**GRINGOIRE**, or **GRINGON**, **PIERRE** (c. 1480–1544), was the last of the mediæval poets. He lived to see the old methods which he was taught to believe unchangeable entirely superseded. He was born about the time when King René, the last of the princely *trouvères*, died, he finished his career when Marot had already introduced a new and natural *genre* which he could not understand, and when Ronsard and Baif were beginning those studies which would interpose a barrier between the old language and the new. It was not to be expected that he should ever fall in with the new movements, or that he should understand the enormous value of the changes which were destined to consign his own works to oblivion.

The place of his birth is uncertain. Perhaps it was Lorraine, perhaps Normandy. His real name was Gringon, which he changed to Gringone, for the poetical reason that it sounded better. His early history is almost entirely unknown, at the age of nineteen or twenty he produced his first poem, *Le Chateau de Laon*, in which he is supposed to have narrated his own experiences. Most probably he did René, Charles of Orleans, Froussat, Deschamps, all the poets whose works he would study, began with a poetical exposition of their own experiences. There are, in Gringore's poem, the personages common to all mediæval allegories, *Raison*, *Donne Volonté*, *Talent de beau faire*, for friends, and *Soupe*, *Trampserie*, and the rest, for enemies. Finding that the trade in allegorical poems was runned for want of demand, and discovering an opening in the direction of mysticism, Gringore began to produce those dramas, and joined the "Enfants de Saint Soud". The fraternity advanced him to the dignity of "Mère Sotte," and afterwards to the highest honour of the guild, that of "Prince des Sots." For twenty years Gringore seems to have been



at the head of this illustrious *confé-die*, writing for them farces, *actes*, and *satires*. In this capacity of dramatist he exercised an extraordinary influence. At no time was the stage, rude and coarse as it was, more popular as a true exponent of the popular mind. Gringone's success lay in the fact that he followed, but did not attempt to lead, on his stage the people saw exhibited their passions, their judgments of the moment, their jealousies, their hatreds, and their ambitions. Brotherhoods of the kind existed all over France. In Paris there were the "Enfants Sans Souci," the "Basochiens," the "Confrérie de la Passion," and the "Souverain Empire de Galicie"; at Dijon there were the "Mise Folle" and her family, in Flanders the "Société des Abolitionnaires" played comedies, at Rouen the "Comédiens" or "Comaids" yielded to none in vigour and fearlessness of satire. There is every reason, therefore, to believe that Gringone enjoyed considerable distinction as the leading spirit among the satirists of the capital. He adopted for his device, *Tout par Raison, Raison par Tout, Par tout Raison*. He has been called the "Aristophanes des Halles." In one respect at least he resembles Aristophanes. He is serious in his maiment, there is purpose behind his extravagantisms. Among his principal works are *Les Folles Entreprises* and *Les Abus du Monier*—poems in which everything under the sun is criticized,—certain political pieces, such as *La Chasse du Cœur des Cœurs* (*Seuf des Seufs*, i. e., *serius seriosus*), and *un quel rôle* with that of the pope is thinly veiled, and *Le Mère Sotte*, with all his literary obliquity. During the last twenty years of a long life he became orthodox, and contributed the *Blason des Hérétiques* to orthodox literature. It was during this period also that he wrote the work by which he is best known, the *Mystère de la Vie de Saint Louis*, of which an analysis may be found in M. Lecky's *Études sur les Mystères*. After more than 300 years of oblivion this poet has been republished, not so much on account of his own merits as because of the position which he occupies in the history of dramatic literature.

GRICUALAND WEST, a province in South Africa, comprising the territory formerly belonging to the western division of the Griqua people, which was annexed to the British empire October 27, 1871. The extent of the province is 17,800 square miles. It is bounded on the S by the Orange River (which separates it from the Cape Colony), on the N and NE by territory occupied by the Bechuana tribes and the Transvaal settlement, and on the E by the Orange Free State. The general elevation of the country is about 3000 feet above sea-level, its characteristic features are undulating grassy plains, alternating with low ranges of rocky hills and sandy downs. The Vaal river flows through the principal districts, receiving in its course the Hart River and Modder River, with its affluent the Riet River, before its junction with the Orange River. A portion of the territory is adapted for sheep-farming, and the river basins contain fertile lands suitable for agricultural purposes. But the great wealth of the country is in its diamond mines. Since the first discovery of diamonds, in 1867, the total value of the gems exported from the province up to the close of the year 1878 is estimated at £20,000,000. Digging operations were at first confined to the alluvial deposits on the banks of the Vaal River, but in 1871 mines were opened in the locality known as the "dry diggings," which have since received the names of Kimberley, De Beers, Du Toit's Pan, and Bultfontein, all situated within a radius of a few miles. The use of the diamond-producing ground at each of these places is distinctly defined. At Kimberley the mine covers only 9 acres, at De Beers 1½ acres, at Du Toit's Pan 41 acres, and at Bultfontein 22 acres. These circular areas appear to be "throats" or "pipes" through which the volcanic and

serpentine matter containing the sparkling gems have been erupted, the surrounding rock consists of sandstones and shales entirely barren of diamonds. Kimberley, the chief centre of the mining industry, is the capital of the province and the seat of government. There is a resident lieutenant-governor or administrator, who is assisted by an executive council, and a legislative council composed of members partly elective and partly nominated by the crown. There is also a high court of justice presided over by a resident recorder. The other towns are Du Toit's Pan (including Bultfontein), Barkly, and Griqua Town. The villages and native locations are Helenort, Likalong, Boetsap, Campbell, and Douglas. Among the river diggings are Pniel, Waldek's Plant, Sifonell, and Setacome's. A census taken in 1877 showed the total population of Gricualand West at that time to be 45,277, of whom 12,347 were Europeans.

GRISONS (German, *Graubünden*) is the largest and easternmost of the Swiss cantons. It is 80 miles in length from ENE to WSW, and 45 in breadth, and has an area of 2963 square miles. On the NE and E it abuts against the little principality of Liechtenstein, and the Austrian provinces of Tyrol and Vorarlberg, on the S on the Italian provinces of Val Teline and Como, and on the W and N on the Swiss cantons of Ticino, Uri, Glarus, and St. Gall.

The whole canton is mountainous, and, with the exception of the Rhine valley below Reichenau and the Italian valleys, which still form part of it, has a severe alpine climate and vegetation. One tenth of the surface is covered by glaciers. The five principal glacier groups are those of the Toled, N, the Medelser Gebüge and the Rheinwald or Adula Gebüge, containing the chief source of the Rhine, SW, the Bernina group, the largest and loftiest, SE, and the Silvretta Gebüge, E. The principal valleys are the Vorder and Hinter Rheinthal, with their side-valleys the Valserthal, Averserthal, Oberhalbstein, and Pfäfers, joining together the upper basin of the Rhine. Besides these, the canton includes the long narrow trough of the upper Inn, and the Italian valleys of Misocco, Bregaglia, and Poschiavo, whose streams join the Ticino or the Adula. The high average elevation of the country, with the absence of any large lake, renders the scenery more severe than that of central Switzerland, and the mountain summits less imposing. The most fertile valleys are the Pfäfers and Rheinthal below Ilanz. The lower chains are rent by many great gorges. The Via Mala, the Rofas, and the Schyn are the best known, but those of the Zugs, the Averserthal, Medelserthal, and Valserthal are almost equal to them in grandeur. In the Rheinthal below Chur the vine flourishes best, the usual products of the southern slope of the Alps, maize and chestnuts. At Poschiavo tobacco is cultivated to some extent. The inner valleys are the highest of Central Europe, containing several villages at an elevation of about 6000 feet (St. Moritz, Engadine, 6080, Bivio, Oberhalbstein, 5827, Ciesta, in the Averserthal, 6394, snow lies there for six or seven months in the year, and corn will not ripen. The hay-harvest is the great agricultural event of the year, and is so large that great numbers of Italian labourers are annually employed in it. The forests and pastures are the chief source of wealth. The lower Alps maintain a fine breed of cows, the upper are let to Bergamasque shepherds, who drive yearly immense flocks of sheep from North Italy for the summer pasturage. There are many mineral springs in the country, the most frequented are at Alvenet, Fiders, La Piesse, and San Leonardo, besides those in the Engadine (see ENGADINE). The Gisons are sparsely peopled. The population in 1870 amounted to 91,782,—39,843 Protestants and 51,877



he was appointed on Archbishop Wasmeh's recommendation master or warden of All Hallows' College at Maidstone in Kent, we find him still obliged to borrow from his friends, and even to pledge his plate as a security. He died probably in 1519, and was buried in the collegiate church at Maidstone. With the exception of a few lines of Latin verse, and a letter to Aldus Manutius at the head of Linnæus's translation of Ptolemy's *Sphæra* (Vance, 1490), Grocy has left no literary proof of his scholarship or abilities. He was a great admirer of Aristotle, but his proposal to execute a translation of the philosopher in company with Linnæus and Latimer was never carried out. By Erasmus he has been described as "un severissime castissimus vitæ, eclesiasticum consuetudinem observantissimus, peno usque ad superstitionem, scholasticum theologum ad unguem doctus ac intuta etiam acorum iudicii, dumtaxat in omni disciplinarum genere exactus veritatis" (*Declarationes ad Censuram Facultatis Theologicæ Parisiense*, 1522).

See John Nisbet Johnson, *Life of Thomas Linnæus*, London, 1836, Wood's *Atkins Obituaries*, Cunningham, *Lives of Eminent Englishmen*, vol. 11, 1833, Knight, *Life of Erasmus*.

GRODNO, a western province or government of Russia in Europe, lying between 52° and 54° N lat., 23° and 26° E long., and bounded N. by Vilna, E. by Minsk, S. by Volhynia, and W. by the former kingdom of Poland, area 14,961 square miles. The country is a wide plain, in some parts very swampy and covered with large pine forests. Of these that of Bielowieca in the district of Piusbana, comprising a circuit of over 100 miles, deserves notice, for here bison are preserved. The navigable rivers are the Nieman, Bug, Narew, and Bobra. There are also several canals, among which those of Augustow and Oginsky are the most important. The soil, being chiefly alluvial deposit intermixed with sand, is favourable for agriculture and the rearing of cattle and bees. The atmosphere is damp and misty, and the climate in winter is cold. Large quantities of rye, barley, oats, hops, hemp, and flax are raised, but the amount of fruit and vegetables grown is small. The mineral products are insignificant. The manufactures consist of woollen cloths, hats, leather, paper, and spirits, there is also a good export trade in grain, wool, cattle, and timber. Some forty fairs are held annually in the province. Grodno is divided into nine districts, viz., Grodno, Drest, Bielsk, Volkovysk, Kobryn, Piusbana, Slonim, and Sololka. The administration of the whole province is in the hands of a governor appointed by the crown. In 1870 the population was 1,068,521, comprising Lithuanians, Russians, Poles, Tatars, and a few German colonists.

GRÓDZK, capital of the province of the same name, stands on the right bank of the Nieman in 53° 40' N lat., 23° 50' E long., and is connected by railway with St. Petersburg, Moscow, and Warsaw. It is the seat of the provincial government, and contains eight Roman Catholic, a Greek Eastern and two United Greek Catholic churches, a Lutheran chapel, and two Jewish synagogues. The Government office is a splendid edifice. There are two fine palaces erected respectively by Stephen Batory, who died here in 1586, and Augustus III., kings of Poland. Among the other buildings are a public library, a school of medicine, a gymnasium, and several seminaries. The inhabitants (24,789) are engaged in the manufacture of woollens, silks, hats, paper, and the preparation of wax. The fairs are held annually. Grodno was built in the 12th century, and at the commencement of the 13th was annexed to Poland. The Polish diet held there in 1793 ratified the second partition of Poland. Two years later Stanislaus Augustus, the last king, signed his abdication there.

GROEN VAN PRINSTERRE, WILHELM (1801-1876), Dutch statesman, historian, and publicist, was born at Voorburg, on August 21, 1801, received his grammar school

education at the Hague, and studied law, philosophy, and history at the university of Leyden. At the age of twenty-five he published a volume of miscellaneous essays (*Verspreide Geschriften*, 1826), and in 1827 he was appointed private secretary to King William I. From this post he retired in 1833, in order that he might devote himself with less interruption to the historical researches which resulted in the gradual publication of his *Archives ou Correspondance inédite de la Maison d'Orange-Nassau*, in fifteen volumes (Leyden, 1835-64). An ardent conservative in all the ecclesiastical and political questions of the day, he entered the chamber of representatives in 1840, and took part with both tongue and pen in all the more important discussions of the years that followed, especially in those of 1848 and 1849. Between 1849 and 1865 he frequently sat in the second chamber, and from 1850 to 1855 the anti-liberal newspaper *Nederlander* was managed by him. The mortification which European events in 1864 and 1866 had caused him found expression in the occasional writings entitled *La Prusse et les Pays Bas*, *A mes amis à Berlin*, and *L'Empire Prussien et L'Apocalypse* (1867). Shortly afterwards he withdrew entirely from public affairs, but continued his literary pursuits, his latest production *Memoire et Banquet*, an able vindication of the Calvinistic prince as against the Arminian statesman, having been completed (1874) only a short time before his death, which occurred 19th May 1876. Among other works of this author may be mentioned a *Handboek der Geschiedenis van het Vaderland* (1835), and an essay entitled *Ongeloof en Revolutie* (1847), but his sole claim to European celebrity rests upon the *Archives*, with their able if one-sided *Prolegomena*. The letters and documents comprised in the series are of extraordinary interest and value for the whole of the important period which elapsed between the outbreak of the revolution in the Netherlands and the establishment of the commercial oligarchy upon the death of William I.

GRONINGEN, a town of the Netherlands, in the province of the same name, is situated on the Hunze at the influx of the Aa, 45½ miles in an easterly direction from Huisigen. The central and more ancient part of the town is still surrounded by the old ditch, and communication is maintained with the outer portions by eighteen bridges. In the centre of the old town lies a group of open places, of which the greatest, the Beledemarkt, is one of the most spacious in the Netherlands. Five of the principal streets bear the name of as many ancient families—the Boteringes, the Ebbinges, the Gellinges, the Huddings, and the Polkings. Among the public buildings of Groningen the town house (Rathuis) is one of the finest. It was built between 1793 and 1810 according to the plans of Jacob Otten Huisley, and was extended in 1873. The administrative offices of the province of Groningen also occupy a fine building, which received a splendid front in 1870-1871. The provincial court of justice, transformed in the middle of the 18th century the corn exchange, dating from 1825, and the weigh-house, completed in 1874, the so called *Ommelandenhuis*, or house formerly devoted to the administration of the surrounding district, the civil and military prison, and the arsenal, are also all worthy of mention. There are twelve churches in Groningen, including two for the Roman Catholics, and five for the Reformed Church of the Netherlands, as well as a Jewish synagogue. St. Martin's, the Aa Church, and the New Church (all Reformed) are the principal. Of these the first is a Gothic building founded in 1263, and the last dates from the 17th century. The university of Groningen was founded in 1614, and its buildings were erected in 1847-1850. According to the *Annales Académiques* (Leyden, 1877), the number of the students in 1874 was only 173, the strongest faculty being that of the physical sciences with 57. It has a library, an observatory, botanical

galdons, an antiquarium museum, and a hospital among its auxiliary establishments. A fine deaf and dumb institution, founded by Henri Daniel Gysot, a gymnasium, a normal college, a school of navigation, a school of design, and a musical school are among the secondary educational establishments. A society *pro extendendo iure patri* has been in existence since 1761, an academy of fine arts was formed in 1830 by the incorporation of two older societies of similar character, and the same year saw the formal establishment of the society for the advancement of natural science, which may be traced back to the association started by Van Swinderen in 1801. Groningen maintains a considerable trade, and engages in a variety of industries. Its manufactures salt, bone, vinegar, soap, earthenware, and ropes, weaves cotton and woollen stuffs, spins flax, makes bushes, furniture, mirrors, organs, and pianos, and has numerous goldsmiths and silversmiths. In 1840 the town and the suburbs comprised a population of 31,782. In 1870 the number of people in the commune, including 1248 on shipboard, was 37,894, and four years later it had increased to 39,284.

Mention is made of the Villa Croningen in a deed of gift from Henry III. to the church of Utrecht in 1040. In 1110 the town was surrounded with walls, but the bishop of Utrecht caused them to be dismantled in 1112, and it was not till 1265 that the defences began to be restored. The compass of the town, which at this time was about 18,000 feet, received considerable extension in 1469, when the walls were extended to the sea, and in 1500 the sea-ditch was dug. A further increase of defensive capabilities was effected in the course of the Guelphic war of 1611–36, and again under William Louis of Nassau between 1608 and 1624. The early history of Groningen consists mainly of struggles with the bishops of Utrecht. In the course of the 18th century there is evidence that the commercial activity of its population was finding outlet in various directions, and in the 14th it attained to no small political influence as the chief city of Friesland. Maximilian I. assigned Groningen to Albert of Saxony, but the citizens refused to accept the protection of the bishop of Utrecht, and when Albert's son George attempted to restore the bishopric they recognized the lordship of Edward of East Friesland. On George's renewal of hostilities they transferred their allegiance to Duke Charles of Gueldre. And, and his position was sanctioned in 1616 by the emperor Charles V. In the course of the great war of the 18th century the city had an eventful history, passing from hand to hand, and suffering all the miseries of siege and military occupation, but at length, in 1594, it was finally secured for the United Netherlands by Prince Maurice of Nassau. The dissensions between the citizens proper and the inhabitants of the "Ommelanden" continued, however, in spite of the peace of the states in 1697, which was intended to set them at rest. In 1672 the town had been the theatre of a siege of Munster, but it was successfully defended, and in 1698 its fortifications were improved under Coehorn's direction. The French republicans planted their tree of liberty in the Great Market on February 14, 1795, and they continued in authority till 1811. November 1814. The fortifications of the city were doomed to destruction by the law of 18th April 1874. Among the numerous men of mark who have been natives of Groningen it is enough to mention J. D. Bernoulli the mathematician, Struvenius and Schultheis the Orientalists, and Hemsterhuis the philologist.

Zie Oudehuden en Geschieden van Groningen vijf heb Latijn van koolle, don H. V. R. Leyden, 1724. *Atomyk van Groningen ende Omme landten tot op deens Jan's 1748*. Groningen, 1748. E. J. D. Leagou, *Geschiedkundige Beschryving der Stad Groningen*, Groningen, 1822–67. *Album der Stad Groningen*, Groningen, 1860. W. Wynne, *Handel en Ontwikkeling van de Provincie Groningen*, Groningen, 1866. Theodor Wenzelbaker, in Koch and Grube's *Geologie parkes*, sub voce, 1872. Wiskamp, *Landrijkskundig Woordenboek*, 1877.

GRONOVIVUS, or GRONOV, JAKOB (1645–1716), one of the very great scholars of the 17th century, was born 20th October 1645 at Deventer, where his father, J. F. Gronovius (q.v.), was at that time professor of rhetoric and history. On the completion of his studies at Leyden, where he had early distinguished himself by his powers of intellectual acquisition, he in 1698 visited England, where he became acquainted with Pocock, Pearson, and Mary Casaubon, and where he devoted several months to the collation of rare manuscripts at Oxford and Cambridge. His edition of Polybius, published at Leyden in 1670, in

addition to his own and various notes, contained those which Casaubon on his deathbed had bequeathed to him. Declining an invitation to a chair at Deventer, he in 1671 visited France, and was brought into intimate relations with D'Herbelot, Thvenot, and other distinguished scholars, and after another brief interval at Leyden he in 1673 travelled in Spain, whence he passed into Italy. There he accepted from the grand duke of Tuscany a chair at the university of Pisa, which, however, he resigned at the end of two years. Having returned to Deventer by way of Germany, he had settled down with the purpose of working uninterruptedly at an edition of Livy, when in 1679 he was invited by the curators of the university of Leyden to occupy a professorial chair. Here, untampered by several pressing invitations to various foreign universities, he spent the remaining years of his life, in which the calmness which normally characterized even the most ardent scholarly research was unfortunately too often broken by literary quarrels conducted on his part with excessive violence and acrimony. He died 21st October 1716.

The most celebrated as well as the most important of the works of J. Gronovius is the *Thesaurus Antiquitatis Graecae* (Leyden, 1698–702, in 18 vols. fol., and Venice 1732–1737, also in 18 vols. fol.). For this invaluable collection he adopted the plan traced by Gravina in the *Thesaurus Antiquitatum Romanarum*. Gronovius published new editions of several notions commented on by his father, such as Scaeva, Phidius, and others, and he also edited Macrobium, Polybius, Tertius, Cicero, Ammianus Marcellinus, Quintus Curtius, Suetonius, Aelian, Minutius Felix, Herodotus, Orosius, and several ancient geographers. The posthumous edition of the *Diaglossica* of Goussier, the *Lexicon* of Hyperaspeter, &c. The other productions of Gronovius consist of theses, discourses, and dissertations, of which a list will be found in the *Dictionnaire* of Chénobry.

GRONOVIVUS, or GRONOV, JOHANN FRIEDRICH (1613–1671), scholar and critic, was born at Hamburg, 20th September 1613. He went through his early studies with great distinction at Bremen, and afterwards attended the universities of Leipzig, Jena, and Altorf, whence he extended his travels into France and Italy. In 1643 he was appointed professor of rhetoric and history at Deventer, and in 1658 he succeeded Daniel Heinsius in the Greek chair at Leyden, where he died on the 28th of December 1671.

Besides editing, with notes, Statius, Plautus, Livy, Pliny, Tacitus, Aulus Gellius, and Seneca's tragedies, he was the author of numerous works which have been exhaustively catalogued by the *Thesaurus* of others. They include a *Thesaurus* of the *Thesaurus veteris Graecae*, the *Romana Libi* (1643), and notes upon Seneca, Phidius, &c., which were subsequently utilized by his son Jacobus Gronovius in his editions of those authors.

GROET, GERHARD (1340–1384), in Latin *Gerardus Magnus*, founder of the society of "Brethren of the Common Life," was born on October 1340, at Deventer, where his father held a good civic position. Other forms of the family name are Gicote, Groet, and Groete. At the close of his school education, received partly at Deventer and partly at Aix-la-Chapelle and Cologne, Gerhaid ("Gerit" or "Geert") in his fifteenth year entered the university of Paris, where he became firmly attached to the nominalism then in vogue, and where he made distinguished progress in almost all the branches of learning then cultivated,—canon law, medicine, astrology, and even magic being added to the theology and philosophy of the schoolmen. Shortly after his graduation in 1358, he returned to his father's house at Deventer, where, however, his stay was comparatively brief. We next hear of him as learning and teaching in Cologne, according to one account he studied also at Prague, and in 1366 he visited, on public business it is presumed, the papal court at Avignon. About this time he was appointed to a couple of canons at Utrecht and Aix-la-Chapelle respectively, and the life of the brilliant young scholar was rapidly becoming luxurious, secular, and selfish, when a great spiritual change passed over him which

resulted in a final renunciation of every worldly enjoyment. This conversion, which took place in 1374, appeared to have been due partly to the effects of a dangerous illness, and partly to the influence of the learned and pious prior of the Cistercian monastery at Mummichoven near Arnhem, who had seasonally communicated with him on the vanity of his life. During the next five years he devoted a considerable portion of his time to repeated and prolonged visits to the monastery of the Augustinian canons regular at Vrieth-Vallis (Gronsdied near Bussels), whose prior, Johann Ruyssbroeck, a man of deep though somewhat mystical piety and of considerable literary power, could not fail to impress those who came in contact with him, and many of whose special views are unmistakably reproduced in the writings of Groot and his "fratres docti." Between 1374 and 1379 Groot had also spent some three years in all at Mummichoven in study and prayer, and in the course of the last-mentioned year he left the privacy of the cloister, and having received ordination as a deacon, became a missionary preacher within the diocese of Utrecht. The success which followed his labours, not only in the town of Utrecht itself, but also in Zwolle, Kampen, Leyden, Delft, Gouda, Amsterdam, and many other places, was immense, according to Thomas a Kempis, the people left then busied, and their minds to hear his sermons, so that the churches could not hold the crowds that flocked wherever he came. The impartiality of the century, however, which he depicted, not only against the prevailing sins of the last, but also against the heresy, anarchy, avarice, and impurity of the secular and regular clergy, soon provoked the uncompromising hostility of the entire body of the latter, and accusations of heterodoxy speedily began to be brought against him. It was in vain that Groot omitted a *Publica Protestatio*, in which he declared that Jesus Christ was the great subject of his discourses, that in all of them he believed himself to be in harmony with the Catholic doctrine, and that he willingly subjected them to the candid judgment of the Roman Church. By a skillfully framed episcopal edict of 1383, which excluded from the pulpit all who had not received priest's orders, his public preaching was brought abruptly to an end, an appeal to Urban VI was made in vain. Compelled thus to search for some other field of usefulness, Groot, in conjunction with his friend Florentinus, a canon of Utrecht, began to superintend the labours of certain young men who employed themselves in transcribing manuscripts of church fathers and other authors, from time to time as they met to receive payment for their work, he sought to edify them with religious exhortation. Ultimately the idea suggested itself that the little band might throw their earnings into a common fund and live together according to a fixed rule. The house of Florentinus forthwith became a cloister of "fratres vite communis," who were speedily joined by many new members, both clerical and lay, practised in a considerable variety of handicrafts, the general rule of the Augustinian order was adopted, it was also agreed that their daily bread should be shared in common, and that it should be earned, not begged. Groot's private estate sufficed for the establishment on like principles of a sisterhood who supported themselves by spinning, weaving, and needlework. After a comparatively brief life of singular energy, patience, and self-denial, Groot fell a victim to the plague at Deventer on the 26th of August 1384. Within fifty years of his death the "Bethuim of the Common Life" also called "Fraters bone voluntatis" or "Fraters Collationani," numbered seventeen collegiate churches in the Netherlands, and contributed somewhat extensively to theological literature. Thomas a Kempis, who wrote a *Vita Gerardi Magni*, was trained under Gerhard himself at Deventer. The order disappeared at the time of the Reformation.

For a very clear and full account of the life of Groot, with an analytic and exhaustive catalogue of his extant works, reference may be made to the article on the "Bethuim of the Common Life," by Huishe, in *Ullmann's Real-Encyclopädie*, ii. 678-686 (1878). This is the original authority in the work of Thomas a Kempis already alluded to. See also Ullmann's *Reformationsgeschichte*, i. 157-160, where somewhat *ex parte* exposition of Groot's theological views, however, must be taken with reserve.

GROS, ANTOINE JEAN, BARON (1771-1835), the pupil of David and the forerunner of Gérard, occupies a peculiar position between the classic and romantic schools, which divided opinion at the beginning of the present century. He was born at Paris in 1771. His father, who was a miniature painter, began seriously to teach him to draw at the early age of six, and showed himself from the first an exacting master. Towards the close of 1785 Gros, by his own choice, entered the studio of David, which he frequented assiduously, continuing at the same time to follow the classes of the Collège Mazarin. The death of his father, whose circumstances had been embarrassed by the Revolution, threw Gros, in 1791, upon his own resources. He now devoted himself wholly to his profession, and completed in 1792 for the *grand prix*, but unsuccessfully. About this time he was, however, on the recommendation of the *École des Beaux-Arts*, employed on the execution of portraits of the members of the Convention, and when—disturbed by the development of the Revolution—Gros in 1793 left France for Italy, he supported himself at Genoa by the same means, producing a great quantity of miniatures, and *frises*. He visited Florence, but returning to Genoa made the acquaintance of Josephine, and followed her to Milan, where he was well received by her husband. On November 15, 1796, Gros was present with the army near Arcola when Bonaparte planted the tricolor on the bridge. Gros seized on this incident, and showed by his treatment of it that he had found his vocation. Bonaparte at once gave him the post of "inspecteur aux levées," which on allowed him to follow the army, and in 1797 nominated him on the commission charged to select the spoils which should enrich the Louvre. In 1799, having escaped from the besieged city of Genoa, Gros made his way to Paris, and in the beginning of 1801 took up his quarters in the Capucins. His "esquisse" (*Musée de Nantes*) of the Battle of Nazareth gained the prize offered in 1802 by the consuls, but was not carried out, owing it is said to the jealousy of Jannot felt by Napoleon, but he indemnified Gros by commissioning him to paint a new visit to the pest-house of Jaffa. His *Scènes de Jaffa* (Louvre) was followed by the Battle of Austerlitz 1806 (Versailles), and the Battle of Eylau, 1808 (Louvre). These three subjects—the popular leader facing the pestilence unmoved, challenging the splendid instant of victory, heart-sick with the bitter cost of a hard-won field—gave to Gros his chief titles to fame. As long as the military element remained bound up with French national life, Gros received from it a fresh and energetic inspiration which carried him to the very heart of the events which he depicted, but as the army and its general separated from the people, Gros, called on to illustrate episodes representative only of the fulfilment of personal ambition, ceased to find the nourishment necessary to his genius, and the defect of his artistic position became evident. Trained in the sect of the Classicists, he was shackled by their rules, even when—by his naturalistic treatment of types, and appeal to picturesque effect in colour and tone—he seemed to run counter to them. In 1810 his *Madrid* and Napoleon at the Pyramids (Versailles) show that his star had deserted him. His *Francis I* and *Charles V*, 1812 (Louvre), had considerable success, but the decoration of the dome of St Geneviève (begun in 1811 and completed in 1824) is the only work of Gros's later years which

shows his early force and vigour, as well as his skill. The Dupature of Louis XVIII (Fajardelle), the Embarkation of Madame d'Angoulême (Boulaux), the plafond of the Egyptian room in the Louvre, and finally his Hieroglyphs and Diomedes, exhibited in 1835, testify only that Gros's efforts—in accordance with the frequent councils of his old master David—to stem the rising tide of Romanticism served but to damage his once brilliant reputation. Exasperated by criticism and the consciousness of failure, Gros sought refuge in the grosser pleasures of life, but suddenly his vital forces failed him, and on the 25th June 1835 he was found drowned on the shores of the Seine near Sèvres. From a paper which he had placed in his hat it became known that "les de la vie, et tûti par les dernières facultés qui lui restaient supportable, il avait voulu se tuer dans l'eau." The number of Gros's pupils was very great, and was considerably augmented when, in 1815, David quitting Paris made over his own classes to him. Gros was decorated and named Baron of the empire by Napoleon, after the Salon of 1808, at which he had exhibited the Battle of Eylau. Under the Restoration he became a member of the Institute, professor at the École des Beaux Arts, and was named chevalier of the order of St Michel.

M. Dulacque gives a brief notice of his life in *Louis David et Son Temps*, and Julius Meyer's *Corrickle der malen aus Frankreich* contains an excellent criticism on his works.

GROSBEEK (French, *Grosbeek*), a name very indefinitely applied to many birds belonging to the families *Pringillidae* and *Ploceidae* of modern ornithologists, and perhaps to some members of the *Emberizidae* and *Troglodytidae*, but always to birds distinguished by the great size of their bill. Taken alone it is commonly a synonym of *HAZWORTH* (*g v*), but a prefix is most usually added to indicate the species, as Pine-Grosbeak, Cardinal-Grosbeak, and the like. By earlier writers the word was generally given as an equivalent of the Linnaean *Lanius*, but that genus, as first established, has been found to include many forms which, according to more recent notions, cannot properly be placed in the same Family.

The PINE-GROSBEEK (*Pinicola enucleator*) is, with the exception of the Hawfinch just mentioned, the best known species to which the name is applied. It inhabits the conifer-zone of both the Old and the New Worlds, seeking, in Europe and probably elsewhere, a lower latitude as winter approaches—often journeying in large flocks, and straggles have occasionally reached the British Islands, though the records of not more than half a dozen such occurrences can be wholly trusted (Yarrell, *Br Birds*, ed 4, i pp 177-179). In structure and some of its habits most resembling a Bullfinch (see *FACIES*, vol. i, p. 193), but much exceeding that bird in size, it has the plumage of a Crossbill (vol. i, p. 614), and appears to undergo exactly the same changes as do the members of the restricted genus *Lanius*—the young being of a dull greenish-grey streaked with brownish-black, the adults being tinged with golden-green, and the cocks glowing with crimson-red on nearly all the body-feathers, this last colour being replaced after moulting in confinement by bright yellow. Nests of this species were found in 1821 by Zettestadt near Jucka-jarvi in Swedish Lapland, but little was really known with certainty concerning its nidification until 1856, when the late Mr Waller, after two years' ineffectual search, succeeded in obtaining in the not very distant district of Munoniska well-outfitted specimens with the eggs, both of which are like exaggerated Bullfinches'. The food of this species seems to consist of the seeds and buds of many sorts of trees, though the staple may very possibly be those of some kind of pine. The cock has a clear and pleasing song, which makes him in many countries a favourite cage-bird, and the notes of the hen may even be deemed to qualify her as a musician of no small merit.

Allied to the Pine-Grosbeak are a number of species of smaller size, but its equals in beauty of plumage. These have been referred to several genera, such as *Carpodacus*, *Parus*, *Bycanistes*, *Uragus*, and others, but possibly *Carpodacus* is sufficient to contain all. Most of them are natives of the Old World, and chiefly of its eastern division, but several inhabit the western portion of North America, and one, *C. guthriei* (of which there seem to be at least two local races), is an especial native of the deserts, or their borders, of Asia and North Africa, extending even to some of the Canary Islands—a singular modification in the *habitus* of a form which one would be apt to associate exclusively with forest trees, and especially conifers.

The VIOLET-GROSBEEK, or Vigorn's Nightingale of many writers, *Caulodius vigornianus*, next claims notice here, though doubts may be entertained as to the family to which it really belongs. No less remarkable for its bright carmine attire, and the additional embellishment of an elongated crest of the same colour, than for its fine song, it has been an object of attraction almost ever since the settlement of its native country by Europeans. All American ornithologists speak of its easy capture and its ready adaptation to confinement, which for nearly three centuries have helped to make it a popular cage-bird on both sides of the Atlantic. The vocal powers possessed by the cock are to some extent shared by the hen, though she is denied the vivid hues of her partner, and her plumage, with exception of the wings and tail, which are of a dull red, is light olive above and brownish-yellow beneath. This species inhabits the eastern parts of the United States southward of 40° N lat., and also occurs in the Bermudas. It is represented in the south-west of North America by other forms that by some writers are deemed species, and in the northern parts of South America by the *C. phoeniceus*, which would really seem entitled to distinction. Another kindred bird, placed from its short and broad bill in a different genus, and known as *Tyr. lanius sinuata* on the Texas Cardinal, is found on the southern borders of the United States and in Mexico, while among North American "Grosbeaks" must also be named the birds belonging to the genera *Gusia* and *Hedymeles*—the former especially exemplified by the beautiful blue *C. canicola*, and the latter by the brilliant rose-breasted *H. ludovicianus*, which last extends its range into Canada.

The species of the Old World which, though commonly called "Grosbeaks," certainly belong to the family *Ploceidae*, may be in this work more conveniently treated under the title of *WAXY-BIRDS* (*g v*) (A 8).

GROSB, FRANCIS (c. 1730-1791), a celebrated English antiquary, son of a wealthy Shropshire jeweller settled in England, was born at Greenford in Middlesex, about the year 1730. The bias of his mind towards heraldry and antiquities showed itself early, and his father, indulging it, procured him a position in the Herald's College. In 1763, being then Richmond Herald, he sold his tabard, and shortly afterwards became adjutant and paymaster of the Hampshire militia, where, as he himself humorously observed, the only account-books he kept were his right and left pockets, into the one of which he received, and from the other of which he paid. This carelessness exposed him to serious losses, and after a vain attempt to repair them by accepting a captaincy in the Surrey militia, the competency left him by his father being squandered, he began to turn to account his excellent education and his powers as a draughts-

<sup>1</sup> Many of them are described and beautifully figured in the *Monographie des Laniens* of the late Prince O. L. Bonaparte and Ploetz von Schlegel (Leyden and Düsseldorf, 1860), a work which includes, however, all the Grosbeaks, Redpolls, and Linnets, and, as the authors, while it excludes many birds that an English writer would have to call "Grosbeaks."

man. In 1757 he had been elected fellow of the Society of Antiquaries. In 1773 he began to publish his *Antiquities of England and Wales*, a work which brought him money as well as fame. This, with its supplementary parts relating to the Channel Islands, was not completed till 1787. In 1789 he set out on an antiquarian tour through Scotland, and in the course of this journey met Burns, who composed in his honour the famous song beginning "Ken ye aught o' Captain Grose," and in that other poem, still more famous, "Hear, land o' cakes, and bither Scots," warned all Scotchmen of this "chield among them taking notes." In 1790 he began to publish the results of what Burns calls "his peregrinations through Scotland," but he had not finished the work when he bethought himself of going over to Ireland and doing for that country what he had already done for Great Britain. About a month after his arrival, however, while in Dublin at the table of his friend Hume, he was seized with an apoplectic fit, and died in a moment, June 12, 1791.

Hume was a sort of antiquarian Falstaff,—at least he possessed in a striking degree the knight's physical peculiarities, but he was a man of true honour and charity, a valuable friend, "overlooking little faults and seeking out greater virtues," and an unmitigated bon companion. His professional merits were far from contemptible, he was a clever draughtsman, and had considerable power of poetic composition. While most of his writings concern only the learned, others exhibit strong satiric power. But he showed to greatest advantage as a social being, his humour, his varied knowledge, and his good nature were all eminently calculated to make him a favourite in society. As Burns says of him—

But wad ye see him in his glee,  
For muckle glee and fun he hae,  
Then set him down and, twa or three  
Times fill him o' the bottle o' rum,  
And yeot, O yeot! shuns that a wee,  
And hurr ye'll see him!"

Grose published *The Antiquities of England and Wales*, 6 vols fol., 1773-87. In 1783 appeared *Advice to the Officers of the British Army*, a volume in the manner of Swift's *Directions to his satraps*, which is very consistently attributed to Grose, in 1783, *A Guide to Health, Beauty, Riches, and Honour*, a collection of advertisements of the period, with characteristic stilted phrases, in 1785, *A Classical Dictionary of the Vulgar Tongue*, 8vo, 1786-89, *A Treatise on Ancient Armour and Weapons*, in 1780, *DuRoi's History of Dogs*, 1780-88, *Military Antiquities*, 2 vols 4to, 1787, *A Poetical Dictionary*, 1788, *Remarks on English Ornament*, 8vo, 1789-91, *The Antiquaries of Scotland*, 2 vols 4to, 1791, *Antiquities of Ireland*, 2 vols 4to, edited and partly written by Leitch. *The Grumble*, sixteen clever humorous essays by Grose appeared in 1791. *Real and Ideal*, in 1793. *The Olio*, a collection of essays, jests, and small pieces of poetry, highly characteristic of Grose, though certainly not all by him, was put together from his papers by his publisher, who was also his executor. A capital full-length portrait of Grose by Dancey is in the first volume of the *Antiquities of England and Wales*, and another is among Kny's *Portraits*. A veiled sketch of him appeared in the *Gentleman's Magazine*, vol. lvi p. 660. See *Gentleman's Magazine*, vol. lvi pp. 495, 592, Noble's *Life of the College of Arms*, p. 481.

GROSSENHAIN, a town in the circle of Dresden, Saxony, is situated on the Roder, an affluent of the Elbe, 20 miles N W of Dresden. It has manufactures of woollen and cotton stuffs, bookskin, silk thread, and waxcloth. The principal buildings are the church of Our Lady completed in 1748, the real school of the second order, the new town-house completed in 1876, the infirmary, and the posthouse. The population in 1875, including the garrison, was 10,686.

Groszenhau owes its origin to the Sorbs, and obtained the rank of a town in the 10th century. It is a town presided by the Bohemians, by whom it was strongly fortified. It afterwards came into the possession of the counts of Merseburg, from whom it was taken in 1312 by the margraves Waldemar and John of Brandenburg. It suffered considerably in all the great German wars, and in 1744 was nearly destroyed by the

GROSSETESTE, ROBERT (c. 1175-1553), in some respects the most distinguished of all the English medieval prelates as regards his personal influence both over the men of his time and on its literate, was born of humble parents at Stadbrook in Suffolk about the year 1175. All that is known of his early years is (from his own account) that he studied the characters of the best men in the Scriptures, and endeavoured to conform his actions to theirs. He was sent by his friends to Oxford, where he studied law and medicine, and seems to have finished his education at Paris, where he probably laid the foundation of his knowledge of Greek and Hebrew. His first patron was William de Vere, bishop of Hereford, to whom he was introduced by Cuthbert Campdenian, but who died in 1189, and thus had little opportunity of assisting the young scholar. From Paris he returned to Oxford, graduated in divinity, and became master of the schools (*rector scholarum*) or chancellor. He also became the first rector of the Franciscans at Oxford. Here he probably wrote his commentaries on Aristotle, and laid the foundations of his fame as a preacher. His earliest pretension of which we can speak with certainty was the archdeaconry of Wilts, which he held in 1214 and 1220, he was archdeacon of Northampton in 1221, holding at the same time the prebend of Empingham, which belonged to the archdeaconry. Thus he exchanged the archdeaconry of Wilts for the archdeaconry of Leicester, which he probably held till 1232. In May 1225 he was collated by Hugh de Wells, bishop of Lincoln, to the church of Abbotsley, Hunts, and at one time he held the rectory of St Margaret's, Leicester. In 1231 he probably wrote his treatise *De Cessatione Legalium* with the view of converting the Jews, for whose benefit the *Domus conversorum* was established in London this year. A fever in November 1232 induced him to resign all his preferments excepting his Lincoln prebend, and the leisure he thus obtained was spent at Oxford, and probably employed in writing his mathematical treatises and his theological *Diata*. On the death of Bishop Hugh de Wells in February 1235, the chapter of Lincoln elected Grosseteste to the see, the election took place on March 27, and he was consecrated at Reading on June 17. His administration of his diocese, then the most extensive in the country, was characterized by great vigour. Within a year of his consecration he visited the monasteries, removing seven abbots and four priors, and in 1238 he issued his constitutions, embodying the points discussed at the great council of the Church of England held in London in 1237, concerning which he had already written to his archdeacons, at the same time, as diocesan of Oxford, he exercised a watchful supervision over the university, protecting the scholars who were in trouble for their attack on the legate Otho in 1235, and even entering into such matters of detail as the place where the university chest should be kept. His energy in his visitations did not pass without opposition, an attempt on his life by poison was made in 1237, from which he recovered with difficulty through the help of John de St Giles, and in 1239 began the quarrel with the chapter of Lincoln, which lasted six years, and was only quelled by the decision of the pope himself. They claimed exemption from episcopal visitation, and spoke of the bishop's demanding what had never from the earliest times been the custom. He would not tolerate an *imperium in imperio*, a body of men joined by common interests, who declined to submit to his jurisdiction, and who might be in need of visitation and correction as much as any others. Full details are given in the bishop's letters of the progress of the quarrel, appeals to Canterbury and the Roman court were followed by excommunications on both sides, the chapter even condescending to exhibit a forged paper as to the history of the church and see of Lincoln. The question was at length settled by a personal appeal to Pope Innocent IV at Lyons. In a

bull of August 25, 1245, he decided almost all the points at issue in favour of the bishop, who lost no time in putting his powers into execution. Of his own view of the matter a very curious explanation is given in the letter or pamphlet sent to the chapter (epist. 127), where his right to visit them is proved by all kinds of mystical arguments and scriptural examples. In 1242, with the help of one Nicholas, a Greek, clerk of the abbey of St Alban's, he translated the *Treatments XII Patris christi*, which had been brought from Athens by John of Basingstoke. In 1243 occurred the serious quarrel with the chapter of Canterbury (the see being practically vacant, as Boniface was not yet consecrated) respecting the abbey of Badney, — the bishop deposing the abbot in spite of his appeal to Canterbury, and the monks in an especially solemn manner excommunicating the bishop. On receiving the letters from the convent, he threw them on the ground, in spite of the seal containing the effigy of St Thomas, and paid no attention whatever to the sentence. Both parties appealed to the pope, and an arrangement was made between them. In 1244, being one of a committee of twelve chosen to determine what answer should be given to the king's demand of a subsidy, his influence kept the members from being separately won over by the king's endeavours to make parties among them, and the council broke up without giving way to the royal demands. The same year his examination of Robert Passelew, who through the king's influence had been elected bishop of Chichester, though utterly unfit, caused the election to be annulled. On returning from Lyons we find Grosseteste evincing various commissions with which he was entrusted by the pope, urging on the archbishop of York the claims of the bishop of Cervera, endorsing and sending round the papal letters allowing Archbishop Boniface the revenues of all benefices in his province that should fall vacant within the next seven years till 10,000 marks should be collected, in order to free the see from its debts, and pressing on the bishops paying the subsidy demanded by the pope, in spite of the king's opposition. In this year (1248) he obtained a bull to prevent any of the Oxford scholars graduating in arts without passing through the usual examinations *secundum morem Parisensem*, and without having been approved by the bishop himself or one appointed by him. In 1247 he delivered an address vindicating the genuineness of the relic (a portion of our Lord's blood) presented by the king to Westminster. His visitation of his diocese, especially of the monasteries in it, and his superintendence of the studies of Oxford, which went on without interruption during these years, while inducing others of the bishops to follow his example, were not accomplished without serious troubles, embroiling him even with the king. Thus, in 1250, his visitation having proved that many of the religious houses had converted to their own uses certain possessions which belonged to the parishes, which were thus impoverished and left without resident priests, he procured a papal letter authorizing him to revoke what they had thus obtained, citing all the beneficed monks in his diocese to hear the letter. Those who had exemptions appealed to the pope, and Grosseteste again crossed the sea to lay the case before him. But the gold of the religious orders had been at Lyons before him, and the pope sent him away from his presence in confusion, hopelessly exclaiming against the power of money at the Roman court. He was not, however, downhearted, but busied himself in other affairs, and delivered before the pope and certain cardinals his celebrated sermon on the abuses of the papal court. Here he stayed till the end of September, and then returned in sad plight to England, almost thinking of resigning his see in despair. But he soon recovered from this, and pursued his visitation of the monasteries with still greater vigour, so as to be

accused by Matthew Paris of tyranny such as to make him be thought, "not severe, but rather austere and inhuman." In 1251 he was suspended by the pope in consequence of his refusing to admit an Italian ignorant of English to such benefice in his diocese. The suspension was short, as he officiated at Ely this year, on the dedication of the church founded by Richard of Cornwall, his position among the bishops being shown by his celebrating mass at the high altar. In 1252 he obtained a papal letter authorizing the appointment of vicars, and their payment out of the revenues of their livings, and in the same year his influence kept the bishops together in their resistance to the royal demands of a tenth of church revenues for three years granted by the pope, nominally for the king's accessions to his intended crusade. He had also this year a calculation made of the revenues of the foreigners in England, which amounted to more than 70,000 marks. In 1253 the pope ordered him to induce by provision his nephew Frederick di Lavagna into a canonry at Lincoln, the bishop's answer to the requisition sent to the papal commissioners (the archdeacon of Canterbury, and Innocent, the pope's notary), though of less importance than many of his other letters, has done more to make his fame popular and permanent than any of his works. He is very decided in refusing to institute the candidate for his unfitness, at the same time that he expresses the utmost incivility for the pope and the Roman see. The letter made the pope very angry, and he was only quelled by the advice of the cardinals, who spoke in the highest terms of the bishop's character and position. Grosseteste was present at the parliament in May, when the violators of Magna Charta were again excommunicated, not content with this, he had the sentence read in every parish in the diocese of Lincoln. In October he fell ill at his manor of Buckden, where he died on October 9th. He was buried on October 13th in Lincoln Cathedral, the archbishop performing the service and many other bishops assisting. Bells were said to have been heard in the air on the night of his death, and miracles to have taken place at his tomb. The pope is said to have expressed joy at his death, and to have desired to have his bones cast out of the church. The story of the pope's dream, that the bishop appeared to him and struck him in such a manner as to cause his death, shows what the popular estimation of the two was. It is perhaps not to be wondered at that the attempt to procure the canonization of the bishop in 1307 failed.

How great the personal influence of Bishop Grosseteste was may be chiefly learnt from his letters: he was the instructor of the king (e.g., in one of his letters on the value of the royal anointing), the friend of the queen, the tutor of Simon de Montfort's sons, his warmer and kinder at different times, the correspondent of Adam de Marisco, the referee of many as to spiritual difficulties. Of those who speak of him, one is especially struck by his courage, another by his universal knowledge, a third by his subtlety in interpreting scripture, a fourth by his frequent preaching. Even Matthew Paris, no favourable judge, warns into admiration in speaking of his character (*Chron. Maj.* v p. 408). The popularity of Grosseteste as an author is proved by the number of manuscripts remaining of his works, and from the fact that very few writers for the two centuries following his death do not contain quotations from *Amalvalensis*. His determination to root out all abuses is seen in his opposition to unjust demands of the king or the archbishop, to unfit nominees of the pope, indeed to the whole system of papal provisions. That he was of a hasty temper, and harsh and severe at times, is true, but no one ever more thoroughly tried to do his duty, probably few have effected more.





equivalent to "great") is the same as that of Hugo Grotius, with whom the Grotes would gladly have traced a relationship, but the evidence was wanting. George Grote's grandfather, Andreas (born in 1710), a merchant of Bremen, removed to England, and after some years of successful business joined Mr George Prescott in founding the banking house of "Grote, Prescott, & Company" (January 1, 1766). He was married twice. His eldest son by his second marriage, George (born in 1763), was married (in 1793) to Selina, daughter of the Rev Dr Peckwell, one of the counsellors of Huntingdon's chaplains, whose poetical is preserved in the vestry of the chapel at Chichester, where he ministered. Dr Peckwell was descended on the mother's side from the French Protestant family of De Blosset, who had left Touraine in consequence of the revocation of the edict of Nantes, and thus the historian, who was the son of George Grote and Selina Peckwell, had a share of that Huguenot blood which has been a rich source of intellectual as well as industrial life in England.

Like many other eminent men, George Grote owed much of his future intellectual greatness to his mother's careful training. Having a strong desire to see her son excel in learning, she taught him reading and writing herself, and even grounded him in the elements of Latin before he was sent to the grammar school at Sevenoaks, in his sixth year (1800). The four years spent there gave an earnest of his whole future life. In the language of his biographer, who has lately attained the end of a life inseparably interwoven with his, "he evinced a decided aptitude for study, being rarely found belittled with his tasks, and ranking habitually above boys of his age in the class to which he belonged." In his tenth year he was removed to the Charter-house, the headmaster of which, Dr Raine, had the honour of training, along with George Grote, Connop Thirlwall, Dean Waddington and his brother Horace, Sir Cresswell Cresswell, Sir Henry Hallcock, and other men of future distinction. Grote was not allowed to share the courses of most of his schoolfellows at a university, but this great privation was turned into a pre-eminent distinction by the resolution with which his own strong will and untiring industry supplied the loss. The supposed advantage of an early application to business led the father to take George into the bank at the age of sixteen. But his six years at the Charter house had not only imbued him with a strong taste for classical learning, but had supplied him with that motive to high culture, which forms the most convincing argument in its favour, and to which he remained faithful through a half century of educational disputes and heresies. It was not as an alternative to a life of business, but as its proper complement, that he chose and advocated ancient learning. "Looking forward," says his biographer, "to a commercial course of life, certain to prove uninteresting in itself, he resolved to provide for himself the higher resources of intellectual occupation." Engaged in the bank throughout the day, he devoted his early mornings and evenings to a systematic course of reading, of which the chief subjects were the ancient classics, history, metaphysics, and political economy, to the last of which he was attracted by the writings of David Ricardo, whose personal acquaintance he formed in 1817. To these studies he added the learning of German by the aid of a Lutheran clergyman, which, together with his knowledge of French and Italian, placed the stores of Continental scholarship within his reach. His chief recreation was music, and he learned to play the violoncello, to accompany his mother, who was a fine musician. Arrived at the age of manhood (in the winter of 1814-1815), he formed the acquaintance of the young lady who afterwards became his wife, devoted to and worthy of him, the very complement of his life, intellectual as well as social, and finally his biographer in a spirit of loving but

not indiscriminate admiration. This was Miss Harriet Lewin, the daughter of Mr Thomas Lewin, of Dorkley, in Kent, a gentleman of old family and independent fortune. She was born at Southampton, July 1, 1792, and was consequently nearly two years older than Grote. From causes which need not be related here, their intimacy was suspended for three years, during which Grote's studies made steady progress. To this period belongs his earliest literary composition, an essay on his favourite Lucretius, which still exists in MS. His letters also record the careful study of Aristotle, his final estimate of whom formed his last unfinished work. But the most interesting light is thrown on the method and course of his studies in the diary which he kept for Miss Lewin's information. This record bears witness, not only to the wide diversity of his studies in ancient and modern literature, philosophy, and political economy, but also to the fact that he read the authors themselves whom he wished to know,—read them as a whole, instead of merely reading what others had written about them.

An epoch, perhaps the most critical turning point of Grote's intellectual life, was formed by his introduction, through David Ricardo, to James Mill, who was then composing his metaphysical work entitled *An Analysis of the Human Mind*. Already attracted to this study, Grote became Mill's admiring disciple in mental and political philosophy. From this time he adopted the fundamental principles from which he never receded, of experience as the source of all knowledge, and utility as the foundation of morals. The views derived from Mill were confirmed by the teaching of Jeremy Bentham, and by intercourse with a band of young disciples, over whom the two philosophers wielded an unbounded influence. Among these John Stuart Mill began now to make his appearance as a boy of twelve years old. It is important to note the influence which the study of metaphysics exercised upon the development of Grote's intellectual character. To the general public he is chiefly known as a historian, but he was equally distinguished as a metaphysical philosopher. To the teaching of James Mill may also be traced his democratic principles and his zeal for freedom of thought, hardening into intolerance of all religious systems and their ministers. But, however they may have determined his course upon certain occasions, these antipathies never struck their root down into the real soil of his gentle and courteous nature.

In 1820, at the age of twenty-four, he was married to Miss Harriet Lewin. They lived at first at the banking house in Threadneedle Street. The confined situation soon told on Miss Grote's health, and the death of her only child, a week after its birth, was followed by a dangerous illness. It was at her bedside at Hampstead, during her slow recovery, that Grote composed the first work he published, an *Essay on Parliamentary Reform*, in reply to an article by Sir James Mackintosh in the *Edinburgh Review*, No 61 (1821). The pamphlet is a vigorous assertion of the broadest principles of popular representation, in opposition to a scheme of class representation sketched by the reviewer. It proclaimed Grote's adherence to those political views held by the party afterwards called the "philosophic radicals," and it strongly pleaded for the vote by ballot, of which he afterwards became the parliamentary advocate. The most important parts of this pamphlet were embodied in his later essay on the *Essentials of Parliamentary Reform* (1831), reprinted in his *Minor Works*.

In April 1822 Grote sent a vigorous letter to the *Morning Chronicle* in reply to Canning's speech against Lord John Russell's motion for reform. In the same year he spent much time upon some MSS of Jeremy Bentham, which the aged philosopher entrusted to his young disciple to put into a readable form. After carefully digesting and

arranging them, he published them anonymously in a small 8vo volume, entitled *Analysis of the Influence of Natural Religion on the Temporal Happiness of Mankind*, by Philip Beauchamp. Meanwhile the quiet course of life went on in Theocleous Street. The scanty leisure of each day was devoted to the joint studies of husband and wife, for "Mr. George Grote was habitually studious, after his fashion, under the direction of her husband, who laid great stress upon her cultivating the inductive vein of instruction—above all, logic, metaphysics, and politics, and she accordingly strove to master these subjects, out of deference to his wish, and in order to qualify herself to be associated with his intellectual trials and labours as time went on." Then pleasures were likewise in common, the wife, who was an accomplished musician, lent the violinello to accompany her husband, and he dropped his music in 1830. A circle of congenial minds frequented the house in Theocleous Street from 1832 to 1830. Within that circle society there was a narrower circle of students, who met there twice a week at half past eight in the morning for an hour or two's reading. Among others were John Stuart Mill, Charles Bullock, and John Arthur Roebuck. They read the most recent works on metaphysics and kindred subjects in the light of their adored teachers, Bentham and James Mill, beyond whom they believed all to be in Cimmerian darkness.

The year 1823 marks the epoch of the first conception of Grote's great work, and an earnest letter shows the spirit in which he approached it. On January 14th he writes—"I am at present engaged in the fabulous ages of Greece, which I find will be required to be illustrated by bringing together a large mass of analogical matter from other early histories, in order to show the entire uncertainty and worthlessness of tales to which early associations have so long familiarized all classical minds. I am quite amazed to discover the extraordinary goodness and facility with which men assert, believe, reassert, and re-believe. The weakness appears to be next to universal, and I really think that one ought to write on the walls of one's dressing-room the caution of the poet Epicharmus—

*Μῆτε, καὶ μὴδ' αὐτὸς αἰσθεῖς, ἄλλῃ τὰῖρα τὰν ὀφθαλμῶν*

The subject ever presents to his thoughts came up so often in the discussions with his friends as to suggest to his wife's sympathy and ambition for his fame the definite work of his future life. One day she said to him—"You are always studying the ancient authors whenever you have a moment's leisure, now here would be a fine subject for you to treat. Suppose you try your hand!" "The idea" (she adds) "proved acceptable to the young student, and, after reflecting for some time, he came to the resolution of entering upon the work." Henceforth this definite aim prevailed amidst the still wide range of reading which threw new light from all quarters upon the central object, and the mass of notes and extracts still preserved attest the diligence with which he prepared for it. Happily for himself and for the world, he was diverted from the work till he could resume it, not only with that clearer mental perspective in which a long meditated object appears when we return to it afresh, but with the enlarged experience of nearly twenty years occupied in practical politics and converse with statesmen, abroad as well as at home. Meanwhile he gave the world an earnest of his work in an exhaustive review of Mitford's *History of Greece* in the *Westminster Review* for April 1826,—one result of which was a letter from Mitford, clearly designating Grote as the historian of Greece, and inviting him to a visit which events never permitted him to pay.

From 1825 to 1827 Grote took part in the scheme of founding the "University of London" in Gower Street, with the management of which institution he became afterwards intimately connected.

As the political crisis of 1830 approached, public and private events conspired to draw Grote into the vortex of politics. The failure of his father's health gave him a new position in the bank, and in the spring of 1830 he was able to arrange for a visit to the Continent, which brought him into connexion with the liberal politicians of Paris on the eve of the revolution. An interesting record of the state of affairs and of the impressions of this visit are preserved in Mrs. Grote's *Life of Sir George*, published in 1860. The travellers were recalled in June by the illness of Grote's father, who died before their arrival, at the age of 70.

Thus, in his 38th year, George Grote, now the head of the family, found himself master of his own affairs, and of about £40,000 personal property, besides the family estates in Lincolnshire and Oxfordshire. His business and studies alike led him to fix his residence in London, and the first use he made of his wealth was to subscribe £500 to the revolutionary committee of the Hôtel de Ville, with an offer to come himself to Paris if his presence would be of any use. The pressure of business as his father's executor kept him, in spite of strong solicitations, out of any active part in the agitation for reform, but did not prevent the steady progress of the *History*, which Mrs. Grote writes (February 1, 1831), "must be given to the public before he can embark in any active business of a political kind." He refused an able invitation to stand for the city in 1831, but he made an able contribution to the argument in a statement of the *Essentials of Parliamentary Reform*, published this year, to which reference has already been made. His reluctance to enter parliament was overcome after the passing of the Reform Act in 1832, and, being returned at the head of the poll, he appeared as one of the members for the city of London in the first reformed parliament, which met on February 4, 1833. He at once gave notice of a motion for the vote by ballot in parliamentary elections, which he brought before the house on the 25th of April following. His speech on that occasion was prepared with great care, and displayed that cogent reason and calm earnest eloquence which marked all his efforts in debate. The substance of the argument, and a notice of his principal speeches in parliament, will be found in Professor Bain's sketch of his character and writings prefixed to his "minor works." Earnest as were his political convictions, and faithfully as he discharged the duties which he had undertaken, Grote's parliamentary career forms only an episode in his life, but an episode which contributed to refresh and qualify him for his main work. He sat in three successive parliaments, from 1833 to 1841, witnessing the gradual passage from the first triumph of reform to the Conservative reaction under Sir Robert Peel, and the steady decay of his own sect of philosophic radicalism, which never had a root in popular opinion. He was returned the last time by a bare majority of six, and his party numbered just the same figure. Charles Bullock said to him one evening "I see what we are coming to, Grote, in no very long time from this, you and I shall be left to 'tell' Moleworth."

During the eight years and a half of his parliamentary life, Grote kept up his varied reading, and formed a growing desire for a knowledge of physical science. But the staff of his mental diet, and his refuge from all meaner objects of thought, was still the same. In the weary intervals of attendance on parliament a Tauchnitz copy of Plato was ready in his pocket, and when snored up in the country during the vacation he writes—"A Greek book is the only refuge." His hospitalities expanded with his social position, and among his new friendships the one he most valued was that formed in 1836 with Mr. (afterwards Sir) George Cornewall Lewis, the letters exchanged with whom on various points in classics and philosophy enrich

the narrative of his *Life*. Among the other objects of his literary interest at this time was Sir William Molesworth's collected edition of the works of Hobbes, dedicated to Grote, whose review of the first two volumes in the *Spectator* (1839) is reprinted among the *Minor Works*.

During the whole period of Whig decay, and especially from the beginning of the present reign, Grote felt a declining interest in politics, and accordingly, on the dissolution in June 1841, he determined to retire from parliament. Thus at the age of forty-six he was set free to spend the remaining thirty years of his life in the work long prepared and contemplated. In half that period the *History of Greece* was finished, the remaining half was devoted to the two works on *Plato* and *Aristotle*, which made up the Hellenic "trilogy" of his life-long studies.

After a six months' holiday (1841-1842) for the long desired purpose of visiting Italy and studying the antiquities of Rome upon the spot, he returned to his business at the bank, and set vigorously to work on the new plan for the first two volumes of his *History*—reperusing the authorities, revising his notes, and rewriting the whole. The greater part of these two volumes was occupied with the first division of his subject, which was now for the first time severed from actual history, and placed in its proper mythical light, under the title of "Legendary Greece." The closing months of 1842 were employed in sending forth a sort of "first-fruit," in the form of a review of Niebuhr's *Græciſche Historie-Geschichte*, which appeared in the *Westminster Review* (May 1843) under the title of "Grecian Legends and Early History," and is reprinted in the *Minor Works*. His biographer states that, "this article, wherein the collected labors of Grote's long and assiduous studies on the subject found a vent, was written with uncommon zeal, and he anticipated with lively curiosity the effect it would produce over the learned world." It was received as a striking promise of the new light in which he was about to place the primeval ages of Grecian history. It is important to record an incidental remark, which shows that, amidst his uncompromising severance of legend from real history, Grote adhered to the great principle avowed alike by Herodotus and by Bæde "An historian is bound to produce the materials upon which he builds, be they never so fantastic, absurd, or incredible."

With the beginning of 1843, exactly ten years after the interruption caused by his entrance into parliament, the composition of the first volume for the press was vigorously begun, and at midsummer he further cleared his path by retiring from the banking-house of Prescott, Grote, & Company. While still at work upon the *History*, he published in the *Classical Museum* (1843) an important essay on ancient weights and measures, reviewing Boeckh's *Metrologische Untersuchungen*, which is reprinted among his *Minor Works*.

The first two volumes of the *History* were completed early in 1845, and published in March 1846. Their reception is well known, and the effect of their success upon Grote himself was thoroughly characteristic of the man—"From all sides congratulation and eulogy flowed in upon the author, inasmuch that he himself now began to feel something like confidence in the success of his long-cherished work. Thus I became" (writes Mrs Grote) "for once witness of a state of feeling on his part approaching to gratified self-love, which at times would pierce through that imperishable veil of modesty habitually present with him." The first volume and nearly half of the second are occupied with "Legendary Greece," the latter half of the second volume begins "Historical Greece," and consequently contains only a small portion of the real history. These volumes were reviewed with great praise by John Stuart Mill in the *Edinburgh Review*, and by Dean Milman in the *Quarterly Review*.

The success of the first two volumes incited Grote to prosecute the work with undiminished ardor, and such progress had been already made that the third and fourth volumes, bringing the narrative down to the battle of Marathon, and containing an account of Grecian poetry and philosophy in its earlier stages, appeared in the following year (1847). Two more volumes, the fifth and sixth, coming down to the eleventh year of the Peloponnesian war, were published in 1849. Those two volumes, together with the two preceding ones, were reviewed in the *Edinburgh Review* by Sir George Cornewall Lewis. The seventh and eighth volumes, which brought the Peloponnesian war to the end, and which contained the striking and original view of the Sophists and of Socrates, appeared in 1850. Two articles in the *Quarterly Review* upon this portion of the work, one upon the history, and the other upon Socrates and the Sophists, were written by Dean Stanley. The ninth and tenth volumes were published in 1853, the eleventh in 1853, and the last and twelfth in 1856, just ten years after the appearance of the first two volumes. The work closes with the generation contemporary with Alexander the Great, "an epoch," the historian observes, "from whence dates not only the extinction of Grecian political freedom and self-action, but also the decay of productive genius, and the desolament of that consummate literary and rhetorical excellence which the 4th century B.C. had seen exhibited in Plato and Demosthenes."

The peculiar merits of Grote as an historian are discussed at length by the writer of the present notice in a review of the whole work in the *Quarterly Review* in 1866. It is sufficient to state here that the quality in which he surpassed all his predecessors in Grecian history, and which achieved for him a success that can never be undone or superseded, lies in his placing his whole subject in the full light of historic truth apart from partial judgments, looking at the actions of men from their own points of view and not only from ours, and having constant regard to those ethical principles of human nature which his twofold training as a philosopher and politician qualified him to estimate. Many of his details may be disproved and his judgments reversed, but his work will last for ever. The opinion of scholars may be summed up in Bishop Thirlwall's "hearty congratulations on the completion of this glorious monument of learning, genius, and thought, to which I believe no other literature can exhibit a parallel."

An episode during the progress of the *History* is characteristic of the wide range of political observation which Grote brought to bear upon his work. In the Swiss dissensions during 1847, which led to the war of the "Sonderbund," he saw so close a resemblance to the conflicts of the Greek republics that he resolved to study the question on the spot. His *Lettres* on the subject, which originally appeared in the *Spectator* newspaper, were collected into a volume, which was reprinted in 1876 by Miss Grote, with the addition of a letter written by him to M. de Tocqueville after the termination of the war.

On the completion of the *History*, Grote contributed to the *Edinburgh Review* (1856) a criticism of Sir George Cornewall Lewis's *Enquiry into the Credibility of the early Roman History*, which is reprinted in his *Minor Works*, a most interesting study of the points in which the two scholars agreed and differed, Grote stopping short of his friend's scepticism in some cases.

After a well-earned holiday on the Continent in the summer of 1856, Grote set steadily to work upon his *Plato*, which occupied him nine years, and appeared in 1865 in three volumes 8vo, under the title of *Plato and the other Companions of Sokrates*, when the author had completed his

seventieth year. This work, he remarks, was "intended as a sequel and supplement to his *History of Greece*." After giving an exhaustive review of early Greek philosophy, from Thales to Democritus, and an account of the life of Plato, of the Platonic Canon, and of Platonic compositions generally, he analyses at great length each of the dialogues, with illustrative remarks, unfolding a number of his own philosophical views. The work concludes, with two chapters, one on the "Other Companions of Sokrates," and another on "Xenophon."

On the completion of this work, Grote wrote in the *Westminster Review* (1866) an elaborate criticism of John Stuart Mill's *Examination of Sir William Hamilton's Philosophy*. "At the same time, though in his seventy-first year, he set to work upon Aristotle, hopeful in the continuance of those powers which he thus described three years later:—'My power of doing work is sadly diminished as to quantity, as my physical powers in walking are, but as to quality (both perspicacity, memory, and suggestive association bringing up new communications), I am sure that my intellect is as good as it ever was,' and all who knew him well can attest the accuracy of this judgment. But he did not live to complete the third portion of his ' trilogy,' though he had been studying the Aristotelian treatises from his earliest manhood. The fragment of his Aristotelian labours was published in 1872, the year after his death, in two volumes, edited by Professors Bain and Robertson. Besides the life of Aristotle and the canon of his works, these volumes are chiefly occupied with an examination of the logical treatises of the great philosopher, but the editors have been able to give, from the MSS of the author and from the contributions which he made to Professor Bain's *Manual of Mental and Moral Science*, some account of Aristotle's other works. There are also two valuable essays on the ethics and politics of Aristotle, found among the author's MSS after the publication of Aristotle, which were printed in 1876 in the *Fragments on Ethical Subjects by the late George Grote*.

During the composition of the *Plato* and the *Aristotle* Grote resided in London, at 19 Savile Row, and in two country houses, which he occupied in succession, first at Burrow Green in Kent from 1859 to 1863 (where Jeremy Bentham had once lived), and afterwards at Shere among the Surrey hills, in which places his day was divided between regular work, exercise as regular, and the society of congenial friends. Many a work of social duty and benevolence found prompt performance, and he paid unremitting attention to the business of his three favourite institutions—the University of London, University College, and the British Museum, of which last he became a trustee on the death of Henry Hallam in 1860. But his connection with the two former bodies was so close, and he made that administration so completely the chief business of his life after his literary works, that a few words upon the subject are necessary.

It has been already mentioned that he took an active part in the foundation of the university of London in Cowes Street. He was a member of the original council of that institution from 1827 to 1831, from which he retired upon entering parliament. This institution exchanged its name for that of "University College" before the foundation in 1836 of the "University of London," which now conducts its business in Burlington House. Grote joined again the council of University College in 1849, and from that time till his death he took a leading part in the administration of its affairs. He became treasurer in 1860 and president in 1868, on the death of Lord Brougham. Grote was one of the seven new members added by the crown to the senate of the "University of London" in 1860. From 1862, when he was elected vice-chancellor, on the

resignation of Sir John Slaw Stewie, he became the leading spirit of the university.

In both University College and the university of London he was the constant advocate of the threefold cord of knowledge—literature, philosophy, science,—which he held to be united by tampering with any one of them,—earnestly upholding what he regarded as sound metaphysics, supporting the establishment of degrees in science, and opposing, to the last of his life and strength, the omission of Greek from the examination for matriculation. He left his library to the university, and he showed his attachment to the college and to metaphysical studies by bequeathing to it a sum of £6000 for the endowment of a professorship of mental philosophy. He continued to labour in the discharge of his duties to these institutions, even when fast gone in the malady which appeared in 1870, and carried him off on the 18th of June 1871, in his seventy-seventh year. He found his fit resting place in Westminster Abbey, just beneath Camden's monument, and near Macaulay's grave. His portrait by Mr. Millais, taken the year before his death, is preserved in the senate-room of the university of London.

Grote's great literary merits received due and fitting acknowledgment from his contemporaries. He was elected a fellow of the Royal Society, received from the university of Oxford the honorary degree of D.C.L., and from that of Cambridge the honorary degree of LL.D., was made a foreign member of the French Institute in the place of Macaulay, and lastly was offered a peerage by Mr. Gladstone in 1869, an honour which he declined. His personal character cannot be better described than in the words of his friend Professor Bain—"In the depths of his character there was a fund of sympathy, generosity, and self-denial rarely equalled among men, on the exterior, his courtesy, affability, and delicate consideration for the feelings of others were indelibly impressed upon every beholder, yet this amiability of demeanour was never used to mislead, and in no case relaxed his determination for what he thought right. Fanciful and exact in his engagements, he inspired a degree of confidence and respect which acted most beneficially on all the institutions and trusts that he took a share in administering, and his loss to them was a positive calamity."

The authorities for Grote's life are—*The Personal Life of George Grote*, by Miss Grote, 1873, and *The Great Remains of his Intellectual Character, His Plans, and Speeches* (170 pages), by Prof. Bain, prefixed to *Grote's Athens* (1874).

The following is a list of Grote's works, most of which have been noticed in the course of the preceding memoir:—*A History of Greece*, in 12 vols. 8vo, 1816–1826, reprinted in 1862 in 8 vols. 8vo, in 1909 in 12 vols. 12mo, and lately in 1871 in 10 vols. 8vo, *Plato and the Other Companions of Sokrates*, in 3 vols. 8vo, 1857, reprinted in the same form in 1867, and a third time in 1871, *Aristotle*, edited by Alexander Bain and G. Coom Robertson, 2 vols. 8vo, 1872, *The Athenian Republic of George Grote*, edited by Professor Bain, 1871, containing—(1) "Elements of Parliamentary Reform," (2) "Notes of Sir William Molesworth's edition of the *Politics of Aristotle*," (3) "Grecian Legends and Early History," (4) "Review of Buckle on Ancient Civilisation, Coins, and Measures," (5) "The Annual Address in commemoration of the twenty-first Anniversary of the London Scientific Institution," (6) "Address on delivering the prize at University College," (7) "Review of Sir G. C. Lewis on the Credibility of Early Roman History," (8) "Platonic Doctrines respecting the Rotation of the Earth, and Aristotle's Commitment upon that Doctrine," (9) "Review of John Stuart Mill on the Philosophy of Sir William Hamilton," (10) "Papers on Philosophy," *Seven Letters concerning the Politics of Aristotelius, printed for the Authors, in the Civil War in 1817*, 1817, reprinted in 1876, with the addition of an unpublished letter written by the author to M. de Tocqueville shortly after the termination of the war, *Fragments on Ethical Subjects*, 1876 (a selection from his posthumous papers).

Mrs. Grote survived her husband upwards of seven years, and died on the 29th of December 1878, at her residence in Shire. She was one of the most remarkable

Englishwomen of the present century. Endowed in youth with great personal beauty, which matured into a grand expression and noble presence in advanced age, she possessed intellectual powers of the highest order, combined with a lofty sense of duty and the strictest regard to truth. The chief events of her life have been already related in the preceding notice of her husband. Her own writings, besides the biography of Mr Grote, are *A Memoir of the Life of An Schaffer* (1860), and *Collected Papers (original and printed) in Prose and Verse* (1863), of which the most important are a "Review of M. Lavigne's Essay on the Rural Economy of England," "Case of the Poor against the Rich correctly stated," a "Review of Thomas Moore's Life and Works," and the "History of East Bunkham." But though she wrote lucidly and powerfully, it has been well observed by one of her friends that "her writings fail to give a just idea of the irresistible fascination of her conversation. That she never succeeded in fully transmitting to paper, and it remains a thing of unapproachable excellence and tender memory, only understood by those to whom it offered the highest mental enjoyment" (w. s. r.).

GROTEFEND, GEORG FRIEDRICH (1778-1853), to whose presence and ingenuity the decipherment of the cuneiform inscriptions originally due, was born at Münden in Hanover, June 9, 1778. He was educated partly in his native town, partly at Hildel, where he remained till 1793, when he entered the university of Göttingen, and there became the friend of Heyne, Tychoen, and Heesen. Heyne's recommendation procured for him an assistant tutorship in the Göttingen gymnasium in 1797. While there he published his work *De Persarum aue Scriptura Veteris* (1799), which first brought him into notice, and led to his appointment in 1803 as professor of the gymnasia of Frankfurt-on-the-Main, and shortly afterwards as professor. Grotefend was best known during his lifetime as a Latin and Italian philologist, though the attention he paid to his own language is shown by his *Anfangsgründe der deutschen Poesie*, published in 1815, and his foundation of a society for investigating the German tongue in 1817. In 1821 he became director of the gymnasium at Hanover, a post which he retained till his retirement in 1849, four years before his death. In 1823-4 appeared his revised edition of Wenzel's Latin grammar, in two volumes, followed by a similar grammar for the use of schools in 1826, in 1835-8 a systematic attempt to explain the fragmentary remains of the Umbrian dialect, entitled *Reste einer Sprache Umbro-etrusker auscriptus antiquae enodatis* (in eight parts), and in 1838 a work of similar character upon Oscean (*Reste einer Sprache Osce*). In the same year he published an important memoir on the coins of Bactria, under the name of *Die Münzen der griechischen, parthischen, und indoskythischen Könige von Bactrien und den Ländern am Indus*. He soon, however, returned to his favourite subject, and brought out a work in five parts, *Zur Geographie und Geschichte von Altindien* (1840-3). Previously, in 1836, he had written a preface to Wagenfeld's translation of the epicurus *Stoichmion* of Philo Byblius, which professed to have been discovered in the preceding year in the Portuguese convent of Santa Maria de Matinhao. But it was in the East rather than in the West that Grotefend did the work which has given him a lasting name. The mysterious cuneiform inscriptions of Persia had for some time been attracting attention in Europe, exact copies of them had been published by the elder Niebuhr, who lost his eyesight over the work, and Grotefend's friend, Tychoen of Rostock, believed that he had ascertained the characters in the column now known to be Pesian to be alphabetic. At this point Grotefend took the matter up. His first discovery was communicated to the Royal Society of Göttingen in 1800, and reviewed by Tychoen two years

afterwards. In 1815 he gave an account of it in Heesen's great work on ancient history, and in 1837 published his *Neue Bestimmung der Erleuterung der persopolitanschen Keilschrift*. Three years later appeared his *Neue Bestimmung der Erleuterung der babylonischen Keilschrift*. His discovery may be summed up as follows:—(1) that the Pesian inscriptions contain three different forms of cuneiform writing, so that the decipherment of the one would give the key to the decipherment of the others, (2) that the characters of the Pesian column are alphabetic and not syllabic, (3) that they must be read from left to right, (4) that the alphabet consists of forty letters, including signs for long and short vowels, and (5) that the Persopolitan inscriptions are written in Zand (which, however, is not the case), and must be ascribed to the age of the Achaemenian princes. The process whereby Grotefend arrived at these conclusions is a prominent illustration of persevering genius. History made it clear that the monuments to which the inscriptions were attached belonged to Cyrus and his successors, whose names ought accordingly to be found in them. By a comparison of texts Grotefend determined the groups of characters by which these names were expressed, and by further observing what characters were common to the several groups, and of how many characters each group consisted, he was able to assign the conjectural values of D, U, N, Z, U, S, C, I, T, to Darius to the letters of a frequently recurring one. The native pronunciation of Darius was furnished by Strabo and the Old Testament. The names of Xerxes and Artaxerxes were next deciphered, and the phonetic powers of a good many characters were thus ascertained. The correctness of the decipherment was verified, not only by the fact that the right letters were always found in the right places in each name, but also by the discovery that the word which invariably followed each name, and therefore presumably meant "king," was read by the new alphabet, presented the same form as the Zand term for "monarch." It was clear that a solid basis had been laid for the interpretation of the Pesian inscriptions, and all that remained was to work out the results of Grotefend's brilliant discovery, a task ably performed by Burnouf, Lassen, and Rawlinson. Grotefend died the 16th of December 1853.

GROTIUS, HUGO (1583-1645), in his native country Huig van Groot, but known to the rest of Europe by the Latinized form of the name, was one of the famous men of the 17th century, almost equally eminent in public services and as a writer. He was born at Delft on Easter day, 10th April 1583. The Grooti were a branch of a family of distinction, which had been noble in France, but had removed to the Low Countries more than a century before. Then French name was De Combot, and this cadet branch had taken the name of Groot on the marriage of Hugo's great-grandfather with a Dutch heiress. The father of Hugo was a lawyer in considerable practice, who had four times served the office of burgomaster of Leyden, and was one of the three curators of the university of that place.

In the annals of precocious genius there is no greater prodigy on record than Hugo Grotius, who was able to make good Latin verses at nine, was ripe for the university at twelve, and at fifteen edited the encyclopedic work of Maecianus Capella. At Leyden he was much noticed by J. J. Scaliger, whose habit it was to engage his young friends in the editing of some classical text, less for the sake of the book so produced than as a valuable education for themselves. At fifteen Grotius accompanied Count Justin of Nassau, and the grand pensionary Oldenbarnevelt on their special embassy to the court of France. After a year probably spent in that country in acquiring the language and making acquaintance with the leading

men, Grotius returned home. He took the degree of doctor of law at Leyden, and entered on practice as an advocate.

Notwithstanding his successes in his profession, which seemed to open the most brilliant career to his ambition, he was in secret hankering after the pleasures of literature. In 1600 he edited the remains of Aianus, with the versions of Cicero, Germanicus, and Avianus. Of the *Oeconomicus* Scaliger says—"A better taste than that which Grotius has given, it is impossible to give," but it is probable that Scaliger had himself been the reviser. Grotius vied with the Latinists of his day in the composition of Latin verses. Some lines on the siege of Ostend were greatly admired, and spread his fame beyond the circle of the learned. He wrote three dramas in Latin.—*Chloëus Patiens*, *Sophomphaneas*, on the story of Joseph and his brethren, and *Adrianus Exul*, a production which is still remembered as having given hints to Milton. The *Sophomphaneas* was translated into Dutch by Vonk, and into English by Francis Goldsmith (1663), the *Chloëus Patiens* into English by George Sandys (1640).

In 1603 the United Provinces, desiring to transmit to posterity some account of their struggle with Spain, determined to appoint a historiographer. Several candidates appeared, Dominicus Bandius of course among them. But the choice of the states fell upon Grotius, though only twenty years of age, and not having offered himself for the post.

There was some talk at this time in Paris of calling Grotius to be librarian of the royal library. But it was never meant seriously. It was a ruse of the Jesuit party, who wished to persuade the public that the opposition to the appointment of Isaac Casaubon did not proceed from theological motives, since they were ready to appoint a Protestant in the person of Grotius.

His next preferment was that of advocate general of the fisc for the provinces of Holland and Zealand. This was followed by his marriage, in 1608, to Mary van Renssberg, a lady of family in Zealand, a woman of great capacity and noble disposition, who proved every way worthy to be the wife of Grotius.

He had already passed from occupation with the classics to studies more immediately connected with his profession. In the winter of 1601 he composed a treatise entitled *De jure prædæ*. This treatise he did not publish, and the MS. of it remained unknown to all the biographers of Grotius till 1868, when it was brought to light, and printed at the Hague under the auspices of Professor Fruin. It discovers to us that the principles and the plan of the celebrated *De jure belli*, which was not composed till 1625, more than twenty years after, had already been conceived by a youth of twenty-one. It has always been a question among the biographers what it was that determined Grotius, when an exile in Paris in 1625, to that particular subject, and various explanations have been offered, among others we have been referred to a casual suggestion of Paresce in a letter of early date. The discovery of the MS. of the *De jure prædæ* discloses to us the whole history of Grotius's ideas, and shows us that from youth upwards he had steadily read and meditated in one direction, that, namely, of which the famous *De jure belli* was the mature product. In the *De jure prædæ* of 1604 we have much more than the germ of the later treatise *De jure belli*. Its main principles, and the whole system of thought implied in the latter, are anticipated in the earlier work. The arrangement even is the same. The chief difference between the two treatises is one which twenty years' experience in affairs could not but bring,—the substitution of more cautious and guarded language, less dogmatic affirmation, more allowance for exceptions and deviations. The *Jus prædæ*

was an addition introduced first in the later work, an insertion which is the cause of not a little of the confused arrangement which has been found fault with in the *De jure belli*.

We learn further from the *De jure prædæ* that Grotius was originally determined to this subject, not by any speculative intellectual interest, but by a special occasion presented by his professional engagements. He was retained by the Dutch East India Company as their advocate. The company had been formed for the peaceful purposes of commerce, but had found itself compelled by the aggressions of the Portuguese to appeal for aid to force. One of their captains, Heemskerk, had captured a rich Portuguese galleon in the Straits of Malacca. The right of a private company to make prizes was hotly contested in Holland, and denied by the strict religiousists, especially the Mennonites, who considered all war unlawful. Grotius undertook to prove that Heemskerk's prize had been lawfully captured. In doing this he was led to investigate the grounds of the lawfulness of war in general. Such was the casual origin of a book which long enjoyed such celebrity that it used to be said, with some exaggeration indeed, that it had founded a new science.

A short treatise which was printed in 1609, Grotius says without his permission, under the title of *Mare Liberum*, is nothing more than a chapter—the 12th—of the *De jure prædæ*. It was necessary to Grotius's defence of Heemskerk that he should show that the Portuguese pretence that Eastern waters were their private property was untenable. Grotius maintains that the ocean is free to all, and cannot be appropriated by any one nation. The occasional character of this piece explains the fact that at the time of its appearance it made no sensation. It was not till many years afterwards that the jealousies between England and Holland gave importance to the novel doctrine broached in the tract by Grotius, a doctrine which Schöten set himself to refute in his *Mare clausum*, 1633.

Equally due to the circumstances of the time was his small contribution to constitutional history entitled *De antiquitate reipublicæ Batavæ* (1610). In this he vindicates, on grounds of right, prescriptive and natural, the revolt of the United Provinces against the sovereignty of Spain.

On the death of Elias Oldenbarneveldt, Grotius, though only thirty, succeeded him as procurator of the city of Rotterdam. Foreseeing the troubles impending from the growing theological fermentation, he made the stipulation that he should be irremovable by the municipal authorities—a stipulation certain not to be respected should it ever be wanted for his protection.

In 1613 he formed one of a deputation to the court of England, for the purpose of adjusting those differences which were already beginning to arise between the two young maritime powers, and which gave rise afterwards to a naval struggle disastrous to Holland. He was received by James with every mark of distinction due to his rising reputation. He also cultivated the acquaintance of the Anglican ecclesiastics Overall and Andrewes, and was much in the society of the celebrated scholar Isaac Casaubon, with whom he had been in correspondence by letter for many years. Though the mediating views in the great religious conflict between Catholics and Protestants, by which Grotius was afterwards known, had been arrived at by him by independent reflexion, yet it could not but be that he would be confirmed in them by finding in England a developed school of thought of the same character as only in existence. How highly Casaubon esteemed Grotius appears from a letter of his to Daniel Heinsius, dated London, 13th April 1613. "I cannot say how happy I esteem myself in having seen so much of one so truly great

as Grotius. A wonderful man! This I knew him to be before I had seen him, but the rare excellence of that divine genius no one can sufficiently feel who does not see his face, and hear him speak. Piety is stamped on his features, his conversation savours of true piety and profound learning. It is not only upon me that he has made this impression, all the pious and learned to whom he has been introduced have felt the same towards him, the king especially so!"

After Grotius's return from England the exasperation of theological parties in Holland gradually rose to such a pitch that it became clear that an appeal to force would sooner or later be made. The *Stadtholder* must have foreseen, but he could hardly have anticipated that he himself would be one of the first and principal victims. Grotius was not sufficient of a philosopher to rise above the level of a mere theological wrangle. But from a natural moderation of temper he sought to find some mean term in which the two hostile parties of Remonstrants and Antiremonstrants, or as they were subsequently called Arminians and Gomartians (see REMONSTRANTS), might agree. A form of edict drawn by Grotius was published by the states, recommending mutual toleration, and forbidding ministers in the pulpit from handling the disputed dogmas. To the orthodox Calvinists the word toleration was insupportable. They had the populace on their side. This fact determined the *stadtholder*, Maurice of Nassau, to support the orthodox party—a party to which he inclined the more readily that Oldenbarnevelt, the grand pensionary, the man whose uprightness and abilities he most detested, sided with the Remonstrants.

In 1618 Prince Maurice set out on a sort of pacific campaign, disbanding the civic guards in the various cities of Guelders, Holland, and Zeeland, and occupying the places with troops on whom he could rely. The states of Holland sent a commission, of which Grotius was chairman, to Utrecht, with the view of strengthening the hands of their friends, the Remonstrant party, in that city. Feudle plans were formed, but not carried into effect, for shutting the gates upon the *stadtholder*, who entered the city with troops on the night of 28th July 1618. There were conferences in which Grotius met Prince Maurice face to face, and taught him that Oldenbarnevelt was not the only man of capacity in the ranks of the Remonstrants whom he had to fear. On the early morning of 31st July the prince's *coup d'état* against the liberties of Utrecht and of Holland was carried out, the civic guard was disarmed,—Grotius and his colleagues saving themselves by a precipitate flight. But it was only a reprieve. The grand pensionary, Oldenbarnevelt, the leader of the Remonstrant party, Grotius, and Hoogebout were arrested by order of the *stadtholder*, brought to trial, and condemned,—Oldenbarnevelt to death, and Grotius to imprisonment for life and confiscation of his property. In June 1617 he was untried in the fortress of Lovestein near Goetum. His confinement was rigorous, but after a time his wife obtained permission to share his captivity, on the condition that if she came out, she should not be suffered to return.

Grotius had now before him, at thirty-six, no prospect but that of a lifelong captivity. He did not abandon himself to despair, but sought refuge in returning to the classical pursuits of his youth. Several of his translations (into Latin) from the Greek tragedians and other writers, made at this time, have been printed. They are without any philological value, and only prove his taste and facility in the classical languages. "The Muses," he writes to Voss, "were now his consolation, and appeared more amiable than ever."

The address and ingenuity of Madame Grotius at length devised a mode of escape. It had grown into a custom to send, at stated intervals, the books which he had done with,

in a chest, along with his linen to be washed at Goetum. For many months the wardens of the fortress were very exact in searching the chest. But never finding anything but books and linen they grew careless, and began to let the chest pass without opening it. Madame Grotius, perceiving this, prevailed on her husband to allow himself to be shut up in it at the usual time. The two soldiers who carried the chest out complained that it was so heavy "there must be an Arminian in it." "These are indeed," said Madame Grotius, "Arminian books in it." The chest was carried by canal to Goetum. When it came there they wanted to put it on a sledge, but the maid telling the boyman there was some little things in it, it was put on a horse, and so carried to the house of a friend, where it was opened, and Grotius released. He was then dressed up like a mason with hod and trowel, and so conveyed in disguise over the frontier. His first place of refuge was Antwerp, from which he proceeded to Paris, where he arrived in April 1621. In October he was joined by his wife. There he was presented to the king, Louis XIII., and a pension of 3000 livres conferred upon him. French pensions were easily granted, all the more so as they were never paid. Grotius was now reduced to great straits. He had not the means of procuring the bare necessities of life. His family was a growing one, and it was with difficulty that he procured them clothes. His relations in Holland sent him occasionally small remittances in money, clothes, or Dutch butter. He looked about for any opening through which he might earn a living. There was talk of something in Denmark, or he would settle in Spain, and practice in the court there. Some little relief he got through the intervention of D'Aligre, the new chancellor, who procured a royal mandate which enabled Grotius to draw, not all, but a large part of his pension. In 1623 the president Henri de Mesme lent him his chateau of Balagni near Sens (dep. Yonne), and there Grotius passed the spring and summer of that year. De Thou gave him facilities to borrow books from the superb library formed by his father.

Under these circumstances the *De jure belli et pacis* was composed. The logographers are naturally astonished by the fact that a work of such immense reading, consisting in great part of quotation, could have been written in little more than a year. The achievement would have been, not wonderful, but impossible, but for the fact above mentioned that Grotius had with him the first draft of the work made in 1604. He had also got his brother William, when he was reading his classics, to mark down all the passages which touched upon law, public or private. In March 1625 the printing of the *De jure belli*, which had taken four months, was completed, and the edition despatched to the fairs at Frankfurt. His own honorarium as author consisted of 200 copies, of which, however, he had to give away many to friends, to the king, the principal courts, the papal nuncio, &c. What remained he sold for his own profit, at the price of a crown each, but the sale did not recoup him his outlay. But though his book brought him no profit it brought him reputation, so widely spread, and of such long endurance, as no other legal treatise has ever enjoyed.

Grotius naturally hoped that his fame would soften the hostility of his foes, and that his country would recall him to her service. In this he was disappointed. Theological rancour prevailed over all other sentiments. After some fruitless attempts to re-establish himself in Holland, Grotius was fain to accept service under the crown of Sweden, in the capacity of ambassador to the court of France. He was not very successful in negotiating the treaty on behalf of the Protestant interest in Germany, Richelieu having a special dislike to him. He never enjoyed the confidence



of the court to which he was accredited, and flattered away his influence in disputes about precedence, which seem little worthy of his reputation.

In 1615 he demanded and obtained his recall. He was received at Stockholm with all the honours due to him. But neither the climate nor the tone of the court suited him, and he demanded permission to leave. He was driven by a storm on the coast near Dantzic. He got as far as Rostock, where he found himself very ill. Stockman, a Scotch physician who was sent for, thought it was only weakness, and that rest would restore the patient. But Grotius sank rapidly, and died on 29th August 1645.

Grotius was a man of varied interests and accomplishments, combining a wide circle of general knowledge with a profound study of one branch of law. History, theology, jurisprudence, politics, classics, poetry—all these fields he cultivated, and has left numerous works in each kind.

His commentaries on the Scriptures were the first application on an extensive scale of the principle affirmed by Scaliger, that, namely, of interpretation by the rules of grammar, without its dogmatic assumptions. Grotius's philological skill, however, was not sufficient to enable him to work up to this ideal.

As in many other points Grotius inevitably recalls to us Erasmus, so he does in his attitude towards the great schism. Grotius was indeed a man of profound religious sentiment, which Erasmus was not, but he had an indifference to dogma equal to that of Erasmus, although his disregard sprang from another source. Erasmus felt the contempt of a man of letters for the barbarous dissonance of the monkish wrangle. Grotius was animated by an ardent desire for peace and concord. He thought that a basis for reconciliation of Protestant and Catholic might be found in a common piety, combined with reticence upon discrepancies of doctrinal statement. His *De veritate religionis Christiane* (1627), a presentation of the evidences, is so written as to form a code of common Christianity, irrespective of sect. The little treatise diffused itself rapidly over Christendom, gaining rather than losing popularity in the 18th century. It became the classical manual of apologetics in Protestant colleges, and was translated for missionary purposes into Arabic (by Pococke, 1660), Persian, Chinese, &c. His *Via ad evan-gelium pacem ecclesiasticam* (1642) was a detailed proposal of a scheme of accommodation. Of course, like all men of moderate and mediating views, he was charged by both sides with vacillation. An Amsterdam minister, James Leuwent, published his *Grotius pacem* (1642), and it was continually being announced from Paris that Grotius had "gone over." Hallam, who has collected all the passages from Grotius's letters in which the prejudices and narrow tenets of the Reformed clergy are condemned, thought he had a "bias towards popery" (*Lit. of Europe*, ii. 312). The true interpretation of Grotius's mind appears to be an indifference to dogmatic propositions, produced by a profound sentiment of piety. He rose above the separatist bigotry of the vulgar theologian, but did not ascend into that philosophical region in which dogma is transcended and dissolved. He approached parties as a statesman approaches them, as facts which have to be dealt with, and governed, not suppressed in the interests of some one of their number.

His editions and translations of the classics were either juvenile exercises prescribed by Scaliger, or "lusty poetical," the amusement of vacant hours. Grotius read the classics as a humanist, for the sake of their contents, not as a professional scholar.

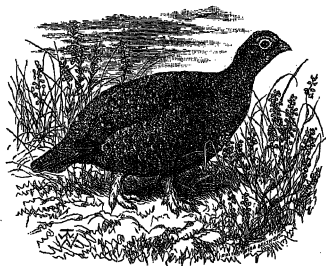
His *Annals of the Low Countries* was begun as an official duty while he held the appointment of historiographer, and was being continued and retouched by him to the last. It was not published till 1657, by his sons Peter and Cornelius

But the high reputation which Grotius attained in his lifetime, though it rests in part, like that of Erasmus, on the diversity of his accomplishments and the comprehensiveness of his literary work, had also a scientific basis in a professional specialty. Grotius was a great jurist, and his *De jure belli et pacis* (Paris, 1625), though not by any means the first attempt in modern times to ascertain the principles of jurisprudence, went far more fundamentally into the discussion than any one had done before him. The title of the work was so far misleading that the *jus belli* was a very small part of his comprehensive scheme. In his treatment of this narrow question he had the works of Albericus Gentili (1588) and Ayala (1579) before him, and has acknowledged his obligations to them. But it is in the larger questions to which he opened the way that the merit of Grotius comes out. His was the first attempt to obtain a principle of right, and a basis for society and government, outside the church or the Bible. The distinction between religion on the one hand and law and morality on the other is not indeed clearly conceived by Grotius, but he wrestles with it in such a way as to make it easy for those who followed him to seize it. The law of nature is unalterable, God Himself cannot alter it any more than He can alter a mathematical axiom. This law has its source in the nature of man as a social being, and it would be vain even were there no God, or if God did not interfere in the government of the world. These positions, though Grotius's eloquent temper did not allow him to rely unreservedly upon them, yet, even in the partial application they find in his book, entitle him to the honour of being held the founder of the modern science of the law of nature and nations. The *De jure* exerted little influence on the practice of belligerents, yet its publication was an epoch in the science. "The elegance of his diction," says Bluntschli, "the pearls from classical antiquity with which he adorned his pages, the temper of humanity which pervaded his arguments, his effort to mitigate the horrors of the Thirty Years' War in the midst of which he wrote, and the warmth of his general sympathy for a moral as opposed to a material order, enlisted men's hearts on the side of his reasoning, while the deficiencies of his doctrine were not as yet detected." These defects are probably now, at 250 years' distance of time, more palpable than the merits of the work. But only in the heat and impetuosity of irresponsible periodical criticism could it be said, as De Quincy has said, that the book is equally divided between "empty tautologies and time-serving Dutch falsehoods." For a sober judgment and a brief abstract of the contents of the *De jure*, the reader is referred to Bluntschli, *Geschichte des allgemeinen Staatsrechts* (Munich, 1861). A fuller analysis, and some notice of the predecessors of Grotius, will be found in Helly, *Étude sur le droit de la guerre de Grotius* (Paris, 1875). The writer, however, with the usual acquaintance of Frenchmen with everything which goes on outside France, has never heard of the *De jure pacis*, published in 1669. Hallam, *Lit. of Europe*, ii. p. 513, has an abstract done with his usual conventional pains. Duguid Stewart (*Collected Works*, i. 370) has dwelt upon the confusion and defects of Grotius's theory. Mackintosh (*Miscell. Works*, p. 160) has defended Grotius, affirming that his work "is perhaps the most complete that the world has yet owed, at so early a stage in the progress of any science, to the genius and learning of one man."

The chief writings of Grotius have been named in the course of this article. For a complete bibliography of his works, published and unpublished, the reader is referred to *Handb. of Grotius*, *Grotius manuscriptorum*, Delit, 1727, which also contains a full bibliography. Of this Latin list, De Bary published a translation in French, 2 vols. 8vo, Paris, 1762. Other lists are—Van Thunick, *Historie van het Leven H. de Groot*, 2 vols. 8vo, Dordrecht, 1727; Von Iden, *Handb. Grotius nach seinen Schriften und*



exclusively, when used alone, to the *Tetrao scoticus* of Linnaeus, the *Lagopus scoticus* of modern systematists—more particularly called in English the Red Grouse, but not a century ago almost invariably spoken of as the Moor-fowl or Moor-game. The effect which this species is supposed to have on the British legislature, and therefore on history, is well known, for it is the common belief that parliament in these days always rises when the season for Grouse-shooting begins; but even of old time it seems to have excited on one occasion a curious kind of influence, for we may read in the *Orkneyinga Saga* (ed. Jones, p. 366; ed. Anderson, p. 168) that events of some importance in the annals of North Britain followed from its pursuit in Caithness in the year 1167. The Red Grouse is found on moors from Monmouthshire and Derbyshire northward to the Orkneys, as well as in most of the Hebrides. It likewise inhabits similar situations throughout Wales and Ireland, but it does not naturally occur beyond the limits of the British Islands,<sup>1</sup> and is the only species among birds peculiar to them. The word "species" may in this case be used advisedly (since the Red Grouse invariably "breeds true," it admits of an easy diagnosis, and it has a definite geographical range); but scarcely any zoologist who looks further into the matter can doubt of its common origin



Red Grouse.

with the Willow-Grouse, *Lagopus albus* (*L. subalpinus* or *L. subscoticus* of some authors), that inhabits a subarctic zone from Norway across the whole continent of Europe and Asia, as well as North America from the Aleutian Islands to Newfoundland. The Red Grouse indeed is rarely or never found away from the heather on which chiefly it subsists, and with which in most men's minds it is associated; while the Willow-Grouse in many parts of the Old World seems to prefer the shrubby growth of berry-bearing plants (*Vaccinium* and others) that, often thickly interspersed with willows and birches, clothes the higher levels or the lower mountain-slopes, and it contrives to flourish in the New World where heather scarcely exists, and a "heath" in its strict sense is unknown. It is true likewise that the Willow-Grouse always becomes white in winter, which the Red Grouse never does; but then we find that in summer there is a considerable resemblance between the two species, the cock Willow-Grouse having his head, neck, and breast of nearly the same rich chestnut-brown as his British

representative, and, though his back be lighter in colour, as is also the whole plumage of his mate, than is found in the Red Grouse, in other respects than those named above the two species are precisely alike. No distinction can be discovered in their voice, their eggs, their build, nor in their anatomical details, so far as these have been investigated and compared.<sup>2</sup> In connexion too with this matter it should not be overlooked that the Red Grouse, restricted as is its range, varies in colour not inconsiderably according to locality, so that game-dealers of experience are able to pronounce at sight the native district of almost any bird that comes to their hands.

Other peculiarities of the Red Grouse—the excellence of its flesh, and its economic importance, which is perhaps greater than that of any other wild bird in the world—hardly need notice here, and there is not space to dwell upon that dire and mysterious malady to which it is from time to time subject, primarily induced, in the opinion of many, by the overstocking of its haunts and the propagation of diseased offspring by depauperized parents.<sup>3</sup>

Though the Red Grouse does not, after the manner of other members of the genus *Lagopus*, become white in winter, Scotland possesses a species of the genus which does. This is the Ptarmigan,<sup>4</sup> *L. mutans* or *L. lagopus*, which differs far more in structure, station, and habits from the Red Grouse than that does from the Willow-Grouse, and in Scotland is far less abundant, haunting only the highest and most barren mountains. It is said to have formerly inhabited both Wales and England, but there is no evidence of its appearance in Ireland. On the continent of Europe it is found most numerously in Norway, but at an elevation far above the growth of trees, and it occurs on the Pyrenees, and on the Alps. It also inhabits northern Russia, but its eastern limit is unknown. In North America, Greenland, and Iceland it is represented by a very nearly allied form—so much so indeed that it is only at certain seasons that

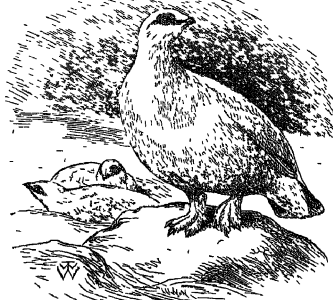
<sup>1</sup> A very interesting subject for discussion would be whether *Lagopus scoticus* or *L. albus* has varied most from the common stock of both. We can here but briefly indicate the more salient points that might arise. Looking to the fact that the former is the only species of the genus which does not assume white clothing in winter, an evolutionist might at first deem the variation greatest in its case; but then it must be borne in mind that the species of *Lagopus* which turn white differ in that respect from all other groups of the family *Trogonidae*. Furthermore it must be remembered that every species of *Lagopus* (even *L. lagopus*, the whitest of all) has its first set of summer colours in brown. These are dropped when the bird is about half-grown, and in all the species but *L. scoticus* white plumage is then produced. If therefore, as is generally held, the successive plumages assumed by an individual in the course of its progress to maturity indicate the phases through which the species has passed, there may have been a time when all the species of *Lagopus* wore a brown livery even when adult, and the white dress donned in winter has been imposed upon the species by causes that can be easily suggested, for it has been freely admitted by naturalists of all schools that the white plumage of the larva of this group protects them from danger during the snows of a protracted winter. On the other hand it is not at all inconceivable that the Red Grouse, instead of perpetuating directly the more ancient properties of an original *Lagopus* that underwent no great seasonal change of plumage, may derive its ancestry from the widely-ranging Willow-Grouse, which in an epoch comparatively recent (in the geological sense) may have stocked Britain, and left descendants that, under conditions in which the assumption of a white garb would be almost fatal to the preservation of the species, have reverted (though doubtless with some modifications) to a comparative immutability essentially the same as that of the primal *Lagopus*.

<sup>2</sup> On the Grouse-disease the papers of Prof. Young in *Proc. Nat. Hist. Soc. Glasgow*, i. p. 225, and Dr. Farquharson, *Edinb. Med. Journal*, No. 248, p. 269, may be advantageously compared.

<sup>3</sup> James I. (as quoted by Mr. Gray, *B. IV. Scotland*, p. 580) writing from Whitehall in 1617 spelt the word "Ptarmigan," and in this form it appears in one of the Scots Acts in 1631. Taylor the "water poet," who (in 1680) seems to have been the first Englishman to use the word, has "Ptarmigan." How the unnecessary initial letter crept into the name is more than the writer knows. The word is admittedly from the Gaelic *Ptarmachan*, meaning, according to some, "a dweller upon heights," but thought by Dr. T. M. Lindsay to refer possibly to the noise made by the bird's wings in taking flight.

<sup>1</sup> It has been successfully, though with much trouble, introduced by Mr. Oscar Dickson on a tract of land near Götzenburg in Sweden (*Swenska Jagarförbundet Nya Fåfårfärlä*, 1868, p. 64 et alibi), and seems likely to maintain itself there, so long at least as the care hitherto bestowed upon it is continued.

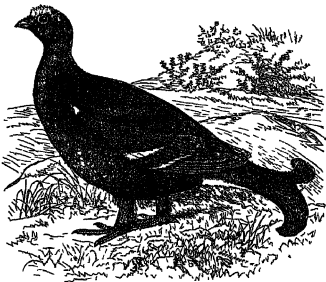
the slight difference between them can be detected. This form is the *L. sylvestris* of authors, and it would appear to be found also in Siberia (*Ibid.*, 1879, p. 148). Spitzbergen is inhabited by a large form which has received recognition as *L. hutchinsoni*, and the northern end of the chain of the Rocky Mountains is tenanted by a very distinct species,



PTARMIGAN

the smallest and perhaps the most beautiful of the genus *L. leucurus*, which has all the feathers of the tail white. The very curious and still hardly understood question of the moulting of the Ptarmigan could not possibly be discussed within these limits—reference has already been made to it in another article (*BIRD*, vol. III p. 776).

The bird, however, to which the name of Grouse in all strictness belongs<sup>1</sup> is probably the *Tetrao tetrix* of LINNÆUS



BLACKCOCK

—the Blackcock and Greyhen, as the sexes are with us respectively called. It is distributed over most of the heath-country of England, except in East Angles, where attempts to introduce it have been only partially successful. It also occurs in North Wales, and very generally throughout Scotland, though not in Orkney, Shetland, or the Outer

Hobles, nor in Ireland. On the continent of Europe it has a very wide range, and it extends into Siberia. In Germany its place is taken by a distinct species, on which a Polish naturalist (*Proc. Zool. Society*, 1875, p. 367) has unhappily conferred the name of *T. nikolskensis*. Both these birds have much in common with their larger congeners the Capercaillie (see vol. V p. 53) and its eastern representative.

We must then notice the species of the genus *Bonasa*, of which the European *B. sylvestris* is the type. This does not inhabit the British Islands, unfortunately so, for it is perhaps the most delicate game-bird that comes to table. It is the *Gelinotte* of the French, the *Hasselhuhn* of Germans, and *Hejlspe* of Scandinavians. Like its transatlantic congener *B. umbellus*, the Ruffed Grouse or Buch-Puttridge (of which there are two other local forms, *B. umbelloides* and *B. erinacea*), it is purely a forest-bird. The same may be said of the species of *Canace*, of which two forms are found in America, *C. canadensis*, the Spruce-Puttridge, and *C. franklini*, and also of the Siberian *C. talienensis*. Nearly allied to these birds is the group known as *Dendragapus*, containing three large and fine forms *D. obscurus*, *D. fuliginosus*, and *D. richardsoni*—all peculiar to North America. Then we have *Centrocercus urophasianus*, the Sage cock of the plains of Columbia and California, and *Petroperca*, the Sharp-tailed Grouse, with its two forms *P. phasianellus* and *P. columbianus*, which finally *Oryzopsis*, the Prairie hen, also with two local forms, *O. capax* and *O. pallidus*, is a bird that in the United States of America possesses considerable economic value, as witness the enormous numbers that are not only consumed there, but exported to Europe. It will be seen that the great majority of Grouse belong to the northern part of the New World, and it is much to be regretted that space here fails to do justice to these beautiful and important birds, by enlarging on their interesting distinctions. They are nearly all figured in Elliot's *Monograph of the Tetraoninae*, and an excellent account of the American species is given in Band, Brewer, and Ridgway's *North American Birds* (iii pp. 414-465). (A. N.)

GROVE The almost universal occurrence, at one stage or another in the religious and social development of the races of mankind, of the practice of worshipping by preferences under or among trees to which a peculiarly sacred and inviolable character is attached, is a fact too well known to require particular illustration here. Its explanation is to be sought partly in obvious considerations of physical convenience, but even more in certain psychical phenomena which may still be made matters of direct observation and experience ("Lucas, et in its silentia ipsa adoramus," Pliny, *II N.* xii. 1. "Scetum lucus ad admittendo umbra fidem tibi numinis facit," Sen., *Ep. Al.* 1). It does not appear to have any necessary connexion with tree worship, another very widely diffused practice, on which, and on its possible connexion with ancestor-worship, some suggestive remarks will be found in Spencer's *Principles of Sociology*. It has sometimes been alleged as a characteristic difference between the Semitic and the Aryan races that the former show a tendency to select single trees for sanctuaries, while the latter are generally found worshipping in groves, and this generalization, though liable to many exceptions, is really borne out at least by the familiar indications to be met with in Scripture. The word "grove" so often met with in the authorized version of the Bible, is nowhere there correctly employed. In Gen. xxi. 33 and 1 Sam. xxi. 6 (margin) it is used as a rendering of the Hebrew word גֵּזֶר which "tamarisk" is the proper translation. In every other instance in which it occurs (*Ex. xxxiv. 13; Deut. xii. 3, xvi. 21, Judg. vi. 7, vi. 25, 28, Isa. xlviii. 8, Mic. vi. 14*, and often in Kings and Chronicles), where the LXX. translate δέντρον, and the Vulgate lucus, the

<sup>1</sup> See footnote, p. 221.

original is invariably Asherah (אשרה), meaning a tree or post (see BALT, vol. i, p. 175). The "plant" of Moab, or Maime also, in Gen. xiv. 6 and xvi. 18, represents אֵשֶׁרֶת, which all modern interpreters render "fetichism."

GRÜBER, JOSEPH GOTTFRID (1774-1851), a learned German author, was born at Naumburg on the Saale, 29th November 1774. He received his education at the town school of Naumburg and the university of Leipzig, after which he resided successively at Göttingen, Leipzig, Jena, and Weimar, occupying himself partly in teaching and partly in various literary enterprises, and enjoying in Weimar the friendship of Herder, Wieland, and Goethe. In 1811 he was appointed professor at the university of Wittenberg, and after the division of Saxony he was sent by the senate to Berlin in connection with the negotiations for the union of the university of Wittenberg to that of Halle. After the union was effected he became in 1815 professor of philosophy at Halle. On the death of Hufeland he was associated with Erich in the editorship of the great work *Allgemeine Encyclopädie der Wissenschaften und Künste*, and after the death of Erich he continued the first section from vol. xviii to vol. lv. He also succeeded Erich in the editorship of the *Allgemeine Literaturzeitung*. He died 7th August 1851.

Gruber was the author of a huge number of works, the principal of which are *Die Geschichte der Juden*, in conjunction with Deane, Leipzig, 1806, *Geschichte des Menschlichen Geschlechts*, 3 vols., Leipzig, 1806, *Wörterbuch der Altclassischen Mythologie*, 3 vols., Weimar, 1810-15, *Walden Leben*, 2 parts, Weimar, 1815-16, and *Kleinste Leben*, Weimar, 1824. A complete bibliography of Gruber was prefixed to Gruber's edition of Wieland's *Sämmtliche Werke*, Leipzig, 1818-28.

GRÜN, ANASTASIOS (1806-1876), pseudonym for Anton Alexander, count of Auenberg, who was born April 11, 1806, at Laibach, the capital of the Austrian duchy of Carniola. He received his university education first at Glatz and then at Vienna, where he studied jurisprudence. In 1832 the title of "Imperial Chamberlain" was conferred upon him, and in 1849 he married the daughter of Count Attems. He accepted no official post, and devoted himself chiefly to literary pursuits. When the "March Revolution" broke out in 1848 at Vienna, the count entered the political arena, and represented the district of Laibach at the National Assembly at Frankfurt-on-the-Main. After a few months, however, he resigned his seat, and again retired into private life. In 1860, when a fresh impulse was given to political life in Austria, he resumed his activity as a politician, and greatly distinguished himself in the Austrian House of Lords as one of the most ardent and influential supporters of the cause of liberalism, both in political and religious matters, until his death in 1876. Count Auenberg acquired great fame as a poet, as which he is known under the pseudonym of *Anastasis Grün*. His first publication, *Blätter der Liebe*, "Leaves of Love" (1830), showed little originality, but his second production, *Der letzte Ritter*, "The last Knight" (1830), brought to light his eminence as a poet. It celebrates the deeds and adventures of the emperor Maximilian I. (1493-1519), and contains exquisite poetical descriptions tinged with playful humour. His next poetical productions, *Sprünge eines Wiener Poeten*, "Walks of a Vienna Poet" (1831), and *Schnee*, "Rains" (1836), quite electrified the whole of Germany by the boldness and originality of their conception and by their decided liberal tendency. His *Collected Poems* (1837) increased his reputation as a poet, but not so his epic, *Die Abenteuer des Ritters* (1843) and *Der Pfaff vom Kahlenberg* (1850). He also produced masterly translations of the popular Slovenic songs current in Carniola (1850), and of the English poems relating to "Robin Hood" (1869). Anastasis Grün may be called the originator of the modern school of political lyric poetry in Germany. His language

is sonorous and majestic, and his descriptions, though sometimes overcrowded with imagery, bear the stamp of great poetical originality. He loved to employ the stately "Nibelungen measure," which imparted considerable vigour to some of his productions. Of his shorter poems *Der letzte Dichter*, "The last Poet," is deservedly the most popular.

GRÜN, HANS BALDUNG (c. 1470-1545), commonly called Grün, a painter of the age of Dürer, was born about 1470 at Gmund in Swabia, and spent the greater part of his life at Staßburg and Freiburg in Breisgau. The earliest pictures assigned to him are altarpieces with the monogram H B interlaced, and the date of 1496, in the monastery chapel of Lichtensthal near Baden. Another early work is a portrait of the emperor Maximilian, drawn in 1501 on a leaf of a sketch-book now in the print-room at Karlsruhe. The *Martyrdom of St. Sebastian* and the *Epiphany* (Berlin Museum), fruits of his labour in 1507, were painted for the market church of Halle in Saxony. In 1509 Grün purchased the freedom of the city of Staßburg, and resided there till 1513, when he moved to Freiburg in Breisgau. There he began a series of large compositions, which he finished in 1516, and placed on the high altar of the Staßburg cathedral. He purchased anew the freedom of Freiburg in 1517, resided in that city as his domicile, and died a member of its great town council 1515.

Though nothing is known of Grün's youth and education, it may be inferred from his style that he was no stranger to the school of which Dürer was the chief. Gmund is but 50 miles distant on either side from Augsburg and Nuremberg. Grün's prints were often mistaken for those of Dürer, and Dürer himself was well acquainted with Grün's woodcuts and copper-plates, in which he traded during his trip to the Netherlands (1520). But Grün's prints, though Düreresque, are far below Dürer, and his paintings are below his prints. Without absolute correctness as a draftsman, his conception of human form is often very unpleasant, whilst a questionable taste is shown in ornament equally profuse and "baroque." Nothing is more remarkable in his pictures than the puglike shape of the faces, unless we except the coarseness of the extremities. No trace is apparent of any feeling for atmosphere or light and shade. Though Grün has been commonly called the *Correggio* of the north, his compositions are a curious medley of glaring and heterogeneous colours, in which pure black is contrasted with pale yellow, dirty grey, impure red, and glowing green. Flesh is a more glaze under which the features are indicated by lines. No wonder that English collectors should have neglected him. There is not one of his pictures in the whole of Great Britain, unless we except a genuine "Youth and Old Age" in the Liverpool Institution, bought by Roscoe as a masterpiece of Antonello di Messina. Even Germans express but slight esteem for Grün, and if his works have any claims to attention at all, it is merely because of the wild and fantastic strength which some of them display. We may pass lightly over the *Epiphany* of 1507, the *Crucifixion* of 1512, or the *Stoning* of Stephen of 1522, in the Berlin Museum. There is some force in the *Dance of Death* of 1517, in the museum of Basel, or the *Madonna* of 1530, in the Lichtenstein Gallery at Vienna. Grün's best effort is the altarpiece of Freiburg, where the *Coronation* of the Virgin, and the *Twelve Apostles*, the *Annunciation*, *Visitation*, *Nativity*, and *Flight into Egypt*, and the *Crucifixion*, with portraits of donors, are executed with some of that fanatical power which Martin Schöner bequeathed to the Swabian school. As a portrait painter he is well known. He drew the likenesses of Charles V., as well as that of Maximilian, and his bust of Margrave Philip in the Munich Gallery tells us that he was connected with the reigning family of Baden as

early a. 1514. At a later period he had sittings from Margrave Christopher of Baden, Otilia his wife, and all their children, and the picture containing these portraits is still in the grand-ducal gallery at Karlsruhe. Like Dürer and Cranach, Grien became a hearty supporter of the Reformation. He was present at the diet of Augsburg in 1518, and one of his woodcuts represents Luther under the protection of the Holy Ghost, which hovers over him in the shape of a dove.

GRUNBERG, or GRÜNBURG, a town of Prussian Silesia, chief town of a circle in the government district of Liegnitz, is beautifully situated on an affluent of the Oder, and on the railway from Breslau to Stettin by Küstrin, 36 miles N N W of Glogau. It has a real-school of the first order, a higher female school, and a trade school. The prosperity of the town depends chiefly on the vine culture in the neighbourhood, from which, besides the exportation of a large quantity of grapes, about 700,000 gallons of wine are manufactured annually. The wine is a kind of champagne, and is largely exported to Russia. There are also manufactures of machinery, cloth, preserved fruits, and lignite. The population of the town in 1876 was 12,200.

GRUNDVIG, NIKOLAI FRANKRICH SVANE (1758–1872), the Danish poet, statesman, and divine, was born at Udby on the 8th of September 1758, in 1791 he was sent to live at the house of a priest in Jutland, and studied at the free school of Aarhus until he went up to the university of Copenhagen in 1800. At the close of his university life he made Icelandic his special study, until in 1805 he took the position of tutor in a house on the island of Langeland. The next three years were spent in the study of Shakespeare, Schiller, and Fichte. His cousin, the philosopher Henrik Steffens, had returned to Copenhagen in 1802 full of the teaching of Schelling, and his lectures and the early poetry of Oehlenschläger opened the eyes of Grundtvig to the new era in literature that was commencing. The latter began to essay writing himself, but his first work, *On the Songs in the Edda*, attracted no attention. Returning to Copenhagen in 1808, he achieved a greater success with his *Northern Mythology*, and in 1809 with his *Decline of the Heroic Life in the North*. The boldness of his theological views having provoked opposition, he retired to a country parsonage for a while, but soon returned to pursue a literary career with extraordinary eagerness. From 1812 to 1817 he published five or six works, of which the *Realist's Chronicle* is the most remarkable. From 1816 to 1819 he was editor of a polemical journal entitled *Dannemåske*, and in 1818 to 1822 appeared his Danish paraphrases of Saxo Grammaticus and Snorre. During these years he was preaching to an enthusiastic congregation in Copenhagen, but he accepted in 1821 the country living of Præsto, only to return to the metropolis the year after. His theological career was, however, presently stopped, for, having in 1825 published a brochure, *The Church's Reply*, against the popular Dr. Clausen, he was publicly proscribed and fined. For seven years he was forbidden to preach, years which he spent in publishing a collection of his theological works, in paying two visits to England, and in studying Anglo-Saxon. In 1832 he obtained permission to preach again, and in 1839 he became priest of the workhouse church of Vaitou Hospital, a post he continued to hold until his death. In 1837 he published *Songs for the Danish Church*, a rich collection of spiritual poems, in 1838 he brought out a selection of early Scandinavian verses, in 1840 he edited the Anglo-Saxon poem of the *Phoenix*, with a Danish translation. He visited England a third time in 1843. From 1844 until after the first German war Grundtvig took a very prominent part in politics. In 1861 he received the titular rank of bishop, but without a see. He went on writing occasional poems

til 1866, and preached in the Vaitou every Sunday until a month before his death. He was married three times, the last time in his seventy-sixth year, and left children by each marriage. He died September 2, 1872. Grundtvig holds a unique position in the literature of his country, he has been styled the Danish Carlyle. He was above all things a man of action, not an artist, and the formless vehemence of his writings, which have had a great influence over his own countrymen, is hardly agreeable or intelligible to a foreigner. His spiritual poems are among the best that the North has produced, but they are apt to be too long. The writings of Grundtvig have not yet been collected in a permanent form, but the best of his poetical works were published in a selection by his eldest son, Evend Grundtvig, the eminent comparative mythologist, in 1869, with a critical memoir by the poet Høstnap, who belongs to the religious body denominated Grundtvigians.

GRUNEWALD, MATTHIAS. The accounts which are given of this painter, a native of Aschaffenburg, are curiously contradictory. Between 1518 and 1530, according to statements adopted by Waagen and Passavant, he was commissioned by Albert of Brandenburg, elector and archbishop of Mainz, to produce an altarpiece for the collegiate church of St Maurice and Mary Magdalen at Halle on the Saale, and he acquitted himself of the duty with such cleverness that the picture in after years caused the picture to be rescued from the Reformers and brought back to Aschaffenburg. From one of the churches of that city it was taken to the Pinakothek of Munich in 1836. It represents St Maurice and Mary Magdalen between four saints, and displays a style so markedly characteristic, and so like that of Lucas Cranach, that Waagen was induced to call Grunewald Cranach's master. He also traced the same hand and technical execution in the great altarpieces of Amunberg and Heilbrunn, and in various panels exhibited in the museums of Mainz, Darmstadt, Aschaffenburg, Vienna, and Berlin. A later race of critics, declining to accept the statements of Waagen and Passavant, affirm that there is no documentary evidence to connect Grunewald with the pictures of Halle and Amunberg, and they quote Sandart and Reinhard Jobin of Strasburg to show that Grunewald is the painter of pictures of a different class. They prove that he finished before 1516 the large altarpiece of Isenheim, at present in the museum of Colmar, and starting from these premises they connect the artist with Altdorfer and Dürer to the exclusion of Cranach. That a native of the Palatinate should have been asked to execute pictures for a church in Saxony can scarcely be accounted strange, since we observe that Hans Baldung was entrusted with a commission of this kind. But that a painter of Aschaffenburg should display the style of Cranach is strange and indeed incredible, unless vouched for by first class evidence. In this case documents are altogether wanting, whilst on the other hand it is beyond the possibility of doubt, even according to Waagen, that the altarpiece of Isenheim is the creation of a man whose teaching was altogether different from that of the painter of the pictures of Halle and Amunberg. At this stage the controversy now stands, and it is needless to do more than observe that the altarpiece of Isenheim is a fine and powerful work, completed as local records show before 1516 by a Swabian, whose distinguishing mark is that he followed the traditions of Martin Schongauer, and came under the influence of Altdorfer and Dürer. As a work of art the altarpiece is important, being a polyptych of eleven panels, a carved central shrine covered with a double set of wings, and two side panels containing the Temptation of St Anthony, the hermit Anthony and Paul in converse, the Virgin adorned by Angels, the Resurrection, the Annunciation, the Crucifixion, St Sebastian, St Anthony, and the Marys

wailing over the dead body of Christ. The author of these compositions is also the painter of a series of monochromes described by Sanderus in the *Dominican convent*, and now in part in the Schlot at Frankfurt, and a Resurrection in the museum of Basel, registered in Amerbach's inventory as the work of Gurnwald.

GRUTER, or GAVRIEL, JAN (1560-1627), a critic and scholar of Dutch parentage by his father's side and English by his mother's, was born at Antwerp, December 3, 1560. To avoid religious persecution his parents while he was still young came to England, and for some years he prosecuted his studies at Cambridge, after which he went to Leyden, where he graduated M.A. In 1586 he was appointed professor of history at Wittenberg, but as he refused to subscribe the *formula concordantiae* he was unable to retain his office. From 1589 to 1592 he taught at Rostock, after which he went to Heidelberg, where in 1602 he was appointed librarian to the university. He died at Heidelberg, September 20, 1627. The chief service rendered by Gruter to classical learning was in the department of inscriptions, his principal work on which is *Inscriptiones antiquae totius usque Romani*, in 2 vols., Heidelberg, 1603. He also published editions of most of the Latin classics, but as his critical faculty bore little proportion to his erudition these are of small value.

GRUYERE, or GUYLERS (German, *Geyers*), is a small pastoral district in the Swiss canton of Fribourg, noted for its cheese (see *CHÉVRES* and *FARBINGS*), which was at one time separate cantons. It forms part of the basin of the Saane. The old town of Gruyère, where the counts had their castle, had only 1097 inhabitants according to the census of 1870, while the neighbouring town of Balte had 2274. There is no mention by that name of the counts or countship of Gruyère in any document previous to the 12th century, but the same family with the title of count of Ogo, *se*, Hochgrün, have been traced, though not without interruption, as far back as 923. The new designation was due, it would appear, to the fact that the counts of Ogo had held the post of *gruyon* (*gruonius*) or warden of the woods and forests to one of the later kings of Burgundy, the name of office, as in the case of the Scotch Stewarts, gradually passing into a regular family name. The counts of Gruyère were for the most part a vigorous and warlike line, and their banner, with the figure of a *grue* or crane, was not only a familiar object in the local conflicts of Savoy and Switzerland but saw good service in distant fields. Their last representative died in exile, his possessions having been seized by his creditors and sold to Bern in 1554.

The fortunes of the house are related with much detail in Hirsch's *Histoire du Comté de Gruyère*, which occupies vols. ix, x, and xi of the *Mémoires de la Société d'histoire de la Suisse Romande*, Lausanne, 1839, &c. See also Bonnetant, *Dieft, oder ein Schweizer Leben*, Hildesheim, Biele, 1782; H. Chavies, *Comté de Gruyère*, Paris, 1826.

GRYNÆUS, or GRYNER, JOHANN JAKOB (1540-1617), a learned theologian of the period immediately succeeding the Reformation, was born, October 1, 1540, at Bern, where his father Thomas, nephew of Simon Grynaeus, was at that time a teacher of theology, was educated at Basel, and in 1559 received an appointment as errand to his father who had become pastor of Röteln in Baden. In 1563 he proceeded to Tübingen for the purpose of completing his theological studies, and in 1566 he returned to Röteln as successor to his father. Here, as the result of much reading and reflexion, he felt compelled to abjure the Lutheran doctrine of the Lord's Supper, and to renounce the *Formula Concordantiae*. Called in 1575 to the chair of Old Testament exegesis at Basel, he became involved in unpleasant controversy with Simon Sulzer and other champions of Lutheran orthodoxy, and in 1584 he

was glad to accept an invitation to Heidelberg, where two years were spent. Returning to Basel in 1586 as anti-episcopus or superintendent of the church there, he excited for upwards of twenty-five years a very considerable influence upon both the church and the state affairs of that community, and acquired a wide reputation as a skillful theologian of the school of Zwingle. Five years before his death, which occurred August 13, 1617, he had the misfortune to become totally blind, but he continued to preach and lecture to the last.

His numerous works include commentaries on various books of the Old and New Testament, *Theologia theocratica et protestantis* (1589), and a collection of private letters entitled *Monumenta S. Petri in Orthodoxographia* (2 vols. fol., 1590).

GRYNÆUS, SIMON (1493-1541), a learned theologian of the Reformation, was born in 1493 at Veltingen, in his fourteenth year was sent to school at Pfundheim, and subsequently studied at the university of Vienna, where he graduated as master of arts, and for some time acted as tutor. He next became rector of a school at Ofen (Buda), but as an avowed sympathizer with Beuchlin and Erasmus he was not permitted by the Dominicans to retain this post long. After an interval spent at Wittenberg with his old school friend Melancthon, he became professor of Greek in the university of Heidelberg in 1526, with the object of thus post he from 1526 combined those also of the Latin chair. In 1529 the friendship of Gesolampadius obtained for him a call to Basel as successor of Erasmus, the completely disorganized state of the university at that time gave him abundant leisure not only for private study but also for a tour to England, where he charged himself with the task of obtaining the opinions of the Reformed theologians upon the subject of the king's divorce. On his return to Basel in 1531, the year of the death both of Zwingle and of Gesolampadius, he began as theological professor to give exegetical lectures on the New Testament, and in 1531 he was summoned by Duke Ulrich of Württemberg to assist in the reformation there, and especially in the reorganization of the university of Tübingen. In 1536 he took an active part in the forming of the first Helvetic confession, and also in the conferences held with the purpose of inducing the Swiss to accept the concord of Wittenberg, which had also been drawn up in that year. He was the sole representative of the Swiss churches at the conference of Worms in 1540. His death took place suddenly at Basel on August 1, 1541. In Greek philology Grynaeus was one of the first scholars of his day. In theology he was more of a theologian than of a practical man, but his profound erudition and singularly penetrating judgment gave him great influence among the more active spirits of the time. In literature his chief contributions were translations into Latin of Plutarch, Aristotle, and Chrysostom. See Strubel's *Simonis Grynaei Epistolae* (1817), where a full list of his works is given.

GRYPHIUS, ANDREAS (1616-1664), German poet, was born at Grossglogau, Silesia, on the 11th of October, 1616. His youth fell in the period of the Thirty Years' War, which began in 1618, when he was two years old. After spending five years at school in various towns, he returned to his native place in 1636, and became tutor in the family of Palsgrave George von Schonborn, who crowned him laureate and granted him a patent of nobility. In 1638 he went to the university of Leyden, where he spent six years, at first as a student, afterwards as a tutor. Having travelled through France and Italy in association with a young Pomeranian, and lived a year in Strasbourg, he went back to Silesia, and in 1650, at the age of thirty-four, was made syndic of the principality of Glogau. This office, the duties of which he faithfully discharged, he held till his death in 1664. He was a man of deeply melancholy

temperament, and his natural tendencies were fostered both by private misfortune and by the terrible public calamities of his age. Like most German writers in the first half of the 17th century, he was profoundly influenced by the critical doctrines of Opitz, on which account he is usually classed with the first Silesian school, although by some of his characteristics he is more closely allied to the second Silesian school. His best works are his comedies, one of which, *Peter Squire*, is based on the comic episode of *A Midsummer Night's Dream*. *Die geliebte Dornrose* (The Beloved Willrose), which is written in a Silesian dialect, contains many touches of natural simplicity and grace, and still ranks high among the comparatively small number of genuine comedies which German literature can boast. *Der schlaue Soldat* is a rather laboured attack on pedantry. Besides these three comedies, Gryphus wrote five tragedies. In all of them his tendency is to become wild and bombastic, but he had the merit of at least attempting to work out artistically conceived plans, and there are occasional flashes both of passion and of imagination. His models seem to have been Seneca, and the great Dutch poet Vondel. He had the courage, in *Carulus Stuurds*, to deal with events of his own day, his other tragedies are *Leo Asmusus*, *Katharina von Georgien*, *Cardenio* and *Celinda*, and *Panpurgianus*. The lyrics of Gryphus give utterance to his despairing views of life, and are not without power, but it is as a dramatic writer that he is mainly important. No German dramatist writes before him had risen to so high a level, nor had he worthy successors until about the middle of the 18th century. A selection from his lyrics will be found in W. Müller's *Bibliothek des deutschen Dichter des 17ten Jahrhunderts* (Bd 2), and a selection from his dramatic writings in Tittmann's *Deutsche Dichter des 17ten Jahrhunderts*.

See Kloppe, *Andreas Gryphus als Dramatiker* (1851), and Herrmann, *Ueber Andreas Gryphus*.

GUACHARO,<sup>1</sup> the Spanish-American name of what English writers have lately taken to calling the Owl-Bird, the *Scotanus carolinensis* of ornithologists, a very remarkable bird, first described by Alexander von Humboldt (*Voy aux Reg. Equinoxiales*, i p 413, Engl transl., ii p 119, *Obs Zoologie*, ii p 141, pl xiv) from his own observation and from examples obtained by Bonpland, on the visit of those two travellers, in September 1799, to a cave near Carripé (at that time a monastery of Aisagones Capuchins) in the Venezuelan province of Cumana on the northern coast of South America. A few years later it was discovered, says Latham (*Gen Hist Birds*, 1825, vii p 565), to inhabit Trinidad, where it appears to bear the name of *Ducula*,<sup>2</sup> and much more recently, by the receipt of specimens procured at Sarayen in Ecuador, Chacamarca in the Peruvian Andes, and Antioquia in New Grenada (*Proc Zool Society*, 1878, pp 139, 140, 1879, p 832), its range has been shown to be much greater than had been supposed. The singularity of its structure, its curious habits, and its peculiar economical value have naturally attracted no little attention, and it has formed the subject of investigation by a considerable number of zoologists both British and foreign. First referring it to the genus *Caprimulgus*, its original describer soon saw that it was no true Goatsucker. It was subsequently separated as forming a Subfamily, and has at last been regarded as the type of a distinct Family, *Scotastidae*—a view which, though not put forth till 1870 (*Zool Record*, vi p 87), seems now to be generally deemed correct. Its systematic position, however, can scarcely be considered settled, for though on the whole its predominant

ing alliance may be with the *Caprimulgidae*, nearly as much affinity may be traced to the *Strigidae*, while it possesses some characters in which it differs from both (*Proc Zool Society*, 1873, pp 526–535). About as big as a Crow, its plumage exhibits the blended tints of chocolate colour and grey, barred and pencilled with dark brown or black, and spotted in places with white, that prevail in the two families just named. The beak is hard, strong, and deeply notched, the nostrils are prominent, and the gape is furnished with twelve long hairs on each side. The legs and toes are comparatively feeble, but the wings are large. In habits the Guacharo is wholly nocturnal, slumbering by day in deep and dark caverns which it frequents in vast numbers. Towards evening it arouses itself, and, with croaking and clattering which has been likened to that of a cat, it approaches the exit of its retreat, whence at nightfall it issues in search of its food, which, so far as is known, consists entirely of only nuts or fruits, belonging especially to the genera *Achras*, *Asplenas*, *Laurus*, and *Psychotria*, some of them sought, it would seem, at a very great distance, for M. Funck (*Bull Acad Sc Bruxelles*, xi pt 2, pp 371–377) states that in the stomach of one he obtained at Carripé he found the seed of a tree which he believed did not grow nearer than 80 leagues. The hard, indigestible seeds swallowed by the Guacharo are found in quantities on the floor and the ledges of the caverns into which it retires, while many of them for some time vegetate, the plants thus growing being etiolated from want of light, and, according to travellers, forming a singular feature of the gloomy scene which these places present. The Guacharo is said to build a bowl-like nest of clay, in which it lays from two to four white eggs, with a smooth but lustreless surface, resembling those of some Owls. The young soon after they are hatched become a perfect mass of fat, and while yet in the nest are sought by the Indians, who at Carripé, and perhaps elsewhere, make a special business of taking them and extracting the oil they contain. This is done about midsummer, when by the aid of torches and long poles many thousands of the young birds are slaughtered, while their parents in alarm and rage hover over the destroyers' heads, uttering harsh and deafening cries. The grease is melted over fires kindled at the cavern's mouth, run into earthen pots, and preserved for use in cooking as well as for the lighting of lamps. It is said to be pure and limpid, free from any disagreeable taste or smell, and capable of being kept for a year without turning rancid. In Trinidad the young are esteemed a great delicacy for the table by many, though some persons object to their peculiar scent, which, says Latham (*Obs de la Trinidad*, p 68), resembles that of a Cockroach (*Blatta*), and consequently refuse to eat them. The old birds also, according to Mr. B. C. Taylor (*Ibis*, 1864, p 90) have a strong Cow-like odour. But one species of the genus *Scotanus* is known.

In addition to the works above quoted valuable information about this curious bird may be found under the following references—L'Hermite, *Ann So Nat*, 1838, p 60, and *Nouv Ann Mus*, 1838, p 321, Hauteville, *Zool*, 1838, p 104, J. Müller, *Monist. Zool Acad*, 1841, p 173, and *Archiv. Mus*, 1841, p 1–11. Des Mus., *Rev Zool*, 1848, p 82, and *Oct Orn*, pp 260–263, Blanchard, *Ann Mus*, 1850, xi pl 4, fig 80, König-Wartmann, *Journ fis Orn*, 1868, pp 884–887, Goering, *Vergessen*, 1868, pp 124–128, Martz, *Ibis*, 1874, pp 21–26. (A. N.)

GUACO, HUACO, or GUAO, also Yucoco and Yucoco, terms applied to various Central and South American and West Indian plants, is reputed for alexipharmic and curative virtues. The Indians and negroes of New Granada believe the plants known to them as guaco to have been so named after a species of kite, thus designated in imitation of its cry, which they say attracts to it the snakes that serve it principally for food, they further hold the tradition that their antedotal qualities were discovered through the obser-

<sup>1</sup> This is said to be an obsolete Spanish word signifying one that cries, moans, or laments loudly.

<sup>2</sup> Not to be confused with the bird so called in the French Antilles, which is a Petrel (*Pterodroma*).





formerly called on in behalf of the Government, is now in private hands. The mode of the place is chiefly in grain, sugar, fruit, cloth, and silk. Population, 7900. Guadalupe is the Atreca or Canca of the Romans, when taken by the invading Moors it was called Wad-el hajarah (the river of stones), of which its present name (sometimes in the medieval chronicles spelt Godolfaire) is a corruption. It was recaptured in the days of the Cid.

GUADALAJARA, or in the older spelling GUADALAJARA, a city of Mexico, the capital of the state of Jalisco, is situated in the Atemarcas valley not far from the Rio Grande de Santiago, about 280 miles WNW of the city of Mexico, in 20° 41' 10" N lat and 103° 21' 15" W long. Owing to its considerable elevation above the sea level (according to the *Boletín del Ministerio de Fomento*, 1876, 1662 metres, but according to older authorities 1580 metres), Guadalupe enjoys an excellent climate. On the whole it is well laid out, and its streets are kept in tolerably good condition. All the houses, whether built of stone, brick, or adobe, are plastered and whitewashed, and hardly a dozen of them attain the height of three stories. In the outskirts of the town the buildings are of an inferior type. The Plaza Mayor is a square about 300 feet in each direction, one side of which is occupied by the cathedral, another side by the *casa de gobierno del estado* or state buildings, and the remaining sides by *pasadizos* or arcades in the shelter of which are some of the main shops of the city. The cathedral, commenced in 1571 and finished in 1618, is a rather fine structure with two steeples and a large dome between them covered with figures in coloured tiles. The interior is gloomy but impressive. No small interest attaches to the Hospital de San Miguel de Belen, which comprises, not only a hospital proper with male and female wards, but a lunatic asylum and a school for little children. Contiguous to it is the principal cemetery of the city, which is arranged in rather an unusual fashion. The sides of the area are bounded by walls and colonnades, and the inner surface of the walls is divided into six tiers of niches or *quartos* in which the dead are deposited. Another remarkable institution is the hospicio, occupying twenty-four large blocks of building, and not only affording an asylum for foundlings and orphans, for the blind, the deaf and dumb, and the infirm of all ages, for old people unable to secure a livelihood, but also serving as a reformatory and training school. It presents a fine appearance with its dome and pillared portico. Its inmates number upwards of 1000, 700 being children, and 300 old men and women. Among the other public buildings and institutions of Guadalupe are the university (formerly the Jesuit college), eleven conventual establishments, a theological seminary, an academy for the fine arts, a mint, a theatre, and a bull-ring. The favourite promenade is the *paseo* which runs for a mile and a quarter through the city, and terminates northward in the *alameda* or public garden. Guadalupe is a fairly busy town, with paper-mills and woollen and cotton factories, but all the principal establishments are in the hands of Frenchmen, Germans, or Englishmen. The confectionery of the town is held in high repute, and the Indians of the neighbourhood are remarkable for the artistic ability with which they mould figures in clay or rags. The silk embroidery produced in the hospicio is also worthy of mention. Guadalupe was founded in 1631 by Nuñez Garman, and was made a bishop's see in 1649. The population, which was only 19,500 in 1860, had increased to 46,804 by 1841, and to 79,947 by 1870. At Puente Grande in the neighbourhood, the Rio Grande forms a magnificent waterfall, and the bridge of Calderon is famous for the defeat of the insurgents under Hidalgo in June 1811. Several excellent views of Guadalupe may be found in Gieger, *A Peep at Mexico*. On the 11th of March 1875 Guadalupe was visited by a

severe earthquake, which did damage to nearly every large building in the town. An account of the mut of Guadalupe, founded in 1811, is given in *Boletín de Geografía de la rep. Mexicana* for 1871. In 1877 the value of the new coin was 1,467,660 piastres or dollars, 5000 piastres being in copper and the rest in silver. New machinery driven by steam was imported from France in 1878. The total import trade of the town was reckoned at 3,880,000 piastres in 1878,—Great Britain having about 40 per cent of the amount, France 25 per cent, the United States 10, and Germany 8. Full details on the money transactions of the city will be found in the *Procesos de Hacienda* for 1879.

GUADELOUPE, an island of the Antilles in the West Indies, belonging to France, is situated 62 miles from Martinique, between 15° 59' 30" and 16° 20' 18" N lat and between 61° 31' 33" and 61° 50' 32" W long. The sailing distance from Brest is 3750 nautical miles. A narrow channel, called La Rivière Salée, or Salt Stream, with a width of from 100 to 400 feet, separates the island into two portions, Guadeloupe proper or Basse Terre and Grande Terre. The former or western portion measures 28 miles from N to S, and from 12 to 15 miles from E to W, and its coast-line is estimated at 87 miles. The latter or eastern portion measures 21 miles from N to S and 34 from S E to N W, and its coast line is estimated at 108 miles. Basse Terre has a mountainous surface of volcanic origin, attaining its greatest altitude in La Soufrière, a still active volcano, 4870 feet in height, while Grande Terre is generally flat, with no elevations higher than 115 feet, and consists entirely of calcareous formations. In the rainy season the streams are subject to floods or "spates," which, according to M. Caspion (*Riv. Ala et Coloniale*, 1871), come on so suddenly that it is hardly safe to travel in the dry beds, lest, to use the local phrase, the *galien* descend. Basse Terre, as is natural, is traversed by a considerable number of streams,—the Goyave, the Léman, the Moutie, the Petite Goyave, the Sainte Marie, the Tion an Chon, the Capiteus, &c.—while Grande Terre is almost destitute of springs, and both men and cattle are dependent for their water supply on the ponds and marshes. The mean temperature of the island is 79° Fahr.—the maximum in the shade ranging from 86° to 91°, and the minimum from 68° to 72°. July, August, and September are the hottest months. At Basse Terre, about 180 feet above the sea-level, the thermometer in July shows a mean of 80.8° Fahr., in August 82.5°, and in September 82.6°. Like the rest of the West Indian islands, Guadeloupe is subject to terrible storms. That of 1825 almost entirely destroyed the town of Basse Terre, and that of 1895 proved equally disastrous to Grand Bourg. The rainfall is very heavy, on the coast no less than 86 inches per annum. Along with its dependencies, the smaller islands of Marie Galante, D'Armande, and Les Saintes, Guadeloupe forms a separate colonial government. The following table gives the area of the several portions.—

Portion	Acres
Guadeloupe or Basse Terre	94,681
Grande Terre	65,681
Marie Galante	14,827
D'Armande	5,730
Les Saintes	1,423
Petite Terre	843
Saint Martin (French portion)	5,177
Total	184,861

Of the total area 85,248 acres were under cultivation in 1873, 1932 acres were hedges or cattle-farms, 30,610 acres savannahs, and 106,258 acres woods and forests, while 69,689 acres were fallow. To the sugar cane, which is the staple of the colony, 48,711 acres were devoted, to coffee, 8859 acres, to cotton, 1855 acres, to cocoa, 1146 acres,

to cocoa or anatto, 1632 acres, and to tobacco, 291 acres. Maize, which forms one of the principal sources of food in the colony, occupied 1,014 acres, and 11,946 acres were assigned to other articles of direct consumption. In the same year (1873) it was calculated that 43,780 people were employed in the sugar plantations, 5160 in the coffee plantations, 504 in the cotton plantations, and 1088 in the cocoa plantations. The whole value of the ground is stated at about £200,000, of the buildings and plants at £1,560,000, and of the live stock at £263,200. The total produce of sugar of all kinds was 679,300 cwts, the syrup and molasses amounted to 568,326 gallons, and the tafia or rum to 298,580 gallons. The produce of coffee, cocoa, and cocoa was respectively 13,564, 2102, and 10,563 cwts. The maize or casava amounted to 282,412 cwts, and the other food substances, such as yams, bananas, arrowroot, &c., to 118,340 cwts. Tobacco, vanilla, and cloves were also produced in small quantity, as well as 4542 cwts of campeachy wood. The value of the whole was estimated at £1,134,220, and the net value at £298,437. Administratively the colony is divided into three arrondissements of Basse Tere, Pointe à Pitre, and Marie Galante. The town of Basse Tere, situated in 16° 59' 30" N lat and 66° 24' 31" W long, with a population of 12,000, is the capital, and the seat of the bishopric, which was founded in 1850, and Pointe à Pitre, situated in 16° 14' 12" N lat and 66° 11' 43" W long, and containing a population of 16,000, is the principal port. A fine military suburb, popularly known as the Gibraltar of the Antilles, is situated in the group of Les Saintes. There is a militia, originally constituted in 1832, partly dissolved in 1851, and is established in 1870.

During the twenty-five years from 1848 to 1872 the population of the colony remained almost stationary, the mean being only 132,000. Between 1873 and 1875 there was a notable increase, the mean for these years being 141,000. Owing probably to the influence of immigration, the masculine element is on the increase,—there being now 93 men to 100 women instead of 90 as formerly. Married people form only 20 per cent of the population. According to Dr Charles Walthe, with every 1000 European immigrants in 1864 there were introduced 25 women, for every 1000 Africans, 496 women, for every 1000 Indians, 253, and for every 1000 Chinese, 9. Between 1813 and 1872 there have been 30 births to every 1000 of the population, except during the five years from 1863 to 1867 when the ratio was only 27.6. If the non-reproductive part of the population be excluded, the births range from 41 to 48 per 1000, while in England the corresponding number is 61. It is estimated that probably 25 per cent of the births are illegitimate. During the years from 1848 to 1854, immediately after the abolition of slavery, there were a great many marriages, especially among the liberated population—no many indeed as 8000 per annum, but, to use the words of Dr Key, "cette belle ardente matrimoniale" soon came to an end. In 1870, 1871, and 1872 there were only three marriages to 1000 inhabitants.

*History*—Guadeloupe was discovered by Columbus in 1493, and received its name in honour of Santa Maria de Guadalupe in Notre madame de Spain. In 1634 Oliver and Dupleix took possession of the island in the name of the French Company of the Islands of America, and after Dupleix's death about six months later L'Olivier engaged in a war of extermination against the Guib inhabitants. In 1674 Guadeloupe was united to the domain of the crown, and for a long time it remained a dependency of Martinique. Successful insurrections were made to attack, by the English in 1666, 1691, and 1703, but on 27th April 1759 the inhabitants capitulated to Admiral Knowles and to the English. In 1763 the French remained in British possession till 1788. On 23rd April 1782 the French under Admiral de Grasse were defeated by Rodney in the neighbourhood of the island. In 1776 Guadeloupe was finally captured from Martinique, but it remained under the command of the governor-general of the Windward Islands. The English under Sir

John Gray and John Jervis obtained possession on 21st April 1794, but they were expelled on the 2d of June by Christian and Victor Hugues, commissioners of the National Convention, who were powerfully supported by the native population (see "Dictionnaire de la Guadeloupe en 1794" in *Rev. Mar. et Col.*, 1870). About this time the island contained about 107,226 inhabitants, and the commerce was worth £1,374,800. After the peace of Amiens the first colonial expedition under General Richelieu for the purpose of re-establishing slavery in Guadeloupe, but the negroes had actually defied that liberty for months. A new period of British possession was begun by the victory of February 8, 1810, and though by the treaty of March 1810 the island was made over to Sweden, and in the course of 1814 the French returned, the British again gained a temporary footing, in terms of the first peace of Paris, it was not till July 1816 that Britain finally withdrew her forces. Between 1816 and 1825 a special code of laws for Guadeloupe was enacted. Municipal institutions were introduced into the island in 1837 (November 20).

See Moitte de Jannes, *Histoire Physique des Antilles*, Paris, 1823, 3 vols. A. Sully, *La Guadeloupe Pittoresque*, Paris, 1863, folio, a fine series of views with descriptive text. P. S. Duhamel, *Essai sur les mines de la Guadeloupe*, "Guadeloupe et dépendances," in *Rev. Mar. et Col.*, 1870 (tome 48). H. Rey, *Chimie en la colonie de la Guadeloupe*, topographie médicale, climatologie, démographie, in *Rev. Mar. et Col.*, 1878, "La Guadeloupe à l'exportation" in *Journal des sciences maritimes*, 1878, *Annuaire de la Guadeloupe*, 1885, &c., G. Gulluc, *Les Colonies Françaises*, Paris, 1880.

GUADIX, a city of Spain, in the province of Granada, situated on an elevated plateau on the northern slope of the Sierra Nevada, and above the left bank of the river Guadix. It is surrounded by ancient walls, and was formerly dominated by a Moorish castle, now in ruins. It is said to have been the first episcopal see erected in Spain; it still is a bishopric, suffragan to Granada, but the cathedral is architecturally unimportant. The town was once famous for its cutlery, but its modern manufactures (chiefly earthenware, hampden goods, and hats) are inconsiderable. It has some trade in wool, cotton, flax, corn, and liquors. The population is estimated at 10,150. The warm mineral springs of Grazna, much frequented by Spaniards during the summer season, are situated 4½ miles to the westward of Guadix, along with Almeida and other places constituting the domain of El Zagal, was formally surrendered without a siege to Ferdinand the Catholic in December 1489.

GUADUAS, a town of Colombia, South America, state of Guandianama, is situated in the beautiful valley of the Magdalena, on the road between Bogota and Honda, 45 miles N.W. of the former town, and more than 5000 feet above sea level. The name signifies in the original the bamboo cane, a plant which grows in great abundance in the neighbourhood. The town possesses a pretty church, and an old monastery now used as a prison. The staple articles of trade are sugar, coffee, cochineal, and oranges, and other fruits. The population is about 8000.

GUATACUM, a genus of trees of the natural order *Zygophyllaceae*. The *guatatum* or *lignum vitæ* tree (*Guaiacum guaiacum*, *Fraxinosum*, *Pachira*, *Guaiacum*, *Guaiacum*, *G. officinale*, L.) is a native of the West Indies and the north coast of South America, where it attains a height of 20 to 30 feet. Its branches are numerous, flaccid, and knotted, the leaves opposite and pinnate, with caducous stipules, and entire, glabrous, ovate-lanceolate leaflets, arranged in 2 or, more rarely, 3 pairs, the flowers in axillary cymes, and have 5 oval pubescent sepals, 5 distinct pale bluish petals three times the length of the sepals, 10 stamens, and a 2-celled superior ovary, and the fruit is about ½ inch long, with a leathery pericarp, and contains in each of its two cells a single seed. *G. santum*, L., grows in the Bahamas and Cuba, and at Key West in Florida. It may be distinguished from *G. officinale* by its smaller and narrower

<sup>1</sup> The *guatatum* tree is described by Garra de Forti (*Arbol de Santa Cruz*), and by Antonius Galus (Lau-nau, *De Morbo Guaiaco*, p. 882, Ven., 1669, fol.), as having 3 flow leaves.



**GUALDO TADINO**, a town of Italy, in the province of Perugia and circondario of Foligno, with a station on the line from Ancona to Rome about 58 miles from the former city. It is picturesquely situated in the lap of the Apennines on the best road that leads to the Fucine Ponds. The cathedral and several of the other churches possess paintings by Nicolo and Matteo da Foligno of the 15th century. In 1871 the inhabitants of the commune numbered 7799. Gualdo has inherited the distinctive epithet of Tadino (which prevents it being confounded with Gualdo near Macerata, or Gualdo Cattaneo near Spoleto) from the ancient Roman town of Tadinum, the ruins of which, discovered in 1750, are situated in the vicinity, not far from the church of Sta Maria Tadina. It was near Tadinum that Narses gained his famous victory over Totila in 552. Recovering from the effects of the Gothic and Lombard invasions, the town, which even then was defended by walls, became for a time an independent commune, but it ultimately passed under the control of Perugia. In 1815 it was incorporated with the Roman States, and in 1833 it was made a city by Gregory XVI.

**GUALEGUAY**, a town of the Argentine republic, department of Entre-Rios, is situated on the Gualeguay river, which falls into the Parana, and is navigable up to this point, 120 miles NNW of Buenos Ayres. It is a prosperous and increasing town, and has an active shipping trade in beef, mutton, hides, wool, tallow, and timber. In 1874 the total value of exports was £268,970. The population is about 19,000.

**GUALEGUAYCHU**, a city of the Argentine republic, department of Entre-Rios, is situated on the Gualeguaychu river, which there falls into the Uruguay, 120 miles north of Buenos Ayres. Like Gualeguay, it depends for its prosperity chiefly on the sheep and cattle grazed in the neighbouring country, and its export trade includes beef, mutton, hides, wool, tallow, and bone manure. The total value of the exports in 1874 was £163,968. The population is about 20,000.

**GUAMANGA**. See **HUAMANGA**.

**GUAN**, a word apparently first introduced into the ornithologist's vocabulary about 1742 by Edwards,<sup>1</sup> who said that a bird he figured (*Nat. Hist. Uncommon Birds*, pl. xii) was "so called in the West Indies," and the name has since been generally applied to all the members of the Subfamily *Penelopinae*, which are distinguished from the kindred Subfamily *Cuculinae* or *Cuculionae* by the broad postacetabular area of the pelvis, as pointed out by Prof. Huxley (*Proc. Zool. Society*, 1868, p. 297), as well as by their maxilla being wider than it is high, with its culmen depressed, the crown feathered, and the nostrils bare—the last two characters separating the *Penelopinae* from the *Oreoscoptes*, which form the third Subfamily of the *Cuculidae*,<sup>2</sup> a Family belonging to that taxonomist's division *Perisoreioides* of the Order *Columbae*.

The *Penelopinae* have been separated into seven genera, of

which *Penelope* and *Oritolus* (properly *Oritalis*), containing respectively about sixteen and nineteen species, are the largest, the others numbering from one to three only. Into their minute differences it would be useless to enter; nearly all have the throat bare of feathers, and from that of many of them hangs a wattle, but one form, *Chamaepetes*, has neither of these features, and *Stegopetris*, though wattled, has the throat clothed. With few exceptions the Guans are confined to the South-American continent, and one species of *Penelope* is however found in Mexico and at Mazatlan, *Penelope cuculionae* Linnaeus, it is said as well as the mainland, while three species of *Oritalis* occur in Mexico or Texas, and one, which is also common to Venezuela, in Tobago. Like *Cuculionae*, Guans are in great measure of arboreal habit. They also readily become tame, but all attempts to domesticate them in the full sense of the word have wholly failed, and the cases in which they have even been induced to breed and the young have been reared in confinement are very few.<sup>3</sup> Yet it would seem that Guans and *Cuculionae* will interbreed with poultry (*Ibis*, 1866, p. 24, *Bull. Soc. Imp. d'Acclimatation*, 1868, p. 550, 1869, p. 357), and what is more extraordinary is that in Texas the hybrids between the *Chamaepetes* (*Oritalis vetula*) and the domestic Fowl are asserted to be far superior to ordinary Game-cocks for fighting purposes. More information on this subject is very desirable. (N.)

**GUANACO** (*Acchena guanaco*), one of the four species of ruminant animals which represent in South America the camels of the East, and which resemble them in the possession of canine teeth in both lower and upper jaws. The Guanaco is the largest species, standing nearly 4 feet high at the shoulders. It is an elegant creature, with gracefully curved neck and long slender legs, its body is covered with long soft hair of a fawn colour above and almost pure white beneath. It is found throughout the southern half of South America, from Peru in the north to Cape Horn in the south, but occurs in greatest abundance in Patagonia. It lives in herds usually of from six to thirty, although these occasionally contain several hundreds, while solitary individuals are sometimes met with. They are exceedingly timid, and therefore wary and difficult of approach, like many other ruminants, however, their curiosity sometimes overcomes their timidity, so as to bring them within range of the hunter's rifle. Thus they are peculiar, being described by Cunningham (*Natural History of the Strait of Magellan*, 1871) as something between the belling of a deer and the neigh of a horse. The chief enemies of the guanaco, according to the same authority, are the Patagonian Indians and the puma, as it forms the principal food of both. Its flesh is palatable although wanting in fat, while its skin forms the chief clothing material of the gigantic Patagonians. According to Darwin, who studied it in its native wilds, the guanaco is readily domesticated, and in this state becomes very bold and will attack man, striking him from behind with both knees. In the wild state, however, they never seek to defend themselves, and if approached from different points, according to the Indian fashion of hunting them, they get completely bewildered and fall an easy prey. They take readily to the water, and have been observed swimming from one island to another, while Byron in his *Narrative* states that he has seen them drinking salt-water. They have a singular habit of dropping their dung during successive days on the same spot—a habit which is greatly appreciated by the Peruvian Indians, who use this deposits for fuel. They seem also to have favourite local

<sup>1</sup> Edwards also gives "Quan" as an alternative spelling, and thus may have noted the original form, since we find D'Umptre in 1676 writing (*Voy.*, v. pt. 2, p. 95) of what he is doubtless an allusion if not the same bird as the "Quan." The species represented by Edwards does not seem to have been identified by the latest authorities.

<sup>2</sup> See the excellent *Synopsis*, extensively laid under contribution for this volume, by Messrs. Sclater and Selous in the *Proceedings of the Zoological Society for 1870* (pp. 554–561), while further information as to the *Cuculionae* has since been given by the former of these gentlemen in the *Transactions of the same society* (ix. pp. 273–288, pls. xli–xlii). Some additions have since been made to the knowledge of the family, but none of very great importance.

<sup>3</sup> It would be hard to place too much stress upon the important bearings on the question of geographical distribution which the establishment of this division has tended to show. For this reference must be made to Prof. Huxley's original paper (*id. supra*), or to the epitome of it given in the *Zoological Record* (iv. pp. 34 and 39).

<sup>4</sup> Cf. Dixon (*The Dove and the Amaryllis*, pp. 223–273, London, 1857), who argues that the reported success of the Dutch towards the end of the last century in domesticating these birds was an exaggeration or altogether a mistake. His two chapters are well worth reading.

tees in which to die, as appears from the great heaps of bones beating no sign of having been gnawed by the puma, which have been found in particular spots.

GUANAJUATO, or SANTA FE DE GUANAJUATO, a city of Mexico, capital of the state of Guanajuato, is situated in 21° 0' 50" N lat and 100° 51' 37" W long., at a height of 7200 feet above the sea. Built as it is at the meeting-places of these mountain gorges, and obliged by lack of space to climb the underfalls of the surrounding heights, Guanajuato has a highly picturesque appearance. The houses of the lower town are four or five stories in height, in most of the streets are narrow and tortuous, and the population is small though beautiful. The cathedral, the Jesuit church, the mint dating from 1813, the new theatre built in 1874, the university, and the gymnasium are worthy of mention. The Alhondiga de Granaditas, originally a coin magazine, was occupied as a fort in the War of Independence, and acquired peculiar interest as the spot where the patriot Hidalgo met his death. Guanajuato, founded in 1554, owed its existence and prosperity to the fact that it is the centre of the greatest silver-mining district in the world. Of the individual mines perhaps the most famous is the *Veneranda*, with a shaft 2000 feet deep, which is in process of being cleared of the water by which it has long been flooded. The population, which includes a considerable number of foreigners, formerly amounted to 100,000, but in 1880 was only 63,500.

#### GUANCAVELICA. See ILLUNCAVELICA.

GUANO. The deposits of guano, or *huano*, known locally as *huancavica*, are found in characteristic condition and abundance upon a large number of the islands lying off Peru and upon certain parts of the mainland. They occur in Bolivia and to the north of Peru also, but are there generally poorer in quality, if not always less in quantity. For the production and preservation of good guano two conditions are requisite—a rainless or nearly rainless climate and abundance of fish in the waters of the ocean. Both conditions are fulfilled on parts of the Bolivian and Peruvian coasts. The penguins, gannets, divers, cranes, cormorants, flamingoes, and other fish-eating birds thus find ample supplies of food, while their excreta retain their soluble and more valuable constituents. But even Peruvian guano is not exclusively excrementitious, nor wholly the produce of birds. These marine and maritime *haustoria* are the breeding-places, the resorts, and the cemeteries not only of sea-birds, but of many other sea-animals,—scals, sea-hares, &c., frequenting many guano lands and islands, and adding considerably during life and when dead to the deposits. In Peruvian guano, it is true, the evidences of its origin are often obscure, but the somewhat complex sources of this material are well shown in the West African guano islands. On these Mr. T. R. Eiden found (1848) three varieties of guano, the lowest being a crust or rock guano, the next above this being a seal guano, containing much seal-fat, and the uppermost layer being a bird guano, in which there were many mummified bird skins and large quantities of feathers.

The dung of bats, which has been found in large quantities in many caverns, both in Europe and in certain parts of France, the Pyrenees and Italy, in New Zealand, and on the North American continent, has been designated "bat-guano". Further, the term guano, even when employed to describe the marine and maritime deposits previously mentioned, includes a considerable variety of substances very different in chemical composition and in manure value. For the deposits of guano occurring on the rainless or nearly rainless islands and coasts of Peru vary much in the proportion of their constituents, such variation being due less to differences in the origin of the deposits

than to subsequent changes. Exposure to the action of the sea and of seaweed, and the pressure of superincumbent layers, are not without influence on the nature of the guano, very different qualities being found at different depths.

Although allusions to guano occur in the writings of travellers in the 17th and 18th<sup>th</sup> centuries, the credit of directing the attention of Europe to this curious and useful product is due to Humboldt. In 1804 he brought from the Chincha Islands a specimen which Klaproth and then Fourcroy and Vauquelin analysed. But it was not until the publication in 1840 of Liebig's work on chemistry in its relations to agriculture and physiology, and demonstrated the importance of artificial manures that a lively interest in this Peruvian fertilizer was awakened. In that year a firm of merchants of Lima sent a large cargo of guano to England, but it was not until 1812 that the regular trade in guano began. Messrs Gibbs & Co imported 182 tons in that year, while in 1862 the amount was no less than 433,000 tons. The price was lowest (£9 per ton) in 1848–9. It rose successively, in the years 1854 to 1856, from £10 to £13, and has since remained at about the last sum for the best qualities. Happily the Peruvian Guano Company are now permitted to sell this manure according to the results of analysis, and not, as before, at a fixed price irrespective of the variable qualities of different cargoes. Each unit per cent of nitrogen is set down as worth 19. 2d per ton, while the phosphates calculated as tri-calcic phosphates, are reckoned as worth 2. 3d per unit per ton. The only drawback to this plan lies in the rather exaggerated price which it assigns to the low qualities of Peruvian guano, namely, those which are poor in nitrogen but rich in phosphates—containing perhaps 40 to 60 per cent of these compounds, which may be much more cheaply purchased in other forms. Still it must be urged that the phosphates of Peruvian guano are more useful than those from most other sources, on account of their physical condition, and their solubility. After all, however, the high phosphate guanos are not much appreciated by farmers, who prefer to use bones and superphosphates as manure for grass lands and root crops.

For a long time the group of Peruvian islands known as the Chinchas furnished nearly all the guano that found its way to Europe. When these deposits, amounting to 7 millions tons or more, were practically exhausted,—only 150,000 tons of deep deposits remaining in 1872,—the further working was stopped except for use in Peru itself. Then the guano on the Mollari and Huano Islands were exported to Europe, in four years (1870 to 1874) about 1 million tons having been shipped and about half a million tons remaining in 1875. Since then the Lobos Islands, situated about 70 miles north of Mollari, have been worked, as have also the islands of the Ballistas group. Even in 1871 three-fourths of the cargoes of nitrogenous guano were from Huano, but the amount of nitrogen generally present in them was rather low, often not exceeding 10 per cent of "potential" ammonia, while the percentage of water was remarkably high—sometimes not less than 25 per cent. The Ballistas guanos of the same year were drier and contained one-third more nitrogen.

In spite of many testings and surveys, the amount of Peruvian guano still remaining to be exported has not been even approximately determined. Not only do contiguous deposits differ much in composition, but it is frequently impossible to ascertain what is guano and what is sand or rock. Sometimes the layers of guano are too thin to be worth removing, in other places they fill up ravines to a much greater depth than would be imagined. An estimate of the total quantity of Peruvian guano remaining in 1877

<sup>1</sup> This bat-guano generally contains much water (over 60 per cent) with about 5 per cent of phosphates, and 8 to 7 per cent ammonia.

<sup>2</sup> *The Art of Metals*, by A. A. Berles, published in an English translation in 1870 in London, mentions guano from the Chincha group.

gave over 2 million tons available for commerce, but this figure presumably includes all varieties, both nitrogenous and phosphatic. Most of the guano lately and now exported comes from the following groups of islands, or places on the coast—Macabi, Huancop, Ballestas, Punta de Lobos, Pabellón de Pica, and Huamillón, since 1877, particularly from the last two localities.

In the article *AGRICULTURE* (vol. i p. 547) some statistics of guano imports were given. According to the British Consular Reports (1878, No. iv pp. 525-539) the quantities of Peruvian guano sold of late years were, in tons—

1869	571,790	1874	386,476
1870	451,601	1875	374,888
1871	468,200	1876	378,668
1872	402,097	1877	310,042
1873	342,425		

The amounts of Peruvian guano taken by different countries during 1876 and 1877 were as follows—

	1876	1877
England and her colonies	130,568	109,954
P. ice and her colonies	102,165	72,067
Guinany	63,724	23,456
Belgium	45,340	71,473
Spain	26,869	28,450
Italy	8,564	6,140
Holland	1,077	8,658

In 1872, when the number of countries contributing guano was very large, the imports into the United Kingdom were as follows—

	Tons	Amshala	Tons
Peru	74,401		2,108
Peru Islands	17,476	British West Indies	1,050
Bolivia	14,068	St. Helena	981
West Coast of Africa	1,562	United States	463
Dutch West Indies	1,232	Other places	2,545

The following are amongst the more obvious characteristics of good Peruvian guano. Although at the present time it is by no means of uniform appearance or of constant composition, yet it may be stated that the best qualities, which most closely resemble the former supplies from the Chincha, are light in colour, do not weigh much more than 60 lb per bushel, are friable, and do not cohere strongly when pressed between the fingers. Small soft lumps are often observed in good samples, when these are broken a white or pale-coloured substance is seen in the centre. This lighter-coloured matter contains carbonate and other ammoniacal salts, in some adulterated samples its appearance is imitated by means of gypsum. The hard lumps found in guano are of very varying composition, some being highly phosphatic and others highly siliceous. The ash left on burning a good Peruvian guano is white or grey, a red ash generally indicates adulteration with ochre or ferruginous earth. An unusual proportion of water commonly points to damage by sea-water or rain, a kind of injury which is the more serious, since it is usually accompanied by a considerable loss of ammonia. If more than a mere trace of chlorine be found in a sample of guano, damage by sea water may be suspected. Although a good guano commonly contains more than half its weight of organic matter and of other substances driven off by a red heat, yet when a still larger quantity of such volatile matters is found their presence may be, and often is, a sign of admixture with peat.

Guanos have been often submitted to analysis,—much more frequently, however, for the sake of determining their agricultural value than their chemical composition. Their worth as manure practically depends, so far as analysis can show, upon their richness in nitrogen and phosphates. The nitrogen, we know, exists in several forms, of which urea, and other urticar, with salts of ammonia (the nitrates, carbonates, and phosphates), are the most important. But besides these compounds a peculiar base or animal alkaloid known as guanino ( $C_4H_7N_3O_2$ ) is present in most samples of Peruvian guano, as it is not unlikely that the nitrogen of this body is capable of exerting a peculiar action. A considerable though variable quantity of nitrates and nitrates

has been recognized in some guanos, ranging, when expressed as potassium nitrate, from no more than  $\frac{1}{2}$  per cent up to 15 and even 6 per cent. Other nitrogenous compounds present in these undecomposed substances which originate from the excreta of birds of bone, skin, cartilage, and feathers, and of the products of flesh. These immediate products of decay are ultimately resolved into ammonia salts and nitrates. Some guanos, not only those of the West African coast (chibros), but many of those of the decomposed feathers, which cannot possibly yield their nitrogen to vegetation for some time. On this account less than half of the 8 to 12 per cent of so-called "potential" ammonia in these guanos is so effective as that in the guanos of the Peruvian coast. The phosphates of guano are numerous, including tricalcic, di-calcic, ammonio-magnesian, and ammonio-phosphates. The solubility of great part of the phosphates in guano helps to make its action more intense and immediate, as much as 10 to 15 per cent of phosphorus pentoxide has been found to be soluble in some instances. Such is said to be often the case with the guano of Ternague, Broken Island and Jarvis Island and guanos resembling. This solubility arises partly from the composition of the phosphates present, some of which are naturally moderately soluble in ordinary water, but it arises partly also from the presence of ammonium carbonate, by which the solubility of the calcic phosphates is increased. The volatile di-calcic which the decaying organic matter of guano continually evolves also aids in effecting the solution of these phosphates which are not soluble in pure water.

As at least part of the nitrogen of guano exists in the form of the volatile carbonates, it will be found that the more delicate substances very much on being kept. One sample of Chincha guano imported in 1865 contained nitrogen equal to 20½ per cent of ammonia, of this 10½ per cent was lost when the guano was exposed to the heat of boiling water, and 9½ per cent of the sample was merely kept for a year in a powdered condition in an ordinary bottle. So strongly ammoniacal is guano is thus, the fraction of the volatile nitrogenous compounds by means of it and is highly desirable. Oil of vitriol is employed in different proportions and in different ways for this purpose. About 6 or 6 lb of oil of vitriol diluted with water and mixed with sand or peat may be added to each cwt. of guano, and 9½ per cent of the ammonia of Dr. Richardson of Newcastle. In this way the ammonia of the volatile carbonate is fixed in the form of sulphate, the oil itself and phosphates of the guano remaining unaltered. But sometimes, as the manufacture of "acid guano" is now carried on, the oil of vitriol is used—very 25 to 30 lb to each cwt. of raw guano. In this case a kind of rich superphosphate is obtained in which 20 per cent of the weight of "bone phosphate" may be added. It is present in association with nitrogen equal to 9 to 10 per cent of ammonia. Such a preparation is "Oikidion's" dissolved Peruvian guano, while "sulphurated" and "ammonia fixed" guanos contain less oil of vitriol, and generally some other substance like sand, which reduces their concentration, is more commonly dry. "Phospho guano" is in reality a superphosphate made from Mgillieson's or other phosphatic guano, and caused by the addition of ammonium sulphate. This Mgillieson's (Holliman) guano contains about 1 per cent of nitrogen and 6½ per cent of ammonia. The guano is a lime applied to the dried and prepared shedge or deposit obtained in the treatment of town sewage by the "A. I. C." process—one of the many precipitation processes now in use. It is little in common with true guano, but is a very valuable fertilizer, chiefly from the refuse of the cod of the Newfoundland and Norwegian fisheries. It is rich both in nitrogen and in phosphates, often containing 8 per cent of the former and 30 per cent of the latter, but its only action causes its action as manure to be uncertain and slow.

Although it is usual and convenient to classify guanos into two groups according to their richness in nitrogen or phosphates respectively, there is no sharp line of demarcation between these classes. Indeed the guano from a single spot may show every gradation from nitrogenous to phosphatic. For instance, three samples taken from a deposit at Punta de Lobos gave amounts of nitrogen corresponding to the following percentages from top to bottom in several layers—siliceous, 81 per cent, anhydrous, 415 per cent, deepest, 16.67 per cent. Three samples from another working in the same district gave these figures—per cent ammonia at 8 feet, 8 per cent at 20 feet, and 12 at 10 feet. A single stratum 12 per cent of potential ammonia, that is, containing an amount of nitrogen which, if expressed as ammonia, equals 12 parts in the hundred of guano, may be regarded as a deficiency, but more recent quantities of guano are now exported from Peru, containing not more than 8 or 10 per cent of ammonia. And there are few qualities which, with 6 to 8 per cent of ammonia, and these pass into more siliceous varieties, with but little organic matter and nitrogen, but still from their softness and fine texture, are capable of being applied, without previous mechanical or manual treatment, to the land. But when we are dealing with what are called "red" or "crude" guanos, we not only have an almost complete absence of nitrogen and of organic matter, but the hard

ness of the material is such as to involve its being first ground and then tritured with oil of vitriol to turn it into a superphosphate before it can become available as manure. With the highly phosphatic yet powdery and soft guanos of Peru and Bolivia such treatment is rarely necessary, but it is essential with Narawa (Congo-Bia) and with the Sombrero Island (Gulf of Mexico) guanos. The latter variety contains no nitrogen, and is very hard, but contains on an average no less than 75 per cent. of trierlebe phosphate. It has been said that the imports into Great Britain of this Sombrero phosphite to have been so large that the whole island has been trampled to dust.

Some notion of the main constituents of Peruvian and Bolivian guanos may be gathered from the following figures, which also represent the nature and percentage proportions of the chief constituents of five samples from several localities —

	Angamos	Chacab	Patibon de Pica	Punta de Lobos	Bolivia
Nitrogen	11	16	17	16	13
Organic matter and combined water	53	62	45	54	43
What is nitrogen equal to ammonia	17	17	13	7	5
Trierlebe phosphate	19	20	19	20	42
Phosphorus pentoxide in all these salts	0	8	8	8	3
Alkalies, &c., by difference	10	6	12	13	12

The specimen of Angamos guano actually contained 25 per cent. of trierlebe phosphate, and but 5 per cent. phosphorus pentoxide as trierlebe phosphate. It will indeed be seen how generally with the diminution of the nitrogenous organic matter the phosphates increase, and vice versa. Analyses of guanos from many different countries exhibit the same facts, and the phosphates in Peruvian guanos are less rich in phosphorus than in one might expect, owing to the intrusion of siliceous matter. In some guanos analysed by Reimel more than 80 per cent. of sand occurred. Californian guanos give the analysis, 16 per cent. ammonia, and about 30 per cent. phosphates. In Falkland Island guano he found about 2 to 2½ per cent. ammonia and 20 to 25 per cent. phosphates. In the case of so variable a material it is quite nothing in itself, and of small value, but it is indicative to note how low a proportion of nitrogen is present in many of the guanos from different countries — Algar Bay, 5 per cent. of potential ammonia; Ascension Island, 6, 6, Queensland, 10, Chilo, 12, Ecuador, 5, Mexico, 2, Isla Gonia, 2, 7, Tasmania, 2, 5.

In the guanos imported during 1817-48 Mr. J. W. Fry found the following average percentages of ammonia (calculated from total nitrogen) and of phosphates (calculated as trierlebe phosphate) —

	Ammonia	Phosphates
Peru (18 samples)	17	21
Chilabuco	7	30
Peru (14 "	14	30
St. Domingo	14	34
S. Domingo Bay (20 "	12	66

Dr. Voelcker's analyses of samples taken in 1874 from the under-mentioned places gave about 25 per cent. phosphates, and of ammonia 8 to 12 per cent. in guanos from Patibon de Pica, 8 to 12 per cent. from Lobos, and 8 to 12½ per cent. from Humahué.

The Lobos guanos, having since then become of generally inferior quality, have been but sparingly imported during the last few years. The percentage of ammonia in recent guanos of guano from Punta de Lobos has been 5 to 6, from Humahué 9, and from Patibon de Pica 11 to 12.

The analysis of guano for commercial purposes is generally limited to the quantitative determination of three constituents — the nitrogen, the soluble phosphorus pentoxide, and the insoluble phosphates, the latter not usually reckoned as trierlebe phosphate. The processes of analysis require a few special precautions. One of these consists in making the guano dry in a retort or in a shallow development of foliages, and is therefore particularly fitted for application to grass and to other plants the development of the stem and leaf of which is desired. Its effects on clover are less marked. Mixed with superphosphate, it is very commonly used in manure-crops, and to most of the plants of the kitchen garden, for many plants cultivated for their flowers it may be used also, but with great care and moderation, mixed with water or dry soil. On light and calcareous lands very little is necessary, and in manure-crops it has frequently been found to burn and destroy the young plants or even to prevent the germination of the seed, if dissolved guano is less liable to cause this injury.

Guano, with another useful natural product, namely, nitrate of soda, constitutes the chief source of revenue for Peru. The following papers and reports in the *Journal of the Royal Agricultural Society* contain interesting information on guano, viz. v. 92, p. 201, v. 196, xiv p. 186, set. i. v. 105, p. 218, v. 105, p. 142, 408, v. 107, set. i. v. 220, p. 261, x. 641. Native guano is discussed, set. i. v. 107, p. 415. The *Farmer's Weekly Review* contains a digest of most of the important papers on guano published on the Continent, see, e.g. 1868-9, p. 281-288, 1869-1, pp. 180-181, 1869-2, pp. 180-187, 1867, p. 180, 1870-2, pp. 190-195, 1875-6, p. 10-20. A sample of guano published in 1874 by Dunlop & Co., London, gives some important statistics and reports on the Peruvian guano then remaining, as also does the Commercial Blue Book, No. 23, 1878, pp. 628 to 639. (A H C)

GUARANA, so called from the Guaraní, an aboriginal American tribe, the plant *Paulinia corollata*, Mart., of the natural order *Sapindaceae* and tribe *Sapindaceae*, indigenous to the north and west of Brazil. It has a smooth erect stem, large pinnate alternate leaves, composed of 5 oblong-oval leaflets, inflorescence in narrow panicles of short-stalked flowers, having 4 or 5 sepals and 4 petals, 8 stamens, and a cylindrical 3-celled ovary, and fruit ovoid or pyriform, about as large as a grape, and containing usually one seed only, which is shaped like a minute horse-chestnut. What is commonly known as guarana, guarana bread, or Brazilian cocoa, is prepared from the seeds as follows. In October and November, at which time they become ripe, the seeds are removed from their capsules, and sun-dried, so as to admit of the ready removal by hand of the white rind, they are next ground in a stone mortar or deep dish of hard soapstone, the powder, measured by the cup, is mixed with a small quantity of water, or by exposure to the dew, is then made into a paste with a certain proportion of whole or broken seeds, and worked up sometimes into balls, but usually into rolls not unlike Götman sausages, 5 to 8 inches in length, and 12 to 16 oz. in weight. After drying by artificial or solar heat, the guarana is packed between broad leaves in sacks or baskets. Thus prepared, it is of extreme hardness, and has a brown line, a bitter astringent taste, and an odour faintly resembling that of roasted coffee. An inferior kind, softer and of a lighter colour, is manufactured by admixture of cocoa or cassava. Rasped or grated into sugar and water, guarana forms a beverage largely consumed in S. America. Its manufacture, originally confined to the Manb's Indians, has spread into various parts of Brazil.

The properties of guarana as a nervous stimulant and restorative are due to the presence of what was described as a new principle, and termed *guaranine*, by Dr. T. Martius, but which was proved by Beilstein and Liebig to be identical with caffeine,  $C_8H_{10}N_4O_2$ , 1840, p. 518  $\text{eq}$ . of this alkaloid guaranine yields 5.07 per cent. nitrogen 2.18 in good black tea, 8 to 12 in coffee beans, and 12 in malt of Pilsener beer. Beilstein's *Pharm. Journ.*, vii. 216. For medical purposes it may in fact be regarded as "practically a convenient form of impure caffeine." (F. de Arago, *Biblioth. Reimp.*, 1874, p. 35). Besides this substance, which is stated to exist in it in the form of tartrate, guaranine yields on analysis the glucoside, sequepin, with tannin, acetic, guai, three volatile oils, and an acid green liquid oil (Foumier, *Journal de Pharm.*, vol. xxviii, 1861, p. 201). As a medicine, guarana was first described in 1817 by Cade de Gassac, in whom a specimen was sent from Brazil (see *Bull. Gen. de Therap.*, lii. 1857, p. 497  $\text{eq}$ ), in which country it is in popular repute as a stomachic, a hiccough, and apoplexy, and more especially as a specific for dysentery and diarrhoea, in which cases it is given in very large doses, viz. 8 to 16 grains (see *Bull. Gen. de Therap.*, lii. p. 129). It is said by Martius (*Syst. Nat. Med. Pharm. Brasilienensis*, p. 69, Leipzig, 1849) to diminish secretion by its tonic effects on the nerves, to invigorate the stomach and intestines, to restrain excessive mucous discharges, to increase the action of the arteries and heart, and to promote diaphoresis. In migraine, or sick-headache, it has sometimes been found a most serviceable remedy. (See *Brit. Med. Journ.*, 1874, in which 421, 422, *Pharm. Journ.*, Aug. and Sept. 1878, pp. 100-102, 161-170), and it has been recommended in lumbago when the pain is of a stinging nature (Rawson, *British Retrospect*, 1874, v. 1, p. 38), and in sciatica, &c. (see *Pharm. Journ.*, 1874, in which 423, set. xxi, p. 224. On the "Antagonism" between Guaranae



and *McConato of Memphis*," see J. H. Bennett, *Rep. on the Anteq. of Memphis*, p. 86, 1876. Further bibliographical references will be found in Prof. P. Montegrazzani's excellent article, "Del guarantismo, nuovo alimento nervoso," *Ann. Univ. di Mod.*, April to June 1886, vol. 192, pp. 92-153.

**GUARANTEE**, or **GUARANTY**, in English law, is a promise to be answerable for the debt of another should he fail to make payment, or generally to be answerable for the performance of any duty by another person. The debt or duty must be owing by another, who is primarily bound, and the guarantor is only liable in the event of his failure of performance. Guarantees are required to be in writing by the Statute of Frauds (29 Car. II. c. 3), which enacts (§ 4) that "no action shall be brought whereby to charge the defendant upon any special promise to answer for the debt, default, or misbehaviour of another, unless the agreement upon which such action shall be brought shall be in writing, signed by the parties to be charged by the contract, or some other person thereto by him lawfully authorized." The test of the applicability of this section is whether the original debtor continues liable. If his liability is gone, and the person promising to pay the debt becomes immediately and primarily liable, then the promise need not be in writing. Thus when a debtor had been taken in execution for a debt, and a third person promised to pay the debt if the debtor were discharged from custody, it was held that writing was not necessary, inasmuch as the discharge operated as a satisfaction of the original debt, and the person making the promise alone remained liable. The default for which liability may be assumed by another person includes any case of breach of duty, and is not confined to cases of non-performance of contracts. A promise to guarantee comes under the general rule which requires enforceable agreements to be founded on consideration, *i. e.*, a corresponding promise or performance on the other side (see *CONTRACT*). It was formerly held that the consideration must appear in the memorandum of writing, not necessarily in express terms, but at any rate as a matter of fact and reasonable inference. Thus a promise to pay for goods to be supplied to another was held to disclose a consideration, *viz.*, the future supply of goods. But when the promise was to pay for goods already supplied, no consideration was disclosed. By the Mercantile Law Amendment Act (19 and 20 Vict. c. 97), passed in consequence of representations made by merchants in Scotland and the North of England, who found the difference between Scotch and English law as to written contracts a source of great inconvenience, this section of the Statute of Frauds was repealed. The Mercantile Law Amendment Act also declares that a guarantee given to or for a firm shall cease on any change taking place in the persons constituting the firm, unless a continuance of the promise is expressly stipulated or of necessity to be inferred. The corresponding Act for Scotland (19 and 20 Vict. c. 60) requires all guarantees, securities, or cautionary obligations, and all representations as to the character of any person made with the view of obtaining credit, money, &c., for such person to be in writing in order to be binding, and establishes the same rule as the English Act with reference to guarantees to or for a firm.

**GUARATINGUETA**, a town of Brazil, in the province of São Paulo, situated near the right bank of the Paraíba, about 40 miles N.E. of the city of São Paulo. It was founded in 1651 by the Captain Mór Dionizio da Costa. The houses are almost all constructed of mud, and there are few buildings of any note except the churches, of which the chief is dedicated to St. Anthony. A considerable traffic is fostered by the fertile character of the surrounding district and the situation of Guaratingueta on the road between São Paulo and Rio de Janeiro. Population 7400. According to Spix and Martius the name of the

town is equivalent to "the place where the sun turns," and refers to its vicinity to the tropic of Capricorn. See Milhet de Saint-Adolphe, *Diccion. Geogr. do império do Brazil*, 1870.

**GUARDI, FRANCESCO** (1712-1789), a Venetian painter, was a pupil of Canaletto, and followed his style so closely that his pictures are very frequently attributed to his more celebrated master. Nevertheless, the diversity, when once perceived, is sufficiently marked.—Canaletto being moribund, solid, distinct, well-grounded, and on the whole the highest master, while Guardi is noticeably full of spirit and sparkle, sparkling colour, and picturesque sketched figures—in these respects being fully equal to Canaletto. Guardi is sometimes coloured Canaletto's designs. He had extraordinary facility, three or four days being enough for producing an entire work. The number of his performances is large in proportion to this facility, and to the love of gun which characterised our painter. Many of his works are to be found in England, seven in the Louvre, four, of exceptional merit, in the Mantua Palace, Venice.

**GUARDIAN AND WARD**. See *INFANT*.

**GUARINTO**, sometimes incorrectly named *Guariento*, was the first Paduan painter who distinguished himself. The only date distinctly known in his career is 1568, when, having already acquired high renown in his native city, he was invited by the Venetian authorities to paint a Paradise in the council-hall of Venice. These works were greatly admired at the time, but have long ago disappeared under repaintings. His works in Padua have suffered much. In the church of the Elemosinari are allegories of the Planets, and, in its choir, some small sacred histories in dead colour, such as an Ecce Homo, also, on the upper wall, the life of St. Augustine, with some other subjects. A few fragments of other paintings by Guarinto are still extant in Padua. In the gallery of Bassano is a Crucifixion, carefully executed, and somewhat superior to a merely traditional method of handling, although on the whole Guarinto must rather be classed in that school of art which preceded Cimabue than as having advanced in his vestiges, likewise two other works in Bassano, ascribed to the same hand. The painter is buried in the church of S. Bernardino, Padua.

**GUARINI, GIOVANNI BATTISTA** (1537-1612), the author of the *Pastor Fido*, was born at Ferrara on the 10th of December 1537, just seven years before the birth of Tasso. He was descended from Guarino of Verona (see next article). The young Battista studied both at Pisa and Padua, whence he was called, when not yet twenty, to profess moral philosophy in the schools of his native city. He inherited considerable wealth, and was already in life to many Taddeo de' Bendedei, a lady of good birth. In 1567 he entered the service of Alphonso II., duke of Ferrara, thus beginning the court career which was destined to prove a constant source of disappointment and annoyance to him. Though he cultivated poetry for his time, Guarini aimed at state employment as the serious business of his life, and managed to be sent on various embassies and missions by his dual master. There was, however, at the end of the 16th century no opportunity for a man of energy and intellectual ability to distinguish himself in the petty sphere of Italian diplomacy. The time too had passed when the profession of a courtier, painted in such glowing terms by Castiglione, could confer either profit or honour. It is true that the court of Alphonso presented a brilliant spectacle to Europe, with Tasso for titular poet, and an attractive circle of accomplished ladies. But the real duke of Ferrara was an illiberal patriot, feeding his servants with promises, and ever ready to treat them with the brutality that condemned the author of the *Gerusalemme Liberata* to a madhouse. Guarini spent his time and money

to little purpose, suffered from the spite and ill-will of two successive secretaries,—Pigna and Monterossi,—quarrelled with his old friend Tasso, and at the end of fourteen years of service found himself half-ruined, with a large family and no prospects. When Tasso was condemned to St. Anna, the duke promoted Guarini to the vacant post of court poet. There is an interesting letter extant from the latter to his friend Cornelio Bentivoglio, describing the efforts he made to fill this place appropriately. "I strove to transform myself into another person, and, like a player, reassumed the character, costume, and feelings of my youth. Advanced in manhood, I forced myself to look young, I turned my natural melancholy into artificial gaiety, affected loves I did not feel, exchanged wisdom for folly, and, in a word, passed from a philosopher into a poet." How ill-adapted he felt himself to this menial life may be gathered from the following sentence: "I am already in my forty-fourth year, the father of eight children, two of whom are old enough to be my censors, while my daughters are of an age to marry." Abandoning so ungenerous a strain upon his faculties, Guarini retired in 1582 to his ancestral farm, the Villa Guarini, in the lovely country that lies between the Adige and Po, where he gave himself up to the cares of his family, the nursing of his dilapidated fortunes, and the composition of the *Pastor Fido*. He was not happy in his domestic lot, for he had lost his wife young, and quarrelled with his eldest sons about the division of his estate. Litigation seems to have been an inveterate vice with Guarini; nor was he ever free from legal troubles. After studying his biography, the conclusion is forced upon our minds that he was originally a man of robust and virile intellect, ambitious of greatness, confident in his own powers, and well qualified for serious affairs, whose energies found no proper scope for their exercise. Literary work afforded but a poor sphere for such a character, while the enforced inactivity of court life soured a naturally capacious and choleric temper. Of poetry he spoke with a certain tone of condemnation, professing to practise it only in his leisure moments, nor are his miscellaneous verses of a quality to secure for their author a very lasting reputation. It is therefore not a little remarkable that the fruit of his retirement—a disappointed courtier past the prime of early manhood—should have been a dramatic masterpiece worthy to be ranked with the classics of Italian literature. Deferring a further account of the *Pastor Fido* for the present, the remaining incidents of Guarini's restless life may be briefly told. In 1585 he was at Turin superintending the first public performance of his drama, whence Alphonsus recalled him to Ferrara, and gave him the office of secretary of state. This reconciliation between the poet and his patron did not last long. Guarini moved to Florence, then to Rome, and back again to Florence, where he established himself as the courtier of Ferdinand de' Medici. A dishonourable marriage, pressed upon his son Guarino by the grand duke, roused the natural resentment of Guarini, always scrupulous upon the point of honour. He abandoned the Medicean court, and took refuge with Francesco Maria of Urbino, the last son of the Montefeltro-della-Rovere house. Yet he found no satisfaction at Urbino. "The old court is a dead institution," he writes to a friend, "one may see a shadow of it, but not the substance in Italy of to-day. Ours is an age of appearances, and one goes masquerading all the year." This was true enough. Those dwindling, deadly lively little residence towns of Italian ducal families, whose day of glory was over, and who were waiting to be slowly absorbed by the capacious appetite of Austria, were no fit places for a man of energy and independence. Guarini finally took refuge in his native Ferrara, which, since the death of Alphonsus, had now devolved to the papal see. Here, and at the Villa Guarini, his last years were passed in study,

lawsuits, and polemical disputes with his contemporary critics, until 1612, when he died at Venice in his seventy-fifth year.

The *Pastor Fido* is a pastoral drama composed not without reminiscences of Tasso's *dramma*. The scene is laid in Arcadia, where Guarini supposes it to have been the custom to sacrifice a maiden yearly to Diana. But an oracle has declared that when two seasons of divine lineage are united in marriage, and a faithful shepherd has atoned for the ancient error of a faithless woman, this inhuman rite shall cease. The plot turns upon the unexpected fulfilment of this prophecy, contrary to all the schemes which had been devised for bringing it to accomplishment, and in despite of apparent improbabilities of divers kinds. It is extremely elaborate and, regarded as a piece of cunning mechanism, leaves nothing to be desired. Each motive has been carefully prepared, each situation amply developed. Yet, considered as a play, the *Pastor Fido* disappoints a reader trained in the school of Sophocles or Shakespeare. The action itself seems to take place off the stage, and only the results of action, stationary tableaux representing the movement of the drama, are put before us in the scenes. The art is lyrical, not merely in form but in spirit, and in adaptation to the requirements of music which demands stationary expressions of emotion for development. The characters have been well considered, and are exhibited with great truth and vividness, the cold and eager hunter Silvio contrasting with the tender and romantic Montillo, and Corisca's malicious arts enhancing the pure affection of Amantillo. Doinda presents another type of love so impulsive that it prevails over a maiden's sense of shame, while the courtier Caimo brings the corruption of towns into comparison with the innocence of the country. In Caimo the poet painted his own experience, and here his satire upon the count of Ferrara is none the less biting because it is greatly measured. In Corisca he delineated a woman vitiated by the same town life, and a very hideous portrait has he drawn. Though a satirical element was thus introduced into the *Pastor Fido* in order to relieve its ideal picture of Arcadia, the whole play is but a study of contemporary feeling in Italian society. There is no true intensity whatever in the drama. This correspondence with the spirit of the age secured its success during Guarini's lifetime, this made it so dangerously seductive that Cardinal Bellarmine told the poet he had done more harm to Christendom by his blandishments than Luther by his heresy. Without anywhere transgressing the limits of decorum, the *Pastor Fido* is steeped in sensuousness, and the immaturity of its pictures is enhanced by rhetorical concessions more provocative than nudity. Moreover, the love described is effeminate and wanton, it lacks as passion than as lust enveloped in a veil of sentiment. We divine the coming age of *cicadas* and *castles*. Of Guarini's style it would be difficult to speak in terms of too high praise. The thought and experience of a lifetime have been condensed, in these five acts, and have found expression in language brilliant, classical, chiselled to perfection. Here and there the taste of the 17th century makes itself felt in *trigol* conceits and forced antitheses, nor does Guarini abstain from sententious maxims which reveal the moralist rather than the poet. Yet these are but minor blemishes in a masterpiece of diction, glistening and faultless like a polished bas-relief of hard Corinthian bronze. That a single pastoral should occupy so prominent a place in the history of literature seems astonishing, until we reflect that Italy, upon the close of the 16th century, expressed itself in the *Pastor Fido*, and that the influence of this drama was felt through all the art of Europe till the epoch of the Revolution. It is not a mere play. The sensual refinement proper to an age of social decadence found in it the most exact embodiment, and made it the code of gallantry for the next two centuries.

The best edition of the *Pavio Fido* is that of Venice (Cottol), 1602. The most convenient is that of Barbis, Florence, 1898. For Quaini's miscellaneous *Rime*, the Ferrara edition, in 4 vols., 1787, may be consulted. His polemical writings, *Private Pious* and *Secundo*, and his more comely called *Edipo*, were published at Venice, Florence, and Rome, between 1588 and 1614 (A. S.).

**GUARINO**, or **GUARINUS** (1370–1460), of Verona, one of the Italian restorers of classical learning, was born in 1370 at Verona, and studied Greek at Constantinople, where for five years he was the pupil of Manuel Chrysoloras. When he set out on his return to Italy he was the happy possessor of two cases of precious Greek MSS which he had been at great pains to collect, it is said that the loss of one of these by shipwreck caused him such distress that his hair turned grey in a single night. He employed himself as a teacher of Greek, first at Verona and afterwards in Venice and Florence, in 1436 he became, through the patronage of Lucretius, marquis of Este, professor of Greek at Ferrara, and in 1438 and following years he acted as interpreter for the Greeks at the councils of Ferrara and Florence. He died at Ferrara 14th December 1460, aged ninety.

His principal works are translations of Sesto and of some of the *Laws* of Plutarch, a compendium of the Greek grammar of Chrysoloras, and a *Journal* of commentaries on Plautus, Juvenal, Martial, and on some of the writings of Aristotle and Cicero. See Bosman, *Vita et Disquisitiones de Vita* (Brescia, 1805–6).

**GUARINO**, also known as **VARINUS**, and surnamed from his birthplace **FAVORINUS**, **FAVORINUS**, or **CAMERUS** (c. 1450–1537), lexicographer and scholar, was born at Favosina near Camerino about 1450, studied Greek and Latin at Florence under Politian, and afterwards became for a time the pupil of Lascaris. Having entered the Benedictine order, he now gave himself with great zeal to Greek lexicography, and in 1496 published his *Thesaurus variorum nuperiorum et horti Adonis*, a collection of thirty-four grammatical facts in Greek. He for some time acted as tutor to Giovanni dei Medici (afterwards Leo X.), and also held the appointment of keeper of the Medicean library at Florence. In 1514 Leo appointed him bishop of Nocera. In 1517 he published a translation of the *Apophthegmata* of Joannes Stobæus, and in 1523 appeared his *Etymologicum Magnum*, sive *Thesaurus variorum ac linguæ Græcæ ex multis variisque auctoribus collecta*, a compilation which has been frequently reprinted, and which has laid subsequent scholars under great though not always acknowledged obligations. Guarino died in 1537.

**GUASTALLA**, a town of Italy, in the province of Reggio, at the influx of the Crostolo into the Po, about 24 miles NE of Parma. It is the seat of a bishop, and possesses a cathedral, San Pietro, an extensive but ruined castle of the 16th century, eight churches, a civil hospital, a gymnasium, a public library (*La Biblioteca Muldotti*) with 18,000 vols., a school of music, and a theatre. A statue of Ferrante I. of Gonzaga, by Leone Leoni of Arezzo, adorns the market place. The inhabitants are largely engaged in the growing of rice, for which the marshy land around the town is specially adapted, and they also manufacture silk, flannel, and linen. In 1871 the population of the town proper was only 2800, but that of the commune was 10,618.

Guastalla, or, as the older forms of the name appear, Guastalla on Waistalla, was founded by the Lombards in the 7th century. It acquired some fame in the Middle Ages as the seat of the council held by Frederick II. in 1106. In 1307 it is said to have been deprived of its fortifications by Ghibelline of Cologno, and they were not restored till 1386. Maria Visconti of Milan, to whose territory it belonged, raised the town and district to the rank of a countship, and bestowed it on Guido Tonelli, the husband of his cousin. In 1599 the Tonelli family was displaced by Ferrero (Ferdinand) of Gonzaga, and in 1641 the new occupant got Charles V. to make the countship immediately dependent on the empire. In 1621 it was made a duchy. The last duke of Guastalla of the Gonzaga family died in 1747, and then the Spanish king in the previous year taken possession of the town in the name of Queen Elizabeth,

Maria Theresa made good her claim to the imperial fief. At the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle it was ceded to the duke of Parma, and its subsequent history is practically that of Parma and Piacenza. In 1789 it was incorporated in the *Repubblica Francese*, and in 1805 it bore the title of province to Napoleon's sister Pauline. Parma, Piacenza, and Guastalla were handed over by the peace of Vienna to Maria Louise, the wife of Napoleon, and on her death they passed to Charles of Bourbon. In 1848 Guastalla was added to Modena, and in 1859 along with Modena it was incorporated with Italy. The area of the duchy was about 125 square miles.

**GUATEMALA**, or more rarely **GUATEMALA**, was formerly

merely a captain-generalship of Spanish America, which included the fifteen provinces of Chiapas, Suchitepeques, Bascintla, Sonsonate, San Salvador, Vera Paz and Yotón, Chiquimula, Honduras, Nicaragua, Costa Rica, Totomocapan, Quetzaltenango, Solola, Chimaltenango, and Sacatepeques, — or, in other words, the whole of Central America and part of the present territory of Mexico. The name is now restricted to a small part of the area which constitutes an independent republic.

The republic of Guatemala is situated between 13° 43' and 18° N lat., and between 88° and 93° 5" W long. Conterminous on the N with Mexico and Yucatan, it is bounded towards the E and SE by Belize or British Honduras, the Gulf of Honduras, and the republics of Honduras and San Salvador, and towards the SW it is washed by the Pacific. The Yucatan frontier is only partially fixed, and though the Mexican frontier was nominally determined as early as 1772, the interpretation of the terms of the agreement is still open to much debate. Towards British Honduras the boundary is fixed by the treaty of April 30, 1868, according to which it runs up the mid channel of the river Saratón to the Chinca or Dose Falls, thence in a right line to Guatib's Falls on the river Belize, and thence again in a right line due north to the Mexican frontier. The area of Guatemala is estimated at from 40,000 to over 50,000 square miles, an accurate statement is impossible, not only on account of the dulcety of frontier, but from the fact that the surveys are very imperfect. All the maps of the country contain a great deal of hypothetical material, especially in the filling up of the geographical details.

**Mountains**. — A large proportion of Guatemala may be generally described as mountainous. The main central chain, which is usually considered a continuation of the Andes, runs in a wavy line from south-east to north-west, keeping on the whole parallel with the Pacific coast at a distance of 40 or 45 miles. Its mean elevation is about 7000 feet, but none of its summits attain to 14,000. Though it forms the main watershed of the country between the Pacific and the Atlantic versant or slope, it is pierced in one or two places by rivers. In the neighbourhood of the capital it bears the name of Sierra de las Nubes, in the north-west it is known as the Sierra Madre, and it enters the Mexican (ex-Guatemalan) state of Chiapas as the mountains of Istatan. A range called the Sierra de Chiapas, which, how ever, changes its name frequently from place to place, strikes eastward from the Sierra Madre towards Belize, where it is known as the Cockscamp, another similar range, the Sierra de Santa Cruz, continues east to Cape Cochon between the Rio Dulce and the Saratón, and a third, the Sierra de las Nubes or in its eastern portion Sierra del Mico stretches between the Rio Dulce and the Rio Motagua. Between Honduras and Guatemala the frontier is formed by the Sierra de Copan. There are no real plateaus in Guatemala such as give its character to the Mexican region, the so called plateaus of Quetzaltenango, Patzún, Guatemala, &c., being merely broad valleys amid the mountains, but the general relief of the country is of the most varied description, the mountains

<sup>1</sup> The question is argued at length in *Boletín de la Sociedad de Geografía Mexicana*, 1876.





descending in all kinds of terraces and underfalls. The number of volcanic summits is very great. Bernoulli gives a list of 14 or 15, and Foleado makes the number no less than 31. The following are those that are decidedly active—Panaya, in 14° 21' 30" N lat and 90° 41' 34" E long, on the southern shores of lake Amatitlan, with its cone on the southern slope, Volcan de Fuego, 12,821 feet in height, in 14° 27' 25" N lat and 90° 53' 30" E long, near Old Guatemala, Atitlan, 11,849 feet in height, in 14° 36' N lat and 91° 14' E long, Quetzaltenango, 9338 feet in height, in 14° 53' 30" N lat and 91° 53' 30" E long, and Tajumulco, in 17° 9' 58" N lat and 92° 6' 7" E long.

The last was observed in eruption by Bernoulli on occasion of the great earthquake of 1803. Lake Quetzaltenango, which is surrounded by an extensive *malpais*, it furnishes great supplies of sulphur. More famous, however, than any of these is the Volcan de Agua, or Volcan, so called because in 1541 it destroyed the city of Old Guatemala by a deluge of water. It is situated in 14° 28' 48" N lat and 90° 53' 30" E long. The statement of Humboldt that it rises above the snow-line is a mistake, for that would be a height of about 14,500 feet, whereas the actual height of the mountain, according to Poggenondoff's revision of Captain Hall's trigonometrical measurement, is only 13,108 feet. When Dr. Schreier and Dr. Wagner ascended the mountain on August 4, 1854, they found no traces of snow or ice, and though the weeks later, a thin coating of snow appeared on the outer slopes of the crater, it was gone again in four days. The source of the great flood of water was probably a crater lake.<sup>1</sup>

*Rivers.*—Guatemala is richly watered. On the western side of the sierras the rivers are short, and the streams, while very numerous, are consequently small and rapid, but on the western side a number of the rivers attain a very considerable development. The Motagua, whose principal head stream is called the Rio Grande, has a course of about 250 miles, and is navigable to within 50 miles of the capital, which is situated on one of its tributaries the Rio de las Vacas. It forms a delta on the south of the Gulf of Honduras. Of similar importance is the Polochic, which is about 180 miles in length, and navigable about 20 miles above the river-port of Tecmán. Before reaching the Golfo Amateco it passes through the Izabal Lake and the Golfo Dulce. A vast number of streams, among which are the Churo, the Cuadalupe, the Rio de la Pasion, unite to form the Usumacinta, whose noble current passes along the Mexican frontier, and flowing on through Chiapas and Tabasco, falls into the bay of Campeachy. The Chiapas follows a similar course.

*Lakes.*—There are several extensive lakes in Guatemala. The Lake of Peten or Laguna de Flores, in the centre of the department of Peten, is an irregular basin about 27 miles long, with an extreme breadth of 13. In an island in the western portion stands Flores the capital of the department, well known to American antiquaries for the number of ancient idols which have been recovered from its soil. On the shore of the lake is the stalactite cave of Jobitsamal, of great local celebrity, and in its depths, according to the popular legend, may still be discerned the stone image of a horse that belonged to Cortes. The Lake of Izabal, already mentioned as the terminus of the Polochic river, is about 86 miles long, and would be of considerable value as a harbour if the bar at the mouth of the Rio Dulce did not prevent the upward passage of seafaring vessels. As a contrast the Lake of Atitlan is a land-locked basin encompassed with lofty mountains and possessing no visible outlet for its waters, which are replenished by numerous streams. It is about 18 miles long, with a maximum

breadth of 9 or 10 miles, and it lies about 5300 feet above the sea level. "On its banks," says M. Bédan Vlietham, "stand eleven villages, whose situations are so varied that their climates and productions are those of the cold, the temperate, and the tropical regions, and whose inhabitants speak different dialects."<sup>2</sup> About 8 or 9 miles south of the capital lies the Lake of Amatitlan, with the town of the same name at its western extremity. It lies about 3980 feet above the sea, and has a length of 9 miles and a breadth of about 3. On the borders of San Salvador and Guatemala there is the lake of Guya, about 30 miles long and 12 broad, at a height of 2100 feet above the sea. It is connected by the river Ostuma with the Lake of Ayaña which lies about 1900 feet higher at the foot of the Andes. The large lakes, according to Dollfus, are not of crater origin.

*Geology and Mines.*—The best and indeed the only elaborate account of the geology of the country is given by Dollfus and Montanier, who were members of the great French expedition for the exploitation of the Mexican region. According to these savants, who, however, confess that their studies are only provisional, the basic rock is the granite which, along with trachytes and porphyries of very various character, intermingled with and overlaid by directly volcanic products, constitutes the great band of the Sierra Madre. From the main ridge towards the Atlantic there is a rich development of mica schist, and calcareous foundations of sedimentary origin and probably Jurassic age, while the vastest of the Pacific is almost covered with modern alluvium washed down along the rapid slopes. Mastodont and elephant remains have been discovered in the tuffs. The country as a whole may be said to owe its shape to the porphyries. Though some of the strata are essentially metaliferous, Guatemala possesses few mines of importance. During the Spanish rule about 40 million pesos of silver were obtained at Alotepeque in Chiquimula, and the works are still carried on, though with poorer results. Lead is found extensively in Huehuetenango and Yatepea, beds of excellent coal exist in Iruab, marble is quarried at San Juan in Guatemala, and on the Rio Honda in Zacapa, and lithographic stone is met with in the last-mentioned department.

*Climate.*—Except in the marshy lagoons along the Pacific, which are inhabited by groups of fishers and salt-gatherers, the climate of Guatemala is considered a healthy one. The peculiar relief of the country gives rise to a large amount of local differences in the matter of heat and cold, but the whole may be truly divided into a tropical or low-lying region, a temperate or middle region, and a cold or elevated region. The tropical region, or *tierra caliente*, extends from the level of the sea to an elevation of about 1300 feet, the temperate, or *tierra templada*, from 1300 to 4900 feet, and the cold, or *tierra fria*, from 4900 to 8300 feet. Fortunately for the future of Guatemala the templada is by far the most extensive. In the calendar the rainy season lasts four months. During that period the south west wind prevails, and is often tempestuous like the Cordonezo de San Francisco, or "flagellation of St. Francis," on the coast of Mexico, during the dry season the north wind is the most usual. The rainy season lengthens as we ascend to the templada. The Boca Costa district indeed has a rainy season of seven months, from May to November, and the dry season is not completely dry. Higher still, in the tierra fria, the rain lasts five months, from May to October, and the dry season is quite worthy of the name. At Guatemala, the only place where meteorological observations have been made through a long series of years, the minimum thermometer readings varied from 41° to 45° Fahr. in the five years 1859 to 1863, and the maximum from 84° to 87°.

<sup>1</sup> See *Arcos Central America*, 1877, p. 108.

<sup>2</sup> Voy. géol. dans les républiques de Guatemala et San Salvador, Paris, 1868.

<sup>1</sup> See Wagner, *Wissenschaftlicher Reise im tropischen America*.







forces it was one of the richest and most beautiful cities of Spanish America, possessing about 100 churches and convents and more than 60,000 inhabitants. The ruins are still almost majestic, and many of the buildings appear as if they had been fortresses. Among those best preserved are the ancient residences of the Spanish governors, now occupied by the administration, and the university building, now the national college. Great damage was done to the place by the earthquake of September 1874. The population is about 20,000. An older Guatemala was situated at Ciudad Vieja or Almalongu, but seventeen years after it was founded by Alvarado it was carried away by the great inundation to which the Volcan de Agua owes its name.

GUAYÁ (from the Mexican *Guayaba*) is the name applied to the fruits of species of *Psidium*, a genus belonging to the natural order *Myrtaceae*. The species which produces the bulk of the guava fruits of commerce is *Psidium Guayava*, Badd., a small tree from 15 to 20 feet high, a native of the tropical parts of America and the West Indies. It bears short-stalked egg-shaped or oblong leaves, with strongly marked veins, and covered with a soft tomentum or down. The flowers are borne on axillary stalks, and the fruits vary very much in size, shape, and colour, numerous forms and varieties being known and cultivated. The variety whose fruits are most valued is that which is sometimes called the white guava (*P. Guayava*, var. *peruvianum*). The fruits are pear shaped, about the size of a hen's egg, covered with a thin bright yellow or whitish skin filled with soft pulp, and of a light yellowish tinge, and having a pleasant sweet-sour and somewhat aromatic flavour. *P. Guayava*, var. *peruvianum*, produces a more globular or apple-shaped fruit, sometimes called the red guava. The pulp of this variety is mostly of a darker colour than the former and not so fine a flavour, therefore the first named is most esteemed for eating in a raw state, both, however, are used in the preparation of two kinds of preserve known as guava jelly and guava cheese, which are made in the West Indies, and exported thence to England, the fruits are of much too poisonous a nature to allow of their importation in their natural state. The two varieties here mentioned have been described by some botanists as distinct species. They have both been introduced into various parts of India, as well as in other countries of the East, where they have become perfectly naturalized. Though of course much too tender for outdoor planting in England, the guava thrives there in hot-houses or stoves.

*Psidium Cattleianum*, Bab., a tree of from 10 to 20 feet high, supposed to be a native of Brazil, but originally brought to Europe from China, is known as the purple guava. The fruit, which is very abundantly produced in the axils of the leaves, is large, spherical, of a fine deep claret colour, the rind is skinned, and the pulp is soft, fleshy, purplish, reddish next the pit, but becoming paler towards the middle, and in the centre almost or quite white. It has a very agreeable acid sweet flavour, which has been likened to that of a strawberry.

GUAYAQUIL, or SANTIAGO DE GUAYAQUIL, the principal seaport of the republic of Ecuador, South America, is situated on the western bank of the Guayaquil river, about 20 miles from its mouth, in 2° 13' 24" S. lat. and 79° 51' 24" W. long. The site forms part of a low and level tract of ground bounded on the north by the hills of Santa Ana, and the streets are for the most part laid out with great regularity. To the north lies the old town, mainly inhabited by the poorer classes, to the south, the new town. As the houses are generally built of wood or bamboo and mud, the risk of conflagrations is unusually great, and a strong fire-brigade is maintained. Since 1870 the town has been drained, the river has been dredged, and an

abundant supply of good water has been brought from a distance. The principal streets are lighted with gas. None of the public buildings are of any architectural interest. All the churches, with the exception of Santo Domingo, are built of wood. There are two colleges (San Vicente and San Ygnacio), a civil hospital (De la Caidada), a new and commodious military hospital, municipal buildings, and a custom-house.

As its harbour is one of the best on the Pacific coast, and permits vessels of large tonnage to come up to the town, Guayaquil is the centre of the foreign trade not only of Ecuador, but of part of Peru, and has regular steamship communication both with America and European ports. Bimboos, coco, coffee, hides, india rubber, ivory nuts, acchilla, and Panama hats are the staple articles for the outgoing cargoes, and there is a demand for pine apples, sugar, and other fresh fruits for Chili and Peru. The average value of the exports in the five years from 1867 to 1871 was £426,785, and the value of the imports received from £131,860 in 1867 to £1,168,656 in 1871. In 1870 there entered 78 British vessels, other 57 foreign vessels, and 80 national vessels, with a tonnage respectively of 118,660, 25,970, and 2222. One of the greatest hindrances to a development of the export trade is the want of proper wharves from the interior. It is only recently that the carriage road to Otuco has been completed. Below the town there is a large estero or ship-building yard of great repute on the Pacific coast. The Guayaquil bank, with a capital of 9,000,000 in this currency, dates from 1868, and the Banco de Crédito Hipotecario, with a capital of £500,000, from 1872. The population of the town is from 20,000 to 22,000, mainly mulattoes, mestizos, and Indians.

Santiago de Guayaquil was so called because it was founded on St. James's Day, 26th July 1521, 26th July 1521, by Don Francisco de Orellana, and two years later it was visited by Francisco Orellana. In the course of the 17th and 18th centuries the manners in its history are the attacks of pirates and disorders by sea. The Dutchman Jacob Clerk was the assulant in 1621, the Frenchman David in 1686-7, William Dampier in 1707, and Clapperton in 1709. As late as 1742 the only defence, were three insignificant forts in the river, but in 1758 the town was made the seat of a governor, and a good castle and other fortifications were constructed. The following year a great fire destroyed property to the value of 2,000,000. In 1837 Guayaquil was made the seat of a bishop. See YLLICRENER, *Geographical Dictionary*.

GUAYANA, LA, or LA GUAYANA, a town of Venezuela, in the province of Guayana, about 8 miles from the city of Guayana, in 10° 30' N. lat. and 71° 40' W. long. It is situated on a low-lying strip of coast, but at the same time has a certain amount of picturesque scenery as seen against the background of the Cordilleras. Being one of the four principal ports (*puntos habitados*) of the country, it enjoys a degree of commercial prosperity, but its trade, which is mainly in the hands of Germans is almost exclusively of the transit description. Its imports are principally from Hamburg and Bremen. There is regular steamboat communication with Puerto Cabello, Manacabo, and St. Thomas. The population is about 4000. The railway to Guayana, though contracted for, has been stopped. The municipality maintains 10 schools, in which 370 boys and 260 girls are educated free of expense.

GUBBIO, a city of Italy, in the province of Umbria, about 20 miles N. of Perugia. Built along the western ledges of Monte Calvo, it shares alike in the grandeur of the mountains and the beauty of the plain, and its churches and palaces are brought into relief by the varying elevation of the site. Its ancient walls are still retained, and a certain mediæval impress lingers about the place. Besides the cathedral of SS. Mariano and Giacomo, which consists of a small square nave and has a fine wheel window, San Francesco may be mentioned for the sake of the Conception by St. Sigismondi, St. Agostino for a Madonna del Soccorso by Ottaviano Nelli, and St. Maria Nova with its sums artist's finest work, a votive fresco by Fra Bartolomeo, and the old palace of the dukes of Urbino, built for Federico by Luciano Laurana. The palazzo municipale or del commune is a fine building erected between 1332 and 1346 after the designs of Matteo Giovannello, surnamed Gattapone.

Lake Urbino and Faenza, Gubbio was formerly noted for its majolica, and it was Maestro Giorgio di Gubbio who discovered the ruby glazing for which this was its remarkable. The manufacture has been resumed in modern times. In the neighbourhood of the town there is a great reservoir, La Bottonecchia, capable of containing 4,720,000 cubic feet of water. The population in 1871 was 5343 in the town and 22,747 in the commune. *See* *EUROPEAN LAKES*.

The ancient Umbrian city of *Ubalis*, *Uquium*, or *Uguadium* occupied a site a little farther out in the plain, to the left of the Via Flaminia. There is no mention of it in Roman history till the time of its subjugation. It was the place selected by the senate for the detention of the Illyrian king Gentius and his sons, and it was an important post in the line between Caere and Timpus. The site is still marked by ruins, among which are those of the theatre first covered in 1789 by Ruggieri (*Disseguimento*, Perugia, 1790), and further explored in 1863 (*Dott. dell' Instituto di storia arch.*, tom. vii). It is also known that the arena of the temple of Diana, to Vesta, to Janus, to Pollux, and to the Sun and Apollo, and about 8 miles to the north was the celebrated temple of the Apennine Jove. The modern city was rescued from the decay into which it had fallen by Otto the Great, whose charter may be seen in *Reposit.*, *De Rebus de Gubbio*, Bologna, 1773. In 1156 it was besieged by Frederick Barbarossa, but was saved by the intervention of St. Ubaldo. The temporal government of the town, which had previously been in the hands of the papal legats, the bishop, or the prior of the cathedral, was then placed by the emperor in the hands of the people. The first podesta appears in 1193. During the 14th century the prosperity of Gubbio was greatly advanced; it obtained jurisdiction over 130 castles, had great influence on the papacy, and in 1390 it numbered about 30,000 inhabitants. In 1384 it surrendered to Montefeltro, and thus became incorporated with the duchy of Urbino. An account of the school of painting which flourished in Gubbio in the 15th century is given by Ruggieri in *Storia della pittura in Italia*, ed. of the edition of Vasari, and by Amico Ricci in his *Memoria di belle arti in Gubbio*, Bologna, 1831. Reference may also be made to *Statuta civitatis Uguadii*, Gubbio, 1689; Giolliotti, *De urbe Uguadiensi*, Satis, *De Episcopatu Uguadiensi*, 1755; and the *Archivio*, Rome, 1801. The principal municipal picture is in *Archivio Storico*, 1807.

**GUBEN**, a town of Brandenburg, Prussia, capital of a circle in the government district of Frankfurt, is situated at the confluence of the Lubitz with the Neisse and at the junction of three different railways, 28 miles S.E. of Frankfurt. It is the seat of a circle court and of a district office, and possesses three evangelical churches, an Old Lutheran church, a Catholic church, a synagogue, a gymnasium, a real school of the first order, two higher female schools, an infirmary, and a theatre. The principal industries are the spinning and weaving of wool, dyeing, tanning, and the manufacture of pottery ware, hats, and machinery. The vine is cultivated in the neighbourhood to some extent, and there is also some trade in fruit and vegetables. The population in 1875 was 23,704.

Guben is of Wendish origin. It is mentioned in the time of the emperor Henry II., and received town rights in 1236. It was surrounded by walled fortifications, and was the scene of the massacre of Brandenburg, from whom it passed to Bohemia in 1367. It was twice devastated by the Hussites, and in 1631 and 1635 it was occupied by the Swedes. In the latter year it came into the possession of the elector of Saxony, and in 1815 it was, along with the rest of Lower Lausitz, united to Prussia.

**GUDEON** (*Gobius*), a small fish of the family *Cyprinodontes* (see *ICHTHYOLOGY*), with narrow, cylindrical body, and with a small barbel at each corner of the mouth. These fishes are generally distributed over Europe, the most common being *Gobio Uvulatus*, called "guyon" in France, "grasling" or "grundling" in Germany, and "gobion" in Italy. They thrive in streams as well as lakes, always keeping to the bottom, and scarcely exceeding a length of 8 inches. Gudgeons differing but little from the European are equally common in China and Japan.

**GUDELLELAND**, **GELDERLAND**, or **GUDELLOS** (in Dutch *Gueldersland*, *Gelre*, in German *Geldern*, and in Latin *Geldria*), formerly a duchy of the empire, bounded by Friesland, Westphalia, Brabant, Holland, and the Zuydersee. At the beginning of the Christian era the land was held by Batavians and Chamavians, and a few centuries

later both Saxons and Franks were added to its population. The Carolingian kings ruled over it by means of a number of counts, among whom those of Hainland, Teisterbant, (Teisterbant), and Nimeguen were the most prominent, but hitherto it has not been discovered how these counts are connected with the later dynasty of the counts of Guelderland and Zutphen, which makes its appearance in the 11th century. There is documentary proof at Braunweiler of the existence of a Count Otto at the end of the 10th century and a charter of 1096 is sealed by Gerhard of Gelder Count Gerhild II of Gelder married Ermgard of Zutphen, and then son Henry succeeded to the double inheritance. Both Henry (1131-1162) and his son and successor Otto (1162-1207) considerably extended their domains, and Otto deserves to be remembered for the civic rights which by a happy innovation he bestowed on the town of Zutphen in 1190. Gerhild III. (1207-1229) obtained from the emperor Frederick II. the right of removing the toll of Ainhem to Lobith, where it long proved the principal source of income to the countship. Otto II, son of Gerhild III., greatly augmented his power and territory, and secured the internal stability of his government by erecting numerous free communes, such as Haldewijk, Ainhem, Emmenich, Lochem, &c. Reinold I. (1271-1326) had the chagrin of seeing the dukedom of Limburg, which fell to him by the death of his father-in-law, seized by John I. of Dabant in 1288, but from the emperor Henry VII. he recovered, in 1310, the right of bestowing full municipal privileges on any free communities he might establish, and in 1317 he was raised to the rank of prince of the empire by Frederick of Austria, which implied possession of legislative authority and liberty to coin his own money. A steady increase of power rewarded the exertions of Reinold II. (1326-1359), and shortly before his death (March 19, 1359) he received the hereditary title of duke of Guelderland from the emperor Louis of Bavaria. The new duchy, however, had an ill beginning of its history. Reinold III., the natural successor, found a bitter rival in his brother Edward, and in 1361, after a contest of eleven years, he was completely defeated in the battle of Tel, and though ten years later, on Edward's death, he recovered his rightful position, he survived his restoration only three months. A protracted contest between the hostile factions was at length decided in favour of William a nephew of the last duke, and son of William of Juliers, who succeeded in 1378, but did not receive imperial recognition till 1383. Between 1384 and 1386 he assisted the Teutonic knights against the Prussians, and in 1393 he became duke of Juliers by the death of his father. He died 16th February 1402, and was followed by his brother Reinold IV., whose reign of three and twenty years was mainly noticeable for several contests with Holland, the surrender of Emmerich and other portions of territory, and the gradual consolidation of the Guelderland states. Reinold IV. dying childless in 1423, the coronet passed to his grand-nephew Arnold, the son of John of Egmond. Arnold of Egmond was at first recognized by the emperor Sigismund in 1424, but in 1425 the emperor revoked his sanction, and gave his support to Adolphus of Cleves. In the war that followed the people of Guelderland stood true to Arnold, but his extravagance and carelessness brought the financial affairs of his duchy into confusion, and at length, in 1444, after the defeat of his forces by Adolphus at Limbich, he was constrained to pawn part of his territory to Cleves. The states had complained of his misadministration in a diet of 1436, and the matter came ultimately, in 1456, found a leader in the duke's own son Adolphus, who, after an apparent reconciliation with his father made the old man a prisoner in January 1455, and confined him in the castle of Buren. A civil war now broke out, and Charles the Bold of Burgundy

seized the opportunity for his own advantage, in 1471 Adolphus was forced to set his father at liberty, and Arnold, in return for the service done him, made over his duchy to the Burgundian duke for 30,000 gulden, only reserving the usufruct till the close of his own life. On 23d February 1473 Arnold died, and Charles was duke of Guelderland. The town of Nimeguen made an heroic effort to oppose the Burgundian accession, but it fell after a lengthened siege. On Charles's death at the battle of Nancy in 1477, a party in the powerful city of Ghent became anxious to marry Charles of Egmont to their princess, Mary of Burgundy. Before the year was out, however (29th June 1477), the young man had perished before the walls of Tournay, against which he had led an army of Burgundians and Flemings to recover it from the French. By his marriage with the Princess Mary, Maximilian of Austria considered himself the rightful possessor of Guelderland, and he succeeded by 1483 in quelling all opposition. But ten years later young Charles of Egmont, the son of Adolphus, set foot once more in his native country, the people soon flocked to his standard, and victorious campaigns proved the capacity of the leader and the enthusiasm of the soldiers. The fierce contest continued for years, and Charles carried the war into the enemy's territories. In 1507 he pushed into Holland and Brabant, in 1512 appeared before Amsterdam, and in 1514 made capture of Groningen. It was not till 1539 that Charles V. granted him the lifelong occupation of Guelderland, Zutphen, Groningen, Coeverden, and Drenthe. In return he agreed that if he died childless his possessions should revert to the emperor, but such was his hatred of the house of Austria that towards the close of his life he planned to make France his heir. This, however, was prevented by the states of Guelderland maiming on his appointing as his successor William, the youthful son of the duke of Cleves and Juliers. Charles died 30th June 1539, and William assumed the title of duke. But Charles V. was not disposed to give up the rights secured by the treaty of Gornichein, and after a contest in which much damage was done to various parts of the Low Countries, William was obliged to surrender his claims on 7th September 1543. On the rise of the Dutch republics most of Guelderland threw off the Spanish yoke. One "quarter" only, that of Roermond, continued subject, and it received the name of Spanish Gelderland, the other three "quarters," Nimeguen, Zutphen, and Arnhem, became Dutch Guelderland, and had their provincial diets twice a year. By the peace of Utrecht Spanish Guelderland or the Upper Quarter (Overkwartier) passed to Prussia, including the town of Gelderland, but excluding Venloo, which went to the Netherlands, and Roermond, which went to Austria. By the peace of Paris (1814) the temporary divisions of the French revolutionary period were abolished, and all Guelderland was incorporated with Holland except the portion which still forms the Prussian circle of Dusseldorf.

**GUELDERLAND**, the modern province of the Netherlands, has an area of 1932 square miles, and its population in 1821, 1835, 1840, 1860, and 1873 was respectively 989,926, 923,167, 845,762, 401,864, and 437,778. The largest towns are Nimeguen (23,509 in 1876), Arnhem (38,017), Zutphen (14,513), Apeldoorn (18,851), Ede (10,982), and Rheden (10,636), and there are at least eighteen other communes with more than 5000 inhabitants.

See Pontanus, *Historia Geldi* (Hardenwyck, 1699), Van Spaen, *Historia van Gelderland* (Utrecht, 1814), Nijhoff, *Geldeland van de Noord tot de Goochelse van Gelderland* (Arnhem, 1850, 8c, 6 vols.), Nijhoff, *Het oorsprong van de geschiedenis van Gelderland* (Arnhem, 1889), J. C. Kremer, *De Geschiedenis van Gelderland, van de Oorsprong der Geschiedenis, Geld, Oude, en Zutphen* (Arnhem, 1878), Beier Riet, *Ons vaderland van de geschiedenis tot de heden*, Zutphen, H. Winkamp, *Land en volk van de Noordland van Nederland*, 1877.

**GUELDER ROSE**, so called from Guelderland, its supposed source, termed also Marsh Elder, Rose Elder, Water Elder (Germ., *Wasserholde*, *Schneeball*, Fr., *Pierre-Osier*, *l'Osier d'Eau*), the *Viburnum Opulus* of Linnaeus, is a shrub or small tree of the natural order *Caynifloraceae*, and a native of Britain and other parts of Europe, and of Russian Asia. It is common in Ireland, but rare in Scotland. In height it is from 6 to 12 feet, and it thrives best in moist situations. The leaves are smooth, 2 to 3 inches broad, with 3 to 5 unequal serrate lobes, and glandular adnate stipules. In autumn the leaves change their normal bright green for a pink or crimson hue. The flowers, which appear in June and July, are small, white, and arranged in racemes 2 to 4 inches in diameter. The outer blossoms in the wild plant have an enlarged corolla,  $\frac{1}{2}$  inch in diameter, and are devoid of stamens or pistils, in the common cultivated variety all the flowers are sterile, and the inflorescence is glomerate, hence the term "Snowball Tree" applied to the plant, the appearance of which at the time of flowering has been prettily described by Cowper in his *Winter Walk at Noon*. The Guelder rose bears juicy, red, elliptical berries, 4 lines in length, which ripen in September, and contain each a single compressed seed. In northern Europe these are eaten, and in Siberia, after fermentation with flour, they are distilled for spirit. The plant has, however, emetic, purgative, and narcotic properties, and has been used as a remedy, in 1 p. 448, 2d ed. (1873) has occurred an instance of fatal poisoning of a child by the berries. Both they and the bark contain valeric acid. The woody shoots of the Guelder rose are manufactured into various small articles in Sweden and Russia. See Loudon, *Arboretum*, vol. II, 1838, and Syme, *Emy. Bot.*, iv p. 202, pl. 639.

**GUELDERS**, or **GULDERS**, a town of Rhineland Prussia, in the government district of Dusseldorf, chief and only town of the circle of Geldern, is situated on the Nieer, 28 miles NW of Dusseldorf. Its industries include the manufacture of cloth and hats, wool spinning, and wool, silk, and linen weaving. It has a Catholic and a Protestant church and two convents. The town was built in 1097, and was till 1343 the residence of the counts and dukes of Guelderland. It was fortified by Philip II, but its fortifications were razed by Frederick II. of Prussia in 1764. The population in 1875 was 5184.

**GUELFS** and **GHIBELLINES**. The names Guelfo and Ghibellino, as applied to parties in Italy, are Italianized forms of names which at an earlier period designated parties in Germany. Guelfo is the Italian form of Welf, and Ghibellino the Italian form of Wabblingen, a castle of the emperor Conrad. In Germany these names, which are said to have been first used as battle-cries at the battle of Weinsberg in 1140, designated the struggle between the Welfs of Albi and the imperial line of the Hohenstaufen. In Italy the names acquired a different meaning, being generally applied respectively to the party of the pope and the party of the emperor. The conflict between the authority of the emperor and the independence of the Italian towns began before the names were used in Germany. These parties first came into prominence in the Lombard league of 1167. In the war which followed we find the following distribution of parties on the Ghibelline side were Ciconia, Pavia, Genoa, Tortona, Asti, Alba, Acazia, Turin, Ivrea, Ventimiglia, Savona, Albenga, Imola, Faenza, Ravenna, Follonica, Cesena, Rimini, the marquis of Monteferrat, the counts of Lomello, Gnasco, Bosisio, &c., on the side of the Guelfs were Venice, Treviso, Padua, Vicenza, Verona, Brescia, Ferrara, Mantua, Bergamo, Lodi, Milan, Novara, Arellini, Alessandria, Piacenza, Parma, Reggio, Modena, Bologna. These names spread further in consequence of the bitter rivalry which existed between several pairs of Italian towns, for instance, between Rome and Tusculum, Pisa and Genoa,

Ferrara and Mantua, Bergamo and Brescia. A further step in this direction was the division of the towns themselves into Guelph and Ghibellin parties. The struggle for the imperial throne between Philip of Swabia and Otto of Brunswick (1198-1208) enlisted the sympathies of Italy. The Guelph towns Milan, Piacenza, Brescia, Reggio, Modena, took the part of the Welf Otto. The 13th century witnessed a great increase of the jealousies between rival towns, and more serious divisions of the leading families in the towns themselves. Examples of this were the quarrels between the Montecchi and Capellesti at Verona, the Lambertazzi and Ghereschi at Bologna, the Rossi and Cologni at Parma, the Doria and Spinola, the Grimaldi and Fieschi at Genoa, the Bonadelloni and Amedei, the Donati and Uberti at Florence, the Colonna and Orsini at Rome, the Baglioni and Polenta at Ravenna, the Della Torre and Visconti at Milan, the Cancellieri and Panciatichi at Pistoia, the Salimbeni and Tolomei at Siena.

Of the principal towns in North and Central Italy, *Ancora* was generally Ghibellin. Bergamo was torn in sunder by party quarrels, the Suardi fought against the Coloni, and afterwards both these against the Rivoli and Bonghi, it was generally more Guelph than Ghibellin. Bologna was generally Guelph. Brescia was much divided. It was generally Guelph, but was conquered by the Ghibellins in 1324. It came under the power of the Visconti of Milan in 1337. Cremona was generally Guelph, but occasionally Ghibellin. Always unhappy, it was wasted by the most violent party conflicts. The family of Cavalcabò led the Guelph party in this town in the 14th century. Ferrara was Ghibellin under the Torelli, it became Guelph under the Este. Florence, after 1158, was the chief support of the Guelphs. The struggles which desolated it were between different branches of the Guelph—the Bianchi, and Neri, and others. Forth was Guelph till 1315, afterwards Ghibellin under the Oldelfi. Genoa was divided between the two parties. Lucca was generally Ghibellin, but had hard work to maintain its position against the attacks of Florence. Mantua was Guelph up to 1220, afterwards mainly Ghibellin. Padua was the enemy of Venice, in 1227 it was Guelph, fighting against the Ghibellin Visconti, about 1318 it became Ghibellin under the house of Carrara. Parma was divided in its sympathies. It was generally more Guelph than Ghibellin. Pavia was Ghibellin unless compelled to be otherwise. Perugia became Guelph in 1108. It was much torn by party quarrels. Piacenza was generally Guelph. Pisa was chiefly Ghibellin during a great part of its history. Pistoia was divided up to 1267, after which time it became mainly Guelph. Ravenna was chiefly Guelph under the family of Polenta. Rimini belonged to the family of Malatesta, which was divided between Guelph and Ghibellin. Siena was at first Ghibellin, in 1270 it became Guelph. Venice was scarcely touched by these party quarrels. Verona was much divided. Up to 1259 it was mainly Guelph, under the Della Scala, it was Ghibellin. Vicenza was Ghibellin after 1227, at a later period it followed the fortunes of Padua. Viterbo was Ghibellin after 1398.

It would be generally true to assert the principle that the Guelphs were more attached to liberty than the Ghibellins. The town of Alessandria was the creation of the Lombard league, a protest against the reduction of Italy under a German sovereign. Yet Dante, the keenest patriot, the most ardent aspirant towards the unity of Italy, was a Ghibellin. With him Ghibellinism meant (1) unity under a strong head, and (2) the abolition of the temporal power of the popes. No one, he thought, but an emperor could set firmly in the saddle or guide the reins of so fierce a steed. The best hope of obtaining this object lay in Henry VII of Luxembourg. But the object itself was probably impossible of realization. The death of Henry at Buonconvento

extinguished the last hope of uniting Italy under the supremacy of Caesar.

To give a full account of the party quarrels of Guelph and Ghibellin would be to write the history of mediæval Italy. The names began to die out gradually at the beginning of the 15th century. Twenty years before the two parties had united in opposing John of Bohemia. The expedition of Charles IV into Italy destroyed what shreds still remained of respect for the authority of the empire, and with the extinction of Ghibellinism Guelphism perished also; yet we find the name of Guelph appearing in Milan in 1447, after the death of Gian Galeazzo Visconti, and also in 1447, in the struggle between Ludovico Sforza and the Duchess Bona of Savoy. In the conquest of Milan by Louis XII, in the beginning of the 16th century, we find the supporters of the emperor and Sforza called Ghibellins by Roman writers, and the French party called Guelph.

Of the literary supporters of either cause we can only mention a few. Bionnetto Latini, the master of Dante, was a Guelph. Dante himself, as we have seen above, was a Ghibellin, so was his friend Guido Cavalcanti. Petrarca was a Guelph, the three historians Villani are singularly impartial. For further information, see Wachsmuth, *Geschichte der Politischen Parteien*, vol. II. (O 3)

**GUELPH**, the chief town of Wellington county, Ontario, Canada, is situated in a fine agricultural district on an elevation on the river Speed, a branch of the Grand River, and on the Grand Trunk Railway and the Wellington, Grey, and Bruce division of the Great Western Railway, 45 miles west by south of Toronto. The river is navigable at this point, and there is a considerable shipping trade in wheat. Abundant water power is obtained for flour mills, saw-mills, and woollen mills, and there are also breweries, tanneries, and manufactories for agricultural instruments and sewing machines. The population in 1871 was 6818.

**GUERCINO** See **BAHRETT**.

**GUÉRÉT**, a town of France, chief town of the department of Creuse, is situated on a mountain declivity near the Gouise, about 250 miles south from Paris. It has a church of the 18th century, a communal college, a normal school, two hospitals, a botanical garden, a library, a picture gallery, and a museum for natural history and antiquities. The principal industries are the manufacture of beer, leather, potash, combs, and buttons, and there is a considerable trade in wood and cattle. Guérét grew up in the 8th century round an abbey founded by Clotaire in 720. The population in 1876 was 4973.

**GUERICKE**, OTTO VON (1602-1686), an experimental philosopher, distinguished by his original discoveries of the properties of air, was born at Magdeburg, in Prussia, Saxony, November 26, 1602. Having studied law at Leipzig, Helmstadt, and Jena, and mathematics, especially geometry and mechanics, at Leyden, he visited France and England, and, returning to Saxony, took up the profession of engineer-in-chief at Erfurt. In 1627 he was elected alderman of Magdeburg, and in 1646 mayor of that city, and a magistrate of Brandenburg. It was whilst holding these offices that Guericke devoted his leisure to scientific pursuits, especially in pneumatics. Inspired by the discoveries of Galileo, Pascal, and Torricelli, he attempted the creation of a vacuum, a desideratum in science from before Aristotle. He began by experimenting with a pump on water placed in a barrel, but found that when the water was drawn off the air permeated the wood. He then took a globe of copper fitted with pump and stopcock, and discovered that he could pump out air as well as water. Thus Guericke became the inventor of the air-pump (1680). This important discovery was publicly explained before the emperor Ferdinand III at the imperial diet which assembled at Ratisbon in 1661. Guericke at the same time

illustrated in a simple but effective way the force of atmospheric pressure. Placing side by side two hollow hemi-spheres of copper, he exhausted the air from between them by means of pump and stopcock, and it is recorded that thirty horses, fifteen back to back, were unable to pull them asunder. The apparatus used on this occasion is still preserved in the imperial and royal library at Berlin. Guericke further demonstrated, by the aid of the air pump, that in a vacuum all bodies fall equally fast, that animals cannot exist therein, and other phenomena. He also invented the air-balance, and the anemoscope, a species of weathercock. The discovery of the property of electric repulsion is also attributed to him, and he made successful researches in astronomy, predicting the periodicity of the return of comets. In 1681 he gave up office, and retired to Hamburg, where he died May 11, 1686.

His principal observations are given in his work, *Experimenta nova, et vocant, Magisibus quæ de vacuo spatio* (Amsterdam, 1672). He is also the author of a *Henrichs des Dichters und und Dichters und Dichters*. See Hoffmann, *Ötto von Guericke*, Magdeburg, 1874.

GUÉRIN, GEORGES MAURICE DE (1810-1830), a French poet, whose few compositions in prose and verse, published posthumously, show him to have possessed a true and rare genius, was descended from a noble but poor family, and was born at the château de La Cayla in Langue-doc, 4th August 1810. He was educated with a view to the church at a religious seminary at Toulouse, and then at the Collège Stanislas, Paris, after which he procured entrance to the society at La Chesnays in Brittany, founded by Lamennais, bishop of Rennes. Here his most intimate companions were persons whose tastes were literary rather than ecclesiastical, and his dreamy and meditative temperament found its solace and happiness more in intercourse with nature than in theological study or the exercises of piety. It was therefore only after great hesitation, and without being satisfied as to his religious vocation, that under the influence of Lamennais he joined the new religious order in August 1833, and when, in September of the same year, Lamennais, who had come under the displeasure of Rome, severed connexion with the society, Guérin's doubts as to his vocation returned in full force, and on the 7th October he renounced his novitiate. Early in the following year he went to Paris, where he obtained an engagement on the periodical press, but finding it impossible to submit to the menial drudgery of continuous literary work he became a teacher at the Collège Stanislas. In November 1838 he married a Creole lady of some fortune, but a few months afterwards he was attacked by a malady which proved to be consumption, and which terminated by death his short period of lustre and happiness, 19th July 1839. In the *Revue des Deux Mondes* for May 15, 1840, there appeared a notice of Guérin by George Sand, to which she added two fragments of his writings—one a composition in prose entitled the *Centaur*, and the other a short poem, *His Reliquæ*, including the *Centaur*, his journal, a number of his letters, and several poems edited by G. S. Trébutien, and accompanied with a biographical and critical notice by Sainte-Beuve, appeared in 1860 in two volumes, and a translation of it was published at New York in 1867. Though Guérin was essentially a poet, his prose is more striking and original than his poetry. Its peculiar and unique charm arises from his strong and absorbing passion for nature, a passion whose intensity reached almost to adoration and worship, but in which the pagan was more prominent than the moral element. According to Sainte-Beuve, "no French poet or painter has rendered as well the feeling for nature—the feeling not so much for details as for the ensemble and the divine universality, the feeling for the origin of things and the sovereign principle of life."

The name of *Évêque de Guérin* (1806-1848), the

sister of Maurice, cannot be omitted from any notice of him, if only on account of the ties of love that united them, but her *Journal*, published in 1861, English translation 1865, and her *Letters*, published in 1864, English translation 1865, indicated the possession of gifts of as into an order as those of her brother, though of a somewhat different kind. In her case mysticism assumed a form more strictly religious, and she continued to mourn her brother's loss of his early Catholic faith. Five years older than he, she cherished a love for him which was blended with a somewhat motherly anxiety. In him she centred her chief earthly hopes, and after on death the only remaining earthly purpose was to rescue his name from oblivion by the collection and publication of the scattered fragments of his writings. She died, however, on the 31st May 1848, before her task was completed.

See the notices by George Sand and Sainte-Beuve referred to above, *Sainte-Beuve, Œuvres de l'auteur*, vol. xii, and *Notices de l'auteur*, vol. xi, G. Melet, *Œuvres de l'auteur de ses lettres*, Paris, 1864; Schickel, *L'Esprit des femmes de notre époque*, Paris, 1864; Maclure, *Œuvres de l'auteur de Guérin*, Berlin, 1864; Hainé, *Paris, M. and E. de Guérin, a monography*, London, 1870, and Matthew Arnold's essays on Maurice and Eugène de Guérin, in his *Essays in Criticism*.

GUÉRIN, JEAN BAPTISTE PAULIN (1783-1855), French painter, belongs to the group who specially represented the Restoration. Born at Paris, in 1783, of poor parents, he learnt, as a lad, his father's trade of a locksmith, whilst, at the same time, he followed the classes of the free school of art. Having sold some copies to a local amateur, Guérin started for Paris, where he came under the notice of Vincent, whose counsels were of material service. In 1810 Guérin made his first appearance at the Salon with some portraits, which had a certain success. In 1812 he exhibited Cain after the murder of Abel (formerly in Luxembourg), and, on the return of the Bourbons, was much employed in works of restoration and decoration at Versailles. His Dead Christ (Cathedral, Baltimore) obtained a medal in 1817, and this success was followed up by a long series of works, of which the following are the most noteworthy.—Christ on the knees of the Virgin, 1819; Anchises and Venus, 1822 (formerly in Luxembourg); Ulysses and Minerva, 1824 (Musée de Rennes); the Holy Family, 1829 (Cathedral, Toulon); and Saint Catherine, 1838 (St Roch). In his treatment of subjects, Guérin attempted to realise those graces of conception, the liveliness of which was lost in the stony effort to be correct. His chief successes were attained by portraiture, and those of Charles Nodier and the Abbé Lamennais became widely popular. Guérin died January 19, 1855. We possess no account of his life and works beyond that which is afforded by brief notices in contemporary biographical dictionaries.

GUÉRIN, PIERRE NARCISSE (1774-1833), French painter, was born at Paris, May 13, 1774. The artistic ideal of the first empire found complete expression in his work, the most famous examples of which show a peculiar combination of the dry pseudo-classic style, then popular, with stage paths of a highly exaggerated character, yet from his atelier went forth, as if in necessary protest against the defects of then master, the leaders of the Romantic and Realistic movements,—Delacroix and Géricault. The first teacher of Guérin was Nicolas Brunet, whom he left to place himself under Jean Baptiste Rognault, the representative, as contrasted with David, of a distinct form of the classic reaction modified by a tincture of Italian tradition. Guérin became the most distinguished of his pupils, and carried off one of the three "grands prix" offered in 1796, in consequence of the competition not having taken place since 1793. The pension was not indeed re-established, but Guérin fulfilled at Paris the conditions imposed upon a *pensionnaire*.

and produced various works, one of which brought him prominently before the public. This work, *Marcus Sextus (Louvre)*, exhibited at the Salon of 1799, excited wild enthusiasm, partly due to the subject—a victim of Sulla's proscription returning to Rome to find his wife dead and his house in mourning—in which an allusion was found to the actual situation of the *desgrés*. Guérin on this occasion was publicly crowned by the president of the Institute, and before his departure for Rome (on the re-establishment of the École under Survé) a banquet was given to him by the most distinguished artists of Paris. In 1800, unable to remain in Rome on account of his health, he went to Naples, where he painted the Grave of Amyntas. In 1802 Guérin produced *Phædra* and *Hippolytus (Louvre)*; in 1810, after his return to Paris, he again achieved a great success with *Andromache* and *Pyrrhus (Louvre)*; and in the same year also exhibited *Cephalus* and *Aurora (Collection Sormani)* and *Bonaparte* and the *Rebels of Orléans (Versailles)*. The Restoration brought to Guérin fresh honours; he had received from the first consul in 1803 the cross of the legion of honour, and in 1815 Louis XVIII. named him Academician. The success of Guérin's *Hippolytus*, of *Andromache*, of *Phædra*, and of *Clytemnestra (Louvre)* had been ensured by the skillful selection of highly melodramatic situations, treated with the strained and pompous dignity proper to the art of the first empire; in *Aeneas* relating to Dido the disasters of Troy (Louvre), which appeared side by side with *Clytemnestra* at the Salon of 1817, the influence of the Restoration is plainly to be traced. In this work Guérin sought to captivate the public by an appeal to those sensuous charms which he had previously rejected, and by the introduction of picturesque elements of interest which, even now, distract attention from the artificial mannerism too painfully apparent in his treatment of tragic subject. But with this work Guérin's public successes came to a close. He was, indeed, commissioned to paint for the Madeleine a scene from the history of St Louis, but his health prevented him from accomplishing what he had begun, and in 1832 he accepted the post of director of the École de Rome, which in 1810 he had refused. On returning to Paris in 1828, Guérin, who had previously been made chevalier of the order of St Michel, was enabled. He now attempted to complete *Pyrrhus* and *Priam*, a work which he had begun at Rome, but in vain; his health had finally broken down, and in the hope of improvement he returned to Italy with Horace Vernet. Shortly after his arrival Rome Guérin died, on the evening of July 6, 1833, and was buried in the church of La Trinità de Monti by the side of Claude Lorraine. A careful analysis and criticism of his principal works will be found in Meyer's *Geschichte der Französischen Malerei*, but his life has not yet been made the subject of special treatment.

GUERNSEY, the second in size of the Channel Islands, is situated between 49° 25' and 49° 31' N. lat. and between 2° 30' and 2° 41' W. long, 80 miles W. of Normandy, and 51 miles S. of Portsmouth. The total area at low water is estimated at 15,560 acres, or rather more than 34 square miles, and of this about 10,000 acres are under cultivation. Gradually rising from the north to the south, the island attains its maximum elevation of 340 feet above mean tide at Hant Nez, above Point Fearth. According to J. A. Bird's "Geology of the Channel Islands" in *The Geological Magazine*, London, 1878, it consists geologically of three very unequal portions, one characterized by a very felspathic gneiss and gneiss, another by a hornblende "granitic," and a third by a micaceous gneiss. The felspathic portion yields important crystals of feldspar, surpassing those of the porphyritic granites of Cornwall or Cumberland; and the hornblende portion occasionally affords crystals of black hornblende in similar perfection. No

Secondary or Tertiary rocks are found in position, but post-Tertiary clays containing flints are found all round the island and even on its summit, and Mr Bird is disposed to assign them to the interglacial period of submergence. The soil of Guernsey is generally a light sandy loam, and the subsoil consists for the most part of angular gravel, except in certain places occupied by a curious clay, chiefly composed of a silicate of alumina, which proves destructive to vegetable life. While the island does not grow sufficient grain for its own consumption, it has a large export of fruits and other garden produce. Parsnips were formerly one of the principal items, but they are now less extensively cultivated, having been supplanted by potatoes and turnips. Grapes, which were exported to the amount of 50 tons in 1873, are the source of an increasing trade. Granite is largely shipped at St Sampson.

For administrative purposes Guernsey is united with Alderney, Sark, Herm, and the adjacent islands in the bailiwick of Guernsey. The island proper is divided into the ten parishes of St Peter Port, St Sampson, Vale, Oltel, St Saviour, St Andrew, St Martin, Forest, St Peter du Bois, and Torteval. The administration is under the supervision of a Lieutenant-governor appointed by the crown; and the parliamentary assembly consists of a bailiff, twelve jurats, a procurator or attorney-general, the beneficed clergy, and twelve delegates elected by the people. Taxation is very light, and the annual revenue amounts to about £10,000. Ecclesiastically the island is a deanery of the Winchester diocese of the Church of England.

The only town of any great importance is St Peter Port on the eastern coast. In 1861 it had a population of 16,388 (6968 males and 9420 females), and in 1871, 16,166 (8731 males and 9435 females). The sea frontage of the town extends for about a mile, and is protected in nearly all its length by a wall with an esplanade. On the improvement of the harbour, which was begun in the 13th century by order of King Edward I., a sum of £288,000 has been expended since 1854. It is formed by two piers, which enclose an area of 73 acres, the southernmost of the two running out to Castle Cornet and then sending out a breakwater for about 3000 yards. The whole of the works are of the most massive description. Among the principal buildings of the town, which has been greatly improved by the formation of a new street from the harbour up to the hill, are the Government house, the court-house, Elizabeth college, the town hospital, St Stephen's church built in 1596, the Roman Catholic church, designed by P. and the new vegetable market constructed at a cost of £16,000. On the higher ground above the town is a monument in memory of the Queen's visit to the island in 1846, and on the pier there was erected in 1863 a monument to the Prince Consort by Mr Durham, a copy of the monument in the gardens of the Horticultural Society at South Kensington. St Sampson, which is the only port besides St Peter Port, is situated at the eastern end of the Braye du Val, a depression which at no distant date used to form an arm of the sea at high tides, cutting the island into two unequal parts. The harbour accommodation has been improved at St Sampson contemporaneously with that of St Peter Port. To the south of the latter is the strong fort of St George's with barracks for 5000 men, and smaller forts, batteries, and martello towers are to be found on suitable points all round the coast.

By the old Guernsey laws, all the male population from sixteen to sixty are obliged to serve in the militia; but the custom of paying exemption fines has gradually become so common that the real force is very far below its nominal limit. Guernsey is both populous and wealthy, and the wealth is very evenly distributed among the people. In 1873 the assessment value of the town parish was

£3,564,750, or £2363 per head, and that of the rural parishes £1,531,630, or £1233 per head. Like the neighbouring part of France, Guernsey still possesses numerous traces of its early inhabitants, in the form of sepulchral caves, dolmens, and menhirs. The most remarkable group of the second class is in the north at Anctesne Details will be found in Mr Lukis's paper in vol 1 of the *Archæological Journal*, and in vols 1 and viii of the *Journal of the Archæological Association*, as well as in the special chapter in Dr Ansted's *Channel Islands*. The island is usually identified with the Sarnia of the latter Roman writers. Its present name would appear to be a corruption of the Norse for Green Isle. For details on its history see *CHANNEL ISLANDS*. An account of a number of its most eminent natives, many of whom have served with high distinction in the British army, will be found in *Saints*, or *brief Memoirs of many of her Sons*, Guernsey, 1862. Among the better known families are the Saumarezs, the Tupperes, and the Carays.

Besides the works referred to under *CHANNEL ISLANDS*, see *Documente Relatifs à l'île de Guernesey*, 1814; *Vies of Guernsey*, with descriptive letters, Edinburgh, 1867; John Jacob, *Annals of the Antiquities of Guernsey*, London, 1880; Le Méchant, *Laws and Customs of Normans as used in Royal Court of Guernsey*.

**GUERRAZZI**, FRANCESCO DOMENICO (1804-1873), Italian writer and politician, was born at Leghorn, August 12, 1804. He studied law at Pisa, and happened to become acquainted there with Byron, who produced a very strong impression on his lively imagination. Having taken his degree in law, he went back to Leghorn to practise his profession, but engaged at the same time in literary pursuits. In 1827 he published his first novel, *The Battle of Benevento*, a work displaying powerful imagination and strong patriotic feeling. While exiled in 1834 to Portoferrato, on the island of Elba, he wrote *Isabella Orsini* and *The Siege of Florence*, the latter producing great enthusiasm in Italy. The two compositions which followed, *Veronica Cibo* and *The New Tatyus*, are of inferior value. In 1844 Guerrazzi was again exiled to Portoferrato. When the revolution broke out in 1848, he was named deputy, then president of the council of ministers, and finally, in the beginning of 1849, along with Montanelli and Mazzoni, temporary dictator of Tuscany. He had to expiate these few months of power by years of imprisonment and exile. He was banished first to Corsica, where he wrote *Beatrice Cenci*, *The Tower of Novara*, and *Fulda*, and then to Genoa, where he composed the *Memento Homo*, *The Illo in the Wall*, *Messa Ai lotto Marnardi*, *Paolo Pellivone*, *The Italian Plutarch*, *The Loves of Andrea Dorca*, *Francesco Ferruccio*, *Paquale Paoli*, *The Ships of Rome*, and *The As* (*L'Asino*), a humorous work. When the kingdom of Italy was constituted, Guerrazzi was several times sent to parliament as deputy. Towards the end of his life he with drew to a villa he had on the sea-shore, near Genoa, not far from Leghorn, where he wrote his novel entitled *The Dying Centurion*. He died there on the 25th September 1873, and was buried in the church of Monteseiro, near Leghorn. His letters are being collected for publication under the direction of the poet Joseph Carducci.

See Guerrazzi's own *Apology*, Florence, 1851; Bono, *F. D. Guerrazzi and his Works*; De Guerinatis, *Ricordi Biografici*, Florence, 1878; and Corson, *F. D. Guerrazzi*, Bialla, 1873.

**GUERRERO**, formerly **TEXELA**, the chief town of the state of Guerrero, Mexico, is situated on an elevation of about 5000 feet in a narrow and unhealthy valley in the Sierra Madre, 28 miles from the coast and 160 miles S.W. of Mexico. Mining is carried on, but not to any great extent, and coarse cloth is manufactured. The population in 1869 was 6501.

**GUESOLIN**. See **DU GUESCLIN**.

**GUEVARA**, ANTONIO DE (c. 1490-1545), Spanish chronicler and moralist, was a native of the province of Alava, and passed some of his earlier years at the court of Queen Isabella. In 1528 he entered the Franciscan order, and he afterwards accompanied Charles V. during his journeys and residences in Italy and in other parts of Europe. After having held successively the offices of court preacher, court historiographer, bishop of Guadix, and bishop of Mondoñedo, he died in 1545. His earliest work, entitled *Relos de príncipes*, o *Marco Aurelio*, published in 1529, and, according to its author, the fruit of eleven years' labour, is a kind of romance designed, after the manner of Xenophon's *Cyropædia*, to delineate in a somewhat ideal way for the benefit of modern sovereigns the life and character of an ancient prince distinguished for wisdom and virtue. It was very often republished in Spanish, and before the close of the century had also been translated into Latin, Italian, French, and English. It is difficult now to account for its extraordinary popularity,—its thought being neither just nor profound, while its style is stiff and affected. It gave rise to a literary controversy, however, of great bitterness and violence, the author having ventured without variant to claim for it an historical character, appealing to an imaginary "manuscript in Florence." Other works of Guevara are the *Decada de los Césares*, or "Lives of the Ten Roman Emperors," in imitation of a somewhat ideal history of Ptolemy and Suetonius; and the *Espanolas Familiares*, sometimes called "The Golden Epistles," often printed in Spain, and translated into all the principal languages of Europe. They are in reality a collection of stiff and formal essays which have long ago fallen into merited oblivion (see Ticknor, *Hist. of Span. Lit.*, vol. ii).

In Spanish literature occurs also the name of **LUIZ VILEZ DE GUEVARA** (1570-1644), who is said to have written nearly 400 comedies, of which however only a few, and these of little value, have been preserved. This Guevara is chiefly noteworthy as having been the author of a prose romance entitled *El Diablo Cojuelo*, which suggested to Le Sage the ideas and materials of his *Duñe Bouteux*.

**GUGLIELMI**. There are several Italian musicians of this name, the most celebrated of them being Pietro, born at Massa Carrara in May 1737. He received his first musical education from his father, and afterwards studied under Durante at the Conservatorio di San Rossato, Naples. His first operatic work was produced at Turin in 1755, and the success was such as falls to the lot of few primary efforts. Guglielmi's reputation was thenceforth established, and soon his fame spread beyond the limits of his own country, so that in 1762 he was called to Dresden to conduct the celebrated opera there. He remained for some years in Germany, where his works met with much success, but the greatest triumphs were reserved for him in England. He went to London in 1772, and stayed there five years, returning to Naples in 1777. He still continued to produce operas at an astounding rate, but was unable to compete successfully with the younger masters of the day. In 1793 he became maestro di cappella at St Peter's Cathedral, and died at Rome, November 19, 1804. He was a very prolific composer, and occupies a respectable if not absolutely first-rate position among the earlier masters of Italian comic opera. There is indeed in most of his scores a vein of humour and natural gaiety not surpassed by Cimarosa himself. In serious opera he was less successful. But here also he holds at least the qualities of a competent musician. Considering the enormous number of his works, his unequal workmanship and the frequent instances of mechanical and slipshod writing in his music need not surprise us. The following are among the most celebrated of his operas—*I due gemelli*, *La serva servomata*, *La pastorella nobile*, *La*

*bella peccatrice, Ronaldo, Artassese, Dulone, and Enzo e Lancia.* He also wrote oratorios and miscellaneous pieces of orchestral and chamber music. Of his eight sons two at least acquired fame as musicians—Pietro Carlo (1763–1817), a successful imitator of his father's operatic style, and Giacomo, an excellent singer.

**GUIANA, GUYANA, or GUAYANA**, an extensive territory in the north eastern part of South America, comprehending in its widest acceptation all the extent of country lying between the rivers Amazon and Orinoco from 3° 30' S to 8° 40' N lat, and from 56° 25' to 68° 10' W long. It is bounded on the N by the Orinoco and the Atlantic, E by the Atlantic, S by the rivers Negro and Amazon, and W by the Orinoco and the Casiquiare. Its greatest length from east to west is about 1200 miles, its greatest breadth, from the mouth of the Orinoco to the confluence of the Rio Negro with the Amazon, about 800 miles, and the estimated area is 600,000 square miles. This vast territory is divided into Brazilian (formerly Portuguese) Guiana, Venezuelan (formerly Spanish) Guiana, and Colonial Guiana. The first two divisions, comprising about five-sixths of the entire region, are claimed by or included in Brazil and Venezuela respectively, and stretching eastward from the mouth of the Orinoco towards that of the Amazon lie the territories of British, Dutch, and French Guiana, which are in that order noticed below.



Columbus in 1498 decided that the Orinoco must flow through some vast continent. Vincent Yanes Pinzon, a Spanish navigator, is believed to have first sailed up the Amazon from the coast. Vasco Núñez landed on the coast of Guiana in 1504, but the discovery is also claimed for Diego de Orlas, one of the captains of Cortez in the conquest of Mexico in 1531. Sir Walter Raleigh ascended the Orinoco in 1595 in search of the El Dorado. The first settlement is stated to be that of some Dutch people in 1680 near the river Pomeroon. This possession was contested by the Spaniards, but in 1618 a colony of Zealanders on the banks of the Essequibo was reported in a flourishing condition. English and subsequently French colonization was attempted up the Surinam river. The English returned in 1662 to Paramaribo, and in 1663 the whole colony was granted by Charles II. to Lord Willoughby. In 1669, however, Dutch Guiana covered all the territory now divided into British, Dutch, and French. In 1712 the French attacked the settlement and exacted a contribution. In 1732 Berbice received a constitution

from the states-general, and in 1763 there was a formidable insurrection of negro slaves who had been imported from Africa. In 1781 Rodney took possession, and though the colonies were restored to Holland in 1783, they surrendered again to the British in 1796. The Dutch resumed authority in 1802, and in 1803 the proper history of British Guiana began.

**BRITISH GUIANA**, when finally acquired in 1803, and formally ceded in 1814, consisted of the three colonies, Demerara, Essequibo, and Berbice, so named after the principal rivers which drain them. These were consolidated into one colony in July 1831. It is bounded on the N and N E by the Atlantic, E by Dutch Guiana, from which it is separated by the river Corantyn, S by Brazil, and W by Venezuela. It has between 0° 40' and 8° 40' N lat, and 57° and 61° W long, and has an estimated area of 76,000 square miles, but the boundaries are still disputed by Venezuela and Brazil. An engagement, however, exists between the British and Venezuelan Governments that neither shall occupy territory claimed by both. The colony has now three divisions, called counties—Berbice, extending from the Corantyn about 95 miles along the sea-coast, Demerara, from the Abart about 65 miles, including Georgetown, the capital, and Essequibo, from the river of that name about 120 miles to the Batuna near the Orinoco mouth. There is thus a length of coast of 280 miles, with an extent inland varying from 300 to 450 miles.

**Surface**—From the coast line seaward the ocean deepens very gradually, and at low tide extensive mud-flats and sandbanks are left bare. Traced inland, this fluvo-marine deposit is found to rise to 10 or 12 feet above high-water mark, and to end at an older deposit of sand and clay beds, which forms an extensive undulating country, rising to not more than 150 feet above the sea, and stretching back to where the solid rock strata underlying it crop out. Upon the rich alluvial soil of the depressed coast-land, and for a few miles up the rivers, the sugar estates are situated. They are not only protected by dunes from the sea, but, as in wet weather water rapidly accumulates in the savannahs behind, they are similarly defended on that side also. A narrow sand reef, some little distance farther inland, running parallel with the coast line, marks a previous sea limit, and still farther back a higher range of coarse white sand probably marks a yet earlier coast. The eastern portion of the colony from the sources of the Corantyn and Essequibo is a rough inclined plane, sloping down to the sea-level from a height of about 800 feet, the most elevated part being mountainous and rising to 2000 feet above the sea. This plain extends westward and northward, broken by ranges of mountains, its western portion constituting part of the extensive savannah which stretches eastward from Brazil. Two great parallel mountain systems cross the colony from west to east, the greater being that of the Phearrama and Merumé mountains, and the lesser, including the Canouan, Cumucuma, and Conatanung mountains, while the Sierra Acara, a densely wooded chain rising to 2800 feet, forms the southern boundary of Guiana and the watershed between the Essequibo and the tributaries of the Amazon. The Phearrama mountains, a wide extent of rough country traversed by broad valleys, extend from about 4° to 5° 30' N lat, and rise to 3000 feet between the Potaro and Sipauri rivers, and to 7500 feet at Roauma mountain, which rises, a perpendicular inaccessible wall of red sandstone, at the extreme western limits of the colony. The southern portion of Phearrama shows rugged hills and valleys strewn with rocks, but to the north, where the sandstone assumes table-shaped forms, there are dense forests, and the scenery is of extraordinary grandeur. The Imataca range lies between the Corantyn and Batuna



lives in 7° to 8° N lat. A sandstone formation can be traced from the northern Paramara mountains on the west to the Corantyn on the east. Interspersed with these three great layers of greenstone. The surface of a very large portion of the colony is composed of gneiss, which is seen in large rounded bosses in the river beds. Schist of different kinds is associated with gneiss in many localities. Quartz-porphry and felsites occupy extensive areas over the surface of the granite and underlying the gneiss. A large proportion of the surface rock in the interior is granite. The white sand at the sandhills on the Demerara and elsewhere is very pure and well-adapted for glass making. Gold has been found about 40 miles up the Cuyuni river. Attempts to work it have met with small success, and have been complicated with questions of boundary.

*Rivers*.—The colony is traversed by numerous large rivers, the principal being the Essequibo, Corantyn, Mazaruni, Cuyuni, Berbice, and Demerara. The Corantyn forms the boundary between British and Dutch Guiana. It rises in 3° N lat, 100 miles eastward of the Essequibo, flows generally northward, and falls into the Atlantic by a broad estuary in 6° N lat, 87° W long. It is navigable for small vessels for 150 miles from its mouth, and is remarkable for its magnificent cataraacts. The Cuyuni, coming from Venezuela, runs a course of 120 miles through territory claimed as British. The Essequibo rises in the Santa Anezca, 0° 40' N lat, and after a course of at least 600 miles discharges itself into the ocean by an estuary 15 miles in width, in 7° N lat, 58° 40' W long. In this estuary are a group of islands where sugar is grown, several being from 12 to 15 miles long and 3 miles broad. The principal are Hog Island, Wakenaam, and Leguan, a smaller one is named Tigra Island. The entrance of the Essequibo is difficult owing to deposits of mud and sand. Its course lies through forests of gigantic vegetation. About 43 miles from its mouth it is joined by the Mazaruni, which is itself joined by the Cuyuni at 8 miles from its mouth. The cataraact, of which one of the greatest is the King William's Cataraact of Schomburgk, in 3° 14' 35" N lat, put a stop to the navigation of the Essequibo by large vessels about 50 miles up. In 3° 57' 30" N lat and 58° 3' W long it receives the Rapununi, which has a course of 220 miles. Another large tributary is the Potaro, upon which is the celebrated Katetum (Old Man's) Fall, so named from an Indian legend, and discovered on April 24, 1870, by Mr C B Brown of the Geological Survey, who, owing to cataraacts, took a fortnight to reach the fall from the coast up the Essequibo and Potaro. This fall, in 5° 8' N lat and 59° 19' W long, is produced by the river flowing over a sandstone and conglomerate table-land 823 feet into a deep valley below. For the first 741 feet the water falls perpendicularly, as one great continuous whitish column, circled by rainbows, into a basin below, continuing thence over a sloping cataraact 88 feet in height, and through the interstices of great blocks of rock, to the river-bed below. The head of the fall is 1180 feet above the sea. The river 200 yards above the fall is 400 feet wide, and the width of the fall itself varies, according to the season, from 240 to 370 feet. The Demerara or Demerary rises probably near 5° N lat, and after a northward course nearly parallel with the Essequibo for more than 200 miles, enters the Atlantic near 8° 50' N lat and 58° 20' W long. It is navigable for 85 miles, and at its mouth at Georgetown is 1½ miles across. A bar, or deposit of mud and sand, prevents the entrance of large vessels at low tide. Farther east is the Berbice, whose source is probably about 3° 40' N lat. It is 2½ miles wide at its mouth in 8° 21' N lat, 57° 19' W long, and is navigable for 175 miles by vessels drawing 7 feet of water. The Cuyuni creek falls into the Berbice near its mouth. Several large streams called creeks fall

directly into the Atlantic between the Berbice and the Demerara. The Boesman creek divides the counties of Demerara and Essequibo, and between the Essequibo and the Barima are the rivers or creeks Pomeroon, Moutuca, and Waimi.

*Climate*.—The climate, especially in the interior, is healthy. The even temperature is considered suitable for pulmonary complaints, and tubercular consumption is unknown. There are no hurricanes, and gales are not frequent. Occasionally there is a long drought, but the following order of seasons is generally maintained. From the middle of April to June there is the long dry season of heavy rains, which decreases in July, the long dry season lasts from August to November, December and January comprise the short rainy season, and February and March the short dry season. The winds during the rains are generally westerly. In the dry seasons they blow from the ocean and modify the heat. The thermometer seldom rises above 90° or falls below 75° Fahr. At Georgetown the mean annual temperature is 81° 2'. The rainfall in 1878 was 69.94 inches, the average having been 74 inches for 1873-77.

*Population*.—The census of 1871 was as follows:—113,570 born in British Guiana (including 70,000 to 80,000 negroes, 10,000 born of Indian and Chinese parents, and the "coloured" population), 49,681 immigrants from India, 6,505 Chinese, 7,025 from Madeira and Arica, 13,355 negroes from West Indian Islands, and 9,635 Europeans and others, total 193,491, exclusive of aborigines, estimated at 7,000. The estimated total population on 31st December 1876 was 225,365, and further explorations have increased the estimated number of aboriginal Indians. The aborigines are remnants of Indian tribes, such as the Arawaks, Warians, Caribs, and many others, scattered in the interior of the country. They maintain themselves by fishing and hunting. Traces of "Indian picture-writing," or sculptured figures, have been found in some granite blocks up the Essequibo. On December 31, 1877, 22,500 East Indian immigrants were working under a five years' indenture on the estates, and 26,000 not under indenture. Since 1857, 10,815 East Indian coolies (including women and children), with savings amounting to £360,479, have availed themselves of their right to return passage. A number re-emigrate to the colony. The Indian Government supervises the emigration. In the colony an immigration department regulates labour, wages, and general treatment. About 5,000 are now annually introduced. Chinese have also been introduced with and without indenture.

*Vegetation*.—The vegetation is most luxuriant. The interior affords an exhaustive supply of valuable timber, such as the mora and greenheart, largely used for shipbuilding. The climate requires a continuous succession of tropical flora and fauna. Many of the trees yield gums, kauri-gums, oils, and juices of more or less value, among which may be mentioned caoutchouc, and a gum called "balata," with properties intermediate between those of caoutchouc and gutta serena. The bark of the cash tree is used for tanning. The silk cotton tree, which grows 100 feet high and 12 feet round, yields a light grey silky cotton used for stuffing pillows. Among the palms are the picturesque mountain cabbage palm, growing to the height of 100 feet, the coco-nut palm, the large palm, the fan palm, much esteemed for its beauty and fruit, and the cockatoo palm, which produces the most delicate cabbage of all the palm species. The negro tree rises 15 to 20 feet high, whose the seed. The tobacco plant grows wild, and indigenous cottons are numerous. A little rice is grown. The fruit of the plantain and banana is largely used for food, and the stems furnish fibre for paper making. Oranges, lemons, guavas, cecile, and pine apples are among the fruits of the country. Indigo used to be cultivated. Amelito, from which the oil known as dye is obtained, is indigenous, and logwood and vanilla are also found. Mango, cassava, yams, papaw tree fruit, sweet potatoes, peppers, and other productions are valuable. The largest of the water lilies, the *Victoria regina*, was first discovered in Guiana.

*Animals*.—Among the wild animals are the tapir or bush cow, the manatee (the flesh of which is sometimes eaten), the jaguar or "tiger," three kinds of ant bear, the sloth, opossum, armadillo,

acout (or haro), numerous monkeys, and vampires, measuring 20 inches from point to point of extended wing. The cayman, alligator, or crocodile of South America, 15 to 20 feet long, abounds in the rivers and estuaries. Another other reptiles are the iguana (the flat of which is said to be suitable for eating), many lizards, and snakes (some venomous). Tortoises and turtles are common on the banks of the streams and in sandy districts of the coast. The bird, insect, and fish life is also innumerable in richness and variety. *Produce, Industries, and Commerce.*—There are 120 sugar and 12 small coffee estates in the colony. Cotton was formerly exported, but the cultivation has now ceased. Coffee, the export of which in 1850 was 9½ million lbs., is not now produced for the foreign market. The deep rich soil has induced large investments in the formation of sugar estates; but the industry has undergone great fluctuations. Exports in 1840, when negro apprenticeship terminated, fell from an average of 66,000 to 38,000 cwt. The equalization of the English duties on free and slave-grown sugar still further restricted cultivation, exports in 1849 being only 32,000 hhds. In 1854 matters had begun to mend. The prospect of obtaining coolie labourers from India and China caused new capital to be introduced and fresh energy employed. Cultivation was improved and extended, vacuum pans came to be more used, steam ploughs and tile draining were successfully introduced. The value of machinery imported from 1867 to 1876 was £250,000. A quantity of 2 to 3 hhds. (of about 17 cwt.) per acre is often obtained, but the average is 80 cwt. The juice expressed by the powerful rollers is about 60 per cent. of the weight of canes. The "Demerara" crystals are very peculiar for their purity and saccharine strength, and command high prices. The sugar exports in 1876 were 119,891 hhds., fully equal to 106,000 tons; in 1877, 111,156 hhds. and in 1878 (a year with prolonged drought), 66,076 hhds. The principal quantity went to the United Kingdom, but 20,000 cwt. or 32,000 hhds. went to the Dutch States in 1876 and 1877 respectively. The rum exported in 1876 was 36,000 puncheons; in 1877 it was 32,561, and in 1878 28,762. The quantity of rum issued for consumption in the colony in 1878 was 330,392 gallons. The export of molasses (of which less is made as the quality of the sugar improves) is principally to the United States and British provinces, the quantity being 14,320, 19,602, and 17,084 casks in 1876, 1877, and 1878. The same year the timber exports (nearly all to the United Kingdom) were 464,436, 367,430, and 303,003 cubic feet. The woodcutting industry, under Government licences, is a considerable one, as is shown by the export of about 5 million shingles annually to Great Britain, and charcoal-burning is carried on; 32,266, 35,631, and 47,740 barrels of charcoal were exported in 1876, 1877, 1878. There are 1,250,000 coconuts exported yearly. In 1853 the total value of imports was £247,181; in 1877, £2,229,908 (£2,070,598 from the United Kingdom); in 1878, £2,150,714. The exports were in 1853, £1,014,944; in 1877, £3,049,167 (£1,964,760 to the United Kingdom); and in 1878, £2,507,671. The same year the exports were 234,089 tons in 1853, and 519,086 tons in 1877.

*Government.*—The government is vested in a governor appointed by the British crown and a court of policy, originally instituted by the Dutch in 1773 for Demerara, and including Essequibo in 1789. Berbice had until 1831 a separate constitution. The unofficial members of the court were elected by a college of kiezers or electors, who were themselves elected by duly qualified inhabitants. In 1795 this college was abolished, and the court was reduced to a court with the court of policy in financial matters. This resulted in an independent body, called financial representatives, being elected by the inhabitants who were qualified to vote for kiezern. The financial representatives, six in number, met in a separate session as the "combined court," to discuss finance and pass the annual tax ordinance. The civil list is not permanent, being renewed every seven years. All other ordinances or local laws are passed by the court of policy, and require the assent and confirmation by the queen. The colony is divided into five electoral districts, with a total of 983 registered electors. These districts elect for life one or two kiezern, seven in all, and one or two financial representatives, six in number. The court is composed of the court of policy the seven kiezern nominate two persons, one of whom is selected by the court. There are five unofficial members chosen as above, and five official members, viz., the governor, attorney-general, Government secretary, auditor-general, and immigration agent-general. The public revenue in 1865 was £280,017, and the expenditure £236,687. In 1877 the revenue was £280,872, and in 1878 £408,003. The remainder of this revenue is derived from import duties, and the remainder principally from wine and spirit duties, rum duty, and retail spirit licences. The expenditure in 1877 was £280,696, and in 1878 £417,995. The public debt in 1877 was £238,668. The principal mercantile accounts are kept in dollars (£s. 2s. sterling) and cents.

The Roman Dutch law is in force in civil cases, modified by orders in council and local ordinances; the criminal law is based on that of Great Britain, and administered in the same way, except that there is no grand jury. The supreme court consists of the chief justice and two puisne judges. Appeal in cases involving

£500 and upwards lies to the privy council. There are an inferior court of civil justice, courts of admiralty and vice-admiralty, of petty debt (conducted by stipendiary magistrates), of bail and review (of magistrates' decisions). One judge sits in the supreme criminal court, and there is an inferior criminal court. Questions of law are decided by three judges in the court of crown cases reserved. Besides a police magistrate for Georgetown, there are thirteen districts, each with a stipendiary magistrate appointed by the secretary of state.

*Climate.*—For a notice of Georgetown, the capital (population about 40,000), see vol. x. p. 430. The lighthouse, with revolving light visible for many miles, is at the north end, near the mouth of the river. The light is 2½ miles off in 6° 45' N. lat. and 58° 15' W. long. The chief town of Berbice is New Amsterdam, on the east bank of the Berbice river. It is well laid out, and has a population of 6000. The Berbice lighthouse is in 6° 20' 10" N. lat. and 57° 29' 40" W. long.

*Religion and Education.*—The diocese of Guiana was established in 1843. The official list shows—1 bishop, 1 archdeacon, 10 rectors, 14 curates, 2 incumbents, and several missionary clergy and chaplains to institutions. The Church of England has 68 churches or chapels. The Coolie Mission Association and Diocesan Society maintain missionaries and catechists. The Church of England claims 60,000 members. The Church of Scotland has 10 ministers.

The Roman Catholics also have several churches and mission stations. The Church of England receives an annual grant of £10,000 from the public revenue, the bishop's salary (£2000) being paid from imperial funds; the Church of Scotland has £4000, and the Roman Catholic Church £2500 from public revenue. There are also 14 Wesleyan Methodist ministers, a Moravian mission, and several chapels of Congregational Dissenters and others belonging to the London Missionary Society. The system of education supported by the general revenue is denominational. There are 16 schools sanctioned by the board of education. The estimate for primary education in 1878 was £250,065. The Church of England has 81 schools, exclusive of those on estates of colonial proprietors.

See Schomburgk's *British Guiana*; Martin's *British Colonies*; Dalton's *History of British Guiana*, 1855; Waterson's *Itineraries in South America*, 1852; *Geological Survey Reports*; J. G. Sawkins, *British Guiana*, 1876; *Quarterly Review*, 1876; *Geographical Soc.*, London, 1871; Brown's *Canoes and Camp Life in British Guiana*, 1876; Brett's *Indian Tribes of Guiana*, 1870; *Colonial Office List*; *British Guiana Directory*; Bennett's *British Guiana*; *Boissac's Journal*, 1876.

II. DUTCH GUIANA, or SURINAM, lies to the E. of British Guiana, from which it is separated by the Comantjin or Corantijn in 57° 5' W. long. Its coast extends for upwards of 220 miles to the mouth of the Maroni or Marowijne, which forms the boundary towards French Guiana. The Dutch claim possession of 58,530 square miles; but of this extensive area, equal to more than four times that of Holland, not more than 3290, according to Wolbers, had been explored in 1808, the colonial territory did not comprise more than 640 square miles, and the actual area under cultivation was little over 200. In 1875 this last was 29,862 acres (47 square miles), and in 1876, 25,180. The principal settlements have been made in the lower valley of the Marowijne, or between that river and the Surinam on the W. and the Commewijne on the E. At its mouth the Surinam is 3 miles broad, and at Paramaribo, the capital, about half a mile. Ships of from 18 to 19 feet of draught can reach the anchorage in front of the town, which has room for 100 vessels. The water is of a dirty yellow colour with brown bubbles on its surface, and its current can be traced far out at sea. As yet no one has seen the source of the Surinam, but it is understood to be high up in the Tumac Humac hills. The principal tributaries are the navigable Para on the left hand and the Fausse Creek on the right, both of which join it about 6 or 7 miles above Paramaribo. The Marowijne or Maroni is much larger river than the Surinam. Its water is clear as crystal, so that the stones can be distinguished at a depth of 12 feet. Unfortunately its mouth, though about 4 miles broad, is full of sand-banks, and consequently it has been less visited than might have been expected from the excellent character of the country through which it flows. The banks are high

\* An interesting account of a voyage up the Surinam, by Zimmerman, with a good map on a large scale, will be found in *Tijdschrift van het Aardrijkskundig Genootschap*, 1877.





During the rest of the year there is often hardly a drop of rain for months. At Cayenne the annual rainfall amounts on an average to from 10 to 11 feet, and it is naturally heaviest in the interior. It has been calculated indeed that, if all the fluvial outlets were blocked, a single winter would be sufficient to submerge the whole colony to a depth of 15 or 16 feet. During the hotter part of the year—August, September, October—the temperature usually rises to about 86° F, but it almost never exceeds 88°, in the colder season the mean is 79°, and it seldom sinks so low as 70°. Between day and night there is very little thermo-metric difference. The longest day is 12 hours 18 minutes, the shortest 11 hours 42 minutes. The prevailing winds are the N N E and the S E, and the most violent are those of the N E. During the rainy season the winds keep between N and E, and during the dry season between S and E. Hurricanes are unknown. Sudden rises of the sea are occasionally experienced in November and December. Within the present century there have been three earthquakes (1821, 1843, and 1877), none of which did much damage.

**Population.**—The population of French Guiana consists of a few pure whites, negroes from Africa, mulattoes, coolies, a decreasing number of Indians, convicts from France and its colonies (among whom are many Arabs from Algeria), and Chinese, Hindus, and Annamite immigrants. In 1877 the fixed population was stated at 37,550, and the floating population included 2900 aboriginal Indians, a military force of 1084, 538 Government officials and ecclesiastics, 4750 workmen connected with the commerce of immigration, and 1880 convicts outside of the penitentiaries, so that in round numbers the total amounted to 57,000. Of the fixed population the males were 7972, and the females 9258. The widows were 1108, while the widowers were 298.

**Vegetation.**—French Guiana has a rich variety of trees, and several of them are attracting increasing attention from their economic value. The *Leguminosae* are abundantly represented, including the gayac (*Guaiacum relai* Aubl.), the coubaril or locust tree of Surinam, which grows 70 or 80 feet high without branching, the angique (*Diospyros panamensis*), the bois violet or amarantho (*Copaiba discolor*), the pouraia or oily yam (*Eperua falcata*, Aubl.), the wicker of Opé de la (*Andira Aubletii*, Benth.), the *Robinia Fournetii*, the Saint Martin, and the *Albizia* var. *schomburgkii*, a tiger wood. To the family of the *Alpinaceae* belong the *Psidium pomiferum* or guava, the *Couatoua guianensis*, the *Leptochloa grandis* or monkey bread tree, and the *Andira* var. *Andira*. The other species of *Leptochloa*, to the *Diapentaceae*, the *Mimosa* var. *Andira*, the juncos of *Andira* var. *Andira*, and the bat-balls of *Andira* var. *Andira*. Of the *Lauraceae* it is enough to mention the black cedar (*Acacia* var. *Andira*), the bay-cane or bay-tree, and several species of *Acacia*. Among the palms are the coco-palm, the oil-palm of Africa, and the date palm. The timber of the coubaril, the bois violet, and the balata has been found to be of very high excellence. *Coccoloba* (*Hevea guianensis*) is common in the contested territory in the south, the clim tree (*Casea* var. *Andira*) and the *Albizia*, which also yields a medicinal resin, are abundant in the colony. Large quantities of elegant woods might be collected from the grey iron (*Psidium* var. *Andira*) and the ash wood (*Couatoua guianensis*).

The manioc is the principal source of food in French Guiana, and is becoming an important object of cultivation, and maize, yams, sweetroot, bananas, and the bread fruit are also known. The Guiana coffee is excellent, coffee, introduced in 1716, is extensively grown, and vanilla is one of the common wild plants of the country. The probability of another good source of vanilla, the cinnamon tree, of the cinna tree, has been ascertained, and in the latter years of the empire it formed a good source of wealth. The cinnamon tree was also successfully introduced in 1772, but like that of the pepper tree and the nutmeg its cultivation is neglected.

**Minerals.**—Great interest attaches to the gold of Guiana, which promises, or threatens, to modify the life of the colony. Indian traditions affirmed the presence of the precious metal, and Hum-boldt and Buffon agreed that the geological character of the country indicated the probability of auriferous deposits, but it was not till 1819 that Father Cony, the instigator of a Portuguese Indian named Pauline, discovered and opened the first "placer." In 1866 the Approuague company was formed, but though 6769 oz. were collected between 1819 and 1866, it soon after sold its rights. The Matoum company has been more successful, 23,242 oz. of gold

was obtained in 1872, 46,044 oz., equal to 4 million francs, were exported from Cayenne in 1874, and in 1876 and 1878 the yield was 4238 oz. per month. As various fugacious minerals are abundant in some places, it is possible that soon they may rival

**Commerce.**—The total value of the imports into French Guiana in 1871 was 5,903,418 francs, and it exported to the value of 2,566,158 francs to France, 10,600 francs to the French colonies, and 138,839 francs abroad. It is with Martinique that it holds the most important relations, but the importation in 1872 of a duty on its produce from that island has almost put a stop to its importation. Several small steamers maintain communication between different parts of the colony.

**General State of the Colony.**—It was in 1851 that Guiana was recommended to the French Government by a special commission of inquiry as a suitable place for criminal penitentiaries. In January 1854 transportation thither was offered as a favour to the convicts, then under sentence, and more than 8000 of them accepted the change. As the inmates of the colonies are allowed by a decree of 1853 to send to Guiana any Amantia or Africans who are condemned to hard labour or solitary confinement, and as it has been decreed, since 1851, to take the European convicts to New Caledonia, the actual inmates of the penitentiaries thither are mainly negroes, Arabs, and Americans. The principal establishments are those of Cayenne, of the Piece des Indes, of the Amazon, and of the Mucous. The little island La Mère is reserved for the aged, the infirm, and the convalescent. At Saint-Laurent on the Mucous there is almost a little town of wooden houses built on black pilings, the convicts carry on their social life there. The capitalists, farmers, bankers, &c. After two years in the colony, those whose conduct has been satisfactory are allowed to continue in it, and to leave for their families, to have a piece of ground assigned to them for cultivation, and to have the necessary tools and seed. Some of them have been constructed for the use of the "convicts." (See *Revue Col. et Mar.*, 1878.)

**Administration.**—Besides the governor and the military commandant, the administrative power is divided among a director, a director of the interior, and a procurator general, as well as a paymaster and a director of the penitentiary service. There is a court of appeal and a tribunal of first instance, and justice is given as supplied for each section by the local magistrates, and by the municipal council. Religious affairs are under an apostolic prefect.

**History.**—According even to the French writers, the history of Guiana is little better than a series of disasters. La Ravardière, sent out in 1604 by Henry IV. to settle the colony, brought back a favourable report, but the death of the king put a stop to the projects of royal colonisation. In 1626 a small body of traders from Rouen settled on the Sinnamary, and in 1674 a similar band took up their quarters at Cayenne. The Compagnie du Cap Nord, formed by the people of Rouen in 1613, the Compagnie du Cap France, incorporated, established in 1615, and the second Compagnie du Cap France, incorporated, of Compagnie des Indes, incorporated, established in 1672, were so many forms of failure, the result of incompetence, mismanagement, and misfortune. The Compagnie des Indes, incorporated, chartered in 1664 with monopoly of Guiana for forty years, proved little more successful, but in 1674 the colony passed under the control of the French crown, and the royal administration of Colbert began to tell forth on its progress. They were 1769 was marked by a terrible disaster. On the 1st of January, 1769, a violent storm, a severe cold, and a heavy rain, produced a convulsion of the country between the Komou and the Mucous, and out about 12,000 volunteers, colonists, mainly from Aloué and Loué, were they landed at the mouth of the Komou, and the population of the colony was reduced to a few hundred, and what was not to be obtained. Mismanagement and a series of grotesque limits, there was a shop for slaves (?), and the necessary tools for tillage were wanting. By 1766 no more than 618 colonists remained, and these were a wretched set, who had been sent there as a long investigation by the parliament of Paris proved only too true. One had blinded. Several minor attempts at colonisation in Guiana were made in the latter part of the century, but they all proved to suffer from the same fatal cause. During the terrible times of the Revolution and after a host of political prisoners were transported to Guiana. The fate of the colonists, neverly 800 in number, who were exiled on the 18th of Frimaire, was especially sad. Landed on the Sinnamary without shelter or food, two thirds of them perished miserably. In 1800, Father Hugues was appointed governor, and he managed to put the colony in a better state, but in 1809 his career was brought to a close by the invasion of the colony by the English and the Dutch. French Guiana was nominally ceded to the French in 1811, it was not, however, recognised by the Portuguese till 1817. In 1823, at the suggestion of M. Calmann Laroche, an attempt was made to settle a colony of French agriculturalists in the basin of the Sinnamary, but they were soon driven by forces from the town of Nouvelle-Ampère. The colony had founded. Since that date the principal facts in the history of the unfortunate country are the discovery of its gold fields and the introduction of the convict establishments.

A detailed bibliography of French Guiana will be found in Ternaux-Compans, *Notes Historiques de la Guyane française*, 1845, and in Victor de Novion, *Récits des auteurs et voyageurs qui ont écrit sur la Guyane*, 1844. Among the works of the present century are—Le Chevalier, *Considérations de la colonisation de la Guyane française*, 1845; Barraud, *Coup d'œil sur le présent, agricole de la Guyane française*, 1843; Motéou, *Mémoire de Cayenne*, 1857; Vidal, "Voy. d'expl. dans le haut Maroni," in *Ann. mar. et col.*, 1862; Gouy, *Bouillon, sur la marine des côtes et des rivières de la Guyane française*, 1865 (Dépôt de la marine); Bouyer, *Notes et Souvenirs*, 1867; Sagot, "Exploitation des forêts," in *Ann. mar. et col.*, 1868, and *Agriculture de la Guyane française*, 1874; Delisle, *Voy. chez les Indiens*, 1870; Allard de Saint-Quentin, *Introduction à l'Hist. de Cayenne*, 1872; Barvieux, "L'or à la Guyane française," in *Ann. mar. et col.*, 1873; Mourid, *La Guyane française*, 1874; Crovisier, *Voy. en Guyane en 1877*, in *Bull. de la Soc. de Géogr.*, 1878, and in *Tour du Monde*, 1878; *Andalogue des produits des Colonies françaises* (Exposition Univ. de 1878), 1878; and Guilhail, *Les colonies françaises*, 1880.

GUIBERT (1058–1124), of Nogent, a theological and historical writer, who flourished at the close of the 11th and the beginning of the 12th century, was born of rich and noble parents at Clermont-en-Beauvaisis on Easter Eve 1053. Dedicated from infancy to the service of God and the Virgin, he received his early education at the Benedictine abbey of Flay (Flaviacum) or St Germer, in the diocese of Beauvais; there he gave himself with great zeal to study, but chiefly of the secular poets, until a severe illness brought about a crisis in his spiritual life, in consequence of which he began to fix his attention almost exclusively upon the Holy Scriptures and the writings of the fathers, especially of Augustine and Gregory the Great. About this period he was largely influenced by personal intercourse with Anselm, afterwards of Caen, in 1084, but not completed until 1118, composed on the model of Gregory the Great's *Homilies in Joban*; five books of *Topologia* on Hosea, Amos, and the Lamentations; a treatise on the Incarnation, against the Jews; four books *De Significat*, a commentary on the Psalms, and three books *De Vita sua*, also *Monodivina*. See Migne's *Patrologia Latina*, vols. clvi. and clxxiv.

His works, edited by D'Achery, were first published in 1667, in one volume folio, at Paris (Fœderatis *Guibert, Abbaté D. Historia de Norvigeno Opera Omnia*); they include, besides minor works, a treatise on humilities (*Liber qui ordinem servare fœderis debet*); ten books of *Moralium Genesim* begun in 1084, but not completed until 1118, composed on the model of Gregory the Great's *Homilies in Joban*; five books of *Topologia* on Hosea, Amos, and the Lamentations; a treatise on the Incarnation, against the Jews; four books *De Significat*, a commentary on the Psalms, and three books *De Vita sua*, also *Monodivina*. See Migne's *Patrologia Latina*, vols. clvi. and clxxiv.

GUIBERT, or WIDERT (c. 1030–1100), of Ravenna, better known as the antipope Clement III., was born of noble parents in the 11th century at Parma, where, on attaining the canonical age, he entered the priesthood. During the minority of Henry, Guibert was appointed by the empress Agnes to the chancellorship of the kingdom of Italy; and in this capacity he steadfastly resisted, in the interests of the crown, the innovations of Hildebrand in relation to papal elections. For his services in this he was rewarded with the archbishopric of Ravenna, to which he was consecrated in 1073; his fidelity to Henry during the struggles which followed Hildebrand's accession to the papal throne as Gregory VII. led to his being ecclesiastically suspended in 1075. By thirty bishops of the imperialist party he was elected pope at Brixen in 1080, an election which was confirmed by the synod which Henry had convened in Rome in 1084, Guibert assuming the title

of Clement III. Although it was from his hands that Henry received his coronation, Clement III. met with scant recognition from the clergy and exercised few papal functions; and his name is not enrolled in any list of popes. He died in September 1100, and was buried at Ravenna; by the order of Paschal II. his ashes were afterwards disinterred and scattered to the winds. See Giesebrecht's *Kaisergeschichte*, vol. iii.

GUICCIARDINI, FRANCESCO (1483–1540), the celebrated Italian historian and statesman, was born at Florence in the year 1483, when Marsilio Ficino held him at the font of baptism. His family was illustrious and noble; and his ancestors for many generations had held the highest posts of honour in the state, as may be seen in his own genealogical *Ricordi* (*Op. Ined.*, vol. x.). After the usual education of a boy in grammar and elementary classical studies, his father, Piero, sent him to the universities of Ferrara and Padua, where he stayed until the year 1506. The death of an uncle, who had occupied the see of Cortona with great pomp, induced the young Guicciardini to hanker after an ecclesiastical career. He already saw the scarlet of a cardinal awaiting him, and to this eminence he would assuredly have risen. His father, however, checked this ambition, declaring that, though he had five sons, he would not suffer one of them to enter the church, lest the stain of corruption and debasement. Guicciardini, whose measures were confessedly ambitious (see *Antibiogr. Ricordi*, *Op. Ined.*, x. p. 68), turned his attention to law, and at the age of twenty-three was appointed by the signoria of Florence to read the *Institutes* in public. Shortly afterwards he engaged himself in marriage to Maria, daughter of Alamanno de' Salviati, prompted, as he frankly tells us, by the political support which an alliance with that great family would bring him (*ib.*, x. 71). He was then practicing at the bar, where he won so much distinction that the signoria, in 1512, entrusted him with an embassy to the court of Ferdinand the Catholic. Thus he entered on the real work of his life as a diplomatist and statesman. His conduct upon that legation was afterwards severely criticized; for his political antagonists accused him of betraying the true interests of the commonwealth, and using his influence for the restoration of the exiled Casa Medici to power. His Spanish correspondence with the signoria (*Op. Ined.*, vol. vi.) reveals the extraordinary power of observation and analysis which was a chief quality of his mind; and in Ferdinand, hypocritical and profoundly dissimulative, he found a proper object for his astute analyses. To suppose that the young statesman learned his frigid statecraft in Spain would be ascribing too simple a solution of the problem offered by his character, and scarcely fair to the Italian proficients in perfidy. It is clear from Guicciardini's autobiographical memoirs that he was ambitious, calculating, avacious, and power-loving from his earliest years; and in Spain he had no more than an opportunity of studying on a large scale those political vices which already ruled the minor potentates of Italy. Still the school was pregnant with instructions for so apt a pupil. Guicciardini issued from this first trial of his skill with an assured reputation for diplomatic ability, as that was understood in Italy. Its unscrupulous plots and warring counterplots, to meet treachery with fraud; to parry force with sleights of hand; to credit human nature with the basest motives, while the blackest crimes were contemplated with cold enthusiasm for their cleverness, was reckoned then the height of political sagacity. Guicciardini could play the game to perfection. In 1515 Leo X. took him into service, and made him governor of Reggio and Modena. In 1521 Parma was added to his rule, and in 1523 he was appointed viceroy of Romagna by Clement VII. These high offices rendered Guicciardini the virtual master of the papal states beyond the Apennines, during a period of great bewilder-

ment and difficulty. The copious correspondence relating to his administration has recently been published (*Op. Ined.*, vols vi, vii, viii). In 1528 Clement gave him still higher rank as lieutenant general of the papal army. While holding this commission, he had the humiliation of witnessing from a distance the sack of Rome and the imprisonment of Clement, without being able to raise the perfidious duke of Urbino into activity. The blame of Clement's downfall did not rest with him, for it was merely his duty to attend the camp, and keep his master informed of the proceedings of the generals (see the Correspondence, *Op. Ined.*, vols iv, v). Yet Guicciardini's conscience accused him, for he had previously counselled the pope to declare war, as he notes in a curious letter to himself written in 1527 (*Op. Ined.*, x, 104). Clement did not, however, withdraw his confidence, and in 1531 Guicciardini was advanced to the governorship of Bologna, the most important of all the papal lieutenantships (Correspondence, *Op. Ined.*, vol ix.). This post he resigned in 1534 on the election of Paul III., preferring to follow the fortunes of the Medicean princes. It may here be noticed that though Guicciardini served three popes through a period of twenty years, or perhaps because of this, he hated the papacy with a deep and frozen bitterness, attributing the woes of Italy to the ambition of the church, and declaring he had seen enough of sacerdotal abominations to make him a Lutheran (see *Op. Ined.*, vol i, 27, 104, 98, and *Lettere di Ror.*, ii, 218). The same discord between his private opinions and his public actions may be traced in his conduct subsequent to 1534. As a political theorist, Guicciardini believed that the best form of government was a commonwealth administered upon the type of the Venetian constitution (*Op. Ined.*, i, 6, ii, 130 sq.), and we have ample evidence to prove that he had judged the tyranny of the Medici at its true worth (*Op. Ined.*, vol i, 171, on the tyrant, the whole *Storia Fiorentina* and *Reggimento di Firenze*, ib. i and ii, on the Medici). Yet he did not hesitate to place his powers at the disposal of the most vicious members of that house for the enslavement of Florence. In 1537 he had been declared a rebel by the signoria on account of his well-known Medicean prejudices, and in 1530, punished by Clement to punish the citizens after their revolt, he revenged himself with a cruelty and an avarice that were long and bitterly remembered. When, therefore, he returned to inhabit Florence in 1534, he did so as the creature of the dissolute Alessandro de' Medici. Guicciardini pushed his servility so far as to defend this infamous despot at Naples in 1535, before the bat of Charles V., from the accusations brought against him by the Florentine exiles (*Op. Ined.*, vol ix.). He won his cause, but in the eyes of all posterity he justified the reproaches of his contemporaries, who describe him as a cruel, venal, grasping seeker after power, eager to support a despotism for the sake of honours, offices, and emoluments secured for himself by a bargain with the oppressors of his country. Varchi, Pitti, Segni, and Nardi are unanimous upon this point, but it is only the recent publication of Guicciardini's private MSS that has made us understand the force of their invectives. To plead loyalty or honest political conviction in defence of his Medicean partisanship is now impossible, face to face with the opinions expressed in the *Risorda Politica* and the *Storia Fiorentina*. Like Machiavelli, but on a lower level, Guicciardini was willing to "roll stones," or to do any dirty work for masters whom, in the depth of his soul, he detested and despised. After the murder of Duke Alessandro in 1537, Guicciardini espoused the cause of Cosimo de' Medici, a boy addicted to field sports, and unused to the game of statecraft. The wily old diplomatist hoped to rule Florence as grand vizier under this inexperienced prince. He was mistaken, however, in his schemes, for Cosimo displayed the genius of his family

for politics, and coldly dismissed his would-be lord protector. Guicciardini retired in disgrace to his villa, where he spent his last years in the composition of the *istoria d'Italia*. He died in 1540 without male heirs.

Guicciardini was the product of a cynical and selfish age, and his life illustrated its solid influences. Of a cold and worldly temperament, devoid of passion, blameless in his conduct as the father of a family, faithful as the servant of his papal patrons, severe in the administration of the provinces committed to his charge, and indisputably able in his conduct of affairs, he was at the same time, and in spite of these qualities, a man whose moral nature inspires a sentiment of highest repugnance. It is not merely that he was ambitious, cruel, revengeful, and avaricious, for those vices have existed in men far less antipathetic than Guicciardini. Over and above those faults, which made him odious to his fellow citizens, we trace in him a meanness that our century is less willing to condone. His phlegmatic and persistent egotism, his sacrifice of truth and honour to self-interest, his acquiescence in the worst conditions of the world, if only he could use them for his own advantage, combined with the glaring discord between his opinions and his practice, form a character which would be contemptible in our eyes were it not so smothered. The social and political decadence of Italy, whose patriotism was unknown and whose selfishness was devoid of all the motives that once men to action, found its representative and exponent in Guicciardini. When we turn from the man to the author, the decadence of the age and race that could develop a political philosophy so cold in its cynical despair of any good in human nature forces itself vividly upon our notice. Guicciardini seems to glory in his disillusionment, and uses his vast intellectual ability for the analysis of the corruption he had helped to make incurable. If one single trait of that century should be chosen to represent the spirit of the Italian people in the last phase of the Renaissance, the historian might hesitate between the *Principe* of Machiavelli and the *Risorda Politica* of Guicciardini. The latter is perhaps preferable to the former on the score of comprehensiveness. It is, moreover, more exactly adequate to the actual situation, for the *Principe* has a divine spark of patriotism yet lingering in the crevices of its frigid science, an idealistic enthusiasm surviving in its moral aberrations, whereas a great Italian critic of this decade has justly described the *Risorda* as "Italian corruption codified and elevated to a rule of life." Guicciardini is, however, better known as the author of the *Storia d'Italia*, that vast and detailed picture of his country's sufferings between the years 1494 and 1532. Judging him by this masterpiece of scientific history, he deserves less commendation as a writer than as a thinker and an analyst. The style is wearisome and pedantic, attaining to precision at the expense of circumlocution, and setting forth the smallest particulars with the same distinctness as the main features of the narrative. The whole tangled skein of Italian politics, in that involved and stormy period, is unravelled with a patience and an insight that are above praise. It is the crowning merit of the author that he never ceases to be an impartial spectator,—a cold and curious critic. We might compare him to an anatomist, with knife and scalpel dissecting the dead body of Italy, and pointing out the symptoms of her manifold diseases with the indifferent analysis of one who has no moral sensibility. This want of feeling, while it renders Guicciardini a model for the scientific student, has impaired the interest of his history. Though he lived through that agony of the Italian people, he does not seem to be aware that he is writing a great historical tragedy. He takes as much pains in laying bare the trifling causes of a petty war with Pisa as in probing the deep-seated ulcers of the papacy. Nor is he capable of painting

the events in which he took a part, in their totality as a drama. Whatever he touches, lies already dead on the dissecting table, and his skill is that of the analytical pathologist. Consequently, he fails to understand the essential magnitude of the task, or to appreciate the vital vigour of the forces contending in Europe for mastery. This is very noticeable in what he writes about the Reformation. Notwithstanding these defects, inevitable in a writer of Guicciardini's temperament, the *Storia d'Italia* was undoubtedly the greatest historical work that had appeared since the beginning of the modern era. It remains the most solid monument of the Italian reason in the 16th century, the final triumph of that Florentine school of philosophical historians which numbered Machiavelli and Vettori, Segni, Pitti, Nardi, Nelli, Varchi, and Giannotti. Up to the year 1857 the fame of Guicciardini as a writer, and the estimation of him as a man, depended almost entirely upon the *History of Italy*, and on a few ill-edited extracts from his apophthegms. At that date his representatives, the Counts Piero and Luigi Guicciardini, opened their family archives, and committed to Signor Giuseppe Cassanese the publication of his hitherto indited MSS. in ten important volumes. The vast mass of documents and finished literary work thus given to the world has thrown a flood of light upon Guicciardini, whether we consider him as author or as citizen. It has raised his reputation as a political philosopher into the first rank, where he now disputes the place of intellectual supremacy with his friend Machiavelli, but it has coloured our moral judgment of his character and conduct with darker dyes. From the stores of valuable materials contained in those ten volumes, it will be enough here to cite (1) the *Ricordi Politici*, already noticed, consisting of about 400 apophthegms on political and social topics; (2) the observations on Machiavelli's *Discorsi*, which bring into a remarkable relief the views of Italy's two great theorists on statescraft in the 16th century, and show that Guicciardini regarded Machiavelli somewhat as an amiable visionary or political enthusiast; (3) the *Storia Fiorentina*, an early work of the author, distinguished by its animation of style, brilliancy of portraiture, and liberality of judgment; and (4) the *DIALOGO DEL REGGIMENTO DI FIRENZE*, also in all probability an early work, in which the various forms of government suited to an Italian commonwealth are discussed with infinite subtilty, contrasted, and illustrated from the vicissitudes of Florence in 1494. To these may be added a series of short essays, entitled *Discorsi Politici*, composed during Guicciardini's Spanish legation. It is only after a careful perusal of these minor works that the student of history may claim to have comprehended Guicciardini, and may feel that he brings with him to the consideration of the *Storia d'Italia* the requisite knowledge of the author's private thoughts and jealously guarded opinions. Indeed, it may be confidently affirmed that those who desire to gain an insight into the true principles and feelings of the men who made and wrote history in the 16th century will find it here far more than in the work designed for publication by the writer. Taken in combination with Machiavelli's treatises, the *Opere Inedite* furnish a comprehensive body of Italian political philosophy anterior to the date of Fra Paolo Sarpi.

The student may be referred to Rosini's edition of the *Storia d'Italia*, Pisa, 1819, 10 vols., and to the *Opere Inedite*, in 10 vols., published at Florence, 1857. These two books place him in possession of all that is extant of Guicciardini. (J. A. S.)

GUIDI, CARLO ALESSANDRO (1680-1712), Italian lyric poet, was born at Pavia in 1680. As chief founder of the well-known Roman academy called "L'Arcadia," he had a considerable share in the reform of Italian poetry, corrupted at that time by the extravagance and bad taste of the poets Marino and Achillini and their school. The

poet Guidi and the critic and jurisconsult Gravina checked this evil by their influence and example. The genius of Guidi was lyric in the highest degree, his songs are written with singular force, and charm the reader, in spite of touches of bombast. His most celebrated song is that entitled *Alla Fortuna* (To Fortune), which certainly is one of the most beautiful pieces of poetry of the 17th century. Guidi was squint-eyed, humpbacked, and of a delicate constitution, but possessed undoubted literary ability. His poems were printed at Parma in 1671, and at Rome in 1704. In 1681 he published at Parma his lyric tragedy *Amulius and Numa*, and two pastoral dramas *Daphne* and *Eudymon*. The last had the honour of being mentioned as a model by the critic Gravina, in his treatise on poetry. Less fortunate was Guidi's poetical version of the six homilies of Pope Clement XI, first as having been severely criticized by the satirist Settano, and next as having proved to be the indirect cause of the author's death. A splendid edition of this version had been printed in 1712, and the pope being then in San Gaudolfo, Guidi went there to present him with a copy. On the way he found out a serious typographical error, which he took so much to heart that he was seized with an apoplectic fit at Frascati and died on the spot. Guidi was honoured with the special protection of Ranuccio II., duke of Parma, and of Queen Christina of Sweden.

GUIDICCIONI, GIOVANNI, one of the best Italian poets of the first half of the 16th century, was born at Lucca in 1480, and died at Macerata in 1541. He occupied a high position, being bishop of Fosombrone and president of Romagna. The latter office nearly cost him his life, a murderer attempted to kill him, and had already touched his breast with his dagger when, conquered by the resolute salmons of the prelate, he threw away the weapon and fell at his feet, asking forgiveness. The *Verse and Letters* of Guidiccioni are models of elegant and natural Italian style. The best editions are those of Genoa (1749), Bergamo (1753), and that recently published at Florence.

GUIDO or ANZUZO, an Italian monk of the 11th century, has by many been called the father of modern music, and a portrait of him in the refectory of the monastery of Avellana bears the inscription "Beatus Guido, inventor musicus." Although these statements are manifestly exaggerated, it is none the less true that Guido's reforms mark an enormous progress in the notation as well as in the teaching of music. Of his life little is known, but what little is chiefly derived from the dedicatory letters prefixed to two of his treatises and addressed respectively to Bishop Theobald (not Theobald, as Bunsen writes the name) of Atezzo, and Michael, a monk of Pomposa and Guido's pupil and friend. Occasional references to the celebrated musician in the works of his contemporaries are, however, by no means rare, and from these it may be conjectured with all but absolute certainty that Guido was born in the last decade of the 10th century. The place of his birth is, beyond a doubt, Atezzo, for on the title-page of all his works he is styled *Guido Aretino*, or simply *Aretino*. At his first appearance in history Guido was a monk in the Benedictine monastery of Pomposa, and it was there that he invented his educational method, by means of which, according to his own statement, a pupil might learn within five months what formerly it would have taken him ten years to acquire. Envy and jealousy, however, were his only reward, and by these he was compelled to leave his monastery—"inde est, quod me vides prolixius finibus exulatum," as he says himself in the second of the letters above referred to. According to one account, he travelled as far as Bremen, called there by Archbishop Hermann in order to reform the musical service. But this statement has been doubted, for chronological and other reasons.



Certain it is that not long after his flight from Pomposo Guido was living at Aiezso, and it was here that, about 1030, he received an invitation to Rome from Pope John XIX. He obeyed the summons, and of his most proficient became his first and apparently one of his most proficient pupils. But in spite of his success Guido could not be induced to remain in Rome, the insubstantial air of which seems to have affected his health. In Rome he met again his former superior, the abbot of Pomposo, who seems to have repented of his conduct towards Guido, and to have induced him to return to Pomposo, and here all authentic records of Guido's life cease. "We only know that he died, on May 17, 1050, as prior of Avellana, a monastery of the Camaldulians, such at least is the statement of the chroniclers of that order. To ought, however, to be added that the Camaldulians claim the celebrated musician as wholly their own, and altogether deny his connection with the Benedictines. It is quite in accordance with the semi-mythical character of Guido's life that a great many inventions belonging to earlier as well as to later times have been attributed to him, in the same way as Charlemagne, Arthur, and Roland have been made responsible for the deeds and exploits of other kings and heroes. His eulogists declare that before him church music was in a state of utter barbarism, wholly ignoring the achievements of Gregory the Great, Hucbald, and others. The notation of music by means of the *neumes* also, although very imperfect for practical purposes, at any rate served to give prominence to the composition, the elaborate nature of it, at least for the first time systematically used, the lines of the staff, and the intervals or *spaces* between them, and thus fixed the principle of modern notation, and the value of this innovation for educational and general artistic purposes cannot be overrated. There is also little doubt that the names of the first six notes of the scale, *ut, re, mi, fa, sol, la*, still in use among Romance nations, were introduced by Guido, although he seems to have used them in a relative rather than in an absolute sense. It is well known that these words are the first syllables of six lines of a hymn addressed to St John the Baptist, which may be given here —

*Et quoniam laus et gloria tibi  
Magna est, gratiam facis ut tuum,  
Solus polluit labia meum,  
Sancte Joanne.*

In addition to this Guido is generally credited with the introduction of the *F* clef. But perhaps more important than all this is the thoroughly practical time which Guido assumes in his theoretical writings, and which differs greatly from the clumsy scholasticism of his contemporaries and predecessors.

The most important of Guido's treatises, and those which are generally acknowledged to be authentic, are *Micrologus Guidonis de mensuris artis musicae*, dedicated to Bishop Theodold of Aiezso, and comprising a complete theory of music, in 20 chapters; *Micrologus Guidonis de significatione et antiquitate in suis propriis politer*, written in twelve chapters, of any thing but classic structure; *Alia Guidonis de significatione et antiquitate in suis propriis politer*, written in twelve chapters, of any thing but classic structure; *Alia Guidonis de significatione et antiquitate in suis propriis politer*, written in twelve chapters, of any thing but classic structure; *Alia Guidonis de significatione et antiquitate in suis propriis politer*, written in twelve chapters, of any thing but classic structure. The first of these treatises was published in the second volume of Guiberti's *Scriptores ecclesiastici de musica sacra*. A very important manuscript unknown to Guiberti (the *Codex Bibliothecae Patris*), in the Paris library, contains, in 20 chapters, *Micrologus Guidonis de mensuris artis musicae*, and gradually undeniably belongs to Guido. A comprehensive but very unscientific list of Guido has been written by Luca Angiolini (*Storia la vita, etc. di Guido d'Arezzo*). Of it Guiberti gives a very brief account, in his *Scriptores ecclesiastici de musica sacra*, and in his *Storia della musica*. Guiberti's *Storia della musica* should also be consulted. A comprehensive and almost the account of Guido's life and work by Dr W. Langens may be found in the fourth volume of Mendel's *Musikgeschichte des Mittelalters*. *Leipzig*.

GUIDO RENT. See RENT.

GUIDO OF SIENA. The name of this painter is of considerable interest in the history of art, on the ground that, certain assumptions regarding him could be accepted as true, he would be entitled to share with Cimabue, or rather indeed to supersede him in, the honour of having given the first onward impulse to the art of painting. The case stands thus. In the church of S. Domenico in Siena is a large painting of the Virgin and Child enthroned, with six angels above, and in the Benedetto convent of the same city is a triangular picture, once a portion of the same composition, representing the Saviour in benediction, with two angels, the entire work was originally a triptych, but is not so now. The principal section of this picture has a thymed Latin inscription, giving the painter's name as Guido de Senis, with the date 1221. The genuineness of the inscription is not, however, free from doubt. In the general treatment of the picture there is nothing to distinguish it particularly from other work of the same early period, but the heads of the Virgin and Child are undeniably very superior, in natural character and peaceful dignity, to anything to be found anterior to Cimabue. The question therefore arises, Are these heads really the work of a man who painted in 1221? The best informed connoisseurs of recent years (see especially the discussion of the matter in Messrs. Crowe and Cavalcaselle's work, vol. i.) pronounce in the negative, and say they now stand, due to some artist of the 14th century, perhaps Ugolino da Siena, thus the claims of Cimabue would remain undisturbed and in their pristine vigour. Beyond this, little is known of Guido da Siena. There is in the Academy of Siena a picture assigned to him, a half-figure of the Virgin and Child, with two angels, dated probably between 1250 and 1300, also in the church of S. Domenico in the same city, a Madonna dated 1262. Milanesi thinks that the work in S. Domenico is due to Guido Ciarini, of whom no other record remains earlier than 1278, when it is mentioned as the painter of a banner. Guido da Siena appears always to have painted on panel, not in fresco on the wall. He has been termed, very dubiously, a pupil of Pisano, and the master of Duccio, Mino da Fiesole, and Desiderius da Luca.

GUIENNE, an old French province, whose name until the 10th century was Aquitania, and whose history until it came into the possession of England in 1152, is given under the heading AQUIFANIA. It was bounded by the Pyrenees, Languedoc, Auvergne, Angoumois, Saintonge, and the sea of Gascony, and out of it are now formed the departments of Gunder, Dordogne, Lot, Aveyron, Lot et Garonne, Tarn, Landes, Gers, Upper Pyrenees, Ariege, and Lot et Tarn-et-Garonne. The chief town was Bourdeaux. Soon after it was joined to the English crown the nobles were revolted, but were each time subdued, and in 1169 Henry II. of England bequeathed it to his son Richard (Cœur de Lion), who after quelling all symptoms of revolt added in 1186 and 1188 Toulouse and Rochelle to his French possessions. In 1196 he bequeathed it to his nephew Otto of Brunswick, but he resumed its possession in 1198, when Otto was chosen king of Germany. After the death of Richard in 1199, his mother Eleanor retained possession of it during her lifetime. It was reconquered by the French in the reign of Edward I. of England, but at the peace of 1303 it was again ceded to the English, with whom it remained till 1451, when it was conquered and finally united to France by Charles VII. In 1469 Louis IX gave it in exchange for Champagne and Bar to his brother the duke of Berry, after whose death in 1472 it was again united to the French crown.

GUIGNES, JOSEPH DE (1721-1800), a French Orientalist, born at Fontenay October 19, 1721, became in his fifteenth year a student of Oriental languages, and especially of Chinese, at the Collège Royal under the celebrated

Foumont, whom in 1745 he succeeded at the Royal Library as society interpreter of the Eastern languages. A *Mémoire Historique sur l'Origine des Huns et des Turcs*, published by De Guignes in 1748, having brought his name with some prominence before the learned world, he was admitted a member of the Royal Society of London in 1762 and an associate of the French Academy of Inscriptions in 1764. Two years later he gave to the world the first two volumes of his learned and labourous *Mémoires Générales des Huns, des Mongoles, des Turcs, et des autres Tartares occidentaux*; and in 1767 he was appointed to succeed Jault in the chair of Syriac at the Collège Royal. The completion of the *Histoire* by the publication of the three remaining volumes in 1768 was followed in 1769 by the publication of a *Mémoire* in which he propounded and endeavoured to prove the untenable and absurd theory that the Chinese nation had originated in Egyptian colonization, an opinion to which, in spite of every argument, he to the last obstinately clung. To its support, as also to the further elucidation of the chronology and arrangement of his *Histoire*, which had been, not without some justice, unfavourably criticised, he devoted several learned papers which are to be found in the *Mémoires* of the Academy of Inscriptions, and among his other literary labours, an improved edition of an old translation of the *Shoo king* is worthy of special mention. The publication, while pursuing De Guignes to attain some insignificant position which had been conferred upon him, deprived him of various posts, such as those of keeper of the antiquities in the Louvre and editor of the *Journale des Savans*, on which he was chiefly dependent for his income, and his later years are said to have brought to him considerable personal hardship, from which his sole refuge was in indolent application to study. He died at Paris, March 19, 1800. The *Histoire* had been translated into German by Dineit (1768-71). De Guignes left a son, Christian Louis Joseph (1769-1816), who, after leaving China from his father, went as consul to Canton, where he spent seventeen years. On his return to France he was charged by the Government with the work of preparing a Chinese-French-Latin dictionary. Though bearing his name alone on the title-page (1813), it was in reality only a new edition of the work of Glémont. He was also the author of a huge work of travels (*Voyages à Pékin, Moukelle, et L'île de Foum*, 1808).

**GUILD.** The spirit of association has in all ages induced men to join together for the pleasures of mutual enjoyment or for the attainment of some common purpose for which the support of number was necessary. The idea has taken shape in various ways, influenced by the temperament of race, the policy of Governments, the social condition of classes, or the need for a special object. Independently of the organization of peoples, of their constitution into towns, provinces, and states as units in a system, whether of self government or of imposed government,—independently too of those great associations or brotherhoods, the church, the orders of knighthood, the greater and lesser monastic orders, and secret societies,—there is a third kind of association upon a basis distinct from these. The public welfare of a community within certain territorial limits is the great object of Governments, local or imperial, the pursuit of some great moral, religious, or equitable thought, touching the hearts of men in general without regard to nation, was the animating principle of the chivalric and religious orders; but when men began to form themselves into *guilds*, the benefit of each one in his individual and social capacity was concerned, naturally confined within the bounds of neighbourhood. A guild was a voluntary association of those living near together who joined for a common purpose, paying contributions, worshipping together, feasting together periodically, helping one another in sick-

ness and poverty, and frequently united for the pursuit of a special object.

The true history of these institutions has been all recently unnoticed, their value and importance, especially in connexion with the life of towns and villages, having been but imperfectly investigated or understood. Guilds have, however, been numerous, and their influence most important, in Europe from an early period; they attained their highest prosperity and development in the Teutonic countries, and especially in England during the Middle Ages, and they have been widely spread among the Romance nations.

The meaning of the word *guild* or *gild* is closely connected with the origin of the institution. *Gild* or *gild* was Old English for a set payment or contribution, from *gidan* or *gidan*, to pay (whence also the present *yield*), the primary meaning was payment, and the company of those who paid became known by this chief title to membership. There are also *gilde*, Danish and Low German, in the sense of a contributory company of this kind, *gilde* and *gild*, Icelandic, a payment, and *gilds*, also a banquet. The word therefore, thus derived, is better spelt (as most old authorities have it) without the *u*, a colour is, however, given for the ordinary modern form *guild*, by deriving it (as Wedgwood, *English Etymology*) from the Welsh or Brython *gwyl*, a feast or holiday, *gwylid*, keeping, a festival. The essential principle of the guild is the banding together for mutual help, mutual enjoyment, and mutual encouragement in good endeavour. The spirit which directed itself to the inner business and life of each society and its members is the true mark, in some degree, of all bodies, ancient or modern, that can claim the character of guilds. The peace guild of the North in the 10th century had this character in common with the great trading guild of the 13th and 14th centuries, or the little social or religious guild of an English country village of a century later.

Some German scholars find the origin of the first guilds in the banquets and sacrificial assemblies of the Southern German tribes. Wilda, Dr L. Buntano, and others, connecting these with what is known of the importance of family relations among the Teutonic nations, find in the family union the germ from which the guild was developed, and show that when Christianity was brought from the north of Europe "the spirit of association received a mighty impulse, and the guilds spread themselves rapidly under the influence of Christian doctrine" (Brentano). It is maintained by others that the guilds have sprung from the *collegia*, in those countries where the Roman rule bore sway.

The Romans exercised the right of association from early times, it is attributed to Numa that he encouraged the formation of *colle* or guilds, of which Plutarch enumerates nine; there also existed early religious societies among them. Traced voluntarily under the republic, this right became coupled under the empire, and the *collegia* were obliged to seek authorization from the state for the narrower objects to which the imperial decrees attempted to limit them. These societies were numerous, not only at Rome, but throughout the empire, especially in the East, in Italy, and in Gaul, a large number were trade corporations, devoted to the interest of their crafts, others were united for good-fellowship, religion, and many especially to provide for burial. In the provinces, besides merchants and others, the highest persons were glad at times to belong to them; those in Rome under the empire appear to have consisted principally of workmen, freedmen, slaves, and persons of the humbler classes. All appear to have had the same general features, they chose their own masters and officers, made rules for self-government, paid contributions to a common fund, met and feasted together at stated periods, —the freedom of social intercourse being particularly ap-

preciated among the poorer companies. They formed rules for good behaviour at table, and admitted women as members, "they affirmed their existence by a common worship," choosing a patron god. From these and other resemblances Mr H C Coote contends that there is an identity between the Roman *collegia* and the guilds of Saxon growth, and M Raynould is an advocate of a similar descent in France and Italy. But though analogous in many respects, as far as is known they lacked the essential element of the guild, that of mutual help in sickness and poverty, the soldiers' colleges, formed in spite of the law which forbade them, approach the nearest to this character, in providing their members with travelling expenses and retaining pensions. The evidence against the connexion between the *collegium* and the guild is regarded by the ablest German writers who have investigated the subject as conclusive, but this interesting historical question has not yet been fully worked out.<sup>1</sup>

The Greeks also, in the 3d and 3d centuries B.C., had their associations of the same kind, called *Evanoi* or *Thiasoi*, which were numerous at Rhodes, in the islands of the Archipelago, at the Pireus, and in other important places. These societies partook more nearly of the character of the medieval guilds than did the Roman, the members paid contributions to a general fund, added one another necessarily, provided for funerals, met in assembly to deliberate on their affairs, and celebrated feasts and religious sacrifices in common. Strict rules against disorderly conduct were to be enforced by fine, he who did not pay his yearly quota to the society was excluded, unless he could show good cause of poverty or sickness. Women could be members, and were admitted to the meetings. Some of these societies concerned themselves with religion, others with politics or commerce, in the cause of liberal as opposed to official religion, they appear to have done good service.

It is perhaps of little use attempting to ascribe to any one country or race the special initiative of these institutions, any more than it would be to say that the custom of men to congregate in towns originated with this or that nation. Human nature is the same everywhere, and two motives induce men to join together—weakness, seeking the power of numbers for resisting oppression, or for mutual assistance, and the affinity which those pursuing the same occupation and possessing the same interests have for each other. These motives are sufficient to account for the existence of the *Evanoi* in Greece, contemporary with the *Collegia* of the Romans, they are sufficient to explain why, although the *collegia opificum*, or artisans' guilds, are found as late as the code of Justinian, and that 50 or 60 years later, in the 6th century, we have record of a soap-makers' craft in Naples (Letter of Pope Gregory the Great, lib. x. epist. 26, Migne's *Pat. Cur.*, vol. lxxvii), the guilds in the towns of Italy should begin a new life in the 10th century (Hegel), they can explain why in England we find from the 7th to the 10th century other guilds actively in existence, while in Norway they were instituted in the 11th century. These societies "may thus have one history in China, another in India, another in Greece or Rome, another in the Europe of the Middle Ages, the like needs will require the like kinds of help, and develop institutions which, amid whatever diversities of outward garb, will substantially fulfil the same ends" (J M Ludlow).

In the Middle Ages guilds are recognized as belonging to three or four classes. In the north of Europe the *frith*

or *peace guild* was an important form, widely spread in early times. These were associations for defence, based upon mutual obligations, "sworn communities for the protection of right and the preservation of liberty," we see traces of them in England from the laws of Ina (7th century) down to the "Dooms" of London in Athelstan's time (10th century). These statutes of the old London peace guild are thus shortly described by Prof Stubbs—

"A monthly meeting is directed, at which there is to be by filling and a refectory, the remains of which are to be bestowed in time on the death of a member (each brother gives a loaf and sings or pays for the singing of fifty psalms). Each member pays fourpence for common purposes, towards a sort of insurance fund from which the guild makes good the losses of members, and a contribution of a shilling towards the pursuit of the thief. The members are arranged in bodies of ten, out of whom is the headman, these again are classed in tens under a common leader, who with the other headmen acts as the viceroy and adviser of the hundred members."

The early English recognized the responsibility of the guild for the actions of its members and their mutual liability,—the fundamental principle of English institutions for keeping the peace, besides this, the rules still exist of Saxon guilds at Abbotbury, Woodbury, Cambridge, and Exeter, and show by the many points in common with the social guilds of later English growth whence these derived their descent. Abroad, the frith guilds in the 11th and 12th centuries extended over the Continent, one of the most remarkable was founded at Roskilde, under King Canute, for the suppression of the piracy of the vikings. Others, as in Schleswig, Artois, Flensburg, &c., joined for hindering violence and maintaining peace, by all means that law and custom allowed, even against kings. These guilds became of such importance that in many places their law grew to be that of the *commune* or town (see BOROUGH). In France the great development of town governments at this period was frequently but the acknowledgment of an already existing defensive guild, or of the important merchant or craft guilds. At Montpellier and Paris, in the beginning of the 13th century, the trade guilds took part in the watch and ward of the city, and thus were a recognized part of the *commune*. The same was the case in London in early times. Even as late as the 15th century a guild was founded at Ghent, composed of the culvermeis, arquebusers, and gunners, in order to teach the burghers the use of firearms, so as to be able to defend the town or suppress troubles. It became the chief guild of the city, had public festivities, admitted women as "consecrators," and possessed many of the features of both peace and social guilds.

In the Frankish empire guilds were numerous for defence, for conviviality, and for religious and social duties, among the serfs and the clergy as well as others, but under Charlemagne and his successors they suffered great oppression, and were persecuted by both ecclesiastical and secular authorities. In later times the clergy formed special societies called *Guilds of Kalenders*, so named from their meeting day having originally been on the kalends of each month (Brentano), these were to be found in many towns on the Continent, sometimes we read of the major and minor guilds for the higher and lower clergy. The only company that is known to have mistaken of this character in England was the ancient Guild of the Kalenders at Bristol, which kept the records of that town and other places, and in its later years supported a school for Jews.

A class of guilds widely spread in the Middle Ages, especially in England, were those which have been distinguished by the name of *Social* (Toulmin Smith) or *Religious*

<sup>1</sup> For a valuable sketch of the *Collegia*, including trade guilds and burial guilds, see "Les sociétés civiles à Rome," by Guston Bousquet, *Revue des Deux Mondes*, December 1871, also "The Friendly Societies of Antiquity," by J. Tompkins, *Oxford Review Magazine*, April 1868, and the article *Curia*.

<sup>2</sup> The custom of "setting out the watch," or the "marching watch," in London, Bristol, Worcester, &c., on midsummer eve, originated in the put taken in the defence of the city by the trade guilds or companies of those places, it was a kind of "military muster" (Elliott).

(Brentano) These were the small and numerous societies that sprung up all over the country in every village, in small or large towns, at different times as the need arose, or for good neighbourhood's sake. Their objects included "not only devotions and oisons, but also every exercise of Christian charity, and therefore, above all things, mutual assistance of the guild brothers in every exigency, especially in old age, in sickness, in cases of impoverishment,—if not brought on by their own folly,—and of wrongful imprisonment, in losses by fire, water, or shipwreck, aid by loans, provision of work, and lastly, the burial of the dead. It included further the assistance of the poor and sick, and the visitation and comfort of prisoners not belonging to the guild" (Brentano). These societies were composed of men and women of all ranks, and, hence, in some instances, they grew into wealth and popularity, kings and princes did not disdain to become guild-brothers. Henry IV and Henry VI were members of the guild of the Trinity at Coventry, Henry VIII and his queen were members of the guild of St Barbara, of St Katherine's church next the Tower, London. Another prince belonged to the famous guild of St George at Norwich. One guild, however, who said they were "of the rank of common and middling folks," would not admit even a mayor or a bailiff.

Each member took an oath, and paid an admission fee and yearly contribution, they held regular business meetings or "mutual speech," and had an annual "guild-day." Every guild had its livery, which the members were expected to wear at funerals, feasts, &c., and they had strict rules for good life and behaviour. The little parochial guilds met in a room or in members' houses, if the guild was rich enough it had a hall or "guild-house," legacies and gifts were made to them, and they lent out of their stock to poor members, or devoted it to some public or charitable object. Schools and churches were founded or helped by these private guilds, as some of the colleges at Cambridge, schools at Coventry, Worcester, Dayles, Slanford, Ludlow, Bristol, and elsewhere, forty guilds of Bodmin (of which only five were craft guilds) joined in the repair of the church there. Bridges and town-walls were repaired, both in England and in France—in which latter country M. Guy finds some relics of these social guilds. The performing of miracle and other plays, setting out of pageants, and providing of minstrels were undertaken by many of the social as well as by the craft guilds, and in many towns formed an important adjunct to the municipal proceedings, as at Coventry, York, Durham, Norwich, &c., the Lord Mayor's show of London owes its origin to this custom.<sup>1</sup>

These local social guilds were very numerous in England and in the Teutonic countries, it is believed that they were so in France, but little is known of them elsewhere. There were 50 such guilds in the county of Cambridge, 909 in Norfolk, 42 in Bodmin, 80 in Cologne, 70 at Lubek, &c.

At the time of the Reformation these guilds were abolished in Protestant countries, under pretence of their being superstitious foundations, in Denmark and North Germany their property was devoted to public service, but in England it was handed over to the king and his counsellors, their guild-halls became poor-houses, their pageants were laid aside. A very few of these societies escaped, St George's guild at Norwich continued to live on many years.

Wickliffe, in the 14th century, had complained of the abuses among the guilds, including those of trades. In 1589 returns were made into Chancery of the social and other guilds in England, these, though imperfect, give a valuable body of details, and draw the distinction between the two

great classes of social and trade guilds. The trade guilds have in all countries attracted more attention than the rest on account of their wealth and importance, they are of two orders, *guilds-merchant* and *craft-guilds*. The guild-merchant arose in this way, the same men who in the growth of towns became citizens by reason of possessing town-land, frequently were also traders, the uncertain state of society in early times naturally caused them to unite for protection of their trade interests in a *guild mercatoria*, which made internal laws akin to those of other guilds, the success of these private interests enlarged their importance, and when the towns and boroughs obtained confirmation of their municipal life by charter, they took care to have it included that the men of the place should also have their guild merchant.<sup>2</sup> Thus these guilds obtained the recognition of the state, in their origin they had been as other guilds, putting especially of the character of peace-guilds, but now "the citizens and the guild became identical, and what was guild-law" often became the law of the town. In great cities, such as London and Florence, we do not hear of merchant guilds (Norton), these the separate occupations or crafts early asserted their associating power and independence, and the craft guilds gradually took a place in the organization of the town government. Many craft-guilds, the heads of which were concerned in the government of the commune, as found in Italy between the 9th and the 12th centuries (Ferrara, *Vite de Florence*). But in England and the north of Europe the guilds-merchant during this period, having grown rich and tyrannical, excluded the landless men of the handicrafts, these then uniting among themselves, there arose everywhere by the side of the guilds-merchant the craft guilds, which gained the upper hand on the Continent in the struggle for liberty in the 13th and 14th centuries. In England these companies usually existed side by side with the old town or merchant guild, until at length their increasing importance caused the decay of the old guilds, and the adoption of these crafts as part of the constitution of the towns (13th to 15th century). The separation of the richer and perhaps the older from the poorer of the companies occurred, and thus arose the paramount influence of a few,—as the twelve great Companies of London, the *Aste Majors* of Florence, and others.

The constitution of the trade-guilds was formed on the model of other guilds, they appointed a master or alderman and other officers, made ordinances, including provisions for religious observance, mutual help, and burial, the town ordinances yet remaining of many places, as of Bewick, Southampton, and Worcester, show traces of the trade laws of the old guilds-merchant. As their principal object, "the craft-gildmen provided for the maintenance of the customs of their craft, framed further ordinances for its regulation, (including care against fraudulent workmanship), saw these ordinances properly executed, and punished the guild brothers who infringed them." "Though the craft guilds, as voluntary associations, did not need confirmation by the authorities at their birth, yet this confirmation became afterwards of the greatest importance, when these guilds wanted to be recognized as special and independent associations, which were thenceforth to regulate the trade instead of the authorities of the town." (Brentano). Hence obtained the practice of procuring a charter in confirmation and recognition of their laws, in return for which certain taxes were paid to the king or other authority. It is therefore erroneous to state, as is sometimes done, that these companies owe their origin to royal charter, or that they required a licence.

Few important towns in Great Britain have been with-

<sup>1</sup> There are numerous examples of this among the borough records of England and Scotland.

<sup>2</sup> Probably the numerous societies in France and Flanders of the 12th and 13th centuries for keeping the poetic and musical foundation of *Le Feste de Dieu* belong to the class of social guilds. One of them was set up in London (Riley's *Life of Ouseburn*).



reach Italian waters, or, keeping further south, may even touch the Madeira, Canaries, or Azores, but these have no proportion whatever to the mighty hosts of whom they are literally the "scouts," and whose position and movements they no more reveal than do the vedettes of a well-appointed army. The common Guillemot of both sides of the Atlantic is replaced further northward by a species with a stouter bill, the *U. arctica* or *U. brevicornis* of ornithologists, and on the west coast of North America by the *U. californica*. The habits of all these are essentially the same, and the structural resemblance between all of them and the Auks is so great that of late several systematists have relegated them to the genus *Alea*, confining the genus *Uria* to the Guillemots of another group, of which the type is the *U. gylla*, the Black Guillemot of British authors, the Dovey or Greenland Dove of sailors, the Tystie of Shetlanders. This bird assumes in summer an entirely black plumage with the exception of a white patch on each wing, while in winter it is beautifully marked with white and black. Allied to it as to species or geographical races are the *U. mandchurica*, *U. columba*, and *U. carbo*. All these differ from the larger Guillemots by laying two or three eggs, which are generally placed in some secure niche, while the members of the other group lay but a single egg, which is invariably exposed on a bare ledge. (A.)

**GUILLOTINE**, the instrument for inflicting capital punishment by decapitation introduced into France at the period of the Revolution. It consists of two upright posts surmounted by a cross beam, and grooved so as to guide an oblique-edged knife, the back of which is heavily weighted to make it fall swiftly and with force when the cord by which it is held aloft is let go. Some ascribe the invention of the machine to the Persians, and previous to the period when it obtained notoriety under its present name it had been in use in Scotland, England, and various parts of the Continent. There is still preserved in the Antiquarian Museum of Edinburgh the rude guillotine called the "maiden" by which the regent Monton was decapitated in 1581. The last persons decapitated by the Scotch "maiden" were the marquis of Argyll in 1661 and his son the earl of Argyll in 1685. It would appear that no similar machine was ever in general use in England, but until 1650 there existed in the forest of Hardwick, which was coextensive with the parish of Halifax, West Riding, Yorkshire, a mode of trial and execution called the gibbet law, by which a felon convicted of theft within the liberty was sentenced to be decapitated by a machine called the Halifax gibbet. A print of it is contained in a small book called *Halifax and its Gibbet Law* (1708), and in Gibson's edition of Camden's *Britannia* (1723). In Germany the machine was in general use during the Middle Ages, under the name of the *Dreht*, the *Hobel*, or the *Dolain*. Two old German engravings, the one by George Penser, who died in 1650, and the other by Heinrich Alderegger, with the date 1553, represent the death of a son of Tiberius Marius by a similar instrument, and its employment for the execution of a Spartan is the subject of the engraving of the eighteenth symbol in the volume entitled *Symbolicae Quaestiones de Universis Generis*, by Achilles Bocchi (1555). From the 13th century it was used in Italy under the name of *Mancassa*, for the execution of criminals of noble birth. The *Chronique de Jean d'Antoin*, first published in 1836, gives minute details of an execution in which it was employed at Geneva in 1507, and it is elaborately described by F. de Laet in his *Voyage en Espagne et en Italie* in 1730. It is mentioned by Puysegur in his *Mémoires* as in use in the south of France, and he describes the execution by it of Marshal Montmorency at Toulouse in 1632. For about a century it had, however, fallen into general disuse on the Continent, and Dr Guillotine, who first suggested its

use in modern times, is said to have obtained his information regarding it from the description of an execution that took place at Milan in 1702, contained in an anonymous work entitled *Voyage Historique et Politique du Suisse, d'Italie, et d'Allemagne*.

Guillotine, who was born at Saintes, May 28, 1738, and elected to the Constituent Assembly in 1789, brought forward on the 1st December of that year two propositions regarding capital punishment, the second of which was that, "in all cases of capital punishment it shall be of the same kind—that is, decapitation—and it shall be executed by means of a machine." The various urged in support of this proposition were that in cases of capital punishment the privilege of execution by decapitation should no longer be confined to the nobles, and that it was desirable to render the process of execution as swift and painless as possible. The debate was brought to a sudden termination in peals of laughter caused by an indiscreet reference of Dr Guillotine to his machine, but his ideas seem gradually to have leavened the minds of the assembly, and after various debates decapitation was adopted as the method of execution in the penal code which became law on the 6th October 1791. At first it was intended that decapitation should be by the sword, but on account of a memorandum by M. Sanson, the executioner, pointing out the expense and certain other inconveniences attending that method, the assembly referred the question to a committee, at whose request Dr Antoine Louis, secretary to the academy of surgery, prepared a memorandum on the subject. Without mentioning the name of Guillotine, it recommended the adoption of an instrument similar to that which was formerly suggested by him. The assembly decided in favour of the report, and the contract was offered to the person who usually provided the instruments of justice, but as his terms were considered exorbitant, an agreement was ultimately come to with a German of the name of Schmidt, who, under the direction of M. Louis, furnished a machine for each of the French departments. After satisfactory experiments had been made with the machine on several dead bodies in the hospital of Bicêtre, it was erected on the Place de la Givree for the execution of the highwayman Pallesot on the 25th April 1792. While the experiments regarding the machine were being carried on, it received the name *Louisset* or *La Petite Louisset*, but the mind of the nation seems soon to have reverted to Guillotine, who first suggested its use, and in the *Journal des Révolutions de Paris* for 28th April 1792, it is mentioned as *la guillotine*, a name which it thenceforth bore both popularly and officially. In 1796 the question was much debated as to whether or not death by the guillotine was instantaneous, and in support of the negative side the case of Charlotte Corday was adduced whose countenance, it is said, blushed as it with indignation when the executioner, holding up the head to the public gaze, struck it with his fist. The connexion of the instrument with the horrors of the Revolution has hindered its introduction into other countries, but in 1803 it was adopted under the name of *Falkenhorn* or *Falken* by the kingdom of Saxony, and it has been subsequently introduced into several other German states. It has often been stated that Dr Guillotine perished by the instrument which bears his name, but it is beyond question that he survived the Revolution, and died a natural death in 1814.

See Sedillot, *Recherches historiques et physiologiques sur le supplice de la guillotine*, 1795. See, *Opinion sur le supplice de la guillotine*, 1796. Réville Parre, *Statut physiologique sur la guillotine*, Paris, 1851. *Nouveaux traités et physiologiques sur le supplice de la guillotine*, Paris, 1880. Louis Dubois, *Recherches historiques et physiologiques sur la guillotine et détails sur Sanson*, Paris, 1849, and a paper by A. V. Ocker in the *Quarterly Review* for December 1849, reprinted separately in 1850 under the title *The Guillotine, a Historical Essay*.

GUIMARÃES, a fortified city of Portugal, province of Minho, government district of Braga, is beautifully situated on the Ave, 12 miles south east of Braga. It stands on an acclivity, and with its *Escorial* towers has a very picturesque appearance. An old castle which was the birthplace of Alphonso, the first king of Portugal, is still in a state of good preservation. Among the four churches may be mentioned the *Catedral*, founded in 1385, and although modernized still retaining intact its beautiful choir. The principal manufactures are knives and other steel wares, leather, paper, and table linen. In the neighbourhood there are sulphurous springs, with a temperature of 164° Fahr., frequented since the origin of the city in the 4th century. Guimarães was made the chief town of the county of Portugal in the 11th century by Henry of Burgundy, and retained that honour till 1511, when it was conferred by King Emanuel on Lisbon. The population is about 10,000.

GUINEA, the general name applied by Europeans to part of the western coast region of intertropical Africa. Like many other geographical designations the use of which is controlled neither by natural nor political boundaries, it has been very differently employed by different writers and at different periods. In the widest acceptation of the term, the Guinea coast may be said to extend from 11° N lat. to 16° S lat., or in other words, from the neighbourhood of Cape Veriga to Cape Negro. Southern or Lower Guinea comprises the coasts of Loango, Congo, Angola, and Benue, and Northern or Upper Guinea comprises parts of Senegambia, the Sierra Leone district, the Grain Coast, the Ivory Coast, the Gold Coast, the Slave Coast, the Niger Delta, and the Calabar district. The Cameroonian mountains may be accepted as the limit of the two divisions, though some writers prefer the river Gambia or the equator. In a narrower and perhaps more common use of the name, Guinea is the coast only from Cape Palmas to the Gaboon. Originally, on the other hand, Guinea was supposed to commence as far north as Cape Nun opposite the Canary Islands, and Anauara is said to be the first authority who brings the boundary south to the Senegal. The name is derived from Guinea, Genua, or Junnar, a town and kingdom in the Niger district, and, though it appears on a map as early as 1351, it did not come into general use till the close of the 15th century. Few questions in historical geography have been more keenly discussed than that of the first discovery of Guinea by the navigators of modern Europe. It appears from the testimony of Jacopo Doria that two Genoese, Ugolino and Guido de Vivaldi, were sailing south along the African coast in 1281, but there is almost no further record of their voyage. The French claim that in the latter part of the 14th century the people of Dieppe sent out several expeditions to Guinea, and Jean de Béthencourt, who settled in the Canaries about 1402, made explorations towards the south. At length, in the latter half of the 15th century, the consecutive efforts of the navigators employed by Prince Henry of Portugal, Cadamosto, Uodimare, and Diogo Gomez, made the whole region familiar to Europeans.

See *Acnary, Chronique de decouvertes et conquêtes de Guinée*, published with an introduction, by Buzos de Santarem, Paris, 1841; Villault de Bellefleur, *Des Côtes d'Afrique appelées Canaries*, Paris, 1869; Duhamel, *Mon chère pour servir à Guinée*, Paris, 1875; M'Joy, *Life of Prince Henry the Navigator*, London, 1868, and the elaborate review of M'Joy's work by M. Colman in the *Bulletin de la Société de Géog.*, 1878.

GUINEA FOWL, a well-known domestic gallinaceous bird, so called from the country whence in ancient times it was brought to Europe, the *Meleagris* and *Anas* of *Alina Nardiana* of ancient authors.<sup>1</sup> Little is positively known of the wild stock to which we owe our tame birds, nor can

the period of its reintroduction (for there is apparently no evidence of its domestication being continuous from the time of the Romans) be assigned more roughly to that of the African discoveries of the Portuguese. It does not seem to have been commonly known till the middle of the 16th century, when Caius sent a description and figure, with the name of *Colinus Mauritanicus*, to Gesner, who published both in his *Pinaxipomena* in 1558, and in the same year Balon also gave a notice and woodcut under the name of *Poulet de la Guinée*, but while the former authors properly referred them to the ancient *Meleagris*, the latter confounded the *Meleagris* and the Turkey.

The ordinary Guinea Fowl of our poultry-yards is the *Nasua nasua* of ornithologists, and is too common a bird to need description. The chief or only changes which domestication seems to have induced in its appearance are a tendency to albinism generally shown in the plumage of its lower parts, and frequently, though not always, the conversion of the colour of its legs and feet from dark greyish-brown to bright orange. That the home of this species is West Africa from the Gambia<sup>2</sup> to the Gaboon is certain, but its range in the interior is quite unknown. It appears to have been imported early into the Cape Verd Islands, where, as also in some of the Greater Antilles and in Assension, it has run wild. Representative of the species in South Africa we have the *N. coronata*, which is very numerous in the Cape Colony to Oryampoland, and the *N. coronata* of Drs Fusch and Huetlob, which replaces it in the west as far as the Zambesi. Madagascar also has its peculiar species, distinguishable by its red crown, the *N. mitchellii* of Pallas, a name which has often been misapplied to the last. This bird has been introduced to Rodriguez, where it is now found wild. Abyssinia is inhabited by another species, the *N. psittacina*,<sup>3</sup> which differs from all the foregoing by the absence of any red colouring about the head. Very different from all of them, and the finest species known, is the *N. melanura* of Zanzibar, conspicuous by the bright blue in its plumage, the hackles that adorn the lower part of its neck, and its long tail. By some writers it is thought to form a separate genus, *Acryptus*. All these Guinea Fowls are characterized by having the crown bare of feathers and elevated into a bony "helmet," but there is another group (to which the name *Guttera* has been given) in which a thick tuft of feathers ornaments the top of the head. This contains four or five species, all inhabiting some part or other of Africa, the best known being the *N. cristata* from Sierra Leone and other places on the western coast. This bird, apparently mentioned by Marco Polo more than 200 years ago, but first described by Pallas, is remarkable for the structure—unique, if not possessed by its representative forms—of its *uracula*, where the head, instead of being the thin plate found in all other *Guttera*, as a hollow cup opening upwards, into which the *uracula* dips, and then emerges on its way to the lungs. Allied to the genus *Nasua*, but readily distinguished therefrom among other characters by the possession of spurs, are two very rare forms, *Agelastes* and *Phasianus*, both from Western Africa. Of their habits nothing is known. All these birds are beautifully figured in Mr Elliot's *Monograph of the Phasianidae*, from drawings by Mr Wolf. (A N)

while it was blue in the former. This would look as if the *Meleagris* had sprung from what is now called *Nasua psittacina*, while the *Guttera africana* originated in the *N. melanura*—species which, as will be seen by the text, have a different range, and if so the fact would point to two distinct introductions—one by Greeks, the other by Latins.

<sup>1</sup> Specimens from the Gambia are said to be smaller, and have been described as distinct under the name of *N. senegalensis*.

<sup>2</sup> Mr Darwin (*Anim. and Pl. under Domestication*, p. 204), gives this as the original stock of our modern domestic birds, but herein the writer ventures to think he has been misled. As before observed, it may possibly have been the true *progenitor* of the Greeks.

<sup>3</sup> Columnelli (*De Re Rustica*, viii., cap. 2) distinguishes the *Meleagris* from the *Guttera africana* or *Nasua*, the latter having, he says, a red wattle (*galus*), a reading obviously preferable to *galio*.

## GUINEA-PIG See CAYV

**GUINGAMP**, a town of France, capital of an arrondissement in the département of Côtes-du-Nord, is situated in a large and rich valley on the right bank of the Trieux, 20 miles W N W of St Brieux. It was formerly surrounded by walls, portions of which still exist. It has a library, a museum, a prison, and a hospital dating from the 17th century, enlarged in 1830, and having within its grounds an old oak of immense size. There are also several old buildings of interest, including the beautiful church of *Nôtre Dame du Bon-Secours*, portions of which date from the 13th, 14th, 15th, and 16th centuries respectively, and which has been lately restored, four pillars of the tower of the chapel of Saint Leonard, dating from the 11th century, and the Visulne convent, dating from the 17th century, now used as a cavalry depot. The beautiful fountain in the Place de Plomb, constructed by Italian artists in the 15th century, was replaced in 1743 by the present structure. The town has manufactures of gingham (to which it gives the name), linen fabrics, thread, leather, and hats, and there is some trade in wine, brandy, cattle, and agricultural produce. Guingamp originally belonged to the dukes of Penthièvre, and was inherited from them by King Louis Philippe. The population in 1876 was 7895.

**GUIPUZCOA**, the smallest and most densely peopled of the three Basque provinces of Spain, is bounded on the N by the Bay of Biscay, on the W by the province of Biscay, on the S and S E by Alava and Navarre, and on the N E by the Bidasoa, which separates it from France. Its area is nearly 728 square miles, and in 1870 its estimated population was 180,743. Situated on the northern slope of the great Cantabrian chain, the province has a great variety of surfaces in mountain, hill, and valley, and the scenery accordingly is highly picturesque and romantic. The coast is much indented, and has numerous harbours, but none of very great importance, the chief are those of San Sebastian, Leizor, Guetaria, Deva, and Fontaiebila. The rivers (Deva, Urola, Oria, Urumea, Bidasoa) are all short, rapid, and unnavigable. The mountains are for the most part covered with forests of oak, chestnut, or pine, holly and arbutus are also common, with furze and heath in the poorer parts. The soil in the lower valleys is generally of hard clay and unfertile, it is cultivated with great care, but the grain raised falls considerably short of what is required for home consumption. The climate though moist, is mild, pleasant, and healthy, fruit is produced in considerable quantities, especially apples for manufacture into "saragosa" or cider. The chief wealth of the province arises from its mineral stores (iron, argentiferous lead, copper) and from its excellent fisheries, which supply the neighbouring provinces (cod, tuncy, snappers, oysters). The iron, which is of excellent quality, is smelted with wood. There are also considerable manufactures of woollen and cotton fabrics, paper, and lucifer matches. The people are remarkable for their fine physique, and bold manly spirit, united with honesty, industry, energy, and enterprise. The capital of the province is San Sebastian, with a population of 17,902 in 1873. All the other towns are small, Tolosa alone having a population at all exceeding 5000. Fontaiebila no longer retains its former importance, Mondragon is entirely dependent on the rich iron mines in its vicinity, and Salinas, on the Deva, on its salt works. A small island in the Bidasoa, called La Isla de los Fuamenes, or l'Isle de la Conference, is celebrated as the place where the marriage of the duke of Guenne was arranged between Louis XI and Henry IV in 1463, where Francis I the prisoner of Charles V was exchanged for his two sons in 1526, and where in 1659 "the peace of the Pyrenees" was concluded between D. Luis de Haro and Cardinal Mazarin.

The early history of Guipuzcoa, as of the other Biscayan provinces, is still the subject of much learned research. Never wholly subdued by the Romans, the Celtiberi in their mountain fastnesses continued to preserve their independence, after the fall of the Western Empire, until the times of the West Gothic kings, Leovigild (580) and Wamba (672-681). Nominally subject to Chlovis II. at a later period, they were prompt to assert themselves of the first opportunity to recover their full independence, than alliance with the Moors, and its results at Roncesvalles are prominent facts in medieval history. About the 11th century the inhabitants of the Basque districts emerge as organized into a somewhat definite federation of detached republics, owing allegiance to a senior or lord, but without definite constitutional government (fueros). In 1202 Guipuzcoa accepted as its lord Alfonso VIII of Castile, and for many centuries it ranked as a distinct "señorio" attached to the Spanish crown. The last of its distinctive fueros was abolished in July 1876.

**GUISBOROUGH**, or **GISBOROUGH**, a market-town of England, North Riding of Yorkshire, is situated in a narrow but fertile valley at the foot of the Cleveland Hills, 4 miles from the mouth of the Tees and 10 miles E S E of Middlesbrough. It consists chiefly of one wide and handsome street, having many good houses. The principal buildings are the parish church, which though partly rebuilt in 1791 and thoroughly renovated in 1875, has some remains of an ancient structure, the free grammar school, founded in 1561, the town-hall, recently much improved and enlarged, the mechanics' institute, the hospital for old men and women, and the hospital for accidents erected lately by Admiral Chaloner. The ruins of the Austin priory, founded in 1129, are beautifully situated near the eastern extremity of the town. The accumulation of rubbish has been recently removed from its foundations and floors, and a large number of interesting relics discovered. Among the historic personages who were buried within its walls was Robert the Bruce, lord of Annandale, the competitor for the throne of Scotland with John Balliol, and the grandfather of King Robert Bruce. The town within late years has been rapidly increasing, on account of the iron mines in its neighbourhood, and it has also tanneries and breweries. Alum works were established in the reign of Queen Elizabeth by Sir Thomas Chaloner, who introduced the manufacture of alum into England from Italy, but they have been long discontinued. About a mile south-east of the town there is a sulphurous spring discovered in 1822, efficacious in cutaneous, rheumatic, and bilious complaints. The population of the town in 1871 was 5202, and in 1879 about 6500.

**GUISE** See ROUEN.

**GUISE**, a fortified town of France, département of the Aisne, arrondissement of Vervins, is situated on the left bank of the Ouse, 13 miles N W of Vervins. It was formerly the chief town of the Thiérache, a district in the extreme north of France, bordering on Hamalt. It has an old castle dating from the 16th century, and a palatial *familistère* with accommodation for 400 families. The principal industries are woollen and cotton weaving, iron and copper founding, tanning, and the manufacture of chicory and sugar. The population in 1876 was 6242.

**GUISE**, **HOUER** or **The House of Guise**, which in the 16th century suddenly rose to the eminence unrivalled in Europe, takes title from the place noticed above. The countess of Guise, a fief under the French crown, was carried in 1333 by its holder, Marie de Blois, as her dowry to Rodolf, duke of Lorraine. In 1508 René II, the conqueror of Charles the Bold, divided his territories between his sons Antony, who became duke of Lorraine, and received the Germanic part, and Claude, who had the French fief, including Guise.

Claude of Lorraine thus became founder of a great and well-marked family, which occupied the place that had in the fifteenth century been held by the princes of the Lilies. Generation after generation we have a duke and a cardinal side by side, they illustrate with singular



fiducy the movements of the period from its Catholic side. The first duke and cardinal belonged to the Renaissance, the second put himself into the Catholic reaction, and led the resistance to the Reformation in France, the third put showed the decay of the religious movement, and its transit into political activities, being among the most ambitious statesmen of the later years of the century, while the fourth and last put full the breadth of its helio's absolutism. The family has throughout characteristic qualities,—bravery, ambition, a certain nobleness of sentiment, in imposing presence, and winning manners, they stand between nobility and royalty,—bravery greater than the one, sometimes even overtopping the other. They seem never to forget that in their veins runs the blood of those who were or claimed the crowns of Jerusalem and Naples, of Sicily and Hungary. Claude of Lorraine, born in 1496, succeeded in 1508 to a group of lordships, which by their names testify to the high fortunes of the house. Besides Guise itself, he had Ellouf, Amnle, Mayenne, Jouvence, Harcourt, Longueville, Boves, Hailé, Lambese, and others. In addition to these, the family gathered to itself relations with Bu, Bally, Ventadour, Aguilon, Mercœur, Joyeuse, and Nevers, a cardinal's hat, together with a group of splendid church dignities, also went with the house of Guise, the archbishopric of Rheims, the bishopric of Metz, and several other bishoprics were family benefices, which enabled younger members to take an important share in the fortunes of the family. The shield of Claude expresses the pride of the race: we find there not only the Lorraine spread eagle, the German bird, but also the quarterings of eight sovereign houses, those of the kings of Hungary, Naples, Jerusalem, and Aragon, and of the sovereign lords of Anjou, (Guelderland, Flanders, and Bai. This young prince, who claimed so much, and did so much, who both overreached his rights as a foreign prince and took precedence of the proudest in France, attached himself closely to Francis I. He was the most brilliant among the "young men" who displaced the older wisdom of the court of Louis XII. In 1513 he married Antonette of Bourbon, the duke of Vendôme's daughter and great-aunt of Henry IV., in 1515 he accompanied Francis to Italy, and showed the motto of his race at Marignano, where his brother Ferry was killed. From that time he sagaciously avoided the Italian expeditions, and stayed in France, winning popularity as protector of the realm. Thus in 1521 he was on the Spanish frontier, and helped to take Panteorab, in 1522 he opposed the English in the north, covering Paris, now, he defended Champagne from the Germans, clearing that rich district with equal glory and gain. In 1525 he avoided the expedition which ended in the disaster of Pavia, when another of his brothers, Francis, was slain, and during the captivity of Francis I at Madrid, he became virtual head of the regency under the queen, Louise of Savoy. In these dark days he enabled the rising of the peasants of Lorraine and Swabia, which threatened all the east of France. After the king's return, Claude was made (in 1527) duke of Guise, and peer, and governor of Champagne, flesh territory and wealth were added to these honours. He had now reached his highest point, henceforth it is clear that Francis I regarded him with more jealousy than favour. His ambitious views as to the crown of the "good king René," and hopes of a revived Angevin dynasty, offended the French king, though they were only dreams of the past, for the new spirit of monarchy and national life in the 16th century made any creation of lesser kingdoms on the borderlands of France and Germany impossible. Claude was a man of haith and narrow character: cautious and persistent, he saw his way, and walked carefully along it all his days. In an age in

which wealth was becoming the most effective of all means of power, he gathered riches in all ways, fair or foul, and though willing to spend for his own advancement, he won not devoid of the character of a grasping and greedy prince. His brother John, first cardinal of Lorraine, seconded him in every way, he was as greedy as the duke, though much more open-hearted. Accepting the new ideas of the time, he became a splendid Renaissance noble, the friend of Erasmus and Ribolais, and even of Marot, while, at the same time, he so faithfully reflected the worst vices of the movement. His church preferment was enormous, he shamelessly took all he could get. He and his brother have the distinction of giving a bad name to a whole country, for, thanks to their rapacity, the Lorraines got that reputation for avarice and greediness which has unjustly clung to them even to our days. After 1527 the cleverness of the cardinal rather than the pudence of the duke advanced the family. Claude had twelve children, a splendid group of princely youths, who inherited the hand some features and figure of their father, with even greater abilities and a more effective ambition. Francis, the eldest of those who grew up, was born in 1519, and became the second duke, Charles, born in 1524, was the second cardinal of Lorraine, a man as intelligent and depraved as his uncle, and more vigorous and ambitious, Claude's daughter, the countess of Amnle, a Guise, archbishop of Sens and cardinal of Guise, René, marquis of Elbeuf. The daughters made brilliant matches above all, the eldest, Marie, widow of the duke of Longueville, was married in 1538 to James V of Scotland, and had a stormy career as regent to her daughter, Mary Stuart, queen of Scots.

In his later days Claude of Guise withdrew somewhat from public life, he stood aloof from the intrigues of the reign, while the cardinal attached himself to the "black court," the court of Diana of Poitiers, and promoted the interests of his nephews without stint. From this time all leanings towards either Renaissance or reform were at an end. Henceforth the Guises became the heads of the opposition to the Huguenots, the strength and support of the new Jesuit movement, and, later, the leaders of the League. Claude of Guise died in 1550, leaving his dignities to his son Francis, "le grand Guise," who had already won great credit for bravery, and had shown that dashing contempt for all rules of military pudence which gives a captain undying popularity. The ghostly wound in the face, which his rashness won for him in 1545 at the hands of the English near Doullens, got him the name of the first "Balafre," it was the outward symbol of his devotion to his country, and greatly raised his repute among the people. He had too the essential qualities of popularity, a joyous presence, and friendly manners in camp, he was chivalrous, liberal, humane, discerning. In 1552, as lieutenant-general in the latest bishopric, he withstood at the siege of Metz the last efforts of Charles V., and saved France from a terrible invasion. Thanks to the jealousy of the Montmorencies, he was sent in 1557 to conquer Naples, and would have added another to the long roll of reputations gained by Italy, had he not been suddenly recalled to protect his country after the disaster of St Quentin. With happy boldness, instead of watching the victorious allies, he suddenly attacked and took Calais, ending the English occupation of French soil, and raising his own renown to the highest point. Then, with his brother Charles, second cardinal of Lorraine, he wielded unlimited power throughout the reign of Francis II. Under Charles IX. his influence abated, and he withdrew into Alsace. On his return thence in 1562, he was, however unwillingly, for he was not inhumane, the cause of the massacre of Vassy, which began the civil wars. In the first war he won the battle of Dreux (1562), and thence passing southward besieged

the Huguenots in Orleans. There, early, in 1593, he was arrested. If he was the noblest of the Guises, his brother the cardinal was the ablest. In his earlier days, the cardinal had shown some sympathy with the Reformers, in later life he vigorously repressed them, and took a leading part in the council of Trent, where he is said to have sketched the first lines of the famous League. Like all early friends of the Jesuits, he did his best for education, and a prisoned men of letters, while he coerced independent ease of thought and aimed at introducing the Inquisition. He died in 1574. His younger brother Charles, cardinal of Guise, "le cardinal des bouteilles," was a grand pluralist, an every-gouging personage, whose quiet life was in striking contrast to the feverish energy of his brothers. René, marquis of Elbeuf, another brother, is the stem of the great house of Elbeuf, Harcourt, and Lislebonne.

Henry of Guise, eldest son of Duke Francis, born in 1550, was with his father at Orleans, and saw his death. The boy therefore began his public life with an inexhaustible hatred against Huguenots, eager to distinguish himself in civil war. With his brother Louis, second cardinal of Guise, he entered into all the intrigues of the succession question, and bitterly opposed Henry of Navarre. He was at Jarnac, and in the victory of Dormans (1575) over the German invaders, he too won the title of "Le Balafre." He soon became the idol of Paris, manly, handsome, and decided. He won all hearts, and was at once a popular hero. Fortune too favored him by bringing him into contrast with the wretched Henry III., and with his partly cautious brother the duke of Mayenne. In 1576 he was recognized as head of the League, supported by Philip II and the papacy. Ambitions of the crown of France, he worked subtly for it behind the screen of old Cardinal Dombasle's name. In the war of the three Henries (Henry III., Henry of Navarre, Henry of Guise) he again drove the Germans out of France, and, when invited to the capital by the "Seizure," ruled there unopposed, the "King of Paris." Henry III., whom he had compelled to sign the Edict of Union, found his supremacy intolerable, and just before Christmas (1588), the duke and the cardinal his brother were assassinated by the royal orders.

His eldest son Charles, born in 1571, was arrested at the time of the double murder, but escaped in 1591, and was welcomed with enthusiasm by the Paris mob, which hoped he would lead the infants of Spain, and with the help of Philip II secure for himself the throne of France. But the opposition of his uncle Mayenne proved fatal to the scheme. At the end of the struggle, both he and Mayenne submitted to Henry IV., helped him to reduce the nobles in Lainguedoc, and received the government of Provence. In Richelieu's days he aided with the queen mother, and was compelled to withdraw in 1631 to Italy, where he died in 1640. By his wife also was a cardinal brother, the third of Guise, who ended by abandoning the ecclesiastical state, and marrying one of the mistresses of Henry IV.

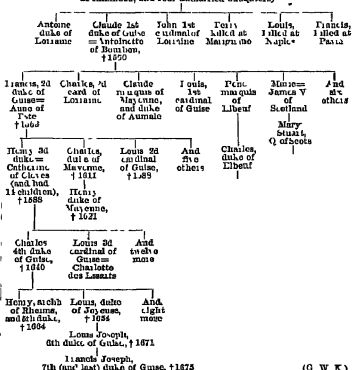
Henry, fourth son of Charles, born in 1614, had already succeeded to that family benefice, the archbishopric of Rheims, when the death of his elder brother made him head of the family, and in 1640 fifth duke. He too went against the absolutism of the age, and joined the count of Soissons. Condemned to lose his head he fled to Brussels, and took command of the Austrian troops against France,— noble traitors to their country being then not uncommon. In 1643, however, after Richelieu's death, he returned to France, but being chosen their chief by the Neapolitans, at the time of Masaniello's revolt, and dazzled by this opening for his ambition, he betook himself to Naples. There his failure was complete, he was defeated and carried prisoner to Madrid. Delivered thence by the intercession of the Great Condé, he again attempted Naples,

and failed again. After this he spent the rest of his romantic, ill-starred life at the French court, and died in 1664 leaving no issue. His sisters never married, and of all his brothers, one only, Louis, duke of Joyeuse, left a son, born in 1650, who became sixth duke of Guise. He died of small pox in 1671, leaving an infant son, Francis Joseph, seventh duke, a sickly babe, with whom, four years later, the direct line of the house of Guise expired. The other branches had early died out, saving the family of the seventh son of Claude fitz duke, René, marquis of Elbeuf, the marquis of Lambese, who died in 1826, was the last descendant of this branch, and with him the family finally became extinct.

The authorities for the house of Guise are Ruc de Douilly, *Les tours des Ducs de Guise*, 4 vols. 1864, the most complete account of the family, Vilmoin, *Vie de François de Lorraine, Duc de Guise*, 1904, Guillemin, *Histoire du Cardinal de Lorraine*, the *Biographie Universelle*, art. "Guise," and Faneion's *Ducs de Guise et leurs appogés*, 2 vols.

#### Genealogical Table of the House of Guise

Franc II (who united the two branches of the house of Lorraine) duke of Lorraine and Illulps of Guelders, had six sons two older boys who died in childhood, and four unmarried daughters—



(G W K)  
QUIPAC, a stringed instrument of Eastern origin. The name no doubt is derived from the Greek *κύβητις*, but the instrument itself was owed to the Arabs, who introduced it into Spain. In the 16th century it became known in Italy and France, and about 1790 a German instrument-maker of the name of Cetto greatly increased its power by adding a sixth string to the five formerly in use. The genuine Spanish guitar was introduced into England after the Peninsular War by Ferdinand So, a Spaniard who was both a composer for and a player on the instrument. About the same time the guitar was very much in fashion on the Continent, and even Paganini cultivated it. But this circumstance was due to the romantic associations rather than to the intrinsic merits of the instrument, and accordingly it soon relapsed into comparative oblivion. It is, however, occasionally employed in the orchestra and for the accompaniment of simple vocal pieces, and for times purposes it has no doubt its merits. The guitar is a flat-backed instrument, the sides of which turn inwards. The sound-board, pierced by a round sound-hole, is generally made of

pine, maple or cherry-wood being used for the sides and the back. The modern guitar, as already stated, has six strings, while the original *El And* of the Arabs had only four, subsequently increased to five. They are tuned to the notes, E, A, D, G, B natural, and E. In the more remote keys transposition by means of a *capo tasto*, or *nut*, is effected. In this manner a basis of flat instead of natural keys may be substituted without any change of fingering. In the East, especially in Arabia, India, China, and Japan, many varieties of the guitar and its congeners are in use, the number of strings varying from two to five. For the technique of the guitar Madame Sidney Piaton's treatise, *Learning the Guitar simplified*, may be consulted.

GUIZOT, FRANÇOIS PIERRE GUILLAUME (1787-1874), historian, orator, and statesman, was born at Nîmes on the 4th October 1787, of an honourable Protestant family belonging to the *bourgeoisie* of that city. It is characteristic of the civil disabilities which still weighed upon the Protestants of France before the Revolution, that his parents, at the time of their union, could not be publicly or legally married by their own priests, and that the ceremony was clandestine. The liberal opinions of his family did not, however, save it from the sanguinary intolerance of the Reign of Terror, and on the 8th April 1794 his father perished at Nîmes upon the scaffold. Thenceforth the education of the future minister devolved entirely upon his mother, a woman of slight appearance and of homely manners, but endowed with great strength of character and clearness of judgment. Madame Guizot was a living type of the French Huguenots of the 16th century, stern in her principles and her faith, immovable in her convictions and her sense of duty. She formed the character of her illustrious son and shaped every vicissitude of his life. In the days of his power her simple figure, always clad in deep mourning for her martyred husband, was not absent from the splendid circle of his political friends. In the days of his exile in 1848 she followed him to London, and there at a very advanced age closed her life and was buried at Kensal Green. Driven from Nîmes by the Revolution, Madame Guizot and her son repaired to Geneva, where he received his education. In spite of her decided Calvinistic opinions, the theories of Rousseau, then much in fashion, were not without their influence on Madame Guizot. She was a strong liberal, and she even adopted the notion inculcated in the *Emile* that every man ought to learn a manual trade or craft. Young Guizot was taught to be a carpenter, and he so far succeeded in his work that he made a table with his own hands, which is still preserved at Val Ruchy by his children. Of the progress of his grave studies little is known, for in the work which he entitled *Memoirs of my own Times* Guizot omitted all personal details of his earlier life. But his literary attainments must have been precocious and considerable, for when he arrived in Paris in 1806 to pursue his studies in the faculty of laws, he entered at eighteen as tutor into the family of M. Stuppien, formerly Swiss minister in France, and he soon began to write in a journal edited by M. Suard, the *Publishers*. This connexion introduced him to the literary society of Paris. In October 1809, being then twenty-two, he wrote a review of M. de Cintianniand's *Martyrs*, which procured for him the approbation and cordial thanks of that eminent person, and he continued to contribute largely to the periodical press. At Suard's he had made the acquaintance of Mademoiselle de Maulan, an accomplished lady of good family, some fourteen years older than himself, who also was engaged to contribute a series of articles to Suard's journal. These contributions were interrupted by her illness, but immediately resumed and continued by an unknown hand. It was discovered

that François Guizot had quietly supplied the deficiency on her behalf. The acquaintance thus begun ripened into friendship and love, and in 1812 Mademoiselle de Maulan consented to marry her youthful ally. She was the mother of his eldest son, a young man of great promise, who died of consumption in 1837. Madame Guizot, his first wife, died in 1827, she was the authoress of many esteemed works on female education.

During this period of his life Guizot, entirely devoted to literary pursuits, published a collection of French synonyms (1809), an essay on the fine arts (1811), and a translation of Gibbon with additional notes in 1812. These works recommended him to the notice of M. de Fontanes, then grand-master of the university of France, and there was some question of attaching him in a subordinate office to the council of state. But on political subjects a radical antagonism existed between the young constitutional publicist and the spirit of the empire. This did not prevent M. de Fontanes from selecting Guizot for the chair of modern history in Paris in 1812. His first lecture (which is reprinted in his *Memoirs*) was delivered on the 11th December of that year. The customary compliment to the all-powerful emperor he declined to insert in it, in spite of the hints given him by his patron. He had now acquired a considerable position in the society of Paris, and the friends of Royer-Collard and the leading members of the liberal party, including the young Duc de Broglie. Absent from Paris at the moment of the fall of Napoleon in 1814, he was at once selected, on the recommendation of Royer-Collard, to save the Government of Louis XVIII in the capacity of secretary-general of the ministry of the interior, under the Abbé de Montesquieu. Upon the return of Napoleon from Elba he immediately resigned, on the 25th March 1815 (the statement that he retained office under General Carnot is incorrect), and returned to his literary pursuits. The liberal professions of the emperor during the Hundred Days, though backed by Benjamin Constant, did not for a moment impose on Guizot. He was convinced that Napoleon would never govern on liberal principles, and that his power could not last. He was equally convinced that a second restoration of the Bourbons was the only mode by which constitutional monarchy could be established in France. He therefore applied himself to promote that object, and repaired to Ghent, where he saw Louis XVIII, and in the name of the liberal party pointed out to his majesty that a frank adoption of a liberal policy could alone secure the duration of the restored monarchy—advice which was ill-received by M. de Blacas and the king's confidential advisers. This visit to Ghent, at the time when France was a prey to a second invasion, was made a subject of bitter reproach to Guizot in after life by his political opponents as an unpatriotic action. "The Man of Ghent" was one of the terms of insult frequently hurled against him in the days of his power. But the reproach appears to be wholly unfounded. The true interests of France were not in the defence of the falling empire, but in establishing a liberal policy on a monarchical basis and in combating the reactionary tendencies of the ultra-royalists. It is at any rate a remarkable circumstance that a young professor of twenty-seven, with none of the advantages of birth or political experience, should have been selected to convey so important a message to the ears of the king of France, and a proof, if any were wanting, that the Revolution had, as Guizot said, "done its work."

On the second restoration Guizot resumed office as secretary-general of the ministry of justice under M. de Marbois, but this minister resigned in 1816, and the young statesman was promoted to the council of state and to the general directorship of the departmental and communal administration of the kingdom. But the reactionary spirit

of the chamber of deputies, of the royalist party, and of the successive Governments of Louis XVIII, was extremely opposed to the views of Guizot and his friends. Then it was that they endeavoured by their writings and by their speeches to apply broader principles of parliamentary government to France, and to found the party which was known by the title of the "Doctrinaires." The opinions of the doctrinaires had more of the rigour of a sect than the elasticity of a political party. Adhering to the great principles of liberty and toleration, they were sternly opposed to the anarchical traditions of the Revolution. They knew that the elements of anarchy were still fermenting in the country, these they hoped to subdue, not by reactionary measures, but by the firm application of the power of a limited constitution, based on the suffrages of the middle class and defended by the highest literary talent of the times. Their motives were honourable. Their views were philosophical. But they were opposed alike to the democratical spirit of the age, to the military traditions of the empire, and to the bigotry and absolutism of the court. The fate of such a party might be foreseen. They lived by a policy of resistance, they perished by another revolution. They are remembered more for their constant opposition to popular demands than by the services they undoubtedly rendered to the cause of temperate freedom.

In the eyes of this celebrated party, and in the sanguine spirit of the times, the French Revolution had run its course. It had exhausted the popular excesses of the convention and the military despotism of the empire. The victory of the Revolution over the arbitrary powers of the crown and the unjust privileges of the aristocracy was complete. Power was transferred to the middle classes of society, and then leaders hoped to establish on the basis of a limited suffrage all the essential rights and liberties of a free people. They hoped at the same time, by the diffusion of education amongst the people, to qualify them more and more for the exercise of these rights. They combated the reactionary and intolerant influence of the church. They opposed the high prerogative doctrines of the ministers of the crown. Their policy was described by the term "juste milieu"—a *via media* between royal authority and popular government. In those days none foresaw that they were building on the sand, and that before another generation had passed away, their scientific structure of government would crumble into ruin, and France would again traverse the dreary cycle of popular revolutions and imperial despotism. In 1821, when the reaction was at its height after the murder of the Duc de Berri, and the fall of the ministry of Duc Decazes, Guizot's relations to the Government of M. de Villele became dreadfully hostile. He was deprived of all his offices, and in 1825 even his course of lectures was interdicted. During the five succeeding years he played an important part among the leaders of the liberal opposition to the Government of Charles X, although he had not yet entered parliament, and thus was also the time of his greatest literary activity. Within this period he published his lectures on representative government, a work on capital punishment for political offences, a collection of memoirs of the history of England in 26 volumes, and of memoirs of the history of France in 31 volumes, and a revised translation of Shakespeare. The most remarkable work from his own pen was the first part of his *History of the English Revolution from the Accession of Charles I. to that of Charles II.*—a book of great merit and impartiality, which he resumed and completed during his exile in England after 1848. The Martignac administration restored Guizot in 1838 to his professor's chair and to the council of state. Then it was that he delivered the celebrated courses of lectures

which raised his reputation as an historian to the highest point of fame, and placed him amongst the best writers of France and of Europe. These lectures formed the basis of his general *History of Civilization in Europe*, and of his *History of Civilization in France*. Our space does not allow us to offer any remark on these well-known publications. But they must ever be regarded as classics of modern historical research, and precursors of the great advance in the treatment of modern history which has marked the last half century.

Hitherto Guizot's fame rested on his merits as a writer on public affairs and as a lecturer on modern history. He had attained the age of forty three before he entered upon the full display of his oratorical strength. In January 1830 he was elected for the first time by the town of Lorient to the chamber of deputies, and he retained that seat during the whole of his political life, that is, for eighteen years. The moment was critical for a representative of liberal principles and an aspirant for power. The Polignac ministry had engaged in a mortal contest between Charles X and the national legislature, and the election of a popular man of letters by an important constituency was hailed as a triumph of the liberal cause.

Guizot immediately assumed an important position in the representative assembly, and the first speech he delivered was in defence of the celebrated address of the 221, in answer to the memorial presented from the throne, which was followed by the dissolution of the chamber, and was the precursor of another revolution. On his returning to Paris from Nîmes on the 27th July, the fall of Charles X was already imminent. Guizot was called upon by his friends Casimir Périer, Lafitte, Villenave, and Dupin to draw up the protest of the liberal deputies against the royal ordinances of July, whilst he applied himself with them to control the revolutionary character of the late contest. Personally, Guizot was always of opinion that it was a great misfortune for the cause of parliamentary government in France that the infatuation and ineptitude of Charles X and Prince Polignac rendered a change in the hereditary line of succession inevitable. The chamber of deputies assumed the powers of a convention, and placed the duke of Orleans on the throne. A ministry was formed under M. Lafitte, and although it comprised the great names of Count Molé, Marshal Gérard, Casimir Périer, and the Duc de Broglie, the department of the interior, then the most difficult and important in the state, was allotted to Guizot. Nor was his inactive administration. The waves of the great tempest which had just passed over France were to be stilled, the lives of the fallen ministers to be saved, stability to be given to the throne, confidence in the maintenance of peace to Europe, and, although the Lafitte cabinet was of short duration, these objects were attained. In 1831 Casimir Périer formed a more vigorous and compact administration, which was terminated in May 1832 by his death, the summer of that year was marked by a formidable republican rising in Paris, and it was not till the 11th October 1832 that a stable Government was formed, in which Marshal Soult was first minister, the Duc de Broglie took the foreign office, Thiers the home department, and Guizot contented himself with the department of public instruction. This ministry which lasted for nearly four years, was by far the ablest and most comprehensive that ever served Louis Philippe, it combined men of the highest talents and character, and it rendered inestimable services to the nation, and the crown. Guizot, however, was already marked with the stigma of unpopularity by the more advanced liberal party. He remained unpopular all his life, "not," said he, "that I court unpopularity, but that I think nothing about it." Yet never was his great abilities more useful to his

country than whilst he filled the office of secondary rank but of primary importance in the department of public instruction. The duties it imposed on him were entirely congenial to his literary tastes, and he was master of the subjects they concerned. He applied himself in the first instance to carry a large measure for the education of the people, and to a great extent founded the existing educational establishments of the people of France. In fifteen years, under the influence of this law, the number of primary schools rose from ten to twenty-three thousand, normal schools for teachers, and a general system of inspection, were introduced, and boards of education, under mixed lay and clerical authority, were created. The secondary class of schools and the university of France, were equally the subject of his enlightened protection and care, and a prodigious impulse was given to philosophical study and historical research. The branch of the Institute of France known as the "Académie des Sciences Morales et Politiques," which had been suppressed by Napoleon, was revived by Guizot. Some of the old members of this learned body—Talleyrand, Sismondi, Rostk, and Lacanau—again took their seats there, and a host of more recent celebrities were added by election for the free discussion of the great problems of political and social science. The "Société de l'Histoire de France," was founded for the publication of historical works, and a vast publication of medieval chronicles and diplomatic papers was undertaken at the expense of the state.

The object of the cabinet of October 1833 was to organize a conservative party, and to carry on a policy of resistance to the republican fiction which threatened the existence of the monarchy. It was then pride and then boast that their measures never exceeded the limits of the law, and by the exercise of legal power alone they put down an insurrection amounting to civil war in Lyons and a sanguinary revolt in Paris. The real strength of the ministry lay not in its numerical force, but in the fact that in this Government and in this alone Guizot and Thiers acted in cordial co-operation. The two great rivals in French parliamentary eloquence followed in a time the same path, but neither of them could submit to the supremacy of the other, and circumstances threw Thiers almost continuously on a course of opposition, whilst Guizot bore the greater responsibilities of power.

Once again indeed, in 1839, they were united, but it was in opposition to M. Moles, who had formed an intermediate Government, and this coalition between Guizot and the leaders of the left centrie and the left, Thiers and Odilon Barrot, is justly regarded as one of the chief signs of his life. Victory was secured at the expense of principle, but none of the three chiefs of this alliance took ministerial office, and Guizot was not sorry to accept the post of ambassador in London, which withdrew him for a time from parliamentary contests. This was in the spring of 1840, and Thiers succeeded shortly afterwards, to the ministry of foreign affairs.

Guizot was received with marked distinction by the queen and by the society of London. His literary works were highly esteemed, his character was respected, and France was never more worthily represented abroad than by one of her greatest orators. He was known to be well-versed in the history and the literature of England, and sincerely attached to the alliance of the two nations and the cause of peace. But, as he himself remarked, he was a stranger to England and a novice in diplomacy, and unhappily the embroiled state of the Syrian question, on which the French Government had separated itself from the joint policy of Europe, and possibly the absence of entire confidence between the ambassador and the minister of foreign affairs, placed him in an embarrassing and even

false position. The warnings he transmitted to Thiers were not believed. The waltlike policy of Thiers was opposed to his own conviction. The treaty of the 15th July was signed without his knowledge and executed in the teeth of his remonstrance. For some weeks Europe seemed to be on the brink of war, until the king put an end to the crisis by refusing his assent to the military preparations of Thiers, and by summoning Guizot from London to form a ministry and to aid his Majesty in what he termed "ma lutte tenace contre l'anarchie." Thus began, under dark and adverse circumstances, on the 29th October 1840, the important administration in which Guizot resumed the master-spirit for nearly eight years. He himself took the office of minister for foreign affairs, to which he added some years later, on the retirement of Marshal Soult, the ostensible rank of prime minister. His first care was the maintenance of peace and the restoration of amicable relations with the other powers of Europe. If he succeeded, as he did succeed, in calming the troubled elements and healing the wounded pride of France, the result was due mainly to the indomitable courage and splendid eloquence with which he faced a raging opposition, gave unity and strength to the conservative party, who now felt that they had a great leader at their head, and appealed to the thrift and prudence of the nation, rather than to their vanity and their ambition. In his specific task he was fortunately seconded by the formation of Sir Robert Peel's administration in England, in the autumn of 1841. Between Lord Palmerston and Guizot there existed unhappily an incompatibility of character exceedingly dangerous in the foreign ministers of two great and in some respects rival countries. With Lord Palmerston in office, Guizot felt that he had a bitter and active antagonist in every British agent throughout the world, the combative element was strong in his own disposition, and the result was a system of perpetual conflict and counter-attacks. Lord Palmerston held (as it appeared from his own letters) that war between England and France was, sooner or later, inevitable. Guizot held that such a war would be the greatest of all calamities, and certainly never contemplated it. In Lord Aberdeen, the foreign secretary of Sir Robert Peel, Guizot found a friend and an ally perfectly congenial to himself. Their acquaintance in London had been slight, but it soon ripened into mutual regard and confidence. They were both men of high principles and honour, the Scotch Presbyterianism which had moulded the faith of Lord Aberdeen was reflected in the Huguenot simplicity of France, both were men of extreme simplicity of taste, joined to the refinement of scholarship and culture, both had an intense aversion to war and felt themselves ill-qualified to carry on those adventurous operations which inflamed the imagination of their respective opponents. In the eyes of Lord Palmerston and Thiers their policy was mean and pitiful, but it was a policy which secured peace to the world, and united the two great and free nations of the West in what was termed the *entente cordiale*. Neither of them would have stooped to snatch an advantage at the expense of the other, they held the common interest of peace and friendship to be paramount, and when differences arose, as they did arise, in remote parts of the world,—in Tahiti, in Morocco, on the Gold Coast,—they were reduced by this principle to their proper insignificance. The opposition in France denounced Guizot's foreign policy as basely subservient to England. He replied in terms of unmeasured contempt,—"Vous m'avez ravi le pôle de calomnie si haut que vous voulez, vous n'arriverez jamais à le hauteur de mon docteur!" The opposition in England attacked Lord Aberdeen with the same reproaches, but in vain. King Louis Philippe visited Windsor. The queen of England (in 1843) stayed at the

Château d'Eu. In 1845 British and French troops fought side by side for the first time in an expedition to the River Plate.

The fall of Sir Robert Peel's Government in 1846 changed these intimate relations, and the return of Lord Palmerston to the foreign office led Guizot to believe that he was again opposed to the passionate rivalry of the British cabinet. A friendly understanding had been established at Eu between the two courts with reference to the future marriage of the young queen of Spain. The language of Lord Palmerston and the conduct of Sir Henry Bulwer at Madrid led Guizot to believe that this understanding was broken, and that it was intended to place a Coburg on the throne of Spain. Determined to resist any such intrigue, Guizot and the king plunged headlong into a counter-intrigue, wholly inconsistent with their previous engagements to England, and fatal to the happiness of the queen of Spain. By their influence she was urged into a marriage with a despicable officer of the house of Bourbon, and her sister was at the same time married to the youngest son of the French king, in direct violation of Louis Philippe's promises. This transaction, although it was hailed at the time as a triumph of the policy of France, was in truth as fatal to the monarchy as it was disadvantageous to the minister. It was accomplished by a mixture of secrecy and violence. It was defended by assertions. By the dispassionate judgment of history it has been universally condemned. Its immediate effect was to destroy the Anglo-French alliance, and to throw Guizot into closer relations with the reactionary policy of Metternich and the Northern court.

The history of Guizot's administration, the longest and the last which existed under the constitutional monarchy of France, bears the stamp of the great qualities and the great defects of his political character, for he was throughout the master spirit of that Government. His first object was to unite and discipline the conservative party, which had been broken up by previous dissensions and ministerial changes. In this he entirely succeeded by his energy and eloquence as a parliamentary leader, and by the use of all those means of influence which France too liberally supplies to a dominant minister. No one else doubted the purity and disinterestedness of Guizot's own conduct. He despised money, he lived and died poor, and though he encouraged the fever of money-getting in the French nation, his own habits retained their primitive simplicity. But he did not disdain to use in others the basest passions from which he was himself free. Some of his instruments were men, he employed them to deal with weakness after his kind.

Great abuses and breaches of trust came to light even in the ranks of the Government, and under an incorruptible minister the administration was denounced as corrupt. *Luci ut alieno vitio* is a proposition as false in politics as it is in divinity.

Of his parliamentary eloquence it is impossible to speak too highly. It was terse, austere, demonstrative, and commanding,—not persuasive, not humorous, seldom adorned, but condensed with the force of a supreme authority in the fewest words. He has been heard to say that he seldom had occasion to address the chambers for more than twenty minutes at a time, except when despatches were read. The consequence was that the audience hung upon his words with breathless attention. Not a syllable, not an inflexion of the voice was lost,—nothing was repeated, and when he ceased, it seemed as if the waves of an ocean had been spell-bound by his voice. He was essentially a ministerial speaker, far more powerful in defence than in opposition. Like Pitt he was the type of authority and resistance, unmoved by the brilliant charges, the wit, the gaiety, the irony, and the denunciatory power of his great rival. Nor was he less a master of parliamentary tactics,

and of those sudden changes and movements in debate, which, as in a battle, sometimes change the fortune of the day. His confidence in himself, and in the majority of the chamber which he had moulded to his will, was unshaken, and long success and the habit of authority led him to forget that in a country like France there was a people outside the chamber elected by a small constituency, to which the minister and the king himself were held responsible.

A Government based on the principle of resistance and repression and marked by dread and distrust of popular power, a system of diplomacy which sought to revive the traditions of the old French monarchy, a sovereign who largely exceeded the bounds of constitutional power, and whose obstinacy augmented with years, a minister who, though far removed from the savagery of the courtier, was too obsequious to the personal influence of the king, were all singularly at variance with the promises of the Revolution of July, and they narrowed the policy of the administration. Guizot's view of politics was essentially historical and philosophical. His tastes and his arguments gave him little insight into the practical business of administrative government. Of finance he knew nothing, trade and commerce were strange to him, and he has been heard to express astonishment at the paramount importance Sir Robert Peel attached to his commercial policy, military and naval affairs were unknown to him, and all these subjects he dealt with by second hand through his friends Darnley, Dupleix, or Michel Bugeaud. The consequence was that few measures of practical improvement were carried by his administration. Still less did the Government lend an ear to the cry for parliamentary reform. On this subject the king's prejudices were insurmountable, and his ministers had the weakness to give way to them. Being asked after the Revolution of 1848 whether he thought the action and extra-constitutional influence of King Louis Philippe had been beneficial or injurious to the monarchy, Guizot replied that in the early years of the king's reign it had been of great use in strengthening the government and restoring order, but that in the later years it had been injurious to constitutional government and to the monarchy itself. It obviously drew down upon the king that responsibility which should have rested entirely on his ministers, and on the question of reform he was even more to be blamed than they were. It was impossible to defend a system which confined the suffrage to 200,000 citizens, and returned a chamber of whom half were placemen. Nothing would have been easier than to strengthen the conservative party by attaching the suffrage to the possession of land in France, but blank resistance was the sole answer of the Government to the just and moderate demands of the opposition. Warning after warning was addressed to them in vain by friends and by foes alike, and they remained profoundly unconscious of their danger till the moment when it overwhelmed them. It was the old story of a hopeless conflict between a court, obstinately addicted to an ætère theory of government, and the rising will of a nation, when a little timely and honest concession would have averted the catastrophe. Strange to say, Guizot never acknowledged either at the time or to his dying day the nature of this error, and he speaks of himself in his memoirs as the much-enduring champion of liberal government and constitutional law. He utterly fails to perceive that a more enlarged view of the liberal destiny of France and a less intense confidence in his own specific theory might have preserved the constitutional monarchy and averted a vast series of calamities, which were in the end fatal to every principle he most cherished. But with the stubborn conviction of absolute truth he damnablely adhered to his own doctrines to the end. The last scene of his political life was singularly characteristic

of his inflexible adherence to a lost cause. In the afternoon of February 23, 1818, the king summoned his minister from the chamber, which was then sitting, and informed him that the aspect of Paris and the country during the banquet agitation for reform, and the alarm and division of opinion in the royal family, led him to doubt whether he could retain his ministry. That doubt, replied Guizot, is decisive of the question, and instantly resigned, returning to the chamber only to announce that the administration was at an end, and that Mole had been sent for by the king. Mole failed in the attempt to form a Government, and between midnight and one in the morning Guizot, who had according to his custom retired early to rest, was again sent for to the Tuileries. The king asked his advice. "We are no longer the ministers of your Majesty," replied Guizot, "it rests with others to decide on the course to be pursued. But one thing appears to be evident, this must not must be put down, these barricades must be taken, and for this purpose my opinion is that Marshal Bugeaud should be invested with full power, and ordered to take the necessary military measures, and as your Majesty has at this moment no minister, I am ready to draw up and countersign such an order." The monarch, who was present, undertook the task, saying, "I have never been beaten yet, and I shall not begin to-morrow. The barricades shall be entered before dawn." After this display of energy the king hesitated, and soon added "I ought to tell you that M. Thiers and his friends are in the next room forming a Government!" Upon this Guizot rejoined, "Then it rests with them to do what they think fit," and left the palace. Thiers and Barrot decided to withdraw the troops. The king and Guizot next met at Claremont. This was the most perilous conjuncture of Guizot's life, but fortunately he found a safe refuge in Paris for some days in the lodging of a humble miniature painter whom he had befriended, and shortly afterwards effected his escape across the Belgian frontier and thence to London, where he arrived on the 3d March. His mother and daughters had preceded him, and he was speedily installed in a modest habitation in Pelham Crescent, Brompton.

The society of England, though many persons disapproved of much of his recent policy, received the fallen statesman with as much distinction and respect as they had shown eight years before to the king's ambassador. Sums of money were placed at his disposal, which he declined. A professorship at Oxford was spoken of, which he was unable to accept. His old friends resumed their relations with him. For himself, serene and undisturbed by a catastrophe which had shaken Europe, he immediately collected a few books and resumed the narrative of the British common wealth, until he brought it down to Monk and Richard Cromwell.

Guizot survived the fall of the monarchy and the government he had served twenty-six years. He passed abruptly from the condition of one of the most powerful and active statesmen in Europe to the condition of a philosophical and patriotic spectator of human affairs. He was aware that the link between himself and public life was broken for ever, and he never made the slightest attempt to renew it. He was of no party, a member of no political body, no mainstay of disappointed ambition, no language of assent, even passed his life, it seemed as if the fever of oratorical debate and ministerial power had passed from him and left him a greater man than he had been before, in the pursuit of letters, in the conversation of his friends, and as head of the patriarchal circle of those he loved. The greater part of the year he spent at his residence at Val Richer, an Augustinian monastery near Lisieux in Normandy, which had been sold at the time of the first

Revolution. His two daughters, who married two descendants of the illustrious Dutch family of De Witt, so congenial in faith and manners to the Huguenots of France, kept his house. One of his sons-in-law farmed the estate. And here Guizot devoted his later years with undiminished energy to literary labour, which was in fact his chief means of subsistence. Proud, independent, simple, and contented he remained to the last, and these years of retirement were perhaps the happiest and most serene portion of his life.

Two institutions may be said even under the second empire to have retained their freedom—the Institute of France and the Protestant Consistory. In both of these Guizot continued to the last to take an active part. He was a member of three of the five academies into which the Institute of France is divided. The Academy of Moral and Political Science owed its restoration to him, and he became in 1832 one of its first associates. The Academy of Inscriptions and Belles Lettres elected him in 1833 as the successor to M. Dacier, and in 1836 he was chosen a member of the French Academy, the highest literary distinction of the country. In these learned bodies Guizot continued for nearly forty years to take a lively interest and to exercise a powerful influence. He was the jealous champion of literary independence. His voice had the greatest weight in the choice of new candidates, the younger generation of French writers never looked in vain to him for encouragement, and his constant aim was to maintain the dignity and purity of the profession of letters.

In the consistory of the Protestant church in Paris Guizot exercised a similar influence. His early education and his experience of life conspired to strengthen the convictions of a religious temperament. He remained through life a firm believer in the truths of revelation, and a volume of *Meditations on the Christian Religion* was one of his latest works. But though he adhered inflexibly to the church of his fathers and combated the rationalist tendencies of the age, which seemed to threaten it with destruction, he retained not a tinge of the intolerance or asperity of the Calvinistic creed. He respected in the Church of Rome the faith of the majority of his countrymen, and the writings of the great Catholic prelates, Bossuet and Boudaloue, were as familiar and as dear to him as those of his own persuasion, and were commonly used by him in the daily exercises of family worship.

In these literary pursuits and in the retirement of Val Richer years passed smoothly and rapidly away, and as his grandchildren grew up around him, he began to direct their attention to the history of their country. From these lessons sprang his last and not his least work, the *Histoire de France racontée à mes petits enfants*, for although this publication assumed a popular form, it is not less complete and profound than it is simple and attractive. The work extends to five large volumes, and has been brought down to the present time by his accomplished daughter Madame Guizot de Witt, from her father's notes.

Down to the summer of 1874 Guizot's mental vigour and activity were unimpaired. His frame, temperate in all things, was blessed with a singular immunity from infirmity and disease, but in the month of September of that year the vital power ebbed away, and he passed gently, soaring now and then a verse of Corneille or a text of Scripture, into his rest.

Public life, ambition, the love of power, and the triumph of debate no doubt shook and agitated his career, and sometimes misdirected it, but they produced no effect upon the solid structure of his character, which remained throughout perfectly simple, indifferent to wealth, and prouder of its own integrity than of all the honour the world could bestow. M. Guizot will be remembered in history less by

what he did as a politician than by what he wrote as a man of letters, and by what he was as a man, and in these respects he takes rank amongst the most illustrious representatives of his nation and his age. (H R.)

(GUJARAT) See GUZERAH

**GUJRANWALA**, a British district in the Punjab, lying between 31° 32' and 32° 33' N lat., and between 73° 11' 30" and 74° 28' 15" E long., with an area (1877) of 2563 square miles, and population (1868) of 550,676. It is bounded on the N W by the river Chenab, on the S and S E by the districts of Jhang and Lahore, and on the E by the district of Sialkot. This district forms the central portion of the Rechna Doab, intermediate between the little submontane plains of Sialkot and the desert expanses of Jhang. On the northern frontier, a belt of alluvial land, some 2 to 6 miles in breadth, fringes the Chenab through out its course. The southern portion of the plateau has a rich soil, with accessible water, the villages here lie close together, while the people are careful and industrious cultivators. But farther south the ground becomes harder and drier until in the extreme south the *dob*, a flat expanse of barren land, passes slowly into the desert of Jhang. In the south east corner of the district, the little river Degh irrigates and fertilizes a tiny valley of its own. Two or three minor watercourses are used for the purposes of irrigation in the villages through which they pass. The country is very bare of trees, and the scenery throughout is tame and in the central plateau becomes very monotonous.

The district of Gujranwala is essentially a modern one, yet it can claim considerable relics of the past, constructed during an early period of prosperity. It seems likely that the district once contained the capital of the Punjab, at an epoch when Lahore had not begun to exist. We learn from the Chinese Buddhist pilgrim, Hsuen Tsang, that about the year 630 he visited a town known as Tse-ka (or Tika), the metropolis of the whole country of the five rivers. A mound near the modern village of Anamur has been identified as the site of the ancient capital. Until the Mahometan invasions little is known of Gujranwala except that Taki had fallen into oblivion and Lahore had become the chief city. Under Mahometan rule the district flourished for a time, but a mysterious depopulation fell upon the tract, and the whole region seems to have been almost entirely abandoned. At the first beginning of the Sikh war, the waste plains of Gujranwala were seized by various military adventurers. Chant Singh took possession of the village of Gujranwala, and here his grandson the great maharaja Ranjit Singh was born. The Sikh rule, which was otherwise so disastrous, appears to have been an unmitigated benefit to this district. Ranjit Singh settled large colonies in the various villages, and encouraged cultivation throughout the depopulated plain. In 1847 the district came under British influence, in connexion with the regency at Lahore, and in 1849 it was included in the territory annexed after the second Sikh war. Since that time Gujranwala has enjoyed an immunity from the catastrophes of history, with the exception of the events of 1857, which belong to the general annals of India.

The population in 1868 numbered 550,676 persons,—306,296 males and 244,380 females. In religion, the district is mainly Mahometan. There are five towns, namely, Gujranwala, Wazirabad, Ramnagar, Bannu-bad, and Akalgarh, with a population aggregating 54,458 persons. The total cultivated area of the district amounts to 867,849 acres, while the cultivated margin reaches the high figure of 701,761 acres. The staple crop is wheat, which occupies one third of the cultivated area. The other products are,—barley, gram, tobacco, oil seeds, vegetables, rice, Indian corn, pulses, cotton, and sugarcane. Irrigation is very general, 827,882 acres being artificially watered. The trade of the district is unimportant. The chief exports are agricultural produce, horse vessels, leather, hides, and timber. The imports consist of salt, iron, cattle, spices, and English piece-goods. A great religious fair is held at Dhonkal.

The principal channel of communication is the Northern State Railway from Lahore to Peshawar. The Grand Trunk road, connecting the same two places, traverses the district for 12 miles. There are 1059 miles of unmetalled roads in Gujranwala, besides a number of local bye ways. The Chenab is navigable throughout for the boats of the country. The revenue in 1871 was £25,660. In 1872-73 the district contained 12 civil and 19 magisterial courts. The total police force numbered 528 men, supplemented by 1092 village watchmen. Education is still very backward, the pupils in 1873 numbered in all 5818, maintained at a cost of £2169. The mean monthly temperature in 1867 ranged from 53° in January to 82° in June. The average rainfall for the eleven years ending 1867 was 24 inches. The prevalent diseases are intermittent fever and small pox. The death rate in 1872 amounted to 12,692, or 28 per thousand of the population.

**GUJRANWALA**, the chief town and administrative head quarters of the above district, in 32° 9' 30" N lat. and 74° 14' E long., with a population in 1868 of 19,381. The town is situated on the Grand Trunk road and Northern State Railway, 40 miles north of Lahore. It is of modern creation, and owes its importance to the father and grandfather of Maharaja Ranjit Singh, whose capital it formed during the early period of the Sikh power. There is a mausoleum to Mahan Singh, father of Ranjit Singh, and a lofty cupola covers a portion of the ashes of the maharaja himself. The civil station lies a mile south-east of the native town. It contains the court-house, treasury, jail, dispensary, post-office, staging bungalow, and church.

**GUJRAT**, or **GOOJRAH**, a British district in the Punjab, lying between 32° 10' 30" and 33° N lat., and between 73° 20' and 74° 31' E long., area (1877), 2020 square miles, population (1868), 616,347 souls. It is bounded on the N E by the native state of Kashmir, on the N W by the river Jhelam, on the W by Shahpuri district, and on the S E by the rivers Tawi and Chenab. The district of Gujrat comprises a narrow wedge of sub-Himalayan plain country, possessing few natural advantages. From the base of the Chenab on the south, the general level rises rapidly towards the interior, which, owing to the great distance of the water beneath the surface, assumes a dreary and desert aspect. A range of low hills, known as the Pabbi, traverses the northern angle of Gujrat. They are composed of a friable Tertiary sandstone and conglomerate, totally destitute of vegetation, and presenting to the view a mass barren chaos of naked rock, deeply scored with precipitous ravines. Immediately below the Pabbi stretches a high plateau, terminating abruptly in a precipitous bluff some 300 feet in height. At the foot of this plateau is a plain, which forms the actual valley of the Chenab and participates in the irrigation from the river bed. The district as a whole is well wooded, and great attention has been paid to arboriculture.

Numerous relics of antiquity stand the surface of Gujrat district. Mounds of ancient construction yield numbers of early coins, and bricks are found whose use and type prove them to belong to the prehistoric period of Hindu architecture. A mound now occupied by the village of Moga or Mong has been identified as the site of Nices, the city built by Alexander the Great on the field of his victory over Porus. The Delhi empire established its authority in this district under Bahadur Lodi (1460-1488). A century later it was visited by Akbar, who founded Gujrat as the seat of government. During the decay of the Mughal power, the Ghakkars of Rawal Pindi overran this portion of the Punjab and established themselves in Gujrat about 1741. Meanwhile the Sikh power had been asserting itself in the eastern Punjab, and in 1758 the Ghakkhar chief was defeated by Sardar Gajdar Singh, chief of the Bhagat confederacy. On his death, his son succeeded him, but after a few months' warfare, in 1798, he submitted himself as vassal to the maharaja Ranjit Singh. In 1846 Gujrat first came under the supervision of British officials. Two years



later the district became the theatre for the important engagements which decided the event of the second Sikh war. After several bloody battles in which the British were unsuccessful, the fifth treaty was retroactively broken at the engagement which took place at Gujrat on the 23d of February 1849. The Punjab lay at the feet of the conquerors, and passed by annexation under British rule.

The census of 1868 disclosed a population of 616,347 persons, — 371,919 males, and 244,428 females, — of whom 537,696 were Mahomedans, 78,174 Hindus, and 20,659 Sikhs. In 1876-76 the district contained four municipalities with a population exceeding 5000 — Gujrat, 17,361, Jalandhar, 14,023, Kangra, 6361, and Dunga, 6077. Wheat forms the staple product of the district, while barley, gram, rice, pulses, oil seeds, and cotton also are of considerable value. On the Punjab side, water, with its 267,808 acres is provided with artificial irrigation. The chief exports are grain, wool, and other agricultural produce. The imports come chiefly from Feroze, Amritsar, Jammu, and Peshawar. The Northern British Railway passes through the district from south east to north west, and affords a new outlet for trade. Good branch lines of road connect Gujrat with all surrounding centers. The revenue in 1875-76 was £464,425. In the same year there were 11 civil and revenue judges. The police force (1875-76) numbered 514 men, supplemented by a body of 620 village watchmen. The number of dispensaries and schools amounted to 17 in 1875-76, having a joint total of 4000 pupils. The cost of education is returned at £1618. The district school at Gujrat ranks in one of the eight "higher class" schools of the Punjab. Gujrat is the reputation of being a healthy district, and is free from fever, and once occasionally pestilence. The death rate (1875-76) was 1.1 per cent of the population. The district contains 63 native dispensaries, giving relief in 1876 to 31,788 persons. The annual average rainfall during eight years ending 1876-74 was 28.5 inches. The soil is regular, and the district on the whole does not suffer much from drought.

GUJRAT, the chief town and administrative headquarters of the above district, in 32° 34' 30" N lat and 74° 15' E long, with a population of 17,361, stands upon an ancient site, formerly occupied, according to tradition, by two successive cities, the second of which is supposed to have been destroyed in 1303, the year of an early Moghul invasion of Delhi. Nearly 300 years later Sher Shah turned his attention to the surrounding country, and either he or Akbar founded the existing town. Though standing in the midst of a Jit neighbourhood, the fort was first garrisoned by Gurus, and took the name of Gujrat Akbarabad. The town was rendered memorable during the second Sikh war by the battle which takes its name from this site, and which decided the fate of the campaign, bringing the whole Punjab at once under British rule. Akbar's fort, largely improved by Gajai Singh, stands in the centre of the town. The civil station lies to the north of the native city, and contains the court-house, treasury, jail, dispensary, police lines, stabling bungalow, and post-office. The trade of Gujrat is considerable.

#### GULL STREAM. See ATLANTIC

GULL (Wögel, *Gygis*, French, *Golland*), the name commonly adopted, to the almost entire exclusion of the old English *Mew* (Islandic, *Mjafir*, Danish, *Maaga*, Swedish, *Måse*, German, *Mewe*, Dutch, *Meeuw*, French, *Mouette*), for a group of sea-birds widely and commonly known, all belonging to the genus *Larus* of Linnaeus, which subsequent systematists have broken up in a very arbitrary and often absurd fashion. The Family *Laridae* is composed of two chief groups, *Larini* and *Stenurini* — the Gulls and the Terns, though two other Subfamilies are frequently counted, the Skuas (*Stenocorvinæ*), and that formed by the single genus *Icthyophaga*, the Skuas, but these are referred to the *Larini*, and the latter to the *Stenurini*.

Taking the Gulls in their restricted sense, Mr. Howard Saunders, who has lately subjected the group to a rigorous revision (*Proc. Zool. Society*, 1878, pp. 165-211), admits forty-nine species of them, which he places in five genera instead of the many which some prior investigators had sought to establish. Of the genera recognized by him,

*Pagophila* and *Rhodostethia* have but one species each, *Larus* and *Xema* two, while the rest belong to *Larus*. The *Pagophila* is the so called Ivory-Gull, *P. eburnea*, names which hardly do justice to the extreme whiteness of its plumage, to which its jet-black legs offer a strong contrast. The young, however, are spotted with black. An inhabitant of the most northern seas, examples, most commonly young birds of the year, find their way in winter to more temperate shores. Its breeding-place has seldom been discovered, and the first of its eggs ever seen by ornithologists was brought home by Sir L. M'Clintock in 1853 from Cape Klabbe (*Journal of the Dublin Society*, 1, p. 60, pl. 1), others were subsequently obtained by Dr. Malmgren in Spitzbergen. Of the species of *Rissa*, one is the abundant and well-known Kittiwake, *R. tridactyla*, of circumpolar range, breeding, however, also in comparatively low latitudes, as on the coasts of Britain, and in winter frequenting southern waters. The other is *R. brevirostris*, limited to the North Pacific, between Alaska and Kamchatka. The singular fact requires to be noticed that in both these species the hind toe is generally deficient, but that examples of each are occasionally found in which this functionless member has not wholly disappeared. We have then the genus *Larus*, which ornithologists have hitherto attempted most unsuccessfully to subdivide. It contains the largest, as well as the smallest of Gulls. In some species the plumage assumes a dark coloured head, every breeding season, in others any trace of dark colour is the mark of immaturity. The larger species prey chiefly on other kinds of birds, while the smaller content themselves with a diet of insects and worms. But however diverse be the appearance, structure, or habits of the extremities of the series of species, they are so closely connected by intermediate forms that it is hard to find a gap between them that would justify a generic division. Of the forty-three species of this genus recognized by Mr. Saunders it would be impossible within the limits of this article to attempt to point out the peculiarities. About fifteen belong to Europe and fourteen to North America, of which (excluding stragglers) some five only are common to both countries. Our knowledge of the geographical distribution of several of them is still incomplete. Some have a very wide range, others very much the reverse, as witness *L. fuliginosus*, believed to be confined to the Galapagos, and *L. scopulinus* and *L. bulleri* to New Zealand, — the last indeed perhaps only to the South Island. The largest species of the group are the Glaucous and Greater Black-backed Gulls, *L. glaucescens* and *L. marinus*, of which the former is circumpolar, and the latter nearly so, — not being hitherto found between Labrador and Japan. The smallest species is the European *L. minutus*, though the North-American *L. phaeocephalus* does not much exceed it in size. Many of the Gulls congregate in vast numbers to breed, whether on rocky cliffs of the sea-coast or on heathy islands in inland waters. Some of the settlements of the Black-headed or "Pewee" Gull, *L. richardsoni*, are a source of no small profit to their proprietors, — the eggs, which are rightly accounted a great delicacy, being taken on an orderly system up to a certain day, and the birds carefully protected. Ross's or the Roseate Gull, *Rhodostethia rosea*, forms a well-marked genus, distinguished not so much by the pink tint of its plumage (for that is found in other species) but by its small Dove-like bill and wedge-shaped tail. It is an exceedingly scarce bird, little more than a dozen examples being known to exist in collections. Beyond its having an Arctic habitat, little has yet been ascertained about it. More rare still is one of the species of *Xema*, *X. furcata*, of which only two specimens have both been believed to have come from the Galapagos, have been seen. Its smaller congener Sabine's Gull, *X. sabini*, is more common, and has been found breeding both in Arctic America and

in Siberia, and several examples, chiefly immature birds, have been obtained in the British Islands. Both species of *Xema* are readily distinguished from all other Gulls by their forked tails.

(A N)

GUM exists in the juices of almost all plants, but is produced in its purest form by various species of *Acacia*, e. g., *Acacia Vetch* (Guil and Perrotet), *A. korrida*, *A. arabica* (Wildenow), *A. Seyal* (Delile), and *A. senecaripa* (Hochst). The name is applied to those exudations from plants, stems, branches, or fruits which are entirely soluble or soluble in water, and form with it a thick glutinous liquid or mucilage insoluble in alcohol of 60 per cent, and yield murex and oxalic acid when treated with nitric acid. In commerce gum is quite amorphous, being neither granular, staccate nor crystallized like sugar. According to Trece, the *acacias* and the *Rosaceae* yield their gums most abundantly when sickly and in an abnormal state, caused by a fulness of sap in the young tissues, whereby the new cells are softened and finally disorganized, the cavities thus formed fill with liquid, which evades, dries, and constitutes the gum.

The chief varieties have hitherto been divided as follows:—(1) gum arabic, (2) gum tragacanth, (3) cherry tree gum, (4) gum of Bassora, (5) mucilage. The artificial gum dextrin has been already treated of, vol vii p 146.

*Gum Arabic* may be taken as the type of the gums entirely soluble in water. The principal kinds are distinguished as Turkey Picked Gum, Gedda, Amud, Ghazal, Senegal, Talou, Australian, Barbary, Cape, and East India (from Bombay and Aden). Another variety, spoken of as likely, from its abundance, to be seen in the market, is obtained from the *Prosopis dulcis*, a leguminous plant, and is called gum mesquite or mesquite; it comes from Western Texas and Mexico, and is yellowish in colour, very brittle, and quite soluble in water. (*Pharm Journ* (3), vol vi p 342.)

Gum arabic occurs in pieces of varying size, and some kinds are full of minute cracks. The specific gravity of Turkey picked gum (the purest variety) is 1.487, or, when dried at 100° C., 1.295. It is soluble in water to an indefinite extent, boiled with dilute sulphuric acid it is converted first into dextrin, and then into a fermentable variety of sugar. Moderately strong nitric acid changes it into murex, sebacic, butyric, and oxalic acids. Under the influence of yeast it does not enter into the alcoholic fermentation, but, like beetroot, by digesting with chalk and cheese, obtained from 2 to 3 parts of gum to 100 of alcohol, along with lactate of calcium, but no appreciable quantity of sugar. According to Fremy, gum arabic may be regarded as a potassium and calcium salt of gummic or arabic acid, of the formula  $\text{C}_{12}\text{H}_{10}\text{O}_{11}$ , 60,  $\text{H}_2\text{O}$ , 80,  $\text{Ca}$ , 20, and  $\text{K}$ , 20. Graham's *Researches* (*Researches*) gives dialysis as the simplest and best mode of preparing gummic acid, and states that the power of gum to precipitate the colloid septum is 400 times less than that of chloride of sodium, and further that by mixing the gum with substances of the colloidal class the diffusibility is lowered, and may be even reduced to nothing. The mucilage must be acidulated with hydrochloric acid before dialysis, to set free the gummic acid. Gummic acid is a diacidic binary, its reaction being about equal to carbonic acid. When solutions of gum arabic and gelatin are mixed, only drops of a compound of the two are precipitated, which on standing form a nearly colourless jelly, melting at 32° C, or by the heat of the hand. This substance can be washed without decomposition. Gummic acid is soluble in water, when well dried at 100° C, it becomes transformed into metagummic acid, which is insoluble, but swells up in water like gum tragacanth.

Gum arabic, when heated to 150° C with two parts of acetic anhydride, swells up to a mass which, when washed with boiling water, and then with alcohol, gives a white amorphous insoluble powder called casein, when  $\text{C}_{12}\text{H}_{10}\text{O}_{11}$  is replaced by  $\text{C}_{12}\text{H}_{10}\text{O}_{11}$ . It is separated by alkalies, with reproduction of soluble gum. Gum arabic is not precipitated from solution by alum, stannous chloride, sulphate or nitrate of copper, or neutral lead acetate, with basic lead acetate it forms a white jelly, with ferric chloride it yields a stiff clear gelatinous mass, and its solutions are also precipitated by barytes.

The finer varieties are used as an emollient and demulcent in medicine, and in the manufacture of confectionery, the commoner qualities are used as an adhesive paste, for

giving lustre to crêpe, silk, &c., in cloth finishing to stiffen the fibres, and in calico-printing. For labels, &c., it is usual to mix sugar or glycerin with it to prevent it from cracking.

Physiologically nothing is yet definitely known of gum as a food material. Animals fed thence soon die of inanition. Lehmann says it is not absorbed by the system, but according to Paye, it is to a slight extent, as shown by the formation of unylid substance in the liver of subjects fed on gum.

Gum senegal, a variety of gum arabic produced by *A. Vetch*, occurs in pieces generally rounded, of the size of a pigeon's egg, and of a reddish or yellow colour, and specific gravity 1.436. It gives with water a somewhat stronger mucilage than gum arabic, from which it is distinguished by its clear interior, fewer cracks, and greater toughness. It is imported from the river Gambia, and from Senegal and Bahr-el-At, and is collected in December and March yearly.

Chagual gum, a new variety brought from St. Iago de Chilo, resembles gum senegal. About 75 per cent. is soluble in water. Its solution is not thickened by boric acid, and is precipitated by neutral lead acetate, and dilute sulphuric acid converts it into dextro-glucose.

The imports of gum arabic into England during 1878 (including all the varieties) may be estimated as follows:—

Imports to London, about	1864	Value
Latipool, ..	1551	£40,000
	2618	£117,000

Of this about one half is exported. These figures are only approximate, as, since the repeal of the duties in 1854, the returns do not discriminate between the various descriptions which are all classed together under the head of gum.

*Gum Tragacanth*, familiarly called gum dragon, exudes from the stem, the lower part especially, of the various species of *Astragalus*, and is collected in Asia Minor, the chief port of shipment being Smyrna. Formerly only what exuded spontaneously was gathered, this was often of a brownish colour, but now the flow of the gum is aided by incisions cut near the root, and the product is the fine, white, flaky variety so much valued in commerce. The chief flow of gum takes place during the night, and hot and dry weather is the most favourable for its production.

In colour gum tragacanth is of a dull white, it occurs in heavy, flexible, and tough, thin, twisted flakes, translucent, and with peculiar wavy lines on the surface. When dried at temperatures under 100° C it loses about 14 per cent. of water, and is then easily powdered. Its specific gravity is 1.284. With water it is easily absorbed, and with even fifty times its weight of that liquid forms a thick mucilage. Part of it only is soluble in water, and that resembles gummic acid in being precipitated by alcohol and ammonium oxalate, but differs from it in giving a precipitate with neutral lead acetate and none with boric. The insoluble part of the gum is a calcium salt of basomic ( $\text{C}_{12}\text{H}_{10}\text{O}_{11}$ ), which is devoid of taste and smell, forms a gelatinous mass with water, but by continued boiling is rendered soluble, owing, according to M. P. 890, to its being changed into pectin. A small quantity of starch is always naturally present in gum tragacanth. The composition of gum tragacanth is generally given as starch 58 per cent., basomic and starch 38, water 11. But M. Guard considers its composition to be water 90 per cent., mineral matter 8, a pectonous principle (apparently identical with the pectose of Fremy) 60, soluble gum 10, cellulose 3, starch 8, mineral matter 8, with traces of mucous matter. Graham (*Chemical and Physical Researches*, p. 890) speaks of its being likely that native gums insoluble in water are the pectous form of soluble gum, and Ghaud's experiments point to the correctness of this surmise.

1. For varieties of gum arabic, see *Pharmacopœia*, pp. 299, 210, *Catalogue Muséum Pharm. Soc.*, pp. 87, 88, also *Pharm. Act. Med.*, vol. ii, pt. ii, p. 884, for physiological properties, Paye, *Food and Dietetics*, 2d ed., pp. 115, 488, and for chemistry, *Webster's Dictionary*, vol. ii p. 683.

Gum tragacanth is used in calico printing, as a thickener of colours and mordants, in medicine as a demulcent and vehicle for insoluble powders, and as an excipient in pills, and for setting and mending bottles and other insects. The imports during 1878 were—

	Packages.	Value.
To London	2670	£15,200
To Liverpool, about	1800	21,600
	3770	£37,800

Gum kuteera resembles in appearance gum tragacanth, for which the attempt has occasionally been made to substitute it. It is said to be the product of *Stroculia urens*, a plant of the natural order *Stroculiaceae*, and is unknown to British commerce.

*Cherry Tree Gum* is an exudation from trees of the genera *Fyrus* and *Cereus*. It occurs in shiny reddish lumps, resembling the common kinds of gum arabic. With water, in which it is only partially soluble, it forms a thick mucilage. The soluble portion is anabin, the insoluble osanin, which according to Frémy is a calcium salt of metagummic acid ( $C_{12}H_{22}O_{11}$ ). It is not used commercially.

*Gum of Bassora*, from Bassora or Bussorah in Asia, is sometimes imported into the London market under the name of the bog tragacanth. It is insipid, crackles between the teeth, occurs in variable-sized pieces, is tough, of a yellowish-white colour, and opaque, and has properties similar to gum tragacanth. Its specific gravity is 1.3591. It contains only 1 per cent of soluble gum or anabin. Under the name of *Caramania gum* it is mixed with inferior kinds of gum tragacanth before exportation.

*Mucilage*.—Very many seeds, roots, &c., when infused in boiling water, yield mucilages which, for the most part, consist of bassorin. Linsed, quince seed, and marsh-mallow root yield it in large quantity (see also Gumbo). In their reactions the different kinds of mucilage present differences, e.g., quince seed yields only oxalic acid when treated with nitric acid, and with a solution of iodine in zinc iodide it gives, after some time, a beautiful red tint. Linsed does not give the latter reaction, by treatment with boiling nitric acid it yields mucic and oxalic acids.

*Gum Resins*.—This term is applied to the inspissated milky juices of certain plants, which consist of gum soluble in water, resin and essential oil soluble in alcohol, other vegetable matter, and a small amount of mineral matter. They are generally opaque and solid, and often brittle. Their chief uses are in medicine. They include the following—ammoniacum, asafetida, bellinum, euphorbium, frankincense or olibanum, galbanum, gamboge, myrrh, poponax, sagapannum, and scammony. Several of the resins are often improperly called gums, e.g., benzoin or benjamin, copal, dammar, elem or ammi, kavara or cowdrie or Australian copal, mastic, sandrac, and sheller. (5 gr.)

**GUMBINNEN**, the chief town of a government district of the same name in the Prussian province of East Prussia, is situated on the Passa, an affluent of the Pegel, and on the Eastern Railway, 22 miles south-west of Rydkühnen on the Russian boundaries. The surrounding country is pleasant and fruitful, and the town is well built, with spacious and regular streets shaded by linden trees. It has three Evangelical churches, a synagogue, a gymnasium, a higher burger school, a public library, a hospital, and an infirmary. In the market square there is a statue by Beuth of Frederick William I., who in 1734 raised Gumbinnen to the rank of a town, and in 1792 brought to it a number of persons who had been driven from Salzburg by religious persecution. On the bridge over the Passa a monument has been erected to those of the inhabitants who fell in the Franco-German war of 1870-71. Iron founding and the manufacture of machinery, wool, cotton,

and linen weaving, stocking-making, tanning, brewing, and brandy-making are the principal industries. There are horse and cattle markets, and some trade in coin and muscad. The population in 1875 was, including the garrison, 9114.

**GUMBO**, or OARA, termed also *Okro*, *Ochro*, *Ketma*, *Gulbo*, and Syrian Mallow (Sanskrit, *Tandisa*; Bengali, *Dheras*; Persian, *Damayah*—the *Bammia* of Prosper Alpina; French, *Gombaut*, or better *Gombo*, and *Ketmie comestible*), *Hibiscus esculentus*, L. (*II longifolius*, Roxb., *Abrmoschus esculentus*, Gull and Peir), an herbaceous hairy annual plant of the natural order *Malvaceae*, a native of the Old World, and now naturalized or cultivated in all tropical countries. The leaves are cordate, and 3 to 5-lobed, and the flowers yellow, with a crimson centre, the ovary is 5 celled, and the fruit or pod, the *Bendi-Kia* of the Europeans of southern India, is a tapering, 10-angled, locuhedral capsule, 4 to 10 inches in length, except in the dwarf varieties of the plant, and contains numerous oval dark coloured seeds, hairy at the base. Three distinct varieties of the gumbo (*Quabo* and *Quingombo*) in Brazil have been described by Pacheco. The unripe fruit is eaten either pickled, or prepared like asparagus. It is also an ingredient in various dishes, e.g., the *gumbo* of the Southern United States, and the *caladou* of Jamaica, and on account of the large amount of mucilage it contains, it is extensively consumed, both as a fresh and as a decoction of the pressed powder, for the thickening of broths and soups. For winter use it is salted, or sliced and dried. The fruit is grown on a very large scale in the vicinity of Constantinople. It was one of the esculents of Egypt in the time of Abul-Abbas el Nobati, who journeyed to Alexandria in 1216 (Wustefeld, *Gesch d Arab Aerte*, p 118, Gott, 1840), and, according to Popp, is still cultivated by the Egyptians, who called it *Bammé*.

The seeds of the gumbo are used as a substitute for coffee. From their demulcent and emollient properties, the leaves and immature fruit have long been in repute in the East for the preparation of poultices and fomentations. Alpina (1692) mentions the employment of them decocted in Egypt in ophthalmia, and in uterine and other complaints. In the *Pharmacopœia of India* the decoction of the fruit is recommended in catarrh, and in diseases of the genitourinary tract, and its hot vapour in affections of the throat and fauces.

The Musk Okta (Sanskrit *Ladakaustrika*, of the Greek *adropus*, Bengali, *Ladakustika*), German, *Baumkannoreich*, French, *Kol musqué*, *Hibiscus Adonachius*, L. (*Adonachius moschatus*, Koch), indigenous to India, and, it is said, to Persia and Central America, and cultivated in most warm regions of the globe, is a suffrutescent plant, bearing a conical 5 ridged pod about 8 inches in length, within which are numerous brown reniform seeds, smaller than those of *H. esculentus*. The seeds possess a musky odour, due to an oleo resin present in the integument, and are known to perfumers under the name of *ambrette* as a substitute for musk, instead of which drug it has been proposed to employ them medicinally. They are stated to be used by the Arabs for scenting coffee. In India they are employed for perfuming medicinal oils, and being regarded as tonic and carminative form part of sundry phlegmatic preparations. The seeds (in the Panteo language, *Amoma kora*), as we learn from M. de Molle, are used in Africa, as beads, and powdered and steeped in rum they are valued in the West Indies as a remedy for snake bites. The plant yields an excellent fibre, and, being rich in mullage, is employed in Upper India for the clarifying of sugar. The best perfumed seeds are reported to come from Matanique.

See P. Alpina, *De Plantis Aegypti* cap xxvii, p 98, Yon, 1692. Macdani, *Des Fleurs de l'Inde*, p 167. Bonnier, *Les Plantes de l'Inde*, ed. 1, p 114, Paris, 1840-41. P. P. Falclo, *La Florée Potagère* et *la Florée des Dégâts*, p 68, 1843. De la Natta, *De l'Emploi de Constantinople de la plante de l'Inde*, *Revue de l'Inde*, Jan. 1840, p 228. Beaumont and Hooker, *Cas Plant.* i, pp 207, 208, 1863. Griseb., *Flore de l'Arabie*, p 94, 1866. P. J. W. de Molle, *Des Fleurs de l'Inde*, p 167. Popp, *Ueber die Aschenbestandtheile der Baum von Aescia nitida und Hibiscus esculentus*, *Arch der Pharm.*, xxv, p 140, 1871. Hohen, *Flora of Brit India*, i, pp 342, 343, 1872. De la Natta, *De l'Emploi de l'Inde*, p 167, 1874. U. O. Dink, *Die Mat-Mat der Hindus*, pp 128, 321, 1877. and Lammann, *Des Odeurs de l'Inde*, p 181-182, 1878.

**GUMRI**, or as it is now more frequently called **ALVANATOR**, in honour of the empress Alexandra, a town of Russian Armenia in the province of Eivan, on the old frontier of the Turkish territory which was formed by the river Arpaçhu. It is situated at a height of 5268 (according to Abich, 4819) feet above the sea, on an eminence which commands the environs but is somewhat defective in a military point of view because the neighbouring valleys form a kind of screened approaches. The fortifications, erected in 1837 by command of Nicholas I, are the strongest in that part of Asia with the exception of those of Kars, and would be quite impregnable to an Eastern army. Like the ordinary houses of the town, they are built of limestone, and they consist of regular bastions cased and mounted with guns and surrounded with a ditch. There are several handsome Armenian churches in Gumri, one of the finest of which was built in 1873. The town passed to Russia by the peace of Adrianople. In 1840 it was made a district town of the Gruzian Imperial government, and in 1850 it was incorporated with the Eivan government. In 1832 it contained only about 60 houses, but they had increased to 1200 in 1838. At present its population is about 16,000.

**GUM-TREE** See **EUCALYPTUS**.

**GUN-COTTON** (*Pyrocellulose*, *Coton poudre*, *Pulvis cotton*, *Schönbaumwolle*). In 1838 Pérouze observed that when cotton fibres or paper were immersed in cold concentrated nitric acid for a short time the free acid being subsequently removed by washing, these materials became, without important alteration of structure, converted into substances possessed of explosive properties. These were at the time accepted as closely allied to the substance named *xylochin*, described some years previously by Braconnet, which is obtained by adding water to a solution of starch in cold nitric acid. But subsequent observation established the identity of these explosive products with the explosive cotton, or gun cotton, of which in 1845 Schönbein announced the discovery, and which he at once proposed as a substitute for gunpowder. Soon after this announcement Bottger and Otto published the method of producing gun-cotton by immersing carded cotton in cold concentrated nitric acid, and subsequently Knop introduced the more advantageous method of treating the cotton wool with a mixture of nitric and sulphuric acids, the latter being used as a dehydrator of the nitric acid, and as an absorbent of the water eliminated by the nitrification of the cellulose or cotton fibre. The composition of gun cotton was subsequently made the subject of study by Bottger, Pérouze, Pélégot, Von Kirchhoff, Sobiero, Béchamp, Poiret, Cum, Gladstone, Hadow, and others, and various formulae were proposed as representing its composition. The divergence of opinion on this point arose partly from difficulties attending the preparation of uniform products, and the obtaining of trustworthy analytical results with these, and partly from differences of opinion regarding the nature of the chemical reaction, whereby the cellulose becomes converted into an explosive body. The products obtained in the earlier investigations differed very much as regards their solubility in mixtures of alcohol and ether, and also with respect to the proportion which their weight bore to that of the cotton wool employed in the experimental operations. Cum was the first to entertain the view that gun-cotton might be regarded as cellulose, in which the two or three atoms of hydrogen are replaced by their equivalent of nitric peroxide. This view was afterwards also advanced by Gerhardt, and it received strong support from the researches of Hadow, whose results established the fact that several distinct varieties of pyrocellulose could be produced by varying the proportions of nitric and sulphuric acids used, and who definitely established the composition of three of these, the

most explosive of which constituted the chief proportion of the product actually obtained as gun cotton, and had the composition expressed by the name trinitrocellulose. This highest nitro-product in its pure state is insoluble in mixtures of ether and alcohol, whereas the lower products (one of which is the so-called *collodion gun cotton*, used for photographic purposes, see **COLLODION**, vol. i. p. 149) differed in regard to their ready solubility in different mixtures of those solvents. Cum's formula for pyrocellulose, thus confirmed by Hadow, was afterwards strongly supported by Schötte, Redtenbacher, and Schneider, in their joint investigation of gun-cotton manufactured in Austria by the improved process of Von Lenk, and though again disputed by Pérouze and Many, and by Clampon and Pellet, the correctness of the formula  $C_6H_7N_3O_5$  (or  $C_6H_7O_5N_3$ ), originally proposed by Cum, was conclusively established in 1866 by the exhaustive analytical and synthetical experiments of Abel. In the manufacture of gun-cotton, even when most carefully conducted, the most explosive product, trinitrocellulose, is never obtained in a condition even approaching purity, it always contains an admixture (amounting from 4 to 10 per cent in the products of highest quality) of the lower nitrocellulose products, i.e., the soluble varieties of gun cotton. In addition to these impurities it contains, even when the cotton employed has been submitted to purification by treatment with alkali, small proportions of nitrogenous matters, soluble in alcohol, formed from resins or fatty substances obtained within the cotton fibre. These substances are very much more prone to undergo decomposition (with development of nitrogen acids) by exposure to heat or light than the cellulose derivatives themselves, and Abel's experiments demonstrated that the uncertain stability of gun-cotton, which brought this material into bad repute long after its discovery, from the occurrence of disastrous explosions arising apparently from its spontaneous decomposition, was ascribable primarily to the development of free acid in the gun-cotton by the action of comparatively moderate heat or of light upon these impurities.

The occurrence of a violent explosion at the works of Messrs Hall of Faversham, not long after they had commenced the manufacture of Schönbein's gun-cotton wool, followed by a similar casualty in France, led to the abandonment of endeavours to apply this substance, within a brief period of its discovery, except in Austria, where Von Lenk persevered in attempts to devise means for obtaining it in a pure and therefore more stable condition, as well as for bringing its explosive action sufficiently under control to permit of its advantageous employment as a substitute for gunpowder, not only for destructive but also for projectile purposes. The system of manufacture elaborated by Von Lenk consisted in loosely spinning long staple cotton into yarn of various sizes and different compactness, this yarn was converted into gun-cotton by very careful treatment with a large excess of the strongest nitric and sulphuric acids, the product being immersed for many weeks in running water, and then treated with weak alkali, the gun-cotton yarn and thread were either wound more or less compactly on reels or cores, for employment in firearms, or made up into very compact ropes with hollow cores, or into plates, of lamp-work form, for employment in shells or mines. The rapidity of explosion of the gun-cotton, *unopened*, or under slight confinement, was thus brought to a great extent under control, but if the resistance opposed to the expansion of the highly heated gases, upon the first ignition of the confined gun cotton developed sufficient pressure to cause them at once to penetrate the inner structure of gun-cotton fibre which composed a charge, a sudden and violent explosion was thus brought about. Hence no practical advance was made in the reduction of the violence

of action of gun-cotton by Von Lenk's researches. By the system which Abel has more recently elaborated the fibre after its conversion into gun-cotton is reduced to a very fine state of division, when in this condition the explosive substance is readily converted into sheets or granules, or by compaction into homogeneous masses of various degrees of compactness, and of any desired form. In this manner the rapidity of action or explosion of gun-cotton may be reduced to a minimum, though uniformity of action in fire arms is still very difficult to attain with it. As the reduction of the gun cotton fibre to a very fine state of division greatly facilitates the removal by washing, and by alkaline treatment, of the small quantities of unstable impurities already spoken of, the stability of gun cotton as now manufactured is much greater than that of former products. Compressed gun-cotton needs, like the other forms in which this explosive has been used, very strong confinement for the development of violent explosion, but this can be readily accomplished without any confinement of the substance, through the agency of an initiative detonation, the explosion of 2 grains of strongly confined mercuric fulminate *in close contact with the compressed material* suffices to ensure this result (see *Detonation*, article EXPLOSIVES, vol viii p 808). Gun cotton contains in the normal (an dry) condition 2 per cent of water. The compressed material of the ordinary density (= about 1) contains from 25 to 30 per cent of water when saturated, even with 16 per cent it is unflammable, and when containing 17–30 per cent it may be cut and drilled with perfect safety. If gun cotton contains more than the normal 2 per cent of water it can no longer be detonated by the minimum quantity of fulminate, and the strength of the initiative detonation has to be increased in proportion to the amount of water it contains, when it contains 17 per cent of water, its detonation cannot be accomplished with less than 200 grains of confined fulminate. An initiative charge of 1 ounce of an dry gun cotton (detonated by means of an ordinary fulminate fuse) suffices, however, to ensure the detonation of wet gun-cotton (as used in mines, torpedoes, rockets, &c.). This susceptibility of gun-cotton to detonation when wet (and therefore perfectly unflammable) gives this substance a great advantage over other explosive agents, as it may be stored in a perfectly harmless condition (wet gun-cotton being quite unalterable) and at once used in that state as a powerful destructive agent through the agency of a detonating charge. The explosive action of wet gun-cotton is somewhat sharper than that of the dry material, the detonation being transmitted through its mass with greater

rapidity in consequence of the displacement of air in its pores by the incompressible liquid. Gun cotton, if it consists entirely of trimethylcellulose, does not contain sufficient oxygen for the complete oxidation of its carbon, hence more work can be accomplished with a given weight of gun cotton if a solid oxidizing agent (a nitrate, or a chlorate) be incorporated with it in proportion sufficient for complete oxidation. The compressed preparations (chlorated or nitrated gun cotton) are as sensitive to detonation as gun-cotton itself, but are less sudden or sharp in their action. These preparations, first manufactured by Abel, were extensively experimented with some years ago, and one of them, prepared with barium nitrate, is now manufactured under the name of *tonite* for blasting purposes. Preparations allied to gun cotton, in the production of which wood-fibre is used as the starting point, are manufactured for sporting and blasting purposes under the name of Schulze's powder, sawdust powder, and patent gunpowder (b a a).

GUNDULITSCH, IVAN (1588–1638), called GIOVANNI GONDOLA, one of the most celebrated Dalmatian poets, was born August 8, 1588, at Ragusa. His early education was superintended by two Jesuits, S Muzic and Il Riccio; the latter of whom instructed him in philosophy. At the age of twenty Gundulitsch applied himself to the study of jurisprudence, and three years afterwards he was entrusted with a high official post in the Ragusan republic. Further particulars of his life are not known, he died December 8, 1638. Among his numerous poems the greatest is an epic entitled *Osman u dvadeset pobjedjah* (Osman in twenty cantos), printed for the first time at Ragusa in 1826, and republished at Agiam in 1854, with a biographical sketch of the author by A T. It was written to celebrate the victory of the Poles over the Turks and Tartars in the campaign of 1621. Cantos 14 and 15 are lost, having been suppressed by the Government of Ragusa on account of their writer's animosity against the Turks, but in their place others have been added by P Sargo. An Italian version of this poem appeared in 1827. Of Gundulitsch's other poems, the *Hymn on the Greatness of God* and the *Tears of the Afflicted Son*, and his dramas the *Rape of Proserpine* and the *Sacrifice of Love*, deserve notice. He also made several metrical translations from the Italian poets. Gundulitsch's poems, besides their literary value, are especially interesting to a student of history, as they give a faithful picture of the time in which they were composed. A complete edition of his works, edited by V Babulich, was published by the Illyrian university in 2 vols, Agiam, 1847.

GUNDWANA, a form of the name GONDWANA (q v).

## GUN MAKING

UNDER this head falls the manufacture of every description of firearm, from the pistol to the 100-ton gun. The term "small arms" includes sporting and military weapons carried by the shooter, instruments fitted for firing a rapid succession of bullets through one or more barrels from a rest are termed "machine guns," while the heavier pieces, used exclusively in war, are denominated "ordnance."

### SMALL ARMS

The date and circumstances of the introduction of portable firearms are involved in obscurity. No doubt many attempts were made and failed previously, but gunpowder does not appear to have come into practical use as a rival to the crossbow for the propulsion of bolts or bullets till the reign of Edward III., in 1375 mention is made of men armed with "gornes" at an attack made on a Yorkshire manor-house. The *arquebuse à mèche* was employed in Germany in 1378, and it is therefore probable that some

rough weapon was introduced much earlier. The hand-gun (fig. 1) was used by both infantry and cavalry, it consisted of a simple iron or brass tube with touch hole at the top, fired on a straight stock of wood, when used on foot, the soldier held it firmly by passing the stock under the arm, when used on horseback the stock was shortened to butt against the breast, the barrel resting on a fork secured to the saddle bow. About the beginning of the reign of Henry VII. the hand-gun was improved by the addition of a cock, which was brought down by a trigger to a pan at the side of the barrel, this cock held a match which ignited a priming in the pan, the priming communicating with the charge by a small hole. The next alteration consisted in the introduction of the wheel lock, in which a steel wheel rasped at the edge, protruded into the priming pan. Into the cock was fitted a piece of sulphuret of iron (pyrites) instead of a match, this was kept down to the priming pan by a spring, another spring, when wound up, acted on the

wheel, which, when released by the trigger, spun round, rubbing against the pyrites and causing sparks, which set fire to the priming. The wheel lock was, however, found to be complicated, expensive, and uncertain, so that the match-lock remained in use till the middle of the 17th century, when it was displaced by the flint lock, the earliest form of which, the "snaphammer," seems to have been invented about the end of the 16th century in Germany. In this lock the priming pan was provided with a steel cover and the cock held a flint, on pulling the trigger the cock fell, the flint struck the steel cover, forcing it back from the pan, evolving at the same time sparks, which fired the priming. During these developments of the lock the shape of the barrel was gradually changed, in 1621 the length of that of the musket was 4 feet, and the size of the bore such that twelve bullets weighed 1 lb. Soon after this the infantry soldier was supplied with a dagger,



FIG 1.—Hand Gun

which fitted into the muzzle and served as a pike. This was improved at Bayonne into the bayonet, and during the latter part of the 17th century was still further improved by the addition of a socket, so that the musket could be fired while the bayonet was fixed ready for use. Little change in firearms took place in the 18th century, but in 1807 a Scotch clergyman named Forsyth obtained a patent for priming with fulminating powder, an invention which, though it slumbered till 1834, was destined to cause a complete revolution in the mechanism of firearms. Early in the present reign its value was fully recognized, the magazine of detonating composition and the priming pan used by Mr Forsyth were improved into the cap and nipple, and the flint-lock was entirely superseded. At this point, the progress of invention renders it necessary for us to treat separately the two branches of the subject, and to divide shooting from military arms.

For sporting purposes smooth-bored shot-guns and grooved rifles are employed. Both are nearly always double-barrelled, and of late years the old muzzle-loaders have been almost entirely supplanted by the many breech-loading systems recently invented, which enable the sportsman to reload with greatly increased rapidity and uniformity, the latter quality being especially important in rifle shooting.

The chief parts composing the arm are the barrel, the lock, and the stock. Barrels for sporting arms are made of four different kinds of material—Damascus twist, laminated steel, stub iron, and mild cast-steel; besides these, common material is worked up into cheap barrels for exportation. Damascus twist consists of alternate rods of iron and steel placed one upon another, usually six of each kind are thus arranged, they are then forged and thoroughly welded to-

gether into a solid bar, which is afterwards rolled into rods, having a section about  $\frac{1}{2}$  inch square. The rod thus formed is raised to a brightish red heat, and one end of it is placed in a revolving chuck, while the other remains fixed, the turning of the chuck subjects the rod to a severe twisting throughout its whole length, so that at last it acquires the appearance of a screw having a very fine thread. Three of these rods are then placed together, the twist of one being in a contrary direction to that of the other two. They are then welded together into a bar, and rolled into a strip about  $\frac{1}{2}$  inch in width. The thickness of this strip depends on the part of the barrel it is intended to form, if for the breech end it is made  $\frac{1}{2}$  inch thick, it for the centre  $\frac{1}{4}$  inch, and for the muzzle  $\frac{3}{8}$  inch. These strips are now ready for coiling, which is performed by raising the strip to a bright red heat, fixing one end of it to a hook projecting from a taper mandril, which is placed in a machine and provided with a handle. On turning the handle the strip is wound round the mandril into a coil about 10 inches in length. The coil is then welded by about 3 inches at a time till the spirals unite to form a hollow cylinder, it is then hammered on a small mandril till the welding is complete. Three coils welded together end to end form a barrel, to which the three different thicknesses of metal above mentioned give a slightly conical form, approximating to the ultimate shape. About three-fourths of the material is cut away in the making, 16 lb of iron are used in the first instance to make a run of barrels, which weigh only 8 lb when the welding is finished, and only between 3 and 4 lb after boring and grinding. In the manufacture of laminated steel barrels the best quality of steel scrap, after thorough cleaning in a revolving drum, is mixed with a small proportion of charcoal iron. The mixture is heated in a furnace, and puddled into a ball, which is well worked up under a forge hammer. It is then drawn out under a tilt hammer, and rolled into strips of the required length and thickness, after which it is treated as above described. This material is much esteemed for its hardness and closeness of grain, but it does not possess the elegant marking and appearance of the Damascus twist. Stub iron for barrels was formerly made by putting a quantity of old horse-shoes or stubs into an iron ring, welding them into a solid mass, and then rolling them out to strips of the requisite dimensions. Now a mixture of best wrought scrap, and sometimes steel scrap with stubs, is preferred, as giving more hardness and durability to the barrels. A description of the manufacture of cast-steel barrels will be found below, in connexion with military rifles. A sham-twist barrel is apt to impose on the purchaser, plain iron is cheaper than twisted iron, and sometimes a thin coil of twist is rolled round a plain iron tube, the whole is then welded together, and has all the appearance of a genuine twisted barrel. Other cheap barrels are made by rolling up strips of iron plate, and welding them together so that each barrel has a weld running down its whole length. As the breech end is thicker than the muzzle end, these barrels are usually made in two lengths.

In the rough state just described the barrels are sent Boring from the forge to the gunmaker, who bores them carefully and true to nearly the finished size. He then turns them down at intervals, obtaining correct surfaces by means of inside and outside gauges. The barrels are then "stripped"—that is, turned down the whole length to correspond with the bore. For double guns two barrels are now bored together, near the muzzle and near the middle. At the breech the barrels are separated by a "steel lump." The axes of the barrels are not quite parallel to each other, but are usually adjusted to cross at about 40 yards from the gun. When packed together, a rib is soldered on down the entire length, and they are sent to be proved at the proof-

roof. house of the Company of Gunmakers at Whitechapel or Birmingham. The scale of proof is fixed by Act of Parliament, according to the size of the bore; it is considerably more than double the ordinary shooting charge. For the provisional proof, muzzle-loaders have the breech screwed in before firing; breech-loading barrels are pressed against a false breech. The second or definitive proof is less severe, and is carried out at a later stage, when the action of the breech-loader, or the percussion fitting of the muzzle-loader, is completed.

tools. The best stocks are made of English or Italian walnut, pieces of which reach the gunmaker roughly shaped. They are so cut that the grain shall run lengthways down the stock, and the wood is dried and seasoned to prevent warping. For expensive guns, much attention is paid to beauty of mottling and depth of colour. A considerable variety of tools is employed in shaping the stocks and cutting out the beds for locks, processes which, for sporting pieces, are performed by hand. All parts of the lock except the plate are of steel, and reach the gunmaker hammered into shape. The lock-plate is of wrought iron, case-hardened. The parts are worked to fit by hand with a number of special tools. Bar locks are those which have a forward action, arranged so that the main-spring fits under the bar below the breech end of the barrels; back-action locks have the spring reversed, so as to extend down

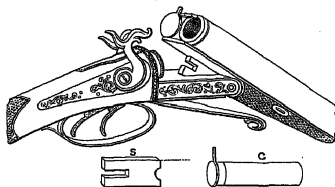


FIG. 2.—Early breech-loader. C, pinfire cartridge; S, single grip.

the hand or grip of the stock. The remaining portions of the gun are termed the furniture. They are the heel-plate which covers the butt, the break-off into which the

breeching hooks for muzzle-loaders, the trigger plate, the trigger guard, the hammers, the escutcheons, and bolt fastening the barrel to the stock, &c. For breech-loaders the action is a most important part of the furniture. The ingenuity of gunmakers has devised an immense variety of actions, and every day sees progress made in strength and simplicity.

M. Lefauchaux is entitled to the credit of inventing the modern sporting breech-loader. He first hit on the combination of a pair of barrels open at the breech, playing on a hinge and abutting against a false breech (Fig. 2), with a strong-based cartridge-case containing powder and shot ready for firing, and supplied with its own means of ignition. His early guns were found weak in the fastening of the barrels to the stock, while the mode of igniting the charge was far from perfect.

If consisted of a pin passing through the upper part of the cartridge case, the point resting just above a percussion cap placed at the centre of the base of the charge; the hammer fell on the head of the pin, driving the point into

the cap, and exploding the detonating composition. The gas was found to escape through the pin hole, the extraction was sometimes difficult, and a fall on hard ground would occasionally explode the cartridge; for these reasons the pin system was superseded by the central-fire method (Fig. 3), in which the base of the cartridge case was made to hold a small anvil, on to which the cap was driven by a needle or striker passing through the false breech, and receiving the blow of the hammer. Fig. 4 shows a central-fire gun, having the action considerably strengthened by the double grip. In this system the extraction is accomplished

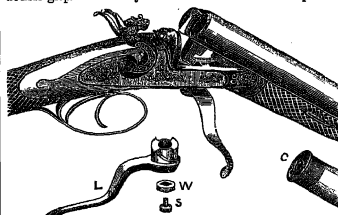


FIG. 4.—Central-fire Gun. C, central-fire cartridge; L, lever; W, washer; S, screw.

automatically, by a piece of steel fitting between the two barrels, and so cut as to clip the rims of both cartridges. To this extractor is attached a rod which runs down between the barrels through a hole in the steel lump as far as the hinge; on opening the joint the rod is driven backward, carrying with it the head and forcing the cartridge cases out of the barrels. Guns on the central-fire system afford no indication of being loaded; extraction and loading are, however, so rapid and easy that every sportsman should invariably withdraw the cartridges on laying down his gun, and reload on again taking the field. Hammers sometimes

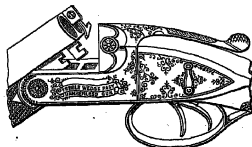


FIG. 5.—Improved breech-loading action.

catch in the brambles, or even in the clothes of the shooter; even the double grip has been known to yield under the effect of the heavy charges now used. The latest guns leave little room for improvement in respect to the action. Fig. 5 shows one of the newest developments. The hammers are abolished altogether, the striker being a needle in the interior, which is driven against the cap of a central-fire cartridge by a spring when the trigger is pressed; a lever on the top is pushed aside by the thumb, liberating the catch which holds the barrels against the false breech; the barrels then drop from the hinge, and are open for loading. On raising the barrels, the action snaps to, and holds them fast; the dropping of the barrels causes an extractor to withdraw the empty cartridge cases. A key at the side regulates the cocking and safety of the lock and striker.



FIG. 3.—Central-fire cartridge.

The sizes of barrels are designated according to the weight of the solid spherical lead ball which will just fit them, and hence their diameters vary inversely as the cube roots of their numbers. In the case of No 12 bore, the ball fitting it weighs 12 to the pound, and measures 720 in. in diameter. Once bullets (No 16) fit a bore of 662 in. in diameter.

Form of barrel bore in shot guns

Barrels were formerly bored cylindrically, but the experiments of gunmakers led them to suppose that better shoot ing could be obtained by boring to shapes departing in various ways from the simple cylinder. The first modification introduced consisted in enlarging the breech end slightly for about 10 inches, subsequently the last few inches at the muzzle were enlarged also, so that the barrel really consisted of two fusils of cones, having the smaller ends together,—the position of the narrowest part, like many other matters, was dependent on the fancy of the gunmaker. Of late an attempt has been made to reduce the interior form of the barrel to something like a system, and several kinds of "choke" boring have been introduced. The object to be attained with a shot-gun is to so arrange the charge that the pellets shall be uniformly and thickly distributed round the mean trajectory, and shall also

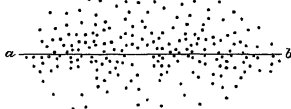


Fig 6

occupy a small space longitudinally. In fig 6 a side view of the charge as it passes through the gun is given, *ab* being the mean trajectory. Exact experiments to determine the proportions of the cloud of shot fired from different guns do not exist, but, judging from observation, they will usually not depart greatly from those of the figure.

In fig 7 is seen the appearance of the target after being struck by the charge. The test of excellence is regularity of pattern, combined with penetration, that is, a circle of 30 inches diameter should be so pitted by the shot at 40 yards range that gaps of the size of a small bird should nowhere exist, while the individual pellets should retain force enough to penetrate a certain number of sheets of brown paper. As the shot pass along a barrel driven violently forward by the powder gas, it is probable that the edges of the charge are retarded by friction against the sides of the bore, so that the centre portion extricates itself rather sooner than the edges, and travels with a slightly higher velocity. Supposing the charge to retain an average velocity, on reaching the object fired at, of 300 feet per second, and the leading pellets to have gained 10 feet on the hindmost ones, so that the charge is distributed over a length of 10 feet, a period of time of  $\frac{1}{30}$  of a second will elapse between the blows of the first and last pellet. If the object be stationary, this interval will be almost imperceptible, and the pattern made on the target by the impact of the shot will exhibit no trace of it. But if the object be a bird flying across at the rate of 60

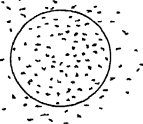


Fig 7

feet per second (about 40 miles an hour), it will traverse a space of 2 feet in the interval, and so will not receive the

charge at all in the manner shown on the target. Figs 8, 9, 10 show some of the choke bores fancied by different makers.

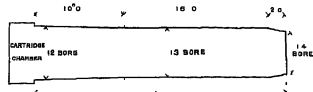


Fig 8—Plain choke

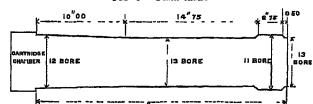


Fig 9—Double choke

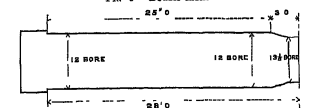


Fig 10—Green's choke

The manufacture of sporting rifles does not greatly differ from that of shot guns. Greater strength and weight of rifle barrel are necessary to resist the pressure of the charge, withstand the wedging action of the bullet, and deaden the recoil. The breech-closing action also demands greater strength, but the general arrangements are not different in principle. Rifles for sporting purposes differ from military pieces in being double-barrelled, and in requiring accuracy and penetration at short ranges, instead of a flat trajectory at very considerable distances. Hence they generally resemble the shot guns in their action, and fit more powder in proportion to the weight of the bullet than military rifles.

In fig 11 the table grip snap action is shown as specially devised for rifles firing heavy charges. In addition to the holding power thus provided, a piece is sometimes made to

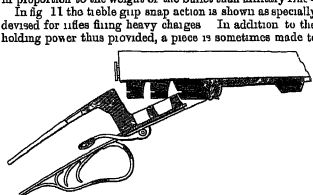


Fig 11—Table grip snap action

extend from the rib between the barrels, terminating in a projection which catches in a recess in the top of the false

<sup>2</sup> No systematic or crucial experiments have as yet been carried out to determine the true action of these forms, but the editor of *The Field* is now preparing instruments and endeavouring to approach the subject in a scientific manner. The general principles, so far as they can be gathered at present, are, that enlarging or relieving the barrel slightly reduces the friction and allows the shot to acquire greater velocity, while choking the barrel at the muzzle has the effect of directing the outer pellets inwards, and so concentrating the charge.



breech, when the barrels are closed; or the catch shown in fig. 5 may be adopted. Some makers, instead of using the hinge principle introduced by Lefaucheur, close the breech in other ways; thus in the Henry action the barrel does not move, but is closed at the breech end by a sliding vertical block, which is depressed for the admission of the cartridge by a lever underneath the trigger guard; the striker passes through the block, which on being lowered extracts the cartridge. The power of a modern rifle is limited only by the power of the shooter to withstand the effect of recoil and to use a heavy piece. The momentum of the bullet forwards up to the time of its leaving the muzzle is equal (neglecting the weight and motion of the gas generated by the powder charge) to that of the gun backwards at any instant. Supposing the gun to weigh 150 times as much as the bullet, it will acquire a velocity against the shoulder equal to the 150th part of that acquired by the bullet. Practically it is this velocity which measures the severity of the recoil, and the heavier the gun and the more powerful the shooter the more momentum can he afford to impart to his bullet. This momentum may be composed of high speed and low weight, or of low speed and high weight. A light bullet starting with a high velocity travels fast at first and drops but little at a short range; it speeds, however, suffers retardation by the resistance of the air, and would soon be beaten by a heavier bullet of the same diameter starting with the same momentum. The Express rifles carry out this principle with great completeness, employing heavy powder charges and imparting very high speed to a light bullet, so that a range of about 130 to 150 yards is traversed with a drop not exceeding 1 foot. Fig. 12 shows the nature of bullet generally used for these pieces; the hollow in the centre permits the lead to expand and flatten out on striking, inflicting a wound of great severity. Explosive bullets are also employed by some sportsmen. In fig. 13 are

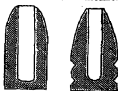


FIG. 12.

shown rifle cartridges loaded ready for use. The solid brass-drawn case is now almost universally adopted, both for sporting and military purposes. The Martini-Henry rifles used by the British army, however, still use the soft brass-crimped case.

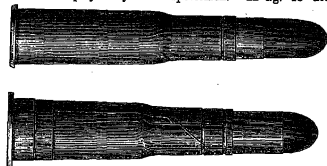


FIG. 13.—Rifle cartridges.

shown rifle cartridges loaded ready for use. The solid brass-drawn case is now almost universally adopted, both for sporting and military purposes. The Martini-Henry rifles used by the British army, however, still use the soft brass-crimped case.

Military rifle.

*Military Rifle.*—The principle of rifling small arms seems to have been discovered about the beginning of the 16th century, but does not appear to have been employed for warlike purposes till the middle of the 17th. In 1680 each troop of life-guards was supplied with eight rifled carbines. In 1800 the 95th regiment, now the rifle brigade, was armed with a 50-bore muzzle-loading rifle. The difficulty of loading a rifle after firing a few rounds was the great obstacle to its use in the field. Several methods were devised of providing anvils at the bottom of the bore on which a loose ball dropped in could be hammered to fit the grooves, but the principle of expansion by the action of the

powder was not brought forward till 1836, when Mr Greener submitted an egg-shaped bullet, having an opening at one end to receive a conical plug, which when driven home by the gas expanded the bullet into the grooves. Shortly after this the French chasseurs were armed with a rifle throwing an elongated bullet with a hollow-coned base. This was improved by Captain Minié, who added an iron cup to fit into the cone and expand it when forced home by the gas. For this cup a wooden plug was substituted in the three-grooved Enfield rifle in 1855. About this time Sir J. Whitworth brought forward his hexagonal rifling, the guiding idea of which was that every part of the hexagon except the actual corner should do its share of the work of giving rotation. He proposed for a barrel 39 inches long a bore of .45 inch, having one turn in 20 inches. This was intended to be suitable either for an expanding bullet, or for one possessing an easy mechanical fit. The length of the bullet was increased, and the form thus modified suffered much less from the resistance of the air than the previous patterns. The question of breech-loading for military weapons now began to assume importance. About 1841 the Prussians had adopted the needle gun, a breech-loader on the bolt principle. It was a rough weapon compared with the pieces lately introduced, but a great advance on any known at the time. A conical bullet rested on a thick wall, behind which was packed the powder, the whole being enclosed in strong lubricated paper. The detonator was in the centre of the hinder surface of the wall, so that to explode it a needle had to be driven forward from the breech through the base of the cartridge and through the powder. This was accomplished by the action of a spiral spring, when set free by the pulling of the trigger. This arrangement possessed many defects: the gas escaped freely at the breech; the long needles rusted and broke; the springs failed; and the weight of the piece was excessive. Such failings caused the sterling merit of the principle to be underrated, and it was not till 1864 that a committee of officers recommended the introduction of breech-loading arms for general adoption in the British army. The triumph of Prussia in the Seven Weeks' War with Austria in 1866 at once drew attention to the urgency of the case, and caused all civilized powers to re-arm their troops. In England the Enfield rifles (three-grooved expanding bullet muzzle-loaders) were converted into breech-loaders by the adoption of the Snider method, which consisted in cutting away 2 inches of the upper part of the breech end of the barrel so as to admit the cartridge, which was pushed forward into a chamber formed by enlarging the end of the bore. A block, opening on a hinge, was then shut down to fill up the space behind, forming a false breech against which the base of the cartridge abutted. The striker consisted of a needle passing through this breech block; when struck from behind by the hammer it was driven against a cap in the base of the cartridge, exploding the charge. By this means the existing rifles were rapidly converted, and the army was provided with a breech-loader of satisfactory efficiency should any emergency arise. Proposals were then invited, and a number of inventions submitted, the result of which was that in 1869 the combination of the Martini breech action with the Henry barrel was decided on for future manufacture, and the whole of the British army is now provided with these weapons (see figs. 14, 15, 16, 17). The general principles of manufacture are the same for all kinds of military breech-loading rifles. It will be sufficient to give the details of one *in extenso*.

The manufacture of the Martini-Henry rifle, as carried out at the Government factory near Enfield, involves 2004 separate operations which have to be performed on each rifle before it is complete for issue. This number is subject to slight variations caused by changes of pattern from time

to time. It will be sufficient if the principle of those operations are described, without entering minutely into details.

The rifle is composed of three parts—the barrel, containing the sights, the stock into which fits the cleaning rod, the body, containing the lock and breech action. The soldier is also provided with a bayonet to fit on the muzzle.

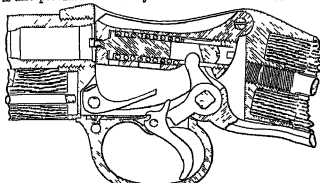


FIG. 14—Maitani breech action (closed)

**BUILD.** The barrel is made of mild steel manufactured on the Siemens principle. Cylinders of this material, 16 inches long and  $1\frac{1}{2}$  in thick, are supplied by contract, and tests are made of a proportion from time to time. These cylinders are first rolled in the factory to a long cone, having slightly greater dimensions than the exterior of the

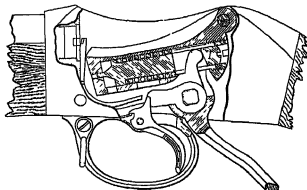


FIG. 15—Maitani breech action (open)

finished barrel. The cylinder is heated in the furnace and passed straight through a series of eight pairs of rolls, each pair is grooved to receive it, the grooves becoming narrower and shallower as each successive pair is reached. The pairs are alternately vertical and horizontal, when they are in full work they can roll about 250 cylinders per hour.

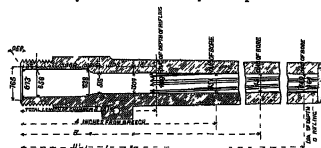
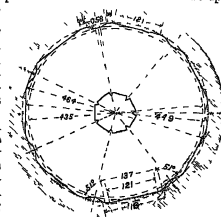


FIG. 16—Heavy barrel

The cone is next placed between friction rollers, these are set at a slight angle, so that in revolving they pass the cone along slowly. It emerges from their clutch polished with the compression, and showing their action by a close spiral traced on the surface. We have now a solid piece of mild steel, slightly thicker than the barrel, fairly straight and thoroughly well-consolidated.

The next step is to obtain true bearings for boring the interior and turning the exterior. The cone is placed in a clamp milling machine, and the ends milled down. This operation requires some judgment, the milling down of the ends must be so performed that the centres shall be approximately true centres, that is, the amount of metal to be subsequently turned down off the exterior of the barrel shall be about equal all round.

The ends, when milled down, serve for bearings by which the cone is next held horizontally, and drilled in a double acting machine for  $1\frac{1}{2}$  in, these act as



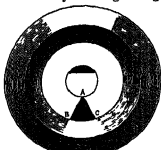
centres when the barrel is placed vertically and drilled through from each end. These tools are used, the last being of slightly greater diameter than the others. A shoulder is left in the centre to avoid the unevenness of the tools from opposite ends not exactly meeting in the middle, as might be the case with the long slender drills necessarily employed. This shoulder is removed by a square tapered tool or "bit." We have now a cone slightly larger than the barrel, with a hole through it .433 in diameter. This hole is then bored out to .444 inch. Having now got a true inside, the next step is to obtain a true outside from it.

The cone is placed vertically in a machine, the lower end fitting accurately on a pin, the upper end passing loosely through a hollow chuck, which revolves round a centre in truth with the centre of the pin and the axis of the bore of the cone, the exterior of the cone, being slightly irregular, will be out of truth, sulphur tinfoil is melted and poured into the hollow chuck, filling up the space between the interior of the chuck and the exterior of the cone, and hardening on cooling. The chuck then holds the cone by the outside in truth, and serves as a bearing. The cone is then placed in a lathe, and two or three short cuts taken off the outside as bearings for the rough turning. This is called "spotting." It is now rough and finish turned, the outside becoming concentric with the inside, and the cone becomes a barrel.

It is next tested for truth of interior. Two tests are employed,—the first being that by *shadowing*. The barrel is placed in a rest, so arranged that the eye looking through

the tube sees the straight line of the top of a window cutting horizontally across the aperture a little above the centre. If the barrel is accurately straight and highly polished, the shadow thrown by the dark window-frame down the tube appears as in fig 18. The interior circle shows the window as seen through the barrel, with the dark frame cutting across.

The next circle shows the shadow extending in a cone from A to B and C. This shadow is quite dark, and AB, AC are quite straight. BC is a portion of the arc cutting off the shadow sharply at a point half way down the barrel.



There are two outer circles extending to the eye, and approximately resembling the sketch in shading. If the barrel is untrue in interior surface, or bent, the cone will at once lose its regularity, and therefore AD, AC will no longer be straight. Should they be irregular, the barrel is "set" by striking with a hammer or chisole mallet across a setting block.

The barrel is next placed in a machine, and a horizontal spindle is run through it, on this spindle are two close-fitting gauges, one in the centre and one at the end, the barrel is then caused to revolve on the spindle, and an indicator with a long arm recording small graduations is inserted at the free end between the spindle and the barrel, any irregularity of turning is multiplied 200 times by the long arm, and becomes at once apparent.

After passing these tests the barrel is finish-turned, the back sight is soldered on and screwed, and the fore sight is brazed on, the size of bore is then gauged, after which the process of polishing is completed and the barrel is ready for rifling.

**Rifling.** The rifling consists of seven grooves of the form shown in fig. 17. The twist is such that the bullet makes one complete revolution while travelling 22 inches, that is, one turn in 40 calibres of 0.45 in., to employ the phraseology generally applied to the rifling of cannon. Each groove is cut separately by a tool which acts when pulled, it forms the groove by five successive cuts, being forced to project a little more at each cut, it thus passes thirty-five times up and down the barrel to complete the rifling, which can be done in half an hour. The size of bore is now finally tested, it must lie between 0.449 and 0.451 inch. The rifling is similarly tested, and the twist gauged.

**Cutting chamber.** The breech end of the barrel is next chambered out to receive the cartridge, which is of the kind known as "bottle-shaped." The exterior of the breech end is of "Nocek's" form, the upper surface being a flat, true to the bore. This flit guides all the fittings, the barrel is placed in a machine true to the flat, and the sights are gauged for line and elevation. No allowance is made for the deflexion due to twist of rifling, it being very slight. The barrel is lastly screwed at the breech end to fit the body.

**Proofing.** Each barrel is twice subjected to proof by powder, once before rifling, once after. Sixteen are placed in a cast-iron frame, a temporary steel screw, furnished with a vent, closes each breech end, which rests against a leaden bar. The barrels are loaded from the muzzle, a train of powder ignited by a cap fires them simultaneously, the bullets are caught in a hollow cast-iron receiving frame, shaped like the shell of a snail. The charge for the first proof is 7½ drs (= 205 grs) of powder and a bullet weighing 715 grs, secured by a half-inch cork was forced down over it. The second proof is the same, except that only 5 drs (= 137 grs) of powder are used. The service charge is 85 grs of powder with a bullet of 180 grs.

The barrel when finished is browned by being coated with browning mixture, and caused to rust in a steam tank, it is then brushed with wire brushes. This process is repeated four times, after which the exterior is oiled over. The browning mixture consists of—

Spirits of wine	5 oz	Concave sublimate	4 oz
Spirits of nitre	8 "	Blue vitriol	4 "
Tincture of steel	8 "	Water	1 gal
Nitre and	4 "		

**Stock.** The stock is in two parts,—the butt and the fore-end. They are of Italian walnut wood, and are supplied roughly shaped. They are tested for straightness of grain, weight, as indicating strength, "shakes" or cracks, "galls," caused by injuries over which the wood has grown, softness (which would cause absorption of moisture and consequent rusting), by putting a shaving into a solution of nitrate of silver,

and also for appearance. Those accepted are thoroughly seasoned by keeping, or dried in a desiccating chamber, warmed by hot air, they then go to the shaping machines, where they are cut to size by revolving cutters, making 4000 revolutions per minute, and are afterwards turned in copying lathes, hollowed out by copying gouges, and bored to take the fittings. They are then tested, machined, hand-finished, and oiled up.

The body is of mild steel, it is stamped out from the Body bar, it is then drifted through by a slightly tapered bar carrying a succession of cutters on it. The front part of the body is then screwed to suit the screw on the barrel, so that when home it shall fit accurately to the breech end. The lever, and indeed all parts, except screws and springs, are stamped out of solid bar. Each part is milled by machinery to a correct fit, every fitting is interchangeable, and nothing is marked for selection to fit anything else. Each part is browned in the same way as the barrels, or blued.

On completion all parts are taken to the assembling room, where they are fitted together, screwed up, and turned out as finished rifles, after which they are taken to the practice ground, and tested for accuracy and extraction of cartridge by being fired from a rest at a target, the range being 500 yards.

The bayonet consists of a steel blade welded to a Dreyse wrought-iron socket. Steel of a superior quality being used, it is supplied in bars, is cut into lengths and is welded by the end of bonax to a short rod of rolled iron. The two are so put together as to form a right angle, the steel bar is put into a "Rydeing" machine, which gives it a great number of rapid blows, and shapes it roughly into a blade. It is then rolled and cooled gradually under charcoal and coal dust for annealing purposes. The socket is then drilled, and the blade ground. They are then bent into position and become a bayonet. Turning and finish-boring complete the sockets, while the blades are fine-ground, hardened, tempered, tested, and polished. The sockets are then browned and adjusted to the rifles.

About 1400 operatives are employed at the Government factory, each Martini-Henry rifle costs about 48s., all expenses reckoned, and to render the establishment thoroughly remunerative, the out-turn should be about a rifle a week per man.

The systems of breech-loading muskets employed by different nations are shown in the following table —

Country	Nature	No. Meters	Action	Variant of muskets
Austria	Wendel	5	Block rotating sideways	
Bavaria	Wendel	4	Falling block	
Denmark	Remington	5	Block hinged to rear, supported by a cam	
England	Martini Henry	4	Falling block	
France	Gra	4	Sliding bolt	
Germany	Manner	4	Do	
Italy	Vetterli	4	Do (magnazine gun)	
Russia	Bedan	5	Block hinged to front (old)	
Spain	Remington	5	Block hinged to rear, supported by a cam	
Sweden	Do	5	Do	
Switzerland	Vetterli	4	Sliding bolt (magnazine gun)	
Turkey	Martini Henry	4	Falling block	
United States	Springfield	5	Block hinged to front	

It will be noticed that the Vetterli gun, used by the Italians and Swiss, is a repeater or magazine gun. It contains a supply of eleven cartridges, arranged in a tube running under the barrel, and forced by a spring into the loading position one by one, as the previously fired empty one is extracted. The arm can thus fire twelve rounds with great rapidity without reloading, it can also be used as an

ordinary breech loader, a fresh cartridge being inserted at every round, and the magazine kept constantly full. This is no doubt a great advantage under certain circumstances, but entails grave inconveniences. Thus the Vetterli gun, with magazine full, weighs just half as much again as the Martini-Henry, and gives less energy to its bullet at the muzzle in the proportion of 5 to 8, a proportion which increases to the disadvantage of the magazine gun as the range increases. Still, for a *mélee*, and at short ranges, the Vetterli is no doubt a very formidable piece.

These considerations have led the Government of the United States to make trials of a number of magazine guns, of which one, the Hotchkiss, has been selected for adoption. The working of it is shown in fig. 19. The magazine is contained in the stock, and holds five cartridges, a sixth being in the chamber ready for loading. These cartridges are the same as those used for Government Springfield rifles, they are pushed successively into the loading position by a spiral spring till the magazine is empty, or a fresh cartridge

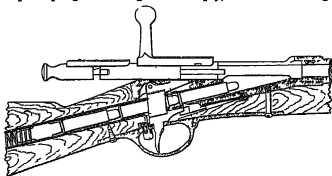


FIG 19—Hotchkiss Magazine Gun

can be inserted after each round as in an ordinary breech-loader. The action of bringing the knob-handle upright and withdrawing the bolt extracts and throws out the emptied cartridge to the side, the next cartridge is then pushed up into the loading position by the spring, and is forced into the barrel when the handle presses the bolt forward, this action also cocks the piece, but the striker cannot reach the cartridge till the knob-handle is turned down, and the bolt thus locked in position. The weight of the piece fully loaded is 94 lb. Trials of this weapon are about to be made by the English Government.

Of all the military rifles adopted by the various Governments, the Martini-Henry is the most powerful, the practical test is underwritten in Turkey, where a cheap gun of this pattern was supplied on contract by an American firm during the war of 1877-78, was most satisfactory.

**Pistols.**—These handy little weapons were formerly made as single or double-barrelled smooth-bored muzzle-loaders, and their system involved no departure in principle from the ordinary firearm of the day. The introduction of the revolver as a practical weapon was a great step in advance, the idea is old, and roughly constructed weapons on the same plan have long existed in museums of old arms, Colonel Colt of the United States revived it, and is the father of the modern revolver. In his pistol a revolving muzzle-loading cylinder contains a number of chambers, usually five or six, boxed from the front parallel to the axis, the back of the cylinder is left solid, and forms the breech, a nipple is screwed into each chamber. As the cylinder revolves each chamber arrives at the top, and is then opposite to a barrel, the pistol is cocked by the thumb, an action which locks the chamber against the barrel, so that the two form a continuous bore, the trigger is pulled in the usual way, and the hammer brought down on the upper nipple, exploding the charge in the top chamber. The action of recocking brings the next chamber into

position. When on half-cock, the cylinder revolves freely. Since Colt's time great improvements have been made in these handy weapons, the trigger was made to cock the hammer, turn the cylinder, and fire the charge by one continuous draw, this arrangement allowed the shooter to fire all the shots very rapidly without lowering his hand, the strength of manning required, however, rendered it very difficult to shoot with any degree of accuracy, especially as the exact moment when the hammer would fall was hard to estimate. A second improvement gave the shooter the choice of cocking the hammer and firing it in the usual way, if he preferred it. The next step was to make the chambers breech-loading, by boring them right through, and packing the powder and bullet in a strong based cartridge, carrying its own ignition. In pistols constructed on this plan the chamber arriving at the top is brought against a false breech through which the striker is driven by the hammer. In the latest pattern of this pistol, the cylinder and barrel open away from the false breech on a hinge underneath, the action of opening throws out the empty cartridge cases. If the user is on horseback, he thrusts the barrel muzzle downwards into his breast, belt, or holster, the hinge remaining open, fresh cartridges are taken out of the pouch and placed in the chambers, the breech is closed sharply on the hinge and is held by a snap-catch, the pistol is then withdrawn ready for use. All this can be very quickly done with one hand at full gallop.

#### MACHINE GUNS

This term comprehends all weapons made to fire a rapid succession of bullets from a stand or carriage, so that, while requiring but two or three men to work them, they may throw in a fire equal to that of a detachment of infantry. In the Franco-German war of 1870 a species of *mitrailleuse* was largely employed, and when used under favourable conditions attained fair success. It consisted of a number of barrels (usually 25 or 37) secured in a frame round an axis, and parallel to it. The barrels were open at the breech, and were loaded by a disc placed to correspond with them containing a cartridge in each chamber. This disc was placed against the breech end of the barrels, the false breech containing the strikers was

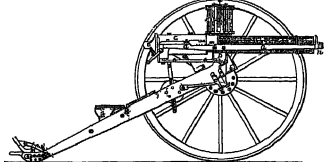


FIG 20—Gatling Gun

held firmly against it, and the whole of the charges were exploded at once. This arrangement had many defects. The recoil of so many charges fired simultaneously required strength and weight, at short ranges the bullets all went to the same spot, the number of rounds could not be regulated at pleasure, and only volleys could be fired. The Gatling machine gun, which first appeared in the United States, was vastly superior to the mitrailleuse, and speedily obtained entrance into the armies of most of the civilized powers. Figs 20 to 26 show the general construction of the weapon. In fig. 20 the Gatling is ready for firing. A block of ten barrels is secured round an axis, which is fixed in a frame *aa*. On turning the handle *b* (fig. 21), the

spindle *gy* causes the worm *f* to act on the pinion *es*, making the axis and barrels revolve. A drum *T* (figs. 20, 24, 25)

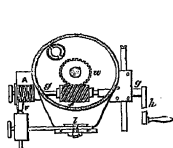


Fig. 21.

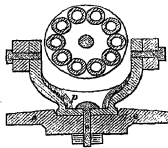


Fig. 22.

is placed on the top at the breech end of the barrels over a hopper, through a slot in which the cartridges drop into

the carrier, which consists of ten grooves or chambers *M* (fig. 23) corresponding to the ten barrels. The construction of the lock is shown in fig. 26. It consists of a bolt, through

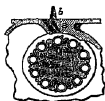


Fig. 23.

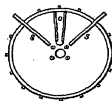


Fig. 24.

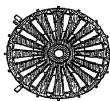


Fig. 25.

which passes a striker driven by a spiral spring. *AAAA* is a cam, sloping as in the drawing, which it must be understood represents the circular construction opened out and laid flat. As the barrels, carrier, and locks revolve, the

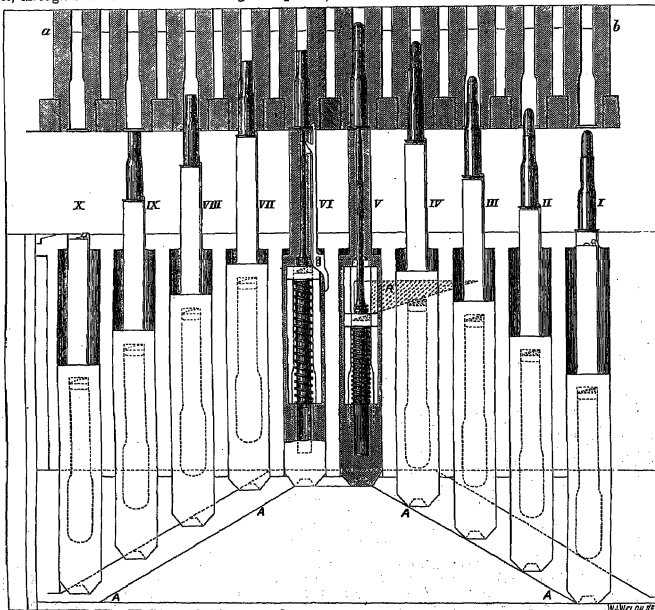


FIG. 26.—Lock of Gatling Gun.

slope of the cam forces the locks forward and backward alternately. At position I the cartridge has just fallen into the carrier, the lock and bolt are completely withdrawn. At positions II, III, IV, the cam is forcing them forward,

so that the bolt pushes the cartridge into the barrel. At IV, the cocking cam *B* begins to compress the spiral spring, releasing it at V. Position VI shows the cartridge just after firing; the extracting hook, omitted in the previous

positions, is here represented in the act of clutching the base of the cartridge case, which is withdrawn as the locks rotate down the slope of the cam, till at X it falls through an aperture to the ground. The line *ab* marks the commencement of the rilling. In fig 20 the drum *T* consists of a number of vertical channels radiating from the centre. The cartridges are arranged horizontally, one above the

other, in these channels, bullet ends inward. The drum revolves on the pivot *b* (fig 23), and the cartridges fall through the aperture *D*. When all the channels are emptied, a full drum is brought from the limber, and substituted for the empty one. Each barrel fires in turn as it comes to a certain position, so that by turning the handle quickly an almost continuous stream of bullets can be

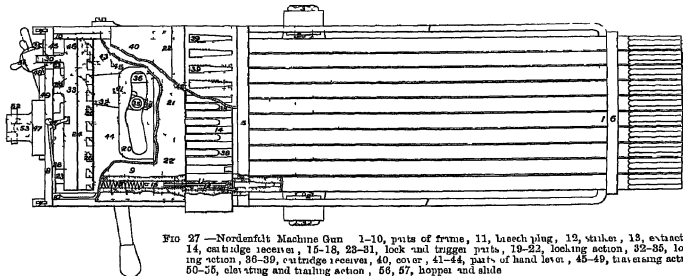


FIG 27—Nordenfält Machine Gun. 1-10, parts of frame, 11, breech plug, 12, striker, 13, extractor, 14, cartridge receiver, 15-18, 23-31, lock and trigger parts, 19-22, locking action, 32-35, loading action, 36-39, cartridge receiver, 40, cover, 41-44, parts of hand lever, 45-49, tramping action, 50-55, clamping and trailing action, 56, 57, hopper and slide.

ejected. An experimental pattern of Gating has been lately tried, fitted with a multiplying arrangement which could be made to fire nearly 1000 shots a minute. In fig 21 an automatic traversing arrangement is shown, which can be put in or out of gear as desired, and by means of which the amount of traverse can be regulated. The spindle *gg* turns the wheel *A*, projections on which act on

the aim *F*, and traverse the breech through a small arc, thus spreading the bullets laterally over the required front.

Effective though this piece is for land service, especially in defending approaches, it is scarcely suitable for the navy, as the mobility of the boats or vessels carrying it causes immense waste of ammunition, it being impossible to hit more than a few rounds at the object before an important

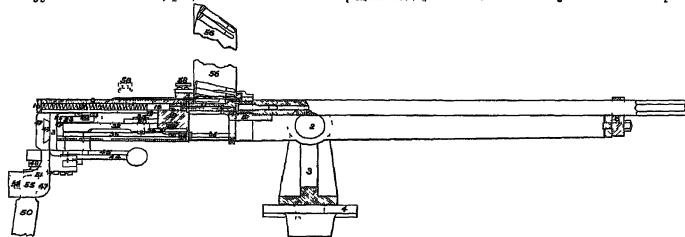


Fig 28

change of direction occurs. The Nordenfält machine gun, shown in figs 27 to 31, is found specially suitable under these circumstances. The barrels are here placed horizontally, and have no movement. A box containing the locks, bolts, strikers, and spiral springs, one of each corresponding to each barrel, moves straight back-



Fig 29

wards and forwards when worked by the handle of the lever on the right. When the box is drawn back the cartridges fall from the holder on the top into the carriers simultaneously. When the box is pushed forward the bolts push the cartridges into the barrel, cocking catches compress the spiral springs, the lever releases the catches one after the

other at very minute intervals of time, and the cartridges are fired in rapid succession. In this piece, careful aim can be taken from a moving platform, and at the right

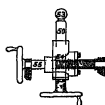


Fig 30

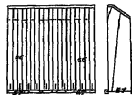


Fig 31

moment the barrels can be fired at the object almost simultaneously, they could be made to fire at the same instant,

but in this case the advantage of being able to fire single shots would be lost, and the recoil would be increased. This gun would probably never be able to fire with such a violent rapidity as the experimental form of Gatling mentioned above, but it could be made to fire six or seven hundred rounds a minute. It is generally considered that a machine gun should be able to fire easily two hundred rounds in half a minute.

#### ORDNANCE

**Ordinance.** The manufacture of ordnance is a much more scientific and complicated study than that of small arms. As the forces increase in magnitude and intensity, while the ultimate strength of material remains constant, the necessity of adaptation of means to ends grows *plus* *press* with the gun. In producing a piece of ordnance, two distinct sets of conditions are involved—those belonging to its actual construction, and those by which its proportions are regulated. In constructing a gun, the material must be so selected and disposed as economically and safely to sustain the effect of the forces developed by the charge, in designing a gun, it is necessary to know the nature and direction of the forces which will combine to produce the desired ballistic results. The two sets of conditions are as distinct as those involved in the separate operations of writing and printing this article.

**Construction.** Nearly all the accurate knowledge system obtained of the true action of gunpowder has been acquired within the last twenty years. The general idea previously held was that the explosion was instantaneous, and that the more violent the powder the greater would be the velocity of the projectile. The mode of proving the quality of the explosive was to place a small quantity in a shot mortar, and to measure the distance to which it projected a light shell—a test altogether wrong in principle, as will be shown later on. No accurate idea had been formed of the true pressure of the powder gas on the bore during discharge, but it was understood that a gun was subjected to two principal strains or stresses—a circumferential tension tending to split the gun open longitudinally, and a longitudinal tension tending to pull the gun apart in the direction of its length.

**Homogeneous guns.** When guns are made of cast metal, and are, in fact, homogeneous hollow cylinders, a limit is soon reached beyond which additional thickness is practically useless in giving strength to resist the circumferential tension. Supposing the metal employed to be incompressible, each concentric layer would take up a strain on discharge inversely proportionate to the square of its distance from the axis of the bore. Every metal, however, is compressible as well as extensible, and hence the exterior always affords more support to the interior than the foregoing rule indicates. The great art then of a gunmaker is so to select and arrange his material that the exterior shall take up as much as possible of the strain thrown upon the interior.

In America, Captain Rodman introduced a method of casting guns hollow and cooling them down from the interior, so that the inner portions being first solidified were compressed and supported by the contraction of the outer parts when they subsequently cooled down. Thus, on discharge, the compressed inner portions expanded under the action of the powder gas to or beyond their natural diameter, throwing at once the strain on the outer portions which were already in a state of tension. But however well cast iron may be disposed, it is naturally too weak and brittle for use with heavy guns, and those nations which employ it thus do so because it is comparatively cheap and easy to manufacture, and not because it is the best material. Austria and Russia have of late years made light guns of

bronze cast in chill, and subjected to the wedging action of steel mandrels driven through the bore. The several layers of the metal are thus placed in a state of tension as regards the exterior, and of compression as regards the interior. At the present day systems of building up guns have been devised so that each portion of the metal is made to bear its fair share of the strain.

The longitudinal tension is usually less important than the circumferential stress. It is considered to be provided against in homogeneous guns if the metal is as thick over the bottom of the bore as round the end. The strain is now measured by calculating the total pressure of the powder gas on the bottom of the bore, and comparing it with the area of the transverse section of the gun at the same place. This is not absolutely correct, but, practically, the chief modes of gun construction now adopted leave a considerable margin of strength in this direction.

Mr William Armstrong first successfully employed the built-up principle of initial tensions for all parts of a gun. In his gun system, wrought-iron coils are shrunk over one another, so that the inner tube is placed in a state of compression and the outer portions in a state of tension, an endeavour being made to so regulate the amount of tension that each coil should perform its maximum duty in resisting the pressure from within. Further, he arranged the fibre of the several portions so as to be in the best positions for withstanding the pressures. It must be noted that wrought-iron bar is about twice as strong in the direction of the fibre as across it. He therefore constructed the exterior of the gun of coiled bars of wrought iron welded into hoops and shrunk one over the other, thus disposing the fibre to resist the circumferential strain. These outer coils were shrunk over a hollow cylinder of forged iron, having the fibre running lengthways so as to resist the longitudinal strain. Within this cylinder or forged breech piece was placed a steel tube, gripped in like manner by shrinkage. This standard principle of modern gun construction is carried out by turning the inner coil in a lathe to an exterior diameter slightly greater than the interior diameter to which the outer coil is bored. The outer coil is expanded by the application of heat, and slipped over the inner one. It contracts on cooling, and if the strength of the two coils is properly adjusted, the outer will remain in a state of tension, and the inner in a state of compression. On this view, the ideal gun would be constructed of a vast number of exceedingly thin rings so shrunk over each other that, on discharge, each should be equally strained. An attempt has been made by Mr Longidge, M.I.C.E., to approximate to this condition by winding steel wire under tension round a steel tube. This system, though possessing much ingenuity, has never made way, and might possibly be found wanting in longitudinal strength.

Great success attended the early introduction of the coil principle. Guns of considerable size were made, the largest weighed as much as 23 tons, and projected a 400-lb shot with a fair velocity. It was found, however, that much difficulty attended the accurate shrinking of a number of thin rings, and that occasionally one or more of the outer ones would be strained to cracking, while the inner ones were intact. The original mode of construction was therefore modified, as experience was gained in the Government factory at Woolwich. Acting under General Campbell, R.A., Mr Fieser, M.I.C.E., thickened the coils, and extended then use to the breech piece, it being found that the longitudinal disposition of the fibre in that part was not required to sustain the longitudinal strain, and that the steel tube forming the bore was better supported by coils.

The manufacture of ordnance at Woolwich and Elswick may be briefly described as follows:—Steel cylinders, slightly larger than the exterior dimensions of the inner

tubes, are supplied by contractors. They are tested for quality of metal, and toughened after being bored by being raised to the temperature shown by the tests to be most suitable to the particular cylinder, and then plunged in oil. They are subsequently tested by water pressure at 4 tons



Fig 32

per square inch. The tubes are not bored quite through for muzzle-loaders, a solid end is left to form the bottom of the bore. The rest of the gun is made of wrought iron. The material is chiefly received from the contractor in the form of wrought scrap, but a certain proportion of iron

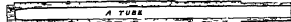


Fig 33

puddled in the works is used also. Blooms of these materials are rolled into flat bars, which are jagged together and rolled into long bars of the section required for the part of the gun for which they are intended. These bars are then placed in a long narrow reverberatory furnace,

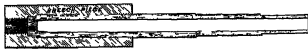


Fig 34

coiling and raised to a bright red heat. When ready for coiling, one end is drawn out and fixed to a revolving mandril, which pulls the bar out and winds it into a coil, like rope round a capstan. Sometimes a second bar is wound round outside the first coil, in this case the mandril is made to

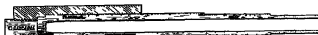


Fig 35

revolve in the opposite direction. The coil is next placed upright in a reverberatory furnace, and raised to a white or "welding" heat. In this state it is placed under a steam hammer, and welded till it becomes a compact hollow cylinder. On cooling it is bored and turned to the proper



Fig 36

dimensions. Two parts of the gun are made of forged iron (not coiled),—the casable screw which supports the breech end of the tube, and the hoop which carries the trunnions. The latter is either welded to the outer coil or shrunk on.

Figs 32-39 show the method of building up Woolwich



Fig 37

Building ordnance as exemplified in the 80-ton guns. The various coils are hooked together by shoulders to prevent slipping or distortion from the shock of discharge. Thus, in fig 36, shoulders are turned on the exterior of the breech-piece and inside the 1B coil, the latter is expanded by being raised to a dull red heat and slipped over the tube from the muzzle end. The expansion enables the shoulders to pass,

and on cooling they grip each other as shown, while the 1B coil contracts on and slightly compresses the part of the tube within it.

A method of strengthening and utilizing as rifled guns. Some of the old cast-iron ordnance of the service has been largely employed to supply pieces of secondary power and excellence for land fronts and for practice. It was brought forward in its present shape by Sir W. Palliser in 1863, and is now being much used in the United States' gun factories. The cast-iron block or gun is bored out to the

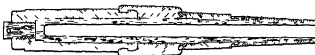


Fig 38

requisite dimensions, and a tube of coiled wrought iron is thrust into it, no shunking is here employed, but a tolerable fit is ensured by accurate turning. When fitted, the tube is secured by a collar screwed in at the muzzle, a plug of iron passes through the under side of the gun into the tube near the trunnions to prevent any shift of position. The tube is in two parts, the breech end being turned down and a second tube shrunk over it. The bottom of the bore is formed by a wrought-iron cup, which is forged and stamped into shape under a steam hammer. A screw is

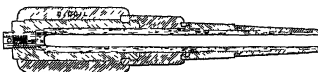


Fig 39

cut on the outside of the cup and inside the end of the tube, the cup is then screwed tightly home. The tube is next severely tested by water pressure, after which the second tube is shrunk on. The whole tube is then fitted into the cast-iron casing, the greatest care being taken that the breech end bears firmly home. The gun is now ready for rifling, and, after that operation is performed, undergoes proof by firing heavy charges, which expand the tube closely against the cast-iron envelope, which then takes up the strain and affords the necessary support. The relation between the powers of the three classes of guns will be gathered from the following comparison—

Nature of Gun	Weight of Gun	Weight of Projectile	Weight of Charge	Calibre	Energy of Projectile at 1000 yards	Energy of Projectile at 2000 yards
Cast-iron 68 pr., smooth bore, Palliser, 30 in. covered from 30 in. above, Wrought-iron in Woolwich gun.	cwt	lb	lb	in	foot tons	foot tons
	66	68	18	8.13	268	130
	100	80	10	6.80	602	468
	90	115	22	7.00	1043	814

The great German gunmaker, Krupp, employs nothing but steel in the manufacture of his ordnance. His earlier pieces were bored from solid blocks of this metal forged under heavy hammers. They were homogeneous, and therefore the exterior did not assist the interior to bear the strain of the powder gas on discharge to the extent which scientific methods of construction admit. Still the excellent quality of the material enabled the artillerymen to get results from these pieces which have been surpassed only by the coil guns, and by Krupp's later productions. As, however, progress was made and the ratio of power to weight increased, it was found necessary to introduce a system of building up for steel ordnance also, and Krupp adopted the principle of shrinkage to which the English guns owed so



much. The interior of the recent Krupp gun is a steel tube as in the Armstrong construction, but it is very much thicker and forms the body of the piece, instead of being chiefly used to provide a sound surface for the bore. It is thick-set over the powder and shot chambers, tapering towards the muzzle (fig. 40). Over the thickest part, and in some guns over a considerable portion of the chase, hoops of cast steel are shrunk on,—the shrinkage being adjusted

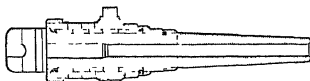


FIG. 40—Section of Krupp Gun

to bring the strength of the outer hoops into play to support the body of the gun on discharge. The number of hoops depends on the size of the gun and the severity of the strain it has to withstand, they are usually much more numerous than the English coils, and the section of a heavy Krupp gun presents somewhat the appearance of a stone wall. It is believed that the steel is not toughened in oil, but the details of manufacture have not as yet been made public.

Steel of the excellent quality employed by Krupp is undoubtedly a stronger material than wrought iron, its present trustworthiness is, however, of late date, and it has hitherto gained the general confidence accorded to wrought iron. Possibly the method of construction adopted by Krupp, continuing as it does a number of unwelded joints, scarcely permits the several parts of the guns to support each other as efficiently as is the case with the magnificent forgings of the coil system, be this as it may, the German pieces, though made of stronger and more expensive material than the English ones, are just as heavy for any given power, proportions and ammunition being similar.

In France and Italy a combination of cast iron and steel has been introduced with a view to economy. The interior of the gun is a moderately thick steel tube as in the coil guns, over this is a thick cast-iron body, corresponding to the steel body of the Krupp guns. On the exterior are shrunk steel hoops.

Sir J. Whitworth uses his fluid-compressed steel for the manufacture of ordnance. He forces massive hoops over a central tube, and over one another by hydraulic pressure or by shrinkage.

M. Vauvasson employs Fuchs's cable steel for his guns, which are built up somewhat in the same way as Krupp's. He also uses exten coils of wrought iron in some patterns.

**Systems of Loading.**—The comparative advantages of breech-loading and muzzle loading for ordnance on service are fully discussed in the article GUNNERY. We have now to mention the principal modes of closing the breech, either permanently as in muzzle-loaders, or temporarily as in breech-loaders. The former is comparatively a simple matter. When the whole gun, or the interior of it, is formed of cast metal, iron, bronze, or steel, the block is merely bored to the required depth, and the end left un-bored to form the breech. Should the inner part of the gun be formed of wrought material, such as coils, it becomes necessary to close the end with some device which shall render it gas-tight and strong. Several kinds of cups and plugs have been tried for this purpose, the most successful of which is the cup already mentioned in the description of the converted guns. When we come to the temporary closing of the end of the bore demanded by breech-loading, a far more difficult problem presents itself. This problem

has been more or less satisfactorily solved in a great variety of ways, but it will be sufficient to examine the three principal types or systems of breech-loading employed in modern artillery. They are popularly known as the Armstrong, the Krupp, and the French systems.

The Armstrong system is the earliest of these in point of date. In it a slot is cut through the top of the breech of the gun into the tube at A (fig. 41), a breech block (fig. 43), through which the vent is driven, is dropped into this slot, and is pressed firmly against the bore from behind by the breech screw (fig. 42), which is provided with two powerful lever handles for the purpose. Where the breech block, or vent piece, as it is usually called, presses against the lip of the bore, both surfaces are of copper, and are renewed from time to time as channels are worn through between them by the rush of the escaping powder gas. There are many guns, from 6-pounders to 7-inch, made on

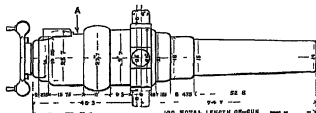


FIG. 41—7 inch Armstrong Breech loader

this plan in the British service, and at the time of their introduction they constituted a great advance in gun construction. Experience in the field and at practice has, however, revealed many grave faults in them. No joint consisting simply of two abutting surfaces can be made so tight as to prevent the gas from escaping on the discharge of the piece, the pressure in the powder chamber is so great that a considerable expansion takes place for the moment, and permits a fan of flame to flash out. The eroding effects of gas in motion at high pressure are extraordinarily destructive, and constant necessity for repair arises from this cause. It has also been found that in rapid firing the breech screw may be too quickly forced home, tipping the vent piece before it has fallen into its proper position, the end of the bore is then not sealed, and important and perhaps dangerous accidents occur. Moreover, even with moderate sized ordnance, the vent piece becomes too heavy for convenient lifting.

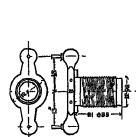


FIG. 42—Breech Screw

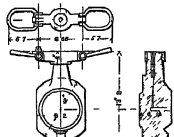


FIG. 43—Vent Piece

In the Krupp system (fig. 44), a slot is cut through both sides of the breech of the gun, in this slot, in the latest patterns, runs a cylindrical prismatic wedge, or, in other words, a wedge of D section, the round side to the rear. The flat side forms the bottom of the bore. For loading, the wedge is pulled out to the left side of the piece as far as the stop will allow it to go, the shell and cartridge are thrust up the gun from behind, the wedge is pushed in, and is pressed hard home and secured by an ingeniously-contrived screw with powerful handles. As was mentioned with regard to the Armstrong system, no amount of pressing home and securing would by itself be of any avail in pre-

venting the escape of gas from the breech.

venting escape of gas at the breech, and a special arrangement is therefore provided for this purpose (fig. 45). The end of the bore is enlarged, and into this recess thus formed fits a Broadwell ring, against which the face of the wedge abuts when forced home. The ring is so formed that it must always fit against the wedge, and be pressed firmly to it by

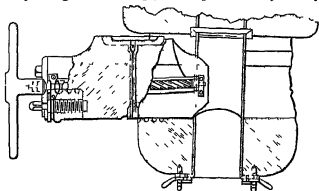


FIG. 44 —Krupp's breech action, cylinder-pneumatic wedge

the action of the gas on firing. This is accomplished by making the recessed surface of the gun and the exterior surface of the ring portions of a sphere. In spite of the theoretical perfection of the system, and the excellence of manufacture attained, it has always been found that after a time—after firing a very variable number of rounds—gas would begin to escape, and then steadily cut a channel between the ring and the wedge. Krupp has fully recognized this, and has been successful in minimizing and localizing the injury thus caused. The gas has two ways of escape: it can pass either between the ring C and the body of the gun D, and so out to Y, or from X to Y. Several forms of Broadwell ring have been tried by Krupp, the form shown in fig. 45 is now in use. When the gun is fired the gas acts on the rounded surface of the ring C, pressing it down hard against the facing plate A, and also expanding it against the body of the gun D. The tendency of the gas is also to expand the body of the gun away from the ring, and many bronze guns have been destroyed from this cause, having expanded more than the ring was able to follow. A recess is cut in the exterior of the ring, partly to give it greater spring and partly to afford a relief channel for any gas that may have forced its way in. The form of ring here shown appears to have overcome the efforts of the gas to escape in this direction.

Broadwell ring

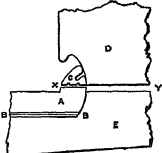


FIG. 45 —A, steel facing plate; BB, copper disc; C, steel Broadwell ring; D, body of gun; E, wedge; X, interior of gun; Y, exterior of gun

Having stopped the gas from getting round the outside of the ring and injuring the gun, we have now to consider the results of escape from X to Y. A channel cut through here would disable ring and wedge, which, though not so bad as disabling ring and gun, would yet be productive of much inconvenience. The insertion of the steel facing-plate A at once saves the wedge and localizes the injury. It allows, moreover, of the introduction of copper discs behind the plate, for the purpose of making up for wear, compression of metal of wedge, &c. Two relief channels are cut round that surface of the ring which abuts on the facing plate. Spare Broadwell rings and facing plates are supplied with the guns, should wear set in and escape of gas ensue, the defective fittings can be removed from the gun and new

ones inserted in a couple of minutes. Each set should last on the average for several hundred rounds.

In the French system no slot is cut in the gun (fig. 46). The breech is closed by a screw plug from the rear, which swings on a hinge to the side when withdrawn. The male screw on the plug and the female screw in the gun are divided circumferentially into six parts, of which three have the threads cut away, so that the surface is alternately screw and plain cylinder. When the threads of the plug coincide with the plain parts in the gun, the plug can be moved straight in or out. When pushed in, one sixth of a turn engages the threads, which thus give half the bearing of an ordinary screw. This is called the interrupted screw system. The plug is larger than the bore, so as to afford room for the shell and cartridge to be thrust in. The end of the bore is recessed to take a ring against which the end of the plug abuts, somewhat as in Krupp's gun, or a cup of steel is fixed on the end of the plug, which is slightly convex, the pressure of the gas drives the flat back of the cup firmly against the convex surface, bending out the lips, which are at the same time pressed against the sides of the gun by the gas. This method has been lately introduced by the Elswick Company.

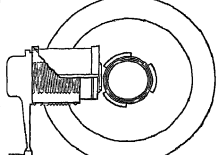


FIG. 46 —French breech action, interrupted screw

It is difficult to award superiority to the Krupp or the French system. Each appears to possess some little advantage over the other, and both have attained great success. The Krupp system has undergone the more thorough testing in the field, and has the merit of allowing the parts which become damaged by the escape of gas to be replaced with greater ease and quickness. The French system, on the other hand, takes up less of the gun, so that in a piece of given length the bore may be upwards of one calibre longer than with Krupp's. In the French system, also, the breech-fittings are less exposed to damage by the enemy's fire, being behind the gun instead of at the side.

**DESTROYING**—A gun, like all other machines, must be gun destroyed to fulfil certain definite conditions. Its projectile should be required to pierce a given thickness of armour at a given distance, or weight of piece may be the limit, and it may be wished to shoot the most powerful shell or shrapnel to a given distance with a given elevation, consistent with that limit. To work out problems of this nature, it is all important to possess an accurate knowledge of the action of the charge made the bore. By means of the Noble chronoscope and the crusher gauge (see GUNNERY), this knowledge is obtained, and we shall now explain how the indications of these instruments are employed to assist in determining the proportions of ordnance.

Gunpowder is not properly so much an explosive as a substance burning and giving off gas with great rapidity. It differs in this respect a marked contrast to gun-cotton, dynamite, and other true explosives. If one of these agents be detonated, the detonation is immediately carried through the mass, whatever its size, and the whole at once turns into gas. Gunpowder, on the other hand, as far as is known at present, cannot be detonated, but simply evolves its gas by burning in layers from the outside to the inside. Thus a large grain will take longer to burn up and become

French breech loading system

entirely converted into gas than a small one will, hence the effect of enlarging the grains is to render the action of the charge less violent, the composition of the powder being the same in all gun-charges. The projectile is driven out of the bore by the pressure of the gas on its base,—that is, on an area which varies with the square of the calibre. The weight of projectiles of similar form varies with the cube of the calibre. Hence the larger the gun the heavier will be the column of metal or projectile driven by each square inch of its base, and the greater must be either the pressure applied, or the time of its application, if a given velocity is to be attained. The great object of the gunmaker is to obtain the highest possible ratio of muzzle velocity to breech pressure. His ideal would be a charge so arranged that a pressure equal to the amount the gun is constructed to bear should be uniformly maintained till the shot has left the muzzle. Science is still a long way from this, but has done a good deal towards it in the last few years. A charge of gunpowder, composed of service ingredients in service proportions, exploded in a closed vessel at a density of 1.00 (equal to that of water), sets up a pressure of 13 tons per square inch, at a density of 0.75, of 23.2 tons, at 0.50, of 11.8 tons. Supposing a gun cartridge to be rammed home to the density of water, and entirely converted into gas before the projectile begins to move, the pressure in the bore would rise to 13 tons per square inch at the breech, and fall towards the muzzle, as the travel of the shot afforded increasing room for expansion behind it. The column of metal to be moved, even in the heaviest projectiles yet known, is only a few pounds to the square inch of base, while the maximum pressure of the powder gas is measured in tons; it is clear therefore that the shot must get under way at some period antecedent to the setting up of the maximum pressure. In a breech loader, where the projectile has to be forced through a bore slightly less than its greatest diameter, it will be detained longer than in a muzzle-loader, where it moves freely away, but the difference is insignificant as regards the present argument. The result of the shot's early motion in that space is at once given for expansion, and the normal 13 tons is never reached. Before these matters were fully understood, badly-proportioned charges of violent powder were found sometimes to set up what are known to ballisticians as "wave pressures," which were dynamical in character, being caused by rushes of gas

from one end of the charge to the other, so that the gauges indicated far higher pressures at the ends of the powder chamber than in the centre. This has now been overcome, and a great increase of both power and safety has been obtained. Several important improvements have been made of late years: the principal ones are three in number—(1) a great stride was made in the manufacture of powder when pebbles,  $\frac{1}{16}$  and  $\frac{1}{8}$  inch cubes were introduced, (2) the discovery of the beneficial effect of "chambering," that is, of boring out the powder chamber to a greater diameter than that of the rest of the bore, (3) the method of "air spacing" the cartridge, so that a certain air weight of powder should have a certain definite space allotted to it, irrespective of the actual volume of the powder grains. Thus in the 80 ton gun powder cubes of  $\frac{1}{16}$  inch edge are used, having an absolute density a little over 1.75, or about 15.7 cubic inches to the pound. If these grains were rammed tightly home in a silk cloth bag, the space occupied behind the shot would be 24.6 cubic inches per pound, as actually used, an air-space over and under the cartridge is left, so that the space behind the shot amounts to 34 cubic inches per pound. This density would set up a pressure in a closed vessel of 26.6 tons per square inch, but the relief afforded by the shot's motion reduces it to about 19 tons per square inch. The effect of chambering out the end of the bore where the powder lies is practically to permit a small gun to consume effectively the charge of a larger one. The cartridge is shortened, and the mechanical conditions of burning are greatly improved, so that, with large charges, higher velocity with lower pressure is obtained from a chambered than from an unchambered gun. The above information is derived from the indications of the crusher gauge, which registers the pressure of the gas at various parts of the bore. The chronoscope measures the rate at which the projectile acquires velocity during its travel from the breech to the muzzle. Knowing the increment of velocity at any point, we can calculate the amount of pressure required to produce this increment, and thus confirmation is obtained of the accuracy of the records obtained by the crusher gauge. The following table gives the increase obtained at successive stages in the development of the power of the 80 ton gun, which was first under-bored for experiment, and gradually brought to its present dimensions—

Table showing Experiments with 80 ton Gun Powder, Service  $P_3$  ( $\frac{1}{16}$  inch cubes)

Calibre	Diam of Chamber	Weight of Charge	Duration of Comb. g.	Weight of Projectile	Max Pressure in Chamber	Muzzle Velocity	Muzzle Energy	Muzzle Energy per Gun of Mean Pressure	Penetrating Power into Armour at 1000 yds	Thickness of Armour which could be penetrated at 1000 yds
ins	ins	lb	comb. lbs per lb	lb	tons per sq in	f/s	ft tons	$\frac{E}{P}$	ft tons per in of shot diameter	ins
14.5	14.5	220	25.6	1250	22.0	1502	10,827	867.5	878	32.7
15.0	15.0	220	25.6	1406	22.8	1428	20,577	864.6	868	28.1
15.0	15.0	290	80.0	1496	22.4	1511	28,206	1089.0	483	26.1
15.0	16.0	310	30.0	1496	22.5	1553	21,408	1089.0	457	25.8
16.0	16.0	350	83.0	1703	20.1	1508	20,740	1311.0	456	26.0
16.0	18.0	425	24.0	1703	19.3	1538	30,742	1543.0	523	28.1
16.0	18.0	160†	31.4	1703	19.1	1630	81,527	1267.0	545	30.2

† Mild prismatic powder (German)

It will be observed that each improvement has tended to facility of consumption of increased charges, so that, while the pressures are diminished, the penetrating power of the projectile is augmented, a heavier and more destructive shell being driven through thicker armour.

The manner in which the various parameters, of which an explanation has been above attempted, are practically applied is laborious and complicated; the conditions are often conflicting, and the ultimate dimensions of a piece of ordnance is commonly a compromise. A couple of simple examples will illustrate the *modus operandi*. Suppose that it is required

to design a gun which shall not exceed a given length, but shall throw a projectile capable of piercing a given thickness of iron at a given range. There are several formulae of a more or less empirical nature for calculating the perforating power of a projectile moving with a known velocity. Penetration is by some regarded as a punching action, by some as a wedging action, probably it is a compound of the two. Recent experiments carried on with the very high velocity of about 3000 f/s have thrown some doubt on the soundness of any of the formulae. That generally used in England is as follows—

Let  $W$  = weight of projectile in tons,  
 $r$  = radius of bore in inches,  
 $v$  = velocity of do in feet per second,  
 $E = Wv^2$  = energy of do in foot tons,  
 $t$  = thickness of plate perforated in inches,  
 then  $\frac{E}{2\pi r} = 2394$

This formula tells the gun-designer what energy is necessary to overcome the resistance of the plate. Guided by experience, he assumes for the moment a striking velocity, the other component of the energy, the weight of the projectile, is then directly arrived at. The proportions of armour piercing shell are the same for all guns, so that the weight guides the dimensions, and the calibre of the gun follows. Should this appear to be in no way unsuitable to the length already laid down in the conditions, the gun-designer calculates the loss of velocity in the given range and from the striking velocity deduces the muzzle velocity and the muzzle energy. The excellent *Lectures on Explosives* of Captain A. Noble, F.R.S., of Elswick, and Professor Abel, F.R.S., have shown how to calculate the amount of work done by a pound of powder for every volume of expansion its gas undergoes, the results of many careful experiments and much intricate calculation are embodied in the accompanying table, which

Work  
done by  
gun  
powder

$\frac{E}{2\pi r}$ where $E$ is the work done in expanding per cubic foot of charge at 27 cub in per lb	Total work Gen- erated by ex- panding per cubic foot of charge burned, in foot tons	$\frac{E}{2\pi r}$ where $E$ is the work done in expanding per cubic foot of charge at 27 cub in per lb	Total work Gen- erated by ex- panding per cubic foot of charge burned, in foot tons
1.00	0.0	4.0	62.1
1.02	1.9	4.5	87.1
1.04	8.8	6.0	101.4
1.06	5.5	6.5	96.2
1.08	7.2	6.0	98.6
1.10	8.9	6.5	101.7
1.12	10.4	7.0	104.6
1.14	11.9	7.5	107.2
1.16	13.8	8.0	109.6
1.18	14.7	8.5	111.8
1.20	16.1	9.0	113.9
1.22	19.2	9.5	116.0
1.30	22.1	10.0	117.8
1.35	24.9	11.0	121.2
1.40	27.4	12.0	124.2
1.45	29.8	13.0	127.0
1.50	32.0	14.0	129.6
1.55	34.1	15.0	132.0
1.60	36.1	16.0	134.2
1.70	39.8	17.0	136.2
1.80	43.1	18.0	138.1
1.90	46.2	19.0	139.9
2.00	49.1	20.0	141.6
2.50	60.6	25.0	149.0
3.00	69.8	30.0	154.8
3.50	76.8	35.0	159.7

affords the means of determining the total work performed by any charge in any gun. A certain portion of this work is expended in heating the gun and projectile, in giving rotation, and so forth, the remainder appears as the energy of translation of the shot on leaving the muzzle. Large guns realize a greater proportion of the total work than small ones, the gunmaker knows very approximately by experience what percentage may be expected from certain classes of ordnance with certain descriptions of powder. Roughly the factor of effect may be put within the following limits:—for mountain guns, 45 to 50 per cent, field guns, 60 to 65 per cent, medium guns, 70 to 80 per cent, heavy guns, 85 to 95 per cent. The method of calculation will be best understood from an example. Suppose a charge of 426 lb of  $P_g$  powder is to be fired from the 80 ton gun chambered to 18 inches diameter, the projectile weighs 1700 lb, and the space behind it is 14,450 cubic inches

The whole content of the bore is 60,400 cubic inches, and the volume of the charge is  $(426 \times 37.7)$  11,773 cubic inches, the number of expansions therefore is 5.13, the action of the table shows that per cubic gas expanding to this extent from a density equal to that of water can perform work amounting to 92.4 foot-tons per lb. Since, however, the charge burns up and has to fill  $(426 \times 34)$  14,480 cubic inches before doing work, the energy due to this extent of expansion (1.227) is lost, and 17.7 foot-tons per lb must be deducted, leaving  $(92.4 - 17.7)$  74.7 foot tons per lb as the total work the charge is capable of performing under these conditions. It is known from the preliminary tests of the powder that in the 80-ton gun between 92 and 95 per cent of the total work will be realized. Hence the energy of the projectile will lie between 20,210 and 30,165 foot tons, and its muzzle velocity between 1581 and 1600 f s. A reference to the table on p 292 will show that the result actually arrived at lies nearly midway between these limits. In this manner the charge required to impart the necessary energy to a shot of given weight in a given length of bore, and, conversely, the length of bore which will contain the requisite number of expansions of a given charge, are easily found, hence the charge required to produce the necessary energy is readily found, the air space and the dimensions of the powder chamber follow, and the inside of the gun is settled. The gun designer now has to put walls round his bore.

Guided by the knowledge previously mentioned as derived from the culivel gauge and the chronoscope, he lays down the pressures at each point of the interior, and calculates the amount and strength of the metal to be used, according to the special system of construction employed, and thus the exterior of the gun is settled. To give another instance—let it be required to construct the most powerful howitzer that can be made for the siege train. The conditions are given thus— recoil of piece only must not exceed 30 feet per second, weight of piece must not exceed 70 cwt, limiting purposes are to breach at 1500 yards, with not more than 5° elevation, and to bombard at 5000 yards, with not more than 35° elevation. A piece weighing 70 cwt, and running back at 20 f s velocity gives 156,800 units of momentum (in pounds and foot-seconds), the initial momentum of the gun in recoiling is practically equal to the momentum of the shot on leaving the muzzle. Hence the shell must have 156,800 units of momentum, which may be composed of high velocity and light weight, or low velocity and heavy weight. For breaching purposes, accuracy and penetration are essential qualities, a shell varying in length from two and a half to three times its diameter will be suitable for the purpose. We have now a neat problem in ballistics, viz, To find the calibre of a shell of the proper length, of such a weight that, with the muzzle velocity required, to give a range of 1500 yards at 5° elevation, the muzzle momentum shall be 156,800 units. This problem is readily solved by the methods indicated in the article GUNNERY, and it is found that a shell 80 in in diameter, weighing 170 lb, and having a muzzle velocity of 940 f s, will be slightly on the safe side of the limits. Proceeding in a similar manner, a shell 80 in in diameter, weighing 230 lb, starting with a velocity of 875 f s, satisfies the conditions of bombardment. The calibre being thus settled, the proportions of the piece remain to be worked out. As there is no difficulty in obtaining a velocity so low as 940 f s with a small charge and low pressure, the length of the bore and the disposition of the metal can be adjusted to suit, not only the strain of discharge, but the conditions of service. In the gun now under consideration, the bore is made as long as possible, and the weight of metal thrown as far forward as possible consistently with preserving due strength at the breech. The reasons for this are threefold.—first, the longer

the bore the less is the breech pressure required to produce a given muzzle velocity, and the less is the maximum strain thrown upon the studs, gas check, or other rotating agent; next, the lower part of the general disposition of the metal, the farther from the breech and will be the centre of gravity, and consequently the trunnions—a position which favours steady shooting; and absence of jump, thirdly, a siege howitzer, being always fired under cover, is little exposed except near the muzzle, which should therefore be made as strong as possible to avoid injury from anything less than a direct hit by an unburst shell.

*Twist.*—Spherical projectiles fired from smooth-bored guns seldom or never pursue the mean trajectory. The centre of the ball's figure will rarely coincide exactly with the centre of gravity, and the pressure of the air during flight will therefore with unequal effect on different parts of the surface. This inequality will be increased by accidental imperfection, or longness. The difference between the diameter of the bore and that of the projectile is termed "windage," when this is considerable, it is a principal cause of error in shooting, as the ball rebounds from side to side against the walls of the piece as it is driven along, its actual direction of departure depending on the effect of the last bump before it leaves the muzzle. Accuracy of manufacture may greatly mitigate these errors, but will never entirely remove them, it is therefore found necessary to cause the projectile to rotate rapidly round an axis coincident with the axis of the gun, by this means the inequalities in the action of the pressure of the air, due to the imperfections above mentioned, take effect in all directions in turn as the projectile rotates, and hence neutralize each other. Extending this principle, the stability imparted to a shot by its moment of rotation is such that elongated projectiles can be employed and driven point first at high speed through the air. The course of the projectile from the time of its leaving the muzzle to the end of its flight belongs to GUNNERY (*q.v.*) Here we have to consider the modes in which the interior of the gun is made to impart rotation to the projectile. Rotation is usually expressed in angular velocity, a shot is said, in popular language, to make so many turns per second. Mathematically, the unit of angular velocity consists of rotation through the unit of circular measure in one second, the unit of circular measure is the angle subtended by an arc equal to radius, viz.,  $57^{\circ} 17' 41'' 48''$ . If we call this angle  $\omega$ , a complete rotation will be expressed by  $2\pi\omega$ . In considering the energy stored up in a shot's rotation, or, what is the same thing, the work done in producing that rotation, the weight of the projectile  $W$ , and its radius of gyration  $p$ , must be taken into account. The energy of a travelling

FIGURE  
OF  
Twist

body is  $\frac{Wv^2}{2g}$ , the weight of a rotating one is supposed to be concentrated at the end of the radius of gyration; then if  $\Omega$  be the angular velocity, the velocity of a travelling body will correspond with  $p\Omega$  in a rotating one, and the energy of rotation will be expressed by  $\frac{W}{2g}p^2\Omega^2$ . The proportions of service projectiles differ for different guns, the thickness of sides and base and the shape of head varying, but roughly for common shell the value of  $p$  may be taken as  $0.40d$  ( $d$ =diameter), for Palliser projectiles as  $0.38d$ , and for shrapnel as  $0.36d$ . For artillery purposes a projectile is said to turn once in so many calibres, that is, to make one complete revolution in travelling a distance equal to so many times the diameter of the bore. Supposing a given length of groove in the bore to make a known angle with a line parallel to the axis of the gun, determining the arc through which the surface of the shot must turn while advancing the length of the groove, it is evident that the angular velocity attained by the shot will entirely depend

on the velocity of translation or forward movement. Again, the greater the diameter of the bore the less will be the proportion borne by the arc traced through to the whole circumference, consequently the bigger the gun the less the angular velocity of the projectile, if the angle of rifling and the velocity of translation remain constant, the velocity of rotation of a point on the surface will, under these conditions, always be uniform. It is generally considered that with studded muzzle loading service projectiles, having a length equal to about 2½ to 3 times their diameter, the velocity of rotation of a surface point of about 110 f s is sufficient to keep them steady, allowing for loss of spin by atmospheric friction up to any probable range. Supposing the interior of the gun to be opened out and laid flat, the groove (of a uniform twist) will be straight, and since the shot guided by it makes a complete revolution in 1 calibres, the angle made by the groove with a line parallel to the gun's axis may be expressed by  $\tan \frac{\pi}{n}$ . In designing the

piece, the muzzle velocity is determined on, and also the velocity of rotation to be communicated to the projectile, the combination of the two fixes the final angle of the groove. Now it is easy to see that the spin of the shot on leaving the bore depends only on the conditions immediately preceding. The rate at which the work of giving rotation is done during the travel of the projectile from breech to muzzle is an entirely different question. Is a shot to rotate, its tendency is putting friction aside for the moment, to continue to rotate with the same velocity. No work is done in keeping up the rate of rotation, but work would be done in accelerating or retarding it. Thus in apportioning the work done on the shot in giving rotation at different parts of the bore, we have to consider, not the actual angular velocity, but the increments of angular velocity. The work then can be distributed at pleasure over the whole length of the groove, by varying the angle it makes with a line parallel to the gun's axis, as it runs along the bore. Supposing, as before, the interior surface of the gun to be opened out and laid flat, then (OU (fig 47)) will represent a groove having a uniform twist, that is

Uniform  
and in  
giving  
twist



Fig 47

making a constant angle with a line OM parallel to the axis of the piece. O denotes the commencement of the rifling at the breech end of the bore, U the muzzle. Guns are rifled with any number of grooves exceeding two, but it is not necessary to consider more than one. With the groove OU, every increment of angular velocity imparted to the shot is due to an increment in the velocity of translation, and therefore the pressure between the sides of the grooves, and the studs, gas check, lead coating, or whatever fitting on the shot is employed for the purpose, bears a constant relation to the pressure of the powder gas on the base of the shot during its forward travel. The table given below shows the result of this with great clearness. In order to mitigate the unevenness of strain, recourse was had to the increasing twist, and a curved groove was employed which, when developed as in fig 47, forms the parabola OP, beginning at the point O, parallel to OM, and terminating at P, parallel to OU. The equation to OU is  $x = py$ , that to OP is  $x^2 = py$ . Since OP is a parabola having its vertex at O, and since the tangent at P is parallel to OU therefore

UP = PM, which shows that the shot, though rotating in either case with equal angular velocity on leaving the muzzle, has, up to that moment, with the parabolic twist turned through an angle half as great as would be the case with the uniform twist. The table below exemplifies the principle on which curves of rifling are, or should be, constructed. The first three columns speak for themselves, the fourth is arrived at by multiplying the area of the shot's base by the gas pressure per square inch recorded on the gauges, and given in the fifth column. Columns 6 and 7 are worked out from formulae due to Captain Noble of Elswick, in

column 6 the pressures due to a uniform twist are given. Presumably it will be seen that they bear a constant proportion to the pressures of the gas recorded in columns 4 and 5, and that the maximum rises to a considerable height soon after the shot has begun to move, while at the muzzle little work is done. In column 7 the calculations are made to suit a curve consisting of a portion of a parabola, starting from the vertex where the groove is parallel to the axis of the piece, and rising to the required twist at one foot from the muzzle, thence proceeding uniformly. In this curve the maximum strain is greatly reduced, the pressure gradually

Table showing Pressures of Gases on Studs in the 85 ton Gun, with various Curves of Rifling. Charge, 180 lb. Culvert Powder of 1 25 inch edge. Projectile, 800 lb. Calibre, 12 5 inches

Line of Shot through Bore	Time of Travel	Velocity acquired	Pressure on Base of Shot	Pressure on Studs with Uniform Twist of 1 in 36 Cal.	Pressure on Studs, Parabola Twist 0 to 1 in 36 Cal.	Pressure on Studs, Semi Circular Parabola 1 in 36 Cal. to 1 in 48 Cal.
ft.	secs.	ft/s	tons	tons	tons	tons
0	00000	0	2000 (estimated)	16 3	79 3	0
1	00148	140	2221 3	18 1	88 1	1 65
5	00273	474	3320 3	27 0	131 8	15 8
10	00360	676	2090 0	15 3	81 7	20 0
20	00490	869	1384 1	11 4	55 3	42 1
30	00598	987	1095 0	8 9	43 4	53 1
40	00695	1074	908 8	7 4	36 0	61 95
50	00785	1142	748 4	6 1	29 6	68 7
60	00871	1195	688 3	5 4	26 5	75 0
70	00953	1242	692 8	4 8	23 5	80 3
80	01033	1277	499 4	4 1	19 8	83 3
90	01109	1309	421 9	3 5	16 7	86 2
100	01184	1335	355 6	2 9	14 1	88 2
110	01258	1365	285 1	2 2	10 8	88 1
120	01331	1369	288 7	1 6	7 5	87 8
130	01404	1379	181 6	1 1	5 2	48 4
140	01476	1385	120 9	1 0	4 8	4 8

using with the increase of twist. The figures are derived from another formula worked out by Captain Noble. Column 8 shows the pressures required to give the necessary rotation when the curve of groove is a semicircular parabola, having for equation  $x^2 = 2y$ . In the instance chosen, the early part of the curve is rejected, and it starts from 1 turn in 200 cal., arriving at the required twist at a foot from the muzzle as before. The figures are derived from a calculation worked out on the principle devised by Captain Noble. Here the maximum is yet further reduced, and some approach to uniformity of strain is made. The diagram in Plate IV shows the pressures graphically.

Let R = rotation pressure between studs and grooves,  
G = gas pressure on base of shot,  
 $\mu$  = coefficient of friction,  
 $h$  = pitch of rifling,  
 $k$  = tan of angle made by groove with plane transverse to axis;  
 $\phi$  = angle turned through by shot,  
 $\theta$  = angle made by groove with line parallel to axis,  
 $\rho$  = radius of cylinder,  
 $s$  = travel of shot along bore,  
 $v$  = velocity of shot.  
M = mass of shot =  $\frac{W}{g}$ ,  
 $\tau$  = radius of shot.

Then in a uniform twist ( $\tau = k\phi$ )

$$R = \frac{2\pi\rho^2(1+k\phi)^3}{h(\mu - \mu) + 2\pi\rho^2(\mu k + 1)} G,$$

in a parabolic twist ( $\tau = k\sqrt{\phi}$ )

$$R = \frac{2\pi\rho^2(4\mu + k\phi)(3\mu + 2\phi)}{h(\mu - \mu) + 2\pi\rho^2(2\mu + \mu k)}$$

in a semicircular twist ( $\tau^2 = 2\lambda\phi$ )

$$R = \frac{3\pi^2(G\lambda/s + \frac{4\mu}{2\lambda})}{h^2(4\mu - \theta\mu/s + 3\phi\sqrt{\lambda}/s(2\mu + 2\lambda))} (9\mu + 4k\phi^3)$$

Lieut. Younghusband, R.N., gives the following formula, which is applicable to curves of any equation, and will be found much handier than the above by those familiar with differential calculus:—

$$R = \frac{\rho^2(G \tan \theta + \frac{2\mu}{h} \frac{d\theta}{ds}) \sec \theta}{\sqrt{1 + \tan^2 \theta} - \mu \tan \theta (\tau - \rho)} \sqrt{1 + \mu^2}$$

A radical difference exists between the rifling of muzzle-loaders and that usually employed for breech-loaders. When the projectile has to be pushed down the gun from the front, it must be smaller than the bore, when it is thrust home from behind, it may be rather larger than the bore. Hence the earlier muzzle-loading shells were provided with ribs or studs which fitted in the grooves, and guided the projectile in its rotatory course, while the earlier breech-loading shells were coated with lead, into which the lands of the bore fit sharply as the powder gas forced the projectile between them. All rifled ordnance were formerly rifled with a uniform twist, indeed, it is clear that where ribs are cast or fixed on the projectile, or where they are formed in the soft envelope by the first action of the grooves, no alteration in the angle of rifling is possible, since the ribs can only make a constant angle with a line parallel to the axis of the piece, and cannot fit a groove making a varying angle with it. The smaller and earlier muzzle-loading rifled projectiles were fitted with two rows of studs, front and rear, and equal in size, so that a front and rear stud travelled in each groove, and practically constituted the ends of a rib. As the guns grew, it was found that the great strain of giving rotation at starting fire of guns quickly forced the bronze studs out of the recesses machined for them in the sides of the shells, and scooped away the driving edges of the grooves even when the gun lining was of steel. The shell might have been cast with ribs on them, but certain difficulties of manufacture stood in the way, and the excessive strain would still have existed though its effects might have been mitigated. The increasing twist was therefore devised, and the rows of studs increased in number from two to three in the larger natures of projectiles. Three studs are allotted to each

groove, the rear one is the largest, the front one the smallest. They are so placed that the line of their leading sides is parallel to the angle made by the groove at its base, while the line of their driving edges is parallel to the angle made by the groove at the muzzle. In Plate IV fig. 1 shows the position when the shell is home, and also when about to leave the bore. Thus, theoretically, the middle and leading stud should never come into play till the last moment, and the rear stud should do all the work of rotation. Practically, however, the rear stud, being of bronze, wears down against the edge of the hard groove, the centre stud obtains a bearing, the wear continues, and the leading stud takes up its share of duty, so that all three really act during the passage of the projectile through the bore. This method of employing the increasing twist necessitates wide grooves, and is unsuitable for small guns. A different plan therefore was devised to meet this case. Two rows of studs, front and rear, were so arranged that each ran in a groove of its own. The curve of the grooves belonging to the rear stud began at 0°, and reached the final angle at a distance from the muzzle equal to the distance between the front and rear rows, after which it proceeded in a straight line. The curve of the grooves belonging to the front studs began at 0°, at a distance in front of the commencement of the other grooves equal to the distance between the rows, and reached its final angle at the muzzle. Thus the two curves were alike, but one was always a constant distance in front of the other, and every stud acted through the entire length. Fig. 2 in Plate IV shows the position of the studs when the shot is home, and also when it is about to leave the bore.

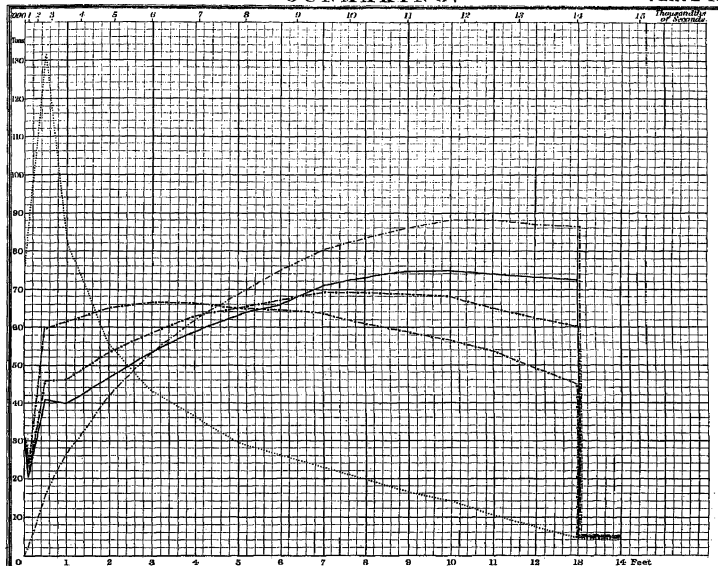
Studs

Gas checks

Muzzle loading itself had reached this stage of progress at a time when the great wear caused by the rush of gas over the shot necessitated the adoption of some method of sealing the escape. After many trials, it was found that a flanged copper disc fitted on to the base of the projectile would expand under the first pressure of the gas, and cut off the windage completely. This saved the wear of the grooves, and added to their power. It was found, moreover, that the flanges of these "gas checks" expanded in the grooves, and being firmly attached to the shell afforded an additional means of giving rotation. The next step was to remove the studs altogether, using a smooth projectile, and substituting many small grooves for few large ones. This method of giving rotation has been adopted in all recently-designed pieces, and appears likely to give entire satisfaction. When muzzle-loading guns were first rifled, many attempts were made to give rotation by expanding projectiles, but they proved unsuccessful, because at that time the increasing twist was not known, and the action of a violent powder and the uniform twist was that the rotator had to expand into the grooves, and at the same instant to communicate a rapid spin to the shell. It was unable to combine these operations, and the projections driven on by the gas could never settle to their work, being constantly cut down by the edges of the grooves. The result was that the shell "stripped," and left the bore without regular rotation. In the case of the twist which begins at 0°, the projections have time to expand comfortably, and adapt themselves to the shape of the grooves before they are called on to perform the work of rotation. On the other hand, since the gas presses out the flanges against the bore and into the grooves, and affords them support in this position, it is desirable that its pressure should correspond with their pressure on the driving edges of the grooves. This would be exactly met by the uniform twist, but that is inadmissible for the reason just given. The parabola, on the other hand, throws the principal rotating strain forward towards the muzzle, where the gas pressure is least (Plate IV). The case is practically met by the semicubical parabola, which is the curve adopted

in the 80 ton gun. While progress was thus being made in the rifling of muzzle loaders, the rival system had not remained inactive, the use of lead coating had been found to involve a loss of power in the projectile as regarded both the amount of bursting charge on bullets carried, and the penetration into armour, on to the surface of which the lead flew forward in a splash, when the shell struck. Moreover, the lead envelope would not lend itself to the exigencies of the increasing twist. To meet these difficulties, two undercuttings were machined round the smooth projectile, one near the base, the other near the shoulder. Into these slots were pressed stout copper wires, the rear one bringing up the diameter of the shell beyond that of the bore, so as to bands take the rifling when forced through the piece on discharge, the front one just fitting the lands, but not entering the grooves, so as to rotate irrespective of them, and thus keep the fore part of the shot steady. Projectiles thus fitted are more effective than the lead coated ones, and are adapted to any twist of rifling. The latest breech-loaders made by the Elswick Company use the new arrangement described above for muzzle loaders—the smooth shell with a gas check on the base. This appears to be the best form of projectile, and has the advantage of suiting either system. A few words on the section of groove best suited to various purposes will conclude the subject of rifling. The rotation is imparted on the projectile by a force acting tangentially to the surface. This principle would be represented in a far extreme form by making the section of the shell to resemble a cog-wheel, the grooves and lands of the gun being bored to fit. With muzzle-loading systems where windage has been necessary, the sides of the projections on the projectile, and of the grooves in the bore, have been sloped to enable the projections to run up the sides of the grooves, and so distribute the windage equally all round. The extreme form of this principle is Lancaster's oval bore, the section of which departs but slightly from a circle. All attempts at "centring" the projectile by sloping the bearings tend Cent to convert it into a wedge, which expends that part of the force resolved radially in a crushing action on the shell, and a ending action on the gun. The slope may, however, be made of such a degree as to cause the projectile to centre fairly without exercising any important effect on the bore. In breech-loading systems, where the lands bite into the rotator, the driving edge strikes the projectile in, or nearly in, the prolongation of the radius, care being taken that the points of action are as many as possible consistently with leaving enough material between to stand the wear and the strain. Where gas checks expand in the grooves, these should be broad and flat, so that a complete fit and a strong projection should result. The driving edges should here also form a prolongation of the radius of the projectile.

*Conclusions.*—What may be the future of firearms it is impossible to predict, but it seems probable that the limit of power will be found to lie in the recoil. For shoulder guns, methods of withstanding increased velocities may be devised, but the weight of springs, pads, &c., will prevent the soldier or the sportsman from carrying this principle very far. For ordnance, the field artillery appeal even now to be very near the limit of what power can be gained consistently with high mobility. Siege and heavy guns will no doubt gain by the increased application of hydraulics, but it is difficult to see how progress can go much further except in the matter of size, to which there appears to be practically no limit. Accuracy may be improved by more perfect methods of range finding, but, as regards the actual shooting of the guns, it is already an advance of the difficulties of atmospheric irregularity, which affects the smaller projectiles greatly. The reader who wishes to study the subject closely and technically is referred to the list of works given at the end of the article on GUNNERY. (S. M.)



Length and Time of traverse of Shot  
 DIAGRAM SHEWING THE PRESSURE OF GROOVES ON STUDS, WITH VARIOUS TWISTS, AT EACH FOOT ALONG THE BORE.

..... Uniform	..... 1 turn in 35 cal.	2 - k r p
..... Parabola	..... 0.. to Do	2* - k r p
..... Parabola	..... 1 in 200 to 1 turn in 35 cal.	2* - k r p
..... Semi-cubical Parabola	..... Do	24 - k r p
..... Seven fourths Curve	..... Do	28 - k r p

Double groove rifling  
 Twist increasing from 0 to 1 turn in 16 cal.

Fig. 2.

Single groove rifling (Serris)  
 Twist increasing from 0 to 1 turn in 16 cal.

Fig. 1.





## GUNNERY

IN its early days this science might have been simply defined as the art of determining the motions of projectiles discharged from pieces of ordnance, in its present state it includes also the employment of projectiles specially adapted to the purpose in view, and the manipulation of artillery so as to enable the projectiles to produce the maximum effect.

*Theory of Gunnery*.—Instruments of great precision, mechanical construction of much accuracy, and a considerable knowledge of the higher mathematics are necessary to obtain and make use of trustworthy data for the establishment of sound principles on which to base the theory of gunnery. It is therefore not surprising that, owing to the early discovery of gunpowder, the art was long practised in a rude manner, without any attempt being made to reduce it to a science. Thus, though firearms appear to have been in use from the early part of the 14th century, little of value was understood of the laws regulating the flight of projectiles till the time of Niccolò Tartaglia, who published a treatise on the subject at Venice in 1537. About sixty years before that date, Leonardo da Vinci had enunciated some of the mathematical principles of trajectories in a manner which shows him to have possessed far more insight than any of his contemporaries, but he did not pursue the inquiry, and Tartaglia may be regarded as the father of ballistics. He was a man of great talent and ingenuity, but unfortunately had no opportunities of observing artillery practice, he was unable, therefore, to bring his calculations and speculations to the test of fact, and failed to carry conviction to the minds of the philosophers of the age. Before his time it had been generally believed that a ball on leaving the bore of a gun proceeded for some distance in a straight path,—a fallacy which lurks in the phrase “point-blank,” not yet expunged from popular speech. He saw, however, that “a piece of artillery cannot shoot one pace in a right line,” and propounded the axiom that “the more swift a pellet doth fire, the less crooked is his range,”—a truth expressed at the present day by the statement that a high velocity gives a flat trajectory. This eminent philosopher claimed the invention of the gunner’s quadrant, he took into account in his calculations the resistance of the air, but placed the angle of elevation at which the maximum range would be obtained at 45°, which would only be the case *in vacuo*. Galileo was the next mathematician of note who investigated the subject. In his *Dialogues on Motion*, published in 1638, he recognized fully the resistance of the air, and pushed on the inquiry in the direction indicated by Tartaglia. It was not, however, till Newton’s time that a substantial basis was laid down for a true theory of gunnery. The grand discovery of the law of gravitation revealed the hitherto unguessed secret of the projectile’s fall to earth. The great improvements in mathematical methods of analysis invented by him rendered possible solutions of previously impracticable problems, while the splendour of his achievements in natural science stimulated philosophers of all countries. Towards the end of the 17th century he investigated the trajectory of a projectile on the supposition that the resistance of the air varied as the first power of the velocity. Bernoulli in 1718 gave a solution of the problem, on the supposition that the resistance varied as any given power of the velocity. This solution was, however, left in such a complicated state that no practical use can be made of it. No further progress was made till Benjamin Robins in 1742 published his *New Principles of Gunnery*, in which he furnishes a notable example of the manner in which theory should be

wedded to practice, and hypothesis to experiment. Had Robins been in the possession of accurate instruments he would probably have arrived at results of considerable correctness. He invented the ballistic pendulum, and was the first to ascertain experimentally with any degree of correctness the velocities of projectiles on leaving a gun. A “trundle” or gun supported a pendulum of iron having a massive wooden bob, to the bob was fixed a steel ribbon which passed through a steel clamp set to the desired pressure. A bullet fired into the wooden bob caused the pendulum to swing, the length of the arc described was recorded by the steel ribbon, the weight of the bullet and the conditions of oscillation of the pendulum being known, the velocity of the bullet could be calculated from the length of the arc. The weight of Robins’s first pendulum was 66 lb, and it was therefore only suited for small arms. It could measure the velocity at only one point each round, and therefore, to ascertain the velocity lost by a ball in passing through the air, it was necessary to fire a series of rounds at one distance, and afterwards a similar series of rounds at another distance. Velocities of 1700 feet per second were measured, and the loss of velocity due to the resistance of the air, up to a distance of 250 feet from the muzzle, was approximately ascertained. Robins discovered that the resistance of the air was greatly increased as soon as the ball travelled faster than sound, and attributed it to the creation of a vacuum behind the shot, into which the air could not rush with speed greater than that of sound. Count Rumford in 1781 made use of the recoil to measure the velocities of bullets, on the principle that the momentum of the bullet forward was equal to the momentum of the gun backward. To carry this out, the gun was suspended as a pendulum, and the length of the arc it described on firing measured. By firing a bullet from a gun thus suspended into the ballistic pendulum, two independent records were obtained, and it would have been easy to calculate the loss of velocity, from the muzzle to any range at which the pendulum could be hit, by the combination. The roughness of the methods unfortunately did not permit completely satisfactory results. Dr Rutton next took up the inquiry, and increased the weight of the pendulum and the bullets. No very great advance, however, seems to have been made till 1840, when experiments on the resistance of the air to the motion of spherical shot were carried on at Metz by the French Government. MM. Piobert, Morin, and Didion were the chief experimenters. They raised the weight of the receiving pendulum to nearly 6 tons, and fired into it 60-pound balls at a range of 330 feet. The information now obtained spread over a much wider field than that traversed by Robins. It was even found possible to construct the trajectories of projectiles with some approach to truth, and empirical formulæ were laid down by which ranges and times of flight could be approximately calculated. It was not, however, till the introduction of electricity as a means of determining the velocities of projectiles that accurate knowledge of the resistance of the air was obtained. In 1840 Professor Wheatstone invented an instrument for this purpose, called the electro-magnetic chronoscope. He has had many successors, whose productions exhibit a great amount of ingenuity, those Electric from which the most valuable results have been obtained, velocity chronographs, and the Noble chronoscope, the Le Boulenger chronograph, and the Wadkin chronograph. The general principle on which these four instruments are designed is that a projectile after leaving the gun shall

sever a fine wire stretched across a screen, thus breaking an electric current, and causing a record to be made by the

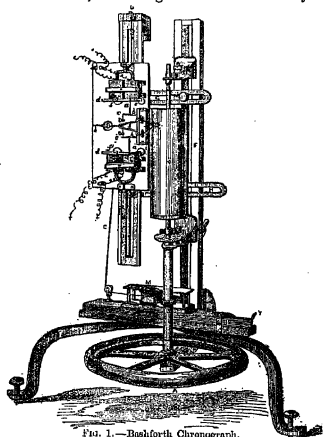


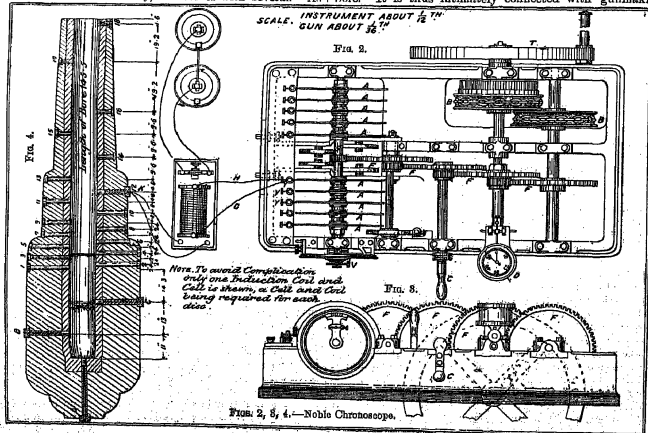
FIG. 1.—Bashforth Chronograph.

instrument at the moment. The Le Boulengé is connected with two wire screens only, the others with several. As

two records are necessary to obtain a velocity, reading the time taken by the shot to pass between two screens, the number of points of a shot's flight at which an instrument is capable of indicating the velocity is one less than the number of screens employed. The chronograph invented by the Rev. F. Bashforth, late professor of mathematics to the Advanced Class of the Royal Artillery, is shown in fig. 1.

A is a fly-wheel, which, in revolving, carries with it K, a cylinder Bashforth covered with paper specially prepared to receive the records of the chronograph clock and screen. B is a toothed wheel which turns the drum M graph, and unwinds the string CD, thus allowing the platform S to descend slowly down the slide L. E, E' are two electromagnets, whose keepers are supported by the frames A, A'; F, F' are the ends of springs which act against the attraction of the electromagnets. There are two distinct currents—one through the screens and E, the other through the clock and E'. When these are interrupted, one by the shot cutting a screen, or the other by the clock beating seconds, so that the magnetism is destroyed, the spring F or F' carries back its keeper, which, by means of the arm a or a', gives a blow to the lever b or b', causing the marker m or m' to depart from the uniform spiral it has been describing—a spiral consisting of a double line running round the cylinder. The apparatus is adjusted so that the platform L, and consequently the markers m, m', descend about 1 inch for each revolution of the cylinder; the folds of the spiral are thus 1 inch apart. The cylinder is made to revolve with considerable rapidity, so that the intervals between the successive clock marks indicating seconds measure from 20 to 25 inches; hence the screen marks indicating the moment of the severance of the wire by the shot can be allotted to their proper value in seconds with great accuracy. The screens are so contrived that the current, interrupted by the passage of the shot through one, is completed again before the next is reached. To accomplish this, the cutting of the wire is made to release a spring which makes a fresh contact; thus any number of screens can be used and a corresponding number of records obtained.

The chronoscope invented by Captain Noble of Elswick, late Royal Artillery (figs. 2, 3, 4), is constructed to furnish chronoscope, eight or more records, according to the number of discs, and is so excellently adapted for the measurement of exceedingly minute portions of time that it is usually employed to ascertain the velocity acquired by the shot in moving from a state of rest inside the gun at different parts of the bore. It is thus intimately connected with gunmaking,



FIGS. 2, 3, 4.—Noble Chronoscope.

but, having the same character as other velocity instruments, is described here. The screens used for recording the flight of the shot through the air are now discarded, and the

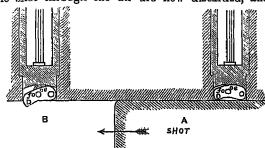


Fig. 5.—Cutting plug, knife down. Fig. 6.—Cutting plug, knife up. "cutting plugs," shown in figs. 5, 6, 7, are substituted for them. In figs. 5 and 6 B is the bore, and A a flat-headed shot or cylinder passing along it in the direction of the arrow. The plugs are screwed into the sides of the gun, as in fig. 7, which gives an end view of the bore. As the shot passes, its foremost edge pushes up the knife D, cutting the wire c, which passes in at one side of the plug C, then through a hole in the knife D, and out again at the other side of the plug. The ends of this wire are connected with the main wires leading to the instrument, and the knife D, in cutting it, interrupts the current. Fig. 4 shows a 10-inch gun pierced to receive cutting plugs in eighteen places. The main wires run from a plug to the primary of a Ruhmkorff coil, fig. 2, near the instrument, with which the secondary communicates. Figs. 2 and 3 show the instrument in plan and elevation.

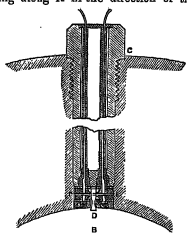


Fig. 7.—Cutting plug, ready for firing.

A, A, are disks, 36 inches in circumference, fixed on a horizontal shaft S. This shaft is caused to rotate, so that the edge of the disks travel at about 1100 inches per second, by a series of toothed wheels F, F, gearing as shown, and worked into rapid motion by the handle C. This motion is kept up regularly by the descent of the weight B acting on the balance shaft, the speed of which is multiplied 300 times at the shaft S. At V is a vernier, reading a graduated circle, which is fixed on the shaft S. The edges of the disks are covered with a coating of lamplack. One of the secondary wires G is brought from the coil, and placed in communication with the revolving disk; the other secondary wire H is fixed in a discharger Y, just clear of the edge of the disk. A stop-clock is placed on a stand D, and records the rate of revolution of one of the shafts. When the gun is fired the shot begins to move, and, as it travels along the bore, cuts the wires of the plugs in succession, breaking the primary currents, and causing sparks to pass in the secondary current from the dischargers Y, Y, to the disks A, A, while they are in rapid revolution. The sparks burn off the lamplack and record their positions on the disks by a minute spot. Now if the shot could cut all the plug-wires simultaneously, all the spots on the disks would be in a straight line, but it does not do so, and during the intervals between the cutting of successive plug-wires the disks continue to rotate, so that the line of spots forms a spiral round the cylinder represented by the disks, as is apparent on bringing the machine to rest. The shaft S is then turned so as to place each spot in succession opposite an index, and the spaces travelled by the circumferences of the disks between the spots are read off on the graduated circle. As the circumference of the disks is made to travel at the rate of 1100 inches per second, and the vernier reads to thousandths of an inch, this machine indicates portions of time rather less than a millieth of a second; it is, in fact, practically equal to hundred-thousandths of a second. A millieth is about the same fraction of a second as a second is of a fortnight. Thus

the distances between two successive spots gives the actual time occupied by the shot in moving over the portion of the bore between two corresponding successive plugs, and therefore the velocity required at some point of this travel. As the increment of velocity is constantly decreasing after the charge is fairly lighted, the point at which the measured velocity is acquired is very slightly behind the middle of the space between the two plugs. The observations are worked out, accidental error eliminated, and the results put in the form shown in column 3 of Table I.

The "crusher gauge" (fig. 8) is so closely associated in Crusher its use with the Noble chronoscope that it is convenient gauge to give a description of it here, though its indications are

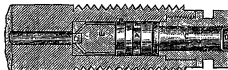


Fig. 8.—Crusher gauge.

valuable to the gunmaker rather than to the gunner. In fig. 4 are shown three plugs, A, B, and C, driven through the walls of the gun, and terminating flush with the bore. These plugs contain gauges for measuring directly the pressure of the gas on the surface of the bore. They are of the same diameter as the cutting plugs, and can be used in any of the twenty-one holes pierced in the gun. Fig. 8 shows the construction. The bottom of the plug is chambered out, and a steel anvil E is placed at the top of the chamber. Against this anvil is pressed a cylinder of pure copper A, carefully tested for quality, which is held in its place by a spring B. A piston C fits accurately the lower part of the chamber, any ingress of gas being prevented by the gas-check D, which is flush with the bore. When the gun is fired the powder-gas presses the piston hard against the copper cylinder A, which yields and becomes shorter, expanding laterally. The plug is then removed from the gun, and the nozzle unscrewed; the cylinder is extracted and measured. Its compression is compared with those given in a table constructed from experiment, and the pressure of the gas per square inch recorded. With the chronoscope the velocities are obtained directly from the times shown by the instrument to have been taken by the shot in passing over the interval between two cutting plugs. From these velocities calculation deduced the pressures required to produce the increments of velocity. These calculated pressures are compared with and confirmed by those obtained directly from the indications of the crusher gauge. Table I. shows the nature of the information obtained from

TABLE I.

Distance of bottom of bore.	Pressures.	Mean of 4 Rounds.		Difference in Velocity.
		tons per sq. in.	f.s.	
Axis		23.8		
1 ft.		23.8		
2 "		22.5	137	
3 "		19.9		538
4 "		14.3	670	244
5 "		11.6	914	127
6 "		7.0	1041	69
7 "		3.8	1110	85
8 "		2.9	1165	47
9 "			1212	40
10 "			1262	34
11 "			1298	29
12 "		1.9	1315	25
13 "		1.6	1340	21
14 "		1.3	1361	18
15 "		1.1	1376	16
16 "		0.6	1400	14

Pressures and velocities inside bore.

to produce the increments of velocity. These calculated pressures are compared with and confirmed by those obtained directly from the indications of the crusher gauge. Table I. shows the nature of the information obtained from

the combination of the two instruments, when used with a 38-ton gun, firing an 800-lb projectile, with 130 lb of 1.5-inch cubical powder.

Le Boulengé chronograph.

The last velocity is calculated from that taken by a Le Boulengé instrument outside the gun. This chronograph, the invention of an officer of the Belgian artillery, is shown in figs. 9, 10, and its mode of application in fig. 11.

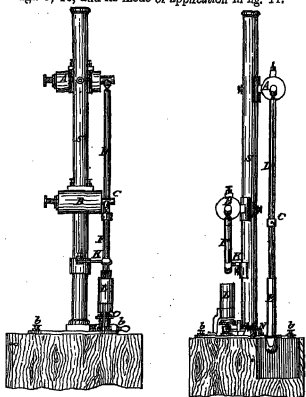


FIG. 9.—Le Boulengé Chronograph, side view. FIG. 10.—Le Boulengé Chronograph, front view.

The shot, after leaving the gun, cuts the wire of the first screen, and subsequently the wire of the second screen. The wire of the first screen conveys a current through an electromagnet A (figs. 9, 10), which then supports a cylindrical rod C. This rod is sheathed with a zinc tube D, which is renewed from time to time as required; several short zinc tubes are slipped on, instead of one long one, if no great variation in the velocities is expected, so as to save material. Directly the first screen is cut, the rod C,

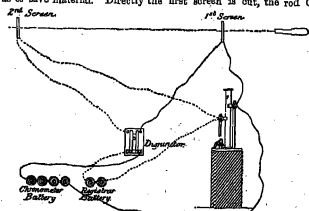


FIG. 11.—Mode of using Le Boulengé's Chronograph. which is called the *chronometer*, drops. The wire of the second screen conveys a current through another electromagnet B, which cutting the second screen, releases this short rod, which falls on a knife N, which flies forward and ticks the zinc tube covering the long rod. The nick made by the knife, if released while the long rod is still suspended, makes the zinc tube covering the long rod still suspended. The currents from both screens pass through a disjunctor by which they can be cut simultane-

ously. When this is done the long and the short rods fall at the same moment. A certain time is consumed by the short rod in reaching the disk, setting free the spring, and cutting a nick on the zinc. During this time the long rod is falling into a recess in the stand, deep enough to receive its full length. The instrument is so adjusted that the nick thus made is 4-486 inches above the zero point, corresponding to 0.15 sec. This is the disjunctor reading, and requires to be frequently corrected during experiments unless the weather is exceptionally favourable to the electrical conditions. Instead now of using the disjunctor to cut both currents simultaneously, suppose the shot to cut them in succession; then the long rod will be falling for a certain time, while the shot is travelling from one screen to the other, before the short rod is released. The longer the shot takes to travel this distance, the farther the long rod falls, and the higher up on it will be the nick made by the knife. A simple calculation connects the distance fallen through by the rod with the time occupied by the shot in travelling over the distance between the screens, and hence its velocity at the middle point is known. A graduated rule is generally supplied with each instrument, arranged for a certain distance between the screens; from this any velocity obtained can be read off at once.

The electric chronograph, invented by Captain Watkin, Watkin chronograph. R.A. is shown in figs. 12, 13, 14.

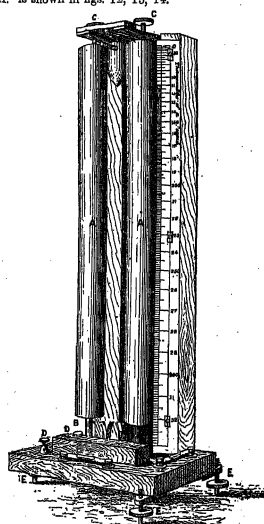


FIG. 12.—Watkin Chronograph.

Two brass cylinders A, A revolve on pivots B, B, C, C. Between them, at the top, hangs a brass weight (fig. 13), suspended freely by means of a piece of steel B, which pivots in another piece A let into the base of the weight. Two arms E enter, on falling, two V springs on the bed of the instrument, which catch the weight. A finely-pointed brass wire, CD, enclosed through part of its length in an airtight tube, which passes through the upper end of the weight from side to side; the piece B of the weight is placed between the ends A, C of the lower arms of the holder (fig. 14). The arm CD pivots on the pin F; AB is fixed. K, K is an electromagnet; on its keeper H is fixed a strong spring G, G. When this spring is placed between the ends B, D of the arms, it forces the opposite end C to

press against A and to sustain the weight by gripping the piece B (fig. 13) of the weight. In this position the keeper K is at a short distance from the pole of the electromagnet. Directly the current is allowed to circulate, the keeper is attracted down to the magnet, the spring G is pulled up by a small spring L, presses on the arm CD, the jaw AD flies open and the weight is released. The two cylinders A, A (fig. 12) form part of the circuit of a secondary induction coil. The scheme is similar to those employed for the Bushforth chronograph, they are triggered successively by the shot, which successively interrupts the primary current, and thus causes an induced current to pass through the cylinders A, A. As these,

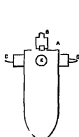


FIG. 13—Weight

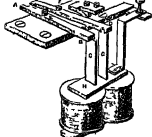


FIG. 14—Holder

however, are not in electrical connection, the current has to pass through the base wire of the weight, which is in the act of falling. The cylinders are covered with smoked paper, and the passages of the ink in and out leave minute spots showing the exact position of the weight at the moment. A number of experiments may be used, and a duplicate record is obtained in one experiment of the space fallen through by the weight, while the shot is passing each interval between the screens. As before, a simple calculation connects time and space, and in numerous cases enables the experimenter to read off the velocities without the distance between the screens.

In all these instruments slight errors exist, arising from mechanical imperfection, or from irregularity in the electric currents, still, the accuracy attained is sufficient for practical purposes, as is well shown by the following table—

TABLE II.—Velocities of *Martin Henry* Bullets fired with two different Charges, observed with several Instruments

Lo Boulenger		Watkins			
Instrument A	Instrument B	Bushforth	Right Cylinder	Left Cylinder	
1107	1103	1103	1176	1197	
1141	1140	1143	1137	1136	
1140	1143	1138	1129	1132	
1136	1139	1141	1138	1139	
1147	1145	1142	1140	1140	
Means of 5 rounds	1146	1141	1146	1140	1141
1272	1276	1269	1259	1259	
1298	1281	1269	1267	1267	
1270	1271	1277	1270	1268	
1277	1279	1287	1272	1272	
1285	1287	1280	1287	1285	
1290	1294	1280	1281	1284	
1284	1297	1283	1284	1284	
1287	1289	1291	1285	1284	
Means of 8 rounds	1277	1278	1275	1274	1273

These instruments enable the experimenter to ascertain the velocity of a projectile up to considerable distances from the gun. With little or no difficulty is found in hitting screens of moderate size at a range of 2000 yards, and, practically, the loss of velocity due to the resistance of the air can be determined for all ranges and all velocities.

It might be supposed that, having the means of acquiring this knowledge, the artillery would find little difficulty in solving the great problem of his art, which may be thus briefly stated—Given a projectile of known weight and dimensions, starting with a known velocity at a known angle of elevation in a calm atmosphere of approximately

known density, to find its range and time of flight, its velocity, direction, and position at any moment,—or, in other words, to construct its trajectory. This state of perfection has, however, not yet been reached, mathematicians have hitherto proved unable to furnish complete formulae satisfying the conditions. The resistance of the air to slow movements of, say, 10 feet per second seems to vary with the first power of the velocity. Above this ratio increases, and, as in the case of the wind, is usually reckoned to vary with the square of the velocity, beyond this it increases still farther, till at 1200 feet per second the resistance is found to vary as the cube of the velocity. The ratio of increase after this point is supposed to diminish again, but thoroughly satisfactory data for its determination do not exist. From this it would appear that, as the motion of the shot increases in rapidity, the air finds continually greater difficulty in filling up the space left by the advancing projectile, but that, when once a point is reached where the vacuum in rear is complete, further increase of speed only encounters additional difficulty in displacing the air in front. The difficulty of meeting the conditions by mathematical formulae is very great, since the velocity of the projectile changes continually, and moreover is resisted by air continually varying in density as the shot rises and falls again. It is evident that the greater the weight of a shot in proportion to the column of air displaced by it, *i.e.*, to the square of its diameter, the less effect will the resistance of the atmosphere have upon its motion, thus very heavy projectiles moving with very low velocities will be but little retarded by this cause. It is desirable, therefore, before proceeding to explain what has been done towards Trajectory the complete solution of the problem above stated, to establish the limit, and investigate the trajectory when the resistance of the air is neglected.

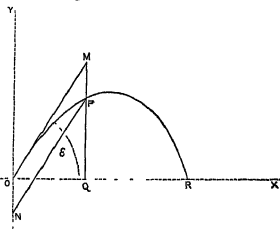


FIG. 15

Let  $v$  = muzzle velocity of projectile,  
 $e$  = angle of elevation,  
 $t$  = time of flight.

Let the projectile start with velocity  $v$  from the point O (fig. 15) in the direction OM, so that MOX is the angle of elevation. Let OM be the distance which would be traversed in a period of time  $t$ , if gravity did not act. Draw OM vertically downwards, equal to the distance through which the shot would fall in time  $t$  under the action of gravity only. Complete the parallelogram OMPN. Then P will be the position of the projectile at the end of the time  $t$ . We have then—

$$OM = vt, \text{ and } ON = MP = \frac{1}{2}gt^2$$

$$\text{Therefore } OP^2 = \frac{2v^2}{g}MP$$

Since OMP bears a constant ratio to MP, the trajectory is a parabola, having its axis vertical, and OM for a tangent. Again, the horizontal velocity =  $v \cos e$ , and remains uniform; the vertical velocity =  $v \sin e$ , and is acted against by gravity. Then—

$$x = OQ = vt \cos e \\ y = PQ = ut \sin e - \frac{1}{2}gt^2$$

Com  
 putative  
 velo  
 cities

Eliminating  $\gamma$ , we get—

$$y = \tan \epsilon - \frac{g t^2}{2 \cos \epsilon \cdot V_0^2}$$

which is the equation to the trajectory, and is a parabola. To find the range, put  $y=0$ , the two resulting values of  $t$  give the position of the gun, and the end of the range, thus,  $OR = \frac{V_0^2 \sin 2\epsilon}{g}$ .

In Robins' experiments in 1742 and subsequent years, it became apparent that up to a certain point the resistance of the air increased with an increasing power of the velocity. Mutton in 1790 placed this point at 1600 f s., and concluded that the ratio decreased after this velocity was passed.

He proposed as a formula for the resistance  $R = av + bv^2$ . General Dulon, in 1840, deduced from his experiments at Metz the formula  $R = av^2 + bv^3$ . The experiments with rifle projectiles caused on at Claves in 1861 led Professor Halls to the conclusion that the resistance of the air at practical velocities was more nearly proportional to the cube of the velocity than to any other working expression. He constructed a formula for the trajectory by empirically modifying the formula given above for the path of a projectile *in vacuo* thus—

$$y = \tan \epsilon - \frac{g x^2}{2 \cos^2 \epsilon} \left( 1 + \frac{k v}{v_0} \right),$$

from which he deduces an expression for the range which at low elevations for velocities between 800 f s. and 1400 f s. is as very nearly accurate, and which furnishes the simplest method yet devised of roughly constructing a range table—

$$r = \frac{1}{2k} \left( \sqrt{1 + 2k \frac{2g \sin 2\epsilon}{V_0^2}} - 1 \right),$$

where

$r$ —range in feet,

$v$ —velocity in feet per second,

$\epsilon$ —angle of elevation,

$k = 0.000001018 \frac{L}{W}$ ,

$L$ —diameter of projectile in inches,

$W$ —weight of projectile in pounds,

$g$ —rate of gravity—32.19

The above value of  $k$  is given for ogival heads, with hemispherical, pointed, or flat heads a different coefficient of resistance would be required. The ogival is the form which suffers least retardation from the air. The most complete and valuable series of experiments yet carried out is that of Professor Bashforth (1865 to 1870) at Woolwich and Shooburyness. He found that velocities and forms being equal and similar, the resistance varies exactly as the square of the diameter of the projectile. He further arrived at the conclusion that between 900 and 1100 f s.  $R \propto v^2$ , between 1100 and 1350 f s.  $R \propto v^2$ , and above 1350 f s.  $R \propto v^3$ . These results confirm in great measure those previously obtained, but unfortunately do not lend themselves readily to the construction of mathematical formulae.

Bashforth adopted the cubic law as his basis, as it offers the least difficulty in manipulation, and, putting  $R = cv^3$ , made the coefficient  $c$  a variable, the values of which he has tabulated. His method consists in building up the arc of the trajectory bit by bit, taking each portion so that a mean value of  $c$  for that portion may be used without important error. The path of the projectile may thus be constructed with almost any desired amount of accuracy, but the process is excessively laborious, and requires the use of a lengthy set of tables which cannot be reproduced here. For a complete knowledge of the subject the reader is referred to Mr. Bashforth's work. Mr. Bashforth, however, tabulated the loss of velocity due to the resistance of the air with regard to the time and distance of the shot's flight, and subsequent experiments carried out by the War Office in 1876-79 have now confirmed and extended the results he had previously obtained. As most of the problems of modern gunnery can be approximately solved by the use of these tables, we give in Table III an abstract with explanation.

TABLE III.—Loss of Velocity of a Projectile in Time and Distance

1 s	Feet	Seconds	1 s	Feet	Seconds	1 s	Feet	Seconds
400	5000	5 000	1100	20398	50 531	1800	24111	171 091
410	5116	5 028	1110	20674	50 600	1810	24481	171 113
420	5230	5 056	1120	20950	50 670	1820	24851	171 135
430	5343	5 084	1130	21226	50 740	1830	25221	171 157
440	5456	5 112	1140	21502	50 810	1840	25591	171 179
450	5569	5 140	1150	21778	50 880	1850	25961	171 201
460	5682	5 168	1160	22054	50 950	1860	26331	171 223
470	5795	5 196	1170	22330	51 020	1870	26701	171 245
480	5908	5 224	1180	22606	51 090	1880	27071	171 267
490	6021	5 252	1190	22882	51 160	1890	27441	171 289
500	6134	5 280	1200	23158	51 230	1900	27811	171 311
510	6247	5 308	1210	23434	51 300	1910	28181	171 333
520	6360	5 336	1220	23710	51 370	1920	28551	171 355
530	6473	5 364	1230	23986	51 440	1930	28921	171 377
540	6586	5 392	1240	24262	51 510	1940	29291	171 399
550	6699	5 420	1250	24538	51 580	1950	29661	171 421
560	6812	5 448	1260	24814	51 650	1960	30031	171 443
570	6925	5 476	1270	25090	51 720	1970	30401	171 465
580	7038	5 504	1280	25366	51 790	1980	30771	171 487
590	7151	5 532	1290	25642	51 860	1990	31141	171 509
600	7264	5 560	1300	25918	51 930	2000	31511	171 531
610	7377	5 588	1310	26194	52 000	2010	31881	171 553
620	7490	5 616	1320	26470	52 070	2020	32251	171 575
630	7603	5 644	1330	26746	52 140	2030	32621	171 597
640	7716	5 672	1340	27022	52 210	2040	32991	171 619
650	7829	5 700	1350	27298	52 280	2050	33361	171 641
660	7942	5 728	1360	27574	52 350	2060	33731	171 663
670	8055	5 756	1370	27850	52 420	2070	34101	171 685
680	8168	5 784	1380	28126	52 490	2080	34471	171 707
690	8281	5 812	1390	28402	52 560	2090	34841	171 729
700	8394	5 840	1400	28678	52 630	2100	35211	171 751
710	8507	5 868	1410	28954	52 700	2110	35581	171 773
720	8620	5 896	1420	29230	52 770	2120	35951	171 795
730	8733	5 924	1430	29506	52 840	2130	36321	171 817
740	8846	5 952	1440	29782	52 910	2140	36691	171 839
750	8959	5 980	1450	30058	52 980	2150	37061	171 861
760	9072	6 008	1460	30334	53 050	2160	37431	171 883
770	9185	6 036	1470	30610	53 120	2170	37801	171 905
780	9298	6 064	1480	30886	53 190	2180	38171	171 927
790	9411	6 092	1490	31162	53 260	2190	38541	171 949
800	9524	6 120	1500	31438	53 330	2200	38911	171 971
810	9637	6 148	1510	31714	53 400	2210	39281	171 993
820	9750	6 176	1520	31990	53 470	2220	39651	172 015
830	9863	6 204	1530	32266	53 540	2230	40021	172 037
840	9976	6 232	1540	32542	53 610	2240	40391	172 059
850	10089	6 260	1550	32818	53 680	2250	40761	172 081
860	10202	6 288	1560	33094	53 750	2260	41131	172 103
870	10315	6 316	1570	33370	53 820	2270	41501	172 125
880	10428	6 344	1580	33646	53 890	2280	41871	172 147
890	10541	6 372	1590	33922	53 960	2290	42241	172 169
900	10654	6 400	1600	34198	54 030	2300	42611	172 191
910	10767	6 428	1610	34474	54 100	2310	42981	172 213
920	10880	6 456	1620	34750	54 170	2320	43351	172 235
930	10993	6 484	1630	35026	54 240	2330	43721	172 257
940	11106	6 512	1640	35302	54 310	2340	44091	172 279
950	11219	6 540	1650	35578	54 380	2350	44461	172 301
960	11332	6 568	1660	35854	54 450	2360	44831	172 323
970	11445	6 596	1670	36130	54 520	2370	45201	172 345
980	11558	6 624	1680	36406	54 590	2380	45571	172 367
990	11671	6 652	1690	36682	54 660	2390	45941	172 389
1000	11784	6 680	1700	36958	54 730	2400	46311	172 411
1010	11897	6 708	1710	37234	54 800	2410	46681	172 433
1020	12010	6 736	1720	37510	54 870	2420	47051	172 455
1030	12123	6 764	1730	37786	54 940	2430	47421	172 477
1040	12236	6 792	1740	38062	55 010	2440	47791	172 499
1050	12349	6 820	1750	38338	55 080	2450	48161	172 521
1060	12462	6 848	1760	38614	55 150	2460	48531	172 543
1070	12575	6 876	1770	38890	55 220	2470	48901	172 565
1080	12688	6 904	1780	39166	55 290	2480	49271	172 587
1090	12801	6 932	1790	39442	55 360	2490	49641	172 609
1100	12914	6 960	1800	39718	55 430	2500	50011	172 631

The rate of loss of velocity is here inversely proportional for an ogival projectile having a weight in pounds equal to the square of its diameter in inches. Thus a 1-pound shot of 1 in diameter, starting with a velocity of 2000 f s. would retain a velocity of 400 f s. at a distance of (20,000 - 6000) = 14,000 ft after a time of (84.168 - 5.000) = 29.168 seconds. As the value of  $c^2$  decreases the resistance of the air retards the projectile less, thus if the 3-lb. shot weigh 18 lb it will overcome the resistance twice as well as the 9-pound, since its  $c^2 = 0.5$  instead of 1.0.

Example 1.—The 80-ton gun fires at a vessel in motion at a range of 2000 yds. The muzzle velocity is 1380 f s, the caliber 16 inches, and the weight of projectile 1700 lb. Required the velocity on impact, and the time of flight.

$$t_{\text{flight}} = \frac{d^2}{2v} = \frac{16^2}{2 \times 1700} = 0.1506$$

$$0.1506 \times 6000 \text{ ft.} = 0.903 \text{ ft.}$$

Selecting the  $m = 1680 \text{ f s}$  in the first column, the second column shows 23,610 ft. Subtracting,  $23,610 - 903 = 22,617$ . Running up the second column and rising proportional parts, this number corresponds to a velocity of 1383 f s, which is the velocity on impact, showing the projectile to have lost 197 f s of its velocity during flight. In the third column, opposite 22,616 feet, we find 81.928 seconds. Subtracting this from the time opposite 1680 feet, and dividing by  $\frac{d^2}{2v}$ , we have

$$t = \frac{1}{0.1506} (32.544 - 81.929) \\ = 4.084 \text{ seconds}$$

Example 2.—An observer in an entrenchment notes the flash of a hostile gun, in 31 seconds the shell (muzzle) leaves itself in the turret, followed in half a second by the report of the gun. The shell is dug out, and found to weigh 60 lb, and to measure 17 centimeters in diameter. Required the range, the muzzle velocity, and the striking velocity.

The range is here given by the velocity of sound, which travels through air at an average rate of 1140 feet per second, so that

$$r = 8.76 \times 1140 = 4276 \text{ ft.}$$

$$d^2 = \frac{(16 \text{ cm})^2}{60} = \frac{15.23 \text{ ms}}{60} = 0.5821,$$

$$\frac{d^2}{2v} = 2.918 \text{ ft.}, \text{ and } \frac{d^2}{2v} = 1.892 \text{ sec}$$

We have now to consider what muzzle velocity will cause the projectile to traverse the given distance in the given time. It must move at a mean speed of 1416 f s. Assume the muzzle velocity to be 1000 f s, corresponding to this we found 23,607 feet and 32.699 seconds. Subtracting from these the reduced range and time, we have 21,119 feet and 30.707 seconds, if the velocity has been correctly assumed, it is seen that the range and the time of flight should include the same terminal velocity. In the present instance, opposite 21,119 feet stands 1140 f s, while opposite 30.707 seconds stands 1195 f s. Thus it appears that the velocity has diminished more rapidly in the time it travelled than in the distance it travelled. This shows that it is assumed too high. Trying 1684 f s, and proceeding as before, each column indicates 1120 f s, which is therefore the terminal velocity, showing that the projectile has lost 464 f s of its speed during flight.

*Drift*.—Projectiles fired from rifled guns do not move in a vertical plane, but deviate to the right or to the left according to the direction of their rotation. All nations have adopted the right-handed twist, probably because it happened to be selected first. If the observer stands in rear of the piece and looks at the gun when fired, the projectile rotates in the same direction as the hands of a watch. It then steadily veers away to the right. The reason of this is not very clearly understood, in fact, two rival theories are put forward to account for it. If there were no resistance of the air, the path of the shot would be a parabola, and the axis of an elongated projectile would remain parallel to its original direction. The resistance offered by the air causes the axis to tend to assume a position tangential to the trajectory. On leaving the gun the projectile moves in the direction of its axis, which is also the direction of the axis of the gun. The action of gravity soon causes the path of the shot to make a small angle with the original direction of the axis, that is, the trajectory soon deviates from a straight line, the axis of the projectile is urged by the resistance of the air to accommodate itself to the new path, but as the path is constantly changing, the axis is always too late, since the rotation tends to preserve its parallelism. Thus there is always an angle—depending in amount on the velocities of rotation and translation, weight of shot, and density of the air—between the axis of the shot (AB) and the trajectory CD (fig. 16). Thus far both theories agree as to the facts, but they differ as to the deductions. The first view is that the resultant resistance of the air,

which has the effect of a force in the direction DC, tends to turn the shot about an axis passing through C, and perpendicular to the plane containing DCD, so that if the shot had no rotation, it would turn end over end. But as it has a right-handed twist, this motion is combined with that which the resistance of the air tends to impart to the shot, and the point A is therefore slightly deflected to the right at first. Continuing the action, the axis GA describes a cone about CD, rotating in the same direction as the shot rotates about its own axis. The resultant of the air's resistance tends to increase the angle BGD, and therefore the shot will have a sinuous motion, but as the first deflection

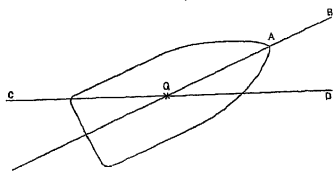


Fig. 16

is to the right, and afterwards the point is more to the right than to the left, the deviation will on the whole be to the right. The other view is that, as the axis of the shot is always directed a little above the trajectory, the resistance of the air meets the surface on the under side, on which therefore there is more pressure than on the upper side. The consequence of this is that the friction of the air with the rotating surface is greater below than above, and therefore causes the projectile to roll bodily to the right while travelling forward. The path thus curves away from the vertical plane, and the resistance of the air tends to cause the axis to lose its parallelism with that vertical plane, though it is, as before, too slow in altering its direction to

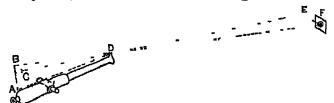


Fig. 17—Correction for deflection.

become tangential to the curve described. Crucial experiments to set this point at rest are as yet wanting. The "drift" or "deflection" is usually corrected in the Dutch service by inclining the tangent sight. The result of this is that as the range increases, the higher the sight is raised, and the farther is the eye-notch to the left of the vertical plane containing the axis of the gun. In the German service the tangent sight is placed vertically in the gun, and the deflection is allowed for by a graduated sliding leaf in the head. The same arrangement is used in those British guns, as the howitzers, which fire variable charges, as the slope of the tangent sight will accurately set only one muzzle velocity.

To ascertain the correct slope, the actual deflection is determined for each gun on the practice ground at various ranges with a vertical sight; then, in fig. 17, AD is the line of sight when the axis of the gun is horizontal. CD is the line of sight with a vertical tangent sight set at the angle of elevation ADC required for the range DP. Since the projectile deflects to the right, it is necessary that the line CD should point to B in order to hit F. This is accomplished by inclining the tangent sight AB, so that DC shall give the requisite allowance. The relation is thus established. By similar triangles,



BC = EF, then BC = AC tan  $\angle$ AC, and CD = AC cos  $\angle$ ADC, so  
 (CD = FD) Putting the angle ADC (the elevation) =  $\phi$ , the angle BAC = EF (the deflection) =  $\delta$ , and DB (the range) =  $r$ , we have tan  $\phi = \frac{\delta}{r \cos \phi}$ .

The action of the powder charge, the travel of the projectile along the bore, the rifling, and, speaking generally, what takes place inside a gun when fired, are matters specially connected with the designing and manufacture of ordnance, and are therefore treated under GUNMAKING.

**Projectiles**—The requirements of modern artillery have necessitated many complications in the preparation and use of projectiles, which now vary greatly in their nature and in the purposes for which they are employed. A general description of the several kinds supplied to European armies will be found under **ARMYARTILLERY**, and but few remarks will be required to connect them with the guns for which they are intended. Smooth-bored ordnance use solid round shot and case, common shell, and diaphragm shrapnel shell. Solid shot are used against masonry, wooden shipping, and masses of men. They were at one time fired red hot at shipping. Roughly, the cube of the diameter in inches multiplied by 0.135 gives the weight of the shot in pounds.

Case shot consists of iron balls packed in iron or tin cylindrical cases. They are effective up to about 350 yards against troops, boats, and rigging, and are especially suitable for flanking ditches. Common shell are completely filled with powder, and are burst in flight by time fuzes, or, on striking, by percussion fuzes. They are used against men in masses, buildings, works, and material generally. Diaphragm shrapnel shell contain a small bursting charge and a number of balls. They are fitted with a time fuse which explodes the charge when they near the object, so that the released bullets fly forward. They are very destructive against troops. In addition to the above projectiles, incendiary shells, called arcesces, filled with a violently burning composition, are thrown into villages and amongst shipping. Ground light balls cast among the enemy's working parties at night disclose their position. Parachute light balls contain a parachute tightly folded up, and a cup of illuminating composition; they are fired with a fuse timed to burst in the air, and they then remain suspended for a time, throwing a light down on the enemy's working parties.

The great advantage of rifling was long recognized in small arms and sporting pieces before it was extended to ordnance. The first rifled arms threw bullets which, except for certain purposes designed to fit the grooves of the barrel, were spherical. These guns surpassed smooth-bores in accuracy, but it was not till the introduction of elongated projectiles that a distinct gain in power was recognized. The gain in accuracy is due in great measure to the superior correctness with which the ball is centred in the bore by the action of the grooves, while the rotation imparted to it annuls or greatly lessens the disturbing effect of the pressure of the air on surface inequalities, or of variations in the position of the centre of gravity. An elongated shot is also enabled to travel point first, or nearly so, and as the resistance of the air depends upon the area of the transverse section, a far greater weight can be given to the long than to the round shot without increasing the resistance. Thus, in addition to greater accuracy, rifling confers a flatter trajectory and greater penetration. The elongated form permits a head of the best shape, an increase in the contents of the shell, and the use of fuzes which explode when the point strikes an object. The projectiles used with rifled guns are case shot, common shell, shrapnel shell, and Palliser shell. The case shot differ little from those made for smooth-bore ordnance. Common shell are generally

from 2½ to 3 calibres in length. They are designed to contain as much powder as possible, consistently with shell strength of wall to resist the shock of firing. Their effect is almost entirely due to explosion, velocity has little to do with it beyond conferring range and penetration. Common shells are generally fuzed with percussion fuzes. They are effective for breaching, for setting fire to buildings, against troops if not much scattered, and especially against wooden or thinly plated vessels. The introduction of iron-clad ships is almost entirely due to the terribly destructive fire of shells. Shrapnel shell are filled with bullets, and shrapnel have a bursting charge only sufficient to open the case and release the contents, which then fly forward with the velocity possessed by the projectile before breaking up. The bullets and fragments very speedily lose this velocity after separation. It is therefore most important to judge the range correctly and to form an accurate estimate of the practice, so that the result of each round may guide the aiming and timing of the next. When the shrapnel is burst in the air by a time fuse, it is exceedingly difficult to judge its precision by the puff of smoke. The splashes or puffs of dust of the bullets striking the ground should therefore be carefully looked for. When the shrapnel is burst on striking the ground by a percussion fuse, it is much easier to estimate the accuracy of the shooting, and it is common therefore to get the range by firing a round or two with percussion fuzes before setting the time fuse. If the ground is hard and the distance of the enemy small that the shell strikes at but a small angle of descent, percussion fuzes generally burst the shrapnel better than time fuzes, which, in their turn, have the advantage at long ranges and over soft ground. For field service time-fuzed shrapnel should be burst at from 50 to 100 yards in front of the object, and about 10 to 15 feet above the ground. The cone of dispersion of the bullets and fragments is considered to be so proportioned that the diameter at any point of the axis is one-third of the distance of that point from the burst or apex. To get satisfactory results from time fuzes it is necessary to have a gun which shoots with great regularity, a fuse composition which burns evenly, and an accurate mode of setting the fuse. Of late years improvements in powder and design of ordnance have rendered the velocities practically uniform. The fuzing composition is somewhat liable to deterioration, but is tolerably satisfactory, and a new fuse gauge has just been introduced which can be set to any desired degree of accuracy. As the power of shrapnel shell is entirely due to the velocity possessed by the bullets when fired from the envelope, it is of paramount importance in long-range firing that the shell should start with a high velocity and retain as much of it as possible. It is considered that with field guns the velocity of the projectile at the moment of bursting should not fall below 800 f.s., otherwise the contents will have a much diminished effect. The bullets themselves should retain a velocity of about 500 f.s. on striking to be thoroughly effective. With the more modern field guns the effective range of shrapnel extends up to about 3000 yards, with heavy guns to 4000 or even 5000 yards.

Palliser shells are made of a mixture of selected brands of iron, and are cast in moulds so constructed that the piercing body of the head is in contact with iron and that of the shell with sand. The head is thus "chilled," as the rapid carrying off of the heat by the iron mould causes the particles of the metal to dispose themselves rigidly, and confers intense hardness, which property is essential for the penetration of iron plates. The head is of the ogival shape, that being found most effective in combining strength with sharpness (fig. 18). It is a moot point whether projectiles of hardened steel are more effective than those of chilled iron against armour. Probably the steel can get through a

Smooth  
bore  
section

Rifled  
projectile

greater thickness, but the damage done by the fragments of the Palliser after perforation is more serious. The cost of the steel shell is about five times that of the iron ones. The bodies are cast in sand, because extreme hardness is not there required, and a sounder casting is thus obtained. No fuses are used with these shells; they are burst by the shock of impact on armour which explodes the powder charge. It is doubtful if they would explode on striking iron vessels not armour-plated, and they would fail to burst on striking wooden ships. They are effective in destroying masonry, and have been driven through great thicknesses of stone. They hold about a quarter as much powder as common shell of the same diameter. The greatest penetration of armour yet known was obtained by the 80-ton gun at Shoeburyness in 1877. The target consisted of four 8-inch wrought-iron plates, sandwiched with three 8-inch layers of teak, the whole put together with immense strength. The projectile perforated three plates and the teak, digging its nose about half-way into the last plate, which was much cracked and bulged. The 100-ton gun has perforated with ease 32 inches of solid wrought iron plate strongly backed, but failed to drive a hole through a similar target when the plate was of steel. Very recently extraordinary penetration has been obtained by a 6-inch 70-pounder made by Sir W. G. Armstrong & Co. Fired with a velocity of nearly 3000 f. s., this small projectile pierced about 11 inches of wrought iron. The subject of penetration is treated under GUNMAKING.

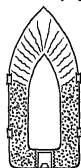


FIG. 18.  
Palliser shell.

A description of some of the fuses and firing tubes used in gunnery will be found under AMMUNITION. The general principle guiding the selection of time or percussion fuses is that when a shell is required to burst in the air a time fuse is employed, when on striking an object a percussion fuse is chosen. In muzzle-loading guns (not using gas-checks), time fuses are ignited by the flash of discharge; otherwise the shock is taken advantage of to light the composition by exploding a detonator. Percussion fuses are sometimes found to act too rapidly; where it is desired that penetration to a certain depth in earth or other material shall take place before explosion, it is found necessary to slow the fuse by interposing a small column of composition, burning for, say, a quarter of a second, between the detonator and the bursting charge. In firing a heavy shell with high velocity at a weak vessel, the resistance of the side is so slight that it may happen that the fuse either fails to act (the shell not being sufficiently retarded to set it in action), or explodes the shell after it has passed through both sides. To meet this case a specially sensitive and rapidly-acting fuse has been devised.

Guns were formerly primed with loose powder and fired by a match, neat by common quick tubes filled with composition and ignited by a porifery, then by detonating tubes exploded by a hammer. Now friction tubes have superseded these methods for ordinary service. When it is desired to fire a gun from a distance, or to fire a number of guns absolutely at the same moment, Abel's electric tubes are employed. In them two fine copper wires pass down through the head, insulated by gutta serena, except at the ends, which are separated by  $\frac{1}{16}$ th of an inch of a composition of subphosphide and subarsenide of copper with chloride of potash. The other ends of the wires are in contact with the copper lining of two holes in the head. The wires from the battery are placed in these holes; when the current passes, the composition is heated to ignition and explodes the tube.

*Service of Ordnance.*—The general principles guiding the

employment and manipulation of artillery are applicable to the schemes of warfare of all civilized nations. Slight differences exist in calibre and weights; but it may be taken that the considerations which regulate the service of English guns have the same force elsewhere. The details of manufacture, the systems of loading, and the methods of rifling, are the chief points regarding which artillerymen differ; these matters are treated under GUNMAKING. Of two pieces constructed with equal skill to perform the same kind of work, the heavier will always be the more powerful. Thus weight is the chief controlling element in the employment of guns, though cost and convenience of manipulation have often to be taken into account. The artillery of the present day is the outcome of a long series of improvements, and the whole system of this important arm bears traces of frequent modification and continual compromise. The first introduction of firearms appears to have taken place in England in the reign of Edward III. On the Continent it was probably somewhat earlier, but the actual date and the circumstances attending their introduction are involved in obscurity. It is said that cannon were used in the English expedition against Scotland in 1337, and at the battle of Crecy in 1346. In 1560 there were four copper guns in the Tower. For about two centuries cannon continued to be manufactured of copper, brass, or bronze, good castings of which were made long before the art of smelting iron ores was perfected. In the early part of the 16th century guns were sometimes made of wrought iron plates put together longitudinally and hooped with wrought iron. In 1545 cast iron ordnance were manufactured in England, and supplanted pieces of all other materials for a time. The growing needs of warfare, however, soon demanded guns possessed of fair mobility to accompany armies in the field, and the cast iron pieces used being found excessive in cumbersome, bronze was once again resorted to for field artillery. From about the middle of the 17th century till the introduction of rifled cannon, all the heavier nature of ordnance—fortress, siege, and ship guns—were made of cast iron; and all the lighter—field and boat guns—of bronze. In 1717 the bronze foundry was established at Woolwich, and most of the smooth-bored field pieces, howitzers, and mortars used in the service were made there. The heavy cast iron guns were supplied by contractors, and proved by Government officials. The long peace which succeeded the Napoleonic wars was highly favourable to the progress of gunnery, but the great developments took place in the arts and sciences, so that, on the breaking out of the Crimean War, the latest discoveries in metallurgy and the excellence attained in machinery at once enabled inventors to make a great advance in artillery. At the transition period, a few wrought iron smooth-bored, throwing spherical shot of 150 and 100 lb, were manufactured to overcome the resistance of iron plates then recently introduced for armouring ships. These pieces were speedily discarded for rifled guns; and practically it may be said that the adoption of steel and wrought iron for guns coincided with the change from smooth-bored to rifles, both steps of progress being thoroughly established about 1860. In spite of the great superiority of the new ordnance, it cannot be said that the old pieces are yet superseded; vast numbers of them exist over all parts of the world, and often form the only defence. Even the fortifications in England are still largely armed Smooth-bored ordnance. with them on land fronts; and though they are gradually disappearing, they yet claim notice. Bronze guns are now obsolete in the British service. Figs 19 to 24 show typical kinds of cast iron ordnance. These denominated according to the weight of their projectile are made strong enough to fire solid shot or shell; those called by the diameter of the bore are shell only. It must be remembered that, with spherical projectiles, the solid must be heavier than the

hollow kinds, which need not be the case with rifled ordnance, as the projectile may be of any length. The guns are used for direct fire, the howitzers for curved fire, the mortars for vertical fire, *i.e.*, they are set at 45° elevation, and the requisite range attained by varying the charge of powder, instead of firing at various degrees of elevation, as with guns and howitzers.

The old field smooth bores were fairly effective up to 1000 or 1200 yards, and so established a great superiority over the smooth bore musket, but as soon as the rifled musket was generally adopted, an advance in artillery power became necessary if the arm was to retain its position in the scale of efficiency. After the Crimean War Napoleon III rifled his bronze field guns on Treuille de Beaulieu's system, and the new pieces exhibited great merit at Magenta and Solferino in 1859. England, and indeed every

the Continental powers for the most part endeavoured to improve their methods of breech-loading. In 1872 the British wrought iron and steel muzzle-loading 9-pounder of 8 cwt had been introduced into the service,

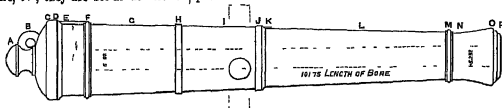


Fig. 19—18 pounder Gun. A, button (ascible), B, breeching loop (do), C, breech, D, hoop ring and ogive; E, vent field, F, vent field astragal and fillets, G, 1st reinforcement, H, 1st reinforcement ring, I, 2d reinforcement, J, 2d reinforcement ring and ogive, K, pritch for sighting, L, chase, M, muzzle astragal and fillets, N, neck, O, point of muzzle, P, muzzle noddings.

and the 16-pounder of 12 cwt, of similar construction, was being brought forward. Against these guns the Prussian 6 cwt field breech-loader had no chance. Its lightness was almost its only merit. Throwing common shell with percussion fuzes (which were useless on soft ground), having but a poor muzzle velocity, and suffering much from retardation by the air, its effect was feeble compared with that of the British 9-pounders, which threw with 200 f s more velocity a time-fused shrapnel of excellent construction, while the 16 pounder, though not equally formidable with the 9-pounder in the arrangement of its projectile, yet by sheer power and weight of metal surpassed in deadly effect every field gun in existence. England's field artillery was undoubtedly the most powerful known at that period. No one was more alive to this fact, or more dissatisfied with

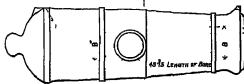


Fig. 20—8 inch Howitzer

European power, was busily engaged in experimenting during this period. The early Armstrong guns in England, Broadwell's and Krupp's in Prussia, and imitations of the French plan in other countries, speedily caused field artillery to regain its place in war. The northern kingdoms of Denmark and Norway and Sweden, favoured by specially

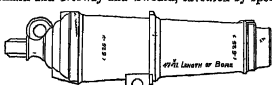


Fig. 21—32 pound Cannonade

good iron ores, and free from the immediate alarm of war, retained cast iron as the material for light ordnance. Prussia had already begun to use steel for smooth-bores, and naturally adhered to it for rifled guns, while the coil system brought forward by Armstrong was found cheap and enduring in England. The new Prussian guns were breech-loaders, constructed on the double-wedge system, they proved unsatisfactory, and since the Franco-Prussian war of 1870-71 have been abandoned in favour of a single-wedge system of great neatness and efficiency. The Armstrong guns were also breech-loaders, and when tested by land and sea, on actual service in China, New Zealand, and Japan, proved to be very powerful when compared with the old smooth-bores, but also exhibited many defects of construction. At this time no thoroughly successful breech-loader had been invented, and England reverted to muzzle-loading, while

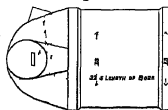


Fig. 22—18 inch Mortar

Rifled ordnance

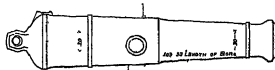


Fig. 23—10 inch Shell Gun

it, than the Germans. Their great gunmaker, Krupp, forthwith improved his breech-loading fittings, and instituted series upon series of experiments till he produced two guns—one for horse artillery, and one for field batteries, also horsed—which were an enormous advance on the weapons field previously employed against the French. The lighter gun weighs 7 cwt, and throws a shell of 11 lb weight, with a muzzle velocity of 1525 f s, the heavier weighs 9 cwt, and throws a shell of 17 lb weight, with a muzzle velocity of 1400 f s. These are figures indicating power not to be attained by the English 8 cwt gun, or even the newer pattern of 6 cwt throwing a 9 lb shell with a muzzle velocity of 1380 f s, and the 12-cwt gun, throwing a 16 lb shell with a muzzle velocity of 1360 f s. The immediate consequence of the introduction of these improved German pieces was

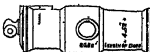


Fig. 24—Coehorn Howitzer

the instituting of a series of experiments in England which resulted in the production of a muzzle-loading field gun, weighing 8 cwt, and throwing a 13-lb projectile with a muzzle velocity of 1560 f s. Shrapnel shell from this gun will retain velocity over 800 f s (the speed below which they cease to possess high efficiency) up to 2500 yards range. In this new gun advantage is taken of all the latest improvements, such as an enlarged powder chamber, increased length of bore, polycoore rifling, rotation by gas-check, and powder specially adapted to the piece. Although the introduction of this field gun once more places English light-artillery in the van, further progress is near. Sir W

G. Armstrong & Co. are now (1879) experimenting with field guns, both muzzle and breech-loading, yielding velocities of 2000 f. s., and no doubt a fresh development of the new principles of air-spacing and chambering (already initiated in the Royal Gun Factories) is at hand (see GUNMAKING).

The history of the progress of siege guns would be in a Siege great measure a repetition of that of the field artillery guns. Briefly, the smooth-bored siege train of cast-iron 18-pounders and 8-inch howitzers was replaced in 1859-63 by one composed of 20-pounders, 40-pounders (figs. 25-28), and 7-inch rifled breech-loading pieces, with certain howitzers which

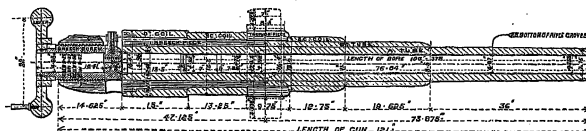


FIG. 25.—40-pounder Armstrong Rifled Breech-loader.

never earned adoption. Subsequently the breech-loaders have been gradually ousted by 25-pounder, 40-pounder, and 64-pounder muzzle-loaders, with 8-inch, 6.6-inch, and 6.3-inch howitzers, new patterns of which latter pieces have just passed their early trials. The 64-pounders were introduced in 1864. For naval purposes the calibre was chosen so that

but recently longer and more powerful shell-guns have been tried, throwing heavier projectiles with greater accuracy. In these new pieces polygroove rifling with gas-check rotation affords a hope that the necessary precision may be attained.

The "converted guns" must not be passed over, since they are largely employed to arm our land fronts and to provide cheap and efficient pieces for practice by the reserve forces. When first elongated rifled projectiles were introduced, a great many methods of strengthening the old cast iron ordnance were proposed. The most satisfactory was that put forward by Palliser, and consisted of lining bored-out cast iron shells with wrought iron tubes. Some of the smaller man-of-war carry these pieces, but the great majority are used only for the secondary purposes above mentioned. The 32-pounders of 58 cwt., and the 8-inch shell-guns of 65 cwt., have thus become 64-pounders, and the 68-pounder of 95 cwt. has become an 80-pounder.

Important as are the land-service pieces of the army to England, yet, viewing her naval supremacy as one of the chief sources of her greatness, we must consider heavy ship and coast-defence ordnance to take the first place in modern gunnery. The contest between guns and armour has now continued with scarcely any intermission for upwards of twenty years, during which time the armour has increased in thickness from 4 to 24 inches, and the guns from 68-pounders to 2000-pounders; that is, from the most powerful of the old cast-iron smooth-bore to the 100-ton gun. The first armour-piercing rifled guns were the 7-inch Armstrong breech-loaders, but their supremacy was of short piercing duration. They were the heaviest made on that system, and were speedily succeeded by far more powerful muzzle-loaders. In 1867 8-inch and 9-inch guns had already been introduced. The 9-inch Woolwich rifled gun of 12 tons was tried in competition with the xv-inch American smooth-bore, which weighed nearly half as much again, against armour. The British piece gained a decisive victory. In 1868 it was decided to introduce a 10-inch gun of the same character. Since that time progress has been continual, and the latest productions of the three great gun-producing establishments of the world are the 71-ton steel breech-loader, recently tested, of the German maker (Krupp), the 80-ton muzzle-loader of Woolwich, and the 100-ton muzzle-loader of the Elswick firm (Sir W. G. Armstrong & Co.).

Tables IV. and V. show all the principal rifled guns in the land and sea services of Great Britain. It has always been an object with the authorities to assimilate the guns of the two services as far as their respective requirements will permit, and so to avoid multiplication of stores at the numerous home and foreign stations where supplies are made; but still it will be observed that considerable differ-

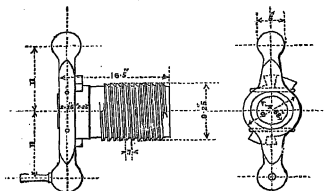


FIG. 26.—40-pounder Breech Screw.

32-pounder round shot could be fired from it on emergency. The 40-pounders are stronger, and fire much heavier charges than their breech-loading congeners. The 25-pounder was introduced in 1874 to supersede the 20-pounder breech-loader for light siege trains, and as a gun of position. Ever since 1853 experiments have been carried out by the Eng-

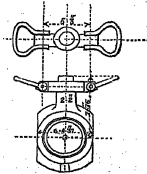


FIG. 27.—40-pounder Vent Piece.

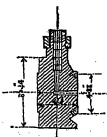


FIG. 28.—40-pounder Vent Piece (section).

lish and other nations for the improvement of mortars and howitzers, first in a smooth-bored and then in a rifled state. These experiments are still in progress, and it cannot be said that the art of throwing heavy shell at high angles has as yet arrived at perfection. In 1872 short pieces throwing shells of 180 lb and 64 lb were adopted,

ances exist, and, judging from the progress of events, it appears likely that these differences will increase, because, as the science of gunnery becomes developed, each new kind of gun is more exactly fitted to the performance of the special work for which it is intended, and therefore less suitable for other purposes.

TABLE IV—Land Service Rifled Guns

Land service rifled guns	Nature, Weight, Calibre, &c.	Weight of heaviest Projectile	Max. Service Muzzle Velocity	Class	Penetration at 1000 yds. About	Bursting charge of con. shell About	How Mounted
	Muzzle loading	lb	f s		ins	lb oz	
	17" 75 of 100 tons	2000	1800		80 0	66 0	<i>En barbette</i>
	16" 0 of 80 tons	1700	1600		93 0	58 0	In turrets
	15" 6 of 38 tons	800	1430		16 0	43 0	In casemates, on sliding carriages, on traversing platform or turrets
	12" 0 of 35 tons	700	1340	Armour-piercing guns	13 7	40 0	<i>En barbette</i> on ditto, ditto
	12" 0 of 25 tons	600	1300		10 8	38 0	In casemates on do, and in <i>barbette</i>
	11" 0 of 25 tons	525	1215		11 0	30 0	Do do do
	10" 0 of 18 tons	400	1305		11 2	20 0	Do do do
	9" 0 of 12 tons	250	1420		8 8	16 0	Do do do
	7" 0 of 7 tons	115	1600			9 0	<i>En barbette</i> , sliding carriages, on traversing platform
	7" 0 of 82 cwt, breech loading	90	1105	Armour-piercing projectiles not supplied for these and smaller guns		6 0	Do do
	80 pr (6" 3) 5 tons	80	1240			9 0	Sliding carriages on traversing platform
	61 pr (6" 3) { 71 cwt & 68 cwt }	64	{ 1280 } { 1245 }	Land-front (forward) guns		7 0	Striding and Moncrieff carriages
	61 pr (6" 3) 64 cwt <sup>1</sup>	90	1305			7 0	Travelling carriages (sigs)
	40 pr (4" 76) 35 cwt	40	1380		23 to 25 ft from point of shaft to muzzle of gun	3 0	Do (sigs and batteries of position)
	26 pr (4" 0) 18 cwt	25	1350			3 0	Do do
	8" 0 howz 45 cwt	150	720	Steppe train guns		11 0	Do (sigs), also on beds for siege
	8" 0 howz 70 cwt <sup>1</sup>	230	675				
	170	940					
	6" 6 howz 26 cwt <sup>1</sup>	135	610				
	95	845					
	6" 3 howz 18 cwt	64	590			7 0	Travelling carriages (sigs)
	18 pr (3" 6) 19 cwt	16	1355	Field guns	About 23 ft from point of shaft to muzzle of gun	1 2	Field gun carriages, with limbers
	12 pr (3" 0) 8 cwt	13	1500			0 14	Do do
	9 pr (3" 0) 6 cwt	9	1390			0 7	Do do
	7 pr (3" 0) 200 lb	7	970	Mountain train guns		0 6	Mountain service, on travelling carriages
	7 pr (3" 0) 150 lb	7	075			0 6	Do do

<sup>1</sup> Special projectiles for penetrating masonry.

TABLE V—Sea Service Rifled Guns

Sea service rifled guns	Nature, Weight, Calibre	Weight of heaviest Projectile	Max. Service Muzzle Velocity	Penetration at 1000 yds. About	Bursting charge of con. shell About	How Mounted
	Muzzle loading	lb	f s	ins	lb oz	
	16" 0 of 80 tons	1700	1600	28 0	56 0	In turrets
	15" 6 of 38 tons	500	1420	16 0	43 0	In turrets, loading by hydraulic machinery
	12" 0 of 35 tons	700	1340	13 7	40 0	In turrets, loading by hand gear
	12" 0 of 25 tons	600	1300	10 8	38 0	Do, do, and broadside
	11" 0 of 25 tons	525	1215	11 0	30 0	Broadside, revolving, and on traversing platform
	10" 0 of 18 tons	400	1303	11 2	20 0	Broadside, revolving, in turrets, and gunboats
	9" 0 of 12 tons	250	1420	8 8	16 0	Broadside and revolving
	8" 0 of 9 tons	180	1415	7 7	14 0	Broadside
	7" 0 of 64 tons	115	1525			Broadside
	7" 0 of 90 cwt	116	1250			Broadside
	64 pr (8" 3) of 51 cwt	64	1385		7 0	Broadside
	64 pr (8" 3) of 71 cwt	64	1280		7 0	Broadside
	9 pr (8" 0) of 8 cwt	9	1380		0 7	Boat
	9 pr (8" 0) of 6 cwt	9	1235		0 7	Boat
	7 pr (8" 0) of 200 lb	7	970		0 6	Boat
	Breech loading					
	20 pr (3" 75) of 13 cwt	21	1000		1 2	Gun vessel and upon decks of iron clads against torpedo vessels
	12 pr (3" 0) of 8 cwt	12	1170		0 8	Boat, nearly obsolete
	8 pr (3" 0) of 6 cwt	9	1060		0 6	Do

Table IV shows five distinct classes of rifled ordnance. 1. The heavy *armour-piercing* guns (figs 29, 30) are mounted round our coasts in casemates and barbette batteries. Their

function is to protect the British shores from the attack of nonclad ships, wooden vessels, and boats. They are secondarily provided with Palliser projectiles, common shells, and

a small proportion of shrapnel shell. In order to strike vessels steaming past at high speed, great accuracy, combined with rapidity of fire, is requisite. The guns are

aimed either by eye or map, according to the nature of the coast. In the former case, the detachment commander estimates the range, gives the necessary elevation by means

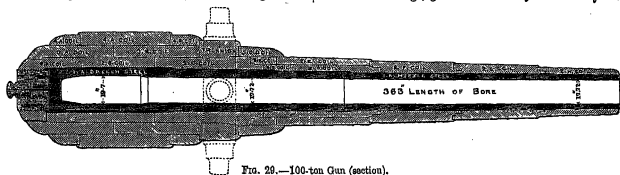


FIG. 29.—100-ton Gun (section).

of the tangent sight, directs the line of fire according to his judgment, jumps down and gives the word to fire—allowing for the vessel's motion and the time of the projectile's flight.

The map system has been recently perfected by Captain Watkin's R.A.

Watkin's  
map  
system.

In the whole navigable front commanded by the battery is plotted down in small squares numbered and lettered. Tables of the distances of the centres of these squares, the degree of training on the traversing are required to lay the gun on the desired square, together with the actual elevation necessary to deposit the shot in that square, are constructed for each group of guns.

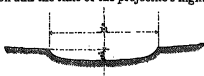


FIG. 30.—100-ton Gun (section of grooves).

Tables of the distances of the centres of these squares, the degree of training on the traversing are required to lay the gun on the desired square, together with the actual elevation necessary to deposit the shot in that square, are constructed for each group of guns.

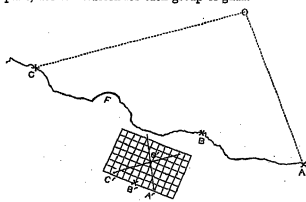


FIG. 31.—Watkin Position-finder.

In fig. 31 F is a fort defending the channel; ABFO the line of shore; O the object to be hit, a vessel passing. A, B, and C are stations of observation. In a convenient spot the commanding officer of the artillery in the fort places the map, over which play two arms A'O', C'O' kept constantly parallel to the two lines of sight A'O, C'O, by means of mechanism actuated by currents of electricity transmitted by a cable connecting A and A', C and C'. As A'C' represents, on the scale of the map, the distance A'O, the junction O' represents on the same scale the position and distance of the object O. Tell-tales are distributed in the casemates, which constantly exhibit the number of the square over which the vessel is passing, showing the position of the ship, so that when the gun, or group of guns, are loaded, they can be either laid in the ordinary way, taking the range from the tables, or, if the object is invisible from the casemate, by trailing the gun round till the number of degrees indicated by the tell-tale agrees with the reading on the traversing arc, and giving elevation to suit the range. The arcs showing the direction of the guns are so arranged that guns

trailed to any given number of degrees are parallel with each other. Supposing that from smoke or other cause the object cannot be distinguished from C, an observer is placed at B, and the arm is shifted from C' to B'. The practical working of the system is as follows. The commanding officer watches the course of a vessel as indicated to him by the arms on the map, the observers at A and C constantly following the centre of the object with their glasses. He telegraphs to the battery orders to load and lay, in accordance with the instructions given for each square of the map, and transmitted to the tell-tales. As the vessel passes over the square for which the guns are laid, the commanding officer can fire electrically the group of guns by pressing a key with his finger, or he may direct each detachment to keep up independent practice, laying in accordance with the indications sent by him through the tell-tale. The arrangements for exploding submarine mines or fixed torpedoes, where hostile vessels are passing close to them, are somewhat of the same character as those above described.

2. The *land-front guns* of fortresses shown in the table *Guns of* are intended to overpower and quell the fire of any pieces *defence* which can be brought against them by a besieger. They are very largely supplemented in most fortified places by a number of the old smooth-bored guns and caronades, which are well adapted for the use of case shot at close quarters, for sweeping the glacis, and for the defence of ditches. The rifled guns throw common shell in the siege works, and where possible among the enemy's material. They harness his working parties and reliefs with shrapnel, and endeavour to cut down his parapets and dismount his artillery by direct fire.

3. *Siege-train guns* accompany an army on a campaign *Guns of* where great mobility is not required, and where it is necessary to reduce fortified places. They should be the most powerful pieces which the means of transport will permit. In the more civilized parts of the world, where roads and climate are favourable, it is generally considered that about 70 cwt. is the heaviest weight of pieces that can be carried with an army. In less favourable countries it is frequently impossible to transport more than half that weight. The early rifled siege-train guns were grouped into two classes. A unit of the heavy train comprised—

64 prs. of 64 cwt.	8
40 „ of 35 „	8
8 „ howitzers of 46 cwt.	14 (figs. 82, 88).

A unit of the light train comprised—

40 prs. of 85 cwt.	10
25 „ of 18 „	10
8 „ howitzers of 18 cwt.	10

Lately 8-6" howitzers of 70 cwt. and 6-9" howitzers of 85 cwt. have been introduced, but their allotment has not yet been settled. Siege guns are supplied with special shell,

somewhat similar to Palliser projectiles, for penetrating masonry, also with common and shrapnel shell. The howitzers rarely use shrapnel shell. On first attacking a fortress at a long range, the duty of the guns is to cut down the defender's projectiles, dismount his artillery, dismantle his ramparts, and subdue his fire, so as to facilitate the con-

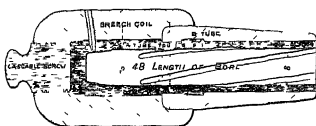


FIG. 32—8 inch Howitzer, 46 cwt (section)

struction of batteries, nearer the place. In the meanwhile the howitzers lob heavy shell into the works, and bombard the town, if necessary. As soon as practicable, breaching batteries are thrown up in such spots as may be found suitable for the attack of a weak point. It is rarely possible to breach by direct fire in the case of works of modern

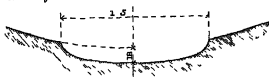


FIG. 33—8 inch Howitzer (section of groove)

design. Here it is that curved fire is so effective, and here it is that the accuracy of lifted howitzers becomes so necessary. In order to make a practicable breach up which an assault can be delivered, the masonry at B (fig. 31) must be cut away, and owing to the height of the cover at A the fire must be enved to reach a point sufficiently low. Direct fire—*à la plan joint*, as the French express it—would strike too high up. Sometimes a work is so constructed that it is necessary to strike a point half-way down the masonry revetment to form a practicable breach. As it is desirable to strike with as much force as possible in breaching, it is evident that where the profile of the work requires the angle of descent of the shell to be considerable, it is necessary

Rever-  
ing

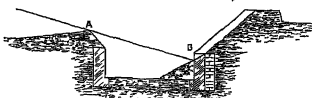


FIG. 31—Profile of Work.

to select a spot for the battery at the longest range compatible with accuracy. For, given a certain angle of descent, the longer the trajectory (*ceteris paribus*) terminating in that angle, the greater will be the remaining velocity. Sometimes the guns of the siege train are employed with an army in the field to hold certain valuable ground against attack. They are then called guns of position, and are so placed as to command the approaches most effectively, and yet, if possible, to be dragged away at the last moment in case of retreat. They will usually fire shrapnel shell when thus employed.

4 The all-important qualities of field guns (figs. 35, 36, 37) are mobility and shrapnel throwing power. They must be able to make long marches rapidly, to change position with celerity, to crush troops and the enemy's artillery with

accurate, well sustained fire at high velocities, and to support rough usage without detriment to their efficiency. They are supplied with shrapnel and common shell, and case shot, of which shrapnel form by far the largest proportion.

5 The mountain guns are both 7-pounders, they fit. Mount the same shell, but the heavier one uses a 12 oz. cartridge, tan while 6 ounces is as much as can be fired from the lighter guns.

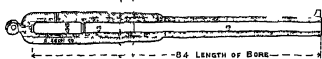


FIG. 35—13 pounds of 8 cwt (section)

one. Both guns are intended for mule transport, one mule taking the gun, another the carriage, and a third the wheels, &c., but at the Cape of Good Hope the heavier 7-pounder is mounted on a light high field-carriage for transport as well as for firing, while in Ashantee the lighter 7-pounders were dragged on a kind of sledge. The lighter gun is tolerably effective for nearly a mile, and the heavier for about a mile and a half. Some jointed guns, proposed by



FIG. 36—13 pounds of 8 cwt (front view)

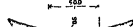


FIG. 37—13 pounds of 8 cwt (section of groove)

an artillery officer, are now under trial. They are composed of two pieces screw ed together, and, being carried separately, form a gun of about twice the weight of the ordinary mountain gun. Great increase of power is expected from this method of construction. Mountain guns are principally employed to throw time fuzed shrapnel at troops, and percussion-fuzed common shell into hill works and woods occupied by the enemy.

In Table V the principal sea-coast and naval guns are shown. These kinds of work are performed by them, viz., to pierce gun emplacements and anchored forts, to attack unarmoured vessels, and to keep up a fire on troops on shore or on approaching boats. The heavy armour-piercing guns are well provided with common shell, as well as with chilled projectiles, so as to perform the first and second duties, but they have a very small proportion of shrapnel shell, which is intended to be used by them against troops or boats only on emergency. The 7-inch and 6.1-pounder guns are supposed to be quite sufficient in ordinary cases for the second and third duties, assisted in the third case by the smaller boat guns. All these are well furnished with common shell and shrapnel.

*Gun Carriages*—The development which has taken Carriage places of late years in the power of artillery has necessitated corresponding changes in gun carriages. Formerly, every carriage was capable of travelling to some extent, even the heaviest guns were mounted on carriages fitted with trucks, which permitted motion on the ramparts or about a deck. Later on, sloping traversing platforms were introduced, up which the gun carriage recoiled on firing. Extra means of checking recoil became necessary as the power of the guns grew, compressors, or friction plates, were introduced, and are now only partially superseded by the hydraulic buffer. Mobility of carriage has almost entirely been given up, except for field and mountain artillery. The heavier siege guns travel on platform waggons, not on their firing carriages, and it is possible that the traversing platform and slide principle will extend yet further.

Tables IV and V show how the various pieces in the British service are mounted. Differences of detail exist, but the general system is the same for all European

tries. Wrought iron is rapidly supplanting wood in the traction of carriages, and there are signs that it will in time be in great measure superseded by a mild steel. The subject of gun carriages is too long and too complicated to be treated in detail here, but, as guns are of no use

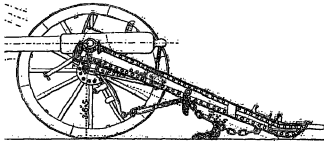


FIG. 38.—9-pounder Field Gun Carriage (elevation).

without carriages from which to fire them, it is necessary to some idea of the chief modes of mounting modern artillery. Figs. 38, 39 show the details of the 9-pounder muzzle-loader carriage. It consists of three parts, the axle, the axle, and the trail. The wheels have oak

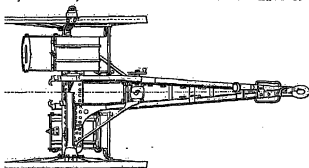


FIG. 39.—9-pounder Field Gun Carriage (plan).

leaves and ash felloes, the tire is of wrought iron, the nave is of copper, tin, and zinc. The dish is considerable, amounting to 2 inches in the 5-foot wheel. There is a strong strut, so that the lowest spoke is nearly vertical, and

the tire forms a frustum of a cone, instead of being a cylindrical. The object of this form is to obtain lateral strength, especially in travelling on uneven ground. The axle-tree bed is of wrought iron, constituting, with the axle, a beam of box-girder section, the axle-tree forming the bottom. The trail consists of two side brackets, fixed by

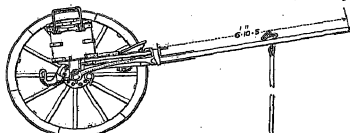


FIG. 40.—9-pounder Limber (elevation).

two transoms, two bolts, and the trail piece carrying the trail eye. The brackets are made of plate iron, riveted to a frame of angle iron. The axle carries two seats for gunners; into the trail are fitted the elevating screw and wheel, and the drag shoe with chain hangs below. Fig. 38 shows the gun and carriage in the firing position; when it is desired to move it to any distance exceeding a

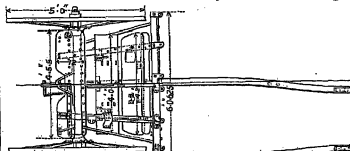


FIG. 41.—9-pounder Limber (plan).

few yards, the point of the trail is raised, the limber is brought up, the trail eye is passed over the limber hook and keyed fast. The gun carriage and limber then form a four-wheeled vehicle, and travel as such. Figs. 40, 41 show the limber, which consists of wheels and axle-tree similar to

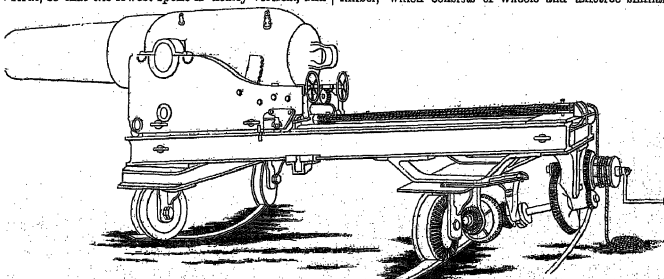


FIG. 42.—9-inch Gun Wrought Iron Carriage and Dwarf Platform.

of the gun carriage, ammunition boxes, platform, and axle. In the British service each gun carriage and ammunition boxes are drawn by three or four pairs of horses, according to the nature of the piece. The driver of each pair mounts

the near horse; the off wheel horse is between the shafts. In some countries pole draught is preferred.

Fig. 42 shows a 9-inch gun mounted on a wrought iron carriage and dwarf platform. This arrangement may be



Traversing slides

considered typical of all sliding carriages on traversing platforms. The direction of the gun is changed as required by traversing the platform to the right or left, the trucks working on the rails, front and rear, which are usually of wrought iron, laid concentrically on a bed of stone. The level of the traversing platform rises towards the rear, so as to assist in absorbing the work of recoil on firing, and to facilitate raising forward again after loading. The recoil is also checked either by a system of friction plates, called a compressor, or by an hydraulic buffer, placed parallel to and between the sides of the traversing platform, so that the carriage on recoil forces a piston into a cylinder containing oil, which escapes, through holes cut through the piston head, into the space round the piston rod, the size of the holes and the amount of the oil regulate the resistance offered to recoil, and enable the gunner to stop the piece at the proper place.

Disappearing carriage

Several kinds of carriages on the "disappearing" principle have from time to time been put forward. In these the gun is exposed to the fire of the enemy only while being aimed and discharged, loading is performed under cover. The Moncrieff carriages are the most successful of this class. In them the force of recoil is stored up and employed to raise the gun from the loading to the firing position.

Colonel Moncrieff applies his principle in two ways. The recoil either raises a counterweight or forces a piston into a cylinder, compressing, by the aid of a fluid, air already much compressed. The counterweight carriages are used to some extent in coast defence, and the hydro pneumatic carriages are under trial for siege-turret guns. Plate V gives the details of the former. On a level traversing platform rolls a carriage or "elevator," which places the gun in the required position either for loading or firing. The end of the elevator opposite to that which carries the gun is weighted, so that the recoil causes the elevator to roll to the rear and the gun to descend, at the same time raising the weight, which is retained in the upward position till released after loading, when its descent again raises the gun. Thus the elevator is a lever of the first order working on a shifting fulcrum, the curve (an involute) of the rolling surface being so adjusted that the resistance of the weight gradually increases as the gun recoils, and finally stops it smoothly and without violence. Conversely, by this form the gun is raised to the firing position gradually and without being jolted.

Moncrieff's system

*Hydraulic Gun for Guns*.—As soon as the weights of ordnance increased so greatly that their services exceeded the power of manual labour, it became necessary to find some substitute. Steam power is always at hand in steam vessels, and it was quickly seen that it was best applied through the medium of water pressure. The simplicity and compactness of hydraulic machinery, the circumstance of its direct action rendering toothed gears unnecessary, and the perfect control it gives over the motion of heavy weights, especially adapt it for the purpose.

Recoil slide by hydraulic system

Plate VI. represents the mode in which the system is applied to the working of the 80 ton gun on board H.M.S. "Inflexible," and clearly shows two guns placed side by side, and securely pivoted as to line. The hydraulic pressure is conveyed through the trunk A by pipes to the valves at B, where it is a piece for escape through valves V loaded to the required pressure by springs. It is the gun run forward in the firing position, its trunnion S is fixed to the end of a piston rod, the head of which enters the press C, where the gun B is fixed; it recoils into the position B, shown by the dotted outline. The trunnion S forces the piston home into the cylinder C, driving the water up into the tank, the trunnion fits snugly along the gun slide horizontally, and the attachment or saddle below the gun slide up the elevator beam C, which is pivoted at the fixed point T, so as to depress the muzzle outside

the port P of the fixed PR. The gun is then in the loading position. In the meanwhile the turret has been caused to revolve, on the conical rollers H, H by hydraulic pressure till the muzzle of the gun is brought opposite the loading apparatus, which is securely bound below deck. The water power is taken down into the ammunition hoist K, which raises a truck L, carrying a shell, on the top of which is laid a cartridge, to the loading position M. The sponge N, manually worked by hydraulic pressure, serves as a rammer also. To perform the action of raising the bottom, it contracts with a button on the head is pushed, setting free a rush of water, it thus thoroughly and visibly diminishes the loss, and prevents the slightest possibility of a burning stream issuing from the previous round, the sponge is then withdrawn, and the ammunition raised to M, the sponge now becomes a mallet, thrusts the cartridge into the muzzle of the gun, and is drawn back, the truck is raised still higher, the rammer then pushes the projectile into the muzzle, and jams home both cartridge and shell together, a wad previously placed on the head of the rammer is left behind, left in the loss in front of the projectile, which is thus prevented from moving forward. An indicator on the rammer shows whether the charge is home. The press B is then put in action to lower the breech, raising the muzzle to the elevation required to send the range of the object to be hit at, the gun is run forward to the firing position E, and the turret is revolved till the gun points at the object. The sighting is not on the gun, but on the turret, the captain of the battery looks through a hole in the roof R, behind the guns, and reads the movement of the turret at the central place, when the line between the gun and the turret to the axis of the guns, is directed to the object. The firing may be performed either in the usual way, or by electric tubes and wires from a distance.

Plate VII. fig. 2, shows a 100 ton rifled muzzle-loading gun, mounted on barbette on coast defence, and adjusted by hydraulic loading. After being fired the gun is turned round to the position A, where its muzzle is brought opposite the loading apparatus G, which is contained in a recess in the turret B. An ammunition hoist K raises the ammunition on a truck F to the muzzle, a small apparatus is constructed on the right of the gun, which is connected to either at pleasure. The carriage B slides on the platform G, which pivots on P, a tank through which is introduced the hydraulic power for running the gun back and absorbing the recoil.

Many other applications of hydraulic power to gunnery besides those just described are due to Mr G. Rendell of the great Elswick firm. One of the most novel is that adopted in H.M.S. "Polaris," in which 25-ton guns are mounted on the disappearing principle in a turret having no roof and no ports, inside the turret is a turn table carrying the gun by the trunnions on two axes, which are raised by hydraulic power, enabling the gun to fire on barbette over the wall of the turret. The recoil brings it down again, and it is placed opposite the loading gun by revolving the turn-table. The general principles are the same as those on which the previously described systems are constructed.

*Loading*.—This article would be scarcely complete without a reference to the comparative advantages of the muzzle-loading and breech-loading systems. Many have been much impressed with the great superiority of breech-loaders as small arms, whether for sporting or military purposes, and have concluded that the same superiority must extend to ordnance constructed on this plan. Others, having seen the difficulty of avoiding complication and accident to the parts in the early breech-loaders, have hastily condemned the whole system. The truth, as is often the case, lies between the two views, as will be seen from the following considerations. The chief points of excellence to be obtained by a field gun are—(a) high ratio of power to weight, (b) immunity from injury by its own fire, (c) immunity from injury by the enemy's fire, (d) capability of supporting the accidents of service, (e) rapidity and facility of manipulation, (f) efficiency of projectile. (a) The power of a gun is most conveniently measured by the energy (in foot tons) communicated to the projectile on leaving the muzzle. The following table shows how the latest English and German field guns compare together in this respect. The English guns are muzzle-loaders, the German ones breech-loaders.

TABLE VI

Gun	Calibre	Weight	Muzzle velocity	Penetration	Remarks
9	English	8	1480	119	Service guns
13	"	12½	1365	213	Under manufacture
19	"	8	1560	220	Service guns
11	Gallia	7½	1525	181	Service guns
16	"	9	1460	222	493

lead The English 9 and 16 pounders at the time of their introduction were the most powerful field guns known, but were after a time beaten by the new German guns, which will in their turn be beaten by the new English piece, the first supply of which was lately issued. Recently a trial was carried out of two field guns made by Sir W. Armstrong & Co. They were precisely similar in all respects, except that one was a breech, the other a muzzle-loader. No difference in their excellence could be detected. Thus it may be considered as certain that the power of a gun is in no way affected by the mere fact of its being a muzzle-loader or a breech-loader. Should, however, the adoption of one system favour an improved construction, or lend itself more readily than the other to the use of improved ammunition, this equality would disappear, and whichever system should gain a decided advantage in power, which cannot be obtained by its rival, must certainly prevail. It is almost impossible to overrate the importance of high velocity, combined, of course, with efficiency of projectile. In the field it enables the gunner to place the enemy under fire at long ranges, and so to force him to change his formations, and show his hand. It intensifies both the moral and physical effect of shell upon troops. It permits the guns to occupy good positions without the necessity of constant moving to get within range. In entrenchment firing it is, if possible, of still greater importance. Low velocity projectiles fired from field guns are almost harmless against earthworks. They have not sufficient bursting charge to do damage to the work by mere explosion, not impetus enough to cut down the parapets, while the defenders hear the gun and crouch under cover as the shell comes. Thus it is not surprising that all our recent advances have been towards high velocities. Nothing has tended more to this end than the enlargement of the diameter of the powder chamber, which facilitates the profitable consumption of increased charges. This improvement is found to act differently on the two systems of loading. A chambered muzzle-loader requires an expanding cartridge (in field guns), a chambered breech-loader requires a breech-closing apparatus of increased size and weight. Supposing a satisfactory expanding cartridge to be devised, the muzzle-loader gains in ratio of power to weight. If this be found impracticable, the breech-loader secures an important advantage in this respect. Experiments are still in progress, and it would be premature to pronounce definitely in favour of either at present, especially as some fresh discovery or new explosive may at any moment confer preponderance on either system. (f) In the Franco-German War of 1870, a large number of old pattern double-wedge breech-loaders became unserviceable by their own fire. This difficulty appears to have been quite overcome in the newer patterns of Krupp field guns by the adoption of the cylinder-pneumatic wedge, with Broadwell ring and steel facing-plate. It would probably be incorrect to affirm that a breech-loader has quite as great immunity from injury by its own fire as a muzzle-loader, since no joint, however well contrived, can be as strong as the solid-ended steel tube forming the breech of the latter. But, putting mathematical certainty of security out of the question, it may now be accepted that practically field guns can be made as

safe and enduring on one system as on the other. (c) As regards immunity from injury by the enemy's fire, the muzzle-loader has a decided advantage. It is difficult to estimate the real value of this advantage, depending as it does partly on the manner in which artillery is employed, and partly on the doctrine of chances. During the Russo-Turkish War of 1877-78 but few guns were placed *hors de combat* by the enemy's fire. In such cases as did occur, the injuries were nearly always such as would not have effected muzzle loaders. The wedge handles were usually bent up by the action of percussion fuse shell jamming the wedges. The Russian field guns were generally of a feeble class, the proportion of enrichment fighting was unusually large, and in the field the Turkish artillery habitually fired at long ranges. It may therefore be fairly concluded that the number of guns injured by the enemy's fire was not so great as to render the superior invulnerability of muzzle-loaders of much importance. These conditions will probably be reversed in any great war in which England may take part, and hence the advantage gained by muzzle-loaders in immunity from damage by hostile fire must be carefully borne in mind in comparing the two systems of loading. (d) In capability of supporting the accidents of service, there is not much to choose between the two rivals. The breech-loader is more liable to injury from bad weather, and exposes more parts and finer fittings to the action of the weather. On the other hand, it is easier to clean, and the officer can better see that it is clean. The jamming of projectiles in the bore when ramming home, which sometimes occurs with muzzle-loaders, is impossible with breech-loaders. This defect, it is hoped, has been overcome in the new English field gun. The preservation of breech-loaders, especially in mountainous countries, necessitates a profuse expenditure of oil and grease. (e) In comparing the rapidly and facility of manipulation of the two methods of loading, it is necessary to consider the circumstances under which the guns are employed. Suppose a horsed battery of guns to gallop to an open spot whence they command a body of hostile troops in motion. Coming into action, the gunners load and fire as rapidly as accuracy will permit, unhampered by parapets. It is evidently of great importance to throw as many projectiles as possible among the enemy. Here the muzzle-loader will have some advantage. With full detachments in the open it takes rather less time to load, aim, and fire a muzzle-loading field gun than a breech-loading one. The reason of this is that with the former the man laying the gun can manipulate to the right and usually take aim while the loading is being performed, while, when the projectile and cartridge are thrust in from behind, he has to wait till the loading is done before he can get to the sight. There is no practical difference in the time occupied by the actual loading. In one case, the cartridge and shell are rammed down a long distance together, in the other, first the shell is put in a short distance, and afterwards the cartridge, and the wedge has also to be withdrawn and replaced. Next, suppose a commanding position to have been selected for a battery, and a light entrenchment to have been thrown up, over which the guns fire. Here the muzzle-loader will lose the advantage gained when firing in the open, as it must be loaded before being run up to the parapet, and aimed afterwards. Both natures of gun recoil, and it makes no difference in time whether the ammunition be thrust home when the gun is back at the recoil position, or after it is run up. Here the breech-loader and the muzzle-loader stand upon equal terms. Thirdly, suppose—a rare case with field guns—that firing with reduced charges is required, that shell are being lobbed from behind a parapet at high angles into a work. Here we shall have little recoil, probably not enough to permit loading at the muzzle without the gun

being run back by hand. Loading at the breech will, however, be perfectly simple. In this case the breech-loader gains a very decided advantage over the muzzle-loader, since not only does it not require to be run back, but it has to be run up merely a very short distance. To this the advocate of muzzle-loading will probably reply that shells are lobbed with low velocities into works only at considerable intervals of time, that rapidity is therefore of no use, and that the advantage claimed is worthless. No doubt there is truth in this argument, but suppose the action of reduced charges on the gun to be imitated by the introduction of a brake which shall check the recoil within a short space, even when the gun is firing rapidly with high velocity, then the breech loader behind entrenched guns a distinct advantage. The Germans are supplied with powerful but clumsy brakes, more for travelling purposes than for firing, and it is doubtful how far they answer for the latter object. In the British service it has not been thought important to check recoil, since a certain amount of it has been necessary for loading behind parapets, but trials have been made of brakes, &c., for the purpose of preventing guns from running backwards down a reverse slope when fired from the crest of a hill, or, more generally, for checking excessive recoil. Up to the present time (1879) no great success has attended these efforts, nor does it appear feasible to abolish recoil altogether by sinking the wheels in a ditch, since the strain on the carriage would then be much increased. There is no doubt the question offers grave difficulties, especially as lightness is such an important feature in the construction of field gun carriages. As yet, then, the reduction or checking of recoil behind a parapet contains but a problematical superiority on breech loaders, and cannot be held to counterbalance the advantage gained by muzzle loaders in the open. (7) In the older pattern guns of both systems, where studs and windage were pitted against lead coating and no windage, the muzzle-loading projectile was able to take a better time fuse than could be used in the breech-loader, but it did not possess the same accuracy of shooting. Since the introduction of the poly-groove system, in which rotation is given and windage sealed by a copper-flanged ring or disc at the base of the shell, the muzzle-loading projectile has lost the advantage of being able to use the simpler time-fuse, but has gained in several important respects. The breech-loading shell has also been improved by the substitution of two copper wires for the lead coating, but is probably inferior to the new muzzle-loading projectile, which, however, can be used equally well for breech-loaders. It may be said therefore that the systems are equal in respect to efficiency of projectile.

Thus, then, taking the six qualities named as chief excellences to be sought for in field artillery, it appears that in four of them there is practically little or no advantage gained by either system over the other, while, in the two remaining qualities, the muzzle-loader has slightly the best of it. On the whole it seems therefore that, at the present moment, the balance of evidence is in favour of muzzle-loading for field guns.

For range  
pur-  
poses

In comparing the advantages of the rival methods of loading siege guns, the entirely different character of the two classes of pieces composing a train at once forces itself on the attention. One class consists of long guns, projecting far over a parapet, and usually fired at low elevations with heavy charges; the other of short guns, usually fired at high elevations with low charges, the muzzles on recoil coming well within the emplacement. The Germans use long and short 15 centimetre guns, both breech-loaders, and both throwing shell of the same weight. The long gun, fired with heavy charges, weighs three times as much as the short gun, which is fired with light charges. Supposing

the dimensions of the short gun were increased, the proportions remaining unchanged, till its weight equalled that of the long gun, then it would be able to fire shell of three times the weight. This is what is actually being done in the British service. Now all these heavy pieces, firing either heavy powder charges or heavy shell, require very strong and consequently very heavy carriages to bear the recoil, and it is found convenient to transport the guns on comparatively light platform waggons apart from their firing carriages. Hence there is no longer any necessity for constructing firing carriages with a view to travelling purposes, and it is probable that traversing slides will be introduced for all heavy siege pieces. It is not requisite to insist on length a comparison of the various qualities desired for siege guns. Rapidity is very rarely of importance with them, they are always fired under cover, and it may be at once assumed that, as far as power and endurance go, the two systems are practically equal. A fresh set of conditions comes into play the projectiles are heavy, and convenience of loading, combined with safety to the gunners from the enemy's fire, should now be considered. As these points are connected with the form of carriage employed, it was necessary to call to mind in comparing breech with muzzle loading, that slides are likely to take the place of travelling carriages. When long guns are fired, in order to permit loading at the muzzle, it is requisite that the carriage should be great, and the emplacement deep. Many devices, such as flexible rope rammers, jointed staves, &c., have been tried, but have not proved perfectly successful in overcoming this difficulty. Breech-loading here has a considerable advantage. Long guns are fired at low angles of elevation, and no difficulty therefore is experienced in thrusting the projectile home from behind in a nearly horizontal bore. High velocity is required, and the breech-loading system lends itself readily to enlargement of the powder chamber, without necessitating the complications of an expanding cartridge. If slides are used the hydraulic buffer checks the recoil at once, on the other hand, the parapet affords rather better protection to men standing close to the muzzle than to men standing a little way off at the breech. These conditions are reversed with the short pieces. The rammer is short, and no great recoil is necessary to permit loading at the muzzle. The elevation is high, and it is much easier to drop a shell in from the front than to thrust it up from behind. Indeed this cannot usually be done, and a breech-loader has to be brought nearly horizontal for loading. High velocity is never required, and enlargement of powder chamber is not wanted. The men are in the most sheltered position at the muzzle. If these views be admitted as correct, it seems clear that the long pieces of a siege train should be breech-loaders, and the short ones muzzle-loaders. To this it may be objected that uniformity would be sacrificed by such a combination. There is not much in this objection. The mere fact of two guns being loaded in different ways is surely of little consequence, and can easily be gasped by the dullest gunner. It is done every practice day on board ship, where the old pattern Armstrong vent-piece breech-loaders are combined with modern muzzle-loaders. As regards the stores, a long and a short gun of the same weight would not under any circumstances fire the same ammunition, and even in cases where a heavy long gun is associated with a light short one having the same diameter of bore, as in the case of the German 16-centimetre pieces, there is no reason why the same projectile should not be used for both; if desired, that is, the new smooth muzzle-loading shell, with a gas-check on the base, would answer for both.

The question of breech-loading or muzzle-loading is obviously not only complicated, but is liable to alteration in its conditions with every advance made in the science of

gunnery. To decide that an army or a navy should have for nothing but breech loaders, or nothing but muzzle loaders, would be to make a fetish of uniformity, there is plenty of room for both systems. With regard to heavy fortresses and ship guns, it is easy to suggest positions where it will probably be found that one system has a decided advantage over the other. Thus, taking the sea service first, in turrets the muzzle loader is preferable. The loading can be performed with great facility outside the ports, and a turret of a given diameter will house a pair of bigger guns than when the loading has to be done inside at the breech, unless some method of exterior loading can be devised for the breech-loaders also. For broadside guns, on the other hand, it seems equally clear that breech-loading has the advantage, as muzzle loaders have to be run in so far to permit loading that they must be too short for ballistic excellence. For a small gun placed on a slide in the bow of a boat, it appears far more convenient to load at the breech. For those gunboats in which the vessel is simply the gun carriage and the line of fire is given by the helm, loading at the muzzle from below deck offers great advantages. Land service heavy guns, mounted on sea fronts for the protection of harbours, &c, present a great variety of conditions. In some cases the rocks or ground on which the battery is erected have such a form that a heavy gun loaded at the breech could be used where only a comparatively small one could be loaded at the muzzle. Sometimes a turret can be erected with loading gear outside, and then the conditions are reversed. In the case of very heavy guns, which once *in situ* are not intended ever to be moved, the argument from uniformity loses much of its cogency, and the circumstances of every gun position could therefore be separately considered. The guns and howitzers arming land fronts of fortresses should follow the same rule as given for the siege train, the conditions of service in battery being very similar. The long pieces should be breech-loaders, the short ones muzzle loaders. Wherever the com-

parative advantages of breech-loading and muzzle-loading are nearly equal, the decision should be in favour of the muzzle-loaders as possessing the inherent advantages of simplicity, solidity, and cheapness.

**Conclusion.**—The science of gunnery has received so many developments of late years, and is even now progressing so rapidly, that it is impossible to do justice to the subject within the limits of an article. The reader who wishes for more minute details, and who would study any part of the science thoroughly, is recommended to consult the following list of works—

- ENGLISH.—Robins, *New Principles of Gunnery*, Gun Boys, Biblio R.A., *Treatise on Artillery*, Col. Owen, R.A., *Modern Artillery*, graph Major Griffiths and Duncan, R.A., *Artillerist's Manual*, Major Stiles, R.A., *Principles of Gunnery*, Rev. F. Baskforth, *Notes of Properties*, W. D. Niven, *On the Calculation of the Trajectories of Shot*, Capt. Noble and Prof. Abel, *Researches on Explosives*, W. V. Green, *Modern Branch Loaders and Chockore Guns*, *Proceedings of Royal Artillery Institution* (quarterly), Lt. Col. Stange, R.A., *Manual of Field Artillery for Canada*, *Report of Committee on Explosives*, *Reports of Committee on High-Angle Fire*, *Changes in Artillery Materials and Stores*, and the War Office publications—*Proceedings of Ordnance Select Committee*, *Test Book on Ammunition*, *Test Book on Carriages*.  
FRENCH.—Gen. Diction, *Traité de Balistique*, 14, *Leve de la Boussole de l'Artillerie*, Prof. Richa, *Éléments de Balistique Expérimentale*, G. Probert, *Traité d'Artillerie et des armes à l'époque actuelle*, *Revue d'Artillerie* (monthly).  
ITALIAN.—*Revue Artillerie* (quarterly).  
AUSTRIAN.—Holly, *Ordnance and Arms*, *Annual Reports of Chief of Ordnance*.  
GIRMAN.—*Handbuch für die Offiziere des Königlich Preussischen Artillerie*, Berlin, 1877. *Mittheilungen über Gegenstände des Artillerie und Genie Wesens*, Vienna (monthly). *Handbuch für die K. K. Artillerie*, Vienna (published in sections, 1871-77). Maj. Gen. Count Blandin-Schmidt, *Der vordere Theil des Geschützes*, Vienna, 1874; Prof. Georg Kuhn, *Theorie des Geschützes und der Artillerie*, Leipzig, 1876; *Lehrbuch der Artillerie*, Leipzig, 1877; *Artillerie-Handbuch*, Berlin (3 M.).

**Note.**—The publishers are indebted to the kindness of H.M.'s Principal Office and the Royal Artillery Institution for assistance in preparing some of the illustrations for the foregoing article.

**GUNNY.** This name is applied to cloth or bags made of jute, and is supposed to be derived from *gunny* or *gunia* of Rumphius, or from *gonia*, a vernacular name of the *Crotalaria juncea*—a plant common in Madras. One of the first notices of the term itself is to be found in Knox's *Ceylon*, in which he says "The filaments at the bottom of the stem [sc. from the cocoa-nut husk (*Cocos nucifera*)] may be made into a coarse cloth called gunny, which is used for bags and similar purposes." JUTE (*q.v.*) is the fibre of two species of *Crotalaria*, *C. capensis* and *C. odorata*, one species of which, probably the latter, has long been known as the Jew's mallow, from the fact that the leaves have long been used in Palestine, Egypt, and Arabia as a potherb.

The seeds of the jute plant are sown in April or May and the plants set out down close to the roots just before flowering. The tops are then clipped off and the stems made into bundles, which are placed in tanks or ditches and covered with turf or other heavy substances to keep the bundles under water. Here they are watched anxiously day by day till the fibre separates easily from the central woody portion. The period of retching or soaking takes from eight to ten days, if allowed to remain too long, the fibre rapidly decays. In drying also the fibre generally becomes of a deeper colour. When the fibre is ready for manipulation, the operator descends into the tank or ditch, and taking 10 to 16 bundles, strips off the barky fibre and washes thoroughly, and by a dexterous movement of the wrist spreads and separates the fibres over the surface of the vat. The fibre soon becomes clean, and is hung over

bamboo framework to dry. The fibre thus obtained is fine, long, and silky, but the short staple and the portion near the root held in the hand of the operator during washing, which frequently has bark attached, are the portions generally selected to make gunny bags or cloth of.

The kind of cloth known as gunny, tat, choti, &c, is woven in various lengths and widths for use as leading, bags, &c, and formerly, more than at present, every man, woman, and child, boatmen, husbandmen, and others, in their spare moments, distaff in hand, wove gunny cloth. Even the Hindu widow, saved from death and despoised by all, made her life less miserable by making gunny cloth, and thus rendering herself to an extent independent of her family. On the eastern frontier women are clothed in it, and the poor cover themselves with it at night. In the Malayan Archipelago it is no unusual sight to see a poor Chinese coolie with a dress made of gunny cloth. The great and most important use, however, to which gunny cloth is applied is in making bags wherein to pack rice, husked, sugar, cotton, and other products for shipment.

As soon as this cheap, strong, and serviceable material became known, the manufacture speedily assumed enormous proportions, and vast quantities of jute were imported into Dundee for the manufacture of gunny bags and cloth alone. The Dundee mills, in the early period of this trade, had only Indian hand-woven gunnies to compete with. The introduction of the latest machinery of the most approved patterns into Bengal, the chief seat of this industry in India, has, however, had the effect of giving India the opportunity of competing with the Dundee mills on advan-

tageous terms, and now India supplies vast quantities of gunnies to Europe, Egypt, Ceylon, the Malayan Archipelago, China, and the United States. In America alone it is computed that the annual average output of cotton is 8,800,000 bales, each bale requiring 6 yards of wrapping material, and of this one third at least is supplied in gunny cloth. In 1872-73 6,105,275 gunnies and 64,347 pieces were exported from India, whilst in 1876-77, during a period of eleven months, 30,110,616 gunny bags and 5,262,835 yards of gunny cloth were exported to foreign countries. These figures do not include what is sent coastwise or what is used for packing exported Indian produce

Bombay too has machinery for weaving jute, but has not as yet done much to compete with Bengal, and indeed there appears little hope for Bombay unless large quantities of jute can be made to grow on the spot, since, apart from the cost of carriage, the juices in the jute plant, as in many other plants, become resinified by drying, and therefore require operating upon whilst perfectly fresh, being attended after treatment with more difficulty in manipulation and a less output of fibre.

The excellent gunny bags sent to England are often used for repacking for exportation, and large quantities find their way to paper mills.

## GUNPOWDER

Historical sketch

UPON the great importance of the invention of gunpowder it is needless to dwell. Not only has it revolutionized the art of war, and given the forces of civilization a vast advantage over more numbers and savage valour, but we may even urge, paradoxical though it appears, that the very improvements by which modern science has rendered military machines more deadly tend to make war far more expensive, and therefore to prevent its being so frequently or so rashly undertaken as of old. Besides such indirect services to civilization, gunpowder has been and is of great use in the arts of peace, although of late years to a certain extent superseded by more potent explosive agents.

Such being the case, it is not a little remarkable that the discovery of gunpowder should be veiled in uncertainty, although this very obscurity seems proof of its great antiquity. It is, however, certain that it was not invented, as has been often stated, by the German monk Bertholdus Schwartz, about 1320, although Wilkinson, in his *Engineer of War*, considers Schwartz may have suggested the use of a mortar, since the form as also the name of this piece of ordnance may well have been due to some accident in the laboratory. Roger Bacon, who was born in 1214, refers, *circa* 1267, to an explosive mixture of the nature of gunpowder as known before his time, as being employed for purposes of diversion, and as producing a noise like thunder, and flashes like lightning, he even suggests its application to military purposes, and indulges in the supposition that some such composition might have been employed by Gideon to destroy the Midianites (Judges vii). He elsewhere writes—"Ecce ludere pueris quod fit in multis mundi partibus, sicut, ut instrumento facio ad quantatem pollicis humani, et hoc violentia salis, qui salpêtre vocatur, tam horribilis sonus nascitur in ruptura tam modice pergamene, quod foras tonitru rugitum et coruscationem maximam salis luminis pubei evocant" (see preface to Job's edition of Bacon's *Opus Majus*). In the above passage salpêtre is alone referred to as the violently explosive substance, but Bacon was well aware of the fact that salpêtre of itself will not explode, for in his previously written treatise, *De Secretis Operibus Artis et Naturæ et de Nigritate Magice*, he says "that from salpêtre and other ingredients we are able to make a fire that shall burn at any distance we please." In chap. xi of the same work these other ingredients are veiled in the disguise of an anagram: "Sed tamen salis petre sua nops cum vitre et sulphuris, et sic facies tonitruum et coruscationem, a scias artificum," the unmeaning words in italics have been translated as *carborem pulvere* in his work on gunnery (1742), and Dutens (Englishing into the *Origin of Discoveries attributed to the Moderns*) suggest that Bacon may have derived his knowledge from the MS of Marcus Græcæ, preserved in the National Library in Paris, entitled "Inscriptio Libri Ignium a Marco Græco prescriptis, cujus virtus et efficacia est ad

comburendum hostes, tam in mari, quam in terra." Marcus Græcæ, who lived about the end of the 8th century, was therefore not ignorant of the military uses to which the composition might be put, among other modes of launching fire upon an enemy he gives one to the following effect— one pound of live sulphur, two of charcoal of willow, and six of salpêtre, reduced to a fine powder in a marble mortar and mixed together, a certain quantity is to be put into a long, narrow, and well connected cover, and then discharged into the air. This is evidently the description of a rocket. It has also been suggested that Bacon may have learnt the secret in Spain, in which country he is known to have travelled, and whose Moorish masters were then far in advance of the rest of Europe in science and literature. Albertus Magnus, in his treatise *De Animalibus Mortuis*, repeats almost word for word several receipts in the work of Marcus Græcæ, also, an epistle by Fornerius, a Spanish monk, and a contemporary of Bacon, which is preserved in the Bodleian Library at Oxford, gives receipts for Greek fire, rockets, and "thunder." There is a treatise on gunpowder in the library of the Escorial, written about 1250, which appears to describe both rockets and shells, the Arabians are from this and other authorities, supposed to have enclosed combustible or explosive compositions in hollow globes of iron, which were discharged upon the foe either by hand, like the modern grenade, or from the warlike machines then in use, it has also been stated that towards the close of the 13th century they projected small balls from tubes carried in the hand, or attached to the end of a lance, and only used at close quarters, being in fact hand guns. Rockets were employed during the reign of the Greek emperor Leo, about 680, and indeed seem to have been known in India from time immemorial, some of them having been made of great size.

The gloom of the dark ages precludes further attempt to trace back the history of gunpowder with any certainty, but Mr. Dutens, in the work before quoted, adduces many passages from classical authors in support of his view that a composition of the nature of gunpowder was not unknown to the ancients, as, for example, the story of Salomon, king of Elus, who, according to Virgil (*Æneid*, vi, 585), for his audacity in attempting to imitate thunders and lightning, was slain by Jupiter. Mr. Dutens considers he may have fallen a victim to his own experiments. Eustathius, a commentator on Homer, speaks of him as being so skilled in mechanics that he constructed machines to imitate thunder (Eustathius ad *Odys.* i, 234, p. 1682, l. 1, see also Hyginus, *Fabul.* 61, 660, Valerius Flaccus, lib. i, 666). It is also narrated of Caligula by Dion Cassius (*Hist. Rom.*, Caligula, p. 692) that he had machines which imitated thunder and lightning, and emitted stones. See also Johannes Antiochus, *Chronicon apud Pappum* Valens, Paris, 1604, p. 804.

According to Themistius (*Orat.*, xxvii p. 337) the Babylonians had similar machines. Philostratus, in his life of Apollonius Tyranus (lib. ii cap. 14), written about 200 A. D., relates of a people of India, dwelling between the Hyphases and the Ganges, whose country Alexander never entered. "Their cities he could never have taken, though he had led a thousand as brave as Achilles, or three thousand such as Ajax, to the assault, for they come not out to the field to fight those who attack them, but these holy men, beloved by the gods, overthrow their enemies with tempests and thunderbolts shot from their walls."

From the mention by Vitruvius, and in Plutarch's life of Marcellus, that one of his machines threw large stones with great noise, it has been thought that Archimedes used some explosive composition in the defence of Syracuse.

The most ancient reference of all is in the Genbo code of Iwa (Halhed's translation), supposed by some authorities to be coeval with Moses. It runs thus: "The magistrate shall not make war with any decent machine, or with poisoned weapons, or with cannon and guns, or any kind of firearms." The translator remarks that this passage may "serve to renew the suspicion, long since deemed absurd, that Alexander the Great did absolutely meet with some weapons of that kind in India, as a passage from Quintus Curtius seems to ascertain." The word translated *firearms* is literally a weapon of fire, and one species of it has been described as a dart or arrow tipped with fire and discharged from a bamboo, so that the reference may not be to any *propelling* agent, but merely to some combustible or incendiary composition, of the nature of the so-called Greek fire.

It is almost certain that these authors who assert that the Arabians used gunpowder at the siege of Mecca, 690 A. D., having derived their knowledge of it from India or China, confound gunpowder with this Greek fire, which seems to have been the generic name given to several different combustible mixtures, although Arabian writers speak of them as Chinese fires. Greek fire was introduced into Constantinople from the East about the year 673, it was discharged upon the enemy by means of various engines of war, or in smaller quantities attached to arrows or darts. The Saracens used it against the Crusaders. Maimbourg, in his *History of the Crusades*, describes its effects, and Joinville, who was an eye-witness, says "it was thrown from a pottery, and came forward as large as a barrel of venique, with a tail of fire as big as a great sword, making a noise like thunder, and seeming like a dragon flying in the air; the light it gave out from the great quantity of fire rendered the camp as bright as day, and such was the terror it occasioned among the commanders in the army of St. Louis that Gautier de Chauli, an experienced and valiant knight, advised that, as often as it was thrown, they should prostrate themselves upon their elbows and knees, and beseech the Lord to deliver them from that danger against which he alone could protect them." However, its actual destructive effect seems to have been very inadequate to the terror it occasioned. From the account of Geoffrey de Vinesauf, sand and earth, but especially vinegar, appear to have been considered the best extinguishers, water would not put it out. One description of this wildfire was composed of resin, sulphur, naphtha, and probably saltpetre. Bacon states that religious scruples hindered European nations from adopting Greek fire, but if so, they seem to have been gradually overcome, for its use is mentioned by various writers, Anna Comnenæ, Piers Daniel, and Froissart among them. Similar scruples no doubt considerably retarded the introduction of gunpowder, and the fear that its adoption would prove fatal to all knightly gallantry also caused it to be regarded with aversion. Firdousi, the famous Persian poet, describes in

his writings what were doubtless the effects of rockets and wildfire discharged upon the enemy, but he ascribes the whole to magic.

The researches of all authorities seem to point to the Eastern Far East as the birthplace of an explosive mixture of origin the nature of gunpowder, it was used there from time immemorial, although doubtless its application as a propelling agent is of far later date. In all probability, the germ of the science of explosives lay in the accidental discovery of the peculiar properties of the nitre so plentifully found mixed with the soil upon the vast plains of India and China. By means of the charred embers of wood-fires, used for cooking, the two most active ingredients of gunpowder might easily be brought into contact, and, under the action of heat, more or less deflagration would ensue, in fact, the accidental dropping of some of the crude saltpetre into the coals would show its remarkable power of supporting and accelerating combustion. The combination of saltpetre and charcoal in a more or less powerful mixture can therefore be easily conceived, the sulphur being an after addition, and not necessary to cause explosion. Our present gunpowder is only the improvement and perfection of such a mixture. Saltpetre was early known as a "Chinese snow," and some have supposed the use of gunpowder in cannon to have been known in China very soon after, if not before, the Christian era. But this seems to be an error, for Colonel Anderson, C.B., in his book on gunpowder (London, 1803), quotes a conversation held by John Ball of Antwerp, who visited Peking in 1781, with the emperor's general of artillery, to the effect that from their records it had been used in fireworks, &c., for about 2000 years, but that its application to the propulsion of shot was a late introduction. Some of their compositions had such names as "devouring fire," "earth thunder," &c. The *Invitedes of Timur*, written about the middle of the 14th century, contain no mention of cannon or gunpowder, although full particulars are given of the equipment of his troops, it is, however, related that when Timur engaged the army of Mahmud under the walls of Delhi, men scattered wildfire and fired rockets in every direction. In this connexion it may be noted that, while the use of rockets was of very old date in India, the names given to pieces of artillery under the rule of Beber and the Mogul conquerors of Hindustan almost invariably point to a European, or at least to a Turkish origin. It is also well authenticated that Akbar and Aurangzeb had Englishmen and other Europeans in their service to teach the art of gunnery. The analysis of the gunpowder made by the Chinese in the present day shows a composition almost identical with that employed in Europe, which has only been arrived at after centuries of experience, so that, in all probability, they have corrected their earlier formula from Western sources.

Whatever obscurity may hang over the early history of gunpowder, it seems most probable that its employment as a propelling agent originated among the Moors or Saracens,—whose civilization for several centuries contrasted forcibly with the intellectual darkness of Christendom,—and from them spread eastward, as well as northward into Europe. Condé (*Hist. Dom. Arabs in Spain*) states that Ismail Ben Feraz, king of Grenada, who in 1325 besieged Baza, had among his machines "some that cast globes of fire with resounding thunders and lightnings resembling those of the restless tempest, all these machines caused fearful noises to the walls and towers of the city." The first reliable contemporary document relative to the use of gunpowder in Europe, a document still in existence, bears date 11th February 1326, it gives authority to the prior, the gonfalonier, and council of twelve of Florence to appoint persons to superintend the manufacture of cannons

of brass, and iron balls, for the defence of the commune, camps, and territory of the republic.

See also  
in Eng-  
land

If the testimony of John Du Bou, a chieftain of Aberdeen, who wrote in 1375, it is to be believed, cannon, which he calls "cannys of war," were employed during the invasion of Scotland by Edward III. in 1327, but they are not mentioned in the accounts of the expenses of this war preserved in the record office. An indenture, first published by Sir N. H. Nicolas in his *Hist. Royal Navy* (London, 1847), and since by Lieut-Colonel H. Blackenbury (*Proceedings R. A. Institution*, 1865), stated to be of 19 Edward III., 1338, contains several references to small cannon as among the stores of the tower, and also mentions "un petit battail de gunpowder le quainpion." If authentic, this is certainly the first distinct mention of gunpowder in Great Britain we now possess, but doubts have since been thrown upon the date of this MS. It is, however, seems certain, from a contemporary document in the National Library in Paris, that, in this same year 1338, there existed in the main arsenal at Rouen, an iron weapon, called "pot de fer," for propelling bolts, together with some saltpetre and sulphur to make powder for the same, at this period the ingredients were usually kept separate, and mixed when required. From the year 1345, 19 Edward III., we have, preserved in the Record Office, reliable accounts of the purchases of ingredients needed for the fabrication of gunpowder, and of the shipping of cannon for France. In 1316 Edward III. ordered all the saltpetre and sulphur that could be found to be brought up for him, but the quantities obtained were very small. Whether it be true or not that cannon were used by the English at Crecy in that year belongs rather to the question of the employment of artillery in the field, it has been maintained that such was the case by Napoleon III. (*Études sur la passé et l'avenir de l'Artillerie*). It may be noted that Petrarca, about the year 1344, in his dialogues *De venetis utriusque fortune*, speaks of "braven globes cast forth by the force of flames with a horrible sound of thunder" as having become as common as any other kind of weapon.

In the year 1377, being the first of Richard II., Thomas Norbury was ordered to buy, amongst other munitions, sulphur, saltpetre, and charcoal to be sent to the castle of Brest. In 1414 Henry V. ordered that no gunpowder should be taken out of the kingdom without special licence, in the same year this monarch also ordered twenty pipes of powder made of willow charcoal, and various other articles for the use of the guns.

It was not, however, until the reign of Elizabeth that the manufacture of gunpowder can be said to have been established in England. The greater portion required had been previously imported from abroad, and the trade had been an open one, but the threatening attitude of Spain compelled the Government to provide more efficient means of defence, and patents were issued by the crown for the manufacture of gunpowder, constituting it a monopoly. Early in this reign also, saltpetre began to be artificially produced in England, but the quantity so obtained formed a very small proportion of the supply needed, the remainder being brought from various parts of the Continent, and from Barbary. Again, in 1623, nominally in order to prevent the sale of weak or defective powder, a proclamation was issued by James I., prohibiting its manufacture, as well as that of saltpetre, except under the king's commission, and directing that all gunpowder should be proved and marked by the sworn proof-master. A little later, in 1628, the East India Company had commenced the importation of saltpetre, and had also started powder works in Surrey. Their renewed charter in 1693 contained a clause providing that 500 tons of saltpetre were to be furnished to the Ordnance annually, and from this time forward we hear of

no difficulty, at least in England, of obtaining the chief ingredient of gunpowder, although on the Continent great attention has been paid to its artificial production, this was especially the case in France during the reign of Napoleon I., when the supremacy of Great Britain at sea for many years prevented the importation of saltpetre by her enemies.

About the year 1690, George Evelyn, grandfathers of the celebrated John Evelyn of Wootton, received the royal licence to set up powder mills at Long Ditton and Godstone, the Evelyns are said to have brought the art from Holland. The works at Faversham, afterwards for so many years the Government gunpowder factory, dates from Elizabeth's reign, but were then of secondary importance to those at Godstone. There seems reason, however, to suppose that powder mills existed at Waltham Abbey so far back as 1561, for in that year we find John Thonworth of Waltham in treaty, on behalf of Queen Elizabeth, for the purchase of saltpetre, sulphur, and staves for barrels. Fuller also refers (*English Worthies*, 1338) to the powder mills at Waltham Abbey, of which place he was appointed vicar in 1641. In 1787 they were sold to the crown by John Walton, and recognized under the superintendence of the famous Sir William Congreve. The old royal factory at Faversham was given up after the peace of 1815, being first let and afterwards sold to the well-known firm of Messrs. John Hull & Son, a third Government factory at Ballislicote was disposed of a few years later. The Waltham Abbey mills have been greatly enlarged of recent years, and no expense has been spared to render them, by the introduction of new and improved machinery, the most complete as well as the safest in the world. It is impossible to describe in detail the various improvements which have been made in the manufacture of gunpowder, but the most important will be briefly stated when describing the successive processes to which the ingredients are subjected.

#### THE INGREDIENTS AND THEIR ACTION

The objects to be attained in the production of an explosive agent for artillery and small arms are—(a) the maximum of propelling force, (b) the minimum of internal pressure in the bore of gun, (c) uniformity of action, (d) freedom from fouling, especially in small arm powders, (e) durability, i.e., power to bear transport and keep well in store. Of all explosive substances at present known, gunpowder alone can be said to fulfil the first three conditions. Its advantages may be summed up as follows—(a) the rate of combustion of gunpowder is gradual compared with that of most other explosives, and, both by adjusting the proportions of the ingredients and varying the mechanical processes of manufacture, its explosiveness can be modified so as to suit every description of weapon, (b) the ingredients are easily procured, and are comparatively cheap, (c) with proper precautions, it is comparatively safe in manufacture, in store, and in transport; it also keeps well in a moderately dry atmosphere.

The earliest gunpowder used in cannon in Europe consisted of equal parts of saltpetre, charcoal, and sulphur, ground up and mixed together as required, and must have proved a mixture far inferior in strength to that given in the MS of Marcus Græcæ. To account for the use of such a very weak composition long after better proportions had been ascertained, it must be remembered that the earliest cannon were composed of iron staves roughly hooped together, and tubes of thin iron, or even of wood or leather, with rope coiled round them, were sometimes used. Infected with the defective application of gunpowder as a propelling agent involves a whole series of inventions, and it was doubtless chiefly owing to the backward state of mechanical science during the Middle Ages that such weak powders were employed. The slow growth of artillery science in Europe

Advances  
types of  
gunpowder

for five centuries, and its rapid development in very recent years, are facts which support this presumption. Even about 1410 the proportions were still but 3 saltpetre, 2 sulphur, and 2 charcoal. The relative amount of saltpetre was gradually increased, and Tartaglia (*Queste e Inventioni diverse*, Venice, 1546) mentions twenty-three various compositions as having been used at different times, the gunpowders of his days were—

		Saltpetre	Charcoal	Sulphur
Cannon powder		4	1	1
Musket "		48	8	7
	or	18	3	2

It is remarkable that Robins states the above proportions to have been very nearly those of his own day (1742), for there is a great deficiency of saltpetre in the cannon powder, and a considerable excess in that for muskets, compared with the relative quantities now employed in England. For a long period of time it was the custom for the fine grain or musket powder to contain a larger proportion of saltpetre than that for cannon, and, again, the amount of nitre was relatively reduced as the piece of ordnance became heavier, doubtless with the view of obtaining a slower burning powder for large charges. However, we find that by the latter part of the last century, what was called "common war powder" was almost universally composed of 8 saltpetre, 1 charcoal, and 1 sulphur, and these are the proportions still in use by many Continental nations (*D'Ardenon On Gunpowder*, translated by Capt Thompson, R. A., London, 1787).

So far back as the 16th century, Baptista Porta is said to have arrived at the proportions now used in France, which, however, was certainly not adopted until a comparatively recent period. Exhaustive experiments have also been carried out in that country by Beaumé, the Committee of Public Safety, Chaptal, and Proust, who fixed upon percentages of saltpetre varying from 76 to 80, of charcoal from 13 to 16, and sulphur from 5 to 9. These may seem to give rather a wide margin, but this will surprise no one who is acquainted with the great differences in results given by comparatively slight variations in the conditions of experiment, with powder of the same composition. In the British Government service but one scale of proportions has been employed for many years, and the very extensive trials of the "Committee on explosives" have shown that there is no good reason to depart from that scale, for they have conclusively demonstrated that the variations in the mechanical and physical properties of gunpowder, produced by the processes of manufacture, exert even more influence upon its action than a comparatively considerable difference in composition, this does not, however, apply to the small charges used in firearms. It will be seen, moreover, that one of the three ingredients—charcoal—can be so varied in quality as very materially to affect the results.

The following table gives the percentage composition of gunpowder as now made in different countries for military purposes—

	Saltpetre	Charcoal	Sulphur
England, Royal Gunpowder Factory,	76	16	10
France	75	15.5	12.5
Germany	76	14	10
Austria	76	14	10
Russia	76	16	10
Belgium	75	16.5	12.5
Spain	76	16	10
Italy	75	15.5	12.5
United States	75	15.5	12.5

The proportions of the ingredients in English commercial gunpowders vary considerably according to the market for which they are intended. The best sporting powders

have about the same composition as those made by Government. Whatever cheapness is the chief object in view the quantity of nitre is diminished, and the other two components relatively increased. Some of the powder for the African trade, commonly called "nigger powder," does not contain much more than 50 per cent of saltpetre, while other kinds are nearly as bad. Blasting powder contains a low proportion of saltpetre, from 60 to 62 per cent, but, although this reduction may originally have been made in order to manufacture a cheaper article, yet it is also the most effective for the object desired in many cases, which is to remove large masses of earth or soft rock, and this can best be done by using a comparatively weak or slow-burning powder. The element of time is here of great importance, a very quick burning or violent explosive would not displace such large masses of a soft material, although the local effect would be more destructive (see BLASTING and EXPLOSIVES).

Before proceeding further, it will be as well briefly to consider the properties of the three ingredients of which gunpowder is composed, and the part played by each.

Saltpetre, or nitrate of potash ( $\text{KNO}_3$ ), occurs as a Saltpetre natural production on or near the surface of the earth in several warm climates, especially the plains of India and China. When it arrives in England, it has only been partially separated from the earthy and foreign saline matters with which it was combined when found, and is quite unfit for the manufacture of gunpowder, the salts of sodium especially, from their property of absorbing moisture, are most injurious. In this state the saltpetre is known as "rough" nitre, the impurities commonly present being the chlorides of potassium and sodium, and the sulphates of potash, soda, and lime, together with sand and organic matter, they do not usually exceed 5 lb per cwt, the exact proportion of impurities in any sample being termed the "retaction" of the saltpetre, and allowed for in the price. The nitrate of soda, called "cubical nitre" or Chili saltpetre, which is found abundantly in South America, although chemically adapted to supply the place of potassium nitrate, cannot be employed in the manufacture of gunpowder, owing to its very deliquescent properties. The salt is, however, largely converted into saltpetre by the action of chloride of potassium. In France and Germany, also, nitre is produced artificially (see SALTPETRE).

Saltpetre, which is a compound of 54 parts of nitric acid and 46 of potash, acts as a magazine of oxygen in a solid form, one volume of saltpetre containing as much oxygen as about 3000 volumes of atmospheric air. This oxygen, with which it readily parts when raised to a certain temperature, combines violently with the carbon to form carbonic acid and a proportion of carbonic oxide, these with free nitrogen constitute the chief gaseous products of combustion. The potassium is found combined in the solid residue.

Wood charcoal is the charred woody fibre or residue which remains after the liquid and more volatile parts have been driven off by destructive distillation. The object of charring wood is the removal of moisture, and, which is of great importance, the expulsion of those matters which become volatile before they are burned, and which would absorb a large amount of heat. It may be charred in the ordinary way in pits, but the usual mode of preparing charcoal for gunpowder is by heating it in large iron cylinders or retorts, as hereafter described. By this latter method, the operation is performed with more uniformity and economy, and the charcoal kept more free from particles of guttaceous matter. Charcoal is best fitted for the manufacture of gunpowder when prepared from light spongy wood, containing a very small proportion of mineral substances; it should be sound, and of not much more than ten



years' growth. The quality of the charcoal exercises the greatest influence upon the rate of combustion, so that both the description of wood used and the mode of burning are of the utmost importance.

By a series of experiments first made by Proust, and since repeated by English chemists, it has been found that 12 grains of various charcoals, mixed with 60 grains of saltpetre, give the following average volumes of gas—

	Cubic inches
Dogwood ( <i>Rhamnus Frangula</i> )	82
Willow ( <i>Salix alba</i> )	77
Alder	74
Pilbit	73
Pir, chestnut, hazel	68
Overheated willow charcoal	65

The production of the strongest powder does not depend alone upon the evolution of the largest volume of gas, but the above table is of interest since the three descriptions of wood which head the list have long been considered by universal consent as the best adapted for the manufacture of charcoal for gunpowder. Dogwood (so called, but in reality it is elder-buckthorn, *Rhamnus Frangula*, the French *hou daine*) is an underwood of slow growth, usually obtained from Sussex, Belgium, or Prussia, it is cut about an inch in diameter, and packed in bundles 6 feet long. This wood is now used, both in England and on the Continent, for all military small arm powders, as well as the best descriptions of sporting gunpowder. It has been found, moreover, that cannon powders made from dogwood charcoal are, other things being equal, much more violent in action than those manufactured with willow or elder charcoal. Accidents with powder made from dogwood charcoal have usually proved more destructive than those made with any other description. Alder and willow charcoal is used for making gunpowders for field and heavy ordnance, as well as for the commoner kinds of commercial powders, these woods are obtained from various parts of England, and should measure about 4 inches in diameter. The willow used is the *Salix alba*, one of the softest and lightest of English woods, white in colour, and of very rapid growth, the pith is circular, and tolerably large. Alder is considerably harder and denser in texture, and of slower growth, its colour is reddish yellow, and the small pith triangular or bayonet-shaped in section. Dogwood has a very large pith in proportion to its size, circular, and of a red colour, which is preserved even after the wood is converted into charcoal.

The temperature at which the wood is charred exercises the most powerful influence upon the inflammability of the charcoal, and consequently upon the "explosiveness," or rate of combustion, of the gunpowder made from it. The higher the temperature the larger the proportion of hydrogen and oxygen expelled, and the nearer the approach of the charcoal to pure carbon, at the same time, it becomes more dense and incombustible, and the gunpowder made from it is comparatively slow in action, and gives a low initial velocity. Charcoal prepared at a low temperature is softer and more inflammable, and contains more volatile constituents, it makes a quicker burning powder, giving a higher velocity to the projectile, but also producing more steam or pressure upon the metal of the gun. The chief defect, however, of this "black-burnt" charcoal, or *charbon roux*, as it is called from its reddish-brown colour, is its property of absorbing moisture more readily than denser charcoal, the powder manufactured from it is consequently more hygroscopic, and therefore more liable to deteriorate in strength from the effects of damp than that made with a more highly burnt charcoal. To show the great difference in inflammability caused by burning at low and high temperatures respectively, it may be stated that charcoal prepared at 500° Fahr. readily ignites at about 640°, while, if burnt at 1800° Fahr., nearly double the heat previously mentioned is

required to inflame it. The following table exhibits concisely the practical effects of different modes of preparing charcoal for gunpowder, the same kind of wood being used in each case, it shows (a) the analysis of the charcoals, and (b) the comparative initial velocities and pressures given by powders made in a piecewise similar manner from those charcoals.

		No 1 Burnt 4 hours at low heat	No 2 Burnt 4 hours at a medium heat	No 3 Burnt 4 hours at very high heat
Charcoal	Carbon, per cent	78.23	81.23	87.65
	Oxygen, and trace of nitrogen	10.06	13.19	8.29
	Hydrogen	3.07	3.41	2.91
	Ash	1.12	1.27	1.25
Initial velocity (feet per second)		1511	1490	1373
Max. pressure in powder cham- ber (tons per square inch)		16.83	1.64	8.85

For the manufacture of gunpowder, only the crystalline Sulphur electric negative variety of sulphur soluble in tri-sulphide of carbon (see CHEMISTRY, vol. v p 498) is used. Sublimed sulphur, commonly called "flowers of sulphur," which consists of minute granules of insoluble sulphur enclosing the soluble variety, is considered unfit for gunpowder, the reason assigned has usually been that, from the mode of manufacture, it is impregnated with sulphurous and sulphuric acids, but Professor Bloxam points out that in all probability it is the fact of the sublimed sulphur consisting of the electric-positive insoluble variety, which exerts an injurious influence upon the gunpowder made from it. Sulphur performs the part of a second "combustible" in gunpowder, but there is no doubt that its chief value as an ingredient thereof arises from its great inflammability, owing to its tendency to combine with oxygen at a moderate temperature, it inflames at about 560° Fahr, thus facilitating the ignition of the powder. Its oxidation by sulphate appears also to produce a higher temperature than is obtained with charcoal, thus accelerating combustion, and increasing by expansion the volume of gas generated. An excess of sulphur would, however, be injurious by increasing the solid residue, in which the sulphur is found combined in various forms after the explosion. Some authorities have considered that, from its non-absorbent properties, sulphur renders gunpowder less hygroscopic, and more compact and durable.

Powders made from exactly the same materials, mixed in the same proportions, yet differ greatly in "explosive violence," which has been defined as the rate at which the powder burns or is converted into gas. This quality will depend chiefly upon the following properties—(a) extent of incineration, (b) the density of the powder, (c) its hardness, (d) size of the grains or pieces, (e) shape of the grains, (f) amount of glue. Although not altogether synonymous with strength, we may consider "explosive mass" as the quality upon which the value of gunpowder for any particular purpose chiefly depends.

Next to the selection of the precise description of charcoal to be used, no point in the manufacture of gunpowder requires such care and attention as the thorough inter-mixture of the ingredients,—the object being in fact to form out of the three components a new substance as nearly homogeneous as possible. It is usually considered that there is a limit of time beyond which no advantage is gained by continuing the "milling" or incorporating process, but it is certain that nothing that can be done to the powder afterwards will add to its strength, although we may modify its explosiveness, and that the very best powders, especially for small-arms, are milled the longest time. This question will be further treated under the head of manufacture.

Density  
and  
hardness

No physical property affects the explosiveness of gunpowder as much as its density. By density we mean the quantity of matter actually present in a certain bulk of the powder. Thus, if different quantities of meal powder, containing the same proportion of moisture, be compressed into equal bulks, say, for example, into cylinders of equal size, that which contains the most meal will be the densest. Hardness does not necessarily a relation to density, for a substance may be hard, and yet possess little density. Increase of density can only be given by compressing the meal into a smaller bulk, while increase of hardness can be arrived at by pressing the meal in a mortar completely.

Other things being equal, increasing the density decreases the initial velocity, and, *vice versa*, a less dense powder gives a higher velocity, but also a greater strain to the metal of the gun. This is due to the less dense powder burning more rapidly than that with a dense close texture. If two grains, or pieces of powder, of equal size and similar shape but very unequal density, be burnt upon a glass plate, the less dense one will be entirely consumed before the denser one has finished burning.

Freedom from fouling is a very important property in small-arm powders. From the experience gained in selecting a powder for the Mauser-Henry rifle, it was found that, with the same description of charcoal, the slower the action of the charge the less fouling took place, this modification of action was easily obtained by raising the density, at, however, a corresponding sacrifice of velocity in the bullet. The reason assigned was that the quicker-burning powder caused a rush of gas past the lubricating wad before the latter had time to act properly. A dense hard powder which will take a high polish or glaze will evidently keep better, and bear transport better, than a more porous and therefore more fragile grain, which would easily form dust. It will thus be seen that many considerations enter into this question of density.

Size of  
grains

The size of grain is one of the most important points to be considered as modifying the explosiveness of powder. Although a charge of powder appears to explode instantaneously, yet both ignition and combustion are comparatively gradual, the flame is communicated from one grain to another, and each burns in concentric layers until it is consumed, so that the combustion of the grains is not simultaneous. Meal-powder burns more slowly in air than when the powder is granulated, in consequence of the minuteness of the interspaces, dust, especially in fine-grain powder, retards ignition by filling up the interspaces. To go to the other extreme, as showing the advantage gained by granulating the press-cake, we may quote an experiment made some years ago. A small piece weighing 1.06 oz was placed in a mortar, and a light ball placed upon it, when it was fired, the ball was not thrown out. An equal quantity broken into 15 pieces, projected the ball 33 yards, broken into 50 pieces, the ball ranged 1077 yards, when the same weight of ordinary grained powder was used, the range was 5686 yards. It is most unsafe to attempt to apply to the action of gunpowder, when fired under enormous pressure, and especially when employed in large charges, the conclusions arrived at from its combustion in air. We may, however, assert that the weight of charge, the density, and all other conditions being equal, a charge made up of large grains or pieces of gunpowder will burn more slowly, and exert a lesser initial strain upon the gun than one composed of small grains, owing to the total surface of combustion being diminished by increasing the size of the pieces, this has been abundantly verified by the results of experiments with heavy rifled ordnance. On the other hand, the larger grains afford larger interspaces between them for the passage of the flame, thus facilitating the ignition of large charges. Hence, a gunpowder may

possess a low rate of combustion and yet a high rate of ignition, and *vice versa*. For each gun, or charge of gunpowder, there is doubtless a size of grain which would produce a maximum velocity with a minimum initial strain, but as each kind of cannon powder has to be employed in more than one piece of ordnance, it is necessary to select that size which will best suit all of them.

The same quantity of powder meal made into two grains shape of equal density, but different shapes, will take different times to burn, the larger the surfaces exposed the quicker will be the combustion of the grain. A sphere being the smallest form in which a given quantity of matter can be placed, it follows that a certain amount of meal powder compressed into a spherical form will take longer to burn than the same quantity made into the shape of a flat scale, exposing a large surface. The rounded form of grain is the most favourable for the transmission of the flame, the interspaces being larger and more regular than in the case of elongated or flat grains fitting into one another. Hence we may conclude that, to secure *uniformity*, it is better to have the constituent grains as nearly as possible of the same shape, and the nearer this shape approaches a sphere the better.

The drying process is one of considerable importance, *Glazing* both with reference to the explosiveness, and also the keeping qualities of the gunpowder. As regards the former point, it undoubtedly modifies the violence of the combustion, and this it probably does by slightly retarding the ignition, a powder with a rough porous surface affording a better hold to the flame than one possessing a highly polished exterior. With the large "cubical" powder, used for heavy rifled ordnance, there is little or no appearance of what is commonly understood as *glaze*, or polish, from this process, but the corners and edges of the cubes are rubbed off, and the shape approximates more nearly to that of a sphere than in the case with the much lighter fine-grain powder, there seems to be also a certain hardening of the surface of the grains or pieces, partly the effects of friction, but probably due in part to the *sweating* the powder undergoes, a considerable amount of heat being generated in the *glazing* barrels. It is evident that, by taking away the sharp angles which would otherwise easily be converted into dust, and also by giving the grains a harder exterior, this process renders gunpowder the better able to bear transport, and to resist the deteriorating effect of a damp atmosphere. The addition of a thin coating of the purest graphite to cannon powders, although originally intended merely to modify the explosiveness, also renders the surface of the grains less absorbent. Military small-arm powders are never dressed with graphite, good fine-grain gunpowder will take a high finish without it, but, by its aid, a very inferior article can be polished up to a silvery brightness.

Moisture in gunpowder reduces the explosiveness by using *Effect of* up a portion of the heat generated by the combustion, to *moisture* get rid of the water, therefore the property of withstanding the absorption of moisture is a very important one for gunpowder to possess. All powder will take up from a normally dry atmosphere a certain amount of moisture, which will depend to some extent upon its density, but to a much greater degree upon the description of charcoal from which it is made. Slack-burnt or red charcoal is greatly more hygroscopic than black charcoal, or that burnt at a high temperature, and the absorbent properties of gunpowder made from the former are but little reduced by raising the density. Large cannon powder contains a greater percentage of water than the fine grain, and the actual amount present in any given sample will be affected by the prevailing state of the atmosphere, especially if kept in wooden barrels. To show the considerable effect upon the initial velocity of projectile, and pressure in bore of gun

caused by comparatively slight variations in the amount of moisture, the following results may be quoted from the experiments of Noble and Abel. The samples of "pebble" powder used were specially prepared for the Committee on explosives, differing only in the amount of moisture contained in them.

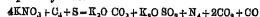
Percent age of moisture	Muzzle Velocity Two feet second	Maximum Pressure tons per sq. inch
0.7	1545	32.02
0.8	1537	31.75
0.9	1530	30.77
1.0	1523	30.18
1.1	1517	19.63
1.2	1512	19.12
1.3	1507	18.63
1.4	1502	18.18
1.5	1497	17.76

Keeping gunpowder in a very damp atmosphere will tend to separate the ingredients by dissolving a portion of the saltpetre, which crystallizes upon the surface of the grains or pieces.

### FIREGUNPOWDER

In the explosion of gunpowder, the products of combustion are very materially affected by the conditions under which it is fired,—whether burnt in the open air, exploded under very great pressure in a tightly closed vessel, or the products allowed to expand in the bore of a gun. It may, however, be stated generally that the oxygen of the saltpetre converts nearly all the carbon of the charcoal into carbonic acid ( $\text{CO}_2$ ), a portion of which combines with the potash of the nitre to form carbonate of potash ( $\text{K}_2\text{O CO}_2$ ), the remainder existing in the state of gas. The sulphur is for the most part converted into sulphuric acid ( $\text{SO}_3$ ), and forms sulphate of potash, a large proportion of which, probably by secondary reaction, becomes hyposulphate and sulphate. The nitrogen of the saltpetre is almost entirely evolved in the free state, and the carbon not having been wholly burnt into carbonic acid, there is always a proportion of carbonic oxide (CO) present.

This decomposition is so complicated, and varies so considerably under different conditions of experiment, that it is impossible to represent this transformation by any single equation, but the following expression may give some idea of the primary reaction—



There is a very large proportion of residue, which, on cooling, assumes the solid form. The experiments of Noble and Abel prove that it is *liquid* very shortly after the explosion, indeed, it is probable that at the moment of maximum temperature, the ultimately solid products are more or less in a state of vapour, being deposited in a very finely divided state as the temperature falls.

When a charge of gunpowder is exploded in the chamber of a gun, a large quantity of gaseous matter is evolved in a highly condensed state,—its texture, or expansive power, is, moreover, greatly increased by the heat generated during the transformation. The pressure being equal in all directions, the work done upon the projectile is due to the expansion of the permanent gases in the bore of the gun, which force is also considerably sustained—(1) the reduction of temperature due to the expansion in great measure compensated for,—by the heat stored up in the ultimately solid residue. Any calculation which does not take this latter point into consideration will give far too low an estimate of the actual force of fired gunpowder (see *EXPERIENCES*).

With our present state of knowledge, it may be stated in round numbers that the gases evolved by gunpowder, if it *entirely fills the close vessel* in which it is exploded, will occupy at a temperature of  $0^\circ \text{C}$  and 760 mm barometric

pressure, about 280 times the volume of the original powder, and will give a pressure of about 6000 atmospheres, or 40 tons per square inch.

In view of the very different results which have been arrived at by various eminent authorities who have experimented upon fired gunpowder, the following brief account of their researches may be useful—

Robins, the father of scientific gunnery, in 1748 read before Robins the Royal Society a paper describing experiments which showed that gunpowder, when fired, generated pressures which, in ordinary temperature and atmospheric pressure, occupied a volume 244 times greater than that of the unexploded powder. He further considered that the best evolved was such that the tension of the permanent gases would be increased fourfold, and hence deduced the maximum pressure to be about 1000 atmospheres. In 1778 Dr Hutton Hutton communicated in the same manner an account of his celebrated researches on the combustion of powder; he deduced the maximum pressure to be about twice that given by Robins, or a little over 5000 atmospheres, deducing from the latter chiefly two the temperature, for he considered that the volume of gases evolved would occupy, under ordinary conditions, 260 times that of the powder.

He also deduced formulae for giving the pressure of the gas and velocity of the projectile at any point of the bore, but no allowance is made for the loss of heat in proportion to the work done, this fundamental principle of thermodynamics being then unknown, and the error thus occasioned by, however, in most computations. For the heat stored up in the non gaseous products. In 1797 Count Rumford sent to the Royal Society his experimental determinations of the pressure given by fired gunpowder, which is remarkable, this being the first attempt to do this by direct observation. The vessel he used was, however, very small, being able to hold but 28 grains when filled, and he only succeeded in measuring the results up to a charge of 18 grains. His plan of operation was to exert until by repeated trial the least weight which would just continue the products of explosion, and thence to calculate the pressure, this he deduced from two series of experiments, which, however, gave some very anomalous results, to be as high as 100,000 atmospheres for gunpowder exploded in its own space. In 1823 Gay Lussac, the distinguished French chemist, estimated the volume of the permanent gases evolved at 450 times that of the powder itself, but General Fabert suggests very probable reasons why the volume of the permanent gases determined by him should have been doubled in 1810. Gay Lussac found the percentage composition of the gaseous products to be 52.6 carbonic acid, 5.5 of carbonic oxide, and 42.1 nitrogen.

In 1857 Hirschman and Schukroff published (*Poggendorff's Annalen*, vol. xii p. 205) the results of their very important experiments, the main deductions were—(1) that the permanent gases represented only about 32 per cent of the weight of the charge, and as opposed at the standard temperature and pressure about 160 times the volume of the original powder, (2) that the heat generated by exploding gunpowder in a close chamber is about  $3340^\circ \text{C}$ , and (3) that the heat generated would be about 4375 atmospheres, or 29 tons per square inch.

Major Rodman (Boston, 1861) published the results of his experiments carried on for the United States Government, in order to ascertain the pressures given by different powders in the bores of heavy guns. He employed a pressure gauge, which bears his name, and consists mainly of a piston, to which is attached a knife edge resting upon a piece of soft ivory, contained in a small cylinder at right angles to, and communicating with, the bore of the gun, this apparatus he used to ascertain the pressure given by powder exploded in a closed vessel. The chief value of his experiments consists in their having established the fact that the size of the gun should be proportionate to the length and diameter of the bore of the gun. Von Katsky (*Poggendorff's Annalen*, Vol. April 1853) carried out experiments from which he estimated that, for small-arm powder, the gases evolved occupied about 236 times the original volume, while cannon powder produced about 200 vol.

Captain Andrew Noble, R.E.S., of Falmouth, and Professor Noble and Abel, C.B.E., F.R.S., chemist to the British War Department, carried out a most extensive series of experiments on "Fired Gun Powder" (*Phil Trans Royal Soc*, 1875), probably the most complete ever made, and undertaken collaterally with the Government Committee on Explosives, their main results may be summed up as follows—

(A) *When Fired in a Confined Space*—(1) The products of combustion are about 57 per cent by weight of ultimately solid matter, and 43 per cent of permanent gases. (2) The latent heat of steam at  $0^\circ \text{C}$  and 760 mm barometric pressure about 280 times the volume of the original powder. (3) The tension of the products of combustion, when the powder entirely fills the space in which it is fired, is about 8400 atmospheres, or 48 tons per square inch. (4) The temperature of explosion is about  $2800^\circ \text{C}$ . (5) The chief gaseous products are carbonic acid, nitrogen, and carbonic oxide, with a little sulphuric acid and hydrogen. (6) The solid residue is mainly composed of potassium carbonate, sulphate, hyposulphate, and sulphide.

(D) When *Powder in the Dore of a Gun* . . . The products of combustion at all events so far as regards the proportions of solid and gaseous matters, are the same as in the case of powder fired in a closed vessel. (3) The work on the projectile is effected by the elastic force due to the expansion of the permanent gases in a given measure compressed by the heat stored up in the liquid (solid) residue. (4) An expression is obtained showing the law on which the pressure varies during the burning of the powder. (5) Equations are also deduced for the rate that gunpowder is capable of performing in expanding in a vessel impervious to heat, and for the temperature during expansion. These relations are applied to the determination of the velocity of the projectile in the act of performing in the bore of a gun, in terms of the density of the products of combustion, or the number of volumes of expansion. (6) The total theoretical work of gunpowder when it performs in the bore of a gun of internal length is shown to be about 480 foot tons per pound of powder.

[illegible]

The following table gives concisely the chief results arrived at —

Authors	Volume of Elementary Gas Generated	Heat Evolved by Combustion	Temperature of the Gas	Pressure in Tons
Roberts	214	Cent	Atmosphere	Psi 90 in
Hudson	250		1000	57.5
Jay Lawrence	1.0 <sup>4</sup>	16.0	2000	17.0
Bunsen and Schloß	191	140	2147	14.3
Noble and Abel	240	2200	1714	20
			0400	12

<sup>1</sup> As before stated, 1 cubic gram of uranium has a mass of 19.3 grams. If Dr. Ernst Rutherford determined experimentally the amount of work lost by the heat communicated to the gun to be about 250 cal. per gramme unit of gramme of powder in the case of a rifle muzzle, then the energy of the explosion of 1 gramme of powder is reduced to 15 cal. as 25 gramme-unit per gramme of powder is in 10 mch. gun. They have also calculated the energy in foot tons from the initial velocity obtained, and hence deduced the percentage of the possible theoretical work which is actually realized for every rifle. The factor of efficiency, or percentage, which they term the "factor of effect," is found to be greatest, viz. 70 per cent, in the case of the 38 ton gun, and least, 50.6 per cent, in the 7 pound mountain gun, weighing 160 lb.

De: To determine the pressure, Noble and Abel employed two  
 munition methods—(1) *directly*, by means of "ausiliary gauges," invented at  
 various points of the bore, this is an improvement on the Rodman  
 piston gauge, the pressure being estimated by the amount of com-  
 pression given to a small cylinder of pure soft copper, (2) *indirectly*,  
 by means of the chronoscope invented by Captain A. Noble, which  
 measures the velocity of the projectile at given points in the bore,  
 whence the pressure can be calculated (see GUNNERY). These pres-  
 sures will vary greatly, under conditions being the same, according to  
 the "explosive" used, and the object being to obtain a  
 powder suited to the particular ar-

Many foreign physicists are of opinion that the phenomenon of *dissociation* comes into play at the moment of maximum temperature, *dissociation* of carbonic acid gas ( $\text{CO}_2$ ) to be decomposed into carbonic oxide ( $\text{CO}$ ) and oxygen. However, Nobbe and Abel show that, if such be supposed to occur, the loss of heat absorbed by the decomposition would more than compensate for the increase of volume

### PREPARATION AND PURIFICATION OF THE INGREDIENTS

The three ingredients of gunpowder may be purchased in the market in a prepared or refined state, and this is done to a greater or less extent by many powder makers. However, the royal gunpowder factory, as well as some of the great private firms, prepare and purify the materials required from the commencement, with the double object of insuring uniformity in the qualities of the

powders made, and of avoiding, so far as practicable, the introduction of the least particle of grit or other foreign matters, which might cause serious accidents.

The reaction of the refining process is based upon the fact that Refining salt is far more soluble in hot than in cold water, while the salt and saline impurities found in rough nitre are almost equally soluble in either. Water at 212° Fahr. holds about twice as much nitrate of potash in solution as water at 70° Fahr.; if, therefore, a saturated solution of saltpetre be made at a temperature of 212° Fahr. and the chlorides of sodium and potassium are contained in the liquor, as the solution cools to 70° Fahr. six-sevenths of the nitrate will be deposited in the form of crystals, which can easily be removed, whereas the foreign salts will still remain in

[illegible]

into small copper pans, and set aside to cool, the concrete is also put into with the mother liquor from the large cooling tanks, and the resulting crystals tumbled as rough nuts, for these large crystals always contain liquid containing impurities. After draining for a night the cleaned saltpetre is removed to stone bins, and the mother liquor is evaporated to dryness, the amount of moisture remaining in it, from 3 to 5 per cent, is then carefully sublimed, and allowed for in the mixing horse. Neither the sublimed residue from the pots and copper, nor the mother liquor from crystallising pans is thrown away, but by repeated boilings and evaporations every accessible portion of saltpetre is extracted, and the residue, consisting of sulphate of soda, and some sulphate of potassium, with some sulphate. The yuta bins in which the saltpetre is imported are also lined down.

The large percentage of saltpetre contained in damaged powder makes it worth while to extract the nitre by boiling in large copper pans, filtering and crystallizing in small pans as before, the residuum is again boiled, and then thrown away. The sweepings from the powder houses, in various stages of manufacture, are "extracted" in the same manner.

Refined sulphate for making gunpowder is tested as follows — (1) with blue and red litmus paper, for acids or alkalis; (2) for the presence of chlorides, with solution of nitrate of silver; (3) for sulphates, with chloride of barium, forming the insoluble sulphate of barium.

By the old method of refining the solution was left to crystallize in coolers, and the drained crystals fused or melted in iron pots at a heat of about 500° Fahr., the molten saltpetre was then poured into moulds, broken up when cold, and ground under edge runners

The wood for charcoal is cut in spring, so that the bark may Charcoal  
stump off easily, and is stacked for about three years to season it, burning  
but a considerably shorter time will suffice. Being cut in lengths  
of 3 feet, the wood is packed in non cylindrical cases termed  
"ships," which are then inserted in the "cylinders" or retorts, the  
latter being built into the wall in sets of three with a furnace under-  
neath, arranged so as to allow of the complete regulation of the heat,  
the flames surround the retorts as nearly as possible. An opening  
is left in the rear end of the ship, corresponding with a similar

opening in the robot, through which, by means of pipes, the inflammable gases issuing from the interior of the wood are conducted into the furnace, and there burnt, this saves a considerable amount of fuel. There are also valves which receive and carry off the tar and pyrolysates, and positioned in the powder walls of Messrs Hall & Son of Faversham, the robots are disposed three on each side of the furnace, and the connecting pipes and dampers are so arranged that the gases from either set, or from any single cylinder, can be utilized for the charring of the wood desired by any of the others, by this means it is claimed that little fuel is required beyond the quantity needed to warm the furnace and partially char the first set of robots.

That the wood is sufficiently roasted is shown by the blue colour of the gun flame, which indicates the formation of carbon oxide, the door of the robot is then opened, and the ship is withdrawn by means of trawling, and placed in a large iron cooler having a close fitting lid, where it is left a few hours to cool enough to be turned out and put into store. The charcoal is entirely picked over by hand, and made up into bags of uniform quality, and is kept from ten days to a fortnight before being ground, to obviate the danger of spontaneous combustion, to which it is liable if ground too soon after burning, the vapour from the heat generated by the very rapid absorption and condensation of oxygen from the air by the finely powdered charcoal.

Properly made charcoal for gunpowder should be jet black in colour, and its texture should show a clean, silvery white surface, it should be light and spongy when dropped on a hard substance, and so soft as not to scratch polished copper. Black burnt charcoal, or that picked at a very low temperature, is sometimes known by its reddish brown colour, especially when ground, and this peculiarity can be recognized in the powder made from it, when reduced to a fine state of division. Charcoal burnt at a very high temperature is known by its hardness, crystalline ring, and greater density.

In France, charcoal is prepared by injecting superheated steam into the robots for a certain period. The charcoal mill in shape resembles an enlarged coffee mill, a cone with a shaft, both being surrounded with diagonal teeth and ribs, well apart at top, but gradually approaching one another below. The pulverized charcoal is thence conducted by a simple mechanical arrangement direct into a cylindrical frame or "sieve," about 8 feet by 4 feet, set at a degree, covered with copper wire cloth of about 32 meshes to the inch, all this is fine enough to pass through the cloth covering falls into a bin which encloses the sieve, and the coarser particles pass on to a tub at the further end, in order that they may be ground over again. The ground charcoal store should always stand by itself, in case of spontaneous combustion taking place.

The sulphur from Sicily known as "Lacra firsta" is employed for the best gunpowder, it undergoes a rough purification before importation, leaving from 8 to 4 per cent. of earthy impurities. Formerly these were removed by simply melting the "rough" sulphur in an iron pot, and then holding it into large wooden moulds or tubs, saturated with water to keep the sulphur out of the cracks, when cool enough, these tubs were unhooped, and the top and bottom of each mould of sulphur cut off. In the present day, however, the sulphur is cleaned by distillation in simple apparatus. A large iron "melting pot," or robot, is set in brick work, about 4 feet above the floor, with a furnace underneath, this robot has a heavy movable lid, which is luted into the pot with clay, and in the lid is also an opening, closed by an iron screw plug. From the melting pot level two pipes at right angles to one another, one to a large cucular "dome," or subliming chamber, and a smaller pipe to an iron "receiving pot" placed on a lower level than the robot, the latter pipe has an iron extension "jacket" or cover, through which water is allowed to circulate. The communication of these pipes with the robot can be shut off or opened as occasion may require by the use of valves worked from without.

A charge of about 25 cwt. of rough sulphur in small pieces being placed in the robot and the furnace lighted, the pipe leading to the dome is left open, as well as the plug hole in the lid, but that leading to the receiving pot is closed. After about two hours, a pale yellow vapour issues, when the plug in the lid is put in and the vapour allowed to pass into the dome, where it "sublimes" or condenses on the sides and floor in the form of a fine powder, known as "flowers of sulphur." In about three hours from the commencement, the vapour becomes of a deep orange colour, when the pipe leading into the dome is closed, and that into the receiving pot opened, at the same time cold water from a tank overhead being allowed to circulate through the jacket, the vapour is then condensed in the pipe, and runs into the receiving pot below in the form of a clear orange coloured fluid. When the jacket commences to get cold, the receiving pipe is closed, and the communication with the dome is interrupted, so that the rest of the vapour may pass into it, the furnace door being at the same time thrown back, the impurities remain at the bottom of the melting pot, and are thrown away. The flowers of sulphur thus obtained, being unfit for the manufacture of gunpowder, are placed in the melting pot as rough sulphur. A leaden pipe passes from the lid of the receiving pot

into a small wooden chamber lined with lead, in which any vapour still remaining uncondensed may be deposited, as in the dome. The distilled sulphur is allowed to cool down to about 220° Fahr, when it is lifted into wooden moulds, is above described, and set aside to cool. The tests for refined sulphur are the following—(1) has a small quantity on porcelain, when the amount of residual should not exceed 0.25 per cent, (2) hot a little with water, and test with blue litmus paper, which it should only very feebly reddens.

The sulphur from the moulds, being broken into pieces, is ground Pulver under a pair of iron edge runners, similar to those of the incinerator using iron mills, but of less size, after this it is passed through a col sulphur similar to it used for sifting the charcoal, but covered with even finer copper wire cloth, having 44 meshes to the inch.

#### MANUFACTURE OF GUNPOWDER

The following list will give a general idea of the chief processes of manufacture, properly so called, through which gunpowder passes, although it will be understood that more or less variation takes place in some of the very different descriptions of powder now made—(1) mixing the ingredients, (2) incineration, or "milling," (3) breaking down the mill-cake, (4) pressing, (5) granulating, or cutting the press cake, (6) dusting, (7) glazing, (8) second dusting, (9) storing, or drying, (10) finishing.

The following is the most approved method of mixing. The ingredients are carefully weighed out in the proper proportions for a 50 lb mill-charge, with an extra amount of saltpetre according to the moisture found to be contained in it, they are then placed in the mixing machine, which consists of a cylindrical gun-metal or copper drum, with an axle passing through its centre, upon which are disposed several rows of gun-metal fork shaped arms, called "flyers," the machinery being so arranged that the flyers and drum revolve in opposite directions, and at different rates of speed. After being mixed in this machine for about five minutes, the composition is passed through a hand sieve over a hopper, falls into a bag placed below, and is tied up ready for the incinerating mill, it is now called a "green" charge.

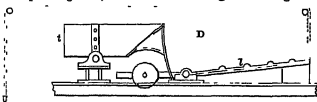


Fig. 1

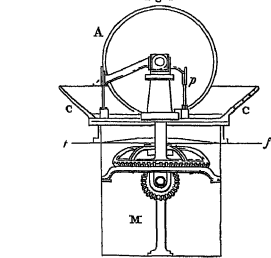


Fig. 2

Figs 1 and 2—A, sectional elevation of incinerating mill, showing one runner and ploughs (g, p), C, curb of belt, M, machinery in tank, underground, D, discharging apparatus, E, lower board, or shutter, F, tank, f, f, f, floor line.

The incinerating mill (see figs 2 and 3) consists of a large circular iron or stone bed, (about 7 feet in diameter, firmly positioned

fixed in the floor of the building, whereon a pair of iron or stone cylindrical edge-runners revolve; formerly, both were made of a dark grey limestone which took a high polish, but the newer mills have cast-iron beds and runners, the edges of the latter being now usually surface-chilled. The average diameter of the runners is 6 feet, and their width about 15 inches; they have a common axle, which rests in gun-metal bushes in a solid cross-head attached to a vertical shaft; this shaft passes through a bearing in the centre of the bed, and is in gear with the driving machinery, which is placed above the runners in the old water mills, and beneath the bed in cast-iron tanks in the new steam mills. Each runner weighs about 4 tons, and the speed averages 8 revolutions per minute. The bed has a sloping rim on the outside, called the "curb," and on the inside, an edge formed by the "cheese," or bearing, through which the vertical shaft passes. The runners are not equidistant from the centre of the bed, one working the part of the charge near the centre, and the other the outer portion, but their paths overlap. Two "ploughs" of wood, shod with leather, are attached to the cross-head by arms and brackets; one working next the vertical shaft, and the other close to the curb, the ploughs throw the composition under the runners as it works away from the latter.

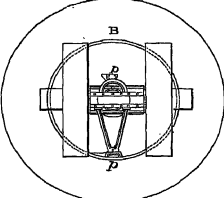


FIG. 3.—Plan of runners and bed.

The charge, when spread evenly on the bed by means of a wooden rake, contains about 2 pints of water (the moisture of the saltpetre) and a further quantity of from 2 to 6 pints is added from time to time, according to the state of the atmosphere, for the threefold purpose of preventing powder dust from flying about, facilitating the incorporation, and reducing the effect of an explosion; if too wet, the runners would lick up the composition from the bed. During the time of working, the millman enters the mill occasionally, takes a wooden "shovel," and pushes the outside of the charge into the middle of the path of the runners, so that every portion may be equally incorporated.

The action of the runners is a combination of rolling and twisting, and has, on a large scale, somewhat the effect of a pestle and mortar, crushing, rubbing, and mixing the ingredients, so as to effect an intimate union. The time of milling depends upon the nature of the powder. For good fine-grain powders it varies from four to eight hours, but the very best sporting gunpowder is said to be as long as twelve hours under the runners; blasting and cannon powders are incorporated from two to four hours, the period being rather longer where the lighter stone runners are used. It is of the greatest importance that the mills should be carefully attended to by experienced men, as the whole goodness and uniformity of the powder depends upon this process, and no after treatment can remedy defective incorporation.

When the composition, which has now become "mill-cake," is ready for removal from the bed, it should be homogeneous in appearance, without any visible specks of sulphur or saltpetre, and of a dark greyish or brownish colour, according to the charcoal used. The mill-cake is carefully tested to ascertain whether it contains the proper amount of moisture; this should be from 2 to 3 per cent. for

fine-grain powders, and 3 to 5 per cent. for the larger descriptions. Sometimes a small portion is roughly granulated, and "flushed" on plates of glass or porcelain; a good powder should flash off, leaving nothing but some smoke marks, but, if badly incorporated, the plate will be coated with specks or beads of solid residue.

In former days the ingredients were incorporated in "stamp-mills," which were simply large mortars and pestles, the latter merely raised up by some cam arrangement and allowed to drop by their own weight, the charge being about 12 lb, and the weight of the stamp 50 lb or thereabout. The stamp or *pilon* mills are still used in France and Germany, as well as the *moulin-à-tonnerre*, in which the composition is put, with about an equal weight of brass or lignum vite balls, into large barrels, which are made to revolve for a certain time on their axes; this method of incorporation is sometimes employed in conjunction with edge runners.

There is more danger of an explosion during the milling than in any other process of manufacture; but, owing to the limitation by law of the weight of charge permitted to be under the runners at one time to 50 lb, as well as to the great precautions taken, there is seldom any fatal result. The millmen only enter the mill occasionally to "liquor" the charge or give it a shove over, and at Waltham Abbey they wear incombustible clothing with a cap fitting over the ears, and gaiters of the same material. The roof, and front and rear sides of the mills are usually constructed of very light boards, or even of canvas on a wood frame, while the partitions between each pair of runners are of solid masonry. The force of the explosion of a mill charge materially depends upon the length of time the incorporation has been in progress.

Directly over the bed of each mill is a flat lever-board or "shutter" (see fig. 1) in gear with a tank of water, so arranged that, when the shutter is raised on its pivot by an explosion, the water is upset into the bed; a horizontal shaft connects all the shutters in a group of mills, so that the explosion of one mill at once drowns all the remaining charges. The set of tanks can also be pulled over by hand.

The process of breaking down, although a subsidiary one, Break- is strictly necessary in order to reduce the mill-cake to a fine ing meal, so that it may be conveniently loaded into the press down. box, and receive as uniform a pressure as possible. The breaking-down machine (see fig. 4) consists mainly of two pairs of gun-metal rollers, set in a strong frame of

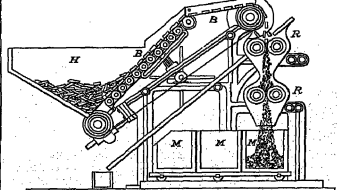


FIG. 4.—Breaking-down machine. H, hopper; B, endless band; R, rollers; M, boxes to receive meal.

the same material; one roller of each pair works in sliding bearings connected with a weighted lever, so that any hard substance may pass through without dangerous friction. An endless canvas band, having strips of leather sewn across it, conveys the pieces of mill-cake from a hopper, capable of holding 500 lb to the top of the machine,

where it falls between the first pan of rollers, after passing through the second pan, which are directly below, the meal is received in wooden boxes, piled upon a carriage, and is ready for the press.

Pressing

The press-box is usually of oak, with a strong gun-metal frame, and is constructed that the ends of the sides can turn back on hinges, or be screwed firmly together. Being laid sideways, the top temporarily closed by a board, and the uppermost side alone open, a number of copper plates

are placed vertically in the box, and kept apart (at a distance depending upon the description of gunpowder required) by two racks, which are afterwards removed, the box is then loaded with some 800 lb of meal, which is rammed evenly down between the plates with wooden laths, and the racks withdrawn, so that the plates are only separated by the meal between them. The present upper side of the box being firmly screwed down, the box is turned over, and placed on the table of the hydraulic ram, under the fixed press-block, the plates being now horizontal (see fig 5). The pumps which work the press (in a separate house) are then set in motion, and the press block allowed to enter the box a certain distance, when the edge of the latter releases a spring catch and rings a bell as a signal to stop the pumps, the powder is kept under pressure a few minutes, after which the ram is lowered, and the box removed and unloaded. For all granulated powders the press cake is broken up into pieces and put into tubs, but for the cubical cannon powders the slabs are pressed to the exact thickness required, and are carefully kept whole.

The above mode of regulating the pressure is found to give more regular results than trusting to the indicator gauge of the hydraulic press, for the reason that the elasticity, or resistance to pressure, of the meal varies with the amount of moisture present in it, and the state of the atmosphere. To get uniform density, equal quantities of meal, containing equal amounts of moisture, must be pressed at the same rate into the same space. In practice, however, the moisture in the meal will slightly vary, whatever care be taken with the mill cake, owing to the hygrometric state of the air causing a difference by the time it comes to the press. It is therefore necessary to alter the exact distance the press block is allowed to enter the box, not only with the nature of the powder, but with the season of the year, and even according to the prevailing state of the weather.

On the Continent, the operation of pressing is sometimes altogether omitted, and the requisite density given merely by the weight of the runners revolving very slowly, the charges being worked with a considerable amount of moisture in them, and the less dense edges of the cake rejected, by this plan it is, however, almost impossible to ensure uniformity in the powder produced. The meal is also sometimes pressed by passing it, on an endless band, between large rollers revolving at a slow speed, the less dense edges of the cake being cut off by fixed knives

For some centuries, gunpowder remained in the form of Granulated or "meal," being, in fact, simply the ingredients being ground up together. Granulating or "cuning" the powder was a great step in advance, but it is doubtful whether this operation was intended to increase its strength, or merely to render it more convenient for charging small arms, for which alone coined powder was used for many years, whilst meal powder was still employed for heavy guns, the latter was called "serpentine" powder in the time of Edward VI, probably in allusion to the name of one of the pieces of ordnance then in use. However, during the reign of Elizabeth, the experience of the great additional strength imparted by the coning process, and the reasons already explained, led to the universal introduction of coined powder, except for priming—both in cannon and small arms—for which purpose meal powder remained in use as late as the reign of Charles I.

The old method of granulating was to place the press-cake in sieves, provided with two bottoms of thick parchment prepared from bullock's hides, and perforated with holes, those in the lower bottom being much the smaller, a large number of these sieves were attached to a wooden frame, hung by ropes from the ceiling, which received a violent shaking motion by means of a crank underneath. Into each sieve was put a disk of lignum vitae, to break up the cake, and force it through the larger apertures, the grain produced was retained between the bottoms of the sieves, the dust passing through the fine holes in the lower ones, and falling on the floor of the house. The grain was afterwards separated into sizes by being passed through wire sieves. These machines were clumsy and dangerous, and the accidents which happened with them have caused them to be generally supplanted by better apparatus, although some of the old frames are still in use.

The granulating machines used in the royal factories in England and in India, as well as in the best private works, are constructed upon a principle introduced by Sir William Congreve, but since improved upon. Three or four pans of gun metal rollers with pyramidal shaped teeth, are fixed obliquely one above the other in a strong framework (see fig 6), the sizes of the teeth vary according to the kind of grain required, but decrease from the top pan, and for fine grain powders, the lowest pair would be smooth, one roller of each pair works in a sliding bearing, having a counterweight attached to prevent undue friction. Each pan of rollers is connected with that next below, by a short rectangular screen of copper wire, while, underneath all the rollers, as is placed, at the same slope, two or more long wire-screens fixed in a frame having a wooden bottom, both the frames and the short connecting screens are hung to the machine by strips of linen web, and, when at work, a quick vibratory motion is given to all the screens by means of a polygonal wheel upon the main frame working against a loose smooth wheel attached to the screen frame. A large hopper, which rises by the action of the machine, feeds the press cake upon an endless canvas band, as in the breaking-down machine, and carries it to the top pan of rollers, whence it falls upon the first short screen, all that is fine enough to pass through is sifted out by the shaking action of the long screens below, and travels down upon whichever screen has meshes fine enough to retain it, the pieces too large to pass through the short top screen are carried to the next pan of rollers, and so on. At the lower end of the long screens are placed boxes to receive the different sizes of grain, the "chucks," or pieces too large for any grain, are again passed through the machine, while the dust which falls upon the wooden bottom, and is received in the undermost box, goes to the mill to be worked up for forty minutes as a dust charge. Formerly at Waltham Abbey both musket (F G) and cannon powder (L G) were gran-

FIG 5.—PRESS. A, press box, B, press block, C, hydraulic ram

lated in the same machine at the same time, but dogwood charcoal being now used for small-arm powders, one description only is usually made, so that but two long screens are required to define the higher and lower limits as to size of grain; for example, all that will pass through a 12-mesh and be retained upon a 20-mesh screener would be "rifle-fine-grain" (R.F.G.) powder, suited as to size for the Snider and Martini rifles. Modifications of this machine are used by private makers, the grain being usually separated into various sizes by hand-sieves.

Pebble or cubical powders for heavy ordnance are granulated, or "cut," in special machines which divide the press-cake first into strips, and then again cross-ways, into cubes of  $\frac{3}{8}$  inch and  $1\frac{1}{2}$  inch length of edge respectively. This is effected by two pairs of gun-metal or phosphor-bronze rollers, which have straight cutting edges arranged at suitable intervals along their surfaces, the slabs of press-cake being fed vertically between the first pair of rollers. The resulting strips are carried along upon a board, by means of a skeleton band, which receives each strip of cake

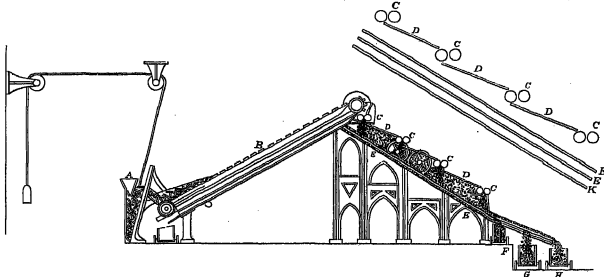


FIG. 6.—Granulating machine. A, hopper, with raising arrangement; B, endless band; C, C, C, C, four pairs of rollers; D, D, D, short screens; E, E, long screens; F, box for dust; G, box for grain; H, box for chucks; K, bottom board.

between two laths of wood; they then drop from the board upon an endless canvas band a little below, travelling in a direction at right angles to their previous motion, and are conveyed *endways* to the second pair of rollers. To prevent the strips of cake from fouling one another, the board upon which they first fall has a reciprocating motion given to it by means of an endless chain, one link of which is studded

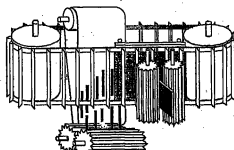


FIG. 7.—Rollers of cube-cutting machine.

to a bracket underneath the board; consequently, as the board travels backwards, the strips are deposited at intervals, *in echelon*, upon the canvas band. The diagram (fig. 7) shows a portion of the machine. The cubes, &c., fall into a small reel fixed at a slope beneath the machine, which allows the dust and fragments to pass between its wires while the properly sized pebbles or cubes are delivered into boxes. The large 1½-inch powder has, however, afterwards to be picked over by hand.

**Dusting.** All grain from the granulating machine is called "foul-grain," and has to be deprived of its dust in reels, consisting of a cylindrical frame-work about 8 feet long by some 2 feet in diameter, covered with a dusting cloth or canvas of from 18 to 56 meshes to the linear inch, according to the size of grain. These reels are either "horizontal" or "slope," according to the position in which they are fixed and the object in

view. Slope-reels are open at both ends, fixed at an angle of about 4°, and are used for fine-grain powders as they come from the machine, when they contain more dust than the larger grain, especially if made from dogwood charcoal; the powder is poured in at the higher end, and received in barrels at the other end. The larger grained powders are dusted for about half an hour in a horizontal reel, with closed ends, the charge being from 250 to 300 lb; one end of the reel is made to lower for the purpose of unloading. Both kinds of reel are enclosed in cases to receive the dust, which, as before, is sent back to the incorporating mills for 40 minutes or so.

The theory of glazing gunpowder has already been discussed. All descriptions are glazed, for varying periods, in glazing barrels or "churns" (fig. 8), which are usually about

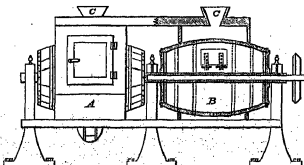


FIG. 8.—Glazing barrels. A, elevation, showing door of case; C, hoppers for loading; B, section through barrel (showing opening in dotted lines).

5 feet long by 2 to 3 feet in diameter, and revolve some 34 times in a minute; however, barrels of much greater diameter and less length are occasionally employed, revolving at a slower rate. The charge for each barrel is ordinarily 400 lb, and the fine-grain powders are mixed with a pro-



portion of the "chucks" or larger pieces, which are afterwards sifted out. The glazing process causes a great alteration in the appearance of the grain, especially in that made from dogwood; the dull brownish hue is replaced after a few hours by a fine black colour with more or less polish. Some powders are glazed from 10 to 12 hours, a considerable amount of heat being generated by the friction. Fine-grain powders are again passed through the slope reel after glazing.

**Shoving.** All kinds of gunpowder are dried in the same manner. The "stove," or drying room, is fitted with open framework shelves or racks, the heat being produced by steam pipes underneath. The powder is spread upon either copper trays or wooden frames with canvas bottoms, each capable of holding about 12 lb, which are then placed upon the racks. Not more than 50 cwt. may be dried at one time. The length of time required for stoving depends upon the nature of the powder, and the proportion of moisture it contains; it varies from about twelve hours for fine-grain up to three or four days for the very large cannon powders; the heat ranges from 120° to 145° Fahr., the temperature being gradually raised or lowered. It is most important that a stove should be well ventilated, so that a constant current of hot dry air may be supplied, and the air charged with vapour carried off; if this be not done effectually, the moisture would be recondensed upon the powder as the temperature was lowered.

**Finishing.** The drying process produces a small portion of dust which it is necessary to remove; but the finishing process has, especially upon the fine-grain powder, a much more considerable effect than the mere removal of dust. It is usually finished by being run from two to three hours in a horizontal reel (see fig. 9), the charge being 300 lb, and acquires a very glossy appearance, if the quality be good, even without the addition of graphite, which is very commonly added to sporting gunpowder. Large cannon powder, such as "pebble" and "cubical," is finished in large skeleton wooden reels, shaped like barrels, and enclosed in cases; after being run for about three quarters of an hour,

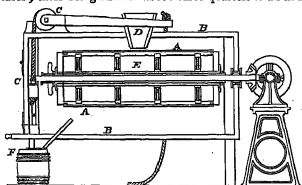


FIG. 9.—Horizontal Drying Reel (longitudinal section). A, cylindrical reel; B, reel case; C, apparatus for lowering one end for unloading; D, hopper for loading; E, opening reel for loading; F, barrel for unloading into.

a small portion of the purest graphite (2 oz. to 400 lb of powder) is introduced in muslin bags, and the powder is run for a short time longer. This skeleton reel will hold a whole "glazing" as the contents of four glazing barrels is termed, being about 18 barrels of 100 lb each, and advantage is taken of this finishing process to mix together a number of glazings, so as to get a batch of 50 or 100 barrels giving uniform results at proof. These batches are afterwards "blended" together in four-way hoppers, with others of opposite character, should they not in all respects be up to specification, and any quantity of gunpowder so finished or blended as to give identical results at proof is termed a *brand*, and receives a distinctive number.

Upon the introduction of very heavy ordnance, firing large charges, it was found that the ordinary (L.G. or R.L.G.) cannon powder was too sudden in its action, owing to the whole charge being consumed before the projectile had sensibly moved from its seat in the bore, thus causing a most violent strain to the metal of the gun. To obviate this defect, the grains or pieces were made much larger, so as to diminish the total surface of combustion, and, consequently, the volume of gas evolved at the first instant of explosion; the powder was also given a considerably higher density, which retarded its combustion. These changes resulted in the adoption of the pebble and cubical powders, already mentioned, in England, and in America, of "Mammoth" powder, consisting of large, irregular-shaped American grains (cf. fig. 10) from 0"·6 to 0"·9 in size; an improvement has since been made in this powder by pressing it in uniform-sized pieces, of the shape shown in *i*, fig. 10, being the frusta of two hexagonal pyramids, separated by a prismatic space left rough.

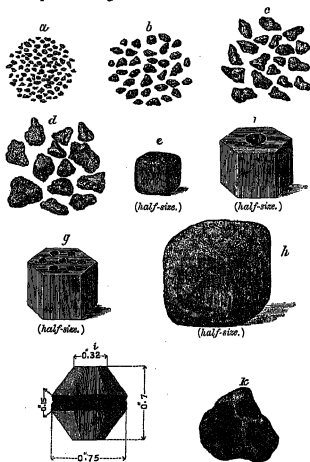


FIG. 10.

The figures *a* to *k* show the relative sizes and shapes of grain now commonly employed for military purposes in Europe and America, except that the three largest powders—pebble (*e*), prismatic (*f*, *g*), and cubical (*h*)—are figured half the real size to save space, whereas the remainder indicate the actual dimensions of the grains. Powder for small-arms is represented in *a*; all the other descriptions are intended for cannon of various sizes.

The improvements above described materially lessen the Rodman's initial strain, at the expense of requiring a longer gun to perform the powder completely, but it still remains true that, even with a charge composed of large, dense pieces, the evolution of gas is greatest at the commencement of combustion, and decreases as the grains burn away, although

the space occupied by the gases increases as the shot travels along the bore. This is exactly the opposite of what should theoretically take place, and causes the maximum pressure to be excited before the inertia of the projectile has been overcome. So far back as 1860, these considerations led General Rodman, the eminent American artilleryist, to employ, in the experiments with his 15-inch and 20 inch cast-iron guns, what he termed a "perforated cake cartridge," composed of discs of compressed powder from 1 to 2 inches thick, and of a diameter to fit the bore, pierced with holes running parallel to the axis of the gun. In his *Properties of Metals for Cannon, and Qualities of Cannon Powder* (Boston, 1861), Rodman demonstrated mathematically that such an arrangement of the charge would relieve the initial strain by exposing a minimum surface at the beginning of the combustion, while a greater volume of gas would be evolved from the increasing surfaces of the cylindrical hollows as the space behind the projectile became larger, this would tend to distribute the pressure more uniformly along the bore. The results of experiment perfectly bore out his theory, but he found it more convenient for several reasons to build up the charge in layers of hexagonal "prisms" of comparatively small size, fitting closely one another, instead of having the cakes or discs as large as the bore.

The civil war in America most probably interfered with the further development of General Rodman's powder, but the idea was taken up by a Russian military mission in the United States, and resulted in the manufacture on a large scale by Russia of what is now known as "prismatic powder." It has since been adopted in Germany for use in all heavy rifled ordnance, for the very largest guns, such as Krupp's 70 ton gun, this powder has been recently made with one centimetre high, having a higher density (1.78) than the original seven-hole prisms, which were about 1.68, the external dimensions are the same, 1 inch high by 1.36 in diameter. The prisms are so arranged in the cartridge that the hollows are continuous throughout.

Prismatic powder represents a distinct class, the peculiarity of which is that each grain or piece is pressed separately in a metal mould. In the British service, powder for heavy rifled guns, in the shape of small cylindrical pellets, with a hollow half-way through, was made some twelve years since, but has been superseded by the pebble or cubical powder cut up from press-cake. To make this class of powder, whether prismatic or cylindrical, we need—(1) a mould in which to place the meal or granulated powder, usually a number of moulds are contained in one plate, (2) a punch to fit each mould accurately with which to compress the powder, and needles to form the perforations, (3) an appliance for pressing the finished pellets or prisms out of the moulds, or this may be done by the punches themselves, if the moulds are closed by a removable upper plate.

The requisite pressure may be given either by hydraulic machinery, as at Waltham Abbey, or by means of a cam or eccentric on a shaft driven by steam or water power, as in the Russian and German pneumatic machines. By the former plan a large number of pieces may be pressed slowly at one operation, but by the latter only about six prisms can be formed at a time, the machine, however, works very quickly, and has a small hopper for the meal or grain, and a self feeding apparatus, the mould plate sliding backwards and forwards, so as to be alternately underneath the hopper and punches. Self-feeding machines of this nature are found to get clogged when used with powder-meal, and this was doubtless the chief reason why granulated powder was first used, the size of grain is about that shown in fig 10, b. It is probable that a more uniform density could be given to the prisms by hydraulic

pressure than by the cam arrangement, the latter is said to exert a maximum pressure of 2000 lb on the square inch. The prismatic powder only needs careful drying at a moderate heat to finish it.

It has been found that all powders thus made possess less explosiveness than those granulated or cut up from press-cake, the smooth surfaces of the pieces apparently afford little hold for the flame, and thus they ignite slowly, by some this is considered a defect, but by others an advantage. For this reason, as well as those already detailed, prismatic powder stains the metal of the gun less, in proportion to the velocity obtained, than pebble or cubical, but, to give the projectile an equal velocity, the charge of prismatic must be considerably larger. The cost would probably be also greater, weight for weight.

#### PROOF OF GUNPOWDER

The tests to which powder is subjected are as follows—

1 *For proper Colour, amount of Glass, sufficiently hard and crisp Texture, and Freedom from Dust*—These points can be judged by the hand and eye alone, and require a certain amount of experience in the examiner. The cleanness of the powder is tested by pouring a quantity from a bowl held 2 or 3 feet above the barrel, if there be any dust it will be thus easily detected. If it is injured by damp there will be little or no dust, but the grain will be "rotten," and may be broken between the fingers, minute crystals of salt petre may be also detected on the surface in a good light.

2 *For proper Incorporation*—By "flashing," that is, burning a small quantity on a glass, porcelain, or copper plate. The powder is put in a small copper cylinder, which is then inverted on the flashing plate, this provides for the particles being arranged in nearly the same way each test, which is very important. If the powder be very large, it must be broken up and sifted to a certain size through a small hand-sieve. Properly made gunpowder should "flash," or puff off, when touched by a hot iron, with few "lights" or sparks, leaving only some smoke marks on the plate. A badly incorporated powder will give out a quantity of sparks, and leave specks of uncombined sulphur and sulphur, forming a dirty residue. Powder made from very slack burnt charcoal, or which has been injured by damp, will always flash badly.

3 *For Shape, Size, and Proportion of the Grains*—Shape can be judged by the eye, and the size of a large portion can be measured, on the number of pieces to 100 counted, granulated powder may readily be divided into the two sieves which determine its higher and lower limits of size. The proportion of different sized grains is ascertained by using three or more sieves. For example, the Government small-arm powder is sifted with 12-mesh, 16-mesh, and 20-mesh sieves, all must pass the first, not less than three quarters be retained upon the second, and only one sixteenth part is allowed to pass the last-named sieve.

4 *Density*—Formerly this was ascertained by "cubing," or finding the exact weight of a carefully constructed box of known contents, when filled with powder in a particular manner. But as this plan gave only an approximate result, a mercurial densimeter has been substituted, by means of which the density can be ascertained to three places of decimals. Briefly, the machine determines with great accuracy the weight of a globe when it is (a) filled with mercury alone under a certain pressure, and (b) filled with a known weight (say 100 grammes) of powder and mercury under precisely similar conditions, then, if  $S$  be the specific gravity of mercury at the time of experiment,  $W$  the weight of globe filled with mercury alone, and  $W'$  the weight when filled with powder and mercury,

$$\text{Density} = \frac{S \times W}{W' + 100}$$



*Gunter's Chain*, the chain in common use for measuring land, is 92 yards long and is divided into 100 links. Its usefulness arises from its decimal or metric division, and the fact that 10 square chains make an acre.

*Gunter's Line*, a mathematical line, usually had drawn upon scales, rulers, &c.

It is also called the *line of lines* and the *line of sines*, &c., being only the logarithms graduated upon it, which therefore serves to solve problems instrumentally in the same manner as logarithms do arithmetically.

*Gunter's Quadrant*, an instrument made of wood, brass, or other substance, containing a kind of stereographic projection of the sphere on the plane of the equinoctial, the eye being supposed to be placed in one of the poles, so that the tangent, ecliptic, and horizon form the arcs of circles, but the hour circle and other circles, drawn by means of several altitudes of the sun for some particular latitude every year. This instrument is used to find the hour of the day, the sun's azimuth, &c., and other common problems of the sphere or globe, and also to take the altitude of an object in degrees.

*Gunter's Scale* (generally called by some the *Gunter*) is a large plane scale, usually 2 feet long by about 1 1/2 inches broad, and engraved with various lines of numbers. On one side is, plural the natural line (i.e. the line of chords, the line of sines, tangents, secants, &c.), and on the other side the corresponding artificial or logarithmic ones only. By means of this instrument questions in navigation, trigonometry, &c., are solved with the aid of a pair of compasses.

GUNTHER, JOHANN CHRISTIAN (1695-1723), German poet, was born at Striegau in Lower Silesia, on the 8th April 1695. After attending the academy at Schweidnitz, where he composed a number of verses of more than usual promise, he entered in 1715 the university of Wittenberg with the view of studying medicine, but he became idle and dissipated, contracted heavy debts, and came to a complete rupture with his father. In 1717 he went to Leipzig, where he obtained the friendship of Menck, and published a poem on the poetry of Parnassus, which secured him an immediate reputation. Menck recommended him to the king of Poland, but unhappily the first time he appeared at court he was in a state of intoxication. From that time he led an unsettled and dissipated life, depending for an uncertain subsistence partly on money obtained for occasional poems and partly on the charity of his friends. He died at Jena, 15th March 1723, when only in his 28th year. Goethe pronounces Gunther to have been a poet in the fullest sense of the term. As a lyrical poet he stands alone among his contemporaries for freedom, spontaneity, and sincerity of utterance, and his works as a whole give evidence of deep and lively sensibility, fine imagination, clever wit, and a true ear for melody and rhythm. As an epic poet, however, which was the necessary consequence of his aimless life, he is more or less present in most of his poems, and dull, vulgar, or impure vituperations are not unfrequently found side by side with the purest inspirations of his genius.

His collected poems were published in four volumes, Breslau, 1723-1725. They are also included in *Titmann's Deutsche Dichter des 17ten Jahrh.*, Leipzig, 1874. A mutilated anthology of Gunther appeared at Schweidnitz in 1729, and a life of him by Sebastian at Leipzig in 1738. See also Hoffman, *J. Ch. Gunther, ein Leben nach seinen letzten Versehen*, Breslau, 1838, and Roquette, *Leben und Dichten J. Ch. Gunthers*, Stuttgart, 1860.

GUNTGOR, a town in Kistna district, Madras, situated on the Grand Trunk road, about 46 miles from Masulipatnam, 17° 42' N lat., 80° 20' E long., population 18,033. It is the headquarters of the sub-collector and the district judge of Kistna, and there is a considerable trade in grain and cotton. Guntoor was formerly the capital of a Cunar (Sarkar) under the Mahometans, it was ceded to the French by the treaty in 1763. At the time of the cession of the Cunar to the English in 1766, Guntoor was specially exempted during the life of Baratid Jang, whose personal debt it was. In 1786 it came into British possession, and was finally confirmed in 1803.

GURDASPUR, a British district in the lieutenant-governorship of the Punjab, lying between 32° 30' and 31° 36' N lat., and between 74° 56' and 75° 45' E long. Bounded on the N. by the native Himalayan states of

Kashmir and Chamba, on the E by Kangra district, and the river Bias, on the SW by Amritsar district, and on the W by Sialkot, the district of Gurdaspur occupies the submontane portion of the Bari Doab or tract between the Bias and the Ravi. An intrusive spire of the British dominions runs northward into the lower Himadry ranges, to include the mountain sanatorium of Dalhousie. This station crowns the most westerly shoulder of a magnificent snowy range, the Dholi Dhill, between which and the plain two minor ranges intervene. Below the hills stretches a picturesque and undulating plateau covered with abundant timber and made green by a copious rainfall, and watered by the streams of the Bari Doab, which, directed by dams and embankments, now empty their waters into the Bias directly, in order that their channels may not interfere with the Bari Doab canal. The district contains several large and important *jhils* or swampy lakes. Few facts can now be recovered with regard to the early annals of Gurdaspur. Our first distinct historical knowledge begins with the rise of the Sikh confederacy. The whole of the Punjab then was distributed to the chiefs who triumphed over the imperial government. In the course of a few years, however, the famous Ranjit Singh acquired all the territory which those chiefs had held. Pothohar and the neighbouring villages in the plain, together with the whole hill portion of the district, formed part of the conquest by the Sikhs to the East India Company after the first Sikh war in 1840. In 1861-62, after receiving one or two additions, the district was brought into its present shape, having its headquarters at Gurdaspur.

Owing to the numerous transfers of territory which took place between the censuses of 1855 and 1868, it is impossible to give a detailed comparison of their results. The enumeration of 1868 was taken over at the close of 1822, whose area, and its declared population of 906,126 persons, males, 501,247, females, 404,879. Classified according to religion there are—Hindus, 304,107, Mahometans, 422,189, Sikhs, 79,387, and "Others," 101,438. Only six towns have a population exceeding 5000, namely, Batala, 26,897, Dera Muzak, 7190, Dumanaga, 6626, Surajpur, 6556, Lalanaun, 6080, and Surajpur, 5531. Gurdaspur, the chief town and administrative headquarters of the district, had only 4337 inhabitants in 1876. The sanatorium of Dalhousie, 7687 ft. above sea level, though only termed as containing 2019 inhabitants, has a large fluctuating population during the warmer months. The district possesses throughout an excellent soil, except in some small patches on the Bias side, where sand covers the surface. The chief agricultural staples comprise wheat, barley, and grain for the spring harvest, with rice, pulses, cotton, and sugarcane for the autumn crop. The principal means of irrigation are those supplied by the Bari canal, water, or mountain streams, but in the greater part of the Punjab province no better crops are produced without such artificial aid. In 1876-76 the total cultivated area amounted to 855,675 acres, of which 110,630 acres were irrigated by irrigation against the effects of drought. The trade of the district consists mainly in the export of its agricultural produce. The imports are insignificant—English piece goods, salt, and fancy articles, forming the main items. The local trade centres on Batala. The principal road of the district connects Amritsar with Pothohar, at the foot of the hills, and passes through Batala, Gurdaspur, and Dumanaga. The total mileage of highways in 1876-76 showed 56 miles of metalled and 40 miles of unmetalled roads. The total population in 1876 was 2123,608. In 1875-76 the district contained 12 civil and revenue judges, and 14 officers exercised magisterial powers. In the same year the police force numbered 886 men, supplemented by a large body of rural watchmen. In 1876-76 there were 113 schools, having an aggregate roll of 5708 pupils. The climate of Gurdaspur is not unhealthy, but large swamps and excessive irrigation expose some neighbourhoods to malarious fevers and ague. The mean temperature for 1871 was 66° 38' in May and 63° 8' in December at Gurdaspur, and 67° 38' in May and 46° 06' in December at Dalhousie. The average annual rainfall for eight years ending 1876-76 was 86 inches. Seven charitable dispensaries attended about 1375-76) to 86,614 persons.

GURGAON, or GOORGAON, a British district in the lieutenant-governorship of the Punjab, between 27° 39' and 28° 30' 45' N lat., and 76° 30' 45' and 77° 35' E long. Bounded on the N by Rohilk, on the W and S W by portions of the Ulwar, Nabha, and Jind native states, on the

S. by the Muttra district of the North-Western Provinces, on the E. by the river Jumna, and on the N.E. by Delhi, the district of Gurgūn comprises the southernmost corner of the Punjab province, and stretches away from the level plain towards the hills of Rājputāna. Two low rocky ranges enter its borders from the south and run northward in a bare and unshaded mass toward the plain country. East of the western ridge the valley is wide and open, and essentially extends to the banks of the Jumna. To the west lies the subdivision of Rewārī, consisting of a sandy plain dotted with isolated hills. Numerous torrents carry off the drainage from the upland ranges, and the most important among them empty themselves at last into the Nalāgarh *jhil*. This swampy lake lies to the east of the civil station of Gurgūn, and stretches long arms into the neighbouring districts of Delhi and Rohatā. Salt is manufactured from lime in wells at several villages. The mineral products are iron ore, copper ore, plumbago, and ochre. Wolves, leopards, deer, jackals, hares, and foxes are found in the district. In 1803 Gurgūn district passed into the hands of the British after Lord Lake's conquests, and under their influence improvements made steady and rapid progress. On the outbreak of the mutiny at Delhi in May 1857, the nawāb of Farrukhnagar, the principal feudatory of the district, rose in rebellion. The Meos and many Rājput families followed in his example. A talented native officer preserved the public buildings and records at Rewārī from destruction; but with this exception, British authority became extinguished for a time throughout all Gurgūn. After the fall of the rebel capital, a force marched into the district and either captured or dispersed the leaders of rebellion. The territory of the nawāb was confiscated on account of his participation in the mutiny. Civil administration was resumed under orders from the Punjab Government, to which province the district was formally annexed on the final pacification of the country.

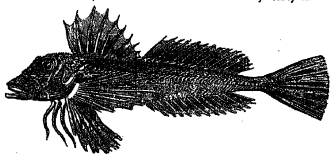
The census of 1888 was taken over an area of 3015 square miles, and it disclosed a population of 698,646 persons—males, 370,261, females, 328,386. The Hindus number 480,307; Mahometans, 215,147; Sikhs, 130; and "others," 62. In 1875-76 there were four municipal towns, with populations as follows:—Rewārī, 25,627; Ferozepore (Ferozpur), 10,580; Palwal, 13,242; Farrukhnagar, 10,611. Gurgūn, the administrative headquarters, had in 1868 a population of 5539. Out of a total area of 1,267,335 acres, as many as 967,440 were returned in 1875-76 as under cultivation. The principal products are wheat, barley, *jowar*, *kajra*, gram, oil-seeds, pulses, cotton, and tobacco. Owing to the deficiency of artificial irrigation, Gurgūn must always be exposed to drought. Seven periods of dearth have occurred since the disastrous year of 1785. In 1893 and 1897 many villages, according to report, lost their whole population through death and emigration. The traffic of Gurgūn district centres entirely upon the town of Rewārī, which ranks as one of the chief trading ports in the Punjab. Its merchants transact a large part of the commerce between the states of Rājputāna and the northern provinces of British India. Salt from the Sambhar Lake, together with iron, forms the principal import; sugar and English rice-goods form the chief items of the return trade. In 1871-72 the imports of Rewārī were valued at £208,392, and the exports at £29,028. The means of communication are not of the highest order. One good metalled road traverses the district, from Delhi to Muttra, but the lines of greatest mercantile importance are unmetalled. The Rājputāna State Railway now passes through the district, with stations at Gurgūn, Jhāmā, Jātāl, Kalpur, and Rewārī. The total revenue in 1874-75 was £211,865. In the same year 18 civil and revenue judges had jurisdiction, and the police force numbered 605 men, supplemented by a body of village watchmen. The number of schools was 66, with a joint roll of 8860 pupils. The summer heat of Gurgūn reaches a great intensity, no record of temperature, however, exists. The average annual rainfall for the eight years ending 1873-4 was 28·53 inches. The district contained 4 charitable dispensaries, affording relief (1875) to 18,034 persons.

GURNALL, WILLIAM (1616-1879), author of the *Christian in Complete Armour*, was born in 1616 at Lynn, Norfolkshire. He was educated at the free grammar school of his native town, and in 1631 was nominated to the Lynn scholarship in Emmanuel College, Cambridge, where

he graduated B.A. in 1635 and M.A. in 1639. Nothing is known of his history from the time that he left the university till 1644, when he was made rector of Lavenham in Suffolk; but it would appear from one of his letters that when he received that appointment he was officiating as minister at Sudbury. At the Restoration he signed the declaration required by the Act of Uniformity, and on this account he was the subject of a libellous attack, published in 1665, entitled *Covenant-Renouncers' Desperate Apostates*. He died October 12, 1679, and was buried at Lavenham. The work by which Gurnall is principally known, *The Christian in Complete Armour*, was published in three separate volumes in 1685, 1688, and 1692, and soon became so popular that in 1679 a sixth edition had been called for. It consists of a series of sermons on the latter portion of the 6th chapter of Ephesians, and is more fully described in the title page as a "Treatise of the Saint's War against the Devil; wherein a discovery is made of that grand enemy of God and his people, in his policies, power, seat of his empire, wickedness, and chief designs he hath against the saints;" and a "Magazine from whence the Christian is furnished with spiritual arms for the battle, helped on with his armour, and taught the use of his weapon; together with the happy issue of the whole war." The work is more practical than theological; and its quaint fancy, graphic and pointed style, assisting variety of scriptural application and allusion, and fervent religious tone render it still popular with a certain class of readers.

An *Inquiry into the Life of the Rev. W. Gurnall*, by H. M'Keon, appeared at Woodbridge in 1830, and a biographical introduction by the Rev. J. C. Ryle, chiefly founded on this pamphlet, was prefixed to an edition of the *Christian in Complete Armour* published in London in 1865.

GURNARD (*Trigla*). The gurnards form a group of the family of "mailed cheeks" (*Triglidæ*), and are easily recognized by three detached finger-like appendages in front of the pectoral fin, and by their large, angular, bony head, the sides of which are protected by strong, hard, and rough bones. The pectoral appendages are provided with strong nerves, and serve not only as organs of locomotion when the fish moves on the bottom, but also as organs of touch, by which it detects small animals on which it feeds. Gurnards are coast-fishes, generally distributed over the tropical and temperate areas; of the forty species known seven occur on the coast of Great Britain, viz., the red



*Trigla pleurocaention*.

gurnard (*T. vint*), the streaked gurnard (*T. lineata*), the sapphire gurnard (*T. hirundo*), the grey gurnard (*T. gurnardus*), Bloch's gurnard (*T. cuculus*), the piper (*T. lyra*), and the long-finned gurnard (*T. obscura* or *T. lucerna*). Although never found very far from the coast, gurnards descend to depths of several hundred fathoms; and as they are bottom-fish they are caught chiefly by means of the trawl. Not rarely, however, they may be seen floating on the surface of the water, with their broad, fin-like pectoral fins spread out like fans. In very young fishes, which abound in certain localities on the coast in the month of August and September, the pectorals are comparatively much longer than in the adult, extending to the

end of the body, they are beautifully coloured and kept expanded, the little fishes looking like butterflies. When caught and taken out of the water, gurnards emit a grunting noise. Their flesh is very white, firm, and wholesome.

GURWAL See GURUWL.

GUSTAVUS I (c. 1496-1560), king of Sweden, commonly known as GUSTAVUS VASA, the surname being derived from the family arms, which were a bundle of sheaf, is justly celebrated as the founder of modern Sweden, he delivered it from the yoke of Denmark, introduced the Reformation, established law and order, and laid the foundation of its industrial prosperity. His family name was Ericson, he was born about 1496 of a noble house, and he was related to the powerful family of Steno. Gustavus was at a very early age called upon to suffer for his country Sweden was still joined to the other Scandinavian kingdoms under the union of Calmar, Denmark being the leading state. Sweden was a reluctant member of this union and King Christian of Denmark was obliged to maintain his supremacy with a high hand. In an expedition to Stockholm this king treacherously caused off the young Gustavus and other nobles as hostages to Denmark. After being detained in Jutland for above a year, Gustavus managed to escape in disguise to Lubeck, and the great Hanse town, ever jealous of the power of Denmark, furnished him with the means of returning to Sweden, where he landed in 1520. He had now formed the resolution to deliver his country from the oppression of the Danes. He went about from place to place trying to incite the people to revolt, but on all hands he met with apathy and even resistance. For some time his life was in extreme danger, he was hunted by the Danish authorities, and worked in disguise on the farms and in the mines of Dalecarlia. The barn in which he threshed corn is preserved as a state monument. He was on the point of fleeing over the hills into Norway, when tidings came of the Blood bath of Stockholm, in which many of the nobles and leading men of Sweden, including the father of Gustavus himself, were executed by the Danish king. This deed roused the slumbering patriotism of the Swedes, especially of the hardy people of Dalecarlia, who now chose Gustavus as their leader (1520). They instantly defeated the Danish forces, and took the principal towns. By 1523 Stockholm was taken and Sweden delivered from the Danish yoke. At a great diet held at Strängnäs in that year Gustavus was elected king of Sweden. Finland was speedily recovered after liberating his country, Gustavus set himself to the far harder task of reforming and settling it. Sweden was in a very backward and disorderly condition. The nobles had great power and many selfish privileges, the clergy were wealthy, and in the war of freedom had taken the side of the Danes, the peasants were poor and discontented. There was little respect for law, the whole country was demoralised and disorganised. The reforms of Gustavus began with the church. The two brothers Peterson had already introduced the doctrines of Luther, and the chancellor Anderson had translated the New Testament into the native tongue. Vasa encouraged their efforts, in a great diet held at Westerås in 1527 he succeeded under the threat of abdicating in passing measures, by which the lands of the bishops were placed at his disposal, and full liberty was granted of preaching the gospel, but the support of the nobles had to be gained by a share of the spoils. The Reformation soon took deep root, but the troubles of Gustavus continued. He required to deal with a turbulent nobility, he had to beat off the exiled king of Denmark, three times he needed to pacify a revolt in Dalecarlia, and he was forced to put forth the whole strength of his kingdom to quell a peasants' war in the south. The pretensions of Lubeck, which had given him real help in the war of freedom, and to which he owed a consider-

able sum of money, involved him in a war, by which he curtailed their commercial privileges. In all these difficulties Gustavus bore himself with equal energy and wisdom. In 1544 his position was so secure that the elective sovereignty was changed by the diet into an hereditary one. From this time till his death in 1560, except an unimportant war with Russia on the Finnish frontier, there was little to disturb the quiet progress of Sweden. Gustavus's home policy made an era in Swedish history. Law, order, and national spirit were encouraged and developed, schools were everywhere established, roads made, and foreign trade extended by advantageous commercial treaties with England and Holland. Nothing was too homely or minute for the supervision of the king, he was ready to encourage, withhold, or instigate, whenever an opportunity offered in any department of industry. He even established model farms. His second and best-loved queen Margaret had a dairy farm on which twenty-two maidens tended the cows. While he avoided foreign war he did not neglect national defence, he left an excellent army of 15,000 men, and he created a considerable naval force. Altogether, few kings have done so much for any country as Gustavus Vasa did for Sweden. He was succeeded by his son Eric.

See Geijer's *History of the Swedes*, also an anonymous *History of Gustavus Vasa*, London, 1852.

GUSTAVUS II, or GUSTAVUS ADOLPHUS (1594-1632), the hero of Protestantism in the Thirty Years' War, and the first king of Sweden who played a great rôle in European history, was the grandson of Gustavus Vasa, and the son of Charles IX. He was born at Stockholm in 1594, and received an excellent education. As we learn from his friend and chancellor Oxenstierna, he gained in his youth "a complete and ready knowledge of many foreign languages, so that he spoke Latin, German, Dutch, French, and Italian as purely as a native, and besides had some familiarity of the Russian and Polish tongue." Even during his busier years, after ascending the throne, it is said that he was fond of reading the great work of Grotius, *De Jure Belli et Pacis*, also that he knew Greek, preferring Xenophon as a military historian to any other. He was introduced to the business of government at an early age, when he was only ten, his father required his presence at meetings of council and at the audiences given to foreign ambassadors. Thus early experience was needed, for, his father dying in 1611, he ascended the throne of Sweden in his eighteenth year. His position was a difficult one, after fifty years of civil strife, Sweden had lost the strong and compact organization which it had received from Gustavus Vasa, the finances were exhausted, the nobles were discontented, and the spirit of the people had declined. Abroad, Sweden was surrounded with enemies, Denmark, Russia, and Poland being in a state of chronic hostility with it.

To the difficult task before him the young king applied himself with equal skill and resolution. He attached the nobles to himself by his respect for their privileges and his genial manner, showed them a more honourable field of activity in a patriotic war, and even induced them to bear their due share of its financial burdens. The administration was reformed in all its branches, industry encouraged, and education greatly improved. In this way the national spirit was wonderfully raised, and Sweden was gradually prepared to play for the first time a great part in Europe, a part which seemed so disproportionate to her natural resources. At his accession Gustavus was engaged in a difficult war with Denmark, which, besides its supremacy over Norway, occupied what is now southern Sweden. The peace of 1613 left their respective frontiers very much as they had been before the war. The war with Russia ended much more advantageously for Gustavus in the peace of Stolbova (1617), by which Sweden was confirmed in the possession

of the Baltic provinces stretching from Finland to Livonia. Gustavus clearly foresaw the advantage to Lithuania and the danger to Sweden if the former power were allowed to plant itself on the Baltic coast, and he now congratulated his country on a peace which assured her against such a risk. In 1620 Gustavus married a sister of the elector of Brandenburg, with whom he lived happily till his death. After being for many years engaged in an intermittent war with Poland, Sweden (1621) entered upon a more active conflict with that power. With some interruptions the struggle lasted till 1629, and proved an excellent training for Gustavus. Sigismund, king of Poland, was his cousin, and had at one time been king of Sweden, but had been forced to resign owing to his Catholic opinions. He still laid claim to the crown of Sweden. In this war Gustavus took Riga, and made many other conquests in Livonia as well as in Courland and Prussia, part of which he retained by the peace of Altmärk, concluded under the mediation of Richelieu.

That great statesman wished to get Gustavus's hands free for a more important conflict, in which the king himself had long been eager to engage. While Gustavus had been involved in his Baltic war, the Catholic house of Austria had been swiftly raising itself on the ruins of German Protestantism to a position of absolute supremacy. In this early period of the Thirty Years' War, which dates from 1618, the armies of Protestantism had been everywhere overthrown by Tilly and Wallenstein. The latter, raising a host at his own cost and bearing desolation wherever he went, garrisoned Brandenburg and Pomerania, occupied Mecklenburg, and overran the continental dominions of Denmark. The only town that successfully resisted the imperial general was Stalsund, the king of Denmark was obliged to make peace. Such a colossus, with its gigantic force of oppression and devastation and its invincible armies, Gustavus now ventured to attack. It seemed a foolhardy undertaking which excited the laughter of his enemies, when in mid-summer 1630 he landed on the coast of Pomerania with his little army of 15,000 men. Yet there were many things in his favour—the despair of the Protestant princes, who saw a great part of their lands threatened by the Edict of Restitution, the disunion of the Catholics, who forced the emperor to dismiss Wallenstein shortly after the landing of Gustavus, the help of Richelieu, who now inaugurated the French policy of weakening Germany by dividing it. This help was formally assured him by the treaty of Bawalde (January 1631). Yet the German princes showed no haste to join Gustavus, the duke Boguslaw reluctantly consented to receive the Swedish army into his capital—Stettin. But the marvellous discipline of the Swedes, so different from the wild barbarism of the imperial army, soon gained the confidence of the German people, and nobles and licence were unknown, morning and evening the soldiers assembled for prayer round their regimental chaplains, such an army had never been seen in Europe. It was not less distinguished for its hardy bravery in war, keeping the field in winter as well as summer, it soon drove the imperialists out of Pomerania and the lower basin of the Oder, and stormed Frankfort-on-the-Oder. In the midst of those successes, Gustavus was greatly moved by the sack of Magdeburg (May 1631). Fearful of being cut off from his basis of operations, he could not advance to the relief of the city without the cooperation or consent of the electors of Brandenburg and Saxony. During the delay this caused, Magdeburg was taken by Tilly, and became a scene of the most fearful atrocities. Too late Gustavus forced the elector of Brandenburg to hand over to him the fortresses required, a desolating invasion of Saxony by Tilly compelled even the Saxon elector to seek the aid of Sweden. The union of the Swedish and Saxon forces was followed

by the battle of Breitenfeld (near Leipzig), in which Tilly was completely overthrown, and the supremacy of Catholic Austria shattered at a single blow (Sept. 1631). While the Saxons overran Bohemia, Gustavus, now hailed as the liberator of Protestantism, marched westwards towards the Rhine, gathering round him the friendly Germans, and driving out the imperial garrisons. Wurtzburg and Frankfort were occupied, at Oppenheim he forced the passage of the Rhine against the Spaniards, he spent Christmas in the ecclesiastical city of Mainz. Early next spring he advanced into Bavaria, forcing the passage of the Lech in the face of Tilly (who was mortally wounded).

Munich had to pay a war contribution to the Swedes. In this overwhelming reverse of fortune, the emperor Ferdinand was obliged to invoke the aid of Wallenstein, who soon changed the course of the war. He gathered a mighty host, cleared the Saxons out of Bohemia, and marching westwards threatened the wealthy city of Nuremberg. Afraid of a repetition of the horrors of Magdeburg, Gustavus hastened northwards and threw himself into the city with a small force. In the neighbourhood Wallenstein threw up a fortified camp resolving to stave his rival out, and here the great captains watched each other for several weeks. After drawing his scattered forces together, Gustavus offered battle to the enemy, and when that was declined he assaulted his intrenched position, but without effect. Leaving a sufficient garrison to defend the exhausted city, he advanced a second time into Bavaria, where he hoped to draw Wallenstein after him, and thus transfer the seat of war to the enemy's country. But Wallenstein made a desolating march through Thuringia into Saxony, which he resolved to make his winter quarters, and again Gustavus was obliged to leave his Bavarian conquests to save his ally from such a cruel guest. On a misty November day (1632) he attacked the army of Wallenstein at Lützen (near Leipzig). The numbers engaged were not great according to Ranké, the Swedes were 14,000, the imperialists only 12,000 at the beginning of the conflict, but the battle was one of the fiercest recorded in history. The Swedes had carried the strong positions of the enemy and turned his own cannon against him, when the cavalry of Tappenheim, which had left the main army shortly before the battle, appeared on the field. The Swedes were hurled back, and the king, too eagerly hurrying forward to reform the battle, was separated from his guards and shot. Wild with rage and sorrow the Swedes renewed the attack, overthrew the enemy, and won his artillery again. Without making any effort to recover it, Wallenstein retreated into Bohemia, while the Swedes carried the disfigured body of their king from the battlefield. It was laid to rest in the Riddarholm church at Stockholm.

Gustavus Adolphus is justly regarded as one of the noblest and greatest figures in history. Even in the art of war he made an epoch. To the huge and unwieldy masses of Tilly he opposed a light and flexible formation of three deep, which he manoeuvred with unworldly rapidity. The activity of his movements was equalled by the dexterity with which his artillery and muskets were handled, at Leipzig his guns fired three shots for the enemy's one. The political plans which Gustavus entertained have been the subject of some discussion. That he aimed at founding a Swedish empire of the Baltic, and succeeded in doing so, is certain, he meant also to unite under his protection the *corpus evangelicum* of Germany. Probably too he seemed to be some a candidate for the empire, and if so, he had only one disadvantage, that he was a foreigner. Even with this drawback it would have been the best course available for Germany, to have enjoyed for a generation the rule of such a man would have been an unspeakable blessing, at any rate infinitely better

than the supremacy of Austria, or that process of desolation and desecration which actually took place. In any case his premature death at the age of thirty eight was an irreparable loss for German Protestantism. The Thirty Years' War, which for two years had been rendered heroic by his presence, degenerated again into a scene of the wildest barbarism, by which Germany was reduced to a wilderness, and flung back at least a century in the march of civilization.

See Geyer, *History of the Swedes*, Fryxell, *History of Sweden*, English translation by May, 1861, and *Geschichte Gustav Adolfs*, Leipzig, 1855. *Quatre, Gustav Adolfs*, 4th ed., edited by Kiopp, Stuttgart, 1863. Droysen, *Gustav Adolf*, Leipzig, 1869-70. Ranke, *Geschichte, Wallenstein*, 8d. ed., Leipzig, 1872, 8. R. Gaidman, *The Thirty Years' War*, E. O. Ott, Sonnenschein & Co., London, 1875. Pelic Equignon de Paris, *Gustave Adolphe*, Paris, 1875. Schiller's *Geschichte des dreissigjährigen Kriegs* is a brilliant production, but written without a careful study of the sources. (T. K.)

GUSTAVUS III. (1746-1793), king of Sweden, succeeded his father Adolphus Fredrick at the age of twenty-five. He was in Paris when his father died, and was an enthusiastic admirer of everything French. His manners were popular, he was brave, resolute, and eloquent. At the beginning of his reign he found the royal power completely overshadowed by the nobles, who in the council virtually dictated the government of the country, and had involved it in frequent disturbance and disgrace. A revolt, contrived for this purpose by one of his adherents, gave Gustavus a pretext for marshaling his guards, whom he won over and employed to make a complete change in the constitution. As the nobles were disliked by the people, they were obliged to submit. Surrounded by soldiers, the diet accepted the new form of government, by which the entire administrative power including taxation was entrusted to the king. In many respects Gustavus made an excellent use of his great power, he improved the army and navy, reformed the administration of justice, abolished torture, and built hospitals. But his foolish aping of French fashions, and his dream of reviving the knightly exercises and accomplishments, led him into great extravagance. His arbitrary attempt to introduce a national dress, as well as the convulsion of bandy, the national drink of Sweden, into a royal monopoly, lost him his popularity. In 1788 in his campaign against Russia, several nobles, officers of his army in Finland, refused to carry on the war because it had not been sanctioned by the estates. Angry at this Gustavus summoned the hardy Dalecarlians to his aid, deprived the nobles of their exclusive privileges, and made his power absolute. He continued the Russian war with great bravery and even success till the peace of 1790, which made no change on the Finnish frontier. Gustavus's next project, which he prosecuted with his usual energy and disregard of consequences, was a war to save King Louis XVI. from the Revolution. This war the estates, already weary of his expensive undertakings, refused to support. To avert a new *coup d'état* some nobles formed a conspiracy against him, and Ankarström, formerly an officer in the guard, shot him at a masked ball at Stockholm (1793).

GUSTAVUS IV. (1778-1837), king of Sweden, was son of the preceding. He was only fourteen years of age when his father was cut off, and his uncle Duke Charles acted as regent during the minority. Gustavus early gave proof of an obstinate strength of will and of a highly-wrought temperament bordering on insanity. Thus he went to St. Petersburg, according to agreement, to marry a granddaughter of the empress Catherine, and the whole court was assembled for the ceremony. The bridegroom however did not appear, and the company dispersed after waiting several hours. Gustavus had drawn back at the eleventh hour, refusing to sign the marriage treaty because it bound him to grant his future queen the free exercise of

her religion. He spent his whole reign under the mastery of a fixed idea, that Napoleon was the Great Beast spoken of in the Apocalypse, and he joined the great coalition of 1805 against the conqueror. In this war Swedish Pomerania was occupied by the French. Even after Tilsit, Gustavus prosecuted the war with unbroken resolution. Sweden suffered fearfully by this obstinacy of the king, the Russians conquered Finland, the Danes invaded the southern provinces, his English allies, wearied of his irrational obstinacy, left him to his fate. Sweden also grew sick of his wrong-headed policy. The officers of the army conspired against him. He was dethroned and detained in captivity, while his uncle Duke Charles was elected to the crown (1809). After the new arrangements had been made, he was banished with the assurance of a considerable income. Under the name of Colonel Gustavson he passed a wandering life abroad, dying at St. Gall in 1837.

GUSTAVUS ADOLPHUS UNION (GUSTAV-ADOLF-STIFTUNG, GUSTAV ADOLF-VEREIN, EVANGELISCHER VEREIN DER GUSTAV-ADOLF-STIFTUNG), a society formed of members of the Evangelical Protestant churches of Germany, which has for its object the aid of feeble sister churches, especially in Roman Catholic countries. The project of forming such a society was first broached, in connection with the bicentennial celebration of the battle of Lützen, on the 8th of November 1832, a proposal to collect funds for a monument to Gustavus Adolfus having been agreed to, it was suggested by Superintendent Giesemann that the best memorial to the great champion of Protestantism would be the formation of a union for propagating his ideas. For some years the society was somewhat limited in its area and operations, being practically confined to Leipzig and Dresden, but at the Lieföpfung festival in 1841 it received a new impulse through the energy and eloquence of the Hofprediger Zimmermann of Darmstadt, and in 1843 a general meeting was held at Frankfurt-on-the-Main where no fewer than twenty-nine branch associations, belonging to all parts of Germany except Bavaria and Austria, were represented. The want of a positive creed on the part of the Union tended from the first, however, to make many of the strictest Protestant churchmen doubtful of its probable usefulness, though on the other hand its purely negative attitude in relation to Roman Catholicism secured for it the sympathy of the masses. At a general convention held in Berlin in September 1846 a keen dispute arose about the admission of the Königsberg delegate Rupp, the founder of the "Free Congregations," his exclusion, which was carried by a majority, called forth many energetic protests, and at one time it seemed likely that the society would be completely broken up. A peaceful solution of the difficulty, however, was reached at Darmstadt in 1847. Amid the complications of the Revolution of 1848 the whole movement fell into stagnation, but in 1849 another general convention (the seventh), held at Breslau, showed that, although the society had lost both in membership and income, it still was possessed of considerable vitality. From that date the Gustav-Adolf-Verein has been more definitely "evangelical" in its tone than formerly, and under the direction of Zimmermann of Darmstadt it has greatly increased both in numbers and in wealth. In 1863 the income was £13,500, in 1885 it had risen to £21,000, while in 1876 there was divided among 1406 congregations a sum of nearly £25,000. The total number of congregations assisted up to that date was 2553, and the sum distributed amounted to an aggregate of nearly £637,000. Apart from any influence it may have had in advancing the cause of Protestantism in places where it was struggling or weak, there can be no doubt that the Union has had a very great effect in helping the various separate Evangelical churches of Germany to



realize the number and importance of their common interests. It ought to be added that the strictest Lutherans still continue to hold out from it.

The Verein has numerous special organs, of which the most important are the *Darmstädter Bote des Evangelischen Vereins d. i. Gutsav Adolf-Stiftung und Fliegende Blätter*. See *Zimmermann's Geschichte des Gutsav Adolf-Vereins*, Darmstadt, 1868.

**GUSTROW**, the chief town of the Wendian circle of the grand duchy of Mecklenburg-Schwerin, Northern Germany, is situated on the Nebel and on the railway from Lubeck to Stettin, 20 miles south of Rostock. The principal buildings are the castle, erected in the middle of the 16th century, now used as a workhouse, the cathedral, dating from the 13th century, and lately renovated, containing many fine monuments and possessing a square tower 100 feet high, the town-hall, dating from the 16th century, the court houses, the music hall, and the theatre. Among the educational establishments are the ducal gymnasium, which possesses a library of 16,000 volumes, the town school, the city school, the trade school, and four female schools. The town is one of the most prosperous in the dukedom, and has breweries, foundries, tanneries, sawmills, brandy distilleries, and manufactures of tobacco, glass, candles, and soap. There is also a considerable trade in wool, corn, wood, butter, and cattle, and an annual cattle show and horse races are held. Population (1875), 10,993.

Gustrow was a place of some importance as early as the 12th century, and in 1219 it became the residence of Prince Henry Bismarck II., from whom it received Schwerin privileges. From 1566 to 1886 it was the residence of the dukes of Mecklenburg-Gustrow. In 1698 it was occupied by the imperial troops, and Valentinus resided in it during part of the years 1698 and 1699.

**GUTENBERG**, JOHN, was born about 1410 at Mainz of noble parents, his father being Friele von Gansfleisch, and his mother, whose name he adopted, Elise von Gutenberg. In 1420 the citizens of Mainz drove the patricians out of the city, and as Gutenberg's name appears about ten years later at Staßburg the family probably took refuge there. When the expelled families were recalled to Mainz, Gutenberg did not avail himself of the privilege. We next hear of him at Straßburg, where in 1434 he seized and imprisoned the town clerk of Mainz for a debt due by the corporation of that city, releasing him, however, at the urgent representations of the mayor and counsellors of Staßburg. In 1437 Gutenberg was sued before the ecclesiastical court by Emmeline zu Isenre Thure for breach of promise of marriage, the case being settled by his making her his wife. The active mind of Gutenberg had adopted several plans for making money before he invented the art of printing with movable types, which is his great claim upon the gratitude of mankind. Before 1426 he engaged in some experiments requiring money, when Andrew Ditzelsh, a fellow-citizen, became security for him, and the same year a partnership between them was arranged to carry out Gutenberg's new plan for polishing stones. Next came an improvement in the manufacture of looking-glasses, for which money was lent by other two friends. For these a lucrative sale was expected at the approaching pilgrimage to Aix-le-Chapelle, which, however, was unfortunately postponed. In 1438 was arranged a partnership between Gutenberg, Andrew Ditzelsh, Andrew Heilmann, and Anton Hollmann, and that this concerned the new art of printing appears from the long law proceedings which soon after followed. The action was brought by the brothers of Ditzelsh, who were dead, to force Gutenberg to reveal the secrets of the partnership. The decision was in favour of Gutenberg. In January 1441 Gutenberg obtained 80 livers by mortgaging some house property, and again in 1442 he borrowed money of Martin Brether for carrying on his experiments. For four years after this nothing is known of Gutenberg except that his wife paid taxes

in his name. He now returned to his native city, Mainz, where he borrowed 100 guilders of his kinsman Arnold Gelthus, and established himself in the house Zum Jungen, which was part of the family possessions. At this time Gutenberg must have been able to show some solid and convincing results of his new invention, for he obtained substantial aid from a shrewd goldsmith, John Fust or Faust, who advanced 800 guilders to promote the work, taking as security a mortgage on all the printing materials to be purchased. Gutenberg at once set to work upon a large folio Latin Bible, the printing of which was ended before August 1455. During the progress of this great undertaking several forms of indulgence and other small things were printed, the earliest with a date being the indulgence of 1454 in the library at Althorp. But the new art was certainly not a success commercially, and again Fust had to come forward with another 800 guilders to prevent a collapse. In November 1455 Fust determined to dissolve his connexion with Gutenberg, and demanded payment of his advances. Gutenberg not being able to refund so large a sum, Fust took legal proceedings against him, and he was eventually compelled to yield up the whole of the printing materials, which at once were removed by Fust to his own house at Mainz. Here with the assistance of Peter Schoffer he continued to print until the sack of the city in 1462 by Adolphus II. Gutenberg, however, was the evening of his life, had to make a fresh start in the world, and fortunately in Dr. Humery of Mainz found a friend who assisted him with capital. Embarrassment, however, still pursued him, and the press made slow progress. It is uncertain whether the new press of Gutenberg was in Mainz or at the neighbouring town of Eltville. On January 17, 1465, Gutenberg accepted the post, at the court of Archbishop Adolphus, of salaried counsellor. He received annually a suit of livery together with a fixed allowance of coin and wine. Meantime the printing materials were lent to the brothers Bechtelmuze, who printed some considerable works, and upon the death of Gutenberg were claimed and taken by Dr. Humery. On February 2, 1468, died Gutenberg, poor, childless, and almost friendless, after laying the foundations of an art which was soon to dominate the world. Arnold Gelthus erected a monument to his memory near his grave, and forty years afterwards Ivo Wittig set up a memorial tablet at the legal college in Mainz.

No portrait of Gutenberg is known, those appearing upon medals, statues, or engraved plates being all fictitious. The latest authority upon his life and work is *Gutenberg*, by Dr. Van der Lande.

**GUTHRIE**, THOMAS (1803-1873), Scottish clergyman and philanthropist, was born at Brechin, Forfarshire, on July 12, 1803. He entered the university of Edinburgh at the early age of twelve (November 1815), and continued to attend classes there for more than ten years. During that period he seems to have read widely in general literature, although he did not distinguish himself as a student in the strict sense. On the 2d of February 1825 the presbytery of Brechin licensed him as a preacher in connexion with the Church of Scotland, but it was not till 1830 that he was inducted to his first charge, Airlisle, in Forfarshire, where he laboured for seven years. In 1837 he became the colleague of the Rev. John Sym in the pastorate of Old Greyfriars, Edinburgh, and at once attracted notice as a great pulpit orator. Towards the close of 1840 Guthrie was chosen minister of St. John's Church, Victoria Street, Edinburgh. His increasing popularity brought him flattering invitations both from London and from India, but these he firmly declined. He was an enthusiastic supporter of the movement which led to the Disruption of 1843, and his name is therefore associated with the Free Church. In 1847 he began the

greatest work of his life by the publication of his first *Plan for Ragged Schools*. This pamphlet, amid a multitude of other encomiums, elicited a beautiful and sympathetic letter from Lord Jeffrey. A ragged school was opened on the Castle Hill, which has been the parent of many similar institutions elsewhere. Guthrie insisted on bringing up all the children in his school as Protestants, and he thus made his ragged schools not only educational but proselytizing institutions. This interference with religious liberty led to some controversy, and ultimately those who differed from Guthrie founded the United Industrial School, which is managed on the principle of combined secular and separate religious instruction. In April 1847 the degree of D.D. was conferred on Guthrie by the university of Edinburgh, and in 1850 Dr Hanna, the biographer of Dr Chalmers, was inducted as his colleague in Free St John's Church.

In 1850 Guthrie published *A Plea on behalf of Drunkards and against Drunkenness*, which was followed by *The Gospel in Ezekiel* (1855), *The City, its Sins and Sorrows* (1857), *Christ and the Influence of the Saints* (1858), *Seclerism and Decay of Ragged Schools* (1860), consisting of his three *Pleas for Ragged Schools*, and *The Way to Life and Speeding to Heaven* (1863). These works had an enormous sale, and earned his fame to distant parts of the world. Portions of them were translated into French and Dutch. In 1862 he was moderator of the Free Church General Assembly, but he seldom took a prominent part in the business of the Church courts. In connection with the total abstinence movement he often appeared on the platform, where his oratorical talents, rich humour, genuine pathos, and irresistible power of story-telling eminently qualified him to shine. He was also greatly interested in the work of the Bangladeshi Alliance, of which he was one of the vice-presidents. In 1864, his health being seriously impaired, he resigned public work as pastor of Free St John's (May 17), although his nominal connexion with the congregation ceased only with his death. Guthrie had occasionally contributed papers to *Good Words*, and, about the time of his retirement from the ministry, he became editor of the *Sunday Magazine*, himself contributing several series of papers which were afterwards published separately. In 1865 he was presented with £5000 as a mark of appreciation from the public. His closing years were mostly in retirement, and after an illness of several months' duration he died at St Leonard-on-Sea, February 24, 1873.

Dr Guthrie's fame rests on his labours as a social reformer and his extraordinary oratorical power as a preacher and platform speaker. He will always be remembered as one of the most successful and warm-hearted of Christian philanthropists, and his influence over the masses of his countrymen was very great. His theology was the moderate Calvinism generally accepted by the Evangelical school. His style is distinguished by great graphic power and richness of illustration, but, although admirably adapted for effect on a popular audience, it is far too florid and Asiatic in its rhetoric to please a sound literary critic.

See *Autobiography of Thomas Guthrie, D.D.*, and *Memorials* by his sons, 2 vols., London, 1874-5.

GUTS MUTHES, JOHANN CHRISTOPH FRIEDRICH (1759-1839), a German teacher and the principal founder of the German school system of gymnastics, was born at Quedlinburg 9th August 1759. He was educated at the gymnasium of his native town and at Halle university, and in 1785 he went to Schneepfenthal, where he taught geography and gymnastics in Salzmann's academy. His method of teaching gymnastics was expounded by him in various handbooks; and it was chiefly through them that gymnastics very soon came to occupy such an important position in

the school system of Germany. He also made much to introduce a better method of instruction in geography. He died May 21, 1839.

His principal works are *Gymnastik für die Jugend*, 1789, *System der Übung und Erhaltung des Körpers und Geistes für die Jugend*, 1792, *Handbuch, 1817*, *Handbuch der Geographie*, 1810, and a number of books constituting a *Bibliothek für Pädagogik, Schullehre, und die gesamte pädagogische Literatur Deutschlands*. He also contributed to the *Vollständiges Handbuch des neuesten Erziehungs- und*, along with 3 vols. published *Deutsches Land und deutsches Volk*, the last part, *Deutsches Land*, being written by him.

GUTTA PERCHA (GUTTA TABIN, &c.) This name<sup>1</sup> is applied to the constricted or imbricated juice of various plants belonging to the natural order *Sapotaceae*, growing in the Malay Peninsula. To what particular tree the name "gutta percha" properly belongs, there is no evidence to show, but it has been generally given to *Dichoposia Gutta* (Bentley and Timen) or *Isomandra Gutta* (Hooker), the vernacular name of which is "taban"<sup>2</sup>.

The *Dichoposia Gutta* attains a height of 60 to 80 feet, with a diameter of 2 to 4 feet. The leaves are ovate-oblong and entire, pale green on the upper side, and covered beneath with short reddish-brown shining down. The flowers are arranged in clusters of 3 or 4 in the axils of the leaves. The fruit, about an inch long, is of an ovoid shape, and is eaten by the Malays. In Sikkim (Siam) a vegetable butter is prepared from the seeds. The wood is soft, fibrous, spongy, of a pale colour, and marked with black lines, these being reservoirs of gutta percha.<sup>3</sup> The gutta, as it flows from the tree, is of a greyish hue, occasionally with a somewhat isoset tinge, probably arising from the colour vessels of the bark becoming ruptured through suclage, and then contents mixing with the gutta. This species does not furnish all the gutta percha of commerce, indeed there are other trees which yield larger quantities. In all these are about thirty varieties known, but some of the vernacular names in different districts may prove mere synonyms.

The geographical distribution of the trees producing gutta percha is very restricted. Gutzlaff defines the limits as 6° N and 8° lat and 100° to 120° E long, whilst Captain Langard (who has great personal experience on the subject) gives the limits as 4° N and 3° S lat, still further restricting the area varieties to 3° 50' N and 1° S, with a temperature ranging between 66° and 90° Fahr, and a very moist atmosphere. These limits are well within the isotherm of 80° Fahr. Many of the best varieties are found only on the hill slopes at a distance from the coast, each variety forming a separate grove of from 200 to 500 trees, with high forest trees above them. They grow best in a rich light loam, with a rocky subsoil.

The collection of gutta percha generally takes place directly after the rainy season, as in the dry season the gutta does not flow so readily, while during the rains sugar and jungle fever are most prevalent, and the gutta is liable to be washed away from the felled trees. The yield of a well-grown tree of the best variety is from 2 to 3 lb of gutta percha, such a tree being about thirty years old, 30 to 40 feet high, and 1½ to 3 feet in circumference. A full grown tree sometimes measures 100 to 140 feet to its first branches.

<sup>1</sup> Gutta, or as it is variously written gutah, gutta, gutth, gitta, is the Malayan term for gum, and Percha (pronounced as in peral, not hard as perka), accentuated variously as pichia, peila, percha, is the name of the tree, hence the term may be translated "gum of the percha tree." The old name of Sumatra was Pulao or Pulau Percha, i.e., "Island (Pulau) of the percha tree."

<sup>2</sup> Taban, taban, tabun is the name of the tree, and, according to Logan, a new word has been added to the Malay language, viz., Mamban (Mam[ph]an), i.e., to collect gutta taban. The great numbers of Malay natives admit of conversion into verbs by a prefix.

<sup>3</sup> For figures and botanical descriptions see *Land Journ. Bot.*, 1848, De Vriesse, *De Handel in Getah-Percha*, and Bentley and Timen's *Medicinal Plants*, part 85, p. 16 (1878).

with a girth of 20 feet at a distance of 14 feet from the base, and may yield 50 to 60 lb of gutta percha, which loses in six months about 35 per cent of its weight in drying.

The methods of extracting the gutta percha are much the same amongst the Malays, Chinese, and Dyaks. The trees are cut down just above the buttresses, or *bancas*, as they are called, and for this purpose a staging about 14 to 16 feet high is erected. The tools used in felling are either "billhooks" or "parangs." A billhook is a kind of axe used by the Malays in felling, building, &c. The blade is of a chisel like form, and the tang is secured at right angles to a handle by means of a lashing of "ratan" or cane. The Chinese sometimes use an even perfectly wedge-shaped. The parang looks more like a sword-bayonet, and in the hands of a Malay is a box of tools in itself, as with it he can cut up his food, fell a tree, build a house, or defend himself.

When the tree is felled the branches are speedily lopped off, to prevent the ascent of the gutts to the leaves. Narrow strips of bark, about an inch broad and 6 inches apart, are then removed, but not all round the tree, as its support in its fall becomes buried in the soft earth, much sap being thus lost. Some natives beat the bark with mallets to accelerate the flow of milk or gutta. The milk flows slowly (changing colour the while) and rapidly coagulates, and, according to its source, may vary from yellowish-white to reddish or even brownish in hue. The gutta as it flows is received into hollow bamboos, doubled-up leaves, splashes of palm, pieces of bark, cocoa-nut shells, or in holes scraped in the ground. If the quantity obtained is small, it is prepared at the spot by rubbing it together in the hands into a block, in one end of which a hole is made to carry it by. In this state it is known in the market as "raw gutta" or "gutta muntah." If water gets mixed with the juice, the gutta becomes stringy and is considered deteriorated, but after boiling appears quite as good. Sometimes the gutta is kept in a raw state for a month or two, and then undergoes the next step in the preparation, that is, boiling. The boiling is generally conducted in a "kwalli" or pan of cast or hammered iron, of about 10 inches in diameter and 6 inches deep. The boiling is either simply with water, or with the addition of lime juice or cocoa-nut oil. If one pint of lime juice be added to three gallons of gutta juice, the latter coagulates immediately on ebullition.

On arriving at the point of shipment the gutta, before exportation, generally undergoes examination and classification into parcels, according to quality. As received in the "godowns" or warehouses it presents great diversities in condition, shape, size, and colour,—from crumbling, hardy coherent, whitish or greyish "raw" or "getah muntah" fragments, to reddish or brownish blocks as hard as wood. Sometimes it is made up into all manner of grotesque shapes of animals, and it is mostly always largely adulterated with sawdust, clay, stones, &c. The Chinese are great adepts in assorting and classifying gutta, and frequently prepare from different varieties a certain "standard sample" by cutting or chopping the material into thin slices and boiling with water in large shallow iron pans, keeping the contents constantly stirred with poles, and adding good gutta percha and even cocoa-nut oil to give a better appearance. When sufficiently boiled the gutta is pressed into large moulds, and is then ready for shipment. This process of reboling is wholly unnecessary, and in some cases is done only to get rid of stuff which has no right to be called "gutta percha."

The amount and value of gutta percha imported into Great Britain in 1875-76 were as follows—

	1875	1876	1877
Cwt.	19,068	21,658	26,350
Value	£119,081	£128,441	£226,327

The price of gutta percha ranges from 4d to 3s per lb, according to quality and demand.

**History.**—The early history of the use of gutta percha is somewhat obscure; the Malays and Chinese are said to have long known and used it. One of the earliest notices of it in England occurs in a catalogue of the collection of the famous Truicenses.<sup>1</sup> Dr Montgomerie, a surgeon in the East India Company's service, was the first to direct attention to gutta percha as likely to prove of great utility in the arts and manufactures. Having observed the substance in Singapore in 1823 in the form of whips, he commenced experimenting with it. In 1842, being again stationed at Singapore, he followed up the subject, and his recommendation of it to the medical board of Calcutta as useful for making of splints and other surgical apparatus met with high approval. He also sent specimens, with relative information, to the Society of Arts of London, which society warmly took up the subject, and on Montgomerie's return to England in 1844 presented him with its gold medal. Some have claimed the honour of introducing gutta percha to the notice of the commercial world for Dr (afterwards Sir) Jose D'Almeida, who sent a specimen merely as a curiosity to the Royal Asiatic Society in 1843, but careful investigation clearly decides the question of priority in favour of Montgomerie. The Society of Arts having requested him to lay before them the result of his experiments, he delivered a lecture in the summer of 1844, and many patents were at once taken out, the most notable those of M. C. Hancock, Mr Nickels, Mr Keene, Messrs Barlow and Forster, Mr E. W. Siemens, and others. After this the substance soon came into general use.<sup>2</sup>

**Properties.**—Gutta percha, like many other milky juices, occurs in the latifolious leaves of the plant, which exists in greatest abundance in the middle layer of the bark. See DORTCH, vol. iv p. 87.

Gutta percha is resolvable into two kinds, *alba* and *flava*. The former is insoluble in water, but is a hydrocarbon. *Soubeiran* gives its composition as—carbon 87.80 and hydrogen 12.20. In commercial gutta percha we have thus hydrocarbon or pure gutta, plus a soft resin, a remnant of oxidation of the hydrocarbon.

Mr Payson gives the following analysis of commercial gutta percha—

Pure gutta (milk white in colour and insoluble), 75 to 82 per cent. Resins soluble in boiling alcohol—

1. Crystalline or *album* ( $C_{10}H_{16}O_2$ ), white, and crystallizing out of the alcohol as it cools, 6 to 14 per cent.

2. *Fluad* ( $C_{10}H_{16}O_2$ ), yellow, filling up an amorphous powder on the cooling of the alcohol, 1 to 14 per cent.

It is thus apparent that the change of pure gutta into a resin like mass takes place naturally if means be not taken to stop it. Many a good piece has been thus lost to commerce, and the only remedy seems to be thorough boiling as soon after collecting as possible. It must be remembered too, that in cutting through the bark to arrive at the latifolious vessels, many other vessels and cells become ruptured, containing tannic and gallic acids, &c., and the presence of these no doubt is a deleterious action. In opening bottles of the milky juice a turbidity and effervescence are often noticed, owing to the formation of a brownish liquid, the colour being probably due to the presence of gallic acid. In improperly prepared blocks of gutta also, these foreign substances reduce the presence of a brown fermental and putrid liquid, which decomposes the internal mass. Many of these substances, being soluble in water, are removable by the process of boiling.

Gutta percha is met with in commerce as of a reddish or yellowish hue, but when quite pure is of a greyish-white colour. In this

<sup>1</sup> In the *Museum Truicense*, London, or, a *Collection of the Useful* given out at South Lambeth, near London, by John Truicense, London, 1804, the following entry occurs (p. 44)—"VIII. Gum of Rarities.—The phloem mass wood, being a mixed, will work to any form." This material became the subject of the Asiatic Museum at Oxford. The word "maza," variously spelt, often occurs in early English poetry, and is specially mentioned in old etymologies and will. It is by no means impossible that maza may have been made of gutta percha, as its lightness, strength, and non-solubility to fluids would recommend it, and especially among one of the venereal juices of the tree yielding gutta percha is "maza wood tree."

<sup>2</sup> See Collins on "Gutta Percha" in *British Manufacturing Industries* (Stanford & Co.), and the various notices of *Styrene* in the *Patent Office* in *Cambridge, Gutta Percha*, &c. issued by the Patent Office.

state, it is newly as hard as wood, only just retaining the impression of the mill, is of a porous structure, and when viewed under the microscope has the appearance of a series of variuously lined prisms. When moulded, rolled into sheets, or drawn into ropes, it assumes a fibrous character in the direction of its greatest length, in which direction consequently it can be stretched without rupture. If, however, a strip of a sheet be cut off across the fibre, it will be found that a re-entrance into the direction of the strip takes place, &c. the direction of the fibrous character is developed in an opposite direction. The elastic properties of gutta percha were first noticed by Barlow. If a piece be subjected to friction, an electric spark can be obtained. On the contrary, though tough, and from 145° to 160° it grows soft and pliable, allowing readily of being rolled and moulded. In this state it has all the elasticity of ebonite, but thus it loses as it cools, gradually becoming hard and rigid again, and retaining any form impressed on it whilst in its plastic condition. It is highly inflammable, and burns with a bright flame, dropping a black residue like sealing wax. The specific gravity of gutta percha has been variously stated, from 0.99285 to 0.99923. It is insoluble in water, alcohol, dilute acids, and alkalis, but dissolves in an oil of turpentine, sulphide of carbon, cold turpentine oil, eucalypti oil, or eucalypti, and its own oil,—for it yields by destructive distillation an oil similar to that yielded by concheville, under the same treatment. Either and some of the essential oils render it pliable, and it is softened by hot water, absorbing a small quantity of the water, which is slowly parted with in cooling.

**Manufacture and Applications.**—Gutta percha, as received in England, is in irregular pieces, and is frequently adulterated with mineral stones, sand, brick, sugar, flour, and other foreign matters, and the first step in its manufacture is to cleanse it thoroughly. The blocks are first sliced by means of a powerful circular wheel driven by machinery, and then the whole is cut in the strong chisel like knives, by which it is divided into thin slices. These are placed in wooden troughs filled with water and heated by steam, and the gutta percha becomes soft, and is taken up in baskets and placed in a wooden iron cylinder, called a "drilling" machine, which leads it into fragments, these fall into a trough of water, and the impurities sink to the bottom, leaving the pure gutta percha at the surface. The fragments are then taken out by means of perforated shovels, thoroughly washed in cold water, and dried in baskets. It is then pressed in a jacketed iron chest heated by steam, and left till it becomes soft, when it is at once removed, and kneaded or masticated by means of a cast iron cylinder, with a movable lid and an internal revolving toothed iron ring,—the result being a homogeneous dough like cold brown wax. Sometimes various substances are introduced into this machine, which is called a "masticator," to increase the hardness or density of the gutta, or to colour it,—such as orange or red lead, chrome, vermilion, yellow ochre, sulphur, crotonoline, pyrrhon, or tann, etc. being taken to use such substances only in small quantities. The gutta percha is then masticated. The incorporation is conducted with great mystery, as at the will of the operator soft and elastic or a hard and honey substance can be produced. When sufficiently masticated, the gutta is placed whilst still hot between the steel cylinders, and thoroughly rolled. By means of an endless band of felt the gutta is returned again to the cylinders, the distance between which is gradually diminished so as to compress and completely drive out any contained air from the gutta percha. These are various machines for cutting diving bands, &c., to a uniform width, and for rounding off the edges and finishing sulcus for boots are made by cutting a long strip of the required width, and then passing the strip under a hollow die. In making rubber a machine is used consisting of a cylinder with a die piece attached of the requisite size. By means of a piston the gutta percha, which is introduced into the cylinder in a plastic condition, is driven through the die piece, and the piston goes on masticating the piece of the rubber, and the rubber machine, it passes immediately into a trough of water, which "sets" it, and prevents it from collapsing. The value of gutta percha for piping is very great. It does not contaminate water as lead piping does, it withstands insects, damp, &c., and is easily masticated, being shortened, lengthened, or repaired without trouble or expense, and its acoustic properties have led to its employment largely in the manufacture of aerial, telegraphic, and other submarine lines. Gutta percha spreads a thin film over the wire in nearly every office. The substance too, from the fact that few acids and alkalis affect it, especially if dilute, is largely employed for funnels, siphons, and other chemical apparatus.

In telegraphy gutta percha is of the very highest importance, being a cheap, lasting, and powerful insulator, easily applied to telegraphic wires. The general method of coating telegraphs wire is by changing a cylinder with plates of gutta percha, and forcing it through a die-piece, the wire forming a central core. As the wire

is drawn through this "die" or "moulding" piece, it becomes coated to the requisite thickness, and after passing through water it is wound on drums ready to be coated with tinned copper, and with galvanisation as yet required for submarine cables.

The process by which gutta percha, whilst in its plastic state, receives an impression, which it retains when cold, is called its employment in the decorative and fine arts, where it is used to trace the finest lines, as in the tracing of moulds from electrotypes. See *Dielectric* and *Rubber*.

In the production of imitations of silk and other ornamental wools, gutta percha has been largely used, since by the admixture of various substances "graining" or "mottling" can be very easily introduced, and a coating of a solution of gutta percha gives a finish of great brilliancy.

**Substitutes.**—Many substances have been recommended as substitutes for, or as supplements to, gutta percha. Amongst these, gutta serena undoubtedly holds the first place. It is named from the *Hemipops Dalman* (Gutta), a tree found in British and French Guiana, from which, as Prof. Blackwell seems to have been the first to direct attention to this substance, by bringing it before the notice of the Society of Arts in 1867. The Balda gum combines in some degree the elasticity of ebonite with the ductility of gutta percha, readily softening and becoming plastic, and being easily moulded like gutta percha. What small pieces have been sent to England have met with a ready sale, and have been removed and used for adulteration. But unfortunately, through the difficulty of collection, the occupation being dangerous and unwholesome, the supply of this valuable article has fallen very low. It is procured by making incisions in the bark of the tree about 7 feet from the ground, a ring of clay being placed around to catch the milk as it exudes. A large tree is said to yield as much as 45 lb. of "dry" gutta serena, the produce of *Dryobalanus* (Gutta) and the Indian (*Diospyros* Diacca), is a most interesting substance, and may yet prove an article of commerce if properly treated, at present, although by heat it becomes plastic and brittle, it is not so easily adulterated. The tree is found very generally distributed in Wyndham, Coorg, Travancore, &c.

Many of the euphorbia yield milky juices which have some at least of the properties of gutta percha. The chief amongst these are the *Castanea* (*Euphorbia* *Castanea*, Linn.) and the Indian *spurge tree* (*E. tiruallu*, Linn.) of India, and some euphorbia at the Cape of Good Hope. The *Alstonia* or *pala gum* (*Alstonia scholaris*, Linn.) and the *Indian gum* (*Clusia* *sp. glandulosa*, R. & H.) have also been introduced as substitutes for gutta percha. But the attempts made to utilize these substances have as yet been unsuccessful.

**Future Supplies.**—A very important matter for consideration is the question of the future supplies of gutta percha. It is after all only a spontaneous natural product. If a Malay or Chinese wishes to plant *percha*, gambusia, &c., he burns down a portion of the forest, and when he has raised two or three crops he clears a new portion, and thus finally wooded spots become denuded of trees, and covered with milk grass rendering them unfit for further cultivation. Agents, to obtain the gutta percha the trees are cut down, and none are planted in their stead, so that in districts where they were in abundance only a few trees are left. It is two or three years before a wonder indeed that a single tree is left. A writer in the *Sarawak Gazette* says that from 1851 to 1875 over 90,000 parcels (of 13 lb. each) of gutta percha was exported from Sarawak alone, and thus must at least 3,600,000 lbs. of gutta percha have been cut down, and that the trees all died. So that it is now no use to cut one down till it is 25 to 30 years old. Some or later recourse must be had to cultivation and creation.

**GUTZKOW.** KARL (1811-1878), one of the most distinguished of modern German novelists and dramatists, was born 17th March 1811 at Berlin, where his father held a clerkship in the war office. After completing his education at the Friedrichswerder gymnasium, he entered upon the study of theology and philosophy at the university of his native town, where, having had his interest awakened by the political and social questions of the time by the Paris revolution of July 1830, he, while still a student, began his chequered literary career by the publication in 1831 of a periodical entitled *Fests der Journalisten*. Although, as was to be expected, the serial was a failure and was soon discontinued, it procured for him the notice of Wolfgang Menzel, who invited him to situate his essays near the editorial office of the *Literaturblatt*. At the same time he continued his university studies, first at Jena, then at Heidelberg, and latterly at Munich. In 1833 he published anonymously at Hamburg *Briefe eines Narren an eine*

<sup>1</sup> *Journal des Arts*, Oct. 8, 1867, also Aug. 24, 1868, and March 4, 1864.

<sup>2</sup> *Trinidad Chronicle*, Sept. 2, 1878.

Niemann, and in 1833 appeared at Stuttgart *Maha Gien, Geschichte eines Gottes*, a fantastic and satirical romance intended to attack the current conceptions of the divine. In 1835, on account of a difference with Menzel, he discontinued his contributions to the *Literaturblatt*, and went to Frankfurt, where he became collaborator with Dülfer on the *Pharos*, and also founded the *Deutsche Revue*. In the same year appeared *Wally, die Zwieslerin*, from the publication of which may be said to date the school of writers who, from their opposition not only to Romanticism but to all the time honoured literary, social, and religious traditions, have received the name of "Young Germany." The work was directed specially against the institution of marriage and the belief in revelation, and whatever attention it might have attracted from its own merits was tenfold increased by the action of the Government, which, besides condemning its author to three months' imprisonment, decreed the suppression of all he had written or might yet write, and prohibited him from exercising the functions of editor within the states of the *Diend*. During his term of imprisonment Gutzkow employed himself in the composition of his treatise *Zur philosophie der Geschichte*, published at Hamburg in 1836, in which he opposed the Hegelian theory as to the nature and ends of history. On obtaining his freedom he went to Frankfurt, where, shortly afterwards, he was married, and where he wrote several volumes on various subjects which he published at Hamburg and Stuttgart, but finding himself hampered in his literary undertakings by the prohibitions of the Prussian Government, he removed in 1837 to Hamburg. Here he inaugurated a new epoch of his literary activity by bringing out his tragedy *Richard Savage*, which immediately made the round of all the German theatres, and first decidedly won the ear of Germany for the modern drama. Of his numerous other plays the majority are now neglected, but a few have obtained an established place in the repertory of the German theatre, especially the comedies *Zoff und Scherz* (1844) and *Das Verbalde des Tivvuffs* (1847), and the tragically *Uebel Acanta* (1847), the deep tragic interest, fine dramatic situations, and terse and pregnant diction of the last entitle it to rank among the best dramas of modern times. In 1842 Gutzkow paid a visit to Paris, of which he gave an account in *Briefe aus Paris* (Leipzig, 1842). After his return to Germany he resumed his stay at Frankfurt, where he was chiefly occupied in preparing for the press an edition of his collected works, published in 12 volumes, 1845-46, but in 1847 he went to Dresden, where he succeeded Tieck as director of the court theatre. About the same time began that epoch of his literary activity to which belongs the series of remarkable works of fiction intended to depict the action and tendency of the principal intellectual, social, and religious forces in modern society. The chief of these novels are *Die Ritter vom Geiste* (6 vols., Leipzig, 1850-52) and *Der Zauberer von Rom* (9 vols., Leipzig, 1859-61). The latter, a study of Roman Catholic life in southern Germany, is generally regarded as his masterpiece, and its vigorous and trenchant delineations of character are not more notable than its keen analysis of the motives underlying religious professions, and its subtle penetration into the characteristics and tendencies of the various forms of religious opinion. In regard, however, to both works, it may be objected that their great length, their somewhat tedious dallying over unimportant details, the intricate nature of their plots, and the hampering influence of their controversial purpose lessen considerably the legitimate effect of their many striking and original character portraits, their skillfully arranged dialogues and frequently powerfully dramatic scenes, and the cunning manner in which their incidents are blended into one whole. The success of *Die Ritter vom Geiste* suggested to Gutzkow the establishment

of a journal on the model of Dickens's *Household Words*, entitled *Unterhaltungen am häuslichen Herd*, which first appeared in 1852, and was continued till 1862. In 1864 he had an attack of insanity, during which he made an attempt upon his life, and although after his recovery he continued to write as voluminously as formerly, his productions show henceforth decided traces of failing powers. To this period belong the historical novels *Hohenstaunpau* (5 vols. 1868) and *Kryst Elliott* (3 vols. 1872), *Lebenbild* (3 vols. 1870-72), consisting of autobiographic sketches, and *Die Sohne Petaloo* (3 vols. 1870), the plot of which is founded on the story of Kaspar Hauser. On account of a relapse of his nervous malady, Gutzkow in 1873 made a journey to Italy, and on his return took up his residence in the country near Heidelberg. Although some time before his death he had been confined to his sick chamber at Frankfurt, its occurrence, 16th December 1878, was due to accidental suffocation from smoke.

The writings of Gutzkow suffer in character from the controversy which embittered his life. His didactic purpose was too strong to allow his fine artistic faculty full freedom of action, and notwithstanding his true dramatic might, firm grasp of character, rich vein of original thought, and wonderful comprehension of the principles at work in modern society, he did not possess that command of his medium which is necessary to mould them into poetic completeness. But although his popularity has not been commensurate even with his merits, no recent writer has exerted a more powerful influence on the opinions of modern Germany, and if his works are not destined to live by virtue of their inherent value, many of them will always be of interest as the mirror in which the intellectual and social struggles of his time are best reflected.

An edition of Gutzkow's collected works appeared at Jena, 1873-78. Since his death the name of a popular edition has been under taken, the first volume of which, containing the autobiography of his boyhood and his miscellaneous poems, has already appeared. *Die Rückblicke auf mein Leben*, published in 1876, deals specially with that period of his life, which was the duration of the Dresden theatre. A complete biography by Johannes Frobenius is now in the press of preparation.

GUTZLAFF, KARL FRIEDRICH AUGUST (1803-1851), a missionary to China, was born at Pyritz in Pomerania, 8th July 1803. At an early age he cherished a strong desire to become a foreign missionary, but the poverty of his parents made it impossible for them to aid him in attaining his wishes, and he became apprentice to a saddler in Stettin. In 1821, however, he made known his inclination to the king of Prussia, through whom he obtained admission to the Fidei-commissio at Halle, and afterwards to the mission institute of Jankin in Berlin. In 1826, under the auspices of the Netherlands Missionary Society, he went to Batavia, where by intercourse with the Chinese residents he perfected himself in the Chinese language. He, however, severed his connexion with the Netherlands Society in 1828, and went to Singapore, and in August of the same year he removed to Bangkok, the capital of Siam, where he occupied himself with translating the Bible into Siamese. In 1829 he married an English lady, who aided him in the preparation of a dictionary of Cochin China, but she died in August 1831 before its completion. Shortly after her death he sailed to Mazao in China, where, and subsequently at Hong Kong, he worked at a translation of the Bible into Chinese, published a Chinese monthly magazine, and wrote in Chinese various books on subjects of useful knowledge. He also at different times undertook voyages on the coast of China, and in 1834 he published at London an account of them under the title *Journal of Three Voyages along the Coast of China*, in 1831, 1832, and 1833. He was appointed in 1835 joint Chinese secretary to the English commission, and during the opium war and the negotiations

connected with the pious that followed he rendered valuable service by his knowledge of the country and people. On account of the continued refusal of the Chinese authorities to permit foreigners to penetrate into the interior, Gutzlaff in 1844 founded an institute for the training of native missionaries, which was so successful that during the first four years as many as forty-eight Chinese were sent out from it to carry on missionary labours among their fellow countrymen. He died at Hong Kong, August 9, 1851.

Beside the works already mentioned, Gutzlaff is the author of *A Sketch of Chinese History, Ancient and Modern*, London, 1846, and a similar work published in German at Stuttgart in 1847, *China Opened*, 1838, and *The Life of Tsao Kwing*, 1851 (German edition published at Leipzig in 1853). A complete collection of his Chinese writings is contained in the library at Munich.

GUY, THOMAS (1644-1724), founder of Guy's Hospital, London, was the son of a lighterman and coal-dealer at Southwark. After serving an apprenticeship of eight years with a bookseller, he in 1668 began business on his own account. He dealt largely in Bibles, which had for many years been poorly and inaccurately printed in England. These he at first imported from Holland, but subsequently obtained from the university of Oxford the privilege of printing. Thus, and by an extremely thrifty mode of life, and more particularly by investment in Government securities, the subscription of these into the South Sea Company, and the subsequent sale of them in 1700, he became master of an immense fortune. He died unmarried, December 17, 1724. In 1707 he built three wards of St Thomas's Hospital, which institution he otherwise successfully benefited, and at a cost of £18,793, 16s he erected Guy's Hospital, leaving for its endowment £219,499, he also endowed Christ's Hospital with £400 a year, and in 1705 built almshouses at Tamworth, his mother's birthplace, which was represented by him in parliament. The residue of his estate, which went to distant relatives, amounted to about £80,000.

See *A True Copy of the Last Will and Testament of Thomas Guy, Esq.*, London, 1728; J. Nootholth, *A New Hist. of London*, bk. in, chap. i, p. 684, 1778; Nichols, *Literary Anecdotes*, vol. iii, p. 690, 1812; and Charles Knight, *Shadows of the Old Docksellers*, pp. 8-24, 1865.

GUY OF WARWICK, an old English metrical romance which is known to have existed in French as early as the end of the 13th century. Its authorship has been assigned to Walter of Baeter, a Franciscan monk of the 13th century, and, although this supposition has been generally disputed, Tanner regards it as probable. The romance has been retouched by some French or Anglo-Norman minstrel, but is evidently of Saxon origin, and is allied to the story of Guido Tynius in the *Gesta Romanorum*, and probably to the romance *Sir Guy*, quoted by Chaucer in his *Rime of Sir Topas*. The hero of the story is Sir Guy of Warwick, who is said to have been the son of Sward, baron of Wallingford, to have married Felice, the only daughter of Rohmund, a famous Saxon warrior, to have become earl of Warwick in his wife's right, and after conquering Colbrand the Dane to have lived as a hermit till his death in 939. The earliest English chronicle who mentions the story as historical is John Harding. Tanner is of opinion that the first germ of the romance dates from the battle of Brunanburgh, the "Vinheald" of the *Englisc Saga*, but though the story has some basis in tradition, the chief events of the hero's life are plainly mythical. Although the romance had once great popularity, it now appears dull and tedious, and has no other than an antiquarian interest.

An edition of the romance in French prose appeared at Paris in 1655, printed by Antoine Courcier, and it is also referred to in the Old Spanish romance, *Tamara el Blanco*, written about 1450. The earliest English edition is that without date printed at London by William Copland, who died in 1668 or 1669. There exist also an edition printed at London by John Cawood, without date, another by Samuel Rowlands in 1697, and three by C. Bates in 1700. The

earliest English manuscript of the romance is that contained in the Auchinleck MS. in the Advocates' Library, Edinburgh, which is, however, imperfect at the commencement and in the middle. It was printed for the Abbot's Club in 1840. There is a perfect copy in the library of Gaus College, Cambridge, and also in the Cambridge University Library. A fragment of the romance, from a MS. in the British Museum, was privately printed by Sir Thomas Phillips, 1835, and the same fragment was reprinted in the Abbotsford edition. The manuscript in the University Library, Cambridge, was printed for the first time in the *Romance of Guy of Warwick*, edited for the early English Text Society by Zupitza, 1875. All these English versions appear to have been translated from the Anglo-French version. There was, according to Zupitza, at least eight French MSS. in existence—three in London, one at Oxford, two at Cambridge, one at Cheltenham, and one at Worcester. There is also a copy in the Imperial Library of Paris, and there was one at Bruges in 1487, and one at Brussels in 1487. A portion of the Wollenbuttel MS. has been edited by G. A. Heibing in the *Programm der grossen Stadtschule zu Pommern als Einleitung zur Mittelaltersagen*, 1872. See also Zupitza, *Für Lebensgeschichte von Guy von Warwick*, 1813. The *Phot. Facsim. MS.*, edited by Elliot and Fumfwell, vol. ii, and A. Tannei, *Die Sage von Guy von Warwick*, 1877.

GUYON, or GUYON, JEANNE MARIE BOUTVILLERS DE LA MOTHE (1618-1717), a leading exponent of the quietistic mysticism of the 17th century, was born of wealthy and aristocratic parents at Montaigne (dep. Loiret), on the 13th of April 1618. From infancy a sickly and excitable child, she was at the age of two years removed to Paris for a short time to the charge of the Ursuline nuns of Montmartre, and in 1652 she became resident in the Benedictine convent for a somewhat longer period, but the state of her health rendered it necessary that she should again be taken home, where for a time she was left almost exclusively to the care of domestics. From her seventh to her tenth year she was once more with the Ursulines, and after another short interval at home she next passed eight months in the Dominican cloister, where she spent much time in reading the Bible, and in committing large portions of it to memory. In her 12th year she communicated for the first time, and also began to form some acquaintance with the writings of St. Francis de Sales and of his disciple Madame de Chantal, "la Sainte de Monthelon." In imitation of the latter, she tells us in her autobiography that she at this time carried the name of the Saviour visibly inscribed on her person, subjected herself to severe bodily austerities, and made a solemn vow ever to aim at the highest perfection in an absolute surrender of her will to God. She earnestly wished also to take the veil, and in fact made an attempt, by means of a forged letter purporting to be signed by her mother, to gain admission into the order of the Visitation of Mary, but her father interfered. In 1663 she removed along with her parents to Paris, and went much into society, where her youth, beauty, and talent secured for her a very flattering reception, in the following year, before she was quite sixteen, she was married to M. Guyon, a man of some wealth and position, but of weak health, and twenty-two years her senior. The union, on her side at least, had not been dictated by love, her husband's affection, though probably genuine enough, appears to have been of a somewhat tepid kind, and disparity of age, as well as wide differences of taste and habit between herself and M. Guyon, combined with other circumstances, such as the jealousy of her mother-in-law, and her own eager temper, to make her married life anything but happy. She "began to eat the bread of sorrow and to mingle her drink with tears," and her lonely and desolate heart was not comforted until it found quiet in God. It was in her twenty-first year, on the 23d of July 1668, she tells us, that, after much resting on her knees, she felt the presence of St. Francis, and other religious writers, much spiritual conversation with those who knew best about the mysteries of the "inner life" and the happiness of the state of "recollection in God," much groping in deep darkness, and much wrestling in agonized

prayer, she at last experienced the change of heart which filled her with joy and peace in the life of faith. The words in which she describes that crisis, it indeed they are not coloured by later experiences, are interesting and important, as showing that thus early she had already reached all that was distinctive of her quietism. "Nothing was more easy to me now than to practise prayer. Hours passed away like moments, while I could hardly do any thing else but pray. The fervency of my love allowed me no intermission. It was a prayer of rejoicing and of possession, wherein the taste of God was so great, so pure, unblended, and uninterrupted, that it drew and absorbed the powers of the soul into a profound recollection, a state of confiding and affectionate rest in God, existing without intellectual effort. For I had now no sight but of Jesus Christ alone. All else was excluded in order to love with greater purity and energy, without any motives or seasons for loving which were of a selfish nature." In the months and years that followed she learned by much experience how difficult it is to keep even such heights as the soul has already gained, but her aim, ever more clearly seen and more steadily followed, continued to be "entire consecration," "perfect faith and love." Amongst those who were helpful to her during this period was Genevieve Granger, the protegee of a Benedictine community in Paris, under whose influence she, on July 23 (St. Mary Magdalene's day), 1872, drew up a solemn act of consecration, sealed with her ring and signed with her blood, in which she surrendered herself to Christ as His spouse, accepting as a part of her marriage portion "the temptations and sorrows, the crosses and the contempt, which fell to Him." In the beginning of 1874 she passed into a state of "privation" or "desolation," which she considers to have continued with but slight variations for somewhat more than six years, during the whole of this period, however, she had the benefit of the spiritual direction of Deiot, a kindred spirit, whose mystical writings she afterwards edited. On the 21st of July 1876 she was left a widow, with three surviving children,—two sons and an infant daughter,—and began to live a life of still deeper seclusion and isolation than before, interesting herself, however, in works of charity, and in the education of her family, in connexion with the latter occupation she commenced and made some progress in the study of Latin. Her temptations and crosses continued nevertheless to multiply, she began to lose hope, and to regard herself as wholly forsaken by God, in her deep despondency she began to correspond with Francis de la Combe, superior of the Barnabites at Thonon, Savoy, with whom she had ten years before become acquainted, and in whom she had even then recognized a sympathizing spirit. On the 22d of July 1880 she tells us her soul was delivered from all its pains. "From the time of the first letter from Father La Combe, I began to recover a new life. I was then, indeed, only like a dead person raised up, who is in the beginning of his restoration, and is raised up to a life of hope rather than of actual possession, but on this day I was restored, as it were, to perfect life and set wholly at liberty. I was no longer depressed, no longer borne down under the burden of sorrow. I had thought God lost, and lost for ever, but I found Him again. And He returned to me with unspeakable magnificence and purity. In a wonderful manner, difficult to explain, all that which had been taken from me was not only restored, but restored with increase and with new advantages." In this changed state of feeling she began to revolve new plans for the disposal of the remainder of her earthly life. She for some time thought of winding up her worldly affairs and taking the veil, but her duty towards her children, especially the two younger, seemed to prohibit that step. Several proposals of marriage were also received, but re-

jected. Gradually, in the course of 1881, she had almost, though with hesitation, reached the conclusion that she was called to active religious work, and the field to which inward intimations seemed to point was that part of France and Savoy which borders on Geneva, if not Geneva itself. The advice of D'Aranthon, titular bishop of Geneva, was asked and obtained, he approved of the proposal. After making some important arrangements with regard to her property, and entrusting her two sons to the care of suitable guardians, she accordingly secretly left Paris accompanied only by three female attendants and her daughter, then a child of five years of age. The party started at Arancy on the 21st of July, and, on the following day, at the tomb of St. Francis de Sales, Madame Guyon renewed her spiritual marriage with the Redeemer, and finally she fixed her abode at Gex under the spiritual care of D'Aranthon, by whom La Combe was assigned to her as her director in the place of Bartol, who had died some time before. Here she at once began her benevolent labours, tending the sick and poor, praying with them and giving them religious instruction, yet still it seemed to her as if the "seal of her mission was not yet broken." Something within her whispered that she had not yet found the great and special work to which God had been calling her. Amongst other things the state of her director caused her some solicitude. She saw that he had much, but felt that he ought to have more. His vocation at last was revealed to her, to become to him a spiritual mother, and her efforts towards the fulfilment of that vocation were not in vain. La Combe at last became possessed with the doctrine of present sanctification by faith in the Saviour, and began to preach accordingly. Opposition and persecution almost immediately began, Bishop D'Aranthon did not fail to take notice of the new doctrine, though on this occasion it escaped formal condemnation by the authorities at Rome, seeing, however, that Madame Guyon was the real author of the heresy, if heresy it was (and it certainly seemed to involve a theory of perfectionism hardly compatible with Catholicism), he resolved that she should not continue her activities within his diocese unless she should consent to accept a sphere where the facilities for doctrinal propagandism would be less than those for the exercise of ordinary benevolence. He accordingly proposed that she should give what property still remained within her control to a religious house at Gex, and that she should herself become prioress, this proposal, however, she declined, chiefly on the general ground that it did not seem to be in accordance with the designs of God in regard to her. The alienation of the bishop now made her stay at Gex to be far from comfortable, and accordingly, at the close of a residence of rather more than six months, she removed early in 1883 to Thonon, apparently in the expectation of being near her adviser La Combe. Here she remained for upwards of two years, engaged in religious work of various kinds, especially in spiritual conversation with the people of the neighbourhood, and in tending a small hospital which, at the suggestion of her director and with the assistance of some benevolent ladies of Thonon, she had formed. Meanwhile her doctrines of "pure love" and of that "fixed state" which consists in the complete identification of the human will with the will of God were taking more definite shape, and in 1883 they first found literary expression in *Les Trois sens*, probably the best of her writings, and really in some respects a fine performance, which describes the progress of the soul from the commencement of its inward life to its union with God, by a reference to "streams or torrents flowing from the mountain tops with greater or less rapidity and with greater or less darkness, and mingling at last in the ocean." Although Madame Guyon was not herself conscious of any disharmony with the teaching and practice of the Catholic Church, her

doctrines could hardly fail to be regarded by the ordinary orthodoxy of the time as more or less hostile to the generally accepted views as to the nature and mode of sanctification, and as to the normal state of the rationally removed heart, at Thonon they soon gave deep offence, and ultimately it was intimated both to her and to La Combe, on the part of Bishop D'Arthon, that both must leave the diocese. Her next resting place for a few weeks was Turin, whence, in the autumn of 1868, she removed to Grenoble, where she again became a centre of attraction and influence. Here, for the direction of the many who flocked to her for instruction and advice, she wrote and circulated her *Moyen court et à la fin de la journée*, a treatise in which she pointed out, doubtless in a manner highly susceptible of misconstruction, that prayer might often well be both silent and wordless. The commencement of her commentaries on the Bible also dated from this stay in Grenoble. Her numerous and popular "conférences" or meetings for conversation and prayer or "self-recollection in God," and the effect produced by the *Moyen court et à la fin de la journée*, however, speedily excited ecclesiastical opposition similar to that which she had already encountered at Gex, and although the bishop (Camus) was himself disposed to be tolerant, if not friendly, she was ultimately constrained, in the spring of 1868, to yield to strong representations, and seek an abode elsewhere. Nice, Genoa, and Vercelli (where she again met La Combe) were all refused her, but she finally succeeded, with the advice and concurrence of her friends, that Paris now offered itself as the field of labour most suited to her powers. Here accordingly she arrived on the 22d of July 1868, and soon she and her teaching began to meet with a very favourable reception in the higher circles of society. But meanwhile the doctrine of Molinos and the *Guérite Spirituelle* had been formally condemned by the Inquisition at Rome, and the sentence had been taken up as a signal, especially in France, for the persecution of all suspected quietists. In October 1867 La Combe was suddenly arrested by a royal "lettre de cachet" and committed to the Bastille, and by the same authority Madame Guyon herself was, three months later (29th January 1868), ordered to be detained as a prisoner in the convent of St Marie in the Faubourg Saint Antoine. The charges brought against her was the maintenance of heretical opinions, the holding of private religious assemblies, contrary to the practice and rules of the Catholic Church, for the spread of these opinions, the publication of a dangerous book containing opinions similar to those of the *Spiritual Guide* of Molinos, and correspondence with Molinos. These, however, were not destined to come to a definite issue, for through influence which friends succeeded in bringing to bear upon Madame de Maumont a release was obtained in the following October. Madame Guyon now went to live for the most part with her daughter, who had become the Comtesse de Vaux, at the family seat in the neighbourhood of Paris; but while on a visit with the duchess of Choiseul she became acquainted with Fénelon, and a considerable correspondence began. Her influence continuing to make itself felt at Paris, Dijon, Versailles, and other places, especially in the institution of St Oyr, founded by Madame de Maumont in 1686, the attention of theologians was drawn afresh to the "new spirituality," as it was called, and among others both the Port-Royalists Nicols and Bossuet, bishop of Meaux, sought personal interviews. The latter, to whom she had submitted not only all her printed works but also the manuscript of an autobiography which she had written when in confinement in 1695, after more than one long conference, was understood to have expressed himself as on the whole satisfied of her orthodoxy, but the publication by Nicols of the *Béatitude des principales erreurs des Quietistes* appears to have had an exciting influence on the

public mind, a rumour, prejudicial not only to the orthodoxy of Madame Guyon's faith, but also to the purity of her life, were industriously spread, and caused great scandal in the highest quarters, so that at last she was constrained to write to Madame de Maumont requesting that a number of suitable persons might be selected for the purpose of judging both of her doctrines and her morals, and offering at the same time to submit to any degree of confinement and restraint until it should please the king to appoint such persons. A commission was duly nominated, consisting of Bossuet, Bishop (afterwards Cardinal) De Noailles, and Tronson, the superior of St Sulpice. To this tribunal she then requested submitted the *Moyen Court, Les Vierges*, and the manuscripts of her commentaries along with an autobiography, to which she added her *Justification*. The outcome of many deliberations, extending over some months, was the preparation of twenty-four articles, usually called the "Articles of Issy," relating to the doctrine of "pure love." Her refusal to sign a "condemnation of religious errors," as drawn up and presented to her by Bossuet in a pastoral ordinance and letter, now led to an open rupture which resulted in her imprisonment, on this occasion at Vincennes, on the 27th of December 1695. Bossuet now set himself to prepare his *Instruction sur les états d'oraison*, which he submitted before publication to De Noailles, and amongst others, to Fénelon for approval. The latter after reading the manuscript, withheld his imprimatur on account of its doctrine (with which he did not disagree), but on account of its personalities, which he held to be uncalled for and unjust. Albeit forced thus into the position of a champion of Madame Guyon, he published in 1697 his *Mutualité des Saints*, a statement of the leading principles laid down by approved writers on the subject of the highest inward experiences and of holy living. In the course of the controversy which followed several important works appeared, which can only be alluded to here, the dispute, as is well known, issued in the formal condemnation of Fénelon (13th March 1699), in which achievement the hostility to Madame Guyon seems to have almost exhausted itself. She was not released, however, until 1702, in which year she was banished to Blois, where the remainder of her life was spent. Numbers of persons of all ranks, and many of them from foreign countries, visited her in this retirement, and both in correspondence and conversation she continued to manifest considerable activity, although feeling herself "called on to glorify God by submission and by private prayer, rather than by active labours." She heard mass daily, received the sacrament every alternate day, and died in full communion with the Roman Catholic Church, after an illness of three months, on the 9th of June 1717.

*La Vie de Madame de la Motte Guyon, des its par elle même*, first appeared at Cologne in 1790. It is based upon the autobiography which at the instance of La Combe she is known to have written during her imprisonment in 1688, it afterwards received additions and corrections from her own hands, and was finally entrusted to a confidential friend on the understanding that it should not be published until after her death. In addition to *Les 101 vers Spirituels*, and the *Moyen court et à la fin de la journée*, which were published in the *Opuscules Spirituels* in 1704, there appeared in her lifetime the *Principes Spirituels* (1698), and *Les 300 vers, traduits en français, avec des Explications et des Définitions qui regardent la Vie Intérieure* (1716). There are also several volumes of *Lettres Chrétiennes et Spirituelles*, addressed by her to Metcalf, Randon, and other correspondents, many of which must be guessed. The edition of the collected *Œuvres* extends to 40 vols (1787-1791). English and German translations of the various works are numerous. Apart from the *Autobiography*, the only memoir of Madame Guyon as yet in existence is the diffuse but somewhat vague and meagre *Life*, by Thomas C Upham (1854). (J. S. B. L.)

GUYTON DE MORVEAU, LOUIS BERNARD, BARON (1737-1816), a distinguished French chemist, was born January 4, 1737, at Dijon, in the university of which town his father was professor of civil law. As a boy





at Győr (Raab), in the middle school of which town he was teaching during the two following years. In 1811 he was again at Pannonegy, whence in 1812 he was sent to Pesth to study theology. Here he became acquainted with the works of the best German and Hungarian authors, and also took part in the editorship of the *Neu etc* (National) *Platenkus*, and in the translation of Kuhn's *Lexicon*. After about four years' stay at Pesth, he obtained the degree of doctor of divinity, and returned to Pannonegy, where he devoted himself to dogmatic theology and literature. So great was his activity that it is said that there was hardly an Hungarian periodical to which Guzmán was not a contributor. The most important of his theological works are—*A kath anyas-entetjék-nak helybeli tanítás* (The doctrinal teaching of the Holy Catholic Church), and *A keresztényeknek vallásbeli egyenlőségi* (On Religious Unity among Christians), both published at Pesth in 1822, also a Latin treatise entitled *Theologia Christiana fundamentalis et theologia dogmatica* (Győr, 1828–29, 4 vols.) Of the other literary labours of Guzmán the most meritorious is a translation of Theophrastus in hexameters published in 1824. His versions of the *Calypso* of Sophocles and of the *Iphigenia* of Euripides were rewarded by the Hungarian Academy, of which in 1838 he was elected honorary member. From 1832 to the date of his death he was abbot of the *Egyházi Tár* (Ecclesiastical Treasury). In 1832 he was appointed abbot of the wealthy Benedictine house at Bakonybél, a village in the county of Veszprém. While there he built an asylum for 150 children, and founded a school of harmony and singing. He died at Bakonybél on the 1st September 1839.

GWALIOR, a native state in political relationship with the Central India Agency and the Government of India. The state consists of several detached districts, the principal of which is bounded on the N.E. by the Chambal river, dividing it from the British districts of Agra and Etawah, on the E. by Bundelkhand and Sagar (Saugor) districts, on the S. by the states of Bhopal and Dhari, on the W. by those of Rajgarh, Jhalwar, and Kotah, and on the N.W. by the Chambal, separating it from Karauli (Kerowlee), and Dholpur in R'ghutana. The extreme points of the Gwalior territory are in 28° 21' and 26° 52' N lat, 76° 31' and 79° 21' E long. The area, including part of the ancient province of Agra and most of Malwa, is 33,119 square miles. The extreme north eastern part is generally level, bare, and of no great fertility. A little farther south the surface rises to hills. The country covered with small hills, of which there are abruptly out of the level plain. On one of these stands the fortress of Gwalior. The geological formation of these rocky eminences is a very fine-grained sandstone, yielding an excellent building stone. The middle tract is a plateau, having probably an average elevation of about 1500 feet. The Mandu range running east and west forms the southern boundary of the plateau, sloping gently northwards towards it, and dipping precipitously southwards towards the Nerbudda (Nerbudda). The state is watered by numerous rivers. The Nerbudda, flowing west, forms the boundary of the most southern part of the state. The greater part of the drainage is discharged into the Chambal, which forms the north-western and northern and eastern boundary. The Sind, with its tributaries the Kuwari, Asai, Sankh, and other smaller streams, flows through the state. The chief products are opium, known as Malwa opium, wheat, gram, pulses of various kinds, *jodra*, *bajra*, *mung*, maize, rice, linseed and other oil-seeds, galie, tumeric, ginger, sugarcane, indigo, all yielding a fine red dye, tobacco, and cotton. Many species of wild beasts and birds are found throughout the state. The rivers abound in fish, especially of the carp kind.

Barrhampur is the site of a considerable manufacture of

fine cottons, silks, and rich broadcloths. Iron ore is raised and smelted in many places. The principal imports are British woollens, cottons, silks, cutlery, cashmere shawls, pearls from the Persian Gulf, Ceylon diamonds, and agates from Bundelkhand, gold, silver, mercury, copper, lead, and zinc. The chief exports are opium, cotton, tobacco, dyes, and iron. The Indore and Ajmer narrow-gauge railway, now (1879) in course of construction, will pass through the west of Gwalior state, while a railway on the broad gauge, to connect Gwalior town with Agra, is approaching completion.

During the hot and dry seasons the climate is not unhealthy, but during the rainy season fevers prevail, especially in the north. The range of the thermometer is unusually small, except during the sultry season, when it sometimes rises to nearly 100° during the day. The average rainfall during the rainy season is 50 inches.

The population of the north-eastern part of the territory is of many elements, comprising, besides Mahabhattis (the ruling race), Bundelas, Jats, and Rajputs, with some less distinctly defined divisions of Hindus and Mahomedans. There is perhaps no part of India where the tribes of Brahmins are so various and their number so great as in the southern and south-western parts. The Mahomedan population is estimated at about 10 per cent. of the whole. Including the cessions to Sindia under the treaty of 1800, the territories of the Gwalior state were in 1875 estimated to contain a population of about 2,500,000 souls. The total revenue in 1875 was £1,200,000. Education is afforded by 92 schools attended by 3206 pupils.

The Gwalior family, whose names and chiefs have played so conspicuous a part in the history of India, and whose representative now rules over a state larger than France and Wales united, and richer than many independent kingdoms, was founded by Ranpo Sindia, whose father was *patel* (head man) of a Deccan village. Once in the household of the *patel*, Ranpo's rise was rapid, and he was soon the local agent of the British Government. Ranpo's Mahabhatti lands through Malwa into Hindustan, he was at the time of his death the acknowledged possessor of lands which still form part of the Gwalior state. He was succeeded by his son Alahad Sindia, whose ability as a statesman and a soldier has rarely been surpassed. At his death he was succeeded by his grand nephew Daulat Rao Sindia. The power of Sindia was at this time most dangerous to the British Government, who now began to take measures to check the power of this chief. Sindia entered into a league with the raja of Berar to defeat them, but their allied armies were defeated in 1803 at Assaye by a British force commanded by General Sir Arthur Wellesley, subsequently duke of Wellington. By the end of the same year, the Mahabhattis were completely overthrown, and Sindia was compelled to sue for peace and to sign a treaty by which he resigned his conquest territories. Sindia, by a treaty concluded in 1804, ceded to the British the whole of the Gwalior state. Daulat Rao died at Gwalior in 1827 without an heir. On his deathbed, he left the state and succession in the hands of the British Government. The accession of a boy of the Sindia family, Ragoo Rao, to whom it was thought the wishes of Daulat Rao tended, was admitted by the British Government. The young *marhata* was wisely invited to the granddaughters of Daulat Rao, and took the name of Feroz Sindia. In 1848 he died without issue. His widow, with the concurrence of the chief nobles, adopted Ragoo Rao, a lad eight years of age. The British Government recognised the adoption, and Ragoo Rao, under the name of Feroz Sindia, succeeded him. In 1858, when the British (1878). Early in the reign disturbances took place, and the advance of British troops on Gwalior became necessary to restore order. Two battles, Mahanpur and Panmari, were fought on the 25th and 26th December 1858, between the British forces and the mutinous army. They both resulted in the total defeat of the Gwalior troops. No event of historical importance has taken place since, except the revolt between the Gwalior contingent and Sindia's army in 1857. The malabar's conduct throughout has been conspicuous for its loyalty. In recognition of his services, the Government conferred upon him the right of adoption, together with lands yielding a revenue of £30,000.

GWALIOR, the capital of Gwalior state, and fortress residence of the Mahabhatti Sindia, is situated in 26° 13' N lat and 78° 12' E long, 65 miles S from Agra, and 277 N.W. of Allahabad. Gwalior city has a chief old interest—first, as a very ancient seat of Jain worship,

secondly, for its example of palace architecture of the best Hindu period (1656-1516), and, thirdly, as the fortress capital of one of the greatest native chiefs of India.

*Jaun Bazar*.—There are several remarkable Hindu temples in Gwalior. One, known as the Sas Balu, understood to be of Jain election, is beautifully adorned with sculptures, and is now resorted to both by the Vaishnavas and Siva sects. It was finished in 1098 A. D., and, though much dilapidated, still forms a most picturesque fragment. An older Jain temple has been used as a mosque. Another temple in the fortalice is called the *Pel Le Mandu*, or *Pel Le Mandu* Temple. This building was originally dedicated to Vishnu, but afterwards converted to the worship of Siva. The most striking part of the Jain sanctuaries at Gwalior is a series of caves or rock-cut sculptures, excavated in the rock on all sides, and numbering nearly a hundred, great and small. Most of them are much richer to contain statues, though some are cells that may have been originally intended for residences. One curious fact regarding them is that, according to inscriptions, they were all excavated within the short space of about thirty-three years, between 1441 and 1474. Some of the figures are of colossal size, one, for instance, is 67 feet high, which is taller than any other in the north of India.

*Hindia Palace Architecture*.—The palace built by N. S. Singh (1486-1516) forms the most interesting example of early Hindu work of its class in India. Another place of even greater extent was added to this one in 1516, both J. B. Singh and Sir J. J. Singh added palaces to these two—the whole making a group of edifices unequalled for picturesqueness and interest by anything of their class in Central India. Among the apartments in the palace were the celebrated chambers, and the apartments of the twelve columns, and 40 feet wide with a stone roof, forming one of the most beautiful palace halls in the world. It was, besides, singularly interesting from the expedients to which the Hindu architect was forced to resort to pursue the necessity of the modern use of the building, however, which so excited the admiration of the emperor Durrani, probably little less than remains.

*Rock Fort*.—The fort of Gwalior stands on an isolated rock. The face of the fort is perpendicular, and when the rock is actually less prominent it has been scaped. Its greatest length from north to south west is a mile and a half, and the greatest breadth 800 yards. The rock attains its maximum height of 344 feet at the northern end, and is accessible by a steep road, and further up by huge steps cut out of the rock, surrounds the fort. The citadel stands at the north-east corner of the enclosure, and presents a very picturesque appearance. The old town of Gwalior, which is of considerable size, but irregularly built, and extremely dirty, lies at the eastern base of the rock. It contains the tomb of Muhammad Ghazni, which was erected during the early part of Akbar's reign. The fort of Gwalior, according to Walford, was built in 773 A. D. by Sultan Sen, the tyrant of the neighbouring country. In 1193 Gwalior was captured by Muhammad Ghori, it then passed into the hands of several chiefs until in 1556 Akbar gained possession of it, and made it a strong prison for captives of war. On the dismemberment of the Delhi empire, Gwalior was seized by the Jats of Gohad. Subsequently it was possessed by Smidhirs, from whom it was wrested in 1780 by the forces of the East India Company. A considerable rebellion broke out in 1803, and the governor of Gwalior, the adopted son of Dairat Rao Sindhu, who died in 1843 without an heir. A revolution was impending, and the British Government had to interfere. Troops moved the Gwalior, and unexpectedly found the insurgents fastened up at Mahurpur, a few miles distant from the fortress. A battle ensued on the 29th December 1843, resulting in the complete overthrow of the Mahurpur. The British contingent stationed in the town was increased, and affairs were placed on a peaceful footing.

GWILT, JOSEPH (1784-1863), author of the *Encyclopaedia of Architecture*, was the younger son of George Gwilt, architect surveyor to the county of Surrey, and was born at Southwark, January 11, 1781. He was educated at St Paul's school, and after a short course of instruction in his father's office was in 1801 admitted a student of the Royal Academy, where in the same year he gained the silver medal for his drawing of the tower and steeple of St Dunstan-in-the-East. In 1811 he published a *Treatise on the Equilibrium of Arches*, and in 1815 he was elected a fellow of the Society of Antiquaries of London. After a visit to Italy in 1816, he published in 1818 *Notitia Architecturae Italianae*, or *Complete Notices of the Buildings and Antiquities of Italy*. In 1825 he published, with notes and valuable additions, an edition of Mr. William Chambers's *Treatise on Civil Architecture*, and among his principal other contributions to the literature of his profession are a trans-

lation of the *Architectures of Vitruvius* (1836), a *Treatise on the Rudiments of Architecture, Practical and Theoretical* (1836), and the valuable *Encyclopaedia of Architecture* (1842), which has passed through a great many editions, and was published with additions by Wyatt Pavvith in 1867. In recognition of Gwilt's advocacy of the importance to architects of a knowledge of mathematics, he was in 1833 elected a member of the Royal Astronomical Society. In addition to the sciences bearing on his profession he took a special interest in philology and music, and is the author of *Rudiments of the Anglo-Saxon Tongue* (1829), and of the article "Music" in the *Encyclopaedia Metropolitana*. His works as a practical architect are not of much importance, the principal being Marlborough Castle near Sligo in Ireland, and St Thomas's Church at Chilton in Kent. He succeeded his father as a surveyor of sewers for the county of Surrey, and held that office till 1848. He died September 14, 1863.

GWYNIAD is the name given to a fish of the genus *Corygonus* (*C. lupoides*), inhabiting the large lakes of North Wales and the north of England. At Ullswater it is known by the name of "schelly," at Loch Lomond by that of "powen." It is tolerably abundant in Lako Bala, keeping to the deepest portion of the lake for the greater part of the year, but appearing in shoals near the shores at certain seasons. It is well flavoured, like all the species of *Corygonus*, but scarcely attains to the weight of a pout. The name gwyniad is a Welsh word, and signifies, "shining," and it is singular that a similar fish in British Columbia, also belonging to the family of Salmonids, is called by the natives "gunnat," from the silvery lustre of its scales, the word having in their language the same meaning as the Welsh "gwyniad."

GYARMAT, a Magyar term signifying colony, and applied to several places in Hungary. Of these the following two towns have the largest number of inhabitants.

ULASSA-GYARMAT, capital of the Cis-Danubian county of Nograd, is situated on the Ipoly (Eipel), about 40 miles N. N. E. of Budapest, 48° 6' N. lat., 19° 16' E. long. It is the seat of a royal court of law and of the assizes, and has Roman Catholic and Lutheran churches, also a Jewish synagogue, a fine county hall, a house of correction, a religious institute for girls, and tax, post, and telegraph offices. In 1870 the population was 6435, Magyars and Slavs by nationality.

FÜZES-GYARMAT, a market-town in the Trans-Tisulan county of Bekés, is somewhat unfavourably situated in the extensive marshy tract of country known as the Sáros, 47° 5' N. lat., 21° 13' E. long. The town has few noteworthy buildings, with the exception of the Calvinist church and some elegant private residences. The chief products of the rich, dark, alluvial soil of the neighbourhood are wheat, tobacco, hay, grapes, and other fruits. Housed cattle, pigs, and sheep (both merino and Hungarian) are bred on the wide spreading pasture-lands, and numerous water-fowl and wading birds, especially herons, inhabit the reed covered marshes. The water used for drinking purposes is, however, frequently muddy and warm, and unpleasant to the taste. In 1870 the population was 5735, of whom the great majority were Magyars.

GYARMATHA, a market-town in the county of Temes, Hungary, situated in a level but productive agricultural district to the north-east of Temesvár, 45° 50' N. lat., 21° 17' E. long. For some distance round the town the cultivation of wheat, barley, oats, maize, and the vine is largely carried on. Horse-breeding is another source of employment to many of the inhabitants. Gyarmath has few buildings of special interest with the exception of a Roman Catholic church and the ruins of a fort. In 1870 the population amounted to 5125, consisting of Germans, Magyars, and Wallachs.

GYERGYÓ SZENT MIKLÓS, a market-town of Hungary, in the Transylvanian county of Csik, is situated in a mountainous but well wooded district, 96 miles E of Klausenburg, and about 25 W of the Moldavian frontier, 46° 43' N lat., 25° 33' E long. Among the more important buildings are a Roman and a Greek Catholic church, a fine public school, a royal court of justice, and the post and telegraph offices. There are also cattle and timber trading houses, an office of woods, a financial commission agency, and a police station. Cattle and sheep are reared in great numbers in the surrounding country, which is noted also for its cheeses, and for the preparation of gin. The number of inhabitants at the commencement of 1870 was 5645, consisting of Magyars, Wallachs, and Magyarized Armenians, the descendants of a band of wanderers who settled here in 1668.

GYGES, founder of the third dynasty, called Minnand, of Lydian kings, reigned about 687-664 B.C. (*v. Gelzer in Rheuss Mus.*, xxv). The kindred name Gyges, applied by Homer (*Il.*, ii 661) to the Maconian Lake, mother of the Maconian Locrids, supports the statement of ancient historians that he belonged to an old Lydian family. In the reign of Candaules, Gyges, perhaps after banishment, attempted during the troubles caused by the Cimmerian invasions into Asia Minor, to gain the royal power. He was aided by foreign, especially Carian, mercenaries, but was strenuously resisted by the native population. At last it was agreed to refer the decision between the old Heraclid dynasty and the new claimant to the national god Hecateus, but, to ensure impartiality, they appealed to him under his Greek form of Apollo. The Delphic oracle gave its answer in favour of Gyges, and the presents with which his gratitude enriched the shrine were seen and described by Herodotus. This story points to familiar and friendly intercourse between Lydia and the Greek states, and that the circumstance impressed itself on the Hellenic mind is shown by many romantic tales current about the fortunes of Gyges (Plato, *Rep.*, ii p. 380, Herod., i 8). The contemporary poet Archilochus speaks of the riches of Gyges. Under the Heraclid dynasty Ionia settled had occupied the whole coast of Lydia, and in friendly relation with the country had rapidly prospered. But the warrior king who now began to rule was not content to leave the sea coast in the undisturbed possession of foreigners. He and his successors maintained almost constant war with the Ionian cities. Gyges captured Magnesia and the lower city of Colophon, but the mood of the Cimmerians diverted his attention from conquest to the defence of his own capital. At one time he was so hard pressed that he applied to Assyria for help (about 660 B.C.), and paid tribute to Assurbanipal in return for protection against these barbarians. But he afterwards threw off allegiance and assisted Psammethicus, who had revolted in Egypt against the Assyrian rule. It is mentioned in an inscription of Assurbanipal that Gyges was slain in battle by the Cimmerians, and that his son Aidys renewed the tribute.

For a full account of the reign of Gyges, and the ancient authorities for it, see Duncker, *Gesch. d. Alterthums*, vol. ii.

GYLLEMBOURG-EHRENSVARD, THOMASINE KRISTINE, BARONESS (1773-1856), the most eminent female writer of Denmark, was born November 9, 1773, at Copenhagen. Her maiden name was Buntzen. Her great beauty early attracted notice, and before she was seventeen she married the famous political writer Peter Andreas Heiberg. To him she bore in the following year a son, afterwards illustrious as the poet and critic Johan Ludvig Heiberg. In 1800 her husband was exiled and she obtained a divorce, marrying in December 1801 the Swedish Baron Ehrensward, himself a political fugitive. Her second husband, who

presently adopted the name of Gyllenbourg, died in 1815. In 1822 she followed her son to Kiel, where he was appointed professor, and in 1825 she returned with him to Copenhagen. In 1827 she first appeared as an author by publishing her romance of *The Palatine Family* in her son's newspaper *The Flying Post*. In 1828 the same journal contained *The Magic Ring*, which was immediately followed by *An Every-day Story*. The success of this anonymous work was so great that the authoress adopted until the end of her career the name of "the Author of *An Every-day Story*." From this time forward she took a foremost place among the writers of her time, but preserved her anonymity with entire success. In 1833-34 she published three volumes of *Old and New Novels*. Her *Stories* followed in 1835 and 1836. In 1839 appeared two novels, *Montanus the Younger* and *Rebecka*, in 1840, *One in All*, in 1841, *Neen and Fui*, in 1843, *A Correspondence*, in 1844, *The Cross Ways*, in 1845, *Two Generations*. From 1849 to 1851 the Baroness Ehrensvard-Gyllenbourg was engaged in bringing out a library edition of her collected works in twelve volumes. On the 2d of July 1856 she died in her son's house at Copenhagen. Not until then did the secret of her authorship transpire, for throughout her life she had preserved the closest reticence on the subject even with her nearest friends. The style of Madame Ehrensvard-Gyllenbourg is clear and sparkling, in English reading no closer analogy can be found than between her and Mrs. Gaskell, and *Cygnets* might well have been written by the witty Danish authoress. She introduced into the literature of her country a novel ven of realism and domestic humour, and, although she has had many imitators, she is still without a rival.

GYMNASIUM was the name applied by the Greeks to a building designed for the practice of physical exercises. From the earliest times we hear of athletic sports in honour of heroes and gods. Sometimes they are celebrated among the funeral rites of a deceased chief, sometimes they form part of a periodic festival. At first competitors exercised strip of their outer garments (*gymnos*), hence arose the name *gymnasium*. Afterwards the habit of exercising naked became universal. In the continuance of their history the Greeks grew more attached to such sports, then free active life, spent to a great extent in the open air, fostered the liking almost into a passion. The victor in any athletic contest, though he gained no money prize, was rewarded with the honour and respect of his fellow-citizens, and a victory in the great religious festivals was counted an honour for the whole state. In these circumstances the training of competitors for the greater games became a public concern, special buildings and officials were provided for the purpose by the state. But, as gymnastics became more and more an institution of social life, the gymnasiums were applied to other uses even more important. The most interesting points are the connection with education on the one hand, with medicine on the other. Due training of the body and maintenance of the health and strength of children were the chief part of earlier education. Except the time devoted to letters and music, the education of boys was conducted in the gymnasiums, where their moral training was as carefully attended to by special officers as their physical exercises. As they grew older conversation and social intercourse took the place of the more systematic discipline. Philosophers and sophists resorted to talk and to lecture in the gymnasiums, which became places of general resort for the purpose of all less systematic intellectual pursuits, as well as for physical exercises. Plato, when treating of education, devotes much consideration to gymnastics (see especially *Rep.* iii and various parts of *Leges*). Gymnastic exercises proper were designed, not merely as in Sparta, to foster the taste for war and the activity and strength needed for using weapons, but also to

produce graceful carriage and healthy tone of the body. According to Plato, the sophist Protagoras first pointed out the connection between gymnastics and health. Having found such exercises beneficial to his own weak health, he formulated a method which was adopted generally, and which Hippocrates improved on. Galen lays the greatest stress on the proper use of gymnastics, and throughout ancient medical writers we find that special exercises are prescribed as the cure for special diseases. The regulation of the gymnasium at Athens is attributed by Pausanias (i. 39, 3) to Theseus, Solon made several laws on the subject, but, according to Galen, it was reduced to a system in the time of Clisthenes. Ten gymnasiums, one from each tribe, were appointed annually. These performed in rotation the duties of their office, which were to maintain and pay the persons that were training for public contests, to conduct the games at the great Athonian festivals, to exercise general supervision over the morals of the youths (they could, for example, remove any philosopher whose teaching they thought injurious), and to adorn and keep up the gymnasium. This office was one of the ordinary *Leitourgiai*, and great expense was entailed on the holders. Under them were ten sophonists, with a salary of a drachma per day. Their duty was to watch the conduct of the youths at all times, and especially to be present at all their games. The practical teaching and selection of the suitable exercises for each youth were in the hands of the *paidotribai* and *gymnastai*. The latter also superintended the effect on the constitution of the pupils, and prescribed for them when they were unwell. Alkibiades oiled and rubbed dust on the bodies of the youths, acted as surgeons, and administered the drugs prescribed.

The gymnasia built to suit these various purposes were large buildings which contained, not merely places for each kind of exercise, but also a stadium, baths, covered porticoes for practices in bad weather, and outer porticoes where the philosophers and men of letters read public lectures and held disputations. In Athens there were three great public gymnasia,—Academy, Lyceum, and Cynosarges,—and every Greek city of consequence seems to have possessed one. Ruins of them exist at Pergamos, Ephesus, Alexandria in Troas, &c., from which, and from the accounts of Vitruvius (v. 11), it would appear that all were constructed on much the same plan. The details will be found most clearly given in Rich's *Dictionary of Greek and Roman Antiquities*.

Much of the healthy buoyant elasticity of mind for which the Greek race is remarkable, as well as the active and beautiful physical development which no other race has ever equalled, is due to the love of gymnastics. The plastic art also owes its perfection in the treatment of the human form to the constant opportunity which artists had of observing the nude body in various attitudes. But abuses were liable to occur. The careful provisions made by Solon and later legislators to keep up the moral character of the gymnasia did not prevent them from fostering the vice which appears so much in Greek life. Though introduced in Rome, where Nero built the first public gymnasium, gymnastics did not suit Italian habits, and never became popular.

Gymnasium, in its modern use, generally signifies a school for gymnastic exercises, but it is sometimes used also to denote a higher school intended to give immediate preparation for the universities. The latter application of the term is especially prevalent in Germany.

GYMNASTICS, in the general acceptance of the term, denotes every exercise which tends to develop and invigorate the bodily powers, such as walking, running, riding, fencing, rowing, skating, dancing, and many others. In another sense gymnastics includes those manly and healthful games which have been encouraged by all high-minded nations

as calculated to improve the physical strength and keep alive the martial spirit of their people. In a more limited sense, the term has been employed to denote the modern system of bodily exercises. Physical strength was the valuable good of antiquity, and we therefore find the elements of a system of gymnastics in most nations from the earliest times. In the infancy of society, when the individual was valued according to his personal strength and prowess, it was only natural that the utmost care should be bestowed on those arts which most surely led to distinction. All education then consisted chiefly in the practice of such exercises as were best calculated to develop muscular strength and make the tenure of life as secure as possible. The first gymnastic exercises, both of those nations that reached the highest civilization and of barbarians, were the same, viz., running, leaping, swimming, and the throwing of missiles. These exercises were at a very remote period systematized and reduced to a science by the Greeks (see GYMNASTIKUM). Among the Romans of the republic, the games in the Campus Martius, the duties of camp life, and the preliminary military exercises to which the soldier devoted himself, besides the enforced marches which were imposed upon him, and the part he took in the execution of public edifices, served to take the place of the gymnastic exercises as practised by the Greeks in the Middle Ages, chivalry with its jousts, its feats of horsemanship, and encouragement to the arts of fencing, single stick, &c., took the place of the ancient gymnastic exercises. The invention of gunpowder, which modified the system of warfare, and the increasing value of individual life,—in a word, the progress of civilization—closed the career of the champions and votaries of physical strength, and gymnastic exercises in the course of time were neglected. Rousseau, in his *Emile*, was the first to call attention to the injurious consequences of such indifference, and it is in a large measure to his eloquent appeals that gymnastics have in recent times become so constant an integral part of school education, although it cannot be said that in every country the practical application of his views has met with much success. The good effects of the innovation which he advocated have nowhere been more strikingly exemplified than in Germany. When many parts of that country groaned under the iron yoke of Napoleon, Jahn and his followers, encouraged by the Prussian minister Stein, were establishing *Turnplätze* or gymnastic schools, from which issued the well-trained youth who in due time drove the French legions across the Rhine.

Of late years public attention has been drawn to the increasing deterioration in the physique of the population of England, and several proposals have been put forward to check an evil which can no longer be concealed. These proposals may be arranged under the banners of two rival camps. One maintains the opinion put forward in a work just published on exercise and training, in the following words (*Exercise and Training*, 1878):—

"In our opinion the natural varieties of exercise of cricket, football, and rowing for boys, hunting, shooting, &c. for men, pursued at the different seasons of the year, are quite sufficient for a proper development of all parts of the body, in accordance with the uses of the different limbs, for the development of special muscles, or where a great variety of exercise cannot be procured, a system of gymnastics may be pursued. To the advocates for the adoption of systematic physical education by means of gymnasia at our schools, we would concede the immense value of such establishments in our large towns, where outdoor exercise and field sports are difficult of attainment, or in cases where from the physical debility the muscles have to be gradually developed, still we maintain that the national games played by the English schoolboys are infinitely superior to any system of artificial exercise ever devised."

On the other side we have the advocates of physical education by means of regular gymnastic exercises superintended by trained and educated teachers, the whole placed

under competent medical supervision. Among the staunch supporters of the latter view may be named Dr Roth, and Mr Westlake, a member of the London School Board. The following considerations appear to be of great weight as supporting the views put forward by the advocates of physical education. While the national games may seem to some sufficient for the physical development of the ordinary youth and manhood of a country, it must not be forgotten that there is a vast and rapidly increasing portion of the population, especially in large cities, to whom the "national games" are quite unknown diversions, and that it is among this class that the most marked deterioration in physical development is, only too apparent. The children of this class dwell crowded up in narrow, ill-lighted, and worse-ventilated courts, from which they are often dragged to undergo a certain amount of mental training, in many cases perhaps too severe to be sustained by their debilitated and enfeebled bodies. Whilst so much is being done for the mental culture of the rising generation, then physical culture is left very much to inclination or chance. But there is another source of danger put forward by those who advocate the sufficiency of the national games, viz., "the neglect of any classification of games at school, and allowing the weak and strong to engage in them indiscriminately, to the detriment of the physical wellbeing of the more delicate," and they proceed to show the injury that may be done by the present system of competitive outdoor sports, unregulated by judicious restraint. Important information on this subject will be found in two papers published in the *St George's Hospital Reports* for 1874-76, by Mr C Roberts, F.R.C.S., and by Mr Stoot, and another in the *Tenth Annual Report of the State Board of Health of Massachusetts*, by Professor Edward Hitchcock. Mr Roberts points out that between the ages of fifteen and seventeen the greatest amount of physical development takes place, and that if at this period a boy is subjected to a great strain upon his strength his future growth may be interfered with, or the foundation laid of constitutional disease. Prof Hitchcock's paper embodies the experience of seventeen years of careful observation. Acting upon the well-grounded opinion that neither mental severity nor mental development can exist with an unhealthy animal organization, and admonished by "the sad deaths of two promising young men, and the breaking down in health of others just at the end of their college courses," the authorities of Amherst College were impelled to demand that the college officials should give a proper attention to physical health as well as to the culture of those powers for which departments were ordinarily created and endowments made. In 1859 a department of physical education and hygiene was created, commencing which we read in the catalogue of 1861-62 that—

"Its design is to secure healthful daily exercise and recreation to all students, to instruct them in the use of the vocal organs, movements of the body, and manners, as connected with oratory, and to teach them, both theoretically and practically, the laws of health. This daily physical training is a part of the regular college course. The professor is an educated physician, and has not only a general oversight of the health of the college, but students have the privilege of consulting him without charge. While the gymnasium will furnish opportunities for the highest physical training, the required exercises will be such as can be performed without undue effort or risk of injury."

Each class, at a stated hour on four days of the week appears at the gymnasium, and all perform their part in systematic and methodical exercises timed to music. The statistics of this department show some interesting facts in reference to the duration of sickness among students. While the average amount of time lost on account of sickness by each labourer in Europe is found to be 19 or 20 days each year, the returns of Amherst College sick-list for term time give 2.64 days as an annual average of time lost to every student, and 11.36 days to each sick student for

17 years. A decrease in the amount of sickness during the course is also an important feature in the health of the college.

From replies to questions put by Dr Roth to the heads of the educational bodies, and also from the recorded personal experience of his son, Mr B Roth, F.R.C.S., it appears that considerable attention is now being paid to the best methods for improving the physical education of the people in nearly all the Continental states. The greatest activity is perhaps shown by Sweden, Germany, France, Belgium, and Italy, and even in Russia the question is attracting much public attention, Dr Baglund having been ordered to write a special book on the subject. In Hungary also the Government has made physical education an obligatory part of the school curriculum. In Prussia gymnastic instruction was formally recognized by a cabinet order of June 1812, and by a royal order of 1822 a guide-book of gymnastic instruction was introduced into the primary schools and into the training colleges for teachers. In Sweden this subject appears to have earlier attracted attention, for in 1813 the Government, under the direction of P. H. Ling, founded the Royal Central Gymnastic Institute at Stockholm, where teachers of both sexes are gratuitously trained for two years, and receive a diploma after undergoing a theoretical and practical examination. In Belgium, under the united efforts of MM. Deleury and Emile Croxon, considerable progress has been made, although much has still to be done, owing to the opposition raised by the municipality of Brussels to the views put forward by the Government. In the girls' schools the exercises are accompanied by music, after the example set by Colonel Amoros, who about the beginning of this century introduced into France a series of gymnastic exercises adapted to a jingling rhyme and to music. The chanting governed the movements, marked the intervals of repose, and helped to strengthen the organs of the voice and respiration.

In France the necessity for the physical education of the people began to attract attention about the year 1845, owing probably to the energy displayed by Jahn in Prussia. M. de Salvandy proposed to introduce the teaching of gymnastics into the Lycées of Paris and Versailles, and a commission was appointed by him, which, however, never presented a report. In 1850, 1851, 1855, and 1856 several attempts were made to enforce compulsory gymnastic training, but the principle was not accepted till 1859, when M. V. Duvoy took for his basis of action the labours of the commission presided over by Dr Hillairet. After the fall of the empire, M. Jules Simon addressed the head masters of the colleges and schools in France as follows—

"I beg you to assist me in introducing gymnastics into our schools in a profitable and earnest manner. This is not only in the interest of public health, a healthy child is better prepared for study, and especially for the battle of life. Morality gains by this education of the body, much money is not wasted for the purpose, and in case of need, exercises can be performed without fatigue or dumb bells. Our medical men will help us to do our task, if the children are once accustomed to, and take pleasure in, these healthy exercises, we may be sure of a prompt amelioration of the race."

In England we find that the first attempt to introduce scientific physical education among the people was made in parliament in 1862 by Lord Elcho. This attempt failed, as also did another made in 1875 by P. A. Taylor, M.P. for Leicester, although supported in an able speech by Mr Butler Johnstone. Lord Sandon, then vice-president of the committee of council on education, told Parliament that "the Government has done all that could be expected of them for physical education by taking steps to substitute military drill for ordinary drill." The substitution, it may be remarked, does not appear to have any advantage over the drill it displaced, as the military authorities declared the ordinary military drill to be insufficient for the re-

quements of the soldier, and have during the last sixteen years instituted gymnasiums at Aldershot, Gibraltar, Malta, and elsewhere, the teachers in which have, for the most part, passed under the care of Mr. MacLaren of Oxford, one of the principal authorities on the subject in England. Without entering into details, it may be admitted that the physical condition of the people, if not actually deteriorating, is not improving, and it is a significant fact that within the last year or two it has been found necessary to lower the standard in the British army, and that Dr. Ord, in his report for 1869, states that out of 5567 boys 4410 were rejected as under the standard of width of chest and height. We have already referred to the tendency to rely on the casual outdoor sports for maintaining the physique of the population, and to a great extent to discontinue systematic gymnastic exercises and physical education. That in some quarters, however, this opinion is not entertained is shown from the fact that the London School Board has appointed Miss Löffing of the Stockholm Training College to instruct certain of their teachers so as to fit them for teaching the girls in the schools. It is to be regretted that in the blind asylums so little is done for the physical education of the inmates. An institution in Milan provides for the training of ticketless children by carefully regulated gymnastic exercises, but this institution seems to be the only one of its kind in Europe.

To show that the importance of gymnastics has not been overrated, we may describe the effects produced on twelve non-commissioned officers sent by the military authorities to be trained as teachers for the British army by Mr. MacLaren. The men ranged from nineteen to twenty-nine years of age, and in height from 5 feet 5 inches to 6 feet. In Mr. MacLaren's own words, "the muscular additions to the arms and shoulders and the expansion of the chest were so great as to have absolutely a ludicrous and embarrassing result; for, before the fourth month several of the men could not get into their jackets and tunics without assistance, and when they had got them on they could not get them to meet down the middle by a hand's breadth." In a month more they could not get into them at all, and new clothing had to be procured, pending the arrival of which the men had to go to and from the gymnasium in their greatcoats.

Although there is some diversity of opinion among teachers of gymnastics as to the relative value of the different exercises, some holding that "five exercises" are sufficient, others that certain mechanical appliances are necessary, yet all agree that, to ensure a fully and perfect development of the organs of the body, a course of gymnastics must be combined with such amount of work as walking, running, jumping, &c. The introductory course ordinarily consists of "movements and positions" and the use of dumb bells and iron balls. In some French gymnastics, especially those promulgated by M. Lenoir, of Paris, an instrument invented and called by him "a *gloire*" is in use, consisting of a wooden stick, six notched and weighted with a rod of iron, and connecting apparently to the ball of English teachers. Another form of mechanical apparatus, also in use in some Continental schools, consists of sticks on which slide wooden spheres of from 6 to 7 inches diameter, prevented from slipping off by india-rubber rims at each end. The movements which accompany the use of the stick are intended to expand the chest and increase the power of the muscles of the back. In stretching the arms outwards from the bent position, the spheres fly outwards and very much increase the energy of the movements.

For the preliminary exercises with movable apparatus, the dumb bell is the usually selected. It was in use in England in the time of Elizabeth. It has many advantages over the Indian club, the weight of the dumb bell requiring a less amount of room, and not presenting the risk the club does of overstraining the body by its unkind use.

The dumb bell admits of being exactly proportioned to the individual strength of each learner, and can be adjusted in weight as its strength increases. The exercises also that may be performed with it give employment to all parts of the body and to both sides equally. The bar is simply a two handed dumb-bell. Next in order come walking, running, and jumping, the exercises being so regulated that both the distance and speed are gradually increased. The *leaping rope* is suspended from a beam, and enables the leaper to

clear a barrier at the same time that it gives employment to both the upper and lower limbs. The *leaping pole* is usually made of ash, and is used from 8 to 10 feet in length. Its use may be left to the pleasure of the pupil after he has acquired some dexterity with the leaping rope.

The *horizontal beam* is a round wooden beam so mounted that it may be moved up and down. The exercises on this are chiefly balancing the body in the sitting and erect posture, and when moving along it.

The *vaulting bar* differs from the preceding in being somewhat thinner, so as to be easily grasped by the hand. The appropriate exercises on this are for the object of the strengthening of the muscles of the upper extremity and joints. The *vaulting horse* allows of a wider range of exercises, and requires a greater amount of strength and dexterity. The muscles of the upper and lower limbs and trunk are all benefited by its use. The *fixed parallel bar* is used to develop the muscles of the trunk and upper limbs, but chiefly the former. The *movable parallel bars* may be used for the same exercises as the preceding. The *trapez* consists of a horizontal bar suspended by ropes to a height of 4 or 5 feet from the floor. Considerable practice is required to perform the exercises on this machine with dexterity and neatness. The *horizontal bar*, the *rope ladder*, the *plank*, the *inclined plane*, the *prepared wall*, and the *swing*, and several modifications of these that we need not mention of a great variety of exercises.

In "calisthenics" the exercises are more directed to ensure grace and ease in the several movements of the body than muscular development and are, therefore, closely allied to the "movements and positions" or "five exercises" of the gymnast. Among these exercises dancing takes a prominent part, being at once healthful and graceful.

See Combe's *Education, its Principles and Practice*, edited by J. J. MacLaren's *Physical Education*, the various works (in French) of Prof. N. J. Lenoir, Capt. Doer, and Dr. Le Blond, and numerous pamphlets by Dr. Bell.

**GYMNASTICS** See **EXERCISES** and **ELECTRICITY**.  
**GYNECOLOGY** (from the Greek *gynē*, *gynai*, a woman, and *logos*), that branch of medicine which concerns the pathology and treatment of affections peculiar to the female sex. See **MEDICINE**.

**GYOMA**, an old market-town in the Trans-Tiberian county of Békés, Hungary, is situated on the banks of the Körös main stream, 46° 37' N lat, 20° 50' E long. It has a fine town-hall, Roman Catholic, Calvinist, and Lutheran churches, a Jews' synagogue, tax, post, and telegraph offices, a brewery, several elegant private residences, and a large station on the Szabolcs and Railway. The soil of the surrounding country, though in some places clayey, is in others of a rich and productive character, and the inhabitants succeed in raising plentiful crops of wheat, mangel, barley, millet, and maize, besides cultivating several kinds of orchard fruit and grapes. The more considerable landholders own great numbers of sheep, pigs, and horned cattle. An abundant supply of fish and water-fowl is yielded by the Körös, which is here spanned over by a wooden bridge and by the railway. Enormous quantities of firewood are floated down the stream on rafts. The fields are protected from floods by a large dike, whilst a similar service is rendered by the Nagy-János, Csengelyi, Jókai, and Német trenches, which usually become dry during summer. In 1870 the population of Gyoma was 9907, by nationality Magyars, before 1683 three other communes, viz, Eger, Pó, and Nyárszeg, stood on the wide-spreading tract belonging to Gyoma. In that year they were, however, completely destroyed, and now only traces of their former existence remain.

**GYONGYOS**, the second town in importance of Heves county, Hungary, is situated at the foot of the Mátra, south west of Eger (Elsen), and is connected by a branch line with the Budapest Miskolc royal state railway, 47° 47' N lat, 18° 19' E long. Gyongyos is the seat of a court of justice, and of a board of taxes, and contains three churches, a large monastic establishment belonging to the Franciscans, a gymnasium, manufacture of leather, hats, and woollen cloth, and distilleries. The town carries on a brisk trade, especially in the Viscontar and Eger (Eblauer) red wines, which are produced in great quantities in the

neighbourhood. In 1870 the population was 15,830, mostly Magyar by nationality. The Hungarians defeated the Austrians at Gyonyos on the 3d April 1849.

**GYONGYOSI, ISZVÁN or STEPHAN** (1620–1704), one of the most talented Hungarian poets of the 17th century, was born of poor but noble parents in 1620. The county of his birth is variously given as Gemoi or Bons, the date as August 5 or November 3. His abilities early attracted the notice of Count Ferencz Wesselényi, who in 1640 appointed him to a post of confidence in Füle castle. Here he remained till 1653, when he married, and commenced his public career as an assessor of the judicial bench. In 1661 he was elected as a representative of his county at the diet held at Soprony (Odenburg). From 1686 to 1693, and again from 1700 to his death in 1704, he was deputy lieutenant of the county of Güns. Of his literary works the most famous is the epic poem *Mindya Venus* (Caschau, 1664), which hymns the praises of his benefactor's wife Maria Szösi, the heroine of Matiny. Among his later productions the best known are—*Rósa-Kos orú*, or *Rosa-Wreath* (1690), *Kemény-János* (1693), *Cupidó* (1695), *Palinodius* (1695), and *Cherilka* (1700). His poems are chiefly remarkable for energy, feeling, and popular sentiment. The earliest edition of his collected poetical works is by Dugonics (Pressburg and Pesth, 1796), the best modern edition is that of Földi, entitled *Gyongyosi István elegygyűjteménye* (Select poetical works of Stephen Gyongyosi), 2 vols., 1864–65.

**GYPSUM**, the hydrated sulphate of lime,  $\text{CaSO}_4 \cdot 2\text{H}_2\text{O}$ , is a mineral substance occurring in various rock formations, especially in Tertiary deposits, in very considerable abundance and under varying conditions. In its transparent crystalline state it is known as selenite, when it presents a finely fibrous opalescent appearance, it is termed satin spar, and the name alabaster is reserved for the pure milky white massive varieties. Gypsum is very generally disseminated, the most famous locality for the finest qualities worked into alabaster vases and figures being Castelnau, about 80 miles from Leghorn, while Montmartre, Argenteuil, and other places in the environs of Paris, and in the neighbourhood of Derby in England, furnish inexhaustible supplies chiefly for the preparation of plaster of Paris and for agricultural use, &c. It is also found in large quantities in Nova Scotia, New York, Virginia, and Michigan. The application of gypsum as a manure is referred to under **AGRICULTURE**, vol. 1 p. 351, and its employment for ornamental purposes is described under **ARCHITECTURE**, vol. 1 p. 439. The preparation of plaster of Paris, so called from the fact that the industry chiefly centres in several Parisian suburbs, is the principal primary object of the quarrying or mining of gypsum. By the application of heat gypsum begins, at a temperature of about 173° Fahr., to part with its combined water. An increase of temperature causes the desiccation to proceed with great rapidity, and for manufacturing purposes the best results are obtained at from 230° to 250°. For making plaster of Paris, gypsum is burnt in kilns at about the latter temperatures, and subsequently it is powdered and ground to a fine uniform flour. So prepared it possesses the valuable property of recombining with water when mixed with it, and setting, from a thin paste, into a solid mass, the phenomenon being accompanied with some expansion and the evolution of heat. It is to this property of recombining with water that the value of plaster of Paris is principally due. When, however, gypsum is burnt at a temperature of 480° and upwards, the sulphate rehydrates only with great difficulty, and at still higher temperatures it loses all power of absorbing water, and in this respect it then resembles anhydrite, the natural water-free sulphate of lime. Plaster of Paris is largely used for obtaining copies of statuary figures, coins, medals, sculptures, and

carvings, and also for taking casts from natural objects. It is also employed as the material for moulds for electro-deposits, and for the manufacture of encaustic and pressed pottery ware. Still more extensively it is consumed in the finishing of internal plaster work in houses, and for making cornice mouldings and other architectural enrichments in positions sheltered from the weather. Plaster of Paris work is, like gypsum, soluble in water at a temperature of 32° to the extent of 205 per cent., rising to a maximum solubility of 254 at 95° Fahr. Plaster casts made simply with water are soft, porous, and easily injured, and various plans have been devised for producing a harder, and more compact body with plaster. Keene's cement, which may be taken as a type of the hardened plasters, is made by treating the burnt gypsum with a solution of 1 part of alum to 13 of water at a temperature of about 95°. After about 3 hours the plaster is removed, dried, and rebaked in the furnace, and then thoroughly ground and powdered. Thus prepared, the plaster needs comparatively little water to slake it, and it sets much more slowly than the ordinary plaster, while the comparative tenacity of the two varieties is as 15 to 1. Parisian cement is plaster hardened with water containing 10 per cent. of borax, and stucco is plaster rendered tenacious by being prepared with a strong solution of glue. When water containing lime or a solution of gum arabic is used to slake burnt gypsum, a hard plaster is also obtained, which by smoothness, colouring, and subsequent polishing with oil assumes a marble-like surface. A fine imitation of merscham is also used in hardened plaster by polishing, tinting the surface with a solution of gamboge and dragon's blood, and treating it with either melted paraffin or stearic acid. It is understood that the cheaper "merscham" pipes and cigar-holders are thus prepared.

**GYROSCOPE**, **GYROSTAT**, are names given to instruments which are used to demonstrate certain properties of rigid bodies, when made to rotate rapidly about the axis round which they are kinetically symmetrical.

In some of its forms the gyroscope has been known for a very long time, and is, in all probability, of French or German invention. Almost the first instrument of the kind that we hear of, and of which the present gyroscope is merely a modification, is that of Dohnenbeiger, which was constructed as early as 1810, and is described in Gilbert's *Annalen* for 1818 (ix p. 60). It consisted of a heavy spheroid which could rotate inside a circular ring round its shorter axis,—the axis running on pivots situated at opposite ends of the ring's diameter. This ring, with its contained spheroid, was similarly made movable inside a second ring, and round an axis at right angles to the axis of the spheroid. In the same way this second ring, with its contents, could rotate inside a third ring, and round an axis at right angles to each of the others. From this it will be seen that the spheroid had all degrees of free rotation,—one point only within it being fixed, namely, the intersection of the three axes.

Under the title of precession instruments, various pieces of apparatus, involving the gyroscope principle, have been in use for a number of years for illustrating the precession of the equinoxes, and the parallelism of the earth's axis as it revolves round the sun. An instrument of this kind was given by Arago to Professor Playfair, which must have been in existence since 1816. Mention is made of a similar instrument as being brought from Italy to Mr. Babbage in 1827. At the close of that year a notice of an instrument akin to the gyroscope made by Mr. Henry Atkinson was read before the Astronomical Society. In 1836, in a paper read before the Royal Scottish Society of Arts, Mr. Edward Sang, C.E., Edinburgh, suggested an experiment with an instrument exactly similar to the gyroscope, by which the rotation of the earth on its axis could



be directly proved. He says, "While using Troughton's top as an idea occurred to me that a similar principle might be applied to the exhibition of the rotation of the earth. Conceive a large flat wheel, poised on several axes all passing exactly through its centre of gravity, and whose axis of motion is coincident with its principal axis of permanent rotation, to be put in very rapid motion. The direction of its axis would then remain unchanged. But the directions of all surrounding objects varying, on account of the motion of the earth, it would result that the axis of the revolving wheel would appear to move slowly." This suggested experiment was actually carried out in 1852 by M. Leon Foucault, although, in all probability, without any knowledge on his part of Mr. Sang's suggestion. Already, in 1851, Foucault, in his famous experiment with the pendulum at the Pantheon in Paris, had shown how the constancy of the plane of a pendulum's vibration could be used to show the rotation of the earth, and now, in 1852, he applied the property of the "constancy of the plane of rotation" of a gyroscope for the same purpose. The name gyroscope is given to the instrument by Foucault at this time, and in order to perform the experiment successfully the instrument had to be constructed with the utmost exactness. The experiment was repeated at the Liverpool meeting of the British Association, and by causing a considerable sensation in the scientific world at the time was the means of bringing the gyroscope into public notoriety. In *Poggendorff's Annalen* for 1853 there is a description of a gyroscope made some time before by Fessel, and about the same time we hear of various modifications of the instrument introduced by Prof. Baden Powell, Wheatstone, and others. Quite recently, in 1878, there has appeared in the *Scientific American* an account of a new form of gyroscope made by Mr. C. M. Hopkins. In this instrument the heavy flywheel is driven by an electric current after the manner of an electromagnetic engine, and so its rotation can be kept up for any length of time.

The construction of the gyroscope will be readily understood from fig. 1, which is engraved from a photograph of a large instrument made by Mr. Sang.

It consists of a fly-wheel, with a heavy rim accurately turned and balanced, which can rotate round an axis GC forming a diameter of the ring K. This ring also can rotate about the axis AF which is at right angles to GC, and is a diameter of the ring L. Similarly this ring L can rotate about the vertical axis BI, which is perpendicular both to GC and AF, and forms a diameter of the ring M, which is screwed to the heavy sole plate N. In order to perform the experiments the ring M, by means of a clamp arrangement seen at X, can be turned round to make the axis BI inclined at any angle with the vertical. With this instrument the following among many interesting experiments may be made.

Either by a large fly-wheel and band, or by running out a long cord coiled several times round the V groove wheel on the end of the axis, let a very rapid rotation be given to the fly-wheel round the axis OC, and in the positive direction (that is, counter-clockwise as seen from O). Such a rotation can readily be given so rapid as to last a long time. While so revolving let a weight be placed at G so as to cause a rotation round OA, also in the positive direction, and it will then be observed that a slow rotation of the whole mass takes place about the vertical axis OB, but in the nega-

tive direction. If the weight be put at C, the wheel rotating as before, the rotation round OB will be in the positive direction. Reversing the rotation of the wheel will in both cases produce a reversal of the rotation round OB.

2. The fly-wheel still rotating in the positive direction, let a positive rotation be given to the ring L round OB, and immediately the axis of the wheel OC will tilt up, rotating in the positive direction round OA till it reaches the vertical position, where it will remain, and then it will be observed that the fly-wheel is rotating in the positive direction round OB. Should the axis OC, in consequence of inertia, be turned a little past the vertical, and the direction of rotation round OB be then suddenly reversed, the axis OC will continue to revolve in the positive direction round OA, till it reaches the vertical pointing downwards, when it will again be stationary, and the wheel will now be rotating in the negative direction round OB. By gently oscillating the ring L at the instant the axis of the fly-wheel is passing the vertical, a continuous rapid rotation round OB can be given to the ring K carrying the rotating fly-wheel with it.

3. Let the fly-wheel be now made stationary, and, while in this position, let simultaneous rotations in the positive direction be given round both OA and OB, the fly-wheel will then be observed to begin to move in the negative direction round OC.

The explanation of all these experiments follows readily from the theory of the composition of rotations round different axes. Let the angular velocities about O, A, B, C, be  $\omega, \rho, \sigma$  respectively. If simultaneous angular velocities  $\alpha$  and  $\omega$  be given about OC and OA in the positive direction, these can be compounded into an angular velocity about a new axis OI, which divides the angle AOC into two parts such that

$$\omega = \frac{\sin COI}{\sin COI} \sin COI - \tan COI - \tan \theta \text{ (suppose.)}$$

OI is, therefore, the position of the instantaneous axis, and as OC will always tend to coincide with it, OC will move round the axis OB in the negative direction. It will be noticed also that,  $\omega$  remaining the same,  $\tan \theta$  will be less as  $\sigma$  is greater. This shows that the rotation round OB, on the motion in arimuth, will be slower as the speed of the fly-wheel is greater. This is in accordance with experiment. In precisely the same way by considering simultaneous angular velocities about OC and OB and OA and OB, can experiments 2 and 3 be explained.

Perhaps the most common form of gyroscope is that which has been largely sold under the name of the gyroscope top.

It is a modification of the gyroscope introduced by Fessel. In it the ring containing the rotating wheel is either supported on a vertical pivot at the end of the axis, or simply held suspended by a string attached to the same point, as represented in fig. 2. In this case, when the wheel is rapidly rotated, and its axis initially inclined at an angle with the vertical, a slow motion round the vertical axis is observed to take place. This rotation is accompanied by a feeble nutation of the axis, which is unobservable by the eye so long as the wheel rotates rapidly. The rotation in arimuth would continue uniform if the velocity of the wheel is maintained constant, but it gradually increases in speed, the nutation at the same time becoming more apparent as the velocity dies away, till the gyroscope finally settles with the axis of the wheel in the direction of the

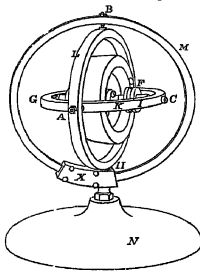


Fig. 1

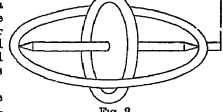


Fig. 2

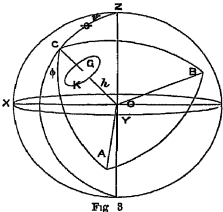


Fig. 3

longation of the supporting string. A short analytical investigation of this particular case may serve to give some of how problems on the gyroscope generally may be tackled. For clearness in the woodcut (fig 3) we suppose ring containing the wheel removed.

at K represent the wheel of mass  $M$ , & the distance of the centre of gravity  $G$  from  $O$ ,  $OC$  the axis of the wheel, supposed of unit length,  $OA$ ,  $OB$ , two other axes through the fixed point  $O$  at right angles to  $OC$  and to each other,  $OX$ ,  $OY$ ,  $OZ$  three real axes fixed in space, with which  $OA$ ,  $OB$ ,  $OC$  (axis fixed with the body) initially coincide,  $\psi$ ,  $\phi$ ,  $\theta$ , angles on the sphere which define the position of the axes. Let  $\omega$ ,  $\omega'$ ,  $\omega''$  be the angular velocities about  $OA$ ,  $OB$ ,  $OC$  respectively, the equation of kinetic energy  $T$  gives

$$T = \frac{1}{2}(A\omega^2 + B\omega'^2 + C\omega''^2) \\ = \frac{1}{2}A\sin^2\theta\phi - \frac{1}{2}\sin\theta\cos\theta\phi \\ = \frac{1}{2}C\cos^2\theta + \frac{1}{2}\sin\theta\cos\theta\phi$$

differentiating and making  $A=B$ , as is clearly the case, we have

$$T = \frac{1}{2}A\omega^2 + \frac{1}{2}A\omega'^2 + \frac{1}{2}C\omega''^2 + \frac{1}{2}C\phi\cos\theta\sin\theta$$

giving Lagrange's equations of motion, which are for this case

$$\frac{d}{dt} \frac{\partial T}{\partial \dot{\phi}} = \frac{\partial T}{\partial \phi} \quad \frac{d}{dt} \frac{\partial T}{\partial \dot{\theta}} = \frac{\partial T}{\partial \theta} \\ \frac{d}{dt} \frac{\partial T}{\partial \dot{\omega}} = \frac{\partial T}{\partial \omega} \quad \frac{d}{dt} \frac{\partial T}{\partial \dot{\omega}'} = \frac{\partial T}{\partial \omega'} \\ \frac{d}{dt} \frac{\partial T}{\partial \dot{\omega}''} = \frac{\partial T}{\partial \omega''}$$

gives

$$(1) \frac{d}{dt} \left\{ A\dot{\phi}\sin^2\theta + C(\phi\cos\theta + \theta)\cos\theta \right\} = 0,$$

$$(2) \frac{d}{dt} \left\{ C(\phi\cos\theta + \theta) \right\} = 0,$$

(3)  $A\dot{\omega} - A\dot{\phi}\sin\theta\cos\theta + C\sin\theta\phi(\dot{\omega}\cos\theta + \dot{\theta}) = Mgh\sin\theta$  giving (2), we get

$$\phi\cos\theta + \theta = a \quad \text{constant} = a \\ \text{which represents the angular velocity about } OC \\ \text{as if the motion be steady we must have both } \theta \text{ and } \phi \text{ constants} \\ \text{them be represented by } a \text{ and } \phi \text{ respectively. Then equation (1) gives}$$

$$-A\dot{\phi}^2\sin\theta\cos\theta + C\dot{\phi}\sin\theta\cos\theta = Mgh\sin\theta \\ \mu = \frac{Mgh + A\dot{\phi}^2\sin\theta\cos\theta}{C}$$

this formula we can calculate, for any particular instrument, the velocity in azimuth from having given the angular velocity of rotation of the fly-wheel and the axis.

An important case of motion, and one also very interesting both mathematically and physically, is got by including the gyroscope in a pendulum bob and supporting the rod from a universal flexure joint. This constitutes the gyroscopiculum. The joint is usually got by attaching a short piece of fine steel wire rigidly to the end of the rod, and bending the whole by means of the other end of this wire firmly clamped into a fixed support. When the scope is rapidly rotated, and the pendulum drawn a side from the vertical and then let go, its lower end behaves to describe a beautiful curve consisting of a series of equal closed loops, all equally near each other and starting from a centre point. This curve, which is a case of hypocycloid, is figured in Thomson and Tait's *Philosophy of Physics*, where also the whole theory of the scopic pendulum will be found.

It has been already mentioned, a remarkable apparatus is produced by the earth's diurnal rotation upon a rigid rotating gyroscope. This is seen from what Foucault called the "fixity of the plane of rotation," and what Thomson and Tait have recently called "gyrostatic dominion." In virtue of this principle, the axis of the rotating wheel tends always to preserve a fixed direction in space, in consequence, will appear to move in a direction opposite to that in which the earth's rotation is at each instant actually carrying it.

We suppose the gyroscope represented at fig 1 to have all degrees of free rotation round the point  $O$ , and to be in every way fully balanced about that point, and also to have all its pivots

freely void of friction, then, at whatever part of the earth's surface it may be placed, the fly-wheel while rotating rapidly will be observed to move gradually and finally take up such a position that its axis  $OC$  is parallel to the earth's axis, and also that its direction of rotation round  $OC$  is the same as that of the earth round its axis. Should the ring  $K$  be fixed so that the axis  $OC$  can only move in a horizontal plane, then the ring  $L$  will move in azimuth till it has placed  $OC$  in the direction north and south, and such that the direction of rotation of the fly-wheel coincides with that of the earth. Further, should the ring  $L$  be fixed in the plane of the meridian, so that  $OC$  can only move in altitude, then  $OC$  will be observed to take up till it is parallel to the earth's axis, the direction of rotation of the wheel being, as before, the same as that of the earth. These effects may be explained as follows—

Let  $\lambda$  be the latitude of the place, and  $\omega$  the angular velocity of the earth on its axis,  $\omega'$  the velocity of the ring  $L$  in the horizontal plane, and let  $OC$  make an angle  $\alpha$  in azimuth, with a horizontal line  $ON$  drawn from  $O$  northwards, finally, let the rotation of the wheel round  $OC$  be positive. Now we can be resolved into three angular velocities at right angles to each other,  $\omega \sin \lambda$  round the vertical line,

$$\omega \cos \lambda \cos \alpha \text{ round a line parallel to } ON \text{ and}$$

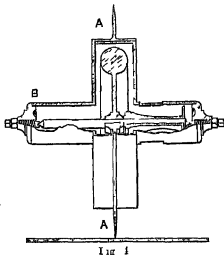
$\omega \cos \lambda \sin \alpha$  round a line parallel to  $OC$  and  $\omega \cos \lambda \cos \alpha$  gives the velocity in azimuth,  $\omega \cos \lambda \cos \alpha$  can only affect the velocity of the wheel, while  $\omega \cos \lambda \sin \alpha$  gives the velocity of  $OC$  in altitude. These being the actual component velocities communicated to the gyroscope by the earth, the apparent velocities will be equal and opposite to them.

The apparatus actually employed by Foucault to demonstrate the rotation of the earth differed somewhat from that represented in fig 1. In it the corresponding ring to  $L$  was suspended from a fixed stand by a thread without torsion, and rested at its lowest point by a pivot in an agate cup. Also the ring corresponding to  $K$ , which carried the fly-wheel, rested on knife edges within  $L$ , and could be removed at pleasure, in order that the rotation might be given to the fly-wheel. Great care was also taken to have every part thoroughly well balanced. It is stated that the experiment was several times successfully performed, and Foucault by means of his apparatus was enabled to verify astronomical observation, to find out the latitude of the place, the east and west points, and the rate of the earth's motion. The same experiment has lately, it is said, been successfully performed by Mr G. M. Hopkins. His fly-wheel, being driven by electricity, has the advantage of rotating at a uniform rate for any length of time. By attaching a small mirror to the frame which carries the revolving wheel, and using a spot of light reflected from it as an index, he has been able to make manifest the earth's rotation in a very short time.

An ingenious practical application of the gyroscope principle was suggested and carried into effect about the year 1856 by Professor Pierzi Smyth. His aim was to devise a telescope stand which would always remain level on board ship, notwithstanding the pitching and rolling, and so facilitate the taking of astronomical observations at sea. For this purpose the stand was supported on gimbals, and underneath it was placed on fine pivots several heavy fly-wheels which could be put in rapid rotation, some on vertical and some on horizontal axes. The complete apparatus, involving many ingenious details as to driving the fly-wheels, was tested by Professor Smyth on board the yacht "Titania" during a voyage to Tenerife, and found to work with perfect satisfaction. A full account of the method will be found in *Trans. Royal Scottish Society of Arts*, vol 19.

GYROSTAT.—This is a modification of the gyroscope, devised by Sir William Thomson, which has been used by him as well as by Professor Tait for a number of years to illustrate the dynamics of rotating rigid bodies. It consists essentially of a fly-wheel, with a massive rim, fixed on the middle of an axis which can rotate on fine steel pivots inside a rigid case. The rigid case exactly resembles a similar-shaped, but hollow, fly-wheel and axis closely set round the other but still leaving it freedom to move. XI — 45

containing case whereby a cord can be coiled several times round the axis for the purpose of setting the fly wheel in motion. There is also attached to the ratchet case, in the plane



of the gyrost, with a portion of the case removed to show the inside, is given in fig 4. A represents the bearing edge upon which the whole balances. To suit certain experiments, a sharp conical steel point can be fixed on to the end B by means of a bayonet joint.

The gyrost is a most instructive instrument, and with it many interesting experiments can be performed. We can only mention a few taken from Thomson and Tate's *Natural Philosophy*, vol. 1, Part I, where the mathematics of the whole subject will be found fully given.

1. Let the gyrost be placed on a flat sheet of glass with its bearing edge in a vertical plane as represented in the figure. Neglecting its unsteady motion, it has in this position clearly two freedoms, one in  $\varphi$  and the other in  $\theta$ . Of these, the first is neutral and the second unstable when the fly-wheel is still, but when it rotates rapidly the second will become stable, the first remaining neutral as before. When the fly wheel is spinning rapidly, the penance with which the gyrost keeps the erect position is very remarkable. A blow from the fist on the side of the case is met by a strong resistance, the instrument being thrown into a state of violent tremor, which subsides, however, after a few seconds. If, while the fly wheel is still rapidly spinning, weight be hung on at B, the whole apparatus will, like the gyroscope, immediately begin to move round a vertical axis.

2. Let the gyrost be supported on knife edge gimbals at its lower end, and with the axis vertical. In this position it has two freedoms each unstable, without rotation of the fly wheel, but with it both stable. A similar result is obtained by supporting the gyrost on a universal flexure joint, constituting an inverted gyroscopic pendulum.

3. Let the gyrost be supported on two equally long slits tangent to the bearing edge. In this position the two freedoms, one  $\varphi$  and the other  $\theta$ , are both unstable without, but both stable with, rapid rotation of the fly-wheel.

4. Let the gyrost be attached to a bar of wood by thrusting the bearing edge through a narrow slot in the middle of the bar, and then let it be supported by strings attached to the ends of the bar, the bar being horizontal. By this we have the means of slinging the gyrost in many different ways, two with the strings parallel and two with them crossed, the gyrost being attached above and below the wooden bar. Each of these ways has four freedoms, which can be reduced to three by a third string in each case. A little consideration will show in each case the stable and unstable modes without and with rotation of the fly wheel.

It only remains to mention a very interesting and intricate gyrostic problem which has been lately suggested by Sir William Thomson. He supposes a series of gyrostats to be formed with their axes all in the same straight line, and each attached to the other by a small universal flexure joint of thin steel wire. If this string be disturbed after the fly wheels have all been put into rapid rotation, a remarkable cork screw motion passes along the wire. For particulars we must refer to a paper announced by Sir William Thomson in the *R. S. Proceedings*.


In addition to the references in the text the following will be found useful:—*Adv. Sci.*, *Compt. Rend.*, Sept. 1852; Paper by Professor Magnus translated in *Taylor's Foreign Scientific*

*Monographs*, new ser., pt. 3, p. 210. *Adv. Sci.*, vol. xxi, pp. 221-248, *Theory of Poincaré's Gyroscopic Experiments*, by the Rev. B. H. Powell, F.R.S., *Adv. Sci.*, vol. xx, articles by Major J. G. Burnard in *Sullivan's Journal*, 2d ser., vol. xiv and xv, E. Hunt on "Rotatory Motion," *Proc. Phil. Soc. Glasgow*, vol. 11, J. Clerk Maxwell, "On a Dynamical Top," *Trans. R. S. B.*, vol. xvi, *Phil. Mag.*, 4th ser., vol. 7, 13, 11, *Proc. Royal Irish Acad.*, vol. vi, 1st ser., Sir William Thomson on "Gyrostic," *Nature*, vol. xi, p. 297, *Price's International Cyclopedia*, vol. 15. (G. L. L.)

GYTHIUM was an ancient Aeolian town on the Laconian Gulf, south-west of the mouth of the Eurotas, near the site of the modern port Marathousi. It lay opposite the island Clams, at the foot of the Ionic valley of the Gythion. On its coasts the common types are Apollo and Heacles, the founders of the city. Heacles, the Phoenician god Melkart, points to an early connexion with Tyre. The Phoenicians maintained a great trade with the shores of the Laconian Gulf, and Aphrodite Migonitry, the Phoenician Ashtar, had a temple at Migonion, the modern Marathousi. Aphrodite and Asclepius also occur on its coins, and the latter had a temple in the city. A great port in the period of Phoenician intercourse, Gythium became a secondary town after the Dorian conquest, as is proved by the absence of early coins, and it was only after the decay of Sparta that it again became an important city. It was the ordinary station of the Spartan fleet, and was considered the port of Argos, on which it was distant about 30 miles. In the wars against Athens it was therefore exposed to frequent attacks. Tolmides, the Athenian commander, burned it (455 B.C.). Later it was besieged unsuccessfully by Epaminondas (370 B.C.). It was strongly fortified by the tyrant Nabis, but he was compelled by Flamininus to give up Gythium and other coast towns to the Aeolian league (195 B.C.). When, soon afterwards, the whole country became a Roman province, Gythium had its own magistrates, *επαρχοι* and *εποποι* (see under Lebes, *Voyage Archéol.*, 212a, and *Gott. Gel. Anz.*, 1855, p. 461). Augustus made it one of the twenty four Eleutherio-Laconian towns. The existing ruins, called Eleutheroi, are all of the Roman period. According to Strabo (p. 363), it had an artificial harbour, of which Calpurnius had seen no trace. In the town was a well sacred to Asclepius, and at three stades distance was the stone Argos, where Orestes was relieved from his madness.

GYULA, chief town of the Trans-Dnieper county of Dékás, Hungary, is favourably situated on the Fehér (White) Körös, and has a well-built station on the Nagy-Viad (Grossviad) and Eszék line of the Alföld-Fiume Railway, in 46° 38' N. lat., 21° 17' E. long. The outer ditch of the old ruined fortress, the tower of which serves as a prison, divides Gyula into two parts, named respectively Magyar Város (Hungarian town) and Német Város (German town). Stone bridges facilitate communication over the canal, which flows from the Körös, and intersect the streets. Among the principal buildings are Roman Catholic, Old United Greek, Lutheran, and Calvinist churches, and a Jews' synagogue, also a fine castle with gardens, a county hall, an ancient Turkish bath, many handsome private residences, and several oil-mills. Gyula is, moreover, the seat of the county assemblies and administration, of a royal court of justice, of the assizes, and of a board of taxes, and has post and telegraph offices, and a savings-bank. The inhabitants are employed partly in industrial and commercial pursuits, partly in farming and cattle-breeding. The fairs are much resorted to for the purchase of corn, horned cattle, sheep, pigs, wooden wares, and gall-nuts. The chief agricultural products of the surrounding country are wheat, barley, oats, and rye, and there is also a good supply of garden fruit, grapes, and vegetables. In 1870 the population amounted to 18,495, consisting chiefly of Magyars, Wallachs, and Germans.

## H

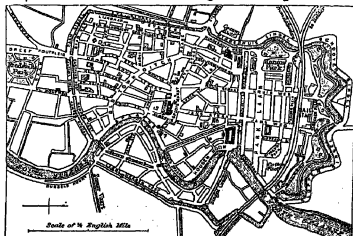
**H** has varied in form from the Phœnician and old Hebrew symbol , called *Cheth*, only by the removal of the upper and lower horizontal lines. (For the oldest forms of the letter see *ANATOLIAN*.) The closed form is sometimes found in old Greek inscriptions, and, though less frequently, in South Italy.

Its value in Phœnicia was probably a continuous guttural sound—the sound which it had in Hebrew—resembling the German *ch*, and with no English counterpart. In Greece it represented nothing more than the spirant *h*, so long as a separate symbol to denote that sound was felt to be necessary. Afterwards it was generally employed to denote a second *s*-sound, under the name of *Ēta*; probably it had before been called *Heta*. The time of this change varied in different parts of Greece. In the alphabet of the island of Thera we find *H* representing *s* as early as the 40th Olympiad, though it still sometimes retained its old value. At Athens the date was 408 B.C., and here the practice did not vary. But in most of the alphabets of Greece proper, of Peloponnesus, and of the Italian colonies, *H* still remained as the rough breathing; and as such it consequently passed into the Latin alphabet. It is possible that *h* in a very few Latin words, when it occurs as a medial sound (*e.g.*, *habeo*, *homo*), was a continuous guttural. But generally it occurs at the beginning of a word, and can hardly have been more than a breathing. Even as this it early became evanescent. During the classical period of Latin literature it was retained in the speech of educated men, doubtless in part by Greek influence. But in the popular speech it was rapidly disappearing as an initial sound; although it continued to be written, and indeed was often written wrongly, at the beginning of words where it had no place; *e.g.*, *unior* was written *humior*, and the *h* has held its own in English spelling down to our day. The sound is almost completely lost in modern Italian.

It is not settled beyond dispute by what mechanism the *h*-sound is produced. The old view (held by Læsius and others) is that *h* has a distinct position of its own, further back in the throat than the gutturals, in fact, immediately above the larynx,—that it is a *surd*, to which the corresponding sonant is the slight gurgle heard between words of which the first ends and the second begins with the same sound (*e.g.*, “go over”), if we take care to close the glottis between the two words but not to alter the position of the other vocal organs. A quite different view is held by Whitney, M. Bell, and others, that *h* has no distinct position of its own, but is sounded in or through the position of the following sound; for example, that in saying *ha* we do not put the vocal organs into two positions, one for *h* and one for *a*, but we put them into the position for *a*, and then produce the breath and the vowel without any change of position, the *h* being a mere expiration of breath through the open glottis; similarly *he*, *hu*, &c., are produced with the vocal organs in the position for *e*, *u*, &c., respectively; in each case the vocal chords vibrate for the vowel after the expiration of breath, but there is no change made within the orifice of the mouth between the *h*-sound and the vowel. This view is at least a plausible one.

**HAARLEM**, a city of the Netherlands, the chief town of the province of North Holland. By rail it is 11 miles W. of Amsterdam, 19 S. of Alkmaar, and 20 N. of Leyden. Distant about 5 miles from the German Ocean, it communicates with the Zuider-Zee by the Spaarne and the IJ. The railway to Amsterdam was opened in 1839, and that to Alkmaar in 1867.

Haarlem is a typical Dutch town. The branches of the Spaarne and an extensive system of canals bring the ship-traffic into the heart of it, and turn its streets into so many quays. The roadways are paved with bricks; the houses have gable-ends with old-fashioned crow-steeps; and everything wears a decent and quiet aspect, which to one man is dulness and to another “aristocratic gravity and modest coquetry.” What the city lacks in liveliness it makes up by the interest of its historical associations and the number of its scientific and artistic institutions. The great market place especially has much that is worth seeing: the town-house and the cathedral of St Bavo; the old meat market, a building of the end of the 16th century in the old Dutch style; the *stadscloot*, or place where in former times the burghesses used to assemble in arms; and the statue erected to *Ruster* in 1856, when in Holland he was still generally considered the inventor of printing. St Bavo’s is one of the most famous churches in the Netherlands. It is a cruciform structure completed in 1538, and makes a considerable impression on the spectator by the great length (about 426 feet) of its main axis and the height and steepness of the



**Plan of Haarlem.**  
 1. Gas Works. 4. The Collection of St Bavo or Groote Kerk. 5. N.C. Ch. of St. Joseph.  
 2. Infirmary. 6. Baracks. 7. Teyler's Foundation.  
 3. Town-House.  
 The tower is about 255 feet high. Within the lofty vaulting is supported by twenty very light columns, and there is a good deal of beauty about the perspective of its aisles. The organ, built by Christian Muller of Amsterdam between 1735 and 1738, was for some time the largest in the world, and is still celebrated for the sweetness of its tone, especially in the vox humana stop. It possesses four key-boards, 64 stops, and 5000 pipes, the largest of which is 15 inches in diameter. Among the monuments in the church are those of Bilderdijk the poet and the hydraulic engineers Christian Brunnings and Frederic William Conrad, the latter the projector of the sluices at Katwijk. In the belfry are the *damianen*, small bells presented to the town according to tradition by William I., the conqueror of Damietta. At the head of the scientific institutions of Haarlem may be placed the Dutch society of sciences (*Hollandische Maatschappij van Wetenschappen*) founded in 1752, which possesses very valuable collections in botany, natural history, and geology. Teyler's foundation (Teyler's Stichting), instituted in accordance with the last will of Pieter Teyler van der Hulst for the study of theology, natural philosophy, poetry, history, drawing, and

numismatics, has various auxiliary collections in the founder's former residence. The Dutch society of industry, founded in 1777, is still active and flourishing, with branches established all over the country. In 1871 it instituted a colonial museum, which along with the royal museum of modern art is accommodated in the pavilion formerly the residence of an Amsterdambanker, Hope, and acquired for the crown by King Louis Napoleon. The colonial museum presents a complete survey of the manifold products of the Dutch possessions in the East Indian Archipelago, and the royal museum has a collection of 250 pictures. Among the benevolent institutions of the city it is enough to mention the hospital for old men founded in 1608, and the beautiful Teyler's Hospital.

The staple industries of Haarlem have been greatly modified in the course of time. Under the counts of Holland cloth weaving and brewing were in a very thriving condition, but under Charles V they lost enormously in importance. While 2000 pieces of cloth had been manufactured annually in the end of the 15th century, 800 or 900 were the number for 1515, and the breweries diminished from 120 in 1494 to 95 in 1603, and by 1613 were no more than 77. After the revocation of the edict of Nantes, silk, lace, and damask weaving were introduced by French refugees, and in course of time these industries gave employment to 10,000 of the population. About the close of the 18th century this remarkable prosperity was a thing of the past, and it was not till after the Belgian revolution that Haarlem began to turn its attention to the various departments of manufactures in which it is now engaged. Cotton factories, carriage-works, bleach-works, cotton and silk dye-works, a famous type foundry, oil-works, soap-works, breweries, and a factory for preserved meats are among the more important establishments. The extensive workshops of the Dutch railway company are also of value to the town. One of the printing establishments has the reputation of being the oldest in the Netherlands, and publishes the oldest Dutch paper, *De Opzigt Haarlemmer Courant*. As market gardening, especially in the flower department, is largely carried on in the immediate vicinity, Haarlem is the seat of a flourishing trade in "Dutch roots," especially in hyacinths, tulips, fritillaries, sparaxes, and japonicas. A considerable business is also done in the butter, cheese, and other agricultural produce from the surrounding country.

Though the population of Haarlem has been steadily increasing since the beginning of the present century, it has not become so great as it was in the 17th. In 1570 the total was 20,772 souls, of whom 1836 were Dutchmen capable of bearing arms, 1215 Englishmen and Frenchmen, 1856 Germans, and 15,865 women and children. By 1622 it had increased to 39,455. A rapid decline took place in the 18th century, from 26,281 in 1748 the number sank to 21,227 in 1796, and by 1815 it was not more than 17,132. Seven years later we find 18,463 inhabitants, 31,667 in 1830, 24,012 in 1840, 25,852 in 1850, and 27,534 in 1860. The year 1874 showed 39,758, and three years later the number was no less than 35,692. In 1869—1870 there were 14,471 members of the Dutch Reformed Communism, 11,674 Roman Catholics, and 565 Jews.

Haarlem is mentioned in a register of the 10th century as *Harloun*. From Count William II it obtained a charter in 1246, and in the course of the following centuries it rapidly advanced in prosperity. In 1492 the insurgents called the "bread and cheese folk," got possession of the town, but before the year was out it was recovered by the imperial general Duke Albert of Saxony. The year 1495 was witness of a great conflagration, and in 1509 the plague visited its many victims. In 1559 Haarlem became a bishop's see. The prominent part that its inhabitants took in the revolt of the Netherlands brought upon it an unparalleled disaster. Don Fred, eldest son of the Duke of Alva, invested the town with 80,000 men in August 1572, and after a siege, in which the burghers defended themselves with admirable and pious heroism, it was obliged

to capitulate in July 1573. The conquerors, in spite of their promise of mercy, took barbarous vengeance, and it was not till July 1877 that the town was recovered from their grasp by the prince of Orange. In its subsequent history the main events are the inundations of 1775 and 1794, the arrival of the French in 1797, and the quinquennial celebration of the invention of printing in 1828.

See J. Allart, *Gezichten en beschrijving van Haarlem van de vroegste tijden tot op onze dagen onder medelwing van E. de Haas, Schied, en Geologie*.

HAARLEM LAKE, or HAARLEMME MEER, a commune of the province of North Holland, constituted by the law of 16th July 1850. It has an area of about 46,000 acres, the population has varied from 7000 in 1860 to 13,802 in 1878. As its name indicates, the commune was formerly a lake, and, according to Amersfoord, this lake was a side of a northern arm of the Rhine which passed through the district in the time of the Romans. In 1581 the Haarlem Meer had an area of 6480 acres, and in its vicinity were three smaller sheets of water—the Leid side Meer or Leyden Lake, the Spiering Meer, and the Oude Meer or Old Lake—with a united area of about 2600 acres. The four lakes were ultimately incorporated into one by successive inundations, and by 1647 the new Haarlem Lake had an area of 36,400 acres, which by 1740 was increased to 42,000. As early as 1648 J. van Adriaanszoon Leygwater proposed to empty and drain the lake, and similar schemes, among which those of Nikolaas Samuel Cuijpers in 1742 and of Baron van Leyden van Hemmen in 1821 are worthy of special mention, were brought forward from time to time. But it was not till 1839, when an ingenious haemistone on the 6th of November drove the water as far as the gates of Amsterdamb, and another on the 25th of December sent them in the opposite direction to submerge the streets of Leyden, that the mind of the nation was turned seriously to the task. In August 1837 the king appointed a royal commission of inquiry, the scheme proposed by the commission received the sanction of the second chamber in March 1839, and in the following May the necessary law was passed. The first engineers were to drain a canal round the lake for the reception of the water and the accommodation of the great traffic which had previously been carried on the canal was made 38 miles in length, with a depth of 9 feet, and a width 120 feet on the west side of the lake and 120 feet on the east side. The preliminary works are not completed till 1845. The area enclosed by the canal was rather more than 70 square miles, the average depth of the lake was 13 feet 1 1/4 inches, and as the water was natural outlet it was necessary to have a canal of 10 million tons would have to be raised by mechanical means. A gigantic steam engine designed by Messrs J. Gibb and A. Dean of London was erected and named in honor of Leeghwater. It could raise 112 tons at each stroke and discharge 1,000,000 tons in 254 hours. The total weight of iron used for the engine, pumps, &c. was 410 tons, and the cost of the machinery and buildings amounted to £24,000. Two other engines of equal size and power were afterwards constructed by Messrs Harvey of Hayle and Messrs Fox and Co. of Peterborough, in Cornwall, the makers of the "Leeghwater." They were named respectively the Cuijpers and the Van Leyden. The pumping commenced in 1846, and was completed by the 31st of July 1852. At the first sale of the highest lands about the brinks on August 16, 1853, 784 hectares were bought for 575,000 florins, or 738 florins per hectare, but the average price after a wide sale was less than 40 florins per hectare. The area of 42,000 acres of land was bought in 9,400,000 florins or about £780,000, so that the actual cost to the nation has only been 4,400,000 florins or £360,000, though the expense of the enterprise amounted to 13,787,377 florins or £1,080,000. The soil is of various kinds, but the most fertile is peat, most of it is sufficiently fertile, though in the low portions there are barren patches where the scanty vegetation is covered with an odorous deposit. Cows, sheep, cattle, butter, and cheese are the principal produce. The lands which traverse the commune are bordered by pleasant looking farm houses built after the various styles of Holland, Friesland, or Brabant. Hoofdoord, Vennepolder, Nieuw Vennepolder, Abbende, and the vicinities of the three great steam engines are the spots where the population has clustered most thickly. The first church was built in 1855, in 1877 there were seven. In 1854 the city of Leyden had claim to the possession of the new territory, but the case is decided in favor of the nation.

A list of works on the Haarlem Lake is given by Geyers van Endegeest, *De ontsluiting van de Zee van Haarlem* (The Hague, 1849—1861, 8 parts, with plates). See also J. F. Amersfoord, *Ziek Haarlemmermeer*, Haarlem, 1857, published by the Amsterdam *Maatshappij* *Velox Horticola*.

HAABAKKUK (חִבְכּוּק), one of the minor prophets of the Old Testament, the eighth in order in the Masoretic text. The name of the prophet is peculiar to him, and occurs only in his own writing (1. 1. and 1. 1). As to its meaning there is some uncertainty, but it is probably a formation from a verb signifying to *embrace*, to *embrace*

(פֶּזֶן), and means "embraced" or simply "embrace" (Jerome, *P. ad Hab.*, Gesenius and Furst on the word). In the Septuagint and with the Greek fathers it appears in the form of Ἀββακού, which would seem to indicate that the Hebrew was read and pronounced Habbakkuk (פֶּזֶן), the double ב being changed for the sake of euphony into *mb*. The change of the *l* into *m* at the end of the word Bleek says is without analogy, but in the change of Beelzebub into Beelzeboul we have an analogous instance of the substitution of a liquid for a mute,—probably because to the Greek *en* it was not agreeable that a final syllable should begin and end with the same rough consonant. Of the prophet's personal history nothing is certainly known. In the inscription of his book he is simply called "the prophet", not *en*, nor we with certainty determine at what time he lived and prophesied. From the use of the word "my" in the subscription to the psalm in chap. ii, "To the chief singer on my stringed instrument" (ver. 19), it has been inferred that he was of the tribe of Levi, inasmuch as it is supposed from this that he held a place among those by whom officially the musical service of the temple was conducted, a place which only a Levite, it is alleged, could occupy. But this seems rather too much to build on the mere use of the word "my," nor is it quite certain that only Levites took part with stringed instruments in the service of song in the temple. King Hozekiah, after his recovery from his sickness, composed a psalm of thanksgiving, and in reference to it he says, "We will sing my songs to the stringed instruments all the days of our life in the house of the Lord", for he "had said, What is the sign that I shall go up to the house of the Lord?" (Isa. xxxviii 20, 22), from which it may be inferred that others besides Levites might take part in the liturgical music of the temple. Were there any truth in the assertion in the additions to Daniel in the Apocrypha that Habakkuk was sent by the Lord from Judea to Babylon with food for Daniel in the lions' den, this would give us the date of the prophet's activity, but on such a manifest fiction nothing can be built. According to one tradition the prophet was banished to Kuleth in the tribe of Judah, according to another at Eulkkok (now Yekuk) in the tribe of Naphtali.

The book of Habakkuk falls into two parts,—the former of which (chaps. i and ii) has the inscription, "The burden which Habakkuk the prophet saw," and the latter (chap. iii) the inscription, "Prayer" (or hymn) "of Habakkuk on Shigionoth." Both parts have reference to the same subject, the invasion of Judah by the Chaldeans, who are expressly named (i. 6). In both this is regarded as a chastisement from the Lord upon the people for their sins, but whilst in the earlier part the prophet appears as a reprover and denouncer of evil, in the latter he gives utterance to emotions of reverence, confidence, and joy in God as the Saviour of His people. In the former part the prophecy is in the form of a dialogue between Jehovah and the prophet. The prophet, deeply troubled because of the corruption of his people, cries to God and asks how long such a state of things is to continue (i. 2-4), to which God replies in effect that He is about to bring on the sinful nation a heavy calamity by raising against them the Chaldeans—"that bitter and impetuous nation"—whose fierce and terrible hosts should devastate the land,—at the same time intimating that this scourge should pass away, and that the invaders, though the instruments of God's vengeance, should not be held guiltless (5-11). The prophet then appeals to God, the Everlasting and Holy One, and asks how the employment of such instruments to inflict punishment on the people of His choice is reconcilable with the divine clemency and unchangeableness (12-17), but declares that he will stand on his watch-tower that he may learn what God will say to him, hoping that some word of comfort may be vouch-

sured to him which he may carry to his people. The word comes, the Lord will not suffer the anguish, the transgressor, and the idolater to escape, a five-fold woe is denounced against the enemies of God's people, the just are encouraged to abide in faith, cheered with the assurance that as a result of God's judgments on the wicked the knowledge of the glory of the Lord shall fill the earth as the waters cover the sea, for God is in His holy temple, His purposes shall stand fast, therefore let all the earth be still and await His coming (ii. 1-20). The latter part of the book is a hymn of praise in which the prophet in his own name and that of the people celebrates the majesty and mighty deeds of the Lord, and gives exulting expression to the confidence and joy with which His true subjects rest in Him (ii. 1-19). This hymn is in iambic and stichic like one of the Psalms, and was doubtless intended for use in the temple service. To some it has appeared that this third chapter is wholly unconnected with the two preceding. But though different in character and style, it stands closely connected in substance with what goes before, and forms with this one whole. In the former part we have the burden which the prophet had to bear to the people, in the latter we have the utterance of the feelings produced by the contemplation of the facts and revelations therein set forth, viewed in the light of God's manifestations of Himself on behalf of His people in former times. The book, which is generally agreed to have been written by the prophet himself, forms one of the finest remains of ancient Hebrew literature. In conception and style it is not inferior to any production of the most flourishing age of prophecy. The language is pure, the thought is lofty, and in the construction artistic skill is displayed. With the mantle of the prophet the author dons also the chaperon of the poet.

At what time Habakkuk prophesied remains uncertain. From i. 5, 6, where the invasion of Israel by the Chaldeans is represented as a thing so strange as to be incredible when announced, it has been argued that the prophecy was uttered whilst the people of Israel were unacquainted with the Chaldeans as a nation powerful,—long, therefore, before the battle of Carchemish (606 B.C.), in which Necho, king of Egypt, was defeated by Nebuchadnezzar. The date of the prophecy has accordingly by some been assigned to the reign of Manasseh, and thus has been supposed to receive confirmation from the fact that during that reign there were prophets who foretold the coming on the nation of a calamity such as that the ears of all who heard of it should tingle (2 Kings vii. 10 ff.), and of these prophets Habakkuk may have been one. The words of the prophet, however, do not necessarily imply that at the time he uttered his prophecy the people were so ignorant of the Chaldeans that they could not believe what he was commissioned to announce to them regarding an invasion of the country by that "bitter and impetuous" nation, it is rather the immediacy and suddenness of the catastrophe which he represents as what it would seem to be, even when announced by a prophet of the Lord. It is further to be observed that his words imply that the calamity he was sent to announce would happen in the days of those to whom he spoke, who could hardly be said of a generation to have reached what age during the latter half of Manasseh's reign, that is, fully sixty years before the invasion of Judah by Nebuchadnezzar. It may be added that it is very improbable that during the reign of Manasseh, when idolatry was rampant, and supported by the worship of Jehovah, such a faith as that of chap. iii. would have been composed for the temple service by any one living in Judah. A later date, it would thus appear, must be assigned to the prophet. Vindings has suggested that it was uttered in the time of Josiah, and this is accepted by Delitzsch and others. To this it has been objected that the state of things described in the beginning of the book does not accord with what we know to have been the state of things in Josiah's reign, and moreover that the declaration that the calamity threatened should happen in the days of the existing generation does not tally with the assurance given by the prophetless Huldah to King Josiah, that the evil the Lord was about to bring upon Jerusalem should not happen in his day (2 Kings xxii. 15-20). Neither of these objections, however, has much weight. To the former it may be replied that, though in the later part of Josiah's reign a better state of things than that described by the prophet prevailed, in the earlier part of it it was probably exactly such as he represents, and to the latter it may be



beyond the same. Stungent penalties are provided for offences against the Act. A judge delaying *habeas corpus* forfeits £500 to the party aggrieved. Illegal imprisonment beyond 40 days renders the offender liable in action by the injured party with double costs and damages to the extent of not less than £500, besides subjecting him to the penalties of *praemunire*, and to other disabilities. "The great rank of those who were likely to offend against this part of the statute was," says Hallam, "the cause of this unusual severity."

The Habeas Corpus Act, it will be seen, applies only to the case of person imprisoned on criminal charges. In 1758 the question arose whether, in the case of an imprisonment for military service, a *habeas corpus* could be applied for under the Act, and other questions of some difficulty were raised as to its effect in particular cases. The judges who were consulted by the House of Lords differed in their opinions, and ultimately the Act 56 Geo III c 100 was passed, "for more effectually securing the liberty of the subject." It enacts (1) that a writ of *habeas corpus* shall be issued in vacation time in favour of a person restrained of his liberty (except persons imprisoned for debt or by civil process)—a privilege granted by the Act of Charles II only in the case of commitments for criminal offences, (2) that though the return to the writ be good and sufficient in law, the judge shall examine into the truth of the facts set forth in such return, and if they appear doubtful the person shall be bailed, (3) that the writ shall run to any harbour or road on the coast of England, although not within the body of any county. The last clause was intended to meet doubts on the applicability of *habeas corpus* in cases of illegal detention on board ship.

In Anderson's case, in 1861, the Court of Queen's Bench decided somewhat reluctantly that the writ runs to all the foreign dominions of the crown even when there are independent local jurisdictions. In consequence of this decision the Act 23 and 26 Vict c 20 was passed, enacting that "no writ of *habeas corpus* shall issue out of England, by authority of any judge or court of justice therein, into any colony or foreign dominion of the crown where her Majesty has a lawfully established court or courts of justice, having authority to grant and issue the said writ, and to ensure the due execution thereof throughout such colony or dominion."

In times of public danger it has been found necessary to suspend the Habeas Corpus Act by a special statute. This was done in 1817 by the Act empowering the king to secure and detain such persons as his Majesty shall suspect are conspiring against his person and government. More recently this extreme measure has been judged necessary in the case of Ireland (see 29 Vict c 1, continued for a short period by annual acts).

In the United States of America the law of *habeas corpus* has been inherited from England, and has been generally made to apply to commitments and detentions of all kinds. Difficult questions, unknown to English law, have arisen from the peculiar features of the American State system. Thus the constitution provides that "the privilege of the writ of *habeas corpus* shall not be suspended unless when, in cases of rebellion or invasions, the public safety may require it" and it has been the subject of much dispute whether the power of suspension under this provision is vested in the president or the congress. The weight of opinion seems to lean to the latter alternative. Again, conflicts have arisen between the courts of individual States and the courts of the Union. It seems that a State court has no right to issue a *habeas corpus* for the discharge of a person held under the authority of the Federal Government. On the other hand, the courts of the Union issue the writ only in those cases in which the power is expressly conferred on them by the constitution.

HABINGTON, WILLIAM (1605-1654), one of the most pleasing of English minor poets, was born at Hendlin in Worcestershire, on the 4th of November 1605. His father, Thomas Habington, was a prominent Catholic, to his mother, Lady Mary Habington, was attributed the revelation of the Gunpowder Plot. The poet was educated first at St Omer, and refusing to become a Jesuit was removed to Paris. On his return to England he met and fell in love with Lady Lucy Herbert, second daughter of Lord Powis, whom he celebrated under the poetical name of Castara. After some opposition he won her hand, and they were married about the year 1632. In 1634 he first published his famous volume of lyrical poems entitled *Castara*, which was reprinted in 1635 and 1649. In the latter year he also published a prose *History of King Edward IV and The Queen of Aragon*, a tragic-comedy. This play was published at the request of his kinsman, the earl of Pembroke, it was afterwards revised by Samuel Butler. The last work printed by Habington was *Observations upon History*, 1641. In 1647 his father died, and during the Commonwealth, as we learn from Anthony Wood, the poet "did run with the times, and was not unknown to Oliver the usurper." He died November 30, 1654, and was buried in the family vault at Hendlin. Habington possesses all the faults of his age except its impurity, he is honourably known as the chastest of the Royalist lyricists. His genius was gently faultless, mild in its play of fancy, delicately ingenious, and of an unforced stately dignity. He never rises to sublimity or passion, but he is always gentlemanlike and often extremely graceful. His best verse, have a very modern tone, and remind the reader of the 18th rather than of the 17th century.

The works of Habington have not been collected. An edition of *Castara* was published by Mr. Ains in 1870 and *The Queen of Aragon* has been included in the Dodsley collection.

HACHETTE, JEAN NICOLAS PIERRE (1760-1831), an eminent French mathematician, was born at Mézières, where his father was a bookseller, on the 6th May 1769. For his early education he proceeded first to the college of Charleville, and afterwards to that of Rheims. In 1788 he returned to Mézières, where he was attached to the school of engineering as draughtsman to the professors of physics and chemistry. When twenty-three years of age he succeeded from among a number of candidates in gaining the professorship of hydrography at Colloure and Port-Vendue. While there he sent several able papers, in which some questions of navigation were treated geometrically, to Monge, at that time minister of marine, through whose influence he obtained an appointment in Paris. Thence he passed to a deputy-professorship at Mézières, and towards the close of 1794, when the École Polytechnique was established, he was chosen one of its staff, being appointed along with Monge over the department of descriptive geometry. There he instructed some of the ablest Frenchmen of the day, among them Poisson, Airy, and Fresnel. Accompanying Guyton de Mourgues in his expedition, earlier in the year, he was present at the battle of Fleurus, and entered Brussels with the French army. In 1816, on the accession of Louis XVIII, he was expelled from his chair by Government, at the same time that his friend and fellow-worker Monge was removed from the Institute. He retained, however, till his death the office of professor in the faculty of sciences in the École Normale, to which he had been appointed in 1810—the same year in which he married the daughter of the physician Mangias. The necessary royal assent was in 1823 refused to the election of Hachette to the Academy of Sciences, and it was not till 1831, after the Revolution, that he obtained that well-merited honour. He died at Paris, January 16, 1834. Hachette was held in high esteem for his private worth, as



well as for his scientific attainments and great public services. His labours were chiefly in the field of descriptive geometry, with its application to the arts and mechanical engineering. It was left to him to develop the geometry of Monge, and to him also is due in great measure the rapid advancement which France made soon after the establishment of the École Polytechnique in the construction of machinery. His writings on descriptive geometry are still of value.

His chief principal works are his *Deux Suppléments à la Géométrie Descriptive de Monge*, 1811 and 1818; *Éléments de Géométrie à deux dimensions*, 1817; *Collection des Figures de Géométrie*, &c., 1795 and 1817; *Applications de Géométrie Descriptive*, 1817; *Traité de Géométrie Descriptive*, &c., 1823; *Traité Élémentaire des Machines*, 1811; *Correspondance sur l'École Polytechnique*, 1804-1815. He also contributed many valuable papers to the leading scientific journals of his time.

HACHETTE, LOUIS CHRISTOPHE FRANÇOIS (1800-1861), a French publisher, was born at Rothen in the Aisennes, May 5, 1800. After studying three years at a normal school with the view of becoming a teacher, he was in 1823 on political grounds expelled from the seminary. He then devoted several years to the study of jurisprudence, but in 1826 he resolved to establish in Paris a publishing business, the main object of which should be the issue of works adapted to improve the system of school instruction, or to promote the general culture of the community. The series of works which from that time were brought out by him included manuals in various departments of knowledge, dictionaries of modern and ancient languages, educational journals, and French, Latin, and Greek classics annotated with great care by the most eminent authorities. Subsequent to 1850 he, in conjunction with other partners, published a cheap railway library, scientific and miscellaneous libraries, an illustrated library for the young, libraries of ancient literature, of modern foreign literature, and of modern foreign romances, a series of guide-books, and a series of dictionaries of universal reference. In 1855 he also founded *Le Journal pour tous*, a publication with a circulation of 150,000 weekly. There can be no question that by his efforts to circulate such a variety of wholesome and instructive literature, Hachette is entitled to rank among the greatest benefactors of his country. He also manifested great interest in the formation of mutual friendly societies among the working classes, in the establishment of benevolent institutions, and in other questions relating to the amelioration of the poor, on which subjects he wrote various pamphlets, and he lent the weight of his influence towards a just settlement of the question of international literary copyright. He died 31st July 1861.

HACKBERRY, a name given to the fruit of the *Celtis occidentalis*, L., belonging to the natural order *Ulmaceae*. It is also known under the name of "sugar berry," "beaver-wood," and "nettle tree." The hackberry tree is of middle size, attaining from 60 to 80 feet in height, and with the aspect of an elm. The leaves are ovate, cordate ovate, and ovate lanceolate, with a very long taper point,—mostly glabrous above, and usually soft-pubescent beneath. The soft filmy flowers appear early in the spring before the expansion of the leaves. The fruit is berry, about the size of a bud cherry, is of an obovate shape, of a reddish or yellowish colour when young, turning to a dark purple in autumn. This tree, together with other species of the same genus, is distributed through the deep shady forests bordering the river banks of New England to Wisconsin and even further southward. The fruit has a sweetish and slightly astringent taste, and is largely eaten in the United States, and, although not official, has been highly recommended in cases of dysentery. The seeds contain an oil like that of almonds. The bark is tough and fibrous like

hemp, the wood is hard and compact and heavy, and next to ebony and box has been spoken of as the best for durability, strength, and beauty, its tenacity and flexibility have led to its employment as shafts for carriages, hoops, &c. The root has been used as a dye for linens. The root, bark, and leaves of *C. occidentalis* are employed in the East as a remedy in epilepsy.

HACO, or HAKON (c. 920-960), surnamed the Good, king of Norway, was the son of Harold Fairhair by a female slave, and was presented by Harold to king Athelstan of England, to mark his contempt for an insult he had received. The child was placed by a Norse wassailor on Athelstan's knee, who thus made to observe the symbol of adopting a child that was born to Athelstan did not, however, take vengeance on the innocent cause of his anger, but brought him up as one of his own sons. On hearing of the death of Harold, he supplied Haco with men and ships, and sent him to Norway to wrest the throne from Eric, eldest son of Harold, whose violent and cruel reign had during the life of his father gained him the general hatred of his subjects. The news of Haco's arrival in Norway spread says the saga, "like fire through dried grass." Eric at once took flight to Orkney and then to England, and Haco was chosen king at every "thing." Haco, though himself a Christian, found it impossible in his time to establish Christianity in his kingdom. He ruled his kingdom with great justice and prudence, and gained for it many victories over the Danes by land and sea. He was slain in a great fight against the Danes, led by the sons of Eric, about the year 960.

HACO V, surnamed the Old, king of Norway, son of Haco IV, was on the death of his father in 1204 excluded from the throne on the ground of supposed illegitimacy, and only became king in 1223, after his mother, to establish his rights, had undergone the ordeal of fire. He greatly increased the prosperity of Norway, and he also added to his kingdom Iceland and Greenland. As he had a dispute with Alexander III. of Scotland in regard to the sovereignty of the Hebrides, he set sail about 1263 on a great expedition against the west of Scotland, where he took possession of Ailan and Bute, but suffered such a severe defeat at Largs that he was compelled again to put to sea. After losing many ships by storm, he sailed to Orkney, where he died in the following winter. It is supposed by some that his fleet in his voyage north passed between Skye and the mainland, and that it is from this fact that the narrow sound of Kyle-Akin received its name.

For the king named Haco see the *Heimskringla* of Snorro Sturluson, which, however, does not include the reign of Haco V, translated into English by Samuel Laing, London, 1814. The saga of Sweire and his successors was published by Unger under the title *Konunga Sögur*, Christiania, 1870-73. The *Saga of Hakonar Helgason* forms the 10th vol. of the *Formannasögur* published at Copenhagen in 12 vols., 1825-30, and translated into Danish and Latin in 12 vols., 1828-40. See also *Skutunga Saga*, 2 vols., Oxford, 1878, and Gylfi's *Early Kings of Norway*, London, 1875.

HADAD, the name of a Syrian deity, is met with in Scripture as the name of several human persons, it also occurs in the compounds Benhadad, Hadadimmon, and Hadadeser. The etymology of the word, of which Hadai, Adai, and Arai appear to be incorrect variations, is obscure, the divinity primarily denoted by it, however, according to Philo of Byblos (Müller, *Ph. Hist. Gr.*, iii 569, cf. Maenob, *Saturn.*, 23), is the king of the gods, the greatest and highest, the sun, and these interpretations seem to point to some such radical meaning as *unus*. The Syrian kings of Damascus seem to have habitually assumed the title of Benhadad, or son of Hadad (three of this name are mentioned in Scripture), just as a series of Egyptian monarchs are known to have been accustomed to call themselves sons of Ammon-Ra. The word Hadadimmon,

for which the inferior reading Hadadimmon is found in some MSS. in the phrase "the mourning of (or at) Hadadimmon" (Zech xii 11), has been a subject of much discussion. According to Jerome and all the older Christian interpreters, the mourning for what occurred at a place called Hadadimmon (Maximianopolis) in the valley of Magdala is meant, the event alluded to being generally held to be the death of Josiah, but since Hitzig and Movers the opinion has been gaining ground that Hadadimmon is merely another name for Adonis or Thammuz, the autumn sun god, the allusion being to the mournings, by which the Adonis festivals were usually accompanied (Hitzig on Zech xii 11, Isa. xlviii 8, Movers, *Phoenice*, i, 106).

Full notices for the whole discussion will be found in *Deudais* and *Studien zu Sam. Reliquien* (1878), Abh. v. This author, however, has considerably modified his views in Herzog and Plitt's *R. H. s. v.*, having in his earlier essay been misled in important points by statements of Schrader (*Keilschrift und A. T.*, pp. 101 seq.), which have since been found to require correction (see Gutschmidt, *Neue Beiträge*, p. 17 seq., Willmann's criticism of Bunsen in *Zeit. d. Alt. Ori.* x (1877), Str. 8, Schrader, *Keilschrift und Geschichtswiss.* (1878), pp. 371 seq., 538 seq.).

**HADDINGTON, or EAST LOTHIAN**, a maritime county of Scotland, lies between 55° 46' 10" and 56° 4' N. lat. and between 2° 5' and 2° 49' W. long. It is bounded on the N. by the Firth of Forth, on the E. by the North Sea, on the S. by Berwickshire, on the W. by Edinburghshire. Its seaboard is 31½ miles. Its greatest length from east to west is 25 miles; its breadth from north to south about 16 miles. Its area covers 170,112 acres (280 square miles), of which 189½ are under water, 5505 foreshore, and 12½ in "links." The general outline of the county is that of an irregular quadrilateral figure with its northern angle projecting into the sea. Along a south-and-north line through the county town, the land slopes gradually up from the coast to the Galeslet Hills, thence down to the Tyne valley, and then up again to the Lammernmuir Hills, which occupy the southern district of the county. On the east and west the ground slopes from the Lammernmuir to the sea, but near the sea the fall is so gentle that the land has the appearance of a plain. Two almost isolated hills break the level,—North Berwick Law (612 feet) on the coast, and Traprain Law (724) in the eastern part of the Tyne valley. The chief summits of the Lammernmuir Hills are Sparletree (1834), Lammelaw (1800), and South Uill (1230). The only stream of any importance is the Tyne, which, after a course of 7 miles in Middlethun, flows through the county with a gentle current north-east past the town of Haddington, and falls into the sea at Tyne-mouth. A very fine variety of trout is found in it, and below the rocks of the Inn at East Linton salmon are occasionally caught. The Whiteadder rises in the county, and flows south-east into Berwick.

**Geology and Mineralogy.**—The Lammernmuirs are composed chiefly of Lower Silurian strata, overlaid in part by Old Red Sandstone and conglomerate—one great mass of the latter extending south-east from Spott, with a breadth of 3 or 4 miles, across the hills into Berwickshire. Another belt of Old Red Sandstone rather more than 1 mile in breadth begins at the sea a little to the south of Dunbar, and stretches along the base of the Lammernmuir. Patches of Old Red Conglomerate occur also here and there in the Lammernmuir further to the west, and are seen in the upper tributaries of Gifford and Humble waters. The ground to the north of the Lammernmuir is occupied chiefly by rocks belonging to the Calciferous Sandstone and Carboniferous Limestone series of the Carboniferous formation. The Calciferous Sandstones cover a wide area west and east of Haddington, extending south to the Lammernmuir, along the base of which they trend south-west beyond the county boundary. They also appear in the lower reaches of the

Tyne valley, covering a considerable area between Tynninghame Links and Biel Water. Again, they are seen on the shore between Tynes Point and Douglas Burn, whence they strike inland. The hilly tract between Haddington and North Berwick is made up of various volcanic rocks of Lower Carboniferous age, such as porphyrite, dolerite, and tuff. In the western part of the county the Carboniferous Limestone series occupies an extensive area and is rich in limestones and coal seams. This area forms the eastern margin of the Middlethun coal-field. A patch of the Limestone series also appears upon the coast about a mile south of Dunbar. Besides these bedded aqueous and volcanic rocks, there are numerous intruded masses, dykes, and veins of felsstone and basalt, and some pieces of tuff and agglomerate which mark the sites of ancient volcanoes of Lower Carboniferous age. Granite is found at Priestlaw. Deposits of glacial origin are met with more or less abundantly, especially in the low lying tracts. These consist of till or boulder-clay and mounds and sheets of sand and gravel, underneath which the older rocks are often concealed over wide areas. Alluvial deposits occur along the course of many streams, but the only considerable alluvial flats are those of the Tyne.

Coal of a very fine quality has been extensively worked in the west. So long ago as 1200 the monks of Newbattle obtained this mineral from Prestongrange. Limestone is found throughout the greater part of the shire. A vein of hematite of a peculiarly fine character was discovered in 1866 at the Galeslet Hills, and wrought for some years, but from a variety of causes the works have been many times suspended.

**Climate.**—The climate is on the whole mild and equable. East winds, however, prevail in the months of March, April, and May, and from this part of the country it is felt that the annual amount of rainfall is far below the average of Great Britain. During the period 1835–64 the average annual rainfall was 24.85 inches,—the greatest fall being 32.3 in 1850, the least 17.3 in 1843. The average monthly fall is lowest in April (1.16) and highest in August (2.57). In 1872 the rainfall reached the exceptional amount of 41.51 inches.

**Agriculture, &c.**—The soils are various. The Lammernmuir are of course unproductive, but the slopes to a considerable height are cultivated, and for a considerable way down the land is very good. In the centre of the county there is "a tenebrous yellow clay resting upon a tilly subsoil," and the land is not well suited for agricultural purposes. Along the margin of the Firth the soil is a mixture of a sandy nature, but farther inland it is composed of rich loam and is very fertile. The most productive region is the land about Dunbar. The portions there are very good, and the soil is a mixture of reds "as highly esteemed in the London market, selling at times for as much as 24s 6d an acre. From the beginning of the present century till within the past few years East Lothian agriculture has on the whole been held to be the best in Scotland. This is not so much due to the natural fertility of the soil as to the enlightened enterprise of its cultivators. Andrew Menzie here first introduced the threshing mill (1787). The draining was first extensively used here, and the reaping machine (now universally employed) and the steam plough were introduced at comparatively early periods of their history. The high price of grain at the time of the Crimean War gave a great impetus to farming, and in consequence rents rose much as from 15s. to 41s. per acre, thus, with the increased cost of labour, which has risen 35 to 40 per cent. (about 10s. per acre) within the last seven or eight years, he has steadily diminished the profits of the farmer. The amount of the crops in 1872 was as follows:—oats, 44,819 (value, 7214); barley, 18,668; oats, 15,740; green crops, 25,660 (potatoes, 9885; turnips and swedes, 14,799); clover and grass, 27,194; permanent pasture, 16,000; bare fallow, 1075. Of live stock the numbers were—

According to the agricultural returns of 1879, of the total area of 179,112 acres 115,954 acres were under cultivation, distributed as follows:—oats, 44,819 (value, 7214); barley, 18,668; oats, 15,740; green crops, 25,660 (potatoes, 9885; turnips and swedes, 14,799); clover and grass, 27,194; permanent pasture, 16,000; bare fallow, 1075. Of live stock the numbers were—

<sup>1</sup> See the *Geology of East Lothian*, by Bonell, Gaskie, and Young, with Appendix on Fossils, by G. Waller. Other works are enumerated on p. 69 of this treatise.

hoses, 3818, or 9.9 for every 1000 imperial acres as against a general average for Scotland of 2, cattle, 8206, or 7.1 as against 23.0, sheep, 108,672, or 94.2 as against 146.1, pigs, 2456, or 2.2 as against 2.7. These comparatively small averages are of course explained by the fact that the country is not a pastoral one. It deserves to be noted, however, that its flock of Leicester sheep have for years been justly celebrated, and shorthorns of a very high class have been successfully bred.

Grazing is no great landholder in Haddington. A source of grazing is no more, in the immense number of wood pigeons which, in defiance of all efforts to hold them in check, commit great havoc yearly.

The wages of farm servants average about 18s weekly, the "glens" or farm outcrops a little more, but of hardly one £20 to £25 per annum is given in money. The rest is paid in kind, and consists of milk, potatoes, a cow's keep, a cottage, and piece of ground. These outcrops have been greatly improved of late years, and are now very fine alluvial meadows. The "horthy system" is purely a thing of the past. Extra food labour is supplied by gangs of Irish or Highland workers, who dwell in the towns, but go out during the day to work in the country. The regular employes, as usual for the most part of "farming" districts, though not so numerous and paid to management are also often employed.

According to the return for 1872-74, there were 1609 proprietors in the county owning 50,000, 171,709 acres of the unimproved value of £319,300. The value until was £2, 0s 8d per acre—that of all Scotland being £1. These were 1101 proprietors (79 per cent of the whole) who owned less than 1 acre, from 2 to 189 owned 10 acres, and 47 from 10 to 100, and 9 owned between 5000 and 25,000, the largest proprietors being—Marquis of Tweeddale, Yester House, 20,186 acres, Lady Mary Hamilton, Balm, 14,345, Balfour of Whitehall, 10,564, Earl of Wemyss, Gosford, 10,136, Sir G. M. Smith, Balm, 9000, Earl of Haddington, Tynningham, 8302, Earl of Hopetoun, 7967, Marquis of Thunison, 6102, and Houston of Clonkington, 5118.

**Communications.** The county is well supplied with roads. The chief line of railway, however, runs along the coast, and thus, notwithstanding the aid of branch lines, places a considerable district at a serious disadvantage.

**Population.** The population of the county, which is divided into 27 parishes, was 87,670 in 1871, showing an increase of 78 over the number for 1861. It thus appears that the growth of the county town, of North Havelock, a thriving watering-place, and of the numerous parishes does little more than counterbalance the decrease in purely agricultural parishes, which in some cases amount to as much as from 7 to 18 per cent. The chief towns and villages are—Haddington, the county town, 4004, Dunbar, 3422, North Havelock, 1115, Tynningham, 2008, East Linton, Prestonpans, Aberlady, Gullane, and Dalrymple. The county returns one member to parliament, and the burghs of Haddington, Dunbar, and North Havelock unite with Leith (Berwickshire) and Jedburgh (Berwickshire) in returning another.

**Educational Endowments.**—The provision for education outside of the public school system is inconsiderable. Schew's and St. Paul's Hospitals in the parishes of Prestonpans and Tynningham are charitable educational institutions. In Yester parish there is a fund for educational purposes, left by Gilbert Burnett, bishop of Salisbury. According to the Endowed Schools' Report of 1875, the annual income of these was £266, £122, and £267 respectively. School and college bursaries are given mainly by the Balm-Leith Association.

**History and Antiquities.**—The early Celtic inhabitants of the district have left as memorials of their possession a few local names, and some traces of their camps (Gullane and Whittingham parishes). The Romans built here fortifications and hill forts (Bollon parishes). The Romans built here no enduring edifices, and there are no certain remains of their camps, but they brought the ground to a high degree of cultivation. The county has within its limits the ruins of the great Roman fort of Balm, but it was not joined to Scotland by Malcolm II in 1020. It was fully incorporated till the wars of Bruce and Balliol, but from that time to the time till the union of the kingdoms it suffered from its proximity to the English border. It was the scene of many wars in its modern times: it was the scene of two great battles—those of Dunbar (1293) gained by Cromwell over Leslie and the Covenanters, and that of Prestonpans (1745) in which Prince Charles defeated Sir John Cope. The place was the scene of the death of many other parts of Scotland, in the growth of the present century.

The chief ruins are—Kiln Castle, which Queen Mary of Scots resided in a brief period after her abolition by Bothwell, Dunbar Castle, defended in 1652 by Black Agnew against the earl of Salisbury, Dunbar Castle, a venerable ruin of the 12th century,—

<sup>1</sup> The statistics of the five preceding years do not show any very great variation from these figures.

<sup>2</sup> In 1876-79 the lands valuated of the county amounted to £263,178, 10s.

<sup>3</sup> For further particulars as to the agriculture, see Scott Kilmurray's prize essay printed in vol. v (4th series, 1878) of the *Highland and Agricultural Society's Transactions*.

taken in 1508 by Edward I. and again in 1650 by Cromwell's forces, Innerwick Castle, near Dunbar, the collegiate church of St. John in the parish of Tynningham, built before 1300, North Havelock Abbey, founded about the middle of the 13th century, and Tynningham Castle, opposite the Buss Burn, founded by the chief in the east of the Douglas family. The genus of Scott has given to Tantloan a name in English literature greater even than its name in Scottish history, and readers of *Macmillan's* will be reminded of the name of Haddington Hill, romantically situated near the village of Gullane (about six miles south of the county town), a place connected by name and legend with all manner of popular superstitions. Of modern mansions the chief are Broomfield Park (Duke of Roxburgh), Yester House (Marquis of Tweeddale), Tynningham House (Earl of Haddington), Gosford and Aberlady House (Earl of Wemyss)—Gosford containing a fine collection of pictures, Tynningham House (Lord Blyth), Dalrymple and Aberlady (Lady M. Hamilton), Winton House (Lady Ruthven), and Salton Mill (Fletcher). A lofty column on one of the Gullane hills, erected to the memory of the fourth earl of Hopetoun, is seen from nearly every part of the county.

Of the eminent men born in or connected with the county the following may be mentioned.—Sir David Lindsay of the Mount was born in 1480 at Gullane (Gullane in old days was entirely unknown, and was called Gullane), and died in 1542 at Dalrymple, author of the *Grace*, and *Home*, author of *Douglas*, was successively minister of Athol, Gullane, David Cullenwood, the historian of the Duke of Argyll, was minister at Prestonpans, and Principal William Robertson at Glasgow. George Heriot, the famous goldsmith of James VI, is said to have been born in Gladsmuir. The historian James of Fletcher of Salton, Dismal of Hume, and Malcolm of Lathcote, and Hamilton of Preston belong to the county.

**HADDINGTON**, a royal and parliamentary burgh, and the chief town of the county, is situated on the banks of the Tyne, about 17 miles east of Edinburgh. It occupies almost the centre of the shire to which it has given the name. It consists of two main streets, which are wide and well built,—High Street to the south and Market Street to the north, both run towards the Tyne, have crossed by three bridges, two of which connect the town with its suburb of Nungate. This suburb consists of old and numerous houses, and is inhabited for the most part by Irish agricultural labourers. The systems of drainage and water supply are excellent, but the want of manufactures and the inconvenience of its railway branch line have prevented the growth of the burgh.

The chief edifices of the county buildings, the town exchange, which now stands at the site of Edinburgh, is the largest in Scotland, the town-house adorned with a very elegant spire 150 feet high, and the district asylum for the insane. There is a monument of some pretensions to Robert Ferguson of Raith, and a somewhat trifling one to the memory of Home the author of *Douglas*. The chief structure, however, is the church, an edifice probably dating from the 13th century. It is 210 feet long, and is surmounted by a square tower 90 feet high. One part is used as the parish church, the remainder, though ruinous, is now preserved with a care that makes some amends for centuries of neglect. To this church the name of *Luceana Laviniana* has long been applied, but it seems probable that the edifice to which the name of *Luceana* was given was the church of Fordun and Market applied that name was the church of the Franciscan Friars close to the Tyne, of which not a fragment now remains. The Nungate possesses the ruins of an old chapel of St. Martin. The grammar school of Haddington was established at a very early period, and carefully fostered by the burghal authorities. At one time it attained considerable eminence, but latterly fell into complete disuse. Under the name of the Knox Memorial Institute, a very handsome school building has been erected (1879), and with this the ancient burgh school is incorporated. The population of the burgh in 1861 was 3871 and in 1871 4004.

Haddington is said to have been enclosed to a burgh by David I. It must have been a place of considerable importance, for when the "Quia Quarta Regum" was issued, the names of the burghs from the sentences of burgh charters to that of the chamberlain at Haddington. There are also extant charters in its favour from Robert the First and Robert II. Exposed as it was to the English attack it was frequently ravaged and burned. In 1548 it was fort-

sied by Lord Grey of Wilton, the English commander, but was besieged in the following year by the Scotch and then French auxiliaries, who forced the garrison to abandon the town. As one result of all this struggle and suffering, it is impossible to say in any direction without coming on human misery. Huddington has also suffered frequently from floods. An inscription in the centre of the town commemorates one of the most notable of these (October 1, 1775), remarking the point to which the water rose. John Knox was born (1595) at the Gallowgate in the Nymgate, John Brown, a celebrated dissenting divine, several of whose descendants have been eminent in science and literature, had a house in Huddington for many years, and Edward Irving was for some years in rhetorical service in the town school.

In the general history of the county see *Chilmark's Catalogue*, vol. ii. also Dr. Busby's paper on Huddington, in the 1st vol. of the *Transactions of the Society of Antiquaries of Scotland*, vol. i. (1792). *Hudson's View of the City of York*, or *Land to House* (1791), *Donner's Survey of East Lothian* (1840). See *Metrical Account of Scotland*, ed. by J. G. Millar (1845). *History of Huddington*, by J. M. M. (1845). The name of the town is fully attested in *Historia de la Galla de la Galla*, by J. M. de B. (1845). In an account of the high tides, see *Thomas's History of the County of York*, vol. i. (1845). *History of the County of York*, vol. i. (1845). The question as to the birthplace of Knox, J. M. de B., and Hudson is fully discussed in *David Laing's* edition of these works (C. W.).

**HAADDOCK** (*Gadus aeglefinus*, the *Schell-fisch* of the Germans, *liuot* of the French), a kind of cod fish, distinguished by a black lateral line and a blackish spot above the pectoral fin. It is common round the British and Irish coasts, and generally distributed along the shores of the North Sea, extending across the Atlantic to the coast of North America. The haddock is pike, however, to abandon for a longer or shorter period a locality frequented by it. It attains to a weight of 15 lb., and is one of the most valuable food fishes of Europe.

**HADERSLEBEN** (Danish, *Haderslev*), a town of Prussia, capital of a circle in the province of Schleswig-Holstein, is situated 48 miles north of the town of that name, in a fertile valley on the Hadersleben fiord, which is about 9 miles in length and communicates with the Little Belt. The principal buildings are the beautiful church of St. Mary dating from the 13th century, the theological seminary established in 1870, the gymnasium, and the hospital. The industries include iron-founding, tanning, and the manufacture of machines, tobacco, and gloves. The harbour, owing to the accumulation of mud, is only accessible to small vessels. The population in 1875, including the garrison, was 8356.

Hadersleben is first mentioned in 1228, and received its rights from Duke Waldemar II. in 1292. It suffered considerably during the wars between Schleswig and Holstein in the 16th century. In November 1864 it was ceded along with Schleswig to Prussia. Two Danish kings, Frederick II. and Frederick III., were born at Hadersleben.

**HADES** See **PLUTO** and **ESCHATOLOGY**.

**HADJI KHALFA** See **HADJI KHALFA**.

**HADRAMAUT** See **ARABIA**.

**HADRAN**, Roman emperor (117–138 A.D.), distinguished for the peace and beneficent energy of his government, was born at Rome 76 A.D. His full name was Publius Ælius Hadrianus, his ancestors, originally from Pannonia, had been settled at Italica in Spain since the time of the Scipios. He lost his father at the age of ten, and was placed under the guardianship of Trajan, a cousin of his father and also a native of Italica, who was already a conspicuous man in the Roman army. We know little of Hadrian's youth, but he gave early promise of the readiness and versatility which distinguished him in later life, for he was so adroit a student of Greek that men nicknamed him *Græculus*. At fifteen he entered on the practical career of war and government which befitted a Roman, and grew fond of the chase even to excess. Patronized by Trajan and assisted by powerful friends he rose rapidly, filling successively all the civil and military offices, which, now as under the republic, were open to young men of good birth. On Trajan's elevation to the empire Hadrian was the first to congratulate him. He served with distinction in both the Dacian campaigns, in the latter Trajan presented him with the ring he had received from Neva, a proof of his

regard which justified him in aspiring to be his successor. If Trajan was not always favourably disposed towards Hadrian, the good will of the empress Plotina never failed him, and was particularly helpful in some of the most critical turning points of his career. She it was who secured his alliance with Sabina, granddaughter of the emperor's sister, a marriage, however, which proved anything but happy. She, it was thought, did him still more effectual service at Trajan's death, even determining the question of the succession in his favour. When that emperor retired from his victorious war in Parthia, the succession was still undecided, and we are assured on the express testimony of Dion Cassius that Plotina and her friends concealed his death for several days in order to facilitate the elevation of Hadrian. Whatever may have been the truth of such stories, if Hadrian's claim to the empire rested on the unquestionable fact that he was the fittest man. His position as prefect of Syria, and commander of the legions with which Trajan had prosecuted the Parthian empire, made him supreme in the army, while his peaceful disposition and civil demeanour must have made him acceptable to the senate. Yet he was not unconscious of the insecurity of his position, for he hastened to propitiate the army by a donation of twice the usual amount, and to excuse his abrupt elevation to the senate by alleging the impatient zeal of the soldiers and the state of the empire, which could not stand without an "imperator." The first important act of Hadrian was to abandon the late conquests of Trajan, and again to make the Euphrates the eastern boundary of the empire. At his elevation the provinces were unsettled, and the barbarians on the frontier restless and menacing. He was convinced that the old limits of Augustus offered the most defensible frontier, and that the energy of the emperor was sufficiently occupied in governing the provinces already won. This policy of renunciation was ascribed to jealousy of Trajan, but history has recognized its wisdom. While arranging the affairs of the East, Hadrian had an opportunity of pardoning some eminent citizens who were accused of hostility to him, and after his return to Rome he confirmed his popularity by many generous acts. Modestly declining the honours heaped upon himself, he carefully renounced the last offices to the deceased emperor, and considerably lightened the burdens of the citizens. During an absence in Mesia, where he had gone to compose some troubles with the Sarmatæ and Roxolani, a formidable conspiracy was formed against him. The details are obscure, but four consular men, among the most eminent of Rome, were accused of being concerned in it, and were put to death. Some, however, went so far as to say that the conspiracy was a scheme devised by Hadrian for getting rid of divided rivals. It was a dark transaction which threw a suspicion on his character. On his return to Rome he exerted himself to undo the evil effects of it by a generous and popular policy. Towards the senate he expressed the utmost deference and consideration, he admitted the most eminent of its members to familiar intercourse, raised them to the highest honours, and supplied the indigent with means to maintain their position. He was equally liberal to the body of the people, granting them a large donation of money, remitting the arrears of taxes for the last fifteen years, and increasing the funds which Trajan had devoted to the alimention of poor children. These measures of Hadrian might be criticized as the calculating policy of one who felt his position to be insecure, and who could afford to be generous to the very out of the revenues of the empire. But such a theory could not apply to what is most characteristic in his rule,—his unwearied care for the provinces and for the empire as a whole. He understood the true task of a Roman emperor better perhaps than any of his predecessors. More clearly than any of

them he saw that the period of conquest was past, that an extension of the frontiers would only weaken the defensive power of the empire, that the time for consolidation and for softening the distinction between Rome and the provinces was come. While Trajan had been guilty of the anachronism of rivalling Alexander the Great, Hadrian made it the work of his life to become acquainted with the provinces, to learn their needs and resources, to improve and benefit them, he sought to be the effective ruler of the empire as a whole, and so was the first to realize the cosmopolitan task which his position imposed. For this end he sought to obtain a personal knowledge of the people he had undertaken to govern. Leaving Rome in 118, he visited probably every province of the empire. After traversing Gaul he inspected the legions on the Rhine, and then crossed to Britain, where he built (121) the great rampart from the Tyne to the Solway which bears his name. He returned through Gaul into Spain, and then proceeded to Mauritania, where he suppressed an insurrection. We next find him in the East averting a war with Parthia by a timely interview with the king. From the Parthian frontier he travelled through Asia Minor and the islands to Athens, where he sojourned a considerable time, and so returned by Sicily to Rome, having made the circuit of the empire. After some stay at Rome he resumed his travels. It is impossible to fix the details of this second progress with any exactness. It was chiefly in the East, and he did not finally return to Rome till 131. Everywhere he left lasting traces of his restless and beneficent energy, he built aqueducts and temples, and raised fortifications in suitable places, he inspected the details of the administration, learned to know the officials, and made himself at home in the military encampments. He was accompanied by a body of architects and citizens organized like a legion, whom he employed to gratify his passion for building in a truly imperial manner. Athens was the favoured scene of his architectural labours, he added a new quarter to the city, and finished the temple of the Olympian Zeus. While Hadrian spent his life in inspecting the provinces, and was not disinclined to purchase peace by a subsidy to the restless tribes on the frontiers, he did not neglect the army. All along the frontier his legions stood in constant preparation for battle. He maintained a rigorous discipline, the rules he drew up for the army long served as a kind of military code. He trained them to the severest exercises, and anticipated all complaint by sharing in their fatigues, walking bare-headed on a march of 20 miles a day, and partaking of their coarse fare of cheese, lard, and sour wine. The only important war in which his army was tested was the great rebellion of the Jews, which broke out in 131, and lasted for several years. The founding of a Roman colony on the site of Jerusalem, and an order of Hadrian forbidding the rite of circumcision, were the causes of the war. The Jews fought with the most resolute despair, and they were crushed only by a powerful army commanded by the best general of the empire. According to Dion, 680,000 Jews fell in battle. The whole country was reduced to a wilderness. But the loss of the Roman legions was so severe that in writing to the senate Hadrian omitted the customary formula—"If you and your children are well, it is well, I and the army are well." In the later years of his life Hadrian discerned his end, and lived at Rome or near it. His health, which had been impaired by long exposure to the extremes of heat and cold, began to fail, and what was worse, the dark and suspicious moods which had broken out occasionally in his earlier years became more frequent and fatal. His aged brother-in-law Servianus fell a victim to his jealousy, his wife Sabina died, not without a rumour of poisoning. Most of those who had been his familiar

friends, and had been raised by him to the highest offices, were superseded, or banished, or put to death. But his passion for architecture did not abate. He built for his residence the great villa of Tibur, which was eight miles in circuit, and was a kind of epitome of the world, with miniatures of the most celebrated places in the provinces, and even of Hades. He built a splendid mausoleum, which has been the nucleus of the castle of St Angelo, and rebuilt several edifices at Rome. In these years he had to choose a successor. His first choice was Ælius Verus, who did nothing to justify such a distinction. The next was Antoninus Pius, so called from the filial assiduity with which he cherished the last days and the memory of his adopted father. Antoninus saved him from suicide, to which his physical sufferings impelled him, and from imbruing his hands in the blood of many noble Romans, who had provoked his moody and fickle temper. Hadrian died at Baie, 138 A.D. The civility of his latter life had so eclipsed the lustre of his early rule that the senate at first refused him divine honours, and were prevailed upon to grant them only at the urgent solicitation of Antoninus. In the travels and administrative energy of Hadrian we see only one side of his character. He had a versatile and many-sided mind, in which the faculty for command, speculative curiosity, and literary ambition were strangely blended. Not satisfied with the role imposed on him by the laborious autocrat of the world, he sought to excel the Greek professors and artists each in his own special walk. In painting, sculpture, and music, in rhetoric and philosophy, he considered himself the competent rival and critic of men who had made these pursuits the work of a lifetime. The architect Apollodorus atoned for his frankness with his life. The more politic Favorinus, when reproached for yielding too readily to the emperor in some grammatical discussion, replied that it was unwise to dispute with the master of thirty legions. The product of Hadrian's pen which has been most celebrated is the dying address to his soul—

"Anima virgine, libenter,  
Hocque comensque corpus,  
Que nunc alius in loca  
Tulidit, rigida nudula,  
Nec, ut solus, dabis precor!"

Under Hadrian Salvius Julianus composed a "perpetual edict," which is supposed to have been a fixed code of some kind, but the exact significance of the edict is disputed. Still there can be no doubt that Roman law owes much to Hadrian.

The sources for Hadrian's life are unsatisfactory, the chief are Spartianus in the *Seviriæ Illustris Augustæ*, and Dion Cassius as abridged by Xiphilinus, lib. lxx, see also Ammianus Marcellinus, *De Caesaribus*, and Eusebius, for modern works consult Allen's *History of the Romans under the Emperors*, Gregoire's, *Œuvres d'Hadrien*, and W. W. Capes's "Age of the Antonines" in the series *Epochs of Ancient History*.

HADRIAN, WALL, or It is under this heading that it seems most convenient to give a short account of the stone wall and other works erected by the Romans in the north of England between the Solway and the Tyne, and commonly known as the Roman Wall. As will be afterwards seen, those who have written on the subject are by no means agreed that the name of Hadrian ought to be exclusively associated with this great fortification. But before touching on the question, it is necessary to describe the walls themselves.

Viewed as a whole the Roman Wall, when entire, consisted of three parts—(1) a stone wall, strengthened by a ditch or fosse, at a short distance from its northern base, (2) three parallel earthen walls, with a ditch sloping down from the northern side of the second of these lines, (3) stations, castles, and turrets, placed at various intervals for the accommodation of troops, and communicating with one another by a military way.

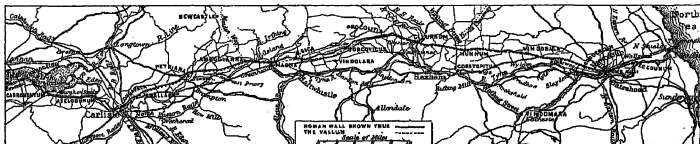
The Murus or stone wall extended from Wallsend on the Tyne to Bowness on the Solway Firth, a distance of fully 73 English miles. No portion of it now remains as when finished, so that its original height cannot be accurately determined. Bede gives 12 feet, an estimate that our chief modern authority on the Wall, Dr J. Collingwood Bruce, deems too low, for some parts of its course at least. Its thickness varies, being 6 feet in some places and  $9\frac{1}{2}$  in others.

The northern face of the Wall was continuous, but the southern had numerous outsets and insets, as if portions of the work had been carried on at the same time but without definite instructions as to a uniform breadth. In this way when sections met differences in width often showed themselves, though the junction was so managed that the irregularity was confined to one face. It is not improbable that a similar discretion was allowed as regards height. Both sides consisted of blocks of freestone 8 or 9 inches thick, 10 or 11 broad, and from 15 to 20 long. These had been sometimes quarried near the spot, sometimes brought from considerable distances. The interior was filled with rubble firmly cemented with mortar of a peculiar tenacity. In pursuing its course from sea to sea, the Wall seldom deviated from the shortest and straightest course it could follow, and then only with the evident design of joining neighbouring elevations that would otherwise have commanded its position. Along the whole length of its northern base, and adding greatly to its strength as a defensive work, was drawn a ditch or fosse of varying breadth and depth,

36 and 15 feet respectively being probably its average dimensions. In some places the difficulties to be overcome by its excavators, owing to the rocky nature of the soil, must have been enormous in an age when blasting with gunpowder was unknown. But none of them have been shunned.

South of the Murus ran the earth wall or Vallum, consisting, as has been already stated, of three ramparts and a ditch. Of these mounds the most northerly was raised at a distance from the base of the stone wall varying, according to the nature of the country, from 30 yards to half a mile. Time and the spoiler have dealt so hardly with it that its original dimensions cannot now be accurately stated. It seems, however, to have been about 20 feet broad at the base and at least 10 feet high. The materials of which it was made up consisted of earth largely intermixed with fragments of stone of all sizes and shapes. 24 feet or so further south was a ditch apparently somewhat inferior in breadth and depth to the ditch of the Murus, though otherwise of the same character. On its southern edge was a rampart much smaller in size than the one just noticed, while the series was completed by a third mound, approaching in its dimensions the larger of the other two, and raised at nearly the same distances as it from the centre of the included ditch.

Along the wall, at intervals averaging 4 miles, were stationary camps strongly fortified. According to the *Notitia Ulpianae Imperii*, which contains a brief record of the civil and military arrangement of the empires of the



Plan of Hadrian's Wall.

East and West, and is supposed to have been compiled in the beginning of the 5th century of our era, there were 23 such stations. The names given are as follows:—Segedunum (Wallsend), Pons Aelii (Newcastle), Condercum (Benwell Hill), Vindolana (Rutchester), Hunnum (Halton Chesters), Cilurnum (Chesters), Freconia (Carrowburgh), Eborac (Housessteads), Vindolana (Chesterholm), Eborac (Great Chesters), Magna (Corvran), Amboglanna (Birdoswald), Petriana, Aballaba, Congavata, Axeldunum, Gabrosentum, Tuncocum, Glannibanta, Alonius, Bremetennacum, Olenacum, and Virodunum. It is somewhat strange that not a trace of one of these names survives in the local vocabulary of the present day, though the exact positions of a number of the stations have been identified beyond all doubt by other means. The sites had been chosen with great care, and much labour must have been expended in their construction. They were in fact military cities, "suited," to use the words of Dr Bruce, "to be the residence of the chief who commanded the district, and providing secure lodgment for the powerful body of soldiery he had under him." It is not clear, however, that more than 18 of the 23 were situated *per lineam vallis*, the others being probably supporting stations. The Wall was further strengthened by quadrangular buildings called mile-castles as well as by smaller watch-towers or sentry-boxes of stone; while connecting the whole was a military way made in Roman fashion and protected by the other parts of the fortification. By means of this road the garrisons of the different stations

could be quickly and safely concentrated on any point along the line that was threatened by an enemy. "It is sometimes asked," remarks the authority just quoted, "How long would the Wall be in building? From calculations that have been made, founded upon the experience gained by the construction of the vast works connected with modern railways, it is considered that, in the existing circumstances of the country at the time, the Vallum and the Murus could not be reared in a shorter period than 10 years. The cost of it in our present currency would be about £1,000,000. Above 10,000 men would be required to garrison its stations" (*Waller Book of the Roman Wall*, p. 37).

Several of the ancient writers allude to ramparts and lines of forts raised by the Romans across the island during the time they had a footing in it. Of these notices some refer to the barrier on the isthmus of the Forth and Clyde (see ANTONINUS, WALL or, vol. II. p. 136); the others probably apply to the more important works now described. In his *Agriкола* Tacitus states that the Roman general during his operations in the north of England (79 A.D.) compelled many states hitherto hostile to lay down their arms and surrounded them with garrisons and castles. A hundred years later two contemporary historians, Dion Cassius (as abridged by Xiphilines) and Herodian, writing of events in Britain that occurred in their own day, both notice—the former in two places—the existence of a wall in Britain, separating the Roman territory from the uncon-

quered tribes that dwelt beyond, but neither of them mentions when or by whom it was built. Another century onwards and Spartan, one of the *Scyptores Historie Auguste*, states that the emperor Hadrian was the first to rear a wall across Britain (c. 120 A.D.) as a defence against the northern barbarians. It was, he adds, 80 miles in length. The same author in his life of Severus tells us that emperor also issued a wall from sea to sea (c. 208 A.D.). Aelius Victor, who flourished about the year 360 A.D., ascribes to Severus the building of a wall in Britain, employing almost the words of Spartan, while his contemporary, Eutropius, makes a similar statement, adding, however, that this rampart was 92 (according to another reading, 132) miles long, and erected for the defence of certain portions of the country, which Severus had reconquered for Rome. Another possible wall builder is introduced to us in the early years of the 5th century by the poet Claudian, who represents Britain as indebted to Stilicho, the successful general of the emperor Theodosius I and Honorius, for some protection of this nation against the attacks of the Scots, Picts, and Saxons. Lastly, Gildas, our earliest native historian, asserts that the Britons themselves built a wall to aid them in warding off the assaults of the Picts and Scots, and that another was constructed by the Romans with native assistance, just before their final abandonment of the island. Both statements are supported by Bede, who identifies the former of these structures with Antonine's wall and the latter with the more famous fortification near his own monastery of Jarrow.

Founding on such unsatisfactory if not conflicting data, modern writers have been led to give various answers to the questions—When and by whom was the Roman Wall built? The limits of the present article do not admit of any discussion of the subject, and those who wish to see these questions fully examined, as well as to read an account of the inscriptions and other antiquities discovered from time to time along the line of the Wall, are referred to the list of works given below, more especially to Dr J. C. Bruce's exhaustive treatise. For others the following summary may be sufficient.

Gordon, to whom we owe one of the earliest surveys of the Wall, is of opinion that the Vallum was the work of Hadrian, and the Murus of Severus. Hosley believed that the stations and the northern rampart of the Vallum were raised by Agricola, the ditch of the Vallum and its remaining mounds by Hadrian, and the stone wall with its castles, towers, and its great military way by Severus. Dean Mervale, while admitting that camps and mounds may have been erected on the scheme of Hadrian and Severus, supposes that the stations were faced with masonry and the work planned as well as partly executed by Theodosius, his designs being afterwards fully carried out about 400 A.D. by Stilicho, in orders issued from Gaul. But others, and foremost among them Dr Bruce, see in the fortification a unity of design that points it out as the work of one period and one mind, and have come to the conclusion that Hadrian was the builder of the whole. This view, as it does not exclude the probability that his engineers worked to some extent on lines already laid down by Agricola, and that Severus, before entering on his unfortunate campaign against the Caledonians, or after its close, repaired and strengthened the works of his predecessor, seems most consistent with the statements of ancient writers, with the testimony of inscriptions, and with the appearances presented by the relative position of the component parts of the fortification itself.

See Gordon's *Theses de viis Septentrionalibus*, London, 1797; Hosley's *De Muris Romanis*, London, 1782; Hutton's *History of the Roman Wall*, London, 1848; Hodgkin's *Roman Wall*, &c., Newcastle, 1841; McDaniel's *Survey of the Roman Wall*, made in the years 1852-54; Bruce's *Roman Wall*, 3d ed., London, 1868. (J. M'D.)

HADRUMÆTUM, or ADRUMÆTUM (the name appears in the Greek writers in a great variety of forms—*Ἀδρῆμας*, *Ἀδρῆμας*, *Ἀδρῆμας*, *Ἀδρῆμας*, *Ἀδρῆμας*), a city on the African coast of the Mediterranean near the Sinus Neapolitanus or Gulf of Hamamet. A Phœnician colony of earlier date than Carthage, in course of time it became subject to the imperial city, and fell along with it under the power of the Romans. On the subdivision of the Roman province of Africa Propraia, it became the capital of Byzacium. By Trajan it was made a colony, as is evidenced by the grandiose inscriptions preserved by Gruter—*Col. Concordia Ulpia Trajana Augusta. P. Vespas. A. Hadrianus*. From the devastation inflicted by the Vandals it was restored by Justinian, and in consequence it bore for some time the name of Justinianopolis.

The identification of Hadrumætum is a matter of some difficulty. Most modern authorities agree in fixing it at Susa, but others contend that Hammet is the true site. Hitherto no inscription has been discovered, which positively settles this point in favour of either, for the fragments that are supposed to fix the identification of Hammet with Susa may possibly have been brought to the place of their discovery. The arguments in favour of each may be thus summarized. Susa agrees satisfactorily well, as Mervale is rightly maintained, with the position assigned to Hadrumætum by the *Notitia* and other ancient works in which the distances from place to place are given. The remains of ancient buildings, though few, prove undeniably that Susa is the true site, the similarity of construction, the importance, the ruins now known as *Adikula* of the *Ellen* may be those of a great temple. We know that in the time of El Bekri Susa still possessed a cotton or linen hubbon (one of the chief features of Hadrumætum as described by the author of the *Africana* [Pto.]), which may be recognized in the existing sandy plain 1500 feet wide between the two ancient moles, now distinguished as the Quarantine Mole and Pointe du Mole. The figures found in *Al Jour* (June 1st, 1868) would of themselves have shown that Susa was a Phœnician colony. Bouché suggests that the name *Susa* is probably a corruption of *Σόφωσσα*. In favour of Hammet M. J. B. Davis argues that the century near Susa agrees with that of Europe destroyed by the author of the *Africana*, that the ruins of ruins at Hammet is accounted for by the clouds of sand swept down upon the site, that there are clear traces of a cotton at Hammet, and that the modern name *Hammet* or *Hamet* is identical with the hypothetical Hammet in the *Notitia* or *Notitia* of the Phœnicians. On the whole the argument upon us to be on the side of Susa.

For further details see Bouché, *Wandlungen durch die Karthago des Mittelalters*, 1810; Guzman, *Pygme et chalybeus dans la Ruine de Tunis*, 1862; Nathan Davis, *Ruins of Africa*, 1862; Mervale, *Notes on the Ruins of the Roman Wall and Tripoli*, 1870.

HAEMORRHOIDS (from *haima*, blood, and *rhoia*, to flow), commonly called piles, a frequent and distressing malady. Two varieties are described. They are named from their situation external and internal, as they are without or within the opening of the anus. The external pile is an overgrowth of the thin dark-colored skin round the opening, there is most frequently more than one present, the skin lax and redundant, hangs in folds. The internal pile lies altogether within the opening, although it may externally protruding through the anus when any pressure from above is applied, as when the patient strains at stool. It is covered by, and composed of an overgrowth of, the mucous membrane lining the bowel. There may be several internal piles. The internal pile is sessile or pedunculated. The external pile is of a pale colour. The internal pile is moist, vascular, and of a cherry-red colour, it is apt to inflame, and the inflammation is associated with heat, pain, and general uneasiness. Ulceration and bleeding are common symptoms of the internal pile, hence the term "bleeding" or "bloody piles." Both varieties are probably due to the same primary cause—an enlargement of the veins in this region. Any cause which, by pressing on the large abdominal veins, retards the upward flow of blood to the heart will give rise to piles, such as constipation, disease of the liver, pregnancy. General weakness involving a want of tone in the blood vessels may act as a predisposing cause. The exciting cause is frequently exposure to damp,

as from sitting on the wet ground. Piles are only a symptom, and in their treatment this should be kept in view, to remove the cause and the piles will disappear. The local treatment is palliative or radical. The palliative treatment consists in attention to the state of bowels, cold bathing, astringent injections, lotions, and ointments. The radical treatment consists in their removal, the external pile is cut off, the internal pile is tied or clamped and cauterized. Both methods have their advocates, the radical treatment should not be undertaken until palliative treatment has failed. When in a state of inflammation the treatment consists in hip baths, hot fomentations, and poultices. The introduction of a morphia suppository often relieves the uneasiness. Both varieties are often met with in the same individual, when this is the case both should be removed by operation at one time. The internal piles are apt to return if the predisposing cause is still in existence. Piles are apt to be confounded with other surgical diseases in this region, as fissure or ulcer, prolapse, polypus, or cancer. This is not the place to point out the distinguishing features of these different maladies, the patient should consult a surgeon. There is a form of pile attended just at the verge of the anus, where the skin joins the mucous membrane, its onset is sudden, and due to the rupture of a blood-vessel, the blood is extravasated and clots, a small, tense, painful swelling of a bluish colour is seen at the edge of the anus. This may be relieved by hot fomentations, or the pile may be laid open and the clot turned out by gentle pressure.

HAFIZ Muhammad Shamsuddin, better known by his *takhtul* or "nom de plume" of Hafiz, was one of the most celebrated writers of Persian lyrical poetry. He was born at Shiraz, the capital of Fars, in the early part of the 8th century of the Mahometan era, that is to say, in the 14th of our own. The exact date of his birth is uncertain, but he is known to have attained a ripe old age and to have died in 791 A.H. (1388 A.D.). This is the date given in the chronogram which is engraved on his tomb, although several Persian biographies give a different year. Very little is actually known about his life, which appears to have been passed in quiet retirement and literary ease in his native city of Shiraz, of which he always speaks in terms of affectionate admiration. He was a subject of the Muzaffari princes, who ruled in Shiraz, Yazd, Kirman, and Isfahan, until the dynasty was overthrown by Timur lang (Tamerlane). Of these princes his especial patrons were Shah Shuja' and Shah Mansur. He early devoted himself to the study of poetry and theology, and also became learned in mystic philosophy, which he studied under Shaikh Mahmud Akbari, chief of an order of dervishes. Hafiz afterwards enrolled himself in the same order and became a professor of Koranic exegesis in a college which his friend and patron Hafiz Kiwam uddin, the *waiz*, specially founded for him. This was probably the reason of his adopting the sobriquet of Hafiz, which means "one who remembers," and is technically applied to any person who has learned the Koran by heart. The restraints of an ascetic life seem to have been very little to Hafiz's taste, and his loose conduct and wine bibbing propensities drew upon him the severe censure of his monastic colleagues. In revenge he satirizes them unmercifully in his verses, and seldom loses an opportunity of alluding to their hypocrisy and religious pretensions. Hafiz's fame as a poet was soon rapidly spread throughout the Mahometan world, and several powerful monarchs sent him presents and pressing invitations to visit them. Amongst others he was invited by Mahmud Shah Bahmani, who reigned in the south of India, and set off with the intention of acquitting at the court of that sovereign. After crossing the Indus and passing through Lahore he reached Hurmuz, and embarked on board a

vessel sent for him by the Indian prince. He seems, however, to have been a bad sailor, and, having invented an excuse for being put ashore, made the best of his way back to Shiraz. Some biographies narrate a story of an interview between Hafiz and the invader Timur. The latter sent for him and asked angrily, "Art thou he who was so bold as to offer my two great cities Samarcand and Bokhara for the black mole on thy mistress's cheek," alluding to a well known verse in one of his odes. "Yes, sire," replied Hafiz, "and it is by such acts of generosity that I have brought myself to such a state of destitution that I have now to solicit your bounty." Timur was so pleased at the ready wit displayed in this answer that he dismissed the poet with a handsome present. Unfortunately for the truth of this story Timur did not capture Shiraz till 1393 A.D., while the latest date that can be assigned to Hafiz's death is 1391. Of his private life little or nothing is known. One of his poems is said to record the death of his wife, another that of a favourite unmarried son, and several others speak of his love for a girl called *Shadik* or *Nabat*, "Sugar-cane blanch," and this is almost all of his personal history that can be gathered from his writings. He was, like most Persian, a Shi'ah by religion, believing in the transmission of the office of Imam, or head of the Muslim Church in the family of Ali, cousin of the prophet, and rejecting the *Zaidi*, or traditional sayings of Mahomet, which form the Sunnitha supplementary code of Mahometan ceremonial law. One of his odes which contains a verse in praise of Ali is engraved on the poet's tomb, but is omitted by Sadi, the Turkish editor and commentator, who was himself a rigid Sunni. The same sectarian bigotry has influenced many other editors, and it is an unusual thing to find an Indian edition of the *Diwan* emancipated by the omission of all the passages which can be construed as having the slightest allusion to the objects of Shi'ah veneration. That his tendencies were towards a rather extravagant and heretical form of theosophy may be deduced from his writings, and in one verse he even goes so far as to speak in terms of admiration of one Mansur of Hadda who was hanged, after being put to the most horrible tortures, on a charge of blasphemy, 809 A.H. This person professed a creed nearly approaching pure pantheism, and went about asserting that he was himself an incarnation of the omnipresent divinity, saying, *Ana 'l 'Ilah*, "I am the Truth!" Hafiz in allusion to this says that his only fault was that he revealed the mystery. These heretical opinions and the dissipated life of the poet caused difficulties to be raised by the ecclesiastical authorities on his death as to his interment in consecrated ground. The question was at length settled by Hafiz's own works, which had then already begun to be used as they are now throughout the East for the purposes of divination, in the same manner as Virgil was employed in the Middle Ages for the divination called *Sortes Virgilianae*. Opening the book at random after pronouncing the customary formula asking for inspiration, the objectors lit upon the following verse—"Turn not away thy foot from the Bier of Hafiz, for though immersed in sin, he will be admitted into Paradise." He was accordingly buried in the centre of a small cemetery at Shiraz, now included in an enclosure called the *Hafiziyeh*.

His principal work is the *Diwan*, that is, a collection of short odes or sonnets called *ghazals*, and consisting of from five to sixteen stanzas or couplets each, all the couplets in each ode having the same rhyme in the last hemistich, and the last couplet always introducing the poet's own *nom de plume*. The whole of these are arranged in alphabetical order, an arrangement which certainly facilitates reference but makes it absolutely impossible to ascertain their chronological order, and therefore deteriorates from their value as a means of throwing light upon the growth and develop-



ment of his genius or the incidents of his career. These "outlet pearls at random strung," as a version of a passage from Hafiz in Sir William Jones's grammar calls them, are often held together by a very slender thread of continuous thought, and very few editions agree exactly in the order of the couplets which form the individual ghazals. Still, although they often appear at first sight extremely disconnected, a careful study of them, especially from the point of view indicated by the Sufistic system of philosophy, will always show that a single idea does run through out the whole. The nature of these poems has been the subject of much discussion in the West, some scholars seeing in their anæsthetic utterances nothing but sensuality and materialism, while others, following the Oriental school, maintain that they are wholly and entirely mystic and philosophic. Something between the two would probably be nearer the truth. It must be remembered that Hafiz was a professed dervish and Sâfi, and that his ghazals were in all probability published from a *talis*, and arranged with at least a view to Sufistic interpretation. At the same time it is ridiculous to suppose that the glowing imagery, the gorgeous and often tender descriptions of natural beauties, the fervent love passages, and the rosy-tinted drinking songs were composed in cool blood and with deliberate ascetic purpose. The beauty of Hafiz's poetry is that it is natural. It is the outcome of a fervent soul and a lofty genius delighting in nature and enjoying life, and it is the poet's misfortune that he lived in an age and amongst a people where a rigid conventionality demanded that his free and spontaneous thoughts should be recast into an artificial mould.

The system of philosophy professed by Persian poets and dervishes, and in accordance with which the poems of Hafiz are allegorically interpreted, is called Sufism (*Tasawwuf*). It is derived usually from the word *saf*, which in Arabic means wool, and is supposed to refer to the woollen robes worn by the dervishes, although it is in all probability connected with the Greek *σάφης*. It is the ultimate outcome of the protest of the conquered Aryan nations against the laws, ceremonies, and ideas of their Semitic conquerors, which first found expression in the schism of the Shabts that is, of the Persian party who sided with the family of Ali Ibn Abi Talib, cousin and son-in-law of Mahomet, against the claims of Moawiyeh, who at the head of the Aïab party claimed and held the caliphate. Forced by events to accept of Islam, and compelled to forsake the Magian and Zoroastrian faiths, the Persian Shabts rapidly developed a system which, while touching openly the unity of God according to Moslem doctrine, secretly theorized and refined it away, until Pantheism became the esoteric religion of the sect. It teaches that God is the only real existence and that all other existences are hypothetical, that God existed alone and created the universe merely by His Will and by the utterance of the word "Be." The "Will" or "Order" and the "Be" are closely allied to the "Spirit" and "Word" of Christian theology. Man, the highest purpose of this creation, is therefore part and parcel of the Deity, and when sufficiently purified from the lower and grosser elements returns to his source again. The circle of existence thus imagined is looked upon as a road which all must travel, and this image is kept up throughout the terminology of the sect. Thus the doctrine is *ta'at* (the road), the student or disciple is the *salik* (wayfarer), and the different stages of perfection are *manzilâh* (road side stations or mans). And since all differences in sect and religion are as nothing to the illumined philosopher who is initiated into this mystery, and as the contemplation of the divinity of his own existence and of his ultimate resumption of his place as part and parcel of the Deity produces ecstasy and mental exaltation, and inasmuch as every thing

that is beautiful, lovable, and pure is a puter and clearer manifestation of the Deity that runs through all,—therefore the Sufis speak of their real worship as paganism, their real devotion as love and drunkenness, and see a divine mystery in every phase of beauty in humanity or inanimate nature.

Besides the *Diwan*, Hafiz wrote a number of other poems, the *Leipsie edition* of his works contains 578 *ghazals* (forming the *Diwan*), 42 *Lithes* or fragments, 69 *shabhs* or metaphors, 6 *manzûms*, 1 *ghazal* in Persian, 1 *ghazal* in Turkish, 1 *ghazal* in Persian, and one *makhamma* or poem in the line of a *ghazal*. Other editions contain several *tariq* bands or poems with a refrain. His works have never been completely translated into English, a few rhythmic versions of single poems by Su William Jones, Nott, Hincks, Alcock, &c., are to be found scattered through the pages of the *Oriental Miscellany* and other periodicals, and a fine edition containing a verse rendering of the principal poems by the late H. Bucknall is published by Trübner & Co (London, 1876). A choice version of a hundred selected odes was also published anonymously by Williams & Norgate (London, 1876). On the Continant the principal versions are by Von Hammer-Purgstall, a rhythmic version of the whole of a large portion of Hafiz's works by Von Rosenzweig (Vienna, 1846), Vienna, 1858), which contains also the Persian text and notes, *Der Diwan des Scheichs eddis Muhammad Hafiz*, by Neukirchmann (Berlin, 1876), in which the rhyming system of the original is imitated. Besides these, the reader may consult D. Habelot, *Bibliothèque Orientale*, article "Hafiz," in William Ouseley's *Oriental Collection* (3 vols 4to, London, 1787-98), *Specimens of Persian Poetry*, or *Odes of Hafiz*, by John Richardson (London, 1802), *Biographical Notices of Persian Poets*, by Su Gore Ouseley (Oriental Translation Fund, 1846), and an excellent article by Professor E. B. Cowell in *Macmillan's Magazine* (No 177, July 1874). The best edition of the text is perhaps that edited by H. Hamman Buchhaus of Leipzig, 1854, which is based on the recension of the Turkish editor Südi, and contains his commentary in Turkish on a considerable portion of the *Diwan*. (E. L. F.)

HAGEDORN, FRIEDRICH VON (1708-1755), one of the most distinguished German poets in the earlier half of last century, was born April 23, 1708, at Hamburg, where his father was Danish minister at the court of Lower Saxony. The father, a man of scientific and literary tastes, possessed a valuable library of French literature, and dabbled also in the science of alchemy. Having by this and other means lost a great part of his fortune, he died in 1722, leaving in poor circumstances a widow and two sons, of whom the poet was the elder. He was educated at the gymnasium of Hamburg, and went later (1726) to study jurisprudence at Jena. Shortly after his return to Hamburg in 1729, he obtained the appointment of private secretary without salary to the Danish ambassador in London, where he lived till 1731, and published two small works in English. His return to Hamburg was followed by a period of great poverty and hardship, a scanty income being derived from the posts which he held in the Hamburg cathedral and among the mining population in Klausthal. In 1735 Hagedorn became secretary to the so-called "English court" at Hamburg, a trading company founded in the 13th century, and formerly known as *Die Societät der Adventurer* "Kaufleute." He shortly afterwards married, and from this time, with a settled income and sufficient leisure to pursue his literary occupations, led a pleasant and congenial existence, surrounded by friends and admirers, till his death, at the early age of forty-seven, October 28, 1755.

Hagedorn is known as the author of satirical, didactic, and moral verses, epigrams, odes, fables, and songs. His popularity during his lifetime was great. Although he held himself aloof from any poetical school, he nevertheless exercised an important influence on the German poetry of his time, for, besides being a learned man and well read in the ancient and modern classics, he was a sponsor and leader of French literature, the study of which gained for him an ease and mobility before unknown in German versification. He has been called the originator in Germany of the modern song, and some of his *Leeder* were set to music by the favourite composers of his day. His popularity, how-

ever, is now long past. His learning and his style have been eclipsed by later and greater poets, and he who was at one time the "allgemeine Bewunderung von Deutschland" now ranks only among the secondary German classics.

The first collection of Hagedorn's poems was published at Harnburg shortly after his return from Jura in 1729, under the title *Veruch einiger Gedichte, oder kleine Proben poetischer Nebenstunden*. In 1738 appeared *Veruch in poetischen Fabeln und Erzählungen*, in 1747 a collection of his lyric poems, under the title *Stimmung neuer Oden und Lieder*, and his *Alteutsche Gedichte* in 1760. A collection of his entire works was published at Harnburg after his death in 1766, and a smaller edition in 1767. The best is Kachembach's edition, 5 vols., 1800, republished, with Hagedorn's correspondence, in 1826. See O. H. Schmidt, *Biographie von Hagedorn*.

HAGEN, a town of Prussia, at the head of a circle in the Arnsberg government of Westphalia, is situated at the confluence of the Empe with the Volme, and at the junction of several railways, 26 miles W. S. W. from Arnsberg. It is the seat of a provincial office, a circle court, a chamber of commerce, a state railway commission, and an agricultural union. It has two Evangelical churches, a Catholic church, an Old Catholic church, a synagogue, a real school of the first order, a royal provincial trade school, a higher female school, and two infirmaries. Hagen is one of the most flourishing commercial towns in Westphalia, and possesses puddling works for iron and steel, iron foundries, cast steel works, the large cotton print works, woolen and cotton factories, manufactures of leather, paper, tobacco, and iron and steel wares, breweries, and distilleries. There are large limestone quarries in the vicinity, and also an alabaster quarry. The population in 1875 was 24,335, or including Althagen 26,870.

HAGEN, FRIEDRICH HEINRICH VON DER (1780–1856), distinguished for his researches in Old German literature, was born at Schmöderberg in Brandenburg, 19th February 1780. After studying law at the university of Halle, he obtained a legal appointment in the state service at Berlin, but in 1806 he resigned this office in order to devote himself exclusively to the study of his choice. In 1810 he was appointed professor extraordinarius of German language and literature in the university of Berlin, in the following year was transferred to a similar professorship in Breslau, and in 1821 returned to Berlin as professor ordinarius. He died at Berlin, 11th June 1856. To Hagen belongs the chief merit of awakening an interest in Old German poetry, of which he published several collections.

His principal publications are the *Niederdeutsche*, of which he issued four editions, the first in 1810 and the last in 1848, *Alte Minnensänge*, Leipzig, 1838–52, 5 vols., *Leeder der alten Beden*, Berlin, 1812, *Alte deutsche Lieder und Sagen*, Breslau, 1814, a collection of Old German tales under the title *Geschmähchen*, Stuttgart, 1819, 8 vols. He also published *Über die altdeutsche Dichtkunst der Bauern*, Berlin, 1844, and from 1835 he edited the *Jahrbuch der Berlinischen Gesellschaft für deutsche Sprache und Alterthumskunde*.

HAGENAU, the chief town of a circle and canton in Alsace Lorraine, Germany, district of Lower Alsace, is situated in the middle of the Haguenau Forest, on the Moselle, and on the railway from Strasburg to Weissenburg, 10 miles N. N. E. of the former town. It has two ancient Catholic churches, one dating from the 12th, the other from the 13th century, a gymnasium, a reformatory for boys, a female penitentiary, a public library, a hospital, and a theatre. The principal industries are wool and cotton spinning, and the manufacture of porcelain, earthenware, soap, leather, oil, and beer. There is also considerable trade in hops, vegetables, and wine. Population (1875), 11,786.

Hagenau dates from the beginning of the 12th century, and owes its origin to the erection of a hunting lodge by the dukes of Swabia. Rudolph Barbarossa surrounded it with walls and gave it a constitution. On the site of the hunting lodge he founded an imperial palace, in which were preserved the jewelled imperial crown, sceptre, imperial globe, and sword of Charlemagne. Subsequently

the town obtained imperial rights, and after the extinction of the Hohenstaufers it remained the capital of the bailiwick of Lower Alsace. In 1618 it came into the possession of France, and in 1673 Louis XIV. caused the fortifications to be razed. In 1676 it was captured by imperial troops, but in 1677 it was restored to France and nearly all destroyed by fire. In 1871 it came, along with the rest of Alsace Lorraine, into the possession of France.

HAGENBACH, KARL RUDOLF (1801–1874), distinguished as a church historian and as an expounder of the so-called "Vermittelungstheologie," or mediation theology of Germany, was born March 4, 1801, at Basel, where his father, a man of considerable talent and scientific reputation, was a practicing physician. His preliminary education was received at a Pestalozzian school, and afterwards at the gymnasium, whence in due course he passed to the newly reorganized local university. Carefully brought up within a church in which the strictest orthodoxy still continued to hold undisputed sway, familiar at the same time from boyhood with his father's expressions of approval of the principles of the French Revolution, himself of an ardent, sympathetic, inquiring, and devout temperament, he early devoted himself to theological studies and to the service of the church, while at the same time cherishing and developing those "humanistic" tendencies which found expression in many ways and especially in an enthusiasm for antiquity for the writings of Herder. The years 1820–23 were spent first at Bonn, where Lucke exerted a powerful influence on the formation of his opinions, and afterwards at Berlin, where Schleiermacher, and still more Neander, became permanently his masters. Returning in 1823 to Basel, where Dr. Wetze had recently been appointed to a theological chair, he distinguished himself greatly by his "habilitationsschrift" or trial dissertation, entitled *Über rationales historisches methodische exegese*, in the following year he became professor extraordinarius, and in 1829 professor of theology. Apart from his special academic labours during many years in connexion with the history of dogma and of the church (which first owed to him their recognition as distinct branches of study at Basel), he lived a life of great and varied usefulness as a theologian, a preacher, and a citizen, and at his "jubilee" in 1873, not only the university and town of Basel but also the various churches of Switzerland united to do him honour. He died at Basel, June 7, 1874.

Hagenbach was a voluminous author in many departments (as will be seen from the list of his works which is given below), but it is as a writer on church history that he is best known, and is likely to be longest and most widely known. Though neither so learned and profound as those of Ritschl, his lectures are written with remarkable clearness and strictness, and are justly appreciated at once for their warm glow of sympathy with his subject and for their entire freedom from narrow sectarian prejudices. In dogmatics, while avowedly a champion of the "mediation theology" based upon the fundamental conceptions of Hodge and Schleiermacher, he was much less zealous in his aims and in his results than were many others of his school. To the last he sought to maintain the old confessional documents, and to maintain objective and chiefly pivotal over the purely subjective theories of varying theological questions. But he himself was aware that in the millennium to do so he was not always successful, and that his delineations of Christian dogma often left a wide field for the uncertain hand. His works include a remarkably able *Tabellarische Uebersicht des Dogmengeschichts* (1828), *Enzyklopädie u. Methodologie des Theol. Wissenschafts* (1833), *Verlesungen über Wesen u. Geschichte der Reformation u. des Protestantismus* (1834–43), *Lehrbuch des Dogmengeschichts* (1840–41, 6th ed. 1867, English transl. 1880), *Verlesungen über die Geschichte des alten K. u. N. (1833–60)*, *Verlesungen über die Kirchengeschichte des Mittelalters* (1860–61), *Grundriss der Dogmatik u. Leitfaden* (1863), a biographical of Ecolampadius and Myconius, and a *Geschichte der theol. Schule Basels* (1880). His *Principien* have been published in nine volumes (1868–78), and he is also author of two volumes of *Lehrbuch der theol. Wissenschaft* (1868), and *Geschichte* (1846). The lectures on church history under the general title *Verlesungen über die Kirchengeschichte von den ältesten Zeiten bis zum 19ten Jahrhundert* have been recently issued in seven volumes (1868–72).

HAGERSTOWN, a city and township of Maryland, United States, capital of Washington county, is situated near the west bank of Annetam creek, 20 miles from its confluence with the Potomac river, and at the junction point of three rail-ways, 86 miles W N W by rail from Baltimore. It is a well-built town with very few wooden houses, and possesses a fine new court-house, a male and a female academy, and a national and a state bank. It depends for its prosperity chiefly on agriculture, and has flour mills, bone-mills, machine shops, and a tannery, and considerable trade in agricultural produce. The population in 1860 was 3833, in 1860, 4132, and in 1870, 5779, of whom 869 were coloured.

HAG-FISII, GLUTINOUS HAG, or DOBZ (Ugoue), a marine fish which forms, with the lampreys one of the lowest orders of vertebrates (*Cyclostomata*). Similar in form to a lamprey, it is usually found within the body of dead cod or haddock, on the flesh of which it feeds after having buried itself in the abdomen. When caught, it secretes a thick glutinous slime in such quantity that it is commonly believed to have the power of convealing water into glue. It is occasionally found in the North Atlantic and other temperate seas of the globe.

HAGGAI, the tenth in order of the minor prophets. The name Haggai (חגאי, Greek Ἀγγαιο, whence Aggeus in the English version of the Apocrypha) is usually held to be an adjective meaning *festive*. But Wellhausen<sup>1</sup> is probably right in taking the word as a contraction for Hagaiiah (*Haghaiah, hath gaidah*), just as Zaccan (Zacharias) is known to be a contraction of Zerahiah (*cf.* Denenbourg, *Histoire de la Palestine*, pp. 95, 100).

The book of Haggai contains four short prophecies delivered between the first day of the sixth month and the twenty-fourth day of the ninth month—that is, between September and December—of the second year of Darius the king. The king in question must be Darius Hystaspis, who came to the throne 521 B.C. Scaliger, Druus, and other older writers think of Darius Notius (see 124 B.C.), but this is impossible, since in chap. i. 3 Haggai speaks of old men as still alive who had seen the first temple in its splendour before 587 B.C.<sup>2</sup> The language of the prophet suggests the probability that he was himself one of those whose memories reached across the seventy years of the captivity, and that his prophetic work began in extreme old age. This supposition agrees well with the shortness of the period covered by his book, and with the fact that Zechariah, who began to prophesy in the same autumn and was associated with Haggai's labours (Zechar. v. 1), afterwards appears as the leading prophet in Jerusalem (Zechar. vi. 1-4). We know nothing certain of the personal history of Haggai from the Bible. Later traditions may be read in Carpenter's *Introduction*, pars. 3, cap. xvi. On the mention of Haggai in the titles of several psalms in the Septuagint (Psalms cxcviii., cxcv-cxcvii.) and other versions, see Koehler's *Verweisungen Haggai's*, p. 32. These titles are without value, and moreover vary in MSS. Eusebius did not find them in the Hexaplar Septuagint.<sup>3</sup>

In his first prophecy (i. 1-11) Haggai addresses Zerubbabel and Joshua, rebuking the people for leaving the temple unbuilt while they are busy in providing panelled houses for themselves. The prevalent famine and distress are due to God's indignation at such remissness. Let them build the house, and God will take pleasure in it and

acknowledge the honour paid to Him. The rebuke took effect, and the people began to work at the temple, strengthened by the prophet's assurance that the Lord was with them (i. 12-15). In a second prophecy (ii. 1-9) delivered in the following month, Haggai forbids the people to be disheartened by the apparent meanness of the new temple. The silver and gold are the Lord's. He will soon shake all nations and bring their choicest gifts to adorn His house. Its glory shall be greater than that of the former temple, and in this place He will give peace. A third prophecy (iii. 10-19) contains a promise, enforced by a figure drawn from the purity ritual, that God will remove famine and bless the land from the day of the foundation of the temple onwards. Finally, in iv. 20-33, Zerubbabel is assured of God's special love and protection in the impending catastrophe of kingdoms and nations to which the prophet had formerly pointed as preceding the glorification of God's house on Zion. In thus looking forward to a shaking of all nations Haggai agrees with earlier prophecies, especially Isa. xlv. xlvii., while his picture of the glory and peace of the new Zion and its temple is drawn from the great anonymous prophet who penned Isa. lx. lxvi. The characteristic features of the book are the importance assigned to the personality of Zerubbabel and the almost sacramental significance attached to the temple. The hopes fixed on Zerubbabel, the chosen of the Lord, don't. His signet ring (*cf.* Jer. xxi. 24), are a last echo in Old Testament prophecy of the theocratic importance of the house of David. In the book of Zechariah Zerubbabel has already fallen into the background and the high priest is the leading figure of the Judean community.<sup>4</sup> The stem of David is superseded by the house of Zadok, the kingship has yielded to the priesthood, and the extinction of national hopes gives new importance to that strict organization of the hierarchy for which Ezekiel had prepared the way by his sentence of disfranchisement against the non-Zadokite priests.

If his attitude to Zerubbabel forms a link of connexion between Haggai and the prophets before the captivity, his post-exile standpoint is characteristically marked in the central importance which he attaches to the temple. The prophets who spoke under the shadow of the first temple held quite another language.<sup>5</sup> To Isaiah and Jeremiah the religion of Israel and the holiness of Jerusalem have little to do with the edifice of the temple. The city is holy because it is the seat of Jehovah's sovereignty on earth, exerted in His dealings with and for the state of Judah and the kingdom of David. The proof that Jehovah's throne is in Jerusalem lies in the history of what He has done for His people, or, if a visible pledge is needed, it must be sought not in the temple but, in accordance with antique ideas, in the ark (Jer. iii. 18) or in the altar with its sacred flame (Isa. xxix. 1, xxxi. 9). But in the desolation of Jerusalem, the extinction of the political life with which all religion had till then been inseparably bound up gave a new meaning to the old prophetic doctrine that the service of Jehovah is the true vocation of Israel—a new significance to the ruined temple and all its ordinances of worship. "The holy and beautiful house where our fathers praised Thee" (Isa. lxi. 11) was a chief thought of the sorrowing exiles (Lamentations, *passim*), and to one anonymous writer the Lord's vengeance on Babylon appears eminently as vengeance for His temple (Jer. i. 28). The great prophet of the captivity—the author of Isa. xl—

<sup>1</sup> In Bleek's *Einleitung*, 4th ed., p. 431.

<sup>2</sup> Darius Notius was thought of because Ezra iv. 6-23 seems to require an Aršāvanus before him. But it is now generally admitted that these verses refer to the building of the wall of Jerusalem, and a chronological order should follow chaps. v., vi. The Rabbinical commentaries with their usual ignorance on points of history make Darius the son of Abisueus and father.

<sup>3</sup> See the note on Ps. cxi. in Field's *Hexapla*.

<sup>4</sup> After the foundation of the temple Zerubbabel disappears from history and lives only in legend, which continued to busy itself with his story, as we see from the apocryphal book of Esdras (*cf.* Denenbourg, *Israël de la Palestine*, chap. 1).

<sup>5</sup> Compare for example Jer. vii.

<sup>6</sup> Haggai (ii. 14) attaches no value to altar and sacrifice so long as the temple is unbuilt.

vvi—pictures the Israel of the restoration no longer as an earthly state but as a world-peoplehood, a mediatorial people gathered round the sanctuary and holding forth amidst the nations the true pattern of the knowledge and service of the living God till all the ends of the earth shall look to Him and be saved. Under the limitations of the old dispensation neither men nor people could separate the realization of this great conception from the restoration of the visible centre of Israel's worship in the temple at Jerusalem. The prophet had pointed to Cyrus by name as the rebuilder of Jerusalem and the founder of the temple (Isa xlv 1, 28, lvi 11), and the captives whose hearts were touched by his burning words, and who availed themselves of the decree of that monarch (539 B.C.) to repeople the desolate places of Judah, looked for the speedy advent of the time when the glory of Jehovah displayed in His house on Zion should draw to Jerusalem the willing homage of all nations (Isa lvi 1, 7, lxxi 1-6). The actual experiences of the returning exiles fell as far short of these bright hopes as the Israel of Zerubbabel and Joshua fell short of the ideal regenerate nation to which the prophet had promised the heritage of Jehovah's glory. Scarcely was a settlement effected when difficulties and misfortunes began to thicken about the little colony. The anger of the Lord seemed still to rest on Jerusalem and the cities of Judah (Zech 1 12), whose inhabitants soon ceased to stand fast from the Persian court, and had to struggle with penury and famine as well as with the hostility of their neighbours. Amidst such discouragements the first zeal soon grew cool, and the work of rebuilding the sanctuary lay practically untouched till Haggai arose sixteen years later.

What had actually been effected during these years for the restoration of the temple is a question of some difficulty. It seems safest to stick to the explicit contemporary evidence of Hag. ii 18 (cf. v 15 and Zech viii 9) which gives the ninth month of the second year of Darius—after Haggai and begun to preach—as the date when the temple was founded by Zerubbabel and Joshua. On the other hand, the book of Ezra, in its present shape as edited and partly composed by the much later author who wrote Chronicles, conveys the impression that huge gifts for the temple were offered by the leading Jews on their first return (Ezra ii 68, 69), that the foundation of the house was laid by Joshua and Zerubbabel in the second year of the return (cf. iii 1), and that the work was thereafter interrupted by the opposition of the Jews' enemies till the reign of Darius. It appears probable, however, that the Chronicles has somewhat dislocated the order of events, especially by taking the official correspondence in ch. iv to refer to the temple, whereas it really refers to the building of the city walls. This oversight might readily involve the antedating of the foundation ceremony described in ii 1-18, which seems to be identical with that which Haggai speaks of, since the actors are the same, and the chief feature in the description which does not belong to the usual liturgical account of the Chronicles recalls Hag. ii 8, Zech iv 7-10. Again, the verses Ezra ii 68, 69 seem really to refer to a collection made in the time of Nehemiah, having been transcribed from a history of that period (part of which is preserved in the canonical book of Nehemiah) along with the ancient list which occupies the first part of Ezra ii. But they are not part of the list, as appears from a comparison of Ezra ii 62-iii 1 with Neh viii 64-viii 7. If this criterion is just, the Tishabith of Ezra ii is Nehemiah, not Zerubbabel, and the usual arguments for identifying the latter with Sheshbazzar—whom Cyrus, according to the tradition, sent to rebuild the temple—fall to the ground. Sheshbazzar was presumably a Persian official, and the first hope of the Jewish colony, in accordance with Isa. lxxviii 1, 12, was, no doubt, that the Persians would effect the restoration without effort of theirs. This hope was frustrated, Sheshbazzar presumably having taken up his task with the usual consciousness of an Oriental governor, that in, having done nothing, though the ark was nominally in hand all along (Ezra v 16). The advancement of Zerubbabel to the governorship may have given Haggai his opportunity.

In the confused state of the chronology of the book of Ezra it may also be a question when the Persians sought to join the Jews and was repulsed. That the relation of Ezra iv 1-4 is historical seems

to be established against objections which have been taken to it by the idea of the Esdrasists, which A. V. Gutchevitch has suggested by an ingenious historical combination with the aid of the Assyrian monuments (*Novae Testage*, p. 146). Compare also Jer. xli 5 for the antiquity of the Samaritan claim to worship with the Jews. But from Ezra v, and especially from Zech. iv, it may be questioned whether the opposition of the Samaritans arose before the time of Haggai and Zerubbabel. See on the whole question Schürer, *Die Darius des ersten Tempelbauers*, in the *Synopsis und Exegese*, 1897.

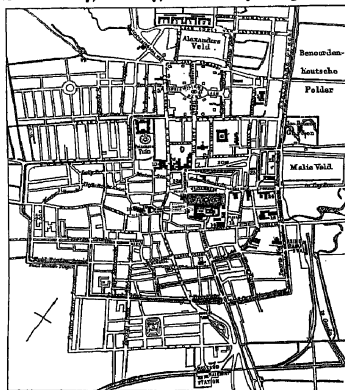
Such indifference to the undertaking, which held a chief place in the first ardour of the returning exiles had a deeper significance than at once occurs to our modern habits of thought. The restoration of the temple and its worship was connected in every mind with the doctrine that the service of Jehovah was the true national vocation of Israel, and the apathy that Haggai rebukes showed the people to have forgotten in the struggle for material welfare their ideal calling as the nation of the true God. His proofs touched the conscience of the Jews, and the book of Zechariah enables us in some measure to follow the course of a religious revival which, starting with the restoration of the temple, did not confine itself to matters of ceremony and ritual worship. On the other hand, Haggai's treatment of his theme, practical and effective as it was for the purpose in hand, moves on a far lower level than the aspirations of the great evangelical prophet who inspired the people at their first return. To the latter the material temple is no more than a detail in the picture of a work of restoration eminently ideal and spiritual, and he expressly warns his hearers against attaching intrinsic importance to it (Isa. lxxvi 1). To Haggai the temple appears so essential that he teaches that while it lay waste the people and all their works and offerings were unclean (Hag. ii 14). In this he betrays his affinity with Ezekiel, who taught that it is by the possession of the sanctuary that Israel is sanctified (Ezek. xxxvii 28). In truth the new movement of religious thought and feeling which started from the fall of the Hebrew state took two distinct lines, of which Ezekiel and the anonymous prophet of Isa. xl-lxxvi are the respective representatives. While the latter developed his great picture of Israel the mediatorial nation, the systematic and purely mind of Ezekiel had shaped a more material conception of the religious vocation of Israel in that picture of the new theocracy where the temple and its ritual occupy the largest place, with a sanctity which as set in express contrast to the older conception of the holiness of the city of Jerusalem (cf. Ezek. xliii 7 seq. with Jer. xxxi 40, Isa. vi 5), and with a supreme significance for the religious life of the people which is expressed in the figure of the living waters issuing from under the threshold of the house (Ezek. xlviii). It was the conception of Ezekiel which permanently influenced the citizens of the new Jerusalem, and took final shape in the institutions of Ezra. To this consummation, with its necessary accompaniment in the extinction of prophecy, the book of Haggai already points.

*Exegetical Notes*—The elaborate and valuable German commentary of R. Kittel (Erlangen, 1880) forms the first part of his work on the *Nacholivische Propheten*. Ranke's *Commentary* (Münster, 1868) is the work of a Roman Catholic. Haggai has generally been treated as a work on all the prophets, as by Emil (ed. ed., 1868, Eng. trans., vol. ii, 1878), or along with the other minor prophets, as by Hitzig (ed. ed., Leipzig, 1863), Keil (1866, Eng. trans., Edinburgh, 1881), and Pusey (1878), or with the other post-exilic prophets as by Köhler, Fremant (Göttingen, 1870), Dole (1879), and others. The older literature will be found in books of introduction or in Rosenmüller's still useful *Scholia*. The learned commentary of Marcus may be specially mentioned on the words of Haggai in the history of Old Testament prophecy, see Duhm, *Die Bücher der Propheten* (Bonn, 1875).

**HAGUE, THE** (in Dutch, *de Gravenhage* or *den Haag*, in French, *La Haye*, and in Modern Latin, *Haga Comitis*), a town of the Netherlands, in the province of South Holland, 13 miles N.W. of Rotterdam, 10 miles S.W. of Leyden, and 2 miles inland from the German Ocean. It is con-

<sup>1</sup> Ezra ii 2 seems to show that at the return Zerubbabel was mainly one of the Jewish elders. The opposite impression is due solely to the punctuation.

nected with both Rotterdam and Leyden by the "Holland Railway," and with Utrecht by the railway of the Rhine. Besides being the chief town of the province, the Hague is the usual residence of the court, and the seat of the Government, the states-general, the high council of the Netherlands, the council of state, the chamber of accounts, and various other administrative bodies. The character of the town are quite in keeping with its political position. It is "the handsomest, the most fashionable, and the most modern-looking town in the Netherlands." D'Amicis rightly describes it in his *Olanda* as half Dutch half French. Broad and regular streets, extensive avenues and drives, and spacious squares well planted with trees, are the main features of its general plan; large and beautiful buildings are numerous; and the population consists for the most part of Government officials and members of the nobility, the army, and the navy. A good idea



Plan of the Hague.

- |                                       |                                    |                           |   |
|---------------------------------------|------------------------------------|---------------------------|---|
| 1. Cavalry Barracks.                  | 9. Palace of Prince of Orange.     | 18. Statue of Wil. II.    | 31. Museum Meermanno-Westermanno-Westm. |
| 2. Artillery do.                      | 10. Royal Palace.                  | 19. The Academy of Music. | 32. Palace of Prince Alexander.         |
| 3. Do Don's Reser.                    | 11. Dwagenpoort.                   | 20. Groote Kerk.          | 33. Palace of Prince Henry.             |
| 4. National Monument.                 | 12. Statue of Wil. II.             | 21. Groote Kerk.          | 34. Palace of Prince Frederick.         |
| 5. G. Barracks.                       | 13. Court Buildings.               | 22. Town-Hall.            |   |
| 6. St. James' Church.                 | 14. Office of Minister of Finance. |                           |   |
| 7. Office of the Minister of Finance. |                                    |                           |   |

of the place is obtained by passing along the Vijverberg or Fishpond Hill, which takes its name from the large basin of water which it skirts, the Voorhout, and the Willemspark, next through Java Street and Sumatra Street, and then the Buitenhof or Outer Court, the Binnenhof or Inner Court, the Plein, the Kruisendijk, and the Groote Markt. Willemspark was laid out by King William II., and in 1869 it was chosen as the site of the national monument in memory of the recovery of independence in 1813, executed by Waaijen, Pieterzen, and Koelman. The Plein, a square bordered with the offices of the various ministers and the high council, is adorned with a statue of William I., the "father of his people," by Louis Royer; an equestrian statue of the same prince, by the count of Nieuwerkerke, is placed in front of the royal palace; and there is a statue of William II. by Georges in the Buitenhof.

The centre of the Hague, both historically and topographically, is the buildings of the court. The oldest portion was founded by Count William II., "king of the Romans," in 1249. A handsome Gothic building, with towers at each corner of the façade, contains the great or knights' hall, a noble chamber 130 feet in length, 62 feet in breadth, and 69 in height, in which the states of the Netherlands abjured their allegiance to Philip II. of Spain, and in front of which the grey-headed Olden-Barneveldt lost his life in 1619. To the south-east of the hall is the tronzaal, or throne room, in which the second chamber of the states-general hold its sittings; and to the west is the meeting-place of the first chamber. The archives of the kingdom and several Government offices are in the same range of buildings. The royal palace proper was purchased by the states of the Netherlands in 1595, rebuilt by Prince William III., and extended by King William I. The palace of the prince of Orange was founded about 1720 by Count Unico William of Wassenaar Twiekels; the palace of Prince Frederick of the Netherlands dates from 1825 to 1828; the palace of Prince Henry was erected in 1743 for the deputies of Rotterdam; and the palace of Prince Alexander was in the 17th century the house of John de Witt, pensionary of the council. Among the public institutions of the Hague, the following are the most important:—the royal library, with upwards of 100,000 volumes, and a collection of manuscripts, coins, and gems, erected between 1734 and 1738; the Museum Meermanno-Westermanno, comprising books, manuscripts, maps, plates, pictures, antiquities, and curiosities; the royal picture gallery in the Prinse-Maurits-Huis, which was founded in 1633 by Prince John Maurice of Nassau-Siegen, governor of Brazil; the Vijverberg hôtel, with a collection of curiosities; the town museum of antiquities and modern art; the zoological gardens, founded in 1862; the royal school of design and music; and the new buildings for the arts and sciences, erected in 1874. Of the fourteen churches of the Hague five belong to the Dutch Reformed communion, six to the Roman Catholics, and one to the Old Catholics; one is Episcopalian, one German Evangelical, and two Apostolical. There are also two synagogues and one Greek chapel. Architecturally the Groote Kerk, under the patronage of St James, is the most noteworthy; it is 300 feet long by 154 broad, and has a lofty tower and spire; in the interior are the sepulchral monuments of James Baron of Wassenaar Obdam, a Dutch naval hero, of Gerrit of Assendelft, and of Philip, landgrave of Hessen-Philippsthal. The Willemskerk was a present of William III. to the Reformed community of the Hague.

The principal industries of the town are iron-casting, copper and lead smelting, cannon-founding, the manufacture of furniture and carriages, silk-dyeing, liqueur-distilling, lithography, and printing. In 1628 the population of the Hague was only 17,480; in 1732 it was estimated at 34,000; in 1796, inclusive of the inhabitants of Scheveningen,—a watering-place now connected with the town by a tramway line,—it was 41,266; in 1811, 42,160; in 1830, 56,106; in 1840, 58,531; and in 1860, 66,329. In 1860 it was 78,405, and in 1870, 91,328. At the last date 52,600 belonged to the Dutch Reformed Church; 27,486 were Roman Catholics, 3471 Dutch Jews, and 148 Portuguese Jews. In 1874 the total was stated at 94,895.

The Hague, mentioned as early as 1097 in a document by Count Floris II., seems originally to have been a shooting lodge of the counts of Holland. Under William II. it became a residence of the court; and in the 16th century it begins to be called a town, though for long after, down even to the time of Louis Napoleon, it was frequently described as a village. In 1479 the soldiers of Maximilian of Austria put the place to ransom; in 1595 it was the scene of the martyrdom of Johannes Pistorius (Jan de Bakker of Woerd); in 1628 it was ravaged by the people of Guelderland, and in 1679, 1673, and 1674 it was laid waste by the Spaniards. Restored by William

I. in 1576, it was in 1584 the seat of the sessions of the States of Holland. Houses were constructed round the town in 1620. In 1672 it was the scene of the famous assassination of the brothers De Witt. It was at the Hague that the convention was arranged in 1710 between the German emperor, the king of Prussia, the emperor of Russia, and the maritime powers, for the maintenance of the neutrality of North Germany, it was at the Hague that the Triple Alliance of 1717 was concluded, and that the peace of the same year was signed between Spain, Savoy, and Austria. From 1789 to 1787 the town had its full share in the civil disturbances of the country. In 1808 it was made the seat of the Government administrative offices.

See *Gazet. ou Nouvelle Description de la Haye*, The Hague, 1785, *Descriptie aeneerde de la ville de la Haye*, The Hague, 1823, *Mythen wandelingen door en in de omte van 's Gravenhage*, The Hague, 1832, *Gedachten van 's Gravenhage*, Amsterdam, 1846, *Fénelon's Grand de la Haye*, The Hague, 1860, *La Haye et Schéveningen photographes*, The Hague, 1860.

HAHN, AUGUST (1792–1863), German Protestant theologian, was born March 27, 1792, at Grossostelharren near Eiselenberg, and after attending the Eiselenberg gymnasium, entered the university of Leipzig as a student of theology in 1810. After holding an educational appointment in Wittenberg for some time, he in 1819 was nominated professor extraordinary of theology at Königsberg, and in the following year received a pastoral charge and a superintendency in that city. These posts, however, he soon resigned on his promotion in 1821 to be professor ordinarius. In 1826 he removed as professor of theology to Leipzig, where his highest distinction only as editor of *Bardesane, Marcion, and Ephraem Syrus*, he came into extraordinary prominence as the author of a treatise, *De rationalismis qui dicuntur per a viros et a qua cum natu alismo constructu rationis* (1827), and also of an *Offene Erklärung an die Evangelische Kirche in Sachsen in Preussen* (1837), in which he endeavored to convince the rationalists that it was their duty voluntarily and at once to withdraw from the national church. In 1833 Hahn was called to Breslau as theological professor and consistorial councillor, and in 1844 he became "general superintendent" of the province of Silesia. He died at Breslau on May 13, 1863. Though uncompromising in his "supernaturalism," he did not altogether satisfy the men of his own school by his own doctrinal system. The first edition of his *Lehrbuch des christlichen Glaubens* (1828) was freely characterized as lacking in consistency and as detracting from the strength of the old positions in many important points. Many of these defects, however, he is considered to have remedied in his second edition (1857). Among the other literary labours by which Hahn is best known are his edition of the Hebrew Bible (1833) and his *Biblische und Symbolische Glaubensregeln der apostolisch-katholischen Kirche* (1842, 2d ed. 1877). A volume of *Prodicten* was published in 1852.

HAHN, JOSEPH GEORG VON (1810–1869), an Austrian traveller, to whom we are indebted for most of our knowledge about the Albanians, was born at Jena in 1810. After travelling for some time under the auspices of the Vienna academy, he entered the Austrian consular service, in which he rose to be consul general in Greece. He died at Jena 23d September 1869. In his great work *Albaneser Studien* (Jena, 1854), he treats at once of the geography, the history, the archaeology, the linguistic affinities, and the folk-lore in this remarkable country and people, and the book at once took rank as a scholarly and authoritative production. He had previously (1851) published *Bemerkungen über das Albanesische Alphabet* (Vienna, 1851). In 1853 he undertook a journey along with Mayor F. Zach from Belgrade to Salonica (Thessalonica), for the purpose mainly of ascertaining the feasibility of constructing a railway from the Danube to the Aegean, and an account of their experiences was published in the *Denkschriften der Kaiserl. Akademie der Wissenschaften zu*

Wien, *Phil. Hist. Klasse*, Bd. xi, Vienna, 1861. This paper, reprinted in 1871, contained valuable matter in regard to the Albanians, and especially in regard to their geographical distribution. Another journey undertaken in 1863 furnished material for a second contribution to the *Denkschriften* (*Phil. Hist. Klasse*, 1867)—"Reise durch das Gebiete des Drin und Wardar." Since the author's death a large work has appeared under the title of *Sagenwissenschaftliche Studien* (Jena, 1872–73), in which he deals learnedly with numerous questions in comparative mythology.

HAHNEMANN, SAMUEL CHRISTIAN FRIEDRICH (1755–1848), the founder of the homoeopathic system of medicine, was born at Meissen in Saxony, 10th April 1755. He studied first at the "school" of Meissen, and thereafter as a student of medicine at Leipzig and Vienna. He took the degree of M.D. at Erlangen in 1779, and after acting as physician at various places he returned in 1789 to Leipzig, where he largely occupied himself in the translation of medical works. While working at Cullen's *Materia Medica*, he was struck by the contradictory account given of the properties of Peruvian bark. He had previously meditated much on the unsatisfactory nature of the science of medicine, and, after much reflection and many experiments, he became convinced of the truth of the principle *similia similibus curantur* (see HOMOEOPATHY), &c., the basis for a disease is the very drug which would in a healthy person produce the symptoms of such disease. Further experiments convinced him that the conventional doses produced symptoms of unnecessary and dangerous violence, and this led to another principle, that of minimum doses, according to which the benefit to be derived from a medicine can be fully obtained by the administration of a very small quantity. Firmly convinced of the truth of these principles, Hahnemann spent the rest of his life in making them known to the world. He encountered much opposition, and in 1821 was forced to leave Leipzig, as he was not allowed to dispense his own prescriptions. The grand duke of Anhalt-Köthen, however, appointed him his physician, and at Köthen he resided till 1835 when he removed to Paris. He died 2d July 1843. Hahnemann was a man of remarkable courage and perseverance. He not only sacrificed his immediate interests for the sake of his convictions, but made many painful experiments upon his own person.

Hahnemann's chief work, in which he expounds his system, is his *Organon der rationalen Heilkunde* (Dresden, 1810, 6th ed., Köthen, 1866, English translation by Dudgeon, London, 1849). His other important works are *Principles of the new medical system* (2 vols., Leipzig, 1805), *Reine Arzneimittellehre* (8 vols., Dresden, 1811), *Die chronischen Krankheiten* (4 vols., Dresden, 1828–30). His smaller writings have been edited by Städt (2 vols., Dresden and Leipzig, 1829–34). See also Albrecht's *Hahnemann's Leben und Werke* (2d ed., Leipzig, 1876).

HAIDARABAD See HYDRABAD.

HAIDINGER, WILHELM VON (1795–1871), a mineralogist, geologist, and physicist of considerable note, was born at Vienna, February 5, 1795. His father, Karl Haidinger, contributed largely to the development of mineralogical science in the latter half of the last century. Having studied at the normal school of St. Anne, and attended classes at the university, Wilhelm, at the age of seventeen, joined Professor Mohs at Graz, and five years later accompanied the professor to Freiberg on the transfer of his labours to the mining academy of that Saxon El Dorado. In 1823 Haidinger visited France and England with Count Breunner, and, journeying northward, took up his abode in Edinburgh. He translated into English, with additions of his own Mohs's *Gründriss der Mineralogie*, published at Edinburgh in three volumes under the title *Treatise on Mineralogy*, 1825. After a tour in northern



*Cervus Eldi*, *Cervus hippelaphus*, and *Cervus vaginatus*. Among the birds, of which 172 species are described by Mr. Swinhoe in his paper in *The Ibis*, 1870, there are eagles, notably a new species *Spyrnus Ruthenfordi*, buzzards, hawks, raptors, owls, cuckoos, and woodpeckers. The *Uropygia cydonensis* is familiar to the natives as the "bird of the La matras," and the *Ptilinopus yunnanensis* as the "sugar-cane bird."

Hainan, as already indicated, forms a *fo* or department of the province of Kwang-tung, though strictly it is only a portion of the island that is under Chinese administration, the remainder being still occupied by unsubjugated aborigines. The department contains three *chow* and ten *hien* districts—K'ung chow hien, in which the capital is situated, Tung an-hien, the only inland district, Wen ch'ang-hien, in the north-east of the island, Hui-tung-hien, Lo' an-hien, Lung-shui-hien, Wan-chow, Ai-chou (the southmost of all), Kan an-hien, Chang hui-hien, Tan chow, Lan-kao-hien, and Chang mu-hien. The capital K'ung chow *fo* is situated in the north about 10 li (or 3 miles) from the coast on the river. It is a well-built compact city, and its temples and examination halls are in good preservation. The population is frequently stated at 200,000, but, according to C. C. Stuhlmann in the *Globe* for 1876, it is only 100,000. Carved articles in coco-nuts and seeded woods are its principal industrial product. In 1680 it was made the seat of a Roman Catholic mission by Benoit de Mathes, a Portuguese Jesuit, and the old cemetery still contains about 113 Christian graves. The port of K'ung-chow *fo* at the mouth of the river, which is nearly dry at low water, is called simply Hoi-how, or in the court dialect Hui-Kow, *i.e.*, seaport. The two towns are united by a good road, along which a huge traffic is maintained partly by coolie porters but more frequently by means of wheelbarrows, which serve the purpose of cabs and carts. The net value of the trade of the port, that is, the foreign and native imports minus the re-exports and the native imports of local origin, rose from 684,773 *li* taels in 1876 to 1,215,056 in 1878. Out of 182 vessels engaged in the foreign trade in 1878 with a tonnage of 87,290 tons, 152 were British, with a tonnage of 70,078 tons. The exports comprised leather, hides, skins and tallow, sugar to the value of 204,427 taels, hemp, galangal, lung-gang pulp, grass cloth, and silk, and sesamum to the value of 41,936 taels.

The inhabitants of Hainan may be divided into three classes, the Chinese immigrants, the civilized aborigines or Shui-li, and the wild aborigines or Sheng-li. The Chinese were for the most part originally from Keang-se and the neighbouring provinces, and they speak a peculiar dialect of which a detailed account by Mr. Swinhoe is given in *The Phoenix*, a *Monthly Magazine for China*, &c., 1870. The Shui-li as described by Mr. Taintor, are almost of the same status as the Chinese, but have a more decided copper colour, higher cheek-bones, and more angular features, while their eyes are not oblique. Their hair is long, straight, and black, and their beards, if they have any, are very scanty. They till the soil and bring rice, fuel, timber, grass cloth, &c., to the Chinese markets. The Sheng-li or La p'opai, called also La, Le, or Lany, are probably connected with the Laos of Siam, and the Laos of China. Though not gratuitously aggressive, they are highly intractable, and have given great trouble to the Chinese authorities. Among themselves they carry on deadly feuds, and revenge is a duty and an inheritance. Though they are mainly dependent on the chase for food, their weapons are still the spear and the bow, the latter being made of wood and strung with bamboo. In marriage no avoidance of similarity of name is required. The bride's face is tattooed according to a pattern furnished by the bridegroom. Their funeral mourning consists of abstaining from drink and eating raw beef, and they use a

wooden log for a coffin. When sick they sacrifice oxen. In the spring time there is a festival in which the men and women from neighbouring settlements move about in gay clothing hand in hand and singing songs. The whole population of the island is estimated at about 2½ millions. At its first conquest 23,000 families were introduced from the mainland. In 1300 the Chinese authorities assigned 166,237 inhabitants, in 1370, 291,000, and in 1617, 550,524, and in 1835, 1,350,000.

It was in 1113 *o.c.* that Lu Po T'eh, General of the emperor Wu-ti, first made the island of Hainan subject to the Chinese, who dwelt in it for two prefectures, Tan-shu or Drooping E in the south, so-called from the long ear of the native "king," and Chia yu or Pearl River in the north. During the decadence of the elder branch of the Hsien dynasty the Chinese supremacy was weakened, but in 493 *a.d.* the natives were led by the emperor of Ma yuen in Tong-king to make a new tender of their allegiance. About this time the whole island took the name of Chia yu. In 627 *a.d.* the name of K'ung chow came into use. On its conquest by the generals of Kublai Khan in 1274 the island was incorporated with the western part of the province of Kwang-tung in a new military Hsueh Hui-an *tsu*, *i.e.*, the circuit north of the sea and south of the sea. It was thus that Hui-an *tsu*, or district south of the sea or *tsu* *shu*, came into use as the name of the island, which, however, has borne the official title of K'ung chow *fo*, probably derived from the K'ung-shu or Jade Mountains, ever since 1870, the date of its elevation into a department of Kwang-tung. For a long time Hainan was the scene of the turbulent career of pirates and the theatre of depredations for delinquent officials. It was there, for example, that Shih or Su Tung tzu was banished in 1067. From the 16th to the 19th century pirates made the attacks on the mainland dangerous, and in the 17th they were tolerated so far as that merchants were allowed to convey their goods across only by the narrow channel from Suai ven. Since 1863 the presence of English men at Suai ven has put an end to this sort of piracy. The treaty of Tientsin, the treaty of K'ung-chow and the harbour Hui-Kow were opened to European commerce, but it was not till 1876 that advantage was taken of the permission.

See *Journal of Asia and Europe*, as *China and Japan*, 1868, *Magasin* "Jules and Scott sketch of the Island of Hainan" in *Journal of a Chinese Branch of Boy Asia Soc.*, new ser., No. vii (1871-2), Dr. P. Smith, "Die Chinese Provinz Kwantung," in *Zeitschrift für Erdkunde*, 1874, and *Journal of the Asiatic Society of Japan* on the newly opened ports of K'ung chow (Hainan) in *Hainan*, and of *Sheng cheng* in *Sheng cheng*, by N. S. Denon's, Hong Kong, 1876. (L. A. S.)

HAIRAU (officially HAYRAN), a town in the Prussian province of Silesia, circle of Goldberg-Hainau and government district of Legnitz, is situated on the Rapid Deichsel and on the railway from Breslau to Dresden, 12 miles N W of Legnitz. It has an Evangelical and a Roman Catholic church, and manufactures of woollen and cotton cloth, gloves, leather, locks, and tin ware. Near Hainau the Prussian cavalry inflicted a defeat on the French rearguard, 20th May 1813. The population of the town in 1875 was 5351.

HAIRAU, one of the nine provinces of the kingdom of Belgium, bounded E and N by Namur, Babant, and Flanders, which are also Belgian provinces, and to the S. and W. by the French département du Nord. The name is doubtless derived from the little river Haine, which runs nearly due east and west past the town of Mons, and falls into the Scheldt not far from Condé. Hainault is well-wooded and hilly in the east and south east, where it is partly covered by the Ardennes, the rest of the province is a pleasantly diversified, fertile, and well-cultivated plain land, which produces all kinds of cereal crops, flax, tobacco, clover, and beetroot. The long and narrow coal-field which, with some breaks, stretches from Aix-la-Chapelle to the sea near Boulogne, passes through the middle of Hainault, underlying a district of about 190,000 acres, its centre is about Mons, whence it extends westward to Valenciennes, eastward to Châlons. At this latter town, named after Charles II. of Spain, who built it in 1666, are iron and copper works, marble and building stone are also largely quarried in Hainault, the manufactures of the province are vigorous and good, ironware and cutlery,

<sup>1</sup> In German, *Hainau*, Flemish, *Hainagouwen*, French, *Hainaut*, the *Comitatus Hainauensis* or *Hainomagus* of Latin chronicles.



woollen and linen goods, glass, porcelain, and a variety of other articles are made, and are exported largely to France. Hannault, with a population of 959,354 inhabitants in 1876 (the largest in this respect of all the provinces), has an area of near 1400 square miles, and is therefore somewhat thickly peopled, for administrative purposes it is divided into six arrondissements, of which that of Mons is the chief, the others are Tournai, Châtelet, Ath, Soignies, and Thuin, these again are subdivided into thirty-two cantons.

Formerly the county was nearly twice as large as the present province. In Charls's days it was inhabited by the Nivis, and did not get its present name till the 7th century, before which time it had become a county under its own lords. This dignity, at first more or less elective, but now hereditary in the 9th century. Throughout the early Middle Ages Hannault was a purely agricultural district, owned by a numerous and very quarrelsome and disagreeable nobility, it possessed also no less than fifteen abbies. It was famous in legend and history as the chosen land of clividy, and, however, himself a native of Valenciennes, faithfully reflects the character of his fatherland. In the 11th century Baldwin V. of Flanders occupied it, and Baldwin VI., by marrying the heiress to the county, permanently added it to the territories of his house. It was his descendant Baldwin IX., count of Flanders and Hainault, who purchased himself first Latin emperor of Constantinople, in 1204. In 1300 John of Avenches, count of Hainault, became also count of Holland by right of his mother Adelaide, sister of William II. of Holland, it was his grandchild, Philippe, who in 1385 married the Prince of Wales, afterwards Edward III. Hainault went with Flanders, till it was occupied by Philip "the Good" of Burgundy in the war which lasted from 1324 to 1427. It finally fell to the house of Burgundy on the death of the unfortunate Jacobus in 1438. With the other territories of Charles the Bold it passed with Mary of Burgundy in 1477 to the house of Austria, and remained thence till the peace of the Pyrenees in 1659, when part of the southern portion of the county was ceded to Louis XIV. in cession confined and enlarged at Nimwegen in 1678. Thenceforth there are two Hainaults, the French and the Austrian, the latter answering to the present Belgian province. French Hainault (now a part of the department du Nord) had as its ancient capital Valenciennes, its other towns are Conde, Cambrai, Maubeuge, Le Quesnoy, Landreux, Avesnes, Givet, Châtelet, Philippeville, which, once its name, to Philip II. of Spain, having been transferred out of a village called Coligny into a town by Charles V. in 1555, was restored to the Netherlands in 1815. Austrian Hainault was overrun by the French in 1793, and annexed to France as the department of Jemmapes in 1794, in 1814 it was made part of the kingdom of the Netherlands, and in 1830, as a matter of course, in the division of that kingdom, it became one of the provinces of the Belgian half.

The chief authorities are the Baron de Reichenberg's *Mémoires pour servir à l'histoire des Provinces du Namur, de Hannault, et de Luxembourg, 1811-1848*, and Jacques de Guise's *Antiquité du pays de Hainault*.

**HAINBURG**, or **HAIBURG**, a town of Austria, in the circle of Bruck, situated on the Danube 27 miles ESE of Vienna, is the seat of a district court of justice and a tax-office. It occupies part of the site of the old Celts town Carnuntum, destroyed 831 A.D. Since the fire of 1837 Hainburg has been much improved, and is now a handsomely built town. It is still surrounded by ancient walls, and has a gate guarded by two old towers. There are numerous Roman remains, among which may be mentioned the altar and tower at the town-house, on the latter of which is a statue, said to be of Attila. A Roman aqueduct is still used to bring water to the town. Hainburg has a military school for engineers. The two important manufactures are tobacco, employing about 1700 hands, and needles, of which about 80 millions are annually turned out. On the neighbouring Hainburg is an old castle, built of Roman remains, which appears in German tradition under the name of Haimburg, was destroyed from the Hungarians in 1042 by the emperor Henry III. At the foot of the same hill is a castle of the 12th century, where Ottocar, of Bohemia, was married to Margaret of Austria in 1252, earlier it was the residence of the dukes of Babenberg. Outside the town, on an island in the Danube, is the ruined castle of Rothenstein or Rothenstein, held by the Knights

Templar. Hainburg was besieged by the Hungarians in 1477, was captured by Matthias Corvinus in 1482, and was sacked, and its inhabitants massacred, by the Turks in 1683. Population (1869), 4178.

**HAICHEN**, a town of Saxony, in the circle of Leipzig and the prefecture of Dobeln, is situated on the Little Striege, 15 miles NE of Chemnitz by railway. It is the seat of a royal court of justice, and has cigar and leather manufactures and a school of weaving. Its most important industry is the manufacture of flannels, baize, and similar fabrics, indeed it may be called the centre of this industry in Germany. The special fineness and excellence of the flannel made in Haichen is due to the peculiar nature of the water used in the manufacture. There are 22 spinning-mills in the town and environs, with about 2500 looms, of which between 300 and 400 are mechanical. There are also large dye works and bleaching establishments. Large quantities of both wool and cotton are spun and woven, and yarn spun elsewhere is brought to Haichen to be woven. About 3,860,000 lb of raw wool, worth about £600,000, is annually worked into material, some of which is exported to South America and eastern Asia. Coal is found in the neighbourhood, but does not repay the expense of working. Haichen is the birthplace of Gellert, to whose memory a bronze statue was erected in the market place in 1865. The collar manufacturer who the poor was elected in 1816. Population (1875), 8468.

**HAIR** is a substance which, from its various properties, and differences in stoutness, length, and strength, enters into a considerable variety of manufactures. Bristles are the stout elastic hairs obtained from the backs of certain breeds of pigs. The finest qualities, and the greatest quantities as well, are obtained from Russia, where a variety of pig is reared principally on account of its bristles. The best and most costly bristles are used by shoemakers, secondary qualities being employed for toilet and clothes-brushes, while inferior qualities are worked up into the commoner kinds of brushes used by painters and for many mechanical purposes. For artists' use and for decorative painting, brushes or pencils of hair from the sable, camel, badger, polecat, &c. are prepared. The hair of various animals which is too short for spinning into yarn is utilized for the manufacture of felt. For this use the hair of rabbits, hares, beavers, and of several other rodents is largely employed, especially in France, in making the finest qualities of felt hats. Cow hair, obtained from tanneries, is used in the preparation of roofing felts, and felt for covering boilers or steam-pipes, and for other similar purposes. It is also largely used by plasterers for binding the mortar of the walls and roofs of houses, and of late years it has to some extent been woven up into coarse friezes, horse cloths, railway rugs, and unfavourable blankets. The tail hair of oxen is also of value for stuffing cushions and other upholstery work, for which purpose, as well as for making the official wigs of law officers, baristers, &c., the tail and body hair of the yak or Thibet ox is also sometimes imported into Europe. The tail and mane hair of horses is in great demand for various purposes. The long tail hair is especially valuable for weaving into hair-cloth, mane hair and the short tail hair being, on the other hand, principally prepared and curled for stuffing the chairs, sofas, and couches which are covered with the cloth manufactured from the long hair. The horse hair used in Great Britain is principally obtained from South America, Germany, and Russia, and its sorting, cleaning, and working up into the various manufactures dependent on the material are industries of some importance. In addition to the purposes already alluded to, horse hair is woven into crinoline for ladies' bonnets, plaited into fishing lines, woven into bags for oil and cider presses, and into straining cloths for

brewers, &c., and for numerous other minor uses. The manufactures which arise in connexion with human hair are more peculiar than important, although occasionally fashions arise which cause a large demand for human hair. The fluctuations of such fashions determine the value of hair, but at all times long tresses are of considerable value. Grey, light, pale, and auburn hair are distinguished as extra colours, and command much higher prices than the common shades. The value of hair also increases very rapidly with increase in length. Thus while 8 inch hair sells at about 1s per oz., 36-inch hair will command a price as high as 80s per oz. Lengths beyond 36 inches are exceptional and command fancy prices, the standard length in the hair trade being 18 inches. The light coloured hair is chiefly obtained in Germany and Austria, and the south of France is the principal source of the darker shades. In the south of France the cultivation and sale of heads of hair by peasant girls is a common practice, and hawkers attend fairs for the special purpose of engaging in this traffic. Hair 5 and even 6 feet long is sometimes obtained. Scarcely any of the "law material" is obtained in the United Kingdom except in the form of ladies' "combings." Bleaching of hair by means of peroxide of hydrogen is now extensively practised, with the view of obtaining a supply of golden locks, or of preparing white hair for mixing to match grey shades, but in neither case is the result very successful. Human hair is worked up into a great variety of wigs, scalp, artificial fronts, tizzets, and curls, all for supplementing the scanty or failing resources of nature. The plating of human hair into articles of jewellery, watch guards, &c., forms a distinct branch of trade. For structure, properties, &c., of the human hair see ANATOMY, vol. 1 p. 898.

**HAIRBELL** See HAMBELL

**HAIR TAIL** (*Alopius latipes*), a marine fish, with a long band-like body terminating in a thread-like tail, and with strong prominent teeth in both jaws. Several species are known, of which one, common in the tropical Atlantic, not rarely reaches the British Islands.

**HAIITI** See HAYTI

**HAIJÚK**, sometimes corrupted into *Hajduk*, is the plural form of the Magyar word *Hajdú*, and was formerly used as the collective name of the undementioned towns (along with Vámos Pécs, population 8000) of the old privileged Hajduk district of Hungary, now included in the county of Hajós.

**Hajós Borsod-Aranyos**, the second town in importance of Hajduk county, has about 11 miles to the N.W. of Debreczin, 47° 41' N lat., 21° 31' E long. It is the seat of a royal court of law, and was formerly the capital of the Hajduk district. Among the principal buildings are the old district court house, a Greek Catholic and two Calvinist churches, a Protestant gymnasium, the post and telegraph offices, and the savings bank. The fairs periodically held in the town attract people from a considerable distance. Population (1870) 19,308.

**Hajós-Dorog** is a market-town situated about 10 miles to the N. of Borsod-Aranyos, with a Greek Catholic and a Calvinist church. At Dorog the Magyar adherents of the Greek Catholic Church are met with in great numbers. Population 8216.

**Hajós-Hadház** is a corporate town lying about 10 miles N. of Debreczin. It has a Calvinist church, post and telegraph offices, and a station on the railway from Nyiregyháza to Debreczin. Population 7024.

**Hajós-Nándás** is a market-town, about 24 miles N.W. of Debreczin, with a large Calvinist church, a high school for girls, and a Protestant gymnasium. The surrounding country, although on the whole productive, assumes in the west a generally swampy character. Population 13,193.

**Hajós-Szenoszlo** is a corporate town, 12 miles to the S.W. of Debreczin, with which it is connected by railway. Among the principal buildings are a Calvinist church and school, and a royal law-court. Population 12,369.

The Hajduk district was made over to the Hajduks in 1605, with special privileges and the rights of nobility, by the Turkish prince Stephen Bocskay, as a reward for military services rendered him in his revolutionary campaigns. The inhabitants were named in their possessions by the date of 1613. From 1649 to 1860 the district was united to the county of North Bihar, but it afterwards received a separate cantonal organization. It now forms the principal portion of the new county of Hajduk, constituted in 1878, and including, along with the old Hajduk district, portions of the neighbouring counties of Szabolcs and Bihar. Debreczin is the capital, and the population is computed at about 163,000, mostly Magyar.

**HAIJIPUR**, a municipal town in Musaffarpur district, Bengal, situated on the east bank of the Gaudak, a short distance above its confluence with the Ganges opposite Patna, 25° 40' 50" N lat., 85° 14' 24" E long. It is said to have been founded about 500 years ago by one Hajf Ilyas, the supposed rampart of whose fort, enclosing an area of 330 *bighas*, are still visible. Hajfipuri figures conspicuously in the history of the struggles between Akbar and his rebellious Afghan governors of Bengal, being twice besieged and captured by the imperial troops, in 1572 and again in 1574. Its command of water traffic in three directions makes the town a place of considerable commercial importance. Within the limits of the old fort is a small stone mosque, very plain, but of peculiar character, and attributed to Hajf Ilyas. Two other mosques and a small Hindu and Buddhist temple are in the town or its immediate vicinity. Besides the ordinary courts, the town contains a school, post-office, charitable dispensary, and distillery. The population in 1872 numbered 22,306, of whom 18,765 were Hindus and 3510 Mahometans.

**HAJJJI KHALIFA** Mustafa 'In Abdallah, Kátib Chelepi (c. 1000–1658), commonly known as Hajji (or Haidji) Khalifa (more properly Hajji Khalifah), was the author of an encyclopædia in Arabic of Oriental biography and bibliography. He was born at Constantinople about the beginning of the 17th century of the Christian era, and after passing the earlier part of his life in military service, studied under Cadizadeh Effendi, a learned doctor at the Ottoman capital, and made great progress in Arabic literature and linguistic studies. In June 1633 he again accompanied the army to Syria, but while the troops were in winter quarters at Aleppo, he himself performed the pilgrimage to Mecca, whence he took the cognomen of Hajji, "Pilgrim." Returning in 1635 to Constantinople, he resumed his literary studies, and of peculiar interest, with visiting all the libraries and book shops, and compiling an inventory of their contents, together with notices of the authors of the various works. In 1638 he attended the lectures of Sheikh A'ij Mustafa'azadeh, whom he proposed to himself as an example to imitate in his future literary career. Besides his purely literary studies he also devoted himself assiduously to the sciences, and became well versed in logic, geometry, geography, astronomy, and the like. Nor were medicine and the occult sciences neglected by him, so that there were few of the subjects treated of in the works which he delighted to describe, with which he was not more or less technically acquainted. About 1648 he was appointed assessor (*khatib*) to the principal of the imperial college, whence he took the title of Khalifa, by which, with the prefix of Hajji (Pilgrim), he is commonly designated. He died in September 1658.

Besides his great *Bibliographia Orientalis* *Levanti*, he composed several other works, chiefly geographical and historical, of these the best known are *Asfahân-i Akhshar*, or "Chronological Tables," *Tuhfat al-Kutub fi Asyân-i Bakur*, a work on the science of naval warfare, *Shihâ Namâ* or "Mirror of the World," and one or two treatises on miscellaneous literary subjects. The language in which he wrote is Arabic, and the style is that which the Turkish literature would

lead us to expect—correct and grammatical, fully classical, and abounding in technical terms and philology. Of the amount of his learning and of his industry, his application to study his *Lexicon* is a lasting memorial. This is scarcely a work in the whole range of Arabic, Persian, and Turkish literature, no matter on what subject or science, but it will be found desirable in that it is an encyclopaedia, with every piece of collected information which it was possible to procure or useful to mention. When a cosmologist, that is the Oriental habit to give fancy titles to books that often in no way indicate the nature of their contents, and that one is often obliged to wade through pages of irrelevant matter before coming at the author's name or the subject of the work, the labour expended on the production of Haki's *Lexicon* book appears absolutely inaudible. The work has always enjoyed a well-deserved reputation, and the East, in this it attracted the attention of many European scholars, but we need only mention here the magnificent edition in seven thick 8vo volumes by the eminent Arabic scholar Gustavus Fluegel published at Leipzig in 1855-1878 for the Oriental Press and then published at Oxford in 1878. This edition is accompanied by a Latin page for page translation, indices, and notes, and is in many respects adapted to every library in which a collection of Oriental books is found. The Arabic title of the *Lexicon* is *Kashf al-Mawarid* 'An Asanid al-Kitab wa'l-Fann', 'The removal of doubts concerning the sources of books and containing sources', and the Latin title adopted by Fluegel is *Lexicon Indisophrastum seu Encyclopaediae Hagi Khalifa*. After a short preface and an introduction of five chapters, comes the encyclopaedia proper, the articles in which are arranged in the alphabetical order of the names of the works described. The title of each work is given, a concise account of its contents, the name of the author, and the date when this could be ascertained, and in many cases the initial phrase is also added to facilitate its identification. Besides the general bibliography, Fluegel's edition contains such copious notes of great value to Oriental scholars and his many copious notes and indices complete this splendid edition, one of the finest monuments of Oriental learning which Europe has produced.

**HAKE** (*Macoma vulgare*), a fish belonging to the family of cod-fishes (*Gadidae*), differing from the common cod in having only two dorsal and one anal fin. It is very common on the coasts of Europe and eastern North America, but its flesh is much less esteemed than that of the true *Gadus*. Specimens 4 feet in length are not scarce. A closely allied fish inhabits the coasts of Chili and New Zealand.

**HAKIM**, or, as the full title runs, **EL HAKIM BE-AMR-EL-AMIR AL-MU'ALIM MANSOUR** (985-1020), the sixth of the Fatimite caliphs, and the third of that dynasty ruling in Egypt, founder of the sect of the Druzes, was born in 985 A.D., was designated heir apparent in 993, succeeded in 996, and died in 1020. For the principal events of his life and the leading features of his character the reader is referred to the article *Koyur* (vol vii p 751). See also *Druzes* (vol vii p 483).

**HAKLUYT, RICHARD** (c. 1553-1616), geographer, was born of good family in or near London about 1553. He was elected "one of her Maesties scholars at Westminster," and it was while there that the bent of his future studies was determined by a visit to his cousin and namesake, Richard Hakluyt of the Middle Temple. His cousin's discourses, illustrated by "certain bookes of cosmographie, an universall mappe, and the Bible," had such an effect upon Hakluyt's mind that he resolved, if opportunity offered, to "peruse that knowledge and kind of literature." Entering Christ Church, Oxford, in 1570, "his extraordinary industry first performed," he fell to his intended course of reading, and by degrees perused all the printed or written voyages and discoveries that he could find. He took his degree of B.A. in 1573-74, and we learn from the Towneley MSS that two years later he was selected twice in the same year to receive gifts of money.<sup>2</sup> It is highly probable that,

<sup>2</sup> The Hakluyts were a family of Welsh extraction, not Dutch as has been supposed. They appear to have settled in Herefordshire as early as the 15th century. The first settler was Edeon, 2 miles S. of Leominster. Hugo Hakluyt was recorded in 1523 for the bench in the court of the Guild of St. Edmund, 1501-5. See *Journal of Members of Parliament*, pt. i p. 18.

<sup>3</sup> "To one Mr. Hakluyt, B.A. of Christ College in Oxford, the 12 of May (1576), by Dr. Dennyng (president of divinity), 10s. To one Mr. Hakluyt, the 24 of June, 2s. 6d." (First MSS Comm. 4th Report, Appendix, p. 615).

shortly after taking his degree of M.A. (1577), he commenced at Oxford the first public lectures in geography that "showed both the old imperfectly composed and the new lately reformed mapes, globes, spheres, and other instruments of this art."<sup>3</sup>

Hakluyt's first published work was his *Divers Voyages touching the Discoverie of America* (London, 1582, 4to). By reason of his great knowledge of these matters and his acquaintance with "the chiefest captaynes at sea, the greatest merchants, and the best mariners of our nation," he was selected in 1583, at the age of thirty, to accompany Sir Edward Stafford, the English ambassador, to Paris in the capacity of chaplain. In accordance with the instructions of Secretary Walsingham, he occupied himself chiefly in collecting information of the Spanish and French movements, and "making diligent inquirie of such things as might yield any light unto our western discoverie in America." The first fruits of Hakluyt's labours in Paris are embodied in the most important production of his that has seen the light in modern times, it is entitled *A particular discourse concerning Western discoveries written in the year 1584*, by Richard Hakluyt of Oxforde, at the request and direction of the right worshipfull Mr. Writen Rightly before the coming home of his twoo barckes.<sup>4</sup> This long-lost MS, after failing to find a resting place in America, was finally acquired by Sir Thomas Phillipps, and is now the property of J. E. A. Fenwick, the Thrale-House, Cheltenham. The object of the *Discourse* was to recommend the enterprise of planting the English race in the unsettled parts of North America. Hakluyt's other works consist mainly of translations and compilations, rehearsed by his dedications and prefaces, which last, with a few letters, are the only material we possess out of which a biography of him can be framed.

Hakluyt returned to England in 1584, and during his short stay he had the honour of laying before Queen Elizabeth a copy of the *Discourse* "along with one in Latin upon Aristotle's *Poeticks*," which won for him, two days before his departure again for Paris, the grant of the next vacant prebend at Bristol. In the spring of the following year, feeling anxious about the reversion of the prebend, he again visited England, and exhibited in person, on the 24th May 1585, before the chapter of Bristol cathedral, the queen's mandate for the coveted vacancy already signed and sealed. Before the close of the year the reversion of it fell to him, and in 1586 he was admitted to the prebend, which he held, with his other preferments, till the time of his death.

While in Paris Hakluyt caused to be published the MS journal of Leondonnere or *Histoire notable de la Floride*, edited by M. Bassamer (Paris, 1586, 8vo). This was translated by Hakluyt and published in London under the title of *A notable historie containing four voyages made by certayne French Captaynes into Florida* (London, 1587, 4to). The same year *De Orbe Novo Petri Martyni Angliæ Delectus oris illustratio, labore et industria Richardi Hakluyti*, saw the light at Paris. This work contains the exceedingly rare copperplate map dedicated to Hakluyt and signed P. G. (supposed to be Francis Gualle), it is the first on which the name of "Virginia" appears.

In 1588 Hakluyt finally returned to England with Lady Stafford, after a residence in France of nearly five years. In 1589 he published *The Principall Navigations, Voyages, and Discoveries of the English Nation* (fol, London, 1 vol.). In the preface to this we have the announcement of the intended publication of the first terrestrial globe made in

<sup>4</sup> That the MS was not in London is certain, as we know that the first lecture of the kind was delivered in the metropolitan on the 4th of November 1588 by Thomas Hood.

<sup>5</sup> Now first printed from a contemporary MS, with an introduction by H. Hoyle and Woots, Ltd. D., edited by Charles Deane, *Collections of Manuscript Hist. Soc., Camb. Eng.*, 1877, 8vo.

England by Molyneux (see Gloss) On the 20th April 1590 he was instituted to the rectory of Withingsett cum Bockford, Suffolk The magnum opus of Hakluyt is *The Principal Navigations, Voyages, Traffiques, and Discoveries of the English Nation* (fol., London, 1598-1600, 3 vols.) Some few copies contain an exceedingly rare map,<sup>1</sup> the first on the Mercator projection made in England according to the true principles laid down by Edward Wright Hakluyt's great work, though but little read, has been truly called the "pious epic of the modern English nation" It is an invaluable treasure of material for the history of geographical discovery and colonization, which has secured for its author a lasting reputation for research and industry<sup>2</sup> In 1601 Hakluyt edited a translation from the Portuguese of Antonio Galvao, *The Discoveries of the World* (4to, London) On the 4th May 1603 he was installed prebendary of Westminster, and in the following year elected archdeacon of Westminster In the licence of his second marriage (30th March 1604) he is also described as one of the chaplains of the Savoy, and his will contains a reference to chambers occupied by him there up to the time of his death, in another official document he is styled D D<sup>3</sup> His last publication was a translation of Fernando de Soto's discoveries in Florida, entitled *Vergina, richly valued* (London, 1609, 4to) This work was intended to encourage the young colony of Virginia, of which Hakluyt was so zealous a promoter, "to whom England is more indebted for its American possession than to any man of that age"<sup>4</sup>

A number of Hakluyt's MSS., sufficient to form a fourth volume of his collections of 1590-1600, fell into the hands of Samuel Purchas, who inserted them in an abridged form in his *Pilgrimes* (1625-26, fol.) Others are preserved at Oxford (Bib Bod MS., Seld B 8), which consist chiefly of notes gathered from contemporary authors Hakluyt died in 1616, and was buried in Westminster Abbey (November 20), by an error in the abbey register it stands under the year 1626 His best monument is the society that flourishes under his name Founded in 1846 for the purpose of printing rare and unpublished voyages and travels, "it aims at opening by this means an easier access to sources of a branch of knowledge which yields to none in importance, and is superior to most in agreeable variety" The fifty-seven volumes that have been published by the society since its formation have been edited with great discrimination and care, and have come to be regarded as the standard text-books upon their respective subjects Some are out of print, and others have passed through two editions The latest volume published is a rousée in a new form of *The Itineraries Voyages*, the first work published by the society (O n c)

IIAKODADI, or HAKODATE, a seaport town of Japan, in the old province of Hokkaido, on the southern coast of the island of Yezo or Yeso, in 41° 49' N lat and 140° 47' E long Its general position, as has been frequently remarked, is not unlike that of Gibraltar, as the town is built along the north-western base of a rocky promontory (1100 feet in height) which forms the eastern boundary of a spacious bay, and is united to the mainland by a narrow sandy isthmus At the time of Captain Perry's visit in 1851 few of the buildings of Hakodadi, with the exception of its temples and fire-proof warehouses, were more than one story high, and the roofs were made of slight shingles protected against the effects of wind-storms by heavy stones

<sup>1</sup> Supposed to be the "new map" of the *Twelfth Night*, act ii, scene 2. See *Trans of New Shakespeare Soc.*, 1877-78, p. 1, 879.  
<sup>2</sup> In 1809-12 was published a new edition of it by Woodfall & Evans in 5 vols The last two contain pieces not comprised in the coll. edition of 1698-1699.  
<sup>3</sup> *Westminster Abbey Registers*, edited by J. L. Chester, 1876, pp. 118.

<sup>4</sup> Robertson, *Hist of America*, vol iv p 171, 10th ed

Since that date the town has increased considerably in extent, and many of the more modern buildings, such as the new custom-house and the residences of the Government officials, have been erected in a more solid European style In 1870 there were four European hotels A new bund or embankment has been constructed along the shore, and several quays of the town have been laid out in better fashion by the local authorities Hakodadi is the residence of the governor of Yezo, and the seat of an arsenal There are four Buddhist and three Shinto temples,—the most important of the former being the Zhioghen-ji, or Country's Protector, built about 1830 A medical college is maintained in connexion with the Government hospital, and in the neighbourhood of the town an agricultural college has been erected since 1873 The Bay of Hakodadi, says Sir Rutherford Alcock, is completely land-locked, easy of access, and spacious enough for the largest vessels to ride in it, with deep water almost up to the shore, and good holding-ground The Russians have for a considerable time used it as a winter station for their ships, because their own harbours on the coast of Kamchatka are annually frozen up Their establishment formerly comprised a handsome consular residence, a hospital, warehouses, and workshops, but the consulate was removed from the port in 1871 Hakodadi has a large local trade, but neither its exports nor its imports are very extensive, and as a commercial centre it will not improbably be superseded by Esanmo The exports comprise awami, cuttlefish, sea-weed, beche de mer (uriko), sea-otter skins, and deer horns, as many as 30,000 pairs of the last being sometimes shipped in a year Lead and coal mines exist in the neighbourhood There is telegraphic communication with Tokio (Yedo), and a new road has been made to Sapporo (Satsupou) The population of the town is estimated at 30,000, in 1872 the foreign settlement had 22 residents Hakodadi, originally a fishing village belonging to a local daimio, was purchased by the Government and incorporated in the imperial fief of Matsumai It was opened to American commerce in 1854, and there are now also Danish, German, and English consuls In 1868 the town was taken by the rebel fleet, but it was recovered by the mikado in 1869

HAL, a town of Belgium, province of South Brabant, is situated on the Senne and the Charleroi canal, 9 miles SSW of Brussels It has a beautiful Gothic church of the 14th century, very much resorted to by pilgrims on account of a famous miracle-working image of the Virgin The church has been enriched by a large number of votive gifts, and contains a beautifully carved high altar of white marble The principal industries are tanning, soap boiling, the manufacture of paper, and salt-refining The population in 1869 was 6406

HALA, or HALZA (formerly known as Murtizabad), a town in Hyderabad district, Sind, India, situated on the Aghary canal and immediately connected with the Trunk Road at two points, 25° 48' 30" N lat, 68° 27' 30" E long It was long famous for its glazed pottery and tiles, made from a fine clay obtained from the Indus, mixed with flints The *dhani*, or trouser-cloths, for which the town is also celebrated, are manufactured to the value of £750 yearly Hala was built about 1800 in consequence of old Hala, 2 miles distant, being threatened with encroachment by the Indus Among the antiquities round which the new town has grown up are the tomb and mosque of a piri or saint, who died in the 16th century, and in whose honour a fair, largely attended by Mahometans from all parts of the province, is held twice a year The local trade, chiefly of grain, piece goods, *ghis*, cotton, and sugar, is valued approximately at £8900, the transit trade (in the same articles) at about £700 Population (1872), 4096, including 2645 Mahometans and 1234 Hindus

**HALAS**, a corporate town of Hungary, in the mezeo or country of Pest-Pilis Solt Kis-Kun, is situated about 78 miles S S E from Budapest, in 46° 24' N lat and 19° 31' E long.

The most noteworthy buildings are the Calvinist and Roman Catholic churches, and the Jewish synagogue. Halas contains also a Protestant gymnasium, various literary institutions, and a local tribunal. The inhabitants of the town and neighbourhood are mostly engaged in cattle-breeding and agricultural pursuits. Not far from Halas is a lake of the same name, containing an island which was once fortified, and served as a place of refuge to the inhabitants from the incursions of the Turks. Prior to 1876 Halas belonged to the old district of Little Cumania. In the spring of 1879 the town was much injured by floods. The population in 1870 amounted to 13,127, of whom the greater number were Magyars.

**HALBERSTADT**, the chief town of a circle in the government district of Magdeburg, Prussian province of Saxony, is situated in a beautiful and fertile country on the Holzeme, a tributary of the Elbe, and at the junction point of four railways, 20 miles SW of Magdeburg. It has an antique appearance, and in a large number of the buildings the mediæval wood architecture is still preserved. About a mile and a half distant from Halberstadt are the *Spiegelche Berge*, from which there is obtained a fine view of the surrounding country. The town possesses a cathedral in the Pointed style, dating from the 13th and 14th centuries, and restored between 1830 and 1871, containing a rich Gothic screen of the date of 1510, other interesting antiquities, beautiful glass windows, and several valuable paintings. Of the remaining churches the only one of special interest is the *Liebfrauenkirche*, a basilica in the later Romanesque style, dating from the 12th and 13th centuries, and restored in 1848, containing noteworthy wall paintings and figures in relief. Among the other old buildings may be mentioned the town-house, dating from the 11th century and restored in the 17th century, the town hall crypt, dating from the 15th century, and the Petershof, formerly the residence of the bishop, but now used as a custom house. The principal educational establishments are the gymnasium—the new buildings for which were opened in 1875—with a library of 30,000 volumes, the real school of the first order, the normal school, connected with which there is a deaf and dumb institute, and the provincial trade school. Near the cathedral is a building called the temple of friendship which contains a collection of the portraits of the friends of the poet Gleim, who was a resident in the town, and whose house was the resort of a large circle of poets and scholars. In the same neighbourhood a beautiful monument in the Early Pointed style has been erected to the memory of those who fell in the late Franco-German war. The principal manufactures of the town are linen and woollen cloth, leather, paper, gloves, waxing, cigars, soap, oil, sugar, chemical products, brandy, and liquors. The population in 1875 was 27,757.

*Halberstadt* owes its origin to the foundation in the 9th century of the bishopric of which it became the seat. It received town rights from Bishop Arnulf in 998. It was burnt down in 1118 by the emperor Henry V, and in 1179 by Henry the Lion. At the peace of Westphalia in 1648 the bishopric was united as a principality to Brandenburg. At the Thirty years war in 1607 it was joined to Westphalia, but in 1815 it again came into the possession of Prussia. See *Lützow*, *Die Stadt zu Halberstadt*, 1857, *Itzhausen durch Halberstadt*, 2d edition 1866, and *Die Geschichte und Legende Halberstadter Stadt*, 1872, Scheffle, *Hecky's Leben und Legenden Halberstadter Stadt*, 1864, Schmidt, *Arbeitsbuch der Stadt Halberstadt*, Halle, 1878.

**HALBERT**, **HALBERD** (French, *Halberde*), a weapon consisting of an axe blade balanced by a pick and having an elongated pike-head at the end of the staff, which was usually about 5 or 6 feet in length. Various derivations have been suggested for the term, but M. Demmin seems to

have hit the right one in the German *Halb hat die "half battle axe"*. The earliest halberds represented in the miniatures of the 14th century, or preserved in the collections of Switzerland and Germany, have the axe-blade often prolonged beyond the end of the staff, and thus resemble the English bill of the 15th century. Fauchet, in his *Origines des Dignitez*, printed in 1600, states that Louis XI of France ordered certain new weapons of war called *halles barides* to be made at Angers, and other places in 1475. The Swiss had a mixed armament of pikes and halberds at the battle of Morat in 1476. We find the same mixture of billmen and halberdiers in the English army at the same time. In the 15th and 16th centuries the halberds became larger, and the blades were formed in many varieties of shape, often engraved, inlaid, or pierced in open work, and exquisitely finished as works of art. This weapon was in use in England from the reign of Henry VII to the reign of George III, when it was still carried by sergeants in the guards and other infantry regiments. It is still retained as the symbol of authority borne before the magistrates on public occasions in some of the burghs of Scotland. The Lochaber axe may be called a species of halbert furnished with a hook on the end of the staff at the back of the blade.

**HALDANE, JAMES ALEXANDER** (1768-1851), whose disinterested labours in the cause of religion have secured for his name an honorable place in the ecclesiastical history of Scotland, was the younger son of Captain James Haldane of Glenlesgair, Perthshire, and was born at Dundee on July 14, 1768. Educated first at Dundee and afterwards at the High School and university of Edinburgh, he shortly after the completion of his sixteenth year entered the service for which he had been from his childhood destined, by joining the "Duke of Montrose" East India-man as a midshipman. After four voyages to India he in the summer of 1793 was nominated to the command of the "Melville Castle", but having, during a long and unexpected detention of his ship, begun a careful study of the Bible, he came under deep religious impressions and, somewhat abruptly resolving to quit the naval profession, returned to Scotland before his ship had sailed. About the year 1796 he became acquainted with the celebrated evangelical divine, Simon of Cambridge, in whose society he made through Scotland more than one tour, in the course of which he endeavoured by tract-distribution and other means to awaken others to somewhat of that interest in religious subjects which he himself so strongly felt. In May 1797 he preached at Gilmerton near Edinburgh, his first sermon with a success which was considered to be very encouraging, and during the next few years he made repeated missionary journeys, preaching wherever he could obtain hearers, and generally in the open air. Not originally dialytic to the Church of Scotland, he was gradually driven by the hostility of the Assembly and the exigencies of his position into a separatistic attitude, and in 1799 he was ordained on the principles of Independency as pastor of a large congregation in Edinburgh, to which he continued gratuitously to minister for more than fifty years, and in 1808 he made public avowal of his conversion to Baptist views. As advancing years compelled him to withdraw from the more exhausting labours of itinerancy and open-air preaching, he sought more and more to influence the discussion of current religious and theological questions by means of the press, and by numerous pamphlets took part in the controversies connected with the names of Edward Irving, Erskine of Linlathen, Campbell of Bow, and others. His latest works were a treatise on the *Doctrine of the Atonement* (1845) and an *Exposition of the Epistle to the Galatians* (1848). He died on the 8th of February 1851.

**HALDANE, ROBERT** (1764–1842), elder brother of the preceding, and intimately associated with him in many of his labours, was born in London on February 28, 1764. After attending classes in the Dundee grammar school and in the High School and university of Edinburgh he in 1780 joined H. M. S. "Monarch," of which his uncle Lord Duncan was at that time in command, and in the following year was transferred to the "Foudroyant," on board of which, during the night engagement with the "Pégase," he distinguished himself so much that Captain Jervis (afterwards Lord St Vincent) wrote to Admiral Duncan predicting a brilliant future for his nephew. Haldane was afterwards present at the relief of Gibraltar, but at the peace of 1783 he finally left the navy, and soon afterwards settled on his estate of Airthrey, near Stirling. The earlier phases of the French Revolution as they occurred attracted his attention and at first excited his deepest sympathy, a sympathy which induced him, at the cost of making many enemies, to avow his strong disapproval of the war with France. As his bright and oversanguine visions of a new order of things to be ushered in by political change disappeared, he, unlike Wordsworth's "Solitary," began to direct his thoughts to religious subjects, and underwent a spiritual change which, while neither sudden nor violent, was decisive and complete. Resolving to devote himself and his means wholly to the advancement of Christianity, his first proposal for that end, made in 1796, was to organize a vast mission to Bengal, of which he was to provide the entire expense, with this view the greater part of his estate was sold, but after every arrangement had been well nigh completed, the East India Company refused to sanction the scheme, which therefore had to be reluctantly abandoned. In December 1797 he joined his brother and some others in the formation of the "Society for the Propagation of the Gospel at Home", and in building chapels or "tabernacles" for its congregations, in supporting its missionaries, and in maintaining institutions for the education of young men to carry on its work, he in the course of the twelve years which followed is stated on good authority to have expended upwards of £70,000. In 1816 he visited the Continent, and first at Geneva and afterwards in Montauban (1817) occupied himself in lecturing with surprising success to theological students, among whom were Malan, Monod, and Mele D'Anigné. Returning to Scotland in 1819, he lived partly on his estate of Auchengrey and partly in Edinburgh, and like his brother took an active part, chiefly through the press, in many of the religious controversies of the time. He died on the 12th of December 1842.

In 1816 he published a work on the *Evidence and Authority of Divine Revelations*, and in 1819 the substance of his theological propositions in a *Commentarius sive Tractatus de Romanis*. Among his later writings, besides numerous pamphlets on what was known as "the Apocryph controversy" and on the vebetarian question, are a treatise *On the Inspiration of Scripture* (1828), which has passed through seven editions, and a later *Position of the Epistle to the Romans* (1836), which has been frequently reprinted, and has been translated into French and German. See *Memoirs of R. and J. A. Haldane*, by Alexander Haldane (1862).

**HALE, SIR MATTHEW** (1609–1676), lord chief-justice of England, was born on November 1, 1609, at Aldorley in Gloucestershire, where his father, a retired barrister, had a small estate. His paternal grandfather was a rich clothier of Wotton-under-Edge, on his mother's side he was connected with the noble family of the Poyntzes of Acton. Both his parents having died before he was five years old, the future chief-justice was placed by his guardian under the care of Mr. Stanton, vicar of Wotton-under-Edge, through whose influence he became strongly imbued with puritanical principles. There he remained till he attained his sixteenth year, when he entered Magdalen Hall, Oxford, under the tuition of the puritanical but learned Obadiah Sedgwick. At Oxford Hale devoted himself for several

terms to the study of Aristotle and Calvin with a view to holy orders, and manifested that steadiness and application which in after years secured his reputation and advancement. But suddenly there came a change. The diligent student, at first attracted by a company of strolling players, threw aside his studies, and plunged carelessly into gay society. He soon decided to change his profession, and resolved to trail a pike as a soldier under the prince of Orange in the Low Countries. Before going abroad, however, Hale found himself obliged to proceed to London in order to give instructions for his defence in a legal action which threatened to deprive him of his patrimony. His leading counsel was the celebrated Sergeant Glanville, who, perceiving in the acuteness and sagacity of his youthful client a peculiar fitness for the legal profession, succeeded, with much difficulty, in inducing him to renounce his military for a legal career, and on the 8th November 1620 Hale became a member of the honourable society of Lincoln's Inn.

He immediately resumed his habits of intense application. The rules which he laid down for himself, and which are still extant in his handwriting, prescribe sixteen hours a day of close application, and prove, not only the great mental power, but also the extraordinary physical strength he must have possessed, and for which indeed, during his residence at the university, he had been remarkable. During the period allotted to his preliminary studies, he read over and over again all the year-books, reports, and law treatises in print, and at the Tower of London and other antiquarian repositories examined and carefully studied the records from the foundation of the English monarchy down to his own time. Even the common-place book which he composed as the result of his study and research may, according to Lord Campbell, "be considered a *corpus juris* embracing and methodizing all that an English lawyer on any emergency could desire to know." But Hale did not confine himself to law. He dedicated no small portion of his time to the study of pure mathematics, to investigations in physics and chemistry, and even to anatomy and architecture, and there can be no doubt that this varied learning enhanced considerably the value of many of his judicial decisions.

Hale was called to the bar in 1637, and almost at once found himself in full practice. Though neither a fluent speaker nor bold pleader, in a very few years he was at the head of his profession. He entered public life at perhaps the most critical period of English history. Two parties were contending in the state, and their obstinacy could not fail to produce a most bitter collision. But amidst the confusion Hale stepped a middle course, rising in reputation, and an object of solicitation from both parties. Taking Pomponius Atticus as his political model, he was persuaded that a man, a lawyer, and a judge could best serve his country and benefit his countrymen by holding aloof from partisanship and its violent prejudices, which are so apt to distort and confuse the judgment. But he is best vindicated from the charges of selfishness and cowardice by the thoughts and meditations contained in his private diaries and papers, where the purity and honour of his motives are clearly seen. It has been said, but without certainty, that Hale was engaged as counsel for the earl of Strafford, he certainly acted for Archbishop Laud, Lord Magnus, Christopher Love, the duke of Hamilton, and others. It is also said that he was ready to plead on the side of Charles I. had that monarch submitted to the court. The parliament having gained the ascendancy, Hale signed the Solemn League and Covenant, and was a member of the famous Assembly of Divines at Westminster in 1644, but although he would undoubtedly have preferred a Presbyterian form of church government, he had

no serious objection to the system of modified Episcopacy proposed by Ussher. Consistently with his desire to remain neutral, Hale took the engagement to the Commonwealth as he had done to the king, and in 1653, already sergeant, he became a judge in the Court of Common Pleas. Two years afterwards he sat in Cromwell's parliament as one of the members for Gloucestershire. After the death of the Protector, however, he declined to act as a judge under Richard Cromwell, although he represented Oxford in Richard's parliament. After the Restoration in 1660 Hale was very graciously received by Charles II, and in the same year was appointed chief justice of the exchequer, and accepted, with extreme reluctance, the honour of knighthood. After holding the office of chief justice for eleven years he was raised to the higher dignity of lord chief-justice, which he held till February 1670, when his failing health compelled him to resign. He retired to his native Alderley, where he died on December 25th of the same year. He was twice married, and survived all his ten children save two.

As a judge, Sir Matthew Hale discharged his duties with resolute independence and careful diligence. Lord Campbell says of him that "he is certainly to be considered the most eminent judge who ever filled the office [of chief justice], and being promoted to be chief justice of England, he gave new dignity to the supreme magistracy which had been illustrated by Gesonius, by Rotomaeus, and by Coke." His sincere piety made him the intimate friend of Barrow, Tillotson, Wilkins, and Stillingfleet, as well as of the Non-conformist leaders Baxter. He is chargeable, however, with the condemnation and execution of two poor women tried before him for witchcraft in 1664, a kind of judicial murder then falling under disuse. He is also reproached with having hastened the execution of a soldier for whom he had reason to believe a pardon was preparing.

Of Hale's legal works the only two of importance are his *History of the Pleas in Common, or History of the Pleas of the Crown*, first published in 1739, and the *History of the Common Law of England, with an Analysis of the Law*, &c., 1718. Among his numerous religious writings the *Contemplations, Moral and Divine*, occupy the first place. Others are *The Primitive Originals of Man*, 1677, *Of the Nature of True Religion*, &c., 1684, *A Brief Abstract of the Christian Religion*, 1688. One of his most popular works is the collection of *Letters of Advice to his Children and Grandchildren*. He also wrote an *Essay touching the Creation and Non-creation of Fixed Bodies*, 1678, *Discourses Negro, or Observations touching the Antientian Experiment*, &c., 1675, and a translation of the *Life of Pompeius Africanus*, by Cornelius Nepos. His efforts in poetry were inauspicious. He left his valuable collection of MSS and records to the library of Lincoln's Inn. His life has been written by Baret, 1682, by Williams, 1836, by Boswell, in his *Lives of Eminent Lawyers*, in 1838, and by Lord Campbell, in his *Lives of the Chief Justices*, in 1849.

HALES, STEPHEN (1677–1761), physiologist and inventor, was born at Beckenbourn in Kent, on the 7th September 1677. He was the sixth son of Thomas Hales, whose father, Sir Robert Hales, was created baronet by Charles II in 1670. Of his early education little is known, but in June 1696 he was entered as a pensioner of Bene's (now Corpus Christi) College, Cambridge, with the view of taking holy orders. On 16th April 1702 he was elected and in February 1703 admitted to a fellowship. He received the degree of master of arts in 1703, and of bachelor of divinity in 1711. While at college one of his most intimate friends was William Stukeley, with whom he studied anatomy, chemistry, &c. In 1710 Hales was presented to the perpetual curacy of Teddington in Middlesex, where he remained all his life, notwithstanding that he was subsequently appointed rector of Pollock in Somerset, and later of Faringdon in Hampshire. In March 1717 he was elected fellow of the Royal Society, to whose *Transactions* he contributed many valuable papers. In 1732 he was named one of a committee for establishing

a colony in Georgia, and the next year he received the degree of doctor of divinity. He was appointed almoner to the princess dowager of Wales in 1760. On the death of Sir Hans Sloane in 1753, Hales was chosen foreign associate of the French Academy of Sciences. He died at Teddington, January 4, 1761.

Hales is celebrated as the inventor of a "ventilator," by means of which fresh air was introduced into jails, hospitals, mines, ships' holds, &c. In the four years (1749–52) after its introduction into the Savoy prison, only 4 prisoners died, while previously the mortality had been from 50 to 100 per annum. The invention met with immediate favour, especially in France. Had it been the design of other inventions by means of which sea water was distilled, coal cleaned and preserved, meat preserved on long voyages, &c.

His chief writings are his *Statistical Essays* (see CHITRELL), vol. v p. 461, consisting of *Vegetable Statistics, or an Account of some Statistical Experiments on the Sap in Vegetables* (1747), and *Hemostatics, or an Account of Hydraulick and Hydrostatick Experiments made on the Blood and Blood vessels of Animals* (1738). His essay on *The Means of Dissolving the Stone in the Bladder*, &c., gained him the Copley gold medal in 1737. His *Advertisement to the Doctors of Law, Divinity, &c.*, appeared in 1734, the *Vegetable Statics*, translated by Buffon, in 1755, and the *Hemostatics*, by M. de Sauvages, in 1744. For sketch of his life, with portrait, see *Gale's Chronicle*, 1877, pt. 16–17.

HALEVY, JACQUES FRANÇOIS FÉODONTAL (1799–1862), a celebrated French musician, was born May 27, 1799, at Paris. He studied at the Paris Conservatoire under Berton and Cherubini, and in 1819 gained the grand prix de Rome with a cantata called *L'Esperance*. In accordance with the conditions of his scholarship he started for Rome, where he devoted himself to the study of Italian music, and wrote an opera and various minor works. His first opera produced in Paris after his return from Italy was called *L'Artisan*, which saw the light at the Théâtre Feytaud in 1827, apparently without much success. Other works of minor importance, and now forgotten, followed, amongst which only a ballet named *Isabelle Lescuyer*, produced in 1830, deserves mention. Five years later, in 1835, HALEVY produced the tragic opera *La Juive* and the comic opera *L'Eclair*, and on these works his immortality is mainly founded. Both have kept the stage to the present day, and will probably survive changes of taste even greater than those which music has undergone in France during the last forty years. *The Jewess* is in every way representative of the French grand-opéra, the modern outgrowth of Gluck's music-drama with a strong admixture of the Italian element and of an excess of spectacular splendour wholly strange to the classic simplicity of the original. It is curious that the *grand opéra*, although an essentially national product of France, was both imitated and brought to its highest perfection by two Germans—Gluck and Meyerbeer. The genius of the latter was fatal to HALEVY's fame. By the side of the *Huguenots* the merits of *La Juive* appear in almost diminutive proportions. At the same time HALEVY's work ought not to be treated with contempt. It is full of fine dramatic features, and especially the introduction of the Jewish element—with which HALEVY, himself a Jew, was well acquainted—gives a peculiar interest on this score. *L'Eclair* is a curiosity of musical literature. It is written for two tenors and two sopranos, without a chorus, and displays the composer's mastery over the most refined effects of instrumentation and vocalization in a favourable light. After these two works, to which HALEVY owed his fame and his seat at the Institute, he wrote numerous operas of various genres, amongst which only *La Reine de Chypre*, a spectacular piece analysed by Wagner in one of his Paris letters (1841), and *La Tempête*, in 3 acts, written for Her Majesty's Theatre, London (1850), need be referred to. In addition to his

productive work Halévy also rendered valuable services as a teacher. He was professor at the Conservatoire from 1837 till his death—some of the most successful amongst the younger composers in France, such as Gounod, Victor Massé, and Georges Bizet, the author of *Carmen*, being amongst his pupils. Halévy also tried his hand at literature, and there exists an agreeable volume of *Souvenirs et Portraits* from his pen. He died at Nice, March 17, 1863.

HALIBURTON, THOMAS CHANDLER (1796–1865), long a judge of Nova Scotia, and a popular literary satirist, was born at Windsor, Nova Scotia, in 1796, and received his education there, at King's College. He was called to the bar in 1820, and took part in the legislation of his native province as a member of the House of Assembly. He distinguished himself as a barrister, and in 1828 was promoted to the bench as a chief justice of the common pleas. But it is as the brilliant humorist and satirist that he is now remembered, for his labours alike as a barrister and a member of parliament were limited to his own province, and could scarcely beget anything beyond a local reputation. Yet confined as he thus was to so narrow a sphere, a true estimate of its disadvantages is necessary in order to do justice to the vigorous individuality of his writings. He was a native of what was then a small and isolated maritime province, detached from Canada. Its exports consisted chiefly of lumber and the produce of its fisheries, and with those trade was carried on with Great Britain, the West Indies, and the United States. Its entire population at the time when Haliburton was called to the bar, including Indians, African refugees from the States, and the Acadian descendants of the original French population, did not amount to 97,000. The English settlers were largely composed of refugees from the former British colonies, animated by the strong Conservative sympathies of the old colonial loyalists. The French Acadians were Roman Catholics, and then national traditions and religion equally tended to alienate them from the neighbouring republic.

In politics Haliburton adhered through life to the Conservative party, and the influence of his early associations is traceable in most of his writings. He was still at the bar when he wrote *An Historical and Statistical Account of Nova Scotia*, in 2 vols. Canada, it will be remembered, then consisted of Upper and Lower Canada only, and, with the French population of the latter and nearer province, was even stranger to the Nova Scotian than the New England States. The lessons which judicial duties secured admitted of literary relaxations in which Judge Haliburton's fine sense of the humorous had free play, and in 1835 he contributed anonymously to a local paper, a series of letters professedly depicting the peculiarities of the genuine Yankee. These sketches, which abounded in clever pictures of national and individual character, drawn with great satirical humour, were collected in 1837, and published under the title of *The Clockmaker, or Sayings and Doings of Samuel Stock of Stockville*. A second series followed in 1838, and a third in 1840. *The Atlantic, or Sam Stock in England* (2 vols. 8vo), was the result of a visit there in 1811. This also was followed up by a second series in 1844. His other works include—*The Old Judge, or Life in a Colony*, *The Letter Bag of the Great Western*, *Rule and Main rule of the English in America*, *Tracts of American Humour*, and *Nature and Human Nature*.

While the judge was thus diligent in his literary recreations, he continued to secure popular esteem in his judicial capacity. In 1840 he was promoted to be a judge of the supreme court, but within two years he resigned his seat on the bench, removed to England, and after a time entered parliament as the representative of Launceston, in the Conservative interest. His literary reputation awoke expecta-

tions which were not fulfilled. The bar has rarely proved to be an apt school for training the parliamentary debater, and he was too far advanced in life to adapt himself to the novel requirements of the English House of Commons. The last time he spoke he was listened to with interest on the Canadian defence. But the tenure of his seat for Launceston was brought to an end by the dissolution of the parliament in 1865, and he did not again offer himself to the constituency. His death followed in the month of August of the same year, at Gordon House, Islesworth, when he was in his seventieth year.<sup>1</sup>

HALIBUT. See HOLMUT.

HALICARNASSUS, an ancient Greek city on the south-western coast of Asia Minor, built on a picturesque and advantageous site at the northern end of the Carian Gulf or Gulf of Cos. It originally occupied only the small island of Zephyria, close to the shore, but in course of time this island was united to the mainland and the city extended so as to incorporate Salmasia, an older town of the Leleges and Carians. About the foundation of Halicarnassus various traditions were current, but they agree in the main point as to its being a Dorian colony, and the figures on its coins, such as the head of Medusa or Minerva, the head of Neptune, or the trident, give support to the statement that the mother cities were Troezen and Argos. The inhabitants appear to have accepted as the legendary founder Antich, mentioned by Strabo, and was proud of the title of Antichad. At an early period Halicarnassus was a member of the Dorian Hexapolis, which included Cos, Cnidus, Lindus, Camiuis, and Lalyas, but one of the citizens, Agasicles, having taken home the prize tripod which he had won in the Trojapian games instead of dedicating it according to custom to the Trojapian Apollo, the city was cut off from the league. In the time of Xerxes we find Halicarnassus under the sway of a certain Artemisia, who made herself famous by the assistance she rendered to the great Persian invader. Pigres, her brother or son, was the reputed author of the *Batrachomyomachia*. Of Pisindarus, her son and successor in the sovereignty, little is known, but Lygdamis, who next attained to power, is notorious for having put to death the poet Panyassis and caused Herodotus, the greatest of the Halicarnassians, to leave his native city (c. 457 B.C.). About the close of the 5th century B.C., the power of Athens became predominant over Halicarnassus and other Dorian cities of Asia, but the peace of Antaleidas in 387 made them subservient to Persia, and it was under Mausolus, a Persian satrap of almost independent authority, that Halicarnassus attained its highest prosperity. Enriched by the natural strength and beauty of its position, Mausolus removed thither from Mylasa, and increasing its population by the inhabitants of six towns of the Leleges, devoted himself to its embellishment and defence. On his death he was succeeded by his widow and sister, Artemisia, whose military ability was shown by the stratagem by which she captured the Rhodian vessels attacking his city, and whose magnificence and taste have been perpetuated to all time by the "Mausoleum," this monument she erected to her husband's memory. In the execution of this wonderful enterprise she employed the architects Satyrus and Pythius.

<sup>1</sup> Judge Haliburton was descended from the branch of the Newmans and Hentons family which figures in the genealogical memorials of the Haliburtons in their relation to that of Sir Walter Scott, whose paternal grandmother was Barbara Haliburton. The note of all the families of the name drawn up by the father of the poet and novelist was prepared in reply to inquiries of the father of Judge Haliburton, with a view to the establishment of his claims to certain family property. Of a younger branch of the Newmans family that went to Jamaica, one member removed to Massachusetts. A son of his, the father of the judge, migrated to Nova Scotia, and there, in 1766, he revived old hereditary rights, and reclaimed relationship with the original Scottish stock.



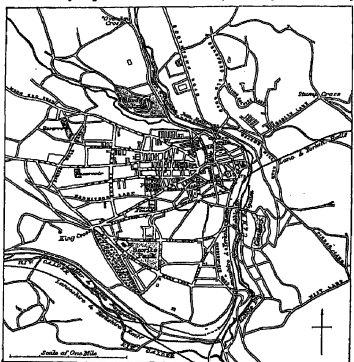
and the sculptors Scopas, Lescharos, Bryaxis, and Timotheus; and though shared before the completion, they continued it with all the enthusiasm of artists. In the history of Hali-car-nassus the next important events were connected with the conquests of Alexander the Great. Memnon, satrap of the west coast, having taken refuge within its walls after the battle of Granicus, it was besieged by the Macedonians, captured, and plundered. Not long afterwards we find the citizens receiving the present of a gymnasium from Ptolemy, and building in his honour a stoa or portico; but the city never recovered altogether from the disasters of the siege, and Cicero describes it as almost deserted. The site is now occupied by the town of Budrum, but the ancient walls can still be traced in nearly all their circuit, and the position of several of the temples and public buildings can be fixed with considerable certainty.

From the ruins of the Mausoleum sufficient has been recovered by the excavations carried out in 1867 by C. T. Newton to enable a fairly complete restoration of its design. According to Mr Pullen, Mr Newton's collaborator, the building consisted of five parts: a basement or podium, a pteron or enclosure of columns, a pyramid and pedicels, and a chariot group. The basement, probably 51 feet in height, and covering an area of 114 feet by 92, was built of blocks of granitic stone and faced with marble, the monoliths of the plain-courses being possibly broken by one or more bells of frieze. The pteron, 37½ feet in height, consisted (according to Pliny) of thirty-six columns of the Ionic order, enclosing a square cella, the walls of which were relieved by friezes. From the portions that have been recovered it appears that the principal frieze of the pteron represented combats of Greeks and Amazons. "Throughout," says Mr Newton, "there is a skillful opposition of male and draped male and female forms; but the groups and figures are much less intertwined than in the Parthenon and Phigalian friezes. The whole surface was coloured, the ground of the relief being ultramarine and the flesh a dim red, while the drapery and armour were picked out with various hues." Fragments have been found of two other friezes of doubtful position in the monument, one representing a chariot race and the other a centaur fight. Above the pteron rose the pyramid, approximately 108 feet long and 86 feet wide at the base, and mounting by 24 steps to an apex or pedestal, which possibly had a length of 26 feet 6 inches and a breadth of 20 feet. On this apex stood the quadriga or chariot with the figure of Mausoleus himself and an attendant deity acting as his charioteer. The height of the statue of Mausoleus—it has happily been preserved and forms part of the treasures of the British Museum—is 6 feet 9½ inches without the plinth. The hair rising from the forehead falls in thick waves on each side of the face and descends nearly to the shoulder; the beard is short and close, the face square and massive, the eyes deep set under overhanging brows, the mouth well formed with settled calm about the lips. The drapery, consisting of a chiton and mantle, is grandly composed. Such are the main features of the great Mausoleum which deservedly ranked among the wonders of the world. The minor edifices and sculptural remains of Hali-car-nassus are of secondary interest. Of well-preserved inscriptions the number is comparatively few; but one or two (such as that containing the names of Lygiamis and Panyseis) are of no small interest to the archaeologist.

For further details see *Revue française des Sciences Archéologiques*, Hamilton's *Researches in Asia Minor*; and Newton's *History of Discoveries at Halicarnassus*, 1868-9, and his *Travels in the Levant*, 1865.

**HALIFAX**, a municipal and parliamentary borough and market-town of England, in the northern division of the West Riding of Yorkshire, is situated on a gentle acclivity almost surrounded by hills, on the small river Hebble near its junction with the Calder, 7 miles south-west of Bradford. Originally its streets were narrow and irregular, but many of the older houses have been pulled down and new streets opened up, while the constant additions made to it through the rapid increase of population have completely changed its appearance. The principal buildings are the parish church of St John, the restoration of which was completed in 1879 at a cost of £16,000, a structure in the Perpendicular style, of different dates, and having the western tower 117 feet in height; All Souls Church, begun in 1850 from the designs of Sir Gilbert Scott, and erected at the expense of Mr Edward Akroyd, in the Early Decorated style, very richly ornamented with statues and carvings in Italian marble, serpentina, and alabaster, and consisting of nave, aisles, transepts, and chancel, with a very graceful tower and spire

at the north-west angle 236 feet in height, and a sacristy at the north-east; the Square Church, erected by the Congregationalists in 1857 at a cost of £16,000, an ornate cruciform building with a tower and elaborate crocketed spire rising to a height of 235 feet; the town-hall, completed in 1863 after the designs of Sir Charles Barry at a cost of £40,000; the infirmary, a large and elegant building in which medical and surgical aid is afforded to outdoor as well as indoor patients; the Waterhouse charity school, a handsome set of buildings forming three sides of a quadrangle, erected in 1850; the Crossley almshouses, erected and endowed by Sir Francis and Mr Joseph Crossley; the place-hall, a large quadrangular structure occupying more than 2 acres of ground, erected in 1799 for the lodgings and sale of piece goods, but now used as a market for fish and vegetables; the free grammar school, founded in 1585 under royal charter for instruction in the classical languages; the Crossley orphan home and school, built by the Crossley



Plan of Halifax.

- |                          |                      |                               |
|--------------------------|----------------------|-------------------------------|
| 1. Workhouse.            | 6. Square Church.    | 11. Theatre.                  |
| 2. Old Town Hall.        | 7. Piece Hall.       | 12. Prince Albert's Monument. |
| 3. Town Hall.            | 8. Post-Office.      | 13. Crossley Orphan Home.     |
| 4. Mechanics' Institute. | 9. St John's Church. |                               |
| 5. St John's Church.     | 10. Infirmary.       |                               |

brothers at a cost of £48,000; the museum, the oddfellows' hall, the working men's college, the mechanics' institute, the assembly and concert rooms, and the theatre. There are three public parks, viz., Savile Park, 50 acres in extent; the People's Park, 12½ acres, laid out in a highly ornamental style from the designs of Sir Joseph Paxton, and presented to the town in 1858 by Sir Francis Crossley; and the Shrogg's Park, 25 acres, opened in 1877. The North Bridge, a fine structure of iron, spans the Hebble valley in two arches. Halifax derives its importance from its manufactures of cloth, which began in the 15th century. It ranks in Yorkshire with Leeds, Bradford, and Huddersfield as a seat of the woollen and worsted manufacture. The principal staples are carpets, cashmeres, orlanses, coburgs, merinos, castings, alpines, damasks, baizes, broad and narrow cloths, kerseys, blankets, muslin-de-laines, shalloons, and figured vestings. A considerable number of persons are employed in iron-works, machine works, and chemical works, and in the

neighbouring coal-mines and stone quarries. The borough sends two members to parliament. The parish is the largest in Great Britain, embracing 79,300 acres. The population of the municipal and parliamentary borough in 1861 was 67,014, and in 1871 (with an extended area of 87,400 acres) 65,510.

Two derivations are given for the name Halifax. According to Camden it means "holly hilt," and he accounts for the origin of the name from the fact that the head of a virgin who had been murdered by a wicked clerk, was suspended on a tree in the neighbourhood, which came to be much resorted to by pilgrims. According to another account, the name means "holly flow," and is derived from a image of St. John the Baptist preserved in a neighbouring village. The first mention of the town is in the 12th century, when its church was given by William, earl of Warren, to the priory of Leazes in Sussex. When its manufactures commenced in the beginning of the 18th century the number of its houses was only 15, but they had increased in 1810 to 520. It is said to have received a considerable accession to its inhabitants and impulse to its prosperity from the merchants who fled from the Methuill line to escape the persecution levied out under the auspices of the duke of Alva. In 1648 it was garrisoned by the forces of the parliament, and near it a place still called the Bloody Field an engagement took place between them and the royalists. In the forest of Hindwick, then coextensive with the parish of Halifax, there at one time existed a custom called the "Right-Law," according to which any person suspected to be in the unlawful possession of goods to the value of 18d. was tried by the sixth burgesses of the town, and a sentence of death pronounced on a market day by a kind of assembly resembling the modern guillotine. The last execution took place in 1650. A number of eminent men have been born in the town or neighbourhood of Halifax, including the mathematician Henry Briggs, archbishop Tillson, Sir Henry Savile, and John Foster. Daniel Defoe resided for some time in the town.

**HALIFAX**, a city and seaport of British North America, capital of Nova Scotia, is situated on the south-east coast of the province on the declivity of a hill about 260 feet in height, rising gradually from the south-west side of Chebucto Bay or Halifax harbour, a deep inlet of the sea. The hill is commanded by a crag about a mile in circumference and of great strength, and the harbour is defended by several forts and batteries. Originally the houses were chiefly of wood plastered or stuccoed, but the frequent recurrence of fires has led to a more general use of stone or brick as building materials. Many of them have an imposing and elegant appearance, and the streets are spacious and regularly laid out, crossing each other at right angles. Including its suburbs the city is from 2 to 3 miles long and about 1 mile broad. The principal buildings are the Government house, the official residence of the lieutenant-governor of Nova Scotia, a solid sombre-looking structure at the south of the town, the provincial building, near the centre of the town, 140 feet long by 70 feet broad, with a fine Ionic colonnade, and comprising the Government offices, the post-office, the city library and the provincial museum, the parliament building, the courthouse, the admiral's house, the exchange, the Roman Catholic cathedral of St. Mary, the rooms of the young men's Christian association, the Wellington barracks, the military hospital, the lunatic asylum, the workhouse, the jail, and the penitentiary. The educational establishments include the Dalhousie college and university, the St. Mary's Roman Catholic college, the Presbyterian theological college, the High School, the almshouse of industry for girls, two orphan asylums, a blind asylum, a lunatic asylum for the Lower Provinces, two industrial schools, and nearly twenty public schools. A lighthouse has been erected on the west side of the entrance to the harbour on a small island off Sambro Cape. After passing Sambro the course for large vessels is to the west of McNab's Island, on which a lighthouse has also been erected, but there is also a passage sufficient for small vessels to the east of the island. Recently a lighthouse has been erected on the west side of St. George's Island opposite the city. Halifax is with

Great Britain, the British colonies, and the United States. In 1878 the number of ships that entered was 887, with a tonnage of 347,836. The value of imports was \$4,991,306, and of exports \$4,102,335. The imports are chiefly manufactures from England, manufactures and produce from the United States, and sugar, molasses, rum, and other products from the West Indies, the chief exports are dried and pickled fish, timber, cattle, agricultural and dairy produce, fur, and whale and seal oil. Halifax is now used instead of Portland in the State of Maine as the winter port (the St. Lawrence being closed with ice) for the Dominion of Canada. The principal industries of Halifax are nonferrous, brewing, distilling, sugar refining, and the manufacture of woollen and cotton goods, paper, leather, tobacco, gunpowder, agricultural and musical instruments, carriages, machinery, candles, and soap. On account of its fine air and the beautiful scenery of the neighbourhood, Halifax has a high reputation as a watering-place. An abundant supply of water for the city is obtained from two lakes 2 miles distant. The city is the seat of an Anglican bishop and a Roman Catholic archbishop. Nearly one-third of the population is Roman Catholic. It is named after the earl of Halifax, and was founded by Governor Cornwallis in 1749. In 1790 it contained only 700 houses and 4000 inhabitants. It was declared a free port in 1817, at which time the number of houses was 1200. The population in 1861 was 25,026, and in 1871, 29,582.

**HALIFAX**, CHARLES MONTAGUE, EARL OF (1661-1715), English statesman and poet, fourth son of the Honorable George Montague, who was fifth son of the first earl of Manchester, was born at Ilton, Northamptonshire, on the 16th April 1661. In his fourteenth year he was sent to Westminster school, where he was chosen king's scholar in 1677, and distinguished himself in the composition of extempore epigrams made according to custom upon those appointed for king's scholars at the time of election. In 1682 he entered Trinity College, Cambridge, where he acquired a solid knowledge of the classics and surpassed all his contemporaries at the university in logic and ethics. Latterly, however, he preferred to the abstractions of Descartes the practical philosophy of Sir Isaac Newton, and he was one of the small band of students who assisted Newton in forming the Philosophical Society of Cambridge. But it was his facility in verse-writing, and neither his scholarship nor his practical ability, that first opened up to him the way to fortune. His clever but absurdly panegyric poem on the death of Charles II., which was published in the *Book of Condolence and Congratulation* presented by the university to James II., secured for him the notice of the earl of Dorset, who invited him to town and introduced him to the principal wits of the time, and in 1687 his joint authorship with Prior of the *Town and Country Mouse*, a happy parody of Dryden's *Hand and Panther*, not only increased his literary reputation but directly helped him to political influence. In 1688, through the patronage of the earl of Dorset, he entered parliament as member for Malden, and sat in the convention which resolved that William and Mary should be declared king and queen of England. About this time he married the countess dowager of Manchester, and it would appear, according to Johnson, that it was still his intention to take orders, but after the coronation he purchased a clerkship to the council. On being introduced by Earl Dorset to King William, after the publication of his poetical *Epistles occasioned by his Majesty's Victory in Ireland*, he was ordered to receive an immediate pension of £500 per annum, until an opportunity should present itself of "making a man of him." In 1691 he was chosen chairman of the committee of the House of Commons appointed to confer with a committee of the Lords in regard to the Bill for regulating trials in cases of

high treason, and he displayed in these conferences such tact and debiting power that he was made one of the commissioners of the treasury and called to the party council. It was during these debates that he had recourse to the peculiar oratorical device of losing his presence of mind, in order to give a practical illustration of the necessity of allowing the privilege of counsel to criminals before a court of justice. But his success as a politician was less due to his oratorical gifts than to his skill in finance, and in this respect he soon began to manifest such brilliant talents as completely eclipsed the painstaking abilities of Godolphin. Indeed it may be affirmed that no other statesman has initiated schemes which have left a more permanent mark on the financial history of England. Although perhaps it was inevitable that England should sooner or later adopt the Continental custom of lightening the annual taxation in times of war by contracting a national debt, the actual introduction of the expedient was due to Montague, who on the 15th December 1692 proposed to raise a million of money by way of loan. Previous to this a Scotchman named William Paterson had submitted to the Government his plan of a national bank, and when in the spring of 1694 the prolonged contest with France had rendered another large loan absolutely necessary, Montague introduced a Bill for the incorporation of the Bank of England. The bill after some opposition passed the House of Lords in May, and immediately after the prorogation of parliament Montague was rewarded by the chancellorship of the exchequer. In the following year he was triumphantly returned for the borough of Westminster to the new parliament, and succeeded in passing his celebrated measure to remedy the depreciation which had taken place in the currency on account of dishonest manipulations. To provide for the expense of reconquest, Montague, instead of reviving the old tax of hearth money, introduced the window tax, and the difficulties caused by the temporary absence of a metallic currency were avoided by the issue for the first time of revenue bills. His other expedients for meeting the emergencies of the financial crisis were equally successful, and the rapid restoration of public credit secured him a commanding influence both in the House of Commons and at the board of the treasury, but although Godolphin resigned office in October 1696, the king hesitated for some time between Montague and Sir Stephen Fox as his successor, and it was not till 1697 that the former was appointed first lord. In 1698 and 1699 he acted as one of the council of regency during the king's absence from England. When in February of the former year he had been accused of peculation in connection with the issue of exchequer bills, not only had he been triumphantly acquitted but the House had declared that for his good services to the Government he had deserved His Majesty's favour, and his reputation was still further increased in the same year by the extraordinary popularity of his project for a new East India Company. With the accumulation of his political successes his vanity and arrogance became, however, so offensive that lately they utterly lost him the influence he had acquired by his administrative ability and his masterly eloquence, and when his power began to be on the wane he set the seal to his political overthrow by confiding the lucrative sinecure office of auditor of the exchequer on his brother in trust for himself should he be compelled to retire from power. For some time after this on attempting to lead the House of Commons he had to submit to constant mortifications, often verging on personal insults, and after the return of the king in 1699 he resigned his offices in the Government and succeeded his brother in the auditorship. On the accession of the Tories to power he was removed in 1701 to the House of Lords by the title of Lord Halifax. In the same year he was impeached for

malpractices along with Lord Somers and the earls of Portland and Orford, but all the charges were dismissed by the Lords, and in 1703 a second attempt to impeach him was still more unsuccessful. He continued out of office during the reign of Queen Anne, but in 1706 he was named one of the commissioners to negotiate the union with Scotland, and after the passing of the Act of Settlement in favour of the house of Hanover, he was appointed ambassador to the elector's court to convey the insignia of order of the garter to George I. On the death of Anne (1714) he was appointed one of the council of regency until the arrival of the king from Hanover, and after the coronation he received the office of first lord of the treasury in the new ministry, being at the same time created Earl of Halifax and Viscount Sainsbury. He died on the 15th May of the following year, and left no issue. His nephew succeeded to the barony, and was raised to the earldom, he left it to his son George Dunk, a statesman of some eminence, with whose death without issue in 1771 the Halifax titles became extinct.

Montague's association with Prior in the travesty of Dryden's *Lind and Panther* has no doubt largely aided in preserving his literary reputation, but he is perhaps indebted for it chiefly to his selection of an influential position and to the fulsome flattery of the men of letters who enjoyed his friendship, and who, in return for his liberal donations and the splendid banqueting which they occasionally enjoyed at his villa on the Thames, "fed him," as Pope says, "all day long with dedications." That, however, his beneficence to needy talent, if sometimes attributable to an itching ear for adulation, was at others prompted by a sincere appreciation of intellectual merit, is sufficiently attested by the manner in which he procured from Godolphin a commissionership for Addison, and also by his lifelong intimacy with Newton, for whom he obtained the mastership of the mint. The small fragments of poetry which he left behind him, and which were almost solely the composition of his early years, display a certain facility and vigour of diction, but their thought and fancy are never more than commonplace, and not infrequently in striving to be eloquent and impressive he is only grotesquely and extravagantly absurd. In administrative talent he was the superior of all his contemporaries, and his only rival in parliamentary eloquence was Somers, but the skill with which he managed measures was superior to his tact in dealing with men, and the effect of his brilliant financial successes on his reputation was gradually almost nullified by the affected arrogance of his manner and by the eccentricities of his sensitive vanity. So eager latterly was his thirst for fame and power that perhaps Marlborough did not exasperate when he said that "he had no other principle but his ambition, so that he would put all in distraction rather than not gain his point."

Among the numerous notices of Halifax his contemporaries may be mentioned the eulogistic reference which concludes Addison's account of the "foremost of English poets," the dedications by Steele to the second volume of the *Spectator* and to the fourth of the *Tatler*, Pope's laudatory mention of him in the epilogue to his *Imitation* in the preface to the *Imitator*, and his portrait of him as "Full blown Bulb" in the *Epistle to Arbuthnot*. Various allusions to him also to be found in Swift's works, and in Marlborough's *Letters*. See also Burnet's *History of his Own Times*, *The Parliamentary History*, Howell's *State Trials*, Johnson's *Lives of the Poets*, and Macaulay's *History of England*. His *Miscellaneous Works* were published at London in 1794, his *Life and Miscellaneous Works* in 1716, and his *Poetical Works*, to which also his "Life" is added, in 1719. His poems were reprinted in the 9th volume of Johnson's *English Poets*.

HALIFAX, GEORGE SAVILE, MARQUESS OF (c. 1630-1695), English statesman and author, son of Sir William Savile, a Yorkshire baronet of ancient family, and of Anne, daughter of the Lord keeper Coventry and sister of the wife of the first earl of Shaftesbury, was born about 1630

He succeeded to the baronetcy on the death of his father, and, having taken an active part in the Restoration, he was in 1667 created Baron Savile and Viscount Halifax. Subsequently his political conduct gave deep offence to the king, but, although, on his being mentioned in 1672 for a seat in the privy council, Charles at first "kicked at the name," the necessities of the political situation induced him to yield to the solicitations of his advisers, whose arguments for the admission of Halifax were based upon "his family, his abilities, his state and credit, as well as talent to ridicule and unravel whatever he was spited at." Already he was known as one of the most brilliant orators in the House of Lords, and although his political opinions seemed to be shifting and uncertain, the fascination of his manner and his formidable talents in gradually securing him the permanent favour of the king. In June 1672 he was sent to negotiate terms of peace with France, but he was kept in ignorance of the agreement between Charles and Louis in regard to the establishment of popery in England. He strenuously opposed the Test Bill introduced by Lord Danby in 1673, but continued to sit at the council board till the following year when, having provoked Lord Danby by a witicism in reference to his mild manner of refusing a bribe, the latter procured his dismissal. In 1679 he was, however, created an earl, and having become a member of the new council after the fall of Danby, he distanced from the earl of Shaftesbury and his other colleagues in reference to the Exclusion Bill, and by an extraordinary manifestation of nearly all the resources of oratory was instrumental in causing its rejection by the Lords. On this account an address was presented by the Commons paying him "dismissal from the king's person and councils for ever," but the king, whose confidence he had now completely won, retained him in the council, and in 1682 he was created a marquis and became lord privy seal. Although, however, chiefly instrumental in securing the duke of York's succession, his proposed limitations of James's authority when the crown should devolve upon him, as well as his subsequent leaning to Whig principles, awakened the duke's settled hostility, and thus was further deepened by his exposure of the malversation of the earl of Rochester. After the accession of James he was accordingly removed from the office of privy seal to that of president of the council, a less important position, and when in 1685 he refused to give his vote for the repeal either of the Test Act or of the Habeas Corpus Act, he was dismissed from the cabinet. But though made privy to the negotiations entered into with the prince of Orange, Halifax, notwithstanding his political humiliation, was opposed to armed intervention, and endeavoured to obtain such concessions from the king as would render this unnecessary. Even after the landing of the prince he consented to act as one of the three commissioners appointed to treat with him, and it was only the cowardly and traitorous flight of James that induced him finally to abandon his cause and to take measures for raising William to the throne. In the Convention Parliament he was chosen speaker of the Lords, and strongly opposed the motion for a regency. On the accession of William he was made lord privy seal, but the disasters of the Irish campaign gave such a plausible colour to the arguments of his opponents against his competency, and to their insinuations regarding his political honesty, that, though still retaining the office of privy seal, he in October 1689 ceased to take part in the councils of the king. He succeeded before the committee of the House of Lords in clearing himself from all guilt in connexion with the murder of Russell and Sidney, but shortly afterwards resigned his office. Irritated doubtless by the bitter animosity of the Whigs and by the coldness of William, he now at first joined himself to the opposition, and even went so far

as to hold communications with St Germain's, but either because his anger had cooled, or because he had become convinced of the hopelessness of the fortunes of the Stuarts, he gradually veered back to the support of the Government. He died somewhat suddenly, 20th April 1695. He was succeeded by his son William, with whose death in 1699 the title became extinct in his family. A daughter by his second marriage was the mother of the fourth and celebrated earl of Chesterfield, and from his natural son, Henry Casley the dramatist, was descended the celebrated Edmund Kean.

Halifax is portrayed in Dryden's *Abolam* and *Achitophel* as—

"To them of pleasing wit and pregnant thought,  
Lauded by nature and by learning taught  
To move assemblies."

Of his speeches not the smallest fragment remains, but it is admitted that his highest efforts far excelled in effect even those of Shaftesbury, who was his only rival. "Old men," says Macaulay, "who lived to admire the eloquence of Pulteney in its meridian and that of Pitt in its splendid dawn, still murmured that they had heard nothing like the great speeches of Lord Halifax on the Exclusion Bill." The key to the greatest part of his political conduct is to be found in the pamphlet *On the Character of a Timmer*, of which he was undoubtedly the author. He was a timmer, but a timmer in the best sense of the term, for though not insensible to worldly advantages, and, notwithstanding his philosophical professions, a lover of pomp and external honours, he was remarkably uncontaminated by the political corruption then almost universally prevalent, and was so emancipated both from party prejudice and selfish ambition as to be able generally to guide his political course by a regard to the best interests of the nation. His sudden changes from one side in politics to another, so far from indicating a loose political morality, were in reality due to the very opposite reason, for in times so unsettled violent and dangerous oscillations were apt to result from a tendency to extremes in both parties. But though his peculiar mental constitution enabled him to play a more important and beneficial part in the politics of his time than any of his contemporaries, it unfitted him for achieving success as a minister of the crown, and rendered his political career a seeming failure. His bent was philosophical rather than practical, and, notwithstanding his great prudence and judgment in several important emergencies, he was apt to be timid and indecisive when the burden of responsibility rested upon himself. His writings are neither large nor numerous, but their pure, polished, and nervous English, acute reasoning, mature if somewhat worldly wisdom, apt and varied illustration, and clever and genial wit, fairly entitle them to a place among English classics. Privately he was, according to Burnet, "a man of a great and ready wit, full of life and very pleasant, much given to satire." He had the reputation of holding atheistical opinions, but on his deathbed "professed himself a sincere Christian."

He was the author of *The Anatomy of an Equivocal*, printed in the collection of *State Tracts*, vol. 10. His *Remarks on a Essay upon Taxes*, *Admiration to a Dauphin*, *The Character of a Timmer*, published anonymously, *Maxims of State applicable to all Times*, *Character of Bishop Burnet*, *A Seasonable Address to both Houses of Parliament*, *Questions for Choice of Parliament Men*, *A Rough Draught of a New Model of Sen*, *Observations upon the Reigns of Edward I., II., III., and Richard II.*, and *A Character of King Charles the Second, and Politicks, Moral, and Miscellaneous Thoughts and Reflections*, first published in 1700. His *Maxims*, consisting of seven of the above pamphlets, appeared in 1700. A notice by the Hon. Hugh P. Elliot of a "New Manuscript of George Savile, first marquis of Halifax," will be found in *Edinburgh's Magazine* for October 1877. He also left *Memories of his Life*, which were destroyed. See besides the histories of Hume, Fox, Langens, and Macaulay, *Burnet's Lives*, Burnet's *History of his Own Times*, Chesterfield's *Memories*, Walpole's *Boyal and Noble Authors*, Courtenay's *Life of Sir William Temple*, and *Burnet's Anecdotes*, vol. 11.

HALL, a town in northern Tyrol, Austria, government district of Innsbruck, is picturesque situated between two mountains on the left bank of the Inn, which is navigable there, and on the railway from Rosenheim to Innsbruck, 5 miles east of the latter. It is the seat of a district court, of a board of salt works, and of a provincial board of mines. The beautiful Gothic parish church, dating from the 13th century, contains an altar-piece by a pupil of Rubens and the copy of a Chant by Albert Dürer. The principal other public buildings are several monasteries, the gymnasium, the deaf and dumb institute and the lunatic asylum. The prosperity of the town depends chiefly upon its salt works, which are supplied by pipes from the mines at Salzberg, 9 miles distant, the annual yield of salt is from 15,000 to 16,000 tons. A considerable number of invalids visit the town on account of its salt water baths. The principal other industries are the manufacture of woollen cloth, thread, paper, and substitutes for coffee. Hall obtained town rights in 1303. It suffered considerably from earthquakes in 1663 and 1670. In 1809 the patriot Speckbacher on three separate occasions succeeded in storming the position of the Bavarians on the bridge which crosses the Inn at this point. The population in 1870 was 5101.

HALL (generally known as Swabian Hall), a town of Württemberg, circle of Jagt, is situated in a deep valley on both sides of the Kocher, and on the railway from Heilbronn to Krahsmann, 45 miles N.E. of Stuttgart. It is surrounded by strong walls, and possesses seven churches, one of them dating from the 15th century and having fine medieval carving, a town house, a lyceum, a real-school of the second order, a hospital, and a house of correction. A short distance south from the town is the old castle of Kumburg, now used as a garrison for invalid soldiers, with a richly adorned Benedictine church dating from the 12th century. The town is chiefly known for its extensive salt-works, supplied by means of a pipe from Wilhelmshagen mine, 5 miles distant. Connected with the salt-works there is a salt-bath and a wool-dyeing establishment. The other industries of the town are cotton-spinning and weaving, and the manufacture of leather, soap, starch, sago, brushes, pencils, machines, carriages, and metal wares. The population in 1875 was 8430.

Hall originally belonged to the counts of Westheim, and later to the Knights Templar. It was made a free imperial city in the 14th century, and was afterwards subject in the different leagues of the cities, knights, and counts. In 1802 it came into the possession of Württemberg.

HALL, BASIL (1788-1844), British traveller and miscellaneous writer, was born at Edinburgh, December 31, 1788. His father, Sir James Hall of Dunninglass, was author of an essay on *Gothic Architecture*, and contributed to the Royal Society of Edinburgh, of which for a time was president, several ingenious papers on geology, in support of Hutton's theory as against that of Werner. His mother was Helen, daughter of Dunbar, fourth earl of Selkirk. Basil Hall was educated at the High School of Edinburgh, and in 1809 entered the navy, where he rose to the rank of post captain in 1817. By observing the ethnological as well as the physical peculiarities of the countries he visited, he collected the materials for a very large number of scientific papers, which he contributed to various journals and encyclopedias. In 1816 he commanded the sloop "Lyra," which accompanied Lord Amherst's embassy to China, and in this vessel he performed the cruise which he describes in the most popular and perhaps the most interesting of his works—*An Account of a Voyage of Discovery to the West Coast of Corea and the Great Loo Choo Island in the Japan Sea* (London, 1818). In 1820 he held a command on the Pacific coast of America, and in 1824 published two volumes of *Extracts from a Journal written on the Coasts of Chile, Peru, and Mexico*

in the years 1820-21-23. Returning on half pay in 1824, Hall in 1825 married a daughter of Sir John Hunter, and in her company travelled (1827-28) through the United States. In 1829 he published his *Travels in North America in the years 1827 and 1828*, a book almost as popular as his first, less from its intrinsic merit than from the violence with which it was assailed by the American press for its views of American society. *Schloss Hamfeld, or a Winter in Lower Styria* (1830), is partly a romance, partly a description of a visit paid by the author to the castle of the Countess Purgell. *Spain and the Seat of War in Spain appeared in 1837. The Elements of Voyages and Travels* (6 vols.) were issued in three detachments between 1831 and 1840. Captain Hall was a fellow of the Royal Societies of London and Edinburgh, and a member of the Astronomical Society of London, and has left a number of scientific and miscellaneous writings besides those mentioned. His last work, a collection of sketches and tales under the name of *Patchwork* (1841), had not been long published before its author was seized with insanity, from which he was only released by his death, in Haslar Hospital, Portsmouth, September 11, 1844.

HALL, CHARLES FRANCIS (1821-1871), an Arctic explorer, was born at Rochester, New Hampshire, United States, in 1821. After following his father, a farmer, to the south he became a journalist at Cincinnati, but his enthusiasm for Arctic exploration led him in 1859 to volunteer to the American Geographical Society to "go in search of the bones of Franklin." With the proceeds of a subscription he was equipped for his modest expedition, and obtained a passage in May 1860 on board a New London whaling vessel commanded by Captain Buddington, the same who had picked up the English search ship "Teesdale." The whaler having become blocked up with ice, Hall took up his abode with the Eskimo, living with them for two years, adopting their habits and acquiring their language, making special friends of two natives, man and wife, who had been in England and knew something of our language. He wandered about with the Eskimo in the region to the north of Hudson's Bay, acquiring much information, especially about the people. He published an account of his experiences in 1864, under the title of *Arctic Researches, and Life among the Esquimaux*. Having learned little or nothing, however, about the fate of the Franklin expedition, he returned in 1864, remaining among the Eskimo till 1869. Unfortunately the full journal he kept of his five years' wanderings has never been published. The expedition which brought Hall most prominently into notice was fitted out in 1871 in the steamer "Polaris," which was sent out at the expense of the United States Government, its object being to reach the supposed open Polar Sea, and if possible attain the Pole. Hall was in command, while Buddington was sailing master. There was a modest but competent scientific staff, and among the crew were Hall's two old Eskimo friends, who had become devoted to him. On June 29, 1871, the "Polaris" left New York, and making a remarkably rapid passage up Davis Strait and Smith Sound, reached on August 30 the lat of 89° 16' N., until the last English expedition the highest northern latitude reached of which there is any authentic report. Hall and most of the officers and crew were for proceeding onwards, but they were overruled by Buddington, and went into winter quarters in a sheltered cove on the Greenland coast, named Polaris Bay, in 81° 38' N. On October 24th Hall returned from a successful sledge expedition to the north, and was suddenly seized by an illness of which he died on November 8th. As he and crew were some suspicious of poison, an inquiry was made by the Navy Department, who found that there was no proof of foul play. Captain Buddington, on whom the command devolved, determined

in August of next year to return, but the "Polaris" was greatly hampered by the ice. The danger became so great that on October 15th boats and stores were put on the ice, on which nineteen of the crew had disembarked. Suddenly the ship broke away, and the party on the ice drifted slowly southwards for 195 days, and were picked up off the coast of Labrador, in 53° 35' N., by a whaling steamer 2000 miles from where they had parted with the "Polaris." The party in the ship reached Littleton's Island, where they passed the winter, building two boats from the boards of the vessel, in which they set sail southwards in June 1873. On the 23d of that month they were picked up by a Dundee whale, and were brought to that town, from which they ultimately reached the United States. The scientific results of the unfortunate Hall's last expedition were of considerable importance, and have been published by the United States Government, as also has an independent account in German by Dr. Bessels, one of the scientific staff.

HALL, or HALLS, EDWARD (ob. 1547), an English lawyer who takes high rank among the earlier narrators of his country's history, was born in London about the close of the 15th century and died in 1547, the year of the death of King Henry VIII. Though his name has all the appearance of a purely English word, it is none the less of foreign origin, John Hall of Northall, in Shropshire, our author's father, tracing his lineage back to Frederick of Halle in Tyrol, who was a son of Augustus, Count of Eton. Edward Hall passed to Cambridge, and according to some accounts it would appear that at a later date he was also a student at Oxford. Entering Gray's Inn he was duly called to the bar, and we find him afterwards filling the offices of common sergeant, under-sheriff of the city of London, summer reader of Gray's Inn (1533), double reader in Lent (1540), and judge of the sheriff court. The date of the first appearance of his chronicle has been matter of question, but it is generally agreed that there was no such edition as that of 1512 assigned by the older bibliographers to Berthelette. The real *editio princeps* is almost certainly that issued by Grafton in 1548, the year after Hall's death, with a continuation compiled mainly from the author's MSS., it is remarkably, says Mr. Hazlitt (*Collections and Notes*), as having probably more variations in the copies than any book in the language. A reprint was published in 1809 under the supervision of Sir Henry Ellis, who, however, furnished neither introduction nor comment.

Hall's work deserves a higher title than that of chronicle, partly, perhaps, by a happy accident, but partly also by the author's judicious management, it possesses no small amount of thematic conclusion. Beginning with the famous combat at Coventry between Henry of Hereford and Thomas Mowbray, it follows the tragic progress of the strife between York and Lancaster till it is brought to a close by the marriage of Henry VII. with Margaret of York, and thence it shows England united and at rest under Henry VIII. The policy of this monarch is presented under a very favourable light, and in the religious question the author sides emphatically and intemperately with Protestantism. For all kinds of ceremonial in utterance and action he has all a lawyer's respect, and his pages are often adorned and enlivened with the pagantry and material gaudiness of his story. In his style he unites the redundant redundancy and painful pedanticism of the middle ages with that elegant effort after balance of clauses and fanciful and forcible phraseology which not long afterwards resulted in "Euphuism." On the whole the work is not only valuable but attractive. To the historian it furnishes what is evidently the testimony of an eye-witness on several matters of interest which are neglected by other narrators, and to the student of literature it has the exceptional charm of being one of the prime sources of Shakespeare's historical plays. Complete James Gairdner, *See by Ch. studies of English Literature*, London, 1879.

HALL, JAMES (1793-1868), an American judge and the author of a number of books chiefly relating to the Western States, was born at Philadelphia, August 10, 1793. After for some time prosecuting the study of law, he in 1812 joined the army, and in the war with Great Britain distinguished himself in engagements at Lundy's Lane,

Ngara, and Fort Erie. On the conclusion of the war he accompanied an expedition against Algiers, but in 1818 he resigned his commission, and continued the study of law at Pittsburg. In 1820 he removed to Shawanetown, Illinois, where he commenced practice at the bar and also edited the *Illinois Gazette*. Soon after he was appointed public prosecutor of the circuit, and in 1824 legislative judge. On the abolition of the latter office four years afterwards he was appointed State treasurer, but he continued at the same time his legal practice and also edited the *Illinois Intelligencer*. Subsequently he became editor of the *Western Souvenir*, an annual publication, and of the *Illinois Monthly Magazine*, afterwards the *Western Monthly Magazine*. He died near Cincinnati, July 5, 1868.

The following are his principal works—*Letters from the West*, originally contributed to the *Portfolio*, and collected and published in London in 1823, *Legends of the West*, 1828, *The Soldier's Bride and other Tales*, 1822, *The Herpes Head, a Legend of Kentucky*, 1828, *Sketches of the West*, 2 vols., 1835, *Tales of the Border*, 1836, *Notes on the Western States*, 1836, *History of the Indian Tribes*, in conjunction with T. L. McKee, 3 vols., 1838-44, *The Wilderness and the West Path*, 1845, *Romances of Western History*, 1857.

HALL, JOSEPH (1574-1556), bishop of Norwich, one of the wisest as well as wisest writers of his century, was born at Birstow Park, parish of Ashby-de-la-Zouch, Leicestershire, July 1, 1574. Designed from infancy for the church, he received his early education at the school of his native place, whence in his fifteenth year he passed to Emmanuel College, Cambridge. After being chosen for two years in succession to read the rhetoric lectures in the public schools, Hall became a fellow of his college in 1595, and in the following year received the degree of master of arts. Having taken holy orders, he in 1601 became rector of Ilalstead in Suffolk, near Bury St. Edmunds. Two years later he married, and in 1605 he accompanied Sir Edmund Bacon to the Spanish Netherlands. In 1612 Hall was presented to the curacy of Waltham-Holy-Croix, in Essex, and about the same time received the degree of doctor of divinity. Meanwhile his talents as a preacher, and the ability shown in his controversial writings, had brought him into notice at court. He was appointed chaplain to Prince Henry and prebendary of Wolverhampton. The latter dignity he soon resigned. In 1616 Hall accompanied the earl of Carlisle on his mission to France, but was compelled by illness to return, in 1617 he went with James I. into Scotland, and in 1618 was appointed by him one of the English deputies to the synod at Dort, but he was again forced by sickness to return before the business of the assembly was finished. The year before (1617) he had been appointed dean of Worcester. In the years that followed Hall preached frequently before the court and took an active part in the controversies of the day, especially in that between the Arminian and Calvinistic parties in the Church of England, to the latter of which he belonged. In 1624 he refused the see of Gloucester, but in 1627 became bishop of Exeter. In this position, by his toleration of lectures and his Calvinistic mode of preaching and administering his diocese, he incurred the suspicion of disaffection to episcopacy, and on three occasions appeared on his knees before the king, to answer for his puni-torial practices. Hall felt bitterly these undeserved charges of Laud, and threatened to "cast up his rochet" rather than be subject to them. No better proof of his attachment to the Church of England is needed than his *Episcopacy by Divine Right Asserted*, written in 1640 at the suggestion of Laud. In 1641 Hall was transferred to the see of Norwich. The same year he joined eleven other bishops in presenting to parliament a protest against all laws passed in then enforced absence. Upon this the bishops were accused of high treason and thrown into the Tower. Hall in his *Iron Measure* relates the trials he underwent both at this time

and afterwards. The accusation fell to the ground, and in six months the bishops were released (June 1642), only, however, on each finding security for £3000. Hall proceeded to Norwich, which he had not yet visited, and set about his pastoral duties, but in April 1643 his revenues and personal property were sequestered by parliament, a nominal allowance of £400 a year being made for his maintenance. Mrs Hall with great difficulty obtained a fifth of her husband's property. The bishop was next ejected from his palace, and the cathedral was dismantled. Having retired to a small estate at Higham near Norwich, which he had been able to buy, he there, with his books, bought for him by a friend, spent the rest of his life, writing and preaching "till he was flint forbidden by men, and at last disabled by God." He died 8th September 1656, in his eighty-third year.

The great bulk of Bishop Hall's writings is controversial, and therefore of comparative ephemeral interest, but some of them continue to deserve attention. His essays, published under the name of *Pyrrhonismus seu Sæcæ Doctrinæ*, consist of three books of *Footloose Sayings*, misnamed into (1) Poetical, (2) Academic, and (3) Moral, published in 1607, and three books of *Living Satires*, published in 1608. They appeared together in 1609. Hall claims to be the first English satirist, though Italian disputes his title, and at the same time it also disparages the satirist, which seems on the other hand being very highly praised by Cymbell and Wilson. In his *Postiles* (1608-11) Hall claims to be the introduction of that style of composition into English literature, but both Ascham and Howell contempt him. *The Contemplations upon the Principal Passages of the History of the New Testament* (1612-15), a devout and pious work, one by which perhaps Hall is most generally known, is a beautiful, distinguished, and most compositions of the class to which they belong by a shy and shy wit which not infrequently puts the reader in mind of Thomas Fuller. *Mundus Alter et Idem*, a species of allegorical romance, published in 1648, was translated into English by John Huxley, under the title of *Discovery of a New World*. Other writings of this "English Seneca," as Sir Henry Wotton called him, is *Explication of David Psalms* (1637-38), *Christian Meditations* (1640), and *Memorabilia*, etc. *De rebus et studiis emendandis cum Dea*, translated in 1780. An edition of his works was published in 1806 at London, in 10 vols., by the Rev. Josiah Pratt, and a later and better one, in 12 vols., at Oxford (1857-59), by the Rev. Peter Hall. A life of Bishop Hall by the Rev. John Jones appeared in 1826.

HALL, MARSHALL (1790-1857), the discoverer of the "dilatative nervous system," was born at Bedford, North, February 18, 1790. His father, Robert Hall, a cotton manufacturer at that place, is well known as the introducer of the modern processes of bleaching on a large scale. Having attended Blanchard's academy at Nottingham, where Kuke White was educated, Marshall Hall commenced in 1809 his studies for the medical profession at Edinburgh university. In 1811 he was elected senior president of the Royal Medical Society, the following year he took the M.D. degree, and was immediately appointed resident house physician to the Royal Infirmary, Edinburgh. This appointment he resigned after two years, when he visited Paris and its medical schools, and, on his return, took up his abode at Nottingham, he published his *Diagnoses*, in which he insisted that, before treatment, the exact nature of a malady should be ascertained. He rapidly acquired an extensive country practice, his improved method in puerperal cases and his dexterity of the venesection then popular attracting many patients. In 1818 he wrote the *Mimosaes*, a work on the affections denominated bilious, nervous, &c. The next year he was elected a fellow of the Royal Society of Edinburgh, and in 1825 he became physician to the Nottingham general hospital. In 1826 he removed to London, and in the following year he published his *Commentaries* on the more important diseases of females. He pursued his studies of the effects of blood-letting, and his *Researches* (issued in 1830) were acknowledged by the medical profession to be of vast practical value. Much practical good also resulted from his warning against mistaking exhaustion for inflammation. Hall

married in 1829, and the same year he made the discovery which placed him in rank with Harvey. It is described in *A Critical and Experimental Essay on the Circulation of the Blood in the Capillary Vessels*, in which he showed that the blood-channels intermediate between arteries and veins serve the office of bringing the fluid blood into contact with the material tissues of the system. About this time he made his original investigations on quantity of respiration, detailed in *The Inverse Ratio which subsists between the Respiration and Irregularity in the Animal Kingdom*, a work which led to the treatises on hibernation. In 1831 he proposed a simple and bloodless operation for the removal of vascular nervous. His most important discovery in physiology was the "dilatative spinal system," his views being embodied in a paper on *The Reflex Function of the Medulla Oblongata and the Medulla Spinalis*, 1832, in which year he was elected fellow of the Royal Society, London. This paper was supplemented in 1837 by another on *The True Spinal Marrow, and the Excitatory System of Nerves*, in which he explained the real classification and distribution of the entire nervous system. The "reflex function" excited great attention in Germany and Holland, and M. Flourens described it as "a great epoch in physiology." Hall thus became the authority on the multifarious demands of health referable to an abnormal condition of the nervous system, and he made plain the obscure class of convulsive affections. The action of strychnia as a spinal tonic or excitant, the relief of the epileptic, tracheotomy in laryngeal epilepsy, and the "ready method" in asphyxia, were among the latest objects of his investigation. His "ready method"—sometimes called Marshall Hall's method—for resuscitation in drowning and other forms of suspended respiration—as perhaps the most popular of his discoveries, by its innumerable lives have been preserved. Dr Hall lectured at various medical schools, at the college of physicians, and also at New York during his American tour. His papers in medical and scientific journals, including the *Comptes Rendus*, are remarkable for lucidity and brevity. He died at Brighton of a throat affection, aggravated by lecturing, August 11, 1857. A list of his works, most of which have been translated into foreign languages, and details of his "ready method," &c., are given in his *Memoirs* by his widow, London, 1861.

HALL, ROWAN (1764-1831), one of the greatest of English pulpit orators, was born May 2, 1764, at Arnsby near Leicester, where his father, a man whose cast of mind in some respects resembled closely that of the son, was pastor of a Baptist congregation. Robert was the youngest of a family of fourteen. In infancy his physical powers were so feeble that until two years of age he was unable to walk, and although his expression and gestures indicated great mental vivacity, he was equally slow to acquire the facility of articulate speech. It even appears that he had learned to read before he was able to imitate spoken sounds, his nurse having taught him the letters of the alphabet and the formation of words from the inscriptions on the tombstones of a churchyard adjoining his father's dwelling house. When once the interest in this exercise had loosened his reluctant tongue his progress was remarkably rapid, and before he had attained his third year the fluency of his talk gave some indications of his future oratorical eminence. While still at the dame's school his passion for books absorbed the greater part of his time, and in the summer it was his custom after school hours to retire to the churchyard with a volume which he consulted and peruse there till midnight, making out the meaning of the more difficult words with the help of a pocket dictionary. From his sixth to his eleventh year he attended the school of Mr Simmons at Wigston, a village 4 miles from Arnsby

These his precocity assumed the exceptional form of an intense interest in metaphysics, partly, perhaps on account of the restricted character of his father's library, and before he was nine years of age he had read and re-read Jonathan Edwards's *Treatise on the Will* and Butler's *Analogy*. This incessant study at such an early period of life seems, however, to have had an injurious influence on his health, and may have been partly the cause of the disease from which he experienced such suffering in after life, and symptoms of whose existence began at this time to manifest themselves. Occasionally he was already troubled with intense pain in the back, and after he left Mr. Simmons's school his appearance was so sickly as to awaken fears of the presence of consumption. In order, therefore, to obtain the benefit of a change of air, he stayed for some time in the house of a gentleman near Kettering, who with an impropriety which Hall himself afterwards referred to as "egregious," prevailed upon the boy of eleven to give occasional addresses at prayer meetings. As his health seemed rapidly to recover, he was sent to a school at Northampton conducted by the Rev. John Ryland, where he remained a year and a half, and "made great progress in Latin and Greek." On leaving school he for some time studied divinity under the direction of his father, and in October 1778 he entered the Bristol academy for the preparation of students for the Baptist ministry. Here the self-possession which had enabled him in his twelfth year to address unflatteringly various audiences of grown-up people seems to have strangely forsaken him, for when, in accordance with the arrangements of the academy, his turn came to deliver an address in the vestry of Broadmead Chapel, he broke down on two separate occasions and was unable to finish his discourse. On the 13th August 1780 he was yet apart to the ministry, but he still continued his studies at the academy, and in 1781, in accordance with the provisions of an exhibition which he held, he entered King's College, Aberdeen, where he took the degree of master of arts in March 1785. At the university he was without a rival of his own standing in any of the classes, distinguishing himself alike in classics, philosophy, and mathematics. Here there formed the acquaintance of Mackintosh (afterwards Sir James), who, though a year his junior in age, was a year his senior as a student, and who became attached to him "because he could not help it." While they remained at Aberdeen the two were inseparable, reading together the best Greek authors, especially Plato, and discussing, either during their walks by the sea shore and the banks of the Don or in their rooms until early morning, the most perplexed questions in philosophy and religion. The interest of their conversation seems to have lain more in the difference than in the agreement of their opinions, but their controversies, so far from causing any even temporary estrangement, tended only to cement more closely their friendship and to deepen in each the respect for the mental and moral qualities of the other.

During the vacation between his last two sessions at Aberdeen, Hall acted as assistant pastor to Dr. Evans at Broadmead Chapel, Bristol, and three months after leaving the university he was appointed classical tutor in the Bristol academy, an office which he held for more than five years. Even at this period his extraordinary eloquence had excited an interest beyond the bounds of the denomination to which he belonged, and when he preached the chapel was generally crowded to excess, the audience including many persons of intellectual tastes. It would appear, however, that, in the case of Mr. Fuller, Dr. Ryland, and other theological authorities, his exuberant intellectual energy and his outspoken expression of tolerance for certain aspects of Unitarianism caused trembling to be greatly mingled with their admiration, and ultimately, suspicious in regard

to his orthodoxy having in 1789 led to a misunderstanding with his colleague and a part of the congregation, he in July 1790 accepted an invitation to make trial of a congregation at Cambridge, of which he became pastor in July of the following year. From a statement of his opinions contained in a letter to the congregation which he left, it would appear that, while a firm believer in the proper divinity of Christ, he had at this time disowned the cardinal principles of Calvinism—the federal headship of Adam, and the doctrine of absolute election and reprobation, and that he was so far a materialist as to "hold that man's thinking powers and faculties are the result of a certain organization of matter, and that after death he ceases to be conscious till the resurrection." It was during his Cambridge ministry, which extended over a period of fifteen years, that his oratory was most brilliant and most immediately powerful. At Cambridge the intellectual character of a large part of the audience supplied a stimulus which was wanting at Leicester and Bristol, but besides this his physical powers were then at their best, and were still unaffected by the constant pain which already so severely tested his powers of endurance and rendered the discharge of his duties such a marvellous triumph of will. Above all it was not till near the close of this period that his intellectual pathway was crossed by the shadow of mental dejection, and an element of weakness and uncertainty introduced into his career which for some time clouded the horizon of his hopes and perhaps placed a permanent check on his highest form of intellectual enterprise. While at Cambridge he gave to the world some of the more important of the few and small publications which, although those who were his constant hearers have affirmed that several of his imperfectly reported sermons convey a juster impression of the usual character of his oratory, the only correct and properly authenticated records of his style of thought and composition. His first published compositions had a political origin. In 1791 appeared *Christianity consistent with the Love of Freedom*, in which he defended the political conduct of dissenters against the attacks of the Rev. John Clayton, minister of Weymouth, and gave eloquent expression to his hopes of great political and social ameliorations as destined to issue nearly or remotely from the subversion of old ideas and institutions in the maelstrom of the French Revolution. In 1793 he expounded his political sentiments in a powerful and more extended pamphlet entitled *An Apology for the Freedom of the Press*, which at once obtained an extensive circulation, and doubtless to some extent aided in the formation of that public opinion which has given birth in England to the present remarkable era of gradual and unswerving political progress. On account, however, of certain asperities and which the warmth of his feelings had betrayed him, and his conviction that he had treated his subject in too superficial a manner, he refused to permit the publication of the pamphlet beyond the third edition, until the references of political opponents and the circulation of copies without his sanction induced him in 1821 to prepare a new edition, from which he omitted the attack on Bishop Hensley, and to which he prefixed an advertisement stating that his political opinions had undergone no substantial change. His other publications while at Cambridge were three sermons—*On Modern Infidelity* (1801), *Reflections on War* (1802), and *Sentiments proper to the present Crisis* (1803). From his first attack of insanity, which occurred in November 1804, he recovered so speedily that he was able to resume his duties in April 1805, but a more severe recurrence of the malady rendered it advisable for him on his second recovery to resign his pastoral office, which he did in March 1806. On leaving Cambridge he paid a visit to his relatives in Leicestershire, and then for some time resided at Enderby, preaching occasionally in some of



the neighbouring villages. Lately he ministered to a small congregation in Harvey Lane, Leicester, from whom at the close of 1806 he accepted a call to be their stated pastor. In the autumn of 1807 he changed his residence from Enderby to Leicester, and in 1808 he married the servant of a brother minister. His proposal of marriage had been made after an almost momentary acquaintance, and, according to the testimonial account, in very abrupt and peculiar terms, but, judging from his subsequent domestic life, his choice did sufficient credit to his penetration and sagacity. His writings at Leicester embraced various tracts printed for private circulation, a number of contributions to the *Electric Review*, among which may be mentioned his articles on "Foster's Essays" and on "Zeal without Innovation," several sermons, including those on *The Advantages of Knowledge to the Lower Classes* (1810), *On the Death of the Princess Charlotte* (1817), and *On the Death of Dr. Ryland* (1826), and his pamphlet on *The sin of Communism*, in which he advocated intercommunion with all those who acknowledged the "essentials" of Christianity. In 1819 he published an edition in one volume of his sermons formerly printed. On the death of Dr. Ryland, Hall was invited to return to the pastorate of Broadmead Chapel, Bristol, and as the peace of the congregation at Leicester had been to some degree disturbed by a controversy regarding several cases of discipline, he declined to accept the invitation, and removed there in April 1826. About this period the malady—renal calculus—which had for many years rendered his life an almost continual martyrdom, and whose influence he had triumphed over with such marvellous fortitude, began to show signs of indirectly obtaining the mastery over his vigorous constitution, and henceforth increasing infirmities and sufferings, which rest and change of scene could do little to alleviate, surrounded with deepening external gloom the spirit whose cheerfulness and peace they seemed to leave almost totally unimpaired. Gradually the inability to take proper exercise, by inducing a plethoric habit of body and impeding the circulation, led to a diseased condition of the heart, which resulted in his death, February 21, 1851.

The private manners of Hall were remarkably simple and unaffected, and his method of expressing his opinions was frequently impetuous, and occasionally somewhat brusque and impatient, thus was on my rather to his constitutional energy and straightforward impulsive honesty than to an overbearing and dogmatic temper. Though exercising his sarcastic powers with great unconstraint, he reserved his severity chiefly for errors which implied some kind of moral culpability, and he was always careful to be respectful to true worth even when concealed or deformed by many superficial defects, or couched with humble rank or weak mental capacity. In reality few were more unassuming or unselfish or more continuously actuated by feelings truly charitable and benevolent. His mental absorption led to the contraction of many minor eccentricities, one of which was a frequent obliviousness to the flight of time and a consequent inability to remember his engagements. Towards the close of his Cambridge ministry he acquired the habit of smoking, and from that time his pipe was his almost constant companion and one of his principal solaces in his bodily suffering. Indeed talk and tobacco may be said to have supplied his chief means of recreation. In his conversation the casibus and idiosyncrasies of his genius were better displayed than in any of the writings he has left us, and it is said to have exercised an even more captivating influence than did his most orations. His most striking characteristics were keen, biting, and original wit, and wild and daring imaginative flights.

Both physically and mentally Hall possessed a rare combination of qualities fitting him to excel as a public speaker. He did not attain success without effort and discipline, but the

faults which hampered his capabilities were not of a formidable character. He was of powerful and athletic build, and his great breadth of chest, while it lent an impression of massiveness to his bearing, indicated abundant capacity to sustain the kind of physical exertion which oratory entails. His voice was deficient in strength and volume, but exceptionally pure and melodious, and capable of being thoroughly interpenetrated by emotion. Its inadequacy in tone was also compensated for by its great flexibility, which enabled him by the momentum of rapid utterance to obtain all the vocal force necessary to the highest oratorical effects. According to Foster, his countenance "was formed as if on purpose for the most declared manifestation of power." The forehead was high and sloping, with well arched brows, beneath which his dark and brilliant eyes, in his more excited moments, burned and glowed with thought and passion. The lower part of his countenance indicated a vehement and headstrong temperament under the control of an iron will—doubtless powerfully reinforced by the strong moral sensibility which gave a peculiar elevation and dignity to features possessing no trait of grace or beauty. Perhaps the "steat, intense, and somewhat forbidding expression," which Foster referred to as wanting in the portrait accompanying his works, had its origin partly in his constant suffering.

His gestures in speaking were few and simple, and his manner seemed to be naturally determined by his mental emotions without conscious purpose on his part. He gave the impression of thorough self-forgetfulness and absorption in his subject, and during the latter part of an oration of being wholly possessed and dominated by the thoughts and sentiments which he uttered. It is generally affirmed that in his spoken sermons his style was more easy, graceful, and various than in any of the sermons which he prepared for the press. In the latter the structure of the sentences is often formal and laboured, the rhythm artificial and monotonous, and idiomatic vigour is in some degree sacrificed to elegance and pomp. In the higher flights of his eloquence his language was, however, unsurpassed for purity and happy adaptation to the thought. Indeed one of his most remarkable gifts is said to have been his extemporaneous command of a clear and felicitous vocabulary, which seemed to clothe every shade of his meaning with its appropriate expression, and whose musical cadences formed a not unimportant element in the fascination exercised by his oratory. It is true that in many cases his language had before he spoke undergone considerable mental elaboration, but he was nevertheless so little enlaved to his memory that, according to his own statement, he never entered the pulpit without omitting something which he wished to say and saying something which he wished to omit. In preaching his severe taste and deep sense of solemnity restrained every tendency to exaggeration or extravagance, and he never permitted his brilliant wit to emit even the faintest and most momentary sparkle. It may therefore be believed that on a secular platform his oratory would have been more easy and natural, and from the scope afforded for the free exercise of all his powers would have attained to a more varied perfection. In his occasional reviews his style is clear and pointed, but apart from this it is his sarcasm that chiefly conveys the impression of more than average ability. The predominant element of his eloquence was reasoning. His statements and propositions were animated with passion and illuminated by a vivid and rich if not strikingly powerful and original imagination, but in no instance did passion or imagination seem to obtain the chief sway. It was generally not till towards the close of his sermon that the spell of his eloquence asserted its highest influence over his audience. Then the various trains of thought through which he had been

guiding them seemed to meet in an intense focus where reason, imagination, and passion were blended together, and in whose light the theme he had been expounding stood revealed in such vivid truth and beauty as to captivate for the moment every heart. But though stating truth chiefly in the form of reasoning, he constantly exhibited it rather in its moral than in its theological aspects. His eloquence was indeed morally more than intellectually powerful, and its moral purpose was besides achieved not so much by the direct inculcation of moral duties, or the detection and exposure of moral delinquencies, as by his unconscious exhibition of his own moral elevation and of the ardour and purity of his hopes and aims. Indeed in many of his sermons both the form and matter of his thought seemed to be determined rather by his own individual interest in his subject than by the consideration of the capacities and wants of his hearers. Though exhibiting a catholicity of spirit much in advance of his time, the range of his thought is completely included within the limits of traditional opinion. In treating of what he regarded as the cardinal truths of religion he is of course oratorically effective, but the vehement and brilliant manner in which he wields the old controversial weapons does not compensate for their inherent inadequacy. He indulges too frequently in immoderate attacks against the moral character and motives of his opponents, and fails to sound the full depth of the speculative problems upon which he attempts to dogmatize. His sermons will always be esteemed by the student of English literature for their many passages of splendid and finished eloquence, but his theological writings as a whole are of course without that quaint interest attaching to representations of truth which though now old and effete originally exhibited it with the freshness and vividness of a discovery, while on the other hand they have no sufficient colouring from modern tendencies to give to them a more than superficial value in relation to those phases of religious thought which are predominant at the present time.

See *Works of Robert Hall, A. M., with a Brief Memoir of his Life, by Olinthus Gregory, LL. D., and Observations on his Character as Preacher, by John Foster*, originally published in 6 vols., London, 1832; *Reminiscences of the Rev. Robert Hall, A. M., by John Greene*, London, 1832; *Biographical Recollections of the Rev. Robert Hall, by J. W. Morris*, 1848; *Fifty Sermons of Robert Hall from Notes taken at the time of their Delivery*, by the Rev. Thomas Gurnfield, M. A., 1848; *Reminiscences of Collette Lyne, a Bristol during the Ministry of the Rev. Robert Hall, A. M., by Frederick Tietzel*, 1879. (T F R.)

HALLA. See HALA.

HALLAM, HENRY, the celebrated English historian, was born at Windsor in the year 1777,—some authorities make the date one year later,—and he died at Pickhurst, Kent, on the 21st of January 1859. Notwithstanding his great fame and recent death very little seems to be known of the personal history of Hallam. He was the son of a dean of Bristol, and was educated at Eton, and afterwards went to Christ Church, Oxford, where he took his degree in 1799. He was called to the bar by the Inner Temple, and afterwards became a benchet of that society, but he does not appear to have at any time attempted to obtain practice. Early in life he devoted himself to literary work, and became connected with the brilliant band of authors and politicians who then led the Whig party. A commissionership of audits, obtained through that connexion, together with some private means, made him independent in point of worldly fortune, and enabled him to devote himself entirely to the studies of his life. He took no active part in practical politics, and was in fact unsuited by nature for the rough work of party polemics. But he was an active supporter of many popular movements—particularly of that which ended in the abolition of the slave trade, and he was throughout his entire life sincerely and profoundly attached to the political principles of the

Whigs, both in their popular and in their aristocratic aspect. Hallam's earliest literary work was undertaken in connexion with the great organ of the Whig party, the *Edinburgh Review*, where his review of Scott's *Devil's Advocate* attracted much notice. His first great work, *The View of the State of Europe during the Middle Ages*, was produced in 1818, and was followed nine years later by the *Constitutional History of England*. In 1838–39 appeared the *Introduction to the Literature of Europe in the 15th, 16th, and 17th Centuries*. These are the three works on which the fame of Hallam rests. They at once took a place in English literature which has never been seriously challenged. A volume of supplemental notes to his *Middle Ages* was published in 1848. These facts and dates represent nearly all the events of Hallam's career. The strongest personal interest in his life was the affliction which befell him in the loss of his children, one after another. His eldest son, Arthur Henry Hallam,—the “A. H. H.” of Tennyson's *In Memoriam*, and by the testimony of his contemporaries a man of the most brilliant promise,—died in 1833 at the age of twenty-two. Seventeen years later, his second son, Henry Fitzmaurice Hallam, was cut off like his brother at the very threshold of what might have been a great career. The premature death and high talents of these young men, and the association of one of them with the most popular poem of the age, have made Hallam's family afflictions better known than any other incidents of his life. He survived wife, daughter, and sons by many years. In 1831 Hallam published *The Remains in Prose and Verse of Arthur Henry Hallam, with a Sketch of his Life*. In 1852 a selection of *Literary Essays and Characters from the Literature of Europe* was published. Hallam was a fellow of the Royal Society, and a trustee of the British Museum, and enjoyed any other appropriate distinctions. In 1850 he recovered the gold medal for history, founded by George III.

The *Middle Ages* is described by Hallam himself as a series of historical dissertations, a comprehensive survey of the chief circumstances that can interest a philosophical inquirer during the period from the 5th to the 15th century. The work consists of nine long chapters, each of which is a complete treatise in itself. The history of France, of Italy, of Spain, of Germany, and of the Greek and Sarracenic empires, sketched in rapid and general terms, is the subject of five separate chapters. Others deal with the great institutional features of mediæval society—the development of the feudal system, of the legal system, and of the free political system of England. The last chapter sketches the general state of society, the growth of commerce, manners, and literature in the Middle Ages. The book may be regarded as a general view of early modern history, preparatory to the more detailed treatment of special lines of inquiry carried out in his subsequent works, although Hallam's original intention was to continue the work on the scale on which it had been begun.

The *Constitutional History of England* takes up the subject at the point at which it had been dropped in the *View of the Middle Ages*, viz. the accession of George VII., and carries it down to the accession of George III. Hallam stopped here for a characteristic reason, which it is impossible not to respect and to regret. He was unwilling to excite the prejudices of modern politics which seemed to him to run back through the whole period of the reign of George III. As a matter of fact they ran back much further, as Hallam soon found. The sensitive impartiality which withheld him from touching perhaps the most interesting period in the history of the constitution did not save him from the charge of partisanship. The *Quarterly*

<sup>1</sup> Lord Brougham, overlooking the constitutional chapter in the *Middle Ages*, censured Hallam for making an arbitrary beginning at this point, and proposed to write a more complete history himself.

*Review* for 1828 contains an article on the *Constitutional History*, written by Southey, full of railing and reproach. The work, he says, is the "production of a dejected partisan," who "rakes in the ashes of long forgotten and a thousand times buried slanders, for the means of heaping obloquy on all who supported the established institutions of the country." No accusation made by a critic ever fell so wide of the mark. Absolute justice is the standard which Hallam set himself and maintained. His view of constitutional history was that it should contain only so much of the political and general history of the time as bears directly on specific changes in the organization of the state, including therein judicial as well as ecclesiastical institutions. But while abstaining from irrelevant historical discussions, Hallam deals with statesmen and policies with the calm and fearless impartiality of a judge. It was his cool treatment of such sanctified names as Charles, Channing, and Taurd that provoked the indignation of Southey and the *Quarterly*, who forgot that the same impartial measure was extended to statesmen on the other side. If Hallam can ever be said to have deviated from perfect fairness, it was in the tacit assumption that the 16th century theory of the constitution was the right theory in previous centuries, and that those who departed from it on one side or the other were in the wrong. He did unconsciously antedate the constitution, and it is clear from incidental allusions in his last work that he did not regard with favour the democratic changes which he thought to be impending. Hallam, like Macaulay, ultimately referred all political questions to the standard of Wing constitutionalism. This prepossession may be connected with the legal tone that runs through all his political writings. The spirit of the English lawyer is as strong in Hallam as in Bentham, who, like him, was never a preaching lawyer. It is no doubt owing to this quality that the *Constitutional History* has become one of the text books of English politics. Hallam, like Blackstone, has become an authority to whom men of all parties appeal. The origin of English institutions has since been explored with greater elaborateness by Professor Stubbs, but on leading guide to the constitution in its maturity is still Hallam.

Like the *Constitutional History*, the *Introduction to the Literature of Europe* continues one of the branches of inquiry which had been opened in the *View of the Middle Ages*. In the first chapter of the *Literature*, which is to a great extent supplementary to the last chapter of the *Middle Ages*, Hallam sketches the state of literature in Europe down to the end of the 14th century—the extinction of ancient learning which followed the fall of the Roman empire and the rise of Christianity, the preservation of the Latin language in the services of the church, and the slow revival of letters, which began to show itself soon after the 7th century—"the *nasci* of the human mind"—had been passed. For the first century and a half of his special period he is mainly occupied with a review of classical learning, and he adopts the plan of taking short decennial periods and noticing the most remarkable works which they produced. The rapid growth of literature in the 16th century compels him to resort to a classification of subjects. Thus in the period 1520-1550 we have separate chapters on ancient literature, theology, speculative philosophy and jurisprudence, the literature of taste, and scientific and miscellaneous literature, and the subdivision of subjects is carried further of course in the later periods. Thus poetry, the drama, and polite literature form the subjects of separate chapters. One inconvenient result of this arrangement is that the same author is scattered over many chapters, according as his works fall within this category or that period of time. Names like Shakspere, Grotius, Bacon, Hobbes, appear in half a dozen different

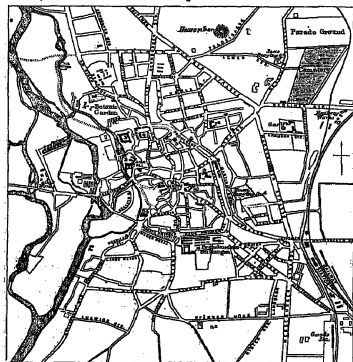
places. The individuality of great authors is thus disrupted except when it has been preserved by an occasional sacrifice of the arrangement—and this defect, if it is to be esteemed a defect, is increased by the very sparing references to personal history and character with which Hallam was obliged to content himself. His plan excluded biographical history, nor is the work, he tells us, to be regarded as one of reference. It is rigidly an account of the books which would make a complete library of the period, arranged according to the date of their publication and the nature of their subjects. The history of institutions like universities and academies, and that of great popular movements like the Reformation, as of course noticed in their immediate connexion with literary results, but Hallam had little taste for the spacious generalization which such subjects suggest. The great qualities displayed in this work have been universally acknowledged—consistentness, accuracy, judgment, and enormous reading. Not the least striking testimony to Hallam's powers is his mastery over so many diverse forms of intellectual activity. In science and theology, mathematics and poetry, metaphysics and law, he is a competent and always a fair if not a profound critic. The bent of his own mind is manifest in his treatment of pure literature and of political speculation,—which seems to be inspired with stronger personal interest and a higher sense of power than the other parts of his work display. Not less worthy of notice in a literary history is the good sense by which both his learning and his tastes have been held in control. Probably no writer ever possessed a juster view of the relative importance of men and things. The labour devoted to an investigation is with Hallam no excuse for dwelling on the results, unless that is in itself important. He turns away contemptuously from the mere curiosities of literature, and is never tempted to make a display of trivial erudition. Nor do we find that his interest in special studies leads him to assign them a disproportionate place in his general view of the literature of a period.

Hallam is generally described as a "philosophical historian." The description is justified not so much by any philosophical quality in his method as by the nature of his subject and his own temper. Hallam is a philosopher to this extent that both in political and in literary history he fixed his attention on results rather than on persons. His conception of history embraced the whole movement of society. Beside that conception the issue of battles, and the fate of kings fall into comparative insignificance. "We can trace the pedigrees of princes," he reflects, "fill up the catalogue of towns besieged and provinces desolated, describe even the whole pageantry of coronations and festivals, but we cannot recover the genuine history of mankind." But, on the other hand, there is no trace in Hallam of anything like a philosophy of history or a society. Wise and generally melancholy reflections on human nature and political society are not infrequent in his writings, and they arise naturally and incidentally out of the subjects he is discussing. His object is the attainment of truth in matters of fact. Sweeping theories of the movement of society, and broad characterizations of particular periods of history, seem to have no attraction for him. The view of mankind on which such generalizations are usually based, taking little account of individual character, was highly distasteful to him. Thus he objects to the use of statistics because they favour that tendency to regard all men as mentally and morally equal which is so unhappily strong in modern times. At the same time Hallam by no means assumes the tone of the mere scholar. He is even solicitous to show that his point of view is that of the cultivated gentleman and not of the specialist of any order. Thus

\* Technical subjects like painting in English law have been excluded by Hallam, and history and theology only partially treated.

he tells us that Montaigne is the first French author whom an English gentleman is ashamed not to have read. In fact, allusions to the necessary studies of a gentleman meet us constantly, reminding us of the unlikely erudition of the schoolboy in Maseaulay. Hallam's prejudices, so far as he had any, belong to the same character. His criticism is apt to assume a tone of moral censure when he has to deal with certain extremes of human thought,—scepticism in philosophy, atheism in religion, and democracy in politics. Hallam's style is singularly uniform throughout all his writings. It is sincere and straightforward, and obviously innocent of any motive beyond that of clearly expressing the writer's meaning. In the *Literature of Europe* there are many passages of great imaginative beauty. (N. R.)

**HALLÉ** (formerly called, to distinguish it from other towns of the same name, Halle in Sachsen, but now generally known as Halle an der Saale), a city of Prussian Saxony, government district of Merseburg, is situated on the right bank of the Saale and at the junction of six railways, 20 miles N.W. of Leipzig. It consists of the old town, or Halle proper, with five suburbs, and the two small towns of Glauchau and Neumarkt, which were added to it in 1817. Halle is under the immediate jurisdiction of the crown, and is the seat of the imperial chief office of mines for



Plan of Halle.

- |                  |                     |                            |
|------------------|---------------------|----------------------------|
| 1. Penitentiary. | 8. Theatre.         | 11. Red Clock Tower.       |
| 2. Observatory.  | 9. Gymnasium.       | 12. Cathedral.             |
| 3. Marienburg.   | 10. District Court. | 13. Church of St. Mary.    |
| 4. Library.      | 16. Town-Hall.      | 14. Church of St. Maurice. |
| 5. University.   |                     |                            |

the provinces of Saxony, Brandenburg, and Pomerania, of a head tax-office, of a circle court, and of a provincial office. The greater part of the town is irregularly built, and presents a somewhat unattractive appearance to the eye of a stranger; but of late years it has been much improved by the construction of new promenades on the site of the old fortifications, and by the repaving of many of the streets and the addition of new buildings. Its well-known university was founded by King Frederick I. in 1694 in behalf of the jurist Thomassina, whom many students followed to Halle when he was expelled from Leipzig through the enmity of his fellow-professors. It was closed by Napoleon in 1806, and again in 1813; and in 1816 it was united

with that of Wittenberg. It has faculties of theology, law, medicine, and philosophy. From the beginning it has been recognized as one of the principal schools of Protestant theology, and has numbered among its professors some of the most eminent names of Germany. Its maximum number of students occurred in 1829 when they exceeded 1300. Subsequently the number declined below 600, but at present the average attendance is between 900 and 1000. The present buildings were erected in 1834. In connexion with the university there are a botanical garden, a theological and normal seminary, a medical and surgical clinical institute, a maternity hospital, an observatory, and a library of over 100,000 volumes, which also contains collections of coins and engravings. The *Franckesche Stiftungen*—founded in 1691 by August Hermann Francke, a bronze statue of whom by Rauch was erected in 1829 in the inner court of the building—embrace an orphanage, a laboratory where medicines are prepared and distributed, a Bible press from which Bibles are issued at a cheap rate, and a number of schools of various grades, viz., a Latin school, a higher real-school, a citizen school, a higher female school, and a free school, attended in all by over 3000 pupils. The principal other institutions are the city gymnasium, the provincial trade school, the provincial lunatic asylum, the penitentiary, the town hospital and infirmary, and the deaf and dumb institute. Among the other public buildings may be mentioned the church of St. Mary, containing some fine paintings, an interesting Gothic structure of the 16th century, with four towers, two of which are connected by a bridge; the church of St. Maurice, dating from the 12th century, with interesting wood-carving; the crypt church of St. Ulrich, dating from the 14th century; the cathedral, founded in the 10th century, and containing an altar-piece representing Duke Augustus of Saxony and his family; the red clock tower in the market-place, 276 feet in height; the old town-house; the ruins of the castle of Moritzburg, erected in 1484, formerly the residence of the archbishops of Magdeburg, but destroyed by fire during the Thirty Years' War, with the exception of the left wing, which is now used for military purposes; the lodge of the Freemasons; and the theatre. In 1699 a bronze statue was erected in the market-place to Handel, who was born at Halle in 1685; and in the outskirts of the town there is a monument to the Germans who fell at the battle of Leipzig in 1813. The salt-springs of Halle have been known from a very early period. Some rise within the town and others on an island in the Saale; and together their annual yield of salt is about 12,000 tons. The workmen employed in connexion with the manufacture are a peculiar and distinct race known by the name of *Halloren*, probably descended from an old Frankish colony. They observe several ancient customs, and enjoy certain special exemptions and privileges. The principal other industries of Halle are the manufacture of starch, beetroot-sugar, chemicals, lignite, candles, pottery-ware, sausages, oil, machines and waggons, sugar-refining, brewing, printing, and bookbinding. Considerable trade, especially in corn, is now carried on by means of the railways, but the shipping trade is unimportant. The population has increased with great rapidity during the last quarter of a century, for while the numbers in 1851 were 26,694, they had risen in 1849 to 39,848 and in 1875 to 60,599. Halle was first mentioned in 808 as the fortress of Halle, erected by Charlemagne. The place was, however, in existence before the Christian era, and owes its origin as well as its name to its salt-springs. Otto the Great presented it in 945 along with the salt-springs to the bishopric of Magdeburg, and in 961 Otto II. raised it to the rank of a town. At the beginning of the 12th century it had attained considerable importance, and in the 13th and 14th centuries as a member of the Hanseatic League it carried on successful wars with the archbishops of Magdeburg, and in 1486 it resisted an army of 80,000 men under the elector of Saxony. On account, however, of internal feuds between the democracy and the patricians it

was subdued in 1478 by Archbishop Einow, who in order to hold it in check built the castle of Mottburg. Notwithstanding the efforts of the archbishops of Mainz and Magdeburg, the Reformation found an entrance into the city in 1622, and in 1641 a Lutheran superintendent was appointed. After the peace of Westphalia in 1648 the city came into the possession of the house of Brandenburg. In 1806 it was stormed and taken by the French, after which, at the peace of Tilsit, it was united to the new kingdom of Westphalia. After the battle between the Prussians and French, May 2, 1813, it was taken by the Prussians. The rise of Leipzig was for a long time harmful to the prosperity of Halle, and its present rapid increase in population and trade is principally due to its position on the canal and the railroad of railway. See Dr. Heynau, *Aufgabe der Preuss. Provinz des Saalkraus*, Halle, 2 vols., 1755 (2d edition, 1771-73, 8d edition, 1849-44), Hoffmann, *Geschichte der Universität zu Halle*, 1806, *Halle in Vergangenheit und Gegenwart*, 1851, Krenth, *Die Geschichte und Beschreibung der Stadt Halle*, 2d edition, 1861, Vom Hagen, *Die Stadt Halle*, 1866-67, Hutzberg, *Geschichte der Vereinigung der Universitäten von Wittenberg und Halle*, 1867, Voss, *Zur Geschichte der Anatomie der Stadt Halle*, 1874, A. A. Hülke, "Ueber die Legende der Entstehung der Stadt Halle," in *Mittheilungen des Vereins für Geschichte zu Halle*, Halle, 1877.

**HALLECK, FITZGERALD** (1790-1867), an American poet, was born at Guilford, Connecticut, July 8, 1790. By his mother he was descended from John Eliot, the "Apostle of the Indians." At an early age he became clerk in a store at Guilford, and at eighteen he entered a banking house in New York. Having made the acquaintance of Joseph Rodman Drake in 1819, he assisted him under the signature of "Croaker junior" in contributing to the *New York Evening Post* the humorous series of "Croaker Papers." In 1821 he published his longest poem, *Fanny*, a satire on local politics and fashions in the measure of Byron's *Don Juan*. He visited Europe in 1822-23, and after his return published anonymously in 1827 a volume of poems in which were included "Albion Castle" and "Burns." From 1824 to 1849 he was confidential agent of John Jacob Astor, who named him one of the trustees of the Astor Library, and left him an annuity of 200 dollars, on which he retired to Guilford, where he lived with an unmarried sister. In 1864 he published in the *New York Ledger* a poem of 300 lines entitled "Young America." He died at Guilford, November 19, 1867. The poems of Halleck are written with great care and finish, and manifest the possession of a fine sense of harmony and of genial and elevated sentiments.

Editions of his poems appeared in 1836, 1842, 1849, 1858, and 1869. He is also the author of a number of satirical and a memoir, and of two volumes of *Selections from the English Poets His Life*, by J. G. Wilson, appeared in 1869.

**HALLECK, HENRY WAGNER** (1815-1872), an American general, was born at Waterville, Onondaga county, New York, January 15, 1815. After studying a short time at Union College, he in 1835 entered the West Point military academy, whence he was in 1839 promoted to the army as second lieutenant in the corps of engineers, being at the same time appointed assistant professor of engineering at the academy. In the following year he was made an assistant to the board of engineers at Washington, and from 1841 to 1844 he was employed in connexion with the fortification of New York harbor. In 1845 he was sent by the Government to examine the principal military establishments of Europe, and during his absence he was promoted to the rank of first lieutenant. After his return he in the winter of 1845-46 delivered at the Lowell Institute, Boston, a course of twelve lectures on the science of war, published in 1846 under the title *Elements of Military Art and Science*, and republished with additions in 1861. On the outbreak of the Mexican war in 1846 he as military engineer accompanied the expedition to California and the Pacific coast, where he distinguished himself not only as an engineer but by his administrative skill as secretary of state, and by his presence of mind and bravery in several skirmishes with the enemy. In 1847 his services were

recognized by promotion to the rank of captain. He continued for several years to act on the staff of General Riley in California, holding at the same time the office of secretary of state of the province, and he took a leading part in framing the State constitution of California, on its being admitted into the Union. In 1852 he was appointed inspector and engineer of lighthouses, and in 1853 he was promoted captain of engineers. He, however, in 1854 resigned his commission in order to devote his chief attention to the practice of law, which he had already for some time carried on, and so great was his success in his profession that the firm of which he was senior partner soon obtained one of the largest legal businesses in the State. He was also from 1850 director of the New Almaden quicksilver mine, and in 1855 he became president of the Pacific and Atlantic Railroad from San Francisco to San José. On the outbreak of the civil war he was in August 1861 appointed major general of the United States army, and in the following November was appointed commander of the western department, where he conducted the campaign with great energy and with such uniform success against the Confederates that in 1862 they evacuated Corinth, which they had strongly fortified. In July of the same year he was appointed general in chief of the armies of the United States—a position he held till March 1864, when he was succeeded by Grant and was appointed chief of the staff. In April 1865 he held the command of the military division of the James and in August of the same year of the military division of the Pacific, which he retained till March 1869, when he was transferred to that of the south, a position he held till his death at Louisville, January 9, 1872.

Besides his work on the *Science of War*, General Halleck was the author of *Biometry, its Varieties, Properties, and Uses*, 1841, *The Young Laws of Space and Motion*, 1859, a translation of *De Force On the Law of Vines*, with an introduction, 1860, *International Law*, 1861, a translation of Jommi's *Life of Napoleon*, 1861, and a *Treatise on International Law and the Laws of War*, prepared for the use of Schools and Colleges, 1866.

**HALLER, ALBRECHT VON** (1708-1777), one of the greatest of the anatomists and physiologists of the 18th century, was born of an old Swiss family at Bern, October 16, 1708. Prevented by long-continued ill-health from taking part in boyish sports, he had the more opportunity for the development of his precocious mind. At the age of four, it is said, he used to read and expound the Bible to his father's servants, before he was ten he had sketched a Chaldean grammar, prepared a Greek and a Hebrew vocabulary, compiled a collection of two thousand biographies of famous men and women on the model of the great works of Bayle and Moreri, and written in Latin verse a satire on his tutor, who had wined him against a too great exactness. When still hardly fifteen he was already the author of numerous metrical translations from Ovid, Horace, and Virgil, as well as of original lyrics, dramas, and an epic of four thousand lines on the origin of the Swiss confederation, writings which he said on one occasion to have rescued from a fire at the risk of his life, only, however, to burn them a little later (1729) with his own hand. Haller's attention had been directed to the profession of medicine while he was residing in the house of a physician at Biel after his father's death in 1721, and, following the choice then made, he while still a sickly and excessively shy youth went in his sixteenth year to the university of Tübingen (December 1723), where he studied under Camerarius and Duvernoy. Dissatisfied with his progress, he in 1726 exchanged Tübingen for Leyden, where he remained until the summer of his fame, and where Albinus had already begun to lecture on anatomy. As that university he graduated in May 1737, undertaking successfully in his thesis to prove that the so-called salivary duct, claimed as a recent discovery by

Coschwitz, was nothing more than a blood vessel. Halle then visited London, making the acquaintance of Sir Hans Sloane, Cheselden, Pringle, Douglas, and other scientific men, next, after a short stay in Oxford, he visited Paris, where he studied under Ledian and Winslow, and in 1738 he proceeded to Basel, where he devoted himself to the study of the higher mathematics under John Bernoulli. It was during his stay there also that his first great interest in botany was awakened, and, in the course of a tour through Savoy, Baden, and several of the Swiss cantons, he began a collection of plants which was afterwards the basis of his great work on the flora of Switzerland. In 1749 he returned to Bern and began to practice as a physician; in his best energies, however, were devoted to the botanical and anatomical researches which rapidly gave him a European reputation, and procured for him from George II. in 1736 a call to the chair of medicine, anatomy, botany, and surgery, in the newly-founded university of Gottingen. The quantity of work achieved by Haller in the seventeen years during which he occupied this post was immense. Apart from the ordinary work of his classes, which entailed upon him the task of newly organizing a botanical garden, an anatomical theatre and museum, an obstetrical school, and similar institutions, he carried on without interruption those original investigations in botany and physiology, the results of which are preserved in the numerous works associated with his name, he continued also to persevere in his youthful habit of poetical composition, while at the same time he conducted a monthly scientific journal to which he is said to have contributed twelve thousand articles relating to almost every branch of human knowledge. He also warmly interested himself in most of the religious questions, both ephemeral and permanent, of his day, and the election of the Reformed church in Gottingen was mainly due to his unremitting energy. Notwithstanding all this variety of absorbing interests he never felt at home in Gottingen, his untravelling heart kept ever turning towards his native Bern (where he had been elected a member of the great council in 1745), and in 1763 he resolved to resign his chair and return to Switzerland. The twenty-one years of his life which followed were largely occupied in the discharge of his duties as "ammann," to which honourable office he had been chosen by his fellow-citizens, and in the preparation of his *Bibliotheca Medica*, the botanical, surgical and anatomical parts of which he lived to complete, but he also found time to write the three philosophical romances, — *Ursory* (1771), *Alfred* (1773), and *Fabius and Cato* (1774), — in which his views as to the respective merits of despotism, of limited monarchy, and of aristocratic republicanism are fully set forth. About 1773 the state of his health rendered necessary his entire withdrawal from public business, for some time he supported his failing strength by means of opium, on the use of which he communicated a paper to the *Proceedings of the Gottingen Royal Society* in 1776, the excessive use of the drug is believed, however, to have hastened his death, which occurred on the 17th of December 1777. Haller, who had been three times married, left eight children, the eldest of whom, Gotthelb Emanuel, attained to some distinction as a botanist and as a writer on Swiss history.

For some account of Haller's contributions to the sciences of which he was especially an ornament, see the articles *ANATOMY* (vol. 2, p. 814) and *PHYSIOLOGY*. Subjoined is a classified but by no means an exhaustive list of his very numerous works in various branches of science and literature. — (1) *Anatomical* — *Icones anatomice* (1748-54), *Disputationes anatomice selectiores* (1748-52), and *Opera anatomica selectiora* (1759-62). (2) *Physiological* — *De respiratione et peristaltico motu* (1747), *Præmissa physiologia* (1747), and *Elementa physiologiae corporis humani* (1757-60). (3) *Pathological and surgical* — *Opuscula pathologica* (1750), *Diagnosium chirurgicum collectum* (1777), also several editions of Bonini's *Prælectiones ætænales in præcepta et methodum*

*tulorum et medicum* (1789), and of the *Artes medicæ præcipue in ætate ætate* (1769-71). (4) *Botanical* — *Enumeratio stirpium Helvetiarum* (1742), *Opuscula botanica* (1748), *Bibliotheca botanica* (1771), (5) *Theological* — *Biſſe ubi die wichtigsten Währheiten der Offenbarung* (1772), and *Beſtätigung der Offenbarung* (1776-77). (6) *Poetical* — *Alfred* (1773, 12th ed. 1777). His three romances have been already mentioned. Several volumes of lectures and "Tagelieder" or journals were published posthumously.

See J. G. Zimmermann, *Das Leben des Herrn v. Haller* (1782), and the notices by Lantini and Scilla in *Leicht und Gelehrte Beschreibungen*.

HALLEY, EDMUND (1686-1742), an eminent astronomer, was born at Hagstow, near London, October 29, 1686. His father, a wealthy soapboiler, desiring to give his only son an education suitable to his promising genius, placed him at St Paul's School, where he was equally distinguished for classical as for mathematical ability. Before leaving it for Queen's College, Oxford, which he entered as commoner in 1673, he had observed the change in the variation of the compass, and, at the age of nineteen, he supplied a new and improved method of determining the elements of the planetary orbits. His detection of considerable errors in the tables then in use led him to the conclusion that a more accurate ascertainment of the places of the fixed stars was indispensable to the progress of astronomy, and finding that Flamsteed and Hevelius had already undertaken to catalogue the variable in northern latitudes, he assumed to himself the task of making observations in the southern hemisphere. A recommendation from Charles II. to the East India Company procured for him an apparently suitable, though, as it proved, ill-chosen station, and in November 1676 he embarked for St Helena. On the voyage he noticed the retardation of the pendulum in approaching the equator and during his stay on this island he observed the transit of Mercury, which suggested to him the important idea of employing similar phenomena for the calculation of the solar distance. He returned to England in November 1678, having by the negotiation of 680 stars won the title of the "Southern Tycho," and by the translation to the heavens of the "Royal Oak," earned a degree of master of arts, conferred at Oxford by the king's command December 8, 1678, almost simultaneously with his election as fellow of the Royal Society. Six months later, the indefatigable astronomer started for Dantzic to set at rest a dispute of long standing between Hooke and Hevelius as to the respective merits of plain or telescopic sights, and towards the end of 1680 he proceeded on a Continental tour. In Paris he observed with Cassini the great comet of 1680 after its perihelion passage, and having returned to England, he married in 1682 Mary, daughter of Mr. Tooke, auditor of the exchequer, with whom he lived happily for fifty-five years. He now fixed his residence at Islington, engaged chiefly upon lunar observations, with a view to the great desideratum of a method of finding the longitude at sea. His mind, however, was also busy with the momentous problem of gravity. Having reached so far as to perceive that the central force of the solar system must decrease inversely as the square of the distance, and applied vainly to Wren and Hooke for further elucidation, he made in August 1684 that journey to Cambridge for the purpose of consulting Newton, which resulted in the publication of the *Principia*. The labour and expense of passing this great work through the press devolved upon Halley, who also wrote the prefixed hexameters ending with the well-known line—

Non sis set propius mortali attingere divos

In 1696 he was, although a zealous Tory, appointed comptroller of the mint at Chester, and (August 13, 1698) he received a commission as captain of the "Paradise" for the purpose of making extensive observations on the conditions of terrestrial magnetism. This task he accomplished in a voyage which lasted two years, and extended

to the 52d degree of S latitude. The results were published in a *General Chart of the Variation of the Compass* in 1701, and immediately afterwards he executed by royal command a careful survey of the tides and coasts of the British Channel, an elaborate map of which he produced in 1702. On his return from a journey to Dalmatia, for the purpose of selecting and fortifying the port of Trieste, he was nominated, November 1703, Savilian professor of geometry at Oxford, and received an honorary degree of doctor of laws. Between 1713 and 1721 he acted as secretary to the Royal Society, having previously during eight years (1686-93) filled the same office, and early in 1720 he succeeded Flamsteed as astronomer royal. Although in his sixty-fourth year, he undertook to observe the moon through an entire revolution of her nodes (eighteen years), and actually carried out his purpose. He died in the full possession of his faculties, January 14, 1742, at the age of eighty-five.

Halley's most notable scientific achievements were—his detection of the "long inequality" of Jupiter and Saturn, and of the acceleration of the moon's mean motion, his discovery of the proper motions of the fixed stars, his theory of variation, including the hypothesis of four magnetic poles, revived by Hannsteen in 1819, and his suggestion of the magnetic origin of the aurora borealis, his calculation of the orbit of the 1683 comet (the first ever attempted), coupled with a prediction of its return, strikingly verified in 1759 and 1835, and his indication (in 1718, *Phil. Trans.*, No. 348) of a method still used for determining the solar parallax by means of the transits of Venus.

His principal work, *are Catalogus Stellarum Austriacarum*, London, 1679, the substance of which is embodied in vol. vi of Flamsteed's *Historia Caelorum*, 1725; *Synopsis Astronomica Cometarum*, Oxford, 1705; *Astronomical Tables*, London, 1752, the eighty-one miscellaneous papers of considerable interest, scattered through the *Philosophical Transactions*. To these should be added his version from the Arabic (which language he requested for the purpose) of the tactics of Apollonius, *De sectione conicis*, the first edition of his two lost books, *De sectione conicis*, both published at Oxford in 1706, also his fine edition of the *Conics* of Apollonius, with the text by SIMON DE STEVINUS *editum et cum*, Oxford, 1716, folio. His edition of the *Sphaera* of MICHELINI was published by his friend B. Costard in 1758.

**HALLOWEEN or HALLOWE'EN**, the vigil of All Saints' Day. For some account of the singular observances by which it used to be, and to some extent still is, distinguished in Scotland and elsewhere, reference may be made to such works as Brand's *Popular Antiquities*, Chambers's *Book of Days*, or better still to the well-known poem of Burns. Though sometimes neglected in modern practice, the most essential part of Halloween's ritual seems to consist in the lighting by each household of a bonfire at midnight. This points to the very ancient and widely-diffused practice of kindling sacred fires at certain seasons of the year. While the Germanic nations had their Osterfeuer and Johannisfeuer, the Celtic had their Bealtine or Beltane (see BELTANE) and Samhaine, the former on the eve of May 1, and the latter on the eve of November 1. Probably the winter as well as the summer festival was from the beginning regarded as a season at which the faeries, were both unusually active and unusually propitious, but there is no evidence to show that the methods of divination at present usually resorted to, although of great antiquity, were originally regarded as limited in their efficacy to any one day. See GRIMM'S *Deutsche Mythologie*, ch. xx (Beltane), and ch. xxvii (Aberglaube).

**HALLUIN**, a town of France, in the department of Nord and arrondissement of Lille, and 11 miles N N E of Lille, is situated near the right bank of the Lys. It contains several religious and benevolent institutions, including a hospital. The manufactures comprise linen and cotton goods, bucks, and oil. The family of Halluin or Halowin is mentioned as early as 1266. Baron Walter II. was one

of the forty hostages sent to England in 1360 in exchange for the English King John. George of Halluin or Halowin was a general in the service of Henry V, and an ambassador to England. He died in 1387, leaving several treatises in Latin. The family, to which the title of duke had been granted in 1581, became extinct about the middle of the 17th century. Population of the town (1876), 5851.

**HALMSTAD**, the chief town of the Swedish Lan Halland or Halmstad, is situated on the east shore of the Ottegatt, about 76 miles S E E of Gothenburg, and at the mouth of the river Nissa. The castle is the residence of the governor of the province. Mention of the church of Halmstad occurs as early as 1462, and the fortifications are mentioned first in 1525. The latter were demolished in 1738. The Dominican and Franciscan monasteries, formerly in the town, are now quite destroyed. The harbour, built in 1837-40, at a cost of about £6250, admits ships of 10 feet draught, by means of which some trade in deals, pitch, and tar is carried on. The salmon fishery is important. An archaeological society holds its meetings in Halmstad, and the popular magazine *Seenska Family Journalen* is published there. There are both mineral and sea water baths in the neighbourhood. The oldest town-privileges of Halmstad date from 1307, while the first recorded event in its military history is the battle of Nissa, between Hårik and Svend Ulvsson. During the revolt of the minor Engelbækt, it twice fell into the hands of the rebels—in 1434 and 1486. The town appears to have been frequently chosen as the meeting place of the rulers and delegates of the three northern kingdoms, and under the union of Calmar it was appointed to be the place for the election of a new Scandinavian monarch whenever necessary. The lan of Halland formed part of the territory of Denmark in Sweden, and accordingly, in 1534, during his war with the Danes, Gustavus Vasa assaulted and took its chief town. In 1600, by the treaty of Copenhagen, the whole district was ceded to Sweden. In 1676 Charles XII. defeated near Halmstad a Danish army, which was attempting to retake the district, and since that time Halland has formed part of Sweden. The population of the town in 1875 was 7136.

**HALO** (Latin, *halo*, Greek, *ἅλω*), a luminous circle of light surrounding one of the heavenly bodies. A better definition perhaps would be "a ring of coloured light formed by refraction, on the passage of light from one of the heavenly bodies through the aqueous vapour surrounding the earth." This would include comets and rainbows, and similar phenomena.

Halos may be divided into the following classes—

- |                |                                 |
|----------------|---------------------------------|
| 1 Encompassing | { A Simple                      |
|                | { B Compound, &c., halo systems |
|                | { C Corona                      |
|                | { a Rainbows                    |
| 2 Opposite     | { β Fog bows and mist halos     |
|                | { γ Mountain spectra            |

They are usually seen surrounding the sun or the moon, but in the tropics small halos were observed by Humboldt round the planet Venus. The formation of encompassing halos of the classes A and B is generally attributed to refraction and reflexion of the rays of light by the presence of minute snow crystals in the upper strata of the air, and they occur usually when cirrus or cirro-stratus clouds exist. This theory was originated by Descartes, and was adopted by Mariotte (in 1686), and subsequently followed by Dr. Young and Sir Isaac Newton. It is, however, probable that some halos and certainly all coronas (class C) are formed by refraction of light from globules of water suspended in the atmosphere. Simple halos are either about 22½ degrees or 47 degrees in diameter. Those or snow crystals, being hexagonal in form, sometimes produce a double refraction,

and then the large and small halos are seen at the same time, and, reflexion taking place from the surfaces of the crystals, additional halos or parts of halos are formed as in

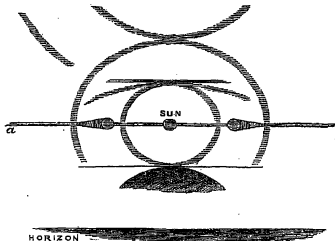


FIG. 1.—Solar halos and parhelia seen at Brighton, June 5, 1876, by F. R. Sawyer, from 4 to 4.45 p.m. The halo, *a* was a large one, having the zenith for its centre and going entirely round the heavens. It was a white band, and passed through the sun and the mock suns. The parhelia were of prismatic colours and had flaming tails.

figs. 1 and 2. At the points of intersection of the halos, images of the sun or moon sometimes appear; when seen with the former, they are called *parhelia* or *mock-suns*, and when with the latter, *paraselenes* or *moon-moons*. They are sometimes accompanied with flaming tails, and are usually of prismatic colours, as also are the halos and coronas. The latter are seen when fleecy clouds or mist intervene between the spectator and the sun or moon, to which they are in immediate proximity, thereby being distinguished from the halos, which are formed at a distance from those luminaries. The predominating colour in coronas is red or orange.

The second principal division of halos includes those which are seen opposite to the sun and moon. The first class of these comprises rainbows (*a*), which are occasioned by refraction of the light from the sun or moon, produced by falling rain, causing a bow with the prismatic colours in concentric bands and arranged as they appear in the solar spectrum. When the rain is abundant an inner bow is formed, the colours in which are in inverted order. Rainbows when seen from mountain tops and the topmasts of ships are completely circular. Fog-bows

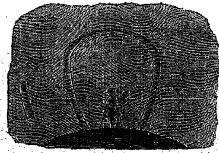


FIG. 2.—Halo system observed at Aberdeen, January 29, 1870, at 2 p.m. (see Symonds's *Monthly Meteorological Magazine*, 1870, pp. 1 and 50, and frontispiece).

are somewhat similar. The former are frequently white in colour, and are seen in the English Channel, and also off the banks of Newfoundland, being called by sailors "fog-salers," from their in-

disseminating a dispersion of the fog or mist. They appear to be formed in a horizontal or very oblique plane. Mist halos are seen in the vapour of fountains or waterfalls, and resemble rainbows. Mountain spectra (*y*) are caused by reflexion, and often appear accompanied by chromatic halos (see fig. 3). They generally occur on mountains when the sky between the observer and the sun is clear and there is a mist or cloud on the side of the mountain opposite to the sun, on which the summit of the mountain and the buildings and persons standing near are reflected. The most notable of mountain spectra is that of the Brocken, in the Harz mountains. Howitt says of this:—

"If the fog is very dry, you see not only yourself but your neighbour; if very damp, only yourself, surrounded by a rainbow-coloured glory, which becomes more lustrous and beautiful the damper and thicker the fog is, and the nearer it approaches."

Many of the ancient descriptions of miraculous appearances in the heavens may be attributed to the phenomena before mentioned. Among the chief of these is the appearance of a cross which the emperor Constantine alleged he saw in the heavens about noon when marching against Maxentius (about 313 A.D.), and which was the cause of

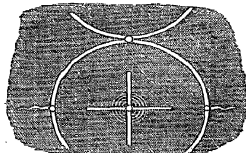


FIG. 4.—A system of lunar halos and paraselenes figured in Buchan's *Meteorology*, p. 158.

his conversion to Christianity (Eusebius, *Vita Constanti*, i. 27). Some writers have doubted the occurrence; but it is quite possible Constantine saw part of a system of solar halos, and two of these at right angles would form a cross (see fig. 4). The *Brighton Herald* of April 10, 1852, records a similar phenomenon on April 1st of that year at Brighton:—

"Sun setting, evening very fine with slight haze westward, when a ray of brilliant light shot upwards about 20 degrees above the horizon, directly perpendicular from the sun, and soon after its appearance it was crossed by a horizontal band of light of a paler colour, but about the same breadth. It formed a perfect cross, and lasted half an hour."

Halos and rainbows are considered valuable prognostications of future weather. Fragments of rainbows seen on detached clouds are called *wind-dogs*, and are said to be a sign of wind. When the diameter of a corona contracts it shows the water particles are uniting into larger ones which may fall in rain, whereas if the corona extends, the particles are growing smaller, indicating increasing dryness. The open side of a halo is in some places considered to foretell the quarter from which bad weather may be expected.

See M. A. Bravais, "Mémoire sur les Halos et les Phénomènes optiques qui les accompagnent" (*Journal de l'École Royale Polytechnique*, 31 cahier, tome 18, Paris, 1847); Buchan, *Introductory Treatise of Meteorology*, 1871; *Proc. Met. Soc.*, 1876, vol. ii., new ser., pp. 488 to 444. (P. E. S.)

HALS, FRANK, was born at Antwerp according to most authorities in 1584, and died at Haarlem in 1606. As a portrait painter second only to Rembrandt, he displayed extraordinary talent and quickness in the exercise of his art, coupled with improvidence in the use of the means which that art secured to him. At a time when the Dutch nation fought for independence and won it, Hals appears in the ranks of its military guilds. He was also a member of the chamber





The treatise entitled *Natural Religion Insufficient, and Revealed Necessary, to Man's Happiness in his present State* (1714) is an able reply to some of the arguments of Lord Hailst and of Blount, in the *Great Concern of Salvation* (1721), still read, handles questions of practical and experimental religion with great earnestness and in a manner that exhibits favourably one of the best types of piety current in his time, the *Mémoires* written by himself, which have been frequently reprinted, are similarly interesting and valuable.

HAM (27), the second son of Noah (Gen v 32), and the progenitor of Cush, Mizraim, Phut, and Canaan (Gen x 6). On the assumption that these early genealogies are geographical rather than personal or even ethnological, the name Ham, which in Hebrew radically signifies "hot," would seem to indicate the torrid zone, and this inference, though not supported, so far as has been hitherto discovered, by any corresponding explanation of the names of Shom and Japheth, at least harmonizes well with the fact that on the whole Shem seems intended to denote the intermediate and Japheth the northern regions of the world as known to the compiler of the Book of Genesis. The attempt has sometimes been made to identify Ham with Kem or Chem, an old native name of Egypt, signifying "black," and having reference, it is supposed, to the color of the soil. But this identification has no adequate etymological support (see Lepsius in Herzog and Plitt's *Enzykl.*, i 166), and the allusions in several of the Psalms to Egypt as the land of Ham (Ps cv 23, cvi 22) are not inconsistent with the belief that the latter name was primarily used in a much wider and less local sense. The solitary incident regarding Ham related in Gen ix 20-27 seems intended to indicate, from the Israelite point of view, the immodest and sensual tendencies of the Canaanites and other "Hamitic" peoples.

HAM, a small town of France, in a marshy district on the left bank of the Somme, about 40 miles south-east of Amiens, on the railway between Amiens and Rheims. It had in 1876 a population of only 3122, but historically it is a place of very considerable importance. From the 9th century onwards it appears as the seat of a lordship which, after the extinction of its hereditary line, passed in succession to the houses of Courcy, Enguhen, Luxembourg, Rohan, Vendôme, and Navarre, and was finally united to the French crown on the accession of Henry IV. In 1108 an abbey of canons regular of the congregation of France was founded at Ham, and it continued to exist till the great Revolution, the revenue of its abbots about that time amounting to 15,000 livres. The abbey church (Notre Dame) dates from the 12th century, but in April 1760 all the inflammable portions of the building were destroyed by a conflagration caused by lightning, and during the present century a process of restoration has been carried out under the direction of M. Coiroyer. Of special note are the bas reliefs of the nave and choir, executed in the 17th and 18th centuries, and the crypt of the 11th century, which contains the sepulchral effigies of Odo of Ham and his wife Isabella of Béthencourt. The castle, founded by Odo in the 12th century, was rebuilt in the 13th and extended in the 14th, and its present appearance is mainly due to Louis of Luxembourg, count of St. Pol, who between 1436 and 1470 not only furnished it with outworks, but gave such a thickness to the towers and curtains, and more especially to the great tower or donjon which still bears his motto *Mon Myeux*, that they would offer a long resistance even to modern artillery (Viollot-le-Duc). It forms a rectangle 395 feet long by 263 feet broad, with a round tower at each angle and two square towers protecting the curtains. The eastern and western sides are each defended by a demi-lune. The Constable's Tower, for so the great tower is

usually called in memory of St. Pol, has a height of about 100 feet, and the thickness of the walls is 36 feet, the interior is occupied by three large hexagonal chambers in as many stories. As the castle of Ham has frequently been used as a state prison both in ancient and modern times, the list of those who have tasted its hospitality is an interesting one, including Joan of Arc, Louis of Bourbon, the ministers of Charles X., Louis Napoleon, Cavaignac, and Lamoricière. Louis Napoleon was there for six years, and at last effected his escape in the disguise of a workman. During 1870-71 Ham was several times captured and recaptured by the belligerents.

A view and plan of the town will be found in Oesep's *Mémoires Topographiques Gallies*, Frankfurt, 1855, and the former is copied in the *Gentleman's Magazine*, 1831. See also De Feuille, *Le Château de Ham*, 1842, and Ch. Goussier, *Ham, son château*, 1864.

HAMADAN, a town of Persia, in the province of Irak-Adjemi, 162 miles W S W of Teheran, in the district of the Djebel at the foot of the Elvend or Alwand Mountain, the Orontes of the ancients. It is a busy place of about 50,000 inhabitants, and has large and well stocked bazars. Its principal industry is the manufacture of copper wares. Gold is collected in the streams traversing the town, and the surrounding country is remarkable for its beauty and fertility. Every quarter is shut off from its neighbours by gates which are closed at night. The chief objects of interest are the tombs of Esther and Mordecai, and of the Arabian philosopher Avicenna. The former, constructed of black wood, are adorned with Hebrew inscriptions which may be seen figured in Kei Porter's *Trauels*. According to these, the pavilion or temple over the tombs was erected in the year of the creation 4474. The ordinary inhabitants of Hamadan attach more importance to a stone image of a lion which their assent was set up by Belmas a magister, to mitigate the cold from which their city suffers severely. "Hamadan," says Hamadan, echoing a common Persian complaint, "is the most hateful of towns, its children are old men for ugliness, and its old men are children for silliness." At the same time the town has produced many eminent men, among whom are Abu 'l Fadhl Ahmed Hamadani himself, Zafar ed Din the Persian poet, and Zamani. The origin of the city is carried back by Hiebam el Kelbi to Hamadan a grandson of Shem, but other writers are contented with a less antiquity. Its identification with the Hamath of the Bible, as classical authors have been treated of under ESBATHA. The present town has almost no ancient remains, and especially there are no sculptured works. See Maynard, *Dictionnaire géographique de la Perse*.

HAMAH, the Hamath of the Bible, one of the oldest cities of Syria (Gen x 18), situated in the valley of the Orontes, 110 English miles N (by R) of Damascus. It finds a place among the northern boundaries of the Holy Land (Num xxxiv 8), and is frequently mentioned in Old Testament history (Num xii 21, 2 Sam vii 9, 1 Kings vii 65, 2 Kings xviii 34, 2 Chron vii 3, Isa x 8, Amos vi 2). The city lies in a narrow valley, the pass south of it being probably the "entering in of Hamath" (1 Kings vii 65). The Orontes flows winding through it, and is spanned by four bridges. On the south-east the houses rise 150 feet above the river, and there are four other hills, that of the *Kalah* or castle bang to the north 100 feet high. Twenty-four minarets rise from the various mosques. The houses are principally of mud, and the town stands amid poplar gardens with a fertile plain to the west. The castle is ruined, the streets are narrow and dirty, but the bazars are good, and the trade with the Bedawin considerable. The numerous water-wheels (*sabbab*), of enormous dimensions, raising water from the Orontes are the most remarkable features of the view. The population is stated in

official returns to consist of about 30,000 Muslims and 1000 non-Muslims. The most of Hamath manuscripts first mentioned by Burckhardt have lately attracted much attention. Four stones exist covered with ideographic designs in a character as yet quite unknown. The latest researches of Mr George Smith, however, indicate that the inscriptions are probably of Hittite origin, and other relics of that once powerful nation resembling the Hamath stones have been discovered farther east.

In the year 834 B.C. (according to the list of George Smith) Hamath was taken by Shalmaneser, king of Assyria, who defeated an army of 1400 chariots and 10,000 footmen under Hadad, king of the district. Agur in 713 B.C. Tenth Plagues II. Indeed the city to tribute, and in 710 B.C. he defeated the Hamathites, who were defeated by Assyria, king of Assyria. In 689 B.C. the city was captured by Sargon in 720 B.C. After the Macedonian conquest of Syria Hamath was called Epiphania by the Greeks in honor of Antiochus IV., Epiphanes, and in the early Byzantine period it was known by both its Hellenic and its Arabic name. In 639 A.D. the town was surrendered to 'Abd al-Qadir, one of Omar's generals, and the church was turned into a mosque. In 1108 A.D. Tancred captured the city and recovered the Hinnuliah defenders. In 1116 it was taken by the Muslims, and in 1178 was occupied by Saladin. Al-Buhārī, prince of Hamath in the early part of the 14th century, is well known as an authority on Arab geography.

HAMANN, JOHANN GEORG (1730-1788), a distinguished writer on philosophical and theological subjects, was born at Königsberg in Prussia in 1730. His parents were of humble rank and small means. The education he received was incomplete and unsystematic, and the want of definiteness in his early training doubtless tended to aggravate the peculiar instability of character which troubled Hamann's after life. In 1746 he began theological studies, but speedily deserted them and turned his attention to law. That too was taken up in a desultory fashion and quickly relinquished. Hamann seems at this time to have thought that any strenuous devotion to "bread-and-butter" studies was lowering, and accordingly gave himself entirely to reading, criticism, and philological inquiries. Such studies, however, were pursued without any definite aim or systematic arrangement, and consequently were productive of nothing. In 1752, constrained to secure some position in the world, he accepted a tutorship in a family resident in Livonia, but only retained it a few months. A similar situation in Courland he also resigned after about a year. In both cases apparently the rupture might be traced to the curious and unsatisfactory character of Hamann himself. After leaving his second post he was received into the house of a merchant at Riga named Berens, who contracted a great friendship for him and selected him as his companion for a tour through Danzig, Berlin, Hamburg, Amsterdam, and London. Hamann, however, was quite uninterested in business, and, when left in London, gave himself up entirely to his fancies, in which he was quickly induced to indulge to extreme poverty and want. It was at this period of his life, when his inner troubles of spirit harmonized with the unhappy external conditions of his lot, that he began an earnest and prolonged study of the Bible, and from this time dates the tone of extreme mysticism which is characteristic of his writings, and which undoubtedly alienated many of his friends. He returned to Riga, and was well received by the Berens family, in whose house he resided for some time. A quarrel, the precise nature of which is not very clear though the occasion is evident, led to an entire separation from these friends. In 1759 Hamann returned to Königsberg, and lived for several years with his father, filling occasional posts in Königsberg and Mitau. In 1757 he obtained a situation as translator in the excise office, and ten years later a post as storekeeper in a mercantile house. During this period of comparative rest Hamann was able to indulge in the long correspondence with learned friends which seems to have been his greatest pleasure. In 1784 the failure of some commercial speculations greatly reduced his means,

and about the same time he was dispirited with a small pension from his situation. The kindness of friends, however, supplied provision for his children, and enabled him to carry out the long-cherished wish of visiting some of his philosophical allies. He spent some time with Jacobi at Fempelfort and with Buchholz at Wallboigen. At the latter place he was seized with illness, and died on the 21st June 1788.

Hamann's works resemble his life and character. They are entirely unsystematic so far as method is concerned, chaotic and disjointed as to subjects not connected with the precise nature of the man, which led him to regard what communicated to himself as therefore objectively true; they must be moreover extremely unphilosophical and, from their peculiar juxtaposition and superficial jargon, probably offensive. A piece in the history of philosophy can be judged to Hamann only because he expresses in thorough, business fashion an idea to which other writers have given more effective shape. The fundamental thought is with him the unsatisfactoriness of abstraction or conclusion. The *Aufklärung*, with its rational theology, was to him the type of abstraction. Even Epiphania, which might appear concrete, was by him rightly designated abstract. Quite originally, then, Hamann tried to object to himself to much of the Kantian philosophy. The separation of sense and understanding is for him unjustifiable, and only paralleled by the extraordinary bluntness of severing matter and form. Consequences, therefore, as an end in itself, Hamann expresses, and as representing his own thought he used to refer to Giordano Bruno's conception of the identity of contraries. The demand, however, remains but a demand. Nothing that Hamann has given can be regarded as in the slightest degree a response to his highest of systems, and purely for abstract thinking, and intense personality rendered it impossible for him to do more than utter the disjointed, casual, obscure ideas which gained for him among his friends the name of "Rhapsody of the North." Two results only appear throughout his writings—first, the sanctification of belief, and, secondly, the transcendence of many philosophical difficulties to language. Chief as according to Hamann, the groundwork of knowledge is in the acceptance of all sensory Hamann's experience as being most helpful in constructing a theological view. In language, which he appears to regard as somehow required, he finds a solution for the problems of reason which Kant had discussed in the *Prolegomena*. On the applications of these thoughts to the Christian theology one need not enter.

None of Hamann's writings are of great bulk, most are mere pamphlets of some thirty or forty pages. A complete collection has been published by Beth (*Schriften*, 8vo, 1821-22), and by Gildemeister (*Leben und Schriften*, 6 vols., 1851-78). See also Pott, *Hamann's Schriften in Briefe*, 4 vols., 1872-3; Pott, *Hamann, der Mystiker und Prophet*, was *Leben und Mittheilungen aus seinen Schriften*, 2 vols., 1874-76. A very comprehensive essay on Hamann is to be found in Hegel's *Formgeschichte*, II (*Philosophie*, Bd. VIII).

HAMÁSAH (more correctly HAMÁSEH), the name of a famous Arabian anthology compiled by Ḥabīb ibn Aus at-Ṭai, surnamed Abū Temmām (occasionally ABU-TEMAM, q.v.). The collection is so-called from the title of its first book, containing poems descriptive of constancy and valor in battle, patient endurance of calamity, steadfastness in seeking vengeance, manifoldness under reproach and temptation, all which qualities make up the attribute called by the Arabs *hamdesh* (briefly paraphrased by Et-Ṭabrizi as *ash-shuddh al-lam*). It consists of ten books or parts, containing in all 884 poems or fragments of poems, and named respectively—(1) *Et-Hamāseh*, 261 pieces, (2) *Et-Mardūth*, "Dirges," 169 pieces, (3) *Et-Adab*, "Manners," 84 pieces, (4) *Et-Nashb*, "The Beauty and Love of Women," 139 pieces, (5) *Et-Hud*, "Satires," 80 pieces, (6) *Et-Adab al-lam*, "Hospitality and Panegyric," 143 pieces, (7) *Et-Sayf*, "Miscellaneous Descriptions," 3 pieces, (8) *Et-Sayr wa-n-Nāḥ*, "Journeying and Downfalls," 9 pieces, (9) *Et-Mudāh*, "Fleasanties," 38 pieces, and (10) *Madhammat-nash*, "Disparages of Women," 18 pieces. Of these books the first is by far the longest, both in the number and extent of its poems and the first two together make up more than half the bulk of the work. The poems are for the most part fragments selected from longer compositions, though a considerable number are probably entire. They are taken from the works of Arab poets of all periods



about five miles from the coast, and the bailwick (*amt*) of Bergedorf, which up to 1867 was held in common by Lubeck and Hamburg. The whole territory has an area of 187.18 square miles, exclusive of 99 square miles occupied by the Elbe. Of this area 124 square miles are within the limits of the German customs, but the rest continues to be practically "abroad" in relation to the commerce of the empire. In 1871 the total population was 338,074, by 1875 it had increased to 388,618 (191,339 males and 197,279 females), by 1877 to 406,014, and by 1878 to 417,239. Administratively the state is divided into the city or metropolitan district, which had 239,107 inhabitants in 1871, the domain of the Geest land<sup>1</sup> with 87,210 inhabitants, the domain of the Marsch land with 93,982, the bailwick of Bergedorf with 13,113, and the bailwick of Lützelbühl with 5557. Cuxhaven, Lützelbühl and Bergedorf are the only towns besides the capital, and they had respectively 4102 and 3899 inhabitants in 1875. The Geestland comprises the suburban districts of Rotherbaum, Harvestehude, Eimsbüttel, Eppendorf, Hohenfelde, Uhlenhorst, Eilbeck, Barmbeck, Winterhude, Borgfelde, Haub, and Moim, which encircle the city on the north and east, and the Marschland includes various "wäders,"<sup>2</sup> such as the Billwäder Ausschlag to the east of the city, the Steinwäder and the Lütke Glashöck to the south of the Elbe, the Billwäder, the Ocksenwäder, and the so-called Vierländer or Fom District (Corsika, Altegammes, Nauegammes, and Kirchwäder) as far east as Geesthacht. While the Geestland has in many places an almost unproductive soil, the Marschland is of extraordinary fertility, and its pastures, corn-fields, and market-gardens furnish Hamburg with large quantities of country produce.

As a state of the empire Hamburg is represented in the federal council by one plenipotentiary and in the diet by three deputies. According to the present constitution, which has been in force since September 28, 1860, the legislative power is in the hands of the senate and the general body of citizens, and the executive is committed to the senate alone. Of the 18 members of the senate no less than 9 must have studied law and finance, and of the remaining 9, 7 must be representatives of commerce. The members are chosen by the senate and the burgesses after a complicated process and the burgess upon whom their choice falls is obliged to accept office for at least six years, on pain of losing his civic rights. The senate by itself has the election of the first and the second burgomasters, each of whom holds office for only a year. There are 196 burgesses, of whom 88 are chosen by ballot by the general community, 48 by and from the owners of ground within the town, and 80 by the courts and administrative bodies. They are elected for a period of six years, but as half of each class go out at the end of every three years the elections occur twice as often. Both the senate and the burgesses have the right of introducing new bills. The basis of the civil law is the *Jus Hamburgicum*, revised in 1603 and supplemented by the Roman law, but in some of the rural districts local customs prevail, and in Bergedorf the Lubeck rights are still partly in force. Hamburg has appeal to the common high court of the Free Cities in Lubeck. There is a special court for commercial disputes. Jurors are summoned in the more important trials, and since 1869 there has been public and responsible prosecution of criminal cases. The ecclesiastical arrangements

of Hamburg have undergone great modifications since the general constitution of 1860. From the Reformation to the French occupation in the beginning of this century, Hamburg was a purely Lutheran state, according to the "Recess" of 1529, re-enacted in 1603, non-Lutherans were subject to legal punishment and expulsion from the country. Exceptions were gradually made in favour of foreign residents, but it was not till 1785 that regular inhabitants were allowed to exercise the religious rites of other denominations, and it was not till after the war of freedom that they were allowed to have buildings in the style of churches. In 1860 full religious liberty was guaranteed, and the identification of church and state abolished. By the new constitution of the Lutheran Church, published at first in 1870 for the city only, but in 1876 extended to the rest of the Hamburg territory, the parishes or communes are divided into three church-districts, and the general affairs of the whole community are entrusted to a synod of 53 members and to an ecclesiastical council of 9 members which acts as an executive. A central fund for the church was formed in 1870 out of the surplus property of the convent of St John, and in some of the communes there is a church rate. According to the returns of 1871 there were 300,968 Lutherans, 5588 members of other Evangelical churches, 7771 Roman Catholics, 194 Methodists, 2698 Christians of other sects, and 13,798 Jews, while 628 described themselves without religion or heathens, and 7071 gave no information as to creed. Since 1871 the ratio of Lutherans to non-Lutherans must have somewhat diminished. The German Reformed Church, the French Reformed, the English Episcopal, the English "Reformed," the Roman Catholic, and the Baptist are all recognized by the state. Civil marriages have been permissible in Hamburg since 1866, and since the introduction of the imperial law in January 1876 the number of such marriages has greatly increased.

The finances of the state of Hamburg are in a generally satisfactory state, for, although the public debt has been increasing, this is due mainly to such undertakings as railways, harbour improvements, and schools. In 1876 the revenue was estimated at £1,306,161 sterling, in 1877 at £1,264,666, in 1878 at £1,380,660, and in 1879 at £1,384,630, and the corresponding expenses were stated at £1,288,503, £1,368,916, £1,422,776, and £1,507,860. The public debt, which was £26,365,042 in the end of 1874, was reduced by 1878 to £6,325,858, the former sum £1,467,775 was the remains of the great configuration loan of 1812, which originally amounted to £2,550,000.

In 1868 the old civic militia, which then consisted of 7564 men, was dissolved, all citizens and militia-borne men aged of 20 and 45 had been obliged to serve except certain state officials, and school teachers, &c. By convention with Prussia, Hamburg furnishes two battalions to the 1st Hanseatic infantry regiment.

*See Statistik des Handels und Gewerbes, 1878. J. Neumann, Statist. Handbuch für den Handel, 1874 and 1878. Gustav Ratzer, Sohn Jahrs Civilstandsamt im Hamburg, 1878.*

HAMBURG, one of the most remarkable cities of Germany and indeed of Europe, ranking as it does as the first of all the seats of commerce on the Continent, is situated on the right bank of the northern arm of the Elbe, about 93 miles from the mouth of that river, just where it is joined by the Alster and the Bille. The latitude of the observatory in the western part of the city is 53° 33' 55" N and the longitude 9° 58' 23' 6" E, the latitude of the tower of St Michael's is 53° 33' 55' 7" N and the longitude 9° 58' 41' 7" E. Were it not for political and municipal boundaries Hamburg might be considered as forming one town with Altona and Ottensen, the three presenting to the river a continuous frontage of nearly 4 miles, and long lines of suburbs radiate inland in various directions. The city proper lies on both sides of the Alster, which having been dammed up a short distance from its mouth now forms a considerable lake, of which the southern portion within the line of the fortifications bears the name of the Inner Alster (*Binnen Alster*), and the other and larger portion (2300

<sup>1</sup> Geest is a Platt Deutsch word signifying "dry," and the Geest land is consequently the higher and drier district, in contrast to the marsh land. The surface of the Geestland is composed of sand and gravel, and part of it is occupied by heath.

<sup>2</sup> Wäder, Waider, or Wörl is either equivalent to the old English "holme," a river island, or signifies a stretch of flat land between a river and a piece of standing water, or a portion of a swamp drained and devoted to tillage.

metres long and 1200 metres wide at the widest) that of the Outer Alster (*Aussen Alster*). The fortifications as such were removed in 1815, but they have left their trace in a fine girdle of green round the city, though too many inroads on its completeness have been made by railways and roadways. The oldest portion of the city is that which lies to the east of the Alster; but, though it still retains the name of Altstadt, nearly all trace of its antiquity has disappeared, as it was rebuilt after the great fire of 1842. To the west lies the new town, incorporated in 1878; beyond this and contiguous to Altona is the quondam suburb of St Pauli, incorporated in 1876, and towards the north-east is the quondam suburb of St George, which arose in the 13th century, but was not incorporated till 1868. The old town lies low, and it is traversed by a great number of narrow canals or "fleets" (for the same word which has left its trace

in London nomenclature is used in the Low-German idiom which add considerably to the picturesqueness of the new quarters, and serve as convenient channels for the transport of goods. They generally form what may be called back streets, and they are bordered by warehouses, cellars and the lower class of dwelling-houses. As they are subject to the ebb and flow of the Elbe, at certain times they are quite dry, and afford a field of operations for the *fleetenkieker*, who wanders along the oozy channel to pick up any article of value, and at other times they are filled 15 to 20 feet above their ordinary level. As soon as the telegram at Cuxhaven announces high tide three shots are fired from the Stintf at the harbour to warn the inhabitants of the "fleets"; if the progress of the tide up the river gives indication of danger, other three shots add emphasis to the warning. Then the dwellers on the lower levels make a rapid escape



1. Schiller's Monument.
2. Adolph von Schumann's Monument.
3. New School Buildings.
4. St. James's Church.
5. Markt Hall.
6. Thalia Theatre.
7. St. Peter's Church.

8. Johannann and Town Library.
9. St. Catharine's Ch.
10. St. Nicholas Ch.

11. Bank.
12. Exchange.
13. Site of Old Town Hall.

14. Post-Office.
15. Town Theatre.
16. Synagogue.
17. Observatory.

18. Sallors' Home.
19. English Episcopal Church.
20. St. Michael's Ch.

21. Town House.
22. Sallors' Po. house.

with their property. At the time of the equinoxes the inundation may be repeated for several days in succession; but when all is over the people (the *Lüd* von de Waterkant) return like rats to their oozy and dripping abodes. In fine contrast to the dull and dismal fleets is the bright and handsome appearance of the Inner Alster, which is enclosed on three sides by handsome rows of buildings, the Alsterdamm in the south-east, the Old Jungfernstieg in the south-west, and the New Jungfernstieg on the north-west, while it is separated from the Outer Alster by part of the rampart gardens traversed by the railway which unites Hamburg with Altona. These streets and especially the Old Jungfernstieg are fashionable promenades. The largest of the public squares of Hamburg is the Hopfenmarkt, which contains the church of St. Nicholas, and is the principal market for fish, meat, vegetables, and fruit;

others of importance are the Gänsemarkt or Goose Market, the Zeughausmarkt, and the Great New Market; churchyards, of which several are pleasantly laid out, all to be removed to Ohlsdorf, about 4 miles from the town.

Of the churches actually existing in Hamburg (the cathedral had to be taken down in 1805), St. Peter's, St. Nicholas, St. Catharine's, St. James's, and St. Michael's are those that give name to the five old city parishes. The church of St. Nicholas is remarkable more especially for its tower, which until the spire of the Cologne cathedral reached its projected elevation of 511 feet, will probably continue to be the second highest building in the world, rising e

<sup>1</sup> In 1848 *pegels* or water-gauges were established at Hamburg Cuxhaven. In 1872 their zero was lowered respectively 9.80 and 4.21 ft., so that they both stand 9.0 ft. above the zero of Harb. and 10.7 above that of Kiel.







was afterwards extended to Schwann and Berlin, and a branch line was constructed to Lübeck. The Hamburg Lübeck direct line was opened in 1865, and in the following year a line was constructed between Altona and Hamburg. Direct communication with Paris by way of Harburg, Bremen, Osnabrück, and Varel was obtained only in 1872. Though as early as 1862 a scheme was set on foot for such a line, the projectors could not come to terms with the Hanoverian Government, which objected to the duchy of Oldenburg obtaining a share in the advantages of the scheme, and wished to keep to itself the whole authority over the bridges on the Elbe which leaving the cost of their construction wholly to Hamburg. In 1866 the Hanoverian Government was swept away by Prussia, and in 1867 the new rulers found it more to the advantage of the line to have its two main branches of the Elbe, the north and the south, to be crossed by two great bridges on the system named after Louis, which had never before been employed in Germany. As the soil is unproductive, the pillars had to be founded on a bed of concrete 17 or 18 feet thick resting on piles. The Hamburg or north bridge has three spans each 344 feet wide, and the Hamburg bridge has four spans. The total weight of iron employed was 84,613 cwt. (36,152 for the one and 48,469 for the other). In its natural location the city has a system of tramway lines which run out to Wandsbeck and other neighbouring villages, and a still more extensive omnibus system. Small steamers plying in the Outer Alster give easy access to the places along its shores.

In 1811 the population of Hamburg (*Stadt and Postadt*) was 108,998, in 1851 it was 145,415, and by 1861 it had reached 168,214. Its subsequent increase is shown in the following table:

	1800	1807	1817	1876	Increase	Per cent.
Inner town and Jan bouc	1,294	1,697	189,986	187,618	186,321	14.4
St. George's	20,715	24,423	87,007	41,311	21,540	44.6
St. Paul's	29,118	31,716	41,021	49,900	20,071	68.8
	217,502	224,976	239,107	264,077	46,873	21.5

If we include in our survey the suburban hamlets of *Altona*, *Altona*, *Ottensen*, and *Wandsbeck*, we find that there were clustered together 458,685 persons in 1871 the population of males to females in the whole Hamburg territory was 100 to 105, and in 1875 it was 100 to 103. The number of females in proportion to the males is much greater among the natives than among the immigrant part of the population, and the proportion of natives to immigrants is a steadily decreasing one—78 per cent. in 1867, 68 per cent. in 1871, and 56 in 1875. Most of the strangers who from the neighbouring parts of Germany 43,623 in 1871 were from Holstein, 30,945 from Hanover, and 15,086 from Mecklenburg-Schwerin. The following table shows the occupations of the people in 1871:

	Males	Females	Total
Agriculture	5,483	7,092	11,575
Industry	60,878	6,192	124,070
Trade and commerce	48,701	61,490	110,200
Art, personal service	10,840	18,790	34,772
Other calling	10,270	11,298	21,568
Without calling	6,719	17,318	24,037
Not returned	819	1,369	1,577

The number of marriages, partly in consequence of the changes in the marriage laws, is rapidly increasing (829 to every thousand inhabitants in 1861, and 1226 to every thousand in 1875), and a similar increase is observable in the births.

The death rate varied from 26 to 30 per thousand per annum from 1872 to 1876. Consumption and acute diseases of the respiratory organs are the most prevalent causes of death. Between 1851 and 1873 there was 14 variations of cholera, by far the most violent being those of 1832 and 1849, which caused off respectively 1662 and 1766 of the population.

*History*—Hamburg, or, as the older documents have it, *Hammaburg*, appears to have taken its rise as a frontier block house or castle on the Slavonic borders of Germany, which in the 9th century lay thus far to the west. The block house, which may have been preceded by some significant hamlet, was founded by Charles the Great in 808, and he was just on the point of making the newly erected church the seat of a bishopric when he died in 814. His scheme was ultimately carried out by his son Louis the Pious in 831, and three years later a charter was issued at Aix la Chapelle and confirmed by Gregory IV. raising the bishopric to the rank of an archbishopric, which was to include not only the surrounding district of Germany, but also the Slavonic lands, and the whole Scandinavian territory. Ansgarius, the first occupant, was founded a monastery and a school, but in 887 (or 889 according to other accounts) his labours were suddenly interrupted by the Norman pirates, who laid the little settlement waste. Other disasters followed, and a large portion of the original territory of the archbishopric fell away from its allegiance, and in 847 it was decided at a synod at

Many under the presidency of Hildebrand Maunz that Hamburg should be attached to the bishopric of Bremen, and the seat of the archbishopric be in the latter city. The title of archbishop of Bremen remained in use till 1228, though that of archbishop of Hamburg continued to be used till the 14th century. All through the 13th century Hamburg continued to suffer from the incursions of the Danes and the Slavonians, and the latter indeed were in possession from 983 to 987. In spite of all the setbacks advanced. Archbishop Albert had built a cathedral in 1207, Archbishop Adolph not long after a castle, and the havoc wrought by Jail Kinko of Denmark in 1072 was promptly repaired. In 1110 the counts of Schauenburg got possession of Holstein and Hamburg, an event which led in many ways fruit for centuries after. In return for a contribution to a crusade Adolf III. obtained for the town from the emperor Frederick I. in 1189 the right of a separate court and jurisdiction, freedom from toll to the mouth of the Elbe, and rights of fishing in the river. Merchants from Flanders now began to visit the place, and its importance as a commercial centre was increased by the destruction of the flourishing town of Baidauic in 1189 by Henry the Lion. After passing under the lordship of Wukhard of Schleswig (1201) and Albert of Olanmunde (1216), it was recovered by the Schauenburg count, who erected a strong castle over against it (1231). The alliance with Lübeck, concluded in 1241, and consummated by the treaty of 1256, was vitally important, and the great Hanseatic League, of which Hamburg continued to be one of the principal members. While its foreign relations were thus improved, its internal organization was also rendered more stable by the new constitution of 1270, and the recognition of the municipal autonomy of the counts of Schauenburg in 1299. The domain of the city was increased in the 14th century by the purchase of Eppendorf, Reichenbüll, &c., in the 15th the Russian princes who had increased the merchants at the mouth of the Elbe were completely defeated. The claims of the Danes to the sovereignty of the city were rejected, and the imperial diet of 1510 under Maximilian I. declared that it was a city of the empire. Not long after two great changes took place. By the so-called "Long Revolt" of 1529 the Reformation was introduced, and the disappearance of Lübeck set the city free to follow her own path of progress. Through the troubles of the Thirty Years' War Hamburg escaped almost unscathed, but it suffered from the effects of its own bigoted Lutheranism, which drove many of its citizens to seek refuge elsewhere to become the founders of the neighbouring Altona. In 1603 it received a code of exchange, and in 1616 the first imperial post office was established, but was not long in increasing and its commerce quickened by a number of the Jesuits who came to the city from Spain and Portugal. The course of the 17th century was marked by discord and strife between the senate and the lower classes, which ultimately brought about the misfortune of the empire and the publication of the "Great Edicts" of 1712. Through the courts of the empire had decided in 1618 against the claims of the Danish crown, and had confirmed this decision in 1680 and 1648. Christian V. of Denmark in its another attempt to take Hamburg by force of arms, but he accepted a ransom of 250,000 rixdollars, and at length in 1708 by the treaty of Gottorp the Danish crown renounced all its claims, and in 1770 the delegates of the city took their place in the "Alliance of the Imperial Diet." From the year 1700 to 1712, the year of American independence, the commerce of Hamburg drew new life but suffered terribly during the years of the French war. The town was not only obliged in 1803 to pay 3,125,000 francs to the Hanoverian estate, but in 1806 it had to admit a French garrison within its walls, and to feel the effects of the British blockade of the Elbe. In 1810 indeed it had the honour of being incorporated as the French empire as the chief town of the department of the "Mouth of the Elbe," but the retreat of the French commandant Carr-Saint-Oyr on 12th March 1813, and the subsequent entrance of the Russian Tautenburg on the 18th, were welcomed by the town. But their joy was premature, for by the 30th of May the army was again in possession. However, the new general, not only demanded a contribution of 48,000,000 francs, but confiscated the 7,506,966 marks banco (of about 14. 6d.) at that time in the bank, forced the inhabitants to work at the new fortifications, and drove 26,000 or 30,000 of them out of the city, and the cold of winter. In spite of the attacks of the Russians under Bennigsen, Davout maintained his position till the close of the year. The whole year of the city from 1806 to 1814 is estimated at 210,500,000 stivers. In 1815 Hamburg became an independent state of the German federation, and formed with Lübeck, Bremen, and Frankfurt the union of the four cities. Its trade rapidly revived, and in 1848 the great fire destroyed 4219 buildings and rendered nearly 20,000 persons homeless. A severe earthquake led to a severe loss of 84 million marks banco. The old official local constitution had been restored after the recovery of independence, and the internal history of the town from 1840 till 1860 was mainly a protracted contest between the bourgeoisie and the petty patricians. The year 1858 was remarkable for a great commercial crisis, and for the meeting in the town of the commission of the navigation of the Elbe, and of the delegates appointed by the principal German states to consider matters law. By the new



possession of the whole of Sicily with the exception of the two strongholds of Drepanum and Lilybæum, and these they were blockading. They tried their utmost to drive Hamilcar from his position, but in vain. At last he quitted his stronghold, and in 241 B.C. landed at Mount Eryx, on the western coast, now Mount S. Giuliano, 3 miles from the shore and about 6 from Drepanum. A famous temple of Venus crowned the summit, and half-way up the slope was the city, which itself had the name of Eryx. This Hamilcar seized and occupied. His object was to compel the Romans to give up the blockade of Drepanum and Lilybæum. They could not drive him out of the town, and for two more years he held his position, keeping open his communications by sea with the Carthaginian garrison of Drepanum. Hamilcar's chief difficulty was with his mercenaries, who were little better than savages and with out an idea of loyalty or good faith. Yet he continued to hold them well in hand. It was a harassing and monotonous warfare, so much so that Polybius, here our chief authority, compares it to a boxing match between two skilful pugilists, the blows in which are delivered in such rapid succession that a spectator could hardly see, much less, describe them. The Romans, feeling it necessary to make a supreme effort, in 213 B.C. equipped a fleet, under the command of the consul Lucius Catulus, and despatched it to the western shores of Sicily. The battle off the Ægates followed, and the Roman victory decided the First Punic War in 212 B.C. Peace had now to be concluded. The cession of Sicily to the Romans was a matter of course. But though Hamilcar had to surrender the island, he refused to comply with the Roman demand that his army should pass under the yoke. The demand was not persisted in, and Hamilcar and his men were allowed to embark from Lilybæum for Africa.

No sooner had peace been concluded than those broke out the so-called African or Libyan War. It was a most formidable mutiny or insurrection. Hamilcar's mercenaries on their return looked for the pay which he had promised them, but had not been able to furnish while he was occupied in within his lines on Mount Eryx. The stupidity of the home Government soon caused trouble. The peace party at Carthage, headed by Hanno, who hated Hamilcar, was foolish enough to raise a dispute about the pay of the troops. The result was a furious mutiny, which Hanno, who was sent to quiet them, could not appease. The men to the number of 20,000 began to march on Carthage itself, and encamped near Tunis. The mutineers were led by Spendius, a fugitive slave from Campania, and by Mutho, an African who had served with distinction under Hamilcar in Sicily. These two men incited all the neighbouring tribes to rise against the dominion of Carthage. Carthage itself was soon cut off from all communication with the interior. Hanno was called to take the command, but it was only to meet with defeat and disaster. The rebels surprised and captured his camp. The Government was now thoroughly frightened, and begged Hamilcar to save them from the consequences of their own folly. With a force of only 10,000 men he had to face what must now have grown into a very formidable host. It would seem that his personal influence led many of the rebels to return to his standard, and he was also skilful enough to secure the friendship and aid of the Numidian sheiks. One especially, Naravas, helped him very materially, and with his assistance he was able to achieve a decisive victory over the mutineers. At last he successfully hemmed in Spendius within his camp near Tunis, and the rebel leader was obliged to throw himself on his mercy. With one of his brother leaders he sought an interview with Hamilcar. Hamilcar's demand was the surrender of ten of the rebels, whom he was to name himself. This being agreed, he

sized Spendius and his nine companions, a proceeding which the mutineers furiously resented. But they were soon surrounded and cut off to a man, to the number, it is said, of 40,000. The war, which had lasted three years and four months, was now over in the year 238 B.C.

One would have supposed that Hamilcar would be at once recognized as the right man to direct the future policy of the state. But it was not so. Hanno's party, the peace party, was as shortsighted as ever, and actually dared to say that Hamilcar had been the cause of the late war by having made promises which he was not able to fulfil. But by this folly they injured and weakened themselves. The patriotic party, the "Barcine faction," as it was called by its opponents, prevailed so far as to raise then leader to a position answering as nearly as possible to a dictatorship among the Romans. Hamilcar was made commander-in-chief of the Carthaginian army in Africa, and invested with a power which could be taken from him only by the popular assembly. He was still a young man, under thirty years of age. For a short time he employed himself in overawing the Numidian tribes bordering on Carthaginian territory, but his main object was to form the nucleus of an efficient army out of his Libyan mercenaries. Meanwhile he was maturing a great plan which soon afterwards on his own responsibility he carried into execution. Spain was a country the coast of which was well known to the Carthaginians. Spaniards too had served among Hamilcar's troops. To Spain he decided to go, there, he felt sure, he could find material for an army and abundant means of providing pay. He had now three sons, the "lion's blood," as he called them, Hannibal, Hasdrubal, Mago. Wishing with all his heart that they should be like minded with himself, he made the eldest, Hannibal, then a little boy of nine, swear on the altar of the supreme Carthaginian deity eternal hatred and enmity to Rome. This was just before he left Carthage, probably in the spring of 236 B.C. Suddenly these came tidings to the home Government that their commander-in-chief was, without their orders, carrying on war in Spain. He had, however, done his work so thoroughly in Africa that the troublesome Numidian tribes were now submissive to Carthage, and for the most part paid tribute. He never returned. The last eight years of his life he devoted to the great work of reducing Spain to a Carthaginian province. He penetrated into the interior of the country, subduing some of the tribes by force of arms and drawing others into friendly relations by negotiation. It was not to mere conquest that he aspired, he did his best to win the good-will of the Spaniards and to attach them to Carthage. Spain was to be a compensation to Carthage for the loss of Sicily and Sardinia. But, above all, its possession was to be subordinate to Hamilcar's great design of some day renewing the war with Rome. For this he would have felt himself prepared when, in addition to his Numidian cavalry, he had organized a force of Spanish infantry. Had his life been prolonged, he would doubtless, as Livy says (xvi. 2), have invaded Italy at the head of a Carthaginian army. What he accomplished in Spain so much impressed the elder Cato, who less than half a century afterwards saw the traces of his work, that he declared that there was no king like Hamilcar Barca. In the prime of his years he fell in battle in 228 B.C., fighting, it would seem, somewhere between the Tagus and the Douro. Spain was now left in the hands of his son-in-law Hasdrubal. (w. j. n.)

HAMILTON, a municipal and parliamentary borough and market-town of Scotland, county of Lanark, is situated about a mile from the junction of the Avon with the Clyde and 10 miles S.E. of Glasgow. It occupies a rising ground commanding fine views of a rich and highly picturesque country, and consists of several streets of well-built houses

some built irregularly disposed, and surrounded by a number of villas belonging chiefly to persons engaged in business in Glasgow. The principal buildings are the town hall, the county buildings in the Grecian style of architecture, the academy, the St John's grammar school, and the infantry barracks. Among the subjects of antiquarian interest are Queen's Neck, the spot where Queen Mary rested on her journey to Langside, the old steeple and pillory built in the reign of Charles I., the Moat Hill, the old House clove, and the carved gateway in the palace park. In the churchyard there is a monument, with four heads in basso rilievo, to four covenanters who suffered at Edinburgh, December 7, 1600, their heads being interred below. Among the industries of the town are weaving and the tanning of mshin, and there are also large market gardens, the district being famed especially for its apples, but the prosperity of the town depends chiefly upon the coal and iron stone which are extensively worked in the neighbourhood. Hamilton originated in the 15th century under the protecting influence of the lords of Hamilton. It unites with Andrie, Falkirk, Lanark, and Linthgow to form the Falkirk district of boroughs, which returns one member to parliament. The population in 1871 was 11,498.

Immediately east of the town is Hamilton place, the seat of the duke of Hamilton and Brandon, marquis of Scotland. The present palace was commenced in 1822. Its front is a specimen of the enriched Corinthian architecture, with a projecting pilaster portico after the style of the temple of Jupiter Stator at Rome, 264 feet in length and 60 feet in height. The interior is richly decorated and contains one of the most valuable collections of paintings in Scotland. Within the grounds, which comprise nearly 1800 acres, is the noblest example by the tenth duke, a structure resembling in general design that of the emperor Hadrian at Rome, being a circular building springing from a square basement, and enclosing a deserted octagonal chapel. About a mile south east of Hamilton, on the summit of a picturesque rock 200 feet in height, the fort of Scott. Now it is the noble chateau with its ancient oaks, the remains of the Clacksonian Forest, where as still preserved some of the old Scotch breed of wild cattle. Opposite Cadzow Castle on the other side of the Avon is Chastellair, consisting of stables and offices, and imitating in outline the palace of that name in France. A magnificent double avenue stretches between it and Hamilton palace.

HAMILTON, a city of Canada, the chief town in the county of Wentworth, province of Ontario, is advantageously situated on the south side of Burlington Bay, a large and beautiful basin of water connected with Lake Ontario by a short canal, which forms one of the safest and most commodious harbours on the lake. It is also connected with the town of Dundas by the Desjardins Canal, about 4 miles in length. Hamilton holds an important position at the head of the navigation on Lake Ontario, and in the centre of one of the finest agricultural districts of the Dominion. It is the headquarters of the Great Western Railroad, and is connected by other lines of railway with Lake Erie, Lake Huron, and the Georgian Bay. The site on which it is built rises gradually from the bay to the foot of a lofty bluff called "The Mountain," the summit of which commands an extensive and beautiful view. The streets are well laid out, and planted with shade trees, and the houses and public buildings are substantially constructed of stone and brick. The court house and county buildings, recently completed, are the finest in Canada. Among the other public buildings are the provincial lunatic asylum, the Anglican and Roman Catholic cathedrals, and handsome places of worship of other denominations, the college institute, the Wesleyan female college, the mechanics institute, the banks, the city hospital, and other charitable institutions. The city water-works, by means of which a constant supply of pure water is brought from Lake Ontario, have been

completed on a scale amply providing for the future growth of the city, at a cost of about \$1,000,000. The industries include iron rolling mills, iron foundries, the manufacture of agricultural implements, sewing machines, musical instruments, carriages, glass, pottery, &c., tobacco manufacture, and brushmaking. The total value of imports at the port of Hamilton for the fiscal year 1878-9 was \$3,992,123, and the duty collected amounted to \$689,153. The total tonnage entered at the port was 160,666 tons, but this is exclusive of a much larger amount of goods brought by railway, including foreign importations, on which the duty has already been paid at Quebec or Montreal, and of which, therefore, no entry is made. Daily lines of steamers run in the summer months between Hamilton, Toronto, Kingston, and Montreal, and an extensive trade is carried on with the maritime provinces. Hamilton was founded in 1813, and incorporated in 1833. The population in 1836 was 2846, in 1851, 10,348, in 1861, 15,096, in 1871, 26,716, and in 1879 it is estimated at 36,000. It is the seat of the Anglican bishop of Niagara, and of a Roman Catholic bishop. It returns one member to the provincial parliament of Ontario, and two members to the Dominion parliament, or House of Commons.

HAMILTON, a township and post village of Madison county, New York, U.S., is situated on the Chenango canal, and on the Utica branch of the New York and Oswego Mohawk Railway, 30 miles S.W. of Utica. The village is the seat of Madison university, chartered in 1846, in connection with which there is a theological seminary of the Baptist denomination opened in 1820, and a preparatory academy opened in 1832 under the name of Colgate Academy, and chartered in 1853 as the grammar school of the university. The university has 10 professors, has both a scientific and a classical course, and is attended by upwards of 100 students. The other educational institutions are a female seminary and a union graded school. The village possesses a foundry, a tannery, and manufactories of sashes and blinds, doors, waggons, cigars, and cheese. The population of the village in 1870 was 1529, and of the township 3687.

HAMILTON, a city of the United States, capital of Butler county, Ohio, is situated on both sides of the Great Miami river, on the Miami and Erie canal, and at the junction of several railways, 23 miles N. of Cincinnati. The water power for manufacturing purposes is obtained by an hydraulic canal which secures a fall of 30 feet, and the situation of the city in the heart of the Miami valley, a rich agricultural district, is very favourable to the development of commercial enterprise. It possesses two public parks, twelve churches, two national banks, a complete graded system of public schools, an orphan's home, and a free library. Its industries are of a varied kind, and are represented by paper and woollen factories, flour-mills, foundries, breweries, distilleries, bleaching works, machine shops, and manufactories of carriages and waggons, reaping machines, ploughs, and other agricultural implements, sashes and blinds, railroad supplies, and machinery. Hamilton received a municipal charter in 1853, at which time the portion on the west side of the river formerly called Rossville was incorporated with it. The population, which in 1860 was 7223, and in 1870 11,081, of whom 3062 were foreigners, was estimated in 1879 at 17,000.

HAMILTON, the principal town in the western district of Victoria, Australia, is situated on the Grange Burne Creek, in 37° 48' E lat and 142° 1' E long. It was proclaimed a borough in 1859, the area of the municipality being 5280 acres. It has several elegant buildings—a hospital and benevolent asylum, a town-hall, a treasury and land office, and a public library. Its educational

institutions include the Hamilton and western district college, the academy, and the Alexandria college for ladies, besides a state school with accommodation for 500 pupils. It possesses a fine race course covering 120 acres, and pastoral and agricultural exhibitions are held annually, the surrounding district being chiefly devoted to sheep-farming. The population of the town and suburbs on the 1st January 1879 was estimated at 4400. The railway from Melbourne to Portland passes through the town.

### ALEXANDER HAMILTON

Copyright, 1880, by George Shea

ALEXANDER HAMILTON, the ablest American jurist and statesman of the early constitutional era of the United States, was born at the island of Nevis, one of the Antilles under the dominion of England, on January 11, 1757. His father was a Scotch emigrant who had settled at St Christopher, where he engaged in mercantile business. His mother was the daughter of a Huguenot named Faucette, a prosperous physician of Nevis. She had been the wife of a Mr Irvine, also a physician, and during a brief married life dwelt at St Christopher, but, owing to family of his, she appears to have been driven to procure the judicial dissolution of the marriage, after which she returned to her father's home at Nevis, and there married James Hamilton. She bore to him many sons, of whom none but Thomas and Alexander lived to maturity. Alexander, the youngest, was called after his paternal grandfather, who described himself "of Grange," which is said to have been the family seat in Ayrshire, Scotland. The mother of Grange married, in 1730, Elizabeth, eldest daughter of Sir Robert Pollock, and young Hamilton, when he had risen to fame and station, said, "My blood is as good as that of those who plume themselves upon their ancestry." He styled his suburban residence, near New York, "the Grange."

His mother died while he was still a child, but not before he was capable of receiving and preserving distinct recollections of her. He derived from her an independent spirit, energy, self reliance, and a disposition for metaphysical inquiries, and these qualities were conspicuous from an early age. His father's business misfortunes casting the boy upon the care of some of the mother's relatives, he was taken by them to their home at St Croix, and there at school he first evinced that proficiency which marked him throughout his career. The opportunities for school training were at that time very limited at St Croix, and when, in his thirteenth year, he entered the counting house of Mr Nicholas Cugier, at that port, he had already received all the benefit such schools were able to impart. This was in the autumn of 1769. In less than a year he was capable of more than clerical duty, and Mr Cugier, going on a foreign journey, left him in sole charge of the mercantile house. His business correspondence during this time, and the prosperity which attended the affairs, show that Mr Cugier's confidence was not misplaced. This practical acquaintance with mercantile affairs was to be most serviceable to Hamilton. In the methodical and energetic management of matters of state, and in the prudent care of weighty interests, the influence of the knowledge and experience acquired by him in the counting-house at St Croix is notable. During these three years he was the same close student that his after years more fully reveal. He read standard books, which laid open the theories of value and of trade, thinking out to feasible methods how those theories might be advantageously applied to the daily work he had in hand. He read history, poetry, and philosophy. The French language became familiar to him by its general use in society and in the transactions of commerce, and he

always wrote it with accuracy and elegance, and spoke it fluently and with the accent of native speech. The Rev Hugh Knox, D.D., an Irishman, a divine of the Presbyterian Church, a scholar of distinction honoured as such by the university of Glasgow, was Hamilton's first adequate preceptor, and was the first to discover the rich resources and useful tendencies of his intellectual and moral character. Under his friendly and gratuitous tutelage Hamilton applied many parts in which his education was deficient. But the boy had aims beyond where he was, and when an incident, trivial in itself, led to an arrangement by which a more liberal education was opened to him, he left the West Indies, in October 1772, and proceeded to New York. There, aided by letters from his friend Dr Knox, he made the acquaintance of some of the leading men in that and the adjoining province of New Jersey. A year at the grammar school at Elizabethtown in the latter province proved sufficient to prepare him for the collegiate course, and in the spring of 1774 he entered as a student the King's (now Columbia) College, and, by special privilege, pursued the usual studies according to a plan which he laid out for himself.

When, in 1774, the enforcement of the Boston "Port Bill" aroused even the most moderate in the other colonies to sympathy with the provocation of Massachusetts, Dr Hamilton studied the political questions relating to the controversy between the colonies and the parliament of England with his habitual research and enlightened reasoning. He was convinced that his duty as an Englishman required him to take part with the colonists against the assertion of the "omnipotence of parliament." The famous tract by Lord Somers entitled *The Judgment of whole Kingdoms and Nations*, &c, which repudiates this as a thing unknown to the law of England, was republished in 1773 at Philadelphia, and widely circulated throughout the provinces, in aid of the cause of colonial resistance. Its effect upon the mind of Hamilton is to be observed in his writings of this time. With his usual ardour he now basing himself in public discussion. Before his eighteenth year ended his reputation as an orator and writer was established. His chief opponent at this period was the distinguished divine Samuel Seabury, who a few years later (1783) was consecrated in Scotland the first bishop of the United States of America. The fame of their debates spread over the whole country, and Hamilton was the acknowledged "oracle" of the party of moderation, with which he acted.

While still a collegian he joined the military of the province of New York, and began as the captain of its first company of artillery employed in the continental service. To qualify himself for such a position he had, under the immediate instruction of an experienced soldier and officer, not only studied the theoretic art of war but engaged with others in receiving daily for several months practical lessons in the field-drill. He was active with his company of artillery at the battle on Long Island, at Harlem Plains, at Chatterton's Hill, New Brunswick, Trenton, and Princeton. At Harlem Heights he first attracted the attention of Washington, and again at New Brunswick excited the commander's admiration by the courage and skill with which he held in check the advance of the British forces, while the American army was retreating toward the Delaware. When the army went, in January 1777, into winter quarters at Morristown, Hamilton, now grown in the friendship and confidence of Washington, resigned his command, became Washington's private secretary, and was raised to the rank of lieutenant-colonel. Hamilton remained on the staff until April 1781, when an unusual and hasty warmth of temper on both sides led to the severance of this particular connexion, but their mutual friendship remained

and even increased. He was married in 1780 to Elizabeth, second daughter of General Philip Schuyler, a distinguished soldier and statesman of the Revolution. For a brief space Hamilton occupied his time in exposing the inherent defects of the existing confederation by a series of excellent papers known as *The Continentalist*. But the country once more needed his more active aid, he returned to the army, led one most brilliant attack, and was present with a command at the surrender of Lord Cornwallis.

The war to maintain the declaration of independence was fought, but it did not make nor leave the United Colonies a nation. A new system of government and "a coercive union" were insisted upon by Hamilton and other foremost men as necessary. But many obstacles stood in the way. Historical prejudices and the selfishness of local interests were against concessions to a union of the States. Traditional dread of centralized government, traditional dread of an hereditary aristocracy, dread that a national legislature, if allowed full authority, might assert and act upon the repudiated doctrine of an omnipotence of parliament, dread that a supreme general government might absorb, or even usurp, under the plea of care for the public welfare, those local interests which the States were now able to maintain, and which the Confederation was meant to protect—the concurrence of these several causes contributed to bring out opposition whenever a more perfect union was proposed.

The first suggestion towards the establishment of an adequate and permanent government came, as it is now conceded, from Hamilton. It was contained in a letter written by him, September 3, 1780, to James Duane, a delegate from New York to the Congress at Philadelphia. He wrote a yet more remarkable letter the following year (April 30) to Robert Morris, the famous financier of the Revolution, in which not a mere suggestion but a matured and complete scheme of national finance, including a plan for a United States bank, was discussed and laid out. These letters are, indeed, the *principle* of the American government in its organization and administration. When the convention of delegates met at Annapolis, Maryland, in September 1786, the influences of Hamilton upon the destinies of his country began to be favoured by circumstances. Although the object of that convention was limited to simply commercial projects, yet, under his and Madison's prudent management, an address was finally issued which brought about the great and conclusive convention of 1787 at Philadelphia. The form of government then instituted is, in its groundwork and its principal features, a restoration and perfecting of the ancient constitutional liberties of England. While the particular plan proposed by Hamilton was, as were other projects, laid aside, yet it was the spirit of the system conceived by him which then prevailed and has since been a controlling principle in the administration of government. Guizot says of him that "there is not in the constitution of the United States an element of order, of force, of duration, which he did not powerfully contribute to introduce into it and to cause to predominate." It was at this period that Hamilton, in association with John Jay and James Madison, wrote his parts of *The Federalist*.

At the convention, called by the State of New York, which met at Poughkeepsie, on the Hudson River, June 1788, to ratify the proposed National Constitution, the superb ability of Hamilton for organizing and leading intelligent public opinion displayed itself fully. The utility of candid, earnest, reasonable debate has seldom been more approved by its results. A most disheartening minority of the delegates when the convention first met were in favour of the Constitution. When Hamilton ceased his

efforts, not only had he gained to his support a majority, but even ultimately he had the aid and vote of his most eloquent and most powerful antagonist. At length Hamilton arose in the convention, and, stating that Virginia had ratified the Constitution, and that the Union was thereby an accomplished fact, moved that they cease their contentions and add New York to the new empire of the republican states. That day his labours culminated in entire success.

Washington, when forming the cabinet for his first presidential administration, naturally turned to Robert Morris as the proper person to take the secretaryship of the treasury, but Morris declined, insisting that Hamilton was "the one man in the United States" fitted by studies and ability to create a public credit and bring the resources of the country into active efficiency. Washington found his former military secretary more than equal to the task. The fiscal affairs of the country were at once organized, and prosperity quickly came. Hamilton achieved an immediate success which all agree is without parallel. He also was really the organizer of the administration of the new Government, and in its chief department it remains to this day without change. His state papers, written during the two presidential terms of Washington, are regarded as of the highest character for knowledge of the case, wisdom, and practical method, and his report on the constitutionality of a national bank, in which he fully develops his favourite policy of the implied powers of the Government, and the other report, nominally upon manufactures, which embraces in its range every pursuit of human industry susceptible of encouragement under such a government as he wished to see that of the United States, are those productions in which the rare qualities of his mind abundantly manifest their force and precision. President Van Buren declared the latter paper to be "Hamilton's masterpiece."

After these labours Hamilton, though offered the position of chief-justice of the United States, remained at the bar of his adopted State. He soon rose to its highest rank, and was esteemed its unrivalled leader. As a citizen, and without the desire of public office, he continued always actively interested in public affairs. His intense and uncompromising moral nature engendered many political antipathies, though personally few were more loved for amiability and respected for their honour. Among those men whom he deemed it a patriotic duty to defeat in a personal ambition was Aaron Burr, the vice-president of the United States. Party lines were marked and party spirit fierce. Burr appreciated what would be the effect of Hamilton's continued opposition to his political designs, and knew that he was a man to be neither conciliated in this respect or outmanoeuvred. He eagerly watched for an opportunity to impute offence. A trivial and inadequate occasion soon came. An indiscreet person repeated a remark which he said Hamilton made in a familiar conversation at the house of a common friend, to the purport that he had a "despicable" opinion of Burr. Upon this gossip Burr acted, and so subtle was the manner with which he managed the correspondence for his determined purpose that he, according to the tone of society at that time, made it, in Hamilton's misconception, an obligation, due to his continued usefulness in public affairs, to accept a challenge. They met early on the morning of July 11, 1804, at a sequestered place beneath the hills of Weehawken, on the west bank of the Hudson River, opposite to the city of New York. Hamilton was mortally wounded at the first fire. As he fell, his own pistol was by accident discharged, and the ball struck the ground near him. He did not himself intend to fire. He died the following day, in the forty-eighth year of his age. His death was considered a national calamity. Eight of his children,

four boys and four girls, were left to his widow's care. She survived him half a century, dying at the age of ninety-seven, and during all that time she remained attired in the widow's dress of the early times.

The peculiarity of Hamilton's genius consisted of qualities which eminently distinguished him from the other great personages of his time. The epistolary pieces were never applicable to him, for whatever he did, even in his boyhood, was accomplished with facility, and resulted in a perfection that the works of thirty years did not exceed. He was not a mimic. His intellect passed through the most subtle and profound problems, and apparently without the least of exertion. He "could see consequences yet dormant in their principles," or, as Tully said of him on more than one occasion, "he divined." "Hamilton was *divine*," says Planché, "was the person given to his posterity when he compared him to Euclid and Aristotle. His industry was marvellous, and his learning equal to the creative faculty of his mind. The fecundity, power, vigour, and infinity of his intellectual works are fully expressed by his numerous titles, they have an impressed solidity."

His political writings seem, in the estimation of judicious and eminent writers in America, Great Britain, and France, to place him in the first rank of modern writers. The most widely known of these writings are those contained in *The Federalist*. The translations of them were published at Paris (the first as early as 1792), and were studied by the chief public men of that period. It has been recorded that they excited in extent and precision of information, a profundity of view, and an acuteness of understanding which would have done honour to the most illustrious statesmen of ancient or modern times, that for comprehensiveness of design, strength, clearness, and simplicity they have no parallel (*Select Works of Madison*, January 1836, and *The Federalist Review*, No. 24). The work called the attention of European statesmen to the merits of *The Federalist* as a copious source of correct views and profound thought, and Gausson says that, "in the application of democratic principles of government to practical administration, it was the greatest work known to him." Leibniz has expressed at great length his doubts as to judgment of Hamilton's genius and wisdom, and of the consequences which would result from the introduction of a new system of government and organized its administration (*Histoire des États-Unis*, tome ii.). And Hamilton's own countrymen have not been less emphatic in grateful acknowledgment, especially Chief Justice Marshall, and the great statesman and expounder of the principles of the American Constitution.

In person Hamilton was below the medium height, slender, almost delicate in frame, insistent with life, erect and quick in gait, his general address was graceful and nervous, indicating the energy, vigour, and activity of his mind. His complexion was bright and ruddy, his hair light, and the whole countenance decidedly Scottish in form and expression. His political enemies frankly spoke of his manner and conversation, and regarded its irresistible charm. The best portraits of him are by Tumbull, Weeman, Ames, and there is a good portrait by Cochin.

For full information of Hamilton, see the elaborate *Life*, in 7 vols., by John Church Hamilton, one of his sons, New York, 1837, the *Life* by Dr. Remick, published in *Hayes's Family Library*, *Life* by Morse, 2 vols., Boston, 1870, Edmund Leaboy's *History des États-Unis*, tome ii., and *The History of the United States*, edition of the *United States*, 2 vols., New York, 1858. Bartholomew's *Hamilton and his Contemporaries*, London, 1864, Bancroft's *History of the United States*, in the 7th and increasing vols., and Shea's *Life and Speeches*, ed., New York, 1869 (2 Bk.).

HAMILTON, ANTHONY or ANTOINE (1646-1720), a French classical author, who is especially noteworthy from the fact that, though by birth he was a foreigner, his literary characteristics are more decidedly French than those of many of the most indubitable Frenchmen. His father was George Hamilton, younger brother of James, second earl of Abercorn and head of the family of Hamilton in the peerage of Scotland, and sixth duke of Châtelaine in the peerage of France, and his mother was Mary Baden, sister of the duke of Ormonde. He was born in 1646, but the place of his birth has not been ascertained. According to some authorities it was Droghda, but according to others it was Tipperary county. From the age of four till he was fourteen the boy was brought up in France, whither his family had removed after the execution of Charles I. The fact that, like his father, he was a Roman Catholic, prevented his receiving the political promotion he might otherwise have expected on the Restoration, but he became a distin-

guished member of that brilliant band of courtiers, whose most fitting posthumous was destined to be the product of his pen. His connexion with France was always maintained, and the marriage of his sister to the Comte de Gramont rendered it more intimate if possible than before. On the accession of James he found his religious disabilities transformed into advantages. He obtained an infantry regiment in Ireland, and was appointed governor of Limerick. But the battle of the Boyne, at which he was present, brought disaster on all who were attached to the cause of the Stewarts, and before long he was again in France—and early, but at home. The cost of his life was spent for the most part in the chattering of his friends. With the dukes of Lorraine and Maine he became an especial favourite, and it was at his seat at Sceaux that he wrote the *Mémours* that made him famous. The first advised expedition of 1708 was the last political enterprise in which he shared, and he died at St Germain L'aye, August 6, 1720.

It is mainly, as has already been indicated, by the *Mémours des Comtes de Gramont* that Hamilton takes rank with the most distinguished writers of France. The work was first published anonymously in 1718 under the name of Cologne, but it was reprinted in Holland, at that time the great printers of all ages. An English translation by Deacy appeared in 1721. Upwards of thirty editions have since appeared, the best of the French being Renouard's (1812) and Gustave Brunet's (1869), and the best of the English Edwards's (1784), with 78 engravings, and Malleville's (1811), with 64 portraits by Seroux and others. The original edition was reprinted by Pitman in 1870. In mention and value parity of the comarative titles which O'Hanlon's translation of *The Thousand and One Nights* had brought into vogue in France, Hamilton wrote *de la France, Plans de la France, de la France, de la France, de la France*, which are characterized by the graceful ease of their style and the successful extravagance of their intentions. The first three tales appeared at Paris in 1780, ten years after the death of the author, and a collection of his *Œuvres Posthumes* in 1781 contained the unfinished "Cyclope." A collected edition of Hamilton's works was published in six volumes in 1740, and was reprinted in 1769, 1770, 1776, and 1777. A translation of Pope's *Essay on Criticism*, which procured the author a complimentary acknowledgment from the poet, is still in MS., with the exception of a fragment printed in the 1812 edition of the works. In the name of his niece, the countess of Striford, Hamilton maintained a witty correspondence with Lady Mary Wroth Montagu. See Notices of Hamilton in the 1802 edition of his works, and in Lescaut's edition of the *Contes*, *Œuvres de l'abbé de la Roche* (1801), and *Œuvres de l'abbé de la Roche* (1801).

HAMILTON, ELIZABETH (1758-1816), novelist and miscellaneous writer, was born at Belfast, of Scotch extraction, 25th July 1758. Her father's death in 1769 left his wife so embarrassed that Elizabeth was adopted in 1762 by her paternal aunt, Miss Marshall, who lived in Scotland, near Stirling. These Elizabeth spent her youth and received a good education,—at first at school, afterwards in private, and lastly for some months under masters at Edinburgh and Glasgow. In her 16th year she made a tour in the Highlands with some friends, and wrote a journal of it for her aunt's perusal, which was inserted, unknown to the authoress, in a provincial magazine. In 1780 Miss Marshall died, and Miss Hamilton was prevented by household cares from using her pen, but in 1785 she made her first voluntary contribution to the press in the shape of a letter to the *Lounger*, of which paper it forms the 46th number. On the death of Mr Marshall in 1788, Miss Hamilton lived for a time with her brother, Captain Charles Hamilton, who was engaged on his translation of the *Padana*. Prompted by her brother's associations, she produced her *Letters of a Hindoo Rajah* in 1790, and some years after, with her sister Miss Blake, settled at Bath, where she published in 1800 the *Mémours of Mademoiselle de la Fayette*, a kind of satire on the manners of the French Revolution. In 1801-2 the *Letters on Education* appeared, her most valuable though not her most popular work. After travelling through Wales and Scotland

for nearly two years, the sisters took up their abode in 1803 at Edinburgh. In 1804 Mrs Hamilton, as she then preferred to be called, published her *Life of Aspinwall, wife of Guillaume*, and in the same year she received a pension from Government. About this time she consented to take charge for six months of a widowed Scotch nobleman's family, and to his oldest daughter were addressed *Letters on the Moral and Religious Principle*, published in 1806. Her next publication of importance, *The Cottagers of Glenburnie*, appeared in 1808. This work, to which the authoress owes most of her fame, is an admirable description of the failings of the Scotch peasantry in their home life, and, while graphic and telling, is "saved from caricature and absurdity." Sir Walter Scott describes it as "a picture of the rural habits of Scotland, of striking and impressive fidelity," and Lord Jeffrey reviewed it very favourably in the *Edinburgh Review* (vol. xi.). Her subsequent works were a supplement to her *Letters on Education*, under the name of *Popular Essays on the Elementary Principles of the Human Mind* (1812), and *Hints addressed to the Patrons and Directors of Public Schools* (1815). She died at Harrogate, July 23, 1816.

*Memoirs of Mrs Elizabeth Hamilton*, by Miss Tenenge, were published in 1818. A notice of her literary life and labours, attributed to Miss Edgemont, appeared in the *Monthly Magazine* in September 1818.

HAMILTON, JAMES (1769-1831), the author of the Hamiltonian system of teaching languages, was born in 1769 and died October 31, 1831. The first part of his life was spent in mercantile pursuits. Having settled in Hamburg and become free of the city, he was anxious to become acquainted with German and accepted the tuition of a French emigré, General d'Anglais. In twelve lessons he found himself able to read an easy German book, his master having directed the use of a grammar and translated to him short stories word for word into French. As a citizen of Hamburg Hamilton started a business in Paris, and during the peace of Amiens maintained a lucrative trade with England, but at the rupture of the treaty he was made a prisoner of war, and though the protection of Hamburg was enough to get the words *écrit de la liste des prisonniers de guerre* inscribed upon his passport, he was detained in custody till the close of hostilities. His business being thus ruined, he went in 1814 to America, intending to become a farmer and manufacturer of potash, but, changing his plan before he reached his "location," he started as a teacher in New York. Adopting his old tutor's method, he attained remarkable success in New York, Baltimore, Washington, Boston, Montreal, and Quebec. Returning to England in July 1823, he was equally fortunate in Manchester and elsewhere. His system attracted general attention, and was vigorously attacked and defended. In 1826 Sydney Smith devoted an article to its elucidation in the *Edinburgh Review*—"We are strongly persuaded," he said, "that, the time being given, this system will make better scholars, and the degree of scholarship being given, a much shorter time will be needed" than in the ordinary system. As text-books for his pupils Hamilton printed interlinear translations of the Gospel of John, of an *Epitome of Aristotle's works*, of *Esop's Fables*, *Eutropius*, *Amelius Victor*, *Phaedrus*, &c., and many books were issued as Hamiltonian, with which he had nothing personally to do. The two master principles of his method, which has left its traces on our modern linguistic discipline, are that the language is to be presented to the scholar as a living organism, and that its laws are to be learned from observation and not by rules.

See Hamilton's own account—*The Principles, Practice, and Results of the Hamiltonian System for the last Twelve Years*, Manchester, 1829. *Albert, the Hamiltonian's Methods*, G. F. Wynn, Hamilton and Jacob, 1281.

HAMILTON, PATRICK (1504-1528), son of Sir Patrick Hamilton, well known in Scottish church history, and of Catherine Stewart, daughter of Alexander, duke of Albany, second son of James I. of Scotland, was born in the diocese of Glasgow, probably at his father's estate of Stonehouse in Lanarkshire. Of his early boyhood and education nothing is known. In 1517 he was appointed titular abbot of Feme, Ross-shire, and it was probably about the same year that he went to study at Paris, for his name is found in an ancient list of those who graduated there in 1520. It was doubtless during this period that he received the gains of the doctrines he was afterwards so nobly to uphold. From Ales we learn that Hamilton subsequently went to Louvain, attracted probably by the fame of Erasmus, who in 1521 had his headquarters there. Returning to Scotland, the young scholar naturally selected St Andrews, the capital of the church and of learning, as his residence. On the 9th June 1523 he became a member of the university of St Andrews, and on the 3d October 1524 he was admitted to its faculty of arts. These Hamilton attained such influence that he was permitted to conduct in the cathedral a musical mass of his own composition. But the Reformed doctrines had now obtained a firm hold on the young abbot, and he was eager to communicate them to his fellow-countrymen. Early in 1527 the archbishop Beaton's attention was directed to the heretical preaching of the young monk, when upon his ordered that Hamilton should be formally summoned and accused. Hamilton fled to Germany, first visiting Luther at Wittenberg, and afterwards enrolling himself as a student, under Francis Lambert of Avignon, in the new university of Marburg, opened May 30, 1527, by Philip, landgrave of Hesse. Frith and Tyndale were among those whom he met there. Late in the autumn of 1527 Hamilton returned to Scotland, bold in the truth of his principles. He went first to his brother's house at Kincavel, near Lamlithgow, in which town he preached frequently, and soon afterwards he married a young lady of noble rank, whose name has not come down to us. Beaton, avoiding open violence through fear of Hamilton's high connections, invited him to a conference at St Andrews. The reformer resolutely accepted the invitation, and for nearly a month was permitted to preach freely. At length, however, he was summoned before a council of bishops and clergy presided over by the archbishop, and though he clearly and calmly answered all the written charges brought against him, his replies gave ground for new accusations of heresy. The council eagerly convicted him, and handed him over to the secular power. The sentence was carried out on the same day (February 28, 1528) lest he should be rescued by his friends, and he was burned at the stake as a heretic. His courageous bearing attracted more attention than even to the doctrines for which he suffered, and greatly helped to spread the Reformation in Scotland.

Hamilton left a short treatise showing the antithesis between the law and the gospel. His translation of it, under the name of "Patrick's Phases," is to be found in *Foxe's Acts and Monuments*. *Patrick Hamilton, the first Preacher, and Martyr of the Scottish Reformation*, by the Rev. Peter Loxner, was published at Edinburgh in 1857.

HAMILTON, ROBERT (1743-1829), an able writer on political economy and finance, was born at Philig, Edinburgh, on the 11th June 1743. He was of good family, his grandfather, William Hamilton, professor of divinity and afterwards principal of Edinburgh University, having been a cadet of the family of the Duke of Argyll. He received an excellent education, and specially distinguished himself in the classes of mathematics at the university of Edinburgh, then under Professor Matthew Stewart. Although desirous of following a literary life, he was induced to enter the banking-house of Messrs Hogg in order to acquire a prac-



tical knowledge of business. In 1766 he was disappointed in his efforts to obtain the mathematical chair at Aberdeen university, but three years later he gave up business pursuits and accepted the rectorship of Peith academy. In 1779 he was presented to the chair of natural philosophy at Aberdeen university. For many years, however, by private arrangement with his colleague Professor Copland, Hamilton taught the class of mathematics. In 1817 he was presented to the latter chair. For some years before his death in July 1829 he had retired from the active business of his chair, and quitted his privacy only at rare intervals to take part in important affairs concerning the college.

Hamilton's most important work is the *Essay on the National Debt*, which appeared in 1813 and was undoubtedly the first to expose the economic fallacies involved in Pitt's policy of sinking fund. It is still of value. A posthumous volume published in 1830, *The Progress of Society*, is also of great utility, and is a very efficient statement of economic principles by tracing their natural origin and position in the development of social life. Some minor works of a practical character (*Introduction to Merchandise*, 1778, *Essay on War and Peace*, 1790) are now forgotten.

HAMILTON, THOMAS (1789-1842), the author of *Cyril Thornton*, was the younger brother of Professor Sir William Hamilton, Bart., and was born in 1789. In his early years he acquired a thorough mastery of the classics, and notwithstanding that he entered the artillery and was engaged in active service through the Peninsular and American campaigns, he continued to cultivate his literary tastes. On the conclusion of peace he withdrew, with the rank of captain, from active professional duties, and amused his leisure hours with the congenial pastime of literature. He was a frequent contributor to *Blackwood's Magazine* from its commencement, his papers manifesting great variety and versatility of talent, and embracing both prose and poetry. The most important and popular of his contributions to that periodical was the military novel *Cyril Thornton*, whose deficiency of plot is sufficiently compensated for by the interest of its details, its vivacity of movement, its truthful and clever delineation of character, and its easy, fresh, and graceful style. His *Annals of the Peninsular Campaign*, published originally in 1829, and republished in 1849 with additions by Frederick Hardman, though too condensed to leave room for graphic description, is written with great clearness and impartiality. His only other work, *Men and Manners in America*, published originally in 1832, is the result of much careful observation, and its criticisms, though frank and outspoken, and somewhat coloured by British prejudices, are always expressed with courtesy and good taste. He died at Pisa, December 7, 1842.

HAMILTON, SIR WILLIAM, BART. (1789-1856), one of the most eminent of Scottish metaphysicians, was born in Glasgow, on the 8th March 1788. His father, Dr. William Hamilton, had in 1781, on the strong recommendation of the celebrated William Hunter, been appointed to succeed his father, Dr. Thomas Hamilton, as professor of anatomy in the university of Glasgow, and when he died in 1790, in his thirty-second year, he had already gained a reputation that caused his early death to be widely and deeply regretted. William Hamilton and a younger brother (afterwards Captain Thomas Hamilton, noticed above) were thus brought up under the sole care of their mother,—a woman, fortunately, of considerable ability and force of character. William received his early education in Scotland, except during two years which he spent in a private school near London, and went in 1807, as a small exhibitioner, to Balliol College, Oxford. There he pursued his studies zealously, though for the most part independently,—devoting himself chiefly to Aristotle, but in other directions also laying the foundations of that wide and profound scholarship with which his name is associated. In

November 1810 he took the degree of B.A. with first class honours, after an examination so much above the usual standard in the number and difficulty of the works which it embraced that the memory of it was long preserved at Oxford. He had been intended for the medical profession, but, soon after leaving Oxford, gave up this idea, and in 1813 became a member of the Scottish bar. Henceforward Edinburgh was his place of residence, and, except on occasion of two short visits to Germany in 1817 and 1821, he never again quitted Scotland. Neither his ambition nor his success was such as to absorb his time in professional pursuits. His life was mainly that of a student, and the following years, marked by little of outward interest, were filled by researches of all kinds, through which he daily added to his stores of learning, while at the same time he was gradually forming his philosophic system. The outward and visible traces of these researches remain in his common-places books, especially in one which, having been in constant use, is a valuable record of his studies from this time onwards to the close of his life. He did not withdraw himself from society, but his favourite companions were the books of his own and of every library within his reach. Among these he lived in a sort of seclusion, from which only now and then, when stirred by some event of the world around, did he come forth, in vigorous pamphlets, to denounce, or protest, or remonstrate, as the case might be.

His own investigations enabled him to make good his claim to represent the ancient family of Hamilton of Preston, and in 1816 he took up the baronetcy, which had lain dormant since the death (in 1701) of Sir Robert Hamilton, well known in his day as a Covenanter leader.

In 1820 he was an unsuccessful candidate for the chair of moral philosophy in the university of Edinburgh. Soon afterwards he was appointed professor of civil history, and as such delivered several courses of lectures on the history of modern Europe and the history of literature. In 1829 his career of authorship began with the appearance of the well known essay on the *Philosophy of the Unconditioned*,—the first of a series of articles contributed by him to the *Edinburgh Review*. He was elected in 1836 to the Edinburgh chair of logic and metaphysics, and from this time dates the influence which, during the next twenty years, he exerted over the thought of the younger generation in Scotland. Much about the same time he began the preparation of an annotated edition of Reid's works, intending to annex to it a number of dissertations. Before, however, this design had been carried out, he was struck with paralysis of the right side, which seriously crippled his bodily powers, though it left his mind wholly unimpaired. The edition of Reid appeared in 1846, but with only seven of the intended dissertations,—the last, too, unfinished. It was Sir William's distinct purpose to complete the work, but this purpose remained at his death unfulfilled, and all that could be done afterwards was to print such materials for the remainder, or such notes on the subjects to be discussed, as were found among his MSS. Considerably before this time he had formed his theory of logic, the leading principles of which were indicated in the prospectus of "an essay on a new analytic of logical forms" prefixed to his edition of Reid. But the elaboration of the scheme in its details and applications continued during the next few years to occupy much of his leisure. Out of this arose in 1847 a sharp controversy with the late Professor De Morgan of University College, London. The essay did not appear, but the results of the labour gone through are contained in the valuable appendices to his *Lectures on Logic*. Another occupation of these years was the preparation of extensive materials for a publication which he designed on the personal history, influence, and opinions of Luther. Here he

advanced so far as to have planned and partly carried out the arrangement of the work, but it did not go farther, and still remains in MS. In 1852-53 appeared the first and second editions of his *Discussions in Philosophy, Literature, and Education*, a reprint, with large additions, of his contributions to the *Edinburgh Review*. Soon after, his general health began to fail. Still, however, aided now as ever by his courageous and devoted wife—who had now married in 1839—he persevered in literary labour, and during 1854-55 he brought out nine volumes of a new edition of Stewart's works. The only remaining volume was to have contained a memoir of Mr. Stewart from his pen, but this he did not live to write. He taught his class for the last time in the winter of 1855-56. Shortly after the close of the session he was taken ill, and on the 6th May 1856 he died at his house in Edinburgh.

Dr W. Hamilton's philosophy is presented in writings either more or less figuratively in form and occasional in purpose, or else, in whole or in part, prepared for publication by others, not by himself. Hence, not only do some points receive what seems almost a superfluity of attention, while others of equal importance are touched very briefly enough of detail, but there is no complete statement of the latest results of his thinking in their mutual relations. It may be that this imperfection of the outward form has tended to obscure the real harmony of his system, and in part led to its being pronounced as it has too often been—"an assemblage of contradictory doctrines. How far this is from being the case, and how closely the various parts are connected, become apparent when it is seen how they are all developed from the common conception of consciousness. In the following sketch that conception will be used as a point from which briefly to view the system as a whole, and to trace the being on one another of its leading principles.

Consciousness is regarded by Hamilton under three chief aspects—(1) as it is in itself, (2) as involved under actual conditions, (3) as a source of truth.

1. Consciousness itself is to Hamilton but another name for immediate or intuitive knowledge. For such knowledge is a relation between a subject (knowing) and an object (known), which, as it is viewed from the side of the one or the other, is, properly called, consciousness or knowledge. There are two aspects, but the thing itself is one. Immediate knowledge or consciousness involves the evidence of both subject and object,—it is the affirmation by the subject implicitly of its own existence, explicitly of that of the object. In this relation as involved in the primary judgment, that which knows is conceived as the ego or self,—that which is known, either as a mode of the ego or self, or as a mode of the non ego or not self. Thus we have, in the *form* of the relation, a division of *existence* into the noumenon self and the contrasted phenomena of mind and matter, while the *relation* itself yields a division of *knowledge* into philosophy, corresponding to its subjective, and science, corresponding to its objective, phases,—the latter being further subdivided into the sciences of mental and those of material phenomena.<sup>1</sup>

2. Hamilton adopted the division of mental phenomena (not as states but as elements) into the three groups or classes of *cognition*, *feeling*, and *conation*. Cognition he classified according to the different relations between subject and object, calling these relations,—as subjective, perceptive, or knowledge; as objective, forms or stages of knowledge. Under these, cognition is either immediate or mediate, i. e., either consciousness itself or the datum of consciousness. The first of the faculties, therefore, is of immediate knowledge,—the acquisitive or preservative power, which yields perception (external and internal). The second is of that form of mediate knowledge which is representative of an individual object. Here Hamilton distinguished three moments or phases, which he termed the retentive, the reproductive, and the representative powers,—distinguishing them perhaps too widely, but at the same time indicated their essential unity. The third is of that form of mediate knowledge in which a number of objects are perceived, relations among being thought under a common relation. This he named the elaborative or discernive faculty.<sup>2</sup> Here, where he had to deal with consciousness in the form of experience, realized under actual conditions and comprehending even a variety of mental laws, Hamilton proceeded, in the first place, how the mutual action and reaction of the several elements produces the complexity which the phenomena present. Remembrance, imagination, and judgment are all, as acts of which we are conscious, acts in which we are immediately conscious, contained in self perception. But, on the other hand, our knowledge or perception even of self could not be what it is, did pro-

cesses of remembrance, imagination, and judgment not enter into its composition. Consciousness includes all the practical terms of knowledge, yet its development into a whole is the effect of the agencies which make up its content.<sup>3</sup> In the next place, he showed that the loss of mental action in the conditions under which consciousness is exercised. From the unity and the limitation of consciousness, under the relation of time, arises the successive variation of its unity,—an other words, the unity of thought. By the limitation of consciousness to mental action, the limited number of objects to which it can at one time be directed, but this arises in a further limitation, consisting in the disposition being in consciousness and the mind, and of mental faculty, to the conditions under which consciousness is the mental mode of "movements, arising from a certain degree of intensity," and that "the movements beyond the conscious range are still properties and effective properties of the mental ego." Thus do time he used to explain not only the phenomena of ordinarily latent knowledge and of forgetfulness, but also those of the abnormal recovery of apparently lost knowledge, and of the formation of habits and prejudices.<sup>4</sup> The unity (as a unit group of unity) of the unity—purely inner thoughts again present, partly thoughts for the first time present to the mind—follow one another according to what Hamilton called the law of integration, i. e., "only as they stand together as identical parts of the same common whole." In this sense law subordinate phases determine more special conceptions of thought. The appearances of former thoughts (remembrance voluntary or involuntary) are governed by the law of association, which is identical repetition. "Thoughts tend to suggest one another which are co-incident (1) in time or (2) in mode." New wholes of thought are framed by successive analysis and synthesis. Under the law of integration the various analyses are often combined in the same abstraction, i. e., by consciousness being continuously and repeatedly concentrated on certain pairs of aspects of objects and withdrawn from others. The synthesis of thought is infinitely diverse in character, yet by laws in common as various as the analysis, of forming new wholes, by discrimination and comparison, out of the materials supplied by perception and recollection, is the one end of mental faculty recognized by Hamilton. The various wholes of thought, from the simplest to the most complex. In other words, he regards judgment as the fundamental act of mind, the proposition, an evidenced judgment, as its primary product.<sup>5</sup>

If we take a theory of consciousness from this last aspect, i. e., as a source of principles, as embodied in his doctrine of the *conditioned* and of *common sense*. The former is so called because it professes to be a demonstration that "the conditionally limited (what we say briefly is the conditioned) is the only possible object of knowledge, and of positive thought." The name of the latter was adopted by Hamilton, not as an evil good one, but as sanctioned by the usage of philosophers in general and of Scottish philosophers in particular. The doctrine itself is first the primary data of consciousness, as such, i. e., as facts, and solely on the authority of consciousness, to be accepted in this. The two doctrines to complement each other, as several explications of the principle of the relativity of human knowledge, which, common to both, is manifested in the one through that which we cannot know,—in the other through the inexpressible character of our fundamental cognition.

The primary data of consciousness Hamilton held to be of two orders, otherwise diverse, but in this the same, that they are known merely as facts. These are—(1) truths of perception,—the constitution of the reality as various as its objects, feelings, and the allied conviction that in sense perception we come into contact with a reality external to the mind, and (2) truths of reason,—the fundamental truths of logic, the necessary forms of thought or relations of extension, i. e., quality, and quantity, its threshold aspect as time, space, degree), the causal judgment, the principle of substance and phenomenon, &c.<sup>6</sup>

Now how was Hamilton's peculiar contribution to philosophy that he placed the data of perception along with the data of thought, and affirmed that both classes alike are inexpressible, yet as facts clear, that both rest on the same authority, and that, if the one be conceded as true, so also should the other? He answered, because he held fast to the data of consciousness. Evidently here the ground of the view is of even more importance than the view itself, and so to Hamilton the question of realism *versus* idealism was momentous chiefly from its connection with that authority of consciousness. He was fully aware that, since he claimed so high an authority for the primary data of consciousness, it was necessary to supply the means of deciding whether any given cognition is or is not entitled to be the among the ego and to thus end he laid down certain criteria of alleged primary facts of consciousness. These criteria are (1) simplicity, (2) universality and (subjective) necessity, (3) comparative evidence and certainty, (4)

<sup>1</sup> *Reid's Works*, pp. 404, 408, 478, 529 &c.; *Lectures* on, i. 139, 202-203, ii. 279, *Discussions*, Vol. ad., 47, 603.

<sup>2</sup> *Lectures* on, i. 384-385, ii. 1-17.

<sup>3</sup> *Reid's Works*, i. 682, *Lectures*, i. 508, ii. 598.

<sup>4</sup> *Reid's Works*, i. 102, 103, 105, *Lectures*, i. 473, ii. 309-318.

<sup>5</sup> *Reid's Works*, i. 141-142, *Lectures*, i. 248-253, ii. 97-99, iii. 117-140, 276.

<sup>6</sup> *Reid's Works*, pp. xviii, 142.



facts—but only as facts—clear and certain, and as cognitions relative, more properly judged, but less than cognitions.—Hamilton claims for all that, on the sole authority of consciousness, they be accepted as truths. This is the point to which the whole of his philosophy leads up, hence he offers no arguments in its support. He only asks—Is the authority of consciousness to be disallowed, what other warrant of truth remains? Whose else will be a source of certainty be left? He saw no alternative between absolute scepticism and implicit reliance on consciousness. But his reliance was no absolute and blind belief. He claimed implicit trust, even for consciousness only after having investigated and laid down the conditions of its truth. The mind that does not argue in a spirit of truth must be proved to be that which springs from the fundamental character of the cognition. While the establishment of principles on which belief may be sure, rational, and consistent is the ultimate aim of his philosophy, groundless and unexamined belief he sweeps away wherever he meets with it. Thus he will not allow the validity of belief in an external reality which, *ex hypothesis*, is not known.<sup>1</sup> Be it noted, too, that it is conscious now, &c. &c. reason, for which he claims epistemic authority.<sup>2</sup> His position is best understood through the mutual relation (sharply defined) of his doctrines of the conditioned and of common sense. The former extends the bounds of existence as much as it purveys those of thought, and so makes room for belief. While this latter shows belief to be the condition on which alone even primary and fundamental truths can be apprehended. Thus, for example, on the ground of both, he held that freedom of will and necessity are alike inconceivable, but that we are not entitled to reject the testimony of consciousness to the fact that as moral agents we are free, on account of the speculative difficulties with which it is surrounded.<sup>3</sup> These two doctrines Sir W. Hamilton did not himself apply to theology, but he could not but see the necessity of so doing, since the one is concerned with the infinite and the absolute merely as notions, and the other with simple forms of thought long prior to those of theology.<sup>4</sup> He held references to this subject indicate clearly what he considered to be the true relation of theology to philosophy, and show that, in the one as in the other, he held vision to lie in some conviction of human ignorance as disposing the mind to accept testimony with the facts of consciousness as evidence of truth.<sup>5</sup>

Of the three classes into which, as we have seen, Hamilton divided mental phenomena, the third—the phenomena of emotion—is not treated in his philosophy, and has only been considered in fragmentary discussions of particular ethical points. Several lectures, however, are devoted to the consideration of the phenomena of feeling and the development of a theory of pleasure, founded chiefly on that of Aristotle, which is in substance that pleasure is the reflex in consciousness of the spontaneous and unimpeded exercise of power or energy,—pain being, on the other hand, the consciousness of overstrained or repressed exertion.<sup>6</sup>

The logic with which Sir W. Hamilton's name is associated is a purely formal science. Nothing else indeed did he consider properly to be called logic. For it seemed to him an unscientific mixing together of heterogeneous elements to treat as parts of the same science the formal and the material elements of thought. He was quite ready to allow that on this view logic cannot be used as a means of discovering or guaranteeing facts, even the most general, and expressly asserted that it has to do, not with the objects of reality, but only with the mutual relations of judgments. He further held that induction and deduction are correlative processes of formal logic, each resting on the necessities of thought, and deriving thence its several laws. In establishing the distinction between logical and scientific induction, he showed that deduction no more than induction is self-sufficient, since it also must have a prior process to start from before it can be applied to nature. He also held that no other than the formal logic can be distinguished from the body of the sciences. Perhaps he may have too much overlooked the fact that the search for causes (a problem common to all the sciences) and the presumable uniformity of nature (a principle capable of guaranteeing generally the truth of the conditions of a logic entitled to the name of a science of science, and possessing all the importance of the knowledge whose organon it is. Yet it is well to be reminded by a difference of name that a science such as this, consisting of inferences from the natural order of things, is quite distinct from the body of truths developed from the conditions of thought as such.

The only logical laws recognized by Hamilton were the three axioms of identity, non-contradiction, and excluded middle, which he regarded as axioms of the general condition of the possibility of existence and, therefore, of thought. The law of reason and consequent he considered not as different, but merely as expressing metaphysically what these express logically.<sup>7</sup> He added as a postulate—his last theory was of importance—“that logic be allowed to state explicitly what is thought implicitly.”

The changes by which he to a great extent remodelled formal

logic, were the result (1) of applying to propositions and syllogisms the two aspects of notions as wholes, —*extension*, referring to the objects denoted, and *intension*, answering to the attributes connoted, —and (2) of assigning quantity to the plain terms as well as to the subject in judgments of extension. These judgments receive the form of an equation. Only simple extension is allowed, but, all propositions being shown to be capable of simple conversion, the class of material inferences is greatly narrowed. Categorical syllogisms (inductive and deductive) may be either unfigural or figural, according as the distinction of subject and predicate and the distinctions included in that are or are not recognized. Unfigural syllogisms, but one form, figured syllogisms, and all of these, according to the position of the middle term in the premisses. Of these the first corresponds to the first and fourth figures of ordinary logic;—the models of the latter being shown to be merely indirect in terms of the models of the first. The laws of categorical syllogism are reduced to one. On the other hand, one of the results of the quantification of the mediate, tends to increase the number of propositional forms, a number of new moods are added, and each figure contains twelve. Hypothetical and disjunctive inferences, which had regarded as meretricious as unneeded etc.—(as to this Hamilton varies in opinion, cf. *Lects.* i. 369, 371, 373, 374),—form a separate class of syllogisms;—the conditional, properly subdivided into conjunctive and disjunctive, for, according to Hamilton, as all inference is hypothetical, this term ought not to be used to the name of one particular group. The quantities allowed by him in logic were but two—the definite, including the universal and singular, and the indefinite. The latter also he converted to be isofield,—positivity as such, from which the universal, both affirmative and negative, is excluded, and negativity which includes only one universal outcome, while possibly admitting the other. All these improvements were embodied in a new notation, not without effect, and judiciously presents to the eye the whole logical scheme.<sup>8</sup>

Even from this imperfect outline of Hamilton's system of psychology, metaphysics, and logic it appears how extensive and original were his labours in the various departments of philosophy, how powerful an impetus he gave to speculation, and how much he himself contributed to the elucidation of the ultimate problems of thought. By his thorough going analysis of consciousness and of the relation of consciousness to mind he did much to promote the scientific study of psychology in his own country and in America,—in particular to give it at once a sound method and a well defined sphere. He did not himself trace the growth of consciousness, but, by showing that it is both simple and complex, both involving and evolved, he implied that it had grown, and suggested the problem of the conditions of its development. On the other hand, to him there was a wide gulf between mental and material phenomena, and the acceptance of innate ideas was attended with no difficulty, thus his point of view is so far removed from that of most of the psychologists of the present day that probably his influence now is much less either than it was in his own lifetime or than it may be hereafter.

In metaphysics his place is plainly marked. Taking his stand at once on the exclusive authority and on the limited sphere of human consciousness, he comes into direct antagonism with all schools of philosophy that find in the *Unconditioned* a field for speculation. At the same time he is divided from scepticism by his assertion that, as the realm of existence transcends that of thought, so belief is wider than knowledge, and from empiricism by his admission of *a priori* and inexplicable cognitions. He ranked himself among the Scottish school of philosophers, yet there he stands by himself, since even those doctrines which he held in common with his predecessors he held after a fashion widely different as to both grounds and results. The doctrine of common sense, in particular, he set in a new light, rescued from misapprehension, and showed, on the testimony of every school of thought, to be one of the most widely recognized of philosophic tenets. In Reid he found a philosopher to whom by many ties of intellectual affinity he was bound, and who seemed to him to have so unskilfully used the right clue to a solution of the problems

<sup>1</sup> *Lects.* i. 188-141, *Disc.* 91-99.

<sup>2</sup> *Reid's Works*, 1806, 820-821, *Lects.* i. 641-642, *Disc.* 66, 68, 610-611.

<sup>3</sup> *Lect.* 592-93, *Lects.* i. 528-529.

<sup>4</sup> See *Lectures on Logic*, vols. III and IV, and Appendixes, iv. 359-476, also Introduction 312-313, 648-649.

with which he dealt as to justify the doubt whether he really had it. Hence he made Reid's writings, as it were, his own, corrected his errors, and gave a solid basis to the theory which he had himself failed even to make plain.

The philosopher to whom above all others he professed allegiance was Aristotle. His works were the object of his profound and constant study, and supplied in fact the mould in which his whole philosophy was cast. With the commentators on the Aristotelian writings, ancient, mediæval, and modern, he was also familiar, and the scholastic philosophy he studied with care and appreciation at a time when it had hardly yet begun to attract attention in his country. His wide reading enabled him to trace many a doctrine to the writings of forgotten thinkers, and nothing gave him greater pleasure than to draw forth such from their obscurity, and to give due acknowledgment, even if it chanced to be of the prior possession of a view or argument that he had thought out for himself. Of modern German philosophy he was a diligent, if not always a sympathetic, student. How profoundly his thinking was modified by that of Kant is evident from the tenor of his speculations, nor was this less the case because, on fundamental points, he came to widely different conclusions. There is a close likeness as to results between his system and that of Jacobi,—from which, however, he is distinguished by its more scientific character, especially by its tendency being more clearly identified with the voice of reason, and more rigidly required to prove its authority as such.

His labours in logic coincided in time with a general movement by which formal logic was effectually advanced and improved. But as to the originality of his contributions, especially in regard to the quantification of the predicate, there is no room for doubt. No evidence has ever been adduced that in the smallest degree weakens the force of the abundant evidence brought forward in its support.

Any account of Hamilton would be incomplete which regarded him only as a philosopher, for his knowledge and his interests embraced all subjects related to that of the human mind. Physical and mathematical science had, indeed, no attraction for him, but his study of anatomy and physiology was minute and experimental. In literature alike ancient and modern he was widely and deeply read, and, from his unusual powers of memory, the stores which he had acquired were always at command, every topic suggesting to him apt quotations or pertinent examples. If there was one point with the literature of which he was more particularly familiar, it was the 16th and 17th centuries. Here in every department he was at home. He had gathered a vast amount of its theological lore, had a critical knowledge especially of its Latin poetry, and was minutely acquainted with the history of the actors in its varied scenes, not only as narrated in professed records, but as revealed in the letters, table-talk, and casual effusions of themselves or their contemporaries. His article on the *Epistola Obscurorum Virorum*, and his pamphlet on the Disruption of the Church of Scotland in 1843, may be cited in confirmation and illustration of what has now been said. Among his literary projects were editions of the works of George Buchanan and Julius Cæsar Scaliger. His general scholarship found expression in his library, which, though mainly, was far from being exclusively, a philosophical collection. It now forms a distinct portion of the library of the university of Glasgow.

His chief practical interest was in education,—an interest which he manifested alike as a teacher and as a writer, and which had led him long before he was either to a study of the subject both theoretical and historical. He thence adopted views as to the ends and methods of education that, when afterwards earned out or advocated by him, met with general recognition, but he also expressed in

one of his articles an unfavourable view of the study of mathematics as a mental gymnastic which excited much opposition, but which he never saw reason to alter. As himself a teacher, he was zealous and successful. He did not indeed deem it necessary to give to his lectures the elaboration and precision that he bestowed on his published writings. But he made them sufficient for the end which they had to accomplish, he supplemented them at times by other instruction, and he strove, not only by all academic means, but also by his personal influence, to develop the speculative energy and interest of his pupils. His writings on university organization and reform had, at the time of their appearance, a decisive practical effect, and contain much that is of permanent value.

Many of his moral as well as intellectual characteristics are expressed in his writings,—the intensity and force of his nature, his tendency to be carried away by polemical ardour, his freedom from anything like pettiness, his perfect sincerity and candour. Such a reflex is at best very imperfect, but here could hardly be bettered by description, which, therefore, is not attempted.

His posthumous works are his *Lectures on Metaphysics and Logic*, 4 vols., edited by the Rev. H. L. Mansel, Oxford, and Professor Vailly (*Metaphysics*, 1868; *Logic*, 1869), and *Additional Notes to Reid's Works, from Sir W. Hamilton's MSS.*, under the editorship of the Rev. H. L. Mansel, D.D., 1862. *A Memoir of Sir W. Hamilton*, by Professor Vailly, appeared in 1869. (H. H.)

HAMILTON, Sir WILLIAM (1730-1803), the frequency and patron of the fine arts, was born in 1730 of a noble but needy Scottish family. Of his early life and education we know nothing beyond the fact that he was esquire to Prince George, afterwards George III., whose foster-brother he is said to have been, but in his twenty-fifth year he married a young and beautiful heiress, whose fortune placed him in affluence. In the first parliament of George III. Hamilton sat as member for Midlothian, and in 1764 he was accredited ambassador to Naples, an office which he retained till 1800. On proceeding to his post his attention and interest were at once awakened by the discoveries at Pompeii and Herculæum, and he took up the study of antiquities with ardour. The Farnesian collection of Greek and Etruscan vases, purchased in 1765, was the nucleus of a valuable collection of his own, now for the most part in the British Museum. Engravings and descriptions of the most valuable pieces are given in the famous *Antiquities Et usque, Grecques, et Romaines, tirées du Cabinet de M. Hamilton*, edited by D'Hancarville, and published at Naples in 1766-67. Hamilton also contributed liberally to the museum at Portici, and gave much attention to the MSS. and other valuable articles rescued from the buried cities, but his efforts were almost nullified by the meanness of the Neapolitan court, which was even suspicious of his real intentions. Between 1764 and 1767 Hamilton paid numerous visits to Vesuvius, Etna, and the Lipari Islands, accompanied by a young artist, Pietro Fabris, who made drawings of the noteworthy objects and appearances under Hamilton's directions. The result of these excursions, first sent as letters to the Royal Society, of which he became a member in 1760, was afterwards expanded into two works,—*Observations upon Mount Vesuvius, Mount Etna, and other Volcanoes of the Two Sicilies*, published at London in 1772, and *Campagna Phlegæa*, a collection of plates illustrating the volcanic phenomena, accompanied by concise descriptions in English and French, published at Naples in 1776-77. *A Supplement to the latter described the eruption of Mount Vesuvius in 1779. Hamilton's daughter died in 1776, and his first wife in 1782. In 1773 he was made K.C.B., and in 1791 privy councillor. His continued interest in art and antiquity is manifested by his contributions to the *Philosophical Transactions* of the Royal Society from 1767*

to 1793, and to the *Archæologia* in 1777, as well as by his generosity to artists and antiquaries, such as Monaghan, Winckelmann, and Pungg. Recalled in 1800, he died April 6, 1803.

His William Hamilton's second wife, Emma Lyon or Haite, whose name is so notoriously associated with that of Nelson, was born of very humble parents at Preston in Lancashire, about April 26, 1764. Her youth was spent in domestic service, and it was first as attendant on a lady of fashion that she learned to develop her talent for singing and mimicry. Having lost this situation she became waitress in a tavern frequented by actors, and soon entered upon a gay and dissolute career. Her beauty attracted among others the painter Romney, who depicted her in no fewer than twenty-three of his works. Sir William Hamilton married her in 1791, and, going with him the same year to Naples, she speedily acquired an ascendancy over the mind of the queen, which at the instigation of Nelson she used for the advantage of the British fleet. On the death of Sir William she lived in a house at Melton Place, provided for her by Nelson, but on his death in 1805 she soon squandered the modest fortune left her by her husband, and after being imprisoned for debt, retired with Nelson's daughter, Horatia, to Calais, where she died, January 16, 1815. Her *Memoirs* appeared in the year of her death.

HAMILTON, WILLIAM (1704-1754), a minor Scottish poet, the author of *The Bases of Yvone*, was born in 1704, probably at Bangour in Lunithgowshire, the second son of James Hamilton of Bangour, a member of the Scottish bar. It is supposed that he studied at the university of Edinburgh, and it is certain that he received an education which enabled him to enjoy the classical writers of Greece and Rome, and to be a congenial associate in after years with such men as Allan Ramsay and Henry Home. As early as 1724 we find him contributing to Ramsay's *Tea Table Miscellany*. In 1745 Hamilton joined the cause of Prince Charles, and, though it is doubtful whether he actually bore arms, he certainly celebrated the battle of Preston-pans in an ode beginning—"As o'er Gladsman's blood stained field." After the disaster of Culloden he lurked for several months in the Highlands, and at length escaped to France, but in 1749 the influence of his friends at home procured him permission to return to Scotland, and in the following year he obtained possession of the family estate of Bangour. In 1751 he married for the second time, but the state of his health was such that he soon afterwards went abroad, and he died at Lyons on 26th March 1754.

Hamilton has left behind him a considerable number of what are best described as poetical rhapsodies, many of them pleasing and beautiful, but none of them except the *Bases of Yvone* of striking originality. The first collection of his pieces was published without his permission or even knowledge by Foulis (Glasgow, 1748), and introduced by a preface from the pen of Adam Smith. Another edition, with corrections by himself, was brought out by his friends in 1760, and to this was prefixed a portrait engraved by Sir Robert Stirling. Though the poems have been since reprinted in Anderson's *British Poets* (vol. xv.), in Sharp's *Collection of the British Poets*, and in Chalmers's *English Poets* (vol. xv.), there was no second edition between 1760 and 1860, when James Paterson edited *The Poems and Songs of William Hamilton*. This volume contains several poems till then unpublished, and presents a bibliographical introduction and life of the author.

See also James Chalmers's "Notices of Life of William Hamilton" in *Transactions of Society of Scottish Antiquaries*, vol. vi., 1831, and Charles McKerrow, *The Poetical Works of Adam Smith, with Selections from the Scottish Poets before Dryden*.

HAMILTON, SIR WILLIAM ROWAN (1805-1865), one of the really great mathematicians of the present century, was born in Dublin, August 4, 1805. His father, who was a solicitor, and his uncle (nephew of Tim), migrated from Scotland in youth. A branch of the Scottish family to which they belonged had settled in the north of Ireland in

the time of James I., and this fact seems to have given rise to the common impression that Hamilton was an Irishman.

His genius displayed itself, even in his infancy, at first in the form of a wonderful power of acquiring languages. At the age of seven he had already made very considerable progress in Hebrew, and before he was thirteen he had acquired, under the care of his uncle, who was an extraordinary linguist, almost as many languages as he had years of age. Among these, besides the classical and the modern European languages, were included Persian, Arabic, Hindu, Sanskrit, and even Malay. But though to the very end of his life he retained much of the singular learning of his childhood and youth, often reading Persian and Arabic in the intervals of steamer pursuits, he had long abandoned them as a study, and employed them merely as a relaxation.

His mathematical studies seem to have been undertaken and carried to their full development without any assistance whatever, and the result is that his writings belong to no particular "school," unless indeed we consider them to form, as they are well entitled to do, a school by themselves. As an arithmetical calculator he was not only wonderfully expert, but he seems to have occasionally found a positive delight in working out to an enormous number of places of decimals the result of some arduous calculation. At the age of twelve he engaged Colburn, the American "calculating boy," who was then being exhibited as a curiosity in Dublin, and he had not always the worst of the encounter. But, two years before, he had accidentally fallen in with a Latin copy of *Euclid*, which he sagely devoured, and at twelve he attacked Newton's *Arithmetica Universalis*. This was his introduction to modern analysis. He soon commenced to read the *Principia*, and at sixteen he had mastered a great part of that work, besides some more modern works on analytical geometry and the differential calculus.

About this period he was also engaged in preparation for entrance at Trinity College, Dublin, and had therefore to devote a portion of his time to classics. In the summer of 1822, in his seventeenth year, he began a systematic study of Laplace's *Mécanique Céleste*. Nothing could be better fitted to call forth such mathematical powers as those of Hamilton, for Laplace's great work, like to profusion in analytical processes alike novel and powerful, demands from the most gifted student careful and often laborious study. It was in this successful effort to open this treasure house that Hamilton's mind received its final tinge. "Dus los il commenca à marcher seul," to use the words of the biographer of another great mathematician. From that time he appears to have devoted himself almost wholly to original investigation (so far at least as regards mathematical matters), though he ever kept himself well acquainted with the progress of science, both in Britain and abroad.

Having detected an important defect in one of Laplace's demonstrations, he was induced by a friend to write out his remarks, that they might be shown to Dr Birkley, afterwards bishop of Cloyne, but who was then royal astrolome for Ireland, and an accomplished mathematician. Birkley seems at once to have perceived the vast talents of young Hamilton, and to have encouraged him in the kindest manner. He is said to have remarked in 1823 of this lad of eighteen,—"This young man, I do not say will be, but is, the first mathematician of his age."

Hamilton's career at college was perhaps unenviable. Amongst a number of competitors of more than ordinary merit, he was first in every subject, at all every examination. His is said to be the only recent case in which a student obtained the honour of an *optime* in more than one subject. This distinction had then become very rare, not being given unless the candidate displayed a thorough mastery over his subject. Hamilton received it for Greek

and for physics. How many more such honours he might have attained it is impossible to say, but he was expected to win both the gold medals at the degree examination, had his career as a student not been cut short by an unexpected event. This was his appointment to the Andrews professorship of astronomy in the university of Dublin, vacated by Dr Brinkley in 1837. The chair was not evenly offered to him, as has been sometimes asserted, but the electors, having met and talked over the subject, authorized one of their number, who was Hamilton's personal friend, to urge him to become a candidate, a step which his modesty had prevented him from taking. Thus, when barely twenty-two, he was established at the Dublin Observatory. He was not specially fitted for the post, for although he had a profound acquaintance with theoretical astronomy, he had paid but little attention to the regular work of the practical astronomer. And it must be said that his time was better employed in grand original investigations than it would have been had he spent it in meridian observations made even with the best of instruments,—infinitely better than if he had spent it on those of the observatory, which, however good originally, were then totally unfit for the delicate requirements of modern astronomy. Indeed there can be little doubt that Hamilton was intended by the university authorities who elected him to the professorship of astronomy to spend his time on his best could for the advancement of science, without being tied down to any particular branch. Had he devoted himself to practical astronomy they would assuredly have furnished him with more instruments and an adequate staff of assistants.

In 1835, upon receiving notice of the meeting of the British Association which was held that year in Dublin, he was knighted by the lord-lieutenant. But far higher honours rapidly succeeded, among which we may merely mention his election in 1837 to the president's chair in the Royal Irish Academy, and the rare and coveted distinction of being made corresponding member of the academy of St. Petersburg. These are the few notable points (other, of course, than the epochs of his more important discoveries and inventions presently to be considered) in the uneventful life of this great man. He retained his wonderful faculties unimpaired to the very last, and steadily continued till within a day or two of his death (September 2, 1865) the task (his *Elements of Quaternions*) which had occupied the last six years of his life.

The germ of his first great discovery was contained in one of those early papers which he presented to Dr Brinkley, by whom, under the title of *Classics*, it was presented to the Royal Irish Academy. It is referred as usual to a committee. This report, while acknowledging the novelty and value of its contents, and the great mathematical skill of its author, recommended that, before being published, it should be still further developed and simplified. During the next three years the paper grew to an enormous bulk, principally by the addition of details which had been omitted at the leave of the committee. But it also became more intelligible form, and the grand features of the new method were now clearly to be seen. If Hamilton himself seems not till this period to have fully understood either the nature or the importance of his discovery, it is only now that we find him expounding his intention of applying his method to dynamics. The paper was finally entitled "Theory of Systems of Rays," and the first part was printed in 1835 in the *Transactions of the Royal Irish Academy*. The second and third parts have not yet been printed, but it is understood that those more important contents have appeared in the three voluminous supplements (to the first part) which have been published in the same *Transactions*, and in the two papers "On a General Method in Dynamics," which appeared in the *Philosophical Transactions* in 1841-5. The principle of "Varying Action" is the great feature of these papers, and it is strange, indeed, that one so pertinent a result of this theory which, perhaps more than anything else that Hamilton has done, has rendered his name known beyond the little world of true philosophers, should have been early within the reach of French and German readers, and in no way required Hamilton's new conception of methods, although it was by them that he was

led to its discovery. This singular result is still known by the name "Consol Refraction," which he proposed for it when he first presented its existence in the third supplement to his *Systems of Rays*, in 1839.

The step from optics to dynamics in the application of the method of "Varying Action" was made in 1837, and communicated to the Royal Society, in whose *Philosophical Transactions* for 1831 and 1835 there are two papers on the subject. These, displaying, like the "Systems of Rays," a mastery over symbols and a great natural method, lay almost unopposed. But they contain what is far more valuable still, the greatest addition which dynamical science had received since the great studies made by Newton and Lagrange. Jacobi and others in subsequent years have developed it to great extent, and as a question of pure mathematics only, Hamilton's processes, and have thus made extensive additions to our knowledge of differential equations. But there can be little doubt that he lives as yet obtained one of the most glorious of the first principles of nature, which they contain the germ. And though this is of course by far the most valuable aspect in which any such contribution to science can be looked at, the other must not be despised. The clear statement of most of Hamilton's, so nearly all great discoveries, that even their indirect consequences are of high value.

The other great contribution made by Hamilton to mathematical science, the invention of QUATERNIONS, is fully treated under that heading. It is not necessary to say here more than this, that quaternions form as great an advance relatively to the Calculus methods as the latter, when first propounded, formed relatively to Euclid in geometry. The following characteristic extract from a letter shows Hamilton's own opinion of his mathematical work, and also gives a hint of the devices which he employed to render written language as expressive as visual speech. "My first great work," *Lectures on Quaternions* (Dublin, 1843), is almost unaltered to read in consequence of the frequent use of italics and capitals.

"I hope that it may not be considered as unpardonable vanity on presumption on my part, if, as my own taste has always led me to feel a great interest in mathematical science, and particularly in quaternions, rather than by any other means, which can be aptly quoted, that I desire and hope to be remembered. Nevertheless it is only human nature, to desire some pleasure from being cited, now and then, even if it be only 'Theorem' or 'Proposition.' I have quoted can enrich the subject, by combining it with materials of his own."

The *discussions*, papers, and lectures we have mentioned might well have formed the whole work of a long and laborious life. But not to speak of his enormous collection of MS. books, full of flowing with new and original matter, which have been handed over to Trinity College, Dublin, and of whose contents it is to be hoped a large portion is yet to be published, the works we have already alluded to briefly form the greater portion of what he has published. His extraordinary investigations connected with the solution of algebraic equations of the fifth degree, and his examination of the results arrived at by Abel, Jacobi, and Budoni, in their researches on this subject, form another grand contribution to science. There is next his great paper on *Plastic Functions*, a subject which, since the time of Fourier, has been of enormous and ever increasing importance in the study of the sciences. There is also the extremely ingenious imitation of the HOMOGENEOUS (*g*). Of his extensive investigations into the solution (especially by numerical approximation) of certain classes of differential equations, which constantly occur in the solution of physical questions, only a few items have been published, at intervals, in the *Philosophical Magazine*. Besides all this, Hamilton was a voluminous contributor to the literature of his time. He was the author of a hundred or more closely written papers, all devoted to the minute consideration of every feature of some particular problem for which was one of the peculiar characteristics of his mind never to be content with a general understanding of a question, but to pursue it until he knew it in all its details. He was often courteous and kind in answering applications for assistance in the study of his works, even when his compliance must have cost him his valuable time. He was a ready and ready penman, and he was a ready penman of his own works for publication, and it was probably for this reason that he published so little compared with the extent of his investigations.

Like most men of great originality, Hamilton, generally in which his ideas before putting pen to paper. "He used to carry on," says his elder son, "long trains of algebraical and arithmetical calculations in his mind, during which he was unconscious of the earthly surroundings, and he used to bring me in the results of his thinking, but a brief note of recognition of the intricate nature of the shop or outlet was often the only result, and his thoughts went on sweeping upwards."

For further notice of Hamilton (his poetry and his association with poets, for instance) the reader is referred to the *Dublin University Magazine* (Jan. 1842), the *Continental Magazine* (Jan. 1860), and the *Monthly Notices of the Royal Astronomical Society* (Feb. 1860), and also to the *North British Review* (Sept. 1860), from which much of the above sketch has been taken.

**HAMIRPUR, or HUMBERPOON**, a British district in the northeastern-governorship of the North-Western Provinces, India, lying between 25° 5' and 26° 10' N lat., and between 79° 22' 45" and 80° 25' 15" E long. It forms the south western district of the Allahabad division, and is bounded on the N by the Jumna (Jamuná), on the N W by the native state of Banou and Betwa river, on the W by the Dhasan river, on the S by Alipura, Chhatrapur, and Chauhani states, and on the E by the Bhand district. It encloses the native states of Sarila, Jigti, and Bihat, besides portions of Charkhai and Garmauli.

Hamirpur forms part of the great plain of Bundelkhand, which stretches between the banks of the Jumna and the central Vindhyan plateau. The district is in shape an irregular parallelogram, with a general slope northward from the low hills on the southern boundary. The scenery is rendered picturesque by the artificial lakes of Mahoba. These magnificent reservoirs were constructed by the Chandel rajas about 800 years ago, for purposes of irrigation and as sheets of ornamental water. Many of them enclose craggy islets or peninsulas, crowned by the ruins of granite temples, exquisitely carved and decorated. From the base of this hill and lake country the general plain of the district spreads northward in an arid and treeless level towards the broken banks of the rivers. Of these the principal are the Betwa and the Dhasan, both of which are unnavigable. There is little waste land, except in the ravines by the river sides. The deep black soil of Bundelkhand, known as *mad*, retains the moisture under a dried and lifted surface, and renders the district fertile.

The census of 1872 gives a population of 529,187—276,106 males and 253,081 females. The Hindus numbered 498,877, and the Muhammadans, 39,338. The Chandels and Bundelis, the old dominant classes, have now sunk to 518 and 812 respectively, most of these situated to the north of the Mahoba, both of the former famous kingdoms. The district contains 6 towns with a population of more than 5000 souls—namely, Rith, Hamirpur, Mahoba, Minhua, Samsonpur, and Jitpur. The staple produce of the district is grain of various sorts, the most important being grain. Cotton is also a valuable crop, whose cultivation is on the increase. Out of a total area of 1,464,641 acres, 762,213 are under cultivation. Irrigation is practised on only 16,000 acres, chiefly in the south, where a river can be obtained from the artificial lakes. Agriculturists suffer much from the spread of the *Jam* grass, a noxious weed which overruns the fields and is found to be almost insensible, whereas it has once obtained a footing. The district is very fertile, but drought and famine are unhappily common. The scarcity of 1887 and 1888-89 was severely felt in Hamirpur. Commerce is chiefly carried on by means of its great river highway, the Jumna. Cotton is carried by the long river to the south, downwards, while rice, sugar, tobacco, and Manchester goods constitute the principal imports upwards. The manufactures consist of coarse cotton cloth and cotton ornaments. There is only one metallised road, that between Hamirpur and Nagaur, 70 miles in length. The gross revenue in 1870-71 was £281,646, expenditure, £216,416. In 1871 the police force numbered 531 men, supplemented by 1933 village watchmen (*chakravats*), maintained at a cost of £8058. The district contains only one jail, the average number of prisoners in 1860 was 400, 1860, 72, and 1870, 120. In 1870 the number of schools was 112, with 3068 pupils, the cost, £2184. The district is divided into 8 fiscal divisions (*parganas*). The climate is dry and hot, owing to the absence of shade and the barrenness of soil, except in the neighbourhood of the Mahoba lakes, which cool and moisten the atmosphere. The rain fell in 1860-70 as follows:—In 1870-71 88 1 inch.

**History**—From the 9th to the 14th century this district was the centre of the Chandel kingdom, with its capital at Mahoba. It was annexed to the town with many splendid edifices, remains of which still exist, besides containing the noble and artificial lake already described. At the end of the 12th century Mahoba fell into the hands of the Mussulmans, who retained possession of it for 500 years. In 1680 the district was conquered by Chhatrar Sati, the hero of the Bundelis, who assumed it his death was due to his ally the peshwa of the Marhattas. Until Bundelkhand was constituted a British district in 1803, there was constant warfare between the Bundela princes and the Marhatta chieftains. The land had been much ravaged by the long wars, and on the death of Chhatrar Sati, overthrown and ravaged during the Marhatta aggression,

and devastated by robber chiefs, so that in 1812 it was reported to be utterly a desolation. On the outbreak of the mutiny, Hamirpur was the scene of a fierce rebellion. All the principal towns were plundered by the surrounding native chiefs. Since then the condition of the district seems to have improved, but it has not yet recovered from the long ravages of Marhatta rule.

At Hamirpur, the administrative headquarters of the above district, in 26° 58' N lat and 80° 11' 50" E long., is situated on a tongue of land at the confluence of the Betwa and the Jumna, on the right bank of the latter river. It was founded, according to tradition, by Hamir Deo, a Kaichuk Rajput expelled from Ulwra (Alwar) by the Mahometans. The town possesses little importance, there are no manufactures, and quite a limited trade in grain. Population in 1872, 7007.

HAMLET, the hero of Shakespeare's drama, is according to some interpreters an historical or quasi-historical personage, but according to others his story is a mere development of "precipitation" of the great Scandinavian system of mythology. The decision of this point is rendered all the more difficult as the only original authority for the facts (historical or mythological) is the Danish historian Saxo Grammaticus (d 1204). Though Dr Vigfusson (prolegomena to the *Sturlunga Saga*, Oxford, 1878) concludes that the Hamlet legend was contained in the *Skjoldunga Saga* now lost, it is of course matter of question whether Saxo based this portion of his narrative on previous writings or collected his material from oral tradition.

According to Saxo, whose account is excerpted in Simcock's *Quellen der Skaldenges* (Bonn, 1870), and summarized in Lalham's *Disquisitions on Hamlet* (Lond., 1872, reprinted from *Transactions of the Roy Soc of Literature*, vol x, new series), Hamlet's history is briefly as follows. In the days of Ronik, king of Denmark, Gerdendill was governor of Jutland, and in this office he was succeeded by his sons Hovendill and Fenge. The former, returning with glory from a viking expedition in which he had defeated Kolle, king of Norway, obtained the hand of Gerutha, Ronik's daughter, who in due course bore him a son Amleth. But Fenge, out of jealousy, murdered Hovendill with his own hand, and then persuaded Gerutha to become his wife, on the plea that he had committed the crime for no other reason than to avenge his of a husband by whom she had been hated. Amleth, afraid of sharing his father's fate, pretends to be imbecile, but the suspicion of Fenge puts him to various tests, which are related with all the inconsequent simplicity of the ordinary *Maechen*. Despatched to England in company with two attendants, who bear a letter instructing the king of that country to put him to death, he assumes the purport of their instructions, and secretly modifies the inscription on their "tablets" so that the king is requested to put them to death and to treat him with honour. By his wisdom he makes a deep impression on the king, and obtains the hand of the royal princess, but instead of settling in England he returns at the end of a year to Denmark, where he is supposed to be dead, just as the people are celebrating his obsequies. During the feast that follows he makes the courtiers all drink freely, and then, when they are heavy with wine and asleep, he pulls down over them the hangings of the hall, fixes these with pegs which he had sharpened and prepared in the early stage of his folly, and then setting fire to the building leaves the revellers to their fate. He next proceeds to the royal chamber to take vengeance on Fenge himself, who falls beneath the stroke of his own sword, for which Hamlet had substituted his own scabbard. Nature then returns him to England for his wife, the hero ends that his father-in-law and Fenge had been under pledge to each other that the survivor should avenge the other's death if it resulted from violence, and his father-in-law, unwilling to make a direct attack on his life, sent



him to Scotland as proxy-suit for the hand of a noble queen Hemmutha, who has put all previous wooers to death. But Hemmutha happens to fall in love with Hamlet, and he returns to England to uphold his father-in-law with his teaching. As king of Jutland he has to endure the grievous hostility of Vikletus, Ronik's successor, but at last determines, though well aware that he is doomed to death in the attempt, to engage with him in a decisive battle. He perishes, and his widow marries Vikletus.

According to Latham, who may be taken as the representative of the historical theory, there are really two Hamlets,—the Hamlet of Saxo's third book and the Hamlet of his fourth book, who have been confounded together. The former, who is the Shakespearean hero, he would identify with Olaf Kyrie, the Aulaf Cunnan of the Saxon Chronicle and the Amlaf Cuaran of the Irish Annals, whose name, having passed through England and Ireland, he supposes to have returned to Denmark in a form which is latinized by Saxo as Amlethus, the latter he considers as the Hygelac of Beowulf, the Chodowladus of Gregory of Tours, the Habbilak of the Heimskingla, and even the Havelok of English legend. "By a confusion between them as man and man, the beaute's," he says, "of names as different as Olaf and Hygelac take a form out of which Amlethus is a probable elicit." But this theory, which is expounded with more learning than lucidity, is hardly so much in favour as that of the mythological school.

That, in spite of the links by which Saxo has sought to connect its distant portions with the authentic history of Denmark, the whole story was destitute of historical basis was maintained by P. E. Müller (*Nordl. Undersøgelse af Danmarks og Nojeres Saghistorie eller om Trossendigheden af Saxos og Svanos Kælder*, Copenhagen, 1823), and his conclusions in regard to the matter have been very generally accepted. Though Hamlet or Amleth himself is not mentioned in the earliest documents of the Scandinavian mythology—the only allusion in his existence being the phrase *Amleth's grove*, or Hamlet's mill, applied to the sea in the Skaldskaparmál—his father, Horvendill or Osvandil (from *os*, the spear, and *vandil*, skiff), appears in the great Scandinavian mythus in connexion with Thor's contest with Utungun, and is further to be identified with the Orendol of German legend, whose memorial coat was after wards christened the seamless coat of our Saviour at Treves, and whose name, which occurs also as Enithelle, may possibly be the source of the more famous name of Tell Hamleth's own name finds its explanation in the Norse *amr* or *ami*, cool (still used colloquially in Icelandic, *amla*, to toll), and *ni tola*, devoted to, and probably has reference to his mythic impersonation of the story—not only impersonable and impossible, but essentially stupid and trivial—lend themselves with remarkable readiness to the theory which explains them as veisions of the tale, a thousand times told, of the contests between summer and winter, sea and land, light and darkness. An elaborate exposition of the whole will be found in Zimov's *Die Hamletlegende aus und mit versuchten Sagen erläutert*, Halle, 1877. It has been already stated that Saxo's is the only original authority, but proof of the popularity of the legend is found in the presence in Jutland of such names as Amelhede (i.e., Hamlet's Heath), near Randers, Fegges Sund, that is, Fengo's Sound, and Feggesklint, that is, Fengo's Cliff, and in the fact that in modern Icelandic the word *amleth* is a regular equivalent for an idiotic or stupid man. No are literary refinements of the story wanting. The Icelanders have their Amlethia Saga, which is a free translation of Saxo, and their Amlebas Saga, in which the matter is treated in a more romantic style. The story of Buan, given in Jon Arason's *Islen lán Þjóðsögu* (Leyssie 1804, 11), has the

same main features, and Dr. Vigfusson, by whom it was discovered, is disposed to suppose that the legend may actually be of Celtic origin,—a supposition quite in keeping with other well known facts in Icelandic history. It was taken down from the lips of Lady Hildur Aingrimmsdotter, whose father was born in 1568. As Niels of Soro in the 15th century made Hamlet more familiar to the Danes by his *Danske Rimke onle*, so the French story-teller Belleforest introduced him to a wider company in his *Cest Histoire de agnes*. That as early as 1587 or 1589 he had been represented on the English stage is shown by the well-known passage from Nash's preface to Greene's *Menaphon*, "He will afford you whole *Hamlets*, I should say handfuls of tragical speeches."

HAMM, a town of Prussia, capital of a circle in the government district of Aunsberg, province of Westphalia, is situated at the junction of several railways, on the Lippe at its confluence with the Alse, 22 miles N.W. of Aunsberg. It is enclosed by walls, but the ditches which formerly surrounded it have been filled up and converted into promenades. The principal buildings are two Catholic and two Evangelical churches, a gymnasium, a poorhouse, an orphanage, and an infirmary. The town is flourishing and rapidly increasing, and possesses very extensive wire factories (in connexion with which there are puddling and rolling works, foundries, machine works, and manufactures of gloves, baskets, wadding, leather, sausages, soap, starch, chemical), sugar-of-lead, gum, lac, varnish, oil, and beer. The population in 1875 was 18,877.

Hamm, which became a town about the end of the 11th century, was originally the capital of the countship of Mark, and was fortified in 1220. It became a member of the Hanseatic League. In 1611 it was besieged by the Dutch, and in 1622 it was taken by Tilly, after which during the Thirty Years' War it was alternately in the hands of the imperial and the Hessian forces. In 1660 it came into the possession of Brandenburg. In 1761 and 1762 it was beleaguered by the French, and in 1763 its fortifications were dismantled.

HAMMARSKOLD, LORENZO (1785-1827), Swedish author, was born at Tuna, near Wimmerby, on the 7th of April 1785. He became a student at Uppsala in 1801, but failed to take his degree in 1806. He therefore accepted a humble post at the royal library at Stockholm, with which institution he remained connected for many years. In 1804 he published an article on Tick and Novalis, which attracted much attention, and was the means of founding the "Phosphoric School," as it was called, of poetry in Sweden. Hammarskold became the friend of Aterbom and antagonist of Wallmark, and in due time, by the bitterness of his tone, brought down on himself the scathing anger of Tegnér. In 1806 he published *Translations and Imitations of Poets, Old and New*, in the preface of which he denounced the classic Swedish writers with much force and wit, commending Goethe and Tieck to the young poets of the day. In 1808 appeared his elegant *Critique of Schiller*, and in 1810 a volume of essays of a polemical kind. In 1813 Hammarskold published a collection of his poems, and in 1815 had to endure the ridicule of Tegnér in his brilliant satire of *Hammaraskold*. In 1818 appeared the first part of Hammarskold's chief contribution to literature, his famous *Svenska Färdeteken*, a history of polite letters in Sweden, a book that was revived and republished after his death by Sandén, in 1833. He is chiefly remembered as a critic, his lyrics and his juvenile tragedy of *Prince Gustaf*, 1812, are of little value.

HAMME, a town of Belgium, in the province of East Flanders and the arrondissement of Tournai or Dendermonde, is situated on the right bank of the Durme, near its junction with the Scheldt, and is 24 miles E.N.E. of Ghent. It contains grain and oil-mills, has manufactures of lace, ribbons, linen, starch, ropes, and cordage, and carries on trade in flax. Population (1876), 10,778.

**HAMMER.** This well-known tool stands quite without rival for producing the numberless effects which are due to the remarkable force of "impact." Of all the array of tools in use in the industrial arts it is undoubtedly one that could least be dispensed with, and so it must have been from the very earliest days of handicraft. A hammer of some rude kind must have been as essential to the shaping of an arrow-head out of a flint, as is its modern representative to the forging of a bayonet out of a bar of steel. Hammers to be used by hand are made of an endless variety of shapes, and of weights varying from a small tinner's of an ounce to 23 or 30 lb. Of the various types in use the differences are mainly due to the special requirements of the particular trades for which they are intended, but partly also to individual fancy. A few examples are given in fig. 1—*a* being the ordinary carpenter's hammer with a cross pane, *b* a claw hammer, *c* an engineer's, and *d* a shoemaker's hammer, which last has parently retained its form for many generations. The same may also be said of the two others in the woodcut,

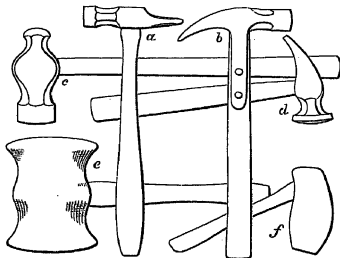


FIG. 1.—Varieties of Hand Hammer.

which are good examples of the roughness of the instruments with which results of almost incredible delicacy can be produced. Of these *c* is a favourite hammer used in the workshops of a London firm of goldbeaters, with which, together with others not less rude in appearance, gold is hammered out into leaves of such exceeding thinness that 10,000 are required to make up the thickness of an inch. Extraordinarily ill-shaped as *f*, the file-cutter's hammer, looks, yet with this and a simple chisel the teeth of files are cut by hand with a precision with which no machinery as yet has been able to compete, at least in England.

Hand-hammers and sledge-hammers being rigidly limited to weight by the trifling power which one man—or at most two men—can bring to bear upon them, it long ago came obviously desirable to obtain the force of impact from some more powerful source than human muscles, so that the weight of hammer heads might be largely increased and their blows made proportionately more effective. The first step taken in this direction seems to have been the introduction of the "Hercules," a ponderous mass of iron attached to a vertical guide rod, which was lifted originally by a gang of men with ropes, but afterwards by steam power, and allowed to fall by its own weight. This is a fairly efficient tool for forging large anchors and for similar purposes, the strength of the blow and the point at which it was delivered being easily regulated. But as the demand for wrought iron increased, the necessity for more rapid as well as more powerful hammers to aid in its manu-

facture increased also. The lift or helve hammer (fig. 2) and the tilt hammer (fig. 3) thus came into use, and under these forms hammers may be said to have ranked for

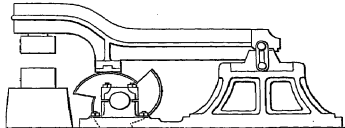


FIG. 2.—Lift Hammer.

the first time as true machine tools. Each of these consists of a heavy head attached to a beam mounted on gudgeons, which is lifted at regular intervals by suitable cams or pins

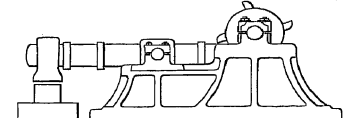


FIG. 3.—Tilt Hammer.

carried by a revolving shaft driven by steam or other power, their chief points of difference being the relative position of the gudgeons and the portion of the beam at which the

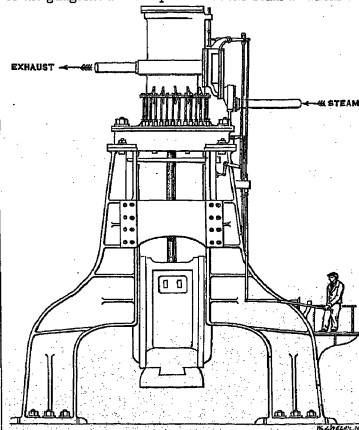


FIG. 4.—Steam Hammer.

power is applied, as shown in the diagrams. Heavy blows are thus obtained with the one, and lighter but much more rapid blows with the other, both, however, invariable in their intensity, the lift being always to one fixed height.

In the steam hammer (fig 1), which was first patented by Nasmyth in the year 1842, this objection is completely obviated. By the simple device of attaching the hammer head to the lower end of the rod of a piston working in an inverted steam cylinder, he produced a machine capable of being made to deliver its blows with a force to which no limit has yet been found, and yet so perfectly under control as to be able to crack a hazel nut without injuring the kernel. To the introduction of this invaluable tool is due more than to any other single cause the power which we now possess of producing the forgings in iron and steel which are demanded by the arts of modern times, and in one or other of its many forms it is now to be met with in every workshop in which heavy work is carried on. Many modifications of the Nasmyth steam hammer have been introduced. In one of these steam pressure has been applied above the piston to intensify the blow, it being only used in the original form for lifting the "top" and piston and for regulating their descent. In another the piston and piston rod have been attached to the framing, and the cylinder made movable, its weight being thus added to that of the hammer.

Duplex hammers differ materially from the ordinary steam hammer, inasmuch as no anvil is necessary,—two hammer heads of equal weight (and for some purposes they weigh only a few pounds, for others as much as 30 tons) being made to deliver horizontal blows of equal force simultaneously on opposite sides of the forging, which thus receives perfectly equal treatment. The importance of this may be gathered from the fact that every increase in the weight of the vertical steam hammer necessitates a very much larger increase in the weight and solidity of the anvil which is necessary to afford the requisite reaction for resisting the blow. For instance, the anvil of a 40-ton hammer now in use at Woolwich Aisnal weighs upwards of 100 tons, and has nearly 600 tons of iron in its foundation, whereas the anvil of an 80-ton hammer of which a full-sized model was amongst the most striking objects at the Paris Exhibition of 1878, is of no less than 720 tons weight.

The recent growth of steam hammers to the enormous size just mentioned is due chiefly to the large dimensions, independently of the mere weight, of the forgings which have now to be made for heavy ordnance and for other purposes. As long as the thickness of a forging is moderate, the reaction of the anvil acting upon its under side has an effect not greatly inferior to that of the hammer on the upper side. But with every increase in thickness some of this reaction is lost and the effect of the blow is more and more confined to the outer portions of the mass, which thus receives more than their share of treatment at the expense of the central portions. On this account the difficulty of obtaining thick forgings thoroughly sound throughout their substance is very great, and it seems as if we had now reached the limit beyond which the hammer cannot be advantageously applied for their production. It has been found indeed in the case of large shafts that dispensing altogether with the central portion, thus making them tubular instead of solid, is accompanied by an increase in their strength, owing to the possibility of thus forging the metal uniformly throughout. But a much more widely applicable remedy, and one which will doubtless come into general use for heavy work, is the substitution of hydraulic or other pressure for the force of impact, a system which has lately been employed by Sir Joseph Whitworth with wonderfully good results. The reason of the superiority of its effect seems to be mainly this, that a certain amount of time is essential for completing the "flow" of the metal which it is the object of forging to induce. Under continuous pressure this flow can take place uniformly

throughout the mass, whereas the instantaneous blow of the hammer, though it acts violently on the surface particles, and to a decreasing extent on the adjacent ones, is entirely expended before the action has had time to reach those at the centre, so that unequal density and consequent weakness is the result. For massive forgings therefore the old saying can be no longer accepted that "there is no machine like a hammer." (C P B S.)

HAMMEFEST, the most northern town in Europe, is situated in the department of Hammerfest in the province of Finnmark, on the western side of the island of Kvalø (i.e., "White Island"), which lies off the north-western coast of Norway. Its latitude is 70° 39' 18", and the sun stays for two months above its horizon. Though a small place of about 2100 inhabitants, it is the seat of a considerable trade, in which not only Norwegian and Danish but English, German, and particularly Russian vessels are engaged. About thirty small ships are sent out from Hammerfest every spring to Spitzbergen to take part in the fisheries and walrus hunting. Tiam oil from the liver of the *Seymus muscephalus* and cod liver oil are manufactured in the town. The exports, among which salted fish occupies the principal place, amounted in 1876 to the value of 1,629,600 crowns (£90,528), and the imports, chiefly salt and coal, to 721,700 (£40,094). On the Engelsen or Dud's Cape, which protects the harbour on the north-west side, stands a column with an inscription in Norse and Latin, stating that Hammerfest was one of the stations of the expedition for the measurement of the arc of the meridian. Nor is this its only association with science, for it was one of the spots chosen by Captain Sabine for his series of pendulum experiments. The ascent of the Tyven or Duchsberg in the neighbourhood is usually undertaken by travellers.

HAMMER-HEAD See SHARK

HAMMER-PURGSTALL, JOSEPH VON (1774-1856), was born at Gatz in 1774, and after some training in the Oriental academy of Vienna entered the Austrian diplomatic service. He was the son of Joseph Johann von Timmer, and it was not till 1825, when he had inherited the estates of the countess of Purgstall (in Styria), that he received the title Baron von Hammer-Purgstall, by which he is generally known. His youth and early manhood were passed in the Levant, where he bent all his energies to the task of improving his acquaintance with Oriental literature, in which as early as 1796 he proved his interest by the translation of a Turkish poem. He did not again come forward as an author till 1801, when his *Encyclopædia of Oriental Learning* appeared, a work whose ambitious character was so diffidently felt by its author that he feared to put his name to it. From that time there was little pause in his literary productiveness. For fifty years he wrote incessantly on the most diverse subjects, and his works were composed in most of the languages of Europe. He published numerous texts and translations of Arabic, Persian, and Turkish authors, compiled histories of Persian poetry, Turkish poetry, and Arabic literature, brought the poems of Hafiz, Mutezib, Baki, and Ibn-el-Fandi within the reach of European readers, published travels in Turkey and Austria, wrote the history of the Tatar races, the Krim Khans, the Golden Horde, the Russians, and the Ottoman Turks, formed a biographical gallery of Eastern celebrities, put forth theories about every possible subject in the wide range of Oriental learning, discussing the *Arabian Nights*, Arab music, Mohammedan theology, Egyptian papyri, gnostic ciphers, Arabic grammar, Eastern antiquities, the sect of the Assassins, the sieges of Vienna, the Krim Tartars, and Spenser's sonnets, which he translated into German. Von Hammer did for Germany the same work that Sir William

Jones did for England. He showed that Oriental subjects were not to be studied merely so far as they were connected with biblical theology, but were a worthy object of research for their own sake. For more than fifty years he persisted in introducing Eastern authors and Eastern topics to the general reader, and there was a time when no Orientalist was more widely known and admired. As Jules Mohl said—"C'était le doyen de la littérature orientale, le premier associé que la Société (Asiétique de Paris) ait tenu à l'honneur d'insérer sur sa liste, et le plus zélé, le plus fertile, et le plus célèbre des hommes qui se sont vus, de nos temps, à la culture des lettres orientales."

It was natural that a scholar who traversed so large a field and wrote so rapidly should lay himself open to the criticism of specialists, and no man was more severely handled by his critics than Von Hammer, to whom Diaz, for example (in *Unyug und Betrug*, 1815), devoted nearly 600 pages of heavy abuse. Von Hammer was undoubtedly inaccurate and superficial at times, he attempted more than he could possibly achieve with thoroughness, and was in the habit of giving his own whimsical view of matters about which he knew next to nothing, and he used to offend his critics as much by his Oriental florid style and want of method as by the occasional inaccuracy of his facts and the inconsequence of his deductions. But in spite of his faults he did more for Oriental studies than most of his critics put together.

When he was seventy-six years of age he planned a second edition of his *Encyclopædia of Oriental Learning*, and designed a "preliminary" series of twelve volumes which should clear the ground by expounding the history of Arabic literature, and for the last seven years of his life he regularly put forth his annual volume. Jules Mohl, going to see him, found the old man hard at work, helped by no colleague, and disliking the aid of an amanuensis. His only travels, in the Levant, and then his brief life at Vienna, where he held the post of court-interpreter, saved him from the crushing influence of solitary study, and to the last he maintained his singular buoyancy of mind. "C'était un homme généreux, fin, jusqu'à l'impudence, hardi, bouillonnant d'esprit, amable jusqu'à la coquetterie, donné d'une facilité de la parole, amoureux dans les grandes et les petites choses, et d'une vivacité inouïable—vivacité qui fut la source de sa bonne et de sa mauvaise fortune." So Mohl pictured him in his address to the Société Asiatique in 1857, when he recorded the death of Von Hammer on November 23, 1856, at the age of eighty-two, a hard worker to the last, like his younger but greater English contemporary Lane, with whom he came into collision in a friendly way on the subject of the origin of *The Thousand and One Nights*.

Von Hammer's principal works, with his *Geschichte des orientalischen Reiches*, 10 vols., 1827 (2d ed., 1824-5), translated into French (1836 and 1840), *Geschichte des orientalischen Dichters*, 4 vols., 1830, *Literatur-Geschichte des Arabers* (unpublished), 7 vols., 1850-6, *Les Origines Arabes*, 1827, *Geschichte der Goldenen Horde*, 1810, *Geschichte des Thibet*, 1842, *Geschichte des Chans der Tartaren*, 1856, *Geschichte des Asien*, 1818, *Geometrische und der Bogen*, 1822, *Encyclopædische Übersicht des Wissenschaften des Orients*, 1804, *Reich und Geschichte der Araber*, 1828. Besides these and smaller works, Von Hammer contributed numerous essays and essays to the *Zeitung des Orients*, which he edited, to the *Journal Asiatique*, and to many other learned journals, above all to the *Transactions of the Akademie der Wissenschaften* of Vienna, of which he was mainly the founder, and he translated

Erasmus's *Travels in Europe*, for the English Oriental Translation Fund. For a full list of his works, which amount in all to nearly 100 volumes, see *Comptes Rendus* of the Acad. des Inscriptions et des Belles Lettres, 1867.

(S L P)

HAMMERSMITH, a town and parish in the county of Middlesex, situated on the north bank of the Thames, 3½ miles S.W. of Hyde Park corner, and now connected with London by continuous lines of streets. The bridge across the Thames at Hammersmith, completed in 1827 at a cost of £80,000, was the earliest suspension bridge erected near London. Formerly Hammersmith was celebrated for its nurseries and market gardens, but these have almost entirely given place to buildings. In the neighbourhood there are a number of fine residences. The principal public buildings are the parish church of St Paul, consecrated in 1631 and restored in 1864, containing a number of interesting monuments, the Laytner schools, founded by Edward Laytner in 1634, the Godolphin school founded in the 16th century, and rebuilt as a grammar school in 1863, with accommodation for 200 boys, the Roman Catholic theological institute, founded originally as a school for ladies in 1669, the convent of the Good Shepherd, with an asylum for penitent women, the convent of Little Daughters of Nazareth, the Roman Catholic reformatory, the town-hall, the office of the board of works, and the West London hospital. In the district there are distilleries, lead-mills, oil mills, coach factories, boat-building yards, and the works of the West Middlesex Water Company. The population of the parish in 1861 was 24,519, and in 1871 43,691. Hammersmith falls within the limits of the metropolitan district, and forms part of the parliamentary borough of Chelsea.

HAMMOND, HENRY (1605-1660), a learned royalist divine of the Church of England, was born at Chertsey in Surrey, August 18, 1605. He was educated at Eton, whence in his fourteenth year he passed to Magdalen College, Oxford, becoming demy or scholar in 1619, and fellow in 1625. After graduating in arts he turned his attention to divinity, in 1629 he entered holy orders, and in 1631 became bachelior of divinity. Two years afterwards, in preaching before the court, he won the approval of the earl of Leicester, who in the same year presented him to the living of Fenchurch in Kent. Hammond received his doctor's degree in 1639, and in 1643 was promoted to the dignity of archdeacon of Cloucester. He was a member of the convocation of 1640, and also, but nominally only, of the Westminster Assembly of divines, which began its sittings in 1643. In the latter year Dr Hammond was concerned in the unsuccessful rising at Tunbridge in favour of King Charles I., and was obliged to flee in disguise to Oxford, then the royal headquarters. There he spent much of his time in writing, though he accompanied the king's commissioners to London, and afterwards to the ineffectual convention at Uxbridge in 1645, where he disputed with the Presbyterians. In his absence he was appointed canon of Christ Church and public orator of the university. These dignities he relinquished for a time in order to attend the king as chaplain during his captivity in the hands of the parliament. When Charles was deprived of all his loyal attendants at Christmas 1647, Hammond returned to Oxford and was made sub-dean of Christ Church, only, however, to be removed from all his offices in 1648 by the parliamentary visitors, who imprisoned him for ten weeks. Afterwards he was permitted, though still under quasi-confinement, to retire to the house of Sir Philip Watwick at Clapham in Bedfordshire. In 1650, having regained his full liberty, Hammond betook himself to the friendly mansion of Sir John Pakington, at Westwood, in Worcestershire, where he died on April 25, 1660, just on the eve of his preferment to the see of Worcester.

Independently of his works, Hammond possessed qualities entitling him to be remembered long after the forms are forgotten. He was an excellent preacher. Charles I pronounced him the most natural orator he had ever heard. His range of reading was extensive. A diligent scholar and a copious writer, he left no time for idle nois, which he regarded as the heaviest burden and most dangerous temptation of man.

His writings, published in 4 vols. fol., 1671-84, consist for the most part of controversial sermons and tracts. The best of them are his *Prædicationes*, first published in 1647, his *Paraphrases and Annotations on the New Testament*, and an incomplete work of a similar nature on the Old Testament. His *Life*, written by Bishop Hall, and prefixed to the collected Works, has been reprinted in vol. iv of Woodworth's *Edinburgh Biography*. See also Lloyd's *Memories*, 1683, and *Life of Henry Hammond*, by the Rev G G Pary.

HAMON, JÉRÔME LOUIS (1821-1874), one of the best known of French painters under the second empire, was born at Plouha on 3th May 1821. At an early age he was destined to the priesthood, and placed under the care of the brothers Lemaîtres, but his strong desire to become a painter finally triumphed over family opposition, and in 1840 he courageously left Plouha for Paris,—his sole resources being a pension of five hundred francs, granted him for one year only by the municipality of his native town. At Paris Hamon received valuable counsel and encouragement from Delacroix and Gleyre, and in 1848 he made his appearance at the Salon with *Le tombeau du Christ* (Musée du Louvre), and a decorative work, *Deux de la Porte*. The works which he exhibited in 1849—*Une Affiche Romaine*, *L'Égalité au Sécul*, and *Pierrot et saut avec deux jeunes Filles*—obtained no marked success. Hamon was therefore content to accept a place in the manufactory of Sèvres, but an enamelled casket by his hand having attracted notice at the London International Exhibition of 1851, he received a medal, and, recompensed by success, left his post to try his chances again at the Salon of 1852. *La Comédie Humaine*, which he then exhibited, turned the tide of his fortune, and *Ma sœur n'y est pas* (purchased by the emperor) obtained for its author a third class medal in 1853. At the Paris International Exhibition of 1855, when Hamon exhibited the casket of 1851, together with several vases and pictures of which *L'Amour et son Trompeur*, *Ce n'est pas moi*, and *Une Gaietude d'Enfants* were the chief, he received a medal of the second class, and the ribbon of the legion of honour. In the following year he was absent in the East, but in 1857 he reappeared with *Boutique à quatre Sous*, *Papillon enchaîné*, *Cantharide exclusive*, *Dévidettes*, &c., in all ten pictures. *L'Amour en veste* was contributed to the Salon of 1859, and *Viège de Lesbos*, *Putelle*, *La Volière*, *L'Escamoteur*, and *Le Souffleur* were all seen in 1861. Hamon now spent some time in Italy, chiefly at Capri, whence in 1864 he sent to Paris *L'Aurore* and *Un Jour de Fiangilles*. The influence of Italy was also evident in *Les Muses à Pompéi*, his sole contribution to the Salon of 1866, a work which enjoyed great popularity and was re-exhibited at the International Exhibition of 1867, together with *La Promenade*, and six other pictures of previous years. His last work, *Le triste Rivage*, appeared at the Salon of 1873. It was painted at St. Raphael, where Hamon had finally settled in a little house on the shores of the Mediterranean, close by Alphonse Karr's famous garden. In this house he died on the 29th of May 1874, and the contents of his studio and portfolios were dispersed at an obscure sale—thinly attended—for an almost nominal sum. Hamon had made his own a quiet place amongst those workers who since the days of Vien and David have been trying to bring home to us something of the pictorial aspect of classic time. He had neither the power nor the learning which might have enabled him to

give to that aspect any very real shape, nor was the side of human life with which he was most concerned weighty or important. He especially loved the gestures of children and their little ways,—now comic, now cunning, but always naive, and always full of charms. Dressed in classic fashion they play on the canvas of Hamon, with endless fanciful alterations, the same nursery comedies of which *Ma sœur n'y est pas* is one of the best examples. The painter's very mannerisms, his pale colour, and the hazy atmosphere which pervades his often rather empty field, enhance the graceful unreality of these little creatures, who are not quite classic loves nor yet altogether human babies.

HAMPDEN, JOHN (1594-1643), the eldest son of William Hampden of Great Hampden in Buckinghamshire, by Elizabeth, second daughter of Sir Henry Cromwell, and aunt of Oliver, the future Protector, was born in 1594. By his father's death, when he was but a child, he became the owner of a good estate, and a ward of the crown. He was educated at the grammar school at Thame, and in 1609 he became a commoner of Magdalen College at Oxford. In 1613 he was admitted a student of the Inner Temple, and in 1619 he married Elizabeth Symeon. He first sat in parliament for the borough of Grampound in 1621. From that time he was a member of every succeeding parliament till he died.

To the biographer who does not wish to become an historian and the pretence of narrating the incidents of his hero's life, Hampden's career must appear to give little scope for narrative. The letters which he left behind him are few. His speeches are scarcely more numerous and are extremely brief. In the early days of his parliamentary career he was content to be overshadowed by Eliot, as in its later days he was content to be overshadowed by Pym, and to be commanded by Essex. Yet it is Hampden, and not Eliot or Pym, who lives in the popular imagination as the central figure of the English revolution in its earlier stages. It is Hampden whose statue rather than that of Eliot or Pym has been selected to take its place in St Stephen's Hall as the noblest type of the parliamentary opposition, as Falkland's has been selected as the noblest type of parliamentary royalism.

Something of Hampden's fame no doubt is owing to the position which he took up as the opponent of ship-money. But it is hardly possible that even resistance to ship-money would have so distinguished him but for the mingled massiveness and modesty of his character, his dislike of all pretences in himself or others, his brave contempt of danger, and his charitable readiness to shield others as far as possible from the evil consequences of their actions. Nor was he wanting in that skill which enabled him to influence men towards the ends at which he aimed, and which was spoken of as subtlety by those who disliked his ends.

During the last two parliaments of James and the first three parliaments of Charles, Hampden did not, so far as we know, open his lips in public debate, but he was increasingly employed in committee work, for which he seems to have had a special aptitude. In 1626 he took an active part in the preparation of the charges against Buckingham. In January 1627 he was bound over to answer at the council board for his refusal to pay the forced loan. Later in the year he was committed to the gate-house, and then sent into confinement in Hamphire, from which he was liberated just before the meeting of the third parliament of the reign, in which he once more rendered useful but unobtrusive assistance to his leaders.

When the breach came in 1629 Hampden is found in epistolary correspondence with the imprisoned Eliot, discussing with him the prospects of the Massachusetts colony, or rendering hospitality and giving counsel to the patriot's sons now that they were deprived of a father's personal care.

It was not till 1637, however, that his resistance to the payment of ship-money gained for his name the lustre which it has never since lost. Seven out of the twelve judges sided against him, but the connexion between the rights of property and the parliamentary system was firmly established in the popular mind.

In the Short Parliament of 1640 Hampden stood forth amongst the leaders. During the eventful months which followed, when Stafford was striving in vain to force England, in spite of its visible reluctance, to support the king in his Scottish war, rumour has much to tell of Hampden's activity in rousing opposition. It is likely enough that the rumour is in the main true, but we are not possessed of any satisfactory evidence on the subject.

In the Long Parliament, though Hampden was by no means a frequent speaker, it is possible to trace his course with sufficient distinctness. Unwearied in attendance upon committees, he was in all things ready to second Pym, whom he plainly regarded as his leader. In the earlier proceedings of the Commons there was practically unanimity in the House, though a difference afterwards arose as to the form in which the attack upon Stafford should be conducted. All were agreed in deeming that the constitution should rest upon a combination between the king and the two Houses, and that legal questions in which the king was concerned should be decided only by the judges or the ordinary courts.

There was another point on which there was no agreement. A large minority wished to retain Episcopacy, and to keep the Common Prayer Book unaltered, whilst the majority were at least willing to consider the question of abolishing the one and modifying the other. On this subject the parties which ultimately divided the House and the country itself were fully formed as early as February 8, 1641. The details of the contest between Episcopacy and Presbyterianism will be more fully told in connexion with the life of Pym. It is enough to say that Hampden fully shared in the counsels of the opponents of Episcopacy. It is not that he was a theological Presbyterian, but the bishops had been in his days so fully engaged in the imposition of obnoxious ceremonies that it was difficult if not impossible to dissociate them from the cause in which they were embarked. Closely connected with Hampden's distrust of the bishops was his distrust of monarchy as it then existed. The dispute about the church therefore soon assumed the form of an attack upon monarchy, and, when the majority of the House of Lords arrayed itself on the side of Episcopacy and the Prayer Book, of an attack upon the House of Lords as well.

No serious importance therefore can be attached to the offers of advancement made from time to time to Hampden and his friends. Charles would gladly have given them office if they had been ready to desert their principles. Every day Hampden's conviction grew stronger that Charles would never abandon the position which he had taken up. He was therefore a warm supporter of the Grand Remonstrance, and was chosen out to be one of the five impeached members whose attempted arrest brought at last the opposing parties into open collision. In the angry scene which arose on the proposal to punish the Grand Remonstrance it was Hampden's personal intervention which prevented an actual conflict, and it was after the impeachment had been attempted that Hampden laid down the two conditions under which resistance to the king became the duty of a good subject. Those conditions were an attack upon religion, and an attack upon the fundamental laws. There can be no doubt that Hampden fully believed that both those conditions were fulfilled at the opening of 1642.

When the civil war began Hampden levied a regiment

of Buckinghamshire men for the parliamentary cause. In the earlier operations of the war, and in the undecided fight of Edgehill, he bore himself gallantly and well. But it is not on his skill as a regimental officer that Hampden's fame rests. In war as in peace his distinction lay in his power of disentangling the essential part from the non-essential. In the previous constitutional struggle he had seen that the one thing necessary was to establish the supremacy of the House of Commons. In the military struggle which followed he saw, as Cromwell saw afterwards, that the one thing necessary was to beat the enemy. He protested at once against Essex's hesitations and compromises. In the formation of the confederacy of the six associated counties, which was to supply a basis for Cromwell's operations, he took an active part. His influence was felt alike in parliament and in the field. But he was not in supreme command, and he had none of that impatience which often leads able men to fail in the execution of orders of which they disapprove. His precious life was a sacrifice to his unselfish devotion to the call of discipline and duty. On June 18, 1643, when he was holding out on Chalgrove Field against the superior numbers of Rupert till reinforcements arrived, he received two carbine balls in the shoulder. Leaving the field he reached Thame, and after nearly six days he died on the 24th praying for his country and his king. (p. 4)

HAMPDEN, BORN DICKSON (1793-1869), a bishop of Hereford, was born at Barbados, where his father was colonel of the local militia, in 1793, and after receiving a private school education under Dr Rowlandson, vicar of Warminster, Wiltshire, entered as a commoner at Oriel College, Oxford, in 1810. Having taken his B.A. degree with first-class honours in both the classical and mathematical schools in 1813, he in the following year obtained the chancellor's prize for a Latin essay "On the Office of the Ephors at Sparta," and shortly afterwards he was elected to a fellowship in his college, Keble Newman, and Arnold being among the number of his contemporaries. Having left the university in 1816 he held successively the curacies of Newton, Faringdon, and Hookney, and in 1827 he published *An Essay on the Philosophical Evidence of Christianity*, followed by a volume of *Pastoral Sermons illustrative of the importance of the Revelation of God in Jesus Christ* (1828). In 1828 he returned to Oxford as tutor of Oriel, and after having twice acted as public examiner in classics, he was selected to preach the Bampton lectures in 1832, when he chose for his subject *The Scholastic Philosophy considered in its Relation to Christian Theology* (1833, 3d ed. 1848). Notwithstanding a charge of Arrianism now brought against him by the Tractarian party, he in 1834 obtained the principality of St Mary's Hall, and in 1835 the chair of moral philosophy, nor did a university statute of censure against him on the ground of the supposed heterodoxy of the Bampton lectures avail to check his promotion to the regius professorship of divinity in 1836. These resulted a widespread and violent though ephemeral controversy, after the subsidence of which he published a *Lectures on Tradition*, which has passed through several editions, and a volume on *The Thirty-nine Articles of the Church of England*. His nomination by Lord John Russell to the vacant see of Hereford in December 1847 was again the signal for a violent and organized opposition, and his consecration in March 1848 took place in spite of a remonstrance by many of the bishops and the resistance of Dr Merceyweather, the dean of Hereford, who went so far as to vote against the election when the *canon d'élire* reached the cathedral. As bishop of Hereford Dr Hampden made no change in his long-formed habits of studious seclusion, and his episcopate was not characterized in a special degree by any form of churchly

activity or zeal. Among the more important of his literary performances were the articles on Aristotle, Plato, and Socrates, contributed to the eighth edition of the *Encyclopædia Britannica*, and afterwards republished with additions under the title of *The Writings of the Greek Philosophers* (Edinburgh, 1809). In 1806 he had a paralytic seizure which debilitated him for several mental exertion, and he died at London on the 23d of April 1808.

**PLATE VII** HAMPSHIRE, HANTS., or SOUTH HAMPSHIRE (most anciently *Hamanturra*, in Domesday book *Hamteschire*, and in the documents of the Middle Ages *Suthhamtescire*, *Suthhamtonscire*, and *Sudenhamptonscire*), a maritime county in the south of England, is situated between 50° 34' and 51° 23' N lat. and 0° 43' and 1° 51' W long., and is bounded on the E by Berkshire, on the E by the English Channel, and on the W by Wiltshire and Dorsetshire. It is of an irregular quadrilateral form, and its greatest breadth, from north to south, not including the Isle of Wight, is 46 miles, and its greatest breadth from east to west 41 miles. The total area comprises 1,032,105 imperial acres (manland portion 938,764 acres, Isle of Wight 93,341), or nearly 1613 square miles. Hampshire in its general aspect presents a beautiful variety of gently rising hills and fruitful valleys, adorned with numerous mansions and pleasant villages, and interspersed with extensive woodland. Two ranges of low chalk hills, known as the North and South Downs, enter the county from Surrey and Sussex respectively, and the former it in a north-westerly direction into Wiltshire and Berkshire, forming in the north-western corner of the county several picturesque eminences, from which some fine views are obtained. The highest of these summits is Siddow Hill, Highclere, 940 feet. The northern and north-eastern portion of the county, comprising more than 100,000 acres, is in the basin of the Thames, a large portion of the southern district is in the Southampton or Isle of Wight basin, and a portion to the west is in the basin of Wilts and Dorset. The south-western corner from Southampton Water is almost wholly occupied by the New Forest. The coast on the whole is low and irregular. The most easterly part forms a large bay containing Hayling Island and Portsea Island, which divide it into Chichester harbour, Langston harbour, and Portsmouth harbour. From the south-western extremity of Portsmouth harbour it runs about 18 miles inland in a north-west direction, and forms Southampton Water, which has a western shore about 10 miles in length, and an average breadth of nearly 2 miles at high water. From Southampton Water its line is continued irregularly in a south-western direction — for nearly one half of the extent forming the Isle of Wight, and in its western half forming Christchurch Bay and part of Poole Bay.

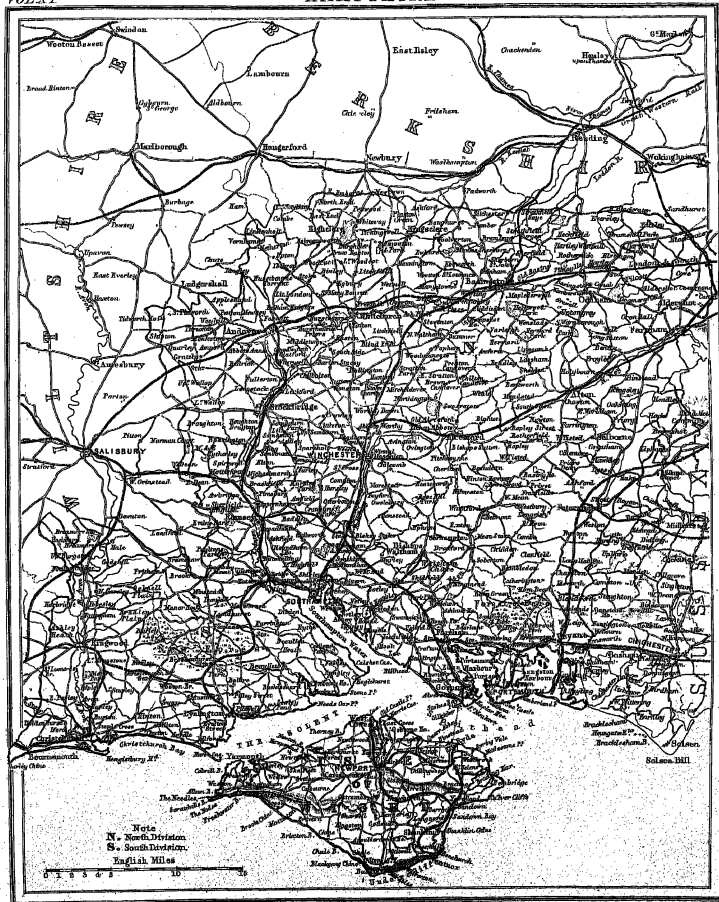
**Rivers and Canals.**—The principal rivers are the Anton, the Boldre, the Exe, the Test with its tributary the Avon, the Itchen, and the Hamble. The Avon in the south-west of the county has its source in Wiltshire, and passing Fordingbridge and Ringwood empties itself into Christ Church Bay, where it is joined by the Stour, which issuing in Dorset crosses the south-west corner of Hampshire. The Boldre takes its rise in the New Forest, and after collecting the water of several brooks falls into Lymington creek. The Exe runs the eastern extremity of the New Forest falls into the Solent at Bournemouth. The Test rises from Overton, and after its junction with the Anton at Fullerton passes Stockbridge and Romsey, and forms the head of Southampton Water. The Itchen rises near Alresford, and flowing by Kingsworthy, Winchester, and Twyford falls into the Southampton Water to the north of Southampton. The Hamble rises near Bishop's Waltham, and after a course of about 10 miles falls into the South-

ampton Water. The Wey, the Embourne, the Loddon, and the Blackwater have their rise in the north part of the county, but soon pass into Berkshire.

There is one canal, Basingstoke, begun in 1778 and completed in 1794 at a cost of £100,000. It is 37 miles in length and terminates in the river Wey, in Surrey, near its junction with the Thames. Andover canal, begun in 1789, was filled up in 1858 and converted into a rail way, forming a junction with the London and Exeter at Andover.

**Geology and Soil.**—With the exception of the northern and north-eastern corner not occupied by the basin of the Thames, another portion about 8 miles in length extending along the eastern side, and the New Forest in the south-west, with the eastern side, and the New Forest in the south-west, is occupied by the Chalk formation which runs from Sussex and Surrey north-east into Wilts and Berks. This middle district has a length from north to south of about 22 miles and a breadth from east to west of between 20 and 30 miles. Its soil is in some places of considerable depth, and produces good crops of all kinds, but a great part of it is so thin as to be unfitted for the plough, and is used as sheep pasture. The basin of the Thames to the north of this district is principally strong brown and grey loam, with a considerable number of marlches. The eastern portion forming the Vale of Petersfield, and comprising only about 50,000 acres, is made on the Wolds from a red gravelly sand, the loam, previously called "malny" land, lying on a soft and rock. The southern portion, which includes the ancient Forest of Bane, Waltham Chase, and the New Forest, consists principally of light sandy and gravelly loams intermixed with clay and brick earth, resting chiefly on argillaceous and calcareous marl.

**Agriculture.**—According to the Agricultural Statistics for 1879, the total area of arable land was 706,927 imperial acres, of which 217,958 was under corn crops, 155,862 under green crops, 119,513 under rotation grasses, 184,141 permanent pasture, and 22,967 fallow. The acreage under woods was 87,529. The principal grain crop is wheat, for which Hampshire enjoys a great celebrity. Its acreage has been gradually increasing, and in 1879 was 100,090. The acreage of barley and oats was 66,323, and 61,967 respectively. Barley is usually sown after turnips, and is more grown in the uplands than in the lower levels. Hens and geese are only grown to a small extent, the acreage in 1879 being respectively 4683 and 10,002. On account of the number of sheep pastured on the uplands a large amount of turnips is grown, their acreage in 1879 being 31,472. Potatoes are not cultivated, and it is necessary for home supplies, and had an acreage of only 5039. Rotation grasses are grown chiefly in the uplands, and their acreage is greater than in any other of the southern counties of England. Sainfoin is the green most largely grown, as it is best adapted for soil with a calcareous subsoil. In the lower levels no sainfoin is raised, and nearly any clover is grown, the hay being supplied from the rich water meadows, which are managed with great skill and attention, and give the best money return of any lands in the county. Where a rapid stream of water can be passed over them during the winter it seldom becomes frozen, and the grasses grow during the cold weather so as to be fit for pasture before any traces of vegetation appear in the surrounding fields. Here are extensively grown in the eastern part of the county bordering on Surrey. Their acreage in 1879 was 8084. Faiming is generally conducted on the best modern principles, but owing to the varieties of soil there is perhaps no county in England in which the rotation observed is more diversified. The processes and methods more varied. Most of the farms are large, and there is a considerable number of model farms. The waste land has been mostly brought under tillage, but a very large acreage of the ancient forests is still occupied by wood. New Forest has 60,000 acres under wood, in addition to which there are in the east Woodmill Forest (6646) and Alice Holt (2744), in the south east the Forest of Bere (11,000) and Waltham Chase (2000), and in the Isle of Wight Pankhurst Forest (8000). The New Forest was acquired by William the Conqueror in 1070 after the battle of Hastings, and the greater part of it belongs to the crown. The trees of the forest are principally beech and oak. The oak, many of which are some hundred years old, do not grow to great height, but shoot strong crooked branches which give them a very picturesque appearance. Formerly they were chiefly used for the ships of the royal navy. Heads of small horses similar to those raised in the Forest, and the Hebrides, are still raised in the Forest. It also contains abundance of deer,











Museum, but it still contains a valuable collection of pictures, including a number of fine specimens of the old masters, and a large collection of portraits of persons famous in English history.

**HAMSTER** (*Cricetus*), a genus of rodent mammals belonging to the *Mus* or mice family, and characterized by the possession of large cheek pouches. The common hamster (*Cricetus vulgaris*) is somewhat larger and stouter than the Norway rat, but with a much shorter tail. Its fur, which varies somewhat in colour, is generally of a reddish-brown above and black beneath, with several white spots on the sides. It is found throughout the dry regions of central Europe and Asia, from the Rhine eastward to the river Obi and southward to Persia and the Caucasus. It is a burrowing animal, its subterranean dwelling consisting of several vaults, most of which are used as storehouses for the grain and seeds which the hamster lays up in autumn for consumption during winter and spring. In collecting this store it makes use of its cheek pouches, which are said to be large enough to contain a quartet of an English pint, while the hoard of a single individual will sometimes contain about two bushels of grain. It is thus specially obnoxious to the farmer, who loses no opportunity of destroying the creature and of ransacking its stores. Like many other rodents, the hamster is exceedingly prolific, the female producing several broods in the year, each consisting of over a dozen young, and these when not more than three weeks old are tuned out of the parental burrow to form underground homes for themselves. The burrow of the young hamster is only about a foot in depth, while that of the adult descends 4 or 5 feet beneath the surface. On the approach of winter the hamster retires to its subterranean abode, the various entrances to which it carefully closes, and there it remains until the advent of milder conditions, feeding for a while on its well-garnished store, but becoming torpid during the coldest period of winter. Although feeding chiefly on roots, fruit, and grain, it is also to some extent carnivorous, attacking and feeding upon small quadrupeds, lizards, and birds. It is exceedingly fierce and pugnacious, the males especially fighting with each other for possession of the females. The numbers of these destructive vermin are kept in check by their many natural enemies, the foxes, dogs, cats, and polecats, which feed upon them. The skin of the hamster is of some value, and its flesh is used as food. Its burrows are sought after in the countries where it abounds, both for capturing the animal and for riding its store.

**HANAU**, a town of Prussia, capital of a circle in the government district of Cassel, province of Hesse-Nassau, is situated at the confluence of the rivers Kinzig and Main, 12 miles E of Frankfurt. It consists of what are called an old and a new town. The streets of the former are narrow and irregular, but the latter, founded at the end of the 16th century by refugee Walloons and Netherlanders, is built in the form of a pentagon with broad streets crossing at right angles, and possesses several fine squares, among which may be mentioned the market-place, adorned with handsome fountains at the four corners. The town is the seat of a circle court, a head tax-office, a chamber of commerce, and a branch of the imperial bank. Among the principal buildings are the ancient castle, formerly the residence of the counts of Hanau, the church of St John, dating from the 17th century, with a rather imposing tower, the old church of St Mary, formerly a collegiate church, and containing the tomb of the counts of Hanau, the church of the new town, built in the beginning of the 17th century, whose ground plan is in the form of two circles intersecting each other, the beautiful Gothic church, the synagogue, the theatre, the barracks, the arsenal, the orphanage, and the infirmary. Its educational establishments include a

gymnasium, a school of design, a seal school, and a higher girls' school. There is a Watersverein society of natural history and an historical society, both of which possess considerable libraries and collections connected with their respective branches of knowledge. Hanau is the birthplace of the brothers Grimm, and the house in which they were born is now adorned with a medallion. In the neighbourhood of the town are the electoral palace, with an extensive park and large orangeries, and the watering-place of Wilhelmsbad. Hanau is the principal commercial and manufacturing town in the province, and stands next to Cassel in point of population. Its staples are ornaments of various kinds, cigars, leather, paper, playing cards, silver and platinum wares, chocolate, soap, woollen cloth, hats, silk, gloves, stockings, ropes, and matches. It has also three large foundries and a number of breweries, and in the neighbourhood there are extensive powder-mills. It carries on a large trade in wood, wine, and corn, in addition to its articles of manufacture. The population of the town in 1875 was 22,369.

From the number of mms, coins, and other antiquities found near Hanau it would appear that it owes its origin to a Roman settlement. It was raised to the rank of a town in 1369, and in 1528 it was fortified by Count Philip, who rebuilt the castle. At the end of the 16th century its prosperity received considerable impulse from the recovery of the Walloons and Netherlanders. During the Thirty Years' War it was in 1681 taken by the Swedes, and in 1688 it was besieged by the imperial troops, but was relieved on the 18th June by Landgrave William V. of Cassel, on account of which the day is still commemorated by the inhabitants. Napoleon on his retreat from Leipzig defeated the Germans under Marshal Wittke at Hanau, October 30, 1813, and on the following day the allies recaptured the town, when it was entered by the French. In 1499 Hanau became the capital of a province of the empire, which on the death of Count Reinhard II was in 1461 partitioned between the Hanau-Münzenberg and Hanau-Lichtenberg lines, but was reunited in 1604 when the latter line became extinct. Hanau has received princely rank in 1696, but, as it also became extinct, Hanau-Münzenberg in 1736 was joined to Hesse-Cassel and Hanau-Lichtenberg to Hesse-Darmstadt. In 1785 the whole province was united to Hesse-Cassel, and in 1803 it became an independent principality. In 1813 it again came into the possession of Hesse-Cassel, and in 1866 it was joined to Prussia.

**HANCOCK, JOHN (1737-1793)**, American revolutionary statesman, was born at Quincy, Massachusetts, January 12, 1737. Having taken his degree at Harvard university in 1754, he began a mercantile career, and on the death of an uncle in 1764 succeeded to a large fortune and a prosperous business. In 1768, two years after his election to the Massachusetts house of representatives by the city of Boston, his sloop "Liberty" was seized for contravention of the commercial laws, and in the riot which followed the royal customs commissioners barely escaped with their lives. After the "massacre" of Boston in 1770, Hancock inveighed with such spirit and bitterness against the troops and their officers, demanding their removal from the town, that he became obnoxious to the Government, and five years afterwards the attempt to seize his person led to the first revolutionary battle at Concord, Massachusetts. In 1774 Hancock was president of the provincial congress, and from 1775 to 1777 of the general congress at Philadelphia, where he was the first to sign the declaration of independence. Returning to Massachusetts he assisted in framing its constitution, and in 1780 was chosen first governor. He was annually elected to this dignity till 1785, and again from 1787 to 1793, sitting as an ordinary member of the legislature in the interval. He received the degree of LL.D. from Harvard university in 1792. He died at Quincy, 8th October 1793.

**HANDEL, GEORGE FRIEDRICH (1685-1759)**, one of the greatest names in the history of music generally, was also greatly prominent in that of English music. His influence on the artistic development of England and his popularity, using that word in the most comprehensive sense, are

perhaps unequalled. He has entered into the private and the political life as well as into the art life of Englishmen, without him they cannot bury their dead or elect their legislators, and never has a composer been more essentially national than the German Handel has become in England. It may on the other hand be said that but for his sojourn in that country Handel would never have been what he was. It was under the influence of English poetry, and of English national and religious life, that his artistic conception broadened and gained the dignity and grandeur which we see in his oratorios, and which was wanting, and, seeing the style of art, could not but be wanting, in his Italian operas. The day of Handel's arrival in London, late in the autumn of 1710, was indeed an eventful day in the life of Handel as well as in the annals of English music, and the facts of his biography preceding that date may be summed up with comparative brevity. George Frederick Handel (in German the name is always Handel) was born at Halle in Saxony on February 23, 1685, the same year which gave birth to his great fellow composer Johann Sebastian Bach.<sup>1</sup> He was the son of George Handel, who according to the custom of the time combined the occupations of barber and surgeon, and subsequently rose to be valet-de-chambre to the elector of Saxony. His second wife, Dorothea Taubert, was the daughter of a clergyman, and to her the great composer remained attached with all the ties of filial affection. His father was sixty-three years old when Handel was born, and the musical talent shown by the youth at a very early age found little encouragement from the stern old gentleman, who looked upon art with contempt, and destined his son for the law. Many are the anecdotes relating to the surreptitious way in which the youth practised the forbidden art on a little spinet smuggled into his attic by the aid of a good-natured aunt, and fortunately of too feeble tone to be audible in the lower part of the house. At the age of eight the boy accompanied his father on a visit to Saxony-Weissenfels, and it was there that the proficiency acquired in the manner above described was tuned to excellent account, for, having made acquaintance with the court musicians, and being allowed to practise on the organ, he was on one occasion overheard by the duke himself, who immediately recognizing his talent spoke seriously to the father on his behalf. To such a remonstrance coming from such a quarter the valet-de-chambre had of course to submit, and henceforth Handel was allowed to practise his art, and after his return to Halle even received musical instruction from Zachau, one of the best organists of the town. It was under his somewhat mechanical but thorough tuition that Handel acquired his knowledge of counterpoint, he also soon became an excellent performer on the organ. His first attempts at composition date from an equally early period, and in his twelfth year he made his debut as a virtuoso at the court of Berlin with such success that the elector of Brandenburg, afterwards King Frederick I. of Prussia, offered to send him to Italy, a proposal declined by Handel's father for unknown reasons. In 1697 the latter died, and the young artist was henceforth thrown on his own resources. For some years he remained in Halle, where in 1702 he obtained a position as organist, but in the following year we find him at Hamburg, at that time one of the musical centres of Germany. There the only German opera worth the name had been founded by Reinhold Keiser, the author of innumerable operas and operettas, and was flourishing at the time under his direction. Handel entered the orchestra, and soon rose from his place amongst the second violins to the conductor's seat at the clavicembalo, which he occupied during Keiser's

<sup>1</sup> The date, 28d February 1684, given on his tombstone in Westminster Abbey is incorrect.

absence, necessitated by debt. It was at Hamburg that he became acquainted with Mattheson, a fertile composer and writer on musical subjects, whose *Teilmanners Kapellmeister* (1739) and *Zhi-enjorte* (1740) are valuable sources for the history of music. The friendship of the two young men was not without some curious incidents. On one occasion they set out together on a journey to Lubeck, where the place of organist at one of the churches was vacant. Arrived at Lubeck, they discovered that one of the conditions for obtaining the place was the hand of the elderly daughter of the former organist, the celebrated Duxthode, who sent the two candidates for a month returned to Hamburg. Another adventure might have had still more serious consequences. At a performance of Mattheson's opera *Cleopatra* at Hamburg, Handel refused to give up the conductor's seat to the composer, who was also a singer, and was occupied on the stage during the early part of his work. The dispute led to an improvised duel out side the theatre, and but for a large button on Handel's coat which intercepted his adversary's sword, there would have been no *Messiah* or *In aid vs Egypt*. In spite of all this the young men remained friends, and Mattheson's writings are full of the most valuable facts for Handel's biography. He relates in his *Zhi-enjorte* amongst other things that his friend at that time used to compose "innumerable cantatas" of no great merit, but of these no trace now remains, unless we assume that a "Passion" according to St John (German words by Postel), the MS of which is at the Royal Library, Berlin, is amongst the works alluded to. It was composed in 1704. The year after this witnessed Handel's first dramatic attempt—a German opera, *Almira*, performed at Hamburg on January 8, 1705, with great success, and followed a few weeks later by another work of the same class, *Nero* by name. In 1706 he left Hamburg for Italy, at that time still the great school of music, to which indeed Handel himself owed his skill and experience in writing for the voice. He remained in Italy for three years, living at various times in Florence, Rome, Naples, and Venice. He is said to have made the acquaintance of Lotti, of Alessandro Scarlatti, and of the latter's son Domenico, the father of modern pianoforte playing. His compositions during his Italian period were two operas, two oratorios, *Resurrezione* and *Il Trionfo del Tempo e del Disinganno*, afterwards developed into the English oratorio *The Triumph of Time and Truth*, and numerous other choral works. It was during these years that the composer's earlier or Italian style reached its full maturity, and that his name became widely known in the musical world. In the chief cities of Italy—"il Sassone," as Handel, like his countryman Händel twenty years later, was nicknamed, was received with every mark of favour and esteem. But his own country also began to acknowledge his merits. At Venice in 1709 Handel received the offer of the post of capellmeister to the elector of Hanover, transmitted to him by his patron and staunch friend of later years Baron Kriemhammer. The composer at the time contemplated a visit to England, and he accepted the offer only on condition of leave of absence being granted to him for that purpose. To England accordingly Handel journeyed after a short stay at Hanover, arriving in London towards the close of 1710. Curiously enough he came as a composer of Italian opera, and in that capacity he secured his first success at the Haymarket with the opera *Rinaldo*, composed, it is said in a fortnight, and first performed on February 24, 1711. The beautiful and still universally popular air "Lascia ch'io pianga" is from this opera. A similar air in the form of a *sarabande* occurs in *Almira*. After the close of the season in June of the same year Handel seems to have returned to Germany for a short time, but the temptation of English fame or English gold

proved too powerful, and in January 1712 we find him back in London, evidently little inclined to return to Hanover in spite of his duties at the court there. Two Italian operas, the celebrated Utrecht *Te Deum* written by command of Queen Anne, and other works belong to this period. It was in such circumstances somewhat awkward for the composer when his desecrated master came to London as George I of England. Neither was the king slow in resenting the wrongs of the elector. For a considerable time Handel was not allowed to appear at court, and it was only through the intercession of his patron Baron Kielmsiegel that his pardon was at last obtained. Commissioned by the latter, Handel wrote his celebrated *Water Music*, which was performed at a great fête on the Thames, and so pleased the king that he at once recovered the composer to his good graces. A salary of £200 a year granted to Handel was the immediate result of this happy consummation. In 1716 he followed the king to Germany, where he wrote a second German "Passion," the words this time being supplied by Brockes, a well known poet of the day. After his return to England he entered the service of the duke of Chandos as conductor of his private concerts. In this capacity he resided for three years at Cannons, the duke's splendid seat near Edgeware, and produced the two *Te Deums* and the twelve Anthems surmamed *Chandos*. The English pastoral *Acis and Galatea* (not to be mistaken for the Italian cantata of that name written at Naples, with which it has nothing in common), and his first oratorio to English words *Ethra*, were written during his stay at Cannons. It was not till 1720 that he appeared again in a public capacity, viz. in that of impresario of an Italian opera at the Haymarket Theatre, which he managed for the so called Royal Academy of Music. Senesino, a celebrated singer, to engage whom the composer specially journeyed to Dresden, was the mainstay of the enterprise, which opened with a highly successful performance of Handel's opera *Radamisto*. *Murio Scervola*, written in conjunction with Buononcini and Ariosti, *Temeliana*, *Rodindano*, and other operas composed for the same theatre, are now forgotten, only detached songs being heard at concerts. To this time also belongs the celebrated rivalry of Handel and Buononcini, a gifted Italian composer, who by his oblique was declared to be infinitely superior to the German master. The controversy raised a storm in the aristocratic teapots, and has been perpetuated in the lines generally but erroneously attributed to Swift, and in reality written by John Byron—

Some say, compared to Buononcini,  
That Myester Handel's but a mummy,  
Others even that he to Handel  
Is scarcely fit to hold a candle.  
Stavins all this difference should be  
Twelve Twelve duns and Twelve duns.

Although the contempt for music, worthy of Chesterfield himself, shown in those lines may seem absurd, they yet contain a grain of truth. Handel differed from his rival only in degree not in essence. In other words, he was an infinitely greater composer than Buononcini, but had he continued to write Italian opera there is no reason to conclude from his existing works of that class that he would have reformed or in any essential point modified the existing *genre*. The contest was therefore essentially of a personal nature, and in these circumstances it is hardly necessary to add that Handel remained victorious. Buononcini for a reason not sufficiently explained left London, and Handel was left without a rival. But an spite of this his connexion with Italian opera was not to be a source of pleasure or of wealth to the great composer. For twenty years the indomitable master was engaged in various operatic ventures, in spite of a rival company under the great singer Farinelli, started

by his enemies,—in spite also of his bankruptcy in 1737, and an attack of paralysis caused by anxiety and overwork. Of the numerous operas produced by him during this period it would be needless to speak in detail. Only the name of the final work of the long series, *Deidamia*, produced in 1741, may be mentioned here. That Handel's non success was not caused by the inferiority of his works to those of other composers is sufficiently proved by the fact that the rival company also had to be dissolved for want of support. But Handel was in more than one way disqualified for the post of operatic manager, dependent in those days even more than in ours on the patronage of the great. To submit to the whims and the pride of the aristocracy was not in the nature of the upright German, who even at this time courts of the princess of Wales would use language not often heard at courts when the talking of the ladies during the performance irritated him. And, what was perhaps still more fatal, he opposed with equal firmness the capricious and inartistic tendencies of those absolute rulers of the Italian stage—the singers. The story is told that he took hold of an obstinate *prima donna* and held her at arm's length out of window, threatening to drop her into the street below unless she would sing a particular passage in the proper way. Such arguments were irresistible at the time, but their final results were equally obvious, in spite of Handel's essentially kindly nature and the ready assistance he gave to those who really wished to learn. No wonder therefore that his quarrels with virtuosi were numerous, and that Senesino deserted him at a critical moment for the enemy's camp.

It is a question whether Handel's change from opera to oratorio has been altogether in the interest of musical art. The opera lost in him a great power, but it may well be doubted whether dramatic music such as it was in those days would have been a proper mould for his genius. Neither is it certain that that genius was, strictly speaking, of a dramatic cast. There are no doubt in his oratorios—for in these alone Handel's power is displayed in its maturity—examples of great dramatic force of expression, but Handel's genius was in want of greater expansion than the economy of the drama will allow of. It was no doubt for this reason that from an inner necessity he created for himself the form of the oratorio, which in spite of the dialogue in which the plot is developed is in all essentials the musical equivalent of the epic. This breadth and depth of the epic is recognised in those marvellous choral pieces expressive either of pictorial detail (as the gnosts and the darkness tangible and impenetrable in *In ad in Egypt*) or of the combined religious feeling of an entire nation. By the side of these even the finest solo pieces of Handel's scores appear comparatively insignificant, and we cannot sufficiently wonder at the obusiveness of the public which demanded the insertion of miscellaneous operatic arias as a relief from the incessant choruses in *In ad in Egypt* at the second performance of that great work in 1740. Handel is less the exponent of individual passion than the interpreter of the sufferings and aspirations of a nation, or in a wider sense of mankind. Take, for instance, the celebrated *Dean March in Saul*. It is full of intense grief, in spite of the key of C major, which ought once for all to dispel the prejudice that sorrow always speaks in minor keys. Ever Chopin himself has not been able to give utterance to the feeling in more impressive strains. And yet the measure and decisive rhythm, and the simple diatonic harmonies plainly indicate that here a mighty nation deplores the death of a hero. It is for the same reason that Handel's stay in England was of such great influence on his artistic career. Generally speaking, there is little connexion between politics and art. But it may be said without exaggeration that only amongst a free people, and a people having a national

life such as England alone had in the last century, such national epics as *Judas Macabeus* and *Israel in Egypt* could have been composed. In the same sense the *Messiah* became the embodiment of the dogmatical feeling pervading the English people, and Handel, by leaving Italian opera for the oratorio, was changed from the entertainer of a caste to the artist of the people in the highest and widest sense. The *Messiah* is indeed the musical equivalent of Milton's *Paradise Lost*. This leads us to another and equally important aspect of the same subject—the important influence of English poetry on Handel's works. Not only are some of the greatest names of English literature—Milton (*Allegro and Penseroso*), Dryden (*Alexander's Feast*), Pope (*St Cecilia's*)—immediately connected with Handel's compositions. But the spirit of these poets, and especially of Milton, pervades his oratorios even when he has to deal with the atrocious doggerel of Metell or Humphreys. In addition to this Handel received many a valuable suggestion from the works of Purcell and other early English musicians with which he was well acquainted. No wonder therefore that Englishmen claim Handel as one of themselves, and have granted him honours both during his lifetime and after his death such as have fallen to the share of few artists. But in spite of all this it is impossible to deny that the chances of a national development of English music were, if not absolutely crushed, at least delayed for centuries by Handel. Under Elizabeth and James England had a school of music which, after the storms of the civil war, was once more revived by such masters as Feltham Humphrey and his great pupil Purcell. The latter, although cut off in his youth, had left sufficient seed for a truly national growth of English music. But Handel soon concentrated the interest of connoisseurs and people on his own work, and native talent had to abandon the larger sphere of the metropolis for the comparative seclusion of the cathedral. The following is a chronological list of Handel's English oratorios taken from the catalogue of his works appended to Mr J. Marshall's article in *Grove's Dictionary of Music and Musicians*, vol. i p. 657: *Ethra* (1720), *Deborah* (1733), *Alcina* (1733), *Saul* (1738), *In and in Egypt* (1738), *Messiah* (1741), *Samson* (1741), *Joseph* (1743), *Hercules* (1744), *Belshazzar* (1744), *Oraculum* (1746), *Judas Macabeus* (1746), *Alexander Balas* (1747), *Joshua* (1747), *Solomon* (1748), *Servant* (1748), *Theodos* (1749), *Jephtha* (1751), *The triumph of Time and Truth* (1757). The sequence of these dates will show that the transition from Italian opera to sacred music was very gradual, and caused by circumstances rather than by premeditated choice. It would lead us too far to enter here into the genesis of each of these works, but a few remarks must be added with regard to Handel's *summum opus* the *Messiah*. It was written in twenty four days and first performed April 18, 1743, at Dublin, where Handel was staying on a visit to the duke of Devonshire, lord-lieutenant of Ireland. Its first performance in London took place on March 23d of the following year. Its introduction into Handel's native country was due to Philip Emanuel Bach, the son of the great Bach, who conducted it at Hamburg. At Berlin it was for the first time given in April 1766, under the leadership of Adam Hiller, who also introduced it a few months later at Leipzig against the advice of all the musicians of Saxony. At the Berlin performance Signora Carrara, the celebrated singer, meted in the first part an aria by Traetta, in which, according to a contemporary account, "she took much trouble to please the public, and the bravura passages of which she delivered with great success." Two years before this had taken place the great Handel commemoration at Westminster Abbey, when on the third day of the festival, May 29, 1784, the *Messiah* was splendidly performed by an orchestra and chorus of 525

performers. In the appreciation of Handel England thus was far in advance of Germany. The remainder of Handel's life may be told in few words. Owing to the machinations of his enemies he for a second time became bankrupt in 1745, but nothing, not even his blindness during the last six years of his life, could daunt his energy. He worked till the last, and attended a performance of his *Messiah* a week before his death, which took place on April 14, 1759. He was buried in Westminster Abbey. His monument is by Rubini, the same sculptor who modelled the statue erected during Handel's lifetime in Vauxhall Gardens.

Handel was a man of character and high intelligence, and his interest was not, like that of too many musicians, confined to his own art exclusively. He liked the society of politicians and literary men, and he was also a collector of pictures and articles of vertu. His power of work was enormous, and the list of his works would fill many pages. They belong to all branches of music, from the simple air to the opera and oratorio. His most important works of the two last-named classes have already been mentioned. But his instrumental compositions, especially his concerti for the organ and his *suites de pieces* for the harpichord, ought not to be forgotten. Amongst the contrapuntists of his time Handel had but one equal—Bach. But he also was a master of the orchestra, and, what is more, possessed the rare gift of genuine melody, unfortunately too often impeded by the innumerable embellishments of his arias. The extraordinary rapidity with which he worked has been already referred to. It is true that when his own ideas failed him he helped himself to those of others without the slightest compunction. The system of wholesale plagiarism carried on by him is perhaps unprecedented in the history of music. He pilfered not only single melodies, but frequently entire movements from the works of other masters, with few or no alterations and without a word of acknowledgment.

A splendid collection of Handel's MSS. six volumes in all, is in the possession of her Majesty at Buckingham Palace. The Fitz William Museum at Cambridge also possesses seven volumes, mostly articles and notes for printed works, in the composer's hand writing. The German and English Handel Societies (the latter founded in 1848 and dissolved in 1848) have issued critical editions of his more important works. These biographies of Handel deserve mention.—An Englishman, Mainwaring, *Memoirs of the Life of the late G. F. Handel* (1790), a Frenchman, M. Victor Schœlcher, and a German, Hans Chrysander. (F. R.)

**HAND TOOLS.** Within the limits of the present article it would be impossible to describe even the majority of the instruments which may come under this designation, including as it does (in its popular if not in its technical sense) the whole of the appliances used by the handicraftsman in the treatment, by means of his muscular energy, of the natural substances used in the arts and manufactures, —whether in the preliminary operations of setting-out and measuring his materials, in reducing his work to the required form by cutting tools or otherwise, in gauging it and testing its accuracy, or in duly securing it whilst being thus treated. Omitting therefore the large but by no means unimportant class of measuring and gauging instruments, straight edges, templates, &c. we will confine our attention to examples of those in the use of which an actual expenditure of force is necessary. According to the structure and other properties of the materials to be treated by them, these act almost without exception either by impact, by pressure, or by cutting, the last being effected sometimes with impact and sometimes with pressure. The principal tools acting purely by impact are noticed under HAMMER (q. v.) Those which depend solely on pressure are for the most part of an auxiliary character only, and their consideration will be deferred till we have glanced at a few of the much more numerous and more important class known as cutting or edge tools.

It should be observed that the term "cutting" is applied to processes which have but little in common, the great differences of structure in the materials operated upon demanding equally great differences in the modes of effecting the desired end, which is in almost all cases the forcible separation of their particles in some regular and definite manner. If we regard, for example, the action of a sharp knife upon a piece of chalk as one of true cutting,—i.e., the separation of its particles by the forcible insertion of a wedge-like blade of superior hardness to itself,—we shall find that in by far the larger proportion of instances this simple action is rendered complicated, either through the substance under treatment being insufficiently compact to afford in itself the necessary resistance, or through its want of homogeneity causing a tendency in it to part more readily in some directions than in others. Thus all kinds of wood and the generality of both vegetable and animal substances, being cellular or fibrous in their structure, offer so much less resistance in a direction parallel to their fibres than in one transverse to them that in the former case many of them may be parted by fissure without any true cutting at all. So also with crystalline materials—as is beautifully exemplified by the diamond, which lends itself to cleavage in certain planes in the most perfect manner, though the steel chisel which is employed for the process is very much inferior in hardness to itself. Metals also are frequently not homogeneous; indeed they are sometimes said to be fibrous in structure, but it is only to a very limited extent, if at all, that they are so, and their great natural tenacity even then prevents the separation of their particles except by a true cutting process. Lastly, some stones and minerals, such as sandstones, are said to be cut, though they are formed of material considerably harder than the tools which are used upon them, the fact being that their hard particles are not cut at all, but are merely separated from one another when the cementing material which holds them together is compelled to give way.

1. *Cutting or Edge Tools*.—These, the term "cutting" being thus qualified, are mainly of two classes—(i.) cutting tools used with impact, and (ii.) cutting tools used mainly with pressure. These again may be subdivided into tools used (1) for wood and soft materials, (2) for metal, and (3) for stone and hard substances.

1. *Wood-tools cutting by impact* comprise all the varieties of axes and adzes, such as the ordinary English pattern of carpenter's



FIG. 1.—Axes.

axe (a, fig. 1), the woodman's falling axe (b), the wedge axe (c) (which was one of the first American improvements in edge tools introduced into Europe), and the shipwright's adze (d), which last

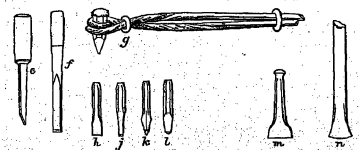


FIG. 2.—Chisels.

is a particularly rapid and efficient tool in skilful hands. All these when used in the direction of the grain of the wood act by cleaving rather than by cutting, except when the thickness of the chip

removed is so small that its transverse strength is inferior to the lateral tenacity of the fibres. So also do adzes and gouges when driven by blows from a hammer or mallet. The ordinary mortise chisel (e, fig. 2) and the socket chisel (f) are specially adapted for being used in this way.

2. In the case of *wood* tools their hardness in general almost precludes the possibility of employing upon them any tools corresponding to the above. If we except a few special tools such as plumbers' knives, &c., chisels will be found to be almost the only tools of this class. A blacksmith's chisel (g) held in a hazel withie, and used for hot iron, and some common forms of chisel for chipping it cold are shown in fig. 2, these being known as a chipping chisel (h), a cross-cut (j), a diamond point (k), and a round nose (l).

3. Tools of this class for *stone* also consist chiefly of chisels, the mason's chisel (m) varying greatly in width of edge according to the variety of stone and the depth of the cut to be taken. Frequently they are brought quite to a point like the mason's pick, when they cease to be cutting tools from our point of view. The jumper (n), employed for rock drilling, with which the hole is produced by means of successive cuts radiating in all directions from its centre, which are delivered with the impact due either to its own weight or to the blows of a hammer on its outer end, is also a form of chisel.

4. *Edge tools operating by pressure*.—Of this class the ordinary chisel-knife is perhaps the best known example. A sharp knife serves well for showing the different kinds of treatment by cutting or by fissure to which any particular wood or other moderately soft material is capable of submitting itself. The "thickness" of the cutting edge, or in other words, the angle which the tapering planes which include it form with one another, the degree of smoothness or roughness of edge which best effects the clean division or separation of the fibres, and the possibility or otherwise of producing a smooth surface by "scraping," can all to a great extent be judged of with the aid of a knife. And the subject is by no means an unimportant one. Consideration of the action which takes place at the edge of a cutting-tool, and the study of which this action produces on particular portions of it are frequently of service in enabling us successfully to meet the special cases which arise in practice, and may sometimes guide us towards remedying the defective action of the hand-tool in use for ordinary work. America has long taken the lead in originating thoughtful improvements of this kind, and the result is apparent in the rapid manner in which the use of edge tools and appliances of American patterns is now everywhere extending.

1. In fig. 3 are shown a few of the ordinary English *wood-tools*. They include the firmer chisel (a) used by carpenters, and a carver's chisel (b) and gouge (c). A wood-engraver's scooper (d) and knife (e) are examples of special tools, being intended only for cutting hard wood in a direction transverse to the grain, cross-cut blocks of box-wood being alone used for the finer kinds of wood-engraving. The spoke-screw (f) affords a good example of what has just been said as to the result obtainable by a well-directed effort towards the improvement of an old established hand tool. In the form figured (g), which is the ordinary one in use in England, the blade or "iron" is rather complicated in shape and is not very easy to sharpen;

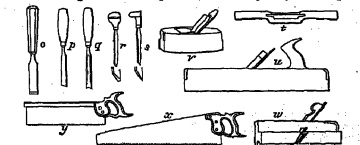


FIG. 3.—Chisels, planes, and saws.

each successive sharpening moreover impairs the efficiency of the tool by widening the "mouth," the unequal wear of the wooden sole, which very speedily takes place, having also a share in this. Thus three essential conditions of a good cutting-tool, viz., constant maintenance of its proper action, durability of the parts exposed to wear, and facility in sharpening are all unfulfilled. On the other hand these manufactured in America hold them admirably: iron is substituted for wood as the material for the sole and handle, and the blade, which is merely a piece of flat steel, is firmly held in its place by a set screw, half a turn of which at once releases it.

Planes are so to be met with in great variety, the most useful for ordinary carpentry being the jack plane (w), the trying plane, and the smoothing plane (v). Of these the first is used for taking off the rough, or for reducing the thickness of a board; the second, which resembles it, except in being of much greater length, for correcting inequalities of the surface; and the third, as its name implies, for the final smoothing. Planing being



chiefly performed in the direction of the grain of the wood, a smooth surface can only be obtained when its fibres are cut instead of being allowed to separate from one another by cleavage, the tendency to which, in soft woods more especially, must therefore be carefully resisted. With this object the planes above mentioned, and many others also, are provided with what is called a "double iron," an inverted blade or "iron" being securely attached to the upper side of the cutting iron, with its edge at a short distance only from the cutting edge of the blade, so that it is constantly breaking transversely, and so separating the fibres of which it is composed from tearing up those in advance of the cut. The width of the "mouth" or space between the cutting edge and the portion of the plane stock which is held up by the double iron, is constantly in planes intended for smoothing, so as to increase to the utmost their breaking action by supporting the as yet undisturbed fibres in advance of the cutting edge. When the mouth is sometimes prevented by lifting in a small amount, so that the stock enters only of iron or steel. Planes of great length, which are known as jointers, are used for some purposes, common planes of this kind being sometimes over 5 feet long.

The use of moulding planes (see) is indicated by their name. Each is adapted only for producing one particular pattern of moulding. Hollows and rounds resemble them, but have the cross section of their soles simply concave and convex respectively. For planing work which is hollowed or rounded in the direction of its length, compass planes are employed, each of which, as ordinarily made, cannot deviate much from its own particular curve. American ingenuity has here again stepped in, and has got over this objection by making the sole of a spring plate of steel, which can be adjusted to any curve either convex or concave within very wide limits, so that this one tool takes the place of an entire set of ordinary compass planes. Planes are somewhat complicated planes which are used for forming grooves of various widths, depths, and distances from the edge of the work.

The "pitch" of a plane is the angle at which the blade or iron is inclined to the sole, and its inclination is a guide in kind to the soft wood planes. Some of the forms, indeed, have that name so nearly exact that their action is what would ordinarily be described as scraping and not cutting, a difference which appears to be undetectable, and is due to the structure of the materials which can be so treated, and not, as has been suggested, to any peculiarity in the form of the cutting edge. The action of a iron in shaving smooths the surface, and this is the best method of obtaining bright surfaces. Under the microscope to be beautifully clearly sliced, though the blade is applied at a great angle to the plane of the cut.

The following may be taken as good examples of saws—the hand saw (C), the rip saw and half rip (E), which differ from it only in size and size of tooth, and the dovetail saw and tenon saw (F), of which the last three all have sufficient stiffness of blade to resist the force exerted in using them, and the last two are thin and unable to do this without the support of the iron or brass "back," which of course limits the depth to which a cut can be made with them. Pit saws and cross cut saws are the largest representatives of saws used by hand, being employed for heavy work, such as cutting timber in the log, and worked generally by two men. Frame saws of all sizes, from those of 8 feet or 10 feet used by pit sawyers down to the pit saws of but a few inches in length and scarcely thicker than the back of the hand, and commonly used for cutting out curves, must also here be mentioned among hand-saws, though technically they are not included in the term.

In fig. 4 we see some diagrams of saw teeth. A is the usual form for all the smaller kinds that are used, a single broad, which is used however as to size and also as to the angle at which the "cross square" file used in hinging the teeth to an edge is applied, while B is the gullet tooth, for use in sawing with the grain of the wood, and C the ordinary cross cut tooth, for transverse cuts. It is evident that a saw tooth which is well adapted for producing a clean cut in one of these directions is well adapted for doing so in the other, at the expense of the smoothness and the uniformity with

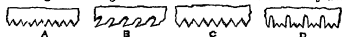


FIG. 4.—Varieties of saw teeth

which the cleanest series of fibres sliced off by each tooth passes from the fibres by its side (owing to the slight lateral cohesion already alluded to) assists in the operation, and a fairly clean cut results. But in cases cutting special provision is required for cleanly dividing the fibres at each side of the cut, after which the removal of the intervening fragment of wood is accomplished readily by cleavage, rather than by cutting. The rationale of the gullet-tooth (B) is this, that, the keen chisel-like edges of the teeth being well adapted for slicing the fibres of the wood transversely, and for this it leaves little to be demanded of the cross cut tooth (C), consisting as it does of a series of lancet-like points acting alternately at each side of the

cut, divides the fibres, but has no proper provision for their after removal, and the hand saw tooth (A) is a sort of compromise between the two (at least if we neglect the rounded portion of the gullet tooth, which does not affect its edge), so that it can be used either with the grain or across it, though not with the best possible results. The cross cut tooth (D), on the other hand, provides both for the clean separation of the fibres and the removal of their fragments.

The "set" of a saw is the slightly uncurved width given to its toothed edge by alternately bending the teeth towards the opposite sides of the blade, the extent to which this is done, or the width of the "set" (as it is called), therefore determines the amount of material which may waste in forming its cut, the more perfect its action, the smaller being the amount of set required to make it work freely, and the less the power expended in working it.

Some boring tools for wood are shown in fig. 5. The hand-saw (B) is adapted only for soft wood, the gimlet, either in its plain or its twisted form (F), has little to be said in its favor, and the shell-screw (G) requires an expenditure of force altogether disproportionate to the results produced by it. The screw auger is an improvement upon it, although this, as generally made, still leaves a good deal to be desired as regards consumption of power. But the wood worker's main stand by for boring is the stock or brace (H) and set of bits. These ordinarily supplied for

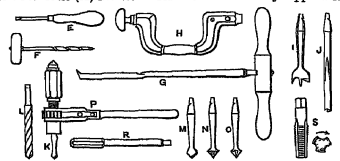


FIG. 5.—Boring tools

boring across the grain consists mainly of centre bits (L) for the large and quite a few for the smaller sizes of holes. These are thoroughly efficient tools,—also nose bits (J), which resemble shell augers and share their defects, for boring with the grain. The English wood boring tools indeed offer a considerable hindrance to the practical carpenter. Imported substitutes for the above are already to be met with, amongst others being the twisted centre bits, of which the stems resemble the twist drill referred to below, and the expanding centre bits, both of which appear to be in advance in the right direction, though they have not as yet come largely into use.

3. Cutting tools for metal analogous to the foregoing are the twist and auger surface work. These differ characteristically—at least in the case of those used for the harder metals—in the greatly increased thickness of their edges. Piles of various sizes, lengths, and degrees of fineness of tooth, and scrapers (which are merely thick knife-edges, made not unimportantly from worn out files by sharpening them at the extremity), constitute almost the only edge tools at the disposal of the fitter or machanic for finishing work that he has to perform on the surface of his work. For boring he has drills of various sizes, too often of the antiquated pattern (K), which in boring deep holes cannot be kept straight, though the very superior twist drill (L) is now often to be met with. Consequently, either of the first (M), rose (N), or small hand pattern (O), are generally included with carpenter's sets of bits, for enlarging holes in metal work to receive the heads of screws. They are used with the wooden handle as figured above. The small hand pattern resembles it, but is all made of iron, and a heavy pressure is applied to its upper end by means of a screw. Aatchet brace (P) is a more powerful instrument, and is not yet superseded, the saw being necessary to require measure and the handle being of wood. Small holes can be drilled under a light pressure with rapid motion on the part of the drill, which is then generally of the form K, but sharpened from both sides, so as to form a knife-edge which operates equally well in whichever direction the drill revolves. The drill bar, of which the string takes one turn round a bolt or other on the stem of the drill itself or on its holder, is a ready means of obtaining a rapid reciprocating motion for this purpose, and is not yet superseded, though various mechanical substitutes have been devised. For enlarging holes throughout their length branches or runners are used, these may be either simply half round or polygonal in section, or may have any desired number of longitudinal grooves, either straight or curved, and of which the edges are removed successive portions for the sides of the hole to be enlarged. parallel lines with four flutings is shown at R, the square end when in use being inserted in a hole in the centre of a wrench, which allows the flutings to leverage the hole.

An internal screw thread is formed in an analogous manner by a

tap, which bears on its surface the counterpart of the required thread, so that by successive cuts it produces a helical groove of the correct form and depth. Such a tap (S) is represented in the engraving, together with a diagram of its cross section, showing the three cutting edges by which the screw thread is formed. These such taps constitute a set for any one size of screw, the first being known as a taper, the second as an intermediate, and the third

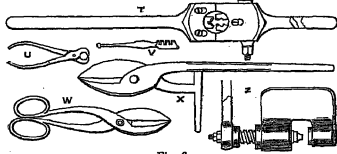


Fig. 6.

as a plug-tap, this last being almost parallel throughout. By a reverse process with dies fixed in a stock (T, fig. 6) external screws are cut, the particular form shown being the improved pattern of Sir J. Whitworth, who has done much to correct the faults of the earlier screwing tools. Screw plates, however, some of which cannot be regarded as cutting tools at all, are still much used for small and fine screw threads.

Cutting pliers and cutting nippers (U) have a pair of knife edges so arranged as to work exactly opposite to one another, — the handles, on being tightly grasped, affording sufficient leverage for these edges to be forced to a short distance into the two opposite sides of a nail or wire, which, if of small diameter or of soft metal, can thus be cut sundry. The cutters are an ingenious device which the extensive use of wrought-iron tubing for gasfitting has rendered necessary. They effect their object by cutting a groove round the tube to a sufficient depth to enable it to be fractured at the desired point.

3. *Stones and hard materials cannot in general be treated by cutting tools simply with hand pressure, though some of the softer kinds of stone are carved with chisels used almost or altogether without impact, and are sawn with toothed saws resembling the cross-cut saws used for wood. Glass cutters (V) are cast-iron handle carries at its extremity a small freely revolving wheel of carefully hardened steel, round the circumference of which is the cutting edge, which can be sharpened on an emery stone when necessary. The so-called cut is produced by simply running this with light pressure over the surface of the glass. Diamonds, however, are used for cutting glass, stone, &c., by actually detaching their particles; writing diamonds and diamond files for metal, tools of this class may in general only a subsidiary part to some cutting or other process.*

II. *Hand-tools without cutting action.*—With the exception of hammers and a few tools which are dependent on impact,—such as cleaving wedges amongst wood tools, and embossing and similar punches amongst those for metal, tools of this class may in general only a subsidiary part to some cutting or other process.

Amongst those used with pressure which cannot be considered as auxiliary may be instance—draw-plates, with which wire is made by drawing it through holes of conical form and of successively smaller diameters till the required size or “gauge” is reached; and burnishers, which reproduce on metals softer than themselves their own highly polished surfaces. Both of these act by inducing a flow of the metal under pressure, which it may be more correctly described as tearing, more or less completely localised according to circumstances. The ordinary sheet-metal shears (W) merely resemble very powerful scissors, and their action being quite local, they serve well for dividing thin plates or other thin sheet for which alone they are suitable. Block shears (X) act with additional leverage, and can consequently be used for rather thicker metal, the upper bow being replaced by a long straight handle, and the lower one by a stick which can be firmly fixed in a block of wood or otherwise. With these the tearing action begins to be apparent, though its imperfection is of no great importance with the thickness of metal capable of being treated by any hand shears (for some tools of this class, which by hydraulic or other means accumulate the power of one man to a sufficient extent to operate on bars or

plates of comparatively great substance, are machines rather than hand tools, and in their case the mere slowness of the operation produces better results than would otherwise be obtained). The same may be said of the various punches used in combination with dies or bolsters, as in the punching bear (Z), of which the action exactly resembles that of shears, the punch taking the place of the upper blade, and the bolster that of the lower one.

Of subsidiary tools (fig. 7) the vice is an absolute essential for the generality of metal workers. The ordinary tail-vise (a) used by mechanics has not yet been largely superseded, though many ingenious arrangements have been devised for remedying its main defect, viz., the want of parallelism in the movement of the jaws. The English parallel vice (g) has not this objection, but its construction is not good mechanically, and it is but little used except for small work. In some patterns of vice, jaws are provided with a horizontal adjustment so as to grip tapering or other irregular forms, and in others the whole body of the vice can be adjusted

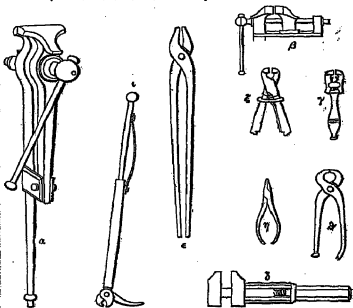


Fig. 7.

either vertically or horizontally. Hand-vices are used in the manner implied by their name, without being attached to a bench like the foregoing. An ingenious form of hand-vise (y) is shown in fig. 7. The screw wrench (b), which is used for turning nuts, &c., of various sizes has of late been deservedly the subject of various improvements in which weight is sought to be saved without sacrifice of strength; and the shifting spanner, of which the duty is the same, has led to the exercise of much ingenuity without any perfectly satisfactory solution of the problem how it may best be constructed. The merit and simplicity of the ordinary screw-driver, on the other hand, are well known.

Instances of tools which afford a powerful grip by simple means are the blacksmith's tongs (a), the vice-chop tongs (c), the pliers (d), and the pliers (e). A very powerful modification of the last-mentioned tool has lately been introduced into use under the name of the nail-puller (g). With this ingenious instrument very largely increased leverage is obtained, and the pull is given in a direction much more advantageous to the attainment of the desired object. (C. P. B.S.)

HANG-CHOW-FOO, a city of China, in the province of Che-Keang, about 2 miles north-west of the Tseen-tang-Keang, at the southern terminus of the Imperial Canal, by which it communicates with Peking. It lies about 160 miles south-west of Shanghai, in 30° 20' 30" N. lat. and 120° 7' 27" E. long. Towards the west is the Sikun, or “Western Lake,” a beautiful sheet of water, with its banks and its surface traversed by villas, monuments, and gardens. To the Chinese it is a very paradise. Exclusive of extensive and flourishing suburbs, the city has a circuit of 12 miles; its streets are well-paved and clean; and it possesses a large number of arches, public monuments, temples, hospitals, and colleges. It has long ranked as one of the great centres of Chinese commerce and Chinese learning. In 1869 the silk manufactures alone were said

to give employment to 60,000 persons within its walls, and it has an extensive production of gold and silver work and tinseal paper. On one of the islands in the lake is the great Wan-lan-ko pavilion of literary assemblies, and it is said that at the examination for the second degree twice every three years from 10,000 to 15,000 candidates come together. In the north-east corner of the city is the Nestorian church which was noted by Marco Polo, the facade being "elaborately carved and the gates covered with elegantly wrought iron." There is a Roman Catholic mission in Hang-chow, and the Church Missionary Society, the American Presbyterians, and the Baptists have likewise stations. The local dialect differs from the Mandarin mainly in pronunciation. The population, which is remarkable for gusto of clothing, was formerly reckoned at 2,600,000, but is now variously estimated at 300,000, 400,000, or 800,000.

Hang-chow-foo is the Kinnu of Marco Polo, who describes it as the finest and noblest city in the world, and speaks enthusiastically of the number and splendour of its mansions and the wealth and luxury of its inhabitants. According to his authority it had a circuit of 100 miles, and no fewer than 19,000 bridges and 3000 baths. The name Kinnu, which appears in *Wang-tse Kinnu*, in Ibn Batta's *Kinnu*, in *Orderic's* *Chinnu*, and elsewhere as *Chinnu* and *Chinnu*, is really a corruption of the Chinese *King* or *king*, the same word which is still applied to Peking. From the 10th to the 13th century (960-1279) the city, whose real name was then *Ling-nu*, was the capital of Southern Chin and the seat of the Sung dynasty, which was distinguished by the Mongolians shortly before Marco Polo's visit. Up to 1861, when it was laid in ruins by the Taipings, Hangchow continued to maintain its position as one of the most flourishing cities in the empire, and though for a time it lay comparatively desolate, it has considerably recovered within recent years. It is the seat of the governor of Che Kiang, but the governor general or viceroy for Che Kiang and Fuh Kien is now located at Tschow. See *China*, Yale's edition of Marco Polo, vol. II, for a plan of the city and further details.

HANKA, WENGBLAU or WAKLAW (1791-1861), a Bohemian philologist, was born at Hohenowes, a hamlet of eastern Bohemia, on June 10, 1791. He attended the village school in winter only, being occupied during the summer on his father's farm. While still young he acquired a knowledge of Polish and Serbian from some soldiers billeted in the neighbourhood, and in 1807 he was sent to school at Konigsplatz, to escape the conscription. Proceeding then to Prague, he engaged in the study of philosophy, and founded a society for the cultivation of the Czech language. At Vienna, where he afterwards studied law, he established a Czech periodical, and in 1813 he made the acquaintance of Dobrowsky, the eminent philologist. On September 18, 1817, Hanka made the discovery of some ancient Bohemian manuscript poems of the 13th and 14th century in the church-tower of the village of Kralowetz, or Konigstul. These were published in 1818, under the title *Kralowetzsky Zborek*, with a German translation by Swoboda. Great doubt, however, was felt as to their genuineness, and Dobrowsky, by pronouncing *The Judgment of Lubusa*, another manuscript found by Hanka, an "obvious fraud," confirmed the suspicion. But some years afterwards Dobrowsky saw fit to modify his decision, and in 1840, after a careful examination of the manuscripts by two eminent antiquaries, Hanka was ultimately vindicated. A translation into English, *The Manuscript of the Queen's Court*, was made by Wiatrowsky in 1852. The originals were presented by the discoverer to the Bohemian Museum at Prague, of which he was appointed librarian in 1818. In 1848 Hanka took part in the Slavonic congress and other peaceful national demonstrations, being the founder of the political society, *Slovanska Lipa*. He was elected to the imperial diet at Vienna, but declined to take his seat. In the winter of 1848 he became lecturer and in 1849 professor of Slavonic languages in the university of Prague, where he died, January 12, 1861.

His chief works and editions are the following:—*Hankow Tsun* (1818), a volume of poems, *Slovanska Skladanka* (1817-1823), in 5 vols.,—a collection of old Bohemian poems, chiefly from unpublished manuscripts, *A Short History of the Slavonic Peoples* (1818), *A Bohemian Grammar* (1823) and *A Polish grammar* (1849),—these grammars were composed on a plan suggested by Dobrowsky, *Lipa* (1851), an ancient Russian epic, with a translation into Bohemian, a part of the Gospels from the Rheims manuscript in the Olgoletski character (1846), the old Bohemian Chronicle of *Janus* (1848) and *Pracep Zborek* (1848), *Evangelium Octavo* (1858).

HANKOW (that is, the "Mouth of the Han"), the great commercial centre of the middle portion of the Chinese empire, and since 1858 one of the principal places opened to foreign trade. It is situated on the northern side of the Yang-tse-kiang at its junction with the Han river, about 450 miles west of Shanghai in 30° 32' 51" N lat and 114° 19' 55" E long, at an absolute height of 150 feet. By the Chinese it is not considered a separate city, but as a suburb of the now decadent city of Hanyang, and it may almost be said to stand in a similar relation to Wu-chang the capital of the province of Hupeh, which has immediately opposite on the southern bank of the Yang-tse-kiang. Hankow extends for about a mile along the main river and about two and a half along the Han. It is protected by a wall 18 feet high, which was erected in 1863 at an expense of £250,000, and has a circuit of about 4 miles. In 1861 the port was declared open by James Hope and Sir Harry S. Parkes, C.B., and the site of a British settlement was selected in the east end of the town, with a river frontage of 2400 feet, and a depth of from 1200 to 1500. The buildings, divided into 108 lots, was quickly bought up, and houses after the Shanghai style were erected. Leases were granted to foreigners as well as to British subjects. A municipal council was formed, and by 1863 a great embankment and a roadway were completed along the river, which has the awkward fashion of rising as much as 50 feet or more above its ordinary levels, and not infrequently, as in 1849 and 1866, lays a large part of the town under water. On the former occasion little was left uncovered but the roofs of the houses. The success of the foreign settlement has not been so great as was anticipated, even in 1866 the number of foreign residents was 125 instead of 150 as in 1863. Chinese merchants have rapidly got even the foreign trade into their hands. In 1873 they began to run steamers on the river, in 1875 they purchased the property of the Shanghai Steam Navigation Company, and in 1876 they had 67 steamers flying the national flag. Besides tea, which is the staple, the exports of Hankow are lent tobacco, of which 6,700,000 lb was sent to Europe in 1876, raw silk mainly obtained from Szeechen, mulberry, gall-nuts, and musk. Of this last the quantity was as much as 3937 lb at £20 sterling per lb. Tea was first sent direct to London in 1864-65, in 1876 this market received from Hankow no less than 54,540,000 lb out of a total export of 86,402,271 lb. The Russian merchants, who are fixing their brick-tea factories in the town, obtained 12,844,476 lb in the same year. They send their goods by water to Tientsin, and thence to Kalgan partly by land and partly by water. A public assay office was established at Hankow in 1864. The Roman Catholics, the London Missionary Society, and the Wesleyans have all missions in the town, and there are two missionary hospitals. Before the Taiping wars, the full brunt of which fell on this part of the country, the sister cities of Hankow, Hanyang, and Wu-chang-fu had a population, it is said, of over 5,000,000. At present Hankow has from 600,000 to 800,000 (Szenosoffsky says only 300,000), and the other two from 400,000 to 700,000.

HANTLEY, a market town and municipal borough of Staffordshire, England, is situated in the centre of the pottery district, 2 miles ENE of Stoke-upon-Trent, and 18 miles N of Stafford. It is indebted for its rise and

prosperity to its pottery manufactures, which include porcelain, encaustic tiles, and earthenware, and give employment to the greater part of the population, women and children being employed almost as largely as men. In the neighbourhood coal and iron are obtained. The streets, which are paved with brick, are wide and regular, and in the suburbs there are a number of fine villas. The principal public buildings are the six churches (St John's being a handsome structure with a tower 100 feet in height) and the dissenting chapels, the town hall, the mechanics' institute, the museum, the theatre, and the national and board schools. There is also a flourishing Government school at Hanley, which includes the former township of Shelton, received a municipal constitution in 1857. It is the central and most important of the group of towns constituting the parliamentary borough of Stoke-upon-Trent. The population of Hanley in 1861 was 31,953, and in 1871 39,976.

HANNAY, JAMES (1827-1873), critic, novelist, and publicist, was born at Dumfries in 1827, and came of the Hannays of Sorbie, an ancient Galloway family. He entered the navy in 1840 and served till 1846, when he adopted literature as his profession. In 1857 Hannay contested the Dumfries burghs in the Conservative interest, but without success. He edited the *Edinburgh Courier* from 1860 till 1864, when he removed to London. In July 1868 he was appointed British consul at Barcelona, a post which he occupied till his death on the 8th of January 1873. While at Barcelona he contributed to English periodicals, and his letters to the *Pall Mall Gazette* ("From an Englishman in Spain") were highly appreciated. Hannay's best books are *Singleton Fontenoy, Satire and Satireists, Eustace Conyers*, and *Essays from the Quarterly Review*. *Satire* not only shows loving appreciation of the great satirists of the past, but is itself instinct with wit and fine satiric power. The book sparkles with epigrams and apposite classical allusions, and contains admirable critical estimates of Horace (Hannay's favourite author), Juvenal, Erasmus, Sir David Lindsay, George Buchanan, Boileau, Butler, Dryden, Swift, Pope, Churchill, Burns, Byron, and Moore. The *Essays* are full of learning and historical knowledge, and are lit up with sunny humour and brilliant flashes of wit and poetry. Hannay passionately admired three things—learning, literary genius, and good blood. He showed great interest in the fortunes of aristocratic families, and his wonderful skill in matters of heraldry and genealogy is recognized by highly competent authorities (see *Mason's Life of Milton*, vol. i p. 8). He was a ripe Latin scholar, and his style is marked by grace, vivacity, and poetical feeling. He was intimate with his leading literary contemporaries, and wrote the valuable notes to Thackeray's *English Humourists*.

In addition to contributions to *Punch* and the leading reviews, Hannay issued the following works—*Diaries and Grog, Olney One, and Hearts as a Trumpe* (1848), *Knu Dobbs* (1849), *Sketches in Ultramarine*, *Singleton Fontenoy* (1850), an edition of the *Poems of Edgar Allan Poe*, to which he prefixed an exquisite essay on the poet's life and genius (1851), *Satire and Satireists*, and *Salutate* (1854), *Eustace Conyers* (1855), *Poems from the Quarterly Review* (1861), *Characters and Criticisms*, consisting mainly of his contributions to the *Edinburgh Courier* (1866), *A Course of English Literature* (1868), and a family history entitled *The Hundred Years of a Norman House* (1867).

HANNIBAL Hannibal was a very common Carthaginian name. Its final syllable *bal* occurs repeatedly, as a suffix, in Punic names, and is in fact taken from the chief Phœnician deity, Baal. The entire name denotes, according to a probable interpretation, "the favour of Baal."

The famous Hannibal, the hero of the Second Punic War, was the son of Hamilcar Barca, and was born in 247 a.c. He and his two brothers, Hasdrubal and Mago, were called by the father "the lion's brood." At the age of nine he

begged his father, who was leaving Carthage for Spain, to take him with him. The request was granted, but not before he had sworn at that father's bidding on the altar of sacrifice eternal enmity to Rome. That vow determined his life's future. In Spain he was lured up in camps under his father's eye. He was present at the battle in which his father fell in 228 a.c., being then in his nineteenth year. Hamilcar's son-in-law, Hasdrubal, succeeded to the command. Eight years afterwards, in 221 a.c., he was struck down by an Iberian assassin. Meantime the young Hannibal had proved himself thoroughly able both "to obey and to command." It was a matter of course that the soldiers with one voice at once hailed him as their general.

His first object was to complete the work of his father and his father's successor. Spain, he felt, must be more thoroughly overawed, if it was to be a base of operations against Rome. He pushed into the heart of the country, crossed the Tagus, and crushed the resistance of the tribes of the interior. Two campaigns sufficed for the conquest of all Spain to the south of the Ebro, except Saguntum, a town considerably south of the Ebro and some way to the north of the modern Valencia. It was a Greek colony from Zacynthus (Zante), and had grown into a rich and prosperous place, but what was now far more important, it was in friendly relations with Rome. To attack it therefore would be like throwing down the gauntlet to the Roman senate and people. But Hannibal was able to tell the home Government at Carthage that the Saguntines were molesting Carthaginian subjects in the neighbourhood. Without awaiting an answer, he began the siege. Roman ambassadors at the solicitation of envoys from Saguntum landed on the coast, but were told by Hannibal that he could not see them. They went on to Carthage, but their remonstrances, though the subject of a long debate, were in vain. Eight months passed away, and Saguntum, after a gallant defence, was forced to surrender. Hannibal got a rich booty for his army, and went into winter quarters at New Carthage (Cartagena). Again a Roman embassy went to Carthage and insisted on his being given up. The demand was refused. By the close of the year 219 a.c. the Second Punic War was in fact begun.

Hannibal's resolution was now taken. He prepared at once to invade Italy. He had a numerous and efficient army and a well-fitted exchequer. All who shrink from the word "desertion" he dismissed to their homes. In the spring of 218 a.c. he began his great march from New Carthage with an army of 90,000 foot, 12,000 horse, and 37 elephants. The Ebro was easily crossed. In the country beyond he had some fighting with the native tribes, and there he left Hanno, with a force of 10,000 foot and 1000 horse, to secure the passes between Spain and Gaul. Again he sent back all in whom he saw signs of hesitation. With a considerably diminished army he passed the Pyrenees at Bellegarde and encamped at Iliberris (Elne). Some Gallic tribes, alarmed at his advance, had assembled in the neighbourhood, but he soon convinced their chiefs and persuaded them that he meant them no mischief. So he continued his march without molestation to the Rhone.

Meanwhile the Romans had done little or nothing to check their enemy. At last the consul, Publius Cornelius Scipio, arrived at Massilia (Marseilles), and was surprised to find that Hannibal was about to cross the Rhone. But he was too late to oppose the passage, and Hannibal crossed the river probably at some point near the village of Roquevaure. He then followed its course, matching up its left bank to its junction with the Isère at Valence, and entered what was known as the "Island of the Allobroges." It was from thence that he began his famous passage of the Alps.

The narrative of Polybius, though it raises some difficult

questions, has conveyed to most modern students and scholars the impression that Hannibal crossed by the pass of the Little St Bernard. If so, he must have entered Italy by the valley of Aosta. The subject has had a literature of its own devoted to it. The result is that the Little St Bernard Pass may be almost said to have made good its claims to the honour of Hannibal's memorable march. It was familiar to the ancients, and more than once Gauls had passed through it into the plains of Italy. Such high authorities as Arnold, Niebuhr, and Mommsen regard the question as settled in its favour.

Fifteen days in all were occupied in the passage. If the view above indicated is correct, Hannibal at first made his way over Mont du Chat though the Chevelu Pass, then continued his march up the valley of the Isère, and mounted the St Bernard. He must have descended the mountain by the valley of the Donia. Part of his route, that by which he climbed to the summit, was a narrow defile, and there he was threatened by the mountain tribes which appeared on the heights. At the 'white rock,' *la roche blanche*, as it is still called, he halted his infantry, while the cavalry and beasts of burden were making their way during the night to the top of the pass. Next day, the ninth day, he stood with his whole army on the highest point and spoke, it is said, some cheering words to his half-frozen Africans and Spaniards. The descent proved trying and dangerous. From the mountain tribes he had little to fear, it was the mountain slope, covered with recent snow, which caused delay and anxiety. The Italian side of the Alps is considerably steeper than the French side, and a road had to be constructed for the passage of the elephants and horses. This was a work of three days. In three more days they arrived in the valley of Aosta, and were welcomed by the Salassi, a friendly tribe of the Insubrian Gauls. The October of the year 218 B.C. saw the passage of the Alps accomplished and Hannibal with his army encamped in northern Italy.

This far he had been successful, but at a tremendous cost. His army was shrank to a force of 20,000 infantry and 6000 cavalry,—the former being composed of Libyans and Spaniards in about the proportion of three to two, and the latter being chiefly Numidians, and admirably efficient.

It was now five months since he had set out from New Carthage. His men of course sorely needed rest, and thus they had for a brief space amid the friendly tribes of Cisalpine Gaul. One tribe indeed, the Taurini, was hostile, but he soon captured their chief city, thus overawing the remaining tribes in the upper valley of the Po. It was now high time for the Romans to exert themselves. Scipio after quitting Massilia, whence he had sent on his army into Spain, had hurried back to Italy, and on reaching Placentia took command of the Roman army quartered there. He was indeed numerically weaker than Hannibal, and was deficient in cavalry. Still he advanced up the Po to meet him, and on the Trebia, somewhere, it would seem, near Vercelli, was fought the first engagement of the Second Punic War. It was a cavalry action, and the inferiority of the Romans in this arm was decisively proved. They were driven back with heavy loss, and Scipio himself was severely wounded, being rescued, it is said, by his son, a lad of seventeen, who subsequently became as famous as Hannibal himself, and had the good fortune to be his conqueror. He has gone down to posterity as Scipio Africanus the Defeated general fell back to the walls of Placentia. The Trebia, a southern tributary of the Po, was between him and the enemy, and he was soon joined by the other consul, Semppronius. Their united armies numbered not less than 40,000 men. Semppronius was for instantly giving battle, Scipio was still disabled by his wound.

Semppronius had his way, and on a bitterly cold December day the Romans plunged into the swollen waters of the Trebia in the face of a fleet storm and a cutting wind. They fought well, but when taken in flank by Hannibal's brother Mago, who was lying in ambush amid brambles and bushes in a watercourse, they broke and fled in utter rout.

This decisive victory gave nearly all northern Italy to Hannibal. He let his troops rest during the winter, and added to them a number of Gauls. Early in the spring of 217 B.C. he decided to cross the Apennines and to penetrate into the heart of Italy. The route which he took brought him into the marshy lowlands of the Arno near Luca and Pisa, and here he and his men had to wade through water for four days. Many of them perished miserably, and Hannibal himself lost an eye from ophthalmia. At last he encamped at Fiesole on high ground. The two consuls Flaminius and Servilius were, with their armies, respectively at Arezzo and Rimini. Flaminius was an impetuous man, and eager to win the glory of settling the war once for all. Hannibal, quitting the valley of the upper Arno, marched past him towards Perugia, ravaging the country and so provoking the Roman general to pursue him. The road from Cortona to Perugia skirts the northern slope of Lake Trasimene, and into this road, which is in fact a mountain defile, the Roman column was really enticed. They were caught in a trap. Hannibal had posted his light troops on the hills on either side, while he himself blocked the outlet near Passignano with the best of his infantry. As soon as the Romans were in the pass they were assailed on all sides, and the battle soon became a mere massacre. The Roman army was in fact destroyed, and Flaminius was among the slain. We might suppose that Hannibal would have now done well to have marched straight on Rome, and thus the Romans expected. But he may well have thought that it would be better to wait the chance of insurrection among the Italian communities. So he marched through Umbria, and again crossed the Apennines into Picenum. He then marched southwards along the coast into Apulia and encamped at Arpi. Meanwhile the Romans had made the famous Fabius Maximus their dictator. After levying an army of four legions, Fabius marched in pursuit of the enemy having first effected a junction with the army under Servilius at Canusium.

From the first Fabius had decided on the policy which earned for him the name of the *Cunctator*, the Delayer. He dogged his enemy's steps, but would never risk an engagement. The richest districts of southern Italy were laid waste under his very eyes. But he could not be provoked into any rash movement. Once indeed it seemed as if Hannibal was himself entangled. He had been ravaging Campania, and was on the point of retreating into Samnium, when Fabius posted a force at the head of the pass which afforded the only available means for his retreat. Hannibal is said to have driven a multitude of oxen with lighted faggots on their horns up the hills overlooking the road, so as to give the impression that he and his army were retreating over the heights. Fabius's detachment quitted its position to check the supposed movement, and thus gave Hannibal an opportunity of escaping through the pass. The tactics of Fabius disgusted his men, and when he had to leave them for a time, he found on his return that his master of the horse, Minucius, on the strength of a small success won in his absence, was eager to bring on a general engagement. Fabius gave him a part of the army, with which Minucius ventured on an attack. He was on the brink of destruction when he was rescued by the dictator's timely interposition. After this Hannibal went into winter quarters at Geronium in the north of Apulia.

In the spring of the next year, 216 B.C., he moved south and pounded on Canosa, where the Roman supplies were stored in great abundance. The town is about 8 miles from the mouth of the Aufidus and about 8 from Canosa. The Romans were now again eager to strike a decisive blow. So a vast army was raised by the consuls of the year, *Æmilius Paulus* and *Terentius Varro*, numbering 80,000 infantry and 6000 cavalry. Hannibal's army was probably far inferior numerically. The consuls on arriving in Apulia made *Cannasium* (Canosa) their headquarters. For some few days the armies faced each other on the banks of the Aufidus. There were some preliminary manoeuvres and skirmishes, till at last Varro, when it came to his turn to command, determined to fight. Both armies crossed the river and Hannibal's men were drawn up within a loop which it forms near Canosa. On either flank he stationed a strong body of his veteran infantry. His other infantry, ranged in the centre in a crescent form, was soon driven in by the Roman legions, which had advanced to the attack in very deep formation. But meanwhile Hannibal's cavalry had put the Roman horse to rout, and had fallen on their rear. The Roman columns were now attacked also on either flank by the Carthaginian infantry. Pressed into a dense mass they were cut down without the possibility of resistance. The carnage is said to have been prolonged for eight hours. The Roman army was all but utterly destroyed. The consul *Æmilius Paulus*, nearly all the officers, and eighty senators, perished in the slaughter. Varro indeed escaped with a few horsemen to Venusia. The remainder were slain or made prisoners. It was at a comparatively small cost to himself that Hannibal won this great victory.

It might well be thought that such a victory would prove decisive, and that it must have been had Hannibal instantly pushed on to Rome. But he had probably good reasons for not doing so. He was, it must be remembered, as much as 200 miles from Rome; he would have had to march through still hostile populations, and by the time he would have arrived, he must have known that the first panic would have abated, and that the notion of carrying the city by a coup de main was simply preposterous. What he counted on was the dissolution of the Italian confederacy, and a widespread revolt throughout Italy. Nor was he altogether deceived. The disaster of Canosa shook the loyalty of the Italian peoples. Rome was deserted by most of Apulia and Samnium, and almost wholly by the Lucernians and Bruttians. She retained indeed some strong fortresses, as *Ostia*, *Fregellæ*, *Casertum*, *Beneventum*, *Venusia*, and these enabled her armies to maintain their ground. But Capua, in Campania, the richest and most powerful city in Italy after Rome itself, was lost to her. Thence Hannibal made his way from Canosa, and there he went into winter quarters, which were perhaps too comfortable and luxurious. But the story that his men became utterly demoralized is absurd. They proved in the subsequent years of the war that they could move rapidly and fight bravely. We may indeed well suppose that by this time many of his veteran Spaniards and Africans had been replaced by native Italian soldiers. It is, however, clear that he still had a fine army. It is true indeed that after Canosa his star seemed rather to decline, but the explanation of this is that the Romans again reverted to the steady cautious tactics which they had learnt under Fabius. They too were for the most part well officered. The ablest of their generals was *Marcellus*. Yet even he never beat his antagonist in anything like a pitched battle. The Romans after Canosa made prodigious efforts. They sent three armies into the field, to watch and to check the enemy's movements. They kept themselves in strongly entrenched camps near fortresses which Hannibal had not the means

of taking. Some indeed he did capture, as *Nuceris*, *Acerra*, and *Casertum* in Campania. At *Canusæ*, *Neapolis*, and *Nola* he was foiled. The two years after Canosa, 215 and 214 B.C., passed without much being achieved on either side. Hannibal was vaguely hoping for reinforcements from Carthage, and for the aid of Philip, king of Macedonia.

Next year, 213 B.C., he gained a considerable success. *Tarentum* surrendered, and so did *Metapontum* and *Thurii*. At *Tarentum* indeed the Roman garrison still clung to the citadel, and Hannibal could not dialogue. From Carthage he had received a reinforcement of some elephants and of 4000 Numidian cavalry, but this did not enable him to resume the offensive with much effect. Meanwhile Capua, besieged by two consular armies, seemed doomed to fall again into Roman hands. One of Hannibal's subalterns, *Hanno*, was defeated in the attempt to retake the place. Hannibal himself hurried to its aid, but he could not bring the Romans to a battle, though he did temporarily raise the siege. The year 212 B.C. was one of mingled success and disaster for Rome. *Syracuse* that year had to surrender to *Marcellus*, and Carthage seemed to have quite lost Sicily. Here was an important gain for Rome. But in Spain the two brother Scipios had been cut off by *Hasturbal*, who could now cross into Gaul and advance on Italy. And in Italy there had been some serious reverses. It would appear that there were actually six Roman armies in the field against Hannibal. One of these under *Fulvius* he destroyed in Apulia; another, made up of enfranchised slaves under *Gracchus*—a proof thus of the extremity to which Rome was reduced—he put to rout, *Gracchus* himself perishing in an ambuscade.

By the spring of 211 B.C. the Romans were besieging Capua with three armies. It was clear that the city must fall, unless Hannibal could come to its rescue. He made the attempt indeed, but he could not break the hostile lines, so strongly were they entrenched. Then he conceived the idea of drawing them off by menacing Rome itself. Now for the first time he marched through Latium and made it taste all the horrors of war. At last he encamped 8 miles from Rome on the Anio. But the Romans did not lose their presence of mind, or even relinquish the siege of Capua; they simply recalled *Fulvius* with one of the armies. There were two legions within the city, and Hannibal probably never meditated a serious assault. He ravaged the country up to the walls, but he did nothing more. Through Samnium he again marched into Apulia and thence into Bruttium, where he unsuccessfully attacked Rhegium and the citadel of *Tarentum*. Capua meanwhile was forced to surrender. This greatly discouraged Hannibal's Italian allies. *Discepoli* too had come back from Sicily after his capture of *Syracuse*. Altogether the year 211 B.C. was a very unpromising one for Hannibal. Next year, 210 B.C., however, he partly recovered lost ground by completely defeating the Roman prætor *Cneius Fulvius* at *Herdonia*, the modern *Ordona*, in Apulia. But he could not follow up this success, and his evident weakness led to the speedy return of Samnium and Lucania to the Roman confederacy. The following year saw *Tarentum* slip from his grasp. But he soon had his revenge. Next year the two consuls, *Crispinus* and *Marcellus*, were both cut off and slain by the Numidian cavalry in the neighbourhood of *Venusia*. Another disaster soon followed. A Roman army was besieging *Locri* in the extreme south. It was routed and almost destroyed by Hannibal. Thus at the close of the year 208 B.C. the struggle was clearly by no means decided.

Rome had been making immense efforts. We hear of her having twenty-three legions under arms, and possibly the total number of her armies may have reached 200,000 men. The patriotic spirit of her citizens was still at the highest. But her finances were in a deplorable plight, and

corn had risen to an almost famine price. The country must have been woefully wasted, and multitudes reduced to beggary. One thing indeed the Romans had had to console them during these trying years. The Latin communities in Etruria and Latium had stood by them with wonderful fidelity. This had been their salvation. But now in the years 209 and 208 B.C. came signs of discontent and wavering. Of the Latin colonies several declared that they could no longer furnish contingents or contributions. There were rumours too of a disloyal movement in Etruria. But, worst of all, there came news in the autumn of 208 B.C. that Hasdrubal had crossed the Pyrenees. By next summer he would have crossed the Alps. Should the two brothers unite their forces, Rome's fate, it could hardly be doubted, would be sealed. She was now in far greater jeopardy than she was even after the disastrous day of Cannæ.

The year 207 was thus a very anxious one. Claudius Nero and Marcus Livius were the consuls. The first was to watch Hannibal in Apulia, the other was to encounter Hasdrubal in Cisalpine Gaul. Livius defeated before the new invader, and let him reach Sena in Umbria, to the south of the river Metaurus, without opposition. Thence Hasdrubal sent despatches to his brother, who was at Canusium in Apulia. The plan was that they should join their armies at Venusia on the Flaminian road, between 80 and 86 miles from Rome. Unluckily for the two brothers the despatches fell into the hands of Nero. His resolution was formed in a moment. Leaving the bulk of his army in its camp, he hurried northwards with 7000 of his best troops, and after a rapid march of 200 miles he joined Livius. The two generals faced Hasdrubal to a battle. The Carthaginian was utterly defeated, and he was himself slain. Nero returned with all speed to his army, and informed Hannibal of the defeat and death of his brother by having the head of Hasdrubal flung into his camp. With that sight all hope must have died in Hannibal's heart. The battle of the Metaurus was indeed one of the decisive battles of the world. It decided the Second Punic War. From that time, for four more years, Hannibal could but stand on the defensive in the southernmost corner of the Italian peninsula. But even to the last no Roman general dared to close with him. Never in a single battle, as Polybius says, was he beaten while in Italy. Before quitting the country, he left a memorial of his wonderful achievements. In the temple of Juno on the Lacinian promontory, near Crotona, he inscribed on brazen tablets in Punic and in Greek an account of his expedition and his campaigns. Polybius saw the inscription and doubtless availed himself of it for his history. For fifteen years Hannibal had maintained himself in Italy, ravaging it from end to end, and inflicting on the Romans according to their own calculation a total loss of 300,000 men. Now all was clearly over. After Nero's victory the Romans could afford to wait the course of events. Scipio had been victorious in Spain, and early in 204 B.C. he was allowed to cross into Africa. Soon it was clear that he would threaten Carthage more effectively than Hannibal had ever threatened Rome. He received the order of recall at Crotona, and thence embarked for Africa. He landed at the smaller Leptis, on the coast of Tunis, late in the year 203 B.C., and lingered during the winter at Hadrumetum, the modern Sousse. His brothers Hasdrubal and Mago had both fallen, and he was now the last of the "lion's brood." Fugitive as he was, his presence roused the Carthaginian spirit. The people would not hear of peace. Hannibal indeed attempted to negotiate, and had an interview with Scipio, but in vain. When he saw that he must fight, he could not have felt any of his old confidence. He had some good troops, but he was numerically inferior to the enemy. Of his veterans

but few could have remained. The armies at last met at Zama, somewhere near the modern Kef. The battle was obstinately contested, and Hannibal's old soldiers died fighting in their ranks. But he never really had a chance of victory. Many of his men were raw mercenaries, and some of them deserted to the enemy. His army was utterly discomfited, and indeed annihilated. The defeat was not creditable to him, but it was decisive. With a handful of men he escaped to Hadrumetum, and in the year 202 B.C. the Second Punic or, more properly, the Hannibalian War was at an end.

He was still only in his forty-seventh year. He soon showed that he could be a statesman as well as a soldier. Peace having been concluded, he was appointed chief magistrate of the state. The office had become rather insignificant, but Hannibal restored its power and authority. The oligarchy, always jealous of him, had even charged him with having betrayed the interests of his country while in Italy, and neglected to take Rome when he might have done so. The dishonesty and incompetence of these men had brought the finances of Carthage into grievous disorder. So effectively did Hannibal reform abuses that the heavy tribute imposed by Rome could be paid by instalments without additional and extraordinary taxation. Carthage grew prosperous, and again the Romans trembled. Seven years after the victory of Zama they demanded Hannibal's surrender. They were still in mortal dread of their old enemy. Hannibal did not wish his countrymen to disgrace themselves, and he therefore at once became an exile. First he went to Tyre, the mother city of Carthage, and thence to Ephesus, where he was honourably received by Antiochus, king of Syria, who was then preparing for war with Rome. Hannibal soon saw that the king's army was no match for the Romans. He advised him to equip a fleet and throw a body of troops on the south of Italy, adding that he would himself take the command. But he could not make much impression on Antiochus, who was a conceited man, quite ignorant of the strength of Rome. The story was told that, pointing to the great army he had assembled at Ephesus, he asked Hannibal if he did not think that these were enough for the Romans. Hannibal's reply was, "Yes, enough for the Romans, however greedy they may be." The great army in which Antiochus had trusted was in 190 B.C. routed by Scipio at Magnesia near Smyrna. Again Rome demanded the surrender of Hannibal.

The end was now at hand. From the court of Antiochus Hannibal fled to Crete, but he soon went back to Asia, and sought refuge with Ptolemy, king of Bithynia. Once more the Romans were determined to hunt out the old man, and they sent Flaminius to wrest on his surrender. Ptolemy was but a poor paltry princelet, and he promptly complied. Hannibal did not choose to fall into his enemies' hands at Libyssa, on the eastern shore of the Sea of Marmora, he took poison, which, it was said, he had long carried about with him in a ring. The precise year of his death was a matter of controversy. If, as Livy seems to imply, it was 183 B.C., he died in the same year as his great and victorious antagonist, Scipio Africanus.

As to the transcendent military genius of Hannibal there cannot be two opinions. The man who for fifteen years could hold his ground in a hostile country against several powerful armies and a succession of able generals must have been a commander and a tactician of supreme capacity. Wonderful as his achievements were, we must marvel the more when we take into account the gauciest support he received from Carthage. As his veterans melted away, he had to organize fresh levies on the spot. We never hear of a mutiny in his army, composed though it was of Africans, Spaniards and Gauls. He who could throw a spell





**HANOVER** (German, *Hannover*), formerly an independent kingdom, but since 1866 a province of Prussia, lies between 51° 18' and 53° 53' N lat and 0° 43' and 11° 46' E long., and is bounded on the N. by the North Sea, N.E. by Holstein, Hamburg, and Mecklenburg, E. and S.E. by Prussian Saxony and the duchy of Brunswick, S.W. by Hesse-Cassel and Westphalia, and W. by Holland. These boundaries include the grand-duchy of Oldenburg, which stretches southward from the North Sea nearly to the southern border of Hanover. A small portion of the province in the south is separated from Hanover proper by the interposition of a part of Brunswick. The area of the province extends to 14,518 English square miles.

**Physical Features.**—The greater part of Hanover is embraced in that extensive plain which, commencing on the shores of the North Sea, terminates on the frontiers of Russia. The most fruitful districts are on the banks of the Elbe and near the North Sea, where, as in Holland, rich meadows are preserved from being immersed in water by broad dykes and deep ditches, constructed and kept in repair at great expense. It is only the southern portion that is mountainous, the district of Klausthal, containing the Harz, is wholly so, as well as some parts near Göttingen, and in the district of Hildesheim. The Harz mountains are not a part of any chain, but rise from a plain in an isolated group, to the highest points of which are nearly in the centre (see Harz). They are covered with extensive forests. On their lower slopes the trees are of the deciduous kinds, but pines alone are found on the summits.

The whole of Hanover dips towards the north, and the rivers consequently flow in that direction. The Elbe, which forms the boundary on the N.E., receives the following tributaries—the Ohre, which rises in the district of Lüneburg, the Aland and the Jetze, which come out of the province of Saxony, and are navigable in their lower course, the Ilmenau, which becomes navigable at Lüneburg, the Este, navigable to Barchthude, the Lube, navigable to Hornburg, the Schwinge, by which vessels reach Stade, the Oste, navigable to Krichstern, and the Medem, which runs through the Haddenland, and admits large vessels up to Ottendorf. The Weser enters Hanover at Münden, being there formed by the junction of the Fulda and the Verra. It is navigable for barges from the spot at which its name commences, and it receives the Hamel, the Aller, the Oerze, the Lene, the Bohme, the Eyther, the Wumme, which in the lower part of its course takes the name of Lesum, the Geeste, and the Hunte,—all of them purely Hanoverian rivers. The Ems rises in the province of Westphalia, and after entering Hanover receives the waters of the Aa, the Hase, the Elbe, and the Leine, it falls into the Dollart near Emden, which is the principal seaport in the kingdom. It is navigable for flat-bottomed vessels from Rhine down to, and for sea-going ships from Halse and Weene. The Vecht, a river of short course, rises in the province of Westphalia, and falls into the Zuider Zee. A navigable canal from the Vecht to Munster connects that city with the Zuider Zee. Navigable canals connect the various river systems.

The principal lakes are the Steinhuder Meer, about 4 miles long and 2 broad, and 20 fathoms deep, on the borders of Schaumburg-Lippe, the Dummersee, on the borders of Oldenburg, about 12 miles in extent, the lake of Beckerssee, and some others in the moorlands of the north, the Seesburger See near Duderstadt, and the Ostersteich, in the Harz, 2100 feet above the level of the sea.

**Climate.**—The climate in the low-lying districts near the coast is moist and foggy, in the plains mild, on the Harz mountains severe and variable. In spring the prevailing

winds blow from the N.E. and E., in summer from the S.W. The mean annual temperature is about 46° Fahr. in the town of Hanover it is higher. The average annual rainfall is about 23.5 inches, but this varies greatly in different districts. In the west the Hohenrauch, a thick fog arising from the burning of the moors, is a plague of frequent occurrence.

**Agriculture.**—Though agriculture constitutes the most important branch of industry in the province, it is still in a very backward state. The greater part of the soil is in the hands of the nobles, and that is susceptible of cultivation is still lying waste. Of the entire area of the country 28.2 per cent is arable, 10.6 in meadow or pasture land, 19 per cent in forests, 87.2 per cent in uncultivated moors, heaths, &c., from 17 to 18 per cent is in possession of the state. The best agriculture to be found in the districts of Hildesheim, Celenberg, Göttingen, and Grubenhagen, on the banks of the Weser and Elbe, and in East Prussia. Of the whole area under cultivation in 1878 there was under wheat 1.9 per cent, 1,375, 10.9, barley, 0.9, oats, 5.7, buckwheat, 1.4, peas, 0.4, potatoes, 2.8, and meadow, 10.4 per cent. The extent of fallow was 2,205,725 acres of a total area of 9,164,446 acres. The total yield in the season 1878 was—wheat, 2,298,543 cwt., 135, 10,845,720 cwt., barley, 1,350,417 cwt., oats, 7,054,880 cwt., buckwheat, 1,160,515 cwt., peas, 348,931 cwt., potatoes, 17,828,490 cwt., hay, 31,238,480 cwt. The soil is generally good in the bread. Flax, of which much of the area is admirably adapted, is extensively cultivated, and forms an important article of export, chiefly, however, in the form of jain flax, tunny, and hops are also among the exports. There were in 1877 865 acres planted with tobacco, the produce of which was 19,207 cwt., valued at £15,350. Of the whole area of the country yielding 5,870,480 cwt. of beet root, from which was manufactured in 27 sugar mills with 211 engines of 2133 horse power 551,707 cwt. of raw sugar. Apples, pears, plums, and cherries are the principal kinds of fruit grown. Best gibber (Vaccinium) *Tea siala* from the Harz and black bilberries (*V. Myrtillus*) from the Lüneburg Heath form an important article of export.

**Livestock.**—In the statistics of 1878 there were in Hanover 191,006 horses, 132 mules, 404 asses, 594,158 head of horned cattle, 1,858,992 sheep (including 511,892 heads of cheviots, a very coarse breed), 510,550 pigs, 173,902 goats, and 217,045 beehives. There are principally kept on the moorland. Here the number of sheep was larger before 1867, but the number of horned cattle has increased. Horses are raised in the marshes of Amisch and Stade, in Hildesheim and Hanover, the cattle of Amisch (East Prussia) are famous for their size and quality. The best sheep belong to the country lying between the capital and the Harz. Large flocks of geese are kept in the moist lowlands, their flesh is suited for domestic consumption during the winter, and their feathers are prepared for sale.

**Mining.**—Minerals occur in great variety and abundance. The Harz mountains are rich in silver, lead, iron, and copper, coal is found around Osnabrück, on the Dister, at Osterwald, &c., lignite in various places, salt springs of great value are found at Hildesheim and Nienhüll near Hanover, and at Lüneburg, and petroleum may be obtained south of Celle. In the cold regions of the northern lowlands, peat occurs in beds of immense thickness. The mining statistics for the year 1878 gave the following quantities: value coal, 301,728 tons (£118,765), lignite, 126,714 tons (£23,724), asphalt, 26,000 tons (£28,000), iron ores, 170,969 tons (£16,000), and 1,000 tons (£24,000), lead ores, 82,866 tons (£138,785), copper ore, 15,738 tons (£45,288), silver ore, 35 cwt. (£14,990), manganese ore, 3070 cwt. (£710), salt from springs, 73,007 tons (£70,499).

**Manufactures.**—Works for the manufacture of iron, copper, brass, wire, silver, lead, vitriol, and sulphur are carried on to a large extent. About 40,000 persons are employed in these works and in the mines, the yearly revenue from which amounts to £1,800,000. The production of 1878 was—iron, 115,000 tons, lead, 8774 tons, copper, 850 cwt., silver, 38,332 lb., gold, 171 lb., sulphuric acid, 573 tons, blue vitriol, 788 tons. The iron works are very important something is carried on in the Harz and near Osnabrück, there are extensive forges and machine factories at Hanover, Lüneburg, Osnabrück, Hameln, Geestemünde, Harburg, Osterode, &c., and manufactures of arms at Herzberg, and of cutlery in the towns of the Harz and in the Solling Forest. The textile industries are prosecuted chiefly in the towns. Linen yarn and cloth are largely manufactured, especially in the south about Osnabrück and Hildesheim, and bleaching is engaged in extensively. Woolen cloths are made to a considerable extent in the south about Embsay, Hildesheim, and Hameln, cotton spinning and weaving have their principal seats at Hanover and Lüneburg. Glass houses, paper mills, potteries, tile works, and tobacco works are numerous. Wax is bleached to a considerable extent, and there are extensive distilleries, breweries, vineyards, vineyards, and brand distilleries. Shipbuilding is an important in

duties, especially at Pöpenburg, Emden, Loe, Stade, and Hainburg, and at Mühlhausen, where he built.

**Commerce.**—Although the carrying trade of Hanover is to a great extent absorbed by Hamburg and Bremen, the shipping of the province counts 867 sailing vessels, the larger vessels all belonging to the German fleet. Emigration is becoming a very important aspect when the extensive harbour improvements have been completed.

**Administrative.**—The province is divided into six *Landstücken* or counties, and these again have been subdivided, since the union with Prussia, into smaller districts. There is a provincial assembly representing 48 towns and 101 *hundreds*. A court of appeal for the whole province sits at Götting, and there are 19 superior courts. To the German parliament (*Reichstag*) Hanover sends 19 members, to the Prussian house of assembly (*Abgeordnetenhaus*) 30. The debts of the province, contracted before the occupation by Prussia, amount to 2,220,000.

**Population.**—The census of 1871 gave the population 1,063,618, 1,718,684 belonged to the Evangelical Church, 233,638 were Roman Catholics, and 12,790 Jews. The urban population numbered

Counties	Extent in English sq miles	Population, 1st Dec. 1875			Inhabitants to the sq mile
		Males	Females	Total	
Hanover	2197.4	215,864	214,695	430,559	196
Hildesheim	1911.7	200,010	200,587	413,597	213
Stralsund	2409.7	184,691	183,615	368,306	153
Osnabrück	2368.6	180,761	178,000	358,761	123
Aurich	1181.0	99,810	101,748	201,558	170
	11548.0	1,007,725	1,006,663	2,017,393	139

608,102, and the rural 1,454,597. By the census of 1875 the population had reached 2,017,429. There are 111 towns, but only 9 have a population exceeding 10,000, viz. Hanover, Osnabrück, Hildesheim, Lüneburg, Hainburg, Lüneburg, Celle, Göttingen, and Emden.

**Education.**—Amongst the educational institutions the university of Göttingen stands with an average yearly attendance of 4000 students. There are besides 18 gymnasia, a polytechnicum, 91 private grammar schools, 11 normal and training schools, a polytechnic school at Hanover, a school of mines and forestry at Clausthal, several art, music, and schools of agriculture, 3 orphan asylums, the deaf and dumb, 2 for the blind, and numerous other charitable institutions.

**Industry.**—The wool Hanover originally supplied only to the city so called. It was gradually, however, extended to the country of which Hanover was the capital, and it was officially recognized as the name of the state when in 1814 the electorate of Lüneburg was made a kingdom.

In ancient times the country formed part of Saxony, which it remained independent until the time of Charlemagne, and afterwards it was included in the duchy of Saxony. After the extinction of the Balling family, in 1123, the emperor Frederick II. confirmed the duchy was granted to Lothar of Supplinburg, who in 1125 was elected emperor. He gave his daughter in marriage to Henry the Proud, duke of Bavaria, of the ancient house of Guelf, which already had inherited the possessions in Saxony. Henry the Proud became duke of Saxony as well as of Bavaria, and his son Henry the Lion, after a time of bitter dispute, was installed by Frederick Barbarossa in his father's great position. In the latter part of Frederick's reign, in 1180, Henry was deprived of both his duchies, but was allowed to keep the allodial possessions of his family, viz. Brunswick and Lüneburg. In 1223 these lands were yielded by Henry's grandson, Otto IV., to the emperor, Frederick II., who granted them to him as a fief as a duchy. Otto's two sons divided their inheritance into two duchies in 1267, and thus was formed the old Lüneburg and the old Brunswick lines. There was a fresh division in 1283, whereby was formed the Brunswick-Wolfenbüttel lines of Brunswick and Lüneburg. From 1527 Lüneburg was under the sole government of Duke Ernest the Confessor, who was an ardent adherent of Luther, and so persistently laboured to promote the Reformation in Lüneburg that he was banished by the Pope's legate several times. He died in the same year as his friend Luther, 1546, and from him descended the younger lines of Brunswick and Lüneburg, or of Brunswick-Wolfenbüttel and Brunswick-Lüneburg. In 1684 Duke Frederick Ulrich of Brunswick-Wolfenbüttel suddenly died childless, and his duchy was inherited by Augustus the younger, the descendant of Ernest's eldest son Henry, and Brunswick has remained in the hands of this dynasty till the present day. Meanwhile the younger line of Brunswick-Lüneburg, the younger son of Ernest the Confessor, and when he died in 1692 he left seven sons, of whom four, Ernest, Christian, Augustus the elder, and Frederick, one after the other, became rulers of the land. Frederick III. died childless in 1746, the year in which the Thirty Years' War was brought to a close. The

only one of the seven brothers who married was George, to whom was granted as a separate duchy a part of Lüneburg called Oelbeng, of which he made Hanover the capital, Oelbeng being the capital of Lüneburg. He married that his eldest son should be allowed to inherit either Lüneburg or Lüneburg, but in 1666, when he died, the duchy was chosen by his brother, and that the remaining sons should be content without having territory to govern. The result of this settlement was that his eldest son, Christian Louis, chose Lüneburg, where he ruled till his death, in 1705. George was the second son, ruled over Calenberg till 1686, when he transferred himself to Lüneburg, which he governed till 1706. On his going to Lüneburg, the third brother, John Frederick, became duke of Calenberg, in which position he was succeeded by his son, Augustus, the fourth brother, who married Sophia the grand-daughter of James I. of England. Ernest Augustus was an exceedingly ambitious prince, and in order to increase the power of his country introduced in 1682 the law of primogeniture. Afterwards, in 1692, in consequence of a vast amount of negotiation and intrigue, he managed to secure for himself and his successors the electoral title. He died in 1698, and was succeeded by his son George Louis, who, having married his cousin Sophia Dorothea, the daughter of George William of Calenberg, firmly united the two duchies on the death of the latter prince. In 1714 George Louis, the elector of Lüneburg, ascended the throne of Great Britain as George I.

After this time, until the death of William IV., Lüneburg or Hanover had the same sovereign as Great Britain, and this personal union of the two countries was continued without interruption for both George II. and the ally of Frederick the Great in the Seven Years' War, joined the struggle in the capacity both of elector and king, and while George III. was on the throne there was hardly a phase of the foreign policy of England, in which Hanover was not reflected. In 1803, when the Hanoverian troops capitulated at Bülzburg, the country was invaded by a French corps, which it had to maintain at a heavy cost. The Prussians received temporary possession of Hanover on Napoleon in 1806, but in 1807 a part of it was annexed to the kingdom of Westphalia, to which the remaining portion was added in 1810. The people never acquiesced in French predominance, and when the first struggle with Napoleon came they distinguished themselves by a *Volonté* with which they flung themselves into it. At the congress of Vienna in 1815 it was demanded in the name of the elector (King George III.) that the elector should be recognized as king of the kingdom, and not only was the demand admitted, but the new kingdom received considerable concessions of territory.

Partly through the influence of the French, partly in consequence of the general progress of ideas, Hanover was not, like many other parts of Germany, penetrated by a desire for freedom, and such had been the sufferings of the people, willingly borne for their sovereign and country, that they felt they had a right to be treated in a conciliatory and generous spirit. Their wishes were, however, disregarded. Count Münster, who virtually ruled the country from London, drew up a constitution which came into force in 1819. It was thoroughly reactionary in tendency, and the more resolutely it was carried out, the more completely it was resented by the ruling class. Not until 1831, when these were several popular risings of so serious a nature that Count Münster resigned, was it deemed necessary to make important concessions, and even then the concessions were such that the entire subject of popular rights was scarcely less liberal by William IV. before he sanctioned it in 1838.

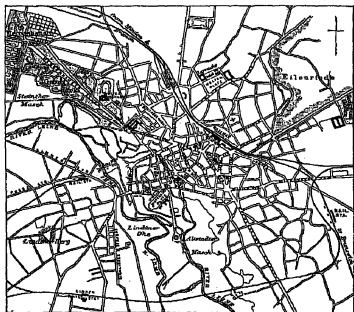
As the law of Hanover prevented a woman from mounting the throne, Ernest Augustus, duke of Cumberland, became king after the death of William IV. in 1837. He proved to be a harsh and narrow minded despot. In 1837 he arbitrarily abolished the constitution of 1833, and when seven professors of the university of Göttingen protested against the act, he ordered by King George III. that three of the most distinguished—Goswami, Jacob Grimm, and Dahlmann—were banished from the country. The people were profoundly stirred, and it was hoped that the obligations imposed by the constitution might be overthrown by King Ernest Augustus and his throne together. By hasty concessions he succeeded in preventing this catastrophe, but no sooner did the agitation begin to abate than he showed a disposition to evade the obligations imposed by the constitution which had been sworn by him. The comparatively liberal ministry which had been appointed in the moment of danger was dismissed in 1840, and probably only the death of the king in 1851 prevented him from engaging in as serious a contest as ever with the people. He was succeeded by his son, King George V., who failed to establish the unity of Germany, he joined the kings of Prussia and Saxony in forming what was called "the three kings' alliance," but he soon was estranged from this connection, and distinguished himself with the thoroughly conservative policy of Austria.

Ernest Augustus was succeeded by his blind son, George V. Personally King George was of an amiable disposition, but he shared his father's extravagant conceptions of royal rights, and at once appointed a ministry whose aim was to get rid of the inconvenient constitution of 1848. The second chamber, however, resisted its designs so energetically that in 1853 the more reactionary ministers had to resign, and in 1858 even the modified cabinet was completely defeated. The king then created a Government which advised him to appeal to the confederate diet. This was done, and in 1859 the diet proclaimed the constitution of 1848 to be invalid. That a more easy triumph might be secured, the states assembly was dissolved, and a ministry was formed which boldly restored the nominal constitution of 1849. The Government spared no effort to obtain an overbearing majority, but, as it still encountered some resistance in the new parliament, fresh elections were ordered, and in 1857 it had the satisfaction of meeting as plenary a body of deputies so the king himself could wish. The people, however, were not in sympathy with their nominal representatives, and gave many proofs of their discontent with the arbitrary rule to which they were subjected. In 1862, when an attempt was made to impose upon the schools the use of a textbook of the 17th century, the popular feeling was so decisively expressed that the king was compelled to dismiss his ministers. The new cabinet, which was rather less extravagant, included Herr Windthorst, who had for a short time had a seat in the Government, and who reigned in 1863, and who has since acquired distinction as leader of the Ultramontane party in the imperial parliament of Germany. King George could not long submit even to a slight modification of his absolutist notions, and in 1865 entrusted Herr von Bismarck, who had done him faithful service in previous administrations, with the task of bringing together a cabinet to his liking.

Meanwhile, however, dangers had arisen in Germany, compared with which the internal troubles of Hanover were of small account. Herr von Bismarck, who now controlled Prussian policy, was devising methods for the realization of his vast schemes; and it became increasingly clear, after the Schleswig-Holstein war, that the German states of Germany would soon have to accept finally the lead either of Prussia or of Austria. Before the outbreak of that conflict Hanover and Saxony had despatched troops to Holstein for the purpose of executing the will of the house. Although the federal army was driven back by Prussia, Hanover seemed for a time to be favourable to her rather than to Austria; but in reality the sympathy of the court was altogether with the latter power. On the 14th of June 1866, in regard to the decisive question as to whether the federal army should be mobilized, Hanover voted in the confederate diet with Austria; and by doing so she irrevocably declared on which side she would range herself in the approaching struggle. In consequence of this vote Prussia addressed an ultimatum to Hanover on the 16th of June, requiring her to maintain unarmed neutrality and to accept the scheme for the reform of this confederation which the Prussian plenipotentiary had submitted to the diet before retiring from it. As Hanover rejected these demands, Prussian troops at once crossed the frontier; and on the 17th of June they were in possession of the capital. On the 27th a battle was fought at Langensalza, in which the Hanoverians were victorious; but they could make no use of their victory, and were soon compelled to capitulate. At the conclusion of the war, by the treaty of Prague, Hanover, with Hesse, Nassau, and Frankfurt, was annexed to Prussia. King George addressed from Hildesheim, near Vienna, a protest to the European cabinets, but it was disregarded; and on the 3d of October 1866, his dominions were formally taken possession of, and in the following year the population were subjected to the Prussian constitution. In 1878 George V. died at Hildesheim, but his son, Ernest Augustus, duke of Cumberland, maintains his right to the crown; and there is still a party in Hanover which expresses itself favourable to him. The towns of the population, however, whether originally willing to be annexed to Prussia or not, have submitted to the inevitable, and there is evidence that they are gradually becoming loyal subjects of the Prussian King.

HANOVER, the capital, is situated in the south of the above province, on a sandy but fertile plain on the river Leine, which here receives the Ilme, and is from this point navigable to the Weser. It is 33 miles W. by N. of Brunswick by rail, 157 miles W. of Berlin, 73 S.E. of Bremen, and 107 S. of Hamburg. The Leine flows through the town, having the old town on its right bank, and the Calenberg new town between its left bank and the Ilme. The old town is irregularly built, with narrow streets and old-fashioned houses; while the new town has wide streets, handsome buildings, and beautiful squares. Of the latter the most remarkable are—the square at the railway terminus, with an equestrian statue of King Ernest

Augustus in bronze; the triangular theatre square; George Square, with the statue of Schiller; Waterloo Square, with a column 99 feet high, surmounted by Victory, and having inscribed on it the names of 800 Hanoverians who fell at Waterloo. In the gardens near the square an open rotunda has been erected enclosing a marble bust of Leibnitz, and near it a monument of General Alten, commander of the Hanoverian troops at Waterloo. The town has numerous churches; in the chapel of the palace are preserved the relics of saints which Henry Lion brought from Palestine. The royal palace—built 1636-1640, rebuilt 1837—contains a picture gallery and collection of natural curiosities, and the palace of Ernest Augustus is remarkable for its historic collections, especially the famous Welfen museum. The other principal public buildings are the record office, containing a library of 150,000 volumes; the town-hall, built in the 15th century; the theatre, the museum, the aquarium, the handsome railway terminus, and the exchange. Hanover has a number of colleges and schools, and is the seat of several learned societies. During the last ten years the town has become the seat of various new industries and of an increasing trade. It is connected by rail



Plan of Hanover.

- |                      |                   |                  |                               |
|----------------------|-------------------|------------------|-------------------------------|
| 1. Cavalry Barracks. | 4. George Square. | 6. Markt Kirche. | 9. Palace of Ernest Augustus. |
| 2. Bank.             | 5. Theatre.       | 7. Town-Hall.    | 10. Library.                  |
| 3. Theatre.          | 8. Royal Palace.  |                  |                               |

with Berlin, Harburg, Bremen, Hameln, Cologne, Altenbeken, and Cassel; and the annual fairs for cloth, leather, yarns, linen, wool, &c., are frequented by large numbers of buyers. There are several banks and a chamber of commerce. Almost every industry is at present represented, whilst in former times the inhabitants derived their chief support from the presence of the court and the nobility. The town possesses large cotton-mills, iron-foundries, and machine factories, numerous tobacco manufactories, breweries, distilleries, &c. Hanover was the first German town that was lighted with gas. It is the birthplace of Sir William Herschel the astronomer (1738), of the brothers Schlegel, and of the historian Furtz; and the philosopher Leibnitz died there (1716). The population has increased from 49,009 (including suburbs) in 1859 to 106,677 in 1879 (with the adjoining Linden, 127,576). In the vicinity are the royal palaces of Herrenhausen, the unfinished Wolfenbushloss (formerly Mont Brillant), and Marienburg, the private property of Queen Marie, all surrounded by gardens.

See Huing, *Notizen über den ersten Druckversuch des Lithographischen (Hofverl., 1720)*, Lebnitz, *Verzeichnis der in Preussen erschienenen (Hof., 1707-11)*, Huiting, *Lithographische Kunst in Preussen (Mühlberg, 1786)*, continued till 1820 by Meibom (ibid. 1820), Huns, *Geschichte des Königs Hansens und des ersten Bischofs von Huns (Hun., 1825-30)*, Havesin, *Geschichte der Lande Lauenburg und Lüneburg (Göttingen, 1813-57)*, Göttsch, *Geschichte der alten Landstadt Pfortingen des Königs Hansens, 181-18 (Hun., 1857)*, Schauer, *Handbuch des Rechts der Lande Lauenburg und Lüneburg (Hun. 1864)*, Gutho, *Die Lande Braunschweig und Hannover (Hun., 1867)*, Oppenmann, *Das Gesch. Hanovers, 1852-60 (Hun., 1868)*, Eichart, *Geschichte der Königl. lithographischen Anstalt (Bun. 1869-71)*. (P. 3—4) S. 1.

HANSARD, LOUIS (1752-1828), English printer, whose name is familiar in connexion with the parliamentary reports, was born July 5, 1752, in St Mary's parish, Norwich. Reverses in business compelled his father, a manufacturer there, to apprentice him to Mr Stephen White, printer. Immediately on the expiry of his apprenticeship Hansard sailed for London with only a guinea in his pocket, and obtained there in 1772 a situation as compositor in the office of Mr Hughes, printer to the House of Commons. There his ability and energy commended him so well to his master that in two years' time he was made a partner, and undertook almost the entire conduct of the business, which in 1800 was assigned completely into his hands, through the retirement of Mr Hughes. Among those whose acquaintance Hansard made in the exercise of his profession and retained by his amiable private qualities, were Orme, Burke, and Dr Johnson, while Porson eulogized him as the most accurate printer of Greek. The promptitude and accuracy with which Hansard printed parliamentary papers were often of the greatest service to Government,—notably on one occasion when the proof-sheets of the report of the Select Committee on the French Revolution were submitted to Pitt twenty-four hours after the draft had left his hands. On the union with Ireland in 1801, the increase of parliamentary printing was so great that Hansard was forced to give up all private printing except when parliament was not sitting. He devised numerous expedients for reducing the expense of publishing the reports, and in 1805, when his workmen struck at a time of great pressure, he and his sons did not scruple themselves to work as compositors, and to instruct the new hands they had procured. Shortly after printing the report of the session that rose in July 1828, Hansard's health, which had been failing, completely gave way, and he died on October 29 of the same year. See the *Gentleman's Magazine* for December 1828.

HANSEATIC LEAGUE. The word "hanse," when we find it first in the Gothic Bible of Ulfila, signifies a military assemblage or troop. From this comes the general sense of union, and especially in the Middle Ages of union for mercantile purposes. A later but less important meaning is that of a tax paid by traders for the right of forming such an union.

The Hanse, the league which ultimately overshadowed all rivals and usurped the name for itself, was no intentional creation, and has no exact date for its origin. It arose gradually from two elements, the union of German merchants abroad, and the union of German towns at home.

The first impulse to mercantile union came from the dangers of travelling in the early Middle Ages. In those days mariners had neither chart nor compass to guide their course, and were forced to creep timidly along the shore and to avoid as much as possible the open sea. The merchant had also to dread more positive dangers than those of storm and wreck. The coasts of northern Germany harboured numbers of rovers and pirates, who regarded the peaceful trader as their natural prey. To increase their powers of resistance, it was usual for merchants to undertake their voyages in more or less numerous companies. The union thus begun on sea was still further cemented

on land. In those days law was personal and not territorial. The foreign merchant had no share in the law of the land where he sojourned, he brought with him his own law, and administered it as best he could. The legal customs of northern Germany were substantially alike, and this similarity strengthened the bonds of union among the merchants who found themselves for a time settled in a foreign land. Moreover, the state of trade frequently required a long stay, and sometimes a depositing of goods among strangers. This led in time to the acquisition of common possessions abroad, lodging, warehouses, &c. This common deposit, or "factory," became the central point of the union of Hansa formed by the merchants. The union soon received a corporate constitution. At its head stood the elders, whose chief functions were to administer justice and to represent the society in its relations to the natives of the country. It was by means of these orderly unions that the German merchants obtained their important privileges, chiefly advantages in trade and taxes, from the people among whom they sojourned.

The most important German mercantile settlements were founded in Wisby, the capital of Gothland, in London, Novgorod, Bergen, and Bruges. Wisby was the central point of the Baltic trade, the other towns represent the four extreme points of North-German commerce. It was not unnatural that the mercantile settlements should exercise great influence on the towns from which they sprang. In those towns the municipal government was wholly in the hands of merchants. There was no feudal aristocracy as in the Italian cities, and the artisan was always jealously excluded from political power. It is obvious therefore that the policy of the town-councils would often be influenced by the exigencies of foreign commerce. But the influence of the foreign factories was not exerted by all in an equal degree. Wisby differed from the other settlements in the fact that the Germans there were not merchants making a temporary visit, but were real settlers living side by side with the native population. Novgorod was a mere colony of the German settlement in Wisby, and never held an independent position. Bergen was comparatively unimportant, and the German "consulate" in Bruges was not formed until some amount of union had been attained at home. But in the German colony in London the majority of the members were merely passing traders, who remained citizens of their native towns. It was therefore the London Hansa which exercised the greatest influence on the growth of the town league.

In the reign of Edgar we find the "people of the emperor" occupying a prominent position in London trade, and joined in a lasting league. The members of this league came mostly from Cologne, the first German town which obtained great importance both at home and abroad. Its citizens possessed at an early date a guild-hall of their own, and all Germans who wished to trade with England had to join their guild. This soon included merchants from Dortmund, Soest, and Munster, in Westphalia, from Utrecht, Stever, and Groningen, in the Netherlands, and from Bremen and Hamburg on the North Sea. But when, at the beginning of the 13th century, the rapidly rising town of Lubeck wished to be admitted into the guild, every effort was made to keep her out. The intervention of the emperor Frederick II was powerless to overcome the dread felt by Cologne towards a possible rival to its supremacy. But this obstacle to the extension of the league was soon overcome. In 1260 a charter of Henry III assured protection to all German merchants. A few years later Hamburg and Lubeck were allowed to form their own guilds. The Hansa of Cologne, which had long been the only guild, now sinks to the position of a branch Hansa, and has to endure others with equal privileges. Over all the

branch Hansa rises the "Hansa Alamannae," first mentioned in 1382.

The opposition to the exclusive pretensions of Cologne was chiefly the work of Lübeck, and with the rise of Lübeck we must connect the second element, the internal political element, which contributed to the formation of the Hansa. The old capitals of German trade, Cologne and Wisby, took their stand on the unions of German merchants abroad. In opposition to them Lübeck found support in home alliances, in its league with Hamburg and with the Wendish towns. The alliance between Lübeck and Hamburg is generally and with some truth given as the origin of the Hanseatic League. It was well fitted to play this part. These two towns commanded the commerce of the North Sea and the Baltic. By taking the land route between them, a merchant could avoid the dangerous passage of the Sound or the Belts, and could evade the Sound dues which were often exacted by the Danish kings. The first alliance between the two towns, for which there is no exact date, had for its object the defence of the roads between them. From that came agreements as to mutual legal security, and thence they advanced to common political action in London and in Flanders.

The league between Lübeck and Hamburg was not the only, and possibly not the first, league among the German towns. But it gradually absorbed all the others. Besides the influence of foreign commercial interests there were other motives which compelled the towns to union. The chief of these were the protection of commercial routes both by sea and land, and the vindication of town independence as opposed to the claims of the landed aristocracy. The first to join this league were the Wendish towns to the east, Wismar, Rostock, Stralsund, &c., which had always been intimately connected with Lübeck, and were united by a common system of law known as the "Lübisches Recht." The Saxon and Westphalian towns had long possessed a league among themselves, they also joined themselves to Lübeck. Lübeck now became the most important town in Germany. It had already surpassed Cologne both in London and Bruges. It soon gained a similar victory over Wisby. At a great convention in which twenty-four towns from Cologne to Revel took part it was decided that appeals from Novgorod which had hitherto been decided at Wisby should henceforth be brought to Lübeck.

In the 14th century the Hansa changes from a union of merchants abroad to a league of towns at home. In 1330 mention is first made of the Hansa towns, where before it had been the Hansa merchants. In 1343 the league is first designated as the Hansa by a foreign prince, Magnus of Norway, and thus acquires a diplomatic position as a united state. In 1356 a statute about mercantile privileges at Bruges is made, not by the German merchants, but by the towns themselves, through their representatives assembled at Bruges. Henceforth the town-league subordinates to itself the mercantile unions, the factories and depôts of the merchants lose their independence, and become the "counters," as they are called, of the Hansa towns.

The league thus formed would scarcely have held long together or displayed any real federal unity but for the pressure of external dangers. The true function of the Hansa, and especially of the Baltic towns, was to conduct the commerce between the east and west of northern Europe. But the geographical position of the Scandinavian countries enabled them to interpose a bar to this commerce. Thus from an early period the Hansa stood in a position of watchful hostility towards those countries. It was the careful maintenance of this watch over the Baltic which gave Lübeck its position in the league, and which gave

the League its political as contrasted with its mercantile character.

The most dangerous of the Scandinavian countries at this time was Denmark. Until the 16th century the southern coast of what is now Sweden was in the hands of the Danes, who were thus enabled to command the important channel of the Sound, and to interfere with the herring fisheries, a great source of wealth to the Hansa merchants. The Danish kings were almost always opposed to German interests, and were especially jealous of the supremacy of German traders in the Baltic. Eric Menved (1286-1319) almost succeeded in making himself master of the southern coast of the Baltic. He captured Rostock and the island of Rugen. Even Lübeck submitted to him, and was for a time peacefully detached from the empire. Stralsund alone successfully resisted the Danish attack. The league of Wendish towns was for the time wholly broken up, and the growth of the Hansa was arrested, but it was saved from total dissolution by the feuds which distracted Denmark. Eric's successor, Christopher II, an exile from Denmark, fled to the very towns which his predecessor had humbled. After extorting from him numerous privileges, especially the exclusive right to the fisheries on the coast of Schonen, the Hansa towns restored him to his throne, though to only a fraction of his former power. From 1333 to 1340 Denmark was without a king, and a power vacuum was created. But as it recovered strength it again became formidable to the Hansa. Waldemar III (1340-1377) devoted the early part of his reign to the recovery of the lands which Denmark had lost during the recent troubles. To carry out this policy he had to spend large sums of money, and in his straits he determined to enrich himself by the plunder of German commerce. In 1361 he sailed to Gothland, and surprised and captured the town of Wisby. The news of this act reached the representatives of the Hansa as they were assembled at Gneisswald. They at once resolved on war, and in 1362 their fleet stormed and captured Copenhagen. But while they were besieging the strong fortress of Helsingborg, Waldemar attacked their defenceless fleet and destroyed it. This defeat was followed by a truce, which recognized the Danish possession of Gothland. Waldemar might easily have turned this truce into an advantageous peace, but his success seems to have inspired him with the hope of ending German ascendancy in northern Europe. In 1367 a Hanseatic assembly at Stralsund was informed that Waldemar had laid new duties on the fishing stations, and that he had robbed German merchants in the Sound and the Belts. Another war was inevitable, and this time the result was different. Waldemar did not await the arrival of the hostile fleet, but fled in 1368 to Brandenburg. Denmark fell entirely into the hands of the League. In 1370 Waldemar was compelled, as the price of his return to his kingdom, to sign the treaty of Stralsund. By this treaty the Hansa obtained possession for five years of all fortresses on the coast of Schonen, and as compensation for its losses was to receive for fifteen years two-thirds of the Danish revenues. It was also stipulated that henceforth no king should ascend the throne of Denmark without the consent of the Hansa towns, and that their privileges should be expressly confirmed at each coronation. The treaty of Stralsund marks the zenith of the power and prosperity of the Hansa. The emperor Charles IV, who had always looked coldly on independent combinations among his subjects, seems to have been induced to alter his policy, and in 1375 he distinguished Lübeck by a personal visit.

The war against Waldemar III seems to have had a great effect in consolidating the Hanseatic League, and in forcing it to adopt a federal constitution. From 1361 we can date the regular meeting of the general assemblies, whose acts (Recesses) have been preserved in the archives

at Lubeck These assemblies met once a year about midsummer, usually but not exclusively at Lubeck. They were attended by representatives of the various towns, but no one below the rank of councillor could act as representative. The League always endeavoured to maintain its aristocratic character. The assemblies buried themselves with all the details of foreign policy as well as of internal management. The penalty for nonobservance of their duties was expulsion from the League (*Verhörung*). The chief offence which brought this punishment on a town was the admission of democratic tendencies. The struggle between the artisans and the old burgher families, which is so important a feature of European history in the 13th and 14th centuries, necessarily affected the Hanse towns. It was for admitting artisans to the council that Brunswick was expelled from the League in 1375, and was not re-admitted till 1380, when the old constitution was restored.

Besides the central constitution of the Hansa, there are also traces of an internal grouping. At times the German merchants are divided, according as they came from (1) the Wendish and Saxon towns, (2) Westphalia and Prussia, (3) Gothland, Livonia, and Sweden. This division is supposed to refer to a real division of the League, each third being gathered round one of the three chief towns, Lubeck, Cologne, and Wisby. But in later times we find the League divided into four quarters with their respective capitals—Lubeck, Cologne, Brunswick, and Danzig.

Although, by comparing the documents which have come down to us, we can trace the existence of a fairly definite system of government, yet we must not imagine that this system was carried out with the regularity of a modern constitution. The composition of the League was always fluctuating, and it is impossible to say at any fixed time how many members it contained. The towns lay vented over a large territory extending from Revel to the Scheldt, and their interests, both territorial and commercial, must have often clashed. It was only in time of danger that the League displayed any real consistency. When the immediate danger was withdrawn, the want of union soon made itself again manifest. It is true that the towns joined the League of their own accord, but when they had joined, they tried to make their position as independent as possible. They never considered themselves bound to send deputies to the general assemblies. When the deputies did appear they usually came late, and after a matter had been discussed they would insist on referring it to the town-council at home, as their own powers were insufficient. The wonder lies, not in the dissensions which sprang up among the towns, but in the fact that for three centuries they did in a manner hold together, and not infrequently sacrificed their individual advantages for the common good.

From the very moment of the treaty of Stalsund, the weakness of a community founded chiefly on commercial interests began to show itself. The eastern Baltic towns, especially those of Prussia, were indignant at the erection of a staple at Lubeck. They desired to trade directly with England and Flanders. To repress this movement Lubeck as the head of the League entered into the closest relations with the Teutonic order. But the evil of these dissensions lay in the fact that they distracted the attention of the Hansa towns from events in Scandinavia. The influence guaranteed to them by the treaty of Stalsund was never exercised, and their suppleanness allowed Margaret, Waldemar III's daughter, to unite the crowns of the three Scandinavian kingdoms at Calmar in 1397. The election of a powerful northern state was obviously dangerous to the ascendancy of the Hansa. About the same time their allies, the Teutonic knights, were threatened in a similar manner by the accession of the Jagellon dynasty in Poland. The battle of Tannenberg (1410) and the peace of Thorn

(1411) were clear signs that the Slavonic race was beginning to turn the tables on its German oppressors. At one time it seemed probable that Slavs and Scandinavians would unite in a great anti-German crusade, and that the Hansa and the Teutonic order—the pioneers of German civilization in northern Europe—would fall victims to the alliance. During the 15th century the Hansa towns were frequently compelled to seek safety in arms. Then constant policy was to break up the union of Calmar. In 1428 they sent a large fleet against Eric, Margaret's successor, who wished to add Schleswig and Holstein to his possessions. The accession of two German princes, Christopher of Bavaria and Christian I of Oldenburg, to the Danish crown was due in no slight measure to the actions of the Hansa. On the whole the League held its own in this century, though not without considerable and increasing difficulty.

But with the 16th century the Hansa begins really to decline. The English and Dutch proved formidable rivals for the commercial supremacy in northern Europe. Henry VII secured in 1489 a treaty with Hans of Denmark, which gave England the right of commerce in the northern seas, and which enabled English merchants to found mercantile establishments in the ports. The hearings no longer came in crowds to the Swedish and Norwegian coasts, where the members of the Hansa had so long held a practical monopoly of the fisheries. The fish made the time one of their periodical changes of course, and went to the coasts of Holland. The Dutch were not slow to grasp at the advantages thus offered to them. Another great blow was dealt to Hanseatic commerce by the grand discoveries of the age. Most of the German towns were out of the way of the new commercial routes, and could scarcely hope to hold their own with more favourably situated countries.

Besides these causes of decline, the domestic position of the Hansa towns had altered very much for the worse. While in other countries the power of the feudal nobles had fallen before the rapid rise of the monarchy aided by the sympathy of the commons, in Germany alone the power of the princes had constantly increased, at the expense of both king and people. The Reformation and the consequent secularization of church property in northern Germany only served to strengthen the hands of the lay princes. Such a state of things was fatal to the independence of a town league which had always stood opposed to the lawless independence of the nobles. Gradually most of the towns fell off from the League. Foreign countries triumphed at the fall of their formerly successful rival. In Elizabeth's reign the Hanse merchants in London lost the privileges which they had held since the time of Henry III.

Religious disturbances and the fearful distress of the Thirty Years War completed the work thus begun. The peace of Westphalia restored the form but not the reality of the League. In 1699 the last general assembly was held. Henceforth the name of Hansa towns was kept by Lubeck, Hamburg, and Bremen, but it was to designate then independence, not their union.

*References.—Hanse Recueil, 1256-1480, B i-iv, and 1481-1476, B i and ii. G F Sartorius, Urkundliche Geschichte des Ursprungs des deutschen Hanse (edited by J M Lappenberg), Leipzig, 1860. Deutsche Geschichte der hanseatischen Städte, in London (Hamburg, 1861). Wehmann, Die Lubecker Zunftrollen (Lubeck, 1872). Kail von Schöner, Die Hansa und der deutsche Orden in den Ostseeländern (die Hanseatische Geschichte völler, Schöner, Die Hanseatische und König Waldemar von Dänemark (1878). (B L.)*

HANSEN, PETER ANDREAS (1795-1874), astronomer, was born on December 8, 1795, at Tondern, in the duchy of Schleswig. When a youth he served an apprenticeship to a clock and watchmaker at Flensburg, with whom he remained several years. During this time he exhibited an



he arrived at St Petersburg July 9, 1780. The autumn of that year he spent travelling in Germany and Holland, and on October 28th he landed in England, where the narrative of his travels published in 1783 soon made him a man of note. The rest of his life was for the most part spent in London, and his leisure was devoted to the advocacy and support of all kinds of useful and benevolent enterprises. In 1763 he was appointed one of the commissioners for victualling the navy, and on his resignation in 1783 he received the whole of his salary as a pension. He died September 5, 1786. Hanway was naturally a healthy and active man, in Russia he was known as the handsome Englishman, but the effects of his travels in Persia rendered him somewhat of a valétudinaire. He is popularly known as the first Englishman to carry an umbrella in his native country, thus he persisted in using in spite of all the efforts of the hackney coachmen to hood or hustle him into conformity. He succeeded in winning down the custom of giving veils, and in his *Journey from Portsmouth to Kensington* he attacked the pernicious habit of tea-drinking, which, however, found an able and ardent defender in Dr Johnson. In 1787 he took an active part in founding the Marine Society, the object of which was to fit out poor boys and men for the navy, he was one of the originators of the Magdalen Hospital, it was due to his continued efforts that the Act of George III was passed for the better treatment of the parish infants, and in 1785 he took up the lamentable case of those little chimney-sweepers whose dangerous occupation is now a thing of the past. The method of solitary confinement for prisoners found in him one of its earliest advocates, and in various other ways he sought to improve the chances of the criminal population. "Every man," was his theory, "is capable of good if properly treated." If doing justice to an offender implies an attempt to reform him by using the proper means, by parity of reasoning the using of improper means is doing injustice." Hanway's writings are of little value except for the sake of the causes which they supported, while effective as pamphlets, they lack both style and method, and are apt to run over into platitudinous moralizings. See Pugh, *Remarkable Occurrences in the Life of Jonas Hanway*, 1787.

HAPEARANDA, from *Haaparanta*, "Aspen-shore," a small town of Sweden in the district of Torné, at the northern end of the Gulf of Bothnia, in 65° 51' N lat. It lies about a mile from the mouth of the Torné-Elf, exactly opposite the town of Torné, which has belonged to Russia since 1809. Haaparanda was founded in 1812, and at first bore the name of Carlöfshamnstad or Charles John's Town. It received its municipal constitution in 1842. The inhabitants, who according to the census of 1875 number 914, carry on a brisk trade and engage in ship-building. Since 1859 the town has been the seat of a meteorological station, which is one of the most valuable in Europe, not only because it lies so far north, but also because of its position at the head of the Gulf of Bothnia, and immediately to the south of the line of junction between the permanently open sea and the sea which is frozen during the winter months, or, in other words, in the region where at certain seasons there is an extraordinary crowding together of the isothermal lines.

HABSBURG, or HABSBURG (originally *Habsburg*, that is, *Hawkescastle*), an old German family which has given sovereigns to Germany, Spain, and Austria, takes its name from the castle of Habsburg, now in ruins, situated on the river Aar in the canton of Aargau. The first mention of the countship of Habsburg is in a document of 1099, where the name Werner, count of Habsburg, occurs in connexion with the consecration of the monastery of Muri as confirming the grants of the pious foundations

made by his ancestors. This Werner of Habsburg was a nephew of Werner, bishop of Strassburg, who built the castle of Habsburg about the year 1020. The succession of the family cannot be traced between this period and the time of the emperor Frederick Barbarossa, but in a document whose date is 30th May 1153, Werner II and his son Albert the Rich are mentioned as counts of Habsburg. Thus Albert was by Frederick created landgrave of Upper Alsace, and received the countship of the district of Zurich and the protectorship of the monasteries of Seeligen and Murbach, and on the extinction of the house of Zähringen he also succeeded to a considerable portion of their territories. Albert died in 1199, and was succeeded by his son Rudolf the Old, who, as a reward for placing a large sum of money at the disposal of Frederick II, received from him the countship of Aargau. He held an influential position among the Swabian nobility, and so increased his possessions that they included the territories of the bishops of Strassburg, Constance, Basel, Cone, Ghent, and Lausanne, and of the abbot of St Gall, in addition to which he also obtained the countship of Fribourg. Rudolf left behind him two sons, Albert the Wise and Rudolf II, who shared the possessions between them, and founded respectively the lines of Hapsburg-Hapsburg and Hapsburg-Laufenburg.—Albert, besides the castle of Hapsburg, holding the lands in Aargau and Alsace, and Rudolf the countships of Klettgau, Rheinfeld, and Laufenburg, and the possessions in the latter. The Laufenburg line also divided into two branches, the former of which became extinct in 1408 and the latter in 1415. Laufenburg thereupon fell to Austria, and Klettgau, through the marriage of the female heiress of the line, to the counts Sutz, from whom it passed by marriage in 1087 to the house of Solvazenberg. Albert the Wise of Hapsburg-Hapsburg was married to the countess of Kyburg, who was descended from the dukes of Zähringen, and related to the emperor Frederick II. From this union there was born on the 1st May 1218, Rudolf, the founder of the royal dynasty of Hapsburg. He was elected king of Germany in 1273, and after the defeat and death of Ottocar, king of Bohemia, in 1278, at Marchfeld on the Danube, he annexed to his possessions Austria, Styria, Carinthia, and Carniola. On the death of Rudolf in 1291 Adolf, count of Nassau, was elected his successor to the German crown, but although on the death of Adolf it again reverted to the Hapsburg line in the person of Albert I, it passed on his death to Henry, count of Luxemburg, and with the exception of the doubtful period when Frederick, eldest son of Albert, and Lewis, duke of Bavaria, divided the suffrages of the electors and were crowned, the one at Bonn and the other at Aix-la-Chapelle, the Hapsburg line remained excluded from its possession till the time of Albert II, who succeeded Sigismund as king of Bohemia and Hungary in 1437, and was chosen emperor of the Romans in 1438. The greater part of the original lands of the house were gradually lost by the victories of the Eidgenossen, who finally in 1474 obtained Aargau, in which the castle of Habsburg was situated. Philip, son of Maximilian I and of Donna Juana of Spain, ascended the Spanish throne in May 1506, and on his death in September of the same year, he was succeeded by Charles I, who was chosen emperor in 1519, and was thenceforth known as Charles V. In 1521 Charles granted his Austrian possessions to Ferdinand I, who became the head of the Austrian dynasty. The Spanish branch became extinct in 1700 with the death of King Charles II, and the male line of the Austrian branch became extinct with the death of the emperor Charles VI in 1740, but the Austrian house was continued in the female line by Maria Theresa, who by her marriage with Francis of Lotharinga, chosen emperor in 1745, founded





## HARBOURS AND DOCKS

## I. HARBOURS.

Plates  
VIII.—  
XII.

ALL harbours may be classed either as havens for the protection of ships during storms, or as ports suited for commercial purposes. Of the first mentioned class, or those which are called harbours of refuge, some are natural and some artificial.

The designing of harbours constitutes confessedly one of the most difficult branches of civil engineering. In making such a design the engineer, of course, avails himself of the information which is derived from past experience, and endeavours, to the best of his power, to institute a comparison between the given locality and some existing harbour which he supposes to be similarly situated. Perfect identity, however, in the physical peculiarities of different localities seldom if ever exists, and all that can be done in deriving benefit from past experience is to select the harbour which seems most nearly to resemble the proposed work.

In order the better to understand the nature of the difficulties which beset the marine engineer, let us suppose that he is called upon to design works for the accommodation of shipping in a given locality. The questions which immediately press on his attention are—(1) What is the cheapest kind of design that is suitable for the place and sufficient for the class of shipping which has to be accommodated? and (2) What are the smallest sizes of materials and thickness of walls that are admissible in its construction? as on these the cost of the work will materially depend. Before considering how far it is possible to answer such questions, let us endeavour to define the varieties of design into which all sorts of harbours may, with propriety, be resolved.

In the first place they may be all classed under two main heads—*viz.*, *interior works* and *exterior works*.

The interior works are provided for the accommodation and repair of vessels, while the exterior works may be conveniently enough divided into the following five classes.

## 1. Harbours of Refuge and Anchorage Breakwaters.

These consist of one or more breakwaters, so arranged as to form a safe roadstead, which shall be easily accessible to the largest vessels in all states of the weather and tide. A breakwater forms a barrier either complete or partial to the progress of the waves, and is intended for sheltering the anchorage ground under its lee. It is not used for commercial traffic as are piers or quays, and therefore a parapet is not necessarily required for preventing the waves from breaking over the top, although this may be useful as a protection against the wind.

2. Deep-water and Tidal Harbours for Commercial Purposes (fig. 1, a, b).—A harbour for commercial purposes is any arrangement of piers or breakwaters, or of both, which

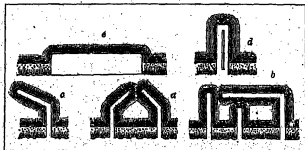


Fig. 1.

encloses and so tranquillises a sheet of water, that vessels may be moored at the quay walls or wharves which form the inner sides of the piers. Where the coast line lies open to

a very heavy sea it is often found necessary to make a double or compound harbour (fig. 1, b). In such a case the entrances to the inner basin is situated within the sheltered area formed by the outer works.

3. *Kanted or Curved Piers* (fig. 1, c).—Where there is a single pier of this kind vessels lie under the lee of the kant or kanta, and the sheltered side of the pier is therefore finished as a quay. As the outer end of any such single pier is surrounded by the open sea, it may be convenient to call it a "free end" in contradistinction to the outer end of a close harbour, where the sea room in the fairway is limited to the breadth of the entrance which ought, for sheltering the basin, to be made as narrow as is consistent with the safe passage of vessels. Both extremities of all single insulated breakwaters are of course free ends, as are also the seaward ends of all single breakwaters which are connected with the land.

4. *Straight Piers* (fig. 1, d).—A straight pier generally projects at right angles to the coast line, with a free end at its seaward extremity; and, unless when the wind blows right in upon the shore, a straight pier will always afford some shelter on its lee side.

5. *Quay or Wharf* (fig. 1, e).—A quay wall is usually built parallel to the line of shore. It affords no shelter of any kind, and the only advantage which it possesses is that of enabling vessels to load and unload without their having to "beach," or, where the shores are steep, even to take the ground.

It will be observed that all the kinds of piers or harbours just enumerated differ materially from each other in the amount of shelter which they afford, and are suitable for places having very different degrees of exposure. The first step to be taken, therefore, is to select from the different classes of designs which have been enumerated the one which is best adapted to the physical peculiarities of the situation. The engineer in order to make this selection judiciously must keep in view the essential elements of stability, economy, safety of ingress and egress, and convenient accommodation for the trade of the port. If the place be much exposed, he must therefore arrange the different parts of the work so as to produce a harbour which may be easily taken and left in stormy weather, without endangering the tranquillity of the internal area; for it is the combination of the qualities of an easy and safe entrance and exit, with a good "lee" and a smooth interior, which alone constitutes a good harbour. Lastly, he must fix the width of the piers and height of the parapets.

The local characteristics which at the outset demand our Local consideration are—(1) the geological and other physical characteristics of the shore; (2) the exposure; (3) the force of the waves due to the exposure; (4) the strength, direction, and range of the tides; (5) the depth of the bay or sea in which the harbour is to be built; (6) the proximity of deep water to the works, or in other words, the slope of the fore-shore; and (7) the angle at which the heaviest waves impinge on the coast line and on the works.

Before considering some of these questions the reader may refer to figs. 2 and 3, on which are marked the technical names of different parts of harbour works.

## Generation of Waves.

Mistakes as to the level of the highest tides are sometimes made by drawing too hasty conclusions from the presence of vegetable life. In the Rheland Islands there may often be seen large blocks of rock (and to these reference will afterwards be made), which during storms have

Level of  
plane of  
action of  
waves.

been driven over the land at heights much greater than that at which vegetation commences, and far above the ordinary run of the surf.

Level of  
main  
movement  
of ex-  
posure

The level below the surface of low water at which mud reposes will be found of very considerable value in judging of the exposure of a coast. It may appear unlikely that the disturbance of the surface of the sea occasioned by storms should be propagated to great depths, but there is no want of evidence on this head. Sir G. B. Airy, the astronomer-royal, has shown, on theoretical grounds, that at a depth equal to the length of the wave the motion is  $\frac{1}{25}$  of that at the surface, and mentions that heavy ground swells break in a depth of 100 fathoms. Sir J. Coode found, from underwater examinations made with the diving dress, that the shingle of the Oost Bank was moved during heavy winter storms to a depth of 8 fathoms, and Captain E. K. Calver, R.N., has seen waves 6 or 8 feet high change their colour

the sea—to the coasts of Holland, where the waves are much modified. Although it is no doubt true that the flat-bottom vessels of the Dutch are built purposely for resisting a heavy surf, still the fact of their being able to take the open beach in nearly all weathers without any protection from harbour-proves that the waves are very much reduced before they reach the Dutch coast. Mr. Hyde Clarke says—"On the coast of Zealand the Dutch reckoned 84 feet as the greatest height to which any wave would be thrown."

In comparing an existing harbour with a proposed one, the line of perhaps the most obvious element is what may be termed the *line of maximum exposure*, or, in other words, the line of greatest fetch or reach of open sea, and thus can be easily measured from a chart. But though possessed of this information, the engineer still does not know in what ratio the height of the waves increases in relation to any given increase in the line of exposure.

In 1853, in the *Edinburgh New Philosophical Journal*, Mr. Law of Thomas Stevenson stated as the result of experimental ratio of observation that the heights of the waves were most nearly "in the ratio of the square roots of their distances from the seaward shore," or, when  $h$  = height of wave in feet,  $d$  = distance in miles, and  $a$  a coefficient varying with the strength of the wind, then

$$h = a \sqrt{d}$$

The truth of this law has since then been variously tested. The accompanying table contains some of the observations made in 1850-59, as well as later observations on the effects of heavy gales which could only be made at long intervals of time—

Place of Observation	Length of Fetch in Miles	Observed Height of Wave	Height due to Fetch, estimated from formula $h = a \sqrt{d}$	Height due to Fetch, calculated from formula $h = 1.5 \sqrt{d}$
Seabeck low	10	10	3	30
Firth of Forth	18	18	4	32
Orkney	28	40	5	175
Chalmers	36	20	2	49
Ganton	60	40	9	46
Loch Eyle	75	40	4	103
Clyde	90	40	4	125
Colony	90	00	4	65
Dumfries	100	42	4	55
Loch Lomond	110	15	0	0
Loch Lomond	110	00	10	0
Glenelg, Argy.	125	58	6	61
Arcturion	210	68	7	77
Lake of Geneva	200	82	8	827
starting from				
Buckie	110	70	8	8
"	380	70	9	9
"	400	80	9	9
Malindi	140	80	10	10
"	45	100	10	100
Dumfries, Isle of	60	102	10	0
Sea of George's	1140	150	16	1628
Channel	1250	16	16	16
Sunkland, dis-				
tance measured from Broken Bank				
		1007	1007	1007
Mean	61	697	7	79

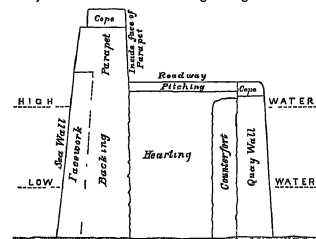


Fig 2

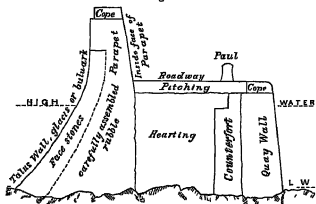


Fig 3

from the abasement of the bottom after passing into water of 7 or 8 fathoms. Captain Caldwell maintains that waves may excavate the bottom at a depth of 655 feet in the ocean, of 163 feet in the Mediterranean, and of 132 feet in the English Channel and Adriatic. From these statements it may easily be inferred that in exposed situations mud can not repose near the surface. Applying such a test to the German Ocean, it is found that in Shetland mud lies in from 80 to 90 fathoms below low water, and its level gradually rises till, on the coast of Holland, it is found at a depth of from 18 to 13 fathoms at the mouth of the Elbe. Now, the violence of the waves upon the shores of the German Ocean certainly corresponds with the rise in the level of the mud, these being a gradual decrease as we come from Shetland and the north of Scotland—where, as will be afterwards shown, wonderful energy is displayed by

Some of these earlier results have also been laid down in Fig 4, so as to form a storm curve, but since the diagram was made many more observations have been obtained which corroborate the law.

The formula  $h = 1.5 \sqrt{d}$  is represented by the parabolic curve in the diagram, which indicates pretty nearly the height of waves during heavy gales, at least in seas which do not greatly differ in depth from those where the observations were made. This formula is of course inapplicable where the water is not of sufficient depth to allow the

<sup>2</sup> It follows from the law that the heights of embankments of rivers above the water surface should, *ceteris paribus*, be proportional to the square roots of the lengths of water over which the wind acts.

<sup>3</sup> *Cours de Construction des Ouvrages d'Art en bois, Liège, 1852, p. 8*

<sup>4</sup> Mr. Mallet, who made these observations, and that the extreme waves appeared to be about twice this height.

waves to be fully formed, or where it becomes so shallow as to reduce their height after they are formed.

It must be observed that in short fetches, as in narrow lochs or arms of the sea, waves are raised higher during very violent gales than the formula indicates, though it does not appear that such waves go on progressing in height in the same high ratio for any considerable distance

man effect, and which are due to the line of maximum effective exposure,  $\alpha =$  azimuthal angle formed between the direction of pier and the line of exposure, then, when the force is resolved normal to the line of pier,—

$$W = A \sin^2 \alpha,$$

but if the force be again resolved in the direction of the waves themselves, the expression becomes

$$W = A \sin^4 \alpha$$

It should not, however, be forgotten, in connection with this subject, that in some cases there are modifying elements to which special attention requires to be given. The waves, for example, when approaching the land obliquely, alter their direction when they get close to the shore, in consequence of the change of depth, and from this cause they approach more nearly at right angles to the general line of the beach, and thus strike with greater force than the line of maximum effective exposure would lead us to expect.

The extraordinary difference between waves which impinge at right angles and others which have even a very slight amount of obliquity has been shown in the most unmistakable manner at the Wick breakwater, where all attempts to make the work stand when exactly at right angles to the waves have hitherto been unsuccessful. It was found by observation that while waves coming from the direction of S by E struck the outer part at normal incidence, they struck the landward end of the same bank at an angle of  $81^\circ$ , giving  $9^\circ$  of obliquity. This small measure of relief was found to make a great difference in the impact upon the wall.

The value of the line of effective exposure varies in certain localities with the geographical configuration of the land, as in Loch Fyne, where the wind seems to alter its direction with the winding of the loch, so that the effective fetch is greater than the width of free water at the place. On the other hand, where the channel expands, the height of the waves is decreased, as at Crugmore in Mull, where the highest wave observed during the winter of 1853-4 was very much less than the formula indicates.

In a case such as represented in fig. 5, the waves which enter the entrance channel or harbour mouth B, though generated apparently in the fetch AB, are largely due to the fetch CB. For the waves generated in the length CA pass round the point A, and are thereafter subject to the impulses of the wind along the line AB. The waves then which enter the harbour mouth, instead of having their point of genesis at A, really take their origin at C, and their height is due to the fetch CB, though reduced by a deflexion round the point A. Lateral friction is due to the passage of the end of the lateral wave along the face of a vertical wall, while lateral erosion friction is due to the end of the wave breaking as it passes along and the face of long talus walls or sloping beaches.

#### Force of Waves

Smeaton, in referring to the propriety of using joggles in the masonry of the Eddystone Lighthouse, says,—“When we have to do with and to endeavour to control those

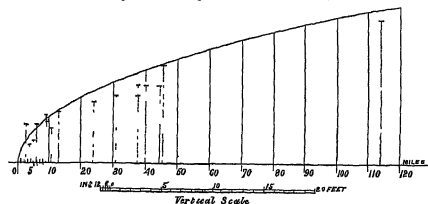


Fig. 4

For short reaches and violent squalls, the formula given in column 5 of the foregoing table will be found more suitable, viz —

$$h = 1.5 \sqrt{d + (2.5 - d)}$$

For all ordinary situations the results in the following table will be found sufficient as a general guide

Table showing approximate Heights of Waves due to lengths of Maximum Fetch by the Formula

Miles	Heights	Miles	Heights	Miles	Heights
1	3.0	20	7.1	38	9.4
2	3.1	21	7.2	40	9.6
3	3.8	22	7.4	41	9.6
4	4.1	23	7.5	42	9.7
5	4.3	24	7.6	43	9.8
6	4.6	25	7.8	44	9.9
7	4.8	26	7.9	45	10.0
8	5.0	27	8.0	46	10.2
9	5.3	28	8.1	47	10.3
10	5.6	29	8.2	48	10.3
11	5.7	30	8.4	49	10.5
12	5.9	31	8.6	50	10.6
13	6.0	32	8.6	60	11.6
14	6.2	33	8.8	70	12.5
15	6.3	34	8.8	80	13.4
16	6.5	35	8.9	90	14.2
17	6.7	36	9.0	100	15.0
18	6.8	37	9.2	110	15.7
19	7.0	38	9.3	120	16.4

The Comte de Marcell, in 1725, observed waves 14 feet 10 inches in height where the longest possible fetch is 600 miles. At Wick, with much the same exposure, waves of about 40 feet have been seen to strike the breakwater. But the highest which are known to have been accurately measured were by Dr Scoresby in the Atlantic, where they attained the height of 43 feet above the hollow. Chaili gives observations of others which were from 90 to 108 feet high, but he does not state how the heights were ascertained.

It does not follow, however, that the line of the maximum exposure is in every case the line of maximum effective force of the waves, for this must depend, not only on the length of fetch, but on the angle of incidence of the waves on the walls of the harbour. What may be termed the line of maximum effective exposure is that which, after being corrected for obliquity of impact, produces the maximum result, and this can only be ascertained from the chart by successive trials.

Let  $\alpha =$  the greatest force that can assail the pier,  $h =$  height of waves which produce (after being corrected for obliquity) the max-



Fig. 5

powers of nature that are subject to no calculation, I trust it will be deemed prudent not to omit, in such a case, anything that can without difficulty be applied, and that would be likely to add to the security." This statement of our greatest marine engineer indicates the propriety of carefully collecting any facts that may help us to a more accurate estimation of those forces which he regarded as being "subject to no calculation."

At the Bishop Rock lighthouse, a bell was broken from its attachment at the level of 106 feet above the high water mark during a gale in the winter of 1860, and at Uist, the most northern of the Shetland Islands, broken open at a height of 105 feet above the sea. To these facts it may be added that, as proved by the testimony of an eye-witness, a block of 50 tons was moved by the sea at Barrahead, one of the Hebrides. But still more extraordinary effects have been observed at Whaley in Scotland, where heavy blocks have been quarried, or broken out of their beds *in situ*, on the top of the Round Skerry at a great elevation above the sea. On the south-east side, about 370 feet from the low water mark, and at a height of 223 feet above its level, there occurs a remarkable beach of angular blocks varying in size from 94 tons downwards, which are huddled together just as one would have expected to find, had they been elevated only a few feet above the high water level. Towards the north-east at the level of 72 feet above the sea, in addition to many smaller blocks which had evidently been recently detached, there was one 54 tons in weight. It presented the appearance of recent detachment, having a fresh unweathered look. Within 20 feet of the spot where it lay, there was a comparatively recently formed void in the rock, which upon examination and comparison by measurement was found to suit exactly the detached block. Here then was a phenomenon so remarkable as almost to stagger belief—a mass of 54 tons not only moved but actually quarried from its position *in situ* at a level of 72 feet above high water spring tides; and higher up still there was another detached rock weighing no less than 14 tons tilted up in a peculiar position, and underneath which numerous angular masses had been wedged, obviously by aqueous action.

But by far the most striking effects as yet recorded were at the harbour works of Wick, which were commenced in 1863, and consisted of blocks of from 5 to 10 tons set on edge, first built above high water near piles with hydraulic lines, then with Roman and latterly with Portland cement. In October 1864, 300 feet of the concrete's staging were carried away, and greenheart were afterwards substituted for Mangel piles, but these too were broken by the sea. The first portion of the wall was, in conformity with usual practice, founded at 12 feet below low water, but 18 feet was subsequently adopted, and the rubble has since been washed down to 15 feet below that level. In 1873 a huge monolithic block of concrete, weighing in all 1350 tons, was removed *en masse* out of its position and carried to leeward of the breakwater. Extraordinary as this may appear, it was surpassed in 1873, when another concrete mass which had been substituted for the one that was moved, was in like manner carried away, though it contained 1600 cubic yards of cement rubble, the weight of which was about 3600 tons.

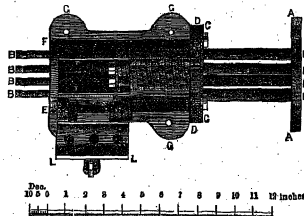


Fig. 6.

The marine dynamometer was constructed by Mr T. Stevenson for the purpose of ascertaining the force of the waves against an obstacle. DEPTH (Fig. 6) is a cast-iron cylinder which is firmly braced at the projecting flanges G to the rock where the experiments are to be made. This cylinder has a circular flange at D. L is a door which is opened when the observation is to be read off. A is a circular disk on which the waves impinge. Fastened to the disk are four guide rods B, which pass through a circular plate C (which is screwed down

to the flange D), and also through holes in the bottom of the cylinder EF. Within the cylinder there is attached to the plate C a very strong steel spring, to the other or free end of which is fastened the small circular plate H, which, again, is secured to the guide rods B. There are also rings of leather F, which slide on the guide rods, and serve as indices for registering how far the rods have been pushed through the holes in the bottom EF, or, in other words, how far the spring has been drawn out by the action of the waves against the disk A. These disks were from 6 to 9 inches in diameter.

The greatest result obtained by the dynamometer at Skerryvore lighthouse, in the Atlantic, was during the heavy westerly gale of 26th March, 1845, when there was registered a force equivalent to 6083 lb, or nearly 3 tons, per square foot, deduced from the area exposed. The next highest was 5322 lb. In the German Ocean the greatest result obtained at the Boll Rook was 3013 lb per square foot.

But subsequent and much more extended observations at Dunbar, in the county of East Lothian, gave 84 tons; while at the harbour works of Durrington, on the coast of Hampshire, the highest result of observations, extending over a period of several years, was 3 tons per square foot.

Mr David Stevenson, when referring, in 1835, to the Depth of lakes in North America, pointed out that the general depth of water must, in order to allow the waves to be fully formed, be considerable, and that the sea must be unobstructed by shoals, and also of sufficient area to admit of the wind acting fully on the water.

If in front of a harbour shoal water extends seawards for a considerable distance so as to form an extensive flat fore-shore, the depth of water above it becomes the true limit of the maximum wave, whatever may be the general depth of the sea outside. But at Arbroath harbour and at Alne mouth, the heaviest waves are tripped up by the shoal water near the mouths of the harbours, and are not found so dangerous to the works inside as the smaller waves which reach the beach in an unbroken state.

Mr Scott Russell states that waves break when they Depth come into water of the same depth as their height. At Wick, however, the height of the waves above the mean level was about two-thirds of their height. In 1870, at Scarborough, it was found that waves of from 6 to 6½ feet broke when the depth was 10 feet 3 inches below their troughs, and 6 feet waves broke in water 13 feet 8 inches deep, which would for waves of this class give  $h = \frac{3d}{4}$ , where  $d$  is depth below mean level, and  $h$  the height from hollow to crest.

The late Dr Macquorn Rankine has shown that, theoretically, the mean water level is not situated half way between the crest and trough of the sea. The following formulae furnished by him give the mean level of the sea from the height and length of the wave. These formulae are exact only for water of considerable depth as compared with the length of the wave. For shallower water they are only approximate:—

Let  $L$  be the length of a wave,  $H$  the height from trough to crest; then, diameter of rolling circle =  $\frac{L}{87416}$ , radius of orbit of particle =  $\frac{1}{2}H$ , and elevation of middle level of wave above still water =  $\frac{3}{41}LH^2 - 785 \frac{H^3}{L}$ .

Consequently—

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Crest above still water} &= \frac{H}{2} + 785 \frac{H^3}{L}; \\ \text{Trough below still water} &= \frac{H}{2} - 785 \frac{H^3}{L}. \end{aligned}$$

#### Deep-Water Harbours.

Harbours of refuge are distinguished from tidal harbours mainly by the superior depth of water which they possess and the larger area which they enclose. The requisites are—shelter during storms, good holding ground, and easy access for shipping at any time of tide and in all states of the weather. A breakwater, though a passive, is yet a real agent, having true work to do. During storms many thousand tons of water are elevated and maintained above

the sea level, and a breakwater has to stop them onward motion within a given space or else to change the direction of their movement. There are two ways in which this work can be performed. One is by means of a plumb wall to alter the direction of the moving water by causing it to ascend vertically, and then to allow it to descend vertically, by which process the waves are reflected and sent back seawards. Another mode is to arrest the undulations by a sloping wall of length sufficient to allow the mass of elevated water to fall down upon the slope. If, however, the slope is not long enough to enable the waves to destroy themselves, they will, though reduced in height, pursue their original direction and pass over the top of the breakwater. In this case the breakwater does not do its full amount of work, and imperfect shelter is obtained.

The principle asserted in favour of the vertical wall is that oceanic waves in deep water are purely oscillatory, and exert no impact against vertical barriers, which are therefore the most eligible, as they have only to encounter the hydrostatic pressure due to the height of the impinging billows which are reflected without breaking.

From the effect of winds and tide-currents already referred to, and perhaps from other causes, the action of which seems to have been overlooked by the advocates of the upright wall, we have good reason for believing that any form of barrier in whatever depth of water it may be placed, must occasionally be subjected to heavy impact. The possibility of waves of translation being generated in the deepest water is established by the following facts—*first*, that oceanic waves break, partially at least, long before they reach the shore, because (as admitted by the advocates of the purely oscillatory character of oceanic undulations) the depth of water is too small to admit of their being fully propagated; *secondly*, that waves in strong tidesways break in deep water during calm weather—a phenomenon which is apparent to the eye and familiar to all sailors, *thirdly*, and negatively, that to seaward of these places which produce broken water, and which certainly do not reflect the incoming waves, there is comparatively smooth water both at sea and on the adjoining shore until the strength of the tide is exhausted and the race has disappeared, after which violent action is again fully manifested on the shore. Even a vertical wall, if built of ordinary masonry in courses, must during its formation present to the action of the waves at its unfinished end a sloping or at least a stepped face like a talus wall, but which, unfortunately for its stability, possesses none of the advantages of such a finished work. In short, during the most critical period of the history of every built vertical wall, the face work and hearing are exposed, at the outer end, to the force of breaking waves. At Dunbar the force against the unfinished end of a nearly vertical wall was found by the marine dynamometer to be nearly six times greater than on the face of the finished wall, where the waves were at the time purely oscillatory.

Oblique  
force in  
vertical  
plane

An important advantage of the sloping wall is the small resistance which it offers to the impinging wave, but it should also be borne in mind that the weight resting on the face stones in a talus wall is decreased in proportion to the sine of the angle of the slope. If we suppose the waves which assail a sloping wall to act in the horizontal plane, the component of their impulsive force at right angles to the surface of the talus will be proportional to the sine of the angle of inclination to the plane, while the effective force estimated in the horizontal plane will be proportional to the square of the sine of the angle of inclination. But if we assume the motion of the impinging particles to be horizontal, the number of them which will be intercepted by the sloping surface will be also reduced in the ratio of the

sine of the angle of inclination, or of the inclination of the wall to the vertical. Hence the tendency of the waves to produce horizontal displacement, on the assumption that the direction of the impinging particles is horizontal, will be proportional to the cube of the sine of the angle of elevation of the wall.

If it further happens that, owing to the relative direction of the pier and of the waves, there is an oblique action in azimuth as well as in altitude, there will be another similar reduction in the ratio of the squares or cubes of the angle of incidence, according as the component of the force is reckoned at right angles to the surface of the pier or in the direction of the waves.

Let  $f$  = force on unit of surface of a wall per pier  
 $\phi$  = declivity incidence  
 $f'$  = force on unit of surface at vertical incidence  $\phi$  and azimuth of incidence  $\psi$   
 $f' = f (\sin \phi \sin \psi)^2$

The amount of shelter which is produced by a breakwater must be measured by the length of the portion of wave which is either destroyed or reflected by it. The amount of work done by it decreases from the maximum, which is at normal incidence, to zero when the waves come upon it "end on," in which last case it ceases to act as a breakwater at all, unless to the extent due to lateral friction or erosion where there is a wall or a slope on which the end of the waves can break.

If a breakwater be so situated in relation to the coast line that waves may strike obliquely upon its inner or sheltered side, an extension of its length in the same direction will increase the amount of sea intercepted by it. The lengthening of a breakwater may therefore, during certain winds, increase the sea within the harbour instead of reducing it. In such a case the extension should, if possible, be made in a different direction, or a separate breakwater may be brought from the shore so as to shelter the inner side. If these works cannot be undertaken, then an addition to the sheltered space within must be provided in which the waves can spread, or additional slopes be provided on which they can break.

The table of the principal proportions of some of the most remarkable breakwaters given on p. 460 may be found useful as a guide in designing works of a similar kind.

The following costs of different breakwaters are from the Cost of minutes of the Institution of Civil Engineers and other sources—

Name of Breakwater	Depth of Water in Fathoms	Cost per Lin. Foot	Cost per Tm. and	Remarks
Joliette, Marseilles	6 to 8	72	216	
Marseilles (new)	6 to 6 6	109	328	
Portland ..	6 to 10	116 to 130	348 to 390	(Concret labour, rubble, all large beton blocks)
Algiers	6 to 9	122	366	
Holyhead	8 to 7	about 168	480	
Aldersay	8 8	170	510	
Plymouth ..	6 6 to 7 6	200	600	
Dover	6 6 to 8 8	260	1080	

Although some of these prices have given rise to lengthy discussions as to the comparative economic advantages of the various designs, the results have not been of much value, on account of the different degrees of exposure and of depth of water at the various places. The economic values may perhaps be arrived at in a more satisfactory manner, although still but only very approximately, thus—When  $x$  = the price per foot of depth,  $p$  = the

Table of principal Proportions of remarkable Breakwaters

Name	Kind of Work	General Slope of Outer Face				Inner Slopes				Level of top of founda- tion above Low Water	Level of founda- tion below Low Water
		From Bottom to near Low Water	From Top of Wall	Up to High Water	About High Water	From Bottom to near Low Water	From Top of Wall	Up to High Water	About High Water		
<i>Sloping Breakwaters</i>											
Plymouth	Pitched slopes above high water, loose rubble below	1½ to 1	4 to 1	5 to 1	5 to 1	2 to 1	2 to 1	1 to 1	1 to 1	0	0
Panama	Slopes of loose rubble	1½ to 1	6 to 1	8 to 1	1½ to 1	1½ to 1	1½ to 1	1½ to 1	1½ to 1	16	0
Kingsdown	Pitched slopes of rubble	1½ to 1	6 to 1	5 to 1	5 to 1	1½ to 1	1½ to 1	1½ to 1	1½ to 1	15	0
Holyhead	Slopes of loose rubble	2 to 1	6 to 1	12 to 1	5 to 1	1 to 1	1 to 1	1 to 1	1 to 1	15	0
<i>Composite Breakwaters</i>											
Portland	Slopes of loose rubble, with plumb wall above high water	1½ to 1	5 to 1	4½ to 1	4 to 1 & plumb wall	plumb wall	1 to 1	1 to 1	1 to 1	25	0
Cherbourg	Do do	2 to 1	7 to 1	7 to 1	7 to 1	7 to 1	1 to 1	1 to 1	1 to 1	12½	0
Alger	Do do	2 to 1	5 to 1	5 to 1	5 to 1 & plumb wall	5 to 1 & plumb wall	1 to 1	1 to 1	1 to 1	25	0
Cette	Do do	1½ to 1 & 6 to 1	8½ to 1	1 to 1 & 7 to 1	1 to 1 & 7 to 1	1 to 1	1 to 1	1 to 1	1 to 1	12½	15
Pullermyon	Do do	1½ to 1 & 6 to 1	8½ to 1	1 to 1 & 7 to 1	1 to 1 & 7 to 1	1 to 1	1 to 1	1 to 1	1 to 1	6 & 21	15
<i>Vertical Breakwaters</i>											
Dover	Solid masonry	½ to 1	1 to 1	1½ to 1	1 to 1 & rubble	1 to 1	1 to 1	1 to 1	1 to 1	28	45
Aberdeen	Concrete blocks below low water, and solid above	½ to 1	1 to 1	1½ to 1	1 to 1 & rubble	1 to 1	1 to 1	1 to 1	1 to 1	11	20

price per lineal foot, and  $d$  = the depth in feet at high water, then

$$a = \frac{P}{d}$$

The results calculated in this manner are arranged in order of their costs in the following table, from the pier at Dover appears to be by far the most costly —

Name of Harbour	Depth in Feet at High Water	$\frac{P}{d}$
Portland	62	£1 90
Johannes	35	2 08
Alger	43	3 00
Mar seilles (new)	35	3 10
Plymouth	58	3 45
Holyhead	58	4 40
Alger	47	4 90
Dover	38	9 47

Available capacity of harbours of refuge and of anchor ages

Mind all for large merchant vessels in harbours of refuge one cable-length, which would give about four vessels per acre. Captain Caird allows three vessels per acre for a small sheltered harbour of refuge. At Cardiff there were at one time 224 vessels anchored as close to each other as they could well be, in an open roadstead, and occupying a space of 560 acres, which would give 0.4 vessel per acre.

#### Tidal Harbours

We have hitherto been considering outer breakwaters erected in deep water, and which are constantly exposed to the waves, we now turn to piers and sea-walls which are placed within the range of the breaking surf, and which are exposed to its force for a limited period only, being sometimes left nearly or altogether dry by the receding tide.

In dealing with waves which are admitted by all to exert a true percussive force, the question arises as to how this force may be best resisted—whether by opposing to it dead weight, or a comparatively light structure, the stability of which is dependent on strong fixtures connecting it with the bottom. On this subject the late Mr Alan Stevenson made the following remarks, in relation to lighthouses

towers, but his views are equally applicable to piers and breakwaters —

"A primary inquiry in regard to towers in an exposed situation is the question whether their stability should depend upon their strength or their weight, or, in other words, on their cohesion as their *integrity*. In pursuing weight to strength we more closely follow the course pointed out by the analogy of nature, and this must not be regarded as a mere notional advantage, for the more close the analogy between nature and our works the less difficulty we shall experience in passing from nature to art, and the more directly will our observations on natural phenomena bear upon the artificial project. If, for example, we make a series of observations on the force of the sea as exerted on masses of rock, and endeavour to draw from these observations some conclusions as to the amount and direction of that force as exhibited by the masses of rock which resist it successfully, and the form which these masses assume, we shall pass virtually to the determination of the mass and form of a building which may be capable of opposing similar forces, as we conclude with some reason that the mass and form of the natural rock are expedients of the amount and direction of the force they have so long continued to resist. It will readily be perceived that we are in a very different and less advantageous position, when we attempt, from such observations of natural phenomena in which weight is solely concerned, to deduce the strength of an artificial fabric. Another very obvious reason why we should prefer mass and weight to strength as a source of stability is that the effect of mass inertia is constant and unchangeable in its nature, while the strength which results from the most judiciously disposed and well executed fixtures of a comparatively light fabric is constantly subject to be impaired by the loosening of such fixtures, occasioned by the almost incessant motion to which structures of this kind must be subject from the beating of the waves. Mass therefore seems to be a source of stability, the effect of which is at once appreciated by the mind as more in harmony with the conservative principles of nature, and unquestionably less liable to be determined, than the strength which depends upon the careful proportion and adjustment of parts."

It is a remarkable fact that during a summer gale 14 Effect of blocks, each 2 tons in weight, which had been permanently fixed in the Dhu Hartach lighthouse tower by joggles and cement, at the level of 35½ feet above the sea, were torn out and swept off the rock, while the thin plates of crown glass in the lantern of Winstanley's Eddystone tower, which were only about 5 feet higher, resisted the waves for a whole winter. The impact on marine masonry seems to be

<sup>1</sup> Account of the Storrer's Lighthouse, by Alan Stevenson, Lt. B., F.R.S.E., Edin., 1848, p. 48

therefore to depend on the relation subsisting between the height of the waves at the place and the height and configuration of the rock itself above and below low water, and perhaps also on the configuration of the bottom of the sea near the rock.<sup>1</sup> While the rock at Dux Heatcatch from its height above the sea forms a protection against the smaller waves, it operates as a dangerous conductor to the larger waves, cumbling them to exert a powerful action at a much higher level than if the rock had been lower. It is of great importance that these facts should be kept in view, and that the Eddystone should not be regarded as a safe model for imitation at all rocks which are exposed to a heavy sea.

Forces  
on east  
end of  
masonry

The impact of the waves against the outside of a sea wall or pier gives rise to four distinct forces, namely—(1) the direct horizontal force, which tends to shake loose, or drive in, the blocks of which the masonry consists, (2) the vertical force acting upwards on any projecting stone or protuberance, as well as against the lying beds of the stones, (3) the vertical force acting downwards, which results either from the receding wave striking upon the toe of a talus wall, or from its passing over the parapet and falling upon the pitching behind, so as to plough it up, (4) the "backdraught," which tends by reaction from the wall to remove the soft bottom, and in this way to undermine the lower courses or to suck loose stones out of the work.

It may be concluded from the above that the points which require to be most attended to are—the contour and quality of masonry of the wall itself, the parapet, which if not of proper form, or of insufficient height, leads to damage in the pitching behind it, and lastly, the foundation—cautions in the design and construction of which, if similar precautions be not attended to, undermining of the bottom may take place, so as to leave the lowest courses without protection.

Forces  
within  
the  
masonry

Within the masonry, as well as without, the waves exert forces in the following different ways—(1) by the propagation of vibrations produced by the shock of the waves on the outer or sea-wall, (2) by the direct communication of the impulses through the particles of the fluid occupying the interstices of the heating, so as to act against the back joints of the face stones of the inner quay, (3) by the sudden condensations and expansions of the air in the heating, so as to loosen, and at last to blow out, the face stones of the quay, combined with (4) the hydrostatic pressure of the water, which is forced through the sea-wall, and, from want of free exit, is retained and acts as a head at the back of the quay, and which, however small in quantity, will, as in a Bramah press, act with equal force upon all surfaces exposed to its pressure, however large those surfaces may be. The last three causes are probably the most efficient agents in the work of destruction.

From a comparison of different piers in the German Ocean where we have most examples, and from careful consideration of the other data, it appears that vertical piers, fully exposed to the ordinary waves of that sea, should be not less than from 35 to 45 feet broad at the level of high water. Of course this remark does not apply to anomalous cases where waves are exceptionally high, but, as already stated, to works exposed to the ordinary waves.

The positions in which the piers are to be placed depend on the nature and configuration of the shore and of the

bottom. After a correct plan, with soundings, has been obtained, the next step is to lay down contour lines of the different depths which make the limits of the deep and shoal ground water at once obvious to the eye. The lines of the piers may then be sketched so as, without disregarding other conditions, to keep the works as much as possible on the shoal ground, while they at the same time enclose the greatest possible area of deep water.

The entrance should be fixed seaward of every part of Entrance the works, and its direction, unless where the internal area is small and the sea very heavy, should if possible be made to coincide with that of the heaviest waves, so that they may run along with and guide vessels into the harbour.

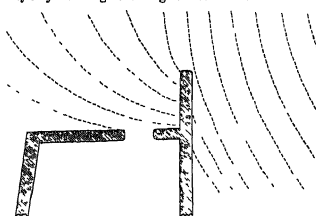


Fig 7

The outer pier should in such a case be extended sufficiently far seaward of the end of the inner pier head to give it a free end, as in fig 7, thus allowing a ship plenty of sea room to shape an easy course before taking the entrance to the sheltered basin of the harbour.

There should be sufficient distance landward of a harbour mouth to allow a vessel, having full weigh on her, to shorten sail. For this Minard recommends that, where vessels of ordinary size require to alter their course in order to reach the inner basin, no circle with a less radius than 200 yards in smooth water should, if possible, be adopted, and it should not be forgotten that a vessel requires a larger radius in turning where the water is shoal than where it is deep.

If the beach consist of travelling detritus, the entrance must be so devised as not to form a trap for the passing shingle. This danger is most to be dreaded on the coasts where heavy waves strike obliquely upon the shore. Finally, there must be a good "loose," so that vessels on leaving the harbour shall be able to shape their course free of rocks or a lee-shore, and Minard very properly remarks that the mouths of harbours should be designed rather to suit the entering, which is far more important, than the exit of vessels.

Preference should generally be given to a pier of horizontal convex outline, or a polygonal form, than to one long straight pier. The principal objection to a straight pier does not, however, extend to cases where the heaviest waves strike upon it obliquely, and roll landwards along the sea-wall. Especial care, however, must in all cases be taken that a sea-work nowhere presents to the sea a surface of concave horizontal outline, or, what is still worse, abrupt faces which form a resultant angle, for the waves will then act with an almost explosive violence, the breaking of a free wave being a very different thing from the breaking of a wave confined by a barrier of masonry. While the first may be compared to the harmless ignition of a loose heap of gunpowder, the other resembles the dangerous explosion produced by the discharge of a cannon.

<sup>1</sup> Mr D. A. Stevenson has lately shown that a funnel shaped depression in the sea bottom extends from the ocean in the direction of, and nearly as far as, the Dux Heatcatch rock, a geological formation which must certainly admit the heaviest class of waves to come nearer to the rock (*Memoir of Proc of Inst of Civil Engineers*, vol. xiv.)



It may in some cases be found better, in designing a sea-wall for protecting a sinuous coast, to carry the bulwark straight across ledges of rock which extend landwards, than to follow the line of the high water margin. For although with the straight wall we may have to encounter a greater depth of water, and a heavier surf, still with the other we may have to oppose the waves with a wall which has at some places a concave horizontal curvature, by which the force is concentrated and rendered more destructive. More over, the straight wall may be considerably shorter than the curved.

**Vertical profile of walls.** The general gradient of a fragmentary beach depends upon the size and nature of the particles, and the force of the sea. The dissimilarity between its slopes near the levels of high and low water arises from a decrease in the force of the waves, caused by their being broken before they reach the high water mark. The great object, therefore, is to design the profile of the wall so as to alter as little as possible the symmetry of the beach. For the reasons already stated, it is plain that unless near high water a beach has a vertical wall it is in most cases unsuitable for a sandy beach. Instead of altering the direction of the wave at a distance from its foundation, the whole change is produced at that very point, and, unless the wall be founded at a considerable depth, its destruction is all but certain. A curved profile will prevent to a considerable extent the danger of reaction, by causing the alteration in the direction of the wave to take place at that part where the wall is strongest, and which is also at the greatest possible distance from the toe or curb course. But a very serious objection to all forms of curved walls, unless the radius be large, is the weakness which results from the use of wedge-shaped face-stones. The impact of the sea on materials of that form may be compared to a blow directed upwards against the interiors of a stone arch—the direction of all others in which the tensions are most easily dislocated. This action can only be resisted by very careful workmanship in the dressing and setting of the backing. Another objection, applicable to all except tumbled seas, such as the Mediterranean, arises from the varying level of the surface of the water, for what may be best at one time of the tide cannot be equally suitable at another.

When a wave encounters an obstacle such as a breakwater, the portion which strikes it is either entirely destroyed or reflected seawards, while the portion which is not so intercepted passes onwards, and spreading laterally under the lee of the barrier suffers a reduction of its height. From a very few observations in the sea under the lee of the breakwater at Wick, and from some experiments made in a barge's cockpit at by Mr Thomas Stevenson, it appeared that after passing an obstruction the reduction in the height of a wave varies as the square root of the angle of deflexion. When  $\alpha$  represents the ratio of the reduced to the undeviated wave and  $\alpha$  the angle of deflexion, the formula, which must however, be regarded as only approximate, is

$$\alpha = 1.00 - 0.6\sqrt{\alpha}$$

The measurements of the distances of high water mark from the centre of divergence, in sandy bays which are under the dominion of promontories, seem to show that the formula, or one for a logarithmic spiral, represents the effect of lateral divergences very fully. Providing the materials of the beach are homogeneous and easily moved, the incursions of the waves into the land will be measures of the forces, all of which become  $\alpha$  at the high water mark. The following table shows measurements of the finely curved storm and tide marks traced out on the sandy beach under the lee of the promontory at North Berwick, and the results of the formula

Angles of Incidence	Distances from centre of divergence at end of Promontory to High Water Mark	Ratio of Measurements	Results of Formula
0°	1150	1.00	1.00
10°	1000	.87	.87
20°	920	.80	.76
30°	810	.73	.67
40°	725	.61	.62
45°	700	.61	.60
50°	675	.59	.58
60°	600	.52	.51
70°	570	.49	.50
80°	555	.46	.46
90°	530	.46	.43

The tranquillity of close harbours with the same exposure depends on the relative widths of the entrance and the interior, the depth of water, and the form and direction of the entrance in relation to the line of maximum exposure. A formula for the reductive power of harbours has been given by Mr Thomas Stevenson (*Edin. Phil. Journal* for 1855).

Where the passage is high enough to protect the enclosed area from the wind, and the width of entrance not very great in comparison with the breadth of the water, the quay will be nearly vertical, and the distance from the entrance to place of observation not less than 50 feet, then

$$\alpha = \frac{H \cdot \sqrt{B}}{\sqrt{D}} \cdot \frac{1}{\sqrt{B}} \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{H}} + \frac{\sqrt{H}}{H} \right) \sqrt{D}$$

where  $H$  = height of waves at entrance,  $B$  = breadth of entrance,  $D$  = distance from mouth of harbour to place of observation,  $\alpha$  = height of reduced or undeviated wave at place of observation, —all in feet. If  $H$  be 1 then  $\alpha$  is unity,  $\alpha$  will be a fraction representing the reductive power of the harbour.

Actual measurements at the harbours of Knappton, Sandilund, Aberdeen, Aberdeen, and Buckie gave the mean of observations (such as Buckie alone numbered upwards of 2000—294 feet), while that of results calculated by the formula gave 2.62 feet.

The size as well as the ratio of widths of entrance and basin must also bear a proper relation to the height of waves to which the harbour is exposed. The formula for the reductive power assumes that the waves after being reduced by lateral expansion shall have time to sink and be ultimately destroyed. But if instead of this they shall be again reflected towards the entrance, such recoil will destroy the tranquillity of the basin and prevent vessels from answering their helm when taking the entrance. Also where a spending beach which is only partially effective in destroying the waves, is formed very near the entrance, it may do little or no good by causing a back wash or recoil wave which will injuriously affect vessels when entering.

As before mentioned, it is essential when the exposure is great that there be either a considerable internal area, or else a separate basin opposite the entrance to the inner basin, for the waves to destroy or spend themselves. Such a basin should, if possible, enclose a portion of the original shore for the waves to break upon, and when circumstances preclude this there should be a flat talus wall of at least 3 or 4 to 1, as recommended by the late Mr Bennett of Wick. Mr Scott Russell has found that talus walls of 1 to 1, or steeper, will not allow the waves to break fully, but will reflect them in such a manner as might in some cases make the entrance difficult or even dangerous of access, and the berthing within unsafe.

The following cases in which traffic has been successfully carried on at quays unprotected by covering piers, may be found useful as a guide —

At Sandilund the quay is at right angles to a fetch of 8 miles. At Invergordon there is a fetch of 5 miles, at Dundee 6, at Knappton 4, at Londenberry 13, at Greenock 6, at Alport Quay, Greenock 7 miles. The last two are, however, somewhat sheltered by the low water banks near Greenock.

Five miles is probably not far from the limit that should be observed, which by the ordinary formula,  $\alpha = 1.54/D$ , gives a wave of

8 feet, but the formula for distress so short as there would go waves about a foot higher, and in heavy storms *phugs* waves not much less than 5 feet in height, but on such occasions vessels could not safely use the quays.

**Booms.** In order to tranquillize harbours of small reductive power, logs of timber called booms, having their ends secured by projecting into grooves cut in the masonry on each side, are placed across the entrance of the inner basin or dock. From 15 to 25 logs are usually dropped into those grooves, or as many more as will insure close contact of the lowest log with a sill-piece placed in the bottom of the harbour. They are also warped down or fixed with an iron hasp at the coping course, without which precaution the swell is found to enter the harbour from underneath. By this contrivance, which forms a temporary wall, the waves are checked, and completely prevented from spreading into the interior basin.

Twelve fine booms of pine timber about 33 feet long have been broken at the small fishing village of Moussébois, near Pauvresse, and elm logs have in consequence been substituted. At Hysham in Anglesea, booms of the same timber and scantling and 20 feet long have been very frequently broken. The marine dynamometer at this place gives 1½ ton per square foot.

**Capacity of harbours for commerce.** The capacity of commercial harbours for trade varies so much with the exposure and size of vessels, that it is difficult to approximate to the truth. At Rangoon, for instance, there were found to be about 6 vessels to an acre in the outer harbour, while there were about 14 in the inner and better protected basin, where two thirds of the space is a greater proportion of small vessels. In the Scotch fishing harbours the number of boats used to be reckoned at from 86 to 115 per acre, but of late there have been much increased, and probably not more than from 80 to 90 could be accommodated. The Cornish boats at New Lynn, according to the Channel pilot, vary from 60 to 80 per acre.

**Timber and stone.** The employment of timber in harbours was of great antiquity. It seems first to have been used in forming boxes which were filled with stones, and at a more recent period in the formation of open frameworks through which the current could pass freely. Vitruvius mentions moles, consisting of timber filled with stones and cement, as having been used by the harbour-builders in his days. The earliest drawing of timber piers that we have met with is that of the ancient port of Duxbury in 1599, a cross section of which from Belidor's *Architecture Hydraulique* is given in Plate VIII, fig. 4. This kind of structure is still not uncommon on the coasts of the English Channel.

**Deviation by marine insects.** In sheltered bays where a deep water landing-place is all that is required, and where the bottom is sandy or soft, timber may be employed with great advantage. Even in somewhat exposed situations it can also be used for tidal harbours, but the fatal evil in places where there is no admittance of fresh water is its rapid destruction by marine insects. In the Atlantic Ocean the *Teredo navalis*, and at many places in the German Ocean the *Lamora teredo*, which was first discovered by the late Mr. Robert Stevenson at the Bell Rock Lighthouse in 1810, are very destructive of most kinds of timber. Mr. Stevenson found that mangel was destroyed by the *Lamora* at the rate of about 1 inch upwards per annum. He found that greenheart, beefwood, African oak, and bullock tree were scarcely

attacked, while teak stood remarkably well and louest tolerably well, though suffering at last. Greenheart timber, though not absolutely impervious, as appears from Mr. Stevenson's experiments, is the most species in seas where the worms are destructive. But subsequent experience has proved that on the coasts of Scotland it is, in some cases, readily attacked, and at these places cloosening is of comparatively little use, as the worm manifests no repugnance to timber which has been even very recently impregnated.

In addition to the experiments on timber, twenty five different kinds and combinations of iron were tried at billy of the Bell Rock, including specimens of galvanized iron. All the ungalvanized iron was found to oxidize with much the same readiness. The galvanized specimens resisted oxidation for three or four years, after which the chemical action went on as quickly as in the others. Although the association of zinc with iron protects, so long as it lasts, the metal with which it is in contact, it must be remembered that this immunity is obtained at the expense of the zinc, the tendency of which to oxidation is proportionally excited so soon as any part of the iron is exposed.

The important experiment of Mr. Mallet on specimens sunk in the sea showed that the amount of corrosion decreased with the thickness of the casing, and that from 1/8th to 1/4th inch in depth, in castings 1 inch thick, and about 1/8th inch of wrought iron will be destroyed in a century in clear salt water. But there is reason to believe from a cannon ball which was pulled up on the shores of the island of Inishkeith that the decay was in that case 1/4th inch to the century. Cast-iron gratings pitifully immersed by the tide at the Bell Rock last at the rate of 1 inch in a century. Even when the castings were externally wound their strength was reduced one half in about 50 years.

In judging of the qualities of different qualities for Materials harbour purposes the importance of a high specific gravity of construction ought not to be overlooked, as appears from the table given on page 464.

The superiority of granite to greenstone is proved by the following experiments on the times required to abrade 1/4th inch of each kind of stone, made with the same weights and grinding agents, and with equal cubes of each material—30 minutes were required for Queen'sbury (Carlisle) granite, 40 minutes for greenstone from Bantoun near Edinburgh, 60 minutes for Pethhead granite. Mr. Murray of Sandeland also established, many years ago, the superior power of resistance to attrition possessed by granite over greenstone.

Portland cement rubble and concrete, a most valuable Port material, now very commonly used in Britain as well as on the Continent, may be said to have to a large extent revolutionized harbour building, for its admittance of being employed in many different ways, and out of due case to be taken as to the quality of the cement and purity of the sand and gravel, to be used with perfect confidence.

The following specification has been followed extensively at different places—

The Portland cement is to be obtained from the best manufactory. It is to be ground extremely fine, and is to weigh not less than 115 lb per barrel, and each cage will, on its arrival at the works, be tested in the following manner. The cement is to be made into small blocks 1 inch square and 8 inches long. After being made, these blocks are to be immersed in water for 7 days and then tested by being placed on two supports 6 inches apart, when they must stand the transverse strain produced by a weight of 70 lb placed in the centre. Slabs or cakes are also to be made and placed in water, and after immersion for 24 hours they are not to show any signs of cracking or any softness on the surface.

The cement is to be tested, before any of it is used, and if it be found unsatisfactory it must be removed from the works. When a cage is landed it must be tested from four different bags, and it must also be tested weekly as the works proceed, and the results forwarded to the engineers. The cement must be bought direct

<sup>1</sup> It was probably to some such work that Horace refers in Ode 1, Book III—

"Contingit placuisse sententiam,  
Tactis quædam in prælia, pugna sequens  
Clementia dimittit indomptum."

A harbour contract dated 1394, in all probability the earliest which has been preserved, appears in the *Registrum Vigimar de Aberbrothoc*—a collection of ancient documents printed by the Bannatyne Club, and edited by the late Frederic Combe Esq.

Table of Properties of different Kinds of Boals

Name of Rocks	Specific Gravity	Weight of a Cubic Foot in Air	No of Feet to a Ton in Air	No of Feet to a Ton in Sea Water	Side of Cube corresponding to last column	Weight of a Ton Block in Sea Water	Side of a Cube weighing One Ton in Air	Tons of Weight which will sink in Sea Water
Basalt (porphyritic)	2.99	188.87	11.9	18.26	2.63	658	2.253	3.19
Gneiss	2.92	182.50	12.2	19.00	2.68	650	2.802	3.60
Syenite	2.81	181.0	12.3	19.04	2.67	647	2.808	3.59
Crystalline	2.80	181.25	12.3	19.15	2.67	647	2.468	3.61
Mass schist	2.89	129.6	12.4	19.24	2.68	644	2.415	3.56
Gneiss	2.83	179.2	12.7	20.00	2.71	636	2.343	3.65
Amphibolus gneiss	2.75	177.87	13.0	20.31	2.76	627	2.251	3.74
Chlorite schist	2.74	171.25	13.0	20.38	2.76	627	2.261	3.73
Greywacke	2.78	170.62	13.1	21.00	2.76	621	2.397	3.76
Chalkstone	2.73	170.62	13.1	21.05	2.76	621	2.497	3.76
Red granite	2.71	169.97	13.2	21.77	2.81	612	2.368	3.79
Slate (Old Red Sandstone formation)	2.71	169.97	13.2	21.30	2.77	621	2.362	3.70
Chalk	2.70	168.75	13.2	21.18	2.77	621	2.462	3.79
White Primary limestone (marble)	2.70	168.75	13.2	21.15	2.77	621	2.362	3.70
Red Primary limestone (marble), with crystals of augite embedded	2.66	166.25	13.4	21.96	2.80	615	2.375	3.85
Chert slate	2.84	165.00	13.5	22.23	2.81	612	2.351	3.84
Granular quartz rock	2.63	161.37	13.6	22.37	2.82	610	2.357	3.70
Grey granite	2.62	161.00	13.6	22.05	2.82	610	2.357	3.70
Flinty slate	2.57	160.62	13.9	23.24	2.86	601	2.105	3.90
Red felspar porphyry	2.66	169.87	14.0	23.55	2.86	599	2.110	3.92
Trachyte	2.59	158.19	14.1	23.85	2.88	595	2.116	3.95
Scapolite	2.46	153.75	14.5	25.02	2.92	581	2.118	3.96
Compact felspar	2.45	153.13	14.6	25.20	2.93	581	2.151	3.99
Sandstone	2.41	150.62	14.8	26.00	2.96	575	2.195	3.95
Basalt (Oolite)	2.40	147.50	15.1	26.88	2.99	567	2.174	3.95
Beton	2.2	137.05	16.2	30.6	3.13	543	2.545	4.68
Magnesian limestone	2.18	136.25	16.4	31.11	3.14	539	2.511	4.71
Oolite	2.05	128.12	17.4	35.07	3.27	501	2.991	4.99
Barrow coal (American)	1.54	88.25	26.8	70.09	4.12	431	3.456	6.69
Bituminous shale	1.50	95.75	28.8	76.03	4.33	371	2.976	6.83
Canal coal	1.24	77.50	38.9	169.05	5.53	171	1.069	8.20

Note.—This table is calculated for sea water of the specific gravity of 1.025 at 64° F. in the cubic foot.

from the manufactory and kept at the works in a dry and well ventilated storehouse with dry wooden floor and side walls, properly roofed in and completely protected from the weather.

The concrete to be used is to consist of one part of Portland cement, two of sand, and five of gravel, to be thoroughly mixed with a proper quantity of pure water, after it is deposited, large angular stones are to be added, every stone of not less than 4 inches being surrounded by concrete to a thickness of not less than 4 inches. All stones to be clean and quite free from any wood or other vegetable matter likely to prevent the adhesion of the concrete. No concrete to be made during frost. The sand and gravel used must be sharp and clean, being perfectly free from clay or earthy matter.

There are different kinds of machines by which the concrete is thoroughly mixed, and a saving of cost effected. In that of Mr. Messent the number of revolutions to mix the concrete thoroughly is twelve.

Continuous building

The walls of harbours may be constructed of continuous building of concrete and stones, protected by temporary piling and close plank. The best method of keeping out the water, as adopted by Mr. Balmer at the docks of Richmond's harbour of Port Gordon, is to make a saw draft in each plank, and to place a thin plate of iron between the planks. An example of this continuous or monolithic building is shown in Plate VIII, fig. 6.

Mr. B. B. Stoney has deposited at Dublin the largest blocks that have as yet been attempted to be moved.

Each block is 27 feet high, 21 feet 4 inches wide at base, and 12 feet long in the direction of wall, contains nearly 6000 cubic feet, and weighs 867 tons, and when laid in place 12 inches of the wall is finished at once up to ordinary low water level. No cofferdam, staging, or pumping is required. The superstructure is built in the ordinary method by hole work, and is faced with granite shingles for the slope to its against. The blocks are built on land, and after 10 weeks' drying are lifted by floating shears, the base or pontoon of which is 180 feet long and 48 feet wide, and of this 180

feet 20 form a tank at the wind end, and when filled with water, thus balances the weight of the block hanging from the shears at the other end. A block can be raised with the float tide, and is generally set in the following low water.

The late Mr. J. M. Rendel introduced the improved and Depont's valuable method of depositing the *perpetua perennis* or *perpetua* rubble, which is now generally used in the construction of piers and breakwaters.

This method he employed first at Mulberry pier, near Plymouth, in 1838, to a depth of 38 feet, and afterwards, on a still larger scale, in the construction of the breakwaters at Holyhead and Northend.

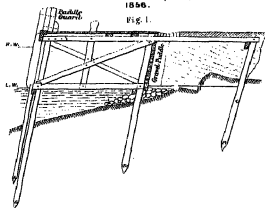
The improvement consists in depositing the rough materials from the stagnation of timber, elevated at a considerable height above high water. The stones are caught on the staging or staggers, through the ledges of which they are discharged into the sea. The principle on which these staggers are designed is that of offering the smallest possible resistance to the sea, the under struts thus consisting of nothing more than single upright piles for supporting each roadway. At Work harbour works, as already stated, it was found that the piles of the staging for depositing the rubble required to be of great size timber, but even these were broken in large numbers. The piles were invariably broken by the waves at about the level of high water.

A depth of from 12 to 15 feet under low water was level of pointed out by Mr. Rendel as the level below which the conservation of rubble was done little or no damage to *perpetua perennis*. Sir John Ross indeed considered that there was little or no effect at a fathom and a half. But at Work, as already stated, the rubble was moved as low as 16 feet, and at Alderney 20 feet.

If the beds of the stones in a sea-wall were polished, the power of resistance would be reduced by about one-fourth, and in other words, roughly dressed materials of three-fourths the weight of polished materials will be equally safe.

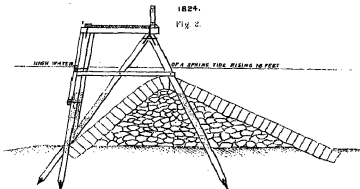
LONDONDERRY QUAY.  
1858.

Fig. 1.



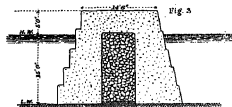
EASTERN PIER, LEITH.

Fig. 2



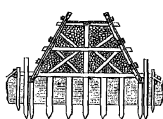
### ANSTRUTHER BREAKWATER.

Fig. 3



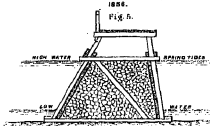
JETTY OF ANCIENT PORT OF DUNKIRK.

Fig. 4.



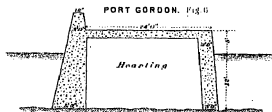
**BLYTH BREAKWATER.**

Fig. 5.



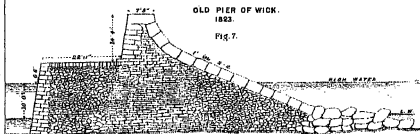
**PORT GORDON.** Fig. 43

### Heating



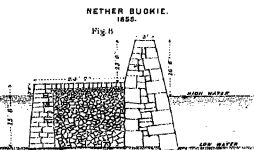
OLD PIER OF WICK.

Fig. 7



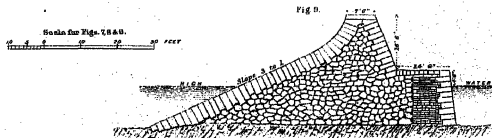
NETHER BUOKIE.  
1855.

Fig. 45



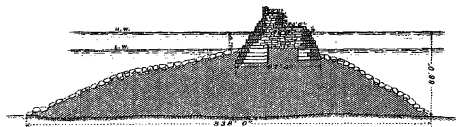
SARGLET - C<sup>o</sup> CAITHNESS.  
1833.

Fig. 9.

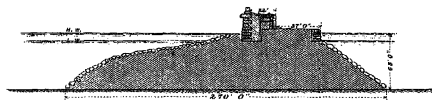




ALDERNEY.



PORTLAND.



PLYMOUTH.



HOLYHEAD.



WICK.



ABERDEEN.



DOVER.











There is also good reason to believe that slopes of large *muscle piers* are preferable to slopes of dressed masonry. The great object to be attained is the maximum amount and uniform distribution of friction.

**Iron piers.** Piers of cast and of malleable iron are now frequently employed. Examples of these may be seen at Scarborough, Southampton, Portobello, and at many other parts of the English coast, and have been found to answer even where there is a considerable sea.

The pier at Southampton, described by Mr H. Hooper, is of cast iron, and the mode of sinking the piles is peculiar. The piles proper or lowest lengths of the columns are cast in lengths of 8 feet and 10 feet, and are sunk into the sand to the depth of 7 feet and 9 feet respectively. They are provided with circular disks 1 foot 6 inches in diameter, to form a bearing surface, and a small hole being left in the centre, a wrought iron tube 2 inches in diameter was passed down the inside of the pile, and forced about four inches into the sand, a connection being made by means of a flexible hose between the top of the tube and a temporary pipe connected with the Water Company's mains, and extended to the sinking of the piles proceeded. A pressure of water of about 50 lb per inch was thus obtained, and this was found to be sufficient to force the sand from under the disk.

Each disk was provided on the lower side with cutters, which, on an alternating motion being given to the pile, loosened the sand. The piles were gradually lowered, and guided by a small ordinary pulley engine. When the pressure of water had been removed about 5 minutes, the piles settled down to an amount bearing that which would be found with a load of 12 tons each, no signs of settlement could be perceived. The cast-iron columns are 7 inches in external dia. and 5½ inches in internal diameter. All the piles, to the number of 237, were sunk in six weeks, being at the rate of between 6 and 7 in twenty-four hours.

The Cleveland pier is of malleable iron. Mr J. W. Glover states that each wrought section of the Ballow rail, weighing 80 lb to the yard, riveted back to back, and having a total section for each 100 feet span of 61 inches. They are riveted together by diagonal tie rods from 10 to 2½ inches in diameter. The lower portions of the piles below low water are of solid wrought iron 5 inches in diameter, shod with cast-iron shoes 2 feet in diameter, and were lowered till a 14-inch iron pipe could descend 6 feet up to low water with the skin. They penetrated the ground to depths varying from 7 to 17 feet, and though made with the cast of 5 inches in pitch seldom descended more than 2½ inches or 3 inches in a run. The solid piles were connected with the Ballow rail piles by cast iron shoes. Where rock occurred holes were pumped, and a 1-inch wrought iron bar was inserted and secured by a jugged key. A shoe to receive the Ballow rail was fitted and keyed on this, and the remaining space was filled with iron cement. The length of the longest pile is 76 feet. The level of low water is 16 feet above extreme high water, and the height above the ground at the pier head is about 68 feet.

#### Deposits and Scouring

Deposits arise from two essentially opposite causes, viz., commotion and stagnation of the water. They are also of different kinds of material.—(1) those lighter matters, such as mud, silt, and fine sand, which are held for a time in mechanical suspension, and which, as the water approaches stagnation, are gradually dropped in the order of their specific gravity and mass, and (2) those heavier matters, such as different kinds of sand and gravel, which are rolled along the bottom or driven forward with the water by the action of waves and currents. The first-named are deposited on the lee side of piers or groins which obstruct the progress of the waves or currents, while the second accumulate on their weather sides. But the amount and the positions assumed by the deposits of the second kind depend on the direction and force of the waves or currents in relation to the shore and to obstructions. The amount of deposits of the first kind are little dependent on the direction of the stroke of the waves outside of the basin or sheltered places in which they are deposited.

**Artificial scouring.** The preservation of the depth of harbours at a level lower than that of the original bottom involves both uncertainty and expense. Where the deposit is confined to the space between high and low water-marks, the scouring

by means of salt or fresh water is comparatively easy, but where it forms a bar outside of the entrance, the possibility of maintaining permanently a greater depth becomes very doubtful. The efficacy of the scour, so long as it is not impeded by enlargements of the channel, may be kept up for great distances, but it soon comes to an end after it meets the sea. When the volume of water liberated is great compared with the *alveus* or channel through which it has to pass, the stagnant water which originally occupied the channel does not to the same extent destroy the momentum as when the scouring has to be produced by a sudden finite impulse. In the one case the scouring power depends, *ceteris paribus*, simply on the relation subsisting between the quantity liberated in a given space of time and the sectional area of the channel through which it has to pass, while in the other it depends on the propelling head, and the direction in which the water leaves the alveus. Mr Rendell's scheme for Dumbhead was on the former principle, which it must be recollected is only applicable where the soil is easily stirred up.

The first example of artificial scouring in England seems to be due to Smeaton, who used it effectively at Ramsgate in 1779. At Butte Docks, Cardiff, designed by the late Sir W. Cubitt, the access to the outer basin is kept open most successfully by means of artificial scouring on a large scale.

Minard holds that when a channel has to be maintained by regular and habitual scouring, the whole effect is generally produced in the course of the first quarter of an hour. This was made the subject of particular investigation at Dunkirk, where sections of the channel were made before and during the scour, and it was found that there was no alteration in the sectional area after the first quarter of an hour.

#### Causes of Increase of Height of Waves

The following causes increase the height of waves in a harbour.—(1) the removal of a spending beach either at the entrance channel or within the harbour by building a quay or talus wall across it; (2) deepening the entrance channel or the basin of the harbour itself,—thus the difficulty of keeping vessels to their moorings at the quays of a harbour increases during flood tide, just as the tide rises and the depth is thereby increased; (3) removal of an artificial breakwater or a protecting point of land or spit of gravel outside of the harbour; (4) filling up side corks or lateral basins in a harbour or its entrance channel; (5) shortening the distance between the sea and the entrance to an inner basin or dock by projecting the basin or dock farther out from the shore-line so as to bring the gates nearer the sea entrance, or projecting the mouth of the harbour farther seawards; (6) removal of a petty or filling up an artificial side chamber or converting basins into plain walls; (7) straightening an entrance channel or an outer side breakwater or walls within a harbour; (8) widening the entrance or the entrance channel; (9) reduction of the area of the basin of the harbour; (10) making smoother the surface of a natural sloping beach either within or outside of a harbour by pitching its surface; (11) lowering the top of a protecting outside breakwater over which the sea breaks; (12) converting an open timber quay into a close quay; (13) lengthening a breakwater so as to intercept a greater portion of the waves which come in certain directions.

#### II DOCKS

Docks are of two kinds, viz., dry or graving docks, and wet or floating docks. The dry or graving dock is a small water-tight chamber, fitted with gates of timber or iron, which are shut against the rising tide after a vessel has

entered for the purpose of being repaired. The water below low tide level is pumped out generally by steam power.

**Wet docks.** The wet dock or tide basin is a large water-tight inclosure, usually several acres in extent, which is also fitted with gates which are closed, not, however, during the flowing but the ebbing tide, so that the vessels lying at the quays within the basin may remain constantly afloat and nearly at the same level while being loaded and unloaded.

**Locks.** In order to extend the time during which vessels can enter or leave a wet dock there are two additional works which are often connected with it. These are the entrance-lock and the outlet or half-tide basin. The lock is a narrow chamber of just sufficient length and breadth to admit a ship of the greatest length and breadth of beam that is expected to frequent the port. Such a lock can, in absence of the largest class of ships, accommodate simultaneously three or four vessels of smaller tonnage. Locks are sometimes made with double gates, so that when only one vessel of small size has to enter, she is shut up within a compartment of the lock, by which means some of the water is saved which would have been expended had the whole of the chamber been filled. Shortly after the tide has begun to ebb, and when the gates of the wet dock have been shut, in order to prevent the water from falling too low in the dock, a vessel can still enter or leave by means of the lock. She is first passed into the lock from the sea, and, the lower or sea gates being closed, the sluices in the upper or dock gates are opened, which raises the water in the lock chamber to the same level as the water in the dock, when the upper gates are opened to let the vessel pass in. Ships leaving the dock after the tide has begun to fall are passed into the lock chamber, when the upper gates are closed and the sluices in the lower gates are opened, until the water in the lock has fallen to the same level as the tide outside, when the lower gates are opened and the vessel goes out to sea.

This system of locking is continued so long as the level of the dock is not so much depressed as to affect the loading or unloading of vessels lying at the quays, or until the tide has ebbed so far as to prevent vessels reaching the lock from the sea. At the West Dock, Cardiff, where the level is kept up by fresh water from the river Taff, the gates, in order to suit the rise and fall of the tide, are opened one hour before and about two hours after high water.

**Tide basins.** The tide basin may be described as a lock of very large dimensions capable of receiving at the same time a considerable number of vessels, which continue to run into it from the sea after the dock gates have been finally closed for that tide. Such vessels can run in, so long as they have sufficient water over the sill of the sea gates of the basin, or until the basin itself is filled with ships. The sea gates are then closed, and the sluices in the upper gates are opened till the water in the basin is on a level with the water in the dock. The ships are then passed continuously into the dock, in a string, one after the other. By means of this arrangement the traffic can be carried on to a far greater extent than is possible with a narrow lock, which has to be filled and emptied for each vessel that enters or leaves the harbour. The late Mr Jesse Hantley of Liverpool was the first to propose half-tide outlet basins, as adjuncts to wet docks.

**Advantages of docks.** The peculiar advantages of docks are the following. Vessels can be accommodated in the smallest possible space, and are enabled to be constantly afloat, whereas in tidal harbours, where they take the ground, they are apt to be strained or to have their floors broken. But there are other sources of mischief than this in open harbours, for often, when the tide is ebbing, vessels, unless watched, fall

against each other. In two instances where the bottom, which was muddy, had a considerable declivity, a ship which had taken the ground on the beach near low water mark was actually run down and damaged by another stranded vessel, the warps of which suddenly snapped and frod her from the moorings at the quay, thus causing a collision between vessels both of which were at the time high and dry. Then there is the chafing of the vessel's sides against the quays in exposed harbours where there is a run of sea, and the breaking of warps during stormy weather, or during land floods, which there is a river. The late Mr James Walker stated that at Sunderland damage to the extent of £40,000 was occasioned in a single day by large quantities of ice that came down the river Wear. When a vessel is in dock she can be easily and at all times moved from place to place, and the operation of discharging and loading can go regularly on during all times of tide. Her level, too, is never much affected, so that the cargo does not require, when being discharged, to be hoisted so high as would otherwise be necessary. Timber vessels can be unloaded through their ports into the water at all times of tide, while in harbours which are dry at low water the cargo receives injury by falling on the hard bottom.

From the general description which we have given the following conclusions may be drawn as to the best localities for docks.

(1) Where the rise of tide is considerable, a dock is best more exposed than where the rise is small. In rivers, such as the Clyde and the Foyle, for example, where the tide rises only from 9 to 10 feet, the inducement to construct docks is not so great as at the Mersey or the Bristol Channel, where the tide rises from 20 to 50 feet.

(2) Where the nature of the trade requires ships of great length, which are therefore very liable to injury from taking the ground, a dock is more needed than at places where the vessels are of smaller size, and therefore less liable to be stranded when not water borne.

(3) Where the bottom is soft and muddy, there is less need for a dock than where the bottom is hard and even, unless where strong currents are likely to batter out the soft soil so as to make the bottom irregular by forming deep runs.

(4) Where the harbour is open to the entrance of surface waves of considerable height, or of a ground swell, there is more need for a dock than where there is better protection.

(5) Where there is sufficient fresh water, free from mud or salt, for supplying the basin, a dock will be more suitable than where the supply is from the tide, especially if the sea at the place be much loaded with matter in mechanical suspension.

In designing a dock the first subject to which the engineer should give his attention is the seaward exposure of his proposed work. Of course no precaution is needed on this head if the place be a landlocked bay, or a narrow river or estuary. But if there be a considerable fetch of open sea, the waves generated during gales may be of such height as to endanger the sea gates or to interfere with their being worked in stormy weather. The formula already given at page 457 for short lengths of fetch will be the most suitable for calculating the exposure of docks, where the fetch ought never to be great.

Having calculated by means of this formula the height of waves that may be expected to reach the dock gates, the engineer must then determine whether such waves are too high for the strength of the gates, or for their being properly worked in stormy weather. Now we have unfortunately but few facts on this subject to guide us, and these not very consistent with each other.

Height of Waves in which Gates can be Worked.

Name.	Width of Entrance in Feet.	Height of Waves in which Gates are worked in Feet.	Authority.
Androssan.....	40	2	Mr Moffat, C.E.
Sudham.....	36	2	
Sunderland, North.....	60	3	Mr Moak, C.E.
Do. South.....	60	2½	
Silloth.....	60	2	Mr Boyd, C.E.

It might at first sight be expected that the strain would increase as the squares of the breadth of the gate, but, owing to the manner in which the forces are distributed, this does not seem to be the case.

Where  $b$  = the width of opening of the entrance in feet, and  $h$  = the height of the waves at the place, the formula  $b = \frac{60}{h}$  may perhaps be regarded as safe; or, where  $h$  has not been observed, and  $D$  is length of fetch in miles,

$$b = \frac{60}{1.5 \sqrt{D + (2.5 - 3)D}}$$

Should the calculation by the formula give higher waves than are compatible with safety or convenience, the proper course will be to provide an outer harbour or covering break-water, so as to reduce the height of the waves. For this purpose the formula given at page 462 is applicable. In cases where the course now recommended cannot be adopted, from motives of economy or from other causes, recourse may be had to protecting booms such as are described at page 463. If the traffic be considerable and the interruption caused by the shipping and unshipping of the booms be regarded a formidable objection, the gates may in some cases be protected by fastening together the tops of the mitre posts by chains. Another mode of securing gates against the sea was adopted at Ramsgate by Mr Ramsay, and is stated by Sir John Coode to be perfectly satisfactory. It consisted of the following arrangement:—

"One end of a stout beam or stay of greenheart timber was connected, by means of a screw iron movable joint, to the fore part of each gate, near the middle posts on the inner or basin side, and at about the level of high water of equinoctial spring tides; the opposite end of this beam passed into an opening in the masonry of the side walls of the entrance. The inner end of the beam was supported by a small bogie truck running upon a pair of rails laid in a horizontal plane. On the vertical face of the beam nearest the gate there was a strong toothed rack working into a pinion at the end of a train of gearing, the first motion of which was a screw-and-worm wheel. By means of this gearing the power of the men was communicated to the gate through the beam or stay just described."

After the engineer has succeeded in designing a dock which is sufficient in so far as the sea is concerned, it may after all not prove safe and convenient if it be exposed fully to the force of the wind, which, acting on the rigging and hulls of the shipping, causes vessels to break their moorings or produces a grinding action of the vessels against the quays. At Sunderland south dock and at the docks in the Tyne, for example, the gales of October 1863 occasioned very considerable damage, from vessels breaking adrift from their moorings and coming into collision with other vessels.

Docks should be sheltered from wind.

Capacity of docks and harbours for tonnage.

The number of vessels that can be accommodated in each area of a harbour may be termed its "available capacity." This must obviously vary with the sizes of the craft which frequent the port, and with the ratio of sheltered to unsheltered acreage; or in other words, with the exposure, depth, and reductive power. It will therefore be highest for a dock with gates, less for a tide-basin into which the waves have access, and least of all for an anchorage break-water or roadstead. But it also depends on the form of the basin and on its depth.

The following table contains the greatest number of vessels that can be accommodated at one time per acre for several docks:—

Name.	Tonnage of Vessels.	Number of Vessels per Acre.	Authority.
Androssan.....	100 to 1000	15	Mr Moffat, C.E.
Avonmouth.....	2000	0.75	Mr Brunton, C.E.
King's Lynn.....	1500 avr.	6	Do.
Silloth.....	50 to 800	7.50	Mr Boyd, C.E.

If  $n$  represents the number of vessels per acre, and  $t$  their average tonnage, and  $a$  is a coefficient which may be taken at from 3 to 4 according to the tonnage inversely, the formula  $n = \frac{1000}{t \cdot a}$

may perhaps be convenient for showing, though necessarily in a very approximate way, the relative capacity for mixed shipping of proposed docks of symmetrical proportions. But the capacity will very largely depend on whether both large and small vessels frequent the port, or only vessels of one size.

The capacity for tonnage per acre is shown in the following table:—

Name	Depth of Water in Feet.	Tonnage per Acre at one time.	Tonnage shipped and unshipped per Acre per annum.	Authority.
Androssan.....	18½	8400	90,000	Mr Moffat.
Delfest.....	22	8074	40,867	Mr Ralmond.
King's Lynn.....	26	9000	22,456	Mr Brunton.
Silloth.....	22	6000	40,718	Mr Boyd.

The general form of a dock will in most cases be dependent on local peculiarities. Where the nature of the ground dock, and other circumstances admit of it, the width of the basin should, in order to provide for the largest amount of traffic, be greater near the entrance than at a distance from it. The diagram (fig. 8) may perhaps be regarded as an approach to the form of maximum capacity which should be kept in view as a general guide in making a design. But in most situations the form will, as we have said, be mainly if not entirely dependent on the outline of the land and depth of water, on the position of adjoining streets and buildings, and on the geological formation and nature of the subsoil. The serrated outline of the jetties shown in the diagram affords a larger amount of accommodation for

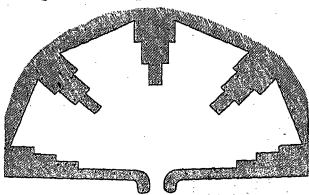


Fig. 8.

shipping than when the quays are continuously straight. Sir John Hawkshaw was, we believe, the first to adopt these indented jetties, which are specially suited for the coal trade; but the radiating form shown in the diagram has not, so far as we know, been adopted. Not only are numerous cross sections of the ground required for fixing on the best site for a dock, but borings of the subsoil are essential, as, upon a careful comparison of these, the position of the entrances must be determined. It is always of the greatest importance to place the foundations of the lock or entrance gates at a place where the bottom is rock; or, where that is not to be found, on the hardest and most impervious part of the subsoil, or, failing that, on a place where the bottom, though soft, is of uniform consistency.

Mr. Uie, in a report on Glasgow harbour, gives the following table showing the amount of work per yard per annum —

Port	Tonnage per Acre of Water	Damage per Acre of Quay	Remarks
Glasgow, including steamers	80,870	410	Fully worked
Glasgow, excluding steamers	20,381	398	
Southampton Tidal Harbour	20,090	370	Could do more
Liverpool Docks	21,200	185	Fully worked
Hull Docks	19,000	148	During 6 months
St Catherine's Docks	20,500	142	Fully worked

A great increase in the amount of trade, with the same size of dock and length of quay, may be effected by Sir William Armstrong's patent hydraulic machinery. This principle of applying hydraulic pressure for opening gates, bridges, and sluices, or to the capsterns for hauling vessels out for towing them to the turntables, the discharging of ballast and loading of coals, and the shipment and discharging of general cargoes, has now been successfully adopted at many harbours. Its use is, however, only warrantable where there is a great amount of traffic, and especially at places where the spring tides remain only a short time at the same level.

At the Victoria Docks, London, the late Mr. Biddler mentions that 41 craft and 17 ships, or 11,711 tons, came in at one tide. In one month the number of craft entering the harbour was 1,929, craft leaving, 1,288, ships entering, 250, ships leaving, 258, or an average of 2817 craft and 508 ships during the month. The gates, which are 80 feet apart, are opened in less than 14 minutes. At Sunderland the accumulators are equivalent to a head of 600 feet, and the engines are 80 horse power. A wrought-iron bridge 16 feet wide, and including counterweights equal to nearly 200 tons, is raised vertically 18 inches, and drawn back in about 2½ minutes. At Stranraer the accumulators are equivalent to an effective pressure of 750 lb per square inch, and there are three high pressure engines of 80, 80, and 12 horse power respectively. The time employed in either opening or closing the gates is about 2½ minutes, which is the shortest period consistent with safety. The wrought-iron swing bridge can be opened or shut in 11 minutes. The bollards, which are distributed round the dock, can each discharge from 800 to 400 tons in the dry. The quantity of coal that can be shipped is about 1000 tons per day, and the effective quantity of water is equal to the port is 21,000 cubic feet per week. The large new barge at Leith, designed by Messrs. Rendel & Robertson, and worked by the Armstrong apparatus, is 120 feet long, length of girdle 214 feet, weight moved 750 tons, and is opened in 14 minutes. The saving of time effected by this method is very great. At Liverpool, according to Mr. A. Glen, gates of 70 feet require 20 minutes, and 45 men on each side to open them.

The proportion of water area to length of quays will obviously depend on the form of the docks. The following table, deduced from information kindly supplied by Mr. Lyster O.E., gives examples on this head at Liverpool —

Total Water Area and Quay Space at Liverpool and Birkenhead

	Water Area	Length Quayage	Length Yards of Quay per Acre
	Acre Yards	Miles Yards	Yards
Liverpool Docks	252 1801	17 1172	1214
Liverpool Basins	16 4441	1 1088	1688
Liverpool Docks & Basins	268 1801	18 0	1272
Birkenhead Docks	150 4838	9 110	997
„ Docks and Basins	164 2838	9 770	1010

In order to utilize the area of a dock to the best advantage, a certain amount of land space dependent on the kind of trade should be provided around it, for without this space, which is needed for giving room for railway sidings, ware houses, and the like, the traffic would be cramped. As an illustration of the large extent of railway which is required in a coal port, we may refer to Cardiff, where Mr. McConochie says, "The extent of sidings provided and maintained by

the Rate trustees, in connexion with the docks, amounts to 16 miles in length, the whole of which is at times fully occupied."

The proportion of the area of outside basin to that of the dock to which it forms the access varies necessarily with the requirements of the trade, as is shown in the following table —

	Dock	Outer Basin	Ratio
Bute Dock (East)	42 38	2 15	19 69 1
Bute Dock (West)	16 85	1 40	120 4
North Dock	17 11	2 08	63 1
Tyne Dock	50	9 50	5 27 1
Liverpool generally	107	13	8 33 1

The level of the bottom of a dock is always kept lower than that of the sill of the entrance gate, in order to admit of a certain amount of deposit taking place without injury to the bottom of the dock. The depth of the water in the dock should never be less than 1 foot of greater depth over the bottom of the dock than over the entrance sill.

The commercial advantage of a great depth of water over the sill has been well shown by Mr. George Robertson in his report on the Albert Dock at Leith. By increasing the depth to the extent of 2 feet he found there would be 396 tides in the year giving a depth of 23 feet over the sill, as against only 102 tides in the year when that depth could be had if the sill were only 2 feet high. But besides the advantage of saving ourselves of a greater number of tides, Mr. T. Stevenson found, from an examination of the draughts and tonnage of a large number of sailing vessels, that the commercial advantages in a navigable river, dock, or harbour are proportional to the cubes of the depths.

The relation subsisting between the depth of a dock or channel and the tonnage of sailing vessels which can use it is given by the formula  $t = 13d^3$ , or  $d = \sqrt[3]{\frac{t}{13}}$ , from which the following table has been calculated —

Feet	Tons	Feet	Tons	Feet	Tons
5	16	13	225	19	492
6	28	14	286	20	1010
7	41 5	14	367	21	1201
8	69 5	16	530	22	1481
9	96 10	16 5	582	23	1681
10	130 17	17	659	24	1797
11	173 8	18	728	25	2011

In fixing the minimum width that will admit vessels of the size which are expected to trade at the harbour, the engineer must take care to preserve a proper relation between the area of the dock and the width of the entrance, for if this relation be neglected, a current may be generated through the entrance when the tide begins to ebb, which would be incompatible with the safe working of the gates. A very small current is sufficient to act injuriously in this way, especially if the gates be of great width. Whenever the internal area of the proposed basin is considerable, it will be a safe precaution to calculate the velocity of the outgoing current, at different periods of time, after the tide has begun to ebb, and for this purpose observations of the fall of the tide must be carefully made and compared with the proposed transverse sectional area of the passage through the lock chamber. If the velocity thus obtained be thought too great for the safe working of gates of the size required, the only alternative is to provide an additional lock. But a double outlet with all its advantages is in all probability needed, or will at least prove a great convenience in all cases where a large internal basin is required.

**Lockage.** The late Dr Rankine in his *Manual of Civil Engineering* gives the following table for the expenditure of water due to the passage of vessels through the lock —

Let *L* denote a lockful of water, that is, the volume contained in the lock chamber between the upper and lower water levels, and *B* the volume displaced by a ship, then the quantity of water discharged from the dock, as shown in the table. The sign prefixed to a quantity of water denotes that it is displaced from the lock into the dock.

Single Lock	Lock opened	Water discharged	Lock left
A descending ship	1 empty	<i>L</i> - 1	1 empty
Do do	1 full	1	1 full
An ascending ship	1 empty on full	1	1 full
Do do	1 full on empty	1	1 empty
Two ships descending	1 empty on full	1	1 empty
Do do	1 full on empty	1	1 full
From a ship ascending	1 empty on full	1	1 full
Two ships ascending	1 full on empty	1	1 empty

From these calculations it appears that ships ascending and descending alternately cause less expenditure of water than equal numbers of ships in train.

Depress  
ion of  
dock-  
level

The level of the surface of the water in a dock will of course sink in proportion to the number of times the lock has to be filled during each tide, and may also be affected to a small extent by leakage. In order to provide for this depression of level, the old dock of Grimsby, and also the Butte Dock, Cardiff, are supplied by land streams, while at Fenchurch St. John Hawkland was unable to get a supply of pure water, and the dock at that port is supplied from the tide water of the Bristol Channel, which holds in suspension a large amount of alluvial matter. In the old London docks the level is kept up by pumping.

If the masonry of the walls has been properly constructed, and if the gates and lock are kept in proper repair, and especially if the basin be of large area, the depression of the water level due to leakage, will, as appears from the following table, be comparatively trifling —

Name of Dock	Area in Acres	Leakage	Authority
Aldersham	1	18 in per tide	Mr Moffat, C E
Belfast	32	At first 1 to 2 in, now 6 in springs, and 4 in drains	Mr Salmond, C E
Whitehaven	44	8 in	Mr Dunlop, C E
Avonmouth	16	1 in in 24 hours	Do
Krug's Lynn	6	1 in	
Salford	4	12 in per tide	Mr Bopd, C E

Works  
of con-  
struction

The principal works required in the construction of docks are—*first*, cofferdams for excluding the tide, and pumps for keeping the basin dry while the works are going on; *second*, excavation of the basin and lock pit, *third*, piling for the foundations of quay walls and lock, where the bottom is soft; *fourth*, the building of the quay walls, lock, and outer tide basin, *fifth*, entrance gates, gangway, and dolphins in the channel outside of the dock for facilitating the entry and departure of vessels.

As to the *first* of these works, namely, the cofferdam and pumping apparatus, reference is made to the articles on these subjects in this work, and as to the *second* and *third*, there is nothing requiring special notice, as no peculiarity attaches to the mode of carrying on excavation or piling for docks more than for any other engineering undertaking where these are needed. It is only necessary to point out that when the bottom is soft a large amount of piling is required, more especially at the lock pit, where rows of sheeting piles should be driven across the lock, at least at the entrance, and in the lines of the elap or pointing sills against which the gates shut.

The *fourth* class of works, namely, quays and lock, are in all cases most important features in a dock. Dif-

ferent rules have been given by engineers for the proportions of quay walls. Mr A. Gilles recommends that they should be made strong enough to resist the pressure of a head of water equal to their own height, and Minsard recommends their thickness at bottom to be  $\frac{1}{10}$ ths of their height.

The recent use of Portland cement concrete in the construction of harbours has led to its introduction at dock works. In the small dock erected in 1875 at Berwick on Tweed, Messrs Stevenson had the dock walls and gate chamber constructed entirely of Portland cement concrete, excepting a small portion at and above the high water level, against which the vessels might rub, and Mr Rendel at the new Victoria Dock, London, which are the longest in the world, is making the whole masonry of cement concrete.

Graving docks are basins sometimes 600 feet long and 60 or 70 feet wide, fitted with gates, from which the tide water which floats the vessel into the dock is pumped out, so as to let the carpenters get access to the ship's bottom. The sides of graving docks consist of a series of steps of masonry, called "altars," against which small timber props, generally of Gelf of Bohemia timber, are placed, for supporting the vessel's sides as she ceases to be water-borne. Her keel is supported on blocks, generally of hard wood, but of late years they have in some places been made of cast iron. The sides, in order to save pumping, are in some places made of a curved form, so as to suit the shape of the vessel's side. The advantages are, however, more than counterbalanced by the undue contraction of the space allotted for the carpenters, who are unable to move about easily on the sloping surface of the masonry.

Of all the different kinds of masonry which enter into the construction of marine works, there is none which requires greater accuracy of workmanship, or more careful supervision, than the graving dock. Leakage in a wet dock, provided it does not originate at a place where it is liable to increase through time, and is of no greater extent than to depress the surface of the water a few inches, cannot be regarded as a serious evil. But in a graving dock, where the requirements are different, there should be no leakage. A very little water, accumulating on the platform of a dry dock, interferes to a serious extent with the comfort and convenience of the carpenters. Although it may occasion considerable additional expense, there ought to be in all cases, especially where the soil is full of springs, an ample underground storage provided by a system of drains for receiving the leakage, which can then be pumped out periodically, as required, without ever allowing the water to rise above the platform.

Mr G B Rennie's docks are stated to be the first of the kind that have been made of iron. They consist of floating caissons for holding the vessel to be repaired. They are sunk by allowing them to fill with water, and are raised by pumping. The caissons are made with water-tight compartments, and they are carried up as high as the vessel's bulwarks, excepting that through which the vessel enters and leaves. Among several advantages that have been claimed for this kind of dock may be mentioned—its independence of the rise and fall of the tide, the power of applying breast shores in an ordinary graving dock, and the stiffness produced by the side walls. As the upper parts of the side walls or altars are always full of air, this dock may be used in deep water, and is therefore independent of the nature of the bottom.

Mr Edwin Clark's hydraulic lift, at the Victoria Dock, London, consists of a pontoon which is filled with water, and sunk between two rows of iron columns. After the vessel has been floated and stowed upon the pontoon, the whole is raised by twelve hydraulic force-pumps of 2 feet diameter, acting on the pontoon by means of chains. After the

Proportions of quay walls. Mr A. Gilles recommends that they should be made strong enough to resist the pressure of a head of water equal to their own height, and Minsard recommends their thickness at bottom to be  $\frac{1}{10}$ ths of their height.

Quay walls of concrete.

Graving docks.

about

Mr G B Rennie's floating dock.

no lift

pontoon has been brought about the tide level, the water is allowed to creep, when there is sufficient floating power to admit of the whole being removed to any place where the repairs can be conveniently made. The pontoons, which can accommodate vessels of a length of 350 feet, are about 320 feet long and 59½ feet broad. "The power of the hydraulic lift is 6400 tons. The largest pontoon will carry a dead load of 9200 tons in addition to its own weight."

Slips

Slips are the contrivances of the late Mr Thomas Motton of Leith, and consist of a carriage or cradle working on an inclined railway, falling generally at the rate of about 1 in 17, and extending above high water to a sufficient distance for the class of vessels which are expected to use them to several feet below the level of low water, and a truck or carriage which moves on it. When the carriage is let down under the water, the vessel is floated above the place, and the carriage is drawn up till the vessel catches it forwards. When the ship is placed truly above the line of the carriage, a powerful crab-purchase at the top of the slip, which is generally worked by steam, is set in motion, and raises the truck and ship out of the water.

Tidgions

The tidgion is a simple framework of timber placed at a level sufficient to admit of vessels being floated above it during the flood-tide, and grounded upon it during the ebb, and when thus left high and dry the vessels' bottom can be examined to ascertain if it be necessary to take her into the graving dock, and trifling repairs can also be made. The tidgions at Liverpool vary from 25 feet to 36 feet 3 inches in breadth, and from 228 feet 3 inches to 313½ feet in length.<sup>1</sup>

Hydraulic and screw docks

The hydraulic and screw docks used in America are chambers into which vessels are floated during the flood-tide, above a cradle which is drawn up above the high water level, either by means of D'Almeida's press worked by a steam-engine, or by a powerful apparatus of screws.

Relative advantages in slips and graving docks

The patent slip possesses the following advantages over the graving dock:—(1) The cost of its construction is less. (2) When the fall of tide is languid, a vessel can generally be more quickly laid dry. (3) When so laid dry she can be more easily examined, and, from the duration of the daylight being greater than in a deep graving dock, the time in which work can be done is considerably extended during winter. (4) There is more perfect ventilation, by which the vessel's sides are sooner dried, which is of some moment with iron ship. (5) A vessel can be hauled up long before high water, and the repairs can be begun at once, whereas with a dock the pumping occasions considerable delay. (6) While the upper part of the ship is occupied, an additional vessel may be taken up for a shorter time than its predecessor, without interrupting the workmen.

The advantages afforded by a graving dock, on the other hand, are these:—(1) Although its construction is more costly, it is nevertheless, if properly built, unquestionably a more durable structure—the rails, rollers, carriages, and chains connected with the slip being liable to derangement, which entails occasional repair. (2) The management of the graving dock is simple, and involves comparatively little superintendence, whereas that of a slip is intricate, and requires more than mere nautical skill. (3) The working of a graving dock is equally simple for large or small vessels, while it is undeniable that the raising of a large vessel on a slip is a delicate operation, and should be attempted only under the direction of persons thoroughly versed in such matters, and having ample mechanical resources at command. (4) The graving dock possesses the advantage, which is sometimes important, of affording the means of more easily filling a vessel with water, so as to detect leaks which may not be discoverable by other means. For this purpose a

<sup>1</sup> "Historical and Descriptive Sketch of the Mersey Docks and Harbours," by J. J. Runkel, in the *Archives* for 1864.

nozzle to receive a flexible tube should be fixed into the dock gates. (5) Where double gates are provided the water contained in the dock affords a certain limited power of scouring the forebay and entrance, an advantage which is of course not possessed by a slip. (6) In any rapid land current, or strong tide-way, it is a much easier process to dock a vessel than to land her safely on the cradle of a slip—an operation which, when incautiously gone about, has been in some cases attended with serious consequences even in sheltered situations. (7) The graving dock need not interfere with the set of the currents, whereas a slip which projects a long way seaward of low water may deflect them and produce shoals in the channel. (8) Mr. Mallet has remarked that the strains on a ship's timbers are more direct than when she is on a slip, especially when she is leaving the cradle. The late Mr J. M. Dalfour suggested, in order to meet this objection, that the cradle for a ship might be made of a wedge shape, so that its upper surface shall be parallel with the horizon, or that the back and should even be tilted slightly, so as to give a lute on the vessel and prevent her from slipping.

The relative advantages of the other contrivances for the repair of ships already described may be judged of by comparing them with each other in a similar manner.

Mr P. W. Barlow has given the following formulae for Dock strength of dock-gates—

#### Formulae for Straight Gates

If  $\phi$  = horizontal angle (or "sally") between pointing wall and line joining heel posts of the two leaves,  $W$  = pressure on the height of the gate with any load, and for a given depth of the gate, and  $B$  = hole transverse strain at angle  $\phi$ , then

$$S = 1 \cdot W \cdot 600 \phi + 2 \cdot 6 \cdot W \cdot \phi^2$$

From this Mr Barlow has deduced that the salient angle, where the strain is the minimum, is  $24^\circ 54'$ , but as the length of the gate increases with the scant, the strength will not at this angle be the greatest with a given section of timber. The "sally" or angle which gives the greatest strength, with a given section of timber, is stated by him to be  $16^\circ 26'$ .

#### Formulae for Curved Gates

When  $\theta$  is the salient angle, or arc of the beam, formed by a chord line drawn from the heel to the mitre post, and  $\theta$  tangent to the curve of the gate—

$$S = 1 \cdot W \left\{ 1 - \frac{\sin \theta}{\sin (\frac{1}{2}\theta - \theta)} \right\}$$

There is great difference of opinion among engineers as to the strain to which dock gates are subjected, and the data furnished for this information to the 18th and 19th volumes of the *Archives of Proceedings of the Institution of Civil Engineers*. In the discussions Mr Brown pointed out an error in Mr P. W. Barlow's paper, which stated that the line of pressure at the mitre posts would always be a tangent to the curve of the separate gates, whereas that line must always be at right angles to the centre line of the lock, and could only be a tangent to the curve when the two gates formed a segment of a circle, or, as Mr Brownell says, "at events when their junction at the mitre posts formed at that point part of a continuous curve." Mr Brown gave a delicate formula suited to meet a yielding or diffusion of the strain, which he alleges must always take place. Mr Brownell states, and we think justly, that, when the gates form when closed a segment of a circle, they cannot be subject to transverse strain, and that the whole of the gates would be subjected simply to compression. Mr R. P. Brierley very properly suggests that when the gates are of mild-iron the boiler plate should never be less than ½ inch thick, whilst, even the former, he only indicates.

Where  $l$  represents the length of one half of a straight or curved malleable iron gate,  $s$  the distended pressure over the length of the leaf taken on a given element of the gate, bounded by two horizontal planes 1 foot apart,  $t$  the thickness of the framework of gate or distance between the two skins,  $\frac{1}{2}t$  the transverse strain in middle of gate,  $\theta$  half of the mitring angle,  $\frac{1}{2}t$ , the angle formed by meeting of gates—all the dimensions being in feet, and weight in tons, then—

$$s = \frac{W \cdot l^2}{4t^2}$$

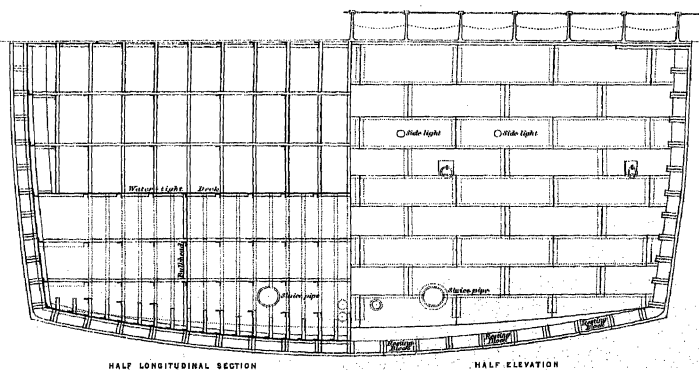
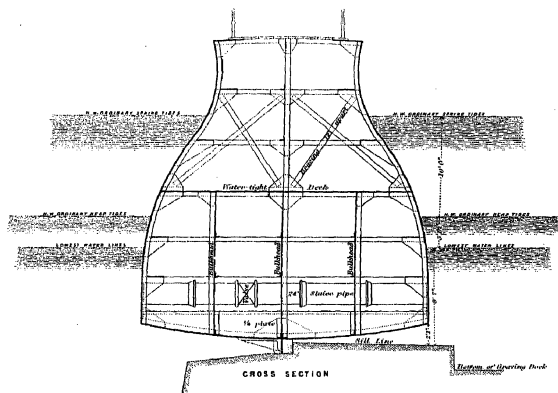
$\frac{1}{2}t$  = sectional area of metal on compressed side in inches,  
 $\frac{1}{2}t$  do do on extended side do do  
 $\frac{1}{2}t$  do do compressed strain produced by other leaf of gate







CARDIFF DOCKS  
CAISSON FOR GRAVING DOCK



SCALE 1/1000  
0 10 20 30 40 50 Feet





**HARBURG**, a seaport town of Hanover, Prussia, at the head of a cude in the district of Lüneburg, is situated on the left bank of the southern branch of the Elbe opposite Hamburg, which stands on the right bank of the northern branch of that river. The distance between the two towns is about 4½ miles, and there is railway communication between them by means of a bridge over both rivers, completed in 1871. The town is also connected with Hanover by railway. It is the seat of a local court, a superintendent-general, a head custom house, and a chamber of commerce, and it possesses an old castle, which from 1624–1642 was the residence of the Hamburg line of the house of Lüneburg, a real-school of the first order, a commercial school, and a trade school. The industries include shipbuilding and the manufacture of india rubber and gutta percha ware, oil, soda, starch, alum, oysters, yarn, cast-iron, machines, and leather. There are also horse and cattle markets, and some shipping trade, which, however, has considerably declined since better communication was opened up with Hamburg. In 1878 there entered 469 sea-going vessels with a burthen of 38,110 tons, and 7677 sea-going vessels with a burthen of 175,643, while the corresponding averages during the previous twelve years (1866–1877) were 633 sea-going vessels and 7669 of iron craft, with burthens respectively of 43,036 and 168,082 tons. Harburg belonged originally to the bishopric of Bremen, and received town rights in 1307. In 1375 it was united to the principality of Lüneburg, along with which it fell in 1705 to Hanover, and in 1806 to Prussia. In 1813 and 1814 it suffered considerably from the French, who then held Hamburg, and who built a bridge between the two towns, which remained standing till 1816. The population in 1875 was 17,131.

**HARDENBERG, FRIEDRICH VON** (1772–1801), German poet and philosopher, best known as Novalis, was born on his father's estate in the county of Mansfeld, in Prussian Saxony, May 2, 1772. He was of a shy, retiring, and thoughtful disposition, and was deeply influenced by his parents, who were strict members of the sect of Moravian Brethren. After attending the gymnasium of Hallesheim he went as a youth of eighteen to the university of Jena, where he studied philosophy, mathematics, and the natural sciences. There he was treated with great kindness by Schiller, of whom he was a warm admirer. He studied law in Leipzig and Wittenberg, and in 1791 settled for a time in Tennstedt in order to perfect himself in the practical work of the legal profession. During his residence in Tennstedt he formed a passionate attachment to Sophie von Kuhn, a beautiful but delicate girl of thirteen, and with her consent obtained a promise from her parents that when she reached womanhood she should become his wife. In 1795 he was made auditor at the salt works of Wessensfeld, where his father was director. Two years afterwards his betrothed died, and for some time he seemed to be broken-hearted and to have lost all interest in life. In a few months, however, he went to the academy of mines at Freiberg, where he studied with a view to a higher appointment in connexion with the salt-works, and in the midst of his studies he became engaged for a second time, and was again able to look forward to a happy and useful career. He returned to Wessensfeld in 1799, and was associated as assessor with the directorate of the salt-works. As he was preparing for his marriage in the autumn of 1800 he was alarmed by the sudden appearance of blood from his lungs. The wedding was postponed, and although he believed to the end that his recovery was certain, the disease made rapid progress, and he died on the 25th of March 1801. He was of a tall, slight, and graceful figure, with light brown hair and hazel eyes, and a face expressive of a calm, gentle, and meditative spirit. After his death his

writings were issued in two volumes by his friends Ludwig Tieck and Friedrich Schlegel, and were rapidly recognized as important contributions to German literature. They are for the most part composed of fragments, of which the chief is *Heinrich von Ofterdingen*, an unfinished romance. Hardenberg is often spoken of as "the prophet of the Romantic school," and the phrase sufficiently marks his leading peculiarities. He took no part in the literary warfare carried on by his friends, but he shined to the full through their strongest sympathies. Like them he intensely disliked those "enlightened" writers of the 18th century who had claimed to say the last word about human life through mere logic, he was penetrated by the conviction that there are elements in the world which cannot be grasped by the understanding, and which must be felt rather than reasoned about. Although he was fond of science and history, he moved most freely in the borderland between religion, philosophy, and poetry, and his prose writings are full of sayings which, although not easily intelligible, are impressive and stimulating. His diction is often simple and unostentatious, but it is rendered difficult both by the abstruseness of his themes and the remoteness of his allusions. As a poet he lacked definiteness of conception, his lyrics, however, especially those of a religious nature, have a certain tender beauty which gives them high rank in the serious literature of Germany. They are marked by deep feeling and by sweetness and grace of expression. He himself regarded a series of *Hymns to Night* as his best achievement, but it is in *Heinrich von Ofterdingen* that the majority of his admirers find the fullest attainment of his mystic aspirations, his passion for spiritual beauty, and his idealist philosophy.

See his *Schriften* (5th ed., Berlin, 1847, vol. iii., 1848), and H. Rym, *Das Romantische Schicksal* (1870), and *Friedrich von Hardenberg* (1878).

**HARDENBERG, KARL AUGUST** (1750–1832), Prussian statesman, was born at Ereschoda in Hanover, May 31, 1750. Having studied at Leipzig and Göttingen, he entered the Hanoverian civil service as chamber councillor (Kammerrat) in 1770, and afterwards spent some time in Vienna, Ratisbon, Vienna, and Berlin, and travelled in France, Holland, and England. He was made privy chamber councillor (Geh. Kammerath) and raised to the rank of count in 1778, but a private quarrel with the prince of Wales compelled him four years afterwards to give up his appointments in Hanover and seek a new career. In 1787 he received the office of president of the board of domains (Kammercollegium) in Brunswick, and he was entrusted with the duty of delivering to Frederick William II of Prussia the will of Frederick the Great, who had deposited it with the duke of Brunswick. Frederick William II. was so impressed by Hardenberg's appearance and character that he recommended him as a minister to the margrave of Anspach and Bayreuth. These principles being united to Prussia in 1791, Hardenberg was appointed a Prussian cabinet minister, but continued to perform his duties as chief administrator of the new province. In the war with the French republic he acted as minister of war, and in 1795 signed on behalf of Prussia the treaty of peace concluded at Basel. When Frederick William III. mounted the throne in 1797, Hardenberg was transferred from Anspach-Bayreuth to Berlin, where he received high offices in the cabinet, being also soon afterwards nominated chief of the departments for Magdeburg and Halberstadt, for Westphalia, and for Neuchâtel. At this time the foreign policy of Prussia was determined by Jangwitz, who was on all occasions subservient to Napoleon. When in 1803 Prussian interests seemed to be threatened by the French occupation of Hanover, Jangwitz fell into disrepute, and in the following year his place at the head of the cabinet was

taken by Hardenberg. The latter was anxious to maintain peace, but when in 1805 Napoleon's troops marched through Anspach he strongly protested, and entered into a convention with Russia. The victory of the French at Austerlitz, however, made it difficult for Prussia to proceed to hostilities, and on the 15th December 1805 Haugwitz signed a convention with Napoleon, whereby in return for Hanover Prussia conceded Anspach, Cleves, and Neuchâtel to the French. Hardenberg then retired, and Haugwitz returned to power. The policy of Haugwitz was exceedingly unpopular, and led to the war in which his country was prostrated at the foot of Napoleon. After the battle of Jena Hardenberg undertook the office of foreign minister, but when the treaty of Tilsit was signed he withdrew and watched from a distance the vigorous and enlightened efforts of Stein to restore new life to the fallen and humiliated state. Stein being compelled to retire in 1810, Hardenberg was recognized as the only possible successor of the great minister, and he amply justified the confidence with which he was honoured. The circumstances of the time did not admit of his pursuing an independent foreign policy, but he steadily prepared for the inevitable struggle with France by carrying out Stein's far-reaching schemes of social and political reorganization. The military system was completely reformed, and a new school, municipal institutions were fostered, the civil service was thrown open to all classes, and great attention was devoted to the educational needs of every section of the community. In the war of liberation Hardenberg was one of those who did most to stimulate the patriotic enthusiasm not only of the Prussians but of all Germans, and so important were his services that on the 3d June 1813, after he had signed the first treaty of Paris, he was raised to the rank of a Prince or Prince. He accompanied the allied sovereigns to London, was one of the chief plenipotentiaries at the congress of Vienna, and took a leading part in the negotiations which led to the second treaty of Paris. After the restoration of peace he retained his place at the head of the Prussian cabinet, but his conduct of affairs was no longer marked by energy and foresight. He was accused of being too submissive to the papacy, and, although a man of liberal sentiments, he had not the courage to resist his royal master's dislike of constitutional government. He died at Genoa, November 26, 1832.

Hardenberg wrote memoirs of the time between 1801 and the conclusion of the first treaty of Tilsit, and entered them before his death to his friend Schell, a councillor of state. They were used by Friedrich Wilhelm III and placed in the state archives, with directions that they should not be published until after the lapse of fifty years. At the end of this time they were edited by Prince Bismarck to Leopold von Ranke, who revised them according to a biography of the author (*Denk- und Gesandten des Staatskanzlers Fürsten von Hardenberg*, 1 vols., 1877). See also Klose, *Leben Karl Augusts, Fürsten von Hardenberg*, 1881, and Seeley, *Life and Times of Stein*, 1879.

**HARDERWIJK**, a town of the Netherlands, in the province of Guelderland, on the coast of the Zuider Zee, about 28 miles N E of Utrecht. Its principal buildings are the town-house, the Reformed church rebuilt in the 15th century, the Nassau-Verlue gymnasium, the colonial dockyard depot, formerly the mint, and the municipal orphanage. Agriculture, fishing, and a few trifling domestic industries form the sole employment of the inhabitants, who in 1872 numbered 5041.

Formerly the town was much more important. Having been surrounded with walls by Count Otto II in 1280, and gifted with municipal privileges in 1331, Harderwijk rapidly extended its commerce till it dealt directly not only with London and Hamburg but with England, Denmark, and Sweden. In 1592 the town was captured by Charles V. in 1672 it became subject to the United Netherlands, and in 1678-79 it was besieged for seventeen months by the bishop of Münster and his French allies.

**HARDICANUTE**, **HARTHCANUT**, or **HARDKNUT** (c. 1018-1019), the last of the Danish sovereigns of England, son of Canute king of England, and his wife Alfgva Emma, the sister of Richard duke of Normandy, and widow of King Ethelred, was born most probably in 1018 or 1019. When Canute died in 1035 Hardicnut was ruler of Denmark, and Swend, the elder reputed son of Canute by Alfgva of Northampton, one of his concubines, was ruler of Norway. It is said to have been the wish of his father that Hardicnut should be ruler of both England and Denmark, but his connexion with Denmark seems to have been prejudicial to his English interests, and though his claims were supported by Godwine and the West Saxons, the witanagemot which met at Oxford decided that his government should not extend further north than the Thames, and that Harold, Canute's younger son by Alfgva of Northampton, should reign over the northern provinces, being also in all probability overlord of the whole kingdom. Hardicnut refused, however, to come to England on such conditions, and in 1039 the witan of Wessex deposed him, and chose Harold also for their king. On the death of Harold in 1040, Hardicnut, who was about to invade England, had his hostile intentions dissuaded by the message which reached him at Bruges, making him an offer of the crown, which he was prepared to accept, but which he chose of him seems to have been spontaneous, and not at all due to the threatening attitude he had assumed, but apparently he had not forgotten the former slight he had received, and his abjection was marked by great oppression and cruelty. He caused the dead body of Harold to be dug up from its place of sepulture at Westminster, and thrown into a marsh on, according to another account, into the Thames, he exacted so heavy a demerger for the support of his foreign fleet that great discontent was created throughout the kingdom, and in Worcester a general uprising took place against the calls sent to collect the tax, upon which he burned the city of Worcester to the ground and devastated the surrounding country, in 1041 he permitted Godulf, earl of Northumbria, to be treacherously murdered after having granted him his full friendship. It would appear that Hardicnut was greatly given to excess in eating and drinking, and while carousing at the marriage feast of one of his thegns he was suddenly seized with an epileptic fit, from which he died a few days afterwards, June 8, 1042. He had no children, and though the line of Danish sovereigns might have been continued by Swend, the choice of the kingdom was unanimous for Edward Atheling, son of Ethelred.

See *Norman's Norman Conquest*, vol. 1. *L'ignave's History of the Anglo-Normans*, and *Guen's History of the English People*, vol. 1.

**HARDING**, **JAMES DWYFIELD** (1798-1893), a landscape painter, was the son of an artist, and took to the same vocation at an early age, although he had originally been destined for the law. He was in the main a water-colour painter, but he produced various oil-paintings both at the beginning and towards the end of his career. He frequently contributed to the exhibitions of the Water Colour Society, of which he became an associate in 1818, and a full member in 1822. He was also very largely engaged in teaching, and published several books developing his views of art,—amongst others, *The Tourist in Italy*, 1831, *The Tourist in France*, 1834, *The Park and the Forest*, 1811, *The Principles and the Practice of Art*, 1846, *Elementary Art*, 1840, *Scotland Described in a Series of Views*, 1847, *Lectures on Art*, 1849. He died at Barnes on 4th December 1893. Harding was noted for facility, sureness of hand, nicety of touch, and the various qualities which go to make up an elegant, highly trained, and accomplished sketcher from nature, and composer of picturesque landscape material, he was particularly skilful in the treatment of

foliage, and had for many years a leading position among those landscapists who carry on the miscellaneous work of the art to the satisfaction of their own generation, without establishing an ultimate claim to the higher kind of posthumous renown.

HARDING, JOHN See HARDYNG

HARDINGE, HENRY HARDINGE, VISCOUNT (1785–1856), field marshal and governor general of India, was born at Wrotham in Kent, March 30, 1785. After passing a short time at Eton college, he entered the army in 1798 as an ensign in the Queen's Rangers, with whom he served in Canada. In the Peninsula War he served for a time on Wellington's staff, and received an appointment as deputy-quarter-master-general in the Portuguese army. From Marshal Beresford, whose approval and subsequent influence he had won by his gallantry at Corunna in 1809, Hardinge was present at nearly all the battles of the campaign, he was wounded at Vimiera and Vittoria. At Albuera he saved the day for the British by taking the responsibility at a critical moment of ordering General Cole's division to advance. When peace was again broken in 1815 by Napoleon's escape from Elba, Hardinge hastened into active service, and was appointed to the important post of commander at the Prussian headquarters. In this capacity he was present at the battle of Ligny, June 16, 1815, miles before he lost his left hand by a shot, and thus was not present at Waterloo fought two days later. For the loss of his hand he received a pension of £300, and in the same year was made a K C B. In 1820 and 1826 Sir Henry Hardinge was returned to parliament as member for Durham, and in 1828 he accepted the office of secretary at war in Wellington's ministry, a post which he also filled in Peel's cabinet in 1841–43. In 1830 and 1834 he was chief secretary for Ireland. In 1844 he succeeded Lord Ellenborough as governor general of India, a position which he retained till January 1849. During his term of office the Sikh War broke out, and the governor general after the battle of Mudki magnanimously offered to serve as second in command under Lord Gough. He manifested all his old courage and skill, and at the peace, for his services in the campaign, he was created Viscount Hardinge of Lahore, and of King's Newton in Derbyshire, with a Government pension of £3000 for three lives, while the East India Company voted him an annuity of £5000. He returned to England in 1848, and in 1852 succeeded the duke of Wellington as commander-in-chief of the British army. While in this position he had the home management of the Crimean War, which he endeavored to conduct on the Wellingtonian principles—a system not altogether suited to the changed mode of warfare. In 1855 he was promoted to the rank of field-marshal. Viscount Hardinge resigned his office of commander-in-chief in July 1856 owing to failing health, and died on September 24th of the same year at his house near Tunbridge Wells.

HARDOL, a British district of Oudh, India, under the jurisdiction of the lieutenant-governor of the North Western Provinces, lying between 26° 58' and 27° 47' N lat., and between 79° 44' and 80° 52' E long., with an area in 1878 of 2385.64 square miles. The district is an irregular parallelogram between the Ganges and Gomti, its greatest length from north-west to south east is 78 miles, and the average breadth is 46 miles. It is bounded on the N by Shahjahanpur and Kheri, E by Sitapur, the Gomti forming the boundary-line, S by Lucknow and Unao, and W by Farrukhabad, the Ganges marking the boundary. It is a level district watered by the Ganges, Rámgarh, Garra, Sukhetá, Sáti, Baita, and Gomti,—the three rivers first named being navigable by boats of 500 *mauddis*, or about 17 tons burden. Towards the Ganges, the land is uneven, and often rises into hillocks of sand cultivated at

the base, and their slopes covered with lofty *muny* grass. The soil of Hardol is lighter than that of perhaps any other district of Oudh, 27 per cent being sand, 66 per cent loam, and 17 per cent clay. Several large *jháls* or lakes are scattered throughout the district, the largest being that of Sándi, which is 3 miles long by from 1 to 2 miles broad. These *jháls* are largely used for irrigation, 126,000 acres being watered from them. Large tracts of forest jungle still exist. Leopards, black buck, spotted deer, and *nilgáts* are common; the mallard teal, grey duck, common goose, and all kinds of waterfowl abound.

The inhabitants of Hardol district in 1860 numbered 631,517, of whom 605,994 were males and 430,622 females (Hindus, 816,284, Mahomedans, 56,824, Christians, 48, 'others,' 43). The nine largest towns were—Shahábad, 18,264 inhabitants, Sadulá, 16,511, Bilgram, 11,634, Máláunau, 11,670, Sándi, 11,123, Páuní, 7562, Hardol (the administrative headquarters of the district), 1756, Gopáun, 6949, and Pául, 6122. The principal religious fairs are the following—At Bilgram, in September, on the occasion of the *Jám Zila* festival, lasting ten days and attended by about 10,000 persons; at Káitia Hráam, during the whole month of Bhádrá (August and September), attended by 100,000 persons; at Páuní, in April and November, the *Pranbhárá Sámáth* fairs, lasting for only a single day on each occasion, and attended by from 15,000 to 20,000 persons. These, together with several other small fairs, are held for religious purposes, and have no commercial value. Rice, wheat, and other food grains form the great staples of agriculture. The area under crops is 844,566 acres of 1419 square miles, being more than one-half the entire area. The soil with the Rohilkhand Railway from Lucknow to Shahjahanpur runs through Hardol for a distance of 62 miles. There are also 329 miles of raised and bridged roads, and 73 miles of minor roads, intersecting the district. The principal imports are cotton, silk, cloths, cloth, and European piece goods, the chief exports,—food grains, sugar, tobacco, joined cattle, and hides. The value of the imports in 1878 was £102,955, of the exports, £62,977. The gross revenue of the district in 1876 amounted to £19,959, the expenditure to £18,478. The regular police (1873) consisted of 430 officers and men, costing £6610. The number of schools in 1875 was 112, with 5577 pupils. The average rainfall for the twenty years ending 1873 was 82 inches. Malwa lawa students, clerics, and cultivators, both *History*.—The first authentic records of India in connection with the Mussulman colonization. Bihar was occupied by Sayyid Sikar Masud in 1028, but the permanent Muslim occupation did not commence till 1217. Owing to the situation of the district, Hardol formed the scene of many sanguinary battles between the rival Afghan and Mughal empires. Between Bilgram and Sadulá was fought the great battle between Humayun and Sher Shah, in which the former was utterly defeated. Hardol, along with the rest of Oudh, became British territory under Lord Dalhousie's proclamation of February 1858.

HARDOUIN, JFAN, was a classical scholar of the 17th century, at once singularly learned and singularly singular. He was born at Quimper in Brittany in 1646, and died at Paris in 1727. Having acquired a taste for literature in his father's book-shop, he sought and obtained about his sixteenth year admission into the learned society of the Jesuits. In Paris, where he went to study theology, he ultimately became librarian of the Collège Louis le Grand. The life of laborious authorship inaugurated by his edition of Themistius (Paris, 1684), which included no less than thirteen new editions, was continued with a wonderful perseverance and success. At the advice of Garnier he undertook to edit the *Natural History* of Pliny for the Delphin series, and five years saw the completion of a task which, in the opinion of Huet, would have taken any ordinary scholar fifty years. His attention having been turned to numismatics as auxiliary to his great editorial labours, he published several learned works in that department, married, and determination to be set at all hazards different from other interpretations. It is sufficient to mention *Nomina antiqua populorum et urbium illustrata* (Paris, 1684), *Antiquitates de nummis antiquis coloniarum et municipiorum* (Paris, 1689), and *Chonologia Vel Festi ad vulgarem versum evocata et nummis illustrata* (Paris, 1696). By the ecclesiastical authorities Hardouin was appointed to supervise

the *Concilium collectio regni maxime* (Greek and Latin, Paris, 1715, 12 vols.), but he was accused of suppressing important documents, and forging in apocryphal matter, and by order of the parliament of Paris the publication of the work was delayed till some of its deficiencies were remedied. It is, however, as the originator of a variety of paradoxical theories that the learned father is now best remembered. The most remarkable, contained in his *Chronologie critique par les medailles* (Paris, 1696), was to the effect that, with the exception of the works of Homer, Herodotus, and Cicero, the *Natural History* of Pliny, the *Georgica* of Virgil, and the *Statues et Epitaphes* of Horace, all the ancient classics of Greece and Rome were spurious, having been manufactured by monks of the 13th century.

In 1709 Jean Louis de Lamoignon published at Amsterdam an edition of Haudouin's *Opera Selecta*, and though he made many corrections at the author's suggestion, he refused to admit the wholesale cancelling of the passages condemned by the Jesuits. Details in regard to Haudouin's theories, controversies, and whimsies may be found in Bayle and Morlet, in Leclerc, *Dictionnaire des sciences historiques*, Lymbet, *Notice sur la vie de Louis XIV.* Dujon, *Bibliographie des auteurs ecclésiastiques*. Leclerc, *Biographie des savants* (Paris, 1787-97), and, more particularly, Anguian and Alos de Buchet, *Bibliographie des écrivains du Ve siècle de Jésus* (Louvain, 1858).

HARDY, HERMANN VON DREH (1660-1746), Orientalist, descended from an old Dutch family, was born at Malle, in Westphalia, on 15th November 1660. His father, who was master of the college of Teubenberg, appreciating his son's abilities, gave him a good education at Osnabrück, and sent him afterwards to Jena and Leipzig. Young Hardy, gifted with a quick disposition and a powerful memory, soon gained renown for his fluency in carrying on learned discussions in Latin, but the study of the Oriental languages divided him from all other pursuits, and in no long time he made him self master of Hebrew, Syriac, and Chaldean. The duke of Brunswick, hearing of Hardy's fame, appointed him his librarian shortly after the Ottobruner had founded at Leipzig a philological society, with the object of determining the sacred text. In 1690 Hardy was called to the chair of Oriental languages at Helmstedt, and his late master was prevailed upon to present to that university his valuable library, of which Hardy was again appointed to take charge in 1703. Seven years later he was named rector of the gymnasium of Marenburg, a post which he held till his death on 28th of February 1746.

Among his numerous writings, the following deserve mention:—*Abrégé de l'histoire sacrée et civile depuis Moïse jusqu'à Jésus-Christ*, 1716, 8vo; *Revue critique de l'histoire sacrée et civile*, 1690-91; *Magnum Chronologicum Constantine Consilium*, 1707; *Hebraica lingua Fundamenta*, 1694; *Syriaca lingua Fundamenta*, 1694; *Revue critique de l'histoire sacrée et civile*, 1690; *Revue critique de l'histoire sacrée et civile*, 1717; *Revue critique de l'histoire sacrée et civile*, 1723. The last is a collection of pieces previously published separately, all of which had been condemned by the church. This republication was allowed to be suppressed. Hardy left a *History of the Hebrew nation* in manuscript, which is preserved in the Helmstedt Museum.

HARDWAR, or HURDWAR, an ancient town of India and place of pilgrimage, in Saharanpur district, North-Western Provinces, situated on the right bank of the Ganges at the foot of the Siwalik Hills, in 30° 57' 30" N lat., 78° 12' 52" E long. Population (1872), 4800. The town is of great antiquity, and has borne many names. It was originally known as Kapila from the sage Kapila. Hwen Thsang, the Chinese Buddhist pilgrim, in the 7th century A.D. visited a city which he calls Mo-yu-lo, the remains of which still exist at Mayapur, a little to the south of the modern town. Among the ruins are a fort and three temples, decorated with broken stone sculptures. The great object of attraction at present is the Hai-ko-chuan, or bathing ghât, with the adjoining temple of Gangadwara. The *charan*, or foot-mark of Vishnu, is imprinted on a stone set into the upper wall of the ghât, and forms an object of

special reverence. A great assemblage of people takes place annually, and every twelfth year a feast of penitence, *sankranti*, occurs, known as a *Kumbh mela*. The ordinary number of pilgrims at the annual *fair* amounts to 100,000, and at the *Kumbh-mela* to 300,000. The Hardwar mela is also possessed considerable mercantile importance, being one of the principal horse-fairs in Upper India. Commodities of all kinds, Indian and European, find a ready sale, and the trade in grain and food-stuffs forms a lucrative traffic. The Ganges canal draws its supply of water from a branch channel close to the town. Hardwar is a police station, with post and telegraph offices.

HARDY, ALEXANDRE (1660-1631), the most fertile of all dramatic authors, next to Lope de Vega and Calderon, merits a place in dramatic literature on that account alone. He is said to have written upwards of six hundred plays, of which forty-one were printed in his own edition of 1624-28, and may still be read. It cannot be charged upon modern writers that they are slow to see merit in early French authors, but it has been found impossible by any to admire the hasty works of a man who wrote a tragedy in eight days, and did not scruple to borrow situations from any quarter where he could find them. He at first followed a strolling company as its author, and ended by becoming the dramatist of the Théâtre du Marais. He knew how to make the most of his situations, he, evidently by constant practice, became a master of stage business and stage effects. He knew the kind of dialogue—coarse and rough—which would please his audience, his art, compared with that of Molière, his successor, is the art of a carpenter compared with that of a sculptor. To the student of the drama Hardy will always be an interesting figure, appearing as he does between the degraded morality and the modern comedy, an imitation alike of Italian pastoral and Spanish tragedy. He had no sympathy with the classical pretensions of Jodelle, he gave little heed to art, he thought entirely of what would succeed for the moment. One piece alone of Hardy's has succeeded in arresting the attention of critics, the tragedy of *Métemprise*. Hardy lived long enough to witness the first successes of Corneille.

HARDYNG, or HARDING, JOHN, an English rhyming chronicler of the 16th century, was born in 1378. Having been admitted at the age of twelve to the household of Henry Hotspur, son of the earl of Northumberland, he was afterwards present with his patron at the battles of Homildon (1402) and Cokolawe, and saw him fall in the fatal field of Shrewsbury (1403). He next entered the service of Sir Robert Umfraville, and held for some time the post of constable of the castle of Warkworth. In the beginning of the reign of King Henry V. he was commissioned to go over as many as possible of the deeds connected with the homage of the Scottish kings to the English crown, and we find him some time after presenting the results of his search to Henry at Bois de Vincennes. In recognition of his exertions he was promised the manor of Gelfington in Northamptonshire (worth in the money of the time from £32 to £36), but the king dying before he obtained possession he was left, as he tells us, "without reward or lyfeloed any wise." Beyond a stray notice in the Lansdowne MS. of his chronicle, to the effect that Hardyng was in 1424 at Rome consulting and transcribing the chronicle of Trojan Pompeius, there is little trace of his proceedings till 1454, when he received a safe conduct from James of Scotland, that he might bring with him "the chronicles which we spoke to you at Goldingham of, for which we bnde us by this letters to pay you a thousand marks of English nobles." A contract preserved in the Exchequer bears that in 1457 he delivered to the earl of Shrewsbury the letters in which David and Robert of Scotland recognized the English supremacy, and a number of less important documents of similar



tendency; and in the same year letters patent were issued granting him a pension of £20 per annum for life. The leisure of his old age appears to have been occupied with a revision of his chronicle, which he presented to Edward IV. It could not have been finished before 1465, but it only comes down to the flight of Henry VI. to Scotland. The purpose of the writer being "that Englishmen might have understanding of all affairs touching their own countree Even to his dayes from all antiquite," he starts his narrative with Brutus the Trojan, and details the history of all the mythical kings. When he comes down to his own time a considerable part of the material is derived from his own experience. The Scottish portions are animated by strong national hostility: "unto the Scots he could never be friend."

The most important MSS. of Hardyng's Chronicle are the Lansdowne (20) and the Harleyan (661) in the British Museum, the Bodleian (*Archæol. Seldæ*, B 10), and the Ashmolean. Richard Grafton printed two editions in January 1543, which differ in almost every page from each other. Grafton's abridgment was printed by Totell in 1563, and again in 1564. Mr Ellis in 1812 edited the work from the Lansdowne MS., and prefixed a life of the author.

HARE, the common name of all the species, excepting the rabbit, of *Leporida*, a family of rodent mammals, distinguished from the rest of that order by the possession of four incisor teeth in the upper jaw, two in front, which are well developed and longitudinally grooved, and two exceedingly small ones behind. The molars are formed for the mastication of vegetable food, an uneven surface being produced by the presence of transverse enamel plates which are worn down more slowly than the intermediate dentine. The teeth are without permanent roots, and thus the constant waste at the surface is compensated for by continuous growth at the opposite extremity. Hares all possess long ears, and in most species the hind legs are much longer than those in front. They are without exception timid, defenceless animals, although during the breeding season two males have been known to fight together for possession



FIG. 1.—Common Hare.

of the female until one was killed; while all the species are protectively coloured. They form a single genus (*Lepus*), containing from thirty-five to forty species according as certain forms are regarded as independent species, or merely as geographical varieties. They occur in all the great zoological regions of the world, but are especially characteristic of the northern and temperate areas of both hemispheres.

The common hare (*Lepus timidus*, fig. 1) is a typical example of the family. The ears in this species are longer than the head, and its hind legs are so long in comparison with those in front, that it is only by descending a hill diagonally that it can avoid overbalancing itself. It is found in all parts of Europe except the north of Russia, the Scandinavian peninsula, and Ireland, and is especially abundant in those countries in which it enjoys the protection of game laws. Its fur is usually of a tawny grey colour above and white

beneath, with the upper surface of the short tail and the tips of the ears black. The colour of the fur, however, differs considerably in different latitudes and at different seasons of the year, showing, for example, a tendency to become white during winter in northern countries, while assuming a reddish-yellow hue in the more genial climate of southern Europe. On the strength mainly of such outward differences various species have been described, but these have been found to be so linked together by intermediate forms as to satisfy most naturalists that they are merely climatal varieties of one species. The hare is a night-feeding animal, remaining during the day on its "form," as the slight depression is called which it makes in the open field, usually among grass. This it leaves at nightfall to seek the folds of young wheat and other cereals whose tender herbage forms its favourite food. It is also fond of gnawing the bark of young trees, and thus often does great damage to plantations. In the morning it returns to its form, where it finds considerable protection in the close approach which the colour of its fur makes to that of its surroundings; should it thus fail, however, to elude observation it depends for safety on its extraordinary fleetness. On the first alarm of danger it is said to sit erect and to reconnoitre, when it either seeks concealment by clapping close to the ground, or takes to instant flight. In the latter case its great speed, and the cunning endeavours it makes to outwit its canine



FIG. 2.—Mountain Hare.

pursuers, form the chief attractions of coursing. The hare takes readily to the water, where it swims well; and Yarrell records an instance in which one was observed crossing an arm of the sea about a mile in width. Hares are remarkably prolific. They pair when scarcely a year old, and the female brings forth several broods in the year, each consisting of from two to five leverets (from the French *lever*), as the young are called. These have their sight at birth, and after being suckled for a month they are able to look after themselves. In Europe this species has never been known to breed in confinement. The hare was well known to the ancient Greeks and Romans.

In those parts where the common hare does not occur, its place is taken by the varying or mountain hare (*Lepus variabilis*, fig. 2). It is found throughout the entire northern portion of the great Palearctic region, from Ireland eastward to Japan, while it also occurs on the Pyrenees, the Alps, the highlands of Bavaria and the Caucasus, although altogether absent in the less elevated regions which connect these mountain ranges. Its presence in such isolated situations in company with many truly arctic plants is regarded as one of the many proofs of a former glacial epoch, during which boreal plants and animals were spread all over southern and central Europe. On the advent, however, of milder climatic conditions, this northern flora and fauna retired towards the Arctic Circle, leaving a few species, such

as the varying hare, behind on the various mountain ranges, where by ascending to a sufficient altitude the necessary local conditions could be obtained. The mountain hare differs from the preceding species in its ears being shorter than its head, and in its fur becoming in most cases white in winter,—a change of colour which renders it almost invisible in the snow. Along the southern limit of its range, or in districts where the temperature is from any cause exceptionally mild, this change of colour either does not take place at all, as in Ireland, or is only partial, as in many parts of Scotland. In this respect it resembles the cynomys, which it further resembles in having a part of its fur always remaining black, in the hare, however, it is the tips of the ears, and not the point of the tail, which thus remain unaltered. In Scotland where it is known as the "blino hare," it occurs plentifully throughout the hilly regions north of the Forth, where it descends to the low grounds in winter, while in Ireland it is the only hare found. Owing to the mildness of the climate, however, in the "Green Isle," the colour of the fur undergoes little or no alteration in winter, and on this account it was until recently regarded by many as a distinct species (*Lepus hibernicus*). Throughout the Arctic regions of North America a closely allied species, the polar hare (*Lepus glacialis*), occurs. Naturalists have hitherto had considerable difficulty in distinguishing this from the preceding species, the chief difference being in the colour of the fur, which in the Polar hare is white all the year round, with the exception of the tips of the ears. Considerable light has, however, been thrown on this point by the observations of the naturalists attached to the late Arctic Expedition under Sir George Nares, who found this species inhabiting the shores of Gunnell Land, and obtained evidence in foot-prints on the snow of its existence in latitude 83° 10', about 20 miles north of the nearest land. Unlike all other hares, and resembling in this respect the rabbit, the polar hare would seem to occupy a burrow—"a hole," says Captain Feilchen, "4 feet in length, scraped horizontally into a snow drift." "I have no doubt," he continues, "the same burrow is regularly occupied, as this one was discoloured by the feet of the animal, and a quantity of hair was sticking to the sides." Another point of importance in establishing the specific distinctness of this species from the former lies in the difference in the number of young composing a brood in each of these species. The number of young found in gravid females by the naturalists already referred to varied from seven to eight, while in the varying hare of Europe the number does not exceed five. According to Captain Lyon, the polar hare is by no means a shy animal, as during his cruise in the Arctic seas hares were in the habit of coming out on the ice to his ships to feed on the tea leaves which were thrown overboard. This species has thus been found inhabiting the highest northern lands yet visited by man, where it also attains its normal weight of from 8 to 10 lb. subsisting on the stone-works and other hardy plants which form the scanty vegetation of circumpolar valleys. The American varying hare (*Lepus americanus*) is one of the most widely distributed species of this family, extending, in one or other of its two geographical varieties, from the borders of the Arctic barren grounds southwards to New Mexico. It differs from the mountain hare of Europe in its smaller size and relatively smaller ears, but resembles it in the change of colour in the fur, especially of the northern varieties, during winter. It is exceedingly abundant on the banks of the Mackenzie River, where it is killed in great numbers by the Indians. A favourite device among the Indians for catching it, according to Darwin, is to walk spirally round and round it, when on its form, especially at midday when the shadow of the hunter is shortest. It has still more implacable enemies, however, in the wolves,

glutons, and lynxes of those regions, of the last of which it is said to form the principal food. The fur of this species is imported into Great Britain, but it is of little value. In the swampy district of the south-eastern portion of the United States, the swamp hare (*Lepus aquaticus*) and the marsh hare (*Lepus palustris*) occur. These take readily to the water, and are said to dive for some distance, their legs being less thickly clothed with hair than are those of the less amphibious species. They feed chiefly on aquatic plants. Only one species of hare (*Lepus brasiliensis*) occurs in South America. It is found throughout Brazil, and on various parts of the Andes in Bolivia and Peru. Fossil remains of several species of *Lepus* have been found in the Post-Glacial deposits and the bone caves of Europe, while the remains of many extinct species have been lately discovered in the Miocene deposits of Dakota and Colorado.

HARE, JULIUS CHARLES (1795-1856), theological writer, was born at Valdarno, near Vicenza, in Italy, on the 13th of September 1795. He came to England with his parents in 1798, but in 1804-5 spent a winter with them at Weimar, where he met Goethe and Schiller, and received a bias to German literature which influenced his style and sentiments throughout his whole career. On the death of his mother in 1806, Julius was sent home to the Charterhouse in London, where he remained till 1812, when he entered Trinity College, Cambridge. There he became fellow in 1818, and after some time spent abroad he began to visit here in London in the following year. In 1822 he was appointed assistant tutor at Trinity College, which position he retained for ten years. Turning his attention from law to divinity, Hare took priest's orders in 1826, and, on the death of his uncle in 1832, he succeeded to the rich family living of Thurstonsmead, in Sussex, where he accumulated a library of some 12,000 volumes, especially rich in German literature. Before taking up residence on his parish he once more went abroad, and made in Rome the acquaintance of the Chevalier Bunsen, who afterwards dedicated to him part of his work, *Hippolytus and his Age*. In 1840 Hare was appointed a lecturer of Law, and in the same year preached a course of sermons at Cambridge (*The Victory of Faith*), followed in 1846 by a second, *The Mission of the Comforter*. Neither series when published attained any great popularity. Archdeacon Hare married in 1844. In 1851 he was collated to a prebend in Chichester, and in 1853 he became one of the queen's chaplains. He died January 23, 1855.

Julius Hare belonged to what has been called the "Broad Church party," though some of his opinions approached very closely to those of the Englishman's school, while others again seem vague and undecided. He was one of the first of his countrymen to recognize and come under the influence of German thought and speculation, and, amidst an exaggerated alarm of German heresy, did much to vindicate the utility of the sound German critics. His writings, which are chiefly theological and controversial, are largely formed of charges to his clergy, and sermons on distinct topics, but, though valuable and full of thought, they lose some of their force by the cumbersome German structure of the sentences, and by certain orthographical peculiarities in which the author indulged. In 1827 *Questions at Truth by Two Brothers* appeared. Hare edited Thirlwall's *Arctic Voyages*, 1844, in the translation of the 1st and 2d volumes of Nichol's *History of Rome* (1828 and 1832), and published a *Verification of Niebuhr's History* in 1839. He wrote many similar works, among which is a *Treatise on Luther against his recent English followers*, 1844. In 1848 he edited the *Remains of John Sterling*, who had formerly been his curate. Carlyle's *Life of John Sterling* was written through disconnection with the *Life* of Hare, which he dedicated to Archdeacon Hare's book *Memoirs of a Good Life*, published in 1872, containing accounts of the Hare family.

Julius Hare's co-worker in this book was his brother Augustus William Hare (1792-1834), who, after a distinguished career at Oxford, was appointed rector of Alton Barnes, Wiltshire. He died prematurely in Rome in 1834. He was the author of *Sermons to a Country Congregation*, published in 1827.

HAREBELL, or, as the name is often written, HAIRBELL, known also as the Blue-bell of Scotland, and Witches' Thimble, a well-known perennial wild flower, *Campanula rotundifolia*, L., a member of the natural order, *Campanulaceae*.

The harebell has a very slender slightly creeping root-stock, and a wiry, erect stem. The radical leaves, to which the specific name refers, have long stalks, and are roundish or cordate, crenate or serrate, the lower stem leaves are ovate or lanceolate, and the upper ones linear, subsessile, acute and entire, rarely pubescent. The flowers are slightly drooping, arranged in a panicle, or in small specimens single, having the calyctube glabrous, with subulate and erect segments, the corolla campanulate, with slightly recurved segments, and the capsule nodding, and opening by pores at the base of the calyctube. There are two varieties—(a) *gemina*, with slender stem leaves, and (b) *montana*, in which the lower stem-leaves are elliptical-oblanco-lanceolate. The plant is found on heaths and pastures throughout Great Britain and North America, and flowers in late summer and autumn. The harebell has ever been a great favourite with poets, and on account of its delicate blue colour has been considered as an emblem of purity.

HAREM, or less frequently HARAM, the recognized European title for that portion of a polygamist's house which is devoted to the exclusive occupancy of his wives and their attendants, or, by a simple metonymy, for the female portion of his household. The word *harem* is Arabic for anything forbidden or not to be touched. It is generally applied in Moslem law to such things as games of chance, draughts, chess, witchcraft, and pot-smoking, which are inconsistent with the religious code, and under the form of harem it is well known even to Europeans as designating the sacred enclosure of the principal mosque at Cairo and at Jerusalem (*Haram esch-Scherif*). The word *seraglio*, which is not unfrequently employed as equivalent to harem, is an Italian modification (usually spelled *an ragho* from assimilation to *seraie*, to shut in) of the Persian term *seray*, which simply means a palace or large building, as in the familiar compound *casaraserai*. Wherever polygamy is maintained in the midst of a developed social life, the harem appears to be an almost inevitable institution. We consequently find it after a more or less rigid type among the Jews, the Babylonians, the Siamese, the ancient Persians, the Peruvians, &c. But it is among the modern Mahometan peoples that it has attained its most perfect development, and the harems of the sultan of Turkey and the shah of Persia may be taken as the most elaborate and best known specimens of the type.

According to the Koran, the Mussulman is required to satisfy himself with four wives, but the sultan may possess as many as seven. Each of these has her own suite of apartments, her own garden and bath-room, and her own body of servants, male and female. They are not called by their names, but distinguished as *Kadun* (or Lady) Number One, Kadun Number Two, and so on. The title of sultana is bestowed only on the mother, the sister, or the daughter of a sultan, and consequently it is the kadun who first gives



Harebell (*Campanula rotundifolia*)

birth to an heir to the empire who alone can have this distinction. She further obtains the title of *hasseky* or *hasseki*, but this is lost if the child dies. All the female slaves, or as they are called odalisks (a European corruption of the word *odalik*, from *oda* a chamber, and *lik* belonging to), are at the absolute disposal of the sultan, and if, in spite of the natural endeavours of the kadins to prevent such a contingency, one of them becomes the mother of his lord and master's first-born, she is advanced to the rank of sultana *hasseky*. It is contrary to etiquette for the sultan to select his own favourites among the odalisks, he is expected to accept the choice made for him by his mother, who bears the title of *valide*, and exercises great influence not only in the affairs of the harem but even in political matters. Every odalik who has been promoted to the royal couch is henceforth considered sacred from all meaner patronage, and receives apartments and attendants of her own, but she has no further claim to the sultan's attention, and may have to console a life-long widowhood with the memory of the honour which was once bestowed on her. The ranks of the odalisks are ever and anon recruited by slaves presented to the sultan by his female relatives or the state officials. The latter, for example, are accustomed to make acknowledgment of their allegiance in this way every year on the evening before the 15th of Ramadan. An old and devoted favourite of the sultan occupies the post of *khaznadar*, or lady-superintendent of the harem, a large body of eunuchs, both black and white, are employed as guards and gate-keepers. The white eunuchs have charge of the outer gates of the seraglio, but they are not allowed to approach the women's apartments, and obtain no posts of distinction. Their chief, however, the *kaymak* *apbas*, or master of the gates, has part control over the ecclesiastical possessions, and even the vizier cannot enter the royal apartments without his permission. The black eunuchs have the right of entering the gardens and chambers of the harem. Their chief, usually called the *kizlar* *apbas*, or master of the maidens, though his true title is *dar us-saidt* *apba*, or chief of the abode of felicity, is an official of high import-ance. His appointment is for life. If he is deprived of his post he recovers his freedom, and if he resigns of his own accord he is generally sent to Egypt with a pension of 100 francs a day. His secretary keeps count of the revenues of the mosques built by the sultans. He is usually succeeded by the second eunuch, who bears the title of treasurer or *kizaznahdar*, and has charge of the jewels, &c., of the women. The number of eunuchs is always a large one. The sultana *valide* and the sultana *hasseky* have each fifty at their service, and others are assigned to the kadins and the favourite odalisks.

Further details on the Sultan's harem will be found in an anonymous paper in the *Revue d'Orient* (London, 1861), in the valuable article by Hoffmann in Ersch and Gruber's *Encyclopaedia*, and the *Seraglio del gran visir* *di Venezia* (Venice, 1865) by Ottaviano Boni, Venetian ambassador, in 1608. An account of a visit to the harem of the Persian sultan Mirza Ismail was given by M. Flaudin in the *Revue des Deux Mondes* (1852), and the true (read) sight sensation in Persia. Sketches of harem interiors are common in our popular literature from Lady Mary Wootley Montagu's *Letters and Travels* to Morocco (1759) down to Mrs. S. Livy's *True Turkish Harems and Caucasian Homes* (Lond., 1871). The Count de Beauvoir gives a picture of the harem of the sultan of Persia, and the Siamese mandarin in his *Panorama around the World* (Lond., 1870). Much interesting information was given by Dr. Hantzsche (who as a physician was *seraglio* as admissible to the harem) in *Zeitschrift für allgemeine Ethnologie* (Berlin, 1864).

HARFLEUR, the Harfleur of our older historians, a maritime town of France in the department of Seine Inférieure and arrondissement of Harfleur, about 6 miles E. of Havre on the railway between that city and Rouen. It lies in the fertile valley of the *Lezards* at the foot of wooded hills not far from the northern bank of the



portant science amongst a people whose every rule of religion and of life depended upon the accurate interpretation of some word in passage of the Koran, or some saying of the prophet. The rival school of Kufa was the only one that approached it in fame or glory, and in all the numerous disputes that took place between the two academies Basorah is generally allowed to have had the advantage. His name Hariri signifies silk-merchant, and was probably derived from his father's occupation, as, in spite of the assertion of his biographers to that effect, he appears not to have ever engaged in trade, but to have devoted himself exclusively to literary pursuits. His great object was to investigate the niceties of the Arabic language, and he composed several treatises on the subject, amongst which the best known are *Molhat el 'Arab* (Beauties of Desinential Syntax) and *Dur al el Ghawds* (The Diver's Pearl), in which he criticises certain common faults of language in vogue amongst the educated. Portions of both these works have been published by Do Sacy in his *Choix de mots*, and the *Dur al el Ghawds* has been edited by H. Tholbecke (Leipzig, 1871). But his great work is the *Makamat*, or "Assemblies," in which a series of anecdotes of a very slight character in the career of an imaginary learned vagabond afford the opportunity for the display of vast philological and literary learning. The plan was not original, having been already invented and used by Badî' az Zamân el Hamadânî, who died about 1008. The composition of Hariri's own *Makamat* is attributed to the following circumstance: Being one day in the mosque of the Bani Hâzam, in the quarter of Basorah in which he resided, he noticed an old man enter, shabby and worn with travel, who in answer to the questions of the persons present gave his name as Abu Zeid, and said that he came from Serûj, a city near Edessa, which had recently been devastated by the crusaders. The old man related the incidents of the destruction of his native city and his own domestic losses and exile in so eloquent a strain as to excite general admiration and compassion. On reaching his home Hariri wrote out the incident in the form of a makamat or assembly, in the style of el Hamadânî's work, and it now forms the 48th of his book. When subsequently elaborating the idea he modelled the successive chapters on the same theme, a simple minded Arab gentleman, el Hâith ibn el Hammâm, on his travels constantly meets with a vagabond old impostor, Abu Zeid, who, under different characters and disguises, always succeeds in eliciting the sympathy and alms of his audiences and the approbation of el Hâith himself. Abu Zeid is always poor, ill dressed, and crafty, but eloquent in the extreme, and has fraudulently obtained gains as always spent in some forbidden enjoyment, yet there is ever a good side to his character, and he is not without an exhibition of true feeling, especially when he alludes to the circumstances of his expulsion from his home, and the loss of his daughter, who had been made captive by the marauding Franks. The improvised speeches of Abu Zeid are masterpieces of Arabic learning, every sentence being made to introduce some allusion to Arab history, poetry, or tradition, or the discussion and elucidation of some difficult point of rhetoric or grammar. It is this that gives the value to the book and makes it with its commentary a complete encyclopædia of classical Arabic literature and philology. It is written in rhymed and rhythmical prose, such as is used in the Koiné itself, interspersed with verses of poetry of which the merit is more often in the language than the thought.

The *Makamat* have been edited by Silvestre de Sacy, with a select Arabic commentary (Paris, 1822), and a new edition of this edition with numerous French notes, was issued by MM. Reinaud and Darmabourg (Paris, 1858). An English translation of some select "Assemblies" was made by Theodore Fremon for the Oriental Translation Fund (London, 1860), and an admirable translation of

the last twenty six assemblies by T. Clunney (London, 1867), containing an introduction and notes, and a resume of all the literature of the subject. Of the numerous editions of the *Madaniyat* of Hariri, the best known is the *Madaniyat el Hariri*, a Persian work by Tahâf ibn Shalâmeh al Khawârî, edited by T. Clunney (London, 1872), and the *Madaniyat el Bahâir* (Continence of the Two Sexes), by Nâsîr el Yâzi (Boycutt, 1853), an excellent work in Arabic, displaying an immense acquaintance with the recent literature of the language. (E H P)

#### HARLEQUIN. See PANTOMIME

#### HARLEY. See OXFORD, EARL OF

**HARLINGEN**, or **HAARLINGEN**, in *Frisian Nieuws*, an important trading town and seaport in the province of Friesland in the Netherlands, is situated 17 miles W of Leeuwarden with which it has been connected by rail since 1863. Besides its dilapidated fortifications, and the town-house, which was erected between 1730 and 1733 and is adorned with a statue of the historian Simon Stijl, the only noteworthy buildings are the Great or New church, the West church, which was formerly part of the castle, the Roman Catholic church, and the Jewish synagogue. The school of navigation and school of design may also be mentioned. Harlingen is the seat of the Frisian Navigation Company, and it has regular steam communication, not only with Amsterdam and Nieuwe Diep, but also with London and Hull. Besides an inner harbour protected from the high tides by powerful sluices, it has an outer harbour of modern construction for the accommodation of large vessels. One of the chief departments of its trade is the export to England of Frisian produce—corn, cattle, butter, cheese, and flax. Wharves, saw-mills, anchor forges, rope yards, and a canvas factory represent the auxiliary industries of the town. In the middle of the last century, Harlingen had 7000 inhabitants, which increased in the course of the next hundred years to about 8000. In 1860, before the new harbour works, they numbered 9800, and in 1878 they were 10,800.

Originally Harlingen was only a part of the village of Almarum, and lay at some distance inland, but the Zuyder Zee, which had already in 1184 destroyed an intervening town, and another in 1506 and attained its present limits. The Spanish lieutenant Caspar Robles de Bolli, whose monument, the "Man of Stone," now stands on the sea dyke, took care to protect the site of the town by further embankments. In 1679 it was surrounded by walls and fosses, a new castle had been built in 1602. During the civil wars of 1787 Huisman was blockaded by the Patriots of Franeker. In November 1770 and February 1825 it suffered from severe inundations.

**HARMODIUS**, a beautiful Athenian of the tribe Gephyriæ, was the intimate friend of Aristogiton, a citizen of the middle rank. Hipparchus, younger brother of the tyrant Hippasus, was also a lover of Harmodius. He tried to attract Harmodius to himself, and failing in the attempt, revenged himself by putting a public affront on his sister at a solemn festival. Thereupon the two friends conspired with a few others to murder both the tyrants during the armed procession at the Panathenæic festival (514 B.C.). But in a sudden alarm they prematurely attacked and slew Hipparchus alone. Harmodius was captured on the spot by the guards, and Aristogiton was soon captured and tortured to death. When Hippasus was expelled (510 B.C.), Harmodius and Aristogiton became the most popular of Athenian heroes, their statues were set up in the agora, their descendants were exempted from public burdens, and their names were celebrated in popular songs and eclogues as the deliverers of fair Athens. Thucydides (vi. 54) alludes to the falseness of the popular belief about them, and gives the story in detail.

**HARMONIA**, wife of Cadmus. The Theban legends (see CADMUS) have been so modified and systematized by poets and logographers that we must look to Sophocles with his old religious rites for an explanation of the myth. There Harmonia is said to have been the daughter of Zeus and Elestra, while her brother Jason was the founder of

the mystic rites which were celebrated annually on the island. When Cadmus came to Samothrace, and was initiated, he received Harmonia as his wife. The gods honoured the wedding with their presence, Athena presented the bride with a peplos and necklace, Electra gave the mystic rites of the mother of the gods. According to the scholiast on Euripides (*Phoen.* 1) Cadmus with the aid of Athena carried off Harmonia, and in the mysteries the lost Harmonia is regularly sought for. We have here an exact parallel to the Eleusinian legends. Electra and Harmonia are more varieties of Demeter and Kore. Cadmus like Pluto carries off the bright daughter of the goddess to the world below to spend there the dreary winter. Hence in the Theban tale Cadmus and Harmonia leave Thebes to go away among the Thracians, the snake people, are themselves changed into serpents, and are finally translated to the Elysian fields. We then understand, too, why (according to Pausanias, ix. 16, 3) Cadmus dwelt at Thebes in the temple of Demeter Thesmophoria. The necklace, wrought by Hephaestus, which Harmonia received as a marriage gift, may be compared with the cestus of Aphrodite, for it is impossible to draw a fast line between Harmonia of Core and Aphrodite. Then it is seen to be the mythic representative of some phenomenon like the half of dawn in the morning. Like the works of the German dwarfs, this necklace existed with it all luck, and the legends give it a history of woe. With it Polycrates bribed Euphyle to betray her husband Amphicrates. It brought death at last to her son Alcibiades. Dedicated in the temple of Athena Pronaia at Delphi, it was given by the tyrant Phayllus (363 B.C.) to his mistress, her son going mad set fire to the house, and she perished in the conflagration.

HARMONICA is the technical name for the "musical glasses" with the learned conversation about which the people here from town to town astonish the simple-minded visitor of Wakefield. An instrument for producing musical sounds by means of drinking glasses touched with the moistened fingers was, however, known 100 years before Goldsmith's novel. What its exact nature may have been cannot now be ascertained, but its mode of playing must have been far from perfect, for as late as the middle of the 18th century the musical glasses played by Mr Packard were placed on a table and their pitch was fixed by the quantity of water they contained, naturally a very uncertain mode of determination. It was to this instrument that the great Benjamin Franklin applied his improvements described in his letter to Father Beccaria of Turin. Instead of fixing the glasses he made them rotate round a spindle set in motion by the player's foot by means of a treadle. The edge of the glasses by the same means passed through a basin of water, the pitch henceforth being determined by the size of the glasses alone. The player touched the brims of the revolving glasses with his finger, his task being further facilitated by the scale of colour which Franklin adopted in accordance with the musical gamut. Thus C was red, D orange, E yellow, F green, G blue, A indigo, and B violet. The black keys of the piano were represented by white glasses. The instrument thus improved became very fashionable in England, and a Miss Davis, a relation of Franklin's, became a celebrated harmonica player, who performed at numerous concerts with great applause. It is interesting to know that the great composer Gluck was a virtuoso on the musical glasses in their earlier form, which he played, according to a contemporary advertisement, at the Haymarket Theatre, April 23, 1740. He even seems to have claimed the instrument as his own invention, and promises to "perform upon it whatever may be done on a violin or harpsichord." Nowadays the idea of a composer of repute—for such Gluck was at the time—playing on the

musical glasses would appear grotesque. But the notions of æsthetic dignity were different in the 18th century. Many attempts have been made to increase the power and flexibility of the harmonica, and also to avoid the nervous instability said to be caused by the friction of the vibrating glasses. Thus harmonicas played with the bow or by means of a keyboard, like that of the pianoforte, have been invented. But none of these has met with permanent success, and in all essential points the modern harmonica is such as Franklin left it.

HARMONIC ANALYSIS is the name given by Sir William Thomson and Professor Tait in their treatise on *Natural Philosophy* to a general method of investigating physical questions, the earliest applications of which seem to have been suggested by the study of the vibrations of stings and the analysis of these vibrations into their fundamental tone and its harmonics or overtones.

The motion of a uniform stretched string fixed at both ends is a periodic motion, that is to say, after a certain interval of time, called the fundamental period of the motion, the form of the string and the velocity of every part of it are the same as before, provided that the energy of the motion has not been sensibly dissipated during the period.

There are two distinct methods of investigating the motions of a uniform stretched string. One of these may be called the wave method, and the other the harmonic method. The wave method is founded on the theorem that in a stretched string of infinite length a wave of any form may be propagated in either direction with a certain velocity,  $V$ , which we may define as the "velocity of propagation." If a wave of any form travelling in the positive direction meets another travelling in the opposite direction, the form of which is such that the lines joining corresponding points of the two waves are all bisected in a fixed point in the line of the string, then the point of the string corresponding to this point will remain fixed, while the two waves pass it in opposite directions. If we now suppose that the form of the waves travelling in the positive direction is periodic, that is to say, that after the wave has travelled forward a distance  $l$ , the position of every particle of the string is the same as it was at first, then  $l$  is called the wave-length, and the time of travelling a wave-length is called the periodic time, which we shall denote by  $T$ , so that

$$l = VT$$

If we now suppose a set of waves similar to these, but reversed in position, to be travelling in the opposite direction, then there will be various points, distant  $l$  from each other, at which there will be no motion of the string, it will therefore make no difference to the motion of the string if we suppose the string fastened to fixed supports at any two of these points, and we may then suppose the parts of the string beyond these points to be removed, as it cannot affect the motion of the part which is between them. We have thus arrived at the case of a uniform string stretched between two fixed supports, and we conclude that the motion of the string may be completely represented as the resultant of two sets of periodic waves travelling in opposite directions, then wave-lengths being either twice the distance between the fixed points or a submultiple of this wave length, and the form of these waves, subject to this condition, being perfectly arbitrary.

To make the problem a definite one, we may suppose the initial displacement and velocity of every particle of the string given in terms of its distance from one end of the string, and from these data it is easy to calculate the form which is common to all the travelling waves. The form of the string at any subsequent time may then be deduced by calculating the positions of the two sets of waves at that time, and compounding their displacements.

Thus in the wave method the actual motion of the string is considered as the resultant of two wave motions, neither of which is of itself, and without the other, consistent with the condition that the ends of the string are fixed. Each of the wave motions is periodic with a wave-length equal to twice the distance between the fixed points, and the one set of waves is the reverse of the other in respect of displacement and velocity and direction of propagation, but, subject to these conditions, the form of the wave is perfectly arbitrary. The motion of a particle of the string, being determined by the two waves which pass over it in opposite directions, is of an equally arbitrary type.

In the harmonic method, on the other hand, the motion of the string is regarded as compounded of a series of vibratory motions, which may be infinite in number, but each of which is perfectly definite in type, and is in fact a particular solution of the problem of the motion of a string with its ends fixed.

A simple harmonic motion is thus defined by Thomson and Tait (§ 53).—When a point  $Q$  moves uniformly in a circle, the perpendicular  $QP$ , drawn from its position at any instant to a fixed diameter  $AA'$  of the circle, intersects the diameter in a point  $P$  whose position changes by a simple harmonic motion.

The amplitude of a simple harmonic motion is the range on one side of the other of the middle point of the course.

The period of a simple harmonic motion is the time which elapses from any instant until the moving-point again moves in the same direction through the same position.

The phase of a simple harmonic motion at any instant is the fraction of the whole period which has elapsed since the moving point last passed through its middle position in the positive direction.

In the case of the stretched string, it is only in certain particular cases that the motion of a particle of the string is a simple harmonic motion. In these particular cases the form of the string at any instant is that of a curve of sines having the line joining the fixed points for its axis, and passing through these two points, and therefore having for its wave-length either twice the length of the string or some submultiple of its wave length. The amplitude of the curve of sines is a simple harmonic function of the time, the period being either the fundamental period or some submultiple of the fundamental period. Every one of these modes of vibration is dynamically possible by itself, and any number of them may coexist independently of each other.

By a proper adjustment of the initial amplitude and phase of each of these modes of vibration, so that their resultant shall represent the initial state of the string, we obtain a new representation of the whole motion of the string, in which it is seen to be the resultant of a series of simple harmonic vibrations whose periods, are the fundamental period and its submultiples. The determination of the amplitudes and phases of the several simple harmonic vibrations so as to satisfy the initial conditions is an example of harmonic analysis.

We have thus two methods of solving the partial differential equation of the motion of a string. The first, which we have called the wave method, exhibits the solution in the form containing an arbitrary function, the nature of which must be determined from the initial conditions. The second, or harmonic method, leads to a series of terms involving sines and cosines, the coefficients of which have to be determined. The harmonic method may be defined in a more general manner as a method by which the solution of any actual problem may be obtained as the sum or resultant of a number of terms, each of which is a solution of a particular case of the problem. The nature of these particular cases is defined by the condition that any one of them must be conjugate to any other.

The mathematical test of conjugacy is that the energy of the system arising from two of the harmonics existing together is equal to the sum of the energy arising from the two harmonics taken separately. In other words, no part of the energy depends on the product of the amplitudes of two different harmonics. When two modes of motion of the same system are conjugate to each other, the existence of one of them does not affect the other.

The simplest case of harmonic analysis, that of which the treatment of the vibrating string is an example, is completely investigated in what is known as Fourier's theorem.

Fourier's theorem asserts that any periodic function of a single variable period  $p$ , which does not become infinite at any phase, can be expanded in the form of a series consisting of a constant term, together with a double series of terms, one set involving cosines and the other sines of multiples of the phase.

Thus if  $\phi(\xi)$  is a periodic function of the variable  $\xi$  having a period  $p$ , then it may be expanded as follows:

$$\phi(\xi) = A_0 + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} A_n \cos \frac{2n\pi\xi}{p} + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} B_n \sin \frac{2n\pi\xi}{p} \quad (1)$$

The part of the theorem which is most frequently required, and which also is the easiest to investigate, is the determination of the values of the coefficients  $A_0, A_n, B_n$ . These are

$$A_0 = \frac{1}{p} \int_0^p \phi(\xi) d\xi,$$

$$A_n = \frac{2}{p} \int_0^p \phi(\xi) \cos \frac{2n\pi\xi}{p} d\xi,$$

$$B_n = \frac{2}{p} \int_0^p \phi(\xi) \sin \frac{2n\pi\xi}{p} d\xi$$

Thus part of the theorem may be verified at once by multiplying both sides of (1) by  $d\xi$  by  $\cos \frac{2n\pi\xi}{p} d\xi$ , or by  $\sin \frac{2n\pi\xi}{p} d\xi$ , and in each case integrating from 0 to  $p$ .

The series is evidently single-valued for any given value of  $\xi$ . It cannot therefore represent a function of  $\xi$  which has more than one value, or which becomes ungratifying for any value of  $\xi$ . It is convergent, approaching to the true value of  $\phi(\xi)$  for all values of  $\xi$  such that if  $\xi$  varies infinitesimally the function also varies infinitesimally.

Sir W. Thomson, availing himself of the disk, globe, and cylinder integrating machine invented by his brother, Professor James Thomson, has constructed a machine by which eight of the integrals required for the expression of Fourier's series can be obtained simultaneously from the recorded trace of any periodically variable quantity, such as the height of the tide, the temperature or pressure of the atmosphere, or the intensity of the different components of terrestrial magnetism. If it were not on account of the waste of time, instead of having a curve drawn by the action of the tide, and the curve afterwards acted on by the machine, the time axis of the machine itself might be driven by a clock, and the tide itself might work the second variable of the machine, but his would involve the constant presence of an expensive machine at every tidal station.

It would not be devoid of interest, had we opportunity for it, to trace the analogy between these mathematical and mechanical methods of harmonic analysis and the dynamical processes which go on when a compound ray of light is analysed into its simple vibrations by a prism, when a particular overtone is selected from a complex tone by a resonator, and when the enormously complicated sound-wave of an orchestra, or even the discordant clamour of a crowd, are interpreted into intelligible music or language by the attentive listener, armed with the help of these thousand strings, the resonance of which, as it hangs in the gateway of his ear, discriminates the multitudinous components of the waves of the aural ocean. ( $\epsilon$  or  $\alpha$ )





level being attached to that purpose. The "celoeste" stop is managed as in the harmonium, by rows of reed tuned not quite in unison, or by a shade valve that alters the air current and flattens one row of reeds thereby.

Harmoniums and American organs are the results of many experiments to play upon free reeds by a keyboard, initiated by the "orgue expressif" of Genie, a Frenchman. During nearly the first half of this century various tentative efforts in France and Germany, and subsequently in England, came to nothing more valuable than the Viennese "physharmonica" of Hackel, the Parisian "melophone," and our own "seraphine." The inventor of the harmonium was undoubtedly Alexandre Debain, who took out a patent for it in Paris in 1840. He produced varied timbre registers by modifying reed channels, and brought these registers on to one keyboard. Unfortunately he patented too much, for he secured even the name harmonium, obliging contemporary and future experimenters to shelter their improvements under other names, and the venerable name of organ becoming imposed into connexion with an inferior instrument, we have now to distinguish between reed and pipe organs. The compromise of reed organ for the harmonium class of instruments must therefore be accepted. Debain's harmonium was at first quite mechanical, it gained expression by the expression stop already described. Alexandre, well known French makers, by the ingenuity of one of their workmen, Martin, added the percussion and the prolongement. The melody attachment was the invention of an English engineer, the introduction of the double touch, now used in the harmoniums of Mustel, Bauer, and others—also in American organs—is due to Mr. Tamplin, an English professor. Reference has already been made to the improvements of M. Mustel, a maker imbued with true artistic devotion.

The principle of the American organ originated with the Alexandries, whose earliest experiments are said to have been in aid with the view of constructing an instrument to exhaust air. The realization of the idea proving to be more in consonance with the genius of the American people, to whom what we may call the devotional tone of the instrument appalled, the introduction of it by Messrs. Mason and Hamlin in 1861 was followed by remarkable success. They made it generally known in Europe by exhibiting it at Paris in 1867, and from that time instruments have been exported in large numbers by different makers. Harmoniums are not entirely, although chiefly, of French make. Mr. Bauer, one of the best English makers, learned the trade in Paris, and employs chiefly French workmen. As keyed instruments, reed organs of either principle cannot be expected to compete musically with the older organ and pianoforte, yet the harmonium, studied for itself with something like the devotion that is given to the other keyed instruments, might be made more important than it is at present. Excepting from a few isolated students who may be told upon the fingers, it has received no true cultivation. Whether it will ever get this is a question that remains to be answered. Commercially the harmonium and American organ have taken a much more important place, although of course one not equal to that of the pianoforte. For some years the Alexandries were sending annually 7000 harmoniums to England. This afterwards, from various causes, diminished, the number, however, of their instruments made up to 1879 has reached 110,000. A general estimate of harmoniums made annually in France, Germany, and England is not forthcoming, but the yearly production of American organs in the United States has been stated at the large total of 40,000.

HARMONY See ACOUSTICS and MUSIC

(A. J. H.)

HARØ, said to be the ancient *Cæstrum Dithum*, a town of Spain, is situated in the province of Logroño, and the bishopric of Calahorra, 12 miles S.E. of Miranda, and 58 miles N. of Madrid. It occupies a beautiful site near the Ebro, in a fertile plain, bounded by a range of mountains. The town contains a fine parish church, a theatre built in 1841, a hospital, and other public buildings. Various unimportant manufactures are carried on by the inhabitants, but the chief source of wealth is the red wine produced in great abundance from the vines of the surrounding plain. There are some copper mines in the neighbourhood. It was the birthplace of Diego de Leyva, the celebrated painter, about 1560. The population was estimated for 1870 at 6394.

HAROLD I., surnamed Fairhaired (Harald Hårfagre), the founder of the old royal dynasty of Norway, succeeded his father, Halfdan the Black, as king about the year 863. His ambition to become king is said to have been awakened by the refusal of Gyda, daughter of Eric of Hladaland, to marry him until he had made himself ruler of all Norway, as Gorm had of Denmark, and Eric of Sweden, and he vowed that he would never clip nor comb his hair until he had fully achieved his task. After he had subdued all the jails, he sent for Gyda and made her one of his wives, and had his hair cut at a feast in Møre by Jarl Hognvald, who then gave him the name of *Hårfagre*. During the wars of Harold with the jails many of the Norsemen left their country and settled in Iceland, the Faeroe Islands, the Orkney and Shetland Islands, and even in the Hebrides of Scotland, from whence they returned and committed many sea robberies in Norway. Harold therefore fitted out a great expedition, conquered and slew the vikings, and made himself ruler over all these Norse settlements. During his absence on another expedition against Jarl Einar of Orkney his sons made war on one another, and also committed many acts of violence against his jails. Accordingly on his return, finding it difficult to keep them in check, Harold resolved to give them separate provinces to govern, and about the year 893 called together a great "thing," at which he conferred on each the title of king, with a seat higher than that of the jails, he himself retaining the sovereignty of the whole country. He also made Eric Bloodaxe his heir, and took him to live with him, and about his eightieth year, when he found himself no longer able to discharge his kingly duties, he transferred the whole government to Eric and gave him the royal seat. Harold died three years afterwards about the year 933.

HAROLD II. surnamed Greykin (Harald Hårfagre), son of Eric Bloodaxe, succeeded Haro the Good in the government of Norway about the year 960, having banished his other brothers to be satisfied with reigning as under kings in the other provinces. It would appear that Harold himself was disposed to govern peacefully and well, but his brothers now resolved to take vengeance on the friends of the late King Haro, and murdered among others Jarl Sigurd. They, however, failed of their purpose on Ilaco, his son, who after for some time resisting their attacks fled to Denmark, where he obtained the assistance of King Harold Bluetooth, with whose help he defeated and slew Harold Greykin, upon which, under Harold Bluetooth, he became ruler of Norway with the title of jarl, according to some in the year 965, to others in 969, and to others in 975.

HAROLD III., surnamed Stein in Council (Harald Hærdraade or Hardrada), son of Jarl Sigurd, half-brother of King Olaf the Holy, and descended by his father from Harold I, was one of the most distinguished warriors among the old Norse kings. About his fifteenth year he made his escape wounded from the battle of Stiklestad (1080), where his half-brother Olaf was killed; and after staying till he was cured of his wounds with a "bonde" in a

forest, he made his way to Sweden, whence after the winter was over he went to Russia, where he was kindly received by King Yaroslav of Novgorod. He remained in Russia for several years, but, being refused the hand of a Russian princess, he betook himself with several companions to Constantinople, and became chief commander of the famous Byzantine light-guards known as Varangians, and consisting almost wholly of Norsemen. At the head of these warriors he gained many victories over the Saracens in Sicily and Italy. It is even said that in a crusade against the infidels he penetrated as far as Jerusalem, but most probably he entered that city it was in the peaceful character of a pilgrim.

Returning after his exploits to Constantinople, he was refused the hand of a niece of the empress Zoe, because, according to the legend, the empress herself was enamoured of him, and offended at the refusal he one night made his escape with two galleys, carrying with him all his treasures, and also it is said the princess whose hand had been denied him, whom, however, he put on shore after he had passed the Bosphorus, with a message to the empress that, if he had so willed, her power would have been vain against his strategy and skill. He now set sail for Russia, where he was warmly welcomed by King Yaroslav, and as he was now a man of great fame and wealth Yaroslav gave him in marriage his daughter Ellsuf or Elizabeth, whose hand he had formerly asked in vain.

Soon after his marriage he resolved to return home and if possible to win the crown of Norway from his nephew Magnus the Good. With that purpose he about the year 1045 came to an agreement with his relative Sweend of Denmark, who had been driven by Magnus into exile in Sweden, but Magnus, having obtained news of the intended joint expedition against him, entered into communication with Harold, and agreed to share with him the government of Norway, each ruling over a separate division. They now turned their united forces against Sweend, drove him from Denmark, and completely deprived him of power, but when he had resolved inally in despair to give up the contest, Magnus about the year 1047 took suddenly ill and died, bequeathing on his death-bed the whole of Norway to Harold and Denmark to Sweend. Such a bequest did not however coincide with the desires of Harold, and between him and Sweend a constant war was waged for several years, until in 1064 they agreed to a peace by which each retained his dominions according to the old established boundaries. The chief motive of Harold in consenting to this arrangement was probably that he might be free to embark on a purpose of wild ambition, namely, to revive in his own person the old Scandinavian sovereignty of England which had ended with the death of Harthacnut. The story goes that he was instigated to the enterprise by a visit from Toetig, the exiled earl of Northumbria, but whether that be so or not, he in 1066 set sail for England with an immense fleet, which carried his wife Ellsuf, his son Olaf, his treasures, and more than half of all his fighting men. After touching at Orkney, where he left his wife, he proceeded southwards to the Tyne, and was there joined by Toetig and by a contingent of troops from Malcolm of Scotland. From the Tyne they sailed southwards along the coast of Yorkshire, stopping at intervals to ravage the country for provisions, and after proceeding up the Humber cast anchor on the left bank of the Ouse near the village of Riccall. Leaving a detachment under his son Olaf to guard the fleet, Harold along with Toetig marched with a great force towards York, and, defeating the Northumbrians with heavy loss at Fulford on September 20th, received the surrender of the city on September 24th. Meanwhile Harold of England, having heard of the Norse invasion, was marching northwards from London day and night with an immense army, and passing through York on the day after its surrender, he

appeared suddenly on the afternoon before the Norsemen encamped at Stamfordbridge. Taken by surprise, the Norsemen fought nevertheless with great courage and fierce energy, but though the battle was for some time doubtful it ended at nightfall in their total overthrow, with a slaughter so enormous that the great majority of them lay dead upon the field. Toetig was slain and also Harold Harthacnut himself, who, towering head and shoulders above all his warriors, was inflicting death on all who dared to meet him, till struck by an arrow in the windpipe he received the wound which laid him low. According to some writers his body ultimately found burial in Norway.

HAROLD IV, king of Norway, surnamed Gilje, said to be the short son of Gylle Kist, that is, Servant of Christ, came about the year 1127 to Norway with his mother, an Irishwoman, and claimed to be recognized as the son of King Magnus Barefoot and half-brother of the reigning Sigurd. Sigurd consented to acknowledge the relationship on condition that Harold did not claim any share in the government during his lifetime or that of his son Magnus. This agreement Harold honourably kept during the lifetime of Sigurd, but after his death in 1130 he got himself chosen king of the half of the country, and after several battles took Magnus prisoner, put out his eyes, and confined him in a convent. Harold now reigned as sole king till 1136, when he was murdered in his sleep by Stenstrikken, another bastard son of Magnus Barefoot. For the Norwegian Harold, see the *Haralds Saga* of Snorre Stursson, translated into English by Samuel Laing, London, 1811; *Stenunga Saga*, 2 vols., Oxford, 1878; *Cutler's Early History of Norway*, London, 1871; and also, in Harold Harthacnut, *Premat's English Congress*, vol. i., p. 140.

HAROLD I, surnamed Harefoot, king of England, illegitimate son of Canute and Alfgiva of Northampton, was on the death of Canute in 1035 chosen by the witan overlord of England and king of the provinces north of the Thames, and in 1037 he became king of England, when the people of Wessex offered him their crown on Harthacnut refusing to come to England to accept it. In the beginning of Harold's reign Alfred, son of Ethelred, landed in Wessex, with the purpose it is said of asserting his claims to its sovereignty, but, either without the knowledge of Earl Godwine, or with his connivance, he was seized by the agents of Harold and put to death with cruel tortures. Harold also banished Queen Emma from the kingdom. The only other events of importance in his reign are invasions of the Welsh and Scots, which were, however, without effectual results, and in the case of the Scots who laid siege to Durham ended in defeat with heavy loss. Harold died at Oxford, March 10, 1040. It is affirmed by some that Harold made no pretensions to a Christian belief, but this seems an exaggeration, for, whatever may have been his own private opinions, he appears to have conformed generally to the recognized religious customs, and there is one instance at least in which he redressed a wrong done by others to the church.

HAROLD II, king of the English, was the second son of Earl Godwine and his Danish wife Gytha, the sister of Earl Ulfr. The year of his birth is not accurately fixed, but it must have been about 1022. The choice of his name, like that of some others of his brothers and sisters (see GODWINE), witnesses to the influence of his Danish mother. Both he and his elder brother Sweegen were appointed to earldoms while still very young, seemingly about 1048. Harold's earldom was that of the East-Angles. In 1046 Sweegen, having earned off Eadgar, abbot of Leominster, and not being allowed to marry her, threw up his earldom in disgust, and his possessions were divided between his brother Harold and his cousin Earl Beorn, the nephew of Gytha. In 1049 Sweegen came back and sought the recovery of his lands, which was refused by

Harold and Boen Harold now appears for the first time in command, holding a ship in the fleet commanded by his father. For some unknown cause his ship was transferred to Boen, which most likely saved Harold's life, for Swegen presently came and entrapped and slew Boen, who was baited by Harold. We next hear of Harold in 1051 as accompanying Godwine when he appeared in arms in Gloucestershire. He shared his father's outlawry and banishment in that year, but he chose a different place of shelter, going with his brother Leofwine to Ireland, while Godwine went to Flanders. In 1052 Harold and Leofwine came back. They were opposed by the men of Somerset and Devonshire, whom they defeated at Foulcol, and were with him at the assembly which decreed the restoration of the whole family. Harold was now restored to his childhood of the East Angles, and, on his father's death in 1053, he succeeded him in the greater earldom of the West Saxons.

Harold was now the chief man in the kingdom, and when the older earls Leofric and Siward died, his power increased yet more, and the latter part of Edward's reign was virtually the reign of Harold. But he was the minister of the king rather than his personal favourite. This last place rather belonged to his younger brother Tostig, who on the death of Siward in 1055 received the earldom of the Northumbrians. Two other of Godwine's younger sons, Gythil and Leofwine, also received earldoms in 1057. This last date would seem to have been about the time when the prospect of the crown began to open to Harold. The Ætheling Edward, the son of Edmund Ironside, who had been brought home from Hungary as the intended successor, died that year. So did Edward's nephew Ralph, who, though not really of the kingly house, might possibly have been looked to for lack of a nearer candidate. There was now no one of the old stock but Edgiva son of Edward and his sisters. If then the king should die while Edgiva was still a child, there would be no qualified candidate in the royal house. It would seem as if, from this time, men began to look to Earl Harold as a possible successor to the crown. He is spoken of in a way, and his name is joined with that of the king in a way, which is unusual in the case of an ordinary earl.

The chief events in which Harold appears personally during this time are the wars with the Welsh under their king Gruffydd ap Ilyvelyn. In 1055, in alliance with the banished Earl Ælfgar of Mercia, Gruffydd defeated Earl Ralph and banished Hereford. Harold now drove back the Welsh and restored Hereford, but allowed the pilgrimage of Ælfgar to his earldom. In 1058 he made the pilgrimage to Rome. In 1060 he completed the building of his church at Waltham, and completed the foundation of the college in 1062. In 1063 came the great Welsh war, in which Harold, with the help of his brother Tostig, crushed the power of Gruffydd, who was killed by his own people. Harold now gave Wales to two vassal kings, Bleddyn and Rhirwallon. Both of his wars were accompanied by an extension of the English frontier toward Wales. In 1065 the Northumbrians revolted against their earl Tostig, and chose in his place Morkere, the son of Ælfgar. Harold now acted as mediator between the king and the insurgents, and at last, as the Northumbrians were fully prepared not to receive Tostig again, he agreed to their choice of Morkere and to the banishment of his brother.

Besides these there is one very important event in Harold's life the date of which can only be guessed at. At some time or other between William's visit to England in 1051 and Radwade's death at the beginning of 1066, Harold was the guest of Duke William in Normandy, and took some kind of oath to him. This oath the Normans

represented as an act of homage, with a further oath to promote William's succession to the English crown. The tale is told only by the Norman writers, and it is told by them with such contradictions of every kind that no reliance can be placed on any detail. But that there is some truth in the story is proved by the strongest negative evidence. While the contemporary English writers take care, directly or indirectly, to deny all those Norman charges against Harold which were sheer invention, they say not a word as to his alleged oath to William. It seems on the whole most likely that Harold was wicked on the shore of Foulcol, imprisoned by his Count Guy, and seized by the interference of William. He then helped William in a war with the Bretons, and promised to marry one of his daughters. This was most likely accompanied by an act of homage, such as was often made to any superior or benefactor. Such an oath might, in the ideas of the times, be made to mean a great deal or very little, according to circumstances. The most likely date is 1061. But there is a remarkable statement that Harold took a journey in Gaul with a political object, seemingly that of making alliances with some of the princes of the country, most likely William's enemies in France, Anjou, and Aquitaine. This was in the year of his Roman pilgrimage. And, as there is no direct evidence for the date of the oath, it is open to any one to put the two things together.

At the beginning of 1066 Edward died. His last act was to recommend Harold for election to the crown. He was accordingly chosen on the day of Edward's death, January 5th, and crowned the next day by Fulbert, archbishop of York. But, though he was crowned by the Northumbrian primate, the men of Northumbria at first refused to acknowledge him. They were won over by the new king, who went to York, accompanied by Saint Wulfstan, bishop of Worcester. To secure Eadwine and Morkere, he married then sister Edgith, the widow of the Welsh king Gruffydd. He thus put it out of his power to comply with that part of his engagement to William which is best attested, namely, to marry one of William's daughters. The rest of Harold's reign was taken up with preparations against the attacks of two enemies at once. William challenged the crown, alleging both a bequest of Edward in his favour and the personal engagement which Harold had contracted towards him. This was of course a mere matter of form, and William began to make ready for the invasion of England. Meanwhile the banished Tostig was trying all means to bring about his own restoration. His first, seemingly in concert with William, came in May, and attacked first the Isle of Wight and then Lindsey, but was driven to take shelter in Scotland. From May to September the king kept the coasts with a great force by sea and land, but at last provisions failed, and the land army was dispersed. Harold then went to London, ready to meet whichever enemy came first. By this time Tostig had engaged Harold Hardrada of Norway to invade England. He accordingly sailed up the Humber, defeated Eadwine and Morkere (September 20th), and received the submission of York (September 24th). Harold of England was now on his march northward, on September 25th he came on the Northmen at Stanfordside beyond York, and won a complete victory, in which Tostig and Harold Hardrada were slain. But two days later (September 27th) William of Normandy landed at Pevensey and (September 28th) occupied Hastings, and laid waste the land. Harold had then to march southward as fast as possible. He gathered his army in London, from all southern and eastern England, but Eadwine and Morkere kept back the forces of the north. The king then marched into Sussex, occupied the hill of Senlac, now Battle, and awaited the Norman attack. After a vain exchange

of messages, the decisive battle was fought on October 14th. As the English were wholly infantry, while the Normans were strongest in cavalry and archers, Harold's object was simply to hold the hill against all attack. As long as he was obeyed, his tactics were completely successful. But a part of his troops, disobeying his orders, left the hill to pursue, and the English array was broken. The Normans could now get up the hill, and, after a fight which lasted from morning till evening, they had the victory. The king and his brothers Gytha and Loefwine were killed. As Harold was condemned by the pope, William at first refused him Christian burial, and caused him to be buried on the rocks at Hastings. But it seems most likely that he afterwards allowed the body to be removed to Harold's own church at Waltham. The tale which represents Harold as escaping from the battle, living a life of penitence, and at last dying at Olney, is a mere romance.

Harold left several children, but there is a good deal of uncertainty as to his marriage or marriages. He had two sons by Edith, the Harold and Wulf, but they must have been twins born after their father's death. He had also three sons, Godwin, Eadmund, and Magnus, and two daughters, Gytha and Gunhild. It will be seen how strong the Scandinavian element is in these names. These five were not children of Eadgyth, and the sons were grown up, or nearly so, when their father died. They may have been the children of some other first wife. The local history of Waltham represents Harold's body as being found after the battle by a former mistress of his, Eadgyth Swanneshal (Swansneck). Some have thought that this Edgyth is the "Editha pulchra" of Domesday, who appears as the former holder of great estates in the east of England. This, though not unlikely, is quite uncertain, but there seems evidence enough to show that Eadgyth Swanneshal is a real person, and to connect her with Harold's East-Anglian exile. It seems most likely that she was the mother of Harold's earlier children, and that the connection between them was that intermediate state between marriage and concubinage called the Danish marriage, of which we not uncommonly hear in those days.

The character of Harold is blackened with many, but mostly very vague, charges, by the Norman writers. The English, on the other hand, paint him as the perfect model of a ruler. With regard to his accession to the crown, the common charge of usurpation springs from ignorance of the English law of the time. Harold was beyond all doubt regularly nominated by Eadward, regularly chosen by the witan, and regularly crowned by Ealdred. This last point is of importance in those days, when the rite of coronation was deemed of such moment. The Normans try to represent the ceremony as invalid, by saying that Harold was crowned by Sigurd, archbishop of Canterbury, whose canonical position was doubtful. That Harold crowned himself, instead of receiving the ecclesiastical consecration, is a mere fable, arising from a misunderstanding of some of the rhetorical invectives of the Norman writers. It should be noticed that these contemporary writers who speak of Harold as an usurper do so wholly on the ground of the alleged right of William, and of Harold's oath to William. That Harold's accession was a wrong done to young Eadgar is an idea which we first hear of in the next century, when the doctrine of hereditary right had taken firmer root. In Domesday the reign of Harold is passed by, he is regularly spoken of as earl, the doctrine of the Norman lawyers was that William, though of course not full king till his coronation, had the sole right to the crown from the moment of Eadward's death.

The military skill of Harold is plain, both from the Welsh war, when he overcame the mountaineers by making his English soldiers adopt the Welsh tactics, and from his

conduct both at Stamfordbridge and at Senlac. He clearly understood the difference between his two enemies, when it was wise to attack and when it was wise to await the attack. At Stamfordbridge his strategy was perfectly successful, it failed at Senlac only because of the disobedience of part of his army. The best witness to his civil government is the general peace and good order of England during that part of the reign of Eadward which was virtually his reign. When the peace is broken, it is always by the act of others, and Harold is always called on to make the settlement. He appears throughout as singularly mild and conciliating, never pressing hard upon any enemy. The later Norman writers indeed have an elaborate tale which represents Harold and Tostig as enemies from their childhood. But this is mere romance, with no ground in any contemporary writer.

The relations of Harold to the church, always an important feature in the character of a prince of that age, suggest several questions. He is charged in Domesday with several encroachments on ecclesiastical property, chiefly in Herefordshire, and the like charge is brought against him in a deed of Leofric, bishop of Exeter. But it must be remembered that this kind of charge is brought against every leading man of the time, and that we very seldom hear more than one side. The most distinct and detailed charge, that which represents Harold as a wholesale spoiler of the church of Wells, can be refuted, not by hearing the other side, but by going back to the charge as brought by the original complainant, Bishop Giso. We here find that Harold took nothing from the church, but simply handed the bishopric on receiving a bequest to which there is some reason for thinking that he may have had a right as earl. On the other hand, Harold appears as the friend and protector of several ecclesiastical bodies, and above all as the founder of Waltham. Here we may remark that, when monks were all the fashion, he preferred the secular clergy. He was the firm friend of the best prelate of his time, Bishop Wulfstan, and he appeared on good terms with most of the leading churchmen.

The contemporary authorities are the English Chronicle, the Latin biography of Eadward in Dr. Luard's collection (he gives a splendid paragraph on Harold), and Florence of Worcester, on the English side. On the Norman side are the Bayeux Tapestry, William of Poitiers, William of Jumièges, Guy of Amiens (*Chronica de Rebus Anglicis*). In the next century the book *Historia Sancte Crucis Walthamensis* gives Harold's picture as drawn in his own foundation. The book called *Vita Haroldi* is a mere romance, but contains one or two scraps of authentic tradition. Othmar, a German, William of Malmesbury, and the writers of the 12th century generally, often present particular facts, and especially show how the estimate of the events of the 11th century gradually changed. The French life of Eadward in the 13th is very bitter against Harold. Of the Scandinavian writers, Saxo Grammaticus is violent against him, while the biographer of Olaf Trygvasson counts him for a saint. All the statements are brought together and examined in Freeman's *History of the Norman Conquest*, vols. i. and ii. The opposite pictures of the earlier writers, Henry and Fulcher, are also worth comparing. (E. A. F.)

HAOUAN AL RASCHID, more properly Harun er Rashid, "Aaron the Orthodox," was the fifth of the 'Abbasid caliphs of Bagdad. His full name was Harun 'ibn Mohammed ibn Abdallah ibn Mohammed ibn Ali 'ibn 'Abdallah ibn Abbas. He was born at Ray the last day of Dhu'l Heggah, 145 A.H. (20th March 763 A.D.) according to some accounts, and according to others the last Moharrem 149 A.H. (18th Feb 768 A.D.). Haroun al Raschid was twenty-two years old when he ascended the throne. His biographers unanimously speak of him as "the most accomplished, eloquent, and generous of his age," but, though his name is a household word, and few figures stand out more grandly prominent in the history of their times, little is really popularly known about his private life and personal history.

Raschid owed his own succession to the throne entirely to the prudence and sagacity of Yahya 'bn Khalid 'bn Barnek, his secretary, whom, on his accession, he appointed his lieutenant and chief adviser. Yahya, upon whom the whole responsibility of the government really devolved, performed his duties with the most consummate ability and judgment. He fortified the frontiers, and repressed all the deficiencies in the administration of the empire. He filled the treasury, made the provinces flourishing and prosperous by encouraging trade and securing the public safety, and in a word brought the caliphate up to the highest pitch of prosperity and glory. He personally superintended and organized the whole system of government. As a minister he was eloquent, wise, accomplished, and prudent, and he was moreover an able administrator, ruling with a firm hand and proving himself able to cope with any emergency that might arise. His generosity was manifest in the extreme and gained for him universal esteem. With a most affable demeanour and great moderation he combined an imposing dignity that commanded universal respect.

In 182 A.H. (798 A.D.) Al Raschid proclaimed his son 'Abdallah as his heir apparent after El Amin, his oldest son, whom he had appointed his successor when only five years old, and gave him the post of viceroy of Khurasan. It was on this occasion that he gave 'Abdallah the name of El Mamun, and conferred on him the one of Ja'far, son of Yahya. The historians speak of this act of Raschid's with natural surprise, for he had seen the results of similar policy on the part of his father and of his grandfather, as well as what his brother Hadi had done in his own case.

Yahya, the prime minister, and Ja'far, his son, enjoyed so fully the confidence of Haroun al Raschid that they rapidly rose to wealth and power. The great popularity and influence of the Barnek or Barmaide family, however, at length aroused the caliph's jealousy, and to make matters worse he heard that Ja'far had secretly married his sister. No sooner had he been made acquainted with the facts than he caused his sister to be put to death, ordered Me'arid, his slave and executioner, to bring him Ja'far's head, and next murdered his two offending young nephews.

After the fall of the Barnek family the office of prime minister was exercised by Fadhl 'bn Rabi' who had been

chamberlain to Haroun himself, and to his predecessors Mensur, Mehdî, and Hadi. He held the office of vizier until the death of Haroun al Raschid himself, which occurred at Tus, the birthplace of the celebrated Persian epic poet Ferdousi. Al Raschid had set out for Khurasan to put down the insurrection of Rafi' 'bn Leeth 'bn Nasr 'bn Sayyar, who had revolted against his authority, made himself master of Samarcand, and killed the governor of that province. The rising had assumed such alarming proportions that Al Raschid determined to march in person against the rebels. He had not, however, got farther than Tus when he was surprised by death in 193 A.H. (808 A.D.).

The reign of Al Raschid was one of the most brilliant in the annals of the caliphate, and the limits of the empire were then more widely extended than at any other period. The greater part of the Eastern world submitted to his laws, and paid tribute into his treasury. Egypt itself was only a province under his sway, and its ruler an officer appointed by himself. No caliph ever gathered round him so great a number of learned men, poets, jurists, grammarians, cadis, and scribes, to say nothing of the wit and musicians who enjoyed his patronage. Haroun himself was an accomplished scholar and an excellent poet. He was well versed in history, tradition, and poetry, which he could always quote on appropriate occasions. He possessed exquisite taste and unerring discernment, and his dignified demeanour made him an object of profound respect to high and low.

Haroun al Raschid is best known to Western readers as the hero of many of the stories in the *Arabian Nights*, and in Arabic literature he is the central figure of numerous anecdotes and humorous stories. Of his incognito walks through Baghdad, however, the authentic histories say nothing, and the account of his relations with Charlemagne, of which European historians speak, does not rest on a trustworthy basis. His reign is chiefly remarkable for the fact that a family belonging to the pure Persian ancestry held for so long the reins of power under a caliph whose boast was that he was the only one who came of unmixed Hashimi blood, that of the family from which the prophet of El Islam sprung.

The principal authorities for the history of this period are—the Arabic histories of Ibn El Athir, Ibn Khaldun, and the Turkish El Akims, while the best European works to consult on its subject are Gibbon's *Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, Colman's *Islam under the Caliphs of Bagdad*, and Weil's *Geschichte der Chalifen*. (E.H.P.)

HARP, a musical instrument of the string kind, approximating to angular form from the strings diminishing in length as they ascend in pitch. While the instrument is of great antiquity, it is yet from northern Europe that the modern harp and its name are derived. The Greeks and Romans preferred to it the lyre in its different varieties, and a Latin writer, Ptolemaeus (vi. 8), describes it in the seventh century of our era as an instrument of the barbarians—"Romannaque lyra, plaudat tibi barbarus harpa." This is believed to be the earliest mention of the name, which is clearly Teutonic,—the Old High German "harapha," the Anglo-Saxon "hearpe," the Old Norse "harpe." The modern French "harpe" retains the aspiate, in the Spanish and Italian "arpa." It is dropped.

For the origin of the instrument we have to look to Egypt, and the earliest delineations of it there give no indication that it had not existed long before. There are, indeed, representations in Egyptian paintings of stringed instruments of a bow-form which support the idea of the invention of the harp from the same string of the warrior's or hunter's bow. This primitive looking instrument was played horizontally, being borne upon the performer's shoulder. Between it and the grand vertical harps in the frescos of the time of Rameses III.,

<sup>1</sup> According to the Mahometan law of succession the eldest brother or male relative of the reigning monarch is the heir apparent to the throne, and almost all Muslim princes have endeavored to set aside the claims of their relatives in favour of their own children. El Hadi, Haroun's brother, was no exception to the rule, and conceived the idea of stripping Haroun of his rights and proclaiming his own son Ja'far as his successor. Yahya was then Haroun's secretary, and expected to exercise the important office of vizier if ever his master should mount the throne. Hadi saw that his first step must be to conciliate Yahya, he therefore took him apart, and having given him a present of 20,000 dinars began to branch the subject nearest his heart. Yahya, however, brought a very strong argument to bear upon the point. "If you do so, Prince of the Faithful," said he, "you will set you subjects an example of breaking an oath and disregarding a contract, and other people will be bold enough to do the same. But if you leave your brother Haroun in possession of his title of heir apparent, appoint your son Ja'far as next in succession to him, it will be much more likely to secure his ultimate accession to the throne." Hadi allowed the matter to rest for some time, but at length paternal affection got the better of him, and he again summoned Yahya into his presence and consulted him. Yahya argued that if the caliph should die while Ja'far was yet a child the chiefs of the imperial family would never recognize the validity of his succession. Hadi having acknowledged the truth of this, Yahya continued, "Remember that the people, in order to be better able to see the construction of your wishes, when you father El Mehdî had not appointed Haroun to succeed you it would be policy on your part to do so, inasmuch as that is the only way to secure the continuance of the caliphate in the family of the Beni Hashim." Raschid ever afterwards acknowledged this as the greatest obligation which he owed to Yahya.

more than 3000 years old, paintings discovered by the traveller Bruce (fig. 1), there are varieties that permit us to bind the whole, from the simplest bow-form to the almost triangular harp, into one family (see fig. 2).

The Egyptian harp had no front pillar, and it, being strung with catgut, the tension and pitch must necessarily have been low. The harps above-mentioned depicted

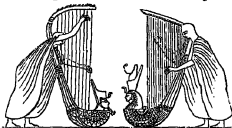


Fig. 1.

in the tomb at Thebes, assumed from the players to be more than 8 feet high, have not many strings, the one, according to Wilkinson, having ten, the other thirteen. What the accordance was of these strings it would be to no satisfaction to follow Burney and others in trying to recover. We must be content with the knowledge that the old Egyptians possessed harps in principle like our own, the largest having pedestals upon which they bestowed a wealth of decoration, as if to show how much they prized them.

The ancient Assyrians had harps like those of Egypt in being without a front pillar, but differing from them in having the sound-board uppermost, in which we find the early use of soundholes; while the lower portion was a bar to which the strings were tied and by means of which the tuning was apparently effected. What the Hebrew harp was, whether it followed the Egyptian or the Assyrian, we do not know. That King David played upon the harp as commonly depicted is rather a modern idea. Mediæval artists frequently gave King David the psaltery, a horizontal stringed instrument from which has gradually developed the modern piano. The Hebrew "kinnor" may have been a kind of trigonon, a triangular stringed instrument between a small harp and a psaltery, probably founded by a plectrum, or, as advocated by Dr Steiner in his essay on the music of the Bible, a kind of lyre.



Fig. 2.

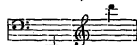
The earliest records that we possess of the Celtic race, whether Gaelic or Cymric, give the harp a prominent place and harpists peculiar veneration and distinction. The names for the harp are, however, quite different from the Teutonic. The Irish "clairsach," the Highland Scotch "clarsach," the Welsh, Cornish, Breton, "telyn," "teletin," "têlen," show no etymological kinship to the other European names. The first syllable in clairsach or clarsach is derived from the Gaelic "clain," a board or table (sound-board), while the first syllable of telyn is distinctly Old Welsh, and has a tensile meaning; thus resonance supplies the one idea, tension the other.

The literature of these Celtic harps may be most directly found in Bunting's *Ancient Music of Ireland*, Dublin, 1840; Gunn's *Historical Enquiry respecting the Performance on the Harp in the Highlands of Scotland*, Edinburgh, 1807; and B. Jones's *Musical and Poetical Memoirs of the Welsh Bards*, London, 1784. The treatises of Walker, Dalrymple, and others may also be consulted; but in all these authorities due care must be taken of the bias of patriotism, and the delusive aim to reconstruct a harp that we may be content to receive as only vaguely indicated in records and old monuments. There is, however, one early Irish monument about which there can be no mistake, the harp upon a cross belonging to the

ancient church of Ullard near Kilkenny, the date of which cannot be later than 830; the sculpture is rude, but the instrument is clearly shown by the drawing in Bunting's work to have no front pillar. This remarkable structural likeness to the old harps of Egypt and Assyria may be accidental, but permits the plausible hypothesis of Eastern descent. The oldest specimen of the beautiful form the Irish harp is now recognized by, with gracefully curved front pillar and sweep of neck (the latter known as the harmonic curve), is the famous harp in Trinity College, Dublin, the possession of which has been attributed to King Brian Boroiroimhe. From this mythic ownership Dr Petrie (see essay in Bunting) has delivered it; but he can only deduce the age about the thirteenth century, the ornamentation and heraldry, which fix its date in the 14th century or a little later. There is a cast of it in the South Kensington Museum, accurately described in the catalogue by Mr Carl Engel. The next oldest is in the Highlands of Scotland, the *Clarsach Lumchnach*, or Lamont's Clarsach, belonging, with another of later date, to the old Perthshire family of Robertson of Lude. Both are described in detail by Gunn. This Lamont harp was taken by a lady of that family from Argyleshire about 1400, on her marriage into the family of Lude. It had about thirty strings tuned singly, but the scale was sometimes doubled in pairs of unison like flutes and other contemporary instruments. The Dalway harp in Ireland (fig. 3) inscribed *Ego sum Regina Cithararum*, and dated 1621, appears to have had pairs of strings in unison, and was made of brass wire, and played with the pointed finger nails. The Italian contemporary "Arpa Doppia" was entirely upon the duplex principle, but with gut strings played by the fleshy ends of the fingers. When Bunting met Dr Belfast in 1795 as many Irish harpers as could be at that late date assembled, he found

FIG. 3.—Irish (Dalway) Harp.

the compass of their harps to comprise



thirty notes, which were tuned diatonically in the key of C, under certain circumstances transposable to C and rarely to D, the scales being the major of these keys. The harp first appeared in the coat of arms of Ireland in the reign of Henry VIII.; and some years after in a map of 1567 preserved in a volume of State Papers, we find it truly drawn according to the outlines of the national Irish instrument. References to the Highlands of Scotland are of necessity included with Ireland; and in both we find another name for the harp, viz., "crut." Bunting particularly mentions the "clinnard crut" (harp with a high head) and the "crom crut" (the curved harp). In the Ossianic MSS. of the Dean of Lismore (1612) the word "crut" occurs several times, and in Neill McAlpin's *Gaelic Dictionary* (1839) which gives the dialect of Inlay, closely related to that of Ulster, the word "crut" is rendered "harp." In Irish of the 8th and 9th centuries (*Zeuss's* "cithara" is always glossed by "crut") True Irish or Southern Welsh "crut" is not a harp; but the expression of Fortunatus "Chrota Britannica" has been too readily accepted as meaning the half-diel half-lyre which also bears the name of "crut" or "crowd." An old Welsh harp, not tripe string, exists, which bears a great resemblance to the Irish harp in neck, soundboard, and soundholes. The inference is fair that this was the form, although dimensions may have materially differed, of the Irish "crom crut," while the tripe string harp with its elevated neck might be the form of the "clinnard crut." But this does not imply derivation of the harp of Wales from that of Ireland or the reverse. There is really no good historical evidence, and there may have been a common or distinct origin in which etymology only can throw light. The Welsh like the Irish harp was often an hereditary instrument to be preserved with great care and veneration, and was the badge of the family, who were also the poet-musicians and historians. A slave was not allowed to touch a harp, and it was exempted by the Welsh laws from seizure for debt. The old Welsh harp appears to have been at one time strung with horsehair, and by the Eisteddfod laws the pupil spent his noviciate of three years in the practice of a harp with that stringing. The comparatively modern Welsh tripe harp (fig. 4) is strung with gut. It has a rising neck as before stated, and three rows of strings,—the outer rows tuned diatonic, the centre one chromatic for the sharps and flats. Jones gives it 26 strings and a compass of 5 octaves and was note, from violoncello



FIG. 4.—Welsh Triple Harp.

XL 62

C. As in all Celtic harps, the left is the treble hand, and in the treble harp there are 27 strings on this side, the right or bass hand having 17, and the middle or chromatic row 21.

Turning to the modern harp, the first pattern of it is discovered in German and Anglo-Saxon illuminated MSS as far back as the 9th century. A diatonic instrument, it must have been common throughout Europe, as Orquestra, Fiddle Anglico, and other famous Italian painters depict it over and over again in their masterpieces. No accidental semitones were possible with this instrument, unless the strings were shortened by the player's finger. This lasted until the 17th century, when a Fijolese maker added hooks (perhaps suggested by the fiddled or bonded clavichord) that, sewed into the neck, could be turned downwards to fix the desired semitones at pleasure. At 151, somewhere about 1720, Hochbrucker, a Bavarian, invented pedals that, acting through the pedestal of the instrument, governed by mechanism the stopping, and thus left the player's hands free, an indisputable advantage, and it became possible once to play in no less than eight major scales. By a sequence of improvements, in which two Frenchmen named Cousineau took an important part, the various defects inherent in Hochbrucker's plan became ameliorated. The pedals were doubled, and the tuning of the instrument being changed from the key of E♭ to C♯, it became possible to play in fifteen keys, thus exceeding the power of the keyboard instruments, over which the harp has another important advantage in the simplicity of the fingering which is the same for every key.

It is to Sebastian Eardl we owe the perfecting of the pedal harp (fig. 5), a triumph he gained in Paris by unrelenting studies begun when he adopted a "fork" mechanism in 1780 and ended in 1810 when he had attained complete success. The mechanical perfection of Eardl's apparatus must be seen to be appreciated. The pedals give the extent of movement the disks perform from which the studs project that stop the strings, or it may be required to raise the string in pitch a half tone or a whole tone. Eardl's merit was not confined to this improvement only, he modified the structure of the comb that controls the mechanism, and constructed the sound-body of the instrument upon a modern principle more advantageous to the tone.

Notwithstanding these improvements and the great beauty of tone the harp possesses, the domestic use of it has for years past been declining. The great cost of a good harp, and the trouble to many amateurs of tuning, may have led to the supplanting of the harp by the more convenient and useful pianoforte. With this comes naturally a diminution in the number of solo-players on the instrument. Were it not for the increasing use of the harp in the orchestra, the color of its tone having attracted the masters of instrumentation, so that the great scores of Meyerbeer and Gounod, of Ballois, Liszt, and Wagner are not complete without it, we should perhaps know little more of the harp than of the dulcimer, in spite of the efforts of distinguished virtuosi whose devotion to their instrument maintains its technique on an equality with that of any other, even the most in public favour.

See, in addition to the works already referred to, Engel's *Manual Instrument*, in the *Sioux Encyclopedia*, 1874, and the articles "Harp," in *Rees's Cyclopædia*, written by D. Barney, in Stanes and Burrell's *Dictionary of Musical Terms*, 1876, and in Grove's *Dictionary of Music and Musicians*, 1879. (A. J. H.)

HARPER'S FERRY, a post village of Jefferson county, West Virginia, United States, is grandly situated at the foot

of Bolivar heights and at the confluence of the Shenandoah and Potomac rivers, where they intersect the Blue Ridge, 15 miles N. W. of Washington. It is the junction point of the Baltimore and Ohio and the Winchester and Potomac railways, and the Ohio and Chesapeake canal passes along the Maryland side of the Potomac river. The village since the civil war has been in a decaying condition. It is the seat of Storer college, for students of colour. Previous to the war Harper's Ferry contained an extensive arsenal and armoury, and during the war it was the scene of several exploits which have given it a name in history. On the 16th October 1859 it was seized by John Brown, the celebrated abolitionist, and a small handful of followers, but as he was unsupported by a rising of the slaves it was overpowered on the morning of the 18th and taken prisoner. On the 18th April 1861 it was captured by the Confederates, who on evacuating it in the following June destroyed the arsenal and armoury and the bridge across the Potomac. The village was afterwards held by a Union garrison of 12,000 men, who, however, on the 15th September 1862, after a brave resistance of several days, surrendered to a strong Confederate force under Jackson and A. P. Hill. After the battle of Antietam, on the 17th of the same month, it was reoccupied by the army of the Potomac under General McClellan, who left a strong garrison in the place. In June 1863 it was again abandoned to the Confederates on their march to Pennsylvania. After the battle of Gettysburg, the town again fell into the hands of the Federal troops, who held it until the demonstration against Washington in July 1864. After the battle of Monocacy on July 9th it was occupied by the United States forces, and held by them until the end of the war. The most flourishing part of the town was nearly destroyed by a flood in the Shenandoah, October 1878. The population is about 3000.

HARPIES, or HARPYÆ, a word from the root seen in *ἀρπάζω*, to snatch, are in Homer merely the embodiment of the rapacious power of violent winds. When a man has disappeared in a sudden and inexplicable fashion, it is said that the Harpies have carried him off, and the words *ἁρπυϊαὶ* and *θιέλλαι* are used indifferently (*Od.* xiv 371 with 737, and x 66 with 77) to indicate the agent in his sudden disappearance. But *Od.* x 63-5 shows that the winds were conceived as carrying the man away to the banks of Oceanus, in other words, to the sky. So it is said (*Il.* xvi, 208, Schol. *Il.* x 214) that a *θιέρης δέλλα* carried off Ganymede to heaven. There can be no doubt that the wind was by the primitive Indo-Germanic people considered to be the agent that carried off the souls of the dead to dwell with their fathers in heaven, and that this idea appears in the *Odyssey* (also *Il.* vi 315) in a more fanciful form. As messengers of Zeus the Harpies are called *Ἀδελφῆες* (*Ap. Rh.* i 289). In some accounts a Harpy is said to have become by Poseidon the mother of the horse Arion, and another form of the same union appears in *Il.* xvi 148, when the harpy Podage, gaining in a meadow by the stream of Oceanus, bears to Zephyrus (the fruitful generative wind) the two horses of Achilles. This myth, which occurs in numberless forms, has been explained in article *GORGONS*, from which it is clear that ultimately Harpy is another epithet, like Gorgo and Einyas, of the swift, sudden, violent thunder-storm of a southern country. It is therefore with good ground that the three forms are compared by Æschylus (*Eum.* 48). The function of snatching away mortals to the other world leads up to the duty which the Greeks came to assign to the Einyas of punishing and punishing certain kinds of offenders (see *FURIES*). In *Od.* x 66-87 it is related that the orphan daughters of Pandareus went up under the care of the gods, but when Aphrodite went to Olympus to beg to preserve their life by a marriage, the Harpies carried them off and



FIG. 5.—Modern  
Pedal Harp

delivered them to the Erinyes. In these two daughters, one of whom is the nightingale (*Od.* xx. 518), and the other probably the swallow (*v. Sonne in Kuhn's Zeitschrift*, x., 121), we recognize the spring growing up in beauty till it is suddenly snatched away from the earth by the storms of autumn. Hesiod (*Theog.*, 287) says that the Harpies, Aello and Ocypete, winged goddesses with beautiful locks, are the daughters of Thaumias and Electra. Other accounts make them children of Poseidon or of Phineus, always the sun in some form; while a third, Celeno, is often added to their number. As we come down later in literature, a more hateful and repulsive character attaches to the Harpies. This is especially seen in the myth of the blind king Phineus, the sun-god in the dark winter months, tormented by the Harpies, where the transforming fancy of the poets can be traced more and more. Hesiod related (*Strabo*, vii. 463) that the Harpies carried off Phineus to the land of the Glastophagi, a mythic people, who represent like the Hyperboreans or the Phaeacians the race of the dead, the Pitris or Mnæes. The myth was incorporated as an episode in the tale of the Argonauts, and is then imitated by Virgil with still more nauseous details (*Æn.* iii. 212). On the so-called Harpy monument from Lycia, now in the British Museum, they appear as winged figures, the body like that of a bird with the head and bust of a woman. They are carrying off small figures, probably departed souls.

HARPOCRATES, originally an Egyptian deity, was adopted by the Greeks, and became in later times an object of worship both to Greeks and Romans. In Egypt Harpa-khruti, Horus the child, was one of the forms of Horus, the sun-god, the child of Osiris (see *Exeter*, vol. vii. p. 717). Hence Herodotus (ii. 144) considers him the same as the Greek Apollo. He was said by the Greeks to have been born with his finger on his lips, and is thus represented in statues. As the god of silence he became a favourite deity among the later mystic schools of philosophy. Festivals with certain mysterious rites were celebrated in his honour.

HARPY, a large diurnal bird of prey, so named after the mythological monster of the classical poets,—the

to Brazil. Though known for more than two centuries, its habits have come very little under the notice of naturalists, and what is said of them by the older writers must be received with some suspicion. A cursory inspection of the bird, which is not unfrequently brought alive to Europe, its size, and its enormous bill and talons, at once suggest the vast powers of destruction imputed to it, and are enough to account for the stories told of its ravages on mammals,—aloes, fawns, peccaries, and spider-monkeys. It has even been asserted to attack the human race. How much of this is fabulous there seems no means at present of determining, but some of the statements are made by veracious travellers—D'Orbigny and Tschudi. It is not uncommon in the forests of the isthmus of Panama, and Mr Salvin says (*Proc. Zool. Society*, 1864, p. 368) that its flight is slow and heavy. Indeed its Owl-like visage, its short wings and soft plumage, do not indicate a bird of very active habits, but the weapons of offence with which, as above stated, it is armed, show that it must be able to cope with vigorous prey. Its appearance is sufficiently striking—the head and lower parts, except a pectoral band, white, the former adorned with an erectile crest, the upper parts dark grey banded with black, the wings dusky, and the tail barred; but the huge bill and powerful scutellated legs most of all impress the beholder. The precise affinities of the Harpy cannot be said to have been determined. By some authors it is referred to the Eagles, by others to the Buzzards, and by others again to the Hawks; but possibly the first of these alliances is the most likely to be true. (A. N.)

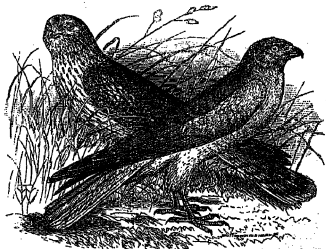
HARRIER. See DOO.

HARRIER, or HEN-HARRIER, name given to certain birds of prey which were formerly very abundant in parts of the British Islands, from their habit of harrying poultry. The first of these names has now become used in a generic



Harpy.

*Thrausastus harpyia* of modern ornithologists,—an inhabitant of the warmer parts of America from Southern Mexico



Hen-Harrier (Male and Female).

sense for all the species ranked under the genus *Circus* of *Lacépède*, and the second confined to the particular species which is the *Falco cyaneus* of *Linnaeus* and the *Circus cyaneus* of modern ornithologists.

On the wing Harriers have much resemblance to Buzzards, using the same flapping stroke of the pinions, and wheeling or sailing aloft as they fly. One European species indeed, *C. ceruginosus*, though called in books the Marsh-Harrier, is far more commonly known in England and Ireland as the Moor-Buzzard. But Harriers are not, like Buzzards, arboreal in their habits, and always affect open country, generally, though not invariably, preferring marshy or swampy districts for haunts and from a great part of their ordinary food. On the ground their carriage is utterly unlike that of a Buzzard, and their long wings and legs



render it easy to distinguish the two groups when taken in the hand. All the species also have a more or less well-developed ruff or fall of small thickest feathers surrounding the lower part of the head, nearly like that seen in Owls, and accordingly many systematists consider that the genus *Owls*, though undoubtedly belonging to the *Falconidae*, connects that Family with the *Strigidae*. No osteological affinity, however, can be established between the *Harrises* and any section of the Owls, and the superficial resemblance will have to be explained in some other way. *Harrises* are found almost all over the world,<sup>1</sup> and fifteen species are recognised by Mr Sharpe (*Cat Birds Brit Museum*, i, pp 80-83). In most if not all the *Harrises* the sexes differ greatly in colour, so much so that for a long while the males and females of one of the commonest and best known, the *O. cyaneus* above mentioned, were thought to be distinct species, and were or still are called in various European languages by different names. The error was maintained with the greater persistency since the young males, far more abundant than the adults, wear much the same plumage as their mothers, and it was not until after Montagu's observations were published at the beginning of the present century that the "Ringtail," as she was called (the *Falco pygmaeus* of Linnaeus), was generally admitted to be the female of the "Hen Harrise." But this was not Montagu's only good service as regards this genus. He proved the hitherto unexpected existence of a second species,<sup>2</sup> subject to the same diversity of plumage. This was called by him the Ash coloured Falcon, but it now generally bears his name, and is known as Montagu's Harrise, *O. cinereus*. In habits it is very similar to the Hen Harrise, but it has longer wings, and its range is not so northerly, for while the Hen Harrise extends to Lapland, Montagu's is but very rare in Scotland, though in the south of England it is the most common species. *Harrises* indeed in the British Islands are rapidly becoming things of the past. Their nests are easily found, and the birds when nesting are easily destroyed. In the south-east of Europe, reaching also to the Cape of Good Hope and to India, there is a fourth species, the *O. acuminatus* of some writers, the *O. pallidus* of others. In North America *O. cyaneus* is represented by a kindred form, *O. hudsonius*, usually regarded as a good species, the adult male of which is always to be recognized by its rufous markings beneath, in which character it rather resembles *O. cinereus*, but it has not the long wings of that species. South America has in *O. cinereus* another representative form, while China, India, and Australia possess more of this type. Thus there is a section in which the males have a strongly contrasted black and grey plumage, and finally there is a group of larger forms allied to the European *O. acuminatus*, wherein a grey dress is less often attained, of which the South African *O. hudsonius* and the New Zealand *O. gouldi* are examples. (A N)

HARRINGTON, JAMES (1611-1677), a distinguished writer on the philosophy of government, was sprung from an old family in Rutlandshire, and was born in January 1611. He received a careful education, and in his eighteenth year entered Trinity College, Oxford, as a gentleman commoner. One of his tutors was the famous Chillingworth. At the close of his university career he set out to travel on the Continent, and proceeded first to Holland, where he spent several years. He served some time in the Dutch army, and enjoyed the friendship both of the prince

of Orange and of the queen of Bohemia. After visiting France and Italy, he returned to England and lived in retirement till 1646, when he was named one of the groomers of the bed-chamber to Charles I, who was at that time being conveyed south from Newcastle as prisoner of the parliament. Though republican in his ideas, Harrington secured the confidence and respect of the king, who showed strong personal regard for him. On the removal of Charles to the Isle of Wight, Harrington was prevented from accompanying him, and was for a short time put in confinement because he would not swear to refuse assistance to the king should he attempt to escape. His feelings of respect for him also to accompany Charles to the scaffold in the following year.

After Charles's death Harrington once more withdrew into private life and devoted his time to the composition of his work on the theory of the state, afterwards published under the title of *Oceana*. The nature of his views was well known, and, as they pleased neither republicans nor royalists, the work was naturally regarded with some suspicion. By order of Cromwell the *Oceana* was seized when passing through the press. Harrington, however, managed to secure the favour of the Protector's favourite daughter, Mrs Claypole, the work was restored to him, and appeared in 1656, dedicated to Cromwell. The views embodied in *Oceana*, particularly that bearing a vote by ballot and rotation of magistrates and legislators, Harrington and others who formed a club called the "Rota" endeavoured to push practically, but with no success. In December 1661, by order of Charles II, Harrington was arrested on a charge of conspiracy, and though there seem to have been no sufficient grounds for the accusation, he was thrown into prison. Despite his repeated request no public trial could be obtained, and when at length he endeavoured to protect himself by claiming the right of *habeas corpus*, he was secretly removed to a small island off Plymouth. There his health completely gave way, and his mind appeared to be affected. By careful treatment he was restored to bodily vigour, but it is supposed that his mind never recovered its tone. After his release he married,—at what date does not seem to be precisely known. He died September 11, 1677.

Harrington's books consist of the *Oceana*, and of papers, pamphlets, aphorisms, even treatises, in support and defence of the *Oceana*. The *Oceana* is not a philosophical romance, it is a hard, prolix, and in many respects heavy exposition of a new method for constituting civil society. The details are elaborated with infinite care, even the salaries of officials being computed, but the important or leading ideas in the book are two in number, with two practical precepts following from them. The first is that the determining element of power in a state is property generally, property in land in particular, the second is that the executive power ought not to be vested for any considerable length of time in the hands of the same men or class of men. As practical corollary to his first proposition Harrington recommends an agrarian law, limiting the portion of land held to that yielding a revenue of £2000, and consequently insisting on particular modes of distributing landed property. As a practical maxim following from the second he lays down the rule of rotation by ballot. A third part of the executive, senate, or whatever it might be, are voted out by ballot every year (not being capable of being elected again for three years). Harrington explains very carefully how the state and its governing parts are to be constituted by his scheme, and *Oceana* undoubtedly contains many valuable ideas. As a book, however, it is unattractively dull.

His *Works* were edited by Toland in 1709, Toland's edition, with additions by Bush, appeared in 1747, and again in 1771.

HARRINGTON, SIR JOHN See HARRINGTON

<sup>1</sup> The distribution of the different species is rather curious, while the range of some is exceedingly wide,—one, *O. maculatus*, seems to be limited to the island of Reunion (Bourbon).

<sup>2</sup> A singular mistake, which has lately been productive of further error, was made by Albin, who drew his figure (*Hist. Birds*, n, pl. 5) from a specimen of one species, and coloured it from a specimen of the other.

HARRIOT, or HARRIOTT, THOMAS (1560–1621), an English mathematician and astronomer, was born at Oxford in 1560. After studying at St Mary's Hall, Oxford, where he took his bachelor's degree in 1579, he became tutor to Sir Walter Raleigh, who in 1585 appointed him to the office of geographer to the second expedition to Virginia. Harriot published an account of this expedition in 1588, and the work was afterwards reprinted in Hakluyt's *Voyages*. On his return to England after an absence of two years, he resumed his mathematical studies with zeal and success, and having made the acquaintance of Henry Percy, earl of Northumberland, distinguished for his patronage of men of science, he received from him a yearly pension of £120. He died at London 2d July 1621, after having suffered much from a cancer in the lip, occasioned it is supposed by a habit he had contracted of holding in his mouth instruments of brass often charged with verdigris. A manuscript of Harriot's entitled "Ephemeris Chyrometria" is preserved in St John College, and his *Artis Analyticae Praxis ad Aequationes Algebraicas resolvendas* was published at London in 1631. An account of his contributions to the sciences of algebra will be found in the article ALGEBRA, vol. i p. 514, and Wallis's *History of Algebra* (1685) may also be consulted. From some papers of Harriot's discovered in 1784 it would appear that he had either procured a telescope from Holland, or devised the construction of that instrument, and that he coincided in point of time with Galileo in discovering the spots on the sun's disk.

HARRIS, JAMES (1709–1780), a distinguished English writer on the subject of grammar, was born at Salisbury on the 20th of July 1709. He received his early education at Salisbury, whence he was removed to Oxford at the age of sixteen, and, having passed the usual number of years as a gentleman commoner at Wadham College, he was entered at Lincoln's Inn as a student of law, though not intended for the bar. When he had attained his twenty-fourth year his father died, and this event, having at once freed him from all control, and placed him in the possession of an independent fortune, enabled him to exchange the study of law for other pursuits more congenial to his taste. The decided bent of his mind had always been towards the Greek and Latin classics, and to the study of these he now applied himself with unremitting assiduity during a period of fourteen or fifteen years. The first fruit of this lengthened course of application was a volume which he published in 1744, containing three treatises—one on art, another on music, painting, and poetry, and a third on happiness. In 1751 appeared the work by which he is best known, *Hermes*, a philosophical inquiry concerning universal grammar. Although *Hermes* had considerable reputation in its day as a treatise on grammar, it must now be regarded as antiquated, and even as erroneous in conception. It is not so much a work on grammar as an attempt to force upon grammatical forms a strictly logical significance, to discover the groundwork of all grammars by analysing the thoughts to be expressed in words. This method, as we now recognize, is incapable of throwing light upon the oral structure and growth of language and grammatical forms. In 1775 Harris published his *Philosophical Arrangements*, part of a larger work which he had meditated, but did not complete, on the peripatetic logic. It is in fact a commentary on Aristotle's categories, and an attempt to discuss problems of more recent philosophy by the Aristotelian notions. The *Philosophical Inquiry* is a pleasantly written but slight work on the principles of literary criticism and style. It is the least pedantic of all his works. Harris died in December 1780. His works were collected and published in 3 vols., 1801, by his son, Lord Malmesbury, who prefixed a brief biography.

HARRIS, JOHN, D.D. (c. 1667–1719), an English writer, best known as the editor of the *Lexicon Technicum*, which ranks as the earliest of the long line of English encyclopedias, and as the compiler of the *Collection of Voyages and Travels* which passes under his name. He was educated at St John's College, Cambridge, where he took his B.A. degree in 1687, and proceeded M.A. in 1690. Having entered the church, he was soon presented to the rectory of Winchelsea in Sussex, and as early as 1698 he was in sufficient repute as a learned divine to be entrusted with the delivery of the seventh series of the Boyle lectures—*Atheistical Objections against the Being of God and His Attributes fairly considered and fully refuted*. Between 1702 and 1704 we find him lecturing on mathematics on the foundation of Charles Cox, and advertising himself as a mathematical bachelior at Amen Corner. The friendship of Sir William Cowper, afterwards lord chancellor, soon after raised him to a much higher position. Besides receiving the office of private chaplain to Sir William, he was presented in 1708 with a prebend in Rochester Cathedral, and appointed to the rectory of the united parishes of St Mildred, Bread Street, and St Margaret Moses. In this position he showed himself an ardent supporter of the Government, and got into a bitter quarrel with the Rev. Charles Humphreys, who afterwards was chaplain to Dr Sacheverell. Harris was one of the early members of the Royal Society, and for a time acted as vice-president. Besides his contributions to the society's *Transactions*, and the two important works by which he is still remembered, he published a number of treatises on mathematics and occasional sermons, and at his death on September 7, 1719, he was busy completing an elaborate *History of Kent*, of which the first volume had just left the press. He is said to have died in poverty brought on by his own bad management of his affairs. There is only one good account of his life, that by Nichols in the *Literary Anecdotes*, vol. ix., and this even, owing to scarcity of materials, is strangely defective.

HARRIS, JOHN (1802–1866), divine and theologian, was born at Ugbrough in Devonshire, March 8, 1802. At the age of fifteen he joined the Independent Church, and began to preach to the inmates of the neighbourhood as a member of the Bristol Itinerant Society. After studying at the Independent college at Hoxton he was in 1827 ordained pastor of a small congregation at Epsom. There in 1836 he wrote his essay, *Manism, or Covenantness the Sin of the Christian Church*, which won a prize of 100 guineas offered by Dr Conquest, and brought its author into notice, thirty thousand copies being sold within a few years. In 1838 he received the degree of doctor of divinity from Brown University, America, and was appointed president and professor of theology in Chestnut College, and in 1850, when the Independent colleges at Highbury, Hoxton, and Coward, near London, were united, Dr Harris was elected principal of the New College thus formed. He died December 21, 1866.

Besides *Manism*, he wrote the *Great Teacher* (1835), two prize essays, *Evilism* (1837) and *The Great Commission* (1842), and *Contributions to Theological Science* (1842), *Birth* (1847), *Man Primordial* (1849), and *False Prophecy* (1856), from the beginning of a series, intended to illustrate the history of man from a theological point of view, but interrupted by his death.

HARRIS, SIR WILLIAM SNOW (1791–1867), a distinguished electrician, was descended from an old family of Plymouth solicitors, and was born there 1st April 1791. He received his early education at the Plymouth grammar-school, and completed a course of medical studies at the university of Edinburgh, after which he established himself as a general medical practitioner in Plymouth. On his marriage in 1824 he resolved to abandon his profession on account of its duties interfering too much with his favourite

study of electricity. As early as 1820 he had invented a new method of arranging the lightning conductors of ships, the peculiarity of which was that the metal was permanently fixed in the masts and extended throughout the hull, but it was only with great difficulty, and not till nearly thirty years afterwards, that his invention was adopted by the Government for the royal navy. In 1826 he read a paper before the Royal Society "On the Relative Powers of various Metallic Substances as Conductors of Electricity," which led to his being elected a member of the society in 1831. Subsequently, in 1834, 1836, and 1839, he read before the society several valuable papers on the elementary laws of electricity, and he also communicated to the Royal Society of Edinburgh various interesting accounts of his experiments and discoveries in the same field of inquiry. In 1835 he received the Copley gold medal from the Royal Society for his papers on the "Laws of Electricity by High Tension," and in 1839 he was chosen to deliver the Bakerian Lecture. Meanwhile, although a Government commissioner had recommended the general adoption of his conductors in the royal navy, and the Government had granted him an annuity of £300 "in consideration of services in the cultivation of science," the naval authorities continued to offer various objections to his invention to aid in removing these he in 1843 published his work on *Thunder storms*, and also about the same time contributed a number of papers to the *Newcastle Mercury* illustrating damage by lightning. His system was actually adopted in the Russian navy before he succeeded in removing the prejudices against it in England, and in 1845 the emperor of Russia in acknowledgment of his services presented him with a valuable ring and a superb vase. At length, every doubt as to the efficiency of his system having been removed, he received in 1847 the honour of knighthood, and subsequently a grant of £5000. After succeeding in introducing his invention into general use Harris resumed his labours in the field of original research, but as he failed to realize the advances that had been made by the new school of science his application resulted in no discoveries of much value. His manuals of *Electricity*, *Galvanism*, and *Magnetism*, contributed to Woake's rudimentary series, were however written with great clearness, and passed through several editions. He died 22d January 1867, while having in preparation a *Treatise on Fictional Electricity*, which was published posthumously in the same year, with a memoir of the author by Charles Tomlinson, F.R.S.

**HARRISBURG**, a city of the United States, capital of Dauphin county and of the State of Pennsylvania, is beautifully situated on the east bank of the Susquehanna river, on the Pennsylvania canal, and at the junction of several railways, 120 miles by rail N. of Washington and 105 W. by N. of Philadelphia. The river, which is here a mile in width, is crossed by two bridges, one of which is for the use of the railways. Two other bridges of great beauty and strength span the river in view of the State-house. The State buildings, dating from 1819, occupy an eminence in the centre of the busiest portion of the city, and consist of the State capitol, 180 feet long by 80 feet wide, with a crucial point in front supported by six Ionic columns and surmounted by a dome, and, on two sides of the capitol, smaller buildings uniform in design, containing the executive chamber, the State treasury, and various other offices. The capitol park contains a monument to those who died in the Mexican war. Among the other public buildings are the county court house, the State arsenal, the county prison, and the opera house. Harrisburg is a bishop's see of the Roman Catholic Church. It is well provided with academies and schools, and possesses about 80 churches, several of which are costly and ornamental edifices. It is also the seat of

the State library of over 40,000 volumes. Among the benevolent institutions are the city hospital, the home for the friendless, and the State lunatic hospital. An abundant water supply is obtained from the river. Coal and iron are largely wrought in the neighbourhood, and the great facilities of communication both by canal and railway have enabled the city to become one of the centres of the iron trade. It possesses large iron-foundries, manufacturing of steel, machines, boilers, engines, castings, nails, files, galvanized iron, blooms, scrap, and shoes, rolling-mills, saw and planing mills, flour-mills, cotton-mills, potteries, tanneries, and breweries. The suburbs in 1880 numbered 13,405, and in 1870 23,104. The population of the city proper for 1880 is estimated at 34,700, and that of the suburbs at 4900, making a total of 36 000.

Harrisburg derived its name from John Harris, an Englishman who settled on the site of the town in 1726, and whose son established a ferry over the Susquehanna in 1765. The town was founded in 1785 under the name of Harrisburg, which was afterwards changed to Lousburg, in 1791 it was incorporated under its present name, in 1812 it became the capital of the State, and in 1860 it was made a city.

**HARRISON, JOHN** (1693-1776), an eminent mechanic, was the son of a carpenter, and was born at Faubly, near Pontefract, in Yorkshire, in the year 1693. Thence his father and family removed in 1700 to Harwey, in Lancashire. Young Harrison at first learned his father's trade, and worked at it for several years, at the same time occasionally making a little money by land measuring and surveying. The strong bent of his mind, however, was towards mechanical pursuits, and thus showed itself specially in endeavours to improve the construction of clocks and watches so as to render them more accurate measures of time. He soon learned that, to enable a clock to keep accurate time, the pendulum must be so constructed as to preserve the distance between the point of suspension and centre of oscillation invariable, notwithstanding the expansion and contraction of the rod caused by changes of temperature. To accomplish this Harrison devised, in 1726, his ingenious "gridiron pendulum," which consists in having the bob suspended by a series of parallel rods, alternately of steel and brass, so arranged that the downward expansion of the steel rods from change of temperature is exactly compensated for by the upward expansion of the brass rods. This principle of compensation, modified to suit particular cases, is now applied to all good watches and chronometers. Another ingenious improvement in clockmaking devised by Harrison was his recoil escapement, which obviated the necessity of keeping the pallets well oiled. He was led to invent this, as he himself tells us, by having on one occasion had to go a long distance to see right a turret clock which had stopped simply from want of oil on the pallets. This escapement, although answering admirably the intended purpose, is rather too delicate to be adopted in ordinary practice. Harrison was also the first to employ the commonly used and effective form of "going tatchet," which is a spring arrangement for keeping the timepiece going at its usual rate during the interval of being wound up.

In Harrison's time the Government of the country had become fully alive to the necessity of determining more accurately the longitude at sea. For this purpose they passed an Act in 1714 offering rewards of £10,000, £15,000, and £20,000 to any who should construct chronometers that would determine the longitude within 60, 40, and 30 miles respectively. Harrison applied himself vigorously to the task, and in 1735 went to the Board of Longitude with a watch which he also showed to Halley, Graham, and others. Through their influence he was allowed to proceed in a king's ship to Lisbon to test

it, and the result was so satisfactory that the commissioners gave him £500 to carry out further improvements. Harrison worked at the subject with the utmost perseverance, and, after making several watches, went up to London in 1761 with one which he considered very perfect. His son William was sent on a voyage to Jamaica to test it, and, on his return to Portsmouth in 1762, the watch was found to have lost only 1 minute 54½ seconds. This was surprisingly accurate, as it determined the longitude within 18 miles, and Harrison claimed the full reward of £20,000. After some further trials £10,000 of it was paid to him in 1765, and the remainder in 1767, after he had written such a description of his instrument as would enable other artists to copy it. Harrison died in 1776, at the age of eighty-two. His want of early education was felt by him greatly throughout life. He was unfortunately never able to express his ideas clearly in writing, although in conversation he could give a very precise and exact account of his many intricate mechanical contrivances. He wrote a book entitled *Description concerning such Mr. Harrison as will afford a New or True Measurement of Time*.

HARRISON, WILLIAM HENRY (1773-1841), ninth president of the United States, third son of Governor Benjamin Harrison, was born at Berkeley, Charles county, Virginia, February 9, 1773. In 1792 he joined the army with the commission of ensign, and in the following year he became lieutenant and acted as aide de camp to Wayne in his expedition against the Western Indians. He was promoted to a captaincy in 1795, but resigned in 1797 on being appointed secretary of the North-West Territory. In 1799 he was chosen to represent that territory in congress, and after its dissolution in 1801 he became governor of the new territory of Indiana and superintendent of negotiations with the Indians, over whom, on the breaking out of hostilities in 1811, he gained the important victory of Tippecanoe. In 1813 as major general and commander of the north western army he defeated the British forces at the battle of the Thames. In 1814 he concluded a treaty with the North-Western Indians, and in the same year he resigned his commission. He was elected in 1816 member of congress for Cincinnati, in 1819 member of the State senate of Ohio, in 1824 United States senator, and in 1828 minister to Colombia, an office which he held for less than a year, when he retired for a time into private life. By the urgent request of the Whigs he was induced in 1836 to stand for the presidency of the United States, and though unsuccessful, he at the next election in 1840 defeated the same candidate Van Buren by an overwhelming majority, after a canvass memorable for the extraordinary enthusiasm it awakened, and historically important for its introduction of new political methods—many of the most characteristic features of Western elections having then origin in this "Harrison campaign." He was severely spared, however, to enter upon the discharge of his duties as president, dying April 4, 1841, about a month after his inauguration. Harrison published at Cincinnati in 1838 a small treatise on the Indians entitled *A Discourse on the Aborigines of the Ohio Valley*.

HARROGATE, a town and watering-place in the West Riding of Yorkshire, England, is beautifully situated on a fine plateau near the River Nidd, 18 miles W of York. It is indebted for its rise and importance to its medicinal springs, and is now the principal inland watering-place in the north of England. It consists of two isolated townships, Low Harrogate and High Harrogate, which have gradually been connected by a continuous range of handsome houses and villas. A common of 200 acres, which is secured by act of parliament from ever being built upon, stretches in front of the main line of houses, and on this account Harrogate, notwithstanding its rapid

increase, has retained all its rural charm. As the town is equidistant from the east and west coasts, its air is supposed to possess certain special qualities, and there is the further advantage of a choice between the more bracing atmosphere of High Harrogate and the sheltered and warm climate of the low town. The waters are chalybeate, sulphurous, and saline, and some of the springs possess all these qualities to a greater or less extent. The principal chalybeate springs are the Towitt well, called by Dr. Bright, who wrote the first account of it, the "English Spa," discovered by Captain William Slingby of Dilton Hall about the year 1870, the Royal Chalybeate Spa, more commonly known as John's Well, discovered in 1831 by Dr. Stanhope of York, and provided with a neat octagonal building erected in 1843, Muspiatt's chalybeate or chloride of iron spring discovered in 1819, but first properly analysed by Dr. Sheridan Muspiatt in 1865, and the Staebek springs midway between High Harrogate and Knaresborough. The principal sulphur springs are the old sulphur well in the centre of Low Harrogate, discovered about the year 1666, the Montpelier springs, the principal well of which was discovered in 1822, situated in the grounds of the Crown Hotel and surmounted by a handsome building in the Chinese style containing pump room, baths, and reading room, and the Hailow Cui springs, situated in a wooded glen about a mile west from Low Harrogate. Nest Hailow Cui is Hailow observatory, a square tower 100 feet in height, standing on elevated ground and commanding a very extensive view. A saline spring situated in Low Harrogate was discovered in 1783. Besides the hotels and churches, the principal public buildings are the High Harrogate college, a boarding school for young gentlemen; the new Victoria baths, erected in 1871 at a cost of £20,000, the Bath hospital for poor patients, founded in 1824, and the Rogers almshouses, founded in 1869. About a mile to the south-east of Harrogate the Clympy valley is spanned by a railway viaduct 1860 feet in length. The population of the town in 1861 was 4737, and in 1871 6842.

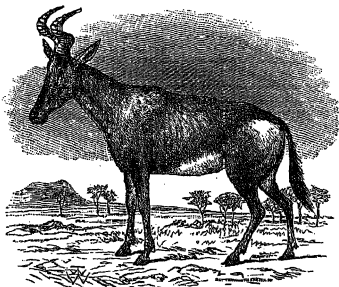
HARROW-ON-THE-HILL, a village of Middlesex, England, 10 miles N W of London, derives the latter part of its name from its position on a hill which rises from the surrounding plain to the height of about 200 feet. On the summit, and forming a conspicuous landmark, is the church of St. Mary, said to have been founded by Lanfranc, archbishop of Canterbury, in the reign of William I, but of the original building very little is now left. Harrow is chiefly celebrated for its school, founded in 1871 by John Lyon, a yeoman of the neighbouring village of Preston who had yearly during his life not made 20 marks for the education of poor children of Harrow. Though the charter was granted by Queen Elizabeth in 1571, and the statutes drawn up by the elders in 1690, two years before his death, it was not till 1611 that the first building was opened for scholars. Lyon originally settled about two-thirds of his property on the school, leaving the remainder for the maintenance of the highway between London and Harrow, but in the course of time the values of the respective endowments have changed, and while the road commissioners receive about £3500, the school's share is only about £1600. In 1680 the headmaster, taking advantage of a concession in Lyon's statutes, began to receive "foreigners," i. e., boys from other parishes, who were to pay for their education. From this time the prosperity of the school may be dated. In 1809 the parishioners of Harrow appealed to the Court of Chancery against the manner in which the school was conducted, but the decision, while it recognized their privileges, confirmed the right of admission to foreigners. At present foundationers receive their education at a slightly

cheaper rate than foreigners; there are none who are taught gratis. The government of the school was originally vested in six persons of standing in the parish, who had the power of filling vacancies in their number by election among themselves; but under the Public Schools Act of 1868 the governing body now consists of the surviving members of the old board, besides six new members who are elected respectively by the Lord Chancellor, the universities of Oxford, Cambridge, and London, the Royal Society, and the assistant masters of the school. There is a considerable number of scholarships in connexion with the school to both the great English universities, some to special colleges, others to colleges in the choice of the holders. The general mode of instruction and discipline is modelled on that of Eton, where most of the former headmasters of Harrow were educated. Originally an exclusively classical school, mathematics became in 1837 a compulsory study at Harrow; modern languages, compulsory on the upper forms only since 1851, were extended to the whole school in 1855; while English history and literature began to be more especially studied about 1869. Science, music, and drawing are now also taught. Among the famous men who have been educated here may be mentioned Bruce, the Abyssinian traveller, Sir William Jones, the Orientalist, Dr Parr, who was born at Harrow, Admiral Rodney, Sheridan, Byron, Peel, Theodore Hook, Lord Palmerston, Lord Herbert of Lea, the earl of Shaftesbury, and Archbishop Trench. Comparatively little change was made in the school buildings till 1819, when the new portion was begun; but since that time improvements and additions have steadily increased. In 1839 a school-chapel was consecrated; but this has been gradually replaced by a handsomer edifice completed in 1857. The Vaughan library was built in 1861-63, and a hospital for the boys in 1865. A new speech room, a gymnasium, and laboratories have been erected out of the Lyon Tercentenary Fund, subscribed since 1871. The population of the parish in 1871 was 8537, and of the local board district 4397.

**HARRY, BLIND, or HENRY THE MEASURER**, author of a poem in twelve books, entitled *The Acta and Deeds of the illustre and waltzraund empione, Schir William Wallace, Knight of Bellerie*. All that is known of Henry's personal history is contained in the following quotation from Major:—"Henry, who was blind from his birth, composed in the time of my youth the whole book of William Wallace, and embodied all the traditions about him in the ordinary measure, in which he was well skilled. By the recitation of these in the presence of the grant, he procured, as indeed he deserved, food and clothing." Major was born about 1469, and the only MS. copy of Henry's works is that in the Advocates' Library, Edinburgh, dated 1488. It was first printed at Edinburgh in 1670. In his *Lives of Scottish Worthies*, P. F. Tytler claims for it a certain historical worth, as "the work of an ignorant man, who was yet in possession of valuable and authentic materials." On account of its glorification of the national hero it has enjoyed a long popularity among the Scottish peasantry, but it possesses no poetical merit except a certain rude fire and energy, and as a literary production its place must be reckoned a very humble one.

**HARTE-BEEST** (*Alcedaphus carnea*), a species of antelope, occurring in considerable numbers throughout southern and central Africa. It stands nearly 5 feet high at the shoulders, and is somewhat ungainly in form owing to the disproportionate development of its fore and hind quarters—a difference which gives to the posterior limbs when in motion an appearance of weakness. The head is long and narrow, and is crowned in both sexes by a pair of nearly cylindrical horns, ringed throughout their lower half

and smooth above. The hair of this species is short, soft, and recumbent, and is of a brownish-yellow colour above and nearly white beneath, the colour, however, being to some extent dependent on age and sex and on the season of the year. The harte-beest is gregarious, living in herds of from five to ten individuals, and frequenting tracts of uninhabited wilderness, or the light brush forest in the neighbourhood of rivers. It is exceedingly wary, and consequently difficult of approach, and when suddenly come upon, the entire herd, according to Sir Andrew Smith, scampers off in the train of a leader,—the herd being rarely seen, when in flight, otherwise than in a string, one treading on the footsteps of another. Of a mild and gentle disposition, the harte-beest seeks safety, whenever it can, in flight; when at bay, however, it does not hesitate to turn upon its pursuers and to make use of its powerful horns as weapons of offence. During the heat of the day it is said to rest



Harte-beest.

leaning against the trunks of trees, when the colour of its body so harmonizes with that of the bark as frequently to enable it to elude observation. Dr Schweinfurth, who had frequent opportunity of observing these animals in central Africa, describes a curious and as yet unexplained habit of which he was himself a witness. Having approached nearer to a herd of harte-beests than usual without attracting their attention, he observed them running in couples like the horses in a circus, "going round and round a clump of trees, whilst the others stood in groups of three or four intently watching them. After a time these in turn took their place, and, two at a time, ran their own circuit in a similar fashion." He conjectures that the performance had probably some connexion with pairing time. The flesh of this species is considered superior to that of any other South African antelope, the eland alone excepted.

**HARTFORD**, a city in the United States of North America, in 41° 45' 59" N. lat. 72° 40' 48" W. long. is the eastern portion of the town of the same name, the county seat of Hartford county, and the capital of the State of Connecticut. It is situated on the west bank of the Connecticut river, 60 miles from Long Island Sound, at the head of steamboat and sloop navigation, and 100 miles N.E. of New York and 95 W.S.W. of Boston by rail. An important centre of railway communication, it has also regular lines of steamboats and packets, besides some 200 sailing craft engaged in the coasting trade. The river is usually closed from the middle of December to the

middle of March, and at the breaking up of the ice in spring sometimes rises 29 feet. The city is intersected by the sluggish and dirty Park river, which is spanned by 10 bridges. A covered toll bridge, 1000 feet long, across the Connecticut river connects the city with East Hartford. There are about 80 miles of streets, mostly lighted with gas, well drained, and macadamized or paved, and running north-and-south or east-and-west with considerable regularity. The city is for the most part compactly built of brick, granite, and freestone,—the public buildings and those of many private corporations being elegant and substantial. The old State-house, a Dutch edifice, completed in 1795, has become the city hall, while the State, since 1879, occupies a capacious new building of white marble in the modern Gothic style, costing over \$3,100,000, and standing conspicuously in the midst of the city on a slight elevation at the south side of Bushnell Park (a beautiful area of 40 acres). There are also in the city three other public squares. Of the seven cemeteries the most noteworthy is Cedar Hill, in the south-west part of the town, comprising 268 acres. Wadsworth's tower on Talcott mountain, to the north-west, affords one of the finest views in New England of Hartford as a healthy city, and its mean annual temperature is 50° Fahr. The area of the city is 10 square miles, and the population in 1870 was 37,180, of whom 10,817 were foreigners. A careful estimate of the population in 1879 gives nearly 50,000.

The city is divided into 8 wards, and is governed by a mayor and 16 aldermen elected biennially, and 32 councilmen elected annually. The water supply is from four reservoirs in West Hartford, with a capacity of 1,203,450,367 gallons. In 1873 a free public bathing-house was established. Since 1864 the city has had a paid fire department, and now has seven steam fire-engines and a fire-alarm telegraph with 20 miles of wire. The total real estate and personal property in the city assessed for taxation, October 1, 1878, was \$44,001,245. The debt of the town in 1879 was \$1,298,158, and of the city \$2,152,308.

The principal business of the city is insurance. In 1879 there were 9 life insurance companies, with assets of \$10,104,008, 8 life insurance companies, with assets of \$101,101,968, and 1 accident insurance company, with assets, \$1,170,193. There were 16 banks and trust companies, with an aggregate capital of over \$8,000,000, and 4 savings banks, with deposits, October 1, 1879, amounting to \$9,558,895. There are also, exclusive of railroads, 73 mechanical and manufacturing corporations, though several of the larger ones have their works in adjacent towns. These have a capital of \$17,847,000, and some of them a world wide reputation, as the Colt Firearms Company, with works occupying grounds of 129 acres reclaimed by an extensive dike along the Connecticut river. They also include carpet, linen, and silk works, and a manufactory of edge-tools. The publication of books too is a considerable interest. A very important branch of trade is the sale of leaf tobacco, which is the chief crop of the Connecticut river valley.

In 1879 there were 39 churches and 15 chapels of all denominations, including a fine Jewish synagogue. Here, too, is the seat of the Roman Catholic bishop, and the headquarters, in the United States, of the Chinese educational commission. Beside the 17 public schools and school houses, which have cost \$1,682,000, and with their 163 teachers and 7580 pupils cost about \$200,000 a year, there were in 1879 48 educational and charitable corporations, several of them of notable importance, especially Trinity College (Episcopal), founded in 1823 at Washington College, which now has beautiful and commodious buildings in the south part of the city, the Theological Institute of Connecticut (Congregational), founded in 1884, the Hartford high and grammar school, founded 1666, the oldest educational institution in the State, and occupying one of the finest school edifices in the country, the Washington library of reference, with 84,000 volumes, the rooms and library of the Connecticut historical society, with its valuable collection of MSS., books, and MSS., the young men's institute, accumulating library of 27,000 volumes (the last three, with a picture gallery, occupy a roomy and accessible building known as the Wadsworth Athenaeum), the very complete State law library at the State-house, the American asylum for the

deaf and dumb, reared for the insane, Hartford hospital and orphan asylum (see CONNELLICUT, vol vi p 287). Thomas Green in 1764 opened the first printing-office in the city, and established the *Connecticut Current*, which has ever since been regularly published. That was in 1870 there were daily newspapers weekly, and four monthly. In 1797 A. Kewley exhibited the first steam locomotive in Hartford streets, and a portion of the Hartford and New Haven railroad was in operation in 1838. The railroad, however, have not been particularly successful, first New York being the only one of these, meeting at Hartford which is in a prosperous condition.

Hartford was known to the aborigines as *Suckring*, it was first permanently settled in 1636 by emigrants from the Massachusetts, and called New town. In 1637 it was named Hartford after Hartford in England. The Dutch had built a fort there in 1643, but it passed wholly into English hands in 1654. The first town meeting was held in 1635, and the first place of worship built, and school put in operation, in 1638. In 1639 was written at Hartford the constitution for the colony, the first framed in America, and embodying the characteristic features of all which follow. The first code of laws was drawn up in 1650, reducing the capital offences from 100 under English law to 15. In 1687 Sir E. Andros came to Hartford while the assembly was in session, and demanded the charter, but it was concealed in the notorious Charter Oak by Captain Joseph Wadsworth, and returned hidden till 1689. The historic tree survived till 1856. The city was incorporated in 1784, and in 1785 it became the sole capital of Connecticut.

HARTIG, GEORG LUDWIG (1764-1836), a German writer on forestry, was born at Gladenbach near Marburg, 2d September 1764. After obtaining a practical knowledge of forestry from his uncle at Hatzburg, he studied from 1781 to 1783 at the university of Gießen. In 1786 he became inspector of forests to the prince of Solms Braunfels at Ilungen in the Wetterau, where he founded a school for the teaching of forestry. After obtaining in 1797 the appointment of inspector of forests to the prince of Orange-Nassau he continued his school of forestry at Dillenburg, where its attendance considerably increased. On the dissolution of the principality by Napoleon I in 1805 he lost his situation, but in 1806 he went as chief superintendent of forests to Stuttgart, whence in 1811 he was called to Berlin as principal superintendent of forests under the Prussian Government. There he again opened his institution for instruction in forestry, and succeeded in connecting it with the university of Berlin, where in 1830 he was named honorary professor. He died at Berlin 2d February 1836.

He was the author of a number of valuable works on forestry, new editions of which have been published by his son Theodor. The principal of these works are *Lehrbuch für Jäger*, *Lehrbuch für Förster*, *Lehrbuch für Forstbedienten*, *Lehrbuch für Forstbesitzer*, and *Lehrbuch für Jäger und Jagdwärter*.

HARTLEPOOL, and WEST HARTLEPOOL, respectively a municipal borough and a town of England, county of Durham, and included in the parliamentary borough of the Hartlepoons, are situated the one on the north and the other on the south side of Hartlepool Bay, about a mile apart, but having connexion by railway, and practically forming portions of one town. By railway Hartlepool is 10 miles and West Hartlepool 12 miles N N E of Stockton-on-Tees. The principal buildings of Hartlepool are the parish church, in the Early English style, dedicated to St Hilda, the borough hall, in the Italian style, erected in 1866, behind which there is a large market, the Durham militia artillery depot, erected in 1861, the temperance hall, the mechanics' institute, and the theatre. New schools for boys, girls, and infants have been erected by the school board, and Pinner's schools, founded in 1826, have been constituted elementary schools under the Education Act of 1870. Among the other schools are Crook's endowed school, founded in 1755, and the school in connexion with Henry Smith's charity. The town was originally surrounded by walls, of which considerable remains may yet be seen. It is well supplied with water. The principal buildings of West Hartlepool are the Ath-

neum, the town-hall, the exchange, in the Gothic style, erected in 1875 at a cost of £10,000, the mechanics' institute, and the theatre. A Government school of art was established in 1871. The manufacture of the two towns are very much alike: they possess, now works, puddling furnaces, brass and iron foundries, engine and boiler works, sawmills, cement works, tile works, and breweries. With the addition of the new docks, completed in 1879, the dock area between the towns is 86 acres, besides which there are ponds with an area of about 80 acres. Considerable difficulty has been found in maintaining a sufficient depth of water at the harbour bay of Hartlepool, and although the use of a powerful dredge has been so far effectual, it is probable that the only adequate remedy will be the extension of the breakwater. A large lighthouse for guiding the entrance of vessels, was erected in 1846-47 at a cost of nearly £6000. In the shipping returns Hartlepool and West Hartlepool are classed together as one port, in 1878 the number of vessels that entered the port, including those in ballast, was 4640, with a tonnage of 885,762, the number that cleared 4662, with a tonnage of 992,370. For the five years ending 1878 the average number of vessels that entered was 5371, with a tonnage of 978,039, while 6417 cleared, with a tonnage of 1,005,710. The principal exports are coal, coke, machines, and cotton, linen and woollen goods, and the principal imports, timber, cattle, corn, provisions, and wool. The fisheries are insignificant. The town is much resorted to in summer for sea-bathing. Several caverns, which may be explored for nearly fifty yards, have been excavated by the sea out of the rocks on the shore of the peninsula. The parliamentary borough of the Hartlepoles has an area of 7287 acres, and besides Hartlepool includes Staunton (in which parish West Hartlepool is situated), Seaton Curlew, and Throston. Its population in 1861 was 27,478, and in 1871, 38,203. The population of the municipal borough of Hartlepool in 1861 was 12,216, and in 1871, 13,166, and the population of Staunton in 1861 was 13,601, and in 1871, 23,106.

The name Hartlepool means the pool or lake of Hirt. The town grew up round a monastery which had St Hilda as its abbess, and the harbour was of some consequence as early as 1173. In the 14th century Hartlepool belonged to the Buceas of Anstruthill in Scotland, the progenitors of the royal family of that name. The town was erected into a borough about 1200. After Bruce ascended the Scottish throne his English possessions were forfeited, and Hartlepool was granted to the Scottish crown. It remained so until the Scots in 1543 again in 1558 after the battle of Barnebeckham. During the great northern rebellion in the reign of Elizabeth it was seized by the insurgents. In 1644 it was taken by the Scottish army, and at the surrender, the possession of Scotland till 1647. West Hartlepool was founded in 1844 by Mr R. W. Jackson, the first M.P. for the borough of the Hartlepoles. Its first dock was constructed in 1847, after which it increased with great rapidity.

**HARTLEY, DAVID (1705-1757)**, who may justly be called the founder of the English Association school of psychologists, was born on the 30th August 1705. His father, who was vicar of Ainslie in Yorkshire, wished him to enter the church, and with this view he was sent at the age of fifteen to Jesus College, Cambridge, where he studied under Saunders the mathematician, and distinguished himself so much that he was elected a fellow of his college. But his university course so far modified his opinions that, feeling himself no longer able conscientiously to sign the Thirty-nine Articles, he abandoned his first intention and devoted himself to the study of medicine. He, however, remained in the communion of the English Church, living on intimate terms with the most distinguished churchmen of his day, among whom may be named Joseph Butler, Warburton, Law, Hoadley, and the poet Young. Indeed he asserted it to be a duty to obey ecclesiastical as well as civil authorities. The doctrine to which he most strongly

objected was that of eternal punishment. His greatest interest in theology is proved by the fact that he devoted a large part of his *Observations* to that subject, the objective side of which he treated upon orthodox lines. The life of Hartley was the useful life of a benevolent and studious physician. He practised at Newark, Bury St Edmunds, London, and lastly at Bath, where he died on the 28th August 1757, within two days of his fifty-second birthday. It was at the age of twenty-five that he commenced the series of essays that was to make up his *Observations on Man: his Frame, his Duty, and his Expectations*. The praise of originality cannot be denied him. It is noteworthy, however, that very nearly at the same time with the publication of Hartley's *Observations* (1749), two works appeared in French expounding theories essentially similar to his—Condillac's *Traité sur l'Origine des Connaissances humaines* (1746) and the *Travé Analytique de l'Âme* by Charles Bonnet of Geneva, whose coincidence with Hartley in the most distinctive features of his philosophy is extremely remarkable. But Hartley's own account of the matter is so straightforward as to command immediate assent. His physical theory, he tells us, was drawn from certain speculations as to nervous action, which Newton had published in his *Principia*. The psychological theory was suggested by an *Essay on the Fundamental Principle of Justice or Morality* (written by a clergyman named Gray, and prefixed by Law to his translation of Archbishop King's Latin work on the *Origin of Virtue*), the chief object of which was to show that sympathy and conscience are developments by means of association from the selfish feelings. It is greatly to Hartley's credit that he so frankly owned his obligations to a work so far inferior to his own in completeness and tone of thought.

The outlines of Hartley's theory are as follows. With Locke he asserted that, prior to sensation, the human mind is a blank. By a growth from simple sensations, those states of consciousness which appear most remote from sensation come into being. And the one law of growth of which Hartley took account was the law of contiguity, synchrony and succession. By this law he sought to explain, not only the phenomena of memory, which others had similarly explained before him, but also the phenomena of emotion, of reasoning, and of volition and involuntary action.

By his physical theory Hartley gave the first strong impulse to the modern study of the intimate connexion of physiological and psychological facts which is proved so fruitful, though his physical theory in itself is inadequate, and has not been fully adopted. He held that sensation is the result of vibrations of the particles of the medullary substance of the nerves, to account for which he postulated, with Newton, a subtle elastic ether, rare in the interstices of solid bodies and in those close neighbourhood, and denser as it recedes from them. Pleasant is the result of moderate vibrations, pain of vibrations so violent as to break the continuity of the nerves. These vibrations leave behind them in the brain a tendency to similar vibrations or "vibrations of association." This memory is accounted for. The course of reminiscence and of the thought generally, when not immediately dependent upon external sensation, is accounted for on the ground that these are always vibrations in the brain on account of its heat and the pulsation of its arteries. What these vibrations shall be is determined by the nature of each man's past experience, and by the influence of the circumstances of the moment, which causes now one new association tendency to prevail over the rest. Sensations which are often associated together become each associated with the ideas corresponding to the others, and the ideas corresponding to the associated sensations become associated together, sometimes so intimately that they form what appears to be a new simple idea, not without careful analysis resolvable into its component parts.

Starting, like the modern Associationists, from a detailed account of the phenomena of the senses, Hartley tries to show, by the above laws, all the emotions, which he analyses with considerable skill, may be explained. Locke's incomplete phrase "association of ideas" is employed throughout, "ideas" being taken as including every mental state but sensation. He emphatically asserts the existence of pure disinterested sentiments, while declaring it to be a growth from the self-regarding feelings. Voluntary action is explained as the result of a firm connexion between a motion and a sensation or idea, and, on the physical side, between an "ideal" and a motory vibration. Therefore in the Freewill con-

theory; Hartley took his place as a Determinist. It is singular that, as he tells us, it was only with reluctance, and when his speculations were nearly complete, that he came to a conclusion on this subject in accordance with his theory.

Hartley's theory of reasoning is forced into agreement with the rest of his system. He declares that "assent and dissent, what ever their precise and particular nature may be, must come under the notion of ideas, being only those very complex internal feelings which adhere by association to such clusters of words as are called propositions. And thus a mathematical proposition is nothing more than a group of ideas united by association," this group of ideas including not only the sum of the ideas belonging to the terms of the proposition, but also those which belong to equality, consequence, and truth."

The remaining half of the *Observations* is devoted to discussion of theological questions, to practical ethics, and does not call for detailed notice. While emphatically asserting his faith in supernatural religion, in the psychological part of his work he treats, not only conscience, but also the religious emotions entirely as developments from sensation, in the same sense as the pleasures of imagination.

Clarity, freedom from redundancy, and a severe simplicity and brevity are the best characteristics of his style. "No book," writes Sir James Mackintosh, "perhaps exists in which, with so few of the common ailments, comes at first so much to please by the picture it presents of the writer's character. Whose a historian's careful pen on the work must be unfortunate if he does not see, feel, and own that the writer was a great philosopher and a good man." (T. M. W.)

HARTLIB, SAMUEL (c. 1600-1669) was born towards the beginning of the 17th century at Elbing in Prussia, his father being a refugee from Poland. His mother was English. About 1628 Hartlib came to England, where he carried on a mercantile agency, and at the same time found leisure to enter with interest into the public questions of the day. An enthusiastic admirer of Comenius, he published in 1637 his *Comenius Comenianorum Præfatus*, and in 1639 *Comenius Panopæus Pro domus et Scholæ Dissertatione*. In 1641 appeared his *Relation of those which hath been lately attempted to renew the Ecclesiastical Peace among Protestants, and A Discourse of the Means*, containing his ideas of what a model state should be.

During the civil war Hartlib occupied himself with the peaceful study of agriculture, pointing at his own expense several treatises by others on the subject. In 1650 he issued the *Discourse of Flanders Husbandry* by Sir Richard Weston, and in 1651 his *Legacy, or an Enlargement of the Discourse of Husbandry used in Robert and Flanders*, by Robert Child (see *AGRICULTURE*, vol. 1, p. 297). For his various labours Hartlib received from Cromwell a pension of £100, afterwards increased to £300, as he had spent all his fortune on his experiments. He planned a school for the sons of gentlemen, to be conducted on new principles, and this probably was the occasion of his friend Milton's *Treatise on Education*, addressed to him in 1644, and of Sir William Petty's *Two Letters* on the same subject, in 1647 and 1648. His own literary labours were mostly confined to prefaces and short essays. Blythe, a contemporary, says that Ad. Speed, while engaged on his *Improvements in Husbandry*, was lodged and entertained by Samuel Hartlib. At the Restoration Hartlib lost his pension, which had already fallen into arrears, he petitioned parliament for a new grant of it, but what success he met with is unknown, as his latter years and death are wrapped in obscurity. 1662 has been assigned as the probable year of his death, as the latest of his extant letters bears that date.

His other publications are the following:—*Consensus otiosus tendens in Anglicanæ Religiois mutationem in Church and State*, 1647; *Fundation of Mr. John Duns*, 1650; *Tunsee's Doubting Conscience Resolved*, 1653; *A true and ready way to learn the Latin Tongue*, 1654; *The Rightmost Commonwealthe of Deas, and the Rightmost Virginian Colonies*, 1655; and *The Overland Expedition*, 1659. See *Biographical Memoirs of Samuel Hartlib*, by H. Drake, 1866; *Comenius's Magistrate*, January 1802; Watson's *Hartlib*, *Hartlib's Agricultural Essays*, Donaldson's *Agriculture of Biography*, and *Messner's Milton*.

HARTMANN, MORITZ (1821-1879), a German poet and novelist, was born of Jewish parents at Dirschau in Posen, October 15, 1821. He studied at Pagnik and Vienna, and after a tour in Italy, Switzerland, and South Germany became a teacher in Vienna. He left Austria, however, in 1844, in order to publish without danger a volume of patriotic poems entitled *Kelch und Schwert*, which appeared at Leipzig in 1846, and in which he gave expression to somewhat radical sentiments as regards both church and state, in language full of the fire of youthful passion and tinged with considerable poetic fancy. After residing for some years in Belgium and France, he came to Austria he suffered a short imprisonment, from which he was freed by the revolution of the following March. In the same year he was chosen to represent the district of Leitznitz in the Frankfurt parliament, where he took his seat on the extreme left. In October he accompanied Blum and Frobé to Vienna, but he made his escape before the execution of Blum, and took part in the deliberations of the "Rump Parliament" at Stuttgart. In 1849 he published the *Reinhold des Pfaffen Meinungen*, a satirical political poem in the style of the old chronicles. After the dissolution of the "Rump Parliament," he went to Switzerland, then to England and Ireland, and in 1850 to Paris, where, besides other literary engagements, he held that of correspondent to the *Kölnische Zeitung*. On the outbreak of the Russian war he became correspondent of the same paper in the Crimea, where he remained eighteen months. After several years' residence at Paris he settled in 1860 at Ghent, where he delivered courses of lectures on German literature and history in some of the principal academies. In 1863 he removed to Stuttgart to edit the *Pfeife*, and in 1868 he undertook the editorship at Vienna of the *Neue Presse*. He died at Oberdöbling near Vienna, May 13, 1879. Hartmann published several volumes of poems in addition to those already mentioned, and besides his spiced accounts of his travels and adventures he is the author of various novels of more than average merit. A series of tales (*Novellen*, 3 vols.) appeared in 1863, and a second series (*Neue Natur*, 3 vols.) in 1866. His collected works were published at Stuttgart in 10 vols., 1873-74, and a selection of his poems at the same place in 1871.

HARTMANN VON AUE, a Middle High German poet, was born about 1170. He was of knightly rank, and held a fief at Aue, which was probably on the upper Neckar. He seems to have been educated in a monastery, and was able to read and write. Among his accomplishments was a knowledge of French, and as he took part in the third crusade he must be considered to have passed under the influence, which were in his time most favorable to poetic impulse. Although his lyrics are not without merit he excels chiefly in narrative poetry, and the best known of his narrative poems, which was also one of the earliest, is *Das arme Heinrich* ("Poor Henry"). Some of the incidents of this tale are exceedingly repulsive, but others are marked by delicate grace and pathos. Two other tales, *Brec* and *Iwein*, the former written before 1197 and the latter before 1204, treat of the Arthurian legend, and are based upon French poems by Chrétien de Troyes. The story of each is clearly conceived, and the diction is fresh, harmonious, and animated. Hartmann has neither the exquisite finish and charm of Gottfried of Strasbourg nor the soaring imagination of Wolfram von Eschenbach, but he stands next to these supreme mediæval writers in the power of giving artistic shape to strong feeling. He is mentioned as alive in 1207 by Gottfried of Strassburg, but in 1220 his death is deplored by Heinrich von dem Türlin in the *Krone*.



Each of his works has found a special editor, and a complete edition of his writings has been issued by F. Bach in the *Bibliothek (Bibliothek der Mittelalters)*. See L. Schmidt, *Stand, Heimat, und Geschlecht des Mittelalters*, Darmstadt (1871).

**HAARTSHORN, SPIRITS**, of a name signifying originally the ammoniacal liquor obtained by the distillation of both shavings, afterwards applied to the partially purified similar products of the action of heat on nitrogenous animal matters generally, and now popularly used to designate solution of ammonia. See *AMMONIA*, vol. 1 p. 741, and *CHEMISTRY*, vol. v p. 509.

**HARON ER RASHID** See *HARON AT RASHID*.  
**HARASPOICES** (literally entail observers, of *Skt. hald, Gr. χορηγία*), a class of soothsayers in Rome. Their art consisted especially in deducing from the appearance presented by the entrails of the slain victim the will of the gods. They also interpreted all portents or unusual phenomena of nature, especially thunder and lightning, and prescribed the expiatory ceremonies after such events. To please the god, the victim must be without spot or blemish, and the practice of observing whether the entrails presented any abnormal appearance, and thence deducing the will of heaven, was also very important in Greek religion. This art, however, appears not to have been, as some other modes of ascertaining the will of the gods undoubtedly were, of genuine Aryan growth. It is foreign to the Homeric poems, and must have been introduced into Greece after their composition. In like manner, as the Romans themselves believed, the art was not indigenous in Rome, but derived from Etruria. The *Haruspices* were said to have learned it from a being named Tages, grandson of Jupiter, who had suddenly sprung from the ground near Tauricum. The art was practised in Rome chiefly by Etruscans, seldom by native-born Romans who had studied in the priestly schools of Etruria. Though it was of great importance under the early republic, it never became a part of the state religion. In this respect the *haruspices* ranked lower than the *augurs*, the latter were a more ancient and purely Roman institution, and were a most important element in the political organization of the city. In later times the art fell into disrepute, and the saying of Cato the censor is well known, that he wondered one *haruspex* could look another in the face without laughing (*Cic. De Div.*, ii. 24). Under the empire, however, we hear of a regular collegium of sixty *haruspices*, and Claudius is said to have tried to restore the art and put it under the control of the pontifices.

**HARVARD COLLEGE**, the earliest institution of learning in the United States and on the continent of North America. The record gives its origin thus: The English colonists on Massachusetts Bay, settling at what is now Boston in 1630, began a plantation the next year three miles up Charles River, which they called "New Towne." The colony court of September 1636 "agreed to give £400," which exactly doubled the public tax for the year, "towards a school of collidge, whereof £200 to be paid the next year, and £200 when the work is finished, and the next court to appoint whome and what building." In November 1637 "the Collidge is ordered to be at New Towne," the name of which had been changed to Cambridge, and a committee was appointed "to take order" for it. In March 1638-39 "it is ordered that the collidge agreed upon formerly to be built at Cambridge shalbe called Harvard Collidge." The reason was that the Rev John Harvard, B.A. 1632, and M.A. 1635, of Emmanuel College, Cambridge, England, dying in Charlestown, Massachusetts, September 14, 1633, by will left half his estate, about £200, and his library, to the widelens seminary. The college charter of 1650 declared the object to be "the

education of the English and Indian youth of this country in knowledge and godliness." The first brick edifice on the college grounds, having rooms for twenty of the aborigines, was called "the Indian college." In it was printed the apostle Eliot's translation of the Bible into the language of the natives, with primers, grammars, tracts, &c. Several of the natives were members of the college, only one graduated from it. By generous aid received from abroad for this special object, the college was greatly helped in its infancy.

Thus from the beginning private munificence rather than the public treasury fostered and sustained the college, and with steadily increasing preponderance all through its history have its supplies and endowments come from the generosity of individuals. Giants from the colony, province, and State, of small sums for salaries and incidental purposes, made annually or at intervals, wholly ceased more than sixty years ago. With scarce an exception all the present invested funds of the college and of its professional schools, amounting to \$3,615,538 87, with the halls, library, and apparatus, are the benefactions of its friends.

The charter constitutes as a corporation a president, treasurer, and five fellows, who initiate all measures concerning the college, hold its funds, and have the nomination for filling vacancies in their own body, as also of all the officers for instruction and for the internal government of the institution in all its departments, subject, however, to the advice and approval and final action of a board of overseers. The State, claiming as founder and patron, till quite recently regarded the college as a State institution, over which it should exercise a direct control through the legislature and the executive, by its authority in the membership and the election of the whole or a part of the board of overseers. Various modifications made from time to time in the composition or method of choice of the members of this board not relieving the controversies and embarrassments incident to legislative action, which proved prejudicial to the best interests of the college, its organic connexion with the State by this too was severed by statute in 1866. The board of overseers as now constituted is composed of thirty of the alumni, besides the president and the treasurer, elected by the ballots of the alumni on commencement day at the college, in sections of five, serving a term of six years. With its complement of professional schools of law, medicine, theology, science, and many special departments of the latter, more than any other institution in America, and with but a few gaps yet to be filled in its completeness of method and equipment to bring it to comparison with foreign institutions of learning, Harvard College may claim to be in the most comprehensive sense of the term a university, a title which is, indeed, assumed, and generally applied to it. Recent changes in the course of study in the college have allowed a wide range for elective studies to undergraduates, the proportions being, one-fourth obligatory, three-fourths elective. In the professional schools most of the studies are obligatory. The number of bound volumes in the library and schools is 232,200. The number of halls owned and occupied for college uses is twenty-nine of brick or stone, including ten for students' chambers. The whole number of professors, instructors, &c., in all departments, is 135, of libraries, professors, and other officers in the service of the college, 28. The number of the alumni of the college proper about 9600, the number in all departments about 14,000.

**HARVEST-BUG**, a name erroneously applied to the heaped larval condition of a mite, not one of the *Insecta*, but belonging to the division *Acaridea* of the class *Arachnida*. It is very small, of a brick-red colour, and swarms both among wild vegetation and cultivated plants, espec-



HARVEY, WILLIAM (1578-1657), the discoverer of the circulation of the blood, was the eldest son of Thomas Harvey, a prosperous Kentish yeoman, and was born at Folkestone on April 1, 1578. After passing through the grammar school of Canterbury, on the 31st of May 1593, having just entered his sixteenth year, he became a pensioner of Caius College, Cambridge, at nineteen he took his B.A. degree, and soon after, having chosen the profession of medicine, he went to study at Padua under Fabricius and Caserius (see *ANATOMY*, vol. 2 pp. 809, 810). At the age of twenty-four Harvey became doctor of medicine, April 1602. Returning to England in the first year of James I., he settled in London, and two years later he married the daughter of Dr. Lancaster Down, who had been physician to Queen Elizabeth. In the same year Harvey became a graduate of the Royal College of Physicians, and was duly admitted a fellow (June 1607). In 1609 he obtained the nomination of the post of physician to St. Bartholomew's Hospital. His application was supported by the king himself and by Dr. Atkins, the president of the college. On the death of Dr. Wilkinson in the course of the same year he succeeded to the post. He was thence censor of the college, and in 1615 was appointed Lumleian lecturer. In the following year—the year of Shakespeare's death—he began his course of lectures, and first brought forward his views upon the movements of the heart and blood.<sup>1</sup> Meantime his practice increased, and he had the lord chancellor, Francis Bacon, and the earl of Arundel among his patients. In 1618 he was appointed physician extraordinary to James I., and on the next vacancy physician in ordinary to his successor. In 1628, the year of the publication of the *Exercitatio Anatomica de Motu Cordis et Sanguinis*, he was elected treasurer of the College of Physicians, but at the end of the following year he resigned the office, in order, by command of Charles I., to accompany the young duke of Lennox (James Stuart, afterwards duke of Richmond) on his travels. He appears to have visited Italy, and returned in 1632. Four years later he accompanied the earl of Arundel on his embassy to the emperor. He was eager in collecting objects of natural history, sometimes causing the earl anxiety for his safety by his excursions in a country infested by robbers after the Thirty Years' War. In a letter written on this journey, he says—"By the way we could scarce see a dog, crow, kite, raven, or any bird, or anything to anatomize, only some few miserable people, the reliques of the war and the plague, whom famine had made anatomies before I came." Having returned to his practice in London at the close of the year 1636, he accompanied Charles I. in one of his journeys to Scotland (1639 or 1641). While at Edinburgh he visited the Bass Rock, he minutely describes its abundant population of sea-fowl in his treatise *De Generatione*, and incidentally speaks of the then credited account of the solan goose growing on trees as a fable. He was in attendance on the king at the battle of Edgehill (October 1642), where he withdrew under a hedge with the prince of Wales and the duke of York (then boys of twelve and ten years old), "and I took out of my pocket a book and read. But he did not read very long before a bullet of a great gun grazed on the ground near him, which made him remove his station," as he afterwards told Aubrey. After the undesired battle, Harvey followed Charles I. to Oxford, "where," writes the same gossiping narrator, "I first saw him, but was then too young to be acquainted with so great a doctor. I remember he came several times to our college (Trinity) to George Bathurst, B.D., who had a hen

to hatch eggs in his chamber, which they opened daily to see the progress and way of generation." In Oxford he remained three years, and there was some chance of his being superseded in his office at St. Bartholomew's Hospital, "because he hath withdrawn himself from his charge, and is retired to the party in arms against the Parliament." It was no doubt at this time that his lodgings at Whitehall were searched, and not only the furniture seized but also invaluable manuscripts and anatomical preparations.<sup>2</sup>

While with the king at Oxford he was made warden of Merton College, but a year later, in 1646, that city surrendered to Fairfax, and Harvey returned to London. He was now sixty-eight years old, and, having resigned his appointments and relinquished the cares of practice, lived in sequestered retirement with one or other of his brothers. It was in his brother Daniel's house at Combe that Dr. (afterwards Sir George) Ent, a faithful friend and disciple (1604-1689), visited him in 1650. "I found him," he says, "with a cheerful and sprightly countenance investigating, like Democritus, the nature of things. Asking if all were well with him—"How can that be," he replied, "when the state is so agitated with storms and I myself am yet in the open sea?" And indeed, were not my mind soothed by my studies, the recollection of the observations I have for nearly made, though there is nothing which should make me desist of a longer continuance. But thus employed, this obscure life and vacation from public cares which would disgust other minds is the medicine of mine." The work on which he had been chiefly engaged at Oxford, and in deed since the publication of his treatise on the circulation in 1628, was an investigation into the second but deeply interesting subject of generation. Charles I. had been an enlightened patron of Harvey's studies, had put the royal deer parks at Windsor and Hampton Court at his disposal, and had watched his demonstration of the growth of the chick with no less interest than the movements of the living heart. Harvey had now collected a large number of observations, though he would probably have delayed their publication. But Ent succeeded in obtaining the manuscripts, with authority to print them or not as he should find them. "I went from him," he says, "like another Jason in possession of the golden fleece, and when I came home and perused the pieces singly, I was amazed that so vast a treasure should have been so long hidden." The result was the publication of the *Exercitationes de Generatione* (1651).

This was the last of Harvey's labours. He had now reached his seventy-third year. His theory of the circulation had been opposed and defended, and was now generally accepted by the most eminent anatomists both at home and abroad. He was known and honoured throughout Europe, and his own college erected a statue in his honour (1652), "viro monumentis suis immortal." In 1654 he was elected to the highest post in his profession, that of president of the college, but the following day he is not the assembled fellows, and, declining the honour for himself on account of the infirmities of age, recommended the re-election of the late president Dr. Prætor. He accepted,

<sup>1</sup> "Innocent mihi vires animæ, si summum iniquitatem memos, levem gentium effundit. Dolores mihi hæc causa est eum, inter nuptias novitæ humanis et bella plagarum civilis, sanguinem regem (idque non solum æquius persuasione sed et iure) sequi, iuxta quædam manus non modo ædum meum suppellectilem omnem explevit, sed etiam, quæ mihi causa gravem quædamque, adversamque, multum amorem laboribus præstet, a meo meo summum est. Quo factum est ut observationes plurimas, præsertim de generatione, sectam, cum sepebus litemus (anatomicis) chylometricis, perierim."

—De Gen. et Prætor. To this loss Cowley refers—

"O cursed was the man who forgave thee this!"

Rowe and Dryden may be again,

And ten times easier 'tis

To rebel Paul's than any work of his."

<sup>2</sup> A venerable MS notebook in Harvey's own cobbled handwriting was discovered only lately in the British Museum, with the title "Prælectiones anatomice." &c., thus so far as it has been deciphered, contains the germs of his great discovery.

however, the office of consiliarius, which he again held in the two following years. He had already enriched the college with other gifts besides the honour of his name. He had raised for them "a noble building of Roman architecture (juste work with Corinthian pilasters), comprising a great parlour or conversation room below and a library above", he had furnished the library with books, and filled the museum with "samples and rarities," as well as with specimens of instruments used in the surgical and obstetric branches of medicine. At last he determined to give to his beloved college his paternal estate at Burmarsh in Kent. His wife had died some years before, his brothers were wealthy men, and he was childless, so that he was defrauding no heir when, in July 1656, he made the transfer of this property, then valued at £56 per annum, with provision for a salary to the college librarian and for the endowment of an annual oration, which is still given on the anniversary of the day. The orator, so Harvey orders in his deed of gift, is to exhort the fellows of the college "to search out and study the secrets of nature by way of experiment, and also for the honour of the profession to continue mutual love and affection among themselves."

Harvey, like his contemporary and great successor Sydenham, was long afflicted with gout, but he preserved his activity of mind to an advanced age. In his eightieth year, on the 3d of June 1657, he was attacked by paralysis, and though deprived of speech was able to send for his nephews and distribute his watch, ring, and other personal trinkets among them. He died the same evening, "the paley giving him an easy passage," and was buried with great honour in his brother Eliab's vault at Hempstead in Essex, "anno domini anno salutis."

Ambrey, to whom we owe most of the minor particulars about Harvey which have been preserved, says: "In person he was, not tall, but of the lower stature, round faced, olivaceous complexion, little eyes, round, very black, full of spurs, his hair black as a raven, but quite white twenty years before he died." The best portrait of him extant is by Cornelius Jansen in the library of the College of Physicians, one of those rescued from the great fire, which destroyed their original hall in 1666. It has been often engraved, and is prefixed to the fine edition of his works published in 1766.

*Harvey's Work on the Circulation.*—In estimating the character and value of this discovery announced in the *Exercitatio de Motu Cordis et Sanguinis*, it is necessary to bear in mind the previous state of knowledge on the subject. Aristotle taught that in man and the higher animals the blood was elaborated from the food in the liver, thence carried to the heart, and sent by it through the veins over the body. His successors of the Alexandrian school of medicine, Erasistratus and Herophilus, further elaborated his system, and taught that, while the veins carried blood from the heart to the members, the arteries carried a subtle kind of air or spirit. For the practical physician only two changes had been made in this theory of the circulation between the Christian era and the 16th century. Galen had discovered that the arteries were not, as their name implies, merely air-pipes, but that they contained blood as well as vital air or spirit. And it had been gradually ascertained that the nerves (*νεῦρα*) which arose from the brain and conveyed "animal spirits" to the body were different from the tendons or sinews (*σύννευρα*) which attach muscles to bones. First, then, the physicians of the time of Linnaeus knew that the blood is not stagnant in the body. So did Shakespeare and Homer, and every age

who inspected the entrails of a victim, and every village barber who bled a vein. Plato even uses the expression *τὸ αἷμα ἀπὸ τὰ πᾶντα τὸ μέγιστον σφοδρῶς περιεφέρεται*. But no one had a conception of a continuous stream returning to its source (a circulation in the true sense of the word) either in the system or in the lungs. If they used the word *circulatio*, as did Cæsalpinus, it was as vaguely as the French policeman cries "Circulez." The movements of the blood were in fact thought to be slow and irregular in direction as well as in speed, like the "circulation" of air in a house, or the circulation of a crowd in the streets of a city. Secondly, they supposed that one kind of blood flowed from the liver to the right ventricle of the heart, and thence to the lungs and the general system by the veins, and that another kind flowed from the left ventricle to the lungs and general system by the arteries. Thirdly, they supposed that the septum of the heart was pervious and allowed blood to pass directly from the right to the left side. Fourthly, they had no conception of the functions of the heart as the motor power of the movement of the blood. They doubted whether its substance was muscular, they supposed its pulsation to be due to expansion of the spirits it contained, they believed the only dynamic effect which it had on the blood to be sucking it in during its active diastole, and they supposed the chief use of its constant movements to be the due mixture of blood and spirits.

Of the great anatomists of the 16th century, Sylvius (*De Hipp et Gal Phys. Postem Anatom. Itaque*) described the valves of the veins, Vesalius (*De Humani Corporis Fabrica*, 1542) ascertained that the septum between the right and left ventricles is complete, though he could not bring himself to deny the invisible pores which Galen's system demanded. Servetus, in his *Christianisme Restitué* (1553), goes somewhat further than his fellow-student Vesalius, and says: "Pueris ille medius non est apertus ad communicationem et elaborationem illam, licet aliquid ressedare possit," and, from this anatomical fact and the large size of the pulmonary arteries he concludes that there is a communication in the lungs by which blood passes from the pulmonary artery to the pulmonary vein—"Eodem artificio quo in hepate fit transfusio a vena portæ ad venam cavaem propter sanguinem, fit etiam in pulmone transfusio a vena arteriosa ad arteriam venosam propter spiritum." The nature of spirit of the left side and the vital spirit of the right side of the heart were therefore, he concluded, practically the same, and hence two instead of three distinct spirits should be admitted. It seems doubtful whether even Servetus rightly conceived of the entire mass of the blood passing through the pulmonary artery and the lungs. The transference of the *spiritus naturalis* to the lungs, and its return to the left ventricle as *spiritus vitalis*, was the function which he regarded as important. Indeed a true conception of the lesser circulation as a transference of the whole blood of the right side to the left was impossible until the corresponding transference in the greater or systemic circulation was discovered. Servetus, however, was the true predecessor of Harvey in physiology, and his claims to that honour are perfectly authentic and universally admitted.<sup>1</sup>

The way then to Harvey's great work had been paved by the discovery of the valves in the veins, and by that of the lesser circulation,—the former due to Sylvius and Fabricius, the latter to Servetus,—but the significance of the

<sup>1</sup> Indeed the same word, *εἰσπνοὴ ἀέρων*, occurs in the Hippocratic writings, and was taken by *Περὶ τῆς διαστολῆς καὶ συστολῆς τῆς καρδίας* of medicine humilis, and not to Columbus or Cæsalpinus, belonged the islands of Harvey.

<sup>2</sup> Realisius Columbus (*De Re Anatomica*, 1556) formally denies the muscularity of the heart, yet conceives of the blood as passing from the right to the left ventricle, not through the septum,

<sup>3</sup> This is the date usually given according to the college annals. Granger's *Biographical History of England* makes it June 30, Harvey's contemporary, viz. June 15, while Dr. Lawrence, following the inscription on the tomb, gives June 3, 1658.

alves was unsuspected, and the fact of even the pulmonary circulation was not generally admitted in its full meaning.

In his treatise Harvey proves (1) that it is the contraction, not the dilatation, of the heart which coincides with the pulse, and that the ventricles as true muscular vesicles squeeze the blood which they contain into the aorta and pulmonary artery, (2) that the pulse is not produced by the uterine, enlarging and so filling, but by the arteries being filled with blood and so enlarging, (3) that there are no pores in the septum of the heart, so that the whole blood in the right ventricle is sent to the lungs and round by the pulmonary veins to the left ventricle, and also that the whole blood in the left ventricle is again sent into the arteries, round by the smaller veins into the vena cava, and by them to the right ventricle again—thus making a complete "circulation", (4) that the blood in the arteries and that in the veins is the same blood, (5) that the action of the right and left sides of the heart, auricles, ventricles, and valves, is the same, the mechanism in both being for reception and propulsion of liquid and not of air, since the blood on the right side, though mixed with air, is still blood, (6) that the blood sent through the arteries to the tissues is not all used, but that most of it runs through into the veins, (7) that there is no to and fro circulation in the veins, but a constant stream from the distant parts towards the heart, (8) that the dynamical starting point of the blood is the heart and not the liver.

The method by which Harvey arrived at his complete and almost faultless solution of the most fundamental and difficult problem in physiology has been often discussed, and is well worthy of attention. He begins his treatise by pointing out the many inconsistencies and defects in the Galenic theory, quoting the writings of Galen himself, of Fabricius, Columbus, and others, with great respect, but with unflinching criticism. For, in his own native language, we may most learn anatomy, not from the doctrines of philosophers, but from the fabric of nature herself, "nam, in his verbis judice antiquitatis magistra, ut veritatem amorem in apertis relinquant, et in conspectu omnium deservant." He had, as we know, not only furnished himself with all the knowledge that books and the instructions of the best

but through the lungs, "pulmo non habens et immixtum ut scriptum habuit." The fact that Harvey quotes Columbus and not Servetus is explained by the almost entire destruction of the writings of the latter, which are now among the rarest curiosities. The great anatomist Fabricius, however, who, as we have seen, described the valves of the veins more perfectly than had before, in his treatise on the *Auricles and Processes of the Liver* (1599), taught that the left ventricle sends blood and vital spirits to all parts of the body except the lungs—the ordinary Galenic doctrine. Yet on the strength of this phrase Professor Dierdorf has actually put up a tablet in the veterinary school at Bologna to honor the discoverer of the circulation of the blood! The claims of Cœlius, a more plausible claimant to Harvey's laurels, are scarcely better founded. In his *Questiones Periphrasice* (1571) he followed Servetus and Columbus in declaring that we now know as the pulmonary or "circulation" under that name, and this is the only foundation for the assertion (first made in Boyle's lectures) that Cœlius knew "the circulation of the blood." It is even behind Servetus, for he only allows part of the blood of the right ventricle to go round by the "current", some, he conceives, passes through the hypochondriac pores in the septum, and the rest passes by the superior vena to the head and runs, by the inferior, to the feet of the body—"Hanc esse, utrumque utrumque ut omnes partes corporis sanguinem per arterias distribuatur." Ex dextero ventriculo cordis vena est sanguinis arterialis, in quo color sanguinis habetur, et vena vena, sanguinem temperatissimum ac sanissimum habentem, gradatim sentit. Cœlius seems to have had no original views on the subject, all that he writes is copied from Galen or from Servetus except some enormous observations of his own. His greatest merit was as a tabulator, and no claim to the "discovery" of the circulation was made by him or by his contemporaries. When it was made, Haller decided conclusively against it. The fact that an inscription was lately placed on the bust of Cœlius at Rome, which states that he "discovered in recognizing and demonstrating" "the general circulation of the blood," is only a proof of the blindness of "inspired" rational vanity.

anatomists of Italy could give, but, by a long series of dissections, had gained a far more complete knowledge of the comparative anatomy of the heart and vessels than any contemporary—we may almost say than any successor, until the times of Hunter and Meckel. Thus equipped, he tells us that he began his investigations into the movements of the heart and blood by looking at them—*scilicet*, by seeing their action in living animals. After a modest preface, he begins his first chapter "Ex vivorum dissectione, qualis sit cordis motus." He minutely describes what he saw and handled in dogs, pigs, serpents, frogs, and fishes, and even in slugs, oysters, lobsters, and insects, in the transparent *muscula apula*, "que Anglice vitruca" (*Mytilus*), and lastly in the chick, while still in the shell. In these investigations he used a *perispermium* or simple lens. He particularly describes his observations and experiments on the ventricles, the auricles, the arteries, and the veins. He shows how the arrangement of the vessels in the fetus supports his theory. He adduces facts observed in disease as well as in health to prove the rapidity of the circulation. He explains how the mechanism of the valves in the veins is adapted, not, as Fabricius believed, to moderate the flow of blood from the heart, but to favour its flow to the heart. He estimates the capacity of each ventricle, and reckons the rate at which the whole mass of blood passes through it. He elaborately and clearly demonstrates the effect of obstruction of the blood stream in arteries or in veins, by the forceps in the case of a snake, by a ligature on the arm of a man, and illustrates his argument by figures. He then sums up his conclusion thus:—"Circulus quodam motu, in circuitu, agitari in animabibus sanguinem, et esse in perpetuo motu, et hanc esse actionem sive functionem cordis quam pulsu peragat, et omnino motu et pulsus cordis causam unam esse." Lastly, in the 15th, 16th, and 17th chapters, he adds certain confirmatory evidence, as the effect of position on the circulation, the absorption of animal poisons, and of medicines applied externally, the muscular structure of the heart and the necessary working of its valves. The whole treatise, which occupies only 67 pages of large print in the quarto edition of 1766, is a model of accurate observation, patient accumulation of facts, ingenious experiment, bold yet cautious hypothesis, and logical deduction.

In one point only was the demonstration of the circulation incomplete. Harvey could not discover the capillary channels by which the blood passes from the arteries to the veins. This gap in the circulation was supplied several years later by the great anatomist Malpighi, who in 1661 saw in the lungs of a frog, by the newly invented microscope, how the blood passes from the one set of vessels to the other. Harvey saw all that could be seen by the unaided eye in his observations on living animals, Malpighi, four years after Harvey's death, by another observation on a living animal, completed the splendid chain of evidence. If this detracts from Harvey's merit it leaves Servetus no merit at all. But in fact the existence of the channels first seen by Malpighi was as clearly pointed to by Harvey's reasoning as the existence of Neptune by the calculations of Le Verrier and of Adams.

Harvey himself and all his contemporaries were well aware of the novelty and importance of his theory. He says in the adieu letter to Dr. Astruc, president of the College of Physicians, which follows the dedication of his treatise to Charles I., that he should not have ventured to publish "a book which alone asserts that the blood purveys its course and flows back again by a new path, contrary to the received doctrine taught so many ages by unimmaculate learned and illustrious men, if it had not set forth his theory for more than nine years in his college lectures, gradually brought it to perfection, and convinced his colleagues by actual demonstrations of the truth of what he advanced. He anticipates opposition, and even obloquy, on the novelty of his views. These anticipations, however, the event proved to



mia in which the several putrescens in the chick. He states that the *pinetum salivum* or fetal heart is the first organ to be seen, and explains that the nutrition of the chick is not only effected by yolk conveyed directly into the yolk-sac, as Aristotle thought, but also by absorption from yolk and vitellus by the umbilical (omphalomesenteric) vein, on the fourth day of incubation appear two in size (which he oddly names *se melleis*), one of which develops into three vessels, to form the cranium, cerebellum, and eyes, the other into the liver, stomach and lungs, on the sixth or seventh day come the viscera, and lastly, the kidneys and other external parts. Harvey points out how early this order of development in the chick agrees with what he had observed in mammalian animals, and in human embryos. He notes that the notes of the fetal heart in a man and the equal thickness of the ventricles, the soft cartilages which represent the future bones, the huge amount of liquor amni and liquor of placenta in which the fetus is the fetus in the third month, in the fourth the position of the testes in the abdomen, and the uterus with its Fallopian tubes resembling the uterus of the sheep, the huge thyroid, the enormous small intestine in the adult, not forming a second stomach as in the pig, the ovary and the large, the lobulated kidney, like those of the seal (*Urtula*, *se melleis*) and porpoise, and the large suprarenal vesicle, not much smaller than those of the kidney (H. 111). The fetus, however, to trace the connection of the nucleus with the bladder. In the following chapters (H. 112-114) he describes the process of generation in the fowl due to the male. After again insisting that all animals arise from ovum, that is "conception" is an internal egg and an egg in extended conception, he goes on to describe the various of the uterus, the process of impregnation, and the subsequent development of the fetus and its members, the *pinetum salivum*, the cotyledons of the placenta, and the "uterine milk," to which Professor Tanner has truly in these illustrations. The concluding chapters deal detachingly on the placenta, putrefaction, and allied subjects.

*Harvey's other Writings and Medical Practice*.—The remaining writings of Harvey which are extant are numerous. A complete list of them will be found below, together with the titles of those which we know to be lost. Of these the most important was probably that on respiration, and the records of post-mortem examinations. From the following passage (*De Partu*, p. 550) it seems that he had a notion of respiration being connected rather with the production of animal heat than, as then generally supposed, with the cooling of the blood. "Hæc qui diligenter perpendit, naturamque æque diligenter investigavit, facile opinor fatibatur eundem nec refrigerationis gratia nec in pabulum animalibus conosci. Hæc autem obiter duntaxat de respiratione diximus, proprio loco de eadem forsan copiosius disceptabitur."

Of Harvey as a practicing physician we know very little. Aubrey tells us that "he paid his visits on horse back with a footstool, his man following on foot, as the fashion then was." He adds—"Through all of his profession would allow him to be an excellent anatomist, I never heard any that admired his therapeutic way. I knew several practitioners that would not have given their place for one of his bills." The apothecaries used to collect physicians' prescriptions and sell or publish them to their own profit, "and that a man could hardly tell by his bill what he did him at." However this may have been,—and rational therapeutics was impossible when the foundation stone of physiology had only just been laid,—we know that Harvey was an active practitioner, performing such important surgical operations as the removal of a breast, and he turned his obstetric experience to account in his book on generation. Some good practical precepts as to the conduct of labour are quoted by Willoughby, a contemporary. He also took notes of the anatomy of disease, these are unfortunately perished with his other manuscripts. Otherwise we might regard him as a forerunner of Morgagni, for Harvey saw that pathology is but a branch of physiology, and like it must depend first on accurate anatomy. He speaks strongly to this purpose in his first epistle to Rivianus: "Sicut enim sanorum et boni habitus corporum dissectio plurimum ad philosophum et rectam physiologiam facit, ita corporum morborum et cachecticorum inspectio potissimum ad patho-

logiam philosophicam." The only specimen we have of his observations in morbid anatomy is his account of the post-mortem examination made by order of the king on the body of the famous Thomas Parr, who died in 1655, at the reputed age of 152. Harvey insists on the value of physiological truths for their own sake, independently of their immediate utility, but he himself gives us an interesting example of the practical application of his theory of the circulation in the cure of a large tumour by tying the arteries which supplied it with blood (*De Generat. Epist. xix*).

The following is believed to be a complete list of all the known writings of Harvey, published and unpublished—

*Exercitationes Anatomicae de Motu Cordis et Sanguinis*, 4to, Frankfurt on the Main, 1628. *Exercitationes de Anatomia et Circulatione Sanguinis*, ed. Johannem Rivianum, Altonæ, P. 1651, Cambridge, 1648. *Exercitationes de Generatione Animalium, quibus continetur quidam de Partu, de Membris et Humoribus Uteri, et de Conceptione*, 4to, Lond., 1651, *Anatomia Thomas Parr*, first published in the treatise of Dr. John Butts, *De Vita et Notis Sanguinis*, 8vo, Lond., 1659. *Lectures*—(1) to Cyprian Hoffmann of Nuremberg, May 1636, (2) to Sigheg of Hamburg, April 1651, (3) three to Giovanni North of Florence, July 1651, Dec. 1654, and Nov. 1655, (4) two to Dr. Morison of Paris, March 1659, (5) three to Dr. H. de Damstadt, Feb. 1654-5 and July 1655, (6) to Dr. Vlackard of Frankfurt, May 1657. His letters to Hoffmann and Sigheg are on the circulation, those to Morison, Host, and Vlackard refer to the discovery of the pulsations of the arteries, and the nature of friendship. All these letters were published by Sir George Ent in his collected works (Leyden, 1687). Of two MS. letters, one on official business to the society Doctores was printed by Dr. Areling, with the facsimile of the cabled hands of Harvey, *De Partu*, 1785, and the other, about a patient, appears in Dr. Willis's *Life of Harvey*, 1788. *Praelectiones anatomicae universales per Guilielmum mediceum Londinensem, et alios professorum*, 4to, Lond., 1616, vol. 87.—MS. notes of the lectures of Dr. Harvey, as in the British Museum library, they are almost illegible, but were partly deciphered and a photograph of one of the pages taken by Dr. Siebeling, for an account of them see his *Harvey Lectures* in 1874. A second MS. has been discovered in the University of Leiden, entitled *Guilielmus Harveus de Musculis, Mollis Locati*, &c., and an account of it was published by Dr. George Paget (*Notes of an unpublished MS. of Harvey*, Lond., 1860). The following treatises, or notes found in them, were lost either in the pillaging of Harvey's house, or perhaps in the fire of London, which destroyed the old College of Physicians:—*A Treatise on Respiration*, no MSS., and probably at last in part completed (pp. 82, 666, ed. 1760). *Observationes de usu Lactis*, *Observationes de motu Lactis*, perhaps identical with the above mentioned manuscript, *Trajectum physiologicum*, *Anatomia nudata* (apparently notes of morbid anatomy), *De Generatione Insectorum*. The fine 4to edition of Harvey's *Works*, published by the Royal College of Physicians in 1789, was superintended by Dr. Mark Akenside, it contains the two treatises, the account of the post-mortem examination of old Parr, and the letters enumerated above. A translation of this volume by Dr. Willis, with Harvey's will, was published by the Sydenham Society, 8vo, Lond., 1849.

The following are the principal biographies of Harvey—an Aubrey, *Seventeen of the Portraits of Famous Persons*, 1688, 1813; first published in 1688, the only contemporary account, in Bayle's *Dictionary Historique et Critique*, 1698 and 1702 (Eng. ed., 1788), in the *Biographia Britannica*, and in Attkin's *Biographical Memoirs*, the Latin Life by Dr. Lawrence, prefixed to the college edition of Harvey's *Works* in 1789, mentioned in *Notes of Harvey's Physicians*, Lond., 1830, a Life by Dr. Robert Willis, founded on that by Lawrence, and prefixed to his English edition of Harvey in 1847, the much enlarged Life by the same author, published in 1878, the biography by Dr. Mead, in the *Roll of the College of Physicians*, 2d ed., vol. 1, 1879.

The literature which has arisen on the great discovery of Harvey, on his methods and his merits, would fill a library. The most important contemporary writings have been mentioned above. The following list gives some of the most remarkable in modern times—the article in Bayle's dictionary quoted above, *Anatomicae Lecturae*, ed. Hunter, M.D. 1784, Spengel's, *Geschichte der Anatomie*, Halle, 1800, vol. 14, *Physiologie*, ed. J. J. Rousseau, 1854, *Lectures, Physiology of Common Life*, 1859, vol. 1, pp. 231-245, *Caendin, La Scoperta della Circolazione del Sangue*, Milan, 1876, *Die Entdeckung der Bluthreislauf durch Harvey*, Berlin, 1876, *Die Entdeckung der Bluthreislauf durch Harvey*, Berlin, 1878, Willis, in his *Life of Harvey*, *Wharton Jones*, *Lectures on the Circulation of the Blood*, *Lancet* for Oct. 25 and Nov. 1, 1879, and the *Harveian Orations*, especially those by Dr. Siebeling, Dr. Guy, and Prof. Robertson. (F. H. S.)

**HARWICH**, a municipal and parliamentary borough and seaport town of Essex, England, is situated on the extremity of a small peninsula projecting into the estuary of the Stour and Orwell, 70 miles N E of London by the Great Eastern Railway. It occupies an elevated situation, and a good view is obtained from Beacon Hill at the southern end of the esplanade. The town is somewhat irregularly built, but the streets though narrow are well paved. It is defended by a redoubt mounted with heavy guns and by three martello towers. The only public building of importance is the church of St Nicholas, an edifice of white brick in the perpendicular style, with stone buttresses and staircase, erected in 1621 at a cost of £20,000. The harbour is one of the best on the east coast of England, and in stormy weather is largely taken advantage of for shelter. Its entrance is, however, encumbered with rocks, and is dangerous without a pilot. The rapid accumulation of shingle threatened some years ago to block up the principal entrance, but this has been prevented by the construction of two breakwaters, having a length respectively of 1350 and 1000 feet. The shipping trade of the port was much injured by the removal, after the introduction of steamships, of the Hamburg and other packets from the station, but since the construction of the Great Eastern Railway steam packets have plied regularly between Harwich and Antwerp and Rotterdam. In 1876 1198 British ships entered the port with a tonnage of 298,247, and 38 foreign ships with a tonnage of 10,921. The number of British ships that cleared was 1233, with a tonnage of 296,095, and of foreign ships 28, with a tonnage of 8644. The principal imports are grain, timber, and tobacco, and the principal exports cement and fish. Shipbuilding has declined since the discontinuance of the Government dockyards. The prosperity of the town depends now largely on its shrimps and lobster fisheries, but there are also Roman cement works, breweries, and manufactures for artificial manure and for sails and tackle. It is much frequented for sea-bathing, and its suburb of Dovercourt possesses a chalybeate spring, the spa-house of which contains a library and museum. Harwich in all probability occupies the site of a Roman station. In 855 a great naval battle took place opposite the town between the Danes and the fleet of King Alfred, and in 1666 another took place between the Dutch and the English. Harwich was created a parliamentary borough by King Edward II in 1318 with the privilege of returning two members, but since the Reform Act of 1867 it has returned only one. The population of the municipal and parliamentary borough in 1871 was 6079.

**HARZ MOUNTAINS**, *Tha* (also spelt *HAARZ*, the German *Harzgebirge*, and the ancient *Silva Hercynia*), the most northern mountain system of Germany, situated between the rivers Vasei and Elbe, occupy an area of about 786 square miles, of which 457 belong to Prussia, 286 to Brunswick, and 43 to Anhalt. Their greatest length extends in a S E and N W direction for about 56 miles, and their maximum breadth is about 20 miles. The group is made up of an irregular series of terraced plateaus, rising here and there into rounded summits, and intersected in various directions by narrow, deep valleys. The N W and higher part of the mass is called the Ober or Upper Harz, the S E and more extensive part, the Unter or Lower Harz, while the N W and S W slopes of the Upper Harz form the *Vorharz*. The Brocken group, which divides the Upper and Lower Harz, is generally regarded as a part of the former. The prevalent upper geological formation of the whole district is graywacke and clay-slate, through which the granite lies and these protrudes, as in the case of the Brocken. The highest summits of the Upper Harz are the Brocken (3745 feet), the Hemmrichshöhe (3402 feet), the Greater and Less Kohnsberg (3376 feet and

3369 feet), and the Weimberg (3182 feet), the Lower Harz, the Auenberg (1870 feet), and the Vectorshöhe (1762 feet). The towns in the district, though not large, are tolerably numerous. The principal are—in the Upper Harz, Goslar, Knausthal, Zellfeld, Andenberg, Altenau, Lautenthal, Wildemann, Gland, Harzburg, Idenburg, and Weingarten, and in the Lower Harz, Hargenode, Ellingenode, Rubeland, Quedlinburg, Ballenstedt, Gemede, Sudeoda, Blankenburg, Thale, and Stolberg.

The chief industry is mining, which has been carried on since the middle of the 10th century. The Harz is second only to the Erzgebirge among the mountains of Germany in mineral wealth. The most important mineral is a peculiarly rich argentiferous lead, but gold in small quantities, copper, iron, sulphur, alum, and arsenic are also found. Marble, granite, and gypsum are worked, and large quantities of vitriol are manufactured. The vast forests that cover the mountain slopes supply the materials for a very considerable trade in timber. Much wood is exported for building and other purposes, while in the Harz itself no other fuel is used, whether for smelting the ores, which is done at the mines, or for domestic use. Employment is thus given to a large number of charcoal burners. The saw-dest of the numerous wood-factories is collected for use in the manufacture of paper. Tuff-cutting, coarse lace-making, and the breeding of canaries and native song birds also occupy many of the people. Agriculture is carried on chiefly on the plateaus of the Lower Harz, but there is excellent pasturage both in the north and in the south. In the Lower Harz, as in Switzerland, the cows, which carry bells harmoniously tuned, are driven up into the heights in early summer, returning to the sheltered regions in late autumn.

The Harz being the first obstacle to oppose the moist, cold winds from the North Sea, the northern summits are destitute of trees, but the lower slopes of the Upper Harz are heavily wooded with pines and firs. Between the forests of these stretch numerous peat-mosses, which contain in their spongy recesses the sources of many small streams. On the Brocken are found one or two alpine and several alpine plants. In the Lower Harz the forests contain a great variety of timber. The oak, elm, and birch are common, while the beech especially attains an unusual size and beauty. The walnut tree grows in the eastern districts.

The last bear was killed in the Harz in 1705, and the last lynx in 1817, and since that time the wolf too has become extinct, but deer, foxes, wild cats, and badgers are still to be found in the forests.

The streams are very numerous, but are all small. While they are rendered extensively useful, by various skillful artifices, in working the mines underground, at other parts of their course they present the most picturesque scenery in all the picturesque Harz. Perhaps the finest valley is the rocky Bortelthal, with the Ross Tappe, the Hexentanzplatz, the Baumannshöhle, and the Belschöhle.

The inhabitants, about 70,000 in number, are descended from various stocks. The Upper and Lower Saxon, the Thuringian, and the Frankish races have all contributed to form the present people, and their respective influences are still to be traced in the varieties of dialect. The boundary line between High and Low German passes through the Harz.

The Harz is now one of the most frequented tourist resorts of Germany. It is traversed by excellent roads in all directions, and is completely girt by railways from the principal towns of the empire. The chief point of interest is undoubtedly the Brocken or Blockberg, famous as the scene of the "Walpurgisnacht" in Goethe's  *Faust*, as well as for the atmospheric phenomena of which the "speckle of the Brocken" (see HALO) is the best known. The Harz was the last stronghold of paganism in Germany, and to that fact are due the weird legends, in which no district is



reben, and the wild and fanciful names that are given by the people to the peculiar objects and appearances of nature.

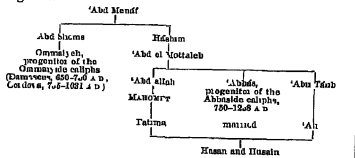
*Literatur* — A very full list of works on the Harz, especially on the Blacken, will be found appended to the pamphlet *Der Geschichte des Bruckenerlandes*, 4th ed., Ascherleben and Leipzig, 1876. See also Holmann, *Historisches Archiv*, Hild., 1868; Tennerman, *Die Abtheilung des Harzes*, Hildesheim, 1827; Zimmertmann, *Harz geogr.*, Dinslaken, 1834; Hoffmann, *Harz und Umgebung des Harzes*, Quedlinburg, 1836; Haussmann, *Über die Bildung des Harzes*, Göttingen, 1812; *Bruckensandbuch*, 1850; Brucklen, *Der Harz, die Zuckung und die Kulturen im Harz-lande*, Brunswick, 1861; Luchmann, *Archiv und des Harzes geogr.*, Brunswick, 1851; Späcker, *Der Harz, seine Natur und Natur*, Berlin, 1852 and 1856; Es, *Harzberg*, Göttingen, 1855; Thiele, *Harzberg*, 1856; *Harz Atlas*, 1856; Harz und Kuffhaus in Geschichte, Schicksalen, &c., 1870, and *Der Harz*, 1878; *Wegweiser im Harz und dem Umgegend*, Berlin, 1857; Nimmberg, *Der Harz und der Harz*, Hildesheim, 1877; *Der Harz, ein Sammelbuch in der Harz-Region*, Emden, 1865; Grödelich, *Abtheilung des Harzes*, Hildesheim, 1871; Himppe, *Flora Harzberg*, Hildesheim, 1873; Blackett, *The Harz Mountains*, in *Tour*, London, 1874; Buch, *Geographische Skizzen*, "Über den Harz," 1877; *Der Harz* and *J. W. Tietze*, in *Geographische Anzeigen*, vol. xxx, Hildesheim, 1877. Amongst the Hildesheimers may be noted those of Schuler, Weiner, Gottschalk, Meijer, Muller, Prediger, and Gruben.

**HARZBURG**, or **NEUBERG HARZBURG**, the chief town of an office in the Brunswick circle of Wolfenbützel, Prussia, is situated 727 feet above sea-level on the right bank of the Radan, a tributary of the Ocker, and at the terminus of the Brunswick-Harzburg Railway, 5 miles ESE from Goslar and 18 miles S from Wolfenbützel. The opening of the railway has made the Harzburg route a principal one for persons visiting the Harz, and the town is also much frequented as a summer residence. It possesses a salt-water bath and also a hydropathic establishment. A mile and a half south from the town lies the Burgberg, 1500 feet above sea-level, on whose summit, according to tradition, there was at one time an altar to the heathen idol Krodo, still to be seen in the Ulrich chapel at Goslar. There are now on the summit of the hill a hotel, the remains of an old castle, and a monument erected in 1875 to the honour of Prince Dismarck, with an inscription taken from one of his speeches against the Ultramontane claims of Rome:—"Nach Canova gehen wir nicht." The population of Harzburg in 1875, including the villages of Bundheim, Schalenrode, and Schlewecke, was 4271.

The castle was built by the emperor Henry IV between 1065 and 1069, but was laid in ruins by the Saxons about 1080. By Frederick I. it was granted to Henry the Lion, who caused it to be rebuilt with great splendour about 1180. It was a frequent residence of Otto IV., who died at it, and by his will granted it to the counts of Hildesheim. After being frequently besieged and taken, it finally, after the battle of Mühldorf in 1246, passed to the house of Brunswick. It ceased to be of importance as a fortress after the Thirty Years' War, and gradually fell into ruins.

See *Histor. Untersuchungen über die Geschichte des Harzes*, Hildesheim, 1876; *Thomann's Harzberg und Umgegend*, Göttingen, 1862; *Hildesheim, der Harz und nach Harz und Geschichte*, Brunswick, 1878.

**HASAN and HUSEIN**, the sons of 'Alī ibn Abī Tālib, cousin and son-in-law of Mahomet, and heroes of the passion play performed annually throughout India and Persia by Shīah Mahometans in the month of Moharram. Their relationship to the prophet is important to the understanding of their history, and may be seen from the following table —



The office of guardian of the Kaabeh or temple of Meccah, and chief of the tribe of Korash, which was vested in 'Alī ibn Abī Tālib, would have descended to 'Abd Sūmeh, his eldest son, had it not been given to Hāshim, the second, in reward for some military successes, and this circumstance caused a bitter enmity between the two families. When Mahomet died, 'Alī claimed the right to the office of caliph (*khalīfah*, "vicegerent" or "successor"), but found formidable rivals in Abu Bakr, the father of 'Ayesha, the prophet's favourite wife, Omar, another of his fathers in law, and Othmān, the only member of the rival house of Ommayyeh who had joined the Muslim ranks. 'Ayesha, whom 'Alī had mortally offended by leaving her a charge of incontinence which had been made against her, made common cause with the Ommayyides, and strenuously opposed 'Alī's accession. A compromise was effected by the election of Abu Bakr, on his death 'Omar was made caliph, and when he in turn died, 'Othmān was elected, as 'Alī refused to subscribe to the conditions imposed upon him that he should govern in accordance with the "traditions" as well as the Korān. These "traditions" are the whole body of ceremonial laws and customs by which the imperfect code of the Korān was supplemented, they are derived from ancient Arab and even Jewish usage, although to give them a proper sanction and force they have been attributed to Mahomet himself, who is supposed to have enunciated them in the form of hadith, or separate *ahādith* (singular, *hadith*), and the tracing of them through the various authorities to the prophet himself is still a most important branch of Muslim theology.

The "traditions" are spoken of collectively as the *Sunnah*, whence the name Sunnī, given to that sect of Mahometans who follow them, and it was to this that 'Alī refused to subscribe. 'Othmān on his accession displayed an unblushing partisanship for his own, the Ommayyide, family, and appointed Mo'awiyeh, a bitter enemy of the Hāshimī family, governor of Syria. 'Othmān was assassinated in 655 A.D., and 'Alī was then unconditionally elected caliph. He immediately recalled Mo'awiyeh, who refused to obey, and, supported by the influence of the implacable 'Ayesha, claimed the caliphate for himself. A severe struggle between the two parties ensued, and 'Alī was at first successful, but was at length compelled by intrigue to submit his claims to arbitration, instead of following up his military advantage. A number of his followers, about 12,000, taking umbrage at this, deserted him, thus originating the sect of Khāreejeh or "Separatists," who reject the lawful government established by public consent. A conspiracy of three of these deserters resulted in the murder of 'Alī, who was slain at the door of a mosque in Kūfa, and buried at a spot about 5 miles from that town. A magnificent mausoleum was afterwards erected over his tomb, which became later on the site of the town Meshed 'Alī, 'Alī's shrine, one of the great places of resort for Shīah pilgrims. On 'Alī's death his eldest son Hasan was elected caliph, but resigned the office in favour of Mo'awiyeh on condition that he should resume it at the latter's death. Mo'awiyeh, however, who wished his own son Yazid to succeed him, caused Hasan to be foully murdered by his own wife eight years later. Yazid succeeded his father, on the latter's death, without opposition or election, and the Ommayyide dynasty became thus firmly established on the throne. The partisanship of 'Alī's family were, however, far from content, and Husein, 'Alī's surviving son, was secretly invited to Kūfa to place himself at the head of the party, and revolt against Yazid. Prompt measures were taken by the caliph, who had obtained timely warning of the movement. 'Obeidallah, a vigorous officer, was appointed governor of Kūfa, seized upon Husein's envoy, Muslim, and one Hānū in whose house he had been concealed, and when the populace assembled and clamoured for their release he caused them to be beheaded and their

heads to be cast down among the crowd. Husein was intercepted on the borders of Babylonia by Hantio, with a company of horse, who told him he had orders to bring him alone to Kufa, but allowed him to proceed by what route he chose without losing sight of him. A horseman met them on the road with secret orders from 'Obaidallah to lead Husein into an open and undefended place, and halt until 'Amer, the commander of the Syrian army, arrived with his forces. This happened the next day, and Husein and his small escort were surrounded by 4000 horse, and slaughtered, after a stubborn resistance, on the plain of Kerbelâ by the banks of the Euphrates, under peculiarly tragic circumstances, in little son 'Abdallah, and his nephew, a beautiful child, both being murdered in his arms. This took place on the 10th of Moharram 61 A. H. (680 A. D.), and is commemorated during that month by the Shiâh in India and Persia, a long mance play being performed, the scenes of which are carried on from day to day, and culminate in carrying out the *tabûts* or coffins of the martyrs to an open place, generally the cemetery, or in sea-side places to the sea-shore.

The cause of 'Ali and his family was warmly espoused by the Persians, who had been forced to embrace Islam, but who regarded the Sunnah or Semitic law with especial repugnance. The party were known as Shiâh, "Sectarians," and as the quarrel between them and the Sunnis thus perpetuates the old enmity between Jew and Gentile, between the Semitic and Aryan races, it has produced an irreparable breach in Islam.

The passion play of *Husein and Husein* has been published in English by Sir Lewis Pelly (London, 1879, 2 vols. 8vo) from the dictation of native teachers and performers of the drama. (E. H. P.)

**HASBEYA**, or **HASBERRYA**, a town of the Dîsese, about 36 miles west of Damascus, is situated at the foot of Mount Hermon in Syria, overlooking a deep amphitheatre, from which a brook flows to the Hasbani. Both sides of the valley are planted in terraces with olives, vines, and other fruit-trees. The grapes are either dried, or made into a kind of syrup. About four fifths of the inhabitants are Christians, and in 1848 an American Protestant mission was established in the town. This little community suffered much persecution at first from the Greek Church, and afterwards from the Dîsese, by whom in 1860 nearly 1000 Christians were massacred, while others escaped to Tyre or Sidon. The castle in Hasbeya was held by the crusaders under Count Oslan, but in 1171 the Dîsese emirs of the great Shehab family (see *Dîsese*) recaptured it. In 1206 this family was confirmed in the lordship of the town and district, which they held till the Turkish authorities took possession of the castle in the present century. Near Hasbeya an bitumen pipe let by Government, and to the north, at the source of the Hasbani, the ground is volcanic. Some travellers have identified Hasbeya with the Biblical Basl-Gad, or Basl-Hermon,—a supposition rendered the more likely by the ruins of several temples near the town. Population about 5000.

**HASDRUBAL**. Of the bearings of this very common Carthaginian name the most famous are the following—

1. One of the leaders of the popular party at the close of the First Punic War. He was conspicuous for his dexterous management in politics and his conciliatory manners. He married the daughter of Hamilcar Barca, and his skilful and cordial co-operation was of enormous consequence to Hamilcar during his Spanish wars. He went to Spain with his father-in-law, but soon returned to Carthage, where his talents were specially needed to conduct the party at home. He was, however, in Spain when Hamilcar fell (239), and was soon formally appointed by the home Government to the command which he had at once assumed. Devoting himself most successfully to the task

of consolidating the Carthaginian power in Spain, he founded New Carthage as the Spanish capital, and married the daughter of a Spanish chief. His kindly and generous manner attached the natives to him, and brought many over to the Carthaginian alliance. In 221 he fell by the hand of an assassin. The account given of him by Polybius is much more favourable and far more trustworthy than that of the Roman author Fabius whom he refers to.

2. The second son of the great Hamilcar. He was left by Hannibal as commander in Spain (219 B. C.), where he had to contend with the two Scipios, Cneius and Publius. Three years were spent in desultory warfare, in which the Romans were generally successful. After the battle of Cannæ, Hasdrubal was ordered to march into Italy, while Hannibal was sent from Carthage with a fresh army to supply his place. But a decisive battle on the Ebro, in which he was totally defeated, checked his northward march. It is hardly possible to exaggerate the importance of this battle. Had a fresh Carthaginian army joined Hannibal in Italy for the campaign of 215 or 214, the danger to Rome would have been infinitely increased. Several years now passed, marked by the Roman historians with fresh Roman victories, and it is certain that the struggle continued doubtful till 213, when both the Scipios were defeated and slain. In spite of this great success, Hasdrubal was not at the moment able to begin the march on Italy. The Romans were skilfully rallied by Lucius Metellus, and in 211 a fresh army under the plebeian Nero landed in Spain. At the same time there seems to have been no co-operation among the Carthaginian generals, and when the younger Scipio landed in Spain (210) he found their armies widely separated. Taking advantage of this, Scipio by a sudden attack (209) captured New Carthage, which contained vast military stores, all the Spanish hostages, and 10,000 captives. To achieve this brilliant success he had to leave the road northwards undefended, and although he rapidly returned and (according to the Roman accounts) defeated Hasdrubal at Bœcula in Andalusia, the Carthaginian general was able to make his way with a strong army to the Pyrenees, which he crossed in safety near the western extremity. The whole course of the Spanish wars, and especially the chronology of these later events, are very obscure. At all events Hasdrubal, after a very rapid and skilful march across the whole breadth of Gaul, appeared early in 207 in the north of Italy. When once he had succeeded in getting out of Spain, this brilliant march proved Hasdrubal worthy of his father and his brother, and long as it had taken to carry out his plan, we must remember that after the Romans perceived the necessity of keeping a large back force in Italy, the difficulties in his way were enormous. On hearing of the passage of the Pyrenees, the Romans raised extraordinary levies, but before they had taken any steps to meet him, Hasdrubal was already in Cisalpine Gaul. Hannibal was still in Apulia, perhaps not expecting his brother so soon. Hasdrubal sent to meet him two Numidian horsemen with four Gauls, who almost at the end of their perilous journey fell into the hands of the consul Nero. In the meantime Hasdrubal had advanced into Umbria, where the plebeian consul Livrus was encamped near Sena. Nero, with 7000 men, left his own camp, and by a rapid march, which must be ranked among the most important events of the war, joined his colleague. The united army was much too strong for Hasdrubal. He tried to avoid a battle, but his guides failed him, and he was forced to fight on the south bank of the Metaurus. A long and bloody conflict resulted in the complete defeat of the Carthaginians, and Hasdrubal, after all was lost, fell sword in hand in the midst of the enemy. His head, which was thrown by Nero's soldiers into Hannibal's camp, first revealed to the latter his brother's defeat and the ruin of the Carthaginian cause.

**HASLINGDEN**, a market town of Lancashire, England, is situated 7 miles S E of Blackburn, in a hilly district on the borders of the forest of Rossendale, and is supposed to possess the name from the *hazel trees* which at one time abounded in its neighbourhood. The town formerly stood on the slope of a hill, but the modern part, which is substantially built of stone, has been erected at its base. The parish church dedicated to St James was, with the exception of the tower, which dates from the time of Henry VIII., rebuilt in 1780, and the whole structure was re-erected in 1879. Handsome schools are attached, to which there is an endowment for ten poor boys, founded in 1719. The principal other buildings are the mechanics' institute, the town hall, where the sessions and county court are held, and the public hall for assemblies. The woollen manufacture, formerly the staple of the town, has now been superseded by that of cotton, and there are also silk manufactures, iron works, and saw works. In the vicinity there are collieries and quarries for stone, flags, and slate. The population of the town in 1861 was 6929, and 7698 in 1871, and that of the township was 10,109 and 12,000.

**HASPE**, a town of Prussia, province of Westphalia, government district of Ainsberg, and circle of Hagen, is situated in the valley of the Ennepe, near the Rhine, in a stream, upon the right bank, and on the railway from Düsseldorf to Dortmund, 23 miles north-east of Düsseldorf. It has iron foundries, rolling mills, puddling furnaces, and manufactures of iron, steel, and brass wares, and of machines. Haspe was raised to the rank of a town in 1874. The population in 1875 was 7930.

**HASSAN**, a district of Mysore, India, lying between 12° 30' and 13° 22' N lat and between 75° 32' and 76° 58' E long. It is bounded on the S W by the Malabar district of South Kanara, and on the S partly by the state of Coorg. The main portion of the district consists of the river basin of the Hemavati and its tributaries. It naturally divides into two portions, the Malabar hill country, which includes some of the highest ranges of the Western Ghats, and the Malabar plain country, sloping towards the south. The Hemavati, which flows into the Cauvery in the extreme south, is the great river of the district, its most important tributary is the Yagachi. The upper slopes of the Western Ghats are abundantly clothed with magnificent forests, and wild animals of all sorts abound. Among the mineral products are krolin, fol-pai, and quartz. The soil of the valleys is a rich red alluvial loam.

The area extends to 3201 square miles. The census of 1871 returned the inhabitants at 665,961—320,097 males and 345,864 females—the Hindu numbering 420,577, Mohammedans 24,480, Jains 1054, Christians 2670. Hassan town and Narsipur each contain more than 5000 inhabitants. The staple crops consist of *sorghum*, rice, tobacco, and cane, the coco-nut and rice are palm, pin, and other trees, and chilies. Coffee culture has been the success of 1863 years. The first plantation was opened in 1843, and now there are 175 coffee estates owned by Europeans and 8600 native holdings. The statistics of irrigation show a total of 9665 tanks in the district and 315 miles of canals. The exports are large, consisting chiefly of food grains and coffee. The imports are European goods, hardware of all sorts, and spices. The largest weekly fair is held at Alur. The great annual religious gathering and fair, attended by about 10,000 persons, takes place on every year at Malakote. The gross revenue amounted in 1874-75 to £128,908, and the police force (1874) numbered 470 men of all ranks, maintained at a cost of £2899. There were 248 schools in 1874 aided by Government, attended by 1379 pupils, and 147 unaided with 1657 pupils. The average mean temperature of the district is 76°, and the average rainfall at Hassan town during seven years was 86 inches. In the Ghats as much as 100 inches sometimes fall in the year. Malaria fever prevails in the Malabar during the early rains.

The real history of Hassan does not begin until the epoch of the Bahliya dynasty, which lasted from the 10th till the 14th century. Their capital was at Dwaradesa, near the ruins of which the hill to be seen scattered round the village of Haslingden in this district. The earlier kings professed the Jain faith, but the finest temples were

erected to Shiva by the later monarchs of the line. While they were at the zenith of their power the whole of southern India acknowledged their sway. After the Mahometan invasion in the 14th century, the district of Hassan ceased to exist as the seat of a metropolis, and became a remote province known as Bidar. Since 1812 the district, with the rest of Mysore, has been under direct British administration.

**HASSEAN** See ASSASSINS, vol II, p 723

**HASSE, JOHANN ADOLPH** (1699-1783), a musical composer, is a striking instance of the instability of fame. One of the most prolific and most celebrated composers of the 18th century, he is now all but forgotten, and his extant works rest quietly on the shelves of public libraries. He was born at Deigsdorf near Hamburg, on March 26, 1699, and received his first musical education from his father. Being possessed of a fine tenor voice, he chose the theatrical career, and joined the operatic troupe conducted by Reinhard Keiser at Hamburg, the same Keiser in whose orchestra Handel had played the second violin some years before. Hasse's success led to an engagement at the court theatre of Brunswick, and it was there that, in 1723, he made his debut as a composer with the opera *Antigonus*. The success of this first work induced the duke to send Hasse to Italy for the completion of his studies, and in 1724 he went to Naples and placed himself under the tuition of the celebrated Porpora, who, however, is supposed to have disagreed both as a man and as an artist. On the other hand he gained the friendship of Alessandro Scarlatti, to whom he owed his first commission for a serenade for two voices, sung at a family celebration of a wealthy merchant by two of the greatest singers of Italy, Fainelli and Signora Tesi. This event established Hasse's fame, he soon became very popular by the name of *"il caro Sassone,"* and his opera *Scorciato*, written for and produced at the Royal Opera at Naples in 1726, made his name known all over Italy. At Venice, where he went in 1727, he and his works were received with equal favour. It was there that he became acquainted with the celebrated singer Faustina Bordoni, better known as Faustina Hasse, for she became the composer's wife in 1730. The artist couple soon afterwards went to Dresden, in compliance with a brilliant offer made to them by the splendid loving elector of Saxony, Augustus II. There Hasse remained for two years, after which he again journeyed to Italy, and also in 1733 to London, in which latter city he was tempted by the aristocratic clique inimical to Handel to become the rival and antagonist of that great master. But this he modestly and wisely declined, remaining in London only long enough to superintend the rehearsals for his opera *Artace*. All this while Faustina had remained at Dresden, the declared favourite of the public and unfortunately also of the elector, her husband, who remained attached to her, being allowed to see her only at long intervals. In 1739, after the death of Augustus II, Hasse settled permanently at Dresden till 1763, when he and his wife retired from court service with considerable pensions. But Hasse was still too young to rest on his laurels. He went with his family to Vienna, and added several operas to the great number of his works already in existence. His last work for the stage was the opera *Ruggiero*, written for the wedding of Archduke Ferdinand at Milan. On the same occasion a dramatic cantata by Mozart, then (1771) fourteen years old, was performed, and Hasse is said to have prophesied Mozart's future greatness much in the same manner as Mozart himself predicted that of Beethoven. By desire of his wife Hasse settled at his birthplace Venice, and there he died December 23, 1783. His compositions were innumerable, including as many as 180 operas, besides oratorios, cantatas, masses, and almost every variety of instrumental music. It would be needless to criticize or give the titles of these compositions, for most of them are,

as was said before, totally and not unjustly forgotten. Moreover, comparatively few of them have escaped destruction. During the siege of Dresden by the Prussians in 1700, most of his manuscripts, collected for a complete edition to be brought out at the expense of the elector, were burnt some of his works, amongst them an opera *Alcide al Brío*, have been published, and the libraries of Vienna and Dresden possess the autographs of others. Hasse's instrumentation is certainly not above the low level attained by the average musicians of his time, and his *ensembles* do not present any features of interest. In dramatic fire also he was wanting, but he had a fund of gentle and genuine melody, and by this fact his enormous popularity during his life must be accounted for. The two aims which Fainelli had to present every day for ten years to the melancholy king of Spain, Philip V., were both from Hasse's works. Of Faustina Hasse, almost as celebrated as her husband, most that is necessary has been said above. It will be sufficient to add that she was born at Venice in 1700, sang at Vienna, London (under Handel, 1736), and Dresden, and was, according to the unanimous verdict of her critics (including Dr Burney), one of the greatest singers of a time rich in vocal artists. The year of her death is not exactly known. Most probably it shortly preceded that of her husband.

HASSELQUIST, FREDERICK (1722-1759), a Swedish traveller and naturalist, was born near Linköping in East Gothland, 3d January 1722. He lost his father at an early age, and his uncle, his sole remaining protector, in his nineteenth year, but succeeded by means of private teaching in supporting himself while continuing his education. In 1741 he entered the university of Upsala, where his taste for the study of nature was fostered and developed by Linnaeus, and where in 1747 he obtained licence in medicine, and published a thesis entitled *De Viribus Plantarum*. On account of the frequently expressed regrets of Linnaeus at the lack of information regarding the natural history of Palestine, Hasselquist resolved to undertake a journey to that country, and a sufficient subscription having been obtained to defray expenses, he, after making himself acquainted with the languages of the Levant, embarked for Smyrna, where he arrived November 26, 1749. He visited most of Asia Minor, Egypt, Cyprus, and Palestine, and made large natural history collections, but his constitution, actually weak, gave way under the fatigues and anxieties of travel, and he died at Smyrna, February 9, 1753, on his way homewards. His collections reached home in safety, and five years after his death the results of his wanderings were published by Linnaeus under the title *Resa till Teliga Landet förförd af h. 1749 till 1753*. The work is divided into two parts, the first consisting of the traveller's journal and letters, and the second of his remarks on the botany, zoology, and mineralogy of the countries through which he passed, with observations on the prevalent diseases and their cure, and the state of industry, commerce, and the arts. It was translated into French and German in 1762, and into English in 1766.

HASSELT, a town of Belgium, capital of the province of Limburg, is situated on the Demer and on the railway from Aix-la-Chapelle to Maestricht, 20 miles north-west of Liège. It possesses two churches, a hospital, a spacious town hall, an atheneum, and a public library. Tobacco and madder are cultivated in the neighbourhood. The principal manufactures are linen, lace, brandy, and beer. At Hasselt the Dutch under the prince of Orange gained a victory over the Belgians under General Daine, 6th May 1831. The population in 1876 was 11,561.

HASENPFUG, HANS DANIEL LUDWIG FRIEDRICH (1793-1862), a minister of state in Hesse-Cassel, celebrated as a reactionary, was born at Hannau, in the elec-

torate of Hesse, in 1793. He studied law at Göttingen, and was appointed by the elector Frederick William I. (then acting as regent) to a subordinate post in that university. He rose rapidly, and proved himself a man of great resolution and energy. From the first he adopted that line of policy which made him so disliked throughout his career. He overcame, that is to say, a suspicious censorship over the press, he reduced to a shadow the power of the legislative chambers, he introduced new and harsh measures of army discipline, and contended relentlessly with all disciples of free thought. In the matter of education he showed praiseworthy zeal, and promoted as far as he could the national schools of Hesse. But the services he rendered in this way were not sufficient to induce the mass of the people to pardon the reactionary tendency of his general policy, and he was obliged in 1837 to flee from the general hatred he had encountered. He found shelter in Prussia, where the Government entrusted him with the discharge of various judicial offices, and he remained in Prussia till the full tide of reaction had set in after the year 1848. He then (1850) returned to Hesse-Cassel, the ministry of the revolution of 1848 having been dismissed. Despite the fact that Hasenpflug had never freed himself from a charge of peculation brought against him in the performance of his judicial duties in Prussia, he was appointed by the elector, of Hesse, to the head of the new ministry. He acted at once on the old lines, levying taxes without the consent of the chambers, dissolving them when they protested, and finally proclaiming martial law. The soldiers rose, the officers being on the side of the people, the Government was in so precarious a condition that it seemed wise to the elector to flee with his court to Wilhelmshafen. Partly by the influence of Hasenpflug the German bundestag (or council of all the states) espoused the cause of the elector against his subjects, and by the end of the year (1850) the estate ministers had the satisfaction of seeing the reactionary Government (with himself as minister of finance) reinstated in power. His position was, however, difficult, owing to his great unpopularity among all classes. When in 1852 the brother of the elector assassinated him in a fit of lunacy, Hasenpflug at once sent in his resignation, but it was not accepted till 1855. He then retired to Marburg (in Hesse), where he died October 15, 1862. His friend Dr Vilmar, who pronounced his funeral oration, dwelt chiefly on the pity of the deceased, who he said never travelled without a copy of the New Testament.

HASTINAPUR, an ancient city of India, in the Meerut district, North-Western Provinces, lying on the bank of the Bagmati, or former bed of the Ganges, 23 miles N.E. of Meerut. It formed the capital of the great Pandya kingdom, celebrated in the *Mahabharata*, and probably one of the earliest Aryan settlements outside the Punjab. Few traces of the ancient city now remain, but tradition points to a group of shapeless mounds as the residence of the children of the moon, the Lunar princes of the house of Bhārata whose deeds are commemorated in the great national epic. After the conclusion of the famous war which forms the central episode of that poem, Hastinapur remained for some time the metropolis of the descendants of Paishah, but the town was finally swept away by a flood of the Ganges, and the capital was transferred to Kauśambi.

HASTINGS, a municipal and parliamentary borough and market-town of Sussex, England, the principal of the Cinque Ports, is picturesquely situated on the southern coast of England, 74 miles from London by the London, Brighton, and South Coast Railway, and 62 by the London and South-Eastern Railway. It lies in two gorges, surrounded by an amphitheatre of hills and cliffs on every side except the south. At the beginning of the century, when

it first came into reputation as a watering place, Hastings consisted of two main streets, but since then many new streets and squares have been added, and St Leonards, at that time about a mile distant, is now connected with it by a line of terraces and parades, and forms its more fashionable district. On the brink of the western cliff there still stand a square and a circular tower of the old castle, probably erected soon after the time of William the Conqueror, and the ruins, opened up by excavation in 1824, of the castle chapel, a transitional Norman structure 110 feet long, with a nave, chancel, and aisle. Besides the chapel, there was also at one time a college, both being under the control of a dean and secular canons. The deanery was at one time held by Thomas a Becket, and one of the canons by William of Wykeham. The principal public buildings are the old parish churches of All Saints and St Clements, both in the Perpendicular style, the former containing in its register for 1619 the baptism of Titus Oates, whose father was rector of the parish, and the latter two houses to Thomas Weekes (d 1593) and John Bauley (d 1592), the town hall, erected in 1823, the music hall, erected in 1859, the assembly room, the Roman Catholic college, the Augustinian monastery, and the Albert memorial and drinking fountain, erected in 1861. Among the industries of the town are fishing, boat building, and coach-making, but its prosperity rests chiefly upon its reputation as a watering-place. Its popularity in this respect is owing to its historical interest, its picturesque situation, the many beautiful walks in the neighbourhood, its fine level sands, and its healthy climate, which, while bracing and vigorous in the higher parts of the town, is in its lower parts specially suited from its mildness, for sufferers from pulmonary complaints. The town is well supplied with hotels, reading rooms, and pleasure gardens, and possesses a line of parades extending along the coast for nearly 3 miles. The Marina, a covered parade 600 feet in length, was built in 1825. There is a fine pier, opened in 1872, 900 feet in length, and possessing a pavilion capable of seating nearly 3000 persons. A public park, 70 acres in extent, is at present being laid out. The sewage of the town is conveyed a considerable distance out to sea before it is discharged. The area of the municipal borough is 1636 acres, and of the parliamentary borough 4617 acres. The population of the municipal borough in 1871 was 29,291, and of the parliamentary borough 33,337.

Hastings is of great antiquity, and was a place of some importance in the time of the Anglo-Saxons. Some derive its name from Hæsten, a Danish prince who invaded that coast in the time of Alfred the Great. According to the French biographies of Edward the Confessor, it is so called from the hasty manner in which William I. used its fortifications. It is mentioned in the chronicles as *Hæstingæ*, and is reckoned as distinct from the shire of Sussex. In the Bayeux tapestry it is called *Hastings ægria*. A mint was established at it by Athelstan in 924, of which there is some notice in the Domesday Book. In 1066, according to the Worcester Chronicle, its women distinguished themselves in the pursuit of the pirate Swein after the murder of Beorn, and took two of his ships. Like the other principal seaports on the southern coast, it was garrisoned by Harold in view of the possible landing of William the Conqueror, to whom, however, it surrendered without striking a blow, and who selected it as the site of a permanent camp, and erected a wooden fortress on the hill on which the castle was afterwards built. From this camp William, on the morning of October 14th, 1066, set out to meet Harold at the Senlac Hill, and after his great victory there he returned to it, and remained encamped five days in the hope of recovering the homage of the English. The site of the original town is supposed to be now a great part covered by the sea. By a treaty of William the Conqueror Hastings, together with Hythe, was added to the three previously incorporated ports of Sandwich, Dover, and Romney, and invested with certain privileges, the five being subsequently known as the Cinque Ports. In the reign of Edward I. it was rated at 21 ships with 21 seamen in each, for the service of the king for fourteen days at his own charge. In 1377 the town was burned down by the French, but it was soon afterwards rebuilt. The harbour has fallen into decay since the time of Elizabeth, when the wooden pier was destroyed by a storm, it does not now ad-

mit vessels above 100 tons to enter, and this only at full tide. The town received a charter of incorporation from Edward III. in 1366, which was confirmed and enlarged by Charles II. In the 42d of Edward III. it obtained the privilege of returning two members to Parliament.

HASTINGS, WARREN (1732-1818), the first governor-general of British India, was born on the 6th of December 1732 in the little hamlet of Churchill in Oxfordshire. His father was a family which had been settled for many generations in the adjoining village of Daylesford, but his great grandfather had sold the ancestral manor house, and his grandfather had been unable to maintain himself in possession of the family living. His mother died a few days after giving him birth, his father, Yernand Hastings, drifted away to perish obscurely in the West Indies. Thus unfortunate in his birth, young Hastings received the elements of education at a charity school in his native village. At the age of eight he was taken in charge by an elder brother of his father, Howard Hastings, who held a post in the customs. After spending two years at a private school at Newington Butts, he was moved to Westminster, where among his contemporaries occur the names of Lord Thurlow and Lord Shelburne, Sir Elijah Impey, and the poets Cowper and Churchill. In 1749, when his headmaster Dr. Nichols was already anticipating for him a successful career at the university, his uncle died, leaving him to the care of Mr. Chiswick, who was the secretary of the East India Company, and he determined to send his ward to seek his fortune as a "writer" in Bengal.

When Hastings landed at Calcutta in October 1750, the affairs of the East India Company were at a low ebb. Throughout the entire south of the peninsula French influence was predominant. The settlement of Port St George or Madras, captured by force of arms, had only recently been restored in accordance with a clause of the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle. The loud gonus of Duplex everywhere overshadowed the native imagination, and the star of Clive had scarcely yet risen above the horizon. The rivalry between the English and the French, which had already convulsed the south, did not penetrate to Bengal. That province was under the able government of Ali Vardi Khan, who peremptorily forbade the foreign settlers at Calcutta and Chandanagar to introduce funds from Europe. The duties of a young "writer" were then such as are implied in the name. At an early date Hastings was placed in charge of an *awany* or factory in the interior, where his duties would be to superintend the weaving of silk and cotton goods under a system of money advances. In 1755 he was transferred to Kāmbābāz, the river-port of the native capital of Mughalshāhid. In 1756 the old nawab died, and was succeeded by his grandson Sayaj-Daulah, a spoils boy of 19, whose name is indelibly associated with the tragedy of the Black Hole. When that passionate young prince, in revenge for a fancied wrong, resolved to drive the English out of Bengal, his first step was to occupy the fortified factory at Kāmbābāz, and make prisoners of Hastings and his companions. Hastings was soon released at the intercession of the Dutch resident, and made use of his position at Mughalshāhid to open negotiations with the English fugitives at Patna, the site of a Dutch factory near the mouth of the Hooghly. In later days he used to refer with pride to his services on this occasion, when he was first initiated into the wiles of Oriental diplomacy. After a while, he found it necessary to fly from the Mahomedan court, and join the main body of the English at Patna. When the relieving force arrived from Madras under Colonel Clive and Admiral Watson, Hastings enrolled himself as a volunteer. Clive showed his appreciation of Hastings's merits, by appointing him in 1758 to the important post of resident at the court of Mughal-

dábd It was there that he first came into collision with the Bengali Bráhmán, Nandikumar, whose subsequent fate throws so deep a shadow upon his own fair fame. During his three years of office as resident he was able to render not a few valuable services to the Company, but it is more important to observe that his name nowhere occurs in the official lists of those who derived pecuniary profit from the necessities and weakness of the native chiefs. In 1761 he was promoted to be member of council, under the great demerit of Mr Vansittart, who had been introduced by Clive from Madras. The period of Vansittart's government has been truly described as "the most revolting page of our Indian history." The attitude of administration was suffered to remain in the hands of the nawáb, while a few irresponsible English traders had drawn to themselves all real power. The members of council, the commanders of the troops, and the commercial residents plundered on a grand scale. The youngest servant of the Company claimed the right of trading on his own account, free from taxation and from local jurisdiction, not only for himself but also for every native subordinate whom he might permit to use his name. It was this exemption, threatening the very foundations of the Mussulman government, that finally led to a rupture with the nawáb. Macaulay, in his celebrated essay, has said that "of the conduct of Hastings at this time little is known." As a matter of fact, the book which Macaulay was professing to review describes at length the honourable part consistently taken by Hastings in opposition to the great majority of the council. Sometimes in conjunction only with Vansittart, sometimes absolutely alone, he protested unceasingly against the policy and practices of his colleagues. On one occasion he was stigmatised in a minute by Mr Batson with "having espoused the nawáb's cause, and as a hired solicitor defended all his actions, however dishonourable and detrimental to the Company." An altercation ensued. Batson gave him the lie, and struck him in the council chamber. When war was actually begun, Hastings officially recorded his previous resolution to have resigned, in order to repudiate responsibility for measures which he had always opposed. Waiting only for the decisive victory of Butar over the allied forces of Bengal and Oudh, he resigned his seat and sailed for England in November 1764.

After fourteen years' residence in Bengal Hastings did not return home a rich man, as estimated by the opportunities of his position according to the custom of the time he had suggested his slender salary by private trade. At a later date, he was charged by Burke with having taken up profitable contracts for supplying bullocks for the use of the Company's troops. It is admitted that he conducted by means of agents a large business in timber in the Gangetic sandarbans. When at Falta he had married Mrs Campbell, the widow of an officer. She bore him two children, of whom one died in infancy at Múshidábád, and was shortly followed to the grave by her mother. Their common graveside is in existence at the present day, bearing date July 11, 1759. The other child, a son, was sent to England and also died shortly before his father's return. While at home Hastings is said to have attached himself to literary society, and it may be inferred from his own letters that he now made the personal acquaintance of Samuel Johnson and Lord Mansfield. In 1766 he was called upon to give evidence before a committee of the House of Commons upon the affairs of Bengal. The good sense and clearness of the views which he expressed caused attention to be paid to his desire to be again employed in India. His pecuniary affairs were embarrassed, partly from the liberality with which he had endowed his few surviving relatives. The great influence of Lord Clive was also exercised on his behalf. At last,

in the winter of 1768, he received the appointment of second in council at Madras. Among his recommendations on his voyage round the Cape were the Baron Imhoff, a speculative portrait painter, and his wife, a lady of some personal attractions and great social charm, who was destined henceforth to be Hastings's life-long companion. Of his two years' work at Madras it is needless to speak in detail. He won the good-will of his employers by devoting himself to the improvement of their manufacturing business, and he kept his hands clean from the prevalent taint of pecuniary transactions with the nawáb of the Carnatic. One fact of some interest is not generally known. He drew up a scheme for the construction of a pier at Madras, to avoid the dangers of landing through the surf, and instructed his brother-in-law in England to obtain estimates from the engineers Brindley and Smeaton.

In the beginning of 1772 his ambition was stimulated by the nomination to the second place in council at Bengal with a promise of the reversion of the governorship when Mr Cartier should retire. Since his departure from Bengal in 1764 the situation of affairs in that settlement had scarcely improved. The second governorship of Clive was marked by the transfer of the *diwán* or financial administration from the Mogul emperor to the Company, and by the enforcement of stringent regulations against the besetting sin of population. But Clive was followed by two inefficient successors, and in 1770 occurred the most terrible Indian famine on record, which is creditably estimated to have swept away one-third of the population. In April 1772 Warren Hastings took his seat as president of the council at Fort William. His first care was to carry out the instructions received from home, and effect a radical reform in the system of government. Clive's plan of governing through the agency of the native court had proved a failure. The directors were determined "to stand forth as *diwáns*, and take upon themselves by their own servants the entire management of the revenues." All the officers of administration were transferred from Múshidábád to Calcutta, which Hastings boasted at this only date that he would make the first city in Asia. This reform involved the ruin of many native reputations, and for a second time brought Hastings into collision with the wily Bráhmán, Nandikumar. At the same time a new settlement of the land revenue on leases for five years was begun, and the police and military establishment of the country were placed upon a new footing. Hastings was a man of immense industry, with an insatiable appetite for details. The whole of this large series of reforms was conducted under his own personal supervision, and upon no part of his multifarious labours did he dwell in his letters home with greater pride. As an independent measure of economy, the stipend paid to the titular nawáb of Pénal, who was then a minor, was reduced by one half—to sixteen *lákhs* a year (say £160,000). Macaulay imputes this reduction to Hastings as a characteristic act of financial immorality, but in truth it had been expressly enjoined by the court of directors, in a despatch dated six months before he took up office. His pecuniary bargains with Syáh Daula, the nawáb waqf of Oudh, stand on a different basis. Hastings himself always regarded them as incidents in the general scheme of his foreign policy. The Mahrattas at this time had got possession of the person of the Mogul emperor, Sháh Álam, from whom Clive obtained the grant of Bengal in 1766, and to whom he assigned in return the districts of Allahábád and Kora, and a tribute of £300,000. With the emperor in their camp, the Mahrattas were threatening the province of Oudh, and causing a large British force to be stationed along the frontier for its defence. Warren Hastings, as a deliberate measure of policy, withheld the tribute due to the emperor,

and resold Allahabad and Kora to the wazir of Oudh. The Mahatta retreated, and all demands for the time were despatched by the death of their principal leader. The wazir now bethought him that he had a good opportunity for satisfying an old quarrel against the adjoining tribe of Rohillas, who had played fast and loose with him while the Mahatta army was at hand. The Rohillas were a race of Afghan origin, who had established themselves for some generations in a fertile tract west of Oudh, between the Himalayas and the Ganges, which still bears the name of Rohilkhand. They were not so much the occupiers of the soil, as a dominant caste of warriors and freebooters. But in those troubled days their title was as good as any to be found in India. After not a little hesitation, Hastings consented to allow the Company's troops to be used to further the ambitious designs of his Oudh ally, in consideration of a sum of money which relieved the over-pressing wants of the Bengal treasury. The Rohillas were defeated in fair fight. Some of them fled the country, and so far as possible Hastings obtained terms for those who remained. The fighting, no doubt, on the part of the wazir was conducted with all the savagery of Oriental warfare, but there is no evidence that it was a war of extermination.

Meanwhile, the affairs of the East India Company had again come under the consideration of Parliament. The Regulating Act, passed by Lord North's ministry in 1773, effected considerable changes in the constitution of the Bengal Government. The council was reduced to four members with a governor-general, who were to exercise certain indefinite powers of control over the presidencies of Madras and Bombay. Hastings was named in the Act as governor-general for a term of five years. The council consisted of General Clavering and the Hon. Colonel Monson, two third-rate politicians of considerable parliamentary influence, Philip Francis, then only known as an able penman-official, and Burwell, of the Bengal Civil Service. At the same time a supreme court of judicature was appointed, composed of a chief and three puisne judges, to exercise an indeterminate jurisdiction at Calcutta. The chief-justice was Sir Elijah Impey, already mentioned as a schoolfellow of Hastings at Westminster. The whole tendency of the Regulating Act was to establish for the first time the influence of the crown, or rather of parliament, in Indian affairs. The new members of council disembarked at Calcutta on the 19th of October 1771, and on the following day commenced the long feud which scarcely terminated twenty-one years later with the acquittal of Warren Hastings by the House of Lords. Macaulay states that the members of council were put in ill-humour because their salute of guns was not proportionate to their dignity. In a contemporary letter Francis thus expresses the same petty feeling: "Surely Mr. H. might have put on a ruffled shirt." Taking advantage of an ambiguous clause in their commission, the majority of the council (for Burwell uniformly sided with Hastings) forthwith proceeded to pass in review the recent measures of the governor-general. All that he had done they condemned, all that they could they reversed. Hastings was reduced to the position of a cipher at their meetings. After a time they lent a ready ear to detailed allegations of corruption brought against him by his old enemy Nandikumar. To charges from such a source, and brought in such a manner, Hastings disdained to reply, and referred his accuser to the supreme court. The majority of the council, in their executive capacity, resolved that the governor-general had been guilty of peculation, and ordered him to refund. A few days later Nandikumar was thrown into prison on a stale charge of forgery, tried before the supreme court sitting in bail, found guilty by a jury of Englishmen, and sentenced to be hanged. That Hastings set this prosecution in motion, no

reasonable person can doubt, and it is equally clear that Chief Justice Impey is free from all personal blame. The majority of the council abandoned their supporter, who was ousted in due course. He had forwarded a petition for reprimand to the council, which Clavering took care should not be presented in time, and which was subsequently burnt by the common hangman on the motion of Francis. At the time no one dared to impute to Hastings the crime of a judicial murder. But though he had thus silenced the charges brought against him, a combination of circumstances placed him in a position of fresh difficulty. While the strife was at its hottest, he had sent an agent to England with a general authority to place his resignation in the hands of the Company under certain conditions. The agent thought fit to exercise that authority. The resignation was promptly accepted, and one of the directors was appointed to the vacancy. But in the meantime Colonel Monson had died, and Hastings was thus restored, by virtue of his casting vote, to the supreme management of affairs. He refused to ratify his resignation, and when Clavering attempted to seize on the governor-generalship, he judiciously obtained an opinion of the supreme court in his own favour. From that time forth, though he could not always command an absolute majority in council, Hastings was never again subjected to gross insult, and his general policy was able to prevail.

A crisis was now approaching in foreign affairs which demanded all the experience and all the genius of Hastings for its solution. Bengal was prosperous, and free from external enemies on every quarter. But the Government of Bombay had hurried on a rupture with the Mahatta confederacy at a time when Francis was on the point of declaring war against England, and when the mother-country found herself unable to subdue her rebellious colonists in America. Hastings did not hesitate to take upon his own shoulders the whole responsibility of military affairs. All the French settlements in India were promptly occupied. On the part of Bombay, the Mahatta war was conducted with promptness and dispatch. But Hastings amply avenged the capitulation of Wagon by the complete success of his own plan of operations. Colonel Goddard with a Bengal army marched across the breadth of the peninsula, from the valley of the Ganges to the western sea, and achieved almost without a blow the conquest of Guzerat. Captain Popham, with a small detachment, stormed the rock fortress of Gwalior, then deemed impregnable and the key of Central India, and by this feat held in check Sindia, the most formidable of the Mahatta chiefs. The bhonsla, or Mahatta raja of Nagpur, whose dominions bordered on Bengal, was won over by the diplomacy of an emissary of Hastings. But while these events were taking place, a new source of embarrassment had arisen at Calcutta. The supreme court, whether rightly or wrongly, assumed a jurisdiction of first instance over the entire province of Bengal. The English common law, with all the subtleties and rigours of that day, was arbitrarily extended to an alien system of society. *Zamindars*, or government tenants, were arrested on mesne process, the sanctity of the *andam*, or women's chamber, as dear to Hindus as to Mahomedans, was violated by the sheriff's officer, the deepest feelings of the people and the entire fabric of revenue administration were alike disregarded. On this point the entire council acted in harmony. Hastings and Francis went joint-bail for imprisoned natives of distinction. At last, after the dispute between the judges and the executive threatened to become a trial of armed force, Hastings set it at rest by a characteristic stroke of policy. A new judicial office was created in the name of the Company, to which Sir Elijah Impey was appointed, though he never consented to draw the additional salary

offered to him. The understanding between Hastings and Francis, originating in this state of affairs, was for a short period extended to general policy. An agreement was come to by which Francis received patronage for his circle of friends, while Hastings was to be unimpeded in the control of foreign affairs. But a difference of interpretation arose. Hastings recorded in an official minute that he had found Francis's private and public conduct to be "void of truth and honour." They met as duellists. Francis fell wounded, and soon afterwards returned to England.

The Mahratta war was not yet terminated, but a far more formidable danger now threatened the English in India. The imprudent conduct of the Madras authorities had invited beyond endurance the two greatest Mussulman powers in the peninsula, the nizâm of the Deccan and Hyder Ali, the usurper of Mysore, who began to negotiate an alliance with the Mahrattas. A second time the genius of Hastings saved the British empire in the east. On the arrival of the news that Hyder had descended from the highlands of Mysore, cut to pieces the only British army in the field, and swept the Carnatic up to the gates of Madras, he at once adopted a policy of extraordinary boldness. He signed a blank treaty of peace with the Mahrattas, who were still in arms, reversed the action of the Madras Government towards the nizâm, and concentrated all the resources of Dondra against Hyder Ali. Sir Eyre Coote, a general of renown in former campaigns, was sent by sea to Madras with all the troops and treasure that could be got together, and a strong body of reinforcements subsequently marched southwards under General Leslie along the coast line of Orissa. The landing of Coote preserved Madras from destruction, though the war lasted through many campaigns and only terminated with the death of Hyder. Leslie's detachment was decimated by an epidemic of cholera (perhaps the first mention of this disease by name in Indian history), but the survivors penetrated to Madras, and not only held in check the bhonsla and the nizâm, but also corroborated the lesson taught by Goddard—that the Company's sepoy could match anywhere, when boldly led. Hastings's personal task was to provide the ways and means for this exhausting war. A considerable economy was effected by a reform in the establishment for collecting the land tax. The Government monopolies of opium and salt were then for the first time placed upon a remunerative basis. But these reforms were of necessity slow in their beneficial operation. The pressing demands of the military chest had to be satisfied by loans, and in at least one case from the private purse of the governor-general. Ready cash could alone fill up the void, and it was to the boards of native princes that Hastings's facile mind at once turned. Chyette Sing, râja of Benares, the greatest of the vassal chiefs who had grown rich under the protection of the British rule, lay under the suspicion of disloyalty. The wazir of Oudh had fallen into arrears in the payment due for the maintenance of the Company's garrison posted in his dominions, and his administration was in great disorder. In his case the ancestral boards were under the control of his mother, the begum of Oudh, into whose hands they had been allowed to pass at the time when Hastings was powerless in council. Hastings resolved to make a progress up country in order to arrange the affairs of both provinces, and bring back all the treasure that could be squeezed out of its holders by his personal intervention. When he reached Benares and presented his demands, the râja rose in insurrection, and the governor-general barely escaped with his life. But the faithful Popham rapidly rallied a force for his defence. The native soldiery were defeated again and again, Chyette Sing took to flight, and an augmented permanent tribute was imposed upon his successor. The Oudh business was

managed with less risk. The wazir consented to everything demanded of him. The begum was chastised, having abetted Chyette Sing in his rebellion, and after the severest pressure applied to herself and her attendant eunuchs, a fine of more than a million sterling was exacted from her. Hastings appears to have been not altogether satisfied with the incidents of this expedition, and to have anticipated the censure which it received in England. As a measure of precaution, he procured documentary evidence of the rebellious intentions of the râja and the begum, to the validity of which Impey obligingly lent his extrajudicial sanction.

The remainder of Hastings's term of office in India was passed in comparative tranquillity, both from internal opposition and foreign war. The centre of interest now shifts to the India House and to the British Parliament. The long struggle between the Company and the ministers of the crown for the supreme control of Indian affairs and the attendant patronage had reached its climax. The decisive success of Hastings's administration alone postponed the inevitable solution. His original term of five years would have expired in 1778, but it was annually prolonged by special Act of Parliament until his voluntary resignation. Though Hastings was thus irremovable, his policy did not escape censure. Ministers were naturally anxious to obtain the reversion to his vacant post, and Indian affairs formed at the time the hinge on which party politics turned. On one occasion Dundas carried a motion in the House of Commons censuring Hastings, and demanding his recall. The directors of the Company were disposed to act upon this resolution, but in the court of proprietors, with whom the decision ultimately lay, Hastings always possessed a sufficient majority. Fox's India Bill led to the downfall of the Coalition Ministry in 1783. The Act which Pitt successfully carried in the following year introduced a new constitution, in which Hastings felt that he had no place. In February 1786 he finally sailed from Calcutta, after a dignified ceremony of resignation, and amid enthusiastic farewells from all classes.

On his arrival in England, after a second absence of sixteen years, he was not displeased with the reception he met with at court and in the country. A pension was openly talked of as his due, while his own ambition pointed to some responsible office at home. Pitt had never taken a side against him, while Lord Chancellor Thurlow was his pronounced friend. But he was now destined to learn that his enemy Francis, whom he had discomfited in the council chamber at Calcutta, was more than his match in the parliamentary arena. Edmund Burke had taken the subject aces of India under the protection of his eloquence. Francis, who had been the early friend of Burke, supplied him with the personal animus against Hastings, and with the knowledge of details, which he might otherwise have lacked. The Whig party on this occasion unanimously followed Burke's lead. Dundas, Pitt's favourite subordinate, had already committed himself by his earlier resolution of censure, and Pitt was induced by motives which are still obscure to incline the ministerial majority to the same side. To meet the oratory of Burke and Sheridan and Fox, Hastings wrote an elaborate minute with which he wearied the ears of the House for two successive nights, and he subsidized a swarm of pamphleteers. The impeachment was decided upon in 1780, but the actual trial did not commence until 1786. For seven long years Hastings was upon his defence on the charge of "high crimes and misdemeanours." During his anxious period he appears to have borne himself with characteristic dignity, such as is consistent with no other hypothesis than the consciousness of innocence. At last, in 1795, the House of Lords gave a verdict of not guilty on all the charges laid against him, and he left the bar at



which he had so frequently appealed, with his reputation clear, but ruined in fortune. However large the wealth he brought back from India, all was swallowed up in defraying the expenses of his trial. Continuing the line of conduct which in most other men would be called hypocrisy, he forwarded a petition to Pitt praying that he might be reimbursed his costs from the public funds. This petition, of course, was rejected. At last, when he was reduced to actual destitution, it was arranged that the East India Company should grant him an annuity of £4000 for a term of years, with £90,000 paid down in advance. This annuity expired before his death, and he was compelled to make more than one fresh appeal to the bounty of the Company, which was never withheld. Shortly before his accident he had been able to satisfy the dream of childhood, by buying back the ancestral manor of Daylesford, where the remainder of his life was passed in honourable retirement. In 1813 he was called on to give evidence upon Indian affairs before the two Houses of Parliament, which received him with exceptional marks of respect. The university of Oxford conferred on him the honorary degree of DCL, and in the following year he was sworn of the Privy Council, and took a prominent part in the reception given to the duke of Wellington and the allied sovereigns. He died on the 22d of August 1818, in his 86th year, and lies buried behind the chancel of the parish church, which he had recently restored at his own charges.

In physical appearance, Hastings "looked like a great man, and not like a bad man." The body was wholly subjugated to the mind. A frame naturally slight had been further attenuated by rigorous habits of temperance, and thus rendered proof against the diseases of the tropics. Against his private character not even calumny has breathed a reproach. As brother, as husband, and as friend, his affections were as steadfast as they were warm. By the public he was always regarded as reserved, but within his own inner circle he gave and received perfect confidence. In his dealings, with money, he was characterized rather by liberality of expenditure than by carefulness of acquisition. A classical education and the instincts of family pride saved him from both the greed and the vulgar display which marked the typical "nabob," the self-made man of those days. He could support the position of a governor-general and of a country gentleman with equal credit. Concerning his second marriage, it suffices to say that the Baroness Imhoff was about forty years of age, with a family of grown-up children, when the complaisant law of her native land allowed her to become Mrs Hastings. She survived her husband, who seems to have cherished towards her to the last the sentiments of a lover. Her children he adopted as his own, and it was chiefly for her sake that he deigned the peerage which was twice held out to him.

Hastings's public career will probably never cease to be a subject of controversy. It was his misfortune to be the scapegoat upon whose head Parliament laid the accumulated sins, real and imaginary, of the East India Company. If the acquisition of our Indian empire can be supported on ethical grounds, Hastings needs no defence. No one who reads his private correspondence will admit that even his least defensible acts were dictated by dishonourable motives. It is more pleasing to point out certain of his public measures upon which no difference of opinion can arise. He was the first to attempt to open a trade route with Thibet, and to organize a survey of Bengal and of the eastern seas. It was he who persuaded the *pandits* of Bengal to disclose the treasures of Sanskrit to European scholars. He founded the Madrasa or college for Mahomedan education at Calcutta, primarily out of his own funds, and he projected the foundation of an Indian

Institute in England. The Royal Asiatic Society was established under his auspices, though he yielded the post of president to Sir W. Jones. No Englishman ever understood the native character so well as Hastings, none ever devoted himself more heartily to the promotion of every scheme, great and small, that could advance the prosperity of India. Natives and Anglo-Indians alike venerate his name, the former as their first beneficent administrator, the latter as the most able and the most enlightened of their own class. If Clive's sword conquered the Indian empire, it was the brain of Hastings that planned the system of civil administration, and his genius that saved the empire in its darkest hour.

The bibliography dealing with Warren Hastings is not large. The histories of Mill and Thoinson both adopt a standpoint that is on the whole adverse. The *Memoirs*, by Gleng, in 3 vols (London, 1841) are too tedious to be read at the present day. The review of those *Memoirs* by Macaulay, despite its exuberance of colour, its Whig partiality, and its proved inaccuracies, will not easily be superseded as the one standard authority. There is a recent *Biography* by Captain Trotter (1878). Much interesting information, in connection with amplification of Macaulay, may be found in the *Memoirs of Francis, with Correspondence*, &c., by Palkes and H. Mervale (1867), and in the *Memoirs of Sir E. Phipps* by his son (1846), who deposited his private MSS materials in the British Museum. In 1872 the British Museum also obtained by purchase from Miss Kneller 268 vols of papers relating to Hastings, chiefly letters between 1767 and 1818. These have been partly utilized by Mr Beveridge in a series of articles contributed to the *Courier and Review* for October 1877, April 1878, and April 1879. (J. S. CO.)

HASTINGS, FRANCIS RAWDON HASTINGS, FIRST MARQUIS OF (1754-1826), ranks among those governor-generals of India who, completing the work of Clive and Warren Hastings, achieved the creation of the Indian empire of England. The services of Lord Hastings in this respect were special and important. He was both governor-general and commander-in-chief in India from 1813 till the end of 1822, during that period he carried two important wars, the Nepalese and the Marhatta, to a successful issue, while adding to the territories of the East India Company, he in several respects altered and improved their policy, and by the sagacity and at the same time the generosity of his own administration (in which he exhibited the true qualities of a Christian prince) he won reverence from the natives and left a great name in India.

Lord Hastings was in no way connected with Warren Hastings, his family name was Rawdon. His father, Sir John Rawdon of Moira in the county of Down, fourth baronet, was created Baron Rawdon of Moira, and after wards Earl of Moira, in the Irish peerage. His mother was the Lady Khrabeth Hastings, daughter of the ninth earl of Huntingdon. Both his father and mother appear to have been persons of considerable ability and high cultivation. Lord Rawdon, as he was then called, having gone at an early age to the university of Oxford, joined the army in his seventeenth year as ensign in the 15th foot. His life henceforth was entirely spent in the service of his country, and may naturally be divided into four periods — from 1773 to 1782 he was engaged with much distinction in the American war, from 1783 to 1813 he held various high appointments at home, and took an active part in the business of the House of Lords, from 1813 to 1823 was the period of his labours in India, after returning from which, in the last years of his life (1824-1826), he was governor of Malta.

In America Lord Rawdon served at the battles of Brimley's Hill, Brooklyn, White Plains, Monmouth, and Camden, at the attacks on Forts Mifflin and Clinton, and at the sieges of Charleston. In fact he was engaged in all the chief operations of the war. Perhaps his most noted achievements were the raising of a corps at Philadelphia, called the Irish Volunteers, who under him became famous for their fighting qualities, and the victory of Hob-

kut Hill, which, when in command of only a small force, he gained by superior military skill and determination against an American *corps d'armée*. In 1782 he was invalided. The vessel in which he returned to England was captured and carried into Brest. This occasioned the loss of his papers and personal records of the war which would doubtless have been interesting. He was speedily released, and on his arrival in England was much honoured by George III., who created him an English peer (Baron Rawdon) in March 1783.

In 1793 Lord Rawdon succeeded his father as earl of Moira. In 1794 he was sent with 10,000 men from Southampton to Ostend to enforce the duke of York and the allies in Flanders. The march by which he effected a junction was considered extraordinary. In 1803 he was appointed commander-in-chief in Scotland, and in 1804 he married Flora Muir Campbell, countess of Loudon in her own right. He and Lady Loudon lived at Duddington House near Edinburgh, where they were very popular. The opposition coming into power in 1806, Lord Moira, who had always voted with them, received the place of master general of the ordnance. He was now enabled to carry a philanthropic measure, of which from his first entry into the House of Lords he had been a great promoter, namely, the Debtors and Creditor Bill for relief of poor debtors. Ireland was another subject to which he had given particular attention. In 1797 there was published a *Speech by Lord Moira on the Disaffected and Lawless State of Ireland*. Lord Moira's sound judgment on public affairs, combined with his military reputation and the honourable uprightness of his character, won for him a high position among the statesmen of the day, and he gained an additional prestige from his intimate relations with the prince of Wales. On two occasions, in 1809 and again in 1812 after the assassination of Perceval, there were negotiations for placing him at the head of affairs. As a further mark of the regent's regard Lord Moira received the order of the Garter, and in the same year was appointed governor-general and commander-in-chief of India. He landed at Calcutta, and assumed office in succession to Lord Minto in October 1813. He was now fifty-nine years of age. One of the chief questions which awaited him was that of relations with the Goorkha state of Nepal. The Goorkhas, a brave and warlike little nation, failing to extend their conquests in the direction of China, had begun to encroach on territories held or protected by the East India Company, especially they had seized the districts of Bootwal and Seotaj, in the northern part of Oudh, and when called upon to relinquish these, they deliberately elected (April 1814) to go to war rather than do so. Lord Moira, having travelled through the northern provinces and fully studied the question, declared war against Nepal (November 1814). The enemy's frontier was 600 miles long, and Lord Moira, who directed the plan of the campaign, resolved to act offensively along the whole line. It was an enormous undertaking, because the native states of India were all watching the issue and waiting for any serious reverse to the English to join against them. At first all seemed to go badly, as the British officers too much despised the enemy, and the Sepoys were unaccustomed to mountain warfare, and thus alternate extremes of rashness and despondency were exhibited. But this rectified itself in time, especially through the achievements of General (afterwards Sir David) Ochterlony, who before the end of 1815 had taken all the Goorkha posts to the west, and early in 1816 was advancing victoriously within 80 miles of Katmandoo, the capital. The Goorkhas now made peace, they abandoned the disputed districts, ceded some territory to the English, and agreed to receive a British resident. Ever since they have faithfully kept these terms, the northern frontier of India

has been securely fixed, and the Goorkhas have entirely kept aloof from the machinations of disaffected native states. For his masterly conduct of these affairs Lord Moira was created Marquis of Hastings, in 1816.

He had now to deal with internal dangers. A treacherous combination of Mahatta powers was constantly threatening the continuance of British rule, under the guise of plausible assurances severally given by the peshwah, Sindia, Holkar, and other princes. At the same time the existence of the Pindharee state was not only dangerous to the English, as being a warlike power always ready to turn against them, but it was a scourge to India itself. In 1816, however, the Pindharees entered British territory in the Northern Circars, where they destroyed 399 villages. On this, permission was obtained to act for their suppression. Before the end of 1817 the preparations of Lord Hastings were completed, when the peshwah suddenly broke into war, and the British were opposed at once to the Mahatta and Pindharee powers, estimated at 200,000 men and 500 guns. "The whole was utterly shattered in a brief campaign<sup>1</sup> of four months (1817-1818). The peshwah's dominion had been annexed, and those of Sindia, Holkar, and the rajah of Berar lay at the mercy of the governor-general, and were saved only by his exceeding and honourable moderation. There was at last, after sixty years from the battle of Plassey, no question of the supremacy of British power in India, now more perfectly established, and more effectively dominant than that of Aurungzebe.<sup>2</sup> The Pindharees had ceased to exist, and peace and security had been substituted for misery and terror.

"It is a proud phrase to use," said Lord Hastings,<sup>3</sup> "but it is a true one, that we have bestowed blessings upon millions. Nothing can be more delightful than the reports I receive of the sensibility evinced by the inhabitants to this change in their circumstances. The smallest detachment of our troops cannot pass through that district without meeting everywhere eager and exulting greetings, the tone of which proves them to come from glowing hearts. Multitudes of people have, even in this short interval, come from the hills and fastnesses in which they had sought refuge for years, and have reclaimed their ancient deserted villages. The ploughshare is again in every quarter turning up the soil which had for many seasons have been stunted, except by the roots of predatory cavalry."

While the natives of India appreciated the results of Lord Hastings's achievements, the court of directors grumbled at his having extended the British territory. They also disliked and opposed his measures for introducing education among the natives and his encouraging the freedom of the press. Posterity has, however, vindicated the policy of Lord Hastings in all respects. In 1819 he obtained the cession by purchase of the island of Singapore. To finance his administration was very successful as not withstanding the expenses of his war he showed an annual surplus of two millions sterling. He laboured much at law reform, and he succeeded in greatly raising the status and character of the civil service of India. Lord and Lady Hastings by their stately and yet genial manners, and by their warm encouragement of literature and science, gave a high tone to the society of Calcutta. And he was the first governor-general to exhibit a personal interest in the exertions of the missionaries. Brilliant and beneficent as his career had been, Lord Hastings did not escape, any more than Clive, Warren Hastings, or Lord Wellesley the assaults of unjust detractors. His last years of office were embittered by the discussions on a matter very notorious

<sup>1</sup> For the interesting details of this campaign, as well as of the war in Nepal, see Prinsep's *History of the Political and Military Transactions in India, during the administration of the Marquis of Hastings*.

<sup>2</sup> Meadows Taylor's *Student's Manual of the History of India*, p. 598.

<sup>3</sup> Reply to Address of Inhabitants of Calcutta, see *Asiatic Journal*, February 1819.

at the time, namely, the affairs of the banking house of W. Palmer and Company. The whole affair was mixed up with insinuations against Lord Hastings, especially charging him with having been actuated by favoritism towards one of the partners in the firm. From imputations which were inconsistent with his whole character he has subsequently been exonerated. But while smarting under them he tendered his resignation in 1821, though he did not leave India till January 1823. He was much exhausted by the arduous and almost incredible labours which for more than nine years he had sustained. Among his characteristics it is mentioned that "his ample fortune absolutely sank under the benevolence of his nature," and, so far from having enriched himself in the appointment of governor-general, he returned to England in circumstances which obliged him still to seek public employment. In 1824 he arrived in the comparatively small post of governor of Malta, in which island he introduced many reforms and endeared himself to the inhabitants. He died in 1826, leaving a request that his right hand should be cut off and preserved till the death of the marchioness of Hastings, and then interred in her coffin.

No "Lark" of the myriads of Hastings has appeared, but a diary of his first tour in India, written for his children, has been published, and affords interesting indications of his character. For further particulars of his career see the *Asiatic Journal* for November 1823, and the *Asiatic Biography and Outline* for 1828, and for details of his Indian administration see Burney's work, the "Memoirs," Wilson's continuation of Mill's *History of India*, and other Indian histories. (A. GR.)

HAT, a covering for the head worn by both sexes, and distinguished from the cap or bonnet by the possession of a brim. The modern hat can be traced back to the petasos worn by the ancient Romans when on a journey, and hats with brims were also used, probably on like occasions, by the earliest Greeks. It was not till after the Norman conquest that the use of hats began in England. A "hatte of bever" about the middle of the 12th century was worn by some of the "nobles of the lande, mett at Clarendon," and Florissart describes hats and plumes which were worn at Edward's court in 1340, when the Quins order was instituted. In the 13th century the use of the scarlet hat which distinguished cardinals was sanctioned by Pope Innocent IV. The merchant in Chaucer's *Canterbury Tales* had

"On his heed a Flemish hood of hat,"

and from that period onwards there is frequent mention of "felt hattes," "beaver hattes," and other like names. Throughout mediæval times the wearing of a hat was regarded as a mark of rank and distinction. The caprices of fashion in hats during the reign of Elizabeth may be understood from an extract from Stubbs's *Anatomie of Dress*, published about 1585—

"Sometimes they use their shirpe on the crowne peaking up like the spere, or shirpe of a steple, standing a quarte of a yarde above the crowne of these hatts, some more, some lesse, as please the fantasmes of their incontinent mindes. Other some be flat, and lye close on the crowne, like the battlements of a house. Another hatte have round crownes, sometime with one luse of beards sometime with another, now black, now white, now russet, now rufous, now green, now yellow, now this, now that, never content with one colour in fashion two dyes to use and."

During the reign of Charles I. the Puritans affected a steple crown and broad-brimmed hat, while the Cavaliers a lopped aloft crown and a broader brim ornamented with feathers. Still greater breadth of brim and a profusion of feathers were fashionable characteristics of the hats in the times of Charles II, and the gradual expansion of brim led to the device of looping or tying up that portion. Hence arose various fashionable "cocks" in hats, such as the "Moumouth cock" &c., and ultimately, by the looping up equally of three sides of the low-crowned hat, the cocked hat which prevailed throughout the 18th century was elaborated.

Since the beginning of the present century the cocked hat as an ordinary article of dress has disappeared. The Quaker hat, plain, low in crown, and broad in brim, which originated with the sect in the middle of the 17th century, is also now becoming uncommon. See COSTUME.

HAT MANUFACTURE.—Until recent times hats were principally made by the process of felting, and as tradition ascribed the discovery of that very ancient operation to St. Clement, he was assumed as the patron saint of the craft, and the annual festival of the trade continues to be held on St. Clement's day, the 23d November. At the present day the trade is divided into two distinct classes. The first and most ancient is concerned with the manufacture of felt hats, and the second has to do with the recent but now most extensive and important manufacture of silk or dress hats. In addition to these there is the equally important manufacture of straw or plaited hats, which does not fall within the scope of this article, and hats are occasionally manufactured of materials and by processes not included under any of these heads, but such manufactures do not take a large or permanent position in the industry.

Felt Hats.—As now made, felt hats are of three different kinds, plain soft, plain hard, and "napped" or "rufted" felts. There is a great range in the quality of felt hats, the finer and more expensive qualities being made entirely of fur, for commoner qualities a mixture of fur and Saxony wool is used, and for the lowest kinds wool alone is employed. The processes and apparatus necessary for making hats of fur differ also from those required in the case of woollen bodies, and in large manufactories machinery is now generally employed for operations which at no distant date were entirely manual. In the smaller factories, and for special objects, the old hand processes are still in operation. An outline of the operations by which the old beaver hat was and to some extent yet is made will give an idea of the manual processes in making a fur napped hat, and the apparatus and mechanical processes employed in making ordinary hard and soft felts will afterwards be noticed.

Hatters' fur consists principally of the hair of rabbits (technically called coneys) and hares, with some proportion of nutria, musquash, and beaver's hair, and generally any parings and cuttings from furriers are also used. Furs intended for felting are deprived of their long coarse hairs, after which they are treated with a solution of nitrate of mercury, an operation called *casing* or *searage*, whereby the felting properties of the fur are greatly increased. The fur is then cut by hand or machine from the skin, and in this state it is delivered to the hat maker. Rabbits' fur for hat making now comes in large quantities from the Australian colonies, and it is also largely collected in the United Kingdom and in northern Europe. A considerable trade in rabbit fur for hat-making is maintained between Great Britain and the United States.

The old process of making a beaver hat is as follows. The materials of a proper beaver consist, for the body or foundation, of rabbits' fur, and for the nap, of beaver fur, although the beaver is often mixed with or supplanted by a more common fur. Such a hat may be regarded as the highest achievement of the hatter. In preparing the fur plate, the hatter weighs out a sufficient quantity

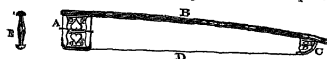


Fig 1

of rabbit fur for a single hat, which is spread out and combined by the operation of bowing. The bow or string ABC (fig. 1) is about 7 feet long, and it stretches a single cord of catgut D, which the workman vibrates by means of a wooden pin E, furnished with a half knot at each end. Holding the bow in his left hand, and the pin in his right, he crosses the vibrating string so as to construct that heap of tangled fur, which does not cover a space greater than that

of the hand. At each vibration some of the filaments start up to the height of a few inches, and fall away from the mass, a little to the right of the bow, their excursions being restrained by a concave frame of wicker work called the basket. One half of the material is first opened out, and, by bowing and gathering, or a patting use of the basket, the stuff is loosely matted into a triangular figure, about 50 by 88 inches, called a bat. In this formation care is taken to work about two-thirds of the fur down towards what is intended for the brim, which being effected, greater density is induced by gentle pressure with the basket. It is then covered with a wetish linen cloth, upon which is laid the hardening stick, a piece of dry half-tanned horse hide. On this the workman presses or bakes until the stuff adheres closely to the damp cloth, in which it is then doubled up, freely pressed with the hand, and laid aside. By this process, called *basoning*, the bat has become completely folded and thinned toward the sides and point. The other half of the fur is next subjected to precisely the same processes, after which a cone-shaped slip of stiff paper is laid on its surface, and the sides of the bat are folded over its edges to its form and size. It is then laid paper-side downward upon the first bat, which is now replaced on the hurdle, and its edges are transversely doubled over the introverted side-laps of the second bat, thus giving equal thickness to the whole body. In this condition it is reintroduced between folds of damp linen cloth, and again hardened, so as to unite the two halves, the knitting together of which is quickly effected. The paper is now withdrawn; and the body in the form of a large cone is removed to the plank or battery room.

The battery consists of an open iron boiler or kettle (A (fig. 2), filled with scalding hot water, with shelves, B, C, partly of mahogany and partly of lead, sloping down to it. Here the body is first dipped in the water, and the whole is then subjected to a preliminary process, when it is unfolded, rolled gently with a pin tapering towards the ends, turned, and worked in every direction, to toughen and shrink it, and at the same time prevent adhesion of its sides. Stopping or thickening the thin spots which now appear, on looking through the body,

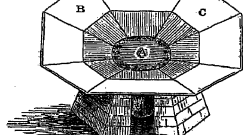


Fig. 2.

is carefully performed by dabbing on additional stuff in successive supplies from the hot liquor with a brush frequently dipped into the kettle, until the body be shrunken sufficiently (about one half) and thoroughly squared. When this is accomplished, a pin is performed, with a brush dipped into a thin varnish of shellac, and rubbed into the body, the surface intended for the inside having much more laid on than the outer, while the brim is made to absorb many times the quantity applied to any other part.

On being again dried, the body is ready to be covered with a nap of beaver hair. For this, in inferior qualities, the hair of the otter, nutria, or other fine fur is sometimes substituted. The requisite quantity of one or other of these is taken and mixed with a proportion of cotton, and the whole is bowed up into a thin uniform lap. The cotton merely serves to give additional body to the material to enable the workman to handle the lap. The body of the hat being damp, the workman spreads over it a covering of this lap, and by moistening and gentle patting with a brush the cut ends of the hair penetrate and fix themselves in the felt body. The hat is now put into a coarse hair cloth, dipped, and rolled in the hot liquor until the fur is quite worked in, the cotton being left on the surface loose and ready for removal. The blocking, dyeing, and finishing processes in the case of beaver hats are similar to those employed for ordinary felts, except that greater care and dexterity are required on the part of the workman, and further that the coarse hairs or kemps which may be in the fur are cut off by shaving the surface with a razor. The nap also must be laid in one direction, smoothed, and rendered glossy by repeated wangs, ironings, and brushings. A hat so finished is very durable, and it is much more light, cool, and easy-fitting to the head than the silk hat which has now so largely superseded it.

Till a comparatively recent date all attempts to apply machinery to the principal processes in felt hat-making resulted in failure. As is the case with many other labour-saving appliances of recent introduction, the first efficient machinery for felt hat-making was

devised in America, and from the United States the machine-making processes were introduced into England about the year 1858; and now in all large establishments machinery such as that alluded to below is employed. For the forming of hat bodies two kinds of machines are used, according as the material is of horse or wool. In the case of fur, the essential portion of the apparatus used consists of a cone of copper of the size and form of the body but to be made, perforated all over with small holes. The cone is made to revolve on its axis slowly over an orifice under which there is a powerful fan, which maintains a strong inward draught of air through the holes in the cone. At the side of the cone, and with an opening towards it, is a trunk or box from which the fur to be made is taken; and as the cone slowly revolves, the fur is drawn out like a cylinder, and as the cloud of separate hairs is expelled from the trunk, the current of air being sucked through the cone carries the fibres to it and causes them to cling closely to its surface. Thus a coating of loose fibres is accumulated on the copper cone, and these are kept in position only by the exhaust at work under it. When sufficient for a hat body has been deposited, a wet cloth is wrapped round it, over which an outer cone is slipped, and the whole is removed for felting, while another copper cone is placed in position for continuing the work. The felting of fur bodies is principally done by hand-labour, although machinery has recently been introduced by which it is partly done. The hat or body of wool hats is prepared by first carding in a modified form of carding machine. The wool is divided into two separate slivers as delivered from the card, these are wound singly round a central block of wood mounted and geared to revolve slowly with a reciprocating horizontal motion, so that there is a continual crossing and recrossing of the wool as the sliver is wound round the block, and the diagonal arrangement of the fibres, and the feature in the apparatus, as thereby the strength of the finished felt is made equal in every direction; and when strained in the blocking the texture yields in a uniform manner without rupture. The wool wound on the double block forms the material of the hat, which is separated by cutting around the median or base line, and slipping each half off at its own end. Into each cone of wool or hat an "inulver" is now placed to prevent the inside from matting, after which they are folded in cloth, and packed over a board or iron plate through which steam is blown. When well moistened and heated, they are placed between boards, and subjected to a rubbing action sufficient to harden them, and to produce the uniform strong planking or felting operations. The planking of wool hats is generally done by machine, in some cases a form of filling mill being used; but in all forms the agency is heat, moisture, pressure, rubbing and tarring.

When by thorough felting the hat bodies of any kind have been reduced to dense leathery cones about one-half the size of the original bat, they are dried, and, if hard felts are to be made, the bodies are at this stage hardened or stiffened with a varnish of shellac. Next follows the operation of blocking, in which the felt for the first time assumes approximately the form it is ultimately to possess. For this purpose the conical body is softened in boiling water, and is forcibly drawn over a hat-shaped wooden block. A string is passed round where the hand is to be, and the brim is then flattened out from the string. Next follows the dyeing of the hat in a bath of suitable materials, according to the shade required. In the dyeing, or with fine hats, each hat is separately dyed while on the block, but with commoner qualities it is the practice to dye before blocking. The finishing processes include shaying on a block, over which the hat brim receives a curved shape, and is smoothed and pouncing, which consists of smoothing the whole surface with emery or glass paper while the hat is still stretched on the block. The trimmer finally blades the outer brim and inserts the lining, after which the brim may get more or less of a perform or turn over according to prevailing fashion. Machines of American invention for blocking and pouncing have to some extent been introduced.

**Silk Hats.**—The silk hat, which has now become co-extensive with civilization, is an article of recent introduction. It was known in Florence about a century ago; but its manufacture was not introduced into France till about 1825, and its development has taken place entirely since that period. A silk hat consists of a light stiff body covered with a plush of silk, the manufacture of which in a brilliant glossy condition is the most important element in the industry; and in that manufacture the French are without equals. Originally the bodies were made of felt and various other materials, but now calico is almost exclusively used.

The calico is first stiffened with a varnish of shellac, and then cut into pieces sufficient for crown, side, and brim. The side-piece is wound round a wooden bat block, and its edges are joined by hot ironing, and the crown-piece is put on and similarly attached to

the sole. The brim, consisting of three thicknesses of calico and sometimes a second sole piece and another crown are cemented on. The whole of the body, thus prepared, now receives a coat of size, and subsequently it is varnished over, and thus it is ready for the operation of covering. In covering the boot, the under brim, generally of macramé, is first attached, then the upper brim, and lastly the crown and sole sewn together are drawn over. All these by hot ironing and stretching are drawn smooth and tight, and as the varnish of the body softens with the heat, body and cover adhere all over to each other without wrinkle or buckle. Dressing and polishing by means of damping, brushing, and ironing, come next, after which the hat is "warmed" in a revolving machine by the application of haircloth, or velvet, which cleans the nap and gives it a smooth and glossy surface. The brim has only then to be bound, the linings inserted, and the brim finally curved, when the hat is ready for use.

In all kinds of hat making the French excel, and in such centres as Anduze, Lyons and Paris the trade is very extensive and important. In the United Kingdom the felt hat trade is principally centred at Dorton and other localities in the neighbourhood of Manchester, and in America the States of New York and New Jersey enjoy the greater part of the industry. The value of the hats annually exported from the United Kingdom somewhat exceeds £1,000,000 sterling. (1 PA.)

**HATFIELD**, or **BISHOP'S HATFIELD**, a quiet, old-fashioned market-town of England, in the county of Hertford, is prettily situated on the side of a hill, 17½ miles N N W of London by railway. The church of St Etheldreda dates its foundation from Norman times, though only a small portion of the original building is now standing. Hatfield is the seat of a poor-law union embracing four parishes. The population of parish in 1871 was 3998. In the vicinity is Hatfield House, on the site of a palace of the bishops of Ely, which was erected about the beginning of the 12th century. In 1538 the manor was resigned to Henry VIII by Bishop Goodrich, in exchange for certain lands in Cambridge, Essex, and Norfolk, and after that monarch the palace was successively the residence of Edward VI immediately before his accession, of Queen Elizabeth during the reign of her sister Mary, and of James I. The last named exchanged it in 1607 for Thosbalds, near Chesham, in the same county, an estate of Sir Robert Cecil, afterwards earl of Salisbury, in whose family Hatfield House has since remained. The west wing of the present mansion, built for Cecil in 1608-11, was destroyed by fire in November 1835, the dowager-marchioness of Salisbury perishing in the flames. The grounds surrounding the house are extensive and beautifully laid out.

**HATHRAS**, or **HATHRAS**, a town in the Aligarh district, North-Western Provinces, India, in 27° 35' 31" N lat., 78° 6' 9" E long. It is well built, with numerous brick and stone houses, and is a prosperous trading centre. At the end of last century it was held by the Játákur, Daya Ram, whose ruined fort still stands at the east end of the town, and was annexed by the British in 1803. A municipal hall and school-house stand upon the brink of a new tank, and the town also contains a post-office and Government charitable dispensary. Since it came under British rule, Hathras has rapidly risen to commercial importance, and now ranks second to Cawnpore among the trading centres of the Doab. The exports include coarse sugar, gum of all sorts, oil seeds, cotton, and ghee, and the imports embrace iron, metal vessels, European and native cloth, drugs, spices, and miscellaneous wares. Population (1872), 23,589, comprising 21,121 Hindus and 248 Mahomedans.

**HATTINGEN**, a small town of Westphalia, Prussia, in the government district of Arnsberg and the circle of Bochum, is situated on the river Ruhr, about 21 miles N E of Düsseldorf. It is the seat of a commission of justice, and possesses a good school. The manufactures comprise cloth,

woollen and silk goods, tobacco, iron, and steel. In the town are large iron works, a brewery, and a brandy distillery. There are iron stone and coal mines in the neighbourhood, and the scanty remains of the Ikenburg, demolished in 1236. Hattingen was one of the Hanes towns of the Middle Ages. Its population in 1875 was 6995.

**HATTO I** (c. 850-913), tenth archbishop of Mainz, was born of a Swabian family about the middle of the 9th century. Educated at the monastery of Ellwangen or at Fulda, he attracted the attention of the emperor Arnulf, who in 883 made him abbot of Reichenau, in 889 abbot of Ellwangen, and in 891 archbishop of Mainz. During his reign Hatto acquired much ecclesiastical as well as political power. He presided over the council at Tübingen (895), at which the emperor and twenty six or twenty seven bishops attended, and was employed as ambassador to Charles the Simple and the king of Lorraine at their conference at Saint Goar in 899. Twice he accompanied Arnulf to Italy, in 894 and 896. On the death of Arnulf in 900, Hatto became regent and guardian of Louis, and in the contest with the dukes of Babenberg treacherously betrayed into the emperor's hands Count Adalbert, who was one of their partisans. Under Louis's successor, Conrad I., Hatto retained his influence, but he died in 913, two years after Conrad's accession. Another but less probable account has it that he was killed at the battle of Haresburg in 913. Hatto was a zealous churchman and a bold and energetic statesman. By his influence the crown and the church combined to check the growing power of the great nobles. In a letter to Pope John IX, still extant, he defends the German bishops from certain charges made to the pope. There is a tradition, due probably to his ambition and violence, that his corpse was seized by the devil and thrown into the crater of Mount Etna. The tradition of the Mouse Tower on the Rhine at Bingen is connected with another Hatto, also archbishop of Mainz (968-970).

**HATVAN**, a market town in the county of Heves, Hungary, is situated on the left bank of the Zagyva, at the junction of the Pest-Munkacs, Hatvan-Rutka, and Hatvan-Szolnok lines of railway, about 30 miles E N E of Budapest, 47° 40' N lat., 19° 41' E long. Hatvan possesses a handsome church and an elegant castle. There are two large cloth factories, and a court of assize is held there. Many of the inhabitants of the town and neighbourhood are employed in raising flax and uncles, in improving the breed of sheep and in tending large herds of horses, which graze wild on the spacious communal pasture-lands. Cattle fairs are frequently held in the town, and the trade in horses is considerable. In 1870 the population amounted to 4018, for the most part Magyars by nationality and Roman Catholics by creed.

As a fortified place Hatvan rose to some importance in the Middle Ages. In July 1625 a diet of Magyar nobles was held there. Subsequent to the catastrophe at Mohács (1526), Hatvan, along with many other Hungarian towns, fell into the hands of the Turks. After being besieged by the imperialists in 1594 and 1595, it was taken by them on the 2d September 1596. In 1878 it was almost completely destroyed by the Ottoman forces. On the 2d April 1849 the Austrians were defeated by the Hungarians in a sanguinary engagement near the town.

**HATZFELD** (Hungarian, *Zsomolya*), a market-town in the county of Torontál, Hungary, on the Austrian state line of railway, about 22 miles W of Temesvár, 46° 48' N lat., 20° 44' E long. The most important buildings are the Roman Catholic church, the chateau of Count Csekonics, a district court house, and the usual Government offices. The communal lands are large and very productive, more especially in wheat, barley, oats, Indian corn and rye seed. The rearing of horses is extensively carried on. In 1870 the population amounted to 7981, for the most part Germans by nationality and Roman Catholics by creed.

HAUCH, JOHANNES CARSTEN (1790-1872), Danish poet, was born of Danish parents residing at Fredrikshald in Norway, on the 12th of May 1790. In 1802 he lost his mother, and in 1803 returned with his father to Denmark. In 1807 he fought as a volunteer against the English invasion. He entered the university of Copenhagen in 1808, and in 1821 took his doctor's degree. He became the friend and associate of Steffens and Oehlenschläger, warmly adopting the new views about poetry and philosophy. His first dramas, *The Journey to Givstang* and *The Power of Fancy*, appeared in 1816 and 1817, and were followed by *Florensia*, but these works attracted little or no attention. Hauch therefore gave up all hope of fame as a poet, and resigned himself entirely to the study of science, to pursue which he went abroad. At Nice he had an accident which obliged him to submit to the amputation of one foot. He returned to dramatic production, and published *The Hamadryad*, *Bayazet*, *Tiberius*, *Grego y VII*, *The Death of Charles V* (1831), and *The Siege of Maestricht* (1832). These plays were violently attacked by the best critical organs, and enjoyed no success. Hauch then turned to novel writing, and published in succession four romances—*Valheim Gæben*, 1834, *Guldsmagen*, 1836, *A Polish Family*, 1839, and *Novels on the Rhine*, 1842. In 1842 he collected his shorter Poems. In 1846 he was appointed professor of the Scandinavian languages in Kiel, but returned to Copenhagen when the war broke out in 1848. About this time his dramatic talent was at its height, and he produced one admirable tragedy after another, among these may be mentioned *Svend Grathe*, 1841, *The Suters at Knekkullen*, 1849, *Marsh Stig*, 1850, *Ilonow Lost and Won*, 1851, and *Tycho Brahe's Youth*, 1852. From 1855 to 1860 Hauch was director of the Danish National Theatre, he produced three more tragedies—*The King's Favourite*, 1859, *Ilona of Novgorod*, 1855, and *Julian the Apostate*, 1866. In 1861 he published another collection of Poems, and in 1862 the historical epic of *Valdemar Atterdag*. From 1861, when he succeeded Oehlenschläger, to his death, he held the honorary post of professor of æsthetics at the university of Copenhagen. He died in Rome in 1872. Hauch was one of the most prolific of the Danish poets, and his writings are unequal in value. His lyrics and romances in verse are always fine in form and often strongly imaginative. In all his writings, but especially in his tragedies, he displays a strong bias in favour of mysticism and superstition. Of his dramas *Marsh Stig* is perhaps the best, and of his novels *Valheim Gæben* is admired the most.

HAUFF, WILHELM (1802-1827), a popular German novelist, was born at Stuttgart, 29th November 1802. Having lost his father, who was a Government official, at the age of seven, he reared with his mother to Tübingen, where he frequented the *Schola anatomica*. In 1818 he was sent to the *Klosterschule* at Blaubeuren, and two years later he entered the seminary of Tübingen. After having completed, in 1824, his philosophical and theological studies and taken his degree, he acted for two years as private tutor, and assumed, in January 1827, the editorship of the *Morgenblatt*. In the following month he married, and led a happy and quiet life, which was ended by a fatal illness on 18th November of the same year. Hauff's literary activity is comprised within the short space of about two years. In his *Marchenalmach* for 1826 he published the *Fairy Tales* he used to relate to his pupils during his tutorship. They were distinguished by an originality of conception, a playful though somewhat fantastic humour, and an elegance of style, not usually met with in similar productions. These fanciful tales founded his fame as a narrator, and form, together with his subsequent novels, several of which belong to the same species, the basis of his per-

manent reputation as an author. His next publication, *Mittheilungen aus den Memoiren des Satans*, "Extracts from the Memoirs of Satan" (3 vols 1826-27), was of a fragmentary kind, but gave additional proof of his talent as a humorist. In 1826 he wrote a novel—*Der Mann im Monde*, "The Man in the Moon"—with the intention of satirizing and parodying the sentimental sensualism of Clauben, but in the course of composition the projected parody became a regular imitation, and, as he issued the novel under the name of that romance, the latter brought an action against him for the abuse of his name, and gained his law-suit. Hauff succeeded, however, in morally annihilating that maudlin narrator by his witty *Controversial Sermon*, "Controversial Sermon" (1826). Animated by the genius of Sir Walter Scott, Hauff wrote a historical romance called *Lichtenstern* (1826), which illustrated the most interesting period in the history of Württemberg, and, being one of the first historical German novels, acquired, in spite of its weakness as a literary composition, great popularity throughout Germany. His fanciful work, *Phantasien im Breme Rathskeller* (1827), is pervaded, especially in the first portion of the book, by an exuberant spirit of conviviality, which exercises a cheering effect on the reader, but his most perfect fiction is the *Battle in von des-Ärre*. Hauff's works have gone collectively and separately, through many editions, and some of his shorter poems have become regular "Volkslieder."

HAUG, JOHANN CHRISTOPH FRIEDRICH (1761-1829), a German epigrammatist, was born March 19, 1761, at Niedertottingen in Württemberg, and received his early training from his father, who was afterwards professor and preacher at Stuttgart. From the gymnasium in this city Haug passed in 1776 to the Prince Charles academy, where he had Schuler as a fellow scholar, and, after finishing the philosophical and philological course, he devoted himself to the study of legal science with so much success that he attracted the attention of the duke. In 1784 he was appointed secretary of the private closet to his patron, in 1791 received the title of curial and palatine count, in 1797 became the duke's private secretary, and in 1817 was made *Hofrath* or aulic councillor and librarian of the public library at Stuttgart. In 1827 he travelled through northern Germany, and on 30th January 1829 he died. Haug began his career as an author by publishing *Sinnigedichte von Friedrich Hophthalmos* (Frankfurt, 1791), the pseudonym Hophthalmos being a jocular Greek equivalent of his own name (*Hug*, the eye equal to *Ophthalmos*, and therefore Haug equal to Hophthalmos).

Among his later works, which are as often characterized by a love of fun as by power of wit, it is enough to mention *Epigramme und vermischte Gedichte*, Berlin, 1806, *Hundert Epigramme auf Anze die Kunst und Zucht*, 1806, *Epigrammatische Spiele*, 1807, *Zuschnelnd dem Buech und locus gewidmet*, Stuttgart, n. d., *Mephisto Letztens*, Brunn, 1820, *Panorama der Lerne und des Witzes*, Tübingen, 1820, and, perhaps more famous than any, *Zweihundert Epigramme auf Herrs Witz und geistige Kraft*, Stuttgart, 1804, new edition, Brunn, 1823. Along with Weisae, Haug published *Epigrammatische Anthologia*, Stuttgart, 1807-1809, 10 vols. A selection from his poems appeared at Hamburg, 1807, 2 vols.

HAUG, MARTIN (1827-1876), Orientalist, was born at Ostfild near Balingen, Württemberg, January 30, 1827. As a self-taught lad he became a pupil in the gymnasium at Stuttgart at a comparatively late age, and in 1848 he entered the university of Tübingen, where he devoted himself to the study of the Oriental languages, and especially of Sanskrit under Roth. He afterwards for some time attended the lectures of Ewald and Benfey in Göttingen, and finally "habilitated" as a privat-docent at Bonn. In 1856 he removed to Heidelberg as collaborator in the preparation of Bunsen's *Bibelwerk*, and in 1859 he accepted an invitation to India, where he became superintendent of Sanskrit studies and professor of Sanskrit in Poona. There

his previous acquaintance with the Zend language and literature enabled him to associate with the Parsians on such terms as afforded the best opportunities for perfecting his knowledge in this department. The result of his researches was the volume of *Essays on the Sacred Language, Writings, and Religion of the Parsies* (Bombay, 1852). After a residence of six years in India, he was compelled by domestic circumstances to return to Wittenberg in 1855, from Stuttgart he was called to Munich as first professor ordinarius of Sanskrit and comparative grammar in 1858. He died at Ragnitz in Switzerland on the 3d of June 1876.

Besides the *Laysen on the Parsies*, of which a new edition, by West, has lately appeared on the publishers' press of the author, appeared in 1878, Haupt published a number of works of considerable import to the student of the literatures of ancient India and Persia. They include *Die Pahlavische u. der Zendische Sprache* (1854), *Die Sanskrit Sprache* (1855), *Indische Keilschriftsprachen* (1856), *Die fünf Uthters*, edited, translated, and expounded (1858-60), in edition with translation and explanation of *The Aitareya Brahmana of the Rigveda* (1868), *A Lecture on an original speech of Bharata* (1863), *An old Zend Pahlavi Glossary* (1867), *Ueber den Charakter der Pahlavische Sprache* (1868), *Das 18te Capitel des Wendidad* (1869), *Ueber das Avesta* (1870), *Das 18te Capitel des Wendidad* (1870), *Die Avesta* (1871), *Die Avesta* (1871), *Die Avesta* (1871).

HAUGE, HANS NIELSEN (1771-1824), founder of a religious sect within the Lutheran Church of Norway and Denmark, was born in the former country, in the parish of Thana, April 3, 1771. With the aid of various religious work, which he found in his father's house, he laboured to supplement the scanty education which he had received as a peasant's son. In his twenty-sixth year, believing him self divinely commissioned, he began to preach in his native parish and afterwards throughout Norway. In 1800 he passed to Denmark, where, as at home, he gained many followers and assistants, chiefly among the lower orders. Proceeding to Christiansand in 1803, Hauge set up a printing-press to disseminate his views more widely, but was almost immediately arrested for holding illegal religious meetings, and for insulting the regular clergy in his books, all of which were confiscated. After being in confinement for ten years, he was released in 1814 on payment of a fine, and returning to an estate at Breddwill, near Christiansia, he died there, March 29, 1824. His adherents, called *Haugians* or *Lese* (i.e., Readers), are still to be found in the south of Norway. By his writing and preaching he unquestionably did much to revive the spiritual life of the northern Lutheran Church. Though he cannot be said to have rejected any article of the Lutheran creed, the peculiar emphasis which he laid upon the evangelical doctrine of faith and grace involved considerable antagonism to the rationalistic or ascetical views commonly held by the established clergy.

Hauge's principal writings are *Vorleser til Aftenandelen og Gudstjensten*, 1796, *Antagning til nogle noksigtige Syn og Digtelser*, 1798, *Forklaring over Loven og Evangelium*, 1808. For an account of his life and doctrines, see *Chr. Fr. Hans Nielsen Hauge og hans Samtid*, Christiansia, 1875.

HAUPT, MORITZ or MORIZ (1808-1874), one of the principal representatives at once of classical and of vernacular philology in Germany, was born at Zittau, in Lusatia, July 27, 1808. His early education was mainly conducted by his father, Ernst Friedrich Haupt, burgo-master of Zittau, a man of good scholarly attainment, who used to take pleasure in tuning German hymns or Goethe's poems into Latin, and whose memoranda have been employed by Freytag in the 4th volume of his *Byden aus der deutschen Vergangenheit*. From the Zittau gymnasium, where he spent the five years 1821-1826, partly under the tuition of Landemann, Haupt removed to the university of Leipzig with the intention of prosecuting theology, but the natural bent of his mind and the influence of Professor G. Hermann soon turned all his energies in the direction of what were to be his life-studies. On the close of his university course

(1830) he returned to his father's house, and the next seven years were devoted to quiet work not only at Greek, Latin, and German, but at Old French, Provençal, and Bohemian. In 1834 he became acquainted with Endlicher, Karajan, and F. Wolf at Vienna, and formed with Lechmann at Berlin a friendship which had great effect on his intellectual development. In September 1837 he "habilitated" at Leipzig as privat dozent, and his first lectures, dealing with such diverse subjects as Catullus and the Nibelungenlied, indicated the twofold direction of his labours. A new chair of German language and literature being founded in his behalf, the new teacher received in succession the title of professor extraordinarius (September 1841) and professor ordinarius (November 1843), and in 1842 he married Louise Hermann, the daughter of his master and colleague. But the peaceful and prosperous course opening out before him at the university of Leipzig was brought to a sudden close. Having taken part in 1849 with Otto John and Theodor Mommsen in a political agitation for the maintenance of the imperial constitution, Haupt was deprived of his professorship by a decree of the 22d April 1851. Two years later, however, he was called to succeed Lechmann at the university of Berlin, and at the same time the Berlin academy, which had made him a corresponding member in 1841, elected him an ordinary member. For one and twenty years he continued to hold a prominent place among the scholars of the Prussian capital, making his presence felt, not only by the prestige of his erudition and the clearness of his intellect, but by the tirelessness of his energy and the ardent fearlessness of his temperament. His death, which took place with very little warning, February 5, 1874, was the result of heart disease.

Haupt's critical work is distinguished by a happy union of the most painstaking investigation with intrepidity of conjecture, and while in his lectures and addresses he was frequently stirred up by the excitement of the moment, and made sharp and questionable attacks on his opponents, in his writings he exhibits great self-control. The results of many of his researches are altogether lost, because he could not be prevailed upon to publish what fell much short of his own high ideal of excellence. To the progress of classical scholarship he contributed by *Questiones Catullianae* (1837), *Oberitalienische Dialecten* (1841), and editions of Ovid's *Fasti* and the *Symposium* of Gellius and Nemesius (1838), of Catullus, Tibullus, and Propertius (3d ed., 1868), of Horace (3d ed., 1871), and of Virgil (2d ed., 1878). As early as 1838 he with Hoffmann von Fallersleben started the *Allgemeine Blätter*, which in 1841 gave place to the *Zeitschrift für deutsches Alterthum*, of which he continued editor till his death. His *Tranmann von Amos des* (1839) and his *Leider, Bickelen, und der arme Hans* (1842), Rudolf von Ems's *Germania* (1840), and his *Engländer* (1844) are the principal German works which he edited. To form a collection of the French songs of the 16th century was one of his favourite schemes, but a little volume published since his death, *Fransösische Volkslieder* (1877), is the only monument of his labours in that direction. Three volumes of his *Opuscula* have appeared (Leipzig, 1875-1877). See Kirchhoff, "Gedächtnissrede," in *Abhandl. der Königl. Akad. der Wissenschaften zu Berlin*, 1876, and Otto Belger, *Moritz Haupt als Lehrer*, 1879.

HAUPTMANN, MORITZ (1792-1868), although a composer of ability, was of infinitely greater importance as a writer on the theory of music. He was born at Dresden, October 15, 1792, and studied music under Scholz, Lanske, Groesse, and Morlaach, the rival of Weber. Afterwards he completed his education as a violinist and composer under Spohr, and till 1820 held various appointments in private families, varying his musical occupations with mathematical and other studies bearing chiefly on acoustics and kindred subjects. For a time also Hauptmann was employed as an architect, but all other pursuits gave place to music, and a grand tragic opera, *Mathilda*, belongs to the period just referred to. In 1822 he entered the orchestra of Götting again under Spohr's direction, and it was then that he first taught composition and musical theory to such men as Ferdinand David, Burgmüller, Kiel, and others. His compositions at this

time chiefly consisted of motets, masses, cantatas, and songs. His opera *Mithilde* was performed at Cassel with great success. In 1842 Hauptmann obtained the position of cantor at the Thomas-school of Leipzig (long previously occupied by the great Johann Sebastian Bach) together with that of professor at the conservatoire, and it was in this capacity that his unique gift as a teacher developed itself and was acknowledged by a crowd of enthusiastic and more or less distinguished pupils. He died on January 3, 1868, and the universal regret felt at his death at Leipzig is said to have been all but equal to that caused by the loss of his friend Mendelssohn many years before. Hauptmann's compositions are marked by symmetry and perfection of workmanship rather than by spontaneous invention.

Amongst his vocal compositions—by far the most important portion of his work—may be mentioned two masses, choral songs for mixed voices (*Op. 39, 47*), and numerous part songs. The results of his scientific research were embodied in his book *Die Natur der Harmonik und Metrik* (1865), a standard work of the kind, in which a philosophic explanation of the forms of music is attempted.

#### HAUTMAN See BASHAN

HAUSER, KASPAR, a German youth whose life was remarkable from the circumstances of apparently inexplicable mystery in which it was involved. He appeared on May 20, 1828, in the streets of Nuremberg, dressed in the garb of a peasant, and with such a helpless and bewildered air that he attracted the attention of the passers-by. In his possession was found a letter purporting to be written by a poor labourer, stating that the boy was given into his custody on the 7th October 1812, and that according to agreement he had instructed him in reading, writing, and the Christian religion, but that up to the time fixed for relinquishing his custody he had kept him in close confinement. Along with this letter was enclosed another purporting to be written by the boy's mother, stating that he was born on the 30th April 1812, that his name was Kaspar, and that his father, formerly a cavalry officer in the 6th regiment at Nuremberg, was dead. The appearance, bearing, and professions of the youth corresponded closely with these credentials. He showed a repugnance to all nourishment except bread and water, was seemingly ignorant of outward objects, wrote his name as Kaspar Hauser, and said that he wished to be a cavalry officer like his father. For some time he was detained in prison at Nuremberg as a vagrant, but on July 18, 1828, he was delivered over to the care of Professor Daumer, who undertook to be his guardian and to take the charge of his education. On October 17, 1829, he was found to have received a wound in the forehead, which according to his own statement had been inflicted on him by a man with a blackened face. Having on this account been removed to the house of a magistrate and placed under close surveillance, he was visited by Earl Stanhope, who became so interested in his history that he sent him to Ansbach to be educated. After this he became clerk in the office of Feuerbach, president of the court of appeal, and his strange history was almost forgotten by the public when the interest in it was suddenly revived by his death on the 14th December 1833 from a deep wound on his left breast. He affirmed that the wound was inflicted by a stranger, but many believed it to be the work of his own hand, and that he did not intend it to be fatal, but only so severe as to give a sufficient colouring of truth to his story.

In 1830 a pamphlet was published at Berlin, entitled *Kaspar Hauser nicht unwahr scheinend ein Bekenntnis*, but the truthfulness of his statements was defended by Daumer, who published *Erzählungen vom Kaspar Hauser* (Nuremberg, 1829), and *Erzählungen vom Kaspar Hauser* (Frankfurt, 1869), as well as *Kaspar Hauser, sein Wesen, seine Unschuld, etc.* (Regensburg, 1878), in answer to Meyer's *Authentische Mittheilungen über Kaspar Hauser* (Ansbach, 1872). Feuerbach awakened considerable psychological interest in

the case by his pamphlet *Kaspar Hauser, Bekenntnis eines Verirrten aus dem Sassenleben* (Ansbach, 1832), and Karl Stieler also took part in the discussion by publishing *Materialien zur Geschichte K. Hausers* (Hendelberg, 1836). The theory of Daumer and Feuerbach was that the youth was the son of the grand duke Charles of Baden, and that he had been kidnapped by the countess of Hohenberg in order to secure the succession to the children of the grand-duke Charles Frederick, but this theory was set aside in 1876 by the publication in the *Augsburger Allgemeine Zeitung* of the official record of the baptism, post mortem examination, and burial of the heir supposed to have been kidnapped. See *Kaspar Hauser und sein bairisches Fräulein* (Hendelberg, 1876).

HAUY, RENE JUST (1743–1822), an eminent French mineralogist, commonly styled the Abbé Haüy, from being an honorary canon of Notre Dame, was born at St Just in the department of Oise, February 28, 1743. His parents were in a humble rank of life, and were only enabled by the kindness of friends to educate their son. He was sent to Paris to the college of Navarre, and afterwards to that of Lamoignon, where he finished his course amid innumerable privations and difficulties. He escaped from these when, in 1764, he was himself appointed one of the teachers in the first of the above named colleges. He began to devote his leisure hours to the study of botany, but an accident directed his attention to another field in natural history. Happening to let fall a beautiful specimen of calcareous spar belonging to a friend, he discovered, by examining the fragments, the geometrical law of crystallization. By experimenting on a hexahedral crystal of this substance, he found that it could be so dissected, by drawing it by planes parallel to certain edges, as to exhibit a rhombohedral nucleus, and, by extending his experiments, he farther showed that the same result could be obtained from mechanical division of every crystal of the same species. This led him to the theory that crystals are composed of what he called “integral molecules,” which he held had each the same shape as the respective nuclei got at by mechanical division. To obtain the different crystalline forms these molecules were supposed to be built up in layers round the nucleus, each layer diminishing regularly in the number of rows of molecules, and the rows at the same time diminishing in the number of molecules according to the nature of the crystal. A full account of his mathematical theory of this subject is given by Haüy in his *Traité de Minéralogie* (see CRYSTALLOGRAPHY). Daubenton and Laplace immediately recognized the scientific value of the discovery, which, when communicated to the Academy, secured for its author a place in that society. Besides the important service which he rendered to crystallography, Haüy also greatly increased our knowledge of pyroelectricity. He demonstrated by experiment in the case of tourmaline that the positive and negative charges of electricity at the respective ends of the crystal diminish rapidly as we approach the middle point, where they disappear. He showed also that each particle of a broken pyro-electric crystal itself exhibits polarity, and he was likewise the first to observe that, in all minerals, the pyro-electric state has an important connexion with the want of symmetry of the crystals. In tourmaline, for instance, he found the vitreous charge always at the summit with six, and the resinous at the summit with three faces (see ELECTRICITY). When the Revolution broke out, Haüy was thrown into prison, and his life was even in danger, when he was saved by the intercession of Geoffroy Saint-Hilaire. Under Napoleon he became professor of mineralogy at the museum of natural history. He also obtained other scientific preferment, of which he was deprived by the feeble Government of the Restoration, though his royalism had been a serious bar to his promotion under the empire. His latter days were consequently clouded by the poverty which had threatened to blight his early career. But the courage and high moral qualities which had helped him forward in his youth did



not desert him in his old age; and he lived cheerful and respected till his death, June 9, 1892.

The following are his principal works: — *Essai d'une Théorie sur la Structure des Cristaux*, 1784; *Exposition raisonnée de la Théorie de l'Électricité et du Magnétisme, d'après les Principes d'Épinus*, 1787; *De la Structure considérée comme Caractère Distinctif des Minéraux*, 1793; *Exposition abrégée de la Théorie de la Structure des Cristaux*, 1793; *Extrait d'un Traité Élémentaire de Minéralogie*, 1797; *Traité de Minéralogie*, 1802, 4 vols., 2d ed.; *Traité Élémentaire de Physique*, 1808, 1806, 2 vols.; *Tableau Comparatif des Résultats de la Cristallisation, et de l'Analyse Chimique relativement à la Classification des Minéraux*; *Traité des Pierres Précieuses*, 1817; *Traité de Cristallographie*, 1822, 2 vols. He also contributed papers to various scientific journals, particularly the *Journal de Physique*, *Magnasin Encyclopédique*, *Annales du Muséum d'Histoire Naturelle*, and *Journal des Mines*.

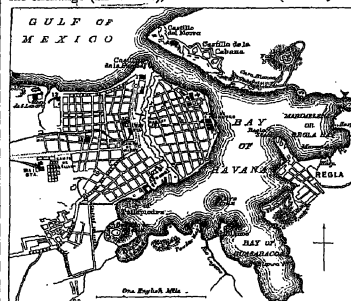
HAVANA, HAVANNAH, or HABANA, more fully San Cristóbal de la Havana, the capital of Cuba, and one of the principal seats of commerce in the New World, is situated on the northern coast of the island in 23° 9' 24" N. lat. and 82° 22' 36" W. long. From the sea it presents a picturesque appearance. The background is indeed tame; but the long lines of fortifications, the church-towers, and the shipping relieve the somewhat tawdry effect of the gaily coloured houses. Though the walls, completed in 1702, have been almost entirely demolished since 1863, it is still usual to speak of the intramural and the extramural city. The former, lying close to the harbour, has streets of the narrowest possible description consistent with the existence of wheel traffic. The latter has been laid out on a spacious plan, with wide thoroughfares frequently fringed with trees. Most of the houses are built of solid stone and have flat roofs, after the manner in vogue in southern Spain, and, as the erection of wooden buildings has been illegal since 1772, it is only in the suburban districts that they are at all common. The lavish use of white marble in the decoration both of shops and dwelling-houses is one of the peculiarities of the popular taste; and it is worthy of remark that, though the native quarries would supply what is wanted, the marble is brought from Genoa. Cafés, restaurants, clubs, and casinos are both exceedingly numerous and largely frequented, forming a good indication of that general absence of domestic life among the white population which surprises the European visitor. Havana is still, as of yore, a city of smells and noises. There is no satisfactory cleaning of the streets or draining of the sub-soil, and the harbour is visibly rendered foul by the impurities of the town. Victorias, — of which it is the Cuban boast that there are 6000, — volantes, and other vehicles are driven through the thoroughfares with the utmost recklessness; and tramways and railways in the American fashion contribute to the confusion.

The principal defences of Havana are the Castillo de la Punta, to the west of the harbour entrance, the Castillo del Morro and San Carlos de la Cabaña to the east, the Santo Domingo de Atrases, which lies at the head of the western arm of the bay and commands both the city and the neighbourhood, and the Castillo del Principe, situated on an eminence to the west, and forming the terminus of the great Paseo Militar. El Morro, as it is popularly called, was first erected in 1589, but additions have been frequently made. La Punta, a much smaller fort, is of the same period. The castle of Atrases dates from about 1763, when the Conde de Rieja was governor of the island. Cabaña, which alone has accommodation for 4000 men, fronts the bay for a distance of 800 yards, and is defended on the land side by three bastions. To the east there lies a smaller fort, No. 4, or San Diego, on a hill about 100 feet high.

Of the churches in the city, which number more than a score, the most noteworthy is the cathedral erected in 1724 by the Jesuits. Externally it is plain though symmetrical; but within it has richly frescoed walls, a floor of variegated

marble, and costly altars. In the wall of the chancel, a second-rate medallion and a sordid inscription distinguish the tomb of Columbus, whose remains were removed thither in 1796. It is enough to mention the churches of San Juan de Dios, dating from 1673, Santa Catalina (1658), San Agustino (1608), and San Felipe, which possesses a large library. Of monasteries and nunneries there is of course no lack; and the same may be said of charitable institutions. The most important of the seven hospitals is the Real Casa de Beneficencia, founded about 1790, and containing an orphan asylum, a home for vagrants, a lunatic asylum, and an infirmary.

Besides the university established in 1798, the city possesses a theological seminary, a military school, and a school of art. The governor and the bishop have their respective palaces, the former a large yellow stone building in the Plaza de Armas; a large prison, erected in 1771, capable of receiving 500 inmates, and with barracks for a regiment, forms a striking object in the general view of the city; and among the other public buildings are the exchange (El Muelle), the custom-house (formerly the



Plan of Havana.

- |               |                            |                       |
|---------------|----------------------------|-----------------------|
| 1. Prison.    | 5. University.             | 9. Military Hospital. |
| 2. Church.    | 6. Mathematics University. | 10. Theatre.          |
| 3. Cathedral. | 7. Marine Post-Office.     | 11. Barracks.         |
| 4. Exchange.  | 8. Public Library.         | 12. Beneficencia.     |

church of San Francisco), and the maestranza or headquarters of the artillery. Of the theatres, which have still to compete with the bull-ring and the cock-pit, the most important is the Tacon, erected in 1838, and capable of accommodating about 3000 persons. The promenades, drives, and public gardens form a notable feature of Havana: it is sufficient to mention the Plaza de Armas, with a statue of Ferdinand VII.; the Prado or Paseo Isabel, a long and handsome boulevard laid out in the 18th century; the Campo del Marte or drill-park; the Parque Isabel, the Paseo Tacon, the botanical gardens, and the gardens of Los Molinos, the suburban residence of the captain-general. The palm-tree avenues of Los Molinos are unusually fine. Along the borders of the bay there are several fine embankments, of which the best is perhaps that called either the Salon O'Donnell or the Alameda de Paula. In the coral rock of the coast sea-baths have been excavated, so that the bathers may run no risk from the sharks; each apartment is about 12 feet square and 6 or 8 feet deep, and the water enters by two port-holes. The city is supplied with water from the river Chorrera by an aqueduct (Canal Isabel II.) constructed by Antonelli under Philip II., and

the number of fountains is considerable. The markets—of which the most noteworthy are the Mercado de Cristinos, erected in 1836, and the Mercado de Tacón, or Plaza de Vapor—are abundantly stocked with fruits and vegetables. Several of the suburban villages (e.g., Chorrera, Guanabacón) are attractive places of resort.

The bay of Havana makes one of the finest harbours in the world, easy of access, spacious enough to contain about 1000 large vessels, deep enough to allow them to come close up to the wharves, and, except in the case of a hurricane, well protected on all sides. The entrance, encountered by neither bar nor rock, is 980 feet wide and 4200 feet long. Within, the bay breaks up into three distinct arms, named respectively Marmay Bay, or Regla Bay, Guasimacón Bay, and El Fondo, or Bay of Atares. The wharves are well built, and a good floating dock maintained by a private company. On the left hand of the entrance stands a lofty lighthouse tower.

In 1885 1865 vessels entered with a burthen of 686,641 tons, and in 1878 2184 vessels with a burthen of 921,932 tons, and in the first six months of 1878 741 vessels with a burthen of 446,786 tons. The average number of vessels annually in the ten years from 1864 to 1873 was 1981 (771,150 tons), and of this number 647 (284,378 tons) were American, 689 (100,231 tons) Spanish, 484 (131,216 tons) British, 55 (46,218 tons) French, 55 (16,200 tons) Norwegian, and 82 (31,693 tons) German.

In spite of high tariffs and civil war, and the competition of Matanzas, Cárdenas, Camaguey, and other Cuban ports opened to increase. As indicated by the statistics just quoted, the chief foreign customers are Britain and the United States, the latter its gradually taking a greater proportion of the trade, the British interest is gradually diminishing. The two staple articles of export are sugar and tobacco. While the average export of sugar for the last ten years of the century was only 177,966 boxes (61,199,200 lb), by 1865 it had reached 965,677 boxes (386,270,800 lb), and by 1878 145,601 boxes, 102,788 hogsheads, and 91,974 tons, or a grand total of nearly 408 millions of lb. In 1867 there were exported 7,716,428 cigars, and in 1878 10,007,000 cigars, and the corresponding numbers for 1878 were 18,864,800 lb and 14,638 millions. Other exports of importance are rum, wax, and honey. The nature and quantities of the imports on an average of the ten years 1868 to 1877 are 205,202 quintals (100 lb each) of pork, beef, 184,208 quintals of cod fish (81,678 from Europe, and 41,010 from United States), 359,926 barrels of flour, 627,786 quintals of rice (mainly from the East Indies), 149,095 quintals of lard (from United States), 55,508 pipes of wine, 145,589 tons of coal, 544,005 jars of olive oil, and 92,887 quintals of coal-oil.

The staple manufacturing industry of Havana is that of tobacco. Of the cigar factories there are about 1500, many of which are of the first class. The Royal and Imperial Factory of La Homidada, which occupies a whole square, and is considered one of the great sights of the city, produces daily 3,636,000 cigarettes. Besides the making of boxes and cigars, and other articles necessarily involved in its sugar and tobacco trade, Havana also prosecutes to some extent the building of outrages and ships, and the manufacture of iron and machinery, but the weight of taxation is too great to allow the development of any business requiring great capital. There were six banks in the city in 1877, the most important being the Spanish Bank, through which all the Government paper is issued. Havana has steam communication several times a week with New York, once a week with Baltimore, Philadelphia, and New Orleans, and about as frequently with several ports in England, Spain, and France. It is the terminus of a railway system which reaches Cárdenas, Camaguey, Matanzas, Sagua, &c., and short lines run out to the Bay of Havana and Matanzas. Telegraphic cables to all parts of the island, and a submarine cable to Key West forms part of the line of communication between Appanual and New York.

The population of Havana and the suburbs was stated at 189,096 in 1817, at 196,994 in 1841, at 208,676 in 1868, and at 168,184 in 1871. Of this last number 108,764 were whites, 27,698 free negroes, mulattoes, &c., and 32,807 slaves. By 1878 the total had reached, it is said, 280,000. No other city in Cuba can be reckoned with much confidence as to their accuracy. Among the white population the proportion of males to females is extraordinarily high, according to the official returns, there die annually 8822 white males to 1204 white females. The average rate of mortality is 27 per thousand annually. Foreigners are subject to yellow fever, especially from June to September.

Havana, originally founded by Diego Velasquez in 1515 on an unhealthy site near the present harbour of Vedado on the south coast, was removed to its actual position about 1519, and soon began to be

considered one of the most important places in the New World. In 1598 the buccannons lost the settlement in a battle, but was soon after restored by Di Soto, who built the fortress of La Punta. The residence of the captain-general was transferred to Havana from Santrigo de Cuba in 1691, and in 1689, to protect the city, which had been plundered by the pirate Jacobo Sotomayor in 1556 and the citizens, by Diata in 1585, Philip II of Spain ordered the erection of the Rietras de La Punta and the castle of El Morro on Los Tres Reyes. In the course of the 17th century the port became the great rendezvous for the gold ships of Spain, and the commercial centre of the Spanish possessions in America. The English under Admiral Pocock and the duke of Albemarle captured Havana in 1762, but it was restored to the Spaniards on 10th Feb 1763, in exchange for the Moluccas. The *Guerra de la Ziborra*, the first general rebellion in Cuba, appeared in 1782. In 1771 the port, which had formerly been, like the rest of Cuba, monopolised by Seville and Cadix, was declared open to all nations in regard to certain articles of trade, and this liberty was extended in 1816 to all goods whatsoever. During the despotic paternal administration of Tacón many improvements were introduced at Havana, the railway from Havana to Guines was commenced in 1835, a ferry between the city and the suburb of Regla was set on foot in 1837, and night watchmen, a police force, and a fire brigade were established. The first line of steamships from Cadix to Havana dates from 1850. Like the rest of Cuba the city has frequently suffered severely from hurricanes, the most violent being those of 1768 (St Theresa's), 1810, and 1846.

See the works referred to under CUBA.

HAVELBERG, an ancient town of Brandenburg, Prussia, in the government district of Potsdam and the circle of Westprignitz, is situated on the Havel, about 6½ miles from its junction with the Elbe. The railway from Berlin to Glöden (¼ miles), on the Berlin and Hamburg Railway. The town is built partly on an island in the Havel and partly on hills on the right bank of the river, on one of which stands the fine cathedral. The two parts, which are connected by a bridge, were incorporated as one town in 1875. Havelberg is the seat of a commission of justice. The inhabitants are chiefly engaged in farming, tobacco and gun manufacturing, sugar-refining, and shipbuilding, and in the timber trade. Population in 1875, 6907.

Havelberg held a bishopric from the year 946, the bishop, however, generally resided at Putbus or Wittstock, a few miles to the north. In 1648 the bishopric was reduced, and the cathedral passed to the Protestant Church and retained its endowments till the edict of 1810, by which all former ecclesiastical possessions were assumed by the crown. The final secularization was delayed till 1819. Havelberg was formerly a strong fortress, but in the Thirty Years' War it was taken from the Danub by the imperial troops in 1627. Recaptured by the Swedes in 1631, and again in 1635 and 1636, it was in 1637 taken by the Saxons under Kitzing. It suffered severely from a conflagration in 1870.

HAVERLOCK, SIR HENRY (1798-1867), an eminent British soldier, was the second of four brothers (all of whom entered the army), and was born at Ford Hall, Bishop-Wearmouth, Sunderland, on the 5th of April 1798. His parents were William Haverlock, a wealthy shipbuilder in Sunderland, and Jane, daughter of John Carter, solicitor at Stockton-on-Tees. When about five years old Henry accompanied his elder brother William to Mr Bradley's school at Swancombe, whence at the age of ten he removed for seven years to Charterhouse School. In accordance with the desire of his mother, who had died in 1811, he entered the Middle Temple in 1813, studying under Chitty the eminent special pleader. His legal studies having been abridged by a misunderstanding with his father, he in 1816 accepted a second lieutenancy in the Rifle Brigade (95th), procured for him by the interest of his brother William. During the following eight years of service in Britain he read extensively and acquired a good acquaintance with the theories of war. In 1823, having exchanged into the 21st and thence into the 13th Light Infantry, he followed his brothers William and Charles to India, first qualifying himself in Hindustani under Dr Ghalurist, a celebrated Orientalist. At the close of twenty-three years' service he was still a lieutenant, and it was not until 1838 that, after three years' adjutancy of his regiment, he became captain. Before this, however, he had held several staff

appointments, notably that of deputy assistant-adjutant-general of the forces in Burmah till the peace of Yandabo, of which he, with Comden and Knox, procured the ratification at Ava from the "Golden Pock," who bestowed on him the "gold leaf" insignia of Burmese nobility. His first command had been at a stockade capture in the war, and he was present also at the battles of Napadee, Patanago, and Pughan. He had also held during his lieutenant various interships and the adjutancy of the king's troops at Chinnabar. In 1828 he published at Siamprong *Campaigns in Ava*, and in 1829 he married Hannah Shepherd, daughter of Dr. Mashman, the eminent missionary. About the same time he became a Baptist, being baptized by Mr. John Mack at Serampore. During the first Afghan war he was present as aide-de-camp to Sir Willoughby Cotton at the capture of Ghazni, July 29, 1839, and at the occupation of Cabul. After a short absence in Bengal to secure the publication of his *Memoirs of the Afghan Campaign*, he returned to Cabul in charge of recruits, and became interpreter to General Elphinstone. In 1840, being attached to Sir Robert Sale's force, he took part in the Khaird Cabul fight, in the celebrated passage of the defiles of the Ghilzees (1841), and in the fighting from Teseen to Jellalabad. Here, after many months' siege, his column in a sortie en masse defeated Akbar Khan, April 7, 1842. He was now made deputy adjutant-general of the infantry division in Cabul, and in September he assisted at Jagdullah, at Teseen, and at the release of the British prisoners at Cabul, besides taking a prominent part at Isafah. Having obtained a regimental majority he next went through the Mahabata campaign as Persian interpreter to Sir Hugh (Viscount) Gough, and distinguished himself at Mahajuyy in 1843, and also in the Sikh campaign at Mudki, Ferozshah, and Sobson in 1845. For these services he was made deputy adjutant-general at Bombay. He exchanged from the 15th to the 39th, then as second major into the 63d at the beginning of 1849, and soon afterwards left for England, where he spent two years. In 1854 he became quartermaster-general, then full colonel, and lastly adjutant-general of the troops in India. In 1857 he was selected by Sir James Outram for the command of a division in the Persian campaign, during which he was present at the actions of Mohummalah and Ahwaz. Peace with Persia set him free, just as the mutiny broke out, and he was chosen to command a column "to quell disturbances in Allahabad, to support Lawrence at Lucknow and Wazirah at Cawnpore, to disperse and utterly destroy all mutineers and insurgent gangs." At Peshawar, July 12th, at Aong and Pandooitooie on the 16th, at Cawnpore on the 16th, at Onso on the 20th, at Buaetunge on the 30th and again on August 5th, at Boothya on August 12th, and at Bithoor on the 16th, he defeated overwhelming forces. Twice he advanced for the relief of Lucknow, but twice prudence forbade a reckless exposure of troops wasted by battle and disease in the almost impracticable task. Reinforcements arriving at last under Outram, he was enabled by the generosity of his superior officers to crown his successes on the 25th of September 1857 by the capture of Lucknow. There he died, November 24, 1857, of dysentery, brought on by the anxieties and fatigues connected with his victorious march, and with the subsequent blockade of the British troops. He lived long enough to receive the intelligence that he had been created KCB for the first three battles of the campaign, but of the major-generalship which was shortly afterwards conferred he never knew. On November 25, before tidings of his death had reached England, letters patent were directed to create him a baronet, and a pension of £1000 a year was voted at the assembling of parliament. The baronetcy was afterwards bestowed upon

his eldest son, while to his widow, by royal order, was given the rank to which she would have been entitled had her husband survived and been created a baronet. To both widow and son pensions of £1000 were awarded by parliament. See *Mashman's Life of Hawelock*, 1860.

**HAVERCAMP**, **SILVER** (1683-1742), classical editor and numismatist, was born at Utrecht in December 1683. After studying at the university of his native town and at Leyden, he entered the church, and became minister of Stal aan't Haringvliet, in the island of Overflakke. There he remained till 1721, when he succeeded Gronovius in the Greek chair at Leyden, becoming shortly afterwards professor of history and rhetoric also. He died at Leyden, April 23, 1742.

The editions of Latin and Greek authors he useful and learned compilations, rather than original critical commentaries, and but frequent traces of the rapidity with which they were produced. They are the following—*Terentius*, 1713, *Lucretius*, 1725, *Josephus*, 1728, *Eutropius*, 1729, *Cicero*, 1738, *Suetonius*, 1742, and *Cassiodorus*, 1748. See *Dublin's Classica* under these names. His principal numismatic works are *Dissertationes de Alexandri Magni Numismate*, 1729, *Thesaurus Numismaticus*, 1734, *Unusquisque*, *Epistole, illustratae pro Nicolae* (in Dutch), 1736, *Nummophilactes sive signa Christiana*, 1742. He was also the author of *Syllabus Symplicii unius de lingua Græca, una et recta Pronuntiatio coniecturae usqueque usque*, 1740, *De rebus antiquis*, 1740, and *De rebus antiquis* in *Antiquitates Romanas*, 1740.

**HAVERFORDWEST** (in Welsh **HAFLEFORD**), the chief town of Pembrokeshire, a seaport, market town, parliamentary and municipal borough, and county by itself, is picturesquely situated on a hill overlooking the West Cleddau river, 8 miles N N E of Milford, and 276 miles W N W of London. The town is clean and well built, though somewhat irregular, owing to its position. Its principal buildings are the guildhall and the market-house, both modern, and the church of St. Mary, one of the finest churches in South Wales. The old church of St. Martin is close to the castle, of which, built on a rocky eminence overlooking the river, only a wall and the keep remain, the latter with considerable additions being till lately used as the county prison. It was built by Gilbert de Clare, first earl of Pembroke, and during the insurrection of Owen Glendower was defended for Henry IV against the French allies of the Welsh. In the civil wars of the 17th century it was held by the royalists. The castle was visited in 1188 by Gualdus Cambrensis and Archbishop Baldwin. Below the end of the Parade, a public walk overlooking the river, are the ruins of a priory of Black Canons of the order of St. Augustine, dedicated to St. Mary and St. Thomas. The priory was founded in the 12th century it was endowed, though not founded by Robert de Hwlford, whose liberal grants were confirmed by Edward III. The old wall and fortifications that formerly surrounded the town have totally disappeared. On the north side of the river is the suburb of Pendegeton, containing the remains of an ancient manor, formerly occupied by a family of that name. Haverfordwest is the seat of an assize court and quarter sessions, and with the contributory boroughs of Fishguard and Narberth returns one member to parliament. The river is navigable as high as the bridge for small craft. Timber, tea, and spirits are imported, and coal, cattle, butter, and grain are exported. In 1105, the Flemings, who had been driven from their own country by invasions, were settled in this locality by Henry I, and the Flemings who had served under Stephen afterwards increased the colony. Their influence is still to be traced in the non-use of the Welsh language among the townspeople, and in the peculiar shape of the cottages in the surrounding country. Population in 1871, 6623, area, 1430 acres.

**HAVERHILL**, a city in Essex county, Massachusetts, United States, is situated on the north bank of the Merrimack river, 18 miles from its mouth, and opposite the towns

of Bradford and Groveland, with which it is connected by two fine bridges. It has railway communication with Boston, which is 32 miles south, and with Portland, 78 miles north. The city contains a handsome soldiers' monument of white marble, erected in 1860, several public halls, including the city hall, the Freemasons' and the Oddfellows' halls, and a public library with 30,000 volumes. Haverhill derives its prosperity from the manufacture of boots and shoes, chiefly of the finer kinds, in which about 150 firms are engaged, employing from 6000 to 8000 hands, and turning out goods to the annual value of about £2,000,000. Besides these there are about forty manufacturers of different articles used in this trade, as heels, lasts, shoe-nails, &c. The other manufactures include hats, paper-boxes, and woollen goods. The first settlement at Haverhill was made in 1640, and for 70 years as a frontier town it suffered much from savage attacks. A fine granite and bronze monument has been recently erected to commemorate the heroism of the early settlers. Haverhill was incorporated in 1645, and received its city charter in 1870. The population in 1870 amounted to 13,092, of whom 2003 were foreigners. In 1879 the number was estimated at 15,000.

HAVRE, Le (originally HAVRE DE GRÂCE), a town of France, the second to Marseilles in importance as a seaport, capital of an arrondissement in the Département de Seine-Inférieure, is situated on the north bank of the estuary of the Seine, 143 miles N.W. of Paris and 55 W. of Rouen by rail. The greater part of the town stands on a level plain, but from the heights on which Ingouville, since 1856 united to Havre, is situated, a charming and varied prospect is obtained. In the lower part of the town the streets run chiefly in straight lines, and they are grouped round the basins or docks, which communicate by lockgates and are placed so as to form a triangle entered from the Outer Port. The old fortifications surrounding the town were demolished in 1856, and it is now defended by forts erected on the heights of Ingouville and Sainte-Adresse. The principal street is the Rue de Paris, running from north to south in the centre of the town, and among the principal promenades may be mentioned the Boulevard de Strasbourg, the Place Louis XVI., and the Jetée du Nord, which terminates in a lighthouse. Havre possesses a tribunal of the first instance, a tribunal of commerce, an exchange and chamber of commerce, a chamber of agriculture, a hydrographic school, and a communal college. The principal buildings are the churches of Notre Dame and St Francis, the new Hôtel de Ville, the Musée, containing apartments for a library, and for art, antiquities, and natural history, and with statues in front of Bernardin de St Pierre and Gasimir Delavigne, natives of Havre, by David Angers; the theatre, the club-house called the *Cercle du Commerce*, the new palace of justice, the marine arsenal, the town-house, the custom-house, and the Frascati bath-house. The docks are among the finest in the world, and consist of eight separate basins, which, with the late enlargement of the outer harbour, afford 150 acres of accommodation for vessels. The new entrance to the harbour has a width of 100 metres or 328 feet. Lines of rails have lately been laid along the docks. As these have absorbed much of the space on the quays, lading is frequently a slow and tedious process, but the completion of the lately projected harbour will afford all the facilities necessary in this respect. The completion of the proposed canal between Havre and the Seine near Tancarville would be a great commercial benefit to the port whose prosperity has, notwithstanding its advantages as the port of Paris, and its unsurpassed facilities for dock accommodation, been much hampered by the system of centralization, which has both retarded improvements and led to the levying of exorbitant shipping rates. Partly

on this account, not only has France been unable to maintain the transit of goods for Belgium, Switzerland, and Germany, but even much of the traffic of its own northern and eastern provinces has been directed to Antwerp. The latter port is served by an abundant network of railroads and canals, while Havre has only one convenient railroad (that to Paris by Rouen); and the river Seine with its dangers and high tariff. The completion of the scheme for a railway over Montivilliers to Dieppe will afford partial remedy for this state of matters. In the extensive ship-building yards of Havre the finest vessels of France are built, and many are also built for other countries. The construction of two new dry-docks has lately been proposed, one of which is to afford accommodation for the largest Atlantic steamers. Havre is now fortified as a fleet station and harbour of war. The port has regular steam communication with London, Liverpool, Southampton, Dublin, Glasgow, Hull, Swansea, Bristol, Dunkirk, Brest, Cherbourg, Rotterdam, Hamburg, Copenhagen, St Petersburg, Constantinople, West Indies, San Francisco, Vancouver Island, and New York. The total number of vessels which entered

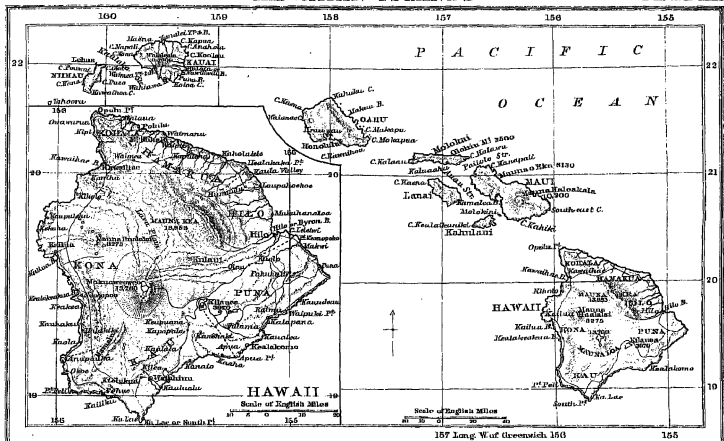


Plan of Havre.

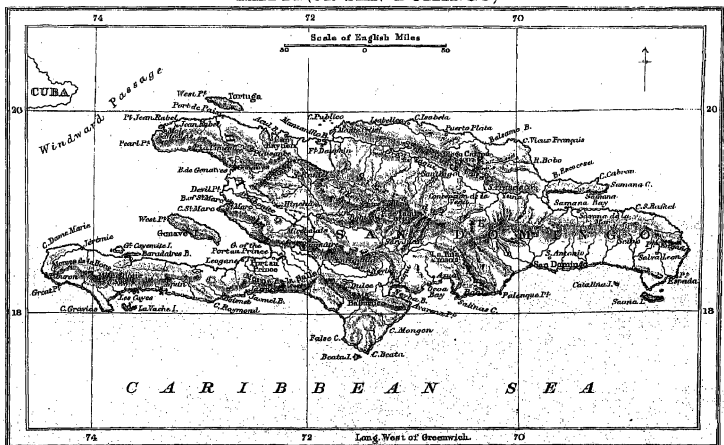
- |                          |                          |                          |
|--------------------------|--------------------------|--------------------------|
| 1. Prison.               | 7. Theatre.              | 10. Church of Notre      |
| 2. Hôtel de Ville.       | 8. College.              | 11. Docks.               |
| 3. Exchange.             | 9. Marine Arsenal.       | 12. Intels.              |
| 4. Tribunal of Commerce. | 6. Church of St Francis. | 13. Custom House.        |
|                          | 5. Courthouse.           | 14. Frascati Bath House. |

the port in 1878 was 6491 with a tonnage of 2,192,778, while 6458 cleared with a tonnage of 2,148,517. For the 5 years ending 1878 the average number of vessels that entered was 6041 with a tonnage of 1,841,265, the number that cleared 6006 with a tonnage of 1,813,189. The average annual value of exports and imports is about 2800 million francs. The trade of Havre with the United States is very large, and it has always retained its superiority in the importation of cotton, one-third of which, however, it imports from other countries than America. It is also the chief port for the exportation of French goods to the United States, and an important point of emigration. Besides cotton its principal imports are petroleum, coals, wheat, woolen, silk, flax, mohair and jute tissues, spices, sugar, coffee, hides, dyewoods, and building timber. The principal exports are various French manufactured cloths, leather, jewellery, agricultural and dairy produce, wine, brandy, and oil. Fishing is extensively prosecuted. Besides the various industries connected with shipbuilding, Havre possesses sugar-refining works, tobacco manufactures, iron foundries, salt works, breweries, vitriol works, and manufactures of *faisance*, lace, silk, and paper. It is also much frequented for sea-bathing. The population in 1872 was 85,533, and in 1876 it was 85,407.





## HAYTI (OR SAN DOMINGO)





ology of the other islands, the superstitions being supposed to reside in the volcanoes and direct the actions of which are in fact dictated by the gods objects of peculiar terror. Human sacrifices were often on several occasions, and vast offerings presented to the spirits supposed to preside over the volcanoes, especially during the periods of actual eruptions. The requiem of their idolatry was savage, and its rites cruel and bloody. Grottoes and repulsive wooden figures, uninitiated, and the bones of chiefs were the objects of worship. Human sacrifices were offered whenever a temple was to be dedicated, or a chief was sick, or a war was to be undertaken, and these occasions were frequent. The superstitions of the people with regard to future state were undefined, but fearful. The law of justice expected to be slowly drawn by evil spirits, or to dwell with the gods in burning mountains. The several traditions, such as that of the helemelan, the tiller of the ground, and the builder of canoes and houses, had each their presiding deities. Household gods were also kept, where the natives worshipped in their habitations. One plentiful provision, however, had existed from time immemorial, and that was a sacred inclosure, places of refuge into which those who fled in time of war, or from any violent pursuit, might enter and be safe. To violate this sanctity was one of the greatest crimes of which a man could be guilty.

In the former state of society the habits of the people were extremely licentious, men were living with several wives, and women with several husbands. Female virtue was an unknown thing, and there is no native word for it. This state of things has, however, been greatly altered by the operations of the missionaries.

As regards cannibalism, it appears that the heart and liver of the human victims offered in the temples were eaten as a religious rite, and that the same parts of any prominent warrior slain in battle were devoured by the victor chiefs in the belief that they would thereby inherit the valour of the dead man. When, on the death of the great warrior Kamehameha I, the chiefs assembled to deliberate what should be done with his body, one suggested that they should eat it, but this did not find favour with the others.

The Hawaiians are a good-tempered, light-hearted, and pleasure-loving race. They have many games, and sports, and the women spend much time in making flower garlands. Both sexes are passionately fond of riding, almost every one being in possession of a horse. They delight to be in the water, and swim with remarkable skill and ease. In the exciting sport of sail swimming, which always astonishes strangers, they balance themselves whilst standing or sitting on a small board which is carried landwards on the curling crest of a great roller.

In spite of moral and material progress—better food, better clothing, improved dwellings, and many other advantages of civilisation—the natives, lying on their sides, and undisturbed, threatened with extinction in the course of a few years. Captain Cook estimated the number of natives at 400,000, in 1823 the American missionaries calculated them to be only 142,000, the census of 1832 showed the population to be 130,313, and the census of 1878 proved that the number of natives was no more than 44,088. To account for this it is said that the blood of the race has become poisoned by the introduction of foreign diseases. The women are much less numerous than the men, and the married ones have few children at the most, two out of three have none. Moreover the mothers appear to have little maternal instinct, and there is consequently a neglect of the offspring. Whilst the Hawaiians are decreasing, the Chinese are coming in large numbers, and threaten in time to take their place. To counteract this, as well as to supply the pressing need for labourers, the Government has considered many schemes for introducing other immigrants. Polynesians from other islands have been brought over, and a considerable number of Portuguese have come from Madeira.

The language is a branch of the widely-diffused Malayo-Polynesian tongue, and Hawaiians and New-Zealanders, although occupying the most remote regions north and south at which any of their race have been found, can understand each other without much difficulty. This language

is soft and harmonious, being highly vocalic in structure. The only consonants are *k, l, m, n, p, w*, which with the gently aspirated *h*, the five vowels, and the vowel *u* make up all the letters in use. The letters *i* and *e* have been suppressed of late years in favour of *l* and *u*, so that, for example, *taro*, the former name of the *Colocasia* plant, is now *kalo*. The language was not reduced to a written form until after the arrival of the missionaries.

In the days of idolatry the only dress worn by the men was a narrow strip of cloth wound round the loins and passed between the legs. Women wore a short petticoat made of *kapa* (cloth prepared from the inner bark of the paper mulberry), which reached from the waist to the knees. But now the common class of men wear a shirt and trousers, whilst the better class are attired in the European fashion. The women are clad universally in the *holooka*, a loose white or coloured garment with sleeves reaching from the neck to the feet. A coloured handkerchief is twisted round the head or a straw hat is worn. Both sexes delight in adorning themselves with garlands (*leis*) of flowers and necklaces of coloured seeds.

The natives derive their sustenance chiefly from pork and fish both fresh and dried, and from the *kalo* (*Colocasia esculenta*), the banana, sweet potatoes, and breadfruit. The root of the *kalo* affords the national dish called *pou*, after having been baked and well beaten on a board with a stone pestle it is made into a paste with water and then allowed to ferment for a few days, when it is fit to eat. There was formerly a particular breed of dog which, after being fed exclusively on *pou*, was considered a great delicacy. The filthy liquor called *awa* or *leava* is still relished by the natives, and though it is only allowed to be made under licence, it is often prepared clandestinely.

The native dwellings are constructed of wood, or more frequently of mats slashed with grass at the sides and top. What little cooking is undertaken is done outside. The oven consists of a hole in the ground in which a fire is lighted and stones made hot, and the fire having been removed, the food is wrapped up in leaves and placed in the hole beside the hot stones and covered up until ready.

Leprosy is prevalent amongst the natives, and the Government has established a settlement on the island of Molokai where all persons found to be affected with the disease are kept entirely isolated from the healthy part of the community. The expendable number about 800. *Maize* and *Coconuts*—the latter have been introduced chiefly by Americans, in the production of sugar, the soil and climate being well suited to the cane in those localities where the water supply is ample. These are between 80 and 70 sugars estates, and more are being planted. The principal difficulty is the want of labour. The average yield of sugar per acre is 2½ tons, whilst in some favoured spots as much as 7 tons has been obtained. In 1878 the exports of sugar amounted to 17,187 tons. Rice is also largely cultivated, 2405 tons having been exported in the same year.

Coffee is produced only to a small extent. Arrowroot is prepared from the root of the *Tacca pinnatifida*. The *kalo* plant (*Colocasia esculenta*) is extensively grown in wet places. It is said that a patch of *kalo* measuring 40 feet square yields sufficient food for a native for a whole year, a square mile of it would therefore support 17,000 persons. Maize and wheat are raised, and flour is made exclusively. Pine apples, oranges, mangoes, and other tropical fruits, and many other fruits have been introduced, and flourish in gardens. A silky fibre called *pipe*, growing on the acorn of tree fern stems belonging to the genus *Cibotium*, is exported in large quantities to America, where it is used for stuffing cushions.

The increase of sheep is slow, but they have large flocks, and the wool exported in 1878 amounted to 623,000 lbs. Some districts are well suited for cattle raising. The wild cattle on the mountains—a very inferior breed, descended from some left by Captain Vancouver—are shot or taken with the lassos for the skins of their hides, which are exported in large quantities. In one island 11,000 were killed in a single year. The natives used to outstrip them by digging pits

<sup>1</sup> See Chamisso, *Über die Hawaiiische Sprache* (Leipzig, 1837), and Andrews, *Glossary of the Hawaiian Language* (Honolulu, 1851), and Dictionary (Honolulu, 1866).





who have established a board to superintend the affairs connected with this subject. Nearly every native can read and write. In 1878 there were 223 schools, attended by 3991 boys and 3000 girls. In the majority of these schools the instruction is communicated in Hawaiian, but in the higher grade schools of Honolulu, and also, as the people themselves desire it, that language is more and more introduced.

**Revenue and Expenditure.**—The annual revenue of the Government amounts to about 600,000 dollars, derived chiefly from customs duties, (334,000 dollars in 1878), taxes on real and personal property, and a poll tax. It does not equal the expenditure, and there is a funded debt of from 400,000 to 500,000 dollars. Accounts are kept in dollars, and the currency in circulation is two dollars about 3000 feet high in the great eastern range of mountains. It is the seat of the central government and the residence of the king. Although consisting largely of one story wooden houses, mingled with grass huts half smothered by foliage, Honolulu is said to present to approaching vessels more of the appearance of a civilized place with its churches and public buildings than any other town in Polynesia.

The streets, laid out in the American style, and all right, and truly. Water works supply the town from a neighbouring valley. Among the stone erections are the king's house, a hospital, a large hotel built by the Government, and the Government buildings, in which are a law library of English books and a museum containing corals, shells, and other natural curiosities, as well as specimens of ancient weapons and other native articles. Amongst the brick buildings are large iron works, a brass foundry, an establishment for working up wood, and iron mills. All the necessities and most of the luxuries of civilized life can be obtained in Honolulu. There are several hotels for the accommodation of strangers, and numerous agencies of both British and American insurance offices, American and English merchant ships and cargoes have arrived in the town, two weekly newspapers in English and two in the Hawaiian language are published. Honolulu has a good natural harbor, with wharves, a custom house, and warehouses. It is connected by regular lines of mail steamers with San Francisco, New York, and New Zealand. There are also lines of steamers to Liverpool and Glasgow, New York and Boston, Hainan, China, and Peru. Small steamers ply between the islands. Hawaiian is the language spoken and by foreigners, and chiefly by Americans, British, Germans, and Chinese. The first of the most numerous, they are acquiring property rapidly, and some of them are wealthy. The foreigners are very sociable, and have established numerous clubs, benevolent societies, &c. American influence and customs are said to be dominant. In the neighbourhood of the town is a college, where for a small sum boys and girls receive a good English education.

**The Separate Islands.**—The following description of the separate islands begins with the largest and most easterly, giving the others in the order of their position.

Island	Length in Miles	Width in Miles	Estimated Area in Acres	Population Census 1878
Hawaii	100	80	2,600,000	17,034
Maua	40	20	400,000	19,121
Kahoolawe	13	6	80,000	60
Lanai	20	9	100,000	214
Molokai	35	7	300,000	2,681
Oahu	27	20	850,000	20,286
Kauai	80	28	850,000	6,384
Niihau	20	6	70,000	117
			4,000,000	87,985

In older English works Hawaii is called Owhyhee and Maui Mowee. The four uninhabited islets are named Nihoa, Kaula, Lanai, and Molokai.

HAWAII has an area nearly double that of all the other islands put together. In shape it is a rude triangle, with sides of 56, 76, and 65 geographical miles in length. Almost the whole of its surface is occupied by the gentle slopes of four volcanic mountains, Mauna Kea on the N, 18,805 feet in height (the highest peak in the Pacific Ocean), Mauna Loa on the S, 16,500 feet, Mauna Hualalai on the W, 8,375 feet, and Mauna Kahala on the N W, 5505 feet. The highest points of Mauna Kea are truncated cones with craters rising from plains of cinders and gravel, ashes and sand, but no modern streams of lava are visible, nor is there record of any eruption of this mountain since the year 1800. It is said that the base of the mountain once may be reached on horseback. On the windward side pyroclastic vegetation reaches as high as 12,000 feet, but the forest ceases at 8000 feet.

Mauna Loa, the most interesting mountain of the whole group from its being still an active volcano. The angular terminal crater,

8000 feet in diameter, is quite perfect, with nearly vertical walls from 500 to 600 feet high on the inner side, and the bottom between the numerous cones is usually covered with solid lava, from the fissures of which issue steam and sulphurous vapours, and are sometimes mingled with very eruption. There is no record of any eruption from Mauna Loa before 1832, when lava flowed from the summit crater on several sides. In 1848 a vast flood of lava was discharged, which formed three streams 5 or 6 miles wide, and 20 and 30 miles long. These were in 1851, 1852, 1855, and 1859, but in none of these did the lava reach the very crest on the last occasion, when the eruption continued for two months, and a winding current 50 miles long, from 1 to 5 feet high, broke on the shore, consuming the crops of many lives and the destruction of much property. The wave crossed the Pacific to the Californian coast. Later in the same year, at a time when earthquakes were taking place on the coast of South America and the town of Iquique in Peru was destroyed, a great wave came across the Pacific, struck the Hawaiian Islands, and made itself felt in New Zealand. The last eruption took place in February 1877, when a stream of lava flowed for six hours.

Sixteen miles to the S E of Mauna Loa is a tall called Kilauea, with a crater which is the largest active one in the world. The earliest recorded eruption was in 1789, and there was another in 1852. This volcano was first much known to the civilized world in 1833, when Mr Ellis and a party of American missionaries visited it. At an elevation of 4400 feet above the sea they found in the midst of a plain or at least 9 miles in circumference with a central cone 1500 feet deep, covered with a thick mass of liquid lava at one end and boiling. Around the edge or from the midst of this they like, 61 conical eminences to the lava or smoke and flame. A strong ridge round the inside of the crater, and 500 or 600 feet above the lake, indicated that the lava had reached to that height and had then run off by a subterranean channel to the sea, where some miles of coast had been filled up with liquid lava a few weeks previously. Since that time many travellers have ascended to the craters of both Kilauea and Kilauea, and have given vivid descriptions of the very grand and wonderful phenomena they witnessed. In 1840 the commander of the United States frigate Albatross, on a expedition spent weeks on the summit of Mauna Loa and made an accurate survey of the crater. In that year there was a great outbreak from a crater 8 miles from the summit of Kilauea, when a stream of lava half a mile broad and 40 miles long reached the sea.

On the whole summit of Hualalai, another of the four mountains of Hawaii, are scattered many yet craters from 500 to 500 feet deep and from 700 to 1000 feet in diameter, their solid walls being newly formed. On the edge of one of the deepest craters there is a mound about 80 feet high, composed of drops of lava and fragments of all sizes, coloured yellow, orange, red, blue, and black. They seem to have been ejected in a rapid state, for they are slightly agitated together in the centre of the crater, and are 100 feet in diameter and about 1800 feet deep. The inside of this hole is grooved horizontally, but otherwise smooth as if turned. More than 60 cones have been counted on the sides of Hualalai. The last eruption took place in 1801, when a great quantity of lava reached the coast, where it filled up a deep bay.

The lavas of Hawaii are distinguishable according to the aspect of their surface into three classes, which are named by the natives as velvety lava, or folded and twisted in a manner that shows it has passed over rocks or dry ground on a gentle slope. 2 The cinders are sometimes lava is rough and uneven. 3 The lava is found when ever the stream has passed through woods or has been impeded by inequalities of the ground, or where its heat has caused the explosion of reversion beneath the flow of other beds.

The spongy lava, which, according to the natives, is the most dangerous and hardest, is carefully avoided by all travellers. This form is thought to owe its origin to the fact that, just as the lava was granulating, impediments that stood in its course gave way, when the spongy mass rolled over and broke up into small pieces, the liquid portion drained off. The natives are in the habit of making holes in the lava, and planting in them banana shoots or sweet-potato cuttings, and though the holes are simply filled with stones or fern leaves, the plants grow and in due time produce a crop. The plain lying between the mountains of Hawaii is many square

1 Amongst the minor phenomena they speak of the delicate glassy lines called Pahoehoe, by the Hawaiians, which are seen by the wind from the rising and falling dunes of liquid lava, and blown out at the edge or into the crevices of the crater. The most curious times was the eruption of the crater of Kilauea, in 1852, when a substance resembling Pahoehoe's hair is made from the ring of fern fronds, or driving them out or against the lava. The lava is said to be a very hard material, but has been termed mineral or slag wool, it can be woven into sheets which are useful for coating stumps, &c., as the substance is a very bad conductor of heat.



**HAWES, STEPHEN**, a minor English poet of the 18th century. Neither the date of his birth nor that of his death has been ascertained, and all the known facts of his life may be stated in a few lines. He was probably a member of a Suffolkshire family, studied at Oxford, with what success we can only conjecture, travelled in England, Scotland, and France, and having acquired the reputation of a man of culture was appointed groom of the chamber to King Henry VII. He was still alive in January 1620-21, as appears by an entry, *Item to Mr Hawes for his play* *ŷ i am s vry d*. Of the play thus mentioned nothing further is known. The writer's chief work was *The Historie of Grande Amour and la Bell Paucel, called the Pastime of Pleasure, containing the Knowledge of the Seven Sciences and the Course of Man's Life*, a long allegorical poem in the style of Lydgate. Its general method may be guessed from such a heading as *How Science first sent him to Gramer where he was receyved by Dame Conynwite*, and, though it must be confessed that portions of the poem are better both in matter and in workmanship than might be expected, it is now of interest almost exclusively because, in Warton's words, it is "almost the only effort of imagination and invention which had appeared in our poetry since Chaucer." Probably written about 1600, and first printed, it is said, by Wynkyn de Woide, it afterwards went through several editions (J. Weyland, 1664; Richard Tottel, 1655; J. Waley, 1659), a reprint of Tottel's was made for the Percy Society in 1842. Among the minor poems attributed to Hawes it is sufficient to mention his *Conversyon of Socrates* and his *Joyful Medytacyon to all Englonde of Kyngs Henry the Eight*. The former, a dry didactic production, was printed by Wynkyn de Woide (1509 f) and William Copland (1551). Of the latter the only copy preserved is among Bishop More's books in the public library of the university of Cambridge. Both were edited for the Abbotsford Club by David Laing (1854). For further details see Earlitt's edition of Warton's *History of English Poetry* (1871), and the Percy and Abbotsford societies.

**HAWES, WILLIAM** (1788-1846), an English musician of some merit, is remembered chiefly by the fact that through his instrumentality Weber's *Der Freischutz* was for the first time performed in England. This event took place July 24, 1824, and led eventually to Weber's removal to London. Hawes was born in London in 1788, and was for eight years (1798-1801) a chorister of the Chapel Royal, where he studied music chiefly under Dr Ayrton. He subsequently held various musical posts, being in 1817 appointed master of the children of the Chapel Royal. He also, in conjunction with Welsh, carried on the business of a music publisher, and was for many years musical director of the Lyceum Theatre, then devoted to English opera. It was in the last-named capacity that he introduced Weber's masterpiece, at first slightly curtailed, but soon afterwards in its entirety. Winter's *Interrupted Sacrifice*, Mozart's *Così fan Tutti*, Werschnow's *Vamyr*, and other important works were also brought out under his auspices. Hawes also wrote or compiled the music for numerous pieces, none of which however has survived or deserves mention. Better were his glories and madrigals, of which he published several collections. He also superintended a new edition of the celebrated *Triumph of Orinda*. Hawes died February 18, 1846.

**HAWFINCH**, a bird so called from the belief that the fruit of the hawthorn (*Crataegus Oxyacantha*) forms its chief food, the *Lexus coccinea* of Linnaeus, and the *Coccothraustes vulgaria* of modern ornithologists, one of the largest of the Finch family (*Fringillidae*), and found over nearly the whole of Europe, in Africa north of the Atlas, and in Asia from Palestine to Japan. It was formerly

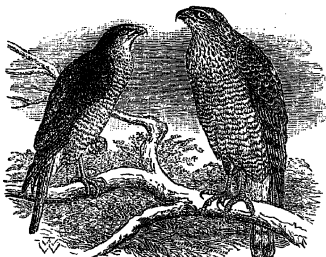
thought to be only an autumnal or winter-visitor to Britain, but later experience has proved that, though there may very likely be an immigration in the fall of the year, it breeds in nearly all the English counties to Yorkshire, and abundantly in those nearest to London. There seems also to be good reason for supposing that it is yearly extending its range in the British Islands. In coloration it bears some resemblance to a Chaffinch, but its much larger size and enormous beak make it easily recognizable, while on close inspection the singular bill hook form of some of its wing feathers will be found to be very remarkable. Though not uncommonly frequenting gardens and orchards, in which as well as in woods it builds its nest, it is exceedingly shy in its habits, so as seldom to afford opportunities for observation. As the genus *Coccothraustes* is now commonly restricted, it includes but this single species,—the Japanese form, at one time regarded as distinct, being considered by the latest authorities to be inseparable. (L. M.)

**HAWICK**, a municipal and parliamentary borough of Roxburghshire in Scotland, 10 miles S W of Jedburgh, and 53 miles S E of Edinburgh by rail, is situated on the south bank of the Teviot at its junction with the Slitting, a wild and irregular stream that flows through the town. A handsome bridge, spanning the Teviot, connects Hawick with the manufacturing village of Wilton, which is practically an suburb. The town is fairly well built, the main street being broad and well paved. The ancient tower of the barons of Drumlanrig is now occupied as an inn, and many of the older houses testify by their massive proportions to the former dangers of Hawick's position as a border town. The town was the only building not burned down in 1570 by the earl of Sussex. The parish church of St Mary has succeeded one mentioned in the *Chronicle of Melrose* as having been consecrated in 1214,—a fact which speaks for the antiquity of the town. Additional testimony is afforded by the Moatmill at one end of the town, an ancient mound of great antiquity, about 30 feet high. The present town-charter, granted in 1587 by a laird of Drumlanrig, was confirmed in 1645 by Queen Mary during a residence in the town. Hawick, with Wilton, was in 1608 erected into a parliamentary burgh, uniting with Galashiels and Selkirk in sending a member to parliament. The municipal government is vested in a town council, consisting of a provost, four magistrates, and ten councillors. The exchange, built in 1865, contains a free public library. Hawick possesses a very complete system of underground drainage, in connexion with purification works,—this being the first experiment of the kind on a large scale in Scotland.

The manufactures of Hawick are mentioned in the burgh records so far back as 1640, but they must have been flourishing for some time before that, as the weavers already formed an important part of the population. The weavers then worked each for himself, executing his private orders, and it is not till the middle of the following century that a number of looms under one employer are heard of. Linen was at first the chief article of manufacture, but woollen plaidings were also made. Wool was also spun and sold to be manufactured elsewhere. A carpet factory was begun in 1752, and the manufacture of linen tapes or inkles dated a few years afterwards, but both industries became extinct towards the beginning of the present century. The manufacture of tweeds is the most important industry of Hawick. In this branch the annual turn-over is about £800,000, while in the whole woollen trade it is about £2,000,000. The manufacture of hosiery, to which the town owes so much of its prosperity, was introduced in 1771, when four looms, employing six men and five women, produced annually about 2400 pairs of coarse stockings. Hawick has gradually become the chief seat of this trade in Scotland. Some of the yarn spun at Hawick is sent

to England and to other parts of Scotland to be woven; while the merino yarn used for the finest goods is chiefly obtained from Plesley and Nottingham. Besides the staples, tweeds and hosiery, Hawick manufactures shawls, plaids, blankets, gloves, and leather. There are also an oil-works, for extracting oil from the soapy refuse of the fulling-mills, an iron-foundry, and a factory-engineering establishment. The population of the burgh in 1871 was 11,356; in 1879 it was estimated at about 15,000.

**HAWK** (Anglo-Saxon, *Ilafoc*), a word of somewhat indefinite meaning, being often used to signify all diurnal Birds-of-prey which are neither Vultures nor Eagles, and again more exclusively for those of the remainder which are not Buzzards, Falcons, Harriers, or Kites. Even with this restriction it is comprehensive enough, and will include more than a hundred species, which have been arrayed in genera varying in number from a dozen to above a score, according to the fancy of the systematizer. Spangling generally, Hawks may be characterized by possessing comparatively short wings and long legs, a bill which begins to decurve directly from the cere (or soft bare skin that covers its base), and has the cutting edges of its maxilla (or upper mandible) sinuated<sup>1</sup> but never notched. To these may be added as characters, structurally perhaps of less value, but in other respects quite as important, that the sexes differ very greatly in size, that in most species the tides are yellow, deepening with age into orange or even red, and that the immature plumage is almost invariably more



European Sparrow-Hawk (Male and Female).

or less striped or mottled with heart-shaped spots beneath, while that of the adults is generally much barred, though the old males have in many instances the breast and belly quite free from markings. Nearly all are of small or moderate size—the largest among them being the Gos-Hawk (vol. x. p. 788) and its immediate allies, and the male of the smallest, *Accipiter titius*, is not bigger than a Song-Thrush. They are all birds of great boldness in attacking a quarry, but if foiled in the first attempt they are apt to leave the pursuit. Thoroughly arboreal in their habits, they seek their prey, chiefly consisting of birds (though reptiles and small mammals are also taken), among trees or bushes, patiently waiting for a victim to show itself, and gliding upon it when it appears to be unwary with a rapid swoop, clutching it in their talons, and bearing it away to eat it in some convenient spot.

It is of course impossible here to enter into details of the numerous forms which, notwithstanding the limitation

<sup>1</sup> In one form, *Niviceda*, which on that account has been generically separated, they are said to be perfectly straight.

above adopted, are to be called Hawks, or to describe the distinguishing characters, so far as any have been given, of the different groups or sections into which it has pleased systematic ornithologists to break them up, since hardly any two are agreed in the latter respect. There is at the outset a difference of opinion as to the scientific name which the largest and best known of these sections should bear—some authors terming it *Nisus*, and others, who seem to have the most justice on their side, *Accipiter*. In Europe there are two species—first, *A. nisus*, the common Sparrow-Hawk, which has a wide distribution from Ireland to Japan, extending also to northern India, Egypt, and Algeria, and secondly, *A. brevipes* (by some placed in the group *Micro-nisus* and by others called an *Astur*), which only appears in the south-east, and the adjoining parts of Asia, Minor and Persia. In North America the place of the former is taken by two very distinct species, a small one, *A. fuscus*, usually known in Canada and the United States as the Sharp-shinned Hawk, and Stanley's or Cooper's Hawk, *A. cooperi* (by some placed in another genus, *Cooperastur*), which is larger and has not so northerly a range. In South America there are four or five more, including *A. tinus*, before mentioned as the smallest of all, while a species not much larger, *A. minidulus*, together with several others of greater size, inhabit South Africa, Madagascar, and its neighbouring islands have three or four species sufficiently distinct, and India has *A. badius*. A good many more forms are found in South-eastern Asia, in the Indo-Malay Archipelago, and in Australia three or four species, of which *A. cirrhocephalus* most nearly represents the Sparrow-Hawk of Europe and Northern Asia, while *A. radiatus* and *A. approximans* shew some affinity to the Gos-Hawks (*Astur*) with which they are often classed. The differences between all the forms above named and the much larger number here unnamed are such as can be only appreciated by the specialist, and could not possibly be pointed out within the limits of this article. It may be observed in conclusion that the so-called "Sparrow-Hawk" of New Zealand (*Hieracidea*) does not belong to this group of birds at all, and by many authors has been deemed akin to the Falcons. For Hawking, see FALCONRY.

(A. N.)  
**HAWKE, EDWARD HAWKE, BARON** (1705–1781), an English admiral, was the son of a barrister and was born in 1705. He entered the navy at an early age, and in 1733 became commander of the "Wolf." In the engagement off Toulon in 1744, he broke from the line of battle in order to engage the "Poder," and although he succeeded in causing her to strike her colours, his breach of discipline was punished by dismissal from the service. He was, however, almost immediately restored by the king's commands, and in 1747 was promoted to the rank of rear-admiral of the white. In October of the same year he was sent in command of a squadron intended to intercept a fleet of merchant vessels bound for the West Indies under a convoy of nine men-of-war, and coming up with them on the 14th of the month near the isle of Aix, he succeeded after a severe struggle in capturing six of the men-of-war, but darkness coming on before the close of the contest the whole of the merchant vessels escaped. For his victory Hawke was created a knight companion of the Bath. In December of the same year he was chosen member of parliament for Bristol. In May 1748 he became vice-admiral of the blue, and in January 1755 admiral of the white. In the following year he succeeded Admiral Byng as commander of the fleet in the Mediterranean, but arrived too late to succour Minorca; and in none of the commands which he subsequently held did he have an opportunity of distinguishing himself till 1759, when he took charge of a squadron sent to cruise off Brest. On the morning of the 20th November he sighted the French fleet under Admiral Conflans off Belleisle, and

notwithstanding that the French, trusting to their knowledge of the rocks and shallows, retired towards the shore, he determined to engage them, which he did with such impetuosity that their fleet was only saved from total destruction by the approach of nightfall. As it was, more than half their vessels were either disabled, captured, or driven ashore. For this brilliant victory, gained in such circumstances of difficulty and danger, with the loss of only two vessels, Hawke received the thanks of the House of Commons and a pension of £2000 per annum. In 1765 he was appointed vice-admiral of Great Britain and first lord of the admiralty. In 1776 he was raised to the peerage by the title of Baron Hawke of Towton. He died at Shepperton, Middlesex, 17th October 1781.

HAWKESWORTH, JOHN (c. 1715–1773), an author of the last century, was born in London, according to one account in 1719, but according to another in 1719. He is said to have been apprenticed first to a clockmaker, and afterwards to an attorney, but at any rate he was indebted for the education requisite for the prosecution of a literary career chiefly to his own perseverance. In 1744 he succeeded Dr Johnson as compiler of the parliamentary debates for the *Gentleman's Magazine*. Eight years later he started in company with Johnson, Bathurst, and Warton a periodical called the *Advertiser*. This journal had a great success, and ran to 140 numbers, of which 70 were from the pen of Hawkesworth himself. On account of what was regarded as its powerful defence of morality and religion, Hawkesworth was rewarded by the archbishop of Canterbury with the degree of LL.D. In 1761 he published a volume of fairy tales, and an edition of Swift's works and letters, with a life prefixed which Johnson has referred to in highly laudatory terms in his *Lives of the Poets*. The reputation he obtained by these and other works was such that he was commissioned by Captain Cook to edit his papers relative to his first voyage. The work appeared in 1773 in three volumes, and as a reward of his labours Hawkesworth received from the Government the sum of £2000. His descriptions of the manners and customs of the New World were, however, regarded by many critics as hostile to the interests of morality, and the severity of these strictures is said to have hastened his death, which took place November 17, 1778. He was buried at Bromley in Kent, where a monument has been erected to his memory. Hawkesworth was a close imitator of Johnson both in style and thought, but his independent literary talent is considerable.

HAWKINS, SIR JOHN (c. 1532–1595), was born in Plymouth about 1532, and was bred a sailor. Learning that negroes from the coast of Guinea were good merchandise for traffic in the West Indies, he made trial of this in three voyages, the first in 1562, the second in 1564. The third, made in company with young Drake in 1567, ended in disaster, the story of which is related by Hawkins himself. He was returned M.P. for Plymouth in 1572, and the next year he was made treasurer and comptroller of the navy. In the expedition against the Armada he was appointed vice admiral, hoisting his flag on board the "Victory," and for his services on that occasion he was afterwards knighted. His last expedition (1595) was undertaken, once more with Drake, mainly with a view to rescue his son Richard, who three years before had fallen into the hands of the Spaniards off the coast of Quito. It was unsuccessful, and, worn out with fatigue and broken-hearted, he died off Puerto Rico on the 12th of November 1595. Hawkins was the first to use chain pumps and fighting nestings for ships. Stow speaks of him as a very wise, vigilant, and true-hearted man. Along with Sir Francis Drake, he founded in 1588 the "Chest at Olatham," the forerunner of Greenwich Hospital, where

it is now preserved. A portrait of Hawkins once adorned the Armada tapestry in the House of Lords.

HAWKINS, SIR JOHN (1719–1789), will be permanently remembered as the author of an important work on the history of music. He was born March 30, 1719, in London, the son of an architect who destined his son for his own profession. Ultimately, however, Hawkins took to the law, devoting his leisure hours to his favourite study of music. A wealthy marriage in 1753 enabled him to indulge his passion for acquiring rare works of music, and he bought, for example, the collection formed by Dr Pepusch, and subsequently presented by Hawkins to the British Museum. It was on such materials that Hawkins founded his celebrated work on the *General History of the Sciences and Practice of Music*, in 5 vols. (republished in 2 vols., 1876). It was brought out in 1776, the same year which witnessed the appearance of the first volume of Dunsey's work on the same subject. The relative merits of the two works were eagerly discussed by contemporary critics. Barney no doubt is infinitely superior as a literary man, and his work accordingly comes much nearer the idea of a systematic treatise on the subject than Hawkins's, which is essentially a collection of rare and valuable pieces of music with a more or less continuous commentary. But by rescuing these from oblivion Hawkins has given a permanent value to his work. Of Hawkins's literary efforts apart from music it will be sufficient to mention his occasional contributions to the *Gentleman's Magazine*, his edition of the *Complete Angler*, and his biography of Dr Johnson, with whom he was intimately acquainted. He was one of the original members of the Ivy Lane Club, and ultimately became one of Dr Johnson's executors. If there were any doubt as to his intimacy with Johnson, it would be settled by the sighting way in which Boswell refers to him. Speaking of the Ivy Lane Club, he mentions amongst the members "Mr. John Hawkins, an attorney," and adds the following footnote, which at the same time may serve as a summary of the remaining facts of Hawkins's life—"He was for several years chairman of the Middlesex justices, and upon presenting an address to the king accepted the usual offer of knighthood (1772). He is the author of a *History of Music* in five volumes in quarto. Dysaudious attendance upon Johnson in his last illness he obtained the office of one of his executors,—in consequence of which the booksellers of London employed him to publish an edition of Dr Johnson's works and to write his life." Sir John Hawkins died on the 21st of May 1789, and was buried in the cloisters of Westminster Abbey.

HAWKWOOD, SIR JOHN (c. 1394), an English adventurer who attained great wealth and renown by his services as a condottiere in the Italian wars of the 14th century. According to the accepted if not the authenticated account of his life, he was the son of a tanner of Sible Hedingham in Essex, and was apprenticed to a tailor in London. Pressed into the army, he served with honour in France, obtained the favour of the Black Prince, and received knighthood from King Edward III. On the peace of Brétigny in 1360, he collected a band of men-at-arms, and moved southward to Italy, where we find him assisting the Pisans to defeat the Florentines in 1364. His services were sought in succession by Bernabo Visconti, by the legate of Bologna, and by Pope Gregory XI. In 1375 the Florentines entered into an agreement with him, by which they were to pay him and his companions 130,000 gold florins in three months on condition that he undertook no engagement against them, and in the same year the priors of the arts and the gonfalonier decided to give him a pension of 1200 florins per annum so long as he should remain in Italy. His subsequent services to Florence as captain-

general of the city were numerous and important. Hawkwood married Donnan, an illegitimate daughter of Donato Visconti, and one of his own daughters became the wife of the count of Fougard. His later years were spent in a villa in the neighbourhood of Florence. On his death in 1394 the republic gave him a public funeral of great magnificence and deposed the erection of a marble monument in the cathedral. This, however, was never executed, but Paolo Uccello painted his portrait in terra verde on the inner frieze of the building, where it still remains, though damaged by removal from the plaster to canvas. Richard II. of England, probably at the instigation of Hawkwood's sons, who returned to their native country, requested the Florentines to let him remove the good knight's bones, and the Florentine Government signified its consent.

The full account of Sir John Hawkwood in English is in Nichol's *Elizabethan Topographical Dictionary*, vol. vi. He is one of the last Johnson's *Ant. Worthies of London* (published in *The Times*, 1803), and Fuller includes him in his *Worthies of England*. An elaborate life, by Mann, is given in *Historical Sketches of the City of London*, and Hawkwood is naturally the chief of its Armistice and the other Florentine chronicles. The compact with the Florentines is printed in *Archæologia*, 1868.

**HAWTHORN** (Anglo-Saxon, *haga*, *hæy*, or *hege thorn*), *C. alcyon*, L., a genus of plants of the natural order *Rosaceæ* and sub order *Poinææ*. The common hawthorn, termed also whitethorn, quickthorn, guilford, and May tree, May bush, or May (German, *Maydorn* and *Christdorn*, French, *Aubépine*), *C. Oxyacantha*, L., is a shrub or small tree having a smooth barkish bark, numerous branches, beset usually with thorns, which represent aborted twigs, alternate, long-stalked, obovate-wedge shaped, 3- or 5 lobed, incised or serrate smooth leaves, flowers sweet-scented, arranged in corymbs, and having caducous bracts, broad, white, pink, or scarlet petals, and 1 to 3 styles, and fruit or "haw" an oblong or nearly globular mealy pome, commonly dark red, but occasionally yellow, black, or even greenish orange or dull white, and of 1 or 2 cells. The common hawthorn is a native of Europe as far north as 60° in Sweden, and of North Africa, Western Asia, and Siberia, and has been naturalized in North America and Australia. It thrives best in dry soils, and in height varies from 4 or 5 to 12, 13, or, in exceptional cases, as much as between 30 and 30 feet. There are several varieties of the plant. It may be propagated from seed or from cuttings. The seeds must be from ripe fruit, and if fresh gathered should be freed from pulp by maceration in water. They germinate only in the second year after sowing, in the course of their first year the seedlings attain a height of 6 to 12 inches. In England the hawthorn has been employed for enclosure of land since the Roman occupation, but for ordinary field hedges it is believed it was not generally in use till about the end of the 17th century. James I. of Scotland, in his *Quæst.*, ii. 14 (early 16th century), mentions the "hawthorn hedges knot" of Windsor Castle. The first hawthorn hedges in Scotland are said to have been planted by soldiers of Cromwell at Inch Buckling Brae in East Lothian, and Enlaig in Perthshire. On the planting and use of hawthorn fences, see *AGRICULTURE*, vol. i. pp. 296, 310. The wood of the hawthorn is white in colour, with a yellowish tinge. Fresh cut it weighs 69 lb 12 oz per cubic foot, and dry 57 lb 8 oz. It can seldom be obtained in large portions, and has the disadvantage of being apt to warp, its great hardness, however, renders it valuable for the manufacture of various articles, such as the cogs of mill-wheels, shafts and mallets, and handles of hammers. Both green and dry it forms excellent fuel. The bark possesses tanning properties, and in Scotland in past times yielded with ferrous sulphate a black dye for wool. The leaves are eaten by cattle, and have been employed as a substitute for tea.

Birds and deer feed upon the haws, which are used in the preparation of a fermented and highly intoxicating liquor, and for their estingency are sometimes resorted to in dysentery. The hawthorn serves as a stock for grafting other trees. As an ornamental feature in landscapes, it is worthy of notice, and the pleasing shelter it affords, and the beauty of its blossoms, have frequently been alluded to by poets. The custom of employing the flowering branches for decorative purposes on the first of May is of very early origin, but since the alteration in the calendar (see vol. iv p. 577) the tree is rarely seen in full bloom in England before the second week of that month. In Cornwall, however, in 1846, the flowers, though scarce, were gathered on the 18th April, and in the Scotch Highlands they may be seen as late as the middle of June. The hawthorn has been regarded as the emblem of hope, and its branches are stated to have been carried by the ancient Greeks in wedding processions, and to have been used by them to deck the altar of Hymen. The supposition that the tree was the source of Christ's crown of thorns gave rise doubtless to the tradition current among the French peasantry that it utters groans and cries on Good Friday, and probably also to the old popular superstition in Great Britain and Ireland that ill-luck attended the uprooting of hawthorns. Branches of the Glastenbury thorn, *C. Oxyacantha*, var. *pietorum*, which flowers both in December and in spring, were formerly highly valued in England, on account of the legend that the tree was originally the staff of Joseph of Arimathea (see *Glastenbury*, vol. x p. 674, 675). Sub species of *C. Oxyacantha* are *C. monogyna*, Jacquin, and *C. oxyacanthodes*, Thuill. *C. Pyracantha* and *C. Crus galli* are among the cultivated species of *Cateagrus*.

See London, *Gipsy's For Senary*, i. 1284, London, *Arboretum*, ii. 884, Selby, *Art of Bot. For Trees*, 1842, Bentham, *Forest Plants of Brit. Floræ*, i. 270, 1865, C. A. Johns, *The Forest Trees of Britain*, p. 83.

## NATHANIEL HAWTHORNE

Copyright, 1870, by Richard Henry Stoddard

**THE** family name of Nathaniel Hawthorne was spelled Hathorne until it was changed by him in early manhood to its present form. The head of the American branch of the family, William Hathorne of Wilton, Wiltshire, England, emigrated with Winthrop and his company, and arrived at Salem Bay, Mass., June 12, 1630. He had grants of land at Dorchester, where he resided for upwards of six years, when he was persuaded to remove to Salem by the tender of further grants of land there, it being considered a public benefit that he should become an inhabitant of that town. He represented his fellow-townsmen in the legislature, and served them in a military capacity as a captain in the first regular troop organized in Salem, which he led to victory through an Indian campaign in Maine. Originally a determined "Separatist," and opposed to compulsion for conversion, he signalized himself when a magistrate by the active part which he took in the Quaker persecutions of the time (1657-63), going so far on one occasion as to order the whipping of Anne Coleman and four other Friends through Salem, Boston, and Dedham. He died, an old man, in the odour of sanctity, and left a good property to his son John, who inherited his father's capacity and intolerance, and was in turn a legislator, a magistrate, a soldier, and a bitter persecutor of witches. Before the death of Justice Hathorne in 1717, the destiny of the family suffered a sea-change, and they began to be noted as mariners. One of these seafaring Hawthornes figured in the Revolution as a privateer, who had the good fortune to escape from a British prison-ship, and another, Captain Daniel Hathorne, has left his mark on early

American ballad lore. He too was a privateer, commander of the big "Fan America," which, causing oft the coast of Portugal, full in with a British scow laden with troops for General Howe, which scow the bold Hathorne and his valiant crew at once engaged, and fought for over an hour, until the vanquished enemy was glad to cut the Yankee grapplings and quickly bear away. The last of the Hathornes with whom we are concerned was a son of this sturdy old privateer, Nathaniel Hawthorne. He was born in 1776, and about the beginning of the present century married Miss Elizabeth Clarke Manning, a daughter of Richard Manning of Salem, whose ancestors emigrated to America about fifty years after the arrival of William Hathorne. Young Nathaniel took his hereditary place before the mast, passed from the forecabin to the cabin, made voyages to the East and West Indies, Brazil, and Africa, and finally died of fever at Surinam, in the spring of 1808. He was the father of three children, the second of whom, Nathaniel, was born at Salem, July 4, 1804.

After the death of his husband Mrs. Hathorne removed to the house of her father with his little family of children. Of the boyhood of Nathaniel no particulars have reached us, except that he was fond of taking long walks alone, and that he used to declare to his mother that he never longed to see some time, and would never return. Among the books that he is known to have read as a child were Shakespeare, Milton, Pope, and Thomson, *The Castle of Indolence* being an especial favourite. In the autumn of 1818 his mother removed to Raymond, a town in Cumberland county, Maine, where his uncle, Richard Manning, had built a large and ambitious dwelling. Here the lad resumed his solitary walks, exchanging the narrow streets of Salem for the boundless, primeval wilderness, and its sluggish harbour for the fresh, bright waters of Sebago lake. He roamed the woods by day, with his gun and rod, and in the moonlight nights of winter skated upon the lake alone till midnight. When he found himself away from home, and wearied with his exercise, he took refuge in a log cabin where half a tree would be burning upon the hearth. He had by this time acquired a taste for writing, that showed itself in a little blank book, in which he jotted down his woodland adventures and feelings, and which was remarkable for minute observation and nice perception of nature.

After a year's residence at Raymond, Nathaniel returned to Salem in order to prepare for college. He amused himself by publishing a manuscript periodical, which he called the *Spectator*, and which displayed considerable vivacity and talent. He speculated upon the profession that he would follow, with a sort of prophetic insight into his future. "I do not want to be a doctor and live by men's diseases," he wrote to his mother, "nor a minister to live by their sins, nor a lawyer and live by their quarrels. So I don't see that there is anything left for me but to be an author. How would you like some day to see a whole shelf full of books, written by you son, with 'Hawthorne's Works' printed on their backs?"

Nathaniel entered Bowdoin College, Brunswick, Maine, in the autumn of 1821, where he became acquainted with two students who were destined to distinction—Henry W. Longfellow and Franklin Pierce. He was an excellent classical scholar, his Latin compositions, even in his freshman year, being remarkable for their elegance, while his Greek (which was less) was good. He made graceful translations from the Roman poets, and wrote several English poems which were creditable to him. After his graduation three years later, he returned to Salem, and to a life of isolation. He devoted his mornings to study, his afternoons to writing, and his evenings to long walks along the rocky coast. He was scarcely known by sight to his townsmen, and he held so little communication with the

members of his own family that his meals were frequently left at his locked door. He wrote largely, but destroyed many of his manuscripts, his taste was so difficult to please. He thought well enough, however, of one of his compositions to print it anonymously in 1828. A crude melodramatic story, entitled *Fanshawe*, it was unworthy even of his immature powers, and should never have been rescued from the oblivion which speedily overtook it. The name of Nathaniel Hawthorne finally became known to his countrymen as a writer in *The Token*, a holiday annual which was commenced in 1828 by Mr. S. G. Goodrich (better known as "Peter Parley"), by whom it was conducted for fourteen years. This forgotten publication numbered among its contributors most of the prominent American writers of the time, none of whom appear to have added to their reputation in its pages, except the least popular of all—Hawthorne, who was for years the obscurest man of letters in America, though he gradually made admissions in a quiet way. His first public recognition came from England, where his genius was discovered in 1835 by the late Henry F. Chorley, one of the editors of the *Athenaeum*, in which he copied three of Hawthorne's most characteristic papers from *The Token*. He had but little encouragement to continue in literature, for Mr. Goodrich was so much more a publisher than an author that he paid him wretchedly for his contributions, and still more wretchedly for his work upon an *American Magazine of Useful and Entertaining Knowledge*, which he persuaded him to edit. This author-publisher consented, however, at a later period (1837) to bring out a collection of Hawthorne's writings under the title of *Twice-told Tales*. A moderate edition was got rid of, but the great body of the reading public ignored the book altogether. It was generously reviewed in the *North American Review* by his college friend Longfellow, who said it came from the hand of a man of genius, and passed it for the exceeding beauty of its style, which was as clear as running water.

The want of pecuniary success which had so far attended his authorship left Hawthorne to accept a situation which was tendered him by Mr. George Bancroft, the historian, collector of the port of Boston under the Democratic rule of President Van Buren. He was appointed a weigher in the custom house at a salary of about \$1200 a year, and entered upon the duties of his office, which consisted for the most part in measuring coal, salt, and other bulky commodities on foreign vessels. It was tedious employment, but faithfully performed for two years, when he was superseded through a change in the national administration. Master of himself once more, he returned to Salem, where he remained until the spring of 1841, when he wrote a collection of children's stories entitled *Grandfather's Chair*, and joined an industrial association at West Roxbury, Mass. Brook Farm, as it was called, was a social Utopia, composed of a number of advanced thinkers, whose object was so to distribute manual labour as to give its members time for intellectual culture. The scheme worked admirably—on paper, but it was suited neither to the temperaments nor the taste of Hawthorne, and after trying it patiently for nearly a year he returned to the everyday life of mankind.

One of Hawthorne's earliest admissions was Miss Sophia Peabody, a lady of Salem, whom he married in the summer of 1842. He made himself a new home in an old manse, at Concord, Mass., situated on historic ground, in sight of an old revolutionary battlefield, and devoted himself diligently to literature. He was known to the few by his *Twice-told Tales*, and to the many by his papers in the *Democratic Review*. He published in 1842 a second portion of *Grandfather's Chair*, and in 1845 a second volume of *Twice-told Tales*. He edited, during the winter year the



*African Journals* of Horatio Bridge, an officer of the navy, who had been at college with him, and in the following year he published in two volumes a collection of his later writings, under the title of *Mosses from an Old Manse*.

After a residence of nearly four years at Concord, Hawthorne returned to Salem, having been appointed surveyor of the custom-house of that port by a new Democratic administration. He filled the duties of this position until the incoming of the Whig administration again led to his retirement. He seems to have written little during his official term, but, as he had leisure enough and to spare, he read much, and pondered over subjects for future stories. His next work, *The Scarlet Letter*, which was begun after his removal from the custom-house, was published in 1850. If there had been any doubt of his genius before, it was settled for ever by this powerful romance.

Shortly after the publication of *The Scarlet Letter* Hawthorne removed from Salem to Lenox, Berkshire, Mass., where he wrote *The House of the Seven Gables* (1851) and *The Wonder-Book* (1851). From Lenox he removed to West Newton, near Boston, Mass., where he wrote *The Blithedale Romance* (1852) and *The Snow Image and other Twice-told Tales* (1852). In the spring of 1852 he removed back to Concord, where he purchased an old house which he called *The Wayside*, and where he wrote a *Life of Franklin Pierce* (1852) and *Tanglewood Tales* (1853). Mr. Pierce was the Democratic candidate for the presidency, and it was only at his urgent solicitation that Hawthorne consented to become his biographer. He declared that he would accept no office in case he was elected, lest it might compromise him, but his friends gave him such weighty reasons for reconsidering his decision that he accepted the consulate at Liverpool, which was understood to be one of the best gifts at the disposal of the president.

Hawthorne departed for Europe in the summer of 1853, and returned to the United States in the summer of 1856. Of the seven years which he passed in Europe five were spent in attending to the duties of his consulate at Liverpool, and in little journeys to Scotland, the Lakes, and elsewhere, and the remaining two in France and Italy. They were quiet and uneventful, coloured by observation and reflection, as his note-books show, but productive of only one elaborate work, *The Marble Faun*, which he sketched out during his residence in Italy, and rewrote and prepared for the press at Leamington, England, whence it was despatched to America and published in 1860.

Hawthorne took up his abode at *The Wayside*, not much richer than when he left it, and sat down at his desk once more with a heavy heart. He was surrounded by the throes of a great civil war, and the political party with which he had always acted was under a cloud. His friend ex-President Pierce was signified as a traitor, and when Hawthorne dedicated his next book to him—a volume of English impressions entitled *Our Old Home* (1863)—it was at the risk of his own popularity. His pen was soon to be laid aside for ever. For, with the exception of the unfinished story of *Septimius Felton*, which was published after his death by his daughter Una (1872), and the fragment of *The Dolliver Romance*, the beginning of which was published in the *Atlantic Monthly* in July 1864, he wrote no more. His health gradually declined, his hair grew white as snow, and the once brilliant figure that in early manhood flashed along the airy cliffs and glittering sands scattered idly on the little hill behind his house. In the beginning of April 1864 he made a short southern tour with his publisher, Mr. William D. Ticknor, and was benefited by the change of scene until he reached Philadelphia, where he was shocked by the sudden death of Mr. Ticknor. He returned to *The Wayside*, and after a short season of rest joined his friend ex-President Pierce. He died at Plymouth, New Hamp-

shire, on May 19, 1864, and five days later was buried at Sleepy Hollow, a beautiful cemetery at Concord, where he used to walk under the pines when he was living at the Old Manse, and where his ashes moulder under a simple stone, inscribed with the single word "Hawthorne."

The writings of Hawthorne are marked by subtle imagination, curious power of analysis, and exquisite purity of diction. He studied exceptional developments of character, and was fond of exploring secret crypts of emotion. His shorter stories are remarkable for originality and suggestive power, and his larger ones are as absolute creations as *Hamlet* or *Udine*. Lacking the accomplishment of verse, he was in the highest sense a poet. His work is pervaded by a manly personality, and by an almost feminine delicacy and gentleness. He inherited the gravity of his Puritan ancestors without their superstition, and leaned in his solitary meditations a knowledge of the night-side of life which would have filled them with suspicion. A profound anatomist of the heart, he was singularly free from morbidness, and in his darkest speculations concerning evil was robustly right-minded. He worshipped conscience with his intellectual as well as his moral nature, it is supreme in all he wrote. Besides these mental traits, he possessed the literary quality of style—a grace, a clarity, a perfection of language which no other American writer ever possessed in the same degree, and which places him among the great masters of English prose. (H. A. X.)

HAAHTHAUSEN, AUGUST FRANZ LUDWIG MARIA VON (1792-1867), baron of Haxthausen-Abbenburg, was born on his father's estate near Paderborn in Westphalia, February 3, 1792. Educated at first at home, he proceeded in 1811 to the school of mining at Kassel in the Hartz, and after serving in the Hanoverian army in 1813-15, entered the university of Göttingen. On finishing his course there in 1818, he occupied himself with the management of his estates, and the study of the land laws and the legal rights of the peasantry. The result of his studies appeared in 1829 in *Die Agrarverfassung und ihre Conflicte*, a work which attracted much attention, and procured for him an official commission to investigate and report upon the land laws of the Prussian provinces with a view to a new code. After nine years spent in laborious collation, he published in 1839 an exhaustive treatise, *Die landliche Verfassung in den Provinzen Ost- und West-Preussen*. In 1843-44, at the request of the emperor Nicholas, he undertook a similar labour for Russia. The fruits of his investigations in that country are contained in *Studien über die inneren Zustände, das Volksleben, und insbesondere das landlichen Einrichtungen Russlands* (3 vols. 1847-52), in *Die Kriegsmacht Russlands* (1852), and in *Die landliche Verfassung Russlands* (1866). In 1836 he received the honorary title of privy state councillor, and afterwards of hereditary chamberlain of the principality of Paderborn. In 1847-48 he sat as a member of the combined diet at Berlin, and afterwards of the first Prussian chamber. After travelling through a large part of Europe, Baron Haxthausen retired to his estate. He died at Hanover, January 1, 1867.

Besides the foregoing works, Haxthausen was the author of *The African Slaves*, a novel, and *Præsentation, Sketches of the Nations and Races between the Indian Sea and the Caspian*, in English, 1864, German, 1866, in 1864 he edited *Das Constitutionelle Prinzip*, a collection of political writings by various authors.

HAYDN, JOSEPH (1732-1809), one of the most celebrated composers of the 18th century, was born at Rohrau, a village in Lower Austria, March 31, 1732. Schindler relates that when Beethoven, not long before his death, received a portrait of Haydn's birthplace, he exclaimed: "How wonderful that so great a man should have been born in a peasant's cottage." This cottage, which is still standing, had been built by Haydn's father, a worthy wheelwright, of whose twelve children the composer was

the soon! At an early age the child evinced so decided a talent for music that one Johann Mathias Frankh, a distant relation of the family, proposed to undertake his musical and general education, and for that purpose invited him to Haunburg, a neighbouring town where Frankh kept a school. To Haunburg accordingly young Haydn went in 1738, and there he received instruction in the elementary knowledge of his art, including a practical acquaintance with most instruments, at the hands of the musical schoolmaster. Having developed an agreeable soprano voice, young Haydn was by the intercession of the dean of Haunburg promoted to a post amongst the choir boys of St Stephen's cathedral, Vienna, where he remained from 1740-50, doing duty in the church services, and at the same time enlarging his musical knowledge and experience. His artistic education was, however, all but exclusively practical, and it is said that he received only two theoretical lessons from Rauter the chapel-master. As a composer, therefore, Haydn was in every sense self taught. Of his zeal in acquiring information he was in the habit of talking with pride in later years, and several works of sacred music were the first fruit of his early studies. In 1749 or 1750 his beautiful boyish voice changed, and he lost his position accordingly. Being now thrown on his own resources, he had to undergo various forms of musical drudgery, such as giving lessons (at the moderate stipend of two florins per month) and even playing in the orchestra at dances and the like. His condition was somewhat improved by his acquaintance with Metastasio, the celebrated operatic poet, in fact the *Scriptor* of the 18th century, who introduced him to Señor Matzner, a Spaniard living in Vienna, whose daughter Haydn instructed for several years. It was through Metastasio also that Haydn came into contact with Porpora the composer, best known as the singing master of the great Faurelli. For a considerable time Haydn remained in constant intercourse with him, acting as his accompanist, and occasionally it is said as his valet. In return he obtained a perfect acquaintance with Porpora's method, besides his knowledge of the Italian language, both invaluable to a composer in those days. The works of Emanuel Bach, son of the great Sebastian, at the same time became his model for chamber music. Fux's excellent work *Gradus ad Parnassum* was his guide in his studies of counterpoint. A mass in F, and a *faux Deuise* *L'homme Teufel*, both written in or about 1759, were Haydn's first important attempts at composition. The former is still in existence, but of the latter the libretto by Kutz only remains. It was produced early in 1752, and seems to have met with considerable success. Haydn's acquaintance with Gluck also dates from this period. An important event in Haydn's life was his acquaintance with Baron Fuenberg, an accomplished amateur, for whose private concerts he wrote his first string quartet, a form of composition in which he gained some of his greatest and most permanent triumphs. It is in the key of B flat, and was followed in rapid succession by seventeen other works of the same class, written during the years 1755 and 1756. To his new protector Haydn also owed his still more important acquaintance with Count Ferdinand Morzin. Count Morzin in 1759 appointed him conductor of his small but excellent band. The opportunities of hearing his own works performed by competent musicians Haydn did not neglect, and his first symphony in D belongs to the year 1759. Soon afterwards Count Morzin was compelled to dissolve his band, but Haydn's position was by this time sufficiently established, and very soon afterwards he found employment as second chapel-master to Prince Paul Esterházy, one of the richest Austrian nobles, whose love of art was as great as his wealth. The Esterházy family have been amongst the foremost patrons of music in Vienna from the days of Haydn to those of Beethoven and Schubert. Prince Paul

died in 1762, and left his title and fortune to his brother Nicholas, surnamed the Magnificent. He immediately enlarged his orchestra, and also increased the salaries of its members, including that of Haydn (from 400 to 600 florins), and on the death of his colleague Weisse, a scholarly but dry musician, appointed him first conductor. This position, or at least its title and emoluments, Haydn retained till his death, and his attachment to the Esterházy family remained unchanged by his subsequent fame and fortunes. The events just related determined Haydn's career for the next twenty-eight years. During this period he was in the active service of his protector, residing at Esterházy, the splendid country seat of the family, described as a second Versailles, or in Vienna, conducting the orchestra of the prince, and writing for his concert and theatre a number of works, including symphonies, cassations, quartets, sonatas, and numerous vocal compositions, including several operas, none of which, however, had any permanent success. Thus the opera *La vera Costanza*, written for the court theatre of Vienna in 1776, was withdrawn by the composer owing to intrigues against him, it is said, and we are not told that it met with a much better fate on its revival fourteen years later. Another dramatic work, *L'isola disabitata* (1779), procured for the composer the membership of the Accademia Filarmónica at Modena, and a gold snuff-box from the king of Spain. But with its companions it has not escaped oblivion. The truth is that Haydn was without the true dramatic spirit, and of this he was himself well aware. According to his own confession his operas were fitted only for the small stage at Esterházy, in a large theatre, and before a miscellaneous audience, they lost their effect. The scores of most of the operas are preserved in the archives of Eisenstadt, another seat of the Esterházy family. Of his life during this period little need be said. It was eventless and to a certain extent monotonous, but free from care and exclusively devoted to art. His own words, quoted by Herr Fohl, sum up all that it is necessary to relate: "My pence was always satisfied with my work, I not only had the encouragement of constant approval, but as conductor of an orchestra I could make experiments, observe what produced an effect and what weakened it, and was thus in a position to improve, alter, make additions or omissions, and be as bold as I pleased. I was cut off from the world, there was no one to confuse or torment me, and I was forced to become original." The only person that could have wished to "confuse or torment" the hapless composer was fortunately kept at distance by the strict order of the prince's household, that none of his musicians was to be accompanied by his wife. Haydn at an early age became attached to the daughter of a housemaid, Koller by name, and after her death was persuaded to marry her sister, three years older than himself. The marriage was an unhappy one, and the pair separated soon after their union, Haydn's inflammable heart subsequently causing him more or less serious trouble on more than one occasion. In the meantime the composer's fame had begun to spread from an early period of his career. As early as 1766 a journal speaks of him as the "favourite of the nation," and foreign counts were not slow in acknowledging his merits. Thus one of his works, *The Seven Words of our Saviour on the Cross*, a series of orchestral interludes for the church service on Good Friday, was written by special invitation for the cathedral of Cadix. In Paris his works were performed with immense success at the Concert Spirituel, and a single English firm bought the copyright of no less than 129 of his works, including 82 symphonies. The appreciation of Haydn's work in England led to important results in his latter years. Several pressing invitations to visit that country had been declined by the composer on account

of his services being required at Esterházy. But when in 1790 Prince Nicholas died, and his successor dissolved the orchestra, allowing Haydn a considerable pension, the latter was at last at liberty to accept a munificent offer from Salomon, the violinist and entrepreneur, in whose company he staid for London, where Salomon occupied a leading position in the musical world. They left Vienna in December 1790, and travelled by way of Bonn, where Salomon had been born. There, accordingly, a halt was made, and Haydn was received by the elector with every honour due to his fame. The amusing description of a dinner given during his stay at Bonn may be read in Haydn's biography of Beethoven, who at that time was a member of the electoral chapel, and not unlikely made on this occasion Haydn's acquaintance. On the latter's return journey the young man submitted a cantata to the celebrated composer, whom he soon afterwards followed to Vienna to become his pupil. It is well known that the relations between the great master and his greatest pupil were not altogether what might have been desired. Beethoven's genius was of too individual a type to bear the impress of a nature so different as Haydn's, and the latter may not always have taken sufficient trouble to enter into the ways of his wilful pupil. Certain it is that, at one time of his career, Beethoven delighted in speaking slightly of "Papa Haydn," and, for instance, refused to call himself Haydn's pupil, because, as he bluntly said, he never learnt anything under his tutor. He even went so far as to suspect Haydn of wilfully trying to keep him back in his studies. It was only in his later years that this animosity gave way to the more general appreciation of his great predecessor, an expression of which is quoted at the beginning of this notice.

Haydn's visit to London was a succession of triumphs. Dr. Burney welcomed him with a laudatory poem, the various musical societies of the metropolis vied for his presence, and on July 8, 1791, he was created doctor of music by the university of Oxford. At court also he was received with every distinction, and the antistrophe followed the royal example. Neither were more substantial rewards wanting. Haydn's engagement with Salomon was to write and conduct at the concerts in the Hanover Square Rooms six symphonies, and the success of these may be judged from the fact that at Haydn's benefit concert, for which £200 had been guaranteed to him, the receipts rose to £350. He also appeared at other concerts (one given by himself at Hanover Square Rooms, where amongst other works the *Seven Words* already referred to was performed), always with equal success. The same events were repeated in the following year, when the Salomon concerts began in February, and concluded with an extra concert in June. The symphonies known as the "Salomon Set," comprising some of Haydn's finest instrumental works, are the permanent record of the connexion of the two artists. In 1792 Haydn also went to hear the charity children at St. Paul's, whose singing produced on him as deep an impression as it did on Beethoven many years later. "I was more touched by this innocent and reverent music," he wrote in his diary, "than by any I ever heard in my life." Haydn left London in June 1792, but only to return in January 1794. In addition to his earlier works six new symphonies were played at the concerts of Salomon, which in the following year were given at the King's Concert-room and terminated on June 1, 1795, when Haydn appeared for the last time in England. In addition to valuable presents from royalty and other persons, he received £1200 by his second English visit, from which he returned to Vienna in the autumn of 1795, to resume once more his functions in the newly organized chapel of Prince Esterházy. He was now well stricken in years, and might have rested on his laurels. But so far from this being the case, the two works on

which—apart from his symphonies and sonatas—his immortality must mainly rest, belong to this last epoch of his life. These were the oratorio *The Creation*, and the cantata *The Seasons*. They were both written to German translations of English libretti, the former being compiled from *Paradise Lost*, the latter from Thomson's *Seasons*. *The Creation* was first performed in public on March 19, 1799, when its success was as immediate as it has since proved permanent. *The Seasons* was begun soon after the completion of *The Creation*, and finished in very little time. No one, delighted by the charm and spontaneity of its melodies, would suspect it to be the work of a feeble old man. Such, however, Haydn had now become. He wrote little after *The Seasons*, and his public appearances were few and far between. His old age was surrounded by the love of his friends and the esteem of the musical world, but his failing health did not admit of much active enjoyment. He was seen in public for the last time at a performance of *The Creation* in 1808. But his own music made so overpowering an impression on him that he had to be carried out of the hall. He died on May 31, 1809, during the occupation of Vienna by Napoleon's army, and many French officers followed his body to the grave.

Haydn's compositions comprise almost every form of vocal and instrumental music. Of his dramatic works the opening air of infinitely less importance than *The Creation* and *The Seasons*. In the former there are points of grand and truly epical conception, surpassed by few masters except Handel, and the idyllic charm of the latter is as fresh to-day as it was eighty years ago. At the same time the great importance of Haydn in the history of music lies elsewhere. It was as an instrumental composer that he opened a new epoch of musical development. That amongst his 126 orchestral symphonies there are many extremely slight efforts is a matter of course. Even his finest symphonies, such as the celebrated *Surprise*, or the one in E flat surmised in Germany "as den Pfaffen wilbel," on account of the characteristic drum-roll occurring in it, are pigmies if compared with Beethoven's colossal efforts. At the same time it is true that without Haydn's modest substruction Beethoven's mighty edifice would have been impossible. It was Haydn who first fixed the form of the symphony and gave it consistency of development. The lucid and harmonious treatment of his themes and the symmetrical structure of his symphonic movements remain still unsurpassed. And the same may be said in almost the same words of his string quartets, of which he wrote no less than eighty-three. It is by such works as these that Haydn has earned the name of father of instrumental music, generally and justly applied to him. At the same time it cannot be denied that there is in his works a certain want of intensity and depth. He avoids the high places of thought and passion, his path lies mostly in the smiling plains of humour and agreeable sentiment. In the former especially he excels, and it ought to be noted that his humour is of that peculiarly Viennese type which is as harmless as it is charming, and to the general influence of which even such serious composers as Beethoven and Brahms have had to submit. Some of Haydn's minuets especially seem to spring immediately from the consciousness of the people. How much he was at one with his nation is further proved by such a song as his "Gott erhalte Franz den Kaiser," which has become the Austrian national hymn, and is one of the rare instances in which a genuine folksong can be traced to a celebrated composer,—for generally the songs of the people are produced by the people. To sum up, Haydn's place in the history of his art will remain unassailed by all the changes musical taste has undergone since his time, or may still undergo. His melodies, though simple, are genuinely inspired, and will never lose their

charm, and his workmanship will remain an invaluable model of cleanness and symmetry. Haydn's life has been written by many pens and in many languages, Stendhal, the celebrated novelist, being amongst his French biographers. But all these earlier attempts have been thrown into the shade by the excellent works of HENRI C. F. POHL (*Mozart and Haydn in London*, 1867, *Joseph Haydn*, vol. 1, 1875, and the article "Haydn" in Grove's *Dictionary of Music and Musicians*), which are full of accurate and comprehensive research. To HENRI POHL all students of Haydn's life must confess themselves deeply indebted.

Two of Haydn's brothers acquired a certain amount of celebrity. JOHN MICHAEL HAYDN, born at Rohrau, September 14, 1737, and like his brother a choir-boy at St Stephen's cathedral, became a pious and able composer of masses and all kinds of church music. He lived during the greater part of his life at Salzburg, and his name is frequently mentioned in the biography of Mozart. Of his numerous compositions few have been printed. A mass in D is perhaps his masterpiece. He died August 10, 1806. The youngest brother, JOHANN HAYDN (born December 23, 1713, died May 20, 1805), had some reputation as a vocalist, and became, most probably by his brother's intercession, a singer in Prince Esterházy's chapel. (P. II.)

HAYDON, BENJAMIN ROBERT (1786-1846), historical painter and writer, was born at Plymouth, January 26, 1786. His mother was the daughter of the Rev. Benjamin Cobley, rector of Dordbrook, Devon, whose son, General Sir Thomas Cobley, signalled himself in the Russian service at the siege of Ismail. His father, a prosperous painter, stationer, and publisher, was a man of literary taste, and was well known and esteemed amongst all classes in Plymouth. Haydon, an only son, at an early date gave evidence of his taste for study, which was carefully fostered and promoted by his mother. At the age of six he was placed in Plymouth grammar school, and at twelve in Plympton St Mary school. He completed his education in this institution, where Sir Joshua Reynolds also had acquired all the scholastic training he ever received. On the ceiling of the school room was a sketch by Reynolds in burnt cork, which it used to be Haydon's delight to sit and contemplate. Whilst at school he had some thought of adopting the medical profession, but he was so shocked at the sight of an operation that he gave up the idea. A perusal of Albinus, however, inspired him with a love for anatomy, and Reynolds's discourses aroused within him a smouldering taste for painting, which from childhood had been the absorbing idea of his mind. sanguine of success, full of energy and vigour, he started from the parental roof, May 14, 1804, for London, and entered his name as a student at the Royal Academy. He began and prosecuted his studies with such unwearied assiduity that Russell wondered when he ever found time to eat. At the age of twenty-one (1807) Haydon exhibited, for the first time, at the Royal Academy, *The Repose in Egypt*, which was bought by Mr. Thomas Hope the year after. This was a good start for the young artist, who shortly received a commission from Lord Mulgrave and an introduction to Sir George Beaumont. In 1809 he finished his well-known picture of *Dentatus*, which, though it brought him a great increase of fame, involved him in a life-long quarrel with the Royal Academy, whose committee had hung the picture in a small side room instead of the great hall. In 1810 his difficulties began through the stoppage of an allowance of £200 a year he had received from his father. His disappointment was embittered by the controversies in which he now became involved with Sir George Beaumont, for whom he had painted his famous picture of *Macbeth*, and Mr. Payne Knight, who had denied the beauties as well as the value of the *Elgin Marbles*. *The Judgment of Solomon*, his next

production, gained him £700, besides, £100 voted to him by the directors of the British Institution, and the freedom of the borough of Plymouth. To recruit his health and escape for a time from the cares of London life, Haydon joined his intimate friend Wilkie in a trip to Paris, he studied at the Louvre, and on his return to England produced his *Christ's Entry into Jerusalem*, which afterwards formed the nucleus for the American Gallery of Painting, which was erected by his cousin John Haviland of Philadelphia. Whilst painting *Isaacus* his pecuniary difficulties increased, and for the first time he was arrested but not imprisoned, the sheriff officer taking his word for his appearance. Amidst all these harassing cares he married in October 1821 a beautiful young widow, Miss Hyman, to whom he was devotedly attached. In 1823 Haydon was lodged in the King's Bench, where he received comforting letters from the first men of the day. Whilst a prisoner he drew up a petition to parliament in favour of the appointment of "a committee to inquire into the state of encouragement of historical painting," which was presented by Mr. Dismham. He also, during a second imprisonment in 1827, produced the picture of the *Mock Election*, the idea of which had been suggested by an incident that happened in the prison. The king (George IV) gave him £500 for this work. Among Haydon's other pictures were—1823, *Euclea*, and *Punch*, 1831, *Napoleon at St. Helena*, for Sir Robert Peel, *Xenophon on his Retreat* with the "Ten Thousand," first seen at the Sea, and *Waiting for the Times*, purchased by the marquis of Stafford, 1832, *Falstaff*, and *Achilles playing the Lyre*. In 1834 he completed the *Reform Banquet*, for Lord Grey—this painting contained 187 portraits, in 1843, *Cutius Leaping into the Gulf*, and *Uziel and Satan*. When the competition took place at Westminster Hall, Haydon sent two cartoons, *The Curse of Adam*, and *Edward the Black Prince*, but had not the good fortune to gain a prize for either. He then painted *The Banishment of Aristides*, which was exhibited with other productions under the same roof where Tom Thumb was then making his debut in London. The exhibition was unsuccessful, and the artist's difficulties increased to such an extent that, whilst employed on his last grand effort, *Alfred and the Trial by Jury*, overcome by debt, disappointment, and ingratitude, he wrote "Sketch me no longer on this rough world," and put an end to his existence with a pistol-shot, June 2, 1846, in the sixty-first year of his age. He left a widow and three children (various others had died), who, by the generosity of their father's friends, were rescued from their pecuniary difficulties and comfortably provided for, amongst the foremost of these friends were Sir Robert Peel, Count O'Drury, Mr. Justice Talfourd, and Lord Campbell.

Haydon began his first lecture on painting and design in 1835, and afterwards visited all the principal towns in England and Scotland. His delivery was energetic and imposing, his language powerful, flowing, and apt, and replete with wit and humour, and to look at the lecturer, excited by his subject, one could scarcely fancy him a man overwhelmed with difficulties and anxieties. The height of Haydon's ambition was to behold the first buildings of his country adorned with historical representations of her glory. He lived to see the acknowledgment of his principles by Government in the establishment of schools of design, and the embellishment of the new houses of parliament, but in the competition of artists for the carrying out of this object, the commissioners (amongst whom was one of his former pupils) considered, or affected to consider, that he had failed. Haydon was well versed in all points of his profession, and his *Lectures*, which were published shortly after their delivery, showed that he was as bold a writer as painter. It may be mentioned in this

connexion that he was the author of the long and elaborate article, "Painting," in the 7th edition of the *Encyclopædia Britannica*

To form a correct estimate of Haydon it is necessary to read his autobiography. This is one of the most natural books ever written, full of various and abundant power, and fascinating to the reader. The author seems to have dictated his feelings and sentiments without restraint as they rose in his mind, and his portrait stands in these volumes limned to the life by his own hand. His love for his art was both a passion and a principle. He found patrons difficult to manage, and, not having the tact to lead them gently, he tried to drive them fiercely. He failed, abused patrons and patronage, and intermingled talk of the noblest independence with acts not always dignified. He was self-willed to perversity, but his perseverance was such as seldom associated with so much violence and passion. With a large fund of genuine self-reliance he combined a considerable measure of vanity. To the last he believed in his own powers and in the ultimate triumph of art. In taste he was deficient, at least as concerned himself. Hence the tone of self-assertion which he assumed in his advertisements, catalogues, and other appeals to the public. He proclaimed himself the apostle and martyr of high art, and believed himself to have on that account a claim on the sympathy and support of the nation. It must be confessed that he often tested severely those whom he called his friends. Every reader of his autobiography will be struck at the frequency and fervor of the short payers interspersed throughout the work. Haydon had an overwhelming sense of a personal, overruling, and merciful providence which influenced his relations with his family, and to some extent with the world. His conduct as a husband and father entitles him to the utmost sympathy. In art his powers and attainments were undoubtedly very great, although his actual performances mostly fall short of the faculty which was manifestly within him; his general range and force of mind were also most remarkable, and would have qualified him to shine in almost any path of intellectual exertion or of practical work. His eager and combative character was partly his enemy, but he had other enemies actuated by motives as unworthy as his own: he was always high pitched and on abstract grounds laudable. Of his three great works—the Solomon, the Entry into Jerusalem, and the Lazarus—the second has generally been regarded as the finest. The Solomon is also a very admirable production, showing his executive power at its loftiest, and of itself enough to place Haydon at the head of British historical painting in his own time. The Lazarus, now in the National Gallery, is a more unequal performance, and in various respects open to criticism and censure, yet the head of Lazarus is majestic and impressive that, if its author had done nothing else, we must still pronounce him a potent pictorial genius.

The chief authorities for the life of Haydon are *Life of B. R. Haydon, from his Autobiography and Journals*, edited and compiled by Tom Teyton, 8 vols., 1858, and *B. R. Haydon's Own Reminiscences and Little Tales*, with a memoir by his son, F. W. Haydon, 2 vols., 1876.

**HAY FEVER, HAY ASTHMA, or SUMMER CATARRH**, a term applied to a catarrhal affection of the respiratory mucous membrane occurring in some individuals during the hay season, and generally believed to be due to the inhalation of the emanations from the spring grass (*Anthemum odoratum*). It is an ailment of comparatively late occurrence. The symptoms are those commonly experienced in the case of a severe cold or influenza, consisting of headache, violent sneezing, and watery discharge from the nostrils and eyes, together with dry hard cough, and occasionally severe asthmatic paroxysms. The attack usually runs a course of from two to six weeks, unless cut

short by appropriate treatment, to which the complaint is in a considerable measure amenable. There is generally an annual recurrence of the disorder in those liable to it if they are exposed to its exciting cause, namely, the presence of hay. Symptoms of a similar character are produced in certain persons by the aroma of various flowers, by peacocks, and by the odour from cats, dogs, and rabbits. All such cases are examples of idiosyncrasy, and the individual is in general permanently susceptible to the influence of the excitant. In not a few instances an hereditary liability is traceable. The most effectual method of treatment in any case is to avoid the exciting cause, namely, the neighbourhood of the fields during the particular season. Removal to the seaside often succeeds in putting an end to an attack, and many persons who are liable to the complaint make such a change annually before its expected onset, and thus escape. For those who are unable to accomplish this, and must remain exposed to the noxious emanation, the use of a respirator is recommended. Of medicinal agents for affording relief during an attack, the usual remedies for asthma may be advantageously resorted to (see *ASTHMA*), while the use of the nasal douche with a weak solution of quinine and the employment of creosote or carbolic acid inhalations have been suggested.

**HAYLEY, WILLIAM** (1747–1820), the friend and biographer of Cowper, and grandson of William Hayley, dean of Chichester, was born in that city on the 9th November 1745. On account of mismanagement during a fever which he had while in a boarding school at Kingston, he was reduced to such prostration that the preservation of his life appeared to present only the promise of hopeless lameness and idiocy, but by careful nursing his health was gradually completely restored, and after some years' private tuition he pursued his studies at Eton and at Trinity College, Cambridge. In 1768 he procured a certificate of admission to the Middle Temple, London, but a short trial of legal studies was sufficient to dissipate the unexperienced preference which he had cherished for the profession of law. After his marriage in 1769 he stayed for some years chiefly in London, but in 1774 he retired to his paternal estate of Eastham in Sussex, resolved to spend the remainder of his days in rural quiet, with only such an amount of literary activity as might defy ennui and give a zest to life. Hayley made more than one attempt to succeed as a dramatic author, but first won fame by his poetical *Essays on Painting, History, and Epic Poetry*, and by his poem the *Triumph of Temper*. The success of these poems was partly attributable to the general dearth of poetic talent at the time, but they had also certain external qualities fitted to secure for them at least a temporary popularity, and his notes to his poetical essays also displayed very extensive reading, and exerted considerable influence in directing attention in England to the literature of Italy and Spain. On the death of Warton, Hayley was offered the laureateship, but declined it. In 1792 he made the acquaintance of the poet Cowper, and this acquaintance ripened into a friendship which remained unbroken until Cowper's death in 1800. This beavement was separated by only a week from that caused by the death of Hayley's natural son Thomas Alphonso, who had given great promise of excellence as a sculptor, and, thinking from the associations now connected with Eastham, Hayley retired to what he called a "maime hermitage," which he had built at Feltham, and there resided till his death, November 20, 1820. Besides the *Life of Cowper*, published in 1803, Hayley was the author of a number of works in prose, which were not, however, so successful as his early poetical productions. Indeed the estimation in which he was held even during his lifetime depended perhaps more on his acquirements and widely-cultivated tastes and his position

in society than on his achievements in literature. The *Memoirs of Hayley*, 2 vols. for writing which, he was published posthumously, he received a considerable allowance during the last twelve years of his life, appeared in 1823.

HAYNE, ROBERT YOUNG (1791-1810), American statesman, was born in St Paul's parish, Colleton district, South Carolina, on November 10, 1791. He studied law at Charleston, S C, and in his twenty-first year was admitted to the bar there, but in the same year (1812) served for a short time as a soldier in the war with Great Britain. Returning to practise in Charleston, Hayne was elected a member of the State legislature in 1814, and four years later became speaker. Shortly afterwards he accepted the post of attorney-general for his native State, though he declined the same office for the United States. On being elected a senator of the United States, Hayne at once showed himself an active foe to protective legislation, and vigorously combated the tariff of 1814 and 1828. A bill having been passed in 1832 removing the duty from those imports only which were not in competition with home manufactures, the state of South Carolina passed an ordinance nullifying the bill, on the ground that it was unconstitutional. President Jackson denounced this proceeding, and South Carolina, appointing Hayne governor, was preparing to defend its position by arms, when Congress made the desired change in the tariff, and South Carolina repealed its act. Hayne, on retiring from the governorship in 1834, was elected mayor of Charleston, and continued to take an active interest in public affairs till his death at Ashville, North Carolina, September 24, 1840. See *Life and Speeches of R. Y. Hayne*, 1845.

HAYTER, SIR GEORGE (1789-1871), principal painter in ordinary to the queen, was the son of a popular drawing-master and teacher of perspective who published a well-known introduction to perspective and other works. The son was born in London, and in his early youth went to sea. He afterwards studied in the Royal Academy, became a miniature painter, and was appointed in 1815 miniature-painter to the Princess Charlotte. He passed some years in Italy, more especially in Rome, returned to London towards 1826, resumed portrait painting, now chiefly in oil colour, executed many likenesses of the royal family, and attained such a reputation for finish and refinement in his work that he received the appointment of principal painter, and teacher of drawing to the princesses. In 1842 he was knighted. He painted various works on a large scale of a public and semi-historical character, but essentially works of portraiture, such as *The Trial of Queen Caroline* (1891), *The Meeting of the First Reformed Parliament*, now in the National Portrait Gallery, Queen Victoria taking the Oath of Allegiance (accounted his finest production), *The Marriage of the Queen*, and *The Trial of Lord William Russell*. The artistic merits of Hayter's works are not, however, such as to preserve to him with posterity an amount of *postérité* corresponding to that which court patronage procured him. He is not to be confounded with a contemporary artist, John Hayter, who produced illustrations for the *Book of Beauty*, &c.

## HAYTI

Copyright, 1880, by John D. Chapman, jun.

PLATE XIII. HAYTI, HAITI, SANTO DOMINGO, or HISPANIOLA, the largest, excepting Cuba, of the West India Islands, is situated between 17° 37' and 20° 0' N lat and 68° 20' and 74° 28' W long. Its greatest length, from Cape Engaño on the east to Cape Tiburon on the west, is 407 miles, its greatest breadth, from Cape Beate in the south to the farthest point on the north coast, is 100 miles, and its area is 28,000 square miles, or about the same as that of Ireland. From Cuba on the W.N.W. and from Jamaica

on the W.S.W. it is separated by the Windward Passage,—being distant from the former about 70 miles and from the latter about 130 miles,—and from Puerto Rico, which lies about 60 miles to the east, by the Mona Passage. In general form Hayti somewhat resembles a turtle, its eastern projection forming the head and the two western peninsulas the hinder limbs of the animal. The coast-line, which is estimated at about 1250 miles in length, has numerous projections and indentations. Of the peninsulas, the largest, on the south-west, of which Cape Tiburon forms the extremity, is 150 miles long by 20 to 40 wide, and the next largest, on the north-west, is 50 miles long with an average breadth of about 40 miles. Between these lies the Gulf of Gonave, a triangular bay, at the apex of which is the city of Port au Prince. The island of Gonave, about 27 miles from the city, is 35 miles long by 8½ miles broad. It divides the entrance to Port au Prince into two channels, both good, and forms within a safe anchorage of about 200 square miles in extent, but coral reefs near the coast oblige vessels of large draught to lie out about 1½ miles. Other ports in the Gulf of Gonave, north of Port au Prince, are St Marks, frequented for trade in coffee, and Gonaves, a large bay 4 miles deep, divided by a small island. At the extremity of the north-west peninsula is St Nicolas Mole, with an outer and an inner harbour, the latter landlocked and with good anchorage. Beyond, on the north coast, are Port de Paix, Anse Bay, Cape Hayti, or Gonave, the Bay of Capaco, Port Royal, and Port Liberté, or Port Dauphin. From Port Liberté to Samana there is no good harbour on the north coast, Port Isabella being little more than an indentation in the coast, and the harbour of Puerto Plata being very shallow and beset with coral reefs. The Bay of Samana is formed by the peninsula of Samana, a mountain ridge projecting into the sea at the north-east extremity of the island. It is about 35 miles in length and from 6 to 10 miles in breadth. The bay is 30 miles long east and west, 10 miles broad north and south, and has an area of about 300 square miles. From the south coast a chain of coral reefs stretches across its mouth to within 1½ miles of the north shore, and the entrance is still further narrowed to about ⅓ of a mile by islets at the north extremity of the reef. There is, however, a good passage for ships of the deepest draught, and the bay inside is safe in all weathers. Beyond Samana, on the east and south coast, there is no port until Santo Domingo is reached, which has about 12 feet of water. West of Santo Domingo are the adjoining bays of Ocoa and Neiba, the former with an inlet called Caldesa Bay, which would be a good harbour if the coral reefs were removed. Jacmel, a nearly round bay, open to the south-east, the Bay of Baiset, the ports of Aquin and St Louis, and the roadstead of Aux Cayes. Between Aux Cayes and Port au Prince are Jérémie and the Bay of Baradères, the latter a good harbour. Besides Gonave, the principal islands off the coast are La Tortue or Tortuga, to the north, 22 miles long and 5 broad, once the stronghold of the buccaniers, La Saône or Adamanny, off the south-east end of the island, 15 miles long by 3½ broad, Ile de Vache, off Aux Cayes, 5 miles long by 2 broad, Great Cayemite, in the Bay of Baradères, 5 miles long by 3 broad, and La Beate, off the cape of the same name, 5 miles long by 2 broad. There are also many islets. Navasse, in the Windward Passage, is claimed by Hayti, but the title to it is not settled. It has been occupied since 1855 by a garrison company from the United States.

Hayti is essentially a mountainous country, but there are many large and fertile plains between the several ranges. There are three distinct mountain formations,—the northern, the central, and the southern,—all of which have a general east and west direction. The northern chain, commonly called the Sierra de Monte Cristi, extends from Cape

Samana on the east to the Solla de Cabello (3900 feet high) on the west, near Point d'Angate. The highest peak in this chain is Mount Diego Campo, near the middle part, which has an elevation of about 4000 feet. The central range begins near Point Macao on the east, extends west to about 70° 20' long, with an average height of about 1000 feet, and then divides into two distinct chains, the northernmost of which pursues a north-westerly course to Cape St Nicolas, while the other turns south west to Mount Ocoa, and then curves westward to the sea, which it reaches near St Marc. Near the west end of the island these two chains are connected by a secondary S shaped ridge. The northern limb of this central chain is called the Sierra del Cibao, and is the backbone of the island. The name Cibao is properly limited to the middle part, where, though there are occasional peaks more than 1000 feet higher, the average height is 7000 feet. At the east end are still higher elevations, Loma Tina and Pico del Yagou being each more than 9000 feet high. These are the two highest points on the island. The third or southernmost range of mountains begins near the Bay of Neiba, and runs due west to Cape Tiburon, forming the backbone of the south west peninsula. This range has no general name, but is called Babuaco at the east end, La Salta in the middle, from the peak of that name (nearly 9000 feet high), and La Hotté towards the west end. The largest and finest of the great plains is La Vega Real (Doy la Plain), as it was named by Columbus, which lies between the middle part of the Cibao and the Monte Cristi ranges. It stretches from Samana Bay to Manzanillo Bay, and is about 140 miles long, with an average breadth of 14 miles. This valley is now commonly called the valley of Cibao, the name La Vega being confined to the eastern half, while the western is distinguished as the valley of Santiago. It is watered by the North or Gran Yagou river and the Yuna river and their affluents. The plain of Soybo stretches eastward from the river Ozama about 95 miles, with an average breadth of 16 miles, and is abundantly watered by the Ozama, Socu, Viciour, Quabon, and Yuna rivers. Most of the large valleys and plains are in a state of nature, part savanna and part wooded, and well adapted for cattle raising. Of the rivers, the Gran Yagou rises in the Pico del Yagou, and after a tortuous course in a generally north-westerly direction falls into the Bay of Manzanillo. Its mouth is obstructed by shallows, and it is navigated only by canoes. The South Yagou, called also the Neiba or Neiva, rises in the Pico del Yagou and the Embre del Rio, and flows south into the bay of Neiba. The Yuna rises on Loma Tina, and flows east into Samana bay, it is navigable by vessels of light draught as far as its junction with the Gran, and above that as far as Concepcion de la Vega by loaded canoes. The Ozama also is navigable for small vessels for 3 or 4 miles above its mouth. The largest lake is that of Enriquillo or Xaragua, which is 37 miles long by 8 broad. Though about 25 miles from the sea, its water is salt, as indicated in its French name Etang Salé, and has the same specific gravity as the ocean. It swarms with fish and with caymans. Other lakes are Lago de Fondo or Etang Samana's, 16 miles long by 4 broad, which has brackish water, Icten de Limon, 5 miles long by 2 broad, which has fresh water and no visible outlet, and the smaller Rincon and Misagone.

The coast line of Hayti forms a portion of a considerable area of elevation. There are no active volcanoes in the island, but earthquakes are not infrequent. Rocks of earlier date than Secondary date have not yet been discovered, the most ancient, consisting of slates, conglomerates, and limestones, and forming as it were the core of the island, have been disturbed and intersected by intrusive masses of a syenitic character. Flanking the slates and other rocks of

the Sierra there is in the northern and in part of the southern side of Hayti a broad development of Tertiary deposits, which are skated by more recent limestones and gravels. The Sierra, forming the central mountain mass that runs the length of the eastern republic, and constituting in the main the peninsula of Samana, and also a small outlier near Point Plata, is throughout composed of much uplifted and usually strongly folded metamorphic rocks, which appear to have originally been clay shales, sandstones, sandstone conglomerates, and limestone. These are most disturbed in the western two thirds of the island, where they are broken in places by dykes. The quartz veins, as also are the slates near eruptive masses are auriferous, occurring in the sands of streams running through the metamorphic rocks, if in the neighbourhood of syenite. Thus the waters of the Nigua, Jaina, Nivao, Ocoa, and most of the tributaries of the Yagou that descend from the northern flank of Cibao carry gold, though rarely in any notable quantity. The lignite found in the Upper Miocene beds is exceedingly impure, and nowhere more than 3 or 4 inches in thickness. The mineral products include gold, platinum, silver, mercury, copper, iron, tin, manganese, antimony, sulphur, marble, opal, calcined, lazulite, rock-salt, and bitumen, and mineral springs—ferrous, sulphurous, and of other kinds—abound. The coal forms of the Miocene strata are allied to those of the west coast of South America, and forcibly suggest the conclusion that during some portion of the Miocene period the Pacific and Atlantic freely intercommunicated. For details concerning the geology of Hayti see Professor Gabb, *Trans Amer Phil Soc*, xv 49, and, on the Miocene fossils, Cuyppé, *Quart Journ Geol Soc Lond*, xxxi, 1876, p 516.

The fauna of Hayti is not extensive. The agents is the largest wild mammal. Birds are few, excepting water fowl and pigeons. Snakes abound, though few are venomous. Lizards are numerous, and insects swarm in the low parts, with tanabulas, scorpions, and centipedes. Animals are found in the lakes and rivers, and the waters teem with fish and other sea food. Wild cattle, hogs, and dogs, descendants of those brought from Europe, roam at large on the plains and in the forests. The wild hogs furnish much sport to the natives, who hunt them with dogs trained for the purpose.

In richness and variety of vegetable products Hayti is not excelled by any other country in the world. All tropical plants and trees grow there in perfection, and nearly all the vegetables and fruits of temperate climates may be successfully cultivated in its highlands. Among its indigenous productions are cotton, rice, maize, tobacco, cocon, ginger, native indigo (*indigo maron* or *serenay*), arrowroot, manioc or cassava, pineapple, banana, plantain, pine-apple, atchouke, yam, and sweet potato. Among its important plants and fruits are sugar cane, coffee, indigo (called *indigo franc*, to distinguish it from the native), melons, the legumes, cabbage, lucerne, guinea grass, bamboo, and the breadfruit, mango, camite, orange, almond, apple, grape, mulberry, and fig. Most of the imported fruits have degenerated from want of care, and the bamboo has been attacked by an insect which prevents its wide diffusion, but the mango, now spread over nearly the whole island, has become almost a necessary article of food, the breadfruit has likewise become common, but is not so much esteemed. Hayti is also rich in woods, especially in cabinet and dye woods, among the former are mahogany, manchineel, sandwood, rosewood, cinnamon wood, yellow acacia, and gri-gré, and among the latter are Brazil wood, logwood, fusine, and saffron. On the mountains are extensive forests of pine and a species of oak, and in various parts occur the locust, ironwood, cypress or Bermuda cedar, palmetto, and many kinds of palms.

Hayti possesses a great diversity of climate. In the plains, where it is generally hot and moist, the thermometer often rises to 96° and sometimes to 100°, but in the high lands the readings are seldom above 76° or below 60°. In the most elevated parts a fire is sometimes agreeable. The seasons are divided into the wet and dry. Rains are heaviest and most frequent in May and June, when the rivers, some of which have but a scanty supply of water in the dry season, flood portions of the plains. Hurricanes are not so frequent as in the Windward Islands, but violent gales often occur. The prevailing winds are from the east.

Agriculture is very backward, and the implements used are rude. The staple productions for which the island was once famous are now imperfectly cultivated or neglected altogether. Mining, once profitably carried on, is generally abandoned from lack of capital, though some gold washing still continues in the northern streams. Some mahogany and dyewoods are cut in the interior, and hides, wax, and honey are collected for export, but on a comparatively small scale. The business of the country is chiefly in the hands of foreigners, settled in the cities and larger towns.

The population of the island is about 700,000, of which 550,000 are subjects of the Haytian republic in the west, and 150,000 of the Dominican republic in the east. Of the Haytian population nearly 600,000 are of African descent, of the Dominican about 26,000. Of the mixed races about 125,000 are of Spanish, and 50,000 of French descent. There are also a few Germans, Italians, and natives of the United States, settled chiefly in the coast towns. The language of the eastern end of the island is Spanish, that of the western an impure French patois.

The history of Hayti begins with its discovery by Columbus who landed at St. Nicolas Moile, Dec. 6, 1492, having left Cuba the day before. The island was then occupied by about 2,000,000 people of a low type of humanity, who are described by the Spanish historians as feeble in intellect, and morally and physically defective. The natives called the island Haiti (mountainous country) and Quisqueia (vast country). Columbus named it Española (Little Spain), which was Latinized into Hispaniola. Adventures from Europe, attracted chiefly by the exaggerated stories of gold, flocked thither, and the natives were reduced to slavery, although many made a gallant resistance. After about 30 years of grinding servitude, nearly all the aborigines had disappeared. A few negroes were brought into the colony as early as 1506, and in 1517 a royal edict authorized the importation from Africa of 4000 negroes a year. The blacks, stronger and better able to bear the labour which had been death to their predecessors, multiplied to such a degree that the island has finally passed into the hands of their descendants. About 1630 a mixed colony of French and English, who had been driven out of St. Christopher by the Spaniards, established themselves in the island of Tortuga, where they soon grew formidable under the name of buccanniers. They at last obtained a footing on the mainland of Hayti, into which they had previously made only predatory excursions, and by the treaty of Ryewick (1697) the part of the island which they held was ceded to France. The colony, called Saint Domingue, languished for a while under the restrictions imposed on its trade by the mother country, but after 1722, when these were removed, it attained a high degree of prosperity, and it was in a flourishing state when the French Revolution broke out in 1789. The population was then composed of three classes,—whites, free people of colour (mostly mulattoes), and slaves. The free people of colour, some of whom were wealthy proprietors, demanded that the principles of the Revolution should be extended to them, this was opposed by the whites, who had previously engrossed all the public honours, and the two classes were

already violently inflamed against each other when the national convention (1791) passed a decree giving to the mulattos all the rights of French citizens. The whites adopted at once the most violent measures, and appealed to the mother country for a reversal of the decree. But when the mulattos took up arms for their defence at the time of the insurrection of the plantation slaves (August 23, 1791), the whites endeavoured to conciliate them. In the meantime the home Government reversed the decree granting them political rights. The mulattos now took part with the blacks, and a most destructive war raged for several years, during which each party seemed to study to outdo the other in acts of cruelty. Commissioners were sent out from France, with full power to settle the quarrel, but could effect nothing. In 1793 the abolition of slavery in the colony was proclaimed. In September of the same year a British force invaded the island, but, though some partial advantages were gained, the climate made sad havoc among the troops, and prevented any solid success. Toussaint P.ouverture, the leader of the blacks, came to the aid of the French, the home Government having in the meantime ratified the act of the commissioners in freeing the slaves. He was made commander-in-chief of the French army, and in 1798 forced the British to evacuate the island. By the treaty with Spain, made at Basel in 1795, France had acquired the title to the entire island, which now received the name of Saint Domingue.

In 1801 Toussaint, then master of the whole country, adopted a constitutional form of government, in which he was to be president for life. Bonaparte, then first consul of France, determined to reduce the colony and restore slavery, sent to Hayti 25,000 troops under General Leclerc. The blacks were compelled to retire to the mountains, but kept up a desultory war under Toussaint's able leadership. Leclerc, wearied of the war, enjoined the negro chiefs into a suspension of arms, and having invited Toussaint to an interview, seized him and sent him to France, where he died in prison in 1803. The blacks, infuriated by this act of treachery, renewed the struggle under Dessalines with a barbarity unequalled in the previous contests. The French, further embarrassed by the appearance of a British fleet off the coast, now gradually lost ground, and in 1803 agreed to evacuate the island. On the 30th of November of that year, 8000 French troops surrendered to the British squadron. In 1804 independence was declared, and the aboriginal name of the island was revived. Dessalines was made governor for life, but in October of the same year he proclaimed himself emperor, and was crowned with great pomp. He soon began to display the cruelty of a tyrant, and in 1806 he was assassinated. His position was now contended for by several chiefs, one of whom, Christophe, established himself in the north, while Pétion took possession of the southern part. The Spaniards re-established themselves in the eastern part of the island, retaining the French name, modified to Santo Domingo. Civil war now raged between the adherents of Christophe and Pétion, but in 1810 hostilities were suspended. Christophe declared himself king of Hayti under the title of Henry I., but his cruelty caused an insurrection, and in 1820 he committed suicide. Pétion had died in 1818, and was succeeded by Gen. Boyer, who, after Christophe's death, made himself master of all the French part of the island. In 1821 the eastern end of the island proclaimed its independence of Spain, and Boyer, taking advantage of dissensions there, invaded it, and in 1822 the dominion of the whole island fell into his hands. Boyer held the presidency of the new government, which was called the republic of Hayti, until 1843, when he was driven from the island by a revolution. In 1844 the people of the eastern end of the island again asserted their independence, and estab-





The enumeration of 1868, which extended over an area of 3000 square miles (including the feudai territory of Jambhal), showed a population of 807,218 (males, 101,422; females, 176,795). The Mohammedans numbered 816,112; Hindus, 18,568; Sikhs, 974, "others," 1370. The gross income, in 1876-77, was £26,392. In the same year the police force numbered 510 men, besides 360 village watchmen, and there were 24 schools with 1042 pupils. The principal crops consist of wheat, barley, oil seeds, maize, rice, jute, mulla, and cotton. Out of a cultivated area of 893,918 acres, 56,380 are artificially irrigated by means of wells and embankments on the rivers and hill torrents. Hazara has not suffered from any calamity since the famine of 1783, which afflicted it as far as the 1st of Upper India. The chief imports are English cloth, salt, indigo, and the exports *gha*, mustard oil, bulley, wheat, rice, and live stock. In 1875-76 there were 876 miles of unenclosed roads within the district. The average rainfall for the eight years ending 1873-74 amounted to 47 inches. The station of Abbottabad is the headquarters of the Punjab frontier force.

**History.**—The name *Hazara* probably belonged originally to a Turki family which settled India with Timur in the 13th century, and subsequently settled in this remote region. During the prosperous period of the Mogul dynasty, the population included a number of mixed tribes, which each began to assert its independence, so that the utmost anarchy prevailed until the time when *Hazara* attracted the attention of the young Sikh monarchy. Runjit Singh first obtained a footing in the district in 1818, and, after eight years of constant aggression, became master of the whole country. During the minority of the young Maharaja Duleep Singh, the Sikh capital fell into a state of complete disorganization, the people seized the opportunity for re-asserting their independence, and rose in 1848 in rebellion. They stormed the Sikh forts, laid siege to Lahore, and drove the governor across the borders. In the following year the greater part of the district was included in the territory ceded to *Raja* Ghalib Singh by the British, at the conclusion of the first Sikh war. On the outbreak of the second Sikh war the troops in garrison in the district, and the *Hazara* inhabitants supported Lord Dalhousie against the Lahore Government, and the insurrection was soon quelled. Since then Hazara has passed under direct British rule, and has enjoyed for more than quarter of a century uninterupted peace.

#### HAZARAS. See ARGH-ISTAN.

**HAZARD**, a game played with dice. The player or "caster" calls a "man" (that is, any number from five to nine inclusive) "Ho then throws with two dice. If he 'throws in,' or 'nicks,' he wins the sum played for from the banker or 'setter.' Five is a nick to five, six and twelve are nicks to six, seven and eleven to seven, eight and twelve to eight, and nine to nine. If the caster 'throws out' by throwing aces, or deuce, ace (called cabs), he loses. When the man is five or nine the caster throws out with eleven or twelve, when the man is six or eight he throws out with eleven, when the man is seven he throws out with twelve. If the caster neither nicks nor throws out, the number thrown is his "chance" and he keeps on throwing till either the chance comes up, when he wins, or till the man comes up, when he loses. When a chance is thrown, the "odds" for or against the chance are laid by the setter to the amount of the original stake.

Suppose, for example, 7 is the man. If the caster throws 7 or 11 he wins, if he throws ace, nabs, or 12 he loses. If he throws any other number, he has his chance. Say 7 is the man and 4 the chance, the odds against the caster are now 2 to 1 (as will appear from the table below). If the stake were £1, the setter would lay £2 to £1 in addition. The caster goes on throwing till either 7 or 4 appears, when he loses £2 or wins £3.

In trying the odds, the setter gains no advantage, as can easily be shown, examining the various ways in which two dice can be thrown

	1 and 1,	2 and 2,	3 and 3,	4 and 4,	5 and 5,	6 and 6,	7 and 7,	8 and 8,	9 and 9,	10 and 10,	11 and 11,	12 and 12,
1	1											
2		1										
3			1									
4				1								
5					1							
6						1						
7							1					
8								1				
9									1			
10										1		
11											1	
12												1

in all 36 ways. The table shows that there are six ways in which 7 can be thrown, three ways in which 4 can be thrown. Hence the odds are 6 to 3, or 2 to 1.

But there is always an advantage in favour of the setter on the stake that played for. The least disadvantageous man for the caster to call is 7.

Take the case in which 7 is the man and £18 (to avoid fractions) the stake. The odds are 2 to 1 in favour of the setter. If 7 or 11 is thrown the caster wins. There are eight ways out of 36 in his favour, therefore his expectation on making is  $\frac{8}{36}$  of £18=£4. (3) If the chance is 6, in order to win he must throw 6 twice in a row. There are five ways of throwing and six ways of throwing 7. His expectation on 6 is therefore  $\frac{5}{36}$  of the £18=£2.5. (4) The expectation on a chance of 8 is the same as on 6, viz. £2.5. (5) If the chance is 9 or 5 the expectation is the same as of £4 of £18=£4. (6) If the chance is 10 or 4 the expectation is  $\frac{2}{36}$  of £18=£1. (twice). The total expectation of the caster is all the separate expectations added together, viz. £17.14s.11d. If his expectation is less than the stake, it should amount to £18. Therefore the caster's expectation is 6s. 1d. less than it would be if the probabilities of his winning or losing were equal. This makes his disadvantage, when 7 is the man equal to  $\frac{1}{36}$  and half a farthing in the pound.

The calculations applied to the man of 7 can easily be made use of for any other man, when it will be found that the caster's expectation of loss when 6 or 9 is the man is  $\frac{1}{36}$ , and half a farthing in the pound, and when 10 or 3 is the man,  $\frac{1}{36}$  and nearly half a farthing in the pound.

**HAZARIBAGH**, a British district in the lieutenant-governorship of Bengal, India, lying between 23° 26' and 24° 48' N lat. and between 84° 29' and 86° 38' E long. It is bounded on the N by the districts of Gaya and Monghyr, on the E by the Santal Parganas and Murshidabad, on the S by Lohardaga, and on the W by Lohardaga and Gaya; it forms the north-east portion of the Chota Nagpur division, and has an area of 7030 square miles.

The physical formation of Hazaribagh exhibits three distinct features:—(1) a high central plateau occupying the western section, the surface of which is undulating and cultivated, (2) a lower and more extensive plateau stretching along the north and eastern portions, to the north, the land is well cultivated, while to the east the country is of a more varied character, the elevation is lower, and the character of a plateau is gradually lost, (3) the central valley of the Damodar river occupying the entire southern section. Indeed, although the characteristics of the district are rocky, hill, and wide spreading jungle, fine patches of cultivation are met with in all parts, and the scenery is generally pleasing and often picturesque. The district forms a part of the chain of high land which extends across the continent of India, south of the Neabudda on the west, and south of the Sô river on the east. The most important river of Hazaribagh is the Damodar, with its many tributaries, which drains an area of 2430 square miles. The only other river of any importance is the Bakania. The jungle gives shelter to wild animals of all sorts. Game birds are plentiful.

The census of 1875 showed a population of 771,878 (males, 397,045; females, 374,830). Belonging to aboriginal tribes there are 67,120, semi-Hindustani aborigines, 216,772; Hindus, 421,632; persons of Hindu origin not recognizing caste, 2664; Mahomedans, 12,338; non-Hindustani 1862, and many of the latter are palatians contain more than 5000 inhabitants—Hazaribagh, 11,050; Jhark, 8999; and Chatia, 8218. The only place of special interest is Parnash Hill, a celebrated place of pilgrimage, which is annually visited by large numbers of Jains who stopped at the temple in 1870 amounted to £28,841, and the expenditure to £21,887. The regular police force (1872) numbered 667 men of all ranks, municipal force, 66, and local police, 3654 men, maintained at a total cost of £21,703. There were, in 1873, 86 schools with 20,828 pupils. Rice is the staple crop, and the three pampal lands are grown. Among the other crops are wheat, barley, Indian corn, the usual pulses and green crops of Bengal, jute, *gha*, clove, sugarcane, opium, cotton, &c. The trade is concentrated at Chatia, the great central market. The chief exports are *gha*, metal cooking utensils, *gha*, iron, and cattle, and the imports, rice, salt, cattle, and tobacco. There are 400 miles of road. Six coolies are known to exist in the district—the most important being that of Karharbari, which is capable of supplying 260,000 tons a year for 800 years. In 1877 there were three tea plantations containing mature plants, and one on Parnash Hill which promises well. The average mean temperature for 1874 was 74° F., the average

fully a half, 52 1/2 inches. The climate is very healthy, but the autumn, foggy, and rainy air, not uncommon, cholera is rare. The history of the district is involved in obscurity until 1765, about which time a certain Iskandir Khan was chief of the country. In a few years he was succeeded by a Tyi Sukh, who had gained the assistance of the British. In 1780 Hazeiboug, along with the surrounding territory, passed under direct British rule.

Hazeiboug, the chief town and administrative head quarters of the above district, is picturesquely situated on the high central plateau of the district, at an elevation of 2000 feet above sea level, and in the midst of a group of conical hills, 23° 59' 21" N lat and 85° 34' 32" E long. The town is little more than a cluster of villages, with intervening cultivation, which has sprung up round the military *ba di*. Hazeiboug has been the military head quarters of the district since 1780, and the seat of civil administration since 1834. The cantonment lies south-east of the town. Population in 1872, 11,050 (6312 males, 4738 females)—Hindus, 7210, Mahometans, 3384, Christians, 52, "others," 371.

HAZEBROUCK, a town of France, capital of an arrondissement of the same name in the department of Nord, is situated on the Bouise, 32 miles WNW of Lille, in a district formerly covered with marshes. It stands on the Lille and Calais Railway, at the junction of the branch from Dunkirk. The town is governed by a sub-prefect, and has a court of primary instance with two juges de paix, besides various offices of justice and inland revenue. There are numerous religious and charitable societies including the Frères des Ecoles Chrétiennes, Secours du Chantier, and Dames de la Sainte Union. The convent of Capuchins, built near the town in 1864, is now occupied by a school. Hazebroeck contains some handsome public buildings, as the church of St Nicolas, with a tower 200 feet high, of fine open work, built about 1520, the hôtel de ville (1807-1813), the prison for the department, two theatres, and the communal college. The Augustinian convent, built in the 16th century, with a façade of the 17th century, is now occupied in its several parts by the hospital, a tobacco warehouse, a market, and college lecture rooms. A chamber of agriculture meets in the town, where there are also a small public library and a secondary school. The principal manufactures are linen cloth, thread, soap, beer, oil, lime, and salt. There are also tanneries, salt refineries, corn-mills, and dye works. Trade in country produce, cattle, timber, and hops is also carried on. Population (1876) of the district 9857, of the town 6363.

HAZEL (Anglo Saxon, *Hasel*;<sup>1</sup> German, *Hasel*, French, *Haslet*; *Condi* in), *Corylus*, Tournet, a genus of shrubs or low trees of the natural order *Cupulifera* and sub order *Copylea*. The common hazel, *Corylus Avellana*, L., is distributed throughout Europe, in North Africa, and in Central and Russian Asia, except the northernmost parts. It is commonly found in hedges and coppices, and as an undergrowth in woods, and reaches a height of some 12 feet, occasionally, as at Eastwell Park, Kent, it may attain to 30 feet. According to Evelyn (*Sylva*, p. 85, 1664), hazels "above all affect cold, barren, dry, and sandy soils, also mountains, and even rocky ground produce them, but most plentifully if somewhat moist, dankish, and mossy." In Kent they flourish best in a calcareous soil. The bark of the older stems is of a light brown, mottled with grey, that of the young twigs is ash-coloured, and glandular and hairy. The leaves are alternate, from 2 to 4 inches in length, downy below, roundish-ovate, pointed, and shortly petiolate, occasionally they are found with the margins ciliate at the base, or with the disk so depressed as to

form a pitcher-like structure (Mastais). In the variety *C. purpurea*, the leaves, as also the peltate of the larval and the husk of the nut, are purple, and in *C. heterophylla* they are thickly clothed with hairs. In autumn the rich yellow tint acquired by the leaves of the hazel adds greatly to the beauty of landscapes. The flowers are monoecious, and appear in Great Britain in February and March, before the leaves, and sometimes in October (London). The cylindrical, drooping, and yellow male catkins (see BOTANY, vol. iv p. 123, fig. 161) are 1 to 2 1/2 inches in length, and occur 2 to 4 in a raceme, when in unusual numbers they may be terminal in position. The female flowers are small, subglobose, sessile, assembling leaf-buds, and have protruding crimson stigmas, the minute inner bracts, by their enlargement, form the palmately lobed and cut involucre or husk of the nut. The ovary is not visible till nearly midsummer, and is not fully developed before autumn. The nuts have a length of from 1/2 to 2 inch, and grow in clusters. Double or triple nuts are the result of the equal development of two or all the three carpels of the original flower, of which ordinarily two become abortive. Fusion of two or more nuts is not uncommon, and Mastais gives an instance of the union of as many as five. From the light brown or brown colour of the nuts the terms *hazel* and *hazelly*, i.e., "in husk as hazel nuts" (Simpson, *Travels of the Silesia*, p. 1), derive their significance.<sup>2</sup> The seed of the hazel is whitish red, close in texture, and plant, and has when dry a weight of 40 lb per cub foot, it has been used in cabinet making, and for toys and turned articles. Curiously veined veneers are obtained from the roots, and the root shoots as a largely employed in the making of crates, coal coives or baskets, hurdles, with bands, whip-handles, and other objects. The rods are reputed to be most durable when from the driest ground, and to be especially good where the bottom is chalky. The light charcoal afforded by the hazel serves well for crayons, and is valued by gunpowder manufacturers. An objection to the construction of hedges of hazel is the injury it infrequently does to them by the nut-gatherers, who "with active vigour crush down the tree" (Thomson's *Seasons*, "Autumn"), and otherwise damages it.

The filbert,<sup>3</sup> among the numerous varieties of *Corylus Avellana*, is extensively cultivated, especially in Kent, for the sake of its nuts, which are readily distinguished from cob nuts by their ample involucre and greater length. It may be propagated by suckers and layers, by grafting, and (see ARBORICULTURE, p. 322) by sowing. Suckers afford the strongest and earliest bearing plants. Grafted filberts are less liable than others to be encumbered by suckers at the root. By the Maidstone growers the best plants are considered to be obtained from layers. These become well rooted in about a twelvemonth, and then, after pruning, are bedded out in the nursery for two or three years. The filbert may be economically grown on the borders of plantations or orchards, or in open spots in woods. It thrives most in a light loam with a dry subsoil, rich and, in particular, wet soils are unsuitable, conducing to the formation of too much wood. Plantations of filberts are made in autumn, in well-drained ground, and a space of about 10 feet by 8 has to be allowed for each tree. Ground good for hops is good also for filberts, according to Williamson, who recommends old woaden lags as the best manure for the latter ("On the Cultivation of the Filbert," *Trans Hort Soc*, iv 146). In the third year after planting the trees may require root pruning, in the fifth or sixth they should bear well. The nuts grow in greatest abundance on the extremities of second year's branches, where light and air have

<sup>1</sup> Derived, it has been supposed, from Ang Sax *Has*, a behest, connoted with *Hasen* = German, to give orders, the hazel-ward was the sceptre of authority of the shepherd chieftain (*crusher* = leader) of olden times. See Grimm, *Gesch. d. deutsch. Sprache*, p. 1016, 1848.

<sup>2</sup> On the expression "in husk as hazel," see *Notes and Queries*, 2d ser., xii 387, and 3d ser., i 18, 89.

<sup>3</sup> For derivations of the word see Latham's *Johnson's Dictionary*.



whose temper was fitful and moody, and the intensity of whose passions isolated him for the time from all the feelings and rightful claims of those who might stand in the way of their gratification. The dissolution of the ill-assorted union was nevertheless deferred for fourteen years, during which much of his best literary work had been produced. After three or four years, during which he almost disappears from observation, he came forward prominently as a writer in the *Edinburgh* and as a lecturer at the Surrey Institution, bringing out in rapid succession his *Round Table*, a collection of essays on literature, men, and manners; his *View of the contemporary English stage*, and his lectures on the poets, the English comic writers, and the dramatic literature of the age of Elizabeth. By these works, together with his *Characteristics of Shakspeare's Plays* (1817), and his *Table Talk* (1821), his reputation as a critic and essayist will mainly be sustained. Next to Coleridge, Hazlitt was, perhaps the most powerful exponent of the dawning perception that Shakspeare's art was no less marvellous than his genius, and Hazlitt's criticism did not, like Coleridge's, remain in the condition of a series of brilliant but fitful glimpses of insight, but was elaborated with steady care. His lectures on the Elizabethan dramatists performed a similar service for the earlier, sweeter, and simpler among them, such as Dekker, till then unduly eclipsed by later writers, like Massinger, better playwrights but worse poets. Treating of the contemporary drama, he successfully vindicated for Edmund Kean (whom, however, he had at first disparaged) the high place which he now retained as an actor, while his criticisms on the English comic writers and men of letters in general are masterpieces of ingenious and felicitous exposition, though rarely, like Coleridge's, penetrating to the inmost core of the subject. As an essayist Hazlitt is even more effective than as a critic, for this style of composition allows more scope to the talking individuality of his character. Being enabled to select his own subjects, he seizes dependence upon others either for his matter or his illustrations, and presents himself by turns as a metaphysician, a moralist, a humanist, a painter of manners, and characteristics, but always, whatever his ostensible theme, deriving the essence of his commentary from his own bosom. This combination of intense subjectivity with strict adherence to his subject is one of Hazlitt's most distinctive and creditable traits. Intellectual truthfulness is a passion with him. He stoops his topic in the hues of his own individuality, but never uses it as a means of self-display. The first reception of these admirable essays was by no means in accordance with their deservings. Hazlitt's political sympathies and antipathies were vehement, and he had taken the unfavourable side. The *Quarterly* attacked him with deliberate malignity, stopped the sale of his writings for a time, and blighted his credit with publishers. He had become estranged from his early friends, the Lake poets, by what he uncharitably but not unnaturally regarded as their political apostasy, as well as by an escape of his own, obscurely related, but apparently not creditable. His inequalities of temper separated him for a time even from Leigh Hunt and Charles Lamb, and on the whole the period of his most brilliant literary success was that when he was most soured and broken. Domestic troubles superadded, his marriage, long little more than nominal, was dissolved in consequence of the infatuated person he had conceived for a servant girl, a most ordinary person in the eyes of every one else. It is impossible to regard Hazlitt as a responsible agent while he continued subject to this influence. His own record of the transaction, published by himself under the title of *Love Amors, or the New Pygmalion* (1823), is a most remarkable psychological curiosity, and one of the most signal examples extant of the power of

genuine passion, not merely to palliate what is wrong, but to dignify what is ridiculous. "The idolatry," says Mrs. Jameson, "in its intense earnestness and reality assumes something of the sublimity of an act of faith." The business-like dissolution of his marriage under the law of Scotland is related with amazing naïveté by the family biographer. Rud of his wife and cured of his mistress, he shortly afterwards astonished his friends by marrying a widow. "All I know," says his grandson, "is that Mrs. Budgegate became Mrs. Hazlitt." They travelled on the Continent for a year, and then parted never to meet again. Hazlitt's study of the Italian masters during this tour, described in a series of letters contributed to the *Morning Chronicle*, had a deep effect upon him, and perhaps conducted to that intimacy with the cynical old painter Northcote which, shortly after his return, engendered a curious but eminently readable volume of conversations with him. The respective shares of author and artist are not always easy to determine. During the recent agitations of his life he had been writing essays, collected in 1828 under the title of *The Plain Speaker*, others subsequently written were published after his death. They are in no respect inferior to his earlier performances. *The Spirit of the Age* (1825), a series of criticisms on the leading intellectual characters of the day, reveals that he was less qualified to assign than true place to contemporaries than to revise the verdicts of the past, but is in point of style perhaps the most splendid and copious of his compositions. It is eager and animated to impetuosity, with no trace of carelessness or disorder. He now undertook a work which was to have crowned his literary reputation, but which can hardly be said to have even enhanced it—*The Life of Napoleon* (1828-30). The undertaking was at best premature, and was inevitably disfigured by partiality to Napoleon as the representative of the popular cause, excusable and even becoming in a Liberal politician writing in the days of the Holy Alliance, but preposterous now that the true tendencies of French imperialism are recognised. Owing to the failure of his publishers Hazlitt received no recompense for this laborious work. Pecuniary anxieties and disappointments may have contributed to hasten his death, which took place on September 18, 1830. Charles Lamb was with him to the last.

With many serious defects both on the intellectual and the moral side, Hazlitt's character on both had at least the merit of sincerity and consistency. He was a compound of intellect and passion, and the refinement of his critical analysis is associated with vehement eloquence and glowing imagery. He was essentially a critic, a disector, and, as Bulwer justly remarks, a much better judge of men of thought than of men of action. But he also possessed many gifts in no way essential to the critical character, and transcending the critic's ordinary sphere. These, while giving him rank as an independent writer, frequently perturbed the natural clearness of his critical judgment, and seduced him into the paradoxes with which his works abound. These paradoxes, however, never spring from affectation; they are in general the sallies of a mind so agile and ardent as to overrun its own goal. His style is perfectly natural, and yet admirably calculated for effect. His diction, always rich and masculine, seems to kindle as he proceeds, and when thoroughly animated by his subject, he advances with a succession of energetic, hard-hitting sentences, each carrying his argument a step further, like a champion dealing out blows as he presses upon the enemy. Although, however, his grasp upon his subject is strenuous, his insight into it is rarely profound. He can amply satisfy men of taste and culture, he cannot, like Coleridge or Burke, dissatisfy them with themselves by showing them how much they would have missed without him. He belongs to the

class of authors that exhibits the beauties of an author, rather than to the class that reveals them. He was somewhat backward in appreciating contemporary merit, he venerated Coleridge's intellect, but his estimate of his poetry is ridiculously low, his review of Shelley's posthumous poems, though rhetorically fine, is critically poor, and he did little to vindicate the fame of Keats. As a moralist and observer of manners his chief merit consists in the extreme felicity of his occasional observations. But all shortcomings are forgotten in the genuineness and fervour of the writer's self-portraiture, and the bold relief in which he stands out from the crowd of mankind. The intensity of his personal convictions causes all he wrote to appear in a manner autobiographic. Other men have been said to speak like books, Hazlitt's books speak like men. To read his works in connexion with Leigh Hunt's and Charles Lamb's is to be introduced into one of the most attractive of English literary circles, and this alone will long preserve them from oblivion.

The most copious source of information respecting Hazlitt is the biography by his grandson (1867), a readily rather than a memoir, yet full of interest. A slight but appropriate sketch had previously been produced by his son to the posthumous essays published in 1886, accompanied by elegant but partial estimates of his intellectual character by Bulwer and Talfourd. Valuable biographical particulars have been reserved in Henry Colvill's memoirs of Lamb, and in the reminiscences of Mr P. G. Patmore, Hazlitt's most intimate associate in his latter years. A full bibliographical list of his writings, with a collection of the most remarkable critical judgments upon them from all quarters, has been lastfully and industriously prepared by Mr Alexander Ireland (1888). (R. G.)

**HEAD, SIR EDMUND WALKER, BART.** (1805-1868), a popular writer on art, was born in 1805 at Watton Place, near Maidstone in Kent. He was educated at Winchester school and Otzel College, Oxford, and taking his degree with first-class honours in classics, he became in 1827 fellow of Merton College, and in 1834 university examiner in classics. Two years later he married, and on his father's death in 1838, he succeeded to the baronetcy as eighth baronet. His services as poor-law commissioner, to which post he was appointed in 1841 after three years as assistant-commissioner, procured for him in 1847 the office of lieutenant-governor of New Brunswick, whence he passed in 1854 to the governor-generalship of Canada, which he retained till 1861. The following year, having returned to England, Head was nominated a civil-service commissioner. In 1857 he was sworn of the Privy Council, and in 1860 was decorated as K C B, in view of the course of his career he received the degrees of D C L at Oxford and LL D at Cambridge. He died in London, January 28, 1868.

Sir Edmund Head wrote the article "Painting," in the *Penny Cyclopædia*, *A Handbook of the Spanish and French Schools of Painting*, 1845, *Sketch and Pull*, on two chapters on future *Avantgarde*, 1856, and *Ballads and other Poems, original and transcribed*, 1868. He also edited *A Handbook of Painting of the Germans, Flemish, Dutch, Spanish, and French Schools*, 1864. His translation from the Icelandic of *Vigdís Gunn's Saga* appeared in 1865.

**HEAD, SIR FRANCIS BOND, BART.** (1793-1876), soldier, traveller, and author, son of James Roper Head of the Hermitage, Kent, was born there January 1, 1793. He served with the Royal Engineers at the battles of Waterloo and Fleus, and when he retired from the army he had risen to the rank of major. In 1825 he accepted the charge of an association formed to work the gold and silver mines of Rio de la Plata. In connexion with this enterprise he made several rapid journeys on the Pampas and among the Andes, his *Rough Notes* of which, published in 1826, and written in a clear and spirited style, obtained for him the name of "Galloping Head." In 1836 he was appointed governor of Upper Canada, where he manifested similar energy in dealing with the discontents from which the colony was at that time suffering. He resigned his

office in 1837, and in recognition of his services, he was in 1838 created a baronet. His narrative of his administration in Upper Canada was published by him in 1839. In 1867 he became a privy councillor. He died at his residence at Claydon, July 20, 1876. Some time previously a pension of £100 per annum was conferred upon him for his "services to literature."

Sir Francis Head was the author of a considerable number of works, chiefly of travel, written in a clever, amusing, and graphic fashion, and displaying both acuteness and a high amount. Besides those already mentioned, his principal works, which have all gone through more than one edition, are *Buddha from the Buddha of Nainai*, 1838, *Life of Bion*, 1841, *The Dignitary*, 1840, *Stories and Fables*, 1850, *The Dignitary State of Great Britain*, 1850, *A Faggot of French Stick*, 1851, *A Fortnight in Ireland*, 1852, *Descriptive Drawing*, 1850, *The House and his India*, 1860, *The Royal Engineers*, 1870.

**HEAD, SIR GEORGE** (1783-1855), brother of the preceding, was born in 1783. He was educated at the Charterhouse. In 1808 he received an appointment in the commissariat of the British army in the Peninsula, where he was a witness of many exciting scenes and important battles, of which he gave an interesting account in "Memoirs of an Assistant Commissary-General," attached to the second volume of his *Home Town*, published in 1837. In 1814 he was sent to America to take charge of the commissariat in a naval establishment on the Canadian lakes, and he subsequently held appointments at Halifax and Nova Scotia. Some of his Canadian experiences were narrated by him in *Forest Scenery and Incidents in the Wilds of North America*, published in 1829. In 1831 he received the honour of knighthood. He published in 1835 *A Home Town through the Manufacturing Districts of England*, and in 1837 a sequel to it, entitled *A Home Town through various parts of the United Kingdom*. Both works are amusing and instructive, but his *Home, a Town of Many Days*, published in 1849, is somewhat dull and tedious. He also contributed several articles to the *Quarterly Review*, and translated *Historical Memoirs of Cardinal Pacca*, 1850, and the *Metamorphoses of Apuleius*, 1851. He died in London, May 2, 1855.

**HEARNE, SAMUEL** (1745-1799), an English explorer, was born at London in 1745. At the age of eleven he entered the Royal Navy as midshipman in the vessel of Lord Hood, but at the conclusion of the war he took service with the Hudson's Bay Company as quartermaster. In 1768 he was appointed to examine portions of the coast of Hudson's Bay with a view to the improvement of the cod-fishing, when he executed his task with such ability that it was resolved to employ him in the discovery of the north-west passage, and of certain mines of copper whose existence was asserted by the Indians. His first attempt, upon which he set out on November 6, 1769, was unsuccessful owing to the desertion of the Indians, and his second, entered upon on 23d February 1770, was by the breaking of his quadrant likewise rendered abortive, but in his third expedition, upon which he started in December 1770, he was completely successful, as he not only discovered the existence of copper on the banks of what is now known as Coppermine river, but traced the course of that river till it joined the Arctic Ocean. After an absence of eighteen months and twenty-three days he arrived at Fort Churchill, of which he was subsequently promoted to be the governor. He returned to England in 1787, and died there in 1799. An account of his journey from Prince of Wales Fort to the Northern Ocean was published posthumously in 1795.

**HEARNE, THOMAS** (1678-1735), an English antiquary, was born in 1678 at Littlefield Green, in the parish of White Waltham, Berkshire, where his father, the parish clerk, in payment of the rental of the vicarage house in which he lived, taught ten boys yearly. Thomas, after

receiving the rudiments of education from his father, was sent by the kindness of a gentleman to the first school of Bray, "on purpose to learn the Latin tongue." This gentleman in 1695 took him into his house, and his education was continued at Bray till the Easter of 1696, when he was sent to study at Edmund Hall, Oxford. There his diligence and scholarship attracted the attention of Dr John Moll, the editor of the Greek Testament with various readings, who employed him to compare several MSS. He also took the degree of B.A. in 1699, and on account of the reputation he had acquired for his knowledge of books he was in 1701 appointed assistant-keeper of the Bodleian Library. There at his own option he set himself diligently to correct the catalogue, and prepared an appendix which was afterwards incorporated in the new catalogue without acknowledgment. His interest in the antiquarian treasures of the library induced him to refuse many valuable preferments, and in 1713 he was appointed second keeper, with the stipulation made by himself that he should also be junior, so as to obtain access to the library at any time he pleased. In 1714 or 1715 he was elected arch-typographer and esquire in a beadle of civil law in the university, but, an objection being taken to his holding this office along with that of second librarian, he resigned it in the November following. In January 1718 he was compelled, on account of his refusal to take the oath to the Government, to resign also his appointment of librarian, but he continued to reside principally at Oxford, whence he occupied himself chiefly in preparing for publication the works of old English authors. His judicious and inappropriate insertion of Jacobite sentiments in his prefaces awakened, however, the hostility of the university magistrates, and subjected him to several prosecutions. He died 10th June 1735. Though Hearne was somewhat indiscriminate in his antiquarian taste, and tampling and desultory in his style of composition, his persevering diligence and minute accuracy enabled him to do valuable service in bibliography.

His publications were nearly all printed by subscription at Oxford. The principal of them are—*Quarto Hibernicus, Reliquiae Bodleianae*, an edition at Lisy, Spelman's *Life of Alfred the Great*, *Leinici's Annus*, *Leinici's Collection*, *Acta Apostolorum*, *Titus Livii Per Julianum*, *Vita Henrici Quinti*, *Regis Anglorum*, *Alfredus de Deo et sua Annela*, *Gulielmus Ruperi Vita D. Thomae Mori Eryctus Acad.*, *Gulielmus Camdeni Annales Britanniarum et Hiberniarum*, *Leinici's Libellus*, *Gulielmus Noddingus Historia*, *Thomas Savarus Clavis A. A. Collection of the most curious and rarest by Emanuel Antiquarius*, *Anglican Antiquities*, *Robertus de Arosbury Historia de M. Wabrichius Oestis Editor de LII.*, *Johannes de Fordon Solochronicon Germanum*, *Erwinus et Antiquitates de Glenbury*, *Robertus de Glenbury*, *the most curious of Dunstable*, and *Beneditus*, *Abbot of Peterborough*. Most of these have been reprinted. His MSS were left by him to Dr William Bradford, of whom they were bought by Dr Richard Rawlinson and bequeathed to the Bodleian Library. *Antiquitates Hibernicae*, excerpta from the *Catalogue of Thomas Hearne*, M.A., appeared in 1848. *Reliquiae Hibernicae*, the remains of Thomas Hearne, of Edmund Hall, being extracts from his MSS, collected with a few notes by Philip Bliss, was published in two volumes, Oxford, 1867, 2d ed., London, 1869.

See *Imperial Memoirs of the Life and Writings of Thomas Hearne*, M.A., by several hands, London 1762. *Life of Thomas Hearne*, 1771, and *Nichols's Literary Anecdotes*. Letters addressed to T. Hearne edited by T. Curry, were privately printed at London, 1771. See also *Life of Thomas Hearne*, with copious notes, in the library of the British Museum.

**HEART, DISEASES OF THE**, form a large proportion of the most serious disorders that afflict mankind, in youth as well as in advanced life. For the structure and functions of the organ the reader is referred to ANATOMY and PHYSIOLOGY.

In the early ages of medicine, the absence of correct anatomical, physiological, and pathological knowledge prevented diseases of the heart from being recognized with any certainty during life, and almost entirely precluded them from becoming the objects of medical treatment. But no sooner did Harvey (1628) publish his discovery of the circulation of the blood, and its dependence on the heart

as its central organ, than derangements of the circulation began to be recognized as signs of disease of that central organ. The earliest indications of this important step in the diagnosis of these diseases are to be found in the instructive records contained in the writings of the great pathologists of the beginning of the 18th century, of whom the chief in this respect are Lancisi, Morgagni, Senac, and Meckel. There is, however, a limit to the information obtainable in this way, and, though its range has been largely increased in our day by the invention of such instruments as the sphygmograph and cardiograph, &c., it was very easily reached in those early times, when men had only their unaided senses to depend upon, and but little experience to guide them. We need not wonder, then, that after the first great step was taken there was but little further progress made, and medicine had to wait till the beginning of another century, when Corvisart (1806) first made practical use of Auenbrugger's (1761) invention of percussion to determine the size of the heart, enlargement of that organ bulking largely in those days as a substantive disease. Corvisart was also in the habit of listening to the sounds made by the heart, and he may therefore be regarded as the first practical exponent of our modern methods of physical exploration, though scarcely as their founder. For as Auenbrugger invented percussion, so Laennec (1819) was undoubtedly the first to make a scientific application of mediate auscultation to the diagnosis of diseases of the chest, and it is to him we trace all the benefits derived from this method of inquiry, though it is to Bouilland (1824) that we are chiefly indebted for its extension to the diagnosis of diseases of the heart, while it is to the clinical experience, and above all to the practical experiments, of James Hope (1832) that we owe much of that precision we have now attained in our diagnosis of those diseases from abnormalities in the sounds produced during the cardiac movements, just as we have learned from M. Forget (1851) the doctrine of retro-dilatation, which rightly interpreted is capable of greatly informing us as to the origin and progress of heart disease, and from William Stokes (1854) some instructive views on defective heart power as a cause of certain symptoms simulating disease of the brain, which have proved most valuable and suggestive in the diagnosis of diseases of the heart as well as in their treatment.

The half dozen works just alluded to by no means exhaust the literature of this subject during the past ages, but each of them marks an era, and by their means we may readily trace the progress of cardiac diagnosis during the 130 years intervening between Lancisi and Stokes, but during the twenty odd years that have since elapsed the literature of this subject has become an unusually copious and exhaustive that it would occupy too much space merely to enumerate the authors' names. Fortunately this further development need not concern us here.

As in former so in recent times the progress made in the diagnosis of diseases of the heart has been entirely based on physics and on physiology, and the heart is an organ so situated and so connected as to render it singularly amenable to these methods of investigation. Resting on the diaphragm, and projected against the anterior chest wall, the heart is partly within reach, and is otherwise so completely surrounded on three sides by resonant organs (the lungs) that any change in its position or in its size is readily made out by palpation and percussion, while by listening over the cardiac area—auscultation—we can ascertain whether the valves of the heart remain intact, have an unusual strain thrown upon them, or have been rendered incompetent by disease.

As the four openings of the heart lie so close together that a superficial area of half a square inch includes a part

of each, it is only by taking advantage of certain well-known laws regulating the conduction of sound that we are able to differentiate the sounds produced at each of these openings, respectively, and to assign to each a definite position on the chest wall, where it is heard at its maximum intensity. Physiology, on the other hand, teaches us that each individual cardiac pulsation, the time of which is marked for us by that impulse against the chest wall of which we are all more or less conscious, consists of alternate acts of contraction and dilatation affecting the four cavities of the heart. Some of these acts precede this impulse, some accompany it, and others follow it, and the relation of any sound produced within the heart to these physiological acts is termed its rhythm.

The functional perfection of the heart is thus easily determined by ascertaining that it is of a normal size, that its impulse is neither too strong nor too weak, and that its sounds are normal when listened to, each in its own position of maximum intensity. When these conditions are present, any abnormal cardiac phenomena, such as palpitation, irregular action, &c., are to be regarded as entirely due to abnormal innervation, and not to any actual disease of the heart. On the other hand functional imperfection is readily detected by the occurrence of any abnormality in the phenomena already referred to, especially if accompanied by a blowing sound instead of the usual valve sound in any of the normal auscultatory areas. And an intelligent appreciation of these facts, together with a correlation of the physical with the physiological phenomena, that is, a correct determination of the rhythm of the sounds heard, enables us to ascertain with certainty, not only the valve implicated, but also the mode in which the lesion has affected or is likely to affect the heart and, through it, the circulation. Having found the heart to be functionally imperfect, we have two alternatives presented to us—either the valves are mechanically deformed from previous disease, or they are merely functionally imperfect from over distention of the cardiac cavities, a state of matters which may arise from various causes, and which is always susceptible of great relief and very often of perfect cure.

The great function of the heart is to keep up such a pressure within the arterial section of the vascular canals as will suffice for the maintenance of the circulation and of all the organic functions of the body dependent upon it. The tendency, however, of all the extrinsic forces connected with the circulation is to equalize the blood pressure throughout the vascular system, and so to bring the circulation to a stand-still, and indeed it is in this way that death at last occurs, whether it happen suddenly or slowly the cause is still the same—cessation of the circulation brought about by equalization of the blood pressure throughout the whole of the vascular system, or, as it may be otherwise put, from decline of the arterial (aortic) blood pressure.

Valvular lesions of the heart, however produced, tend, as may be readily understood, to neutralize the cardiac function and to lower the arterial blood pressure, either by permitting an unnatural escape of the blood backward (regurgitation) or by obstructing its onward flow (obstruction). And this action is further intensified by the interference with the cardiac nutrition which necessarily results, first of all directly, from the heart being flushed with blood at a low pressure, and secondly indirectly, from the imperfect performance of all those functions, such as digestion, &c., upon which the formation of healthy blood depends, arising from the same cause.

Valvular disease thus gives the heart more work to do, while it takes from it the power of doing it, putting the organ in a vicious circle. In this way curable disease if neglected may readily lapse into incurability, while in incurable disease there can be but one ending, though, apart

from such accidents as embolism or asystole from violent emotion or exertion, that is, neither so sudden nor so speedy as is commonly supposed, and indeed usually comes on from gradual asthma, often accompanied by dropsy, and preceded by a life of more or less active exertion, averaging in many cases not less than twenty years from the primary onset of the disease. During this comparatively long period the disease may have been entirely mute, that is, the valve lesion has progressed so slowly from its trifling commencement that the residual accumulation in the cavity primarily affected has gone on *guttatim*, and has spread itself backwards over the other sections of the circulation in the same gradual manner, the resulting dilatation being so completely followed by compensating hypertrophy that the sufferer has never been aware of any derangement of his functions. A time comes at last, however, when, from a faltering intuition due to physical causes, the increase in the heart's bulk ceases to be muscular, it becomes fibrous, then indeed the diastole is no longer mute, serious rupture of the compensation sets in, and all that art can do is to make the inevitable declension as gradual as possible. Up to this period any accidental rupture of the compensation, which readily enough occurs from over exertion, imperfect nutrition from any cause, or from any febrile attack, is as a rule perfectly amenable to appropriate treatment, though the residual compensation is always less stable than it had been previously.

Ruptured compensation is often attended by very alarming symptoms, such as great general dropsy and extreme irregularity of the heart's action, but the true measure of the patient's danger lies less in these symptoms than in the condition of the cardiac muscle, and in the circumstances which threaten asystole, that is, arrest of the heart's action.

If in early times the diagnosis of diseases of the heart was a matter of great difficulty, this seemed of less importance as thus treatment was so completely in the hands of the penitents, says Senac, "dans les maladies du cœur, la médecine paraît plus stérile, que peut-on espérer des médicaments, par exemple, dans les dilatations du cœur?" But modern science, which has rendered the heart so accessible from all sides that there is nowadays probably no organ of the body whose diseases can be so readily detected or so accurately discriminated, has not only pointed out the true source of danger in these diseases, but has also put into our hands a remedy by which some are cured who were formerly thought incurable, while as a rule patients here than downy progress so successfully assisted that they feel themselves to be practically cured. And yet DIGITALIS (*q v*) was all but unknown 100 years ago, while so little was known of its real action—*atrocis medicamentum*—that within the last thirty years a living author wrote that the use of digitalis as a diuretic in heart disease was quite "indefensible," as "the failing heart is absolutely incapable of sustaining the depressing influence of the drug."

Nowadays we know digitalis to be the only drug that can be relied on for increasing the power of the heart's contractions, and it also slows them, the result being that the blood pressure is increased throughout the whole arterial system, and that, time being given for the heart itself to be flushed by blood at an increased pressure, its nutrition is improved. The heart not only acts more powerfully under the immediate influence of the drug, but it becomes more able to act, so that by and by the drug may be left off, though indeed, should the muscular degeneration determinately threaten a rapid progression, tonic doses of the drug may be safely given daily for many years continuously, in spite of all our forefathers' croaking as to the dangers of accumulation. But however marvellous the effects of tonic doses of digitalis may be, the virtues of the drug in larger doses are even more wonderful in appropriate cases, for by means of large doses the skilled physician has it in his power



permanently to contract many dilated hearts, and so to cure what seemed an incurable disease not only to Sane but even to many of his more modest successors.

There are many other drugs employed in the treatment of diseases of the heart, but there is no other deserving of special mention. Other medicines are employed to relieve pain, aid digestion, dispel flatulences, unload the bowels, improve the blood, or simply as general tonics, and may be catalogued as morphia, chloroform, belladonna, peysue, arsenoid, aloes, rhubarb, iron, &c.

ANGINA PECTORIS (*p*) is a painful disease of the heart which has been already described. *Palpitation* is an extremely rapid and sometimes forcible action of the heart. *Intermittent* and *Irregular Action* are sufficiently described by their names; irregular action may be tumultuous or so peculiar as to denote the crime of a venial *delusion cordis*; *intermission* consists in the dropping of a beat every second, third, or fourth time, or seldomers. Some times the intermission only applies to the pulse, the heart acting regularly, and is caused by that particular systole not being forcible enough to propel the blood to the periphery, occasionally we have two beats of the pulse and then an intermission, constituting what has been termed a *pulsus bigeminus*, or the rhythm of the intermission may be even more varied. All these forms of perverted action of the heart may accompany valvular lesions, or they may occur in hearts whose valves are sound, the walls of such hearts are, however, almost invariably more or less feeble, imperfectly nourished, and the blood often poor and watery. They are rarely indicative of any real danger, though sufficiently troublesome and alarming to the sufferer, they arise from abnormal innervation, and are part of the penalties we pay for our present state of organization. We could enjoy nothing if we could not also suffer, and the bluish of sensitiveness, the quickened pulse of affection, are paid for by the throbs of anxiety, and the fatal inhibition of the heart's action due to overwhelming emotion. Most of these cases, however, own a much more ignoble origin, a debilitated condition of the stomach, a capricious dyspepsia, the abuse of alcohol and tobacco, &c., are frequent sources of nervous heart trouble, so frequent that in some parts where young men most do congregate the tobacco heart

especially is quite a proverbial ailment. Overwork, worry, or excess of any kind is sufficient to bring on heart trouble of this character, as we can readily understand when we reflect that the heart does about one-fifth of the whole mechanical work of the body—a work equivalent to raising its own weight over 13,000 feet an hour, that it takes its rest only in short snatches as it were, its action as a whole being continuous, and that it must necessarily be the earliest sufferer from any improvidence as regards nutrition,—mental emotion being in this respect quite as potential a cause of constitutional bankruptcy as the most violent muscular exertion. Fortunately, to a skilled physician there is no difficulty of determining the true nature of these cases, and they are all more or less amenable to appropriate treatment. *Syncope*, or fainting, is an affection somewhat similar to those just described, it essentially consists in an emotional inhibition of the cardiac systole, so that the blood pressure within the brain falls below that necessary for the maintenance of consciousness, as the heart's action fortunately does not in these cases entirely cease, the best plan is to favour the flow of blood to the head by maintaining the sufferer with a lowered and slightly depending head until the effects of the momentary inhibition have passed off. The inflammatory affections of the heart, *Carditis*, *Endocarditis*, and *Pericarditis* are most important and serious affections, but their history and treatment are more suited for a work on practice of physic, in any of which full information regarding them may be found. They are mainly rheumatic and gouty in character, and they are to be regarded as varieties of these diseases, the mere fact of their affecting the heart is of but little consequence as to their immediate result, however important it may be and by come from the valvular lesions to which they so often give rise. There are but few exceptions to this rule, and amongst them are those rare cases in which acute endarteritis blocks the coronary vessels and gives rise to fatal angina. *Fatty Degeneration* of the heart, which bulks so largely in the popular mind as a cause of sudden death, is an almost hypothetical lesion of most infrequent occurrence, probably never found apart from disease of the coronary arteries, impossible of diagnosis, and very rarely of itself proving suddenly fatal. (a w b)

## H E A T

By SIR WILLIAM THOMSON

Read at a meeting of the Act of Parliament of Canada, in the year 1880, by WILLIAM THOMSON, Esq., Glasgow, Scotland, in the office of the Minister of Agriculture

**H** EAT is a property of matter which first became known to us by the use of our very distinct senses

1. *Sense of Force*.—The sense of touch, as commonly met with, has two distinct objects—force and heat. If a person strikes his hand till it meets anything solid, or holds it out while something solid is placed upon it, he experiences a sensation of force. He perceives resistance to the previous motion of his hand in one case, in the other case the necessity of resisting to prevent his hand from being forced downwards, the immediate object of this perception in each case is force.<sup>1</sup> But there is another very distinct sensation, that of heat or cold, which he may or may not

<sup>1</sup> The sense of smoothness, and toughness, to which physiologists have sometimes given the special name "tactile sense" is as clearly a sense of force as is what they call the muscular sense. The sense of roughness is a sense of force at places of application distributed over the skin of the finger, while in the muscular sense of force the place of application on a finger is distinguished by the position of the hand perceiving the force. The internal mechanism of force and heat is in one case that of muscles in the other, through which the perception of places of application of force is obtained, as no doubt difficult, but the thing perceived is essentially the same—force—the complete determination of which involves magnitude of the force, its place of application, and its direction.

perceive in either of those cases, and which he may also perceive, still by what is commonly called the sense of touch, in other cases even when no sense of force is also experienced. Thus, in the first case, if the solid be a fixed can of warm water, or of iced water, the person receives a sense of heat or of cold, and, supposing him to have performed the operation with his eyes shut, his mind is informed by the double sense of touch that his hand has met with a hot fixed body or a cold fixed body, in the other case he may perceive that a hot heavy solid, or a cold heavy solid, has been laid upon his hand. But if he dips his hand gently into a can of water, or if he holds it towards a fire, or if he exposes it to a gentle current of air, or waves it about through the air, he perceives heat or cold without any accompanying sense of force.

The earliest scientific thoughts respecting these sensations of heat and cold must have led to the true conclusion that there is some property of external matter on which the sensations depend, and a little advance into the natural philosophy of the subject has suggested and proved that this property is also possessed by the living body, and that the sensation of heat or cold in the hand, in the instances

referred to above, depends on the change produced in the hand in respect to this property by a change of circumstances which preceded the sensation. We now call heat the property of matter concerned in these sensations, and temperature a certain variable quality of matter varying according to its temporary condition in respect to heat.

In the strictest modern scientific language (compare § 3 below) the word heat is used to denote something communicable from one body or piece of matter to another, and temperature a definite variable quality of matter, varying generally in any particular piece of matter when heat is communicated to it or taken from it, varying also as we shall see (§§ 8 and 9 below, also THERMODYNAMICS) in consequence of operations which can take place within the body itself, or which may be performed upon it from without, but which cannot be described as communication of heat to it or drawing off of heat from it.

§ 2 *Latent Heat*.—There are exceptional cases in which temperature does not vary in a mass of matter when heat is communicated to it from, or taken from it to, external matter. For instance, when the body is ice at the melting point, heat communicated to it does not raise its temperature, or if the body be water at the freezing point with ever so small a piece of ice in it (see MITTET, PROPERTIES OF), heat taken from it does not cause its temperature to fall, or if the whole mass considered be ice and water mixed, heat may be either communicated to it or taken from it without altering its temperature, or if the body be water at the boiling point in the open air, heat very slowly communicated to it in however great quantities does not raise its temperature sensibly, but causes it to disappear by evaporation from its surface, or if the body be steam in a cylinder with a little water in the bottom and with a frictionless piston above it for roof (fig. 1), under atmospheric pressure, heat taken from it very slowly does not cool it until the whole steam has become condensed into water, and heat communicated to it very slowly does not warm it until the whole water has become evaporated into steam, or if the body be ice (or frozen water), in place of the liquid water of the last case, and if the pressure on the upper side of the piston, instead of atmospheric pressure of about 1033 grammes per square centimetre (14.7 lb per square inch), be any thing less than  $\frac{1}{10}$  of a gramme per square centimetre, the same statement will still apply with "ice" substituted for water.



Fig. 1

Black's celebrated doctrine of latent heat is merely the declaration of a class of phenomena of which the preceding illustrations sufficiently indicate the character. Modern mysticism has been much exercised in respect to the terms sensible heat and latent heat, whether in denying them, or in continuing to use them, but with aggravating haziness, instead of the clear wrongness of the old doctrine. It has become of late years somewhat the fashion to decry the designation of latent heat, because it had been very often stated in language involving the assumption of the materiality of heat.<sup>1</sup> Now that we know heat to be a mode of motion, and not a

material substance, the old "impejvivo, cleai, and wrong" statements regarding latent heat, evolution and absorption of heat by compression, specific heats of bodies, and quantities of heat possessed by them, are summarily discarded. But they have not yet been generally enough followed by equally clear and concise statements of what we now know to be the truth. A combination of imprecisions surviving from the old erroneous notions regarding the nature of heat with imperfectly developed apprehension of the new theory has somewhat liberally perplexed the modern student of the thermodynamics with questions unanswerable by theory or experiment, and propositions which escape the merit of being false by having no assignable meaning. There is no occasion to give up either "sensible heat" or "latent heat", and there is a positive need to retain the latter term latent heat, because if it were given up a term would be needed to replace it, and it seems impossible to invent a better. Heat given to a substance and warming it is said to be sensible in the substance. Heat given to a substance and not warming it is said to become latent. Those designations express with perfect clearness the relation of certain material phenomena to our sensory perception of them. Thus when heat given to a quantity of water warms it, the heat becomes sensible to a hand held in the water. When a basin of warm water and a basin of water and ice are placed side by side, a hand dipped first in one and then in the other perceives the heat. If now the warm water be poured into the basin of ice and water, and stirred for a few seconds of time (unless there is enough of warm water to melt all the ice), the hand perceives no warmth, on the contrary, it perceives that the temperature is the same as it was in the basin of ice and water at the beginning. Thus the heat which was sensible in the basin of warm water has ceased to be sensible in the water that was in that basin, and has not become sensible in the other. It is therefore well said to have become latent.

#### CALORIMETRY

§ 3 *Calorimetry by Latent Heat*.—The doctrine of latent heat leads us very smoothly to a most important measurement in thermal science, the measurement of quantities of this wonderful property of matter which we call heat, and thus without our knowing anything of what the nature of heat is,—whether it be a subtle elastic fluid, or a state of motion, or possibly some modification of matter related to action of force. Without, in the first place, admitting into our minds any definite idea as to the nature of heat, we may agree to measure quantities of heat by quantities of ice melted into water without change of temperature. Thus if a kilogramme of ice is melted by a large quantity of water at a lukewarm temperature, or by a comparatively small quantity of very hot water, the same quantity of heat has certainly gone from the warm water to the ice in each case, supposing that the result in each case is the ice and warm water left all in a state of ice-cold water. The measurement of quantities of heat, whether thus by the melting of ice, or by any other means, received the name of "Calorimetry," when the essence of heat was supposed to be a fluid, and thus fluid called caloric. The name calorimetry is still by general consent retained to designate measurement of quantities of heat, as distinguished from thermometry, or

<sup>1</sup> A hundred years ago those deeper philosophers who in their judgment anticipated, or tried to anticipate, what we now know to be the true theory of the vitæ of heat, had instead good grounds to be jealous of even the phrase latent heat. Maxwell says—"It is worthy of remark that Cavendish, though one of the greatest chemical discoverers of his time, would not accept the phrase latent heat. He refused to speak of the generation of heat when steam is condensed, a phrase inconsistent with the notion that heat is matter, and objects to Black's term as relating 'to an hypothesis depending on the supposition that the heat of bodies is owing to their containing more or less

of a substance called the matter of heat, and, as I think Sir Isaac Newton's opinion that heat consists in the internal motion of the particles of bodies much the most probable, I chose to use the expression heat is generated." (*Phil. Trans.*, 1788, quoted by Forbes). We shall not now be in danger of any error if we use latent heat as an expression meaning neither more nor less than this.

<sup>2</sup> DEFINITION.—Latent heat is the quantity of heat which must be communicated to a body in a given state in order to convert it into another state without changing its temperature.—Maxwell's *Theory of Heat*, pp. 72, 73.

the measurement of temperature (§ 10-37). As long as the truth or falsity of the materialistic hypothesis seemed an open question, the word calorie was held to imply the materiality of heat. Thus Davy, after discussing some of the fundamental dogmas of the "Calorists," as he called them, and describing his own experiments, which proved beyond all doubt the falsity of this fundamental hypothesis that heat is matter, raised the statement of his conclusion by saying, "no caloric does not exist." While accepting Davy's conclusion, how ever, we need not accept this way of stating it, and as most of our best modern writers still use the word calorimetry, and as French writers have, in comparatively recent times, introduced the word "calorie" to designate a unit quantity of heat, it is decidedly convenient still to retain the name calorie to denote definitely the measurable essence of heat. This is convenient scientifically in tending to give precision to language and ideas respecting the two classes of measurement, calorimetry and thermometry, and it has the advantage of leaving the more popular word heat available for that somewhat lax general usage, from which we cannot altogether displace it, in which it may sometimes mean high temperature, as when we speak of great heat, or summer heat, or blood heat, sometimes a measurable quantity of heat, as in the term latent heat, and sometimes a branch of study or science dealing with the transformation of heat by conduction and radiation, as in the title of Fourier's great work *Théorie analytique de la Chaleur*, or the whole province of sciences concerned with heat, including calorimetry and thermometry, and conduction and radiation of heat, and generation of heat, and dynamical relations of heat, as in English titles of separate books such as Drown's, Dalfour Stewart's, and Maxwell's, or of chapters or divisions of larger treatises, such as even the present article.

§ 4. *Calorimetry by Melting of Ice*.—Calorimetry was first retained by means of the melting of ice as explained above, and the first thermal unit, or unit quantity of heat, or "calorie," although not then called calorie, was the quantity of heat required to melt unit weight of ice. Thus, for example, is the unit on which Fourier founds his reckoning illustratively when he explains the fundamental principles of his theory of the conduction of heat. Ice seems to have been first used for calorimetry by Willeke, a Swede. For the systematic application of this method for the measurement of quantities of heat in various physical inquiries Laplace and Lavoisier constituted an instrument, the first to which the name of calorimeter was applied, and described it in the memoirs of the French Academy of Sciences for 1780.<sup>1</sup> Though in the hands of Laplace and Lavoisier it gave good results, it had a great inconvenience, which with less careful and less scientific experimenters might lead to great inaccuracies, on account of the water adhering by capillary attraction to the broken ice, instead of draining away from it completely and showing exactly how much ice had been melted. To avoid this evil Sir John Herschel suggested that, instead of draining away the water from the ice, the water and ice should all be kept together, and the whole bulk measured. The diminution of bulk of the whole thus gives an accurate measurement of the quantity of ice melted, because ice melting into water comes to occupy just 91.675 per cent of its original volume. This suggestion is admirably carried out by Bunsen's Burner in his ice calorimeter, an instrument possessing also other novel features of remarkable beauty and scientific interest. It is particularly valuable for the measurement

of small quantities of heat. Its inventor, for example, by means of it succeeded in making satisfactory determinations of the specific heat of some of those rare metals, such as indium, of which only a few grammes have been obtained.

§ 5. *Calorimetry by the Evaporation of Water*.—By another application of Black's doctrine of latent heat, the evaporation of water may be used for calorimetry with great advantage in many scientific investigations. It is used generally in engineering practice, particularly for testing the heating power of different qualities of coal and the economy of various forms of furnaces. The same unit, which presents itself naturally in this system, is the quantity of heat required to evaporate unit weight of water when the pressure of the atmosphere as measured by the barometer is of some conventional standard amount, such as that called one atmosphere, or one atmo, being that for which the barometer, with its mercury column at zero centigrade (or the temperature at which ice melts), stands at 76 centimetres in the latitude of Paris, 48° 50', or at

$$\frac{76 \times (1 + 0.0031 \sin^2 48^\circ 50')}{1 + 0.0031 \sin^2 \lambda}$$

in any latitude  $\lambda$ . This thermal unit (see THERMODYNAMICS) is, according to Regnault's observations, equal to 6.8 times the ice calorimetric unit.

§ 6. *Thermometric Calorimetry*.—The most prevalent mode of calorimetry in scientific investigation has been hitherto, however, neither that by the melting of ice, nor that by evaporation of water, nor indeed anything founded on the doctrine of latent heat at all. It has been founded on the elevation of temperature produced in water by the communication to it of the heat to be measured, and, for the sake of distinction from calorimetry by latent heat or otherwise, it may be called thermometric calorimetry. We can only consider it now in anticipation, as we have not yet reached the foundation of any thermometric scale, but even now we can see that, if in any way we fix upon any two particular determinate temperatures, the quantity of water warmed from the lower to the higher of them by the heat to be measured is a perfectly definite measure for the quantity of this heat. The two temperatures chosen for thermometric calorimetry are those marked 0° and 1° on the centigrade scale. The first of these we can understand at present, being the temperature at which ice melts under ordinary atmospheric pressure. The second is fully defined in §§ 35, 37, 61, 67. The quantity of heat required to raise unit mass of water (1 kilogramme, or 1 gramme, or 1 milligramme, or 1 lb., as the case may be) from zero to 1° C. is called the thermal unit centigrade, and sometimes, especially by French writers, the "calorie."

§ 7. *Comparison of Calorimetric Units*.—Observations by Prevost and Desains, and by Regnault, on the latent heat of fusion of ice, show it to be 79.25 thermal units centigrade, a result differing but little from Black's original determination, which made it 143 thermal units Fahr.—this being equal to 79.25 thermal units centigrade. Thus if one kilogramme of ice be put into 79½ kilogrammes of water at 1° C., and left till the whole is melted (the process may be accelerated by not too violent stirring, § 9), the result will be 80½ kilogrammes of water at 0° C.

Regnault's experiments on the latent heat of steam show that the quantity of heat required to convert into steam unit

Laplace and Lavoisier's ice calorimeter.

Bunsen's ice calorimeter.

<sup>1</sup> The instrument itself is preserved in the *Conservatoire des Arts et Métiers* in Paris. It is described and explained in Maxwell's *Theory of Heat*, chap. iii.

<sup>2</sup> *Phil. Mag.*, Sept. 1870, and *Phil. Mag.*, 1871, Maxwell's *Theory of Heat*, p. 61.

mass of water at the boiling temperature, under standard atmospheric pressure (§ 9), is 5383 thermal units centigrade. This number, which is no doubt very accurate, differs but little from Watts's final result, 960 thermal units Fahrenheit (equal to 533.8 thermal units centigrade), obtained by him, in a repetition in 1781 of experiments which he had commenced in 1765 at the invitation of Black, whose pupil he was.

§ 8 *Preliminary regarding the Nature of Heat*—*Dynamical Calorimetry*—From the dawn of science till the close of last century two rival hypotheses had been entertained regarding the nature of heat, each with more or less of plausibility but neither on any sure experimental basis—one that heat consisted of a subtle elastic fluid permeating through the pores or interstices among the particles of matter, like water in a sponge, the other that it was an instaneous commotion among the particles or molecules of matter. In the year 1709 Davy, in his first published work entitled *An Essay on Heat, Light, and Combinations of Light*,<sup>1</sup> conclusively overthrew the former of these hypotheses, and gave good reason for accepting as true the latter, by his celebrated experiment of converting ice into water by rubbing two pieces of ice together, without communicating any heat from surrounding matter. A few years earlier Rumford had been led to the same conclusion, and had given very convincing evidence of it in his observation of the great amount of heat produced in the process of boring cannon in the military arsenal at Munich, and the experimental investigation on the excitation of heat by friction<sup>2</sup> with which he followed up that observation. He had not, however, given a perfect logical demonstration of his conclusion, nor even quite a complete experimental basis on which it could be established with absolute certainty. According to the materialistic doctrine it would have been held that the heat excited by the friction was not generated,<sup>3</sup> but was produced, squeezed out, or let flow out like honey from a broken honeycomb, from those parts of the solid which were out or broken into small fragments, or rubbed to powder in the frictional process. If this were true, the very small fragments or powder would contain much less heat in them than an equal mass of continuous solid of the same substance as theirs. But unhappily the caloric doctrine, besides its fundamental hypothesis, which we now know to be wrong, had given an absurd and illogical test for quantity of heat in a body, of which a not altogether innocuous influence still survives in our modern name "specific heat", and Rumford actually, in trying to disprove the materialistic doctrine, was baffled by this sophism. That is to say, he measured the specific heat of the "capacity for heat" of the powder, and he found that the powder took as much heat to warm it to a certain degree as did an equal mass of the continuous solid, and from this he concluded that the powder did not contain less heat than the continuous solid at the same temperature. This conclusion is so obviously unwarranted by the premises that it is difficult to imagine how Rumford could have for a moment put forward the "capacity for heat" experiment as proving it, or could have rested in the conclusion without a real proof, or at least the suggestion of a real proof. All that Rumford's argument proved was that the fundamental hypothesis of the "caloricists" and their other altogether glibulous doctrine of equality of "specific heat" as a test for equality of whole quantities of heat in matter could not be both true, and any one not inclined to give up the

materialistic hypothesis might have cheerfully abandoned the minor doctrine, and remained unmoved by Rumford's argument. If Rumford had but melted a quantity of the powder (or dissolved it in an acid), and compared the heat which it took with that taken by an equal weight of the continuous solid, he would have had no difficulty in proving that the enormous quantity of heat which he had found to be excited by the friction had not been squeezed, or rubbed, or ponded, out of the solid matter, but was really brought into existence, and therefore could not be a material substance. He might even, without experiment, have pointed out that, if the materialistic doctrine were true, it would follow that sufficiently long continued pounding of any solid substance by pestle and mortar, whether by hand or by aid of machinery, would convert it into a marvellous powder possessing one or other of two properties about equally marvellous. Either the smallest quantity of it thrown into an acid would constitute a freezing mixture of unlimited intensity,—the longer it had been ponded, the more intense would be its frigorific effect on being dissolved,—or the powder would be incapable of being warmed by friction, because it had already parted with all the heat which friction could rub out of it. The real effect of Rumford's argument seems to have been to save the intellectual consciences of those who were not inclined to give up the materialistic doctrine, and to save them from the trouble of reading through Rumford's paper and thinking for themselves, by which they would have soon that his philosophy was better than his logic, and would inevitably have been forced to agree with him in his conclusion. It is remarkable that Davy's logic, too, was at fault, and on just the same point as Rumford's, but with even more transparently logical fallaciousness, because his argument is put in a more definitely logical form.

"Let heat be considered as matter, and let it be granted that the temperature of bodies cannot be increased unless they receive it diminished from some cause, or heat added to them from some bodies in contact."<sup>4</sup>

\* \* \* \* \*

"Experiment II.—I procured two parallelopipeds of ice,<sup>4</sup> of the temperature of 20°, 6 inches long, 2 wide, and  $\frac{1}{2}$  of an inch thick, they were fastened by wires to two bars of iron. By a peculiar mechanism their surfaces were placed in contact and kept in a continued and violent friction for some minutes. They were almost entirely converted into water, which water was collected and its temperature ascertained to be 86° after remaining in an atmosphere of a lower temperature for some minutes. The fusion took place only at the plane of contact of the two pieces of ice, and no bodies were in friction but ice. The ice which was converted into water, and according to the supposition, its capacity is diminished, but it is a well known fact that the capacity of water for heat is much greater than that of ice, and ice must have an absolute quantity of heat added to it before it can be converted into water. Friction consequently does not diminish the capacities of bodies for heat."—Davy's *Essay on Heat, Light, and Combinations of Light*, pp. 10-12.

[Delete from "and, according to the supposition," to "greater than that of ice" inclusive, and delete the lame and impotent conclusion stated in the last eleven words. The residue constitutes an unanswerable demonstration of Davy's negative proposition that heat is not matter.]

§ 9 *Joule's Dynamical Equivalent of Heat*—It is remarkable that, while Davy's experiment alone sufficed to overthrow the hypothesis that heat is matter, and Rumford's, with the addition of just a little consideration of its relation to possibilities or probabilities of inevitable alternatives, did the same, fifty years passed before the scientific world became converted to their conclusion,—a remarkable instance of the tremendous efficiency of bad logic in confounding public opinion and obstructing true philosophic thought.

<sup>1</sup> Published in 1709 in *Contributions to Physical and Medical Knowledge, principally from the West of England*, collected by Thomas Beilstone, M.D., and republished in Dr. Davy's edition of his brother's collected works, vol. i., London, 1886.

<sup>2</sup> An Enquiry concerning the Sources of Heat which is excited by Friction" (*Phil. Trans.*, abridged, vol. xxvii. p. 368).

<sup>3</sup> See true quotation from Grasshopper, footnote, § 2 above.

<sup>4</sup> "The result of the experiment is the same if wax, tallow, resin, or any substance fusible at a low temperature be used, even iron may be fused by collision, as is evident" by the first experiment."

Joule's great experiments from 1840 to 1849, creating new provinces of science in the thermodynamics of electricity, and magnetism, and electrochemistry, called attention to Davy and Rumford's doctrine regarding the nature of heat, and supplied several fresh proofs, such like Davy's absolutely in itself complete and cogent, that heat is not a material substance, and each advancing with exact dynamical measurement on the way pointed out by Rumford in his measurement of the quantity of heat generated in a certain time by the action of two hoes not used to overwork themselves. The full conversion of the scientific world to the kinetic theory of heat took place about the middle of this century, and was no doubt in immediate consequence of Joule's work, although Rumford and Davy's demonstrative experiments, and the ingenious and penetrating speculations of Mohr, and Seguin, and Mayer, and the experimental thermodynamic measurements of Colding, all no doubt contributed to the result. Each of the several subjects of thermodynamic measurement undertaken by Joule gave him a means of estimating the quantity of work required to generate a certain quantity of heat, but after several years of trials he was led to prefer to all others the direct method of simply stirring a quantity of water by a paddle, and measuring the quantity of heat produced by a measured quantity of work, and this method he has accordingly used in all his experiments, and the most precise determining the "dynamical equivalent of heat" from the year 1845 to the present time. By this he found his final result of 1849,<sup>3</sup> which was 772 Manchester foot pounds for the quantity of work required to warm by 1° Fahr, a lb of water weighed in vacuum. In 1870 he commenced work for a fresh determination of the dynamical equivalent of heat at the request of the British Association, and the result was communicated to the Royal Society<sup>4</sup> about the end of 1877, with the following preface:

"The committee of the British Association on standards of electrical measure having judged it desirable that a fresh determination of the mechanical equivalent of heat should be made by observing the thermal effects due to the transmission of electrical currents

<sup>1</sup> List of titles of, and references to, papers by Dr James Prescott Joule, p. 134.

<sup>2</sup> "Description of an Electromagnetic Engine," *Sturgeon Ann Elect.*, ii, 1839, pp. 122-123. "Description of an Electromagnetic Engine," *Sturgeon Ann Elect.*, p. 123, pp. 124-125. "On the use of Electromagnets made of Iron Wire for the Electro-magnetic Engine," *Sturgeon Ann Elect.*, iii, 1839-40, pp. 67-63.

<sup>3</sup> "Investigations in Electrostatics, Electrochemistry, and Magnetism," *Sturgeon Ann Elect.*, i, 1839-40, pp. 131-141. "Description of the Electro-magnetic Engine," *Sturgeon Ann Elect.*, ii, 1839-40, pp. 280-291. "On Electro-magnetic Effects," *Sturgeon Ann Elect.*, iii, 1839-40, pp. 377-378.

<sup>4</sup> "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1840, pp. 260-262. "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262.

<sup>5</sup> "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262. "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262.

<sup>6</sup> "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262. "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262.

<sup>7</sup> "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262. "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262.

<sup>8</sup> "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262. "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262.

<sup>9</sup> "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262. "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262.

<sup>10</sup> "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262. "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262.

<sup>11</sup> "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262. "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262.

<sup>12</sup> "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262. "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262.

<sup>13</sup> "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262. "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262.

<sup>14</sup> "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262. "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262.

<sup>15</sup> "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262. "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262.

<sup>16</sup> "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262. "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262.

<sup>17</sup> "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262. "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262.

<sup>18</sup> "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262. "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262.

<sup>19</sup> "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262. "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262.

<sup>20</sup> "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262. "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262.

<sup>21</sup> "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262. "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262.

<sup>22</sup> "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262. "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262.

<sup>23</sup> "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262. "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262.

<sup>24</sup> "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262. "On the Heat evolved by Voltaic Electricity," *Phil Mag.*, vi, 1841, pp. 260-262.

through resistance measured by the unit they had issued, I made two experiments with this at vac, resulting in a large figure (782.6, *Phil Mag. Report*, Dec. 1867, p. 522) than that which I had obtained by the friction of fluids (772.8, *Phil Trans.*, 1850, p. 82).

"The only way to account for this discrepancy was to admit the existence of error either in my thermal experiments or in the unit of resistance. A committee, consisting of Sir William Thomson, Professor P. G. Tait, Professor Clerk Maxwell, Professor B. Stewart, and myself, was appointed at the meeting of the British Association in 1870, and with the funds thus placed at my disposal I was charged with the present investigation, for the purpose of giving greater accuracy to the results of the direct method."

The result of this final investigation of Joule's is 772.83 Manchester foot pounds for the quantity of heat required to warm from 60° to 61° Fahr a pound of water weighed in vacuum, which is about  $\frac{1}{100}$  per cent greater than the final result of 1849 expressed in the same terms. According to Regnault's measurements<sup>1</sup> of the thermal capacity of water at different temperatures from 0° to 230° C, it must be about 0.8 per cent greater at 60° Fahr than at 32° Fahr. According to this, Joule's thermodynamic result would be 771.81 Manchester foot pounds, for the work required to warm a pound of water from 59° to 60° Fahr, or 1859.26 dynes to raise a pound of water from 0° to 1° C. Reducing 1859.26 dynes to metes, we have 423.437 metres. At Paris the force of gravity is about  $\frac{1}{100}$  per cent less than in Manchester. Hence for about the middle of France and the southern latitudes of Germany, Joule's result, according to the ordinary reckoning of French and German engineers, may be stated as 423.5 kilogramme metres for the amount of work required to warm 1 kilogramme of water from 0° to 1° C. The force of gravity at Manchester is 981.84 dynes (centimetres per second per second). Multiplying 423.437 by this, we find accordingly 41,563.00 centimetre dynes, or "ergs," for the amount of work in C.G.S. measure required to warm 1 gramme of water from 0° to 1° C.

#### THERMOMETRY

§ 10. *Preliminary for Thermometry—Sense of Heat* (resumed from § 1).—The sense of heat and cold is not simply dependent on the temperature of the body touched. If a person takes a piece of iron, or a stone, or a piece of wood, or a ball of waxed, or a quantity of finely caud cotton-wool, or of suds down, in his hand, or touches an iron column, or a stone wall, or a wooden beam, or a mass of wool or of down, he will perceive the iron cold, the stone cold, but less cold than the iron, the wood but slightly cold—much less cold than the stone, the wool or down decidedly warm.

We now know that if all the bodies before being touched were near one another in similar exposure, they must have been at the same temperature, and from the iron and stone being felt cold we know that this mean temperature is lower than the temperature of the hand. Each of the bodies touched must at the first instant have taken some heat from the hand, and therefore, if the perception was quick enough, all at the very instant of being touched would have seemed cold to the sense. The iron by its high thermal conductivity (§§ 76, 78, 80) keeps drawing off heat from the hand and lowering its temperature, till after many seconds of time an approximately permanent temperature is reached, which may be considerably lower than the temperature of the hand before contact, but somewhat higher than the previous temperature of the iron, because of the internal furnace (see THERMODYNAMICS) generating heat in the hand. A similar result, but in less time and with less ultimate lowering of temperature of the hand, takes place when stone is touched. When wood is touched its comparatively small conductivity (§ 76) allows its surface to be warmed again after the first few seconds, sometimes to a higher tem-

<sup>1</sup> *Relation des Experiences*, vol. i, p. 748, Paris, 1847.

perature than that of the hand before contact, and thus, if the sensation could be perfectly remembered, it would be perceived that the wood was first felt to be cold, and afterwards to be warm. This latter warmth is rendered very perceptible by first holding the hand in contact with a piece of wood, as for instance a mahogany table, for a considerable time, half a minute or more, and then suddenly removing it; a sense of cold is immediately perceived in consequence of the exposure of the hand to the air. The foot is similarly sensitive. If, after holding a bare foot for some time in the air, it be placed on a varnished wooden floor, the foot is perceived to be cold, and if, after standing some time with it pressed to the floor, the foot be suddenly lifted, the air now seems cold by contrast. If a person walks with bare feet on a wooden floor, a continued sense of cold is experienced, and if, immediately after doing so, he sits down, and holds his feet in the air, the air seems to be warm by contrast. The same sensations are perceived even on a carpeted floor, but much less markedly than on a plain wooden floor, and much less markedly on a plain wooden floor than on a varnished wooden floor, and much less markedly on a varnished wooden floor than on a stone floor. In the case of touching soft wool, or finely carded cotton-wool, or eider down, the first instantaneous sensation of cold is scarcely if at all perceived, and that which first provokes consciousness is the subsequent heating, and it is very startling to find a body which we know to be as cold on a frosty day feeling positively warm to the first consciously perceptible sensation after it is touched. In this case the small thermal conductivity or great thermal resistance of the substance is such that heat is carried off by it from the hand slower than it was carried off by radiation and aerial convection (§§ 70, 71) before contact, and thus, after the first momentary cooling of the hand by the initial extract of heat from it to the cold body touched, in a small fraction of a second of time a higher temperature is attained by the hand than it had before contact.

§ 11 *Sense of Temperature*—The sense of heat is in reality somewhat delicate thermal test when properly used. Even an unskilled hand alternately dipped into two basins of water will, as we have found by experiment, detect a difference of temperature of less than a quarter of a degree centigrade, and there can be no doubt that bath and hospital attendants, and persons occupied with hot liquors in various manufactures, such as dyeing, can detect much smaller differences of temperature than that, and, what is still more remarkable, can remember permanently sensations of absolute temperature sufficiently to tell within less than a degree centigrade that the temperature of a bath, or a poultice, or dyeing liquor is "blood heat," or "fever heat," or some other definite temperature to which they have been accustomed.

§ 12 *The monetary by Sense of Heat—such as arbitrary Centigrade Scale, deduced from Mixtures of Hot and Cold Water*.—Without knowing anything of the nature of heat we might found a complete system of thermometry on the mixing of hot and cold water with no other thermometer (§ 13) than our sense of heat, if we had but two definite constant temperatures of reference. These in practical thermometry are supplied by the melting-point of ice and the temperature of steam from water boiling in air at a definite pressure (the "atmo" or standard atmosphere, § 5). Thus, suppose perfectly abundant supplies of ice and water and of water at the boiling temperature to be available, and suppose it to be desired to measure the temperature of a liver, or lake, or sea. Take measured quantities of the boiling and of the ice-cold water, and mix them by trial until, tested by the hand, the mixture is found to have the same temperature as that of the mass of water of which the temperature is to be determined. Suppose, for example, the mixture giving the required temperature to consist of 86.6 parts by weight

of ice-cold water, and 13.4 parts by weight of boiling water, and the required temperature is 13.4 on a perfectly definite scale of thermometry in which the temperature of ice-cold water is called zero, that of boiling water 100, and other temperatures are reckoned according to the law of proportion of mixtures of water in the manner indicated by the example, and defined generally in § 31 below. For temperatures within the range of sensibility of the hand this method would give more accurate results than many common thermometers sold by instrument makers for ordinary popular purposes. It may be relied upon for absolute accuracy within  $\frac{1}{100}$ ths of a degree centigrade, provided the mixing of hot and cold water is performed with sufficiently large quantities of water, and with all proper precautions to obtain in that part of the process all the accuracy obtainable by the living thermometer.

We shall see (§ 25) that with the most accurate mercury or air thermometers, made for scientific investigation and carefully tested, absolute determinations can scarcely be depended upon within  $\frac{1}{10}$ th of a degree centigrade. The method of mixtures with only the sensory thermometer is not limited to the range of temperature directly perceptible with unimpaired sensibility, but when the temperature to be tested is beyond this range an indirect method must be followed, as thus—

A large quantity of water too warm for the hand is to be tested. Mix with it six times its weight of ice-cold water, this giving a convenient temperature for the hand, then find by trial what proportions of ice and boiling water give a mixture of the same temperature as tested by the hand, suppose these proportions to be 26.2 of boiling water and 73.8 of ice-cold water. The temperature of the mixture is by definition 26.2, and on the same principle the required temperature is three times this, or 78.6.

This system of thermometry is, however, strictly limited to the range between the freezing and boiling points of water, for we do not at present consider the possibilities (see LIQUID, SOLID, MATTER, PROPERTIES OF, ТИЖКОСТЬ, ТВЕРДОСТЬ) of obtaining and using thermometrically quantities of water below the freezing point and above the boiling point. It is described here, not only because it is very instructive in respect to the principles of thermometry, but because it is in point of fact the thermometric method used through a large range of processes not only in the arts but in scientific investigation. In many cases the hand is a more convenient and easy test than a common mercury thermometer, and it has just about the same sensibility, the commonest thermometers in popular use being in fact scarcely to be read to a quarter of a degree centigrade. In respect to accuracy a common cheap thermometer, though perhaps a degree or two wrong in its absolute indication, may still be used as an accurate indicator of equality of temperatures just as is the hand in the method of mixtures.

In many cases the hand is more convenient than the thermometer, in other cases the thermometer is more convenient than the hand, but in many cases the thermometer is applicable when the hand is not. When the quantities of water tested are abundant, the hand is always the quicker test, but there must be abundance of water to allow it to be satisfactorily and accurately applicable.

#### THERMOSCOPES DIFFERENTIAL AND INTERMIXING.

*Differential Thermoscopes essentially continuous—Intermixture Thermoscopes discontinuous and continuous—Single and Multiple Intermixture Thermoscopes (discontinuous)—Continuous Intermixture Thermoscopes*

§ 13 A thermometer is an indicator of temperature. Differential thermoscopes are thermoscopes which show difference, or tests equality, of simultaneous temperatures in two places. Its action is essentially continuous, de

(1) continuous thermoscopes,

pending on difference of temperature between the two places, and showing zero continuously when the temperatures of the two places are varied, provided they are kept exactly equal. Every kind of differential thermoscope, and of continuous intrinsic thermoscope, must be founded on some property of matter, continuously varying with the temperature, as density of a fluid under constant pressure, pressure of a fluid in constant volume, volume of the liquid part of a whole mass of liquid and solid kept in constant volume,<sup>1</sup> steam pressure of a solid or liquid,<sup>2</sup> shape or density of an elastic solid under constant stress, stress of an elastic solid in a constant state of strain, viscosity of a fluid, electric current in a circuit of two metals with their junctions at unequal temperatures, electric resistance of a conductor, in a given moment of a steel or loadstone magnet.

Examples—(1) Lavoisier's differential thermometer, (2) steam-pressure differential thermoscopes (§§ 39-44 below), (3) Joule's hydrostatic and pneumatic differential thermoscopes (*Philosophical Magazine*, vol. viii, p. 201, *Proc. Edin. Phil. Soc. Manchester*, vol. viii, p. 14, *Ibid.*, vol. viii, p. 32), (4) viscosity differential thermoscope (*Philosophical Magazine*, April 6, 1860), (5) thermo-electric differential thermoscopes, (6) steam-pressure differential thermoscopes, (7) thermo-pneumatic differential thermoscopes (see *Proceedings R. S. E.* for April 6, 1860).

§ 14. *Intrinsic Thermoscopes*.—An intrinsic thermoscope is an instrument capable of indicating one definite temperature or several definite temperatures, or all temperatures within the range of the instrument, whatever it may be—the temperature or temperatures indicated being intrinsically determined by the constitution of the instrument and indicated by some recognizable feature of the instrument which changes discontinuously or continuously, as the case may be, and which is always the same when the instrument is brought back again and again to the same temperature, whatever changes it may have experienced in the interval. Discontinuous intrinsic thermoscopes show only a limited number of temperatures. A continuous intrinsic thermoscope shows any temperature whatever throughout the range of efficiency of the instrument, ideally any temperature whatever, though in practice every thermoscope is limited, some with both inferior and superior limit, as the mercury thermometer by the freezing of mercury at about  $-39^{\circ}\text{C}$ , and the bursting pressure of mercury steam a little above  $+360^{\circ}\text{C}$ , others with only a superior limit, as metallic thermoscopes, whether thermo-elastic, or thermo-electric, or electric resistance, or thermo-magnetic, by the melting of the substances at very high temperatures, or, in the case of the thermo-magnetic instrument, by the total or partial loss of its magnetism at some temperature much below the melting point of its substance. A continuous intrinsic thermoscope, when applied to a body whose temperature is changing, shows continuously every variation of temperature within its range of efficiency.

§ 15. *Discontinuous Intrinsic Thermoscopes*.—A single intrinsic thermoscope is a thermoscope which shows whether the temperature of the body to which it is applied is higher or lower than some one definite temperature (depending on the intrinsic quality of the instrument).

Examples—(1) a mass of ice, or of fusible metal, (2) an apparatus for boiling water, or other liquid under a perfectly constant pressure, (3) an apparatus for boiling water under the natural atmospheric pressure, and a barometer to measure exactly what the pressure is at the time.

A multiple intrinsic thermoscope might be made by preparing a graduated series of metallic alloys, numbering them in order of their melting points, and arranging them together conveniently for use. The temperature might be reckoned numerically, according to the number of the alloys that melt, when the whole series is exposed to the temperature to be tested. This discontinuous numerical reckoning of temperature is perfectly analogous to the Birmingham

reckoning of wires and sheet metals by numbered gauges. Ideally it may be made infinitely nearly continuous by making a series of alloys with fine enough gradation of composition, but the method is in its essence discontinuous. It is useful for many special applications in science and in the arts, as for instance in that very fundamental one (§ 12) of giving one of the fixed points in the ordinary thermometric scale, the "freezing point", also in a form of safety valve for boilers or hot-water pipes, in which a plug fixed by solder is released by the melting of the solder when the temperature reaches a certain limit, also an exceedingly useful guard against overheating in the fire of a stove, by which a stopper is allowed to fall by the melting of a leaden support, and stop the draught, before the temperature reaches the highest limit judged permissible.

§ 16. *Continuous Intrinsic Thermoscopes*.—Continuity of indication requires, as said above (§ 18), choice of some property or properties of matter varying continuously with temperature, such as those enumerated in § 13. A continuous intrinsic thermoscope must have a feature, depending on the chosen property of matter, which shall vary with perfect continuity when the temperature is gradually changed, and shall always be the same when the instrument is brought to the same temperature again and again, whatever variation of temperature it may have experienced in the interval. The accuracy of an intrinsic thermometer, whether discontinuous or continuous, depends upon permanence of quality of the material and of the mechanical constitution of the instrument, according to which the recognized feature shall always be very accurately the same for the same temperature. The sensibility or delicacy of a continuous intrinsic thermometer depends upon the recognizability of change in its indicating feature with very small change of temperature.

§ 17. The property of matter chosen as the foundation of almost all ordinary continuous intrinsic thermoscopes in common use is interdependence of the density, the temperature, and the pressure of a fluid. The only other thermoscopes which can be said to be in common use at all as "metallic thermometers" (see THERMOMETER, MATTER, PROPERTIES), these depend upon the change of shape of a rigid elastic solid under a stated stress, or on the change of shape of a compound solid, composed of two elastic solids of different substances melted or soldered together. For the present we confine our attention to the former and much larger class of instruments. The general type of all these instruments, except the steam-pressure thermometer (§§ 39-46 below), is a glass measure, measuring the bulk of a fluid. To give the requisite practical sensibility to the measurement, the glass, except for the case of the constant-pressure gas thermometer (§§ 64-67 below) and of the steam-pressure thermometer, is made of a shape which may be generally described as a bottle with a long narrow neck. The body of the bottle, which may either be spherical or of an elongated form, is called the bulb, and the neck is called the tube or stem (stem we shall most frequently call it, to obviate ambiguities without circumlocutions). The thermometric fluid may be all liquid, as mercury, or oil, or alcohol, or ether, or glycerine and water, or it may be all gas, as common air, or hydrogen, or carbonic acid, or it may be partly liquid and partly steam (steam being a name which we shall invariably use to designate the less dense portion defined of a fluid substance at one temperature and pressure throughout, and in equilibrium, with two pairs of different densities). This last case is different from the two preceding, in respect to the character of the thermometric indication: the whole volume of the thermometric substance may be changed from that of all liquid to that of all steam without changing the temperature or the pressure, and the pressure cannot be changed without changing the

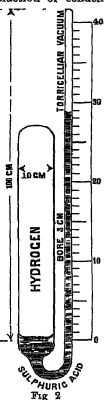
<sup>1</sup> This is the principle of the ordinary mercury or spirit thermometer.

<sup>2</sup> For definition of steam see § 17 below.

Mansueti thermometry

temperature, provided the substance is kept in the double condition of part liquid and part steam, in other words, in this case the pressure depends upon the temperature alone and is independent of the volume. In the steam-pressure thermometer, therefore, there is no delicate measuring of volume of the thermometric substance, and the vessel containing it is not in the shape of bulb and stem, but the instrument consists essentially of a means of measuring the pressure of the thermometric substance, with a test that it is really in the twofold condition of part liquid and part steam, whether by seeing it through a glass containing vessel, or by a proper hydraulic appliance for ascertaining that the pressure is not altered by ratefaction or condensation when the temperature is kept constant. Realized thermometers of this species, quite convenient for many practical purposes, with steam of sulphurous acid, of water, and of mercury, to serve for different ranges of temperature, from below  $-80^{\circ}\text{C}$  to above  $+520^{\circ}\text{C}$ , are described in §§ 39-44 below.

§ 18 In respect to general conveniences for large varieties of uses, whether for scientific investigation, or for the arts, or for ordinary life, liquid thermometers are generally and with good reason preferred, but the general preference of either mercury or spirits of wine for the liquid, which is so much the rule, is not (§ 20 below) so clearly reasonable. For ordinary uses in which the thermometer has to be moved about and placed in various positions, gas thermometers are much less convenient, because they require essentially an accurate measurement of pressure, and generally for this purpose a column of liquid. But when the thermometer is to be kept always in one position, as for instance when it is devoted to testing the temperature of the air indoors or out of doors, Amontons' air or gas thermometer is really as convenient and as easily read as any liquid thermometer, and, simple as it is, involves a triple division of the hermetically sealed space, with three different conditions of occupation,—one part occupied by the thermometric substance, another by the pressure-measuring vapourless liquid,<sup>1</sup> and the third vacuum and it is by so much the less simple than the liquid thermometer that in the liquid thermometer the enclosed space is divided into only two parts, one occupied by the thermometric liquid, and the other by its steam, with



or without some admixture of common air. For accuracy the air or gas thermometer is superior, we might almost say incomparably superior, to the mercury thermometers, and, though in a much less degree, still decidedly superior to even the most accurate liquid thermometer, on account of the imperfect constancy of the glass containing-vessel.

§ 19 It was quite sure of the bulk measurement given by the glass bulb and tube, liquid thermometers would be quite as accurate as gas thermometers. For there is no difficulty in giving any required degree of sensibility to the instrument by making the bulb large enough, and the quality of the liquid itself, hermetically sealed in glass, may be regarded as being as constant as anything we know of in the material world. But, alas for thermometry, the glass measure is not constant! In fact, glass is a substance of very imperfect elasticity (ELASTICITY, § 4, vol vii p 797), and it is found that the bulb of a thermometer is not always of the same volume at the same temperature, but that, on the contrary, it experiences uncertain changes exceedingly embarrassing in thermometry. In the course of a few months after a thermometer is filled and sealed, the bulb generally shrinks by some uncertain amount of from  $\frac{1}{1000}$  to  $\frac{1}{100}$  of its bulk, sometimes even in the course of years to almost  $\frac{1}{100}$ . This has been discovered by a general ranging of the freezing point, in new mercury thermometers, generally as much as on  $1^{\circ}$  to  $3^{\circ}\text{C}$ , sometimes to as much as  $1^{\circ}$ , which corresponds to a shrinkage of  $\frac{1}{1000}$  as the bulk expansion of mercury is when its temperature is raised from  $0^{\circ}$  to  $100^{\circ}\text{C}$  (Table II below)  $\frac{1}{100}$ , or 0.1815, of its bulk at  $0^{\circ}$ . After a few months or a few years this progressive shrinkage ceases to be sensible, but if the thermometer at any time is exposed to the temperature of boiling water or any higher temperature, an abrupt sub-permanent enlargement of the bulb is produced, and the freezing point, if tested for by the thermometer in ice and water, is found to be lowered, then again for weeks or months or years there is a gradual shrinkage, as shown by a gradual rising of the freezing point when the thermometer is tested again and again by placing it in ice and water. A very delicate mercury thermometer, which has been kept for years at ordinary atmospheric pressures when out of use, and never when in experimental use exposed to any temperature higher than about  $80^{\circ}\text{C}$ , or much lower than the freezing point, becomes very constant, and probably may never show any change of as much as  $\frac{1}{100}$  of a degree, and, being in use or in its indication many other absolutely definite temperature, within some such range as from  $-20^{\circ}$  or  $-10^{\circ}\text{C}$  to  $+80^{\circ}$  or  $+40^{\circ}\text{C}$ . But the abrupt and irregular changes, produced by exposing the thermometer to temperatures much above or much below some such limited range as that, constitute a very serious difficulty in the way of accurate thermometry by the mercury-in-glass thermometer

<sup>1</sup> An instrument closely resembling that shown in the drawing (Fig 2), but with common air instead of hydrogen, was made for the writer of this article, by Cassell, about fifteen years ago, and has been used for illustrations in the natural philosophy class in Glasgow university ever since. It is probably an exceedingly accurate air thermometer. When it was set up in the new lecture room after the migration to its present locality in 1870, the tube above the manometric liquid column was closed at air. To do this the instrument must be held in such a sloping position, with the closed end of the tube down, as to allow the bubble of air always found in it to rise and burst in the bulb. If now the instrument is placed in the upright position, the liquid rushes to leave the top of the tube, and it would remain filling the tube (naturally, for even if left in that position. No violence of knocking which has been ventured to try to bring it down has succeeded. To bring it down a bubble of air must be introduced. The bubble must be very small, so that the pressure of the air which fills it may become insensible when this air expands into the space of the tube left above the manometric column after it descends to its proper thermoscopic position. Special experiments made for this article in September 1870 showed

that in the nine years during which the instrument had remained undisturbed in the lecture-room a very sensible quantity of air (enough to render the temperature indication about  $86^{\circ}\text{C}$  too low) had leaked from the bulb through the sulphuric acid into the tube above the liquid column. This air was changed, and the instrument reset up for use, an operation completed in a minute or two if need be. Some careful experiments were then made by Mr Macfarlane to ascertain if the pressure of vapour or gas from the sulphuric acid, in the tube, was sensible, with a happily decisive result in the negative. The bulb was kept at a very constant temperature by cold water, the uppermost few centimetres of the liquid column, and the whole of the tube above it, was heated to about  $100^{\circ}\text{C}$  by steam blown through a glass socket-tube, fitted round it for the purpose. The height of the manometric column remained sensibly unchanged! Further experiments must be made to ascertain whether or not there is enough of variation of absorption of the air by the sulphuric acid with variation of temperature, and though the consequent variation of pressure in the bulb, to bring sensibly the thermometric use of the instrument. If, as seems improbable, the answer to the question be unhappily affirmative, a satisfactory negative might be found by substituting hydrogen for carbon as an



Although the greatest care has been bestowed by Regnault, Joule, and all other accurate thermometric experimenters to avoid error from this cause, we have still but little definite information as to its natural history in thermometers of different qualities, of glass, different shapes of bulb, and constructed differently in respect to processes of glass blowing, blowing the mercury, and sealing the stem. We do not even know whether the excess of the atmospheric pressure outside the bulb over the pressure due to mercury and Torricellian vacuum inside is influential sensibly, or to any considerable degree, in producing the gradual initial shrinkage. If it were so we might expect that the effect of heating the thermometer up to  $100^{\circ}$  or more at any time would be rather to produce an accelerated shrinkage for the time than what it is found to be, which is a return towards the original larger volume, followed by gradual shrinkage from day to day and week to week afterwards. A careful comparison between two thermometers constructed similarly in all respects, except sealing one of them with Torricellian vacuum and the other with air above the mercury, would be an important contribution to knowledge of this subject, interesting, not only in respect to physical science, but also to that very fundamental question of thermometry, the perfect elasticity of solids (see *ELASTICITY*, § 4).

§ 20. The error of a thermometer due to irregular shrinkages and enlargements of the bulb is clearly the less the greater is the expansion of the thermometric fluid with the given change of temperature. By the investigation of § 30 we can calculate exactly how much the error is for any stated amount of abnormal change of bulk in the bulb. But it is enough at present to remark that for different liquids in the same or in similar bulbs the errors are very nearly in the inverse proportions of the expansions of the liquids. Now (Table III below) in being warmed from  $0^{\circ}$  to  $1^{\circ}$  C alcohol expands 6 times as much as mercury, methyl butyrate 7 times, and sulphuric ether  $8\frac{1}{2}$  times. Hence if irregular changes of bulk of the bulb leave, as they probably do in practice, an uncertainty of  $\frac{1}{10}$ th of a degree in respect to absolute temperature by the best possible mercury in glass thermometers used freely at all temperatures from the lowest up to  $100^{\circ}$  C, the uncertainty from this cause will be reduced to  $\frac{1}{80}$ th of a degree by using alcohol, or  $\frac{1}{120}$ th by using methyl butyrate instead of mercury, it being, therefore, in a glass thermometer of alcohol of the butyrate, be considered as practically annulled (§ 19) after a few weeks or months have passed, and the first main shrinkage is over.

§ 21. An alcohol-in-glass thermometer is easily made strong enough to bear a temperature of  $100^{\circ}$  C, as this gives by the pressure of the vapour an internal bursting pressure of not quite an atmosphere and a quarter in excess of the atmospheric pressure outside. The boiling point of methyl butyrate (Table III below) is  $102^{\circ}$  C, a thermometer of it may therefore be used for temperatures considerably above  $100^{\circ}$  C, but how much above we cannot tell, as we have not experiments as yet on the pressure of its vapour at temperatures above its boiling point. The pressure of vapour of sulphuric ether (Table VI below) is too great to allow a thermometer of this liquid sealed in glass to be used much above  $60^{\circ}$  or  $70^{\circ}$  C, but for low temperatures it makes a very valuable thermometer. It was used in 1850 by W Thomson in finding by experiment the lowering of the freezing point of water, predicted theoretically (see *THERMODYNAMICS*) by J Thomson in 1849 (*Trans. R. S. E.*), and gave a sensibility of 128 divisions to  $1^{\circ}$  C. Glass thermometers with ether, or chloroform (whose expansion is about 4 per cent greater than that of ether), were used by Joule and W Thomson in experiments<sup>1</sup> on changes of temperature experienced by

bodies moving through air, in one of which the sensibility was as great as 330 scale divisions to the  $1^{\circ}$  C. All these liquids and many others in the modern chemist's repertory of oils and ethers and alcohols, besides the superior sensibility which they give by their greater expansions, have a great advantage over mercury for some thermometric purposes in their smaller specific gravity. This allows the bulb to be larger, with less liability to break or to give disturbed readings through distortion by the weight of the contained liquid.

§ 22. Liquids which wet the glass have another great advantage over mercury in their smaller capillary attraction (see *CAPILLARY ACTION*, vol. v p 56, and *ATTRACTION*, PROPERTIES, c.) and in the constancy of their  $180^{\circ}$  angle of contact with the glass, instead of the much greater absolute intensity of capillary attraction in the mercury, and its very variable angle of contact, averaging about  $46^{\circ}$  when the mercury is rising, and about as much as  $90^{\circ}$  when it is falling. On account of these variations the bulb of the mercury thermometer is subjected to abrupt variations of pressure when the mercury is rising or falling. The greatest and least pressures due to this cause are experienced when the angle of contact is respectively least and greatest, and differ by the pressure due to a vertical column of mercury equal in height to the difference of depressions of mercury in a capillary tube of the same bore as the thermometer stem when the angle of contact is changing from one to the other of the supposed extreme values. Hence the mercury in a thermometer rises and falls by jerks very noticeable in a delicate thermometer when looked at with a lens of moderate magnifying power, or even with the naked eye. Dr Joule informs us that this defect is much greater in some thermometers than in others, and that he believes it is greatly owing to the tube being left unsealed for too long a time after the introduction of the mercury (by which it is to be presumed something of a film of oxide of mercury is left on the glass to reappear on the surface of the mercury when it sinks as it cools after the sealing of the end). In Joule's own thermometers not the smallest indication has ever been detected of what he calls "this untoward phenomenon, which is calculated to drive an observer mad, if he discovers it towards the close of a series of careful experiments." Their admirable quality in this respect is no doubt due to the great care taken by the maker, Mr Dancer, under Joule's own instructions, to have the mercury and the interior of the bulb and tube thoroughly clean, and to guard it from exposure to any "matter in its wrong place" until completion of the sealing. But no amount of care could possibly produce a mercury thermometer of moderate dimensions moving other wise than by jerks of ever so many divisions, if its stem were of fine enough bore to give anything approaching to two or three hundred divisions to the centigrade degree.

§ 23. One chief objection to the use of alcohol or other volatile liquid for the thermometric substance in ordinary glass thermometers is the liability to distillation of some of the liquid into the stem and head reservoir, unless the glass above the level of the liquid be kept at least as warm as the liquid. On this account a spirit thermometer is not suitable for being plunged into a space warmer than the surrounding atmosphere with the stem simply left to take the temperature to which it comes in the circumstances. But whether for elaborate experimental use, or for the most ordinary thermometric purposes, there is little difficulty in arranging to keep the part of the stem which is above the liquid surface somewhat warmer than at the liquid surface, and this suffices absolutely to prevent the evil of distillation. The only other objection of any grave validity<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> There is one other objection which, though often stated as very grave against the thermometric use of any other liquid than mercury, we do not admit to be so. It is that when the temperature is rapidly un-

<sup>1</sup> Phil. Trans. for 1850, p 825.

against the use of highly expansive liquid instead of mercury is the difficulty of allowing for the expansion of the liquid in the stem, if it is not at the same temperature as the bulb. With the same difference of temperatures in different parts of the instrument, the error on this account is clearly in simple proportion to the expansibility of the liquid, and therefore, the residual error due to want of perfect accuracy in the data for the allowance will, generally speaking, be greater with the more expansive than with the less expansive liquid. But in every case in which the bulb and stem can all conveniently be kept at one temperature, a thermometer having for its thermometric substance some highly expansive oil or alcohol or ether, or other so called organic liquid of perfectly permanent chemical constitution, cannot but be much more accurate and sensitive than the mercury thermometer, which has hitherto been used almost exclusively in thermometric work of the highest rank. We shall see (§§ 62 and 64-65) that the ultimate standard for thermometry, according to the absolute thermodynamic scale (§ 34), is practically attained by the use of hydrogen or nitrogen gas as the thermometric substance, but that for ordinary use a gas thermometer can scarcely be made as convenient as one in which the thermometric substance is a liquid. For practical thermometry of the most accurate kind it seems that the best plan will be to use as ordinary working liquid a standard thermometer having for its thermometric substance one of the more chosen "organic" liquid, and graduated according to the absolute thermodynamic scale, by aid of the thermodynamically corrected air thermometer (§ 62) used as ultimate standard of reference. The great convenience of the mercury thermometer in respect to freedom from liability to distillation and smallness of error on account of difference of temperature between the bulb and stem renders it the most convenient for a large variety of scientific and practical purposes in which the most minute accuracy on the most extreme sensibility is not required.

§ 24. Without any thermodynamic reason for preferring air to mercury as thermometric fluid, Regnault preferred it for two very good reasons. (1) The expansion is 20 times that of mercury and 160 times the cubical expansion of glass, and therefore with air the error due to irregularity in the expansion of the glass is 20 times smaller than with mercury, and small enough to produce no practical detraction from absolute accuracy in thermometry, as he found by elaborate and varied trials. So far as this is concerned, some highly expansive organic liquids would answer nearly as well as air for thermometric fluid, and would have the advantage of giving a thermometer much more easily used. (2) For an ultimate standard of reference air has the advantage over organic liquids generally, that different samples of it taken at different times, or in different parts of the world, and purified of water and carbonic acid by well-known and easily practised processes, are sufficiently uniform to give thermometric results between which the

ing, before becoming stationary, a little of the liquid lags behind the descending free surface, derived on the glass, and, trickling slowly down to rejoin the main column, must be waited for before the stationary temperature can be easily read. We believe that if a fairly inviscid (or mobile) liquid such as alcohol or ether or butyric acid or oxide of methyl be used, there will be practically no time lost from this cause, and entirely no accuracy lost when proper care is taken by the observer. The observer must be on his guard against a possibly false standard, through the falling of temperature being momentarily balanced in its effect on the free surface by the trickling down of liquid from the glass above, when the free surface is still above, or, it may be, has gone down to a little below, the true position for the final temperature.

<sup>1</sup> Henceforth, to save circumlocution, the unqualified word "air" will be used to denote atmospheric air taken in any part of the world, and deprived of carbonic acid and whatever vapour of water it may have contained, by aid of hydrated lime, or caustic potash, or some other suitably reagent for removing the carbonic acid, or chloride of calcium, or sulphuric acid, or phosphoric acid, for removing the water.

accordance is practically perfect, provided the thermometric plan according to which the different samples are used is the same, or as approximately the same as is easily secured in practice. Two plans for the thermometric use of an naturally present themselves—(I) augmentation of volume of air kept in constant pressure, and (II) augmentation of pressure of air kept in constant volume. Regnault has tried both plans, but found that he could only arrange his apparatus to give good results by the second, and on it therefore he founded what he called his "normal air thermometer." For the sake of perfect definiteness he chose, as the density of the air in his normal thermometer, the density which air has when at the temperature of melting ice and under the pressure of one atmosphere. He adopted the centigrade scale in respect to the marking of the freezing and boiling points by 0° and 100°, and the principle which he assumed for the reckoning of other temperatures was to call equal those differences of temperature for which differences of pressure of the air in his normal thermometer are equal. Thus he was led to a definition of temperature expressed by the following formula—

$$t = 100 \frac{p - \pi}{p_{100} - \pi}, \quad (1)$$

where  $\pi$  denotes the pressure one atmo, and  $p$  and  $p_{100}$  the pressures of the air of the normal thermometer at the temperatures denoted by  $t$  and by 100 respectively, the latter being the temperature of steam arising from water boiling under the pressure of one atmo. By the most accurate observations which he could make Regnault found for his "normal air"  $p_{100} = 1.3665 \times \pi$ . Hence his thermometric formula becomes

$$t = 100 \frac{p - \pi}{3665 \times \pi} \sim 272.86 \left( \frac{p}{\pi} - 1 \right) \quad (2)$$

§ 25. Regnault complied with his normal air thermometer thermometers on the same plan of constant volume, but with air at other than the normal density of 1 atmo, compared with other gases than air, also air and gas thermometers on the plan of constant apparent volume as measured in a glass bulb and stem; also a thermometer founded simply on the dilatation of mercury, also thermometers of mercury in different kinds of glass, each graduated on the glass stem with divisions corresponding to exactly equal volumes of the bore, also overflowing thermometers (thermomètres à déversement), in which a bulb with a short piece of fine stem was perfectly filled with mercury at 0° and the quantity of mercury expelled by the high temperature to be measured was weighed, instead of being volumetrically measured by divisions of a long stem as in the ordinary thermometer.

The whole of this thermometric investigation is full of scientific interest, and abounds with results of great practical value in respect even to the minutest details of Regnault's work. It will be found fully described in the first of his three volumes, entitled *Relation des Recherches entreprises par ordre du Monseigneur le Ministre des Travaux Publics et sur la proposition de la Commission centrale des Machines à Vapeur pour Déterminer les Propriétés des Lignes et Données Numériques qui entrent dans le Calcul des Machines à Vapeur*, which were published at Paris in 1847, 1862, and 1870. Hence we can but state some of the most important of the general conclusions—

(1) The air thermometers with pressure at 0° of from 44 to 149 centimes of mercury agreed perfectly with the normal air thermometer calculated according to the same formula (2), and nearly the same universal coefficient 272.86. A slightly larger value 272.98 (or 0.086682) gave the best agreement for the 44 cm pressure, and the somewhat smaller value 272.7 (or 0.086672) for the pressure 149 cm.

(2) The hydrogen gas thermometer, with pressure one atmo at 0°, and with its indications calculated according to

formula (2) but with a different numerical coefficient,<sup>1</sup> agreed perfectly with the normal air thermometer from 0° to 325°.

(3) The carbonic acid gas thermometer with pressure 46 cm at 0°, and its indications calculated with the coefficient 271.59 (003682-), agreed perfectly with the normal air thermometer from 0° to 308°.

(4) The carbonic acid gas thermometer with pressure, at 0°, 7½ centimetres (at nearly 1 atmo), calculated with the coefficient 270.64 (003695-) to make it agree with the normal air thermometer at 100°, gave numbers somewhat too large for all temperatures from 200° to 323°. The difference seemed to rise to a maximum at about 180°, when it was about ½, and to diminish so as to be only about  $\frac{1}{10}$  at the highest temperatures of the comparison. Two sulphurous acid gas thermometers, with pressures 59 cm and 76 cm at 0°, calculated with coefficients 263.6 (003704-) and 261.4 (003825-) respectively to make them agree at 100° with the normal air thermometer, each gave numbers too small for the higher temperatures by differences increasing gradually from 3° at 140° to 3° at 350°.

(5) Air and gas thermometers calculated according to differences of pressure of the gas kept at the same apparent volume (that is to say, with the bounding mercury column at a constant mark on the glass stem of the thermometer) gave numbers too small at the higher temperatures by differences gradually increasing up to 2½° at 350° in the case of *Chaux le Roi* crystal, a hard glass without lead, and to as much as 3½° in the case of ordinary glass.

In connexion with these observations Regnault remarks that the greatest cause of uncertainty in his air thermometer is the allowance for expansion of the glass. It was only by most carefully made special experiments<sup>2</sup> on each particular bulb and tube, to determine its expansion throughout the range for which it was to be used, that he succeeded in obtaining the great accuracy which we find in his results, according to which the probable error, whether by his normal air thermometer, or by other air or gas thermometers of those listed above, agree with it perfectly, was not more than from 1 to 15 of a degree for any temperature up to 350°.

(6) The mercury-in-glass thermometers which Regnault generally used for comparison with his normal air thermometer were overflowing thermometers, because he found that with such he could more easily obtain the very minute accuracy at which he aimed than with the ordinary volumetric thermometers, but the formula by which he calculated temperature from the overflowing thermometer was adapted to give exactly the same result as would have been obtained by the ordinary thermometer with divisions on the stem corresponding to equal volumes of the bore. It must be remembered, however, that this perfect agreement between the volumetric and overflowing thermometers would not be found unless the expansion of the bulb and tube were uniform and isotropic throughout.

(7) The general results of Regnault's comparisons of mercury thermometers with his normal air thermometer.

<sup>1</sup> Instead of the 003665 of his normal air thermometer, Regnault states that for his hydrogen thermometer he used 003653 (which would make the coefficient in formula (2) several different temperatures than that which he used, as he found 0036678 for the "coefficient of dilatation" of hydrogen calculated from its increase of pressure in constant volume, and 0036515 for the coefficient of dilatation observed directly for hydrogen under constant pressures of from 1 to 1 atmo (pp 78, 80, 91, 116, 118), and he nowhere speaks of having found any smaller value than 003661 for hydrogen.

<sup>2</sup> These experiments were made by finding the weight of mercury contained in each bulb and tube at several different temperatures throughout the range through which it was to be used, and thence calculating the bulk according to the density of mercury for the different temperatures found by his independent investigation of the absolute dilatation of mercury by the method of dilatation, this method being independent of the expansion of the containing glass or other solid

was given by himself in a diagram of curves from which the accompanying is copied on a reduced scale (fig. 3). It shows that at a temperature of 320° the independent mercury thermometer stands at 339.8°, the thermometer of mercury in Chaux le Roi crystal at 327.26°, and the thermometer of mercury in ordinary glass at 321.8°, and that the independent mercury thermometer and the mercury in Chaux le Roi crystal stand 10° higher than the normal air thermometer at the temperatures by it of 323° and 345° respectively.

§ 26 The curve for the independent mercury thermometer is mostly Regnault's graphic representation of his experiments on the absolute expansion of mercury (*Relation des Expériences*, vol. 1 p 338). It shows that the addition of bulk given to the same mass of mercury under constant pressure by elevation of temperature is for the same difference of temperatures as indicated by his normal air thermometer regularly greater and greater the higher the temperature.

§ 27 It is interesting to see by the diagram that at the high temperatures all the mercury thermometers keep nearer to the air thermometer than does the independent mercury thermometer, and that the mercury in ordinary soft glass keeps much nearer to the air thermometer than does the mercury in the hard Chaux le Roi glass. We infer that, still reckoning temperature by the air thermometer, we have regular augmentation of expansion at the high temperatures in all the different glasses, each greater than the augmentation of expansion of mercury, and that this augmentation is greater in the soft ordinary glass than in the hard Chaux le Roi glass, being in the ordinary glass great enough to overcompensate in the resulting thermometer indication the augmenting expansion of the mercury from 100° to 245°, while above 245° in the ordinary glass thermometer, and at all temperatures above 100° in the Chaux le Roi thermometer, the compensation is only partial. Between 0° and 100° the independent mercury thermometer stands regularly lower than the air thermometer by as great a difference as 35° at 50°, where it is a maximum. The curves for the mercury-in-glass thermometers are not shown between 0° and 100°, but it is clear from the diagram that the Chaux le Roi thermometer must, like the independent mercury thermometer, stand lower than the air thermometer, but by a smaller difference, probably only about 2° at 50°, and the ordinary glass thermometer higher than the air thermometer from 0° to 100° by a difference which may be 2° or 3° at 50°. This last inference from the diagram is confirmed by Regnault's table of results facing page 237 of his first volume.

§ 28 In the best modern thermometers the graduations are actually engraved on the glass, but in most popular thermometers, and in many for scientific investigation, they are on an attached scale of wood or ivory, or brass, or paper. Some of the best popular thermometers are the German bath thermometers, in which the graduation is on a paper scale guarded by being enclosed in a wide glass tube hermetically sealed round the stem and over the bulb of the glass which contains the mercury, in the manner shown in fig. 4.

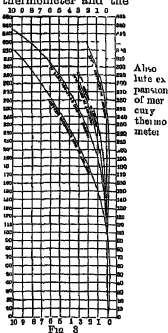


Fig. 3.

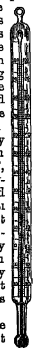


Fig. 4.

The graduation is clearer and more easily read in this kind of thermometer than in any other. The complete protection of the paper scale against damp and damage afforded by its hermetically sealed glass envelope gives a perennially enduring quality to this form of thermometer,<sup>1</sup> such as is possessed by no others except those graduated on the glass, and the lightness of the paper renders its proper attachment to the inner stem, by gum or otherwise, thoroughly trustworthy, when once well done by the maker of the instrument. For scientific purposes the paper scale was too cheap, and common, and good, to satisfy the ideas of those instrument makers who in Germany and France substituted the heavy graduated slab of opal glass for the paper, while still adhering to the bulb thermometer pattern in hermetically enclosing this scale in an outer containing glass tube,—very unnecessarily, as the glass scale, unlike the paper scale, does not require any such protection.

This is now, however, a thing of the past. At the present time all high-class scientific thermometers are graduated on the glass of the stem without any attached scale of other material. Except in respect to ease of reading the indications this simplest form is, both for popular and for scientific purposes, superior even to the German bulb thermometer with hermetically sealed paper scale, and this will be the form intended when we speak of a mercury thermometer, or a spirit thermometer, or a liquid thermometer, without any special qualification.

§ 29 *Properties of Matter concerned in Liquid Thermometers*—The indications of the liquid thermometer depend not only upon the expansion of the liquid with heat, they are seriously modified by the expansion experienced also by the containing solid. The instrument in fact consists of a glass measure measuring the bulk of a liquid. If the bulk of the hollow space in the glass and the bulk of the liquid expand by the same amount, the apparent bulk of the liquid as thus measured will remain unchanged. Now, supposing the glass to be perfectly homogeneous and isotropic (see art. ELASTICITY, §§ 38, 39, and chap. I of *Mathematical Theory*), and the bulb to be free from internal strain, the glass will, when warmed uniformly, expand equally in all directions, and the volume of the hollow space will be altered in the same ratio as the volume of the glass itself. Hence the indications of the thermometer depend on a difference between the expansion of the glass and the expansion of the liquid.

§ 30 To define exactly the indications of a thermometer founded on the expansion of a fluid, let the volume of the bore of the stem between two consecutive divisions be called for brevity a *degree measure*. The degree measure is habitually made as nearly as possible equal throughout the scale in the best mercury-in-glass thermometers, and, as we shall see (§ 62), it ought to be so in an air thermometer to give indications agreeing with the absolute thermodynamic scale nearly enough for the most accurate practical thermometry. But in practical spirit-thermometers the divisions are made to correspond as nearly as may be to degrees of a standard mercury or air

thermometer, and the degree measure is therefore (Table II. below) larger and larger from the lower to the upper end of the scale. For the purpose, however, of comparing the thermometer performances of different liquids, we shall suppose the degree measure to be of equal volume throughout the scale in each case.

Let  $N$  be the number of degree measures contained in the volume of the bulb and stem up to the point marked zero on the scale, and let  $D$  denote the volume, at any temperature  $t$ , of the degree measure reckoned in absolute units of volume. The volume of the bulb and stem up to zero will be  $ND_0$ . On the supposition of perfect isotropy and freedom from strain in the glass,  $N$  will be independent of the temperature and  $D_0/D_t$  will be the ratio of the volume of any portion of the glass at temperature  $t$  to its volume at the temperature, called zero, if  $D_0$  denote the volume of the degree measure when the glass is at this zero temperature. Let now  $V_1$  and  $V_2$  denote the volumes of the whole liquid in a thermometer at the two temperatures  $t$  and  $0$ , we have  $V_1 = ND_1$ . And if  $s$  be the number of scale divisions making the place of the liquid surface in the thermometer tube, we have  $V_2 = (N + s)D_2$ . Hence

$$V_1/V_2 = (1 + s/N)D_2/D_1 \quad \text{Hence } s = N \left( \frac{V_1/V_2}{D_2/D_1} - 1 \right) \quad \text{Hence, if } \Delta_1$$

denote augmentation of bulk of the liquid, and  $\Delta_2$  augmentation of bulk of each degree division of the stem, when temperature is raised from  $0$  to  $t$ , each reckoned in terms of the bulk of zero temperature, we have

$$s = N \left( \frac{1 + \frac{\Delta_1}{V_1}}{1 + \frac{\Delta_2}{ND_1}} - 1 \right) = \frac{N \Delta_1 - \frac{\Delta_2}{D_1}}{1 + \frac{\Delta_2}{ND_1}}$$

This is the formula for the ordinary liquid thermometer. It is also applicable to the constant pressure air thermometer, in which, with proper instrumental means to keep the pressure constant, air is allowed to expand or contract with elevation or depression of temperature, and its volume is measured in a properly shaped glass measuring vessel. We may arbitrarily determine to take  $s$  as the number for the temperature which is indicated by any one particular thermometer of this kind, for instance, a methyl butyrate thermometer, or an alcohol thermometer, or a mercury or an air thermometer. But if  $s = t$  for any one individual thermometer, it cannot be exactly so for any other. In the first advances towards accurate thermometry it was taken so for the mercury-in-glass thermometer, and by general consent it was continued so until it was found (§ 25) that different mercury-in-glass thermometers, each made with absolute accuracy, differ largely in their reckonings of temperature.

§ 31 *Numerical Thermometry*—In § 12 above, a perfectly definite and very simple basis for numerical thermometry was described, not as having been adopted in practice, but as an illustration of a very general principle upon which reckoning of temperature may be done in numbers. The principle is this: Two definite temperatures depending on properties of some particular substance or substances are first fixed upon and marked by two arbitrary numbers, as, for instance, the temperature of melting ice marked zero, and the temperature of steam issuing from boiling water under atmospheric pressure of exactly one atmosphere, marked 100. Then any intermediate temperature  $t$  is obtained by taking  $t$  parts of water at  $100^\circ$  and  $(100 - t)$  parts at  $0^\circ$  and mixing them together. As said in § 12 this method is limited to temperatures at which liquid water can be obtained, and therefore practically it is only applicable between the melting point of ice and the boiling point of water, under ordinary atmospheric pressure.

§ 32 Any other liquid of permanent chemical constitution might be used instead of water as the thermometric substance in thermometry founded on mixtures, so even might a powdered solid. Oil if used instead of water would have the advantage of being available for higher temperatures, but want of perfect definiteness and constancy of chemical constitution is a fatal disqualification for it as the fundamental thermometric substance for this

Ordinary scientific thermometer mercury in glass

<sup>1</sup> Provided it is never exposed to "browning" temperatures (or temperatures high enough to produce partially destructive distillation of the paper). Instrument makers ignoring this caution have actually made it with graduation extending to much temperatures for kitchen use. The result is that it gets injured to the extent of partially browning the hermetically sealed paper, and befogging the inner surface of the glass envelope, by applying it to test the temperature of melted fat in cooking. For this purpose the simple sensitive thermometer with graduation on the glass stem is proper.

Thermometer defined to make constant the scale of water

monometry by mixtures. Liquid mercury might be used with the advantage of being available for both higher and lower temperatures than water, through a much wider whole range indeed than either water or oil. For use as thermometric substance for the method of mixtures both water and mercury, in the conditions of approximate purity in which they are easily obtained in abundance, have a paramount advantage over all other liquids, in not enough approximation to perfect definiteness and constancy of constitution to give practically perfect thermometric results.

§ 33 In §§ 12, 21, 25, 30, 31, 32, several distinct definitions of numerical reckoning of temperature have been given. In each of these the differences of temperature which are to be called equal are defined specially, and this is the essence of the thermometric scale in each case (the marking of 0° and 100° for the "freezing" and "boiling" points being common to all as a matter of practical usage and not an essential of the thermometric principle in any case). Thus in §§ 12, 31, and 32 differences of temperature are called equal which are produced by the communication of equal quantities of heat to a given quantity of the particular thermometric substance chosen—water, for example, or mercury, in other words (§ 68 below), this thermometric system is chosen so as to make the specific heat of a particular thermometric substance the same for all temperatures. Again in § 24 differences of temperature are called equal for which the differences of pressure are equal in air of the particular density which air has if its pressure is one atmosphere when its temperature is "freezing." This is Regnault's "normal thermometry." In § 25 (1), (2), (3), (4), other reckonings of temperature differing essentially from this, though, as Regnault's experiments proved, by but very small differences, are given simply by the substitution of air of other than Regnault's normal density, and of other gases than air, for the air of Regnault's normal thermometer. In § 25 (5) a thermometry founded on a complex co-efficiency of change of pressure and volume of a gas and change of volume of some one particular glass vessel is defined and compared with Regnault's normal thermometry, and in § 25 (6) and (7) the same is done for the ordinary mercury-in-glass thermometer, which depends on a co-efficiency of glass and mercury leading to the reckoning of temperature defined in § 30. Again in § 26 and § 24 (T) is indicated a system of thermometry founded on the absolute dilatation of some fluid, such as mercury or alcohol or butyrate of oxide of methyl or other permanent liquid or air, at some constant pressure, such as one atmosphere, with equal differences of temperature defined as those which give equal dilatations of the particular substance chosen as the thermometric fluid.

§ 34 Each of all these different definitions of temperature is founded on some particular property of a particular substance. A thermometer graduated to fulfil one of the definitions for one particular substance would not agree with another thermometer graduated according to the same definition for another substance, or according to some of the other definitions. A much more satisfactory foundation for thermometry is afforded by thermodynamic science, which (see THERMODYNAMICS) gives us a definition of temperature depending on certain thermodynamic properties of matter in such a manner that if a thermometer is graduated according to it from observation of one class of thermal effects in one particular substance, it will agree with a thermometer graduated according to the same thermodynamic law from the same class of effects in any other substance, or from the same or from some other class of effects in another substance. Thus we have what is called the absolute thermodynamic scale. This scale is now in modern thermal science the ultimate

scale of reference for all thermometries of whatever kind (§ 67). It is defined in §§ 35 and 37 after the following preliminary. A piece of matter which we shall call the "thermometric body" or "thermometric substance" must be given, and at each instant it must be throughout at one temperature, whatever operations we perform upon it. For simplicity we shall suppose it to be of one substance throughout. It may be all solid, or it may be partly solid and the remainder gaseous (as the contents of a wholly frozen cryophorus or any other form of closed vessel full of ice and vapour of water, but with no air), or it may at one particular temperature in the course of its use be partly solid and partly liquid and partly gaseous (as the contents of a partially frozen cryophorus), or it may be partly liquid and partly gaseous (as the contents of an unfrozen cryophorus or of a "philosophical hammer"), or it may be all liquid, or it may be all gas, or it may be all fluid at a temperature above the Andrews' "critical temperature."<sup>1</sup> If it be all solid it may be under any homogeneous stress (ELASTICITY, Mathematical Theory, part I, chap. 1), but in any case we suppose for simplicity the stress to be homogeneous throughout, and therefore if the thermometric body be partly solid and partly fluid, the stress in the solid as well as in the fluid must be uniform pressure in all directions. To avoid excluding the case of all solid from our statements, we shall use generally the word stress, which will mean normal pressure reckoned in number of units of force per unit of area, in every case in which the whole or any part of the thermometric body is fluid, and will denote this or any other possible stress when the thermometric body is all solid.

§ 35 (1) Alter the bulk or shape of the thermometric substance till it becomes warmer to any desired degree. (2) Keeping it now at this higher temperature, alter bulk or shape farther, and generate the heat which the substance takes to keep its temperature constant, by stirring water, or a portion of the substance itself, if it is partly fluid, and measure the quantity of work spent in this stirring. (3) Bring it back towards its original bulk and shape till it becomes cooled to its original temperature. (4) Keeping it at this temperature, reduce it to its original bulk and shape, carrying off, by a large quantity of water, the heat which it must part with to prevent it from becoming warmed. Find by a special experiment how much work must be done to give an equal amount of heat to an equal amount of water by stirring. Then the ratio of the first measured quantity of work to the second is the ratio of the higher temperature to the lower on the absolute thermodynamic scale.

§ 36 The following is equivalent to § 35, and is more convenient for analytical use. It is derived from § 35 by supposing the first and third operations to be so small that the ratio defined as the ratio of the two temperatures is infinitely nearly unity, and conversely § 35—our first form of definition of absolute temperature—may be derived from the second, which is to be now given, by passing through a finite range of temperature by successive infinitesimal steps, and applying the second definition to each step.

§ 37 Let the thermometric body be infinitely small warmed by stirring a portion or the whole of itself if it be partially or wholly fluid, or by stirring a quantity of fluid in space around it if it be all solid, and during the process let the stress upon the body be kept unchanged. The body expanding or contracting or changing its shape with the heat, as the case may be, does work upon the surrounding material by which its stress is maintained

Different  
equally  
permissible  
while  
this mo-  
nometric  
assump-  
tions

Each  
founda-  
tion's  
particu-  
lar prop-  
erty of  
a sub-  
stance

Each  
is very  
low  
the mo-  
nometric  
defini-  
tion of  
tempera-  
ture

Fast  
defini-  
tion  
by two  
tempera-  
tures  
Carnot's  
thermo-  
dynamic  
cycle  
assumed

<sup>1</sup> See articles LIQUID, MATTER (PROPERTIES OF), and STRESS  
<sup>2</sup> Ibid. <sup>3</sup> Ibid.

Second definition of absolute temperature. — by ratio of an initial isothermal difference of temperature to whole temperature

Find the ratio of the amount of work thus done to the amount of work spent in the stirring. For brevity we shall call this the *work-ratio*. Again, let the stress be infinitesimally increased, the thermometric body being now for the time enclosed in an impenetrable envelope so that it may neither gain nor lose caloric. It will rise (or fall) in temperature in virtue of the augmentation of stress. *The ratio of this infinitesimal elevation of temperature to the whole absolute temperature is equal to the work-ratio multiplied into the ratio of the infinitesimal augmentation of stress to the whole stress*

§ 38 To show how our definition of absolute temperature is to be applied in practice take the following examples.

Example 1. — Any case in which the thermometric substance is put in one condition and the remainder in another of different density, as part solid and part vapour, or part solid and part liquid, or part liquid and part gaseous. In this last case, as explained above (§ 34), we suppose the stress to be uniform pressure in all directions.

Let  $p$  be its amount, and let  $t$  be the absolute temperature corresponding to this pressure. Let  $\sigma$  be the ratio of the density of the rarer to that of the denser portion,  $\rho$  the density of the latter portion, and let the quantity of work required to generate the heat taken to convert unit mass of the substance from the lower to the higher condition (i.e. the "latent heat" of transition from the lower to the higher condition per unit mass of the substance, and if the dynamical equivalent of the thermal unit which  $\rho$  is measured) The work done by the substance in passing from the denser to the rarer condition per unit volume of the latter is  $p(1-\sigma)$ , and the amount of work required to generate the heat taken in doing so is  $\frac{p}{\rho\sigma}$ . Hence the work-ratio of our second definition is

$$\frac{p(1-\sigma)}{\frac{p}{\rho\sigma}} \quad (1)$$

Let now the pressure be increased by an infinitely small quantity  $dp$ , and, the substance being still in the two conditions but at uniform temperature throughout, let  $dt$  be the corresponding rise in temperature. We have by the definition (§ 37)

$$\frac{dt}{t} = \frac{p(1-\sigma)dp}{\frac{p}{\rho\sigma}} = \frac{1-\sigma}{\sigma} \frac{dp}{p} \quad (2)$$

Hence

Hence by integration

$$\log \frac{t}{t_0} = \int_{p_0}^p \frac{(1-\sigma)dp}{\sigma\rho p} \quad (3)$$

or

$$t = t_0 e^{\int_{p_0}^p \frac{(1-\sigma)dp}{\sigma\rho p}}$$

Water steam thermometer

§ 39 Fig. 6 represents a thermometer constructed to show absolute temperature on the plan of example 1, § 38, realized for the case of water and vapour of water as thermometric substance. The containing vessel consists of a tube with cylindrical bulb like an ordinary thermometer, but, unlike an ordinary thermometer, the tube is bent in the manner shown in the drawing. The tube may be of from 1 to 2 or 3 millims bore, and the cylindrical part of the bulb of about ten times as much. The length of the cylindrical part of the bulb may be rather more than  $\frac{1}{10}$  of the length of the straight part of the tube. The contents, water and vapour of water, are to be put in and the glass hermetically sealed to enclose them, with the utmost precautions to obtain pure water as thoroughly freed from air as possible, after better than the best manner of instrument makers in making cryophorous and water barometers. The quantity of water left in at the sealing must be enough to fill the cylindrical part of the bulb and the horizontal branch of the tube. When in use the straight part of the tube must be vertical with its closed end up, and the part of it occupied by the manometric water-column must be kept at a nearly enough definite temperature by a sur-

<sup>1</sup> In the case of full the elevation of temperature is to be regarded as negative, and in this case the "work-ratio" is negative also.

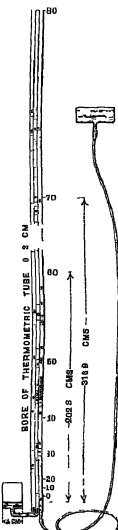
rounding glass jacket tube of ice-cold water. This glass jacket-tube is wide enough to allow little lumps of ice to be dropped into it from its upper end, and which is open. By end of an india-rubber tube connected with its lower end, and a little movable piston, as shown in the drawing, the level of the water in the jacket is kept from a few inches above to a quarter of an inch below that of the interior manometric column. Thus, by dropping in lumps of ice so as always to keep some unmelted ice floating in the water of the jacket, it is easy to keep the temperature of the top of the manometric water column exactly at the freezing temperature. As we shall see presently, the manometric water below its free surface may be at any temperature from freezing to 10° C above freezing without more than  $\frac{1}{10}$  per cent of hydrostatic error. The temperature in the vapour-space above the liquid column may be either freezing or anything higher. It ought not to be lower than freezing, because, if it were so, vapour would condense as hoar-frost on the glass, and evaporation from the top of the liquid column would either cryophorousness (see LIQUIDS and THERMODYNAMICS) from the liquid there, or would cool it below the freezing point.

§ 40 The chief object of keeping the top of the manometric column exactly at the freezing point is to render perfectly definite and constant the steam pressure in the space above it.

A second object of considerable importance when the bore of the tube is so small as one millimetre is to give constancy to the capillary tension of the surface of the water. The elevation by capillary attraction of ice-cold water in a tube of one millimetre bore is about 7 millims. The constancy of temperature provided by the surrounding ice-cold water will be more than sufficient to prevent any perceptible error due to inequality of this effect. To avoid error from capillary attraction the bore of the tube ought to be very uniform, if it is so small as one millimetre. If it be three millimetres or more, a very rough approach to uniformity would suffice.

A third object of the ice-cold water jacket, and one of much more importance than the second, is to give accuracy to the hydrostatic measurement by keeping the density of the water throughout the long vertical branch definite and constant. But the density of water at the freezing point is only  $\frac{1}{10}$  per cent less than the maximum density, and is the same as the density at 8° C, and therefore when  $\frac{1}{10}$  per cent as an admissible error on our thermometric pressure, the density will be nearly enough constant with any temperature from 0° to 10° C throughout the column. But on account of the first object mentioned above the very top of the water column must be kept with exceeding exactness at the freezing temperature.

§ 41 In this instrument the "thermometric substance" (§ 34) is the water and vapour of water in the bulb, or more properly speaking the portions of water and vapour



of water infinitely near their separating interface. The rest of the water is merely a means of measuring hydrostatically the fluid pressure at the interface. When the temperature is so high as to make the pressure too great to be conveniently measured by a water column, the hydrostatic measurement may be done, as shown in the annexed drawing (fig. 7), by a mercury column in a glass tube, surrounded by a glass water jacket not shown in the drawing, to keep it very accurately at some definite temperature so that the density of the mercury may be accurately known.

The simple form of steam thermometer represented with figured dimensions in fig. 6 will be very convenient for practical use for temperatures from freezing to 60°. Through this range the pressure of water-steam, reckoned in terms of the balancing column of water of maximum density, increases (Table V.) from 6½ to 202·3 centimetres; and for this therefore a tube of a little more than 2

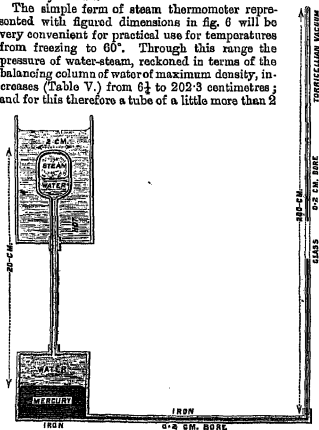


Fig. 7.

metres will suffice. From 60° to 140° the pressure of steam now reckoned in terms of the length of a balancing column of mercury at 0° increases from 14·88 to 271·8 centimetres; and for this a tube of 280 centimetres may be provided. For higher temperatures a longer column, or several columns, as in the multiple manometer, or an accurate air pressure-gauge, or some other means, such as a very accurate instrument constructed on the principle of Bourdon's metallic pressure-gauge, may be employed, so as to allow us still to use water and vapour of water as thermometric substance.

High-pressure steam thermometer.

§ 43. At 230° C., the superior limit of Regnault's high-pressure steam experiments, the pressure is 27·53 atmos, but there is no need for limiting our steam thermometer to this temperature and pressure. Suitable means can easily be found for measuring with all useful accuracy much higher pressures than 27 atmos. But at so high a temperature as 140°, vapour of mercury measured by a water column, as shown in the diagram (fig. 8), becomes available for purposes for which one millimetre to the degree is a sufficient sensibility. The mercury-steam-pressure thermometer, with pressure measured by water-column, of dimensions shown in the drawing, serves from 140° to 280° C., and will have very ample sensibility through the upper half of its scale. At 280° its sensibility

will be about 4½ centimetres to the degree! For temperatures above 280° sufficient sensibility for most purposes is obtained by substituting mercury for water in that simplest form of steam thermometer shown in fig. 6, in which the pressure of the steam is measured by a column of the liquid itself kept at a definite temperature. When the liquid is mercury there is no virtue in the particular temperature 0° C., and a stream of water as nearly as may be of atmospheric temperature will be the easiest as well as the most accurate way of keeping the mercury at a definite temperature. As the pressure of mercury steam is at all ordinary atmospheric temperatures quite imperceptible to the hydrostatic test when mercury itself is the balancing liquid, that which was the chief reason for fixing the temperature at the interface between liquid and vapour at the top of the pressure-measuring column when the balancing liquid was water (§ 40) has no weight in the present case; but, on the other hand, a much more precise

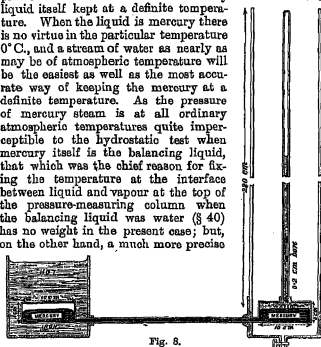


Fig. 8.

definiteness than the ten degrees latitude allowed in the former case for the temperature of the main length of the manometric column is now necessary. In fact, a change of temperature of 2·2° in mercury at any atmospheric temperature produces about the same proportionate change of density as is produced in water by a change of temperature from 0° to 10°, that is to say, about ⅓ per cent; but there is no difficulty in keeping, by means of a water jacket, the mercury column constant to some definite temperature within a vastly smaller margin of error than 2·2°, especially if we choose for the definite temperature something near the atmospheric temperature at the time, or the temperature of whatever abundant water supply may be available. If the vertical tube for the pressure-measuring mercury column be 830 centimetres long, the simple mercury-steam thermometer may be used up to 520° C., the highest temperature reached by Regnault in his experiments (Table V. below) on mercury-steam. By using an iron bulb and tube for the part of the thermometer exposed to the high temperature, and for the lower part of the measuring column to within a few metres of its top, with glass for the upper part to allow the mercury to be seen, a mercury-steam-pressure thermometer can with great ease be made which shall be applicable for temperatures giving pressures up to as many atmospheres as can be measured by the vertical height available. The apparatus may of course be simplified by dispensing with the Torricellian vacuum at the upper end of the tube, and opening the tube to the atmosphere, when the steam-pressure to be measured is so great that a rough and easy barometer observation gives with sufficient accuracy the air-pressure at the top of the measuring column. The easiest, and not necessarily in practice the least accurate, way of measuring very high pressures of mercury-steam will be by enclosing some air above the cool pressure-measuring column of mercury, and so making it into a compressed-air pressure-gauge, it being understood that the law of compression of the air under the pressures for which it is to be used

in the gauge is known by accurate independent experiments such as those of Regnault on the compressibility of air and other gases.

§ 43 The water-steam thermometer may be used, but somewhat precariously, for temperatures below the freezing point, because water, especially when enclosed and protected as the portion of it in the bulb of our thermometer, is, may be cooled many degrees below its freezing point without becoming frozen, but, not to speak of the uncertainty or instability of this peculiar condition of water, the instrument would be unsatisfactory on account of insufficient thermometric sensitivity for temperatures more than two or three degrees below the freezing point. Hence, to make a steam thermometer for such temperatures some other substance than water should be taken, and none seems better adapted for the purpose than sulphurous acid, which, in the apparatus represented with figured dimensions in the accompanying diagram (fig. 9), makes an admirably convenient and sensitive thermometer for temperatures from  $+20^{\circ}$  to something far below  $-30^{\circ}$ , as we see from the results of Regnault's measurements (Table below).

§ 44 To sum up, we have in § 39 43 a complete series of steam-pressure thermometers, of sulphurous acid, of water, and of mercury, adapted to give absolutely definite and highly sensitive thermometric indications throughout the wide range from something much below  $-30^{\circ}$  to considerably above  $520^{\circ}$  of the centigrade scale. The graduation of the scales of these thermometers to show absolute temperature is to be made by calculation from formula (3) of § 38, when the requisite experimental data, that is to say, the values of  $\sigma$  and  $\rho$  for different values of  $p$  throughout the range for which each substance is to be used as thermometric fluid are available. Hitherto these requisites have not been given by direct experiment for any one of the three substances with sufficient accuracy for our thermometric purpose through any range whatever.

Water, naturally, is the one for which the most complete and accurate information has been obtained. For it Regnault's experiments have given, no doubt with great accuracy, the values of  $p$  (the steam pressure) and of  $\kappa$  (the latent heat of steam per unit mass) for all temperatures reckoned by his normal air thermometer, which we now regard merely as an arbitrary scale of temperature, through the range from  $-30^{\circ}$  to  $+230^{\circ}$ . If he, or any other experimenter, had given us with similar accuracy through the same range the values of  $\rho$  (the density of steam) and  $\sigma$  (the ratio of the density of steam to the density of water in contact with it), for temperatures reckoned on the same arbitrary scale, we should have all the data from experiment required for the graduation of our water-steam thermometer to absolute thermodynamic scale. For it is to be remarked that all reckoning of temperature is eliminated from the second member of formula (3), and that in our use of it Regnault's normal thermometer has merely been referred to for the values of  $\rho$  and of  $1 - \sigma$ , which correspond to stated values of  $p$ . The arbitrary constant of integration,  $e_0$ , is truly arbitrary. It will be convenient to give it such a value that the difference of values of  $t$  between the

freezing point of water and the temperature for which  $p$  is equal to one atmo shall be  $100^{\circ}$ , as this makes it agree with the centigrade scale in respect to the difference between the numbers measuring the temperatures which on the centigrade scale are marked  $0^{\circ}$  and  $100^{\circ}$ . We shall see (§ 56 below) that indirectly by means of experiments on hydrogen gas this assignment of the arbitrary constant of integration would give  $273$  for the absolute temperature  $0^{\circ}$  C, and  $373$  for that of  $100^{\circ}$  C. Meantime, as said above, we have not the complete data from direct experiments even on water steam for graduating the water steam thermometer, but on the other hand we have, from experiments on air and on hydrogen and other gases, data which allow us to graduate indirectly any continuous intrinsic thermometer (§ 19 above) according to the absolute scale, and we shall see that by thus indirectly graduating the water-steam thermometer, we learn the density of steam at different temperatures more accurately than it has hitherto been made known by any direct experiments on water-steam itself.

§ 45 Merely viewed as a continuous intrinsic thermometer, the steam thermometer, in one or other of the forms described above to suit different parts of the entire range from the lowest temperatures to temperatures somewhat above  $520^{\circ}$ , is no doubt superior in the conditions for accuracy specified in § 16 to every other thermometer of any of the different kinds hitherto in use, and it may be trusted more surely for accuracy than any other as a thermometric standard when once it has been graduated according to the absolute scale, whether by practical experiments on steam, or indirectly by experiments on air or other gases. In fact, the use of steam-pressure measured in definite units of pressure, as a thermoscopic effect, in the steam thermometer is simply a continuous extension to every temperature of the principle already practically adopted for fixing the temperature which is called  $100^{\circ}$  on the centigrade scale, and it stands on precisely the same theoretical footing as an air thermometer, or a mercury-in-glass thermometer, or an alcohol thermometer, or a methyl butyrate thermometer, in respect to the graduation of its scale according to absolute temperature. Any one intrinsic thermometer may be so graduated ideally by thermodynamic experiments on the substance itself without the aid of any other thermometer or any other thermometric substance, but the steam-pressure thermometer has the great practical advantage over all others, except the air thermometer, that these experiments are easily practicable with great accuracy instead of being, though ideally possible, hardly to be considered possible as a practical means of attaining to thermodynamic thermometry. In fact, for water-steam it is only the most easily obtained of experimental data, the measurement of the density of the steam at different pressures, that has not already been actually obtained by direct experiment. Whether or not, when this lacuna has been filled up by direct experiments, the data from water steam alone may yield more accurate thermodynamic thermometry than we have at present from the hydrogen or nitrogen gas thermometer (§ 44 69 below), we are unable at present to judge. But when once we have the means, directly from itself, or indirectly from comparison with hydrogen or nitrogen or air thermometers, of graduating once for all a sulphurous acid steam thermometer, water steam thermometer, or mercury steam thermometer, that is to say, when once we have a table of the absolute thermodynamic temperatures corresponding to the different steam pressures of the substances sulphurous acid, water, and mercury, we have a much more accurate and more easily reproducible standard than either the air or gas thermometer of any form, or the mercury thermometer, or any liquid thermometer can give.

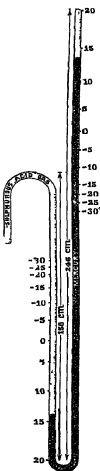


Fig. 9



In fact, the series of steam thermometers for the whole range from the lowest temperatures can be reproduced with the greatest ease in any part of the world by a person commencing with no other material than a piece of sulphur and oil to burn it in, some pure water, and some pure mercury, and with no other apparatus than can be made by a moderately skilled glass blower, and with no other standard of physical measurement of any kind than an accurate linear measure. He may assume the force of gravity to be that calculated for his latitude, with the ordinary rough allowance for his elevation above the sea, and his omission to measure with higher accuracy the actual force of gravity in his locality can lead him into no thermometric error which is not immeasurably less than the inevitable errors in the reproduction and use of the air thermometer, or of mercury or other liquid thermometers. In temperatures above the highest for which mercury steam pressure is not too great to be practically available, nothing is better than Deville's thermometer, an thermometer with hard porcelain bulb suited to resist the high temperature is available for accurate thermometry.

Deville's  
thermometer  
is to  
be used.

§ 16 We have given the steam thermometer as our first example of thermodynamic thermometry because intelligence in the thermodynamics has been hitherto much retarded, and the student unnecessarily perplexed, and a more successful has been given as a foundation for thermometry by building from the beginning on an ideal substance called perfect gas, with none of its properties realized rigorously by any real substance, and with some of them (see MATTER, LIQUID, SOLID) unknown, and utterly unassignable, even by guess. But after having been moved by this reason to give the steam-pressure thermometer as our first theoretical example, we have been led into the preceding carefully detailed examination of its practical qualities, and we have thus become convinced that though hitherto used in scientific investigations only for fixing the "boiling point," and (through an inevitable natural selection) by practical engineers for knowing the temperatures of their boilers by the pressures indicated by the Bourdon gauge, it is destined to be of great service both in the strictest scientific thermometry and as a practical thermometer for a great variety of useful applications.

§ 17 Example 2 (including example 1).—Any case in which the stress is uniform pressure in all directions.

Let  $p$  and  $v$  denote the pressure and volume. The condition of the substance (single, double, or triple, as we may be) is determined when  $p$  and  $v$  are given, and it will therefore be spoken of shortly as the condition  $(p, v)$ . Let  $\epsilon$  be the energy which must be communicated to the substance to bring it from any conveniently defined condition  $(p_0, v_0)$  to any condition whatever  $(p, v)$ . Remark that  $\epsilon$  is a function of the two independent variables  $p, v$  to be found by experiment, and that the finding of it by experiment is a perfectly determinate practical problem, which can be carried out without the aid of any thermometer, and without any consideration whatever relating to temperature. We shall see in fact that certain practical solutions of it for many different substances have been obtained by experiment (see THERMODYNAMICS). The absolute temperature,  $t$ , is also a function of  $p$  and  $v$  to be also determined by experiment, according to the equivalent definitions of §§ 35 and 37. Let  $h$  be communicated to the substance so as to cause its volume to increase by  $dv$ , the pressure being kept constant. The energy of the body will be augmented by

$$\frac{d\epsilon}{dv} dv$$

At the same time the body is expanding and pressing out the matter around it does work to the extent of

$$p dv \quad (4)$$

Hence the whole work required to generate the heat given to it amounts to

$$\left( \frac{d\epsilon}{dv} + p \right) dv \quad (5)$$

<sup>1</sup> Practically, the best of sulphur chemical means of producing sulphurous acid, as from sulphur acid by heating with copper, will be adopted in preference to burning sulphur.

Hence the ratio of (4) to (5), or

$$\frac{p}{\frac{d\epsilon}{dv} + p} \quad (6)$$

is the "work ratio" of § 37. Hence by the definition

$$\frac{1}{t} = \frac{37}{p} \frac{p}{\frac{d\epsilon}{dv} + p} = \frac{dp}{\frac{d\epsilon}{dv} + p} \quad (7),$$

where  $D\epsilon$  denotes the change of thermodynamic pressure by any operation, the pressure by  $dp$ , and it is the same thing, preventing the heat substance from either giving heat to or taking heat from the substance, and thus leaving the condition analytically, let  $dv$  be the augmentation of volume (negative, of course, if  $dp$  is compressive) which it implies. The work done on the substance, by reason of the pressure, from a volume  $v$  to  $v+dv$ , and the energy of the substance, Rankine is augmented by just this amount, because of the condition to be expressed. Hence

$$\frac{d\epsilon}{dv} + \frac{dp}{dv} dv = -p dv \quad (8),$$

whence

$$d\epsilon = -\frac{dp}{dv} dv \quad (9)$$

But

$$D\epsilon = \frac{dp}{dv} dv + \frac{dv}{dv} dv,$$

and so we have

$$D\epsilon = \left( \frac{dp}{dv} + \frac{dv}{dv} \right) dv \quad (10)$$

Eliminating  $D\epsilon/dv$  from this by (7) we find

$$t = p + \frac{dp}{dv} \frac{dv}{dv} \quad (11)$$

§ 18 This is a linear partial differential equation of the first order for the determination of  $\epsilon$ , supposing, as we do for the present, that  $\epsilon$  is a known function of  $p$  and  $v$ . The following graphical illustration of the well known analytical process for finding the complete solution of such equations shows exactly how much too tedious a solution of temperature can be done, with no other data from experiment than the values of  $\frac{d\epsilon}{dv}$  and  $\frac{dp}{dv}$  as functions of  $p$  and  $v$ , and what additional information is required to fully determine  $\epsilon$ .

First remark that (11) is the condition that  $\frac{1}{t}$  be a factor. Called thus, the function  $\frac{1}{t}$  is a factor of a function of two independent variables  $p$  and  $v$ . Let  $\phi$  be this function, — that is to say, let  $\phi$  be such that

$$\left. \begin{aligned} \frac{dp}{dv} \frac{1}{t} (p + \frac{dp}{dv}) \quad \text{and} \quad \frac{dp}{dv} \frac{1}{t} \frac{dv}{dv} \\ \text{or} \quad \frac{1}{t} \left( \frac{dp}{dv} + \frac{dv}{dv} \right) = \frac{dp}{dv} \end{aligned} \right\} \quad (12)$$

Then every solution of the differential equation

$$\frac{dp}{dv} = -\frac{p + \frac{dp}{dv}}{\frac{dv}{dv}} \quad (13)$$

satisfies  $\phi$  constant, and conversely, every series of values of  $p$  and  $v$  which renders  $\phi$  constant constitutes a solution of (13). Now this is a differential equation may be solved graphically by taking  $p$  and  $v$  as rectangular coordinates of a point in a plane, and drawing the Rankine, which series of curves which satisfy it as follows. Commence with any point and calculate for its values of  $p$  and  $v$  the value of the left hand member of (13). Draw through this point an infinitesimal line in the direction of the tangent to the curve given by the value which is found for  $\frac{dp}{dv}$ . With the altered values of  $p$  and  $v$  corresponding

<sup>2</sup> This function is of great importance in practical thermodynamics multiplied by  $dv$ , it is equal to the excess of the energy of the substance above its motive energy (dynamical energy) by the work done in taking the substance from the state  $(p, v)$  in which it is given to the zero condition  $(p_0, v_0)$ , without either taking in heat from or giving out heat to matter at any other temperature than  $t_0$ . See THERMODYNAMICS.



§ 52 Now if for any particular fluid at some one given pressure  $p$ , with infinitesimal excess  $\delta p$  above this pressure for the higher pressure in the thermodynamic experiment, we find neither heating nor cooling effect in passing through the porous plug, the middle has nothing to do, that is,  $\delta w = 0$ . If, with always the same pressure  $p$ , but with different values of  $v$ , that is to say, with the fluid given at different temperatures, but with pressures infinitely nearly the same, we always find the same result,  $\delta w = 0$ , it follows from (16) that for this particular fluid at the particular pressure of the experiment, and for all the temperatures of the experiment, we have

$$v \frac{dw}{dv} = 1 \quad (22)$$

Hence by integration

$$w = Cv \quad (23)$$

Hence we infer that with this fluid for thermometric substance, with the particular pressure of the experiment, and throughout the range of temperatures for which experiment has given us  $\delta w = 0$ , absolute temperature is shown on a scale graduated and numbered in simple proportion to the whole volume of the fluid.

§ 53 If the thermodynamic test repeated for the same fluid at different pressures gives still the same result, we have, for all pressures and temperatures within the range for which the supposed result  $\delta w = 0$  has been found by the experiment,

$$w = f(p)v \quad (24),$$

where  $f(p)$  denotes a quantity which depends only on the pressure of the fluid and is independent of its density.

§ 54 Joule and Thomson's experiments on the thermal effects of fluids in motion<sup>1</sup> showed that for pressures of from one to five or six atmos hydrogen gas, common air, nitrogen, oxygen, and carbonic acid, all somewhat approximately fulfil the condition of passing through the porous plug without change of temperature,—hydrogen much more approximately, carbonic acid much less approximately, than any of the others. Hence we infer that absolute temperature is somewhat approximately proportional to the volume of the fluid, if any one of these gases be used as the thermometric fluid in a constant pressure thermometer. We shall presently see that the requisite correction of this statement for the case of hydrogen is so small as to be almost within the limits of accuracy of the most accurate thermometric usage.

§ 55 In the case of common air, nitrogen, oxygen, and carbonic acid, the experiments showed a slight cooling effect upon the fluid in passing through the porous plug, in the case of hydrogen, a much smaller heating effect. According to the rigorous dynamical form of our statement of § 51, we have no right to measure these heating and cooling effects on any scale of temperature, as we have not yet formed a thermometric scale. And it is interesting to remark that in point of fact the thermodynamic experiment described in that section involves the use of a differential thermometer (§ 13) and not of any intrinsic thermometer at all, and in respect to this requisite it may be contrasted with the thermodynamic investigation of § 49 previously, which involved the use, not of any continuous thermometer, but only of a single-temperature intrinsic thermometer (§ 14). Now, instead of reckoning on any thermometric scale the cooling effect or the heating effect of passage through the plug, we have to measure the quantity of work ( $\delta w$ ) required to annul it, in the case of the majority of gases; and in the case of hydrogen, instead of reckoning on any thermometric scale the heating effect, we

have to measure  $-\delta w$  as explained in § 51. The experiments as actually made by Joule and Thomson simply gave the cooling effects and heating effects shown by mercury thermometers in the tenuous stream towards and from the plug, but the very thermometers that were used had been used by Joule in his original experiments determining the dynamical equivalent of heat, and again in his later experiments by which for the first time the specific heat of air at constant pressure was measured with sufficient accuracy for our present purpose. Hence by putting together different experiments which had actually been made with these thermometers of Joule's, the operation of measuring  $\delta w$ , at all events for the case of air, was virtually completed. Thus according to our present view the mercury thermometers are merely used as a step in aid of the measurement of  $\delta w$ , and their scales may be utterly arbitrary, provided we know the quantity of work required to raise unit mass of any of the fluids concerned through the particular differences of temperature actually shown by the thermometers in the Joule and Thomson experiment. The best way of doing this of course is to take advantage of the best measurements, that is to say Regnault's, of the thermal capacity of air at constant pressure, and then to calculate according to Joule's own measurement the dynamical equivalent of the heat required to warm water through one degree of its own thermometers.

§ 56 Let  $K$  be the thermal capacity, pressure constant, of the fluid experimented on,  $J$  the dynamical equivalent of the thermal unit, and  $\delta t$  the cooling effect (reckoned negative when the effect is one of temperature), as measured by Joule's thermometers. We have

$$\delta w = -JK\delta t \quad (25)$$

Hence (16) becomes

$$v \frac{dw}{dv} = \frac{1}{1 + \frac{JK}{v} \frac{dt}{dv}} \quad (26)$$

The experiment showed  $\delta t$  to be simply proportional to  $\delta p$  not nearly for an infinitesimal difference of pressures but for pressures up to 5 or 6 atmos. For the case of air the heating effect observed amounted, per 100 inches of mercury, to 100 of a degree centigrade at temperatures of  $4^\circ$  or  $6^\circ$  centigrade, and to 165 of a degree centigrade at temperatures of from  $38^\circ$  to  $58^\circ$  centigrade. The investigation was not carried out in sufficient detail to give any law of variation of this effect with temperature, and it was not even absolutely proved to be greater for the higher than for the lower temperature. In the circumstances we may take the mean of the results for the higher and lower temperatures, say 13 per 100 inches of mercury, or  $0.039$  per atm. Hence if  $\delta t$  denotes the force per unit of area in the pressure called "one atm.", we have

$$\frac{\delta t}{\delta p} = \frac{0.039}{\pi} \quad (27)$$

$$\frac{v \frac{dw}{dv}}{\delta p} = \frac{1}{1 - 0.039 \frac{JK}{\pi v}}$$

Hence

$$\frac{dw}{dv} = \frac{dv}{v - 0.039 JK/\pi}$$

which gives by integration

$$w = C(v - 0.039 JK/\pi) \quad (28)$$

The arbitrary const.  $C$  depends on the unit adopted for temperature. Let us be so such that the difference of temperature between freezing and boiling is 100 (which will make our arbitrary scale agree with the ordinary centigrade scale in respect to the difference between these two temperatures). Denote now by  $t_0$  the absolute temperature corresponding to  $0^\circ$  C. The absolute temperature corresponding to  $100^\circ$  C. will be  $t_0 + 100$ . Denote also by  $v_0$  and  $v_{100}$  for the same two temperatures, the bulk of unit mass of hydrogen at any constant pressure within the limits of Joule and Thomson's experiments, say, from one to five or six atmos. Then by dividing the value of each member of (28) by  $t_0$  the difference of its value for  $0^\circ$  and  $100^\circ$ , we find

$$\frac{t_0}{100} = \frac{v_0 - 0.039 JK/\pi}{v_{100} - v_0} \quad (29)$$

Hence

$$t_0 = \frac{100}{K} (1 - 0.039 JK/\pi v_0) \quad (30),$$

<sup>1</sup> *Transactions Royal Society*, June 1855, June 1854, June 1850, and June 1862.

<sup>2</sup> Joule and Thomson, *Transactions Royal Society*, June 1860.

where  $E$  denotes the expansion of hydrogen, pressure constant, from 0° to 100° C in terms of its volume at 0°, that is to say,

$$E = \frac{V_0 - V_{100}}{V_0} \quad (31)$$

Let  $V_0$  denote what the volume would be at 0° C if the pressure were  $H$  instead of the actual pressure  $p$ . We have

$$E = \frac{100}{H} \left( 1 - \frac{p}{H} \right) \frac{0.0367 JK / (H V_0)}{V_0} \quad (32)$$

Regnault finds (*Expériences*, vol 1 p 122) that the value of  $K/H V_0$  for hydrogen agrees within  $\frac{1}{2}$  per cent with its value for common air, and for common air he finds  $K = 288$ . Thus with 126 for the value of  $g$  in metres (§ 9 above) we find  $JK = 100.79$  m.t.u.s. And Regnault's observations on the density of air give for  $H V_0$  (on the height of the homogeneous atmosphere at 0° C) 7900 metres. Hence for common air, and therefore also for hydrogen,  $JK/H V_0 = 0.126$ , and thus (32) becomes

$$E = \frac{100}{H} \left( 1 + \frac{p}{H} \right) \quad (34)$$

with  $c = -0.0049$  for hydrogen. For this gas expanding under constant pressure of one atmosphere Regnault found (*Expériences*, vol 1 p 80)  $E = 36613$ , which gives  $\frac{100}{H} = 273.18$ . Hence (35), with  $p = V_0$ , gives

$$E_0 = 273.00 \quad (31),$$

that is to say —

§ 57 We conclude from Regnault's observations on the expansion of hydrogen from 0° to 100° C under a constant pressure of one atmosphere, and from the small heating effect discovered in Joule and Thomson's experiments on the forcing of hydrogen through a porous plug, that the absolute temperature of melting ice is 273.00°, if the unit or degrees of absolute temperature is so chosen as to make the difference one hundred between the temperatures of melting ice and of water with steam at one atmosphere of pressure.

§ 58 An almost identical number for that most important physical constant, the absolute temperature of melting ice, is obtained from observations on common air, and a not very different number from observations on carbonic acid, the only two gases besides hydrogen for which Regnault (*Expériences*, vol 1 p 90) measured the expansion under constant pressure, and for which Joule and Thomson made their experiment on the thermal effect of passage through a porous plug. For each of these two gases the thermal effect observed was a lowering of temperature, and was found to vary at different temperatures very nearly in the inverse proportion of the square of the temperature  $C$ , by mercury thermometers, with 273 added. Hence nearly enough for use in the small term of the denominator of (26) we have, for air and carbonic acid,

$$\frac{H}{p^2} = A \left( \frac{273}{t} \right)^2 \quad (36)$$

where  $t$  denotes as before absolute temperature, and  $A$  the amount of the cooling effect per atmosphere of difference of pressures, on the two sides of the plug, at the temperature of melting ice. The values of  $A$  found for common air and carbonic acid are 275 and 1388. Regnault (*Expériences*, vol 1 p 126) finds  $JK/H V_0$  greater for carbonic acid than for common air in the ratio of 1.39 to 1 on the average of temperatures from 0° to 210°. But he found also that the specific heat of carbonic acid varies greatly with the temperature, and, taking the mean of the values which he finds for it at 0° and 100°, p 130, as the proper mean for our present purpose, we find for  $JK/H V_0$  a value 1.29 times its value for common air. From these experimental results we find by the mathematical process below (§ 61) still the same approximate formula (33), but with  $c = +0.026$  for common air and  $c = +0.163$  for carbonic acid. At constant pressure of one atmosphere Regnault's measurements gave  $E = 36706$  for common air, and  $E = 3710$  for carbonic acid, and dividing 100 by these decimals we find respectively 272.44 and 269.5. The corrections on these

numbers by formula (33) to give the absolute temperature of freezing are accordingly +70 and +14, and the corresponding estimates for the required absolute temperatures are 273.14 and 273.9. Binging together the results in the three cases, we see them conveniently in the following table —

Name of Gas	Expansion of one atmosphere of forcing through porous plug at 1 atmosphere of pressure according to Joule and Thomson's M	Proportion of cooling effect of forcing through porous plug at 1 atmosphere of pressure according to Joule and Thomson's M	Uncorrected estimate of absolute temperature of melting ice	Correction from cooling effect of forcing through porous plug at 1 atmosphere of pressure according to Joule and Thomson's M	Corrected estimate of absolute temperature of melting ice	Corrected estimate of absolute temperature of melting ice
Hydrogen	36613	-0° 089	273.18	-0° 18	273.00	273.00
Air	36706	+0° 208	272.44	+0° 70	273.14	273.14
Carbonic acid	3710	+1° 355	269.5	+4° 4	273.9	273.9

† Investigated in § 61 below.

The close agreement of the results from hydrogen and common air is very satisfactory, and it is interesting to see it brought about with so large a correction collected from the Joule and Thomson effect. It is also interesting to see the sevenfold larger correction of nearly 5° binging so nearly the same result from the 1 per cent larger expansion of carbonic acid. The  $\frac{1}{2}$  per cent discrepancy which remains between the results from carbonic acid and from hydrogen is not satisfactory, and requires explanation, particularly when we remark that, of five measurements by Regnault (*Expériences*, vol 1 p 84) of the expansion of carbonic acid under constant pressure of one atmosphere, all lie within  $\frac{1}{2}$  per cent of the mean number 3710 which he has given, and we have taken, as his result.

Notwithstanding that the Joule and Thomson correction is so much greater for common air than for hydrogen, the result from common air is probably the most trustworthy of the three, because both Regnault's experiments and Joule and Thomson's were probably more accurate for air than for either of the other two gases. The true result to one place of decimals may therefore be considered as most probably being 273.1°, but the probability that it is nearer 273.1° than 273.0° is scarcely enough to make it worth while to use in any ordinary thermodynamic calculations any other number than 273°, which is exactly that found from hydrogen.

§ 59 The real meaning of our result 273.1° for the absolute temperature of melting ice, expressed without any choice of degrees or units for temperature, is that the ratio of the temperature at which vapour of water has a pressure of one atmosphere to the temperature at which ice melts is 273.1/273.1. Still another way of saying the same thing, this time eliminating all numerical reckoning of temperature, is (see THERMODYNAMICS) as follows —

FOR EVERY HUNDRED UNITS OF HEAT CONVERTED INTO DETERMINED BY A PERFECT THERMODYNAMIC ENGINE, 273.1 PARTS OF THE HEAT TAKEN FROM THE SOURCE, AND 273.1 PARTS OF THE HEAT REJECTED TO THE REFRIGERATOR, IF THE TEMPERATURE OF THE SOURCE BE THAT AT WHICH STEAM OF WATER HAS A PRESSURE OF ONE ATMOSPHERE, AND THE TEMPERATURE OF THE REFRIGERATOR THAT AT WHICH ICE MELTS.

§ 60 Integration of differential equation (36), § 56, between volumes and absolute temperature for a gas, derived from the Joule and Thomson experiment.

Returning to § 56 we may write equation (36) as follows —

$$\frac{dH}{H} = -J \frac{H}{p^2} dp \quad (36)$$

For each of the five gases experimented on, namely, common air, oxygen, nitrogen, carbonic acid, hydrogen, the experiment showed that, for all pressures up to five or six atmospheres,  $H/p^2$  was sensibly independent of the pressure, but that it varied very considerably with the temperature. Hence, if we put  $H/p^2 = \theta/T$ ,  $\theta$ , which will

thus denote the cooling effect per atm. of differential pressure, as a function of the temperature, and is independent of the whole pressure. With this notation ( $\beta\theta$ ) becomes

$$\frac{d\theta}{dt} = -\frac{1}{\theta} \frac{K}{\pi} \frac{1}{t}$$

This is a linear equation in  $\theta$ , with a second member, if for a moment we put  $-\log \theta$ . Integrating it, and replacing  $\theta$ , we find, as the complete integral,

$$\theta = t \left\{ \frac{v_0}{t_0} + \frac{1}{\pi} \int_{t_0}^t \frac{\beta\theta}{t} dt \right\} \quad (37)$$

§ 61 Expansion of the Joule and Thomson experiments, constant, calculated from the Joule and Thomson experiments. We have from equation (37)

$$\frac{v - t_0}{t_0} = \frac{t - t_0}{t_0} \left\{ 1 + \frac{1}{\pi} \frac{t_0}{t} \int_{t_0}^t \frac{\beta\theta}{t} dt \right\} \quad (38)$$

For each of the gases experimented on, except hydrogen,  $\theta$  was found to vary nearly in the inverse ratio of  $t$ . Putting then  $\theta = A/(t_0 t)$ , we find

$$t_0 \int_{t_0}^t \frac{\beta\theta}{t} dt = A \left[ 1 - \left( \frac{t_0}{t} \right)^2 \right]$$

Hence, for those gases at pressures from 0 to 5 or 6 atmos, (38) becomes

$$\frac{v - t_0}{t_0} = \frac{t - t_0}{t_0} \left\{ 1 + \frac{1}{\pi} \frac{A}{t_0} \left[ 1 + \frac{t_0}{t} + \left( \frac{t_0}{t} \right)^2 \right] \right\} \quad (39)$$

This shows, that the "proper mean cooling effect" ( $\beta$ ) in the table of § 55) is

$$\begin{aligned} \beta &= \left[ 1 + \frac{t_0}{100 + t_0} + \left( \frac{t_0}{100 + t_0} \right)^2 \right] A, \\ &= \left( 1 + \frac{1}{3664} + \frac{1}{14664} \right) A = 766 A, \\ &= \left( 1 + \frac{1}{14664} \right) A = 769 A, \end{aligned}$$

the arithmetic mean of the cooling effects at 0° and 100° C, that is we had simply taken the arithmetic mean for each of the other gases, as for want of knowing better we took it for hydrogen, the difference in the result would have been barely perceptible.

§ 62 Modifying (39) or (38) to suit any two temperatures,  $t, t'$ , we have

$$\frac{v - v'}{v} = \frac{t - t'}{t} \left( 1 + \frac{JK}{\pi v} \right) \quad (40),$$

$m$  denoting the proper mean cooling effect per atm. in the Joule and Thomson experiment (to be reckoned as negative in the case of hydrogen or any other gas, if there is any other, in which the experiment shows a heating effect). This "proper mean" may be taken as the arithmetic mean of the values for  $t$  and  $t'$ , unless  $t - t'$  considerably exceeds 100.

To reduce (40) to numbers, let  $V_0$  be the volume of unit mass of the gas when at the temperature of melting ice, and under one atm. of pressure. Regnault (vol. i. p. 308) finds that the value of  $K/V_0$  is within 1 per cent the same for oxygen, nitrogen, and hydrogen as for common air. He also (vol. ii. pp. 234-236) finds  $K$  to be the same for common air at from 1 to 12 atmos, for hydrogen, 1 to 6, for carbonic acid, 1 to 37.

No doubt similar constancy would be found for oxygen and nitrogen. Hence, as above (§ 56), for common air we still have  $JK/mV_0 = 0.126$ , and thus (40) becomes

$$\frac{v - v'}{v} = \frac{t - t'}{t} \left( 1 + \frac{V_0}{v} 0.126m \right) \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{for common air,} \\ \text{oxygen,} \\ \text{hydrogen, and} \\ \text{nitrogen} \end{array} \right\} \quad (41)$$

If in this formula we take  $t$  and  $t'$  for the temperatures of 100° C and 0° C,  $(v - v')$  becomes  $\frac{V_0}{v} \frac{1}{t}$  at 3662, and we therefore find

$$E = 3662 \left( 1 + \frac{V_0}{v} 0.126m \right) \quad (42),$$

which agrees with (33) above.

§ 63 The values given by Joule and Thomson's experiment for  $m$  are  $-0.039^\circ$  for hydrogen,  $+0.208^\circ$  for air,  $+0.253^\circ$  for oxygen, and  $+0.249^\circ$  for nitrogen.

From these and from the previous results for carbonic acid (§ 55) we have the following table for calculating the expansions from 0° C to 100° of the gases named:—

Name of Gas	Expansion with constant pressure, (mE)
Hydrogen	3662 (1 - 0.0049 $\frac{V_0}{v_0}$ )
Common air	3662 (1 + 0.0035 $\frac{V_0}{v_0}$ )
Oxygen	3662 (1 + 0.0082 $\frac{V_0}{v_0}$ )
Nitrogen	3662 (1 + 0.0081 $\frac{V_0}{v_0}$ )
Carbonic acid	3662 (1 + 0.0183 $\frac{V_0}{v_0}$ )

These formulæ must be exceedingly near the truth for all pressures from 0 to 6 atmos, because within this range the thermal effects in the Joule and Thomson experiment were very approximately in simple proportion to the differences of pressure on the two sides of the plug. The following table of results calculated from (43) for several pressures of from 0 to 6 atmos is interesting as showing such different expansions for the different cases, determined by thermodynamic theory from Regnault's measurements of specific heats and Joule and Thomson's of their particular thermal effect, with absolutely no direct measurement of expansion except the one for common air at one atm. shown as the third entry of column 5 in the table. The other five entries of column 5 show a fair amount of agreement between our theoretical results and the only direct measurements by Regnault. More of direct measurement, to allow a more extensive comparison, is very desirable.

Name of Gas	Ratio of Bulk at 0° to Bulk supposing Pressure was 1 atm at the same temperature	Ratio of Density at 0° to Density supposing Pressure was 1 atm at the same temperature	Expansion, pressure constant from 0 to 100° C	
			According to theory	According to direct experiments by Regnault
Hydrogen	$\frac{V_0}{V_0}$	0	3662	
	$\frac{1}{3}$	1	3660	3661.3
	$\frac{1}{3}$ 35	3	3657	
	$\frac{1}{3}$ 35	3 35	3650	3661.0
Common Air	$\frac{V_0}{V_0}$	0	3662	
	$\frac{1}{3}$	1	3673	3670.6
	$\frac{1}{3}$ 38	3	3691	
	$\frac{1}{3}$ 38	3 38	3694	3695.1
Oxygen	$\frac{V_0}{V_0}$	0	3662	
	$\frac{1}{3}$	1	3674	
	$\frac{1}{3}$ 3	3	3697	
	$\frac{1}{3}$ 3	3	3719	
Nitrogen	$\frac{V_0}{V_0}$	0	3662	
	$\frac{1}{3}$	1	3673	
	$\frac{1}{3}$ 3	3	3696	
	$\frac{1}{3}$ 3	3	3710	
Carbonic Acid	$\frac{V_0}{V_0}$	0	3662	
	$\frac{1}{3}$	1	3721	3709.9
	$\frac{1}{3}$ 316	3 316	3650	3845.5
	$\frac{1}{3}$ 316	3	4016	

§ 64 We are now quite prepared to make a practical working thermometer directly adapted to show temperature on the absolute thermodynamic scale through the whole range of temperature, from the lowest attainable by any means to the highest, for which glass remains solid. It is to be remarked that our investigation of § 51, and all the deduced formulæ and relative calculations, are absolutely independent of the approximate fulfilment of Boyle's law by the gases to which we have applied them, and are equally applicable without any approach to fulfilment of Boyle's law, also that the only experimental data on which are founded our special numerical conclusions of §§ 59 to 63 are Regnault's measurements of specific heats under constant pressure, and Joule and Thomson's measurements of the thermal effect of forcing through a porous plug. From these experimental data alone we see by formula (38) of § 61 how to graduate a constant pressure gas thermometer so that it shall show temperature on the absolute thermodynamic scale. Hence, notwithstanding the difficulty (§ 24 above) which Regnault found in the thermometric use of air or other gases on the system of constant pressure, and his practical preference for the constant-volume

air thermometers, it becomes of the highest importance to construct a practical constant-pressure gas thermometer. This we believe may be done by avoiding the objectionable expedient adopted by Pouillet and Regnault of allowing a portion (when high temperatures are to be measured the greater portion) of the whole gas to be pressed into a cool volumetric chamber out of the thermometric chamber proper by the expansion of the portion which remains in, and instead fulfilling the condition, stated, but pronounced practically impossible, by Regnault (*Expériences*, vol. 1 pp 168, 169), that the thermometric gas "shall, like the mercury of a mercury thermometer, be allowed to expand

freely at constant pressure in a calibrated reservoir maintained throughout at one temperature." We have accordingly designed a constant pressure gas thermometer to fulfil this condition. It is represented in the accompanying drawing (Fig 10), and described in the following section.

§ 65 The vessel containing the thermometric fluid, which in this case is to be either hydrogen or nitrogen,<sup>1</sup> consists in the main of a glass bulb and tube placed vertically with bulb up and mouth down, but there is to be a secondary tube of much finer bore opening into the bulb or into the main tube near its top, as may be found most convenient in any particular case. The main tube which, to distinguish it from the secondary tube, will be called the volumetric tube, is to be of large bore, not less than 2 or 3 centimetres, and is to be ground internally to a truly cylindrical form. To allow this to be done it must be made of thick well-annealed glass like that of the French glass-barcelled air pumps. The secondary tube, which will be called the manometric capillary, is to be of round bore, not very fine, say from half a millimetre to a millimetre diameter. Its lower end is to be connected with a mercury manometer to show if the pressure of the thermometric air is either greater or less than the definite pressure to which it is to be brought every time a thermometric measurement is made by the instrument. The change of volume required to do this for every change of temperature is made and

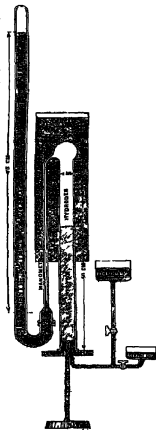


FIG 10.—Constant Pressure Hydrogen Thermometer

<sup>1</sup> Common air is inadmissible because even at ordinary temperatures its oxygen attacks mercury. The film of oxide thus formed would be very movement at the surface of the mercury caulked, round the base of the piston, and on the inner surface of the glass tube, to which it would adhere. Besides some or other the whole quantity of oxygen in the air must be diminished to a sensible degree by the loss of the part of it which combines with the mercury. So far as we know, Regnault did not complain of this evil in his use of common air in his normal air thermometer (see § 24, 25 above), nor in his experiments on the expansion of an *Oxygen* sensor, vol. 1, p. 77. Another reason for the avoidance of air or other gas containing free oxygen is to save the oil or other liquid which is interposed between the air and the mercury of the manometer from being thickened or otherwise altered by oxidation.

measured by means of a micrometer screw<sup>2</sup> lifting or lowering a long solid glass piston, fitting easily in the glass tube, and caulked air-tight by mercury between its lower end and an iron sole-plate by which the mouth of the volumetric tube is closed. To perform this mercury caulking, when the piston is raised and lowered, mercury is allowed to flow in and out through a hole in the iron sole plate by a union pipe, connected with two mercury cisterns at two different levels by branches each provided with a stopcock. When the piston is being raised the stopcock of the branch leading to the lower cistern is closed, and the other is opened enough to allow the mercury to flow up after the piston and press gently on its lower side, without entering more than infinitesimally into the space between it and the surrounding glass tube (the condition of the upper bounding surface of the mercury in this respect being easily seen by the observer looking at it through the glass tube). When the piston is being lowered the stopcock in the branch leading from the upper cistern is closed, and the one in the branch leading to the lower cistern is opened enough to let the mercury go down before the piston, instead of being forced to any sensible distance into the space between it and the surrounding tube, but not enough to allow it to part company with the lower surface of the piston. The manometer is simply a mercury barometer of the form commonly called a siphon barometer, with its lower end not open to the air but connected to the lower end of the manometric capillary. This connexion is made below the level of the mercury in the following manner: The lower end of the capillary widens into a small glass bell or screw tube of glass of about 2 centimetres bore and 2 centimetres depth, with its lip ground flat like the receiver of an air-pump. The lip or upper edge of the open cistern of the barometer (that is to say, the cistern which would be open to the atmosphere were it used as an ordinary barometer) is also ground flat, and the two lips are pressed together with a greased leather washer between them to obviate risk of breaking the glass, and to facilitate the making of the joint mercury tight. To keep this joint perennially good, and to make quite sure that no air shall ever leak in, in case of the interior pressure being at any time less than the external barometric pressure or being extended to be so always, it is preserved and caulked by an external mercury-jacket not shown in the drawing. The mercury in the thus constituted lower reservoir of the manometer is above the level of the leather joint, and the space in the upper part of the reservoir over the surface of the mercury, up to a little distance into the capillary above, is occupied by a fixed oil or some other practically vapourless liquid. This oil or other liquid is introduced for the purpose of guarding against error in the reckoning of the whole bulk of the thermometric gas, on account of slight irregular changes in the capillary depression of the border of the mercury surface in the reservoir.

§ 66 In the most accurate use of the instrument, the glass and mercury and oil of the manometer are all kept at one definite temperature according to some convenient and

<sup>2</sup> This screw is to be so well fitted in the iron sole plate as to be sufficiently mercury-tight without the aid of any soft material, under any error at all into the thermometric result, because the constant pressure chosen for the thermometric gas is not more than a few centimetres above the external atmospheric pressure. When the same plan of apparatus is used for investigation of the expansion of gases, under high pressures, a greased leather washer may be used on the upper side of the sole in the screw-hole plate, to prevent mercury from seeping round the screw. It is to be remarked that in no case will a little oozing out of the mercury round the screw valve if it is being turned introduce any error at all into the thermometric result, because the constancy of the measurement of the volume of the gas depends simply on the mercury being brought up into contact with the bottom of the piston, and not more than just perceptibly up between the piston and volumetric tube surrounding it.

perfectly trustworthy intrinsic thermoscope (§§ 15 and 16 above), by means of thermal appliances not represented in the drawing but easily imagined. This condition being fulfilled, the one desired pressure of the thermometric gas is attained with exceedingly minute accuracy by working the micrometer screw up or down until the oil is brought precisely to a mark upon the manometric capillary.

In fact, if the glass and mercury and oil are all kept rigorously at one constant temperature, the only access for error is through irregular variations in the capillary depressions in the borders of the mercury surfaces. With so large a diameter as the 2 centimetres chosen in the figured dimensions of the drawing, the error from this cause can hardly amount to  $\frac{1}{100}$  per cent of the whole pressure, supposing this to be one atmo or thereabouts.

No ordinary uses of our constant-pressure gas thermometer, where the most minute accuracy is not needed, the rule will still be to bring the oil to a fixed mark on the manometric capillary, and no precaution in respect to temperature will be necessary except to secure that it is approximately uniform throughout the mercury and containing glass, from lower to higher level of the mercury. The quantity of oil is so small that, whatever its temperature may be, the bulging of its free surface to a fixed mark on the capillary secures that the mercury surface below the oil in the lower reservoir is very nearly at one constant point relatively to the glass, much more nearly so than it could be made by direct observation of the mercury surface, at all events without optical magnifying power. Now if the mercury surface be at a constant point of the glass, it is easily proved that the difference of pressures between the two mercury surfaces will be constant, notwithstanding considerable variations of the common temperature of the mercury and glass, provided a certain easy condition is fulfilled, through which the effect of the expansion of the glass is compensated by the expansion of the mercury. This condition is that the whole volume of the mercury shall bear to the volume in the cylindrical vertical tube from the upper surface to the level of the lower surface the ratio  $(\lambda - \epsilon\gamma)/(\lambda - \epsilon)$ , where  $\lambda$  denotes the cubic expansion of the mercury, and  $\epsilon$  the cubic expansion of the solid for the same elevation of temperature, it being supposed for simplicity of statement that the tube is truly cylindrical from the upper surface to the level of the lower surface, and that the sectional area of the tube is the same at the two mercury surfaces. The cubic expansion of mercury is approximately seven times the cubic expansion of glass. Hence

$$(\lambda - \epsilon\gamma)/(\lambda - \epsilon) = (7 - 1)/6 = 1.111$$

Hence the whole volume of the mercury is to be about 1.111 times the volume from its upper surface to the level of the lower surface, that is to say, the volume from the lower surface in the bend to the same level in the vertical branch is to be  $\frac{1}{6}$  of the volume in the vertical tube above this surface. A special experiment on each tube is easily made to find the quantity of mercury that must be put in to cause the pressure to be absolutely constant when the surface in the lower reservoir is kept at a fixed point relatively to the glass, and when the temperature is varied through such moderate differences of temperature as are to be found in the use of the instrument at different times and seasons.

A sheet-iron can containing water or oil or fusible metal, with external thermal appliances of gas or charcoal furnace, or low-pressure or high-pressure steam heater, and with proper internal stirrer or stirrers, is fitted round the bulb and manometric tube to produce uniformly throughout the mass of the thermometric gas the temperature to be measured. This part of the apparatus, which will be called for brevity the heater, must not extend so far down the manometric tube that when raised to its highest tempera-

ture it can warm the caulking mercury to as high a temperature as 40° C, because at somewhat higher temperature than this the pressure of vapour of mercury begins to be perceptible (see Table V below), and would vitiate the thermometric use of the pure hydrogen or nitrogen of our thermometer. To secure sufficient coolness of the mercury it will probably be advisable to have an open glass jacket of cold water (not shown in the drawing) round the volumetric tube, 2 or 3 centimetres below the bottom of the heater, and reaching to about half a centimetre above the highest portion of the bottom of the piston.

§ 67 It seems probable that the constant-pressure hydrogen or nitrogen gas thermometer which we have now described may give even more accurate thermometry than Regnault's constant volume air thermometers (§ 24 above), and it seems certain that it will be much more easily used in practice.

We have only to remark here further that, if Boyle's Law were rigorously fulfilled, thermometry by the two methods would be identical, provided the scale in each case be graduated or calculated so as to make the numerical reckoning of the temperature agree at two points,—for example, 0° C and 100° C. The very close agreement which Regnault found among his different gas thermometers and his air thermometers with air of different densities (§ 25 above), and the close approach to rigorous fulfilment of Boyle's law which his and other experimenters have ascertained to be presented by air and other gases used in his thermometers, through the ranges of density, pressure, and temperature at which they were used in these thermometers, renders it certain that in reality the difference between Regnault's normal air thermometry and thermometry by our hydrogen gas constant-pressure thermometer must be exceedingly small. It is therefore satisfactory to know that for all practical purposes absolute temperature is to be obtained with very great accuracy from Regnault's thermometric system by simply adding 273 to his numbers for temperature on the centigrade scale. It is probable that at the temperatures of 250° or 300° C (or 523 or 573 absolute) the greatest deviation of temperature thus reckoned from correct absolute temperature is not more than half a degree.

§ 68 The thermometric scale being now thoroughly established in theory and practice (§§ 33–69 and §§ 18–30), we are prepared to define, without any ambiguity, the expressions thermal capacity and specific heat with reference to matter at any temperature and in any physical condition.

*Definition 1*—The thermal capacity of a body (whether it be a portion of matter homogeneous throughout or of heterogeneous substance in two different conditions as liquid and steam, or solid and vapour of solid, or a piece of apparatus consisting of different parts as glass and metals, and containing as the case may be liquids or gases,—subject only to the condition that the whole matter considered is at one temperature) is the quantity of heat required to raise its temperature by one degree on the absolute thermodynamic scale.

*Definition 2*—The specific heat of a substance is the thermal capacity of a stated quantity of it. This stated quantity is generally understood to be the unit of mass, unless some other definite quantity is explicitly designated, as for instance the quantity of the substance which occupies unit of volume at some definite pressure and temperature, for instance, one atmo unit temperature 273 absolute. It is of no consequence what unit of mass is chosen provided it be the same as that which is used in defining the thermal unit, but, unless the contrary be explicitly stated, we always understand one gramme as the unit of mass and the thermal unit as the quantity of heat

required to raise one gramme of water from 273 to 274 (compare § 6 above)

§ 69 There is scarcely any subject upon which more skilled labour in scientific laboratories, chemical and physical, has been spent than the measurement of specific heats, whether of solids, liquids, or gases. An ample and well-annotated table of results is to be found in *Clarke's Constants of Nature*, a compilation of numerical results of scientific experiments made in all parts of the world by various observers and experimenters, a most valuable aid to scientific knowledge given to the world as No 295 of the *Smithsonian Miscellaneous Collection*. It is most interesting as showing how very differently different substances behave in respect to constancy or variation of specific heat with temperature. Thus it shows that, according to the results of all the experimenters, the specific heats of all the substances experimented on, whether simple or compound, are very nearly constant at all events for ranges between  $-10^{\circ}$  and  $200^{\circ}$  or  $300^{\circ}$  C, except the three elementary substances, boron, carbon, silicon. The specific heats of these three have been found by F. Weber to vary greatly with temperature. Thus for diamond he finds the specific heat to be 1 at  $0^{\circ}$  C and 27 at  $200^{\circ}$  C, or nearly threshold of the amount at  $0^{\circ}$ , at  $-50^{\circ}$  C the specific heat is .063, and at  $+985^{\circ}$  it is .459 or about seven and a half times the specific heat at  $-50^{\circ}$  (a curious practical commentary, we may remark in passing, on the doctrine of the calorists on specific heat referred to in § 8 above). The specific heats of carbon in its other forms of graphite and charcoal through wide ranges of temperature according to the same observer, F. Weber, are particularly interesting and significant. The approximate equality of the product of specific heat into the atomic weight for the simple metals is interesting and important, no less so is the want of constancy and uniformity in the corresponding product for other substances, whether simple or compound. If we were to define a metal as a substance for which through the range of temperature from  $0^{\circ}$  to  $250^{\circ}$  C the product of the specific heat into the atomic weight is not less than 5.86 and not greater than 6.93, we should include every substance commonly called a metal, and no substance not commonly called a metal, except phosphorus, and solid sulphur lately fused.

Some important results of Regnault's regarding the specific heats of gases at constant pressure have been already quoted in § 56, 56, and 62 above. Further information from experiments aided by thermodynamic theory, regarding specific heats of gases and vapours under constant pressure and of gases in constant volume, will be found under the heading THERMODYNAMICS. To this also, and to the articles MATTER (PROPERTIES OF), LIQUID, and STEAM, the reader is referred for information respecting latent heats of liquefaction of solids and of evaporation of solids and liquids, also respecting the thermal capacity of a portion of homogeneous substance in two different states, such as the water-liquid and water-steam of an ordinary cyphorus or philosopher's hammer, or of the sulphurous and liquid and steam of a sulphurous acid steam thermometer (§ 43 above).

#### TRANSFER OF HEAT

§ 70 When two contiguous portions of matter are at different temperatures, heat is transferred from the warmer to the colder. This process is called conduction of heat.

When two bodies at different temperatures are separated by a transparent medium, such as air, or water, or glass, or ice, heat passes from the warmer to the colder irrespectively of the temperature of the intervening medium, except in so far as its transparency may in some slight degree be affected by the temperature. Thus the colder of the two bodies be-

comes actually heated above the temperature of the intervening medium if the warmer be kept above this temperature, and if heat is not otherwise drawn off from the colder body <sup>radiant</sup> in greater quantity than the heat entering it from the warmer <sup>identical</sup>. This process of transference from one body to another body at a distance through an intervening medium is called radiation of heat. The condition of the intervening matter in virtue of which heat is thus transferred is called light, and radiant heat is light if we could but see it with the eye, and not merely discern it with the mind, as we do, that it is perfectly continuous in quality with the species of radiant heat which we see with the material eye through its affecting the retina with the sense of light. Thus a white hot point in a room perfectly darkened from all other lights is seen as a brilliant white light gradually becoming reddish and less bright, until it absolutely fades from vision in a dull red glow. Long after it has ceased to be visible to the eye, the fact that heat is being transferred from it to colder bodies all round it, or above it or below it, is proved by our sense of heat in a hand or face held near it on any side or above it or below it. By considering the whole phenomenon of the white hot mass, without much of experimental investigation, we judge that there is perfect continuity through the whole process, in the first part of which the radiant heat is visible and in the second part invisible to the human eye and thorough experimental investigation confirms this conclusion. Thus radiant heat is brought under the undulatory theory of light, which in its turn becomes annexed to heat as a magnificent outlying province of the kinetic theory of heat.

§ 71 In this article we confine ourselves to a practical evaluation of rate of gain or loss of heat across the surface of an isolated solid surface in a medium such as air, and enclosed in a solid surface all at one temperature, which is approximately the case with the sun and the floor walls and ceiling of an ordinary room. A rough approximation to the law of this action, founded on supposing the rate of motion to be in simple proportion to the excess of the temperature of the isolated solid above the temperature of the surrounding medium and enclosure was used by Fourier in those of his solutions in which surface emissivity or, as he called it, "Conductibilité extérieure," is concerned. Without adopting any hypothesis, we define thermal emissivity as the quantity of heat per unit of time, per unit of surface, per degree of excess of temperature, which the isolated body loses in virtue of the combined effect of radiation and convection by currents of air. This definition does not involve the hypothesis of simple proportionality, and the surface emissivity is simply to be determined by experiment for any given temperature of the enclosure, and any given temperature of the isolated body. Dulong and Petit made elaborate experiments on this subject, but did not give any results in absolute measure.

So far as we know the first thoroughly trustworthy experiments giving emissivities in absolute measure were made in the laboratory of the natural philosophy class in the University of Glasgow by Mr D. Macfarlane in a series of experiments on the cooling of a copper ball. The results are given in Table VII. The ball experimented on was 4 centimetres in diameter, and was suspended in the interior of a double-walled tin-plate vessel. The space between the double walls of this vessel was filled with water at the temperature of the air, and the interior surface was coated with lampblack. Two thermo-electric junctions, one at the centre of the ball the other in contact with the exterior surface of the enclosure, in circuit with a sensitive mirror galvanometer, served to measure the difference of temperatures between the centre of the ball and the exterior surface of the enclosure. By this arrangement the exterior junction was kept very uniformly at a tempera-



ture of  $14^{\circ}\text{C}$ , while the other had the varying temperature of the centre of the ball. Two sets of experiments were made. In one the ball had a highly surface, in the other it was coated with soot from the flame of a lamp, and in both the air was kept moist by a saucer of water placed in the interior of the tinplate enclosure. The results are given in terms of the number of units of heat lost per second, per square centimetre of surface of the copper, per degree of difference between the temperatures of the two junctions.

§ 72 Returning to the conduction of heat, we have first to say that the theory of it was discovered by Fourier and given to the world through the French Academy in his *Théorie Analytique de la Chaleur*,<sup>1</sup> with solutions of problems naturally arising from it, of which it is difficult to say whether their uniquely original quality, or their transcendently intense mathematical interest, or their personally important inutility for physical science, is most to be praised. Here we can but give the very slightest sketch of the elementary law of conduction in an isotropic substance, the mathematical expression for it in terms of orthogonal planes or curved coordinates, and a few of the elementary solutions in Fourier's theory.

§ 73 Consider a slab of homogeneous solid bounded by two parallel planes. Let the substance be kept at two different temperatures over these parallel planes by suitable sources of heat and cold. For example, let one side be kept cold by a stream of cold water, or by a large quantity of ice and water in contact with it, and the other kept warm by a large quantity of warm water or by steam blown against it. Whatever particular plans of heater and refrigerator be adopted, care must be taken that the temperature be kept uniform over the whole, or over a sufficiently large area of each side of the slab, to render the isothermal surfaces sensibly parallel planes through the whole of the slab intercepted between the two calorimetric areas, and that the temperature at each side is prevented from varying with time. It will be found that heat must continually be applied at one side and removed from the other, to keep the circumstances in the constant condition thus defined. When this constant condition of surface temperature is maintained long enough, the temperature at every point of the slab settles towards a constant limiting value, and when this limiting value has been sensibly reached by every point of the slab, the temperature throughout remains sensibly constant so long as the surface temperatures are kept constant. In this condition of affairs the temperature varies continuously from one side of the slab to the other, and it is constant throughout each interior plane parallel to the sides, in other words, the isothermal surfaces are parallel planes. Let  $V$  and  $V'$  be the temperatures in two of these isothermals and  $\alpha$  the distance between them. The quotient  $\frac{V-V'}{\alpha}$  is the average rate of variation of temperature per unit of length between these two isothermals.

Let  $Q$  be the quantity of heat taken in per unit of time at a certain area  $A$  on one side, and emitted at the corresponding area of the other side of the slab, measured by proper calorimetric appliances to these areas, which we shall call the calorimetric areas of the apparatus. It will generally be found that the value of the quotient  $(V-V')/\alpha$  is not the same for consecutive isothermal surfaces. For metals it is ascertained by experiment that it increases continuously from the cold side to the hot side of the slab. In other words, as we shall see presently, the thermal conductivity of the substance is not generally the same at different temperatures, and for metals it is smaller the higher the temperature.

<sup>1</sup> A translation into English by Freeman has been recently published, in vol. 8vo, by the Cambridge University Press, 1879.

§ 74 Circumstances being as described in § 73, the thermal conductivity of the substance between the isothermals  $v$  and  $v'$  is the value of

$$\frac{Q\alpha}{A(v-v')} \quad (1)$$

It must be remembered that the temperatures  $v, v'$  used in this definition are temperatures of the substance itself. Some experiments have given largely erroneous results through assuming that the temperatures of the two sides of the slab were equal to those of the calorimetric fluids, such as warm water or steam on one side, and ice or cold water, with its temperature measured by a thermometer, on the other side. To obtain correct results, the actual temperatures at two points in the conducting body itself must be ascertained by aid of suitable thermometers, or thermo meters and differential thermoscopes, applied in such a way as not sensibly to disturb the isothermal surfaces. Thus, so far as we know, has not been done by any experiments hitherto in attempting to measure thermal conductivity directly by the method indicated in the definition, and therefore if any results obtained by this method hitherto are trustworthy, it is only in a few cases,—cases in which, unless the substance experimented upon has been of such small conducting power, and the stirring of the calorimetric fluids on its two sides so energetic, that we can feel sure that the observed or assumed temperatures of these fluids, or of the portions of them of which the temperatures have been measured by thermometers, have not differed sensibly from the temperatures of the slab at its surfaces in contact with them.

§ 75 What utter confusion has permeated scientific literature, from experiments on thermal conductivity vitiated through non-fulfilment of this condition, is illustrated by results quoted in Everett's *Units and Physical Constants* (London, 1879), among which we find 19 for the conductivity of copper according to Péclet, and 1.1 according to Ångström (which we now know to be correct). When we look to Péclet's and Ångström's own papers the confusion becomes aggravated. Péclet, in his *Mémoire sur la détermination des coefficients de conductibilité des métaux par la chaleur*,<sup>2</sup> quotes old experiments of Clément, and others more recent of Thomas and Laurent, regarding which he gives certain details. Taking his information no doubt from Péclet's paper, Ångström gives a statement<sup>3</sup> for the conductivity of copper, according to experimenters who had preceded him, which, with the decimal point shifted two places to the left to reduce to C G S, is as follows—

Clément	00281
Thomas and Laurent,	0122
Péclet,	178

But Ångström did not notice that Péclet had stated the thickness of the plate experimented on by Clément to be between 2 and 3 millimetres. Péclet himself in his next sentence seems to have forgotten this when he compares the figure 23 which he had calculated from Clément's results, without taking account of the thickness of the plate, with 1.22 which he calculates from Thomas and Laurent's experiments on copper, without stating any thickness for the tube of copper on which (instead of a flat plate) they had experimented. Thus we have no data for finding what their results really were in either Péclet's or Ångström's paper, but Péclet seems to show enough regarding it to let us now feel perfectly sure that it is only a question of

<sup>2</sup> *Annales de Chimie et de Physique*, Paris, 1841.

<sup>3</sup> In Ångström's own statement the quantity of heat is that required to raise 1000 grammes of water  $1^{\circ}$ . The conduction is reckoned per square metre of the copper plate per second of time, and the unit chosen for the rate of variation of temperature across the plate is  $1^{\circ}$  per millimetre. To reduce his numbers to the C G S system we must therefore multiply by  $10^3 \times 10^{-4} \times 10^{-1} = 10^{-2}$ .

whether it is tens or hundreds of times too small. Omitting it then from the preceding statement, completing the correction by multiplying the 0023 by 21 (assuming the thickness of the plate to be 2 $\frac{1}{2}$  millimetres, as Polet says it was between 2 and 3) to give Clément's result, and appending Ångström's result, which we now know to be correct, we have the following statement for thermal conductivity of copper in C G S units —

0057,	according to Clément
178,	" " Polet
11,	" " Ångström

§ 76 The comparison of these results is highly instructive. Clément's result is two hundred times too small, and Polet's five times too small. Clément experimented by exposing one side of a plate of copper of a square metric surface and about two and a half millimetres thick to steam at 100° C, and the other side to water at 28° C. It was assumed that the difference of temperatures between the two sides was 72°. The difference really was about 36 of a degree, as we know from the quantity of heat actually conducted through it in Clément's experiment, indicated by the amount of steam which he found to be condensed into water.

In fact, the amount of steam condensed did not differ sensibly from what it would have been if the copper plate had been infinitely thin, or its substance of infinite thermal conductivity. It is important in engineering, and in many of the arts and manufactures involving thermal processes, and particularly in that one of them of great everyday value to the human race than all the others put together, cookery, to know that for copper or iron boilers, or steampipes, or pots or frying-pans, the transmission of heat from radiant burning coal or charcoal, or red or white hot fireclay or other solids, and from hot air in contact with them, on one side, to hot water or steam or oil or melted fat on the other side, or hot liquid or steam on one side and cool air on the other side, is, for practical purposes, sensibly the same as if the thermal conductivity of the metal were infinite, or its resistance to the transmission of heat nothing. The explanation is obvious to us now with the definite and sure knowledge regarding thermal conductivities of different substances and of matter in different conditions, solid, liquid, and gaseous, gained within the last twenty years. Ångström, Forbes, F. Neumann, and Tait have given, each one of them with thoroughly sufficient experimental evidence to leave no room to doubt the substantial accuracy of his results, absolute values for the thermal conductivities of copper and iron. Clausius and Maxwell have given us thermal conductivities of air and other gases, from their splendid development of the kinetic theory, which are undoubtedly trustworthy as somewhat close approximations to the true values, and which is as quite possible are more accurate than we can hope to see obtained from direct measurements of the conduction of heat through gases. J. T. Bottomley has given a trustworthy and somewhat closely accurate direct measurement of the thermal conductivity of water. From the results of these experimenters' work, reduced to uniform C G S reckoning in our table of thermal conductivities (Table VIII.), we see that the thermal conductivity of iron is 80 times, and that of copper 500 times that of water. The thermal conductivity of iron is 3500 times, and that of copper is 30,000 times that of air. Hence, although the water or air at the very interface of its contact with the metal is essentially at the same temperature as the metal, there must be great differences of temperature in very thin layers of the fluid close to the interface when there is large flux of heat through the metal, and the temperature of the fluid as measured by any practicable thermometer, or

inferred from knowledge of the average temperature of the whole fluid, or from the temperatures of entering and leaving currents of fluid, may differ by some degrees from the actual temperature of the solid at the interface. It is remarkable that Polet, while perceiving that Clément's result was largely erroneous on this account, and improving the mode of experimenting by introducing a rotating mechanical stirrer to change very rapidly the fluid in contact with the solid, only multiplied Clément's conductivity by 30 instead of by 200, which would have been necessary to annul the error. Notwithstanding his failure to obtain accurate results for metals we have ventured to include his results for wood, and solids of lower conductivity than wood, in our table, because we perceive that he was alive to the necessity for very energetic stirring of the liquid, and the mechanical means which he adopted for it, though utterly insufficient for the case of even the least conductive of the metals, were probably not so for wood and solids of lower conductivity than wood, and because it is not probable that the complication of heat generated by the stirring (which Ångström suggests as an objection to Polet's method) was in any case sufficient to produce a sensible influence upon the experimental results.

§ 77 The first correct determinations of thermal conductivities were given by Forbes in his paper on the temperature of the earth, in the *Transactions of the Royal Society of Edinburgh* for 1846, or calculated from his observations of underground temperature at three localities in the neighbourhood of Edinburgh—the trap rock of Calton Hill, the sand of the Experimental Garden, and the sand stone of Chisleigh Quarry—by an imperfect approximate method indicated by Poisson. A more complete analytical treatment of the observational results, analysed harmonically and interpreted by application of Fourier's formula (equation (19) of Math App.) to each term separately by W. Thomson, gave results (quoted in Table VIII. below) for the conductivities, which differed but little from Forbes's approximate determinations.

§ 78 It has always seemed to us that the best mode of experimenting on the conductivity of metals must, without doubt, be by an artificial imbedding in a metallic bar, of the natural periodic variations of underground temperature, produced by periodically varied thermal appliances at one end of the bar. The effect of loss or gain of heat through the sides (or lateral surface) of the bar (ideally annulled by a coating of ideal varnish impermeable to heat) may be practically annulled by making the period of the variation the small enough.

Let  $k$  be the thermal conductivity of the substance and  $c$  its thermal capacity per unit bulk. Let  $\theta$  be the emissivity (§ 71) of its surface. Let the bar be circular cylinder, and  $r$  the radius of its cross section. At time  $t$ , let  $\theta$  be the mean temperature in a cross section at distance  $x$  from the end, and  $\theta'$  the surface temperature at the distal boundary of this section,—all temperatures being reckoned as differences from the temperature of the surrounding medium, called zero temporarily in brevity. The heat lost from the circumference of the bar between the cross sections  $x - \frac{1}{2}dx$  and  $x + \frac{1}{2}dx$  in time  $dt$  is  $\pi r^2 \frac{d\theta}{dx} dx$ , and the heat conducted lengthwise, across the cross section  $\pi x$ , in the same time, is  $\pi r^2 \frac{d\theta}{dt} dx$ . Hence we readily find (see Math App below) as the equation of conduction of heat along the bar, very approximately if  $\theta'$  differs very little from  $\theta$  (that is to say, if the temperature is very nearly uniform throughout each cross section),

$$c \frac{d\theta}{dt} = k \frac{d^2\theta}{dx^2} + \frac{d\theta'}{dt} \left( \frac{dx}{r} \right) \quad (1)$$

To estimate  $\theta'$ , let  $\theta''$  be the temperature at the centre of the cross section  $x$ , and let  $\left( -\frac{d\theta}{dx} \right)$  denote the rate of decrease of temperature from within outwards in the substance of the bar close to its surface. We have clearly

$$\theta'' - \theta < r \left( -\frac{d\theta}{dx} \right),$$

<sup>1</sup> This result was published by Polet in 1858, in a work entitled *Neuvenus documents relatifs au chauffage et à la ventilation*.

and, because the emission is supplied by conduction from within,

$$\text{Hence} \quad \frac{d\theta}{dt} = -k \left( \frac{-dv}{dt} \right) \\ v'' - v' < \frac{c}{\gamma} v'$$

The value of  $c$  for a blackened globe hung within a hollow, with blackened bounding surface, is about  $\frac{1}{100}$  according to Maufou's experiments (Table VII below), and considerably less for surfaces with any degree of polish. We may therefore take  $\frac{1}{100}$  as a maximum value for  $c$ . The values of  $k$  for copper and iron at ordinary temperatures are, in  $^\circ \text{C}$  S., approximately 95 and 18. Hence, if  $\gamma = 5$  ems (or the diameter of the bar 10 ems, which is more than it is likely to be in any of our experiments), we find

$$v'' - v' < \frac{1}{880} \text{ for copper,} \\ \text{and} \\ < \frac{v}{100} \text{ for iron}$$

Hence the error will be practically nothing if we take  $v'' = v$ . Thus, and if we suppose  $k$  to be independent of temperature, (1) becomes

$$\text{or} \quad \frac{dv}{dt} = \frac{h}{\gamma} \frac{d^2v}{dx^2} - \frac{2\sigma}{\gamma} v \quad (2),$$

which is Fourier's equation for the conduction of heat along a bar of the circumference of a thin ring. Its solution to express simple harmonic variations of temperature produced in an infinitely long bar by properly varied thermal impulses at one end is

$v, R, c$  being arbitrary constants, — the "speed," the semi-range, and the epoch for  $x=0$ , and  $f, g$  constants given by the formulae

$$f = \sqrt{\frac{1}{2k}} \left\{ (u' + h)^2 - h^2 \right\} \\ g = \sqrt{\frac{1}{2k}} \left\{ (u' + h)^2 + h^2 \right\} \quad (3)$$

For iron and copper the values of  $c$  are respectively 95 and 845. Hence, with the previously used values of  $k$  for these metals, and with  $1/4000$  for  $c$ , we find  $\gamma = 2$  for copper and  $\gamma = 2$  for iron, and for either,  $h = 1/17000$  nearly enough.

Suppose, for example,  $l = 2$  cm, this makes  $\lambda = 1/3400$ , and suppose the period to be 32 m (the greatest of those chosen by Ångström), this makes  $n = 2\pi/(90 \times 32)$ , or roughly  $n = 1/310$  and  $h/n = 1/17$ . Now when  $h/n$  is small, we have approximately

$$f = \sqrt{\frac{n}{2k}} \left( 1 - \frac{h}{n} \right) \\ g = \sqrt{\frac{n}{2k}} \left( 1 + \frac{h}{n} \right),$$

and therefore with the assumed numbers

$$f = \sqrt{\frac{n}{2k}} \left( 1 - \frac{1}{31} \right), \text{ and } g = \sqrt{\frac{n}{2k}} \left( 1 + \frac{1}{31} \right).$$

by which we see that the propagation of the variation of temperature is but little affected by the lateral surface emissivity. Little as this effect is, it is very perfectly eliminated by the relation

$$f/g = 2 - \frac{n}{k} \quad (6),$$

which we find from (5)

It is convenient to remark that  $g$  is the rate of diminution of the Napierian logarithm of the range, and  $f$  the rate of retardation of the epoch (reckoned in radians) per centimetre of the bar. Were there no lateral emissivity these would be equal, and the diffusivity might be calculated from each separately. This was done by William Thomson in his analysis of the Edinburgh underground temperature observations. But in the propagation of periodic variation of temperature along a bar (as of electric potential along the conduction of a submarine cable) lateral emissivity (or imperfect insulation) augments the rate of diminution of the logarithm of the amplitude, and diminishes the rate of retardation of the phase, leaving the product of the two rates unaffected, and allowing the diffusivity to be calculated from it by (6). This was carried out for copper and iron by Ångström in Sweden, and the results communicated to the Royal Swedish Academy in January 1861. German and English editions

of his paper have been published in Poggendorff's *Annalen* for 1863, and the *Phil Mag* for 1863 (first half year). The details of the apparatus and of the actual experiments, in which Ångström had the assistance of Thalen, are sufficiently described in this paper,<sup>1</sup> and in a subsequent paper (Pogg *Annalen* for 1863, p. 428), to allow us to feel perfect confidence in the very approximate accuracy of the results. Hence we have included them in our Table.

§ 79 The question, Does thermal conductivity vary with temperature? was experimentally investigated by Forbes about thirty years ago, and in a first provisional statement of results communicated to the British Association at Belfast in 1852 it was stated that the thermal conductivity of iron is less at high temperatures than at low. Forbes's investigation was conducted by an elaborate method of experimenting, in which the static temperature of a long bar of metal is observed after the example of the earlier experiments of Despretz, with a most important additional experiment and measurement by means of which the static result is reduced to give conductivity in absolute measure, and not merely as in Despretz's experiments to give comparisons between the conductivities of different metals. In 1861 and 1863 Forbes published results calculated from his experiments, including the first determination of thermal conductivity of a metal (iron) in absolute measure, and a confirmation of his old result that the conductivity of iron diminishes with rise of temperature. Forbes's basis have been inherited and further utilized, and bars of copper, lead, and other metals have been made and experimented upon according to the same method, by his successor in the university of Edinburgh, Professor Tait. The investigation was conducted partly with a view to test whether the electric conductivities and the thermal conductivities of different metals, more or less approximately pure, and of metallic alloys, are in the same order, and, further, if their thermal conductivities are approximately in the same proportion as their electric conductivities. The following results are quoted from his paper on "Thermal and Electric Conductivity" (*Transactions R.S.E.*, 1878) are valuable as an important instalment, but expressly only an instalment towards the answering of this interesting question —

"Taking the inferior copper ('Copper C') as unit both for thermal and for electric conductivity, we find the following table of conductivity at ordinary temperatures, with the rough results as to specific gravity and specific heat referred to in § 16 above —

	Thermal	Electric
Copper, Crown	1.00	1.000
"C	0.99	1.004
Tin	0.12	0.149
German silver	0.14	0.117

<sup>1</sup> The first paper is marred unhappily by two or three algebraic and arithmetical errors. One algebraic error is very disturbing to a careful reader, and might even to a hasty judgment seem to throw doubt on the validity of the experimental use which is made of the formulae. There is, however, no real foundation for any such doubt. The following little correction suffices to put the matter right. For the general term as printed in Ångström's paper read

$$e^{-\frac{2\pi x}{\lambda}} \sin \left( \frac{2\pi x}{\lambda} - \frac{2\pi t}{T} \sqrt{1 + \beta'} \right),$$

with the following values for  $\beta'$ ,  $\frac{T}{\lambda}$  —

$$\beta' = \sqrt{\frac{H^2}{K^2 T^2 + 4K^2 \lambda^2} + \frac{H^2}{2K^2 \lambda^2}},$$

$$\lambda' = \sqrt{\frac{H^2}{K^2 T^2 + 4K^2 \lambda^2} + \frac{H^2}{2K^2 \lambda^2}},$$

instead of these formulae without the  $\lambda$ , as Ångström gives them.

Here we see that  $\lambda' \lambda = \frac{\pi}{K T}$ , and it is the product  $\lambda' \lambda$  that Ångström uses in his experimental application, not the separate values of either  $\lambda$  or  $\lambda'$ . Hence no error is introduced by his having overlooked that  $\lambda'$  is not equal to  $\lambda$ , except for  $\lambda = 1$ .

"The agreement of these numbers is by no means so close as is generally stated, but this is no longer remarkable, for it is well known that the electric conductivity of all pure metals alters very much with the temperature, while we have seen that as regards thermal conductivity there is but slight change with either copper or lead, though there is a large change with iron. This accords with some results of my own on the electric conductivity of iron at high temperatures (*Proc. R. S. E.*, 1872-73, p. 82), and with the results of the repetition of these experiments by a party of my laboratory students."—*Proc. R. S. E.*, 1875-76, p. 629

§ 80 The absolute values of Tait's results for the five metals of the preceding list are given in CGS units in our general table. As to change of conductivity with temperature there is a discrepancy between the results of Ångström's and Tait's experiments. Tait finds but little difference in the conductivity of copper through the wide range of temperatures from 0° to 300° C, and that difference an augmentation instead of a diminution at the high temperatures as shown in the following results (where  $\kappa$  is measured from 0° C) :—

Copper, Crohn	0.078 (1+0.0004)
C	0.084 (1+0.00026)
Iron	0.018 (1—0.00144)

On the other hand, Ångström finds for copper from experiments described in his second paper referred to above, at mean temperatures of from 26° 8' to 71° 5' C, results which reduced to CGS are as follows :—

Copper	962 (1—0.00169)
Iron	199 (1—0.002874)

From the admirable method of experimenting, and the care with which experiments were carried out by himself and Thalen, it is impossible for us to doubt the validity and somewhat closely approximate numerical truth of the results. On account of the discrepancies from Tait's results it is desirable that Ångström's method should be carried out for copper through a much wider range of temperatures. This can be done with great ease from the lowest temperature obtainable by freezing mixtures to temperatures up to the melting point of copper, so excellently plastic is Ångström's method. Our proposed extension of it is to be carried out by proper thermal appliances to the end of the bar which Ångström left to itself,—appliances by which in one series of experiments it may be kept constant at -50° or -60° C, in others left to itself to take nearly the atmospheric temperature, in others kept at high temperatures limited only by the melting temperature of copper, if the experimenter desires to go so far. We would also suggest that the thermo-electric method first introduced by Wiedemann and Franz in their experiments on the static temperature of bars or wires heated at one end and allowed to lose heat by convection and radiation from their sides, (which was rejected, not, we think, judiciously, by Ångström), might be used with advantage instead of the mercury thermometers inserted in holes in the bar in Ångström's apparatus; or that, if thermometers are to be used, air thermometers in which the bulb of the thermometer is itself a very small hole in the bar experimented on and the tube a fine bore glass tube fitted to this hole, would be much preferable to the mercury thermometers hitherto employed in, we believe, all experiments except those of Wiedemann and Franz, on the conduction of heat along metallic bars.

§ 81 Fourier's ninth chapter is entitled "De la Diffusion de la Chaleur." The idea embodied in this title is the spreading of heat in a solid tending to ultimate equalization of temperature throughout it, instead of the transference of heat from one body to another by conduction through the

<sup>1</sup> These results are, like those given above in this section, expressed in terms of the foot and minute, but the unit of heat employed is the amount of heat required to raise the temperature of a cubic foot of the substance by 1° F. In other words, these results are "diffusivities" (§ 82) in square feet per minute.

solid considered. Though Fourier makes the special subject of his chapter on "Diffusion" the conduction of heat through an infinite solid, we may conveniently regard as coming under the several designations "Diffusion of Heat" every case of thermal conduction in which the heat conducted across any part of the solid has the effect of warming contiguous parts on one side of it, or of leaving contiguous parts on the other side cooler,—in other words, every case in which the temperature of the body through which the conduction of heat takes place is varying with time, as distinguished from what Fourier calls "Uniform Motion of Heat," or the class of cases in which the temperature at every point of the body is constant. The experiments of Fourier, Poise, Despretre, Forbes and Tait, Wiedemann and Franz, &c., were founded on the uniform conduction of heat across of thin slabs or along bars, and their determinations of relative and absolute conductivities were made by comparing or by measuring absolutely quantities of heat that were conducted out of the body tested. On the other hand, it is the form of diffusion of heat that is used in the determinations of thermal conductivity in absolute measure by Forbes and William Thomson from the periodic variations of underground temperature, in those of Ångström, from his experiments on the spreading of periodic variations of temperature through bars of iron and copper, and a series of valuable experiments a year or two later by F. Neumann, applying the same general method to lead, of bismuth, German silver, and iron, in experiments by F. Neumann on substances of lower conductivity (coal, cast sulphur, ice, snow, frozen earth, gutstone) formed into cubes or globes of 5 or 6 inches diameter, and heated uniformly, and then left to cool in an atmosphere of lower temperature, and from time to time during the cooling explored by thermo-electric junctions imbedded in them to show their internal distribution, in similar experiments on the cooling of globes of 14 cm diameter of porphyritic trachyte by Ayrton and Peiry in Japan, and in Kirchhoff and Hansemann's recent experiments,<sup>2</sup> to find the thermal conductivity of iron by the not well chosen method of suddenly cooling one side of a cube of iron of 14 cm, and observing the temperatures by aid of thermo-electric junctions in several points of the line perpendicular to this side through its middle.

§ 82 When the effect of heat conducted across any part the thermal of a body in heating the substance on one side or leaving it cooler on the other side is to be reckoned, it is convenient to measure the thermal conductivity in terms, not of the ordinary general gramme water-unit of heat, but of a special unit, the quantity required to raise unit bulk of the substance in 1°. In other words, if  $\kappa$  be the conductivity in terms of any thermal unit, and  $c$  the thermal capacity of unit bulk of the substance, it is  $\kappa/c$ , not merely  $\kappa$ , that expresses the quantity of the substance on which the phenomenon chiefly depends. We therefore propose to give to  $\kappa/c$  the name of thermal diffusivity (or simply diffusivity when heat is understood to be the subject), while still using the word thermal conductivity to denote the conducting power as defined in § 78, without restriction as to the thermal unit employed. It is interesting and important to remark that "diffusivity" is essentially to be reckoned in units of area per unit of time, that its "dimensions" are  $L^2/T$  (see DIMENSIONS). Its regular CGS reckoning is therefore in square centimetres per second. In the article DIFFUSION the relation between diffusion of heat and diffusion of matter is explained. We have added diffusion of electricity through a substance as a cable, which has been shown<sup>3</sup> to follow the same law as the

<sup>2</sup> Wiedemann's (late Poggenhoff's) *Annalen*, 1880, No. 1.

<sup>3</sup> *Proc. Roy. Soc.*, May 1866, Wm. Thomson "On the Theory of the Electric Telegraph."

Diffusion  
of heat

"linear" diffusion of heat, as Fourier calls the diffusion of heat when the isothermal surfaces are parallel planes. The curves of the following diagram and Tables A, B, and C show in a practically useful way the result in the course of the times noted, of from fractions of a second to thousands of millions of years, of linear diffusion of two different qualities in an infinite line from an initial condition in which there is sudden transition from one quality to the other, in the thoroughly practical cases specified in the accompanying explanations.

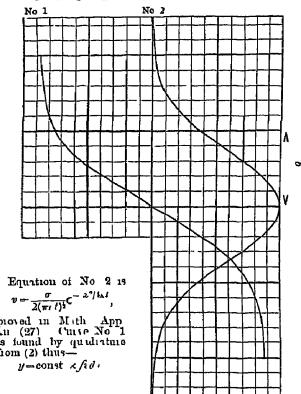


FIG. 11.—Diagram of Diffusion

Curve No. 1 shows temperature, or quantity of substance in solution, or potential in the conductor of a subterranean cable through which electricity is diffusing. Curve No. 2 shows rate per unit of distance of variation of the temperature, or of the quantity of substance in solution. Vertical ordinates are actual distances through the medium. Horizontal ordinates represent temperature or quantity of diffusing substances in No. 1 curve, and rate of variation of temperature or of diffusing substance or of electric potential in No. 2 curve.

Diffusions—Table A

Substance	Time in Seconds from the commencement of the Diffusion until the Condition represented by the Curves on the Actual Scale (4000 Continuity) is reached
Carbonic acid through air	0.97 seconds
Heat through hydrogen	89 of a second
" " copper	93 " "
" " iron	5.5 seconds
" " all	6.25 " "
" " underground strata	1000 " "
" " wood	770 " "
Common salt through water	87160 " "
Electricity through Suez Aden cable	$1.067 \times 10^{-16}$ of a second
" " Aden Bombay cable	$0.789 \times 10^{-16}$ " "
" " Persian Gulf cable	$0.685 \times 10^{-16}$ " "
" " Atlantic cable	$0.440 \times 10^{-16}$ " "
" " French Atlantic cable	$0.495 \times 10^{-16}$ " "
" " Direct U.S. cable	$0.440 \times 10^{-16}$ " "

Diffusions (Seconds)—Table B

Substance	Time in Years from the commencement of the Diffusion until the Condition represented by the Curves on the Scale of 4000 Continuity is reached
Carbonic acid through air <sup>1</sup>	290,000 years
Heat through hydrogen	28,000 " "
" " copper	29,000 " "
" " iron	174,000 " "
" " all	108,000 " "
" " underground strata <sup>2</sup>	417,000 " "
" " wood	21,700,000 " "
Common salt through water <sup>3</sup>	2,780,000,000 " "

<sup>1</sup> Inclusive of the proportion of carbonic acid in air at different heights, giving its approximate uniformity due to convection, not to diffusion.  
<sup>2</sup> Inclusive, as to geological theories respecting the actual temperature.  
<sup>3</sup> Inclusive as to theories respecting the saltness of the sea.

Table C

Name of Cable	Time in Seconds from the commencement of the Diffusion until the Condition represented by the Curves on the Scale of 4000 Continuity is reached
Suez Aden	0.932 of a second
Aden Bombay	0.634 " "
Persian Gulf	0.515 " "
Atlantic	0.377 " "
French Atlantic	0.389 " "
Direct United States	0.292 " "

§ 83 The following tables contain useful information regarding various thermal properties of matter. Every known property of a piece of matter, except its gravity and its inertia, varies with variation of temperature. For further information respecting the effect of variation of temperature in causing changes in properties of matter reference is made to the articles ELASTICITY, ELECTRICITY, MAGNETISM, LIGHT, MATTER (PROPERTIES OF), &c.

TABLE I.—Linear Expansions of Solids<sup>1</sup>

Name	Linear Expansion per degree C. through Range stated	Range	Authority
Silver	0.0002120	0° to 100°	Muschenbroek
"	" 1910	" 100°	"
"	" 1918	" 100°	Mendelsohn
Thallium	" 3021	40°	"
Sulphur, binary	" 6413	40°	"
selenium, cast	" 5680	40°	"
tellurium, "	" 1076	40°	"
Lead	" 3700	0 to 100°	Mendelsohn
"	" 3994	40°	"
Iron	" 1159	0 to 100°	Booth
"	" 1190	0 to 100°	Catcott, Johnson, and Love
Steel, annealed	" 1220	0 to 100°	Muschenbroek
" French cast, tempered	" 1222	40°	"
" French cast, annealed	" 1101	40°	"
" English cast, annealed	" 1085	40°	"
Steel, soft	" 108	"	"
Cast iron	" 112	0 to 100°	Catcott, Johnson, and Love
Cobalt, red by H <sup>2</sup> compound	" 1298	40°	"
Nickel, red by H <sup>2</sup> compound	" 1370	40°	"

<sup>1</sup> Adapted from Clark's *Constants of Nature*.

Where only one number is given for the range in this and the following table, the corresponding statement is to be understood as applying through a small range on either side of the number stated.

Name	Mean Expansion per degree	Range	Authority	Name	Mean Expansion per degree	Range	Authority
Copper	0.000178	0 to 100	Boettgen	Copper oxide, CuO	0.0000999	0	
" native L	" 189	40	Mathiessen	" "	" 0.00006	1	
" "cuprous"	" 169	40	" "	" "	" 0.0000136	10	
" commercial	" 1678	40	" "	" "	" 0.00007	20	
Ruthenium, semi fused	" 0.005	10	Fizeau	Zinc oxide, ZnO, along axis	" 0.016	40	Fizeau
Rhodium, semi fused	" 0.050	40	" "	Zinc, normal to axis	" 0.030	40	" "
Palladium " fused	" 1101	40	Mathiessen	Quartz, SiO <sub>2</sub> along axis	" 0.781	40	
" "	" 1103	"	Fizeau	Quartz, SiO <sub>2</sub> normal to axis	" 1.410	40	
Platinum	" 0.037	0° to 100	Boettgen	Pyrite, FeS <sub>2</sub>	" 1.0084	0 to 100	
" "	" 0.050	0° to 100	Calvert, Johnson, and Lowe	Gelene PbS	" 1.8504	0° to 100	Pfaff
" "	" 0.086	0° to 100	Mathiessen	Beryl, length axis	" 0.17214	0° to 100	
Iridium	" 0.090	40	Fizeau	" " " " " "	" 0.000001316	0° to 100	
Osmium semi fused	" 0.067	40	" "	Gamma along axis	" 0.0000109	40	
Zinc	" 2.200	0 to 100	Calvert, Johnson and Lowe	" " " " " "	" 0.187	40	Fizeau
" distilled	" 2.076	0 to 100	Mathiessen	Topaz, length axis	" 0.8305	0° to 100	
Calcium	" 3.83	0 to 100	Calvert, Johnson, and Lowe	" " " " " "	" 0.8302	0° to 100	
" "distilled"	" 31.0	0 to 100	Mathiessen	Topaz, vertical axis	" 0.4728	0° to 100	
Magnesium, cast	" 2.94	40	Fizeau	Tommaline, length axis	" 0.606	0° to 100	Pfaff
Indium, cast	" 4.170	40	" "	Tommaline, vertical axis	" 0.77721	0° to 100	
Aluminum, sublimed	" 0.559	40	" "	Garnet	" 0.8478	0° to 100	
Antimony	" 0.980	0 to 100	Calvert, Johnson and Lowe	Glass tube	" 0.9333	0 to 100	Smooton
" "along axis"	" 10.6	0 to 100	Mathiessen	" " "	" 0.329	0 to 100	Deluc
" "normal to axis"	" 1.62	40	Fizeau	" " " "	" 0.187	100 to 100	Dulong and Petit
" "mean value"	" 1.152	10	" "	" " " "	" 0.1114	200 to 300	
Bismuth	" 1.85	0 to 100	Calvert, Johnson and Lowe	" " " "	" 0.000001	0 to 100	Laplace
" "along axis"	" 1.318	0 to 100	Mathiessen	" " " "	" 0.8772	0 to 100	
" "normal to axis"	" 1.208	40	Fizeau	" " " "	" 0.8770	0 to 100	
" "mean value"	" 1.568	40	" "	" " " "	" 0.8771	0 to 100	
Gold, annealed	" 1.400	0° to 100	Muschenbroek	" " " "	" 0.8770	0 to 100	Hagen
" "	" 1.38	0 to 100	Calvert, Johnson and Lowe	" " " "	" 1.102	0 to 100	Winkfield
" "	" 1.470	0 to 100	Mathiessen	Wedge wood wire	" 0.8813	16° to 100°	Daniell
" cast	" 1.443	40	" "	" "	" 0.8883	16° to 80°	
Carbon, diamond	" 0.0000	-38° to 8	Fizeau	Bayeux porcelain	" 1.6	100° to 1400°	Doylle and Frost
" "	" 0.0052	20	" "	Platinidium, on tooth iridium	" 0.864	40	Fizeau
" "graphite"	" 0.1288	40	" "	Lead and tin, solder	" 2.008	0 to 100	Smooton
" "gas carbon"	" 0.78	40	" "	" " " " " "	" 2.078	10 to 100	Daniell
" "amorphous"	" 0.40	40	" "	Lead and tin, solder	" 1.902	10 to 200	
" "	" 0.078	10	" "	" " " " " "	" 2.002	0 to 100	
Iron	" 2.940	0° to 100	Muschenbroek	Pho and tin-8 zinc, 1 in	" 1.517	0 to 100	Smooton
" "	" 2.78	0° to 100	Calvert, Johnson, and Lowe	Copper, red tin-8 copper, 1 in	" 1.088	0 to 100	
" "	" 2.910	0° to 100	Mathiessen	Speculum metal	" 1.088	0 to 100	
Aluminum, com normal	" 2.22	0 to 100	Calvert, Johnson and Lowe	Rhomb, 1 in	" 1.844	16° to 100°	Daniell
Titanium, CaF <sub>2</sub>	" 1.904	0° to 100	Pfaff	" "	" 2.116	16° to 200°	
Silver sulfate, Ag <sub>2</sub> SO <sub>4</sub> , pure fused and com fused	" 0.108	40	" "	" "	" 1.707	16° to 200°	
" " " " " "	" 0.128	40	" "	Bismuth, cast	" 1.876	0° to 100°	Smooton
" " " " " "	" 0.187	40	" "	" " " "	" 1.800	0° to 100°	Borda
Mercuric iodide, Hg <sub>2</sub> I <sub>2</sub>	" 2.887	40	Fizeau	" " " "	" 1.788	0° to 100°	Roy
Lead iodide, PbI <sub>2</sub>	" 3.029	40	" "	" " " "	" 1.898	0° to 100°	
Cadmium iodide, CdI <sub>2</sub>	" 2.016	40	" "	" " " "	" 1.850	0° to 100°	Fizeau
Iron, H <sub>2</sub> O	0.00041	0 to 100	Hemlich	Pyrite	" 2.283	16° to 100°	Daniell
Humate, Fe <sub>2</sub> O <sub>3</sub> along axis	0.0000899	40	Fizeau	" "	" 2.018	16° to 200°	
Humate, Fe <sub>2</sub> O <sub>3</sub> normal to axis	" 0.030	40	" "	Paraffin Rangoon	0.0007861	40	Fizeau
Magnetic oxide of iron, Fe <sub>3</sub> O <sub>4</sub>	" 0.0660	0 to 100	Pfaff	Soft coal, Charcoal	0.0002782	40	
				Ebony	" 770	10 to 20°	Kohlrausch
				" "	" 849	20° to 80°	
				Deal wood	Equal to Glass		Roy



TABLE IV — *Density of Water*

Temp	Density	Temp	Density	Temp	Density
0°	999851	18°	999413	35°	99469
1°	999911	14°	999812	40	99238
2°	999982	16°	998678	45	98953
3°	1 000004	18°	998015	50	98621
4°	1 000013	17	998554	55	98583
5°	1 000008	18	998687	60	98389
6°	999998	19	998473	65	98205
7°	999946	20	998272	70	97798
8°	999890	22	997839	75	97409
9°	999837	24	997380	80	97185
10°	999780	26	996890	85	96967
11	999668	28	996344	90	96567
12	999562	30	995778	100	95868

TABLE V — Steam Pressures (in Centimeters of Mercury)

Water		Mercury		Sulphur	
Temp.	Pressure.	Temp.	Pressure.	Temp.	Pressure.
-32°	0.03	0°	0.02	386°	27.23
-30	0.04	10	0.03	392	28.06
-25	0.06	20	0.04	410	39.52
-20	0.09	30	0.05	420	47.21
-15	0.14	40	0.08	480	56.10
-10	0.21	50	0.11	440	64.40
-5	0.31	60	0.16	450	77.92
0	0.46	70	0.24	460	91.27
5	0.65	80	0.35	470	104.32
10	0.92	90	0.51	480	128.37
15	1.17	100	0.75	490	142.26
20	1.74	110	1.07	500	168.53
25	2.85	120	1.58	510	187.16
30	3.15	140	2.18	520	218.38
35	3.8	160	3.08	530	242.07
40	5.49	180	4.57	540	278.92
45	7.14	160	5.00	550	308.05

### Notes

Temp	Pressure	Temp	Pressure	Temp	Pressure
50°	9 20	170°	800	660°	846 53
55	11 75	180	1 100	670	887 71
60	14 18	190	1 48		
65	15 69	200	1 98		
70	13 31	210	2 50		
75	28 55	220	3 47		
80	35 46	230	4 58		
85	45 30	240	5 68		
90	52 51	250	7 57		
95	63 38	260	9 67		
100	75 00	270	12 80		
105	90 66	280	16 32		
110	107 54	290	19 45		
115	126 94	300	24 23		
120	149 15	310	29 77		
125	174 39	320	36 87		
130	204 03	330	45 08		
135	235 37	340	54 53		
140	267 78	350	65 89		
145	311 55	360	79 77		
150	358 12	370	95 46		
155	408 86	380	113 00		
160	455 18	390	134 67		
165	527 45	400	158 80		
170	590 17	410	186 87		
175	649 75	420	217 75		
180	754 04	430	253 80		
185	845 32	440	293 40		
190	941 27	450	335 44		
195	1051 96	460	388 81		
200	1158 90	470	444 94		
205	1295 57	480	505 84		
210	1492 45	490	575 18		
215	1680 18	500	652 03		
220	1789 04	510	725 34		
225	1939 70	520	825 60		
230	2092 04				

TABLE VI—Steam Pressures

[illegible]





## MATHEMATICAL APPENDIX

Let  $v$  be the temperature at any point  $P$  specified by  $\xi, \eta, \zeta$  according to any system of three sets of plane or curved orthogonal surfaces not *ad infinitum*. Let  $\lambda d\xi, \mu d\eta, \nu d\zeta$  be the lengths of the edges of the infinitesimal rectangular parallelepiped having  $P$  for its centre, and its sides parts of the six surfaces  $\xi = \pm \frac{1}{2}d\xi, \eta = \pm \frac{1}{2}d\eta, \zeta = \pm \frac{1}{2}d\zeta$ .

The rates of variation of temperature per unit of length in the directions corresponding to the variations of  $\xi, \eta, \zeta$  are respectively

$$-\lambda \frac{dv}{d\xi}, \quad -\mu \frac{dv}{d\eta}, \quad -\nu \frac{dv}{d\zeta}$$

Hence the fluxes across three infinitesimal rectangles having their edges parallel to the three pairs of sides of the parallelepiped, and each having its centre at  $P$ , are respectively

$$-\lambda \frac{dv}{d\xi} \mu \nu d\eta d\zeta, \quad -\mu \frac{dv}{d\eta} \lambda \nu d\xi d\zeta, \quad -\nu \frac{dv}{d\zeta} \lambda \mu d\xi d\eta$$

Hence the excess of the quantities of heat conducted in to the parallelepiped above those conducted out across the three pairs of faces is

$$\left\{ \frac{d}{d\xi} \left( \lambda \mu \nu \frac{dv}{d\xi} \right) + \frac{d}{d\eta} \left( \lambda \mu \nu \frac{dv}{d\eta} \right) + \frac{d}{d\zeta} \left( \lambda \mu \nu \frac{dv}{d\zeta} \right) \right\} d\xi d\eta d\zeta \quad (1)$$

The effect of this gain of heat is to warm the matter of the parallelepiped at a rate per unit of time equal to the rate of gain of heat divided by  $\lambda \mu \nu d\xi d\eta d\zeta$ , the thermal capacity of the matter.

Hence

$$\frac{dv}{dt} = \frac{1}{\lambda \mu \nu} \left\{ \frac{d}{d\xi} \left( \lambda \mu \nu \frac{dv}{d\xi} \right) + \frac{d}{d\eta} \left( \lambda \mu \nu \frac{dv}{d\eta} \right) + \frac{d}{d\zeta} \left( \lambda \mu \nu \frac{dv}{d\zeta} \right) \right\} \quad (2)$$

Thus, for the case of the uniform motion of heat ( $d\lambda/dt=0$ ),  $v$  is first given by Laplace, to whom the generalised system of curvilinear coordinates for a point is due ("Mémoire sur les Lois de l'Équilibre des Fluides Élastiques," *Journ. de Physique*, 1799, vol. ix, cahier xxvii). He deduced it from Fourier's equation (8) below in terms of plane rectangular coordinates by a laborious transformation. Equation (2) was first given, proved as above, as the direct expression of Fourier's fundamental law of conduction, by W. Thomson (*Cambridge Mathematical Journal*, Nov. 1847).

For plane rectangular coordinates we have  $\lambda = \mu = \nu = 1$ , and if we put  $x, y, z$  for  $\xi, \eta, \zeta$  in this case, (2) becomes

$$\frac{dv}{dt} = \frac{1}{\lambda} \left\{ \frac{d}{dx} \left( \lambda \frac{dv}{dx} \right) + \frac{d}{dy} \left( \lambda \frac{dv}{dy} \right) + \frac{d}{dz} \left( \lambda \frac{dv}{dz} \right) \right\} \quad (3),$$

which is Fourier's celebrated fundamental equation. From it we may deduce by transformation the proper forms of the corresponding equation for polar coordinates, but they are more easily got direct from the equation (2) for generalised coordinates. Thus for ordinary polar coordinates  $r, \theta, \phi$  we have, if we take these for  $\xi, \eta, \zeta$  respectively,

$$\lambda = 1, \quad \mu = r, \quad \nu = r \sin \theta$$

Hence (2) becomes

$$\frac{dv}{dt} = \frac{1}{r^2} \left\{ \frac{d}{dr} \left( r^2 \frac{dv}{dr} \right) + \frac{1}{\sin \theta} \frac{d}{d\theta} \left( \sin \theta \frac{dv}{d\theta} \right) + \frac{1}{r \sin \theta} \frac{d}{d\phi} \left( \frac{dv}{d\phi} \right) \right\} \quad (4)$$

If  $k$  be constant, and we put  $k/c = \sigma$ , this becomes

$$\frac{dv}{dt} = \frac{\sigma}{r^2} \left\{ \frac{d}{dr} \left( r^2 \frac{dv}{dr} \right) + \frac{1}{\sin \theta} \frac{d}{d\theta} \left( \sin \theta \frac{dv}{d\theta} \right) + \frac{1}{r \sin \theta} \frac{d}{d\phi} \left( \frac{dv}{d\phi} \right) \right\} \quad (5),$$

or

$$\frac{dv}{dt} = \frac{1}{r^2} \left\{ \frac{d^2 v}{dr^2} + \frac{1}{\sin \theta} \frac{d}{d\theta} \left( \sin \theta \frac{dv}{d\theta} \right) + \frac{1}{r^2 \sin \theta} \frac{d^2 v}{d\phi^2} \right\} \quad (6)$$

where  $u = v$ .

If again we take for the coordinates  $r, \phi, \psi$  (polar coordinates in the plane perpendicular to  $\psi$  being denoted by  $r, \phi$ ), we have  $\lambda = 1, \mu = r, \nu = 1$ , and so find

$$\frac{dv}{dt} = \frac{1}{r} \left\{ \frac{d}{dr} \left( r \frac{dv}{dr} \right) + \frac{d}{d\phi} \left( r \frac{dv}{d\phi} \right) + \frac{d}{d\psi} \left( \frac{dv}{d\psi} \right) \right\} \quad (7)$$

For the case of  $k$  constant we may take it outside the brackets in each of these equations, as we have already done in (4), thus (2) becomes

$$\frac{dv}{dt} = \frac{k}{\lambda \mu \nu} \left\{ \frac{d}{d\xi} \left( \lambda \frac{dv}{d\xi} \right) + \frac{d}{d\eta} \left( \mu \frac{dv}{d\eta} \right) + \frac{d}{d\zeta} \left( \nu \frac{dv}{d\zeta} \right) \right\} \quad (8),$$

or, with  $k$  for  $k/c$ , the diffusivity (§§ 81, 82),

$$\frac{dv}{dt} = \frac{1}{\lambda \mu \nu} \left\{ \frac{d}{d\xi} \left( \lambda \frac{dv}{d\xi} \right) + \frac{d}{d\eta} \left( \mu \frac{dv}{d\eta} \right) + \frac{d}{d\zeta} \left( \nu \frac{dv}{d\zeta} \right) \right\} \quad (9)$$

It is thus restricted from which, with the further restriction that  $k$  be constant, is most generally recognised as Fourier's equation of conduction, and it is for it, with these restrictions, that his brilliant solutions were given. These solutions are available for practical use by limiting the range of temperature within which any one solution is continuously applied to a range of temperatures within which the values of  $k$  and  $c$  are each nearly enough constant. We may expect  $10^\circ$  or  $20^\circ$  C. on each side of the mean temperature to be practically not too wide a range for any case, judging from copper and iron (§ 80), the only materials for which hitherto we have any information as to variations of both  $k$  and  $c$  with temperature.

Each of the following expressions I, XVII for  $v$  satisfies Fourier (9) or its equivalent (8), the reader will readily verify for himself. The special condition corresponding to the particular character of the particular solution is especially noted in each case.

I. Instantaneous simple point source, a quantity  $\theta$  of heat suddenly generated at the point  $(0, 0, 0)$  at time  $t=0$ , and left to diffuse through an infinite homogeneous solid. Every other solution is obtainable from this by summation.

$$v = \frac{Q e^{-r^2/4kt}}{8\pi k (kt)^{3/2}} \quad (10)$$

where

$$r^2 = x^2 + y^2 + z^2$$

Verify that  $\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} v dx dy dz = 4\pi \int_0^\infty v r^2 dr = Q$ , and that  $v=0$  when  $t=0$ , unless also  $x=0, y=0, z=0$ .

Remark that

$$\frac{dv}{dt} = 0 \quad \text{when } t = \frac{r^2}{4k} \quad (11)$$

II. Constant simple point source, rate  $g$  per unit of time, at time  $t$ , an arbitrary function,  $f(t)$ .

$$v = \int_{-\infty}^t g f(t') dt' \frac{e^{-r^2/4kt}}{8\pi k (kt)^{3/2}} = \frac{g}{4\pi r} \quad (12)$$

The formula within the brackets shows how this obvious solution is derivable from (11).

III. Continuous point source, rate per unit of time, at time  $t$ , an arbitrary function,  $f(t)$ .

$$v = \int_{-\infty}^t dx f(t-x) \frac{e^{-r^2/4kt}}{8\pi k (kt)^{3/2}} \quad (13)$$

IV. Time periodic simple point source, rate per unit of time at time  $t$ ,  $g \sin 2\pi nt$ .

$$v = \int_{-\infty}^t g \sin 2\pi n(t-x) \frac{e^{-r^2/4kt}}{8\pi k (kt)^{3/2}} = \frac{g}{8\pi k (kt)^{3/2}} \sin(2\pi n t - \frac{r^2}{4kt}) \quad (14)$$

Verify that  $v$  satisfies (8), also that  $-\frac{dv}{dt} = g \sin 2\pi nt$  when  $r=0$ .

V. Instantaneous spherical surface source, a quantity  $Q$  suddenly generated over a spherical surface of radius  $a$ , and left to diffuse outwards and inwards.

$$v = Q \frac{e^{-r^2/4kt}}{8\pi k a (kt)^{3/2}} = \frac{Q}{8\pi k a (kt)^{3/2}} \quad (15)$$

To prove this most easily, verify that it satisfies (6), and further verify that

$$4\pi \int_0^\infty v r^2 dr = Q,$$

and that  $v=0$  when  $t=0$ , unless also  $r=a$ .

Remark that (15) becomes identical with (10) when  $a=0$ , remark further that (16) is obtainable from (10) by integration over the spherical surface.

VI. Constant spherical surface source, rate per unit of time from the whole surface,  $g$ .

$$v = \left[ -\frac{g}{4\pi k} \frac{e^{-r^2/4kt}}{8\pi k a (kt)^{3/2}} - \frac{g}{4\pi k} \frac{e^{-r^2/4kt}}{8\pi k a (kt)^{3/2}} \right] \quad (16)$$

and

$$-\frac{dv}{dt} = g \sin 2\pi nt, \quad \text{where } r=a$$

The formula within the brackets shows how this obvious solution is derivable from (15).

VII. Time-periodic spherical surface source, rate per unit of time, at time  $t$ , from whole surface,  $g \sin 2\pi nt$ .

$$v = \left[ -\frac{g}{4\pi k} \frac{e^{-r^2/4kt}}{8\pi k a (kt)^{3/2}} \sin(2\pi n t - \frac{r^2}{4kt}) - \frac{g}{4\pi k} \frac{e^{-r^2/4kt}}{8\pi k a (kt)^{3/2}} \sin(2\pi n t - \frac{r^2}{4kt}) \right] \quad (17),$$

where  $r=a$ .

where  $A, B, C, D$  are constants determined by the conditions that

$$v_{r=0} = -\frac{g}{4\pi k} \frac{e^{-r^2/4kt}}{8\pi k a (kt)^{3/2}}, \quad v_{r=a} = -\frac{g}{4\pi k} \frac{e^{-r^2/4kt}}{8\pi k a (kt)^{3/2}}$$

when the two values of  $r$  exceed  $a$  and fall short of  $a$  by an infinitely small difference. Verify that  $v$  satisfies (6). Also that  $v$  is finite when  $r=0$ .

VIII. Fourier's "Linear Motion of Heat", instantaneous plane-source, quantity per unit surface,  $c$ .

$$v = \frac{c}{2\pi k (kt)^{3/2}} \quad (18)$$

Verify that this satisfies (9) for the case of  $v$  independent of  $y$  and  $z$ , and that

$$\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} v dx = \sigma$$

Remark that (18) is obtainable from (16) by putting  $Q/\pi a^2 = \sigma$ , and  $a = \infty$ , or directly from (10) by integration over the plane.

IX. "Linear Motion of Heat", time periodic plane-sources, rate per unit of area, per unit of time, at time  $t$ ,  $\sigma \sin 2\pi t$

$$\left\{ \begin{aligned} v &= -\frac{g}{2\pi} \int_0^{\infty} d\lambda \sin 2\pi(\lambda - x) \frac{e^{-\sqrt{\lambda} \sqrt{1+\lambda}}}{\sqrt{1+\lambda}} \\ &= \frac{\sigma}{(2\pi)^{3/2}} e^{-\lambda^2} \sin 2\pi(\lambda - x) - \frac{1}{2\pi} \sigma \sin 2\pi x \quad \text{where } a = \infty \\ &= \frac{\sigma}{(2\pi)^{3/2}} e^{-\lambda^2} \sin 2\pi(\lambda + \lambda^2) - \frac{1}{2\pi} \sigma \sin 2\pi x \quad \text{where } a = 0 \end{aligned} \right. \quad (19)$$

Verify that  $v$  satisfies  $\frac{dv}{dx} = \kappa \frac{dv}{dt}$ , which is what (9) becomes when  $v$  is independent of  $y$  and  $z$ , also that

$$-2\pi \frac{dv}{dx} = \sigma \sin 2\pi t \quad \text{when } \lambda \text{ is infinitely small positive,}$$

and  $-2\pi \frac{dv}{dx} = \sigma \sin 2\pi t$  when  $\lambda$  is infinitely small negative

X. "Linear Motion of Heat", space periodic, simple harmonic solid source, with plane isothermal surfaces. Initial distribution,  $v = V \sin ax$ , when  $t = 0$ . Solution for any value of  $t$

$$\left\{ \begin{aligned} v &= -V \int_0^{\infty} d\lambda \sin a(\lambda - t) \frac{e^{-\sqrt{\lambda} \sqrt{1+\lambda}}}{\sqrt{1+\lambda}} \\ &= -V \int_0^{\infty} d\lambda \sin a(\lambda - t) \frac{e^{-\sqrt{\lambda} \sqrt{1+\lambda}}}{\sqrt{1+\lambda}} \end{aligned} \right. \quad (20)$$

Modifying the integral within the brackets to make it appear as an analytical expression belonging to the general theory of images, for the case of a single infinite row of images, and equating the result to the right hand member, we see that

$$\frac{1}{4\pi\kappa} \int_0^{\infty} d\lambda \sin a(\lambda - t) \frac{e^{-\sqrt{\lambda} \sqrt{1+\lambda}}}{\sqrt{1+\lambda}} = e^{-\kappa^2 t} \sin ax \quad (21),$$

$\lambda$  being any integer.

It is obvious that for a  $v$  we may substitute  $jx$  in the second member, and in the factor  $e^{-\kappa^2 t}$  of  $(t - \lambda)$  under the integral sign of the first member, without altering its value,  $j$  being any integer: thus we have

$$\left\{ \begin{aligned} \frac{1}{4\pi\kappa} \int_0^{\infty} d\lambda \sin jx(\lambda - t) \frac{e^{-\sqrt{\lambda} \sqrt{1+\lambda}}}{\sqrt{1+\lambda}} &= e^{-\kappa^2 t} \sin jx \\ \text{where } S &= \sum_{j=-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-\kappa^2 t} \sin jx \end{aligned} \right. \quad (22)$$

XI. "Linear Motion of Heat", space periodic arbitrary solid source, isothermal plane. Initial distribution,  $v = f(x)$ , when  $t = 0$ ,  $f$  denoting an arbitrary periodic function, period  $2\pi$ , so that  $f(x + 2\pi) = f(x)$ ,  $\lambda$  being any integer. Two solutions (A), (B) derived synthetically from (10)

$$\left\{ \begin{aligned} v &= \frac{1}{2(\pi\kappa)^{1/2}} \int_0^{\infty} d\lambda f(\lambda - t) S \\ \text{where } S &= \sum_{j=-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-\kappa^2 t} \sin jx \end{aligned} \right. \quad (23)$$

(B) derived analytically and synthetically from (20)

Find  $A_0, A_1, A_2, B_1, B_2, \dots$  by the harmonic analysis, to satisfy the condition

$$\left\{ \begin{aligned} f(x) &= A_0 + A_1 \cos \theta + A_2 \cos 2\theta + \dots \\ &+ B_1 \sin \theta + B_2 \sin 2\theta + \dots \\ \text{where } \theta &= \frac{2\pi x}{2\pi} \end{aligned} \right. \quad (25)$$

$$\text{Then } v = A_0 + \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} e^{-(\frac{2\pi j}{2\pi})^2 t} \left( A_j \cos \frac{2\pi j x}{2\pi} + B_j \sin \frac{2\pi j x}{2\pi} \right) \quad (26)$$

XII. Uniform row of simple instantaneous plane sources. Two solutions (A) and (B)

(A), from XI (A), (23)

$$\left\{ \begin{aligned} v &= \frac{\sigma}{2(\pi\kappa)^{1/2}} \sum_{j=-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-(\frac{2\pi j}{2\pi})^2 t} \sin jx \\ \text{where } S &= \sum_{j=-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-(\frac{2\pi j}{2\pi})^2 t} \sin jx \end{aligned} \right. \quad (27)$$

The No. 2 diffusion curve of § 82 is the representation of the first term ( $j=0$ ) of this formula

$$\left\{ \begin{aligned} v &= \frac{\sigma}{2} \left( 1 + 2 \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} e^{-\kappa^2 t} \cos \frac{2\pi j x}{2\pi} \right) \\ \text{where } S &= \sum_{j=-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-\kappa^2 t} \cos \frac{2\pi j x}{2\pi} \end{aligned} \right. \quad (28)$$

The comparison of these two solutions is very interesting physically

<sup>1</sup> This is Fourier's  $C$  of Art. 874 for the case of  $f(x)$  a periodic function

cally, and useful arithmetically. To facilitate the comparison, put  $\sqrt{1+\lambda} = g$ , and  $\lambda/2(\pi\kappa)^2 = p$

$$\left\{ \begin{aligned} \frac{dv}{dx} - g &= \sum_{j=-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-\pi^2(p+j)^2} - 1 + 2 \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} e^{-\pi^2 p} \cos \frac{2\pi j p}{g} \end{aligned} \right. \quad (30)$$

The equation between the second and third members, is actually due originally to Fourier, is also an interesting formula of Jacobi's, *Fundamenta Nova Theoriae Functionum Ellipticarum*, and, as we long ago pointed out by Cayley - Each formula is a series which converges for every value of  $p$ , however small or however great, the first, (27), the more rapidly the less is  $t$ , the second, (28), the more rapidly the greater is  $t$ . For the case of  $t = 1/\kappa^2$ , and  $\kappa = 0$  (that is,  $g = 1$  and  $p = 0$ ), the two series become identical. For the more comprehensive case of  $p = 0$ , but  $g$  unrestricted, the comparison gives the following very curious arithmetical theorem -

$$\frac{1 + 2(e^{-\pi^2 p} + e^{-4\pi^2 p} + e^{-9\pi^2 p} + \dots)}{1 + 2(e^{-\pi^2 p/g^2} + e^{-4\pi^2 p/g^2} + e^{-9\pi^2 p/g^2} + \dots)} = 1 \quad (31)$$

When  $t = 1/\kappa^2$  (or  $g = 1$ ) the first solution (27) converges with so great suddenness that three terms suffice for most practical purposes, when  $t = 1/\kappa^2$  (or  $g = 1$ ) the second solution (28) converges with so great suddenness that one term (after the constant first term) suffices for most practical purposes. Thus by using the solution (27) for all values of  $t$  from zero to something less than  $1/\kappa^2$ , and (28) for all values greater than the greatest for which (27) is used, we have an exceedingly rapid convergence and easy calculation to find  $v$  for any values of  $x$  and  $t$ . These formulae, we have been of great practical value in calculating what is now known as the arrival curve of signals through a submarine cable, and in designing instruments to record it automatically and allow its telegraphic meaning to be read, or without recording it to allow it meaning to be read by watching the motions of a spot of light. It is clear that (27) and (28) express the potential at a point at distance  $x$  from one end of a cable of length  $2\pi$ , at time  $t$  from an instant when a quantity  $\sigma$  of electricity has been suddenly communicated to that end of the cable, both ends being always kept insulated while that instant ( $t = 0$ ) is done practically by an exceedingly short contact with one pole of a voltaic battery, the other being kept to earth. The value of  $\sigma$  for  $x = 2\pi$ , and for all values of  $t$  from 0 to  $\infty$ , represents the use of the potential at the remote end towards the limiting value  $\sigma/g$ , towards which the potential rises throughout the conductor.

XIII. (X in three dimensions) Space triply periodic solid source, in other words  $v = V \sin ax \sin by \sin cz$ , when  $t = 0$ . Solution for any value of  $t$  -

$$\left\{ \begin{aligned} v &= -V \int_0^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} d\lambda d\mu d\nu \sin a(\lambda - t) \sin b(\mu - t) \sin c(\nu - t) \frac{e^{-\sqrt{\lambda^2 + \mu^2 + \nu^2}}}{\sqrt{\lambda^2 + \mu^2 + \nu^2}} \\ &= -V \int_0^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} d\lambda d\mu d\nu e^{-\kappa^2(\lambda^2 + \mu^2 + \nu^2)} \sin a(\lambda - t) \sin b(\mu - t) \sin c(\nu - t) \end{aligned} \right. \quad (32)$$

Remark that, as an analytical expression for the present case of the general theory of triply multiple images, the triple integral within the brackets may be written

$$\left\{ \begin{aligned} v &= -V \int_0^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} d\lambda d\mu d\nu \sin a(\lambda - t) \sin b(\mu - t) \sin c(\nu - t) \frac{e^{-\sqrt{\lambda^2 + \mu^2 + \nu^2}}}{\sqrt{\lambda^2 + \mu^2 + \nu^2}} \\ \text{where } S &= \sum_{j=-\infty}^{\infty} \sum_{k=-\infty}^{\infty} \sum_{l=-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-\kappa^2 t} \left( \frac{\lambda^2 + \mu^2 + \nu^2}{\lambda^2 + \mu^2 + \nu^2} + \left( \frac{2\pi j}{\lambda} \right)^2 + \left( \frac{2\pi k}{\mu} \right)^2 + \left( \frac{2\pi l}{\nu} \right)^2 \right) \end{aligned} \right. \quad (33)$$

$j, k, l$  being any positive or negative integers

XIV and XV (X and XI in three dimensions). The formulae may be written down by inspection, from I, with X and XI for guides. The analytical theorem, which corresponds to (28), in three dimensions, is interesting to pure mathematicians.

XVI. Harmonic solutions. Any distribution of heat, whether in an infinite or in a bounded solid, which keeps its type unchanged in subsiding towards uniformity, when left without positive or negative sources, except such, essentially negative, as are required to fulfil a proper boundary condition, is called a harmonic distribution, provided the temperature does not increase to infinity in any direction. The boundary condition, when left without bound, is essentially that the rate of emission from the surface at every point of it varies in simple proportion to the temperature, and at such a rate per unit of temperature at each part of the surface as the solution requires. X and XIII are examples. The general condition for a harmonic solution is

$$v = f(x) F(y, z) \quad (34),$$

<sup>2</sup> Quarterly Journal of Mathematics for 1867. Note by Cayley on an article by W. Thomson, entitled, "On the Calculation of Transients of the form  $\int_0^t e^{-\kappa^2 t} f(x) dx$ "

and this tried in (9) gives

$$\frac{1}{f(t)} \frac{d}{dt} \left( \frac{1}{\kappa} \frac{d^2 F}{ds^2} + \frac{d^2 F}{ds^2} + \frac{d^2 F}{ds^2} \right) \dots (35).$$

The first member being independent of  $\phi$ ,  $y$ ,  $s$ , and the second being independent of  $t$ , the common value of the two must be independent of  $\phi$ ,  $y$ ,  $s$ ,  $t$ ; that is to say, must be an absolute constant. Let it be denoted by  $-c$ ; we have

$$f(t) = C e^{-ct} \dots (36),$$

$$\text{and } \frac{d^2 F}{ds^2} + \frac{d^2 F}{ds^2} + \frac{d^2 F}{ds^2} = 0 \dots (37),$$

or in terms of polar coordinates, by (6),

$$\frac{d^2 U}{ds^2} + \frac{1}{r^2} \sin \theta \frac{d}{d\theta} \left( \sin \theta \frac{dU}{d\theta} \right) + \frac{1}{r^2 \sin^2 \theta} \frac{d^2 U}{d\phi^2} + \frac{U}{r^2} = 0 \dots (38),$$

where

$$U = \frac{F}{r},$$

of this we have a spherical harmonic solution,

$$U = [A\phi(r) + B\psi(r)]S_1 \dots (39),$$

where  $S_1$  denotes a spherical surface-harmonic of order  $s$ , and  $\phi(r)$ ,  $\psi(r)$ , two particular solutions of the equation

$$\frac{d^2 u}{dr^2} + \left[ \frac{\kappa}{r} - \frac{s(s+1)}{r^2} \right] u = 0 \dots (40).$$

Then (36) and (38) give finally

$$u = e^{-ct} \frac{A\phi(r) + B\psi(r)}{r} S_1 \dots (41).$$

This solution is in its generality applicable to an infinite solid occupying all space except a hollow round the origin. The solid may of course be bounded externally also by a finite closed surface. If there be no hollow,  $A/B$  must fulfil the condition that  $[A\phi(r) + B\psi(r)]/r$  is finite when  $r=0$ . If there are two boundaries, concentric spherical surfaces, with their common centre at the origin of coordinates, the boundary condition obviously requires uniform emissivity over each, but not necessarily equal for the two. If the two emissivities be denoted by  $h$  and  $h'$ , and the radii of the surfaces by  $a$  (outer) and  $a'$  (inner), the boundary conditions are

$$\left. \begin{aligned} \frac{du}{dr} &= -hv, \text{ when } r=a \\ \text{and } \frac{du}{dr} &= h'v', \text{ when } r=a' \end{aligned} \right\} \dots (42).$$

HEATH, the English form of a name given in most Teutonic dialects to the common ling or heather, but now applied to all species of *Erica*, an extensive genus of monopetalous plants, belonging to the order *Ericaceae*. The heaths are evergreen shrubs, with small narrow leaves, in whorls usually set rather thickly on the shoots; the persistent flowers have 4 sepals, and a 4-lobed campanulate or tubular corolla, in many species more or less ventricose or inflated; the dry capsule is 4-celled, and opens, in the true *Erica*, in 4 segments, to the middle of which the partitions adhere, though in the ling the valves separate at the dissepiments. The plants are mostly of low growth, but several African kinds reach the size of large shrubs, and a Spanish variety, *E. arborea*, occasionally attains almost the aspect and dimensions of a tree.

One of the best known and most interesting of the family is the common heath, heather, or ling, *Calluna vulgaris*, placed by most botanists in a separate genus on account of the peculiar dehiscence of the fruit, and from the coloured calyx, which extends beyond the corolla, having a whorl of sepal-like bracts beneath. This shrub derives some economic importance from its forming the chief vegetation on many of those extensive wastes that occupy so large a portion of the more sterile lands of northern and western Europe, the usually desolate appearance of which is enlivened in the latter part of summer by its abundant pink blossoms. When growing erect to the height of a yard or more, as it often does in sheltered places, its purple stems, close-leaved green shoots, and feathery spikes of bell-shaped flowers render it one of the handsomest of the heaths; but on the bleaker elevations and more arid slopes it frequently rises only a few inches above the ground. In

From these we may find  $A$  and  $A'$ , so as to let the harmonic character of the solution be fulfilled in the subsidence. Or if  $A$  and  $A'$  be given, we have in (41) two equations which determine the two unknown quantities  $A/B$  and  $c$ . Eliminating  $A/B$ , we thus find a single transcendental equation for  $c$ , which is proved to have no imaginary or negative roots, and an infinite number of real positive roots, each  $> \pi(s+1)/r^2$ . In the case of  $s=0$ , or temperature independent of  $\phi$  and  $\theta$ , (40) gives

$$u = A \cos r \sqrt{\frac{\kappa}{a}} + B \sin r \sqrt{\frac{\kappa}{a}}.$$

For this case the transcendental equation for determining values for  $c$  is very simple, and its roots are calculated numerically with great ease. With the further restriction of no central hollow, we must have  $A=0$ , so that  $u/r$  may be finite when  $r=0$ . This case was fully investigated by Fourier, and very beautifully worked out in his fifth chapter. The more general problem of a solid sphere, with any given initial distribution of temperature, without the restriction of temperature independent of  $\theta$  and  $\phi$ , was solved first by Poisson in the 11th chapter of his *Théorie Mathématique de la Chaleur*, in terms of the formulae (36), (38), (40) above. XVII. The equation of the transference of heat in terms of columnar coordinates, (7) above, affords naturally another beautiful case of harmonic solution. Assume

$$v = e^{-ct} \frac{A\phi(r) + B\psi(r)}{r} S_1 \dots (43);$$

we find by (7)

$$\frac{d^2 u}{dr^2} + \frac{1}{r} \frac{du}{dr} + \left( \frac{\kappa}{r^2} - \frac{c^2}{r^2} \right) u = 0 \dots (44).$$

The treatment of this equation and its integral (obviously derivable by 4 differentiations from  $u_0$  which is a Bessel's function) for the full solution of the thermal problem is most interesting, and very instructive and suggestive in respect to pure analysis. It was splendidly worked out for the case of  $m=0$  and  $c=0$  by Fourier in his 6th chapter, "The Motion of Heat in a Solid Cylinder," truly a masterpiece of art. When it was printed in 1821, and published after having with the rest of Fourier's work been buried alive for fourteen years in the archives of the French Academy, and when Bessel found in it so thorough an investigation and so strikingly beautiful an application of the "Besselische Function," we can imagine the ordinary feeling towards those "qui ante nos nostra diximus" reversed into the pleasure of genuine admiration.

all moorland countries the ling is applied to many rural purposes; the larger stems are made into brooms, the shorter tied up into bundles that serve as brushes, while the long trailing shoots are woven into baskets. Fared up



FIG. 1.—*Erica cinerea*.

FIG. 2.—*Calluna vulgaris*.

with the peat about its roots it forms a good fuel, often the only one obtainable on the drier moors. The shielings of the Scotch Highlanders were formerly constructed of heath stems, cemented together with peat-mud, worked into a

kind of mortar with dry grass or straw, hovels and sheds for temporary purposes are still sometimes built in a similar way, and roofed in with ling. Laid on the ground, with the flower above, it forms a soft springy bed, the luxurious couch of the ancient Gael, still gladly resorted to at times by the hill shepherd or hardy deer-stalker. The young shoots were in former days employed as a substitute for hops in brewing, while their stringency rendered them valuable as a tanning material in Ireland and the Western Isles. They are said also to have been used by the Highlanders for dyeing woollen yarn yellow, and other colours are reported to have been obtained from them, but some writers appear to confuse the wood, *Genista tinctoria*, with the heather. The young dyer's wood, and the seeds, which remain long in the capsules, furnish the red grouse of Scotland with the larger portion of its sustenance, the ripe seeds are eaten by many birds. The tops of the ling afford a considerable part of the winter fodder of the hill flocks, and are popularly supposed to communicate the fine flavour to Welsh and Highland mutton, but sheep seldom crop heather while the mountain grasses and rushes are sweet and accessible. In recent times ling has been suggested as a material for paper, but the stems are hardly sufficiently fibrous for that purpose. The purple or fine leaved heath, *E. caerulea*, one of the most beautiful of the genus, abounds on the lower moors, and commons of Great Britain and western Europe, in such situations being some times more prevalent than the ling. The flowers of both these species yield much honey, furnishing a plentiful supply to the bees in moorland districts, from this heath honey the Futs probably brewed the mead said by Boetius to have been made from the flowers themselves.

It was until recently supposed that no species of heath existed in America, but of late years isolated plants of ling have been found in various parts of New England, Nova Scotia, and Cape Breton, while it has been stated to occur in some abundance in several places in Newfoundland, probably in distant ages it may have had a wider range on the American continent. The whole group, as observed by Benthams, is "eminently Atlantic" in its present distribution,—of nearly 500 known species by far the greater part being indigenous to the western districts of South Africa, and nearly all the remainder limited to Europe and its adjacent islands.

The Cape heaths have long been favourite objects of horticulturists. In the warmer parts of Britain several will bear exposure to the cold of ordinary winters in a sheltered border, but most need the protection of the conservatory. They are sometimes raised from seed, but are chiefly multiplied by cuttings "stuck" in sand, and afterwards transferred to pots filled with a mixture of black peat and sand, the peat should be dry and free from sourness. Much attention is requisite in watering heaths, as they seldom recover if once allowed to droop, while they will not bear much water about their roots: the heath-house should be light and well ventilated, the plants requiring sun, and soon perishing in a close or permanently damp atmosphere, in England little or no heat is needed in ordinary seasons. The European heaths succeed well in English gardens, only requiring a peaty soil and sunny situation to thrive as well as in their native localities. *E. caerulea*, *modestissima*, *albaria*, *virgata*, and the pretty cross-leaved heath of boggy moors, *E. tetralix*, are among those most worthy of cultivation. The beautiful large-flowered St Daboc's heath, belonging to the closely allied genus *Menthaea*, is likewise often seen in gardens. (C F S.)

HEATHOOT, JOHN (1788–1861), the author of important inventions for facilitating the manufacture of Buckingham or French lace, was born at Duffield near Derby in 1788. During his apprenticeship to a framesmith near

Loughborough, he made an improvement in the construction of the warp loom, so as to produce mitts of a lace like appearance by means of it. He commenced business on his own account at Nottingham, but finding himself subjected to the intrusion of competing inventors he removed to Hethen. There he diligently prosecuted his experiments, and in 1808 constructed a machine capable of producing an exact imitation of real pillow lace. This was by far the most expensive and complex textile apparatus till then existing, and in describing the process of his invention, Heathcoat said in 1836, "The single difficulty of getting the diagonal threads to twist in the allotted space was so great that, if now to be done, I should probably not attempt its accomplishment." Some time before perfecting his invention, which he patented in 1800, he removed to Loughborough, where he entered into partnership with Mr Lacy, a Nottingham manufacturer, but in 1816 their factory was attacked by the Luddites and the lace frames destroyed. The damage was assessed in the King's Bench at £10,000, but as Heathcoat declined to expend the money in the county of Leicester he never received any part of it. Undaunted by his loss, he began at once to construct new and greatly improved machines used in an unoccupied factory at Tiverton, Devonshire, propelling them by water-power and afterwards by steam. His claim to the invention of the twisting and weaving lace machine was disputed, and a patent was taken out by a clever workman for a similar machine, which was decided at a trial in 1816 to be an infringement of Heathcoat's patent. He followed his great invention by others of much ability, as, for instance, contrivances for ornamenting net while in course of manufacture and for making ribbons and platted and twisted net upon his machines, improved yarn spinning frames, and methods for winding raw silk from cocoons. He also patented an improved process for extracting gum from the resinous part of the *Euphorbia*. An offer of £10,000 was made to him in 1835 for the use of his processes in dressing and finishing silk nets, but he allowed the highly profitable secret to remain undivulged. In 1832 he patented a steam plough, which stood foremost in public estimation until superseded by those of Fowler and others. Heathcoat was elected member of parliament for Tiverton in 1832. Though he seldom spoke in the House he was constantly engaged on committees, where his thorough knowledge of business and sound judgment were highly valued. He retained his seat until 1850, and after two years of declining health he died in January 1861 at Bolham House, near Tiverton.

HEATING. In temperate latitudes the climate is generally such as to necessitate in dwelling, during a great portion of the year, a temperature warmer than that out of doors, and, similarly, tropical plants growing in temperate climates require artificial heat in the house in which they are preserved. Thus heating is required for health and comfort the object of the application of science is to obtain these with the greatest degree of economy. In its aspect as to health it may be assumed that no system of heating is advisable which does not provide for a constant renewal of the air in the locality warmed. In climates such as that of the United Kingdom, the temperature of living rooms should be maintained at from 54° to 68° Fahr in the daytime, the night temperature may be lower, but should not fall below 40°, and the humidity of the air as measured by the wet and dry bulb thermometers should show a difference of not less than 4° nor much exceeding 8° between the two thermometers, although with an ample supply of air a greater degree of dryness would probably not be found objectionable.

All heating apparatus depends upon the transference of heat from the fire to the various parts of the building which

it is intended to warm, and this transfer may be effected by radiation, by conduction, or by convection. Radiant heat is emitted and absorbed in an accelerating ratio in proportion as the difference of temperature between the radiant and the recipient increases, and, with the same difference of temperature between the recipient and the radiant, the effect of the radiant will be greater according to the increased temperature of the recipient. In other words, the ratio of the emission of heat increases with the temperature. It is thus easier to effect the warming of a given space by means of a highly heated surface than by a surface emitting a lower temperature.

An open fire acted by radiation, it warms the air in a room by first warming the walls, floor, ceiling, and articles in the room, and these in their turn warm the air. Therefore in a room with an open fire the air of the room is, as a rule, less heated than the walls. In this case the warming of the air depends on the capacity of the surfaces to absorb or emit heat, except that the heat received by the walls may be divided into two parts, one part heating the air in contact with the wall, and the other passing through the wall to the outer surface, where it is finally dissipated and wasted. Fireplaces are sometimes constructed to assist the warming of the air of a room. For instance, in Sylvester's gas iron bars of which one end terminates under the fire and so as to form a projecting radiating head. The ventilating fireplace warms the fresh air before its admission into the room by means of gills cast on the back of the grate.

In a close stove, heated to a moderate temperature, the heat, as it passes from the fire, warms the surface of the materials which enclose and are in contact with the fire and with the heated gases. The materials next transfer the heat to the outer surface in contact with the air, and the air is warmed by the agency of this outer surface. If heated to high temperatures a stove gives out radiant heat, which passes through the air to warm the objects on which the rays impinge.

With hot water pipes, the heat from the water heats the inner surface of the pipe, and this surface transfers its heat to the outer surface through the material of the pipe. The rate at which the heat can pass from the inner to the outer surface, and be thus utilized instead of passing away straight into the chimney, depends on the heat evolved by the fire, on the extent of surfaces exposed to the heat and their capacity to absorb and emit heat, and on the quality of the material between the inner and the outer surface as a good or bad conductor of heat. This passage of heat through a body by conduction varies directly with the quality of material, and with the difference between the temperature of the inner surface exposed to the heat and the outer surface exposed to a cooling influence, and inversely as the thickness between the surfaces. Other things being equal, copper is a better material than iron for conveying the heat from the fire to water or air, and coverings of brickwork, wood, or woollen fabrics are better adapted than iron for retaining the heat. The property which appears more than any other to make materials good non-conductors of heat is their porosity to air, and the retention of the air in their pores.

The direct warming of the air may be effected by stoves with brick or iron flues, or by hot water or steam pipes. The sizes of the heating surfaces for this object must be proportioned to the volume of air required to be warmed for ventilation, and the degree of heat to be maintained, the thickness of the material, and its capacity for absorbing and radiating heat and for transferring heat from one surface to the other. When a large volume of air is supplied and removed for ventilation, rapidly in transferring the heat from the fuel to the air is an important consideration. Brick stoves and flues are worse conductors of heat than iron stoves or flues, but the surface of a brick stove parts with the heat which reaches it somewhat more rapidly than the surface of an iron stove. This slow conducting power of the material and the greater thickness of

a brick stove prevent alterations which may take place in the fire from being felt so much as with iron stoves or flues, and therefore the brick stove warms the air more equally, without sudden variations, than so warmed is free from objectionable elements, and where they can be made equally effective is available to use brick stoves for warming air for ventilating purposes.

With an iron flue pipe from a stove, almost the whole heat which any fuel is capable of developing may be utilized by using a sufficiently long pipe, horizontal, and in the position of the flue to convey the products of combustion to the outer air. The heat given out by a stove pipe varies with the temperature from end to end, being of course greatest at the end next the stove, while the emission of heat is very rapid, and the amount of heat given out per square foot will vary at each point as the distance from the stove increases. The proportions also into which the heat divides itself between radiation and convection vary greatly with the temperature. Thus, with a stove pipe heated at the end nearest the stove to a dull red heat of 1250° Fahr., and of sufficient length to allow the heat to be diminished to 160° at the further end, it could be found that at the stove end of the flue pipe 52 per cent of the total heat emitted by the pipe is given out by radiation to the walls and only 8 per cent to the air, but at the end and the heat is nearly equally divided, the walls receiving 66 and the air 45 per cent. Taking the whole length of such a pipe, the walls would receive 74 per cent and the air 26 per cent of the heat emitted. But with a flue pipe heated to lower temperatures, the air might receive half the heat or even more. When therefore the object is to heat the walls rather than the air, the temperature of the pipes should be high, and for this purpose stove pipes are more effective than hot-water or low-pressure steam pipes. At high temperatures there will be practically little difference of effect between horizontal and vertical pipes heated, but at low temperatures it is principally that due to radiation, which is independent of the form and position of the radiant. An adequate proportion of flue pipes to the form and size of the stove involves a large surface for the flue pipe, with a careful observation of the conditions, as much as 941 per cent of the heat in the fuel has been utilized.

There is, however, several serious objections to iron stoves, especially for small rooms, as a long flue pipe is unnecessary, on that account often inadmissible, iron stoves heat rapidly, and easily become red hot, and the effect produced therefore is unequal. Carbonic oxide, too, has been found in air warmed by iron stoves very highly heated. It is alleged that, highly heated, iron stoves take the oxygen from the carbonic acid and the air in contact with its surface, and thus reduce the acid to carbonic oxide.

When iron stoves or cookers are used for heating air, care should be taken to prevent the iron from assuming a high temperature, and with this object all iron stoves should have a lining of fire brick, so as to prevent the fire from coming in direct contact with the iron, such an arrangement preserves greater regularity in the heating of the air. This object may be also attained by giving the stove a large surface in proportion to the fire by means of flanges or gills to carry off the heat as fast as it is generated. Iron coated with a surface of glazed enamel would enable the heat to pass rapidly from the fire to the surface, while the enamel surface would emit the heat more rapidly than the iron surface.

Hot water pipes for warming air are free from many of the objections arising from the direct action of heat from iron, because the heat can be regulated with ease.

A high temperature may be obtained from water without generating steam by heating it under pressure. In Parkes's high-pressure system, a continuous iron tube, 1 inch diameter, is filled with water about one-sixth of the length of the tube is coiled and placed in a furnace, and the remainder, forming the heating surface, is heated by the circulation of the water. At the highest level to which the tube is raised it is submerged in a tank of water, a space for expansion of the heated water equal to 5 per cent of the contents of the small tube.

Pipes may be heated by either hot water or by steam. The higher the temperature, the greater is the comparative effect in warming air, therefore, with small heating surface, steam pipes are more efficient than hot water pipes, and steam at a high pressure more efficient than low pressure steam. The efficient action of hot water pipes depends upon the upward flow of the heated and expanded water as it passes from the boiler, the passage being made as direct as possible, and so protected as to lose little heat between the boiler and the places where the heat is to be utilized. The return pipe, which brings back the water after it has been cooled down by the abstraction of heat in warming the air, should be passed into the bottom of the boiler as directly and in as uniform a line from the place where the heat has been used as possible. The velocity of flow in the pipes will depend upon the temperature at which the water leaves the boiler, the height to which the heated water has to rise, and the temperature at which it passes down the return pipe back into the boiler. The efficiency of the system will be regulated by these conditions, by the size of the pipe, and by such other conditions as affect the flow

of water in pipes. When the boiler or source of heat is very near the level of the pipes for heating the air, the average temperature which can be obtained in the pipes will be lower than when the vertical column is long. The heating surface must be regulated with reference to this difference of level. It may be then assumed that with small pipes, the temperature being constant, the velocity of flow in the pipe necessary to furnish a given amount of heat will vary in the ratio of the length of the pipe. When the water enters twice through the pipes by virtue of the difference of temperature of the flow and return currents only, it is impossible to count upon a greater mean temperature of the pipes than from 180° to 185°, because above a third temperature the water in the boiler begins to boil. To obtain a sufficient velocity of circulation for long distances, or with small differences of level, a forced circulation may be resorted to. This has been done by Messrs. Bissell and Anderson at the costly lunatic asylum at Dorchester, in the following manner. The whole hot water service is supplied from boilers placed at one end of the asylum buildings, which extend to a distance of several hundred yards. These are two pipes, one of them, which may be called the flow pipe, is connected directly with the boiler, terminating at the point farthest from the boiler, in a dead end, the other, which may be termed the return pipe, is parallel to the first, and terminates at one end in a cistern which is placed about 6 feet above, and supplies the boiler. At the other end furthest from the cistern the second pipe also terminates in a dead end. At each provision of place, to which hot water is required to be conveyed, there is a connection between the two pipes, which can be closed or opened at will, when it is opened, the water can pass from the flow to the return pipe. In the second, or return pipe, near the point where it ascends to the cistern, is placed a tertiary pump, or fan wheel, which is always kept revolving. When the openings are all closed between the two pipes, the pump or fan simply lifts through the water, but as soon as the return pipe obtains a supply of water from any of the openings between it and the flow pipe, a circulation is established.

The following diagram, resulting from Mr. Anderson's experiments, published in the *Journal of the Institution of Civil Engineers* for 1877, shows the total units of heat given out by extension and wrought-iron pipes per square foot of surface per hour for various differences of temperature applicable either to hot water or steam pipes. Suppose, for example, it is required to know how much heat will be given out by 4 inch cast-iron or 2 inch wrought-iron pipes at 180° in the temperature difference of which is 65°, the difference of temperature is 180°, and corresponding to this will be found 2327 units for 4 inch pipes and 866 units for 2 inch wrought-iron pipes per square foot per hour.

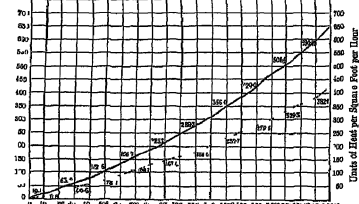


Diagram for calculating the heat given out by 4 inch cast-iron and 2 inch wrought-iron pipes at various differences of temperature. The dotted line shows the 4 inch, and the solid line the 2 inch pipes.

The amount of heating surface to be afforded with hot water pipes depends mainly upon the volume of air to be admitted and removed, and the temperature desired to be maintained, but in any given building there are other circumstances to be taken into account, viz., the position, aspect, material, temperature of locality, thickness of walls, size and form of windows, and other influences affecting the temperature of the incoming air, or causing loss of heat. An empirical rule has been laid down that in a dwelling house 1 square foot of heating surface is required for every 65 cubic feet of space to be warmed, and in a greenhouse 1 square foot to every 84 cubic feet. This empirical rule does not take into account the sanitary considerations as to the renewal of air.

Steam heated pipes present important advantages in some cases over hot water pipes for heating purposes, because of the higher temperature to which the pipes can be raised, then consequent smaller size, and the facility of conveying the heat to a distance. Steam heating may be applied directly, and the waste steam from an engine is also applicable for heating.

The direct application of steam heating on a large scale has been made at Lockport, New York. About 200 houses in the city are heated from a central supply of steam from a boiler of 400 horse power, heating from a boiler house, which contains two boilers 36 feet by 5 feet, and one boiler 8 feet by 8 feet. These boilers are fired during the winter to a pressure of 35 lb to the inch, with a consumption of 1 ton of anthracite coal per twenty four hours. The water present of 35 lb in winter and 25 lb in summer is maintained through a total length of 3 miles of piping up to the several points of consumption, where there is a cut off under the control of the consumer. The first 600 feet of mains from the boiler cut off at 13 inches, and then the 1400 feet of 8 inch pipes, 1600 feet of 2 1/2 inch pipes, and 2000 feet of 2 inch pipes. The supply pipes from these mains to the houses are 1 1/2 inches in diameter, and within each house 3 inch pipes are used. In addition to the cut off of the steam from the main under the control of the consumer, there is a pressure valve regulated to a 5 lb pressure under the control of the consumer, and beyond this is an ingeniously constructed meter, which indicates, not only the total consumption in cubic feet of steam, but also the quantity of steam in each apartment. At each 100 feet of main an expansion valve, like an ordinary piston and socket is inserted, allowing an expansion in each section of 100 feet of 1 1/2 inches for the heat at 35 lb pressure. No condensation occurs in the mains. They are covered with a thin layer of asbestos paper next the iron, then a wrapping of Russian felt, and finally manilla paper, and the whole is enclosed in unglazed brick out three quarters of an inch thick, then the 4 inch cast-iron pipes, and lastly the steel like gas pipes. The distribution of heat in the apartments is by means of radiators consisting of mesh pipes, 80 inches long, placed vertically either in a circle or as a double row, and connected together at top and bottom by 1/2 inch pipes. The condensed water, which escapes at a temperature a little below boiling, and is sufficient for all the domestic purposes of the house, or it may be used as necessary heating power in agricultural and other purposes.

The steam has also been applied at the hot air of the town over half a mile from the boilers for motive power, and two steam engines of 10 horse and 14 horse power are worked from the boilers at a distance of half a mile with but a slightly increased consumption of fuel. The fuel on steam is also used for cooking purposes, and for boiling, and even for baking. As in the case of gas supply, the steam supply company lay their pipes up to the houses, the consumer paying for all internal pipes, fittings, and radiators. In a small house the average amount of heat required is estimated to be \$150, and in larger houses with costly fittings to \$500.

Boulton's system of heating with exhaust or waste steam is devised to cause the steam from a steam engine to travel long distances without any back pressure on the engine. It is especially applicable to drying rooms in which 150° Fahr. has been obtained by a large heating surface, for a lower temperature less heating surface is required. The capacity of heating the exhaust steam is nearly in a ratio with the fuel expended in the boiler. There is some cooling in passing through the engine, and in the conveyance along the pipes to the rooms to be heated, but this loss is comparatively small if the pipes and the cylinders are covered with a good non-conductor, and the condensed water is sent back into the boiler. Thus, if the steam be taken from the boiler direct to the pipes at five atmospheres, the temperature would be 307°, and if a comparative quantity of steam were allowed to pass through the engine to create power, and discharged into the pipes at one atmosphere, it would decrease in temperature to 218°, but it would increase in bulk according to the expansion, and thus to obtain nearly the same temperature in the room the heating surface should be increased.

With an engine of 17 inch cylinders and 25 horse power nominal, the exhaust steam has been made to travel 200 yards in a direct line, as well as to pass into various branches, amounting in the aggregate to about 2300 yards (or 13 miles) of 1 1/2 inch pipes. After this it warms the water for the boiler, and the steam is not all used up. The whole efficiency of the system depends upon so arranging the pipes as to prevent back pressure. Mr. Boulton assumed that one horse power if properly applied should be warm about 80,000 cubic feet of space, subject to reductions for window space, wall space, the number of cubic feet of air allowed to escape for ventilation, and other considerations, and 1/25 down the following empirical rule, viz., 1 square foot of steam pipe is required for each 6 square feet of glass in the window, 1 for every 6 cubic feet of an escaping for ventilation per minute, and 1 for every 150 feet of wall, roof, or ceiling, adding about 16 per cent for contingencies.

Wrought iron pipes 1 1/2 inch bore are the most economical for steam, as they afford a large heating surface with small area. In heating living rooms by steam, the high temperature of the pipes affords one of the advantages of steam heating, viz., the radiation, and combines with this the advantage of the hot water pipes possess of directly warming the air. (D G)

**HEBBEL, FRIEDRICH** (1813–1863), a German poet and dramatist, was born of peasant parents at Weesbuden, in Schleswig-Holstein, 18th March 1813. In his fourteenth year he obtained a humble clerkship in his native parish, but already his ambition was soaring towards higher things. At an early period he began to practise poetical composition, and several of his poems published in the *Modestzeitung* at Hamburg awakened such interest that several gentlemen procured him in his twenty-second year the means of preparing himself in Hamburg for the university. He afterwards studied philosophy and history at Heidelberg and Marisch. In 1841 he returned to Hamburg, where he published his first tragedy, *Judith*, and in a journey which he made to Copenhagen in 1842 he formed the acquaintance of Thorwaldsen and Oehlenschläger, and acquired the more substantial advantage of a travelling annuity from the king of Denmark. He accordingly visited Paris, after which he went to Italy, where he remained several years, staying principally at Rome, Pisa, and Palermo. Having in the spring of 1846 stopped at Vienna on his way home to Germany, he made the acquaintance of the actress Christine Engelaar, whom he married in May of the same year. His marriage led him to take up his permanent residence in Vienna, and probably deepened his interest in dramatic composition, which from that time chiefly occupied his attention. He died in 1863. His principal dramas are *Genoève*, 1843, *Maria Magdalena*, 1844, *Judith*, 1851, *Agnes Bernauer*, 1855, and *Die Nibelungen*, 1862. They exhibit considerable skill in the portraiture of character, great glow of passion, and a true feeling for dramatic situations, but their poetic effect is marred by frequent extravagances which border on the grotesque, and by the introduction of incidents the unpleasant character of which is not sufficiently relieved. In many of his smaller poems his undoubted poetic gifts found a truer and more artistic utterance.

His collected works appeared at Hamburg in 12 vols. (1865–68). His biography by Emil Kuhn was published at Vienna in 1877.

**HEBE**, in Greek mythology, is a personification of the blooming freshness and youth of nature. Originally she appears almost identical with the pure Greek Aphrodite (as distinguished from the Oriental goddess). Hebe is the daughter of Zeus and Hera, as Aphrodite of Zeus and Dione, but Dione and Hera are only two names for the same goddess. Like Aphrodite, Hebe is called the most beautiful of the gods (*Find. N., 10, 17*). In Sicily and Phlius Hebe is called *Dea*, a regular epithet of Aphrodite. In Phlius, where Hebe was worshipped on the citadel in a temple where no image of her was allowed and to which right of asylum was attached, a festival called *ἑβηοτόμιος* was celebrated to her every year, and ivy was sacred also to Aphrodite. It is in accordance with the close resemblance between Aphrodite and Hera that Hebe also has many points of analogy with the latter, to whom she is compared by Gerhald and Welcker (*Gr. Gott.*, i. 369). According to the custom for the unmarried daughters of a family, Hebe sets in the Homeric poems as a sort of attendant to the gods and especially to her own mother Hera. She offers the cup to the gods, just as on earth the women, and especially the youngest daughter, did to guests and to warriors departing or returning. She bathes Ares (*Il., v. 905*), as Polycaeste does Telemachus. She harnesses the horses for Hera (*Il., v. 723*). She appears very often in connexion with the worship of Hera. A statue of her by Naucydes stood beside the Hera of Polyclitus in the Heraeum at Argos. Praxiteles placed statues of her and Athena beside that of Hera in the temple at Mantinea, and Kekule (*Hebe*) maintains that the artistic conception of Hebe which prevailed in the finest period of Greek art

was a slight modification of that of Hera, and he believes that a bust, now in private possession, is the single remaining example of its kind. Welcker's opinion that the so-called Farnese Flora is really a Hebe has not been generally accepted. In later art she is often represented, like Ganymedes, caressing the eagle, and it is possible that the epithet Ganymedea, by which she was called in Phlius, is not really ancient, but arises from the supposed analogy of her office with that of Ganymedes. The meaning of the word Hebe tended to transform the goddess into a mere personification of the eternal youth that belongs to the gods, and this conception is frequently met with. Then she becomes identical with the Roman Junonia, who is simply an abstraction of an attribute of Jupiter Juventas, the god of increase and blessing and youth. By a most transparent allegory it was said that Juventas and Terminus alone of all the gods refused to give way when the temple of Jupiter Capitolinus was being built. Perhaps the most interesting point about Hebe is her connexion with Hercules. When he was received among the gods and reconciled to Hera, Hebe was given him in marriage. This legend appears only in a doubtful line of Homer (*Od., xi. 698*), but Hesiod (*Th., 850*) and Pindar (*N., 10, 17*) also knew it. They were worshipped together in the Cynosarges at Athens, and represented side by side on the Amyclæan throne. The apotheosis of Hercules and his marriage with Hebe became a favourite subject with poets and painters. Many instances occur on vases, though several of those enumerated by Kekulé are otherwise explained by other writers on art.

**HEBER, REGINALD** (1783–1826), a distinguished pietist and hymn-writer, was born at Malpas in Cheshire in 1783. He early showed remarkable promise, and was entered in November 1800 at Brasenose College, Oxford, where he proved to be a distinguished student, carrying off prizes for a Latin poem entitled *Carmen Sæculare*, an English poem on *Palæstina*, and a prose essay on *The Sense of Honour*. In November 1804 he was elected a fellow of All Souls College, and, after finishing his distinguished university career, he made a long tour on the Continent. He was admitted to holy orders in 1807, and was then presented to the family living of Hodnet in Shropshire. In 1809 Heber married Amelia, daughter of Dr Shipley, dean of St Asaph. He was appointed Hampton lecturer for 1816, presiding in St Asaph in 1817, preacher at Llandovery Inn in 1822, and bishop of Calcutta in January 1823. Before sailing for India he received the degree of D.D. from the university of Oxford. In India Bishop Heber laboured indefatigably, not only for the good of his own diocese, but for the spread of Christianity throughout the East. Animated by apostolic zeal, he undertook numerous tours in India, consecrating churches, founding schools, and discharging other Christian duties. Such devotion to his work in a trying climate told severely on his health. At Tichinopoly he was seized with an apoplectic fit when in his bath, and expired on 24 April 1826.

Heber was a man of profound learning, refined literary taste, and great practical energy. His Christian character manifested all the beauty and simplicity of the days of the early church. As a poet he has attained a high place. His *Palæstina* is generally considered the best prize poem ever written at Oxford. Heber's fame rests mainly on his hymns, which, as literary compositions, rank among the best in the English language. Those beginning as follows may be instanced—"Lord of mercy and of might," "Brightest and best of the sons of the morning," "By cool Siloam's shady rill," "God, that madest earth and heaven," "The Lord of might from Sion's brow," "Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty," "From Greenland's icy mountains," "The Lord will come, the earth



shall quiko", "The Sea of God goes forth to win / Heben's hymns and other poems are distinguished by much of style, pathos, and soaring aspiration, but they lack originality, and are rather rhetorical than poetical in the strict sense.

Heber was a voluminous author, as may be seen from the following works — *Palästina, o Poem, to which is added the Passage of the Red Sea, 1800*; *Europa, Lure on the Present War, 1800*; *The Personality and Office of the Christian Church, assisted and corrected by him, the Baptist Lecture for 1815*; *The Whole Works of Bishop Jeremy Taylor, with a Life of the Author, and a Critical Examination of his Writings, 1822*; *Hymns written and adapted to the Weekly Church Service of the 1st, 3rd, 5th, 7th, 9th, 11th, 13th, 15th, 17th, 19th, 21st, 23rd, 25th, 27th, 29th, 31st, 1828*; *Sermons preached at England, and Sermons preached in India, 1820*; *Devotional Sermons, 1837*.

For further information about Heber see his *Life*, by his widow, 1870, which contains a number of Heber's magnificent writings. *The Last Days of Heber Heber*, by Thomas J. Johnson, C. H. W. & Co. 1871.

**HEBERDEN, WILLIAM (1710-1801)**, a practical physician of some celebrity, was born in London in the year 1710. In the end of 1724 he was sent to St John's College, Cambridge, where he obtained a fellowship about 1730, became master of arts in 1732, and took his degree in physic in 1739. He remained at Cambridge about ten years longer, as a practitioner of physic, and gave an annual course of lectures on natural history. In 1746 he became a fellow of the Royal College of Physicians in London, and two years afterwards he left Cambridge to establish himself in London, where he was elected a fellow of the Royal Society in 1769, and was employed in a very extensive medical practice for more than thirty years. Latterly he passed his summers at a house which he had taken at Winlow, but he continued his practice during the winter for some years longer. In 1778 he was made an honorary member of the Royal Society of Medicine at Paris. He died 17th May 1801.

Heberden's first publication seems to have been a short essay on the incongruous disposition of the multitude and thence, entitled *Antithesia* (1746). He also wrote several papers for the Royal Society, which were published in its *Transactions*, and he was one of the principal contributors to the first three volumes of the *Medical Transactions*, published in a great measure at his suggestion, by the College of Physicians. He is, however, best known by his *Conjectures on the History and Cause of Diabetes*, the result of careful notes made in his pocket-book at the bedside of his patients. In accordance with his directions the work was published posthumously in 1802, prefixed to it is a short notice of his life.

**HEBERT, JACQUES RENÉ (1755-1794)**, a French revolutionist, surnamed from the newspaper he edited "Le Père Duchesne," was born of obscure parents at Alençon in 1755. He came at an early age to Paris, where he lost more than one situation through malversation, and was in abject poverty when the occurrence of the French Revolution opened up to him a career in which he obtained considerable temporary success and permanent notoriety. Having shown great readiness and proficiency in a style of writing, and of oratory which appealed to the worst feelings of the revolutionary mob, he soon acquired great influence in the clubs, and was chosen to oppose the constitutional paper *Le Père Duchesne* by editing a revolutionary paper of the same name. The scurrilous and extravagant language of the new print exactly coincided with the sentiments of the class to whom it was addressed, and it contributed not a little to several of the worst and most violent manifestations of the revolutionary spirit. It had a very beneficial influence on the fortunes of its editor, who after the 10th August 1793 was one of the chief members of the revolutionary commune, and on the 24 September was appointed substitute to the *procureur syndic*. On the 24th May 1793 an order was sent out for his arrest, by the more moderate party of the commune on the ground that he was plotting their assassination, but on account of a formidable outbreak of the mob he was set at liberty,

and when he appeared again at the commune he was presented with a civic crown. Having been appointed a member of the commission to examine Marie Antoinette, he with unspurred moral baseness foully accused her of a crime too scandalous to be mentioned. Along with several of his colleagues he invented the worship of the goddess "Reason," and subsequently he organized a party of ultra-revolutionists known as the Hébertistes or *enragés*. The faction were, however, arrested by the committee of public safety, and on the 24th March 1794 were led forth to execution. Hébert behaved with great cowardice at his trial, and died amid the jeers and insults of the mob over whose passions he had at one time exercised such sway and to whom he owed his promotion to power.

He was the author of *Vérités essentielles par le célèbre Père Duchesne*, 1791; *Vie privée de l'abbé Maury*, 1790; *Petit catéchisme de l'abbé Maury*, 1791; *Nouvelle langue usagée*, 1792.

**HEBREW LANGUAGE AND LITERATURE** The name *Hebrew* (Latin, *Hebræus*, Greek, ἑβραῖος) is a transcription of 'ebryd, the Aramaic equivalent of the original Old Testament word עִבְרִי, 'ebri, pl. 'ebriym, which is the proper Gentile name of the people who also bore the collective name of Israel or Children of Israel (B'né Israel). The name of Israel with its sacred associations in the patriarchal history is that by which the Old Testament writers prefer to designate their nation, and this circumstance, combined with the fact that the Sacred Text frequently employs the term Hebræus when foreigners are introduced as speaking or spoken to (e.g., Exod. ii 6, 1 Sam. ix 6, 9, Gen. xi 15, Ex. iii 18), has led to the conjecture that the name of Hebræus (men from the other side, &c. of the Euphrates) was originally given to the descendants of Abraham by their Canaanite neighbours, and continued to be the usual designation of the Israelites among foreigners, just as the Magyars are known to other Europeans as Hungarians (foreigners), as were the Huns in the Middle Ages (warriors), or as the Greeks gave the name of Phenicians to the people that called themselves Canaanites.<sup>1</sup> A closer view of the case does not confirm this conjecture. The name of Israel is often found in the Old Testament in the mouth of foreigners, and the whole *usua loquendi* is explained by the observation that the Gentile noun corresponding to the collective "Israel" is regularly "Hebrew" and not "Israelite," the latter word being rare and apparently of late formation.<sup>2</sup> Nor has the word Hebræus been hitherto found in the early monuments of other Eastern nations, for the identification proposed by Chabas which finds the Hebræus in the hieroglyphic Apurim is more than doubtful.<sup>3</sup> On the other hand the name of Israel appears on the stone of Mesha King of Moab, and perhaps has been deciphered on Assyrian monuments.<sup>4</sup>

The form 'ebri, in the language of Semitic grammarians, a relative noun, presupposing the word 'Eber as the name of the tribe, place, or common ancestor, from whom the Hebræus are designated. Accordingly we find Eber as a nation side by side with Assyria in the obscure poetical passage Num. xxi 24, and Eber as ancestor of the Hebræus in the genealogical lists of Gen. x, xi. Here we must apparently distinguish two records.<sup>5</sup> According to

<sup>1</sup> See especially Gesenius, *Geschichte der Hebräischen Sprache und Schrift*, pt. 9, seg., most recently Kautzsch in Rehm's *Handwörterbuch*.

<sup>2</sup> In 2 Sam. xxi 25 Israelite must be corrected to Ishmaelite, as in the parallel passage 1 Chron. ii 17.

<sup>3</sup> Chabas, *Mélanges Egyptologiques*, i. 43; Ebers, *Ägypten und die Aegyptier*, i. 816; Budge, *Real Dictionary of Egyptology*, 688 (Eng. trans., i. 288-9); Birch, *Papyrus*, p. 138.

<sup>4</sup> Schmidt, *Kanaanäische und Aramäische Sprachforschung* (Gießen, 1878), pp. 359, 386, gives the latest arguments for this not undisputed reading.

<sup>5</sup> See De Goeje in the *Theol. Tijdschrift*, 1870, p. 243, and Wellhausen in *Jahrbuch f. D. Theol.*, 1876, p. 385.

Gen xi (and Gen x 24) Eber is the great-grandson of Shem through Arphaxad, and ancestor of Tishah through Peleg, Reu, Serug, and Nahor. These are not to be taken as the names of individual men. Several of them are designations of places or districts near the upper waters of the Euphrates and Tigris, and among other circumstances the place at the head of the series assigned to the district of Airapachitis (Alphadad), through which a migration from Ararat to the lands occupied by the Semites in historical times would first pass, suggests the probability that the genealogy is not even meant to exhibit a table of ethnological affinities, but rather presents a geographical sketch of the early movements of the Hebrews, who are personified under the name of Eber. If this is so we can hardly venture to assert (with some scholars) that the author of the list (the Levitical Elohist) extended the name of Hebrews to all descendants of Tishah.<sup>1</sup> The case is different with another and apparently older record of which a fragment seems to be preserved in Gen x 21, 25-30. Here there is no intermediate link between Shem and Eber. Sons of Shem and sons of Eber appear to be coextensive ideas, and to the latter are reckoned not only the descendants of Peleg (Arameans, Israelites, Ishmaelites, etc.), but the South Arabian tribes of Joktan. We possess no information which casts light on this wide conception of the sons of Eber, and in the ordinary language of the Old Testament Hebrew and Israelite are strictly synonymous.

Compure, however, the interesting conjectures of Sprenger, *Die Geographie Arabiens* (Bonn, 1876), p. 294, who identifies Peleg with Pelag in Central Arabia, and finds in the record a witness to the truth of the view that Arabia is the original center of the Semitic dispersion, a view which is shared by other scholars, as Hartog (*Arabische Inseln*, pp. 28, 39), and Schadee (*S D M G*, 1878, pp. 397-424). In this connection it is perhaps worth while to note the fact that the gentile name Obar, belonging to Obar, a minor division of the Joktanite tribe of the *Arabia Felix*, is fixed upon the Hebrew immigrants by the earlier inhabitants of Canaan.<sup>2</sup>

When it is recognized that Eber in Genesis is not an actual personage but an ethnological or geographical abstraction, we are thrown back on etymological conjectures as to the origin of the name of Hebrews. Eber means the further bank of a river, from a root meaning to cross. Hence in Gen xiv 13 the Septuagint renders Abram the Hebrew by  $\delta \pi \epsilon \rho \alpha \rho \eta$ , "the crosser."<sup>3</sup> Grammatically more accurate, while resting on the same etymology, is the rendering of Aquila,  $\delta \pi \epsilon \rho \alpha \rho \eta$ , "the man from the other side" of the Euphrates, which is the explanation of Jewish tradition (*Be'shu' Rabba*, and *Rash*) and still generally adopted. It is, however, far from satisfactory, and almost of necessity depends on the theory that the river was fixed upon the Hebrew immigrants by the earlier inhabitants of Canaan.<sup>4</sup> A modified form of the etymology takes Eber in the Arabic sense of a river bank, and makes the Hebrews "dwellers in a land of rivers" (Steiner in the *Bibel-Lex*, ii 618). This goes well with Peleg (watercourse), as in Arabia we have the district Falag, so named because it is furrowed by waters (Sprenger, *Geog Arab*, p. 234).<sup>5</sup>

The name "Hebrew Language"—By the Hebrew language we understand the ancient tongue of the Hebrews in Canaan—the language in which the Old Testament is composed, with the exception of the Aramaic passages (Jer x 11, Ezra iv 8-vi 18, vii 12-26, Dan ii 4-vii 28). But

we do not find that this language was called Hebrew by those who spoke it. It is the *lyp*, i. e., speech of *Canaan*, Isa vii 18, or, as spoken in Southern Palestine, *lyp l'Yehud* (3 Kings viii 20, Neh xii 21). The later Jews call it the *holy tongue* in contrast to the *profane* Aramaic dialect (commonly though improperly enough called Syro-Chaldaic) which long before the time of Christ had superseded the old language as the vernacular of the Jews. This change had already taken place at the time when the expression "in Hebrew" (*בְּהִיבְרִית*) first occurs (Prologue to *Suach*), and both in the Apocrypha and in the New Testament the ambiguous term, naming the language after those who used it, often denotes the contemporary vernacular, not the obsolete idiom of the Old Testament. But the other sense was admissible (e. g., *Deut* xv 11, and so frequently in Josephus), and naturally became the prevalent one among Christian writers who had little occasion to speak of anything but the Old Testament Hebrew.<sup>6</sup> In modern usage it is incorrect to call the Jewish Aramaic Hebrew, though uneducated Jews apply the name even to the corrupt German and Spanish jargons which they are accustomed to write and print in Hebrew characters.

*Character and Philological Relations of Hebrew*—Hebrew is a language of the group which since Eichhorn has generally been known as Semitic, and of which Arabic and Ethiopic (Southern Semitic), the various dialects of Aramaic, and the languages of the Assyrian and Babylonian cuneiform inscriptions are the other chief representatives. From its geographical position as the language of Palestine between the Arameans of the north and the Arabs of the south, Hebrew has been called Middle Semitic. Or Aramaic Assyrian and Hebrew may be grouped together as Northern Semitic in contrast to Arabic and Ethiopic. The affinities of the Semitic languages are so close that they may fairly be compared with a sub-group of the Indo-Germanic family—for example, with the Teutonic languages. The fundamental unity of the Semitic vocabulary is easily observed from the absence of compounds (except in proper names) and from the fact that almost all words are derived from their roots in definite patterns (*masorah*) as regular as those of grammatical inflexion. The roots regularly consist of three consonants (seldom four or five), the accompanying vowels having no radical value, but shifting according to grammatical rules to express various embodiments of the root idea. The trilateral roots are substantially common to the whole Semitic group, subject to certain consonantal permutations, of which the most important are as strikingly analogous to those laid down by Grimm for the Teutonic languages.

There are four sounds in Arabic unknown to Hebrew and Aramaic, and for which the former regularly has a substitute, a linguistic—in one case a deep guttural. This guttural ( $\aleph$ ), and the palatal letters which in the following table are represented by  $\aleph$ ,  $\aleph$ ,  $\aleph$ , are peculiar Semitic sounds.

Arabic		Hebrew		Aramaic
$\aleph$	—	$\aleph$	—	$\aleph$
$\aleph$	—	$\aleph$	—	$\aleph$
$\aleph$	—	$\aleph$	—	$\aleph$
$\aleph$	—	$\aleph$	—	$\aleph$ [also $\aleph$ ]

On the last equation see Lagarde, *Semitaica*, i 22, Noldke in *S D M G*, xxxi, 405, and on the permutation of consonants in general, *Hebr. Gram. Syn.*, § 24, Stade in *Monatss. Philolog.* (1876), p. 179 seq. Whether the Arabic or Aramaic forms are the older is disputed. No one maintains that the Hebrew forms are original.

<sup>1</sup> The term "Hebrew language" seems to have originated with the Greeks or Hellenists. Philo, however, calls the language of the Old Testament Chaldaic (*De Vita Mos.*, ii 5, 6, cf. Jerome on Dan 1). On the use of the expression "Hebrew language" in the Talmud, see Berliner, *Beiträge zur heb. Gr.* (Berlin, 1878), p. 5.

<sup>1</sup> The Talmudists, according to other testimonies, are Arameans (Gen xxi 30 seq., *Deut* xcvi 5), but our Elohist, who can hardly have written before the captivity, makes Aram a separate offshoot of Shem, having nothing to do with Eber (*Gen* x 25, 26).

<sup>2</sup> Compare Jerome, *Quæst. lib.* on the passage, and Theodoret, *Qu. LXXI* on *Gen*.

<sup>3</sup> Compare Ewald, *Hebr. Insula* (8d ed.), i 407 seq. (*Hebr. Insula*, i 284), where also other etymologies are noticed.

<sup>4</sup> Complete ignorance of Hebrew made it possible for early Christian writers to derive the name of the Hebrews from Abraham. See Bledius's *Phatag*, hb ii, cap 14. Other guesses will be found in the *Onomasticon*.

Derivation from the roots and inflexion proceed partly by the reduplication of root letters and the addition of certain preformative and afformative (more rarely by the insertion of formative consonants in the body of the root), partly by modifications of the vowels with which the radicals are pronounced. Almost every root expresses in its origin something that can be grasped by the senses, and the mechanism by which words are formed from the root is adapted to present sensible notions in a variety of *nuances* and in all possible embodiments and connexions, so that there are regular forms to express in a single word the intensity, the repetition, the production of the root-idea—the place, the instrument, the time of its occurrence, and so forth. Thus the expression of intellectual ideas is necessarily metaphorical, almost every word being capable of a material sense or at least conveying the distinct suggestion of some sensible notion. For example, the names of passion depict their physiological expression, “to confer honour” means also “to make heavy,” and so on. The same concrete character, the same inadequacy to convey purely abstract thoughts without a substratum appealing to the senses, appears in the grammatical structure of the Semitic tongues,—for example, in the absence of the neuter gender, in the extreme paucity of particles, in the scanty provision for the subordination of propositions, which deprives the Semitic style of all novel periods and reduces it to a succession of short sentences linked by the simple copula *and*. The fundamental element of these languages is the noun, and in the fundamental type of sentence the predicate is a noun set down without any copula and therefore without distinction of past, present, or future time. The finite verb is developed from nominal forms (participial or infinitive), and is equally without distinction of time. Instead of tenses we find two forms, the perfect and the imperfect, which are used according as the speaker contemplates the verbal action as a thing complete or as conditional, imperfect, or in process. It lies in the nature of this distinction that the imperfect alone has moods. In their later stages the languages seek to supply the lack of tenses by circumlocutions with a substantive verb and particles. Other notable features common to the Semitic tongues are the use of appended suffixes to denote the possessive pronouns with a substantive, or the accusative of a personal pronoun with a verb, and the expression of the genitive relation by what is called construction or annexation, the governing noun being placed immediately before the genitive, and if possible slightly shortened in pronunciation so that the two words may run together as one idea. A characteristic of the later stages of the languages is the resolution of this relation into a prepositional clause.

These and other peculiarities are sufficient to establish the original unity of the group, and entitle us to postulate an original language from which all the Semitic dialects have sprung. Of the relation of this language to other linguistic stems, especially to the Indo-Germanic on the east and the North-African languages on the west, we cannot yet speak with certainty, but it appears that the present system of triliteral roots has grown out of an earlier biliteral system which, so far as it can be reconstructed, must form the basis of scientific inquiry into the ultimate affinities of the Semitic group.<sup>1</sup>

Before the use of comparative philology it was a familiar opinion that Hebrew is the original speech of mankind. Taken from the Jews, and as already expressed in the Palestinian Targum on Gen. xi. 1, this opinion drew its

main support from etymologies and other data in the earlier chapters of Genesis, which, however, were as plausibly turned by Syriac writers in favour of their own tongue.<sup>2</sup> Till quite recently many excellent scholars (including Ewald) have claimed for Hebrew the greatest relative antiquity among Semitic tongues. But though Hebrew has by far the oldest literature, this does not prove that its structure comes nearest to the original Semitic language. And it is now generally recognized that in grammatical structure the Arabic, shut up within its native deserts till the epoch of Islam, preserved much more of the original Semitic forms than either Hebrew or Aramaic. In its richer vocalization, in the possession of distinct cases and moods, in the use for feminine nouns of the afformative *t*, which in the northern dialect has passed through *h* (originally audible as in Egyptian Arabic) into a mere vowel, in the more extensive range of passive and modal forms, and in other refinements of inflexion, Arabic represents no later development, but the original wealth and primitive subtlety of Semitic speech, as appears not only from fragmentary survivals in the other dialects but from an examination of the process of decay which has brought the spoken Arabic of the present day into a grammatical condition closely parallel to the Old Testament Hebrew. But while Arabic is in many respects the older brother, it is not the parent of Hebrew. Aramaic, the chief member of the group had an independent development from a stage prior to any existing language, though it would seem that Hebrew did not branch off from Aramaic so soon as from Arabic, while in its later stages it came under direct Aramaic influence.

Among the points in which Hebrew differs both from Arabic and Aramaic may be mentioned the consonantal relations already spoken of, the system of tone long vowels, the use of Vayv consecutive, the *h* of the causative and reflexive stems and of the article, and the compensation for omitting the reduplication of gutturals and *r* by lengthening a preceding vowel.<sup>3</sup> Again, Hebrew agrees with Aramaic against Aramaic in possessing a prefixed article, in the use of the *Nihil* (Arab. *wa*), and in other minor points. But in more notable features Hebrew and Aramaic agree against Arabic, as in the absence of broken plurals, the place of the accent, the aspiration of certain letters whenever they are preceded by a vowel sound, and the substitution of *y* for *ay* or *ay* as the first radical of roots. To give further details would carry us too far into comparative grammar. Speaking generally, it may be said that Hebrew is less copious in vocabulary than Arabic (in which tongue, however, the abundance of synonyms is largely due to an artificial combination of several dialects), and less rich in subtle distinctions of grammatical form and refinements of syntax. On the other hand, Hebrew is much superior to Aramaic in the richness of its structure, in fulness of vowels, and in all the qualities which adapt a language for poetical expression.

*Geographical Sphere and History of Hebrew as a Spoken Language*.—The Hebrew spoken by the Israelites in Canaan was separated only by very minor differences (like those of our provincial dialects) from the speech of neighbouring tribes. We know this for the Moabite language from the stone of Mesha, and the indications furnished by proper names, as well as the acknowledged affinity of Israel with these tribes, make the same thing probable for Ammon and Edom. More remarkable is the fact that the Phoenicians and Canaanites, with whom the Israelites acknowledged no brotherhood, spoke a language which, at

<sup>1</sup> Theodorici (*Quæst. in Gen.*), vi. Barhebraeus, and others cited by Assemani, *Bib. Or.* iii. §14. The same opinion appears among the Babylonian Jews (*Rab. in Syn.*, 85b). Conversely, Jacob of Serug considers the priority of Hebrew (*see J. P. M. G.*, xiv. p. 590). The Arabs, whose language is in many points older than either, yield priority to Hebrew (*Abulfez,* *J. A.*, p. 18), or to Syriac (*Tahiri*, i. p. 220). Abu 'Isa in *Abulfez*, p. 148, the language of the race to which they owed their first knowledge of letters.

<sup>2</sup> The verbal prefixes *ha*, *hah*, appear in Palestinian Aramaic, and the Aramaic dialects also exhibit some traces of a lengthened vowel before *r* (*Nöldeke, Masd. Gram.*, p. 17). On the other hand, the transcription of the LXX shows that Hebrew once could double *r*.

<sup>3</sup> Renan, *Histoire des Langues Sémitiques*, sketches the history of research in this direction. Noteworthy are the remarks of Lagarde, *Synacritic*, p. 121. On survivals from the biliteral stage, see Nöldeke, *Mandäische Gram.*, p. 98.

least as written, differs but little from Biblical Hebrew. This observation has been used in support of the very old idea that the Hebrews originally spoke Aramaic, and changed their language in Canaan. But an exacter study of the Phœnician inscriptions shows differences from Hebrew which suffice to constitute a distinct dialect, and combine with other indications to favour the view that the descendants of Abraham brought their Hebrew idiom with them from Haran. And in this connexion it is important to observe that the old Assyrian, which preceded Aramaic in regions with which the book of Genesis connects the origins of Abraham, is in many respects closely akin to Hebrew.<sup>1</sup> As the origin of Hebrew is lost in the obscurity that hangs over the early movements of the Semitic tribes, so we know very little of the changes which the language underwent in Canaan. The existence of local differences of speech is proved by Judges xii 6, but the attempt to make out in the Old Testament records a northern and a Judæan dialect, or even besides these a third dialect for the Samaritans of the extreme south,<sup>2</sup> has led to no certain results. In general it may be said that the Biblical text supplies inadequate data for studying the history of the language. Semitic writing, especially a purely consonantal text such as the Old Testament originally was, gives an imperfect picture of the very grammatical and phonetic details most liable to vary. It is lost in the course of time the later punctuation (including the notation of vowels), and even many things in the present consonantal text, it presents the formal pronunciation of the Synagogue as it took shape after Hebrew became a dead language—for even the Septuagint has often a more primitive pronunciation of proper nouns. This modern system being applied to all parts of the Old Testament alike, many archaisms were obliterated or disguised, and the earlier and later writings present in the received text a grammatical uniformity which is certainly not original. It is true that occasional consonantal forms inconsistent with the accompanying vowels have survived—especially in the books least read by the Jews—and appear in the light of comparative grammar as indications of more primitive forms. These sporadic survivals show that the correction of obsolete forms was not carried through with perfect consistency, but we are never safe to argue as if we possessed the original form of the texts.

In the Pentateuch, for example, the form מִן (3rd personal pron. masc) but for מִן (the feminine). And hence a favourite argument is drawn for the superior antiquity of this part of the Old Testament. But the same thing is found elsewhere (Fleischer, *Mass. IV. 26*, p. 233), especially in Babylonian copies of the prophets (Gugler, *Urschrift*, p. 236; *J. D. M. G.*, xxvi 676). The feminine can never by any possibility have been pronounced as *hu*, but the old orthography was probably *hu* for *hu* and *hu* alike (Nöldeke in *Bibl. Lexikon*, at *hu*, after Levy).

The chief historical changes in the Hebrew language which we can still trace are due to Aramaic influences. The Northern Israelites came in immediate contact with Aramaean populations and some Aramaic loan-words were used, at least in Northern Israel, from a very early date. At the time of Hezekiah Aramaic seems to have been the usual language of diplomacy spoken by the statesmen of Judah and Assyria alike (2 Kings xvii 26). After the fall of Samaria the Hebrew population of Northern Israel was partly deported, their place being taken by new colonists most of whom probably had Aramaic as their mother-tongue. It is not therefore surprising that even in the language of Judæa interesting signs of Aramaic influence

appear before the Exile.<sup>3</sup> The fall of the Jewish kingdom accelerated the decay of Hebrew as a spoken language. Not indeed that the captives forgot their own tongue in Babylon, as older scholars supposed on the basis of Jewish tradition. The Exilic and post-Exilic prophets do not write in a lifeless tongue, and Hebrew was still the language of Jerusalem in the time of Nehemiah (ch. xiii) in the middle of the 5th century B.C.<sup>4</sup> But after the Exile the petty people of the Jews were in daily intercourse with a surrounding Aramaean population, and the Aramaic tongue, which was the official language of the western provinces of the Persian empire, began to take rank as the recognized medium of polite intercourse and letters even among tribes of Asiatic blood—the Nabataeans whose inscriptions in the Hauran are written in Aramaic. Thus Hebrew as spoken language gradually yielded to its more powerful neighbour, and the style of the latest Old Testament writers is not only full of Aramaic words and forms but largely coloured with Aramaic idioms, while their Hebrew has lost the force and freedom of a living tongue (Ecclesiastes, Esther, some Psalms, Daniel). The Chionides no longer thoroughly understood the Old Hebrew sources from which he worked, while for the latest part of his history he used a Jewish Aramaic document, part of which he incorporated in the book of Ezra. Long before the time of Christ Hebrew was the exclusive property of scholars, and its further history is that of a merely literary language.

*The Literary Development of Hebrew*.<sup>5</sup>—The Semitic peoples possessed the art of writing and an alphabetical character from a date so remote as to be lost in the mists of antiquity. This character was formerly known as Phœnician, its invention being ascribed to that people (Tac, *Ann.*, xi 14). In reality it was the common property of all Semitic nations between Assyria and Egypt—an alphabetic character in contact on the east and on the west with more complicated syllabic or hieroglyphic systems, from one or other of which it may possibly have been derived.

De Rouge's theory that the alphabet was derived by the Phœnicians from the Egyptian hieratic writing obtained much currency a few years ago (see ALPHABET), but has rather lost ground since the appearance in 1874 of the long expected *Mémoires sur l'origine Égyptienne du l'alphabet Phœnicien*. See the criticism in Lagarde's *Symmetrie*, p. 115 seq. A newer theory by Decker (*J. D. M. G.*, xxvi 102 seq.) derives the alphabet from the cuneiform characters, and makes the Aramaeans its authors, for which there is recent tradition in Phrygia, Euxine, and Cilicia. Alexandrian Jews date the invention from the 8th century B.C., when the Assyrians first established themselves as a nation. This is certainly wrong, for, apart from other arguments, the stone of Melis is not a product of the first days of alphabetic writing. Against the theory of the Semitic alphabet from any hieroglyphic system, see Levy, *Phœnicische Studien*, i 49 seq. The best comparative table of Semitic alphabets is that by Euting in the English translation of Bickell's *Outline of Heb. Gram.* (Leipzig, 1877). On the history of Hebrew writing, especially in its bearing on the history of the Biblical text, see Wellhausen in Bickell's *Einleitung*, 4th ed (1878), with Nöldeke's remarks, *J. D. M. G.*, xxvi 551 seq.

This ancient alphabet consists of twenty-two consonants, of which one at least (p) stood in Hebrew for two distinct sounds, still separated in the Septuagint pronunciation. The vowels were supplied by the reader—which is not so difficult in Semitic languages, where vocalization constitutes no difference of root. In certain cases the weaker consonants served as *matres lectionis* to indicate cognate vowel sounds and preclude ambiguity of pronunciation, but in the old

<sup>1</sup> See Schröder's essay on the relation of Phœnician and Hebrew, *Monatsschriftliche Forschungen* (1875), with Nöldeke's criticism, *J. D. M. G.*, xxix 326, also the latter's article, "Syrische, hebräische," in *Bibl. Lexikon*, at 349.

<sup>2</sup> Böttcher, *Lehrb. d. Hebr. Sprache* (1866), i 13 seq.

<sup>3</sup> Details in Rissler, *Die Ekklesiast. Pentateuch. Sermons*, (Leipzig, 1878), the most important collection of materials since Gesenius, *Grammatica der Hebr. Spr. und Schrift* (1816).

<sup>4</sup> An argument to the contrary drawn by Jewish interpreters from Neh. xiii 8 rests on false ezegetics.

<sup>5</sup> As we possess no books in classical Hebrew except the Old Testament, the reader is referred for several aspects of this topic to the sketch of the Old Testament literature in the article BIBLE.

writing this usage was far less extensive than in our Hebrew MSS's, and hardly applied except to diphthongs, and to a — less often 3, 6—at the end of words! This old character with its scanty indications of vowels continued to be used by the Hebrews throughout the flourishing period of their literature and for some time after the Exile, till at length they gradually adopted a new set of letters (the square or, as the Talmud calls it, the Assyrian character) which was developed among the Samaritans and spread with the increase of Aramaic influence. Jewish tradition ascribes the introduction of the square character to Ezra (*Synh* 21b 22a, Jerome, *Prod. Gnt.*), but the Samaritans, who did not receive the Pentateuch from the Jews till about 400 B.C., must have got it in the old letter which they still retain in a corrupted form. The square letter probably did not prevail till a good deal later, the earliest mention in which it appears being of the date 176 B.C. (published by De Vogue, *Rec. Arch.* 1864), while the coins of Judaea retain the old character still later! The transformation was complete before the time of Christ, for Mat. v. 16 alludes to the new form of *Yod* (yot).<sup>2</sup> By this time too the use of *matres lectionis* must have become more ample. The later introduction of vowel points and accents belongs to the history of the study of Hebrew as a dead language. The forms of the old Semitic alphabet are most suitable to be cut on stone, and indicate a special adaptation for monumental inscriptions (/ / the two tables of Decalogue). Between the beginnings of such inscriptions and the general use of writing for literary purposes a considerable period might intervene. The earliest products of Hebrew authorship seem to have been lyrics and laws, which would circulate in the first instance from mouth to mouth without the use of written copies. We have notice of early written collections of lyrics prior to our present historical books—the *Book of the Wars of Jehovah* (Num. xxi. 14) and the *Book of Jashar* (Josh. x, 2 Sam. i). We have no clue to the age of the former book, but the lines quote from it as plainly of great antiquity. The *Book of Jashar* is not earlier than the time of Solomon, for a fragment from it referring to the building of the temple has been recovered from the Septuagint of 1 Kings viii (Wellhausen in Bleek, *ut supra*, p. 236). The earliest date of written law books is uncertain. It may fairly be made a question whether Moses left in writing any other laws than the commandments on the tables of stone. Even Ex. xxiv. 4 and xxvii. 37 may in the original context have referred to the ten words alone. And it is certain that ancient law was handed down by oral tradition and local custom to a much later date. The prophets frequently allude to the oral decisions of the priests as a source of law, and the practice of appealing to the local customs of certain towns is alluded to in 2 Sam. xc. 18 (as restored by Ewald from the LXX)—“Ask at Abel and at Dan whether the genuine old statutes of Israel have lost their force.” In like manner the story of the early fortunes of the nation down to the time of David often presents characteristics which point to oral tradition as its original source. Yet written history began comparatively early. A scribe was attached to the royal court from the reign of David downwards, and the older parts of the books of Samuel, which must have been written not long after the time of that king (see

David), are framed in a masterly style, which shows that the art of composition in prose was already thoroughly understood. So too the best written and most brilliant part of the narrative of the Pentateuch—the combined history of the Jehovah and the non-levitical Elohist—appears to be unquestionably earlier than the use of prophetic literature in the 8th century B.C. In this narrative itself the product of more than one writer—are included several collections of old laws, so that we have between the time of David and the age of Amos and Hosea a flourishing historical and legal literature, in which and in lyrical collections like the *Book of Jashar* were embodied many poems, legends, and other remains, transmitted, whether orally or by writing, from a much earlier date. To the same period may be assigned the most interesting and graphic histories in the book of Kings, the splendid episode of Elijah, and other remains of Ephraimite history, and to these must probably be added the main stock of the Song of Solomon, though this lyric drama has suffered much from interpolation, and presumably was not written down till a comparatively late date and from imperfect recollection, so that its original shape is very much lost. It is mainly from the admirable prose narratives, to which nothing in later books can be compared, that we must judge of the first bloom of Hebrew literature under the ancient kingdoms of Judah and Ephraim, before the exiles, who thus comprised the advance of Assyria and prior to the influence of written prophecy. It is a literature eminently fresh and vivacious, full of exact observation of nature and of men, always drawing directly from life, and working on the reader not by elaborate description but by dramatic presentation of character and action. The authors are too intent upon the story to interpose their own comments or point a moral, but they tell their tale with sympathy and often with an undercurrent of dry humour. It can hardly be said that the writings of this period have a specifically religious purpose. Reflecting with admirable veracity the actual life of the nation they are full of the relation between Israel and Jehovah, because that relation was constantly present to the people as a very real fact without which the history could not be told. It is to this circumstance that we owe the preservation of so huge a mass of early prose, which was taken over and incorporated in their works by later historians who wrote with a distinctly religious purpose, while on the other hand the early lyric collections have disappeared, all but a few fragments, presumably because their tone was inevitably secular. That the Hebrews once possessed a poetry of high merit drawn from the themes of ordinary life appears, not only from the book of Canticles and such relics as the Song of the Well (Num. xxi. 17, 18), but from the names of popular songs preserved in the titles of the Psalms. Thus we learn from Isa. lvi. 8 that the title *Al-Tashcheth* (Ea Iru) is taken from a vintage song of which the first line was “Destroy it not, for a blessing is in it.” These popular songs, then, survived the Exile and long continued to live in the mouths of the people. But they were without interest to the later guardians of Israel's literature, and fell into oblivion when Hebrew ceased to be the vernacular of the nation. A last echo of the festival songs of the Jewish maidens in the Talmud (*Mishna Ta'anit*, iv. 8, and the corresponding Gemara) shows only the total decay of the popular muse.

In this earliest period—the age of popular literature, as we may call it, modelled upon the songs and histories that circulated orally through the country—there is a remarkable preponderance of writings connected with the northern kingdom, and these include the narratives that are fullest of human interest and the poetry richest in colour and imagination, such as the loves of Jacob and Rachel, the history of Joseph, the life of Elijah, the pictures of nature

<sup>1</sup> The stone of Meishah is the earliest, whence Lagarde, *Oracles Débris & Psaumes* (1863), p. 4, observed that the LXX translation from a Hebrew copy without *matres lectionis*. This is put rather too freely, but in very many cases. Cf. compare Wellhausen, *ut supra*, vol. I. *Die BB. Samuels* (1871), *Walden, & Psaumes, Theol.* (1873), p. 120, Chwolson in *Procès-verbaux de la 5<sup>me</sup> session du Congrès international des Orientalistes*, pt. ii.

<sup>2</sup> A papyrus of the Jewish Museum, showing the square letter as it was written in Egypt a little before the time of Christ, has been announced by the Palaeographical Society (*Or. Ser.*, 1877).

in the Canticles. The political and social superiority of Ephraim before the conflict with Assyria is reflected in the literature. A new epoch begins with the rise of written prophecy in the 8th century. By this time writing and literary knowledge were widely diffused (Isa viii 1, xxx 8, x 19).<sup>1</sup> Amos, himself an excellent stylist, in whose book only perverse ingenuity can trace marks of rusticity ('impetuous sermons,' says Jerome), was a simple herdsman in the wilderness of Judah. Yet it appears that the origin of written prophecy was due less to the spread of education than to the rise of a new school of men whose whole method and aims were in conflict with the official prophetic societies, the unworthy successors of Samuel and Elijah.

In the terrible struggle with Nineveh, when the kingdom of Ephraim perished and Judah seemed lost beyond hope, the new prophecy, clear of vision when all were blinded, calm in its unshaken faith of ultimate victory, and pursuing with unflinching steadfastness a great purpose of righteousness, established a spiritual and intellectual ascendancy which stamped on the whole literature of the Assyrian and Chaldean periods. In the book of Deuteronomy the ancient ordinances of Israel were rewritten in the prophetic spirit, and the reformation carried out by Josiah on the basis of this book is the decisive proof of the influence of the written word as the organ of prophetic ideas. The same influence can be traced in other directions,—in psalms that express the type of individual faith, and in the historical books as they were finally shaped after the fall of Jerusalem, when the old popular narrative was filled out and continued in a spirit of prophetic pragmatism, and with the direct object of enforcing prophetic teaching. The Exile, which robbed Israel of every other inheritance, gave increased value and authority to the written word, and in the author of Isa xl–lxvi we find a prophet who no longer appears in person before his audience but does his whole work by the pen. There are other short prophecies of the Babylonian age, as Isa xiii, xiv, which seem to have been first published as anonymous broadsides—a characteristic change from the method of the former prophets, who wrote only what they had first spoken to the people. The earliest written prophecy is nervous rhetoric of the old pregnant Hebrew style interspersed with bursts of song. Even before the Exile this style had undergone a change, the prophecies of Jeremiah have lost something of the old force, while they display a subtler habit of reflexion and a pathos which has its origin in the conflict of a sensitive and shrinking temperament with the overpowering sense of prophetic duty. Jeremiah was much occupied with the dark problems of providence and the meaning of the sufferings of the faithful in Israel, a topic which goes beyond the sphere of the earlier prophecy, but forms a chief theme of Isa xl–lxvi, and from a different point of view is taken up and discussed in the book of Job. The last-named book is the highest utterances of another characteristic form of Hebrew literature, the Chokma, that is, wisdom or practical philosophy in parabolic, epigrammatic, and poetic form. The earliest distinct traces of literary cultivation of this philosophy, which from its nature must at first have passed unwritten from mouth to mouth, is the collection of ancient proverbs by scholars in the service of Hezekiah (Prov xxv 1).

Along with the simple epigrammatic proverbs which continued to be a favourite vehicle of Jewish thought long after Hebrew had given way to Aramaic, the earliest form of Hebrew wisdom seems to have been the fable about plants and trees (Jud. xi, 2 Kings xiv 9, 1 Kings iv 33), so different from the animal fables of Kalilag and

Damag or Sindbän, which the later Semitic literature borrowed from India. The further development of the Chokma ran parallel with the progress of prophecy, and though it is generally maintained that Jeremiah quotes the book of Job, it is perhaps more likely that the contrary is the case, and that the latest and most meditative phase of prophecy was absorbed into the poetry of the Chokma. The brief revival of spoken prophecy after the Exile lacks the old fire, and presents no notable literary fortune except the use of somewhat fantastic symbolic imagery, the prototype of the later apocalyptic literature.

The decadence of prophecy and the synchronous systematization of the ceremonial law on lines first drawn by Ezekiel, mark the commencement of the third and last period of Hebrew literature. The age of religious productivity was past, and the narrow limits and political nullity of the new Jewish settlement under the Persians presented no favourable conditions for a fresh development of truly national literature. The scribes took the place of the prophets and the growth of traditionalism imposed increasing restrictions on original thought. The freshest and best products of this period are the post-Exile psalms, the hymns of the second temple, which occupy a large part of the Psalter, and, though generally inferior to the older lyrics in the highest poetical qualities, are often full of the charm of genuine feeling and sweet utterance, and sometimes rise to a sublime energy of devotion and faith. With these psalms the graceful prose idyll of Ruth has a natural affinity. The other writings of the last age are on the whole much inferior. As the language decayed, the graces of the older prose style were lost. The memoirs of Ezra and Nehemiah, the colourless narrative of the Chronicles, and even the book of Esther, are singularly destitute of literary merit.

Yet letters were sedulously cultivated. The *Midrash*, or sermonizing treatment of the old history which holds so large a place in later Jewish literature, had come in before the time of the Chronicler, who quotes a work of the kind by name—the *Midrash* of the Book of Kings (2 Chron xxv 27, cf. xii 22). Along with this came the beginnings of Haggada, the formation of parables and tales attached to historical names, of which the book of Jonah is generally taken as an early example, and which attains much greater dimensions in the apocryphal additions to the *Apocrypha*. And so at the close of the Old Testament period the author of Ecclesiastes could speak of the weariness of much study and the endless sterility of bookmaking. His judgment was confirmed by posterity, for of these many books scarcely a trace remains.

*The Cultivation of Hebrew as a Dead Language*.<sup>2</sup>—We have seen that when the latest books of the Old Testament were written Aramaic had already supplanted Hebrew as the language of common life. But the knowledge of the ancient idiom was kept alive not merely by the study of the sacred books but by the continued use of Hebrew for literary purposes. Several books of the Apocrypha appear to be translated from Hebrew originals—Sirach, Judith, 1 Mac—the last according to the express testimony of Jerome. It is even probable that the Old Testament canon contains elements as late as the epoch of national revival under the Maccabees (Daniel, certain Psalms), for Hebrew was the language of religion as well as of scholarship. As for the scholars, they affected not only to write but to speak in Hebrew, but they could not resist the influence of the Aramaic vernacular, and indeed made no attempt to imitate

<sup>1</sup> In the 7th century written instruments were used in sales of property (Jer xxxiii 16), and in divorce cases they are recognized in Dent xxxv 1.

<sup>2</sup> On this topic compare in general Wolf: *Bibliotheca Hebraea*, 1715–1733; Bartolom: *Bibliotheca Aegyptia Rabbinica*, 1875–1893; Imbort: *Bibliotheca Latina Hebraica*, 1694; Dussel, *Geschichte des A. T. in der Christlichen Kirche*, 1869; K. Simon, *Historia Critica de P. 7*, 1878.

the classical models of the Old Testament, which neither furnished the necessary terminology for the new ideas with which they operated, nor offered in its forms and constructions a suitable vehicle for their favourite processes of legal dialectic. Thus was developed a new scholastic Hebrew, "the language of the wise" (לשון חכמים), preserving some genuine old Hebrew words which happen not to be in the Bible, and supplying some new necessities of expression by legitimate developments of germs that lay in the classical idiom, but thoroughly interpenetrated with foreign elements and as little fit for higher literary purposes as the Latin of the mediæval schoolmen. The chief monument of this dialect is the body of traditional law called the Mishna, which is formed of materials of various dates, but was collected in its present form about the close of the 2d Christian century. The doctors of the subsequent period still retained some fluency in the use of Hebrew, but the mass of their teaching preserved in the Gemara is Aramaic.<sup>1</sup> The language of the Mishna has been described by Geiger, *Lehr- und Lehrbuch zur Sprache der Mishnah* (Breslau, 1845), L. Duks, *Die Sprache der Mishna* (Erlangen, 1846) and *Zur rabbinischen Sprachkunde* (Vienna, 1851), J. H. Weiss, *Mishnah Talmud han-Mishna* (Vienna, 1867).

During the Talmudic period nothing was done for the grammatical study of the old language, but there was a traditional pronunciation for the synagogue, and a traditional interpretation of the sacred text. The earliest monument of Jewish interpretation is the Septuagint, but the final form of traditional exegesis is embodied in the Targums or Aramaic paraphrases, especially in the more literal Targums of Onkelos and Jonathan, which are often cited by the Talmudic doctors. Many things in the language of the Old Testament were already obscure, and the meaning of words was discussed in the schools, sometimes by the aid of legitimate analogies from living dialects,<sup>2</sup> but more often by fantastic etymological devices such as the *Notan ken*, or use of analogies from shorthand.

The real service rendered to Hebrew philology by the Talmudic doctors consists not in what they produced but in the knowledge which they preserved from the time when the idiom of the Old Testament was a living tongue. The exigent value which their casuistic exegesis attached to every syllable and every letter of the sacred books resulted in a final preservation, not indeed of the original text, but of the text which had become authoritative, and which is hardly later than the 1st Christian century. And fortunately for later scholarship the period immediately subsequent to the close of the Talmud (about 600 A.D.) devised in the vowel points and accents a means for preserving not merely the consonants of this text but the exact pronunciation and intonation of the synagogue. The idea of this system of punctuation appears to have been taken from a similar usage adopted in Syriac MSS, the complete development of the idea as we find it in our present Hebrew Bibles must have been reached by successive steps which we cannot now trace. The current punctuation is the work of the Palestinian schools, another system resting on the same foundations was developed in Babylon, and is known from the MSS of the Petersburg library collected by Firkowitch, and also from copies brought from Yemen. The difference between the two systems lies more in the notation than in the pronunciation, and neither punctuation can claim absolute priority.<sup>3</sup> The work of the punctuators

was perhaps completed in the 7th century. After a time the vowel signs came to be thought as old as the text, but a juster view was revived by Elias Levita (1472-1549),<sup>4</sup> and, after the great controversy in the 16th century between Capellus and Buxtorf, finally gained universal recognition.<sup>5</sup> With the work of the punctuators is associated the collection by the Massorots of a great mass of notes designed to preserve and illustrate by statistics exceptional phenomena of the Old Testament text,<sup>6</sup> a work which may be viewed as the first step towards scientific study of Hebrew philology.

With all this the old traditional scholarship continued to decline till the 10th century, when a revival of Hebrew study under the influence of Mahometan learning took place among the Arabic-speaking Jews (Sadda of the Fayyum, Menahem ben Saug, &c.).<sup>7</sup> Then, early in the 11th century, came the acknowledged fathers of mediæval Jewish philology,—the grammarians Judah surnamed Hayyug, discoverer of the system of triliteral roots,<sup>8</sup> and the lexicographer Abulwald Meshan ibn Ganah (Rabbi Jonah), who made excellent use of Arabic analogies as well as of the traditional material.<sup>9</sup> A succession of able scholars continued their work, of whom the most famous are Abihaham ben Meir of Toledo, surnamed Ibn Ezra (1082-1167), a man of great originality and freedom of view, Solomon Jaski of Troyes, called Rashi, and sometimes by error Jarchi, &c., of Lunel (died 1105), whose writings are a storehouse of traditional lore, and David Kimchi of Narbonne, called Radak (*sec* 1200), whose commentaries, grammars, and lexicon exercised an enormous and lasting influence, and were the chief fountain of knowledge for the Christian Hebraists of the 16th century. Our own authorized version, for example, bears the stamp of Kimchi on every page.

On the Jewish schools and their works consult Wolf and Baer to local, also De Rossi, *Dissertatio in Sinico deq. Auctoribus Ebraicis*, Pagnin, 1802, on Ibn Ezra in particular, the *Index* of the *Index* translation of his *Con. on Targum* (London, 1878), and the same writer's *Essays on the Writings of Ibn Ezra* (London, 1877), on the French Hebraists, *Historie Lit. de la France*, vol. xvi, but especially vol. xxvii (1877), on Rashi, Zangl's *Glossarische Schatz*, iii. 100, and a biography by the same scholar, translated into German by Bloch (1840). In the later Middle Ages Jewish learning was cramped by a narrow Talmudical orthodoxy, but a succession of sound scholars held their ground till Elias Levita and others of his age transmitted the torch to the Christian universities.

Up to the revival of letters there was no productive Hebrew scholarship among Christians. In the Greek and Latin Church the few fathers who, like Origen and Jerome, knew something of the language were wholly dependent on their Jewish teachers, and have value for us only as depositaries of Hebrew tradition. Nor was it otherwise in the East. The Syriac version of the Old Testament is permeated

(b), which is replaced by *a* or *o*. See also Pagnin's *Index ad D. Babel* (London, 1802), and the *Index* of the *Index* translation of his *Con. on Targum* (London, 1878), and the same writer's *Essays on the Writings of Ibn Ezra* (London, 1877), on the French Hebraists, *Historie Lit. de la France*, vol. xvi, but especially vol. xxvii (1877), on Rashi, Zangl's *Glossarische Schatz*, iii. 100, and a biography by the same scholar, translated into German by Bloch (1840). In the later Middle Ages Jewish learning was cramped by a narrow Talmudical orthodoxy, but a succession of sound scholars held their ground till Elias Levita and others of his age transmitted the torch to the Christian universities.

<sup>1</sup> See his *Mishnah Talmud han-Mishna*, vi. 100, and a biography by the same scholar, translated into German by Bloch (1840). In the later Middle Ages Jewish learning was cramped by a narrow Talmudical orthodoxy, but a succession of sound scholars held their ground till Elias Levita and others of his age transmitted the torch to the Christian universities.

<sup>2</sup> On the Massorah see especially Jacob b. Hayyim's preface to the Venice Babylonish Bible (printed and translated by Dr. Ginsburg, London, 1877), Levita's *Massoroth*, Han Massoroth, and Buxtorf's *Thesaurus* (Basel, 1630). Besides the Massorah as printed by J. b. Hayyim in the Venice Bible, which is superior to all previous, we have in print *Ordnung der Massorah* (ed. Friedländer, 1876). A new edition of the Bible with Massorah, from an extensive collection of MSS, is now being printed at Vienna by Dr. Ginsburg.

<sup>3</sup> The connecting link between the Massorah and the grammarians is Rabbi Aaron ben Mosheh ben Asael, whose *Didache ha-Tanach* has been published by Baer and Staack (Leipsa 1878).

<sup>4</sup> See his *Two Treatises*, edited by Nütz, London, 1876.

<sup>5</sup> See his *Book of Rosh*, in Arabic, edited by Neubauer, Oxford, 1876.

<sup>1</sup> See Broder, *Die Agende des Babylonischen Amora* (Strasbourg, 1870), for many illustrations of the Hebrew scholarship of the Gemara.

<sup>2</sup> See B. Rosh hash Shana, 20b., Dittschon on Ps. i. 23 and Isa. xiv. 28.

<sup>3</sup> The Babylonian punctuation can be best studied in Staack's facsimile (St. Petersburg, 1876) of the St. Petersburg codex of the prophet of 916 A.D. Notable in this system is the absence of a sign for *seghol*.

by the influence of the synagogue where it is not guided by the Septuagint, and the homilies of Aphraates are a mine of Jewish tradition. In the Middle Ages some knowledge of Hebrew was preserved in the church by converted Jews and even by Christian scholars, of whom the most notable were the Dominican controversialist Raymundus Martin and the Franciscan Nicolaus de Lyra, through whose popular commentaries the exegesis of Rashi was conveyed to Luther and largely influenced his interpretation of Scripture.<sup>1</sup> But there was no continuous tradition of Hebrew study apart from the Jews, and in the 16th century, when the revival of independent scholarship kindled the desire to add a third learned tongue to Latin and Greek, only the most ardent zeal could conquer the obstacles that lay in the way. Orthodox Jews refused to teach those who were not of their faith, and on the other hand the bigotry of ignorant churchmen desired nothing better than the entire suppression of Jewish learning. Even books were to be had with the greatest difficulty, at least north of the Alps. In Italy things were somewhat better. Jews expelled from Spain received favour from the popes. Study was facilitated by the use of the Hebrew printing press, which was at work at Reggio as early as 1476, while the whole Hebrew Bible appeared at Soncino in 1488.<sup>2</sup> The cause of learning found its champion among the northern humanists in John Reuchlin (1455-1522), whose *rudiments* (Fribourg, 1509) opened the door to students, while his victorious contest with Pfefferkorn and the Cologne censors established the claim of Hebrew studies on scholarship and the church.

The new learning spread fast. Sebastian Munster in Heidelberg, and Paul Bickelien (Fagus) at Isny, Straßburg, and Cambridge, were worthy pupils of the famous and liberal Jewish scholar Levita. France drew teachers from Italy. Santes Pagninus of Lucena was at Lyons, and the trilingual college of Pagninus I. at Paris, of which Vatable and Le Moerue soon became the ornaments, attracted among other foreigners Guastmann, bishop of Nubbia, the editor of the Genoa Psalter of 1516. In Rome the Jewish convert Felix Pratensis taught by invitation of Leo X., whose name and that of the more famous convert J. b. Hayyim live mainly in connexion with the great Rabbinical Bibles that issued from the Bomberg press at Venice. In Spain, the old home of Jewish scholarship, Hebrew learning was promoted by Cardinal Ximenes, the patron of the Complutensian Polyglot. Printing presses were multiplied, and the great humanist printers as Froben at Basel and Elsevier at Paris, competed with Italy in the production of Hebrew books. In brief, before the middle of the 16th century the place of Hebrew studies was secure throughout learned Europe, while in Protestant countries opposition to the authority of the Vulgate combined with scholarly interest to make the study of the original text of Scripture appear indispensable. Thus in Scotland the establishment of a trilingual course in the universities is contemplated in the first *Book of Discipline*.<sup>3</sup>

For a time the best Christian scholars leaned mainly on

the Rabbins. But in the larger air of humanism a more independent type of learning soon arose, of which Le Moerue in the 16th and Druhus in the beginning of the 17th century may be taken as representatives. The importance of the ancient versions was recognized, and their study was fostered by the publication of the Polyglots.

In the 17th century the cognate dialects were cultivated with great vigour and success by men like Selden, Castell, and Pococke in England, De Dieu in Holland, Bochart in France, Ludolf and Hottinger in Germany, and these studies bore fruit both for the Hebrew grammar and for the lexicon. Rabbinic learning was not forgotten, and found its chief ornament in the elder Buxtorf at Basel, who was also the author of grammars and a handy lexicon which long remained favourite manuals in England and on the Continent.<sup>4</sup>

At the same time a critical spirit arose, which involved Hebrew philology in the meshes of theological controversy. The battle as to the age of the vowel points has already been referred to. It was part of a larger question as to the integrity of the received Hebrew text, and the legitimacy of text criticism, which received dogmatic importance from the prevalence of extreme theories of verbal inspiration in the Protestant Church. Thus the Protestant Casparus found his main support in the Catholic Church (Norman, R. Simon), while the authority of the Masoretic text and punctuation was elevated to a dogma in the *Formula Consensus Helvetica* (1675), not without protest from the wiser Protestants of France. The critical school had also its extravagances, and an undue depreciation of tradition was one of several false principles that it would be tedious to enumerate, which came into vogue in the latter part of the 17th century, and long continued to impede the progress of scientific Hebrew philology. In the beginning of the 18th century Semitic studies had then chief seat in Holland, where Albert Schultens took up the comparative method with fresh energy, and applied it to Hebrew on a scale which gave a new shape to the study of the language.<sup>5</sup> Schultens laid emphasis on the limited extent of the Old Testament literature, which makes it an inadequate record of the phenomena of the Hebrew language, and proposed to supply these defects by a large use of the dialects, mainly of the Arabic, in which he had wide and accurate reading. His *Institutiones ad fundamenta Linguae Hebraeae* (1737) mark an advance on previous grammars, and in his commentaries he accumulated an enormous mass of material of the highest value for the lexicon. But Schultens founded an influential school, of which Schoeder was the chief ornament, but his method was easily abused, and fell into discredit in the hands of arbitrary expositors like Venema. After Holland, Germany became the chief seat of Hebrew studies. In Halle, where the influence of Francke directed special attention to Biblical learning, there sprang up contemporaneously with the Dutch school a school of Hebraists,—earnest, laborious, and thorough, but somewhat jejune and deficient in æsthetic sympathy,—of which the Michaelis family were the chief representatives. J. D. Michaelis (1717-1791) exercised a sort of sovereignty in Hebrew letters, and the stamp of Halle has left a permanent impress on the German schools, though a more sympathetic and emotional type of scholarship, beginning with Heider and Eichhorn, became dominant under the influence of Ewald.

<sup>1</sup> See Buxtorf's *enquiry* in *Mercator's Archiv*, i. 428, n. 38.

<sup>2</sup> De Rosa, *Annales Hebææ Typographiæ*, See XV, p. 100, 1795. A lively picture of the difficulties that lay in the way of Hebrew study is found in the *Autobiography* (ed. Ruggenbach, 1877) of Conrad Pelear, who contributed to Reuchlin's *Alphabetum Polyglottum* the first imperfect Hebrew grammar composed by a Christian (Strasbourg, 1604, reprinted in facsimile by Nettel, Tübingen, 1877). See also Geiger's *Hebraische Studien* (Leipzig, 1871). References may also be made to the same author's *Studium der Heb. Spr. in Deutschland vom Ende des 15ten bis zur Mitte des 16ten Jahrhunderts* (Breslau, 1870), and *Journaux de l'enseignement de l'Hebreu dans l'université de Paris* (1858).

<sup>3</sup> The first Hebrew grammar published in Scotland is that of John Row, moderator of the school of Perth, and afterwards minister at Aberdeen, (Glasgow, 1644). The first Hebrew text dated 1687. With the grammar appeared a *Kalendar Hebraicum*.

<sup>4</sup> To obtain an idea of the way in which Hebrew was taught in the 17th century one may read the *Dietsche des Caspar Schoppen*, in *II Grote'sche academische dissertations de studio statuendum* (Amst., 1645).

<sup>5</sup> On Schultens, his method and school, see C. Sapp, *Hebraica Scholæ et sive* (Amst., 1856). The Dutch schools of the 16th and 17th centuries are well described by the same author, *Het goetgeleerd Onderwijs in Nederland gedurende de 16de en 17de eeuw* (Leiden, 1878-74).



By the epoch-making labours of Silvestri de Sacy (1758-1838), which first placed Oriental learning and especially Semitic grammar on a broad and thoroughly scientific footing, a new impulse was given to Hebrew philology, which since that time has moved with the advance of general Semitic studies, and can hardly again fall into deviant paths. The great teachers of Hebrew in the present century have been two Germans, Gesenius and Ewald,—the former excelling in method and lucidity of exposition, the latter in range of view and creative fertility of ideas. Among the direct or indirect disciples of these great scholars may be reckoned almost every Hebraist in Europe, and to them is mainly due the revival in England of a branch of learning which had almost become extinct through the prevailing distaste of last century.

*Helps to the Study of Hebrew*.—Gesenius.—The principal modern methods are those of Gesenius, Lowth, and Osherson. Gesenius's *Lehrbuch der hebräischen Sprache* (Leipzig, 1817), is still useful for occasional reference. His method grammar has proved through numerous editions, and in its more recent shape, as it is set by Rodiger and finally by Kautzsch (1878), holds its ground as one of the best books for teaching. Davison's version of Rodiger's Gesenius is the best of several English translations (1869-1876). The method of Gesenius is mainly conveyed in his Hebrew philosophy, but less simple and sometimes a little in its aims in his, in the *Ausführliches Lehrbuch* of Ewald (5th ed., Göttingen, 1870), of which the "Syntax" has been translated into English by Kennedy (1870). The *Lehrbuch der hebräischen Sprache* of Osherson (1871, Eng. trans. by Smith, 1870) is valuable, but too difficult for ordinary beginners. Osherson's *Hebräisch* (Bonnwald, 1881) is incomplete, the syntax having never appeared, but it is, on the whole, the best and most scientific exposition of the Hebrew grammatical forms. To complement grammar on Osherson's system there is a translation into English.—Buckell's *Grammatica* (Leipzig, 1860-1870, English by Curtis, 1877) and Lind's *Hebräisches Grammatik* (Vörschlag, 1869, English by Porter, 1876). The latter work has some peculiarities which detract from its utility, and neither Buckell nor Lind supplies a proper syntax. Muller's *Schulgrammatik* (Halle, 1878) is the mainly on Gesenius's method, with the addition of an excellent syntax in English. A. Davidson's *Introductory Hebrew Grammar* (3d ed., Edin., 1878) may be recommended to beginners as a good practical method and every introduction to the larger scientific grammars. Of other more extensive works may be noted Büchler's *Ausführliches Lehrbuch*, posthumously edited by Mühlau (Leipzig, 1866-68), a huge book serving as a sort of grammar text concordance to the Old Testament, Luzzatto's *Italian Grammatica* (Padua, 1864-69), which is valuable from the thoroughness with which it shows the author, the Latin grammar of Rodiger, and in English the works of Kutsch (1862-68) and Green (New York, 1861). Among useful monographs on special points of grammar may be mentioned Müller's *Hebräische Syntax* (Leipzig, 1869), and in English the *Hebrew Syntax* of Weiss (Weimar, 1871), S. R. Driver, *The Use of the Tenses in Hebrew* (Oxford, 1876), Gesenius, *Die Hebräische Exposition* (Halle, 1876), Davidson, *Outline of Hebrew Accentuation* (1881). For comparative purposes in the absence of a comparative system of the Semitic languages, which is hoped for from Benin, the hints in Wright's *Arabic Grammar* will be found most valuable.

*Lexicons*.—For superior to all other lexicons is the *Thesaurus* of Gesenius, compiled by Rodiger (Leipzig, 1839-1858). Gesenius published also a *Handwörterbuch*—of which the 8th ed. by Mühlau and Volk (Leipzig, 1871-78) contains a good deal of non-matter not always important,—and a *Lexicon universale* in Latin (3d ed. by Hoffmann, 1817), of which there is an English translation *The Handwörterbuch* of Furst (3d ed., 1868, Eng. trans. by S. Davidson, 1871). A new period of the lexicon, and for the etymological principles and must be used with great caution. On Hebrew synonyms Peppenheim's *Frähe Synonymie* (1784-1811) is the principal work.

*Concordances*.—The *Concordantia* of Burfoot (1682) was reprinted by Blair (1833). Burfoot's *Concordantia* (1840) contains a good deal of supplementary matter, part of which is of little use. For the rubrics the (incomplete) concordance of Noldius (1679, ed. Synopse, 1784) is used by Lowth.

In addition to modern books the advanced student will sometimes find it useful to recur to older works, especially to the Jewish grammars and lexicographers, but these need not be detailed here.

For the later Hebrew period of the Middle Ages and for the new words and technical terms in the scholastic Hebrew of the Middle Ages, the best lexicon is Burfoot's *Lexicon Chaldaicum Talmudicum et Rabbinicum* (1840). The recent reprint is not so good. A new lexicon of Lowth has been in the course of publication since 1875 (*New-Hebrew and Chaldaic Words in Scripture*). The

beginner will find the *Lexicon biblicum Rabbinico-philologicum* appended to Burfoot's small *Lexicon Hebraicum* very useful, and may also consult the thesaurus in Richard's *Ausführliches Rabbinicum* (1793). In reading Rabbinical Hebrew it is well to have Schlegel's *Compendium Facile Hebraico-Rabbinicum* (1790). The smallest work of Burfoot is less full.

On the whole subject of this article consult Gesenius, *Uebersicht der hebräischen Sprache und Schrift* (Leipzig, 1817), Lowth, *Historie generale des Langues Semitiques* (Paris, 1804), (W R 8).

**HEBREW, EPISTLE TO THE** The New Testament writing usually known under this name, or less correctly as the Epistle of Paul the Apostle to the Hebrews, bears in the oldest MSS no other title than the words Ἰπὸς Ῥωμαίων, "To the Hebrews." This brief heading embraces the whole information as to the origin of the epistle on which Christian tradition is unanimous. Everything else—the authorship, the address, the date—was unknown or disputed in the early church, and continues to form matter of dispute in the present day. But as far back as the latter part of the 2d century the destination of the epistle "to the Hebrews" was acknowledged alike in Alexandria, where it was ascribed to Paul, and in Carthage, where it passed by the name of Barnabas, and no indication exists that it ever circulated under another title.<sup>1</sup> At the same time we must not suppose, as has sometimes been done, that the author prefixed these words to his original manuscript. The title says no more than that the readers addressed were Christians of Jewish extraction, and this would be no sufficient address for an epistolary writing (xiii 22) directed to a definite circle of readers, a local church or group of churches to whose history repeated reference is made, and to which the author had personal relations (xiii 18, 23). The original address, which according to custom must have stood on the outside of the folded letter, was probably never composed, and the early and universal prevalence of the present title, which tells no more than can be readily gathered from the epistle itself, seems to indicate that when the book first passed from local into general circulation its history had already been forgotten. With this it agrees that the early Roman Church, where the epistle was known about the end of the 1st century, and where indeed the first traces of the use of it occur (Clement, and *Shepherd of Hermas*), had nothing to contribute to the question of authorship and origin except the negative opinion that the book is not by Paul. Caus and the Musonian fragment reckon but thirteen epistles of Paul, Hippolytus (like his master Irenaeus of Lyons) knew our book and declared that it was not Pauline. These facts can hardly be explained by supposing that at Rome during the 2d century the book had dropped out of notice, and its history had been forgotten. Clement, Irenaeus, Hippolytus form a tolerably continuous chain, and the central Church of Rome was in constant connexion with provincial churches where, as we shall presently see, the epistle had currency and reputation. Under these circumstances an original trustworthy tradition could hardly have been lost, and it must appear highly questionable whether the author and address of the book were known at Rome even in the time of Clement. The earliest positive traditions of authorship to which we can point belong to Africa and Egypt, where, as we have already seen, divergent views were current by the end of the 2d century. The African tradition preserved by Tertullian (*De Pudicitia*, c. 20), but certainly not invented by him, ascribes the epistle to Barnabas. Direct apostolic authority is not therefore claimed for it, but it has the weight due to one who "learned from and taught with the apostles," and we are told that it had more currency among the churches than

<sup>1</sup> See the full refutation of "supposed exceptions to the uniformity of this tradition in Zahn's article "Hebraeum." (*Hezog-Pitt, R. N. v. p. 567*).

"that apocryphal shepherd of the adulterers" (the Shepherd of Hermas). This tradition of the African Church holds a singularly isolated position. Later writers appear to know it only from Tertullian, and it soon became obsolete, to be revived for a moment after the Reformation by the Scottish theologian Cameau, and then again in our own century by the German critics, among whom at present it is the favourite view. Very different is the history of the Egyptian tradition, which can be traced back as far as a teacher of the Alexandrian Clement, presumably Panteus (Euseb., *Hist. Eccl.*, vi 14). This "blessed presbyter," as Clement calls him, sought to explain why Paul did not name himself as usual at the head of the epistle, and found the reason in the modesty of the author, who, in addressing the Hebrews, was going beyond his commission as apostle to the Gentiles. Clement himself takes it for granted that an epistle to the Hebrews must have been written in Hebrew, and supposes that Luke translated it for the Greeks. Thus far there is no sign that the Pauline authorship was ever questioned in Alexandria. Origen rests on the same tradition, which he refers to "the ancient men." But he knows that the tradition is not common to all churches. He feels that the language is un-Pauline, though the admirable thoughts are not second to those of the unquestioned apostolic writings. And thus he is led to the view that the ideas were orally set forth by Paul, but that the language, arrangement, and some features of the exposition are the work of a disciple. According to some this disciple was Clement of Rome, others named Luke, but the truth, says Origen, is known to God alone (Euseb., vi 25, § vi 38). It is not surprising that these limitations of the tradition had less influence than the broad fact that Origen accepted the book as of Pauline authority. From the time of Origen the opinion that Paul wrote the epistle became more and more prevalent in the East. In the West this view was still far from established in the 4th century. But it gained ground steadily, even those who, like Jerome and Augustine, knew the variations of tradition were unwilling to press an opposite view, and in the 5th century the Pauline authorship was accepted at Rome, and practically throughout Christendom, not to be again disputed till the revival of letters and the rise of a more critical spirit.

That the received view called for revision could not indeed be questioned when men began to look at the facts of the case. The vacillation of tradition and the dissimilarity of the epistle from the style and thoughts of Paul were brought out with great force by Erasmus in his concluding annotation on the book, where he ventures the conjecture based on a passage of his favourite Jerome, that Clement of Rome was the real author. Luther (who suggests Apollon) and Calvin (who thinks of Luke or Clement) followed with the decisive argument that Paul, who lays such stress on the fact that his gospel was not taught to him by man but by direct revelation (Gal 1), could not have written Heb 1: 3, 4, where the author classes himself among those who received the message of salvation from the personal disciples of the Lord on the evidences of the miracles with which God confirmed their word. The force of tradition seemed already broken, but the wave of reaction, which so soon overwhelmed the freer tendencies of the first reformers brought back the old view. Protestant orthodoxy again accepted Paul as the author, and dissenting voices were seldom heard till the revival of free Biblical criticism in last century. As criticism strengthened its arguments, theologians began to learn that the denial of tradition involves no danger to faith, and at the present moment, in spite of the ingenious special pleading of Hofmann (*Die Hebräer Schrift N. N.*, vol. v, Nordlingen, 1873), scarcely any sound scholar will be found to accept Paul as the direct author of the epistle, though

such a modified view as was suggested by Origen still claims adherents among the lovers of compromise with tradition.

The arguments against the Alexandrian tradition are in fact conclusive. It is probably unfair to hamper that tradition with Clement's notion that the book is a translation from the Hebrew, a monstrous hypothesis which has received its *edvictio ad absurdum* in the recent attempt of J. H. R. Dissenthal to reconstruct the Hebrew text (*Das Textbuch des Apostels Paulus an die Hebräer, kritisch wiederhergestellt*, &c., Leipzig, 1878). But just as little can the Greek be from Paul's pen. The un-Pauline character of the style, alike in the words used and in the structure of the sentences, strikes every scholar as it struck Origen and Erasmus. The type of thought is quite unique. The theological ideas are cast in a different mould, and the leading conception of the high priesthood of Christ, which is no mere occasional thought but a central point in the author's conception of Christianity, finds its nearest analogy not in the Pauline epistles but in John xvii 19. The Old Testament is cited after the Alexandrian translation more exactly and exclusively than is the custom of Paul, and that even where the Hebrew original is divergent. Nor is this an accidental circumstance. There is every appearance that the author was a Hellenist whose learning did not embrace a knowledge of the Hebrew text, and who derived his metaphysical and allegorical method from the Alexandrian rather than the Palestinian schools.<sup>1</sup>

The force of these arguments can be brought out only by the accumulation of a multitude of details too tedious for this place, but the evidence from the few personal indications contained in the epistle is easily grasped and not less powerful. The argument from 1: 3, 4, which appeared decisive to Luther and Calvin, has already been referred to. Again, we read in xii 19 that the writer is absent from the church which he addresses, but hopes to be speedily restored to them. This expression is not to be understood as implying that the epistle was written in prison, for xii 23 shows that the author is master of his own movements.<sup>2</sup> The plain sense is that his home is with them, but that he is at present absent, and begs their prayers for a speedy return. But Paul, if he could say that he had a home at all, had it not in a community of Jewish Christians. The external authority of the Alexandrian tradition can have no weight against such difficulties. If that tradition was original and continuous, the long ignorance of the Roman Church and the opposite tradition of Africa are inexplicable. But no tradition was more likely to arise in circles where the epistle was valued and its origin forgotten. In spite of its divergences from the standard of Pauline authorship, the book has manifest Pauline affinities, and can hardly have originated beyond the Pauline circle, to which it is referred, not only by the author's friendship with Timothy (xii 23), but by many unquestionable echoes of the Pauline theology, and even by distinct allusions to passages in Paul's epistles.<sup>3</sup>

In an uncritical age these features might easily suggest Paul as the author of a book which was read in MSS

<sup>1</sup> For the Alexandrian element in the epistle consult the list of passages in Hilgenfeld's *Zeitschrift* (Leipzig, 1870), p. 384, and A. J. Altmann's use of valuable material is collected in J. B. Cyprian's *Sacrae Litteraturae in Reg. et Heb. ad Philonem Alerandrinum* (Helmstadt, 1780).

<sup>2</sup> In x 34 the text reading is not "of me in my bonds," but "on them that were in bonds," *in regibus captivitate*. The false reading, which was cited by Clement of Alexandria, is probably connected with the tradition that Paul is author.

<sup>3</sup> An unambiguous proof that our author had read the epistle to the Romans seems to lie in x 46. This is the one Old Testament allusion of the epistle which does not follow the Septuagint (Deut. xciii 85), but it is worth for word from Rom xii 19. Further signs of dependence on Romans and Corinthians (which require nothing) have been collected by Hofmann in Schenkel's *Bibl. Lexikon*, ii 520, and Hilgenfeld's *Zeitschrift*, ix 4 seq.

immediately after the recognized epistles of that apostle, and which contained nothing in its title to distinguish it from the preceding books with similar headings, "To the Romans," "To the Corinthians," and the like.<sup>1</sup> A similar second epistle of Clement to the Corinthians.

When we see that the tradition which names Paul as author does not possess an authentic historical basis, we are necessarily carried on to deny historical authority to the subsidiary conjectures or traditions which speak of Luke and Clement of Rome. The history of the Alexandrian tradition shows that these names were brought in merely to lessen the difficulties attaching to the view that Paul wrote the book exactly as we have it. The name of Luke seems to be a conjecture of the Alexandrian Clement, for it has no place in the tradition received from his master. And Origen attaches no importance to either name. Some had mentioned one, and some the other, but God alone knows the truth. We have no reason to think more highly of these suggestions than Origen did. Indeed, no Protestant scholar now proposes the name of Clement, whose extant epistle to the Corinthians shows his familiarity with the epistle to the Hebrews, and at the same time excludes the idea that he composed it. The name of Luke has still partisans—most notably Delitzsch, who has carefully collected linguistic parallels between our epistle and the Lucan writings (*Commento zum Hebräerbrief*, Leipzig, 1857, English translation, Edinburgh, 1868-70). The arguments of Delitzsch are generally met with the objection that our author must have been a born Jew, which from his standpoint and culture is in the highest degree probable, though not perhaps absolutely certain. In any case we cannot suppose that Luke wrote the epistle on Paul's commission, or that the work is substantially the apostle's, for such a theory takes no account of the strongly marked individuality of the book in thought and method as well as expression. And the theory that Luke was the independent author of the epistle (Grotius and others) has no right to appeal to antiquity, and must stand entirely on the very inadequate grounds of internal probability afforded by language and style.

If Alexandria fails us, can we suppose that Africa preserved the original tradition? This is a difficult question. The intrinsic objections to authorship by Barnabas are not important. The so-called Epistle to Barnabas was not written by our author, but then it is admittedly not by Barnabas. The superior elegance of the style of our epistle as compared with that of Paul is not inconsistent with Acts xiv 12, nor is there, as we shall see presently, any real force in the once favoured objection that the ordinances of the temple are described with less accuracy than might be looked for in Barnabas, a Levite and one who had resided in Jerusalem. On the other hand it is hard to believe that the correct account of the authorship of our book was preserved only in Africa, and in a tradition so isolated that Tertullian seems to be its only independent witness. How could Africa know this thing and Rome be ignorant? Zihn, who is the latest exponent of the Barnabas hypothesis, argues that in the West, where the so-called epistle of Barnabas was long unknown, there was nothing to suggest the rise of Barnabas as an author, that the true tradition might push the more readily in other parts of the church after the name of Barnabas had been falsely attached to another epistle dealing with the typology of the ceremonial law, and finally, that the false epistle of

Barnabas, which was first so named in Alexandria, may there have carried off the true title of the epistle to the Hebrews after the latter was ascribed to Paul. That is not plausible, and it is more likely that an epistle which calls itself *λόγος παρακλήσεως* (Heb xii 22) was ascribed to the *λόγος παρακλήσεως* (Acts iv 36) in the same way as Ps cxviii was ascribed to Solomon, "the beloved of the Lord" (2 Sam xii 24, 25), from the allusion cxviii 2, than that this coincidence of expression affords a confirmation of the Barnabas hypothesis. In short, the whole tradition as to the epistle is too uncertain to offer much support to any theory of authorship, and if the name of Barnabas is accepted it must stand mainly on internal evidence.

Being thus thrown back on what the epistle itself can tell us, we must look at the first readers, with whom, as we have already seen, the author stood in very close relations. It is generally agreed that the church addressed was composed of Hebrews or Christians of Jewish birth. We are not entitled to take this simply on the authority of the title, which is hardly more than a reflection of the impression produced on an early copyist. But it is plain that the writer is at one with his readers in approaching all Christian truth through the Old Testament. He and they alike are accustomed to regard Christianity as a continuous development of Judaism, in which the benefits of Christ's death belong to the ancient people as well as supply the shortcomings of the old dispensation (v 9, x 1, xii 12). With all the weight that is laid on the superiority of Christianity, the religion of finality, over Messianism, the dispensation which brought nothing to its goal, the sphere of the two dispensations is throughout treated as identical, without any allusion, such as could hardly have been avoided in addressing a Gentile church, to the way in which strangers and foreigners (Eph ii 19) had been incorporated with the people of God. Schurer indeed (*Stud u. Krit.*, 1876, p 775) has sought such an allusion in vi 1, 2, where faith in God and belief in the resurrection and the judgment, points common to Judaism and Christianity, are reckoned to the elementary doctrine of Christ, and he concludes that the readers addressed were Gentile converts of a Judaizing type. But taken with the context these verses imply only that the Hebrews required to be warned against losing hold even of these first principles of revealed truth which lie in the Old Testament (v 12). From all this we are not perhaps entitled to conclude that the church addressed contained no Gentile members, but it is plain that they were not sufficiently numerous and independent in their way of thought to affect the general type of Christianity in the community. To some writers the emphatic "all" in xii 24, the admonitions x 26, xii 17, have suggested the possibility that the Hebrews addressed were but part, and a somewhat discontented part, of a larger community in which Gentile elements had a considerable place. But this appears a strained conclusion (Phil iv 21, 1 Th v 26) distinctly contrary to the general tone of the epistle, which moves altogether outside of the antithesis between Jewish and Gentile Christianity. We must think not of a party but of a church, and such a church can be sought only in Palestine or in one of the great centres of the Jewish dispersion. That the epistle was addressed to Palestine, or more specifically to Jerusalem, has been a prevalent opinion from the time of Clement of Alexandria, mainly because it was assumed that the word Hebrews must naturally mean Jews, whose mother-tongue was Aramaic. But the term has this restricted sense only when put in contrast to Hellenists. In itself, according to ordinary usage, it simply denotes Jews by race, and in Christian writings especially Jewish Christians. And there are several things in the epistle that seem to exclude Palestine, and above all Jerusalem. The Hellenistic cul-

<sup>1</sup> The place of the epistle in MSS varies. The order of our Bible is that of the Latin Church, the oldest Greek codices placing it before the pastoral epistles. But the Latin order, which expresses the original vacillancy of the Pauline tradition, was formerly current even in the East.

ture of the writer and the language in which he writes furnish one argument. Then the most marked proof of Christian love and zeal in the church addressed was that they had even been assiduous in ministering to the saints (vi 10). This expression may conceivably have a general sense (1 Cor. xvi 15<sup>2</sup>), but it is far more likely that it has the specific meaning which it generally bears in the New Testament, viz., the collection of alms for the church in Jerusalem. At any rate it was clearly understood in the first age of Christianity that the Judean Church took alms and did not give them, receiving in temporal things an acknowledgment for the spiritual things they had imparted (Rom. xv 27). In fact the great weight laid in the epistles of Paul on this—the only manifestation of the exhortation of the church then possible (Gal. ii 10)—alone explains the emphasis with which our author cites this one proof of Christian feeling. Again, the expressions in ii 9 already referred to imply that the readers did not include in their number direct disciples of Jesus, but had been brought to Christ by the words and miracles of apostolic missionaries now dead (xii 7). This conversion, as it appears from x 32, was a thing of precise date immediately followed by persecution (note the aorists *chōreuthentes*—*étrelevés*), so that we cannot think of a second generation in the Palestinian Church, but are referred to some part of the Diaspora. Given these difficulties, which have led some of the latest defenders of Hebrews to adduce as Gurnea (who, in Hilgenfeld's *Zeitschr.* 1870, proposes Jamnia and Moulton (*New Testament Commentary for English Readers*, vol. ii., 1879), to give up Jerusalem altogether, while others, as Riehm, suppose that the Hellenists of Jerusalem (Acts vi 1) are primarily addressed, it is commonly agreed that the readers are exposed to peculiar danger from the persecutions and solicitations of unbelieving Jews, that they are in danger of lapsing into participation in the Jewish sacrifices, or even that they appear to have never ceased to follow the ceremonial observances that had then centred in the temple ritual. The capital argument for this is drawn from xii 13, where the exhortation to go forth to Jesus without the camp is taken as an injunction to renounce fellowship with the synagogue and with the ceremonies and ritual of Judaism. But this exegesis rests on a false view of the context, which does not include verse 9, and expresses by a figure that Christians (as the priests of the new covenant) have no temporal advantage to expect by their participation in the sacrifice of Christ, but must be content to share his reproach, renouncing this earthly country for the heavenly kingdom (*cf.* xi 16, 25–27 with xii 14, Phil. iii 20). Altogether, this view of the situation of the first readers of the epistle appears distorted or exaggerated. It is obvious that our Hebrews were familiar with the law, and had a high regard for the ordinances of temple worship. In particular it appears that they had not fully understood how the mediatorial functions of the Old Testament were superseded by the mediatorialship of Christ. But their ritualism seems to have been rather theoretical than practical. Had they been actually entangled in the daily practice of superseded ordinances, the author, whose insight into the true worth of these ordinances is clear, and whose personal relations to the Pauline circle are obvious, could hardly have been so nearly one of themselves as appears in xii 19, and at any rate could not have failed to give an express precept on the subject. But, on the contrary, he is in thorough sympathy with the type of doctrine on which their church was formed (xii 7), the easy way in which he touches on the “meats and drinks and diverse washings” of Judaism seems to show that on this head he could count on carrying his readers along with him, and xii 9 hardly refers to sacrifices or to Levitical laws of clean and unclean, but

rather to some such form of asceticism (*cf.* ver 4) as is spoken of in Rom. xiv. Nowhere does our author speak a warning against participation in sacrifices, nowhere does he touch on the burning questions that divided the Pharisee Christians of Jerusalem from the converts of Paul. The practical lesson which he draws from his doctrine is that his readers ought to use with diligence the specifically Christian way of access to God (x 19 seq.), and the only positive fault which he mentions in this connexion is a disposition to neglect the privilege of social worship (x 25). This again is plainly connected, not with an inclination to return to the synagogue, but with a relaxation of the zeal and patience of the first days of their Christian profession (vi 4 seq., x 32 seq., xii 1 seq.), associated with a less firm hold than they once had of the essentials of Christian faith, a less clear vision of the heavenly hope of their calling (ii 13, iv 11, v 12). The apostle fears lest they fall away not merely from the highest standpoint of Christianity into Judaizing practices, but from all faith in God and judgment and immortality (ii 12, vi 1 seq.)<sup>1</sup>

For the solution of the problem of the epistle it is of the highest importance to form an exacter conception of the causes and nature of this unhealthy condition of the church. Their first conversion had been followed by direct persecution, which their faith had triumphantly overcome but these days were long gone by (x 32). It does not appear that a like severity of trial had again fallen upon them. But there were persecutions at least in other parts of the church (xii 3, 23). The times were troubled, and from day to day there were many trials and many reproaches to sustain. The dull and long continued strain of conflict with surrounding wickedness was harder to bear than a sharp onslaught of the enemy (*ch. xii*). They were weary of enduring, weary of hope deferred, and so the bonds of their Christian unity were loosened, their brotherly love weakened (xii 1 seq.), and they began to doubt the verity of those heavenly good things which their first faith had so vividly realized. In such circumstances it was natural that the writer should lay stress on the contrast between the eternal and the transitory, the things of faith and the things of sight, the heavenly Zion and the earthly pilgrimage. But the remarkable feature of the epistle is that this contrast is drawn out in the form of a threefold argument to show the superiority of Christianity over the old dispensation, inasmuch as Christ is superior (1) to the angels, (2) to Moses, (3) and chiefly to the Levitical priesthood and its mediatorialship. In each of these relations, it is argued, the old covenant, which is earthly, temporal, and without finality, contains within itself the evidence of its own imperfection, and points to the time when it shall be superseded by a new covenant in which every reality and every hope is heavenly, eternal, or, as we should say, ideal. It is the form of this argument which mainly gives force to the common impression that the Hebrews addressed were in danger of seeking access to God by the superseded methods of the old dispensation—in short, that the epistle is a warning against an Ebionite tendency to Christian Pharisaism. But to such a tendency, as we have seen, the practical admonitions of the epistle by no means point. To some scholars accordingly, and particularly to Reuss (*Histon de la Théologie Chrétienne*, liv v chap 1, *Les Épîtres Catholiques*, Paris, 1878), the theoretical part of the book has seemed disproportionate to the practical and personal conclusion, and it has been proposed to regard the whole as a theological system with an expository appendix. Doubtless this view contains an element of truth. In a

<sup>1</sup> The statement of Renan, *L'Antiquité*, pp. xiv, 215, 218, that some had already fallen away and that the question of their return soon was being agitated, seems to be part of the ingenious historical romance in which he has enveloped the whole origin of the epistle.

far higher measure than the Pauline epistles, and in a sense which thoroughly well agrees with the position of the author as no apostle but an apostolic convert, the book presents the marks of theological reflection on the established data of the faith. Yet it is impossible to ignore the fact that a special and practical motive runs through the whole book. The author never loses sight of a definite circle of readers, and the vast scope of his argument, which is at once felt in the dignity of the opening verses, so unlike the commencement of an ordinary letter, appears to be directly suggested by some historical circumstance affecting his readers and himself, but nowhere explicitly set forth in the epistle, which brought the trial of their faith into close connection with the question of the permanence of the temple and its ritual. Now we have seen reason to believe that these Jewish Christians were not Palestinian of an Ebionite type but men of the Hellenistic dispersion, with a possible tendency to ascetic mysticism, and almost certainly of such a habit of thought as enabled them readily to sympathize with the typological method of our author. Among men of this type there was no great danger of a relapse into practical ceremonialism. They would rather be akin to the school of Judaism characterized by Philo (*De Leg. lib.*, c. xvi., ed. Mangey, i 450), who neglected the observance of the ceremonial laws because they took them as symbols of ideal things. Occupying this position before their conversion, their adoption of the Christian faith would not have forced upon them any close examination of the relation of the new dispensation to the old law. But it appears from Philo that the men who spiritualized away the Sabbath, the great feasts, even circumcision itself, were not prepared to think lightly of the sacred ritual of the temple. The holy hill of God, the meeting-place of heaven and earth, with its stately service and its ancient memories, had too central a place in the religion of the old covenant to seem indifferent to the freest thinker. And so our Hebrews, whose acceptance of Christ had not shaken their sense of the continuity of the people of God and their Old Testament privileges, might readily retain the feeling that the ritual of the temple was still what it was of old—a visible and necessary pledge of God's approach to His people and His acceptance of their worship. So long as things ran their old course such a feeling would hardly affect the even tenor of their Christian life. But when the death struggle of Judaea against Rome drew the sympathy of every Hebrew heart, when the abomination of desolation stood in the holy place, when the holy and beautiful house was burned up with fire, and when, with all this, terror and distress filled the whole Roman empire and still the Lord delayed His coming, it was not strange that something like despair of God's help should assail our Hebrews, and that all the hopes of the people of God should seem threatened in the overthrow of the ancient pledge of Jehovah's nearness to Israel.

Now it has generally been argued that the epistle to the Hebrews, which describes the temple services in the present tense, must necessarily have been written before they ceased to be performed. But it has been shown in the most conclusive manner, from the use of similar presents in Rabbinical writers as well as in Josephus and elsewhere, that this argument goes for nothing, and the most recent writers, since Holtzmann's discussion of the subject in Schenkel's *Bibel-Lexikon*, ii 623 *seq.*, generally admit that the epistle may have been written after the fall of the temple. And if this be so it can be questioned that the most natural view of the apostle's argument, as it comes to a point in such passages as vii 15, ix 9, is that the disappearance of the obsolete ritual of the old covenant is no blow to Christian faith, because in Christ ascended into glory the church possesses in heavenly verity all that the

old ritual presented in mere earthly symbol. It was the ruin of the Jewish state and worship which compelled Christianity to find what is offered in our epistle—a theory of the disappearance of the old dispensation in the new.

Many attempts have been made to determine which of the centres of the Diaspora was the seat of our Hebrews. Hofmann suggests Antioch, Ewald, Ravenna,<sup>1</sup> but Rome and Alexandria are the places for and against which most has been said. One argument for Alexandria on which great stress has been laid must certainly be dismissed (Wieseler (*Untersuchung über den Hebräerbrief*, iv 3 Halite, Kiel, 1861), combining the arguments against a Palestinian address with the impression, which we have seen to be without sufficient foundation, that the readers lived in the neighbourhood of a Jewish temple, seeks them among the Egyptian Jews who frequented the schismatical temple of Leontopolis (Tel-el-Yahûdiya in the upper Delta. And he tries to show that in his description of the temple and the functions of the high priests our author diverges from the Judean pattern and follows peculiarities of the Egyptian temple. But this argument rests on a series of implausible assumptions. The supposed peculiarities of Onias's temple are proved by arbitrary exegesis from passages of Philo, who apparently never thought of that temple at all. No can it be shown that it had even such a reputation as to play the part which Wieseler assigns to it. The author's supposed ignorance of the Jerusalem ritual is not made out. In the true text of x 11 the high priest is not mentioned, and in vii 27 what is asserted of the high priest is, not that he offered daily sacrifice, but that he was in daily need of atonement. It is more difficult to understand why in ix 4 the golden *θυμιατήριον*, that is, the censer or incense-altar,—for the usage of the word does not determine which is meant,—is assigned to the Holy of Holies. But a passage from the almost contemporary *Apocalypses of Papias*, to which Harnack has directed attention (*Stud. u. Krit.*, 1876, p. 572 *seq.*), similarly connects the censer with the Holy of Holies, and seems to show that our author here proceeds on a current opinion and has not simply made a slip.<sup>2</sup> Apart from Wieseler's arguments, there is still something to be said for Alexandria. The use in ch. xi of 2 Maccabees, an Egyptian Apocryphon,<sup>3</sup> the general sympathy of the argument with Alexandrian thought, the apparent analogy between our Hebrews and the free-thinking Jews of whom Philo speaks, are all in favour of this address, though we do not know enough about the early history of the Egyptian Church to speak with positiveness either for or against this view of the epistle. Among Continental scholars the disposition at present is to favour the Roman address, upon which view, since that church was a mixed one, we must suppose that the letter was originally directed to a Jewish section of the Roman Christians. This is not quite plausible, especially since we find in the epistle no trace of the division of parties alluded to by Paul in his epistle from Rome to the Philippians. It is argued, however, that there is an analogy between the way of thinking of our Hebrews and the disposition of the majority of the Roman Church as it appears in Rom. ix *seq.* The persecution x 32 is supposed to be that of Nero, in which case *θαρσύνεσθαι* may literally mean "exposed as a public spectacle," and xiii 7 is taken as an allusion to the martyrdom of Peter and Paul. In working

<sup>1</sup> Das Sendschreiben an die Hebräer und Jakobus' Sendschreiben, übersetzt und erklärt von H. Ewald, Gott., 1870.

<sup>2</sup> The Syrian word in Mark 8 is *θύμια*. To the passages cited by Harnack to establish for this word the case of censer, not incense altar, may be added Ben Ah ed. Hofmann, No 2878, Baithen, Chron. Zool., p. 507, Ezek. viii 11 (Fesh and Sy. Hex).

<sup>3</sup> Professor Plumptre, in the *Expositor*, vol. 1, has also traced analogies with the book of Wisdom.

out this view there is great divergence of opinion, thus Renou will have it that the epistle was written from Ephesus in the year 65, while Haunack (*Fat. Ap.*, i, p. lxxvii) thinks he finds traces of two distinct persecutions (I), and dates the book from the time of Domitian. The early currency of the epistle at Rome is urged in favour of the Roman address, but the ignorance of the Roman Church as to the author's name seems to go rather in the opposite direction. Ch. xiii. 24 gives us no help, for they of Italy (of ἀπὸ τῆς Ἰταλίας) may in the epistolary style be Italians either at home or abroad. It is most natural to infer from x. 32 *sej.* compared with xii. 4, that the church spoken of had not yet produced martyrs, but had suffered only by bonds and the loss of goods. This would exclude Rome, but perhaps the inference is not quite stringent.

Returning from this survey we bring little with us that can throw light on the authorship of the epistle. We can only say that the writer was a man of the first intellectual mark and of Alexandrian culture, whose home and work lay mainly among Jewish Christians, but who was at the same time associated with the Pauline circle. Of the names offered to us in other New Testament writings, Barnabas and Apollos seem the most likely, and Barnabas will claim the preference if we are entitled to give any weight to tradition. Either name would go well with the Alexandrian address. Apollos was an Alexandrian Jew. Barnabas was of Cyprus, always closely connected with Egypt, and the tradition which connects his relative and associate Mark with the Church of Alexandria is as old as the 2d century.

*Zohrabine*.—A full account of the older literature will be found in D. Nitzsch's *Commentary*, and in the great work of Bleek (*Der Brief an die Hebräer*), *Einleitung*, *Uebersetzung*, *und*, *für* *hebräisches* *Commentar*. Alth. I. *Uebersetzung* *und* *Commentar*, 1836, 1840), which has formed the basis for all subsequent work on the epistle, and is in independent evidence of its value. The excellent Bleek's ultimate views on the exposition of the book may be gathered from the brief posthumous work edited by Windisch (Erlangen, 1868). To the recent commentaries cited in the course of the article may be added those of Friburg (1860, Eng. Trans. Edinburgh, 1868), Tholuck, (2d ed. 1860, Eng. Trans., Edinburgh, 1862), Luthardt (3d ed., Göttingen, 1867). For the doctrine of the epistle, the most elaborate work is, Rahm's very useful *Lehrbuch der Hebräer* (Leipzig, 1858-59), with which, in addition to the general works on New Testament theology by Weiss, Reuss, and others, the reader may compare Bitter's *Einleitung des Hebräerbriefes* (Kiel, 2d ed., p. 169 seq. (Bonn, 1867)), and Plummer's *Predication*, chap. ix (Leipzig, 1878). An excellent summary of the present state of the critical questions bearing on the epistle is given by Zahn in the article "Hebr. verbr." in the new edition of *Konig's Theologiae* (W R 8).

**HEBRIDES, THE, or WESTERN ISLES OF SCOTLAND,** is a name sometimes applied collectively to all the islands on the west coast of Scotland, but seldom including Bute, Arran, and the other islands situated in the Firth of Clyde. The group is usually divided into the Outer Hebrides, or Long Island, and the Inner Hebrides. The former division embraces the Lewis, Harris, North and South Uist, Benbecula, Barra, and a number of small islands, the whole length of this group from Barra-Head to the Butt of Lewis being about 130 miles. The Inner Hebrides include Islay, Skye, Mull, Jura, Coll, Colonsay, Rum, Eigg, Three, Lismore, and Ulva. The number of inhabited islands is over 100, and the population is nearly 100,000. The principal islands are noticed under separate headings. The outer range consists almost exclusively of granite rocks, with poor soil and large proportions of peat and moor. The inner range is composed chiefly of trap and slate. The scenery of the islands may be generally described as partaking of the wild and sublime. Large masses of mountains of all forms tower up in the interior, and the coasts, indented by arms of the sea, are rugged and varied in outline. Spots of great beauty—green pastoral glens, sheltered

bays and lakes—are interspersed with the wildest scenes. The climate, though mild, is humid and unsuitable for corn crops. Only a very small portion of the surface is arable, the greater part being mountains, and the valleys intersecting them narrow and frequently covered with peat moss. Much of the land has, however, been converted into sheep walks, and the moors and desolate tracts are often let at high rents to sportsmen. The development of the prosperity of the islands has been greatly aided by the construction of excellent roads, and by the establishment of various lines of steamers in connexion with Glasgow, thus rendering the fine and in some respects unique scenery fully and easily accessible to tourists. One of the principal sources of wealth, that of the fisheries, Stornoway in the island of Lewis being the headquarters of that industry on the western coast.

The Hebrides are mentioned by Ptolemy under the name of *Ἰβηρίαι*, and by Pliny under that of *Hebēdæ*, the modern spelling having, it is said, originated in an accidental misprint. By the Romans they were called *Sodanenses* or *Sodanenses*. The Latinized form was *Sodanenses*, preserved to modern times in the title of the bishop of Sodor and Man. The original inhabitants of the Hebrides seem to have been of the same Celtic race as those mentioned on the mainland—the Scots, and whom Columba converted in the middle of the 6th century converted to Christianity. Scandinavian hordes then poured in with their northern idolatry and lust of plunder, but in time they adopted the language and faith of the Hebrides. Mention is made of invasions of the Vikings on the shores as early as 793, but the principal emigration took place towards the end of the 9th century in the early part of the reign of Harold Haarfager, and consisted of persons driven thither, as well as to Orkney and Shetland, to escape from the tyrannical rule. Soon afterwards they began to make incursions against their mother-country, and on this account King Harold fitted out an expedition against them, and placed Orkney, Shetland, and the Isles of Man under Norwegian government. The chief seat of the Norwegian sovereignty was Colonsay. About the year 1098 Godolf, Count, King of Dublin, of Man, and of the Hebrides, died in Islay. His third son, who succeeded him, succeeded the government about 1108, and the daughter of Olaf was married to Somelod or Soret of Argyle, who became the founder of the dynasty known as Lords of the Isles. Many efforts were made by the Scottish monarchs to displace the Norwegians. Alexander II. led a fleet and army to the shores of Argyle in 1249, but he died in the island of Kintyre. On the other hand King Haaco, at once to restrain the independence of his vassals and to keep in check the ambition of the Scottish kings, set sail in 1268 on a great expedition, which, however, ended disastrously. Magnus, son of Eric, concluded in 1266 a peace with the Scots, recognizing all claim to the Hebrides and other islands except Orkney and Shetland, and King Alexander agreed to pay the Scots the sum of 4,500 marks in four yearly payments. It was also stipulated that Margaret, daughter of Alexander, should be betrothed to Eric, the son of Magnus, a connexion long remembered and lamented in Scottish song and story.

The sons of Somelod continued to rule the islands, and from a younger son of the same potentate sprang the lords of Lorn, who were the progenitors of Macdonalds. John Macdonald, lord of Islay, who died about 1386, was the first to adopt the title of "Lord of the Isles." He was one of the most potent of the island princes, and was married to a daughter of the Earl of Sutherland, steward of Scotland. His son, Donald of the Isles, was a man of great rebellion in support of his claim to the saddle of Ross, in which, however, he was unsuccessful. Alexander, son of Donald, resumed the heady warfare against the Scottish crown, and in 1462 a treaty was concluded between Alexander and the king of Scotland and King Edward IV. of England, by which John, his son Donald Balloch, and his grandson John, became bound to assist King Edward and James, earl of Douglas, in subduing the kingdom of Scotland. The alliance seems to have led to no better operations, and the island king was adjudged to be a vassal to his liege sovereign of Scotland. In the reign of James V. another John of Islay assumed the title of "Lord of the Isles," but was compelled to surrender the dignity. The glory of the lordship of the Isles, and the island sovereignty—had departed. From the time of Bruce the Campbells had been gaining the ascendancy in Argyle. The Macleans, Macdonalds, Macdonalds, Macdonalds, and other ancient names had sunk before the favourite name of the lords of Lorn, who were vassals from the Macdonalds by Bruce, and then extensive possessions, with Dunstaffnage Castle, bestowed on the king's relative, Stewart, and his descendants, afterwards lords of Lorn. The Macdonalds of Sleat, the direct progenitors of the Campbells, though driven from Islay and deprived of supreme power by

James V. still kept a sort of nominal state in Skye. There was also the Macdonalds of Glenshiel and Glengary (descendants of Somerled), with the powerful houses of Mackinnon of Dunvegan and Macleod of Harris, McNair of Barra and Mackinnon of Mull. Peace and sanguinary feuds continued throughout the 16th and 17th centuries among the rival clans and their dependent tribes, and the turbulent spirit was not subdued till a comparatively recent period. James VI. made an abortive endeavour to colonize Lewis. William III. and Queen Anne attempted to civilize the chiefs in order to procure tranquillity, but the war of Montrose and Dundee, and the Jacobite insurrections of 1715 and 1745, showed how futile were all such efforts. It was not till 1748, when a desperate blow was struck at the independence of the chiefs by the abolition of hereditary jurisdictions, and the appointment of sheriffs in the different districts, that the arts of peace and social improvement made way in these remote regions.

The change was great, and at first not unmixed with evil. A new system of management and high rents were imposed, in consequence of which numbers of the tacksmen, or large tenants, emigrated to America. The estates continued for many years bleak and barren, a large of the waste land uncultivated, and the crofters were driven into villages of barren corners of the land. The consequence was that, despite the numbers who entered the army or joined the Church, the standard of civilization sank lower, and the population multiplied in the slums. The people came to subsist almost entirely on potatoes and hennings, and in 1846, when the potato blight commenced its ravages, a series of most unexampled distress ensued,—only ending over the islands generally, 70 per cent. of the population. Temporary relief was administered in the shape of employment on roads and other works, and an emigration fund being raised, from 4000 to 8000 of the people in the most crowded districts were removed to Australia.

The principal books on the Hebrides are Mullin's *Descriptions of the Western Islands of Scotland*, 1703; Pausanias's *Tour in Scotland and Fingert, to the Hebrides*, 1774; Sir Joseph Banks's *Contributions to Pausanias's Tour*, Borell's *Tour to the Hebrides with Samuel Johnson*, LL.D.; Macculloch's *Geological Account of the Hebrides*, 1819; Hugh Miller's *Scenes of the Hebrides*, W. A. Smith's *Zealandia, or Life in the Outer Hebrides*, 1874. This history under Norwegian rule is given in the *Chinese Empire Manchu et Indochine*, edited, with learned notes, from the MS. in the British Museum by Professor P. A. March of Charenton-le-Pont.

**HEBRON**, the most southern of the three cities of refuge west of Jordan (Josh. x. 7), built "seven years before Zaan (Tanis) in Egypt" (Num. xii. 22). Tanis, according to Bughel, was standing at least 2400 years  $\alpha$  C. Hebron was originally called Mamie and Kinath Atbe, after Arba, one of the Anakim (Josh. xiv. 15). It is frequently mentioned in the Old Testament (Gen. xxi. 18 and xxiii. 19, 2 Sam. iii. 20 and v. 5). The present town encloses the *Iliacum* or sanctuary built over the supposed site of Machpelah, but if this site be (as seems probable) genuine, the ancient Hebron must have faced the cave, as is remarked by many ancient writers (Gen. xxiii. 17). The name Machpelah signifies "place of division," and the cave was therefore called as early as the 6th century *Spiritus Duplex*. In the 12th century an iron door (still visible) is mentioned as leading from the Hebron wall to the cavern. In 1167 A.D. Hebron became the see of a Latin bishop, and it was taken in 1187 by Saladin. In 1834 it joined the rebellion against Ibrahim Pasha, who took the town and pillaged it. Modern Hebron rises on the east slope of a shallow valley—a long narrow town of stone houses, the flat roofs having small stone domes. The main quarter is about 700 yards long, and two smaller groups of houses extend north and south of this. The hill behind is terraced, and luxuriant vineyards surround the place, which is well watered on the north by three principal springs, including the Well Sirah, now *Lith Sarah* (2 Sam. iii. 26). Three conspicuous minarets rise, two from the Haram, the other in the north quarter. The population includes 17,000 Moslems and 600 Jews. The Bedawin bring wool and camel's hair to the market, and glass bangles, lamps, and leather water-skins are manufactured in the town. The modern name of Hebron is *El Khalil*, "the friend," in allusion to Abraham the friend of God. The most conspicuous building is the *Iliacum*, an enclosure measuring

119 feet east and west by 198 north and south, surrounded with high rampart walls of masonry similar in size and dressing to that of the Jerusalem Hebron walls. These ramparts are ascribed by architectural authorities to the Hebronian period. The interior area is partly occupied by a 12th century Gothic church, and contains six modern cenotaphs of Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Sarah, Rebecca, and Leah. The cave beneath the platform has probably not been entered for at least 600 years. The numerous traditional sites now shown round Hebron are traceable generally to medieval legendary topography, including the tombs of Adam, Esau, Judah, Abner, and Jesse, the Field of Damascus, the Vale of Tears, and the Oak of Mamie ("plan" in A.V. Gen. xiii. 18), which has at various times been shown in different positions from  $\frac{1}{2}$  mile to 2 miles from the town.

**HECATEUS**, son of Hegesander, was sprung from an ancient and noble family of Miletus. His life seems to fall between the years 550 and 475  $\alpha$  C. His earlier years were spent in travelling. He lived some time in Egypt (Herod., ii. 113), he was well acquainted with the resources and power of the Persian empire (Herod., v. 34), and the extant fragments of his writings seem to imply personal acquaintance with Libya, Spain, and Italy, as well as with the countries bordering on the *Ægean* and *Euxine* seas. After middle life, he seems to have settled in Miletus, where he occupied a position of great honour, and to have devoted his time to the composition of geographical and historical works. When Aristagoras held a council of the leading Ionians at Miletus, to organize a revolt against the Persian rule, Hecateus tried to dissuade his countrymen from the undertaking. Being overruled, he then advised them to equip a strong fleet, using for the emergency the treasures of the temple at Branchidae, which might be repaid after the war. But both then and at a later period of the war (Herod., v. 124) his skillful and prudent advice was given in vain. When the remainder of the revolted Ionians sued for terms, he was one of the ambassadors sent to the Persian satrap Artaphernes. He wrote a work on geography entitled *Περὶ τῆς οὐραίας γῆς ἱστορίαι*, in which he went over the countries of the known world, told their inhabitants, enumerated the towns, and described their situation and history. He improved the map of the world which Anaximander had made. He also wrote a work called *Τεχνολογία* or *Tetralogica*, describing systematically the traditions and mythology of the Greeks. According to Aelian, he was the first to employ critical method to distinguish myth from historical fact, though he accepts Homer and the other poets as trustworthy authority. Heodotus, though obviously regarding him with respect, often controverts his statements.

**HECATEUS**, of Abdera, sometimes confounded with Hecateus of Miletus, was a Greek historian and philosopher of the 4th century  $\alpha$  C. He was a disciple of Pyrrho and a contemporary of Alexander the Great and Ptolemy Soter. He accompanied the latter in an expedition to Syria, and during the reign of the same prince sailed up the Nile as far as Thebes. Some fragments of works by him on Egypt and on the Hyperboreans still exist. According to Suidas, he also wrote a treatise on the poetry of Hesiod and Homer. Regarding his authorship of a work on the Jews, of which some fragments remain, there is some disagreement among critics, but in all probability he is not the author of it.

The *Hebræus Abderitæ Fragmenta* were collected by P. Zorn, and published at Altona in 1780, under the name of Müller, *Hebræus Fragmenta*, and Yossius, *De Hebræis et Græcis*.

**HECATE**, a Greek goddess who is never mentioned in Homer, but is of great importance in other parts of the literature as well as in religious observance. The name Hecate, the masculine corresponding form, is a frequent

epithet of Apollo, and though the word *ἑκάτη* is never used exactly as an epithet of Artemis, yet this suggests a close relationship between the two goddesses, which an examination of their functions fully confirms. Their character and attributes stamp both as moon goddesses. In fact, though often distinguished from Artemis, yet at other times Hecate is identified with her. The worship of Hecate seems to have flourished especially among the wilder tribes of Greek nationality, in Samothrace, Thessaly, and elsewhere; she has, however, been received into the Pantheon of the more civilized Greek races, probably on account of her close resemblance to Artemis, and this is doubtless the meaning of Hesiod's statement (*Theog.* 423) that she alone of all the Titanic powers was left unlistributed in her honours by Zeus. The parentage of Hecate is variously given. Hesiod names her father Poseis (a word connected with Peisaeus, Peisephone, &c., all of which denote powers of light) and her mother Astria, the starry sky of night. Zeus and Demeter, Zeus and Hecate, &c., are also named as her parents. Her chief prerogatives or functions are the following:

(1) She is the chief goddess who presides over magic arts and spells, for all incantations naturally were performed by the light of the moon. Medea is in this respect closely associated with her worship. See her prayer in Sophocles, *Œniet fr.* In Theocritus, *Id.* 11, where a woman's incantation to bring back her faithless lover is given, Hecate is constantly invoked. (2) She is a Chthonian power, and is worshipped at the Samothracian mysteries. She is then closely connected with Demeter. Alone of the gods besides Helios, she witnessed the abduction of Persephone, and, to be in hand (a natural symbol for the moon's light), she assisted Demeter in the search for her daughter (*Igym. Dem.*, 45 *fr.*). She is obviously a by-form of Peisephone, who as queen of the lower world is also the moon, the bride of the sun, when at setting he has gone to the lower world. She rules as a terrible power, *Kiataia*, among the shades (*Orph.*, 48, &c.). (3) As *ἀδελφεός, φασγάνος, ἐπολιδιττήρα*, she lights wanderers on their way by night, and is therefore, along with Hecates, worshipped as patron of roads under the name *ὁδοῖα*. At cross roads she was the director, hence her name *τριστῆτις*, and probably also *τρίμορφος, τριπρόσωτος, &c.* Pillars called *Hecateas*, like the *Hermes*, stood, especially in Athens, at cross-roads and door-ways. (4) She is the goddess of fertility, and, like Artemis, presides especially over the birth and the youth of wild animals. As the moon measures the months, the moon goddess in all forms, as Artemis, Helena, &c., presides over birth. (5) It follows easily from the last that she should be the goddess who gives wealth and power. Thus she is celebrated by Hesiod (*l.c.*) On the Acropolis at Athens Hecate Epipygidia, as protectress of the citadel, had a shrine beside the temple of Victory. To Hecate dogs were offered, also honey and black she-lambs, as black victims were offered to other Chthonian deities. She was represented generally as a triple form, holding in the one hands torches, with sometimes a snake, a key, or a dagger, often with dogs standing beside her. The three heads support a basket, "*καλίσθος*," such as often adorns the statues of Artemis and Hera. The Hecateas also generally represent her with three heads, occasionally, however, a single-formed Hecate is found, still with torch or key in hand, and sometimes with crescent moon on head.

HECKMOND WYKE, a town of England, in the West Riding of Yorkshire, on the Huddersfield and Bradford Railway, 2 miles N W of Dewsbury and 10 miles S W of Leeds. It occupies a gradually sloping site, and is somewhat irregularly built, although lately it has assumed a more town-like appearance. It possesses a church

dedicated to St James erected in 1831, a market-house erected in 1868, a working men's club established in 1868, a mechanics' institute founded in 1873, a chamber of commerce dating from the same year, and a literary institute established in 1878. There are three board schools, a national school, and a Roman Catholic school, the whole affording accommodation for 1600 scholars. Much has been done for the improvement of the town by draining, and under the provisions of the Dewsbury and Heckmondwyke Waterworks Act of 1876 an ample supply of water has been obtained for domestic and manufacturing purposes. A cemetery with chapels for churchmen and dissenters was formed in 1860. The chief manufactures are blankets, and there are also carpet factories, machine shops, dye works, and iron foundries. Coal is extensively wrought in the vicinity. The town is under the government of a local board of health established in 1853. The area of the township is about 700 acres. The population of the town, which in 1801 was only 1742, had in 1871 reached 8300, and is now estimated at 10,000.

#### HECLA. See ICELAND.

HECTOR, son of Priam and Hecuba, the champion of the Trojans and the manly of their city. Like Paris and other Trojans, he had an Oriental name, Darius, as well as a Greek one, an interesting fact on which many fanciful theories have been founded. He was married to Andromache, daughter of Eetion, king in the Cilician Taurus. By Homer his character is drawn in most favourable colours as a good son, a loving husband and father, and a trusty friend,—religulous without superstition, tenderhearted yet courageous. The one blemish apparent in some parts of the *Iliad* (see Geddes's *Homeric Problem*) is a tendency to presumptuous and boastful confidence. He is an especial favourite of Apollo, and later poets even describe him as son of that god. When Achilles, enraged with Agamemnon, deserted the Greeks, Hector drove them back to their ships, which he almost succeeded in burning. Patroclus, the friend of Achilles, who came to the help of the Greeks, was slain by Hector with the help of Apollo. Then Achilles, to revenge his friend's death, returned to the war, slew Hector, dragged his body behind his chariot to the camp, and afterwards dragged it round the tomb of Patroclus. Priam, guarded by Hecates, went to Achilles and begged him to give back the dead body, which was buried with great honours (*Il.*, xxiv.). Hector was worshipped in the Troad by the Boeotian tribe Gephyriæ, and he is, like other heroes, probably an ancient god. It would require an inquiry into the whole Trojan legend to determine the conception involved. It is impossible to do more in this place than refer to Ruckert's essay in this direction.

Scenes from the life of Hector are favourite subjects in vase paintings. A very ancient pinax from Camius represents his fight with Menelaus over the dead Euphorbus, and on an amphora, also from Camius, of not later date than 450 B.C., he is represented starting for battle, striding beside the quadriga into which his charioter Cebutes has already mounted. Both vases are now in the British Museum. Though many of the subjects in which he was supposed to appear have now been assigned to other heroes,—for example, the frequently occurring fighting of Hector and Andromache is by a more searching criticism generally transformed into a scene from the life of Amphilaus,—yet many undoubted examples remain. We find such scenes as the parting cup given by Hecuba to her son as he departs to the battle, his battle with Achilles in presence of Apollo and Athena, or the dragging of his corpse round the tomb of Patroclus.

HECUBA (the Latin form of the Greek *Hekabe*), wife of Priam, is in Homer daughter of the Phrygian king Dymas, who dwelt on the bank of the Sangarius; but according to Euripides, Virgil, &c., her father was the king Cisseus. According to Homer she was mother of nineteen of Priam's fifty sons. When Troy was captured and Priam



slain, she was made prisoner by the Greeks. Her fate is told in various ways, most of which connect her with the promontory Cynossema, on the Thracian shore of the Hellespont. According to Euripides (*Hecabe*), her youngest son Polydorus was placed during the siege under the care of Polymestor, king of Thrace. When the Greeks came to the Thracian Chersonese on their way home Hecuba discovered that her son Polydorus had been murdered, and in revenge she contrived to put out the eyes of Polymestor and murder his two sons. She was acquitted by Agamemnon; but, as Polymestor retold, she was turned into a dog, and her grave became a mark for ships. Other tales about her may be found in Ovid (*Met.*, xiii. 423 ff.) and Diety. It is obvious from the tales of Hecuba's transformation and death that she is a form of some goddess to whom dogs were sacred; and the analogy with Scylla is striking.

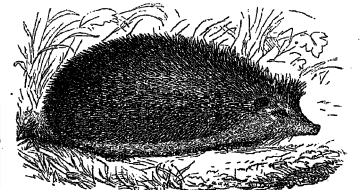
**HEDA**, WILHELM GLASSZ, Dutch painter, born at Haarlem it is said in 1594, and still living there in 1698, was one of the earliest Dutchmen who devoted himself exclusively to the painting of still life. He was the contemporary and comrade of Dirk Hals, with whom he had in common pictorial touch and technical execution. But Heda was more careful and finished than Hals, and showed considerable skill and not a little taste in arranging and colouring chased cups and beakers and tankards of precious and inferior metals. Nothing is so appetizing as his "luncheon," with rare comestibles set out upon rich plate, oysters, seldom without the cut lemon, — bread, champagne, olives, and pastry. Even the commoner "refection" is also not without charm, as it comprises a cut ham, bread, walnuts, and beer. One of Heda's early masterpieces, dated 1623, in the Munich Pinakothek is as homely as a later one of 1651 in the Lichtenstein Gallery at Vienna. A more luxurious repast is a Luncheon in the Augsburg Gallery, dated 1644. Most of Heda's pictures are on the Continent, notably in the galleries of Paris, Fanne, Ghent, Darmstadt, Götting, Munich, and Vienna. He was a man of repute in his native city, and filled all the offices of dignity and trust in the guild of Haarlem. He seems to have had considerable influence in forming the younger Frans Hals.

**HEDGEHOG** (*Erinaceus europæus*, Linn.), the Common Urhain of Pennant, *Hærisson* of the French, *Riccio* of the Italians, *Igel* of the Germans, is the best known, and from an anatomical point of view perhaps the most characteristic, of the *Insectivora*. The genus is remarkable for its dentition, its structure of spines, and its short tail, while the ordinary species is characterized by not having the spines longer than the head or the ears more than half that length. The upper jaw is longer than the lower one, and the whole snout, which is long and flexible, has somewhat the appearance of that of the hog; the nostrils are narrow; and the claws are long but weak. The animal is about 10 inches long, its eyes are small, and the integument of the ventral surface is covered with hairs of the ordinary character. The brain is remarkable for its low degree of development, the cerebral hemispheres being excessively small, and marked with but one groove, and that a shallow one, on each side, while the more special characters of this region call to mind the organization of the same parts in the very lowest of mammals.

The most remarkable point in its external appearance is the possession of spines, and the power possessed by it of rolling itself up into a ball, from which these spines stand out in every direction. The spines, which are modified hairs, are sharp, hard, and elastic, and form so efficient a defence that there are but few animals that are able, and even they rarely, to effect a successful attack on this curious creature. The moment it is touched, or even hears the sound of so slight a menace as the report of a gun, it rolls

itself up by the action of the powerful muscles which lie just beneath the skin, while this same contraction effects the erection of the spines. The most important muscle is the *orbicularis pinnatus*, which extends over the anterior region of the skull, as far down the body as the ventral region of the tail; and on to the tail; three other muscles are connected with this, and aid in the contraction of the integument, passing as they do from the breast-bone to the face and lower jaw, from the fore-arm to the sides of the ventral region, and from the fore-arm to the dorsal surface.

Though insectivorous, the hedgehog is reported to have a great liking for mice, while frogs and toads, as well as plants and fruits, all seem to be acceptable; its ingestion of snakes has been detailed by Buckland and Broderip, and its fondness for eggs has caused it to meet with the emity of game-preservers. Pennant reports that "it lies under the undeserved reproach of sucking cattle, and hurting their udders, but the smallness of its mouth renders that impossible," nor does it seem that any well-authenticated report of such an occurrence has ever been made. It makes a not rare domestic pet. In a state of nature it does not emerge from its retreat during full daylight, unless urged out by hunger or by the necessities of its young. During the cold of winter it passes into a state of complete hibernation, and its temperature falls very considerably; having



Hedgehog.

provided itself with a nest of dry leaves, it is well protected from the influences of the rain, and rolling itself up it remains undisturbed till distinctly warmer weather returns. In July or August the female brings forth four to eight young, or, according to others (Bell), two to four at a somewhat earlier period; at birth the spines, which in the adult are black in the middle, are white and soft, but soon harden, though they do not attain their full size until the succeeding spring. It is commonly found in woods and gardens, and extends over nearly the whole of Europe; it has been found at 6000 to 8000 feet above the level of the sea. — The which in *Macbeth* who heard the "hedge-pig" *whine* thrice and once gave not an incorrect account of the character of its voice, rarely as this is heard. The adult is provided with thirty-six, and the young with twenty-four teeth; in both cases canines appear to be absent; the median incisors are very long, and project; there are two more false grinders in the upper than in the lower jaw, while the true molars of the upper jaw are remarkable for the presence of four cusps, of which the anterior inner and the posterior outer are connected by an obliquely-set ridge. This is the same arrangement as is seen in man. In the lower jaw the corresponding teeth are, as in the lemurs (or *half-apes*), provided with two transverse ridges.

Sixteen species of the genus have been recognized by some zoologists. The tenrec (*Centetes*) of Madagascar has very many points in common with it.

## HEDGE-SPARROW See SPARROW

**HEEM, JAN DAVIDSZ VAN (or JOHANNES DE),** was born according to Houbraken and Sandart in 1601, according to Descamps in 1600, at Utrecht, and died at Antwerp in 1683 or 1684. Thoirs has said of Heda, but it is only true of De Heem, that "He has grafted insects, butterflies, and all the minute beings that swarm in vegetation, and made the moth drink in cups of chased gold." He was, if not the first, certainly the greatest painter of still life in Holland, no artist of his class combined more successfully perfect reality of form and colour with brilliancy and harmony of tints. No object of stone or silver, no flower humble or gorgeous, no fruit of Europe or the tropics, no twig or leaf, with which he was not familiar. More frequently he represented a festoon or a nosegay. Sometimes he wove with a purpose to point a moral or illustrate a motto. Here the snakes lie coiled under the grass, there a skull rests on blooming plants. Gold and silver tankards or cups suggest the vanity of earthly possessions, salvation is allegorized in a chalice amidst blossoms, death as a quaff inside a wreath. Sometimes De Heem painted alone, sometimes in company with men of his school, Madonnas or portraits surrounded by festoons of fruit or flowers. At one time he signed with initials, at others with Johannes, at others again with the name of his father joined to his own. At rare intervals he condescended to a date, and when he did this work was certainly of the best. De Heem entered the guild of Antwerp in 1635-6, and became a burgher of that city in 1637. He steadily maintained his residence till 1667, when he moved to Utrecht, where traces of his presence are preserved in records of 1668, 1669, and 1670. It is not known when he finally returned to Antwerp, but his death is recorded in the guild books of that place. A very early picture, dated 1628, in the gallery of Gotha, bearing the signature of Johannes in full, shows that De Heem at that time was familiar with the technical habits of execution peculiar to the youth of Albert Cuyp. In later years he completely shook off dependence, and appears in all the vigour of his own originality.

Out of 100 pictures or more to be met with in European galleries scarcely eighteen are dated. The earliest after that of Gotha is a chased tankard, with a bottle, a silver cup, and a lemon on a marble table, dated 1640, in the museum of Amsterdam. A similar work of 1645, with the addition of fruit and flowers and a distant landscape, is in the collection of the Earl of Arundel. A chalice in a wreath, with the vibrant host amidst wheatstalks, grapes, and flowers, is a masterpiece of 1648 in the Belvedere of Vienna. A wreath round a Madonna of life size, dated 1650, in the museum of Berlin. De Heem's pictures are painted lightly and harmoniously on a large scale. In the Pinakothek at Munich is the celebrated composition of 1658, in which creeps, beautifully commingled with gourds and blackberries, twigs of orange, myrtle, and peach, are enlivened by butterflies, moths, and bees. A landscape with a blooming rose tree, a jug of strawberries, a selection of fruit, and a marble bust of Pan, dated 1655, is in the Hermitage at St Petersburg, an allegory of abundance in a mansion wreathed with fruit and flowers, in the gallery of Brussels, is inscribed with De Heem's monogram, the date of 1668, and the name of an obscure artist called Lambertus. All these pieces exhibit the master in full possession of his artistic facilities.

**CONRADUS DE HEEM,** the son of Johannes, was in practice as a flower painter at Utrecht in 1658, and was still active in his profession in 1671 at the Hague. His pictures are not equal to those of his sire, but they are all well executed, and most of them are in the galleries of the Hague, Dresden, Cassel, Vienna, and Berlin. In the Stedael at Amsterdam is a fruit piece, with pot herbs and a peacock's egg, dated 1668; another, dated 1671, is in the museum of Brussels. **DAVID DE HEEM,** another member of the family, entered the guild of Utrecht in 1668 and that of Antwerp in 1693. The best piece assigned to him is a table with a lobster, trout, and glasses, in the gallery of Amsterdam; others bear his signature in the museums of Florence, St Petersburg, and Brussels. It is well to guard against the fallacy that David de Heem above mentioned is the father of Jan de Heem. We should also be careful not to make two persons of the same name, who sometimes signs Johannes, sometimes Jan Davidsz or J. D. Heem.

**HEEMSKERK, JOHAN VAN (1597-1656),** Dutch poet, was born at Amsterdam in 1597. He was educated as a child at Bayonne, and entered the university of Leyden in 1617. In 1621 he went abroad on the grand tour, leaving behind him his first volume of poems, *Musculum* (The Art of Love), which appeared in 1622. He was absent from Holland four years. He was made master of arts at Douvres in 1623, and in 1624 visited Hugo Grotius in Paris. On his return in 1626 he published *Amsteligt* (The Duty of Love), and began to practise as an advocate in the Hague. In 1628 he was sent to England in his legal capacity by the Dutch East India Company, to settle the dispute respecting Amboyna. In the same year he published the poem entitled *Musculum*, or the Science of Love. He proceeded to Amsterdam in 1640, where he married Alida, sister of the eminent statesman Van Brounning. In 1643 he published *The Cud*, a tragic comedy, and in 1647 his most famous work, the pastoral romance of *Danavische Avond*, which he had written ten years before. During the last twelve years of his life Heemskerk sat in the upper chamber of the states-general. His last poetical work was *The Inconstant Iffias*. He died at Amsterdam on the 27th of February 1656.

The poetry of Heemskerk, which fell into oblivion during the 18th century, is now once more read and valued. He takes a prominent place among writers of the second rank in the list of Dutch literature. But his famous pastoral, the *Danavische Avond*, which was founded on the *Astree* of Honore d'Urfé, enjoyed a great popularity for more than a century, and passed through twelve editions. It provided a host of more or less imitations, of which the most distinguished was the *Danavische Avond* (1802) of Lambertus Doo, the *Zaanlandsche Avond* (1858) of Hendrik Zoolboom, and the *Rechts danavische Avond* (1708) of Willem den Elge. But the original work of Heemskerk, in which a variety of nymphs and shepherds go out from the Hague to Kitiwik, and there indulge in poetic and pastoral discourse, survives all these in brightness and variety.

**HEEMSKERK, MARTIN JACOBS (1498-1574),** sometimes called Van Veen, was born at Heemskerk in Holland in 1498, and apprenticed by his father, a small farmer, to Cornelis Willemaes, a painter at Haarlem. Recalled after a time to the paternal homestead and put to the plough at the milking of cows, young Heemskerk took the first opportunity that offered to run away, and demonstrated his wish to leave home for ever by walking in a single day the 50 miles which separate his native hamlet from the town of Delft. There he studied under a local master whom he soon deserted for John Schoreel of Haarlem. At Haarlem he formed what is known as his first manner, which is but a quaint and gauche imitation of the fluid style brought from Italy by Mabuse and others. He then started on a wandering tour, during which he visited the whole of northern and central Italy, stopping at Rome, where he had letters for a cardinal. It is evidence of his facility with which he acquired the rapid execution of a scene-painter that he was selected to co-operate with Antonio da San Gallo, Battista Franco, and Francesco Salviati to decorate the triumphal arches erected at Rome in April 1536 in honour of Charles V. Vasari, who saw the battle-pieces which Heemskerk then produced, says they were well composed and boldly executed. On his return to the Netherlands he settled at Haarlem, where he soon (1540) became president of his guild, married twice, and secured a large and lucrative practice. In 1573 he left Haarlem for Amsterdam, to avoid the rage which the Spaniards laid to the place, and there he made a life which has been preserved, and shows that he had lived long enough and prosperously enough to make a fortune. At his death, which took place on the 1st of October 1574, he left money and land in trust to the orphanage of Haarlem, with interest to be paid yearly to any couple which should be willing to perform the marriage ceremony on the slab of



Tschugg. Tschugg was the summer residence of the family, near Etloch on the lake of Biel, in winter they lived in Bern. Little happened in these years. Hegel had a few acquaintances in Bern, but, on the whole, intellectually he lived in isolation. He was, however, far from inactive. Local influences may explain a systematic account of the fiscal system of the canton Bern which he made for himself. But the main factor in Hegel's mental growth came from his study of Christianity. Under the impulse given by Lessing and Kant he turned to the original records of Christianity, and attempted to construe for himself the real significance of Christ. He wrote a life of Jesus, in which Jesus was simply the son of Joseph and Mary. He did not stop to criticize as a philologist, and simply ignored the miraculous. He asked for the secret contained in the conduct and sayings of this man which made him the hope of the human race. To Hegel Jesus appeared as revealing the unity with God in which the Greeks in their best days unwittingly rejoiced, and as lifting the eyes of the Jews from a long-lived man metes out punishment on the transgressor, to the destiny which in the Greek conception falls on the just no less than on the unjust.

The interest of these lucubrations is in general twofold. In Jesus Hegel finds the expression for something higher than mere morality. He finds a noble spirit which rises above the constraints of the world, and in the concrete life, seeing the infinite always embracing our finitude, and proclaiming the divine which is in man and cannot be overcome by error and evil, unless the man close his eyes and ears to the godlike presence within him. In religious life, in short, he finds the principle which reconciles the oppositions of the temporal and ordinary mind. But, secondly, the general source of the doctrine that life is higher than all its incidents and codes is of interest. He does not free himself from the current theology either by rational moralizing like Kant, or by bold speculative synthesis like Fichte and Schelling. He finds his panacea in the concrete life of humanity. He turns to history, and not to abstract speculation. But although he goes to the Scriptures, and tastes the mystical spirit of the medieval saints, the Christ of his conception has traits that seem borrowed from Socrates and from the heroes of Attic tragedy, who suffer much and yet smile gently on a destiny to which they were reconciled. Instead of the Hebraic doctrine of a Jesus punished for our sins, we have the Hellenic idea of a man who is calmly tranquil in the consciousness of his unity with God.

During these years of arduous wrestling with the problems of religion, Hegel kept up a slack correspondence with Schelling and Holderlin. Schelling was already on the way to fame. He was trying (to quote his own words) to find the premises to the results of Kant. Meanwhile he kept Hegel abreast with German speculation. Both of them were intent on forcing the theologians from their holes into the daylight, and grudged them any aid they might expect from Kant's postulation of God and immortality to crown the edifice of ethics. After lamenting his want of books, Hegel concludes a letter of 1795 with the words, "Let reason and freedom remain our watchword, and our point of union the church invisible." Great is their animus against the pietistic hypocrisy of Wurtemberg. Meanwhile Holderlin in Jena had been following Fichte's career with an enthusiasm with which he infected Hegel.

After these vehement struggles of thought, it is pleasing to turn to a short tour which Hegel in company with three other tutors made through the Bernese Oberland in July and August 1796. Of this tour he has left a minute diary. It embraced Lauterbrunnen, Grindelwald, the Grimsel, and the valley of the Reuss to the lake of Lucerne. The popular passion for natural scenery had scarcely begun, and the days of hotels and tourists were distant. Our four

tutors carried little luggage, save a pack of cards to while away the hours of rest. Hegel was particularly delighted with the varied play of the waterfalls. Still no glamour blinds him to the squalor of Swiss peasant life. The glaciers and the rocks call forth no raptures. "The spectacle of these eternally dead masses gave me nothing but the monotonous and at last tedious idea, 'Ea est so'." Again, speaking of the upper parts of the Hasli-thal "I doubt if the most orthodox theologian would be bold enough in these regions to credit nature with the purpose of being useful to man, who with difficulty must wrest from her the scanty pittance of which he can make use,—who is uncertain whether rocks or avalanches may not crush him to pieces even as he steals a poor handful of grass, and destroy his miserable hut and cow-stall, the wretched work of his hands."

Towards the close of his engagement at Bern, Hegel had received hopes from Schelling of a post at Jena. Tired of isolation, he was anxious to get away from Bern. Fortunately his friend Holderlin, who was now tutor in Frankfurt, secured a similar situation there for Hegel in the family of a Herr Gogol, a merchant. Hegel entered upon his new post in January 1797. It was apparently more agreeable, and left more time for study. At the same time he was nearer the centre of public interest. But above all it rescued the much-misused intellectual society. Holderlin was still, as formerly, enamoured of the ideal of ancient Greece. And another friend called Sindler, a Fichtean, the author of several forgotten philosophical works, helped to animate Hegel's interest in philosophy.

It may have been the political position of Frankfurt that made Hegel about this time turn to questions of economics and government. He had studied Gibbon, Hume, and Montesquieu in Switzerland. We now find him making copious extracts from the English newspapers on the Poor Law Bill of 1796, criticizing the Prussian land laws, promulgated about the same time, and writing a commentary on Sir James Steuart's *Inquiry into the Principles of Political Economy*, as a means of defining his own views on economics. Here, as in contemporaneous criticisms of Kant's ethical writings, Hegel aims at correcting the abstract discussion of a topic by treating it in its systematic interconnections. Church and state, law and morality, commerce and art, are reduced to factors in the totality of human life, from which the specialists had isolated them.

But the best evidence of Hegel's attention to contemporary politics is two unpublished essays—one of them written in 1798, "On the Internal Condition of Wurtemberg in Recent Times, particularly on the Defects in the Magistracy," the other a criticism on the constitution of Germany, written, it is probable, not long after the peace of Lunéville (1801). Both essays show more vigour in pointing out the inadequacies of the present than in suggesting a remedy. Criticism, not construction, is their forte. In the first Hegel showed how the supineness of the committee of estates in Wurtemberg had favoured the usurpations of the superior officials in whom the court had found compliant servants. And though he perceived the advantages of change in the constitution of the estates, he still doubted if an improved system could work in the actual conditions of his native province. The main feature in the pamphlet is the recognition that a spirit of reform is abroad. If Wurtemberg suffered from a bureaucracy tempered by despotism, the Fatherland in general suffered no less "Germany," so begins the second of these unpublished papers, "is no longer a state." Referring the collapse of the empire to the retention of feudal forms and to the action of religious animosities, Hegel looked forward to reorganization by a central power (Austria) wielding the imperial army, and by a representative body elected by the geographical dis-

tracts of the empire. But such an issue, he saw well, could only be the outcome of violence—"blood and iron." The philosopher did not pose as a practical statesman. He only described the German empire in its nullity as a concept in without existence in fact. In such a state of things it was the business of the philosopher to set forth the outlines of the coming epoch, as they were already moulding themselves into shape, amidst what the ordinary eye saw only as the disintegration of the old forms of social life.

His old interest in the religious question reappears, but in a more philosophical form. Starting with the contrast between a ritual and a positive religion, he regards a positive religion as one imposed upon the mind from without, not a natural growth crowning the mould of human life. A ritual religion, on the other hand, was not, he thought, the one universal religion of every clime and age, but rather the spontaneous development of the national conscience varying in varying circumstances. A people's religion completes and consecrates their whole activity in it; the people lives above its finite life in limited spheres to an infinite life where it feels itself all at one. Even philosophy with Hegel at this epoch was subordinate to religion, for philosophy must never abandon the finite in the search for the infinite. Soon, however, Hegel adopted a view according to which philosophy is a higher mode of apprehending the infinite than even religion.

At Frankfurt, meanwhile, the philosophic ideas of Hegel first assumed the proper philosophical form. "In my scientific training," he says (in a letter to Schelling of November 2, 1800), "which started from more subordinate wants of man, I could not but be forced onwards to science, and at the same time the ideal of youth had to transform itself into the reflective form of a system." In a MS of 102 quait sheets, of which the three first and the seventh are wanting, there is preserved the original sketch of the Hegelian system, so far at least as the logic and metaphysics and part of the philosophy of nature are concerned. The third part of the system—the ethical theory—seems to have been composed afterwards, it is contained in its first draught in another MS of thirty sheets. Even these had been preceded by earlier Pythagorean constructions envisaging the divine life in divine triangles.

Circumstances soon put Hegel in the way to complete these outlines. His father died in January 1799, and the slender sum which Hegel received as his inheritance, 3154 gulden (about £360), enabled him to think once more of a studious life. At the close of 1800 we find him asking Schelling for letters of introduction to Bamberg, where with cheap living and good beer he hoped to prepare himself for the intellectual exertions of Jena. The upshot was that Hegel arrived at Jena in January 1801. An end had already come to the brilliant epoch at Jena, when the romantic poets, Tieck, Novalis, and the Schlegels made it the headquarters of their fantastic mysticism, and Fichte turned the results of Kant into the banner of revolutionary ideas. Schelling was the main philosophical lion of the time, and in some quarters Hegel was spoken of as a new champion summoned from Swabia by Schelling to help him in his struggle with the more prosaic continuators of Kant. Hegel's first performance seemed to justify the rumour.

It was an essay on the difference between the philosophic systems of Fichte and Schelling, tending in the main to support the latter. Still more striking was the agreement shown in the *Critical Journal of Philosophy*, which Schelling and Hegel wrote conjointly during the years 1802-3. So late was the difference between them at this epoch that it, in one or two cases, is not with certainty possible to determine by whom the essay was written. Even at a later period foreign critics like Cousin saw much that was alike in the two doctrines, and did not

hesitate to regard Hegel as a disciple of Schelling. The dissertation by which Hegel qualified for the position of privat-docent—an essay, *De orbitis planetarum*—was probably chosen under the influence of Schelling's philosophy of nature. It was an unfortunate subject. For while Hegel, depending on a numerical proportion suggested by Plato, hinted in a single sentence that it might be a mistake to look for a planet in the interval between Mars and Jupiter, Professor Piazzi had already discovered the first of the asteroids on 1st January 1801. Apparently in August, when Hegel qualified, the news of the discovery had not yet reached him, but critics have made this luckless suggestion the ground of attack on a *prossy* philosophy. The theses attached to this dissertation contained some characteristic paradoxes, e.g., that the syllogism is the principle of idealism, that a square is the law of nature, and a triangle of mind, &c.

Hegel's earliest lectures, in the winter of 1801-2, on logic and metaphysics were attended by about eleven students. At a later period, in 1804, we find him with a class of about thirty, lecturing on his whole system, but his average attendance was rather less. Besides philosophy, he once at least lectured on mathematics. As he taught, he was led to modify his original system, and notices after notices of his lectures promised a text-book of philosophy, which, however, failed to appear. Meanwhile, after the departure of Schelling from Jena in the middle of 1803, Hegel was left to work out his own views. Besides philosophical studies, where he now added Aristotle to Plato, he read Homer and the Greek tragedians, made extracts from books, attended lectures on physiology, and dabbled in other sciences. On his own representation at Weimar, he was in February 1805 made a professor extraordinarius, and in July 1806 drew his first and only stipend—100 thalers. At Jena, though some of his hearers became devotedly attached to him, Hegel was not a popular lecturer any more than Kianse. The ordinary student found Fines more intelligible.

Of the lectures of that period there still remain considerable notes. The language often had a theological tinge (never entirely absent), as when the "idea" was spoken of, or "the night of the divine mystery," or the dialectic of the absolute called the "course of the divine life." Still his view was growing clearer, and his difference from Schelling more palpable. Both Schelling and Hegel stand in a relation to art, but while the æsthetic model of Schelling was found in the contemporary world, where art was a special sphere and the artist a separate profession in no intimate connexion with the age and nation, the model of Hegel was found rather in those works of national art in which art is not a part of the common life but an aspect of it, and the artist is not a mere individual but a concentration of the passion and power of beauty in the whole community. "Such art," says Hegel, "is the common good and the work of all. Each generation hands it on beautified to the next, each has done something to give utterance to the universal thought. Those who are said to have genius have acquired some special aptitude by which they render the general shapes of the nation their own work, one in one point, another in another. What they produce is not their invention, but the invention of the whole nation, or rather, what they find is that the whole nation has found its true nature. Each, as it were, piles up his stone. So too does the artist. Somehow he has the good fortune to come last, and when he places his stone the arch stands self-supported." Hegel, as we have already seen, was fully aware of this change that was coming over the world. "A new epoch," he says, "has arisen. It seems as if the world spirit had now succeeded in freeing itself from all foreign objective existence, and finally apprehending itself as absolute mind."

These words came from lectures on the history of philosophy, which laid the foundation for his "Phenomenology of the Mind." The printing of this work (*Phänomenologie des Geistes*) began in 1806 at Bamberg, and the sheets were distributed, as they appeared, to a class where he treated the phenomenology as an introduction to logic. That course he closed on the 18th September 1806, as follows:—"This, gentlemen, is speculative philosophy, so far as I have worked it out. We stand in a momentous time,—a seething mass, in which the mind has made a sudden bound, left its old shape behind, and is gaining a new. The whole bulk of our old ideas, the very bands of the world, are rent asunder, and collapse like a dream. Mind is preparing a new start. Philosophy, above all things, has to own and welcome such a start. While some in powerless resistance cling to the past, and the majority help, but unconsciously, to swell the numbers of its cortege, philosophy, recognising it as the eternal, has to show it due honour."

Less than a month after, on the 14th October 1806, Napoleon was at Jena. But Hegel, like Goethe, felt no patriotic shudder at the victory, and in Prussia he saw only a corrupt and conceited bureaucracy. Writing to his friend Niehammer on the day before the battle, he speaks only with admiration of the "world soul," the emperor, and only with satisfaction of the probable overthrow of the badly-generalised and inefficient Prussians. The scholar's wish was to see the clouds of war pass away, and leave thinkers to their peaceful work. His manuscripts were his main care, and doubtful of the safety of his last despatch to Bamberg, and disturbed by the French soldiers in his lodgings, he hurried off, with the last pages of the *Phenomenology* in his pocket, to take refuge in the pro-rector's house. Hegel's fortunes were now at the lowest ebb. Without means and obliged to borrow from his friend Niehammer, he had no further hopes from the impoverished university. He had already tried to get away from Jena. In 1805, when several lectures left in consequence of diminished classes, he had written to Voss suggesting that his philosophy might find more congenial soil in Heidelberg, but the application bore no fruit. Now, however, it was necessary to do something. And so, when the proprietors of the *Bamberger Zeitung* was in want of an editor, Hegel, who had been named by Niehammer, at once accepted the offer, which involved a certain partnership in the concern. Early in 1807 he came to Bamberg, and stayed for about eighteen months. Of his editorial work there is little to tell, no leading articles appeared in his columns. Patriotic indignation against Napoleon, or interest in the fortunes of Prussia, were not wanted, and probably would not have been allowed. The editor was only expected to give his constituency news, and he did so with proper neutrality and from the best sources available. It was not a lofty or suitable vocation, and when a nomination to the rectorship of the Anglisten-gymnasium in Nuremberg was procured for Hegel, again by the agency of Niehammer, who was now in the education office at Munich, he was glad to go.

From December 1808 to August 1816 Hegel was school master at Bavaria, at this time under the direction of Montgolfier, was modernising her institutions. The school system was reorganised by new regulations, which, *inter alia*, prescribed a training in philosophy as part of the gymnastical course. To this regulation (with which Hegel, however, was not agreed) we owe a series of lessons in the outlines of philosophy—ethical, logical, and psychological—which Hegel drew up with great care and many revisions. They were published in 1840 by Rosenkranz from Hegel's papers. Deviating somewhat from the official order, he began with the outlines of moral and religious doctrine, he then proceeded to psychology and a combined system of

logic and metaphysics, and ended with a general summary of the whole of philosophy.

As a teacher and master Hegel seems to have been fairly successful. He inspired confidence in his pupils, and maintained discipline without pedantic interference in their associations and sports. On the prize days at the close of the session, his addresses summing up the history of the school year discussed some topic of general interest. Five of these addresses are preserved. The first is an exposition of the advantages of a classical training, when it is not confined to mere points of grammar. "The perfection and grandeur of the master-works of Greek and Roman literature must be the intellectual bath, the secular baptism, which gives the first and unfading tone and tincture of taste and science." The school was mainly classical, yet at least one half of the time was given to arithmetic, history and geography, mathematics, physics, and preliminary philosophy. In another address, speaking of the introduction of military exercises at school, he says:—"These exercises, while not intended to withdraw the students from their more immediate duty, so far as they have any calling to it, still remind them of the possibility that every one, whatever rank in society he may belong to, may one day have to defend his country and his king, or help to that end. This duty, which is natural to all, was formerly recognized by every citizen, though whole ranks in the state have become strangers to the very idea of it."

On the 16th September 1811, in the summer vacation, Hegel married Marie von Tüchle. The young lady (twenty-two years younger than her bridegroom) belonged to Nuremberg, and seems to have been all that could be wished for in a wife. She brought her husband no fortune, but a cheerful heart. They seem to have had a happy if a frugal home, and a short excursion now and then was their chief dissipation. The husband kept a careful record of income and expenditure. That income at Nuremberg amounted to 1500 gulden (£180) and a house at Heidelberg, as professor, he received about the same sum, but at Berlin his regular stipend was about 3000 thalers (£300). Two sons were born to them, the eldest, Karl, born 7th June 1813, has since become eminent as a historian. The younger was named Immanuel, born on the 24th September 1816. Hegel's letters to his wife, written during his solitary holiday tours to Vienna, the Netherlands, and Paris, breathe of kindly and happy affection. Hegel, the tourist, recalling happy days spent together, confessing that, were it not because of his sense of duty as a traveller, he would rather be at home, dividing his time between his books and his wife, commenting on the shop windows at Vienna, describing the straw hats of the Fataless ladies,—is a contrast to the professor of a profound philosophical system. But it shows that the enthusiasm which in his days of courtship moved him to verse had blossomed into a later age of domestic bliss.

The year after his marriage appeared the first two volumes of his *Wissenschaft der Logik*, and the work was completed by a third in 1816. This work, in which his system was for the first time presented in what, if we except a few minor alterations, was its ultimate shape, found some audience in the world, and from here and there came voices of encouragement. Sinclair, who in 1811 brought out three volumes on *Truth and Certainty*, Windischmann, subsequently professor at Bonn, Thaden, a Danish peasant farmer and votary of free thought, Berger, another Dane and philosopher, Van Ghert, an old pupil, now a Government official at Amsterdam,—these, as well as Knebel and Niehammer, corresponded with him during this period. Towards the close of his eighth session three professorships were almost simultaneously put within his reach,—at Erlangen, Berlin, and Heidelberg. The Prussian

offer expressed a doubt that his long absence from university teaching might have made him rusty, so he accepted the post at Heidelberg, whence Fries had just gone to Jena. He came to Heidelberg in October 1816. Though claimed with the neighbourhood, and plucked with the people, he was a little disappointed when only four hearers turned up for one of his courses. Others, however, on the encyclopedia of philosophy and the history of philosophy drew classes of twenty to thirty. While he was there, Cousin first made his acquaintance, but a more intimate relation dates from Berlin. Among his pupils was Hinrichs, who, originally a law student, became a philosophical disciple and wrote several works, to one of which, *Religion in its Innered Relation to Science*, Hegel wrote a rather important preface in 1823. The youngest of his hearers was an Estonian baron, Boris d'Xkull, who after serving in the Russian army came to Heidelberg to learn the wisdom of Hegel. But his book and his lectures were like obscurity to the town, who looked himself by Hegel's advice to some simple fact, in the shape of rudimentary knowledge, before he returned to the Hegelian system. The logic of his master, with whom he became intimate, was afterwards his constant companion in his travels.

At Heidelberg Hegel was also active in a literary way. In 1817 he brought out the *Encyclopedia of the Philosophical Sciences*, in outline, for use at his lectures. In its first form it was a small treatise of about 300 octavo pages, but in the second of 1827, and the third of 1830, it rapidly grew to twice the original bulk. It is the only exposition of the Hegelian system as a whole which we have direct from Hegel's own hand. Besides this work he wrote two reviews for the Heidelberg *Jahrbücher*—the first on Jacobi, the other a political pamphlet which called forth violent criticism. It was entitled a *Criticism on the Transactions of the Estates of Württemberg* in 1815-16. On the 15th March 1816 King Frederick of Württemberg, at a meeting of the estates of his kingdom, had before them the draft of a new constitution, in accordance with the resolutions of the congress of Vienna. Though an improvement on the old constitution, it was unacceptable to the estates, jealous of their old privileges and suspicious of the king's intentions. A decided majority demanded the restitution of their old laws, though the kingdom now included a large population to which the old rights were strange. Hegel in his essay, which was republished at Stuttgart, strongly supported the royal proposals, and severely animadverted on the backwardness of the bureaucracy and the landed interests. In the main he was right, but he forgot too much the provocation they had received, the usurpations and selfishness of the governing family, and the unpolitical character of the king.

After two years at Heidelberg Hegel accepted the renewed offer of the chair of philosophy at Berlin, which had been kept vacant since the death of Fichte. The hopes which this offer raised of a position less precarious than that of a university teacher of philosophy were in one sense disappointed, for more than a professor Hegel never became. But his influence upon his pupils, and his solidarity with the Prussian Government, gave him a position such as few professors have held.

On the 25th October 1818 Hegel began his lectures at Berlin. "Our business and vocation," he said to his young hearers, "is to cherish the philosophical development of the substantial foundation (*s.* the state) which has renewed its youth and increased its strength." But Prussia had already proved false to the spirit of freedom which had armed the peoples against Napoleon. The enthusiasm which in the hands of Stein, Humboldt, and Schopenhorst had reformed the social, intellectual, and military organization of Prussia still smouldered, but hot-headed youth

ful politicians made it burst into fitful flames. Sober men were disgusted by the absurdities perpetrated at the Wartburg to celebrate the thirtieth anniversary of the Reformation. And though professors like Fries and Oken shared the behaviour of the students in this demonstration, and the assassination of Kotzebue in 1819 found admirers—such as the theological professor De Witte, who spoke of it as a "beautiful sign of the time"—Stein spoke of the two professors as a pair of fools, and Niebuhr grew sad over the extravagances of the younger generation. Secret societies were formed or believed to be forming, and the Governments grew alarmed. In Prussia the reaction triumphed by the withdrawal of Humboldt in the last days of 1819, and the death of Hardenberg in 1822 was followed by a period of bureaucracy and conservatism.

It was in such an atmosphere that Hegel published the "Philosophy of Right" (*Grundlinien der Philosophie des Rechts*) in 1821. It is a combined system of moral and political philosophy, or a sociology dominated by the idea of the state. It turns away contemptuously and fiercely from the sentimental aspirations of reformers possessed by the democratic doctrine of the rights of the omnipotent nation. Fries is stigmatized as one of the "ingleaders of shallowness" who were bent on substituting a fancied love of enthusiasm and friendship for the established order of the state. The disciplined philosopher, who had devoted himself to the task of comprehending the organism of the state, had no patience with feeble or more mercenary minds who recklessly laid hands on established ordinances, and set them aside where they contravened humanitarian sentiments. With the principle that whatever is real is rational, and whatever is rational is real, Hegel fancied that he had stopped the mouths of political critics and constitution-mongers. His theory was not a mere formulation of the Prussian state. Much that he construed as necessary to a state was wanting in Prussia, and some of the reforms already introduced did not find their place in his system. Yet, on the whole, he had taken his side with the Government. Altenstein even expressed his satisfaction with the book. In his disgust at the crude conceptions of the enthusiasts, who had hoped that the war of liberation might end in a realm of internal liberty, Hegel had forgotten his own youthful vows recorded in verse to Holderlin, "never, never to live in peace with the ordinance which regulates feeling and opinion." And yet if we look deeper we see that this is no worship of existing powers. It is rather due to an overpowering sense of the value of organization,—a sense that liberty can never be disavowed from order, that a vital interconnection between all the parts of the body politic is the source of all good, so that while he can find nothing but brute weight in an organized public, he can compare the royal person in his ideal form of constitutional monarchy to the dot upon the letter: A keen sense of how much is at stake in any alteration breeds suspicion of every reform.

During his thirteen years at Berlin Hegel's whole soul seems to have been in his lectures. Between 1823 and 1827 his activity reached its maximum. His notes were subjected to perpetual revisions and additions. We can form an idea of them from the shape in which they appear in his published writings. Those on *Aesthetics*, on the *Philosophy of Religion*, on the *Philosophy of History*, and on the *History of Philosophy*, have been published by his editors, mainly from the notes of his students, under their separate heads, while those on logic, psychology, and the philosophy of nature are appended in the form of illustrative and explanatory notes to the sections of his *Encyclopedia*. During these years hundreds of hearers from all parts of Germany, and from beyond the Fatherland, came under his influence. His fame was carried abroad by eager

or intelligent disciples At Berlin Henning served to prepare the intending disciple for fuller initiation by the master himself Gans and Hotho carried the method into special spheres of inquiry At Halle Hinrichs maintained the standard of Hegelianism amid the opposition or indifference of his colleagues

Hegel himself in his class room was neither imposing nor fascinating You saw a plain, old-fashioned face, without life or lustre—a figure which had never looked young, and was now bent and prematurely aged, the furrowed face bore witness to concentrated thought Sitting with his snuff-box before him, and his head bent down, he looked ill at ease, and while still speaking kept turning the folios of his notes His utterances were interrupted by frequent humming and coughing, every word and every sentence came out with a struggle, and if, when the right word seemed as if it would never come and no progress appeared to be making, the listener for a moment ceased to listen, he found when attention returned that the lecture had reached a new stage, and the connexion was lost And the style of these utterances was no less irregular Sometimes in the plainest narrative the lecturer would be specially awkward, while in the abstrusest passages he seemed specially at home, rose into a natural eloquence, and carried away the hearer by the grandeur of his diction

Three courses of lectures are especially the product of his Berlin period: those on aesthetics, the philosophy of religion, and the philosophy of history In the years preceding the revolution of 1830, public interest, excluded from political life, turned to theatres, concert rooms, and picture galleries At these Hegel became a frequent and appreciative visitor He even made extracts from the art notes in the newspapers In his holiday excursions, the interest in the fine arts is prominent, and more than once takes him out of his way to see some old painting His letters to his wife are full of such topics A visit to Vienna in 1824 presents him spending every moment at the Italian opera, the ballet, and the picture galleries In Paris, in 1827, curiously enough, he heard Charles Kemble and an English company play Shakespeare This familiarity with the actual facts of art, though neither very deep nor very historical, gave an unusual freshness to his lectures on aesthetics, which, as put together from the notes of 1820, 1823, 1826, are in many ways the most successful of his efforts

The lectures on the philosophy of religion are another application of his method to an important sphere of human interests Shortly before his death he prepared for the press a course of lectures on the proofs for the existence of God In his lectures on religion he dealt with Christianity, as in his philosophy of morals he had regarded the state On one hand he turned his weapons against the rationalistic school, who reduced religion to the medium compatible with an ordinary worldly mind On the other hand he criticized the school of Schleiermacher, who elevated feeling to a place in religion above systematic theology His middle way attempts to show that the dogmatic creed is the rational development of what was implicit in religious feeling To do so, of course, philosophy becomes the interpreter and the superior To the new school of Hegensberg, which regarded Revelation itself as supreme, such interpretation was an abomination

A Hegelian school began to gather The flock included intelligent pupils who applied the method in different provinces of speculation, empty-headed imitators who repeated the catchwords of the new dialectic, and romantic natures who turned philosophy into lyric measures Opposition and criticism, which were not wanting, only served to define more precisely the adherents of the new doctrine The master himself grew more and more into a belief in his own doctrine as the one truth for the world The system

had grown gradually with him, and had assimilated intellectual nutriment from every hand so as to make all history and all knowledge bear witness to its truth He was in harmony with the Government, and his followers were on the winning side Though he had soon resigned all direct official connexion with the schools of Brandenburg, his real influence in Prussia was considerable, and as usual was largely exaggerated in popular estimate In the narrower circle of his friends his birthdays were the signal for congratulatory verses In 1826 a formal festival was got up by some of his admirers, one of whom, Heider, spoke of his categories as new gods, and he was presented with much poetry and a silver mug In 1830 the students struck a medal in his honour, and in 1831 he was decorated by an order from the king In 1830 he was rector of the university, and on the tricentenary of the Augsburg Confession in that year, he took the opportunity in his speech on the occasion to charge the Catholic Church with regarding the virtues of the pagan world as brilliant vices, and giving the crown of perfection to poverty, continence, and obedience

One of the last literary undertakings in which he took part was to give his support to Gans and Varnhagen von Ense in the establishment of the Berlin *Jahrbücher für Wissenschaftliche Kritik* The aim of this series was to give a critical account, certified by the names of the contributors, of the more important literary and philosophical productions of the time, in relation to the general progress of knowledge The journal was not solely in the Hegelian interest, and more than once, when Hegel attempted to dominate over the other editors, he was met by vehement and vigorous opposition It gave him besides a deal of trouble with sanguine authors, who looked forward to a favourable word from him as a passport to fame

The revolution of 1830 was a great blow to him, as to many other Germans, and the prospect of democratic advances almost made him ill His last literary work was an essay on the English Reform Bill of 1831, the first part of which appeared in the *Preussische Staatszeitung* It contains primarily a careful consideration of the effects likely to come from the alterations in the electoral franchise, in relation, first, to the character of the new members of parliament, and secondly, to the measures which they may introduce In the latter connexion he enlarges on several points where England had done less than many Continental states for the abolition of monopolies and abuses Surveying with such intelligence of English circumstances the questions connected with landed property, with the game laws, the poor, the Established Church, especially in Ireland, Hegel throws grave doubt on the legislative capacity of the English parliament as compared with the power of renovation and reform manifested in the more advanced states of western Europe Much of the essay, unfortunately, has not become antiquated as a critique on the social state of Britain

In 1831 the cholera had first entered Europe Hegel and his family retired for the summer to a lodging in the suburbs, and there he finished the revision of the first part of his *Science of Logic* On the commencement of the winter season, however, he returned to his house in the Kupferstrasse On this occasion an unseemly altercation occurred between him and his friend Gans, who in his notice of lectures on jurisprudence had recommended Hegel's *Philosophy of Right* Hegel, indignant at what he deemed patronage, asked Gans in a rough manner to withdraw his note On Friday 11th November Hegel had lectured as usual On Sunday he had a violent attack of cholera, and on Monday, the 14th November 1831, he was dead He was buried on the spot he had wished for himself, between Fichte and Solger



## Hegel's Philosophy

Hegelianism is confessedly one of the most difficult of all philosophies to grasp. Every one has heard the legend which makes Hegel say, "One man has understood me, and even he is not." He abruptly hurls us into a world whose old habits of thought fall as in three places indeed he has attempted to exhibit the relation to his own system from other levels of thought, but in none with much success. In his introductory lecture on the philosophy of religion he gives a rationale of the difference between the modes of consciousness in religion and philosophy (between *Verstehen* and *Begriff*). In the beginning of the *Encyclopædia* he discusses the defects of dogmatic philosophy, the philosophy of Kant and Jacobi. In the first case he treats the formal or psychological aspect of the difference, in the latter he presents his doctrine less in its essential character than in special relations to the various stages of its time. The *Phenomenology of Spirit* is regarded as an introduction, such as from a different point. It is not an introduction—for the philosophy which it was to introduce was not then fully at hand. Even to the last Hegel had not so extended his system as to treat it as something to be led up to by gradual steps. His philosophy was not one aspect of his intellectual life, to be contemplated from others; it was the type itself of conscious reflection, and had become the one, all-embracing form and principle of his thinking. More than most thinkers he had quietly laid himself open to the influences of his time, and the lessons of history.

The *Phenomenology* is the picture of the Hegelian philosophy in the making—at the stage before the scaffolding has been removed from the building. For this reason the book is at once the most brilliant and the most difficult of Hegel's works,—the most brilliant because it is so soon digested an autobiography of Hegel's mind,—not the abstractness of a logic or ontology, but the history of an intellectual growth, the most difficult because, instead of treating the use of intelligence (from its first appearance in contrast with the sense and with the recognition of the presence of, and role of, all things) as purely subjective process, it exhibits this too as wrought out in historical epochs, national characteristics, forms of culture and faith, and philosophical systems. The theme is identical with the introduction to the *Encyclopædia*—it is treated in a very different style. From all periods of the world,—from mediæval piety and stoical piety, Kant and Sophocles, science and art, religion and philosophy,—with disquisitions of mere chronology, Hegel gathers in the human spirit the various groups from which he craves the wind of thought. The human mind coming through its various phases of mistake and disappointment to a sense and realization of its true position in the universe,—such is the theme which is essentially Hegel's own history, but is presented objectively in the field of the world as the process of spiritual life which the philosopher takes into consciousness and reproduces in himself. The *Phenomenology* stands to the *Encyclopædia* some what as the dialogues of Plato stand to the *Alcibiades* treatise. It contains almost all his philosophy,—but irregularly and without due proportion. The personal element gives an undue prominence to recent and contemporary phenomena of the philosophic, scientific, and literary spheres. It is the account given by an inventor of his own discovery, not the explanation of an outward. It therefore to some extent assumes from the first the position which it proposes ultimately to reach, and gives not a picture of that position, but an account of one's experience (*Erkenntnis*) by which consciousness is forced from one position to another till it finds rest in *Absolute Wissen*.

It is impossible, in a mere résumé to do justice to this remarkable work, which is neither a mere popular treatise, nor logic, nor metaphysics, nor history, but is all of these at once and a great deal more. What the *Phenomenology* wants is not distillation, but excavation and illustration. It is a contemporary and antecedent thought process and illustration of the attitude of consciousness toward reality under the six heads of consciousness, self-consciousness, reason (*Vernunft*), spirit (*Geist*), religion, and absolute knowledge. The native attitude of consciousness toward existence is reliance on the evidence of the senses, but a little reflection is sufficient to show that the reality attributed to the external world is as much due to intellectual conceptions as to the senses, and that these conceptions slip through our fingers as we try to grasp them. If consciousness cannot detect a permanent object outside it, so self-consciousness cannot find a permanent subject in itself. It may, like the Stone, assert freedom by holding aloof from the entanglements of real life, or like the sorcerer take the world as a delusion, and finally, as the "unhappy consciousness" (*Unselbständiges Bewusstsein*), the recurrent falling short of a perfection which it has placed above it, has been closed its eyes and the dream of the world is over. The perception of this reason. Reason convinced that the world is not what the senses observe, the external world, mental phenomena, and especially the nervous organism, as the meeting ground of body and mind. But reason, the world as it is, is not something so kindred with lies, and so turning to practical activity, as the world the realization of her own aims. Either in a crude way she

pursues her own pleasure, and finds that necessity constrains her cravings, or she endeavours to find the world in harmony with the heart, and yet is unwilling to see her aspirations crystallized by the laws of feeling. Finally, unable to make sense of the world, she either selfish or humanitarian, and she holds her arms in phrenic virtue, with the hope that some hidden power will give the victory to righteousness. But the world goes on in its life, heedless of the demands of virtue. The miracle of nature is to live and let live, to let the aims of individuals work out their results independently, only stopping in to lay down precepts for the cases where individual actions conflict, and to fasten these precepts by the rules of formal logic.

So far we have seen consciousness on one hand and the real world on the other. The stage of "Geist" reveals the consciousness no longer so external and antagonistic but as the individual spirit of a community, is no longer isolated from its surroundings but the union of the single and real consciousness with the vital feeling that animates the community. This is the lowest stage of concrete consciousness, the organic consciousness of nature, the spirit insusceptible, but does not reflect. It is the ego of unconscious morality, which the individual's life is lost in the society of which he is an organic member. But increasing culture presents new ideals, and the mind, absorbing the thought of its environment, gradually emancipates itself from conventions and superstitions. Thus "Aufklärung" improves the way for the rule of conscience, for the moral view of the world as subject of a moral law. From this stage the philosophy is religious; the moral law gives place to God, but the idea of God, too, is at this stage imperfect, and has to pass through the forms of nature worship and of its before it reaches a full utterance in Christianity. Religion in this stage is the memory and the perception of the absolute, and thus absolute knowledge—"the spirit knowing itself as spirit"—is not something which leaves these other forms behind but the full comprehension of them as the organic consciousness of its essence, "they are the memory and the perception of its history, and at the same time the actuality, truth, and certainty of its essence." Here, according to Hegel, is the field of philosophy.

According to the *Phenomenology* symbolized the separation from Schelling—the adieu to romantic. It declared that a genuine philosophy has no kindred with the mere equations of "ististic minds, but must gain its head by the sweat of its brow. It sets its goal in the ideal, and the idealism which it seeks to reach, the world for its deficiencies, or sought something final in reality. Philosophy is to be the science of the actual—find it is the spirit comprehending itself in its own external relations and manifestations. The philosophy of Hegel is idealism, but it is an idealism in which every idealistic unionism has its other face in the multiplicity of existence. It is idealism as well as idealism, and in its highest applications never quits its hold on facts. Compared with Fichte and Schelling, Hegel has a sober, hard, realistic character. At a later date, with the call of Schelling to Berlin in 1811, it became fashionable to speak of Hegelianism as a negative philosophy requiring to be complemented by a "positive" philosophy which would give the concrete universe. The concrete universe, the concrete world (more than once alluded to by Hegel) asking the philosophers who expounded the absolute to construe his pen. It was the cry of the young school for personal Christ and not a detached Logic. Philosophy, as Schelling eyes, was called to supply the God which not the mere conception of Him. Experimental science complained that the real world of matter and force had been supplanted by a few fancies of logical forms and abstract processes. The drama of the individual, the real, material, and historical, had been diminished, it was said, by Hegel, to the universal, the ideal, the spiritual, and the logical.

It is not surprising that these criticisms were the very cry of Hegelianism to render valid the fixed phantasies of reality,—that there is no room for an immovable rock limiting the efforts of thought, but to have thought implicit in it, waiting for release from its participation in nature no longer, as with Fichte, to a mere spring board to evoke the latent power of the Over-soul. Nor was it, as in Schelling's earliest system, to be a collateral progeny with mind from the some womb of indifference and identity. Nature and mind in the Hegelian system—the external and the spiritual world—have the same origin, but are not co-equal branches. The natural world proceeds from the "idea," the spiritual from the rules and nature. It is impossible, beginning with the natural world, to explain the mind by any process of distillation or development. The mind is not a mere product of the natural world, but from the first, reality, independent of the individual consciousness, there must be a reality, independent of all mind, is an impossibility. At the best, the mind, whether material or spiritual, is a mere thought. But the thought thus regarded as the basis of all existence is not consciousness with its distinction of ego and non ego. It is rather the stuff of which both mind and nature are made, neither extended as in the natural world, not self-contained as in the thought, but in the primary form is, as it were, thoroughly transparent and absolutely





The lecture on the Philosophy of Art starts largely into the next sphere and dwells with art on the close connexion of it and religion, and the discussion of the decadence and rise of religions, of the æsthetic qualities of Christ in legend, of the age of chivalry, &c., in the *Æsthetik*.

The lectures on the Philosophy of Religion, though unequal in their composition and belonging to different dates, serve to exhibit the vital connexion of the system with Christianity. Religion, like art, is immanent to philosophy, an exponent of the human interest in man and the absolute. In it the absolute exists in the poetry and music of the heart, in the vividness of feeling. Hegel after expounding the nature of religion tries on to discuss its historical phases, but in the immediate study of religious science falls into several mistakes. At the bottom of the scale of nature-worship he places the religion of society. The gradations which follow are unimportant with some inaccuracy amongst the religions of the East. With the Persian religion of light and the Egyptian of enigmas we pass to those in which nature-God takes the form of a spiritual individuality, i.e., to the Hebrew religion (of sublimity), the Greek (of beauty), and the Roman (of ideation). Last comes absolute religion, in which the unity of the conception between God and man is an open doctrine. This is Christianity, in which God is a Trinity, because He is a spirit. The revelation of this truth is the subject of the Christian Scriptures. For the God of God, in the immediate light, is the finite world of nature and man, which is far from being at one with its Father as originally in an attitude of estrangement. The history of Christ is the visible reconciliation between man and the eternal Father. With the death of Christ this union, ceasing to be a mere fact, becomes a vital idea—the Spirit of God which dwells in the Christian community.

The lectures on the History of Philosophy deal dispassionately with the various epochs, and in some parts date from the beginning of Hegel's career. In trying to subject history to the order of logic they sometimes misconceive the filiation of ideas. But they credit the history of philosophy as a scientific study. They showed that a philosophy of theory is not an accident on whom, but an exponent of its age, determined by its antecedents and environments, and hinging on its results to the future.

For ten years after Hegel's death his system remained the foremost intellectual phenomenon on the time-honoured Gaus, Humboldt, Hegning, and Heide, who have been liberally alluded to, the most prominent of his immediate disciples was von Gail, whose *Principien der Logik* is a good introduction to Hegel. L. M. Lückert, one of the most ardent of Hegel's disciples, died in 1879 on the point of completing a summary of the system, Damb and Mülhens, the two theologians, and Gerschl, whose *Aphorismen über nicht-Wissen und absolute Wissen* (Leipzig, 1870) is an appreciative review from Hegel. In addition, where this school won some distinction, are the names of Schacht, Rosenkranz, and Vissler. Karl Rosenkranz, the literary champion of the system, has just ended his life devoted to its exposition; Bachmann still teaches in its spirit at Halle, as does Bruno Fritzsche at Jena. The last two have specially distinguished themselves by their histories of modern philosophy. With Mielchelt they form the more orthodox and conservative section of the school. The opposition to the system was first made in the *Zeitschrift für Philosophie*, founded in 1837 by the younger Fichte with the help of Weyse, while Benke and other followers of Heiberg vigorously attacked the metaphysics and psychology. But the most notable outgrowth of the system was the school of criticism, a critical and historical school of Follenbach, Bruno Bauch, and Ruge. While Hegel had vindicated God as the subject of metaphysics, maintained the connexence of philosophy and theology, and devoted the state to sovereignty in ethics, the last-named school from its system, exposed its alleged pantheism or atheistic tendencies, and reasserted the supremacy of the individual in morals. To discuss the evolution of Hegelianism in this direction would almost be to write the history of modern German philosophy up to 1860. Hegelianism has now ceased to exist as an ideal system in Germany, though its spirit and method have leavened the whole mass of philosophic thought. Out of Germany, besides occasional admirers and disciples, it has attracted a considerable amount of general curiosity. In England it has stimulated philosophical thought, and probably suggested the correction of some national limitations, but few if any profess to accept the system in its integrity. Professor Van der Navel is perhaps the most enthusiastic Hegelian on the Continent, whilst the Journal of *Speculative Philosophy* upholds its banner in America.

**Bibliography.**—Shortly after Hegel's death his collected works were published by a number of his friends, who combined for the purpose. They appeared in eighteen volumes in 1832, and a second edition came out about twelve years later. Volume I—VIII contain the works published by himself, the remainder are made up of his lectures on the Philosophy of Nature, Æsthetik, the Philosophy of Religion, and the History of Philosophy; besides some essays and reviews, with a few of his letters, and the Philosophical Propædæutic.

For his life see Rosenkranz, *Leben Hegels*, Berlin, 1844; Haym,

*Hegel und seine Zeit*, Berlin, 1857; Kuntze, *Hegel in philosophischer, politischer, und nationaler Beziehung*, Tübingen, 1870; Rosenkranz, *Hegel als Deutscher Nationalphilosoph*, Berlin, 1870, and his *Neue Studien*, vol. iv, Berlin, 1878.

For the philosophy, see Haym, *Als ein Zeit und iv*, Berlin, 1867; Haym (see above). Trübnerbuch (in *Logische Untersuchungen*), Kym (*Metaphysische Untersuchungen*), and C. Hermann (*Über die Logische Frage*, and other works) are noticeable as modern critics. Von has translated the *Encyclopædia* into French, with notes, Baur, the *Æsthetik*. In English Dr Stirling's *Secret of Hegel*, 2 vols., London, 1865, contains a translation of the beginning of the *Wissenschaft der Logik*, the "Logic" from the *Encyclopædia* has been translated, with polemics, by W. Wallace, G. Ford, 1874, and large portions have been translated in the *American Journal of Speculative Philosophy*—especially by its energetic editor, W. T. Harris. (W. W.)

**HEIBERG, JOHAN LUDVIG** (1791–1860), Danish poet and critic, was the son of the political writer Peter Andreas Heiberg, and of the famous novelist, afterwards the Baroness Gyldenboug-Ehrensvard. He was born at Copenhagen, December 14, 1791. In 1800 his father was exiled, and he was taken by Rinkbeek and his excellent wife into their house at Bakkehuset. They found him, however, very difficult to manage, and about 1802 sent him back to his own family. His mother's marriage being by a state decree annulled, she married the Swedish baron Gyldenboug-Ehrensvard, keeping up, however, friendly correspondence with her first husband in Paris. In 1805 she describes, in one of these letters, the brilliant precocity of the young Johan. The latter proceeded to the university of Copenhagen in 1809. It was not needful that he should earn his bread, and accordingly his mother indulged for many years his extraordinary thirst for knowledge. In 1812 he visited Sweden, and made some long stay in Stockholm, afterwards sent to his mother from Upsala the first important poem which he composed, *Hjemkomsten* (The Return Home), a piece of remarkable strength and brightness. In 1813 his first publication appeared, a romantic drama for children, entitled *The Theatre for Marionettes*. This was followed by *Christmas Jokes and New Year's Truths* in 1816, *The Imitation of Psyche*, 1817, and *The Prolegomena of Tycho Brahe*. These works attracted attention at a time when Baggensen, Oehlenschläger, and Ingemann possessed the popular ear, and were understood at once to be the opening of a great career. In 1817 Heiberg took his degree, and in 1819 went abroad with a grant from Government. He proceeded to Paris, and spent the next three years there, under his father's roof. In 1822 he published his drama of *Anna*, and was made professor of the Danish language at the university of Kiel. At this town he delivered a course of lectures, comparing the Scandinavian mythology as found in the *Edda* with the poems of Oehlenschläger. These lectures were published in German in 1827. In 1828 Heiberg came back to Copenhagen for the purpose of introducing the vaudeville on the Danish stage. Meanwhile he was producing dramatic work of a more serious kind. In 1828 he brought out the national drama of *Isidore*, in 1830 the comedy of *The Elbow*, and in 1838 *Fata Morgana*. In 1841 Heiberg published a volume of *New Poems*, containing "A Soul after Death," which is perhaps his masterpiece, "The Newly Wedded Pair," and other pieces. All this time he had been busily engaged in editing the famous journal, *The Copenhagen Flying Post*, which he founded in 1837 and continued until 1857. In 1831 he married Johanne Louise Piesges, the greatest actress that Scandinavia has produced. Heiberg's scathing satires at last began to make him very unpopular, and this antagonism reached its height when, in 1846, he published

<sup>1</sup> He composed a great number of vaudevilles, of which the best known are *King Solomon and George Hatzelard*, 1826; *April Zoots*, 1826; *A Story on Rosenberg Garden*, 1827; *Kjøpe Huskere*, 1831; *The Danish Poet*, 1833, No. 1836; *Tæ*, 1839, and *Emily's Beauty*, 1840.

his little malicious drama of *The Nest Crackers*. Notwithstanding this he received in 1847 the responsible post of director of the national theatre, for which indeed he was more amply fitted than any other living person. He filled it for seven years, working with great zeal and conscientiousness, but was forced by intrigues from without to resign it in 1854. His health was much disturbed by these attacks, and he retired into private life. Heiberg died at Boderup, near Ringsted, on the 25th of August 1860.

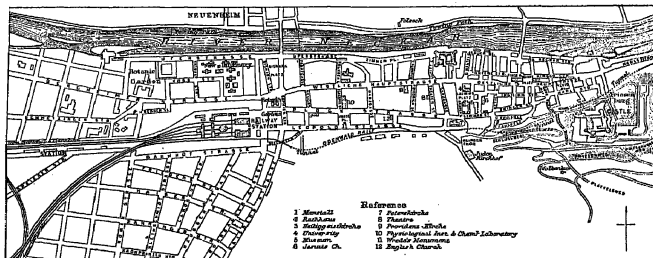
It has been said that "the average cultivated Dane nowadays is very much what Heiberg has made him." His influence upon taste and critical opinion was greater than that of any writer of his time, and can only be compared with that of Holberg in the 18th century. Most of the poets of the Romantic movement in Denmark were very grave and serious; Heiberg added the element of humour, elegance, and irony to the dignity of Oehlenschläger, the pathos of Ingemann, and the passion of Hertz. His versification was refined and exact, and his very best pieces are those in which he mingles his lyrical expression with what is satirical or purely ludicrous. The works of Heiberg were collected, in 11 vols., in 1861-63.

HEIDE, a town of Prussia, chief town of the circle of North Dittmarsh, province of Schleswig-Holstein, is situated on a small plateau which stands between the marshes and bays bordering the North Sea, 35 miles N.N.W. of Glückstadt. It is the seat of a provincial office, a court of justice, and a head tax office, and possesses tobacco and cigar manufactories, a tannery, and a rope work. Heide in 1447 became the capital of the Dittmarsh peasant republic, but on the 13th June 1559 it was the scene of the complete defeat of the peasant forces by the Danes and the duke of Schleswig-Holstein. The population in 1875 was 6772.

HEIDEGGER, JOHN HENRY (1633-1698), theologian, was born at Bürentschweil, in the canton of Zurich, Switzerland, on July 1, 1633. He began his studies in his native country, and completed them at Marburg and Heidelberg. Becoming doctor of philosophy at the latter university, he soon afterwards was appointed professor extraordinarius of Hebrew, and later of philosophy. From Heidelberg he was in 1659 summoned to Steinfurt to fill the chair of theology and ecclesiastical history, and in the same year he became doctor of theology of Heidelberg. In 1660 he revisited Switzerland; and, after marrying, he travelled in the following year over Holland. The war at this time having dispersed the students from Steinfurt, Heidegger returned in 1665 to Zurich, where he was immediately elected professor of moral philosophy. Two years later he succeeded Hottinger in the chair of theology, which he occupied till his death, January 15, 1698. Heidegger was the principal author of the *Formula Consensus Helvetica* in 1675, which was designed to unite the Swiss Reformed churches, but had an opposite effect.

His writings are largely controversial, and are in great part levelled against the Roman Catholic Church. The chief are *De Historia sacra Patriarcharum Exercitationes selecte*, 1687-1671; *Dissertatio de Peregrinationibus Religiosis*, 1670; *De Ratione Studiorum, quatuor, &c.*, 1679; *Historia Populi*, 1684, with a life of the author prefixed; *Corpus Theologicum Christianum*, 1700; and lives of Hottinger, 1697, and Fabricius, 1698. His autobiography appeared in 1698, under the title *Historia Vita J. H. Heideggeri*.

HEIDELBERG, a German university city in the Baden circle and jurisdiction of the same name, lies in 49° 24' N. lat. and 8° 41' 32" E. long., at the foot of the Castlehill, a spur of the Königstuhl on the south bank of the Neckar, about 12 miles from the junction of that river with the Rhine. The situation of the town is one of romantic beauty.



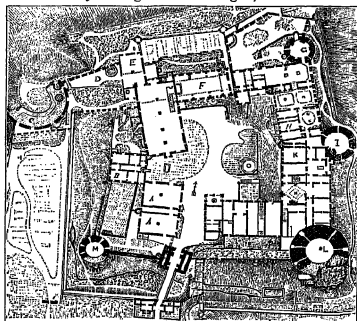
Plan of Heidelberg.

Placed at the opening of the winding Neckar valley, it has behind it and before it lofty hills covered with vineyards and forests. Between these the Neckar rushes swiftly along. To the left the country opens out into the broad Rhine plain, cultivated like a garden, and bounded by distant and hardly perceptible mountains. The town primarily consists of one long narrow street, the Hauptstrasse, which begins near the station of the Main-Neckar railway on the west, and runs parallel to the river with continuations for a distance of about 2 miles to the Karlsthor (where there is a smaller station) on the east. To the south of this the Anlage, a pleasant promenade flanked with fine houses and gardens, leads directly from the chief station to the centre of the town. A number of smaller streets run up from the river, intersecting the

Hauptstrasse at right angles. On the other side of the Neckar the Heiligenberg, a vine-clad hill wooded towards the summit, crowned with the ruins of an old chapel, rises abruptly from the river bank. About half-way up the hill the Philosophenweg, a famous road, runs from the Hirschgasse opposite the Karlsthor to the suburb of Neuheim, opposite the railway station. At this point the Neckar valley ceases, and the river flows slowly onward in the almost level Rhine plain. Of late years the town has grown very much towards the west end on both sides of the river. The additions have been almost entirely of the better class of houses.

Of the churches the chief are the Peterskirche (founded before 1392), where Jerome of Prague in 1400 expounded the Reformed doctrines; the Heiligegeistkirche,

erected at the beginning of the 15th century, of which the nave is used for Protestant, the choir for Old Catholic worship; and the Jesuitenkirche, with sumptuously decorated interior. All these are built in the Gothic style. The rathaus, the museum, and the university (1712) are large but common-place erections. Two handsome bridges cross the Neckar. That to the east, opposite the castle (built 1788), is adorned with a gateway, and with statues of Minerva and the elector Charles Theodore of the palatinate; the other (built 1777) unites Heidelberg and Neuenheim. In the west part of the town there is a bronze statue of Field-Marshal Prince Wrede (1767-1838), erected in 1800 by Louis I., king of Bavaria. The chief building at Heidelberg, and indeed its chief attraction for strangers, is the famous castle which overhangs the west part of the town. It is situated on the Castlehill, more properly called the Jottenbühl, 330 feet above the Neckar. Though now a ruin, yet its extent, its magnificence, its beautiful situation, its interesting history, render it by far the most noteworthy, as it certainly is the grandest and largest, of the old castles



Ground-Plan of Heidelberg Castle.

- |   |                           |                      |
|---|---------------------------|----------------------|
| A. Rupert's Building.                   | E. The Great-Tan Room.    | I. Library Tower.    |
| B. Old or Rudolph's Building.           | F. Frederick's Building.  | K. Louis's Tower.    |
| C. The Thiel Tower.                     | G. The Octagonal Tower.   | L. Blum-en-ur Tower. |
| D. The English or Elizabeth's Building. | H. Otto Henry's Building. | M. Louis's Tower.    |

of Germany. It was begun about the end of the 13th century. Elector Rupert greatly improved it, and erected the Rupert's building in the early part of the 15th century; succeeding electors of the palatinate did much for it, especially Frederick V., the unfortunate king of Bohemia. It suffered greatly during the Thirty Years' War, but was restored by Charles Louis (1650-1680). It was dismantled by the French in 1689, and again in 1693. In 1764 it was struck by lightning, and its destruction completed. The castle as it at present stands is a square edifice formed of several distinct structures built round a large court-yard; the entrance is on the south side. The court-yard contains a fountain adorned with four granite pillars brought from Charlemagne's palace at Ingelheim. The chief parts of the castle are Rupert's building (about 1400) on the left; Otto Henry's building (1566) on the right, "the finest example of Renaissance architecture in Germany," a lofty building of which the front is richly decorated; Frederick's building (1801), the finest part, forming the northern portion of the whole, and adorned

with a large number of imposing statues. Within this is the chapel, and behind it the Altan (1610), or castle balcony, which directly overhangs the town and from which the finest of Heidelberg views is obtained. The castle contains an interesting antiquarian museum\* formed by the Count Grämburg, and the celebrated Great Tun, which was built in 1751, but has been only used on one or two occasions. Its capacity is 49,000 gallons. There is a castle garden, spacious and well laid out.

The university of Heidelberg is the oldest in the German kingdom. It was founded in 1386 by the elector Rupert, but it was not till 1386, when it obtained papal sanction, that its real life begins. It was constructed after the type of Paris, had four faculties, and possessed numerous privileges. Marselin von Inghen was its first rector. Frederick the Victorious, Philip the Upright, and Louis V. respectively cherished it. Otto Henry gave it a new organization, further endowed it, and founded the library. At the Reformation it became a stronghold of Protestant learning. The famous Heidelberg catechism was drawn up by its theologians. Then the tide turned. Damaged by the Thirty Years' War, it led a struggling existence for a century and a half. A large portion of its remaining endowments were cut off by the peace of Lunauville (1648). In 1808 however the elector Charles Frederick raised it anew, and reconstituted it under the name of "Ruperto-Carolina." At present (1880) it has 38 ordinary and 26 extraordinary professors. The students number about 500 in winter, and from 800 to 900 in summer. A very large proportion are English and Americans. The library was first kept in the choir of the Heiliggeistkirche, and then consisted of 3500 MSS. In 1623 it was sent to Rome by Tilly, and stored as Bibliotheca Palatina in the Vatican. It was afterwards taken to Paris, and in 1815 was restored to Heidelberg. In 1703 the new library was founded; it has now nearly 300,000 volumes, besides many valuable MSS. Among the other university institutions are the academic hospital, the maternity hospital, the physiological institution, the chemical laboratory, and the zoological museum.

The other educational foundations are a gymnasium and a burgher and a real school. There is a small theatre (closed during the summer months) and a Kunstverein. The manufactures of Heidelberg are unimportant. The inhabitants chiefly support themselves by supplying the wants of a large and increasing body of foreign permanent residents, the considerable body of tourists who during the summer pass through the town, and of the university students. The population of the town and outlying suburbs was 19,988 in 1871, and 23,334 (or including Neuenheim, 23,918) in 1875. About one-third are Catholics. The town is well lighted, and is supplied with excellent water from the Wolfsbrunnen.

Heidelberg at an early period was a fief of the bishop of Worms, but the rulers of the palatinate came more and more to reside there, till Count Otto of Wittelsbach (1298-1308) made it the capital of the palatinate, and this it continued to be for nearly six centuries. As Heidelberg was one of the great centres of the Reformed faith, it suffered severely in the Thirty Years' War. In 1622 it was sacked by Tilly, and in 1689 was taken by the Swedes. In 1694 it was beleaguered by the Bavarians. In 1686 it was occupied by the imperial forces under Gallia. At the peace of Westphalia (1648) Charles Louis, son of Frederick V., was restored, and he did much to raise the castle, the university, and the town. In 1688, and again in 1698, it was sacked by the French. On the last occasion, so thorough was the work of destruction that only one house—a quaintly decorated erection in the Marktplatz—now remained standing. In 1790 Charles Philip removed his court to Mannheim, and in 1808 the town became part of the grand duchy of Baden. On 6th March 1848 was held the famous Heidelberg assembly, at which steps were taken that led to the German revolution of that year.

\* This museum was acquired by the town in 1879.

Of the numerous topographical works on Heidelberg, those of Fickler (1863) and Oncken (2d ed. 1874) may be mentioned. The *Wegweiser durch Heidelberg* (1876) supplies a larger and more popular account. The university annals are told in Kaut's *Geschichte des Universitäts Heidelberg* (2 vols., 1863-5), and the very interesting history of the library in Wilken's *Geschichte der Bildung, Erziehung, und Fortschritte der alten Heidelberger Buchsammlung* (1817), and in Ruland's *Zur Geschichte des alten nach Rom eingeführten Bibliothek zu Heidelberg*, Leipz., 1860. The *Heidelberger Jahrbücher* (1817-73) contain a mass of interesting and important information as to the history of the town and castle.

(P. W. A.)  
HEIDELLOFF, KARL ALEXANDER VON (1788-1865), a German architect, was the son of Victor Peter Heideloff, a painter of some reputation, and was born at Stuttgart 2d February 1788. He studied at the art academy of his native town, and after following the profession of an architect for some time at Coburg was in 1818 appointed city architect at Nuremberg. In 1822 he became professor at the polytechnic school, and some years later he was chosen conservator of the monuments of art. Heideloff devoted his chief attention to the Gothic style of architecture, and the buildings restored and erected by him at Nuremberg and in its neighbourhood attest both his original skill and his purity of taste. He also achieved some success as an historical painter. He died at Hasfurt 28th September 1865.

Among his writings on architecture are *Die Lohse von den Saalburgen*, 1827, *Der Klassizismus*, 1832, *Nuremberg Baugeschichte des Vorzeit*, 1838-43, and *Die Ornamentik des Mittelalters*, 1838-42.

HEILBRONN, a town of Wurtemberg, in the circle of the Neckar, is situated in a pleasant and fruitful valley on the Neckar, and at the junction of several railways, 26 miles N. of Stuttgart. It is the seat of a circle court, a jury court, a superior tribunal, a head tax office, and a chamber of commerce. In the older part of the town the streets are narrow, and it contains a number of high fortified houses with quaintly adorned gables. The old fortifications have now been demolished, and their site is occupied by promenades, outside of which are the more modern parts of the town with wide streets and many handsome buildings. The principal public buildings are the church of St Kilian, in the Gothic and Renaissance styles, begun in 1019 and completed in 1529, with an elegant tower 210 feet high, a beautiful choir, and a finely carved altar; the town-house, founded in 1540, and possessing a collection of interesting documents; the house of the Teutonic knights, now used as barracks; the Catholic church of St Joseph, the tower on the Neckar, in which Goetz von Berlichingen was confined in 1525, the synagogue, the prison, and the hospital. The educational establishments include a gymnasium, a real-school of the second order, an agricultural school, and a female school of industry. The town in a commercial point of view is the most important in Wurtemberg, and possesses an immense variety of manufactures, of which the principal are gold, silver, steel, and iron wares, machines, sugar of lead, white lead, vinegar, beer, and the Cologne sugar, tobacco, soap, oil, cement, sulphuric acid, tartaric acid, artificial manure, glass, soda, linsey, thread, and cloth. Grapes, fruit, vegetables, and flowering shrubs are largely grown in the neighbourhood, and there are large quarries for sandstone and gypsum. By means of the Neckar a considerable trade is carried on in wood, bark, leather, agricultural produce, fruit, and cattle. The population in 1875 was 21,909.

Heilbronn occupies the site of an old Roman settlement. Its name—originally *Heilbrunnen* or holy spring—was bestowed on it by Charlemagne from a spring of water which until 1837 was to be seen issuing from under the high altar of the church of St Kilian. In 1225 Heilbronn became a free imperial city. It was frequently besieged during the Thirty Years War, and it suffered greatly during the Franco-German War, the Thirty Years War, and the various wars with France. In 1808 it came into the possession of Wurtemberg.

HEILIGENSTADT, a town of Prussian Saxony, government district of Erfurt, is situated on the Leine and on the railway from Halle to Cassel, 33 miles E. N. E. of Cassel. It possesses an old castle, formerly belonging to the electors of Mainz, one Evangelical and two Catholic churches, a Catholic gymnasium, a Catholic normal school, two orphanages, and an infirmary. The principal manufactures are woollen wares, cigars, paper, bone dust, and needles. The population in 1875 was 6193.

Heiligenstadt is said to have been built by Drogobrat, and was formerly the capital of the principality of Bachfeld. In 1022 it was acquired by the archbishop of Mainz, and in 1108 it came into the possession of Henry the Proud, but when Henry the Lion was placed under the ban of the empire it again came to Mainz. It was destroyed by fire in 1288, and was captured in 1478 by Count Henry the Young of Schwarzburg, and in 1525 by Duke Henry of Brunswick. In 1803 it came into the possession of Prussia.

HEILSBURG, a town of Prussia, capital of a circle in the government district of Königsberg, is situated at the junction of the Sursee and Alle, 38 miles S. of Königsberg. It has one Evangelical and two Catholic churches, and an old castle formerly the seat of the prince-bishops of Pommern, but now used as an infirmary. The principal industries are cloth-weaving, yarn and thread spinning, dyeing, and brewing, and there is considerable trade in grain. The population of the town in 1875 was 5762.

The castle founded at Heilsberg by the German knights in 1210 became afterwards the property of the duke of Prussia, who in 1302 made it their seat—in honour which it retained for 500 years. On the 10th June 1807 a battle took place at Heilsberg between the French and the Russians under Bismarck, which, although the French who attacked thought it prudent to withdraw before a victory decided for either side, resulted on the following day in the retreat of the Russians.

HEILSBRONN, or KLOSTER-HEILSBRONN, a market-village in the Bavarian government of Middle Franconia, with a station on the railway between Nuremberg and Ansbach. In 1871 it had only 998 inhabitants, but in the Middle Ages it was the seat of one of the great monasteries of Germany. This foundation, which belonged to the Cistercian order, owed its origin to Bishop Otto of Bamberg in 1132, and continued to exist till 1555. Its sepulchral monuments, many of which are signed by Hooker, *Heilsbrunner Antiquariatschut* (Ansbach, 1731-40), were of exceptionally high artistic interest, ten burghers of Nuremberg (it was their hereditary burial-place), three electoral princes, five margraves of Brandenburg, and many other persons of note having been laid to rest within its walls. The buildings of the monastery have all disappeared, with the exception of the fine church, restored between 1851 and 1866. The "Monk of Heilsbronn" is the ordinary appellation of a didactic poem of the 14th century, whose *Sevens Degrees, Daughter of Syon, and Life of Saint Aeneas* were published by Merdolf at Berlin in 1870.

See "Note Heilsbrunnens" and "Annalen Heilsbrunnens," in Pertz, *Mon Germ Hist*, vol. xvi., *Musik, Darstellung des Gesch von Heilsbronn*, Ansb., 1869, *Rilm, Ein Gang durch und um die Mauer des Klosters Heilsbronn*, Ansb., 1876, and Stillrich, *Kloster Heilsbronn, ein Beitrag zu den Quellen der Forschung*, Berlin, 1877.

HELM, FRANÇOIS JOSEPH (1787-1866), French painter, belongs to that group of painters in whose works we find the special characteristics of the Restoration. Born at Belfort on 16th December 1787, he early distinguished himself at the Ecole Centrale of Strasbourg, and in 1803 entered the studio of Vincent at Paris. In 1807 he obtained the first prize, and in 1813 his picture of The Return of Jacob (*Musée de Bordeaux*) won for him a gold medal of the first class, which he again obtained in 1817, when he exhibited, together with other works, a St John—bought by Vivant Denon. In 1819 the Resurrection of Lazarus (*Cathédral Autun*), the Martyrdom of St Cyr (St

Gervais), and two scenes from the life of Vespasian (ordered by the king) attracted attention. In 1833 the Re-erection of the Royal Tombs at St Denis, the Martyrdom of St Laurence (Notre Dame), and several full-length portraits increased the painter's popularity, and in 1841, when he exhibited his great canvas, the Massacre of the Jews (Louvre), Heim was rewarded by the legion of honour. In 1827 appeared the King giving away Prizes at the Salon of 1824 (Louvre—engraved by Jazet)—the picture by which Heim is best known—and Saint Hyacinthe. Heim was now commissioned to decorate the Gallery Charles X. (Louvre), work for which he was thought eminently fit. Like many other painters of this period, Heim retained only enough of the high pitched ideal of David to make an awkward contrast with the lively colour and movement by which he tried to give interest to his subjects, and with the emptiness of form and expression which resulted from the hasty execution necessitated by the vast number of his commissions. Ridiculed by the romanticists, Heim maintained his position, and replaced Regnault at the Institute in 1834, shortly after which he commenced a series of drawings of the celebrities of his day, which are of much interest. His decorations of the Conference room of the Chamber of Deputies were completed in 1841, and in 1847 his works at the Salon—Champ de Mars and Reading a Play at the Théâtre Français—were the sign for attacks answered with great violence. Yet something like a taint of cynicism in his favour took place at the exhibition of 1851, his powers as a draughtsman and the occasional merits of his composition were recognized, and toleration extended even to his colour. Heim was awarded the great gold medal, and in 1855—having sent to the Salon no less than sixteen portraits, amongst which may be cited those of Cuvier, Geoffroy de St Hilaire, and Madame Heisen—he was made officer of the legion of honour. In 1859 he again exhibited a curious collection of portraits, several members of the Institute arranged in groups of four, and six years later, on 29th September 1865, he died, at the age of seventy-eight. Besides the paintings already mentioned, there is to be seen in Notre Dame de Lorette (Paris) a work executed on the spot, and the museum of Strasburg contains an excellent example of his easel pictures, the subject of which is a Shepherd Drinking from a Spring.

ULRIKE, HERRNROT (1799–1856), poet and journalist, was born, according to the most trustworthy accounts, on the 13th December 1799, at Düsseldorf, of Jewish parents. His father, after various vicissitudes in business, had finally settled in that town, and his mother, who seems to have possessed much energy of character, was the daughter of a physician of the same place. Home received the rudiments of his education at the gymnasium or *lycée* (as it was called during the foreign occupation) of his native town, and, although not an especially apt or diligent pupil, he acquired while there a good knowledge of French and English,—he tells us that *Gulliver's Travels* in the original was one of the favourite books of his childhood,—as well as some tincture of the classics and Hebrew. But if the influence upon him of his teachers and their teaching was unimportant, not so that of the public events amid which he grew up. His early years coincided with the most brilliant period of Napoleon's career, and the boundless veneration which he is never tired of expressing for the emperor throughout his writings shows that his true schoolmasters were rather the drummers and troopers of a victorious army than the Jesuit fathers of the *lycée*, while, if to the vivid personal impression produced upon him by the pomp and circumstance of the imperial garison in his birthplace there be added the public, and in a manner national, enthusiasm for Napoleon which he must

often have heard vented by his elder co-religionists—who hailed the conqueror as a temporal Messiah—the weighty bearing of his boyhood upon his subsequent fortunes becomes fully apparent. Upon his quitting school, attempts were made to engage him in commerce, but his father and uncle, the latter a wealthy banker of Hamburg, soon perceived that he was bent upon travelling a different path from that which they had followed. It speaks well for both these men that they should have refrained from coercion upon making this discovery, and Solomon Heine, the banker, at once gave his nephew an earnest of the generous treatment the latter was subsequently to experience at his hands, for he came forward with money to enable his young kinsman to go to a university, his sole stipulation being that his protégé should study with a view of entering the legal profession. Heine gladly accepted his uncle's terms, and entered the university of Bonn in the spring of 1819. During his stay there he was an eager student, but the subjects to which he devoted himself had no connexion with the profession which had been chosen for him. He seems to have attended no lectures save those on literature and history—notably A. W. von Schlegel's, and he not long afterwards acknowledged his obligations to Schlegel by dedicating a sonnet to him as a tribute which he received in later days by a wanton and outrageous attack, upon the veteran critic in *Die Romantische Schule*. Why Heine left Bonn does not clearly appear, but it is at Göttingen that we find him in the autumn of 1820. His stay here was even shorter than at Bonn. In February 1821 the authorities of the "Georgina Augusta" rusticated him for some infraction of the duelling laws. Although from those beginnings Heine's academical career promised to pursue no very even course, he nevertheless determined, after his residence at Göttingen had been cut short, to seek a third university, and it was to Berlin that he now repaired, where Hegel was at the zenith of his renown. Whether or not the locusts of this philosopher benighted him in any way—by giving him, for instance, as some have supposed, a certain dialectical precision of style—he has himself confessed that he seldom understood them, and in after years Hegel's ultra-conservatism and orthodoxy made him the constant butt of his former pupil's ridicule and sarcasm. But the interest of Heine's life in Berlin was social and not academic. He enjoyed the privilege of mixing in the best literary circles of the capital. He was chosen a member of intimacy with Vanhagen, von Enke and his wife, the celebrated Jewish Rake, and at their house—the rendezvous of Germany's genius and learning—he frequently met such men as the Humboldts, Hegel himself, and Schleiermacher, while he lived on a still more familiar footing with a number of his own co-religionists, who, without having acquired European reputation, were men of varied and approved abilities. In an atmosphere of such geniality as this his gifts were rapidly displayed. He began ere long to contribute poems to the *Berliner Gesellschaft*, many of which were subsequently incorporated in the *Buch der Lieder*, and in 1822 a volume came from the press entitled *Gedichte von Heinrich Heine*, his first avowed act of authorship. He was still further employed at this time as the correspondent of a Rhenish newspaper, as well as in completing his tragical *Atmanson* and *William Ratdoff*, which were published in 1823 with small success. He was now, indeed, fairly embarked upon his literary course. But he was still largely dependent upon his uncle, and in order so far to fulfil his engagements towards his benefactor, he returned to Göttingen in 1825, and shortly afterwards took his degree in law, having previously qualified himself for practice by publicly professing Christianity.

This act of "apostasy," as it has been called, calls for something more than a mere passing reference, for it not



only lud Heine open to contumely while alive, but has provoked adverse criticism of equal severity since his death. That he was guilty of "apostasy" is no doubt verbally true, but there are two circumstances in this connexion which should always be remembered. The one is that Heine was wholly wanting in the religious sense—that he never was a Jew save nominally and by the accident of birth—so that he cannot, with any real propriety, be said to have forsaken the creed of his race, the other, that his family, by encouraging him to adopt a profession which could not be entered except by the gateway of "apostasy," tacitly left him free to take that step. In short, Heine's "apostasy" was a purely secular act, and, although there will doubtless be found many to stigmatize him all the more blackly for this very reason, candour appears rather to require that this change of faith, if such it can be called, should be classed as one of his most venial offences, being the plainly outward act of one who throughout life made himself peculiarly obnoxious to the imputation of malice and bad heartedness.

Heine seems never to have made any serious attempt to practise law. His life from the year 1826 until his death was devoted entirely to literature, and more especially to journalism, which alone indeed was the main source of his income for many years. At first he lived in Hamburg, and then it was that, besides the *Buch der Lieder*, the earliest portions of the *Reisebilder* appeared, both of which, but particularly the latter, at once created an immense sensation throughout Germany, not only among the youthful and enthusiastic, who found their own sentiments expressed by the new writer with the happiest audacity, but amongst such dignified and *rangée* personages as Metternich and Gentz. In 1827 Baron Cotta, the Bavarian publisher, offered Heine, who had risen at a bound into celebrity, the joint-editorship of the *Allgemeine Politische Annalen*. The young author accepted the offer, and betook himself to Munich in the winter of that year, after having paid a visit to London, where he found every person and everything detestable save Canning and his policy—and it may be said here in passing that a most violent hatred of England forms a marked feature of all Heine's writings. He remained for a considerable period in the South-German capital, and it was owing, not to any disagreement with his employer, but to the demands of the court of Prussia, which was not long of taking umbrage at his freedom of opinion, that his editorial function ceased so abruptly as it did. What the secret history of the next two or three years of his life was—whether from the very first he really was an object of especial disfavour at Berlin, or whether, as is quite as likely, taking his vanity and love of publicity into account, he exaggerated his powers of offence beyond the endurance of the Government there, and forced it into what seemed a petty persecution—he presently perceived that he must either quit Germany altogether or prepare for a life time perhaps of fortress-impunity. He did not long hesitate between the two alternatives, and on the 1st of May 1831 Heinrich Heine left his native land for Paris, where he lived for the rest of his life, only once recrossing the Rhine, in 1843.

Just as his adoption of Christianity has led to Heine's being pronounced "apostate," so has his self-expatriation caused German writers to denounce him as "renegade." But the one accusation is as groundless as the other. In the first place Heine was a Jew, in spite of his Christianisation, and cannot therefore rightly be called a "renegade" against Germany—least of all when the degraded social and political status of his race in that country at the date of his emigration is recollected. Then again his writings were systematically subjected to the cruellest mutilations, and it is tolerably certain that had he remained in the "Fatherland," he would sooner or later have been

deprived of all power of public speech. Was it any wonder, seeing that he had adopted the profession of letters, that he should have turned his back upon such a prospect? If at any rate was the best judge, and it ill becomes Germans to call him "renegade," when, had he continued to tarry among them, their literature would probably have suffered an irreparable loss. At the same time, and for the same reasons, it is equally inept to assert that he was in the essential qualities of his mind a Frenchman who gravitated towards Paris by a sort of intellectual necessity. The necessity (to use that word) was physical. Heine would never have left Germany could he have freely expressed his opinions there.

After settling in his new home, where his life for many years must have been as gay and brilliant as latterly it was sad and sombre, and where he speedily became more or less intimate with such writers as Balzac, Dumas the elder, George Sand, Victor Hugo, and Thérèse Gautier, Heine devoted himself more exclusively than ever to journalism, and from 1831 until 1847, he was an active and indefatigable publicist. The two series of papers entitled *Frankenische Zustände* and *Litette* contain a selection from his press contributions during these years, and even at this date they well repay perusal, not only by the brilliancy of wit and elegance of style which they possess in common with almost all his writings, but also by the remarkable sagacity of their political *opinions*. Alongside of his main stream of journalism, he also kept up a subsidiary current of literature in its more proper sense—although it may be said that all his writings are of an occasional nature—and to this we owe the *Salon* (1838-39), which comprises among other pieces a series of articles, "Zur Geschichte der Religion und Philosophie in Deutschland," which had originally appeared in the *Revue des deux Mondes*, and in which Heine came forward as the introducer of German thought to the reading world of Paris. The *Salon* also contains several admirable papers in art criticism, and a shrewd, fragmentary medley of sentiment and satire, in its author's most characteristic vein—"Die Florentinische Nächte." To this period, too, belongs *Die Romantische Schule*, to which reference has already been made, and the substance of which is sufficiently indicated by its name. In 1839 *Shakespeare's Mädchen und Frauen* appeared—Heine acting in this slight work as cicerone through a gallery of Shakespeare's heroines. The year 1840 was signalized by the publication of *Heinrich Heine über Ludwig Börne*, a brochure of the witnest and most teachant satire, in which the German refugees in Paris—a fraternity whom Heine always anxiously avoided—were far more severely handled than was the defunct author whose name it bore, and who, it may be noted, was himself a Jew. In 1844 *Deutschland, ein Wintermärchen*, came forth—the result of the visit to Germany which he had been alluded to as the sole journey of the kind which Heine undertook, and this effusion may be ranked, along with a similar performance, *Atta Troll* (1846), as belonging to his most inferior writings. It was in 1848 that Heine, in the very hey-day of his activity, and with gigantic projects swelling within him for the foundation of a journal, was suddenly prostrated by the disease which finally carried him off, though not before it had confined him for seven years upon the "mattress grave" of mournful notoriety. His sufferings throughout that time are reported to have been frequently excruciating, and he at length grew so habituated to the use of opium that the very largest doses failed to afford him relief. But when his mindy—a softening of the spinal cord—allowed him a respite, his intellect was as clear and vigorous as ever, and it is to these closing years of his life, harrassing as they were, that we are indebted for the finest and most finished of all his poems—for the two collections, that is to say,

*Romanezo* (1851) and *Neueste Gedichte* (1853-54), as well as for the various pieces posthumously published in *Heine's Letzt Gedichte und Gedanken*. It was from his "master's-grave" too that the dying man put forth his *Geständnisse* or *Confessions*, the psychological interest of which is very great, whatever their claim to trustworthiness may be. Heine bore the misery of his protracted death-bed with fortitude, nay, with cheerfulness, assiduously attended by his wife Mathilde, and towards the end by that mysterious lady whom he called "Die Moucha," and who was, it now appears, a Madame Kunitz, and there are many anecdotes on record of his boating in the midst of his trials—and heavier trials seldom fall to the lot of man—which go far to prove that he possessed a healthy *joué gaillard*, for which his writings are scarcely likely to gain him credit. He died on the 17th February 1856 in Paris, in the Rue d'Amsterdam, and lies buried in the cemetery of Montmartre.

We have called Heine "poet and journalist," but his reputation has, naturally enough, now come to rest almost exclusively upon his poetry, and above all upon his songs—the *Buch der Lieder* having passed through upwards of twenty-five editions. This great popularity may no doubt (and especially in foreign countries) be attributable to a certain extent, to the singular good fortune which has befallen to very many of these songs the music of such composers as Schumann and Mendelssohn. But still, when all deductions upon this score are made,—and the true view of the matter probably is that the poet and his composers are mutually obliged,—the fact remains that Heine is one of the great song writers of the world, not unworthy of a place beside Burns and Béranger, although far less masculine and passionate than the one, and far less jovial and debonair than the other. The intense individualism which prevented him from ever becoming a literary artist in any other department—his dramas and essays in fiction are worthless—stood him in excellent stead in the lyric field,—was a positive and essential strength indeed, for, after all, a song to appeal to men's hearts must be an utterance of personal experience. And this condition is amply fulfilled in the *Buch der Lieder*, the greater portion of which was the direct outcome of a sentiment entertained by the poet for one of his cousins—a sentiment, by the way, which has been alluded to by German writers as a mere *Cousinen-schwärmerei*, while others (not Germans) have affirmed that all Heine's bitterness and cynicism in after life arose from its having remained unrequited. On the whole, Heine as a song writer is a fit descendant of Walther von der Vogelweide and those old *Minnesänger* who of yore assembled in the halls of princes, and recounted their sorrows and their joys—of those nameless bards, too, who sang the *Völkchenlied*, and when all his other writings are forgotten, he will be remembered by such imperishable gems as "Die Rose, die Lili, die Taube, die Sonne," "Auf Flügeln des Gesanges," and "Du bist wie eine Blume." There is much, too, of great beauty in many of his ballads and narrative pieces, witness among others, "Spanische Atriden," "Die Prinzessin Sabah," "Jehuda-ben Halevy," "Bosens Getraume"—a piece of the most exquisite pathos and simplicity—and "Die Insel Birnui." But too often, no matter how sweet a chord is struck at the beginning, a dissonance creeps in, to end in a crushing discord, and the outraged reader starts like one who should suddenly see Romeo and Juliet fall to grimacing and squeaking like Punch and Judy. Heine's confession that poetry was no more than his "holy playing" would have been entitled to our unqualified acceptance had he omitted the adjective.

But when we turn to his prose-writings—to his "journalism," that is to say, for, as we have remarked, almost all his prose falls under this category, in its widest acceptation

—we see the man Heine indeed, not perhaps, as he was ambitious of being regarded by posterity, in the full panoply of a "soldier of human emancipation," but at any rate as no contemptible assailant of obscurantism and philistinism. Beside such a redoubtable champion of the catholic reason of mankind as Lessing—"of the ponditious battle axe," he looks somewhat small, it is true, and his rapier somewhat gimcrack. But ridicule will often reach whither heavier weapons cannot, and pierce the elephantine hide of pedantry and dullness, after these have been attacked in vain by battering-rams, and Heine was a master of it. The worst is that in unscrupulous hands—and no one was more unscrupulous than he—it may be turned to illegitimate uses, and come to be indulged in finally for its own sake. How easily Heine became the slave of his propensity in this direction may be seen in the two works—which seem his best and most characteristic writings, notwithstanding—*Zur Geschichte des Religion und Philosophie in Deutschland* and *Die romantische Schule*. Both these abound in the most irrelevant passages, especially the former, wherein such philosophies as Kant, Fichte, and Schelling—clearly serve a higher purpose than to be used as pegs whereon the writer may hang his jests. And admirable these are. Nothing can be better, for instance, than his account of how Kant (who is parenthetically described as a man whom Nature intended to sell coffee and sing across a counter) came to postulate a Duty in his practical, after having exploded that idea in his theoretical system. He did this, says Heine (most adroitly hitting one of the chief *opposita*, scientifically regarded, of the ethical philosophy), for the sake of his old man-servant Lampe, who looked so dimly at the conclusions of the Pure Reason that the philosopher was moved to compassion! *Die romantische Schule*, being concerned for the most part with its author's contemporaries, is far more violent than the treatise just mentioned, but equally happy, and it aimed a death blow at a school which rivaled the wildest and most licentious ravings of a Monk Lewis and the most titillated horrors of an Ann Radcliffe. And here it may be said, in connexion with the attack upon Schlegel occurring in this essay, that Heine's onslaughts were always open and above-board, unmerciful and sometimes grossly brutal as they were. He was a literary swashbuckler, it may be (though that term is singularly inapplicable to one who wrote in such a style), but he was neither a literary assassin nor a literary ghoul. Even his attack upon Böhm was really aimed, as we have said, at men who were alive to resent it, and it was resented, though from a strange quarter. Böhm's widow's husband challenged Heine, and the latter was slightly wounded in the encounter.

Of the *Reisebilder*, Heine's most voluminous and best-known prose work, and that which originally gave him fame, small space remains to speak. But if we except its first and third books, it has been greatly overrated. It is easy to understand the popularity it acquired upon its first appearance, falling as it did like a breath of genuine life upon a land well-nigh asphyxiated by high art and the "Hubsch Objectiv"—but nowadays, notwithstanding its undoubted mirth-provoking qualities, it chiefly serves to point out the gulf which was fixed between its author and him who took the *Sentimental Journey*. The most that can be said for it is that Schöne might have written it had he been a German Jew.

The best edition of Heine's works is that published by Hoffmann and Campe, *Heine's Sammelte Werke*, 20 vols. (Hannover, 1866). Another edition has appeared in America, *Heine's Sammelte Werke*, in 7 vols. (*Heine's Works*), by Adolph Strodtmann, Berlin, 1870, is the only life of Heine entitled to consideration, although the pleasure of reading it is certainly marred by its length. A biography of the poet has also appeared in England, *Life and Opinions of Heinrich Heine*, by W. Stegmann,



he paused to issue a new edition of Ovid), and Rome next year, 1647, found him in Naples, from which he fled during the reign of Masaniello; he pursued his labours in Lagnhorn, Bologna, Venice, and Padua, at which latter city he published in 1648 his volume of original Latin verse entitled *Italica*. He proceeded to Milan, and worked for a considerable time in the Ambrosian library, he was pre-paring to explore Switzerland in the same patient manner, when the news of his father's illness recalled him hurriedly to Leyden. He was soon called away to Stockholm at the invitation of Queen Christina, at whose court he waged war with Salmasius, who accused him of having supplied Milton with facts from the life of that great but miserable scholar. Heimsius paid a flying visit to Leyden in 1650, but immediately returned to Stockholm. In 1651 he once more visited Italy, the remainder of his life was divided between Upsala and Holland. He collected his Latin poems into a volume in 1653. His latest labours were the editing of Velleius Paterculus in 1678, and of Valerius Flaccus in 1680. He died at the Hague, October 7, 1681. Nikolaus Heimsius was one of the purest and most elegant of modern Latinists, and if his scholarship was not quite so perfect as that of his father, he displayed higher gifts as an original writer.

HEINSIUS, NIKOLAAS, an illegitimate son of the subject of last article, was born in 1655 at the Hague. At the age of twenty he wrote *The Delightful Adventures and Wonderful Life of Musander*, a work of extraordinary humour and genius, the sole original romance produced in Holland during the 17th century. Dr. Ten Brink has pointed out that *Musander* preceded *Gul Blaz*, which it curiously resembles, by at least forty years. The author, however, added nothing else to literature. He was disowned by his father, driven from the house, and in 1677 had to flee the country on account of a murder which he committed at night in the streets of the Hague. He lived a precarious life as an outlaw in Paris, Rome, and elsewhere, and died in obscurity.

#### HEIJL. See INLEIDING.

HEIJDER, or TIEL HEIJDER, a township of the Netherlands at the northern extremity of the province of North Holland, directly opposite the island of Texel. Since 1819 it has been the terminus of the North Holland Canal, and it is now connected (since 1865) by railway with Alkmaar and Havlem. Its fortifications and its dykes are both constructed on an extensive scale, the former comprising four batteries and five forts, and the latter being the most striking on the whole coast. A garrison of 7000 to 8000 men is necessary for the defence of the place, and 30,000 men could be accommodated within the lines. The harbour, called the Nieuwe Diep, is one of the best in Europe. Its area is 6560 feet long by 330 to 490 broad, and it has depth enough for the largest vessels, which are admitted to the North Holland Canal by the Koopvaarders sluice. The Government Arsenal comprises an extensive wet dock, a dry dock, an auxiliary establishments. Besides eight churches and a synagogue Heijder possesses a palace for the board of mine, a royal institute for the education of naval cadets, a marine hospital, an orphan asylum, a town-house erected in 1836, and a meteorological observatory. The industries of the place are those usual in a flourishing seaport. Previous to 1819 the population was not much more than 2070, but since then it has rapidly increased. In 1870 the suburbs of Willemsoord, Nieuwe Diep, Nieuwstadt, and the Canal Head being included, the total amounted to 29,205. As a commune it numbered 18,366 in 1870 and 20,104 in 1874.

Heiden was originally an offshoot of the now decayed town of Thielsum. The first church was built in 1684, and though the church became a favourite resort of the whale fishers, it was not

till the construction of the Nieuwe Diep between 1770 and 1780, and when in 1781 a new harbour, that the present one, the place was secured. Under the Batavian republic the fortifications were extended and strengthened, and Napoleon still further improved them. In 1799 the English, under Abercrombie, invited by the Russians, threw out the French and secured the capture of the Dutch fleet in the Zuyder Zee.

HELENA, daughter of Zeus and of Leda the wife of Tyndareus king of Sparta, was sister of Castor, Pollux, and Clytemnestra, and was married to Menelaus. According to Homer she was obliged by Aphrodite to flee with Paris to Troy, and after the Trojan War she returned with Menelaus and lived with him as queen in Sparta. She had only one child, a daughter named Hermione, who was married to Neoptolemus. In the Homeric poems her character is drawn with marvellous skill, forced by the gods to do what she regrets, she seems to be separated from the wrong that she does, and remains always an object of interest and respect.<sup>1</sup> Goethe (*Faust*, part i.) introduces Helena apparently to symbolize the Greek spirit acting on the modern mind. Among later poets the tales of Helen are much more complicated. She was carried off by Theseus to Attica in her childhood, but was recovered by her brothers. Her character often suffers much in the tales followed by lyric and tragic poets. Stesichorus and Euripides (*Helene*), however, relate that Paris on his homeward voyage was driven by stress of wind to Egypt. Ptolemy, king of Egypt, hearing the facts, detained the real Helen in Egypt, while a shadowy Helen was taken to Troy and fought for. Menelaus on his way home from Troy was also driven to Egypt, and there found his true wife. After the death of Paris she is also said to have been married to his brother Deiphobus.

If we turn to the religious ceremonies and the genuine popular tales, we find traces of a most ancient Helen. As Minerva in Attica she was connected with the worship of Nemesis, whose daughter she is considered to be. In Egypt she was taken to the mother of Iphigeneia, and was said to have founded a temple of Ptolethys, the goddess of birth. At Sparta she was honoured as presiding over the care of children, and every life was celebrated in his honour by the maidens. A tree apple was to have been connected with her worship there (see *Thoor*, xxvii), and in Rhodes she was worshipped by maidens with the epithet *Σπάρτις*, a name of the very oldest kind of worship, where a sacred tree was worshipped as the embodiment of the god. In most of those cults connection with a moon goddess, the most important of whose functions was the care over child birth, is apparent, and we are led to regard *Ελένη* as an epithet of the moon, which has gradually been severed from it and used as an independent existence. Of the ancient given of Gorgophone under Gorgon. Beauty is a specially common attribute of the moon and of moon goddesses, such as Her. This makes it most probable that the word *ηλένη*, here connected with the root *ele*, to shine. The tale connecting Helen with Achilles, who is clearly a sun god originally, which is known already to the writers of the *Cypria*, are also very instructive. Over the British coast Achilleus and Helen were worshipped as united in the Blythen lands. With this we must compare the story of Cadmus and Harmonia (see *Περσέων*), and of Hades and Persephone, and we must remember that there is evidence of Helen being closely connected with Attica. We then look on it as probable that the rape of Helen by Theseus was merely a device of homonymizing skill to connect the decline of Spartan religion with the Helen worshipped in Attica. Probably a similar reason is to be attributed to most of the tales which in itself would the undoubtedly historic fact of the destruction of Troy by a Greek tribe or army. The worship of Aphrodite, the goddess whose influence in the story of Paris and Helen is so great, was common to Troy and Cythra. Many facts also point to a close connexion between Aphrodite and Helios. The swan from whose egg she is born is the bird of Aphrodite. By the author of the *Cypria* and in Attic tradition Helen is made the daughter of Nemesis, but Nemesis as a goddess of fate is clearly a sun goddess (see *Kuhn*, *ZfV*, ii. 419), and therefore may be identified in origin with Aphrodite. We have here another instance of the intimate relation of the moon and dawn goddesses, and the possibility of dividing them by a local line (see *Hirtz*, *III*, 11).<sup>2</sup> It must be at once a most instructive and a most interesting task

<sup>1</sup> Most appreciative and sympathetic analyses may be found in Gindtson's *Homeric Studies* and Mure's *History of Greek Literature*.

to trace the steps by which the antique two Greek goddesses were gradually transformed into the charming heroes round whom the action of the *Iliad* revolves. The data for reconstructing the history of this figure are not then usually full, and are to elicit that a student of the most opposite schools (as Velleius, Gellius, Athenæus, Manilius, Bochart) have recognized in Helena the ancient goddess.

HELENA, SAINT, a woman of humble origin, said to have been the daughter of an innkeeper, was the wife of Constantine Chlorus. Of her nationality nothing certain is known. She had one son, Constantine the Great. In 302 A.D. Chlorus was raised to the purple by the emperors Diocletian and Maximian, and forced to divorce Helena to make room for a more noble wife. After her son became emperor she was treated with great respect and styled Augusta, and cities in Bithynia and Lycaonia were after her named Helenopolis. She became a Christian when her son was converted, and during a pilgrimage to Jerusalem she discovered the Holy sepulchre and the true cross. Her zealous patronage of their religion made her a favourite with the Christian writers, and finally procured her the honour of canonization, but pagan historians, such as Zosimus, regard her with dislike, and even question, though without ground, the legality of her marriage. Many coins occur with the name of Helena, but it is difficult or impossible in many cases to determine whether they belong to Saint Helena or to others of the family of Constantine bearing the same name.

HELENSBURGH, a town and favourite watering-place of Dumfriesshire, Scotland, is situated at the mouth of the Galloway, a branch of the Firth of Clyde, opposite Greenock which is about 4 miles distant. It is 21 miles N.W. of Glasgow by railway. In 1776 the site of the town was advertised for leasing, and in 1802 Helensburgh, named after Lady Helen, wife of Sir James Colquhoun, the superior of the soil, was created into a burgh of barony, under a prior and council. The boundaries have since been enlarged. The town is pleasantly situated on a gentle slope, the streets mostly intersecting each other at right angles, while many of the houses are surrounded by gardens, peculiarities that produce an agreeable and airy and openness. A handsomeburgh hall was erected in 1879. Near the town is a hospital, and within its boundaries a public park. Convenient as headquarters for visiting the whole district of the Clyde, and connected with Glasgow by both rail and steamer, Helensburgh is much frequented in summer. The population in 1871 was 6231, it is now (1880) estimated at fully 10,000.

HELIND (i.e., *Heland*) is an Old Saxon poem of the 9th century. According to some critics it is a fragment of a larger work which dealt with the entire historical material of the Old and New Testaments. The poet which we now possess sets forth the life of Christ as told by the four evangelists, whose various narratives the author seeks to harmonize. The poem is said to have been composed by a Saxon writer at the request of the emperor Louis the Pious, but who the author was, except that he was a Saxon, we have no means of knowing. The general opinion is that he lived in Westphalia, but even this is uncertain. Like all the most ancient remains of Teutonic poetry, *Heland* is written in alliterative verse, of which the writer had a perfect mastery. It is almost the only remnant of the Old Saxon dialect, and has therefore a high philological value, but it is still more interesting from a literary point of view. The poet does not merely repeat his authorities, while true to the main facts of the original story, he allows his imagination to play upon them in a free and poetic spirit. It is realized with intense force the incidents in the career of the Founder of Christianity, and gives vitality and definiteness to the received conception of His character. The diction is simple and popular, but marked by an elevation of sentiment adapted to the theme and to its epic treatment, and by a happy phrase the author often succeeds in

imparting to his style colour, variety, and animation. The 9th century is remarkable in the history of Old English and of Old Norse poetry, the *Heland* affords proof that the impulse which revealed itself in these two literatures was also experienced to the full by the higher minds of Germany. The historical aspects of this great work are hardly less important than those which claim the attention of the purely literary student. Of all the German tribes the Saxons were the last to submit to the influence of Christianity. They regarded baptism as the symbol of Frankish supremacy, and clung as long as they could to the ancient Teutonic faith. Not until Charlemagne, after more than thirty years of warfare, forced upon them the Frankish institutions did they generally accept the new creed, and even then, while they talked of Christ and the saints, they thought of Wodan and Thor, and took delight in the heathen poetry which had been handed down from remote periods. Louis the Pious was of a gentle and conciliatory nature, and by treating the Saxons with kindness obliterated to a large extent the recollection of his father's severity. *Heland* was one of the works with which he and the clergy endeavoured to replace pagan literature, so that we may regard it as the monument of a struggle between two civilizations. The author is dominated by the ideals and the sympathies of the Catholic Church, but occasional thoughts remind us of the order of life that was passing away, and these have been found suggestive by writers on German ethnology.

*Heland* received its name from A. Schmeller, who edited it (Munich, 1830-40) from the two existing manuscripts, one of which is in the British Museum, the other in Munich (formerly in Bamberg). More recent editions have been issued in Bonn (Munich, 1856) accompanied by a modern German version (2d ed. of Paderborn, 1878), and Ruckert (4th volume of *Deutsche Dichtungen des Mittelalters*, Leipzig, 1876). There are translations into modern German by Kammgesser (Bonn, 1817), Oken (Hamburg, 1814), in several editions (Gassel, 1829), Rapp (Stuttgart, 1858), and Bartsch (2d ed. Leipzig, 1860). See also Wilmann, *Deutsche Mythologie in Heland* (2d ed., Leipzig, 1862), Wundrich, *Der Heland und seine Quellen* (Leipzig, 1868), Grimm, *Die Quellen des Heland* (Gassel, 1869), and Saxer, *Der Heland und die angelsächsische Genesis* (Halle, 1875).

HELICON, a mountain, or more strictly a mountain range, of Boeotia in ancient Greece, celebrated in classical literature as the favourite haunt of the muses, is situated between Lake Copais and the Gulf of Corinth. On the fertile eastern slopes stood a temple and grove sacred to the Muses, and adorned with beautiful statues, which, taken by Constantine the Great to beautify his new city, were consumed there by a fire in 404 A.D. Haired by spalled the famous fountains of poetic inspiration, Aganippe and Hippocrene, the latter fabled to have gushed from the earth at the tread of the winged horse Pegasus, whose favourite browsing place was there. At the neighbouring Aspis dwelt the ancient Hecate, a fact which probably enhanced the poetic fame of the region. Pausanias, who describes Helicon in his ninth book, asserts that it was the most fertile mountain in Greece, and that neither poisonous plant nor serpent was to be found on it, while many of its herbs possessed a marvellous healing virtue. The highest summit, the present Paleovuni (old hill), rises to the height of about 8000 feet. Modern travellers, aided by ancient remains and inscriptions, and guided by the local descriptions of Pausanias, have succeeded in identifying many of the ancient classical spots. For details of modern research see Clarke's *Travels in Various Countries* (vol. vii, 1818), Dodwell's *Classical and Topographical Tour through Greece* (1818), and Leake's *Travels in Northern Greece* (vol. ii, 1835).

HELIGOLAND (German, *Helgoland*), *Heligeland*, or *Helig Land*, as the natives call it, is one of the Friesian Islands, and an English possession, situated in the North

Sea, 54° 11' 31" N lat, 7° 51' E long, 36 miles from Cuxhaven at the mouth of the Elbe, and about 100 from Hamburg. Though the red cliffs of the Rock Island are most familiar to the voyager entering the Elbe, there are in reality two islets, the second being the Düne or Sand Island, now lying a quarter of a mile east of the main one, the light at one time connected with it by *de wad*, a neck of land which the sea broke through and destroyed in 1720. The Rock Island is nearly triangular in shape, surrounded on every side by steep cliffs, the only beach being the sandy spit where the landing place is situated, near the south-east point. On this islet there are some 500 houses, divided into a lower town on the spit, and an upper town on *Oberland*, situated on the cliff above and connected with the lower town by a wooden stair of 190 steps, the only possible mode of communication between the two sections. The portion of the flat topped rock not occupied by the houses, the church with graveyard, the Government residence, and place for a battery, comprises a little pasture-land, a few cabbage gardens, potato patches, and a powder magazine at the north end of the rock. About 200 sheep, tethered to puccinia spots, feed on the scanty herbage, eked out by potato-peelings and halms, cabbage blades, or any other vegetable refuse, which is carried out to them every morning. From one end of the island to the other runs a footpath, called by the Helgolanders the "Lund-weg" or High Road, but better known to visitors by the name of "Kartoffel-Allee" (Potato Walk). There is also a lighthouse, but, though a few guns are placed behind a rude earthwork, there are no fortifications except the inaccessible cliffs of the island, and no garrison of any kind unless a few coast guardsmen be considered as such. The greatest length of the island, which slopes somewhat from west to east, is 5880 feet, and the greatest breadth 1815 feet, its circumference 13,500 feet, its average height 193 feet, and the highest point 216 feet. The Düne or Sand Island is little more than a sand-bank covered with scanty herbage, and imperfectly bound together by bent grass and low trees. It is only about 200 feet above the sea at its highest point, but the drifting sands and the constant mounds of the sea make the height rather variable. The sea-bathing establishment is situated here, but, with the exception of the restaurant keeper and waiters, and the attendants who drag the bathing coaches into the sea, there are no residents. A shelling beach of white sand presents excellent facilities for bathing, everything is under strict Government surveillance, the boats in which the bathers cross in the morning, the hours of bathing, and the tariff being all regulated by law. Approached from the sea the Rock Island, with its red-cliffs perched in a little cluster on the red cliff,—"Am Fahn", as it is called,—looks very picturesque, and even the narrow black-paved or sandy lanes of the town are not deficient in a certain degree of quaintness. There are—with the exception of a wheelbarrow and an occasional peacemaker—no wheeled carriages in the island, and no horses or other beasts of burden. Even the two cows kept in the Unterland for the use of invalid visitors, and whose milk is sold at the apothecary's shop, are removed at the end of the bathing season to Cuxhaven, the island not supplying food for both man and beast. Mud is unknown on the streets, the rain only serving to wash their sloping surfaces clean as the scoured floor of the housewives' kitchens. Most of the houses are built—this lower half at least—of brick, but some are of wood. There are a therefore, "conservation houses" as a number of hotels and restaurants, though during the season nearly every house is more or less let out to "badgesegster" visitors for sea-bathing forming the great source of the islanders' prosperity. In both the lower and the upper

town there are numbers of shops, but the articles for sale seem to be chiefly intended for the summer "bathing guests," the natives getting most of their supplies from Hamburg or Bremen. The dwellings of the fisher-folk are reasonably clean, and the interiors bear evidence of the seafaring character of the population. Some of the houses have little gardens with flowers, cucumbers, &c., in front of them; and in places protected from the sea breezes there are a few fruit trees. At the foot of "the stair" are one or two lime trees sheltered by the contiguous houses, they are looked upon by the Helgolanders as objects of national pride.

During the summer from 2000 to 3000 people visit the island for sea bathing. Most of these are from Hamburg, English or other "guests" being rare. There are no English residents, the officials, the governor excepted, being either natives or Germans, and German, when Frisian is not employed, is the official language, though for farm's sake on the postage stamps English and German words appear in duplicate. The natives speak a dialect of Frisian, barely intelligible to the other islands of the group. They are perfectly content with the almost perfect autonomy they enjoy under the English Government. There is little emigration, and accordingly the population is slowly increasing. In 1879 the number was a little over 2000. There is regular communication with Bremen and Hamburg in the summer and autumn months, but during the winter the island is often isolated for weeks at a time, owing to the English weather, drift ice, and other causes. It is said that insanity and suicide are in consequence not rare. Epidemic diseases occur, though they do not commonly spread, but scurvy, owing to the poor character of the islanders' food, attacks three-fourths of the population. In ten years there were 309 deaths—about 15 to the 1000, while during the same period—from 1863 to 1872 inclusive—there were no less than 17 suicides. At one time the population did not exceed 300, and it was only when it increased to over 1000 that the inhabitants had to dispense with the few houses they kept to till their patches of land. This is now done with the spade, and lands are conveyed either in wheelbarrows or in shallow willow baskets.

The temperature of the Oberland is, owing to its exposure, about 1° lower than that of the Unterland. The following are the means of the months, from a series of observations taken for seven consecutive years at the lighthouse built on the highest point of the island:—Jan., 51° Fahr., Feb., 50°, March, 53° 2', April, 43° 1', May, 49° 2', June, 57° 6', July, 63° 2', August, 61° 6', September, 58° 4', October, 48° 2', November, 40° 4', December, 34° 8'—the mean temperature of the whole year being 47° 2' Fahr. The winters are usually very stormy, and the summer months are so dry that the rain leaves a delicate deposit of salt after it has crystallized. May and the early part of June are very wet and foggy, so that the first visitors do not arrive until the middle of the latter month. The rocks composing the island are of Triassic age, but the sandstone, limestones, lites, corals, mudshells, and chalk (now denuded), topped by Phoscor—"the brown rock," in which are found the scales and teeth mostly of freshwater fishes, freshwater *Mollusca*, and fruit and leaves of *Caryophyllus*, a *Quercus*, an *Alnus*, a maple, a plant allied to a hoya (*Stenodaphnopsis helgolandica*), &c. The cliffs were worn into caves, and around the Rock Island we many fantastic arches and columns of rock. There is no just ground, however, for believing that the Rock Island was much bigger than it is,—the tales of the great size of Heligoland—its numerous churches and villages in early times—being doubtless exaggerated by tradition, while the maps affecting to show its former extension doubtless relate to the Sand Island, which was undoubtedly much larger in very recent periods, and is now yearly becoming smaller. The natural history presents nothing remarkable. There are no cliffs or lights on it during their migrations, all belong to the mainland or to the North Sea. Haller has enumerated 220 flowering

<sup>1</sup> Summerring, *Die südlichen Zustände Helgolands, mit besonderer Berücksichtigung des Osmegedächts der Luft*, 1873, p. 14, 13.

<sup>2</sup> Götke, *Edinburgh New Philosophical Journal*, n. s., ix., p. 383; Blum, "Naturkunde," p. 803 (1865, p. 55), Condéu, *Flora*, 1876, p. 1872.—Mr Götke, the island secretary, is preparing a special work on Heligoland ornithology.



In favourable localities, however, heliography possesses important advantages for military signalling over other methods, the principal being the portability of the apparatus, the great distance to which messages can be sent without retransmission, and the fact that the signals are visible to those only who are on the direct line of signalling.

The signals are produced by causing the reflected beam to appear and disappear or be obscured alternately at the distant point, the intervals of appearance and obscuration being usually varied in length, so as to produce the combinations of long and short signals known as the Morse alphabet. "This is done in two distinct ways. In the first of these, known as signalling by "appearance," the reflected beam or "flash" is obscured from the receiving station except when a message is being transmitted, the flashes then giving the signals or "dots" and "dashes"; while in the second method, or signalling by "obscuration," the flash is kept continually on the receiving station, and only obscured for intervals forming signals. The first method is more easily read by learners; the second is less fatiguing to the eye, and possesses the advantage of enabling the signaller to correct the adjustment of his instrument at any time.

Glass mirrors with a plane surface are employed, hence the angle of divergence of the extreme rays in the reflected beam is the same as that subtended by the sun's diameter at the point, or about 33 minutes of arc; this small divergence rendering the flash visible to great distances.

The distance through which signalling by this method can be carried on depends on the size of the mirror employed and the angle of reflexion of the rays, a large mirror giving a more intense "flash" than a small one, since it reflects more rays, and being therefore visible to a greater distance; also when the angle of reflexion is nearly a right angle the flash will be more intense than when the rays are only diverted through a small angle from the greater extent of surface exposed to the sun's rays. The range, however, depends to so great a degree on the state of the atmosphere that it is impossible to assign any limits to the distance that the flash might be seen through in exceptionally clear weather. From the Himalayas a 5-inch mirror has been found to give very distinct signals over a distance of 60 miles; but when the air was at all misty a very much larger mirror had to be employed.

The more perfect reflexion when the angle between the direct and reflected rays is large is not sufficient to compensate for the loss of intensity caused by the small number of reflected rays. Hence when this angle is greater than a right angle two mirrors are used, the sun's rays being reflected from one back to the other and thence to the distant point. This is called the duplex method of working.

Two forms of instrument are at present used in the British army. In the one known as Babbage's field heliostat the mirrors are square, the sun mirror having a side of 5 inches, and the signalling mirror 4 inches. The object of this difference is to ensure the latter receiving the flash over its whole extent of surface. The mirrors are screwed on to tripod stands, the stand for the signalling mirror having a sighting bar with a frame of cross wires at the end, by means of which the alignment can be accurately taken by looking through a hole in the centre of the mirror. When this has been found a small white disc is put into a hole in the centre of the cross wire frame, and a black disc in the central hole in the signalling mirror, or, if two mirrors are used, the white disc in the signalling and the black disc in the sun mirror. The flash is then brought on the true line by making the shadow corresponding to the black disc fall on the white one; this is accurately obtained by means of slow-motion screws in a vertical and horizontal

direction, by which means also the sun's apparent motion is continually corrected. The obscuration is effected by a screen placed on a tripod in the alignment of the flash, pivoted horizontally, and worked by a handle. In the heliograph patented by Mr Mance the mirrors are circular, the obscuration being effected by giving a small angular motion to one of the mirrors, causing the reflected beam to travel through twice the angle and completely disappear from the distant point. This is more easily manipulated than obscuration by a screen. Its working is made very similar to that of an ordinary Morse key. The sun's motion is corrected by slow-motion screws, and the arrangements for directing the flash are very similar to those in the heliostat. Two tripod stands are employed: one is for the signalling mirror; the other in single working carries a jointed arm, fitted with a small white metal tablet having a black spot on which is thrown the shadow from an unsilvered hole in the centre of the signalling mirror, while in duplex working a piece of paper in the centre of the second mirror answers the same purpose.

In addition to its usefulness as a signalling instrument, the heliograph has been found of great service in defining exactly distant points for large surveys, such as the triangulation of India. For this purpose it was constantly employed by the late astronomer-royal at the Cape, Sir T. Maclear, in his verification of the arc of the meridian. (p. c.)

**HELIOPLIS.** See BAALDEG and EGYPT, vol. vii. p. 769.  
**HELIOOTROPE**, or **TURNSOLE**, *Heliotropium*, L. (Greek, *ἡλιότροπον*, i.e., a plant which follows the sun with its flowers and leaves, or, according to Theophrastus, *Hist. Plant.*, vii. 15, which flowers at the summer solstice, a genus of usually more or less hairy herbs or undershrubs of the tribe *Heliotropiceae* of the natural order *Boraginaceae*, having alternate, rarely sub-opposite leaves; small white, lilac, or blue flowers, in terminal or lateral one-sided simple or once or twice forked spikes, with a calyx of five deeply-divided segments, a salver-shaped, hypogynous, 5-lobed corolla, and entire 4-celled ovary; fruit 2- to 4-sulcate or lobed, at length separable into four 1-seeded nuts, or into two hard 2-celled carpels; and seeds generally with a scanty albumen. In some species the cone surmounting the stigma is bearded. The heliotropes are indigenous mostly to tropical and subtropical regions, but a few species are natives of Europe, as *H. europæum*, L., which is also a naturalized species in the southern parts of North America. *H. indicum*, L. (of the section *Helioleptum*, D.C.), is to be met with in equinoctial Africa, America, and Asia, but apparently not in Australia. Of 33 Australian species of *Heliotropium* that have been described, 16 are endemic. The common heliotrope of English hothouses, *H. peruvianum*, L., popularly known as "cherry-pie," is on account of the delicious odour of its flowers a great favourite with florists. It was introduced into Europe by the younger Jussieu, who sent seed of it from Peru to the royal garden at Paris. About the year 1757 it was grown in England by Mr P. Miller from seed obtained from St Germain. The plant has been known to occur with double flowers (Masters, *Veg. Terat.*, p. 610, Ray Soc., 1869). *H. corymbosum*, Ruiz et Pav., which was grown in Hammersmith



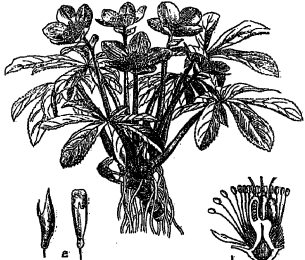
*Heliotropium europaicum.*





**HELLEBORE** (Greek, *ἡλέβορε*; Modern Greek also *erokkopi*; German, *Nieswurz*, *Christwurz*; French, *ellebore*, and, in the district of Avranches, *herbe enragée*), *Helleborus*, L., a genus of plants of the natural order *Ranunculaceae*,<sup>1</sup> natives of Europe, Western Asia, and North America. The leaves<sup>2</sup> are palmate or pedate (BOTANY, vol. iv. p. 111, fig. 108), are usually solitary, and have five persistent petaloid sepals, within the circle of which are placed the minute gland-like tubular petals, the nectaries of Linnaeus, of the form of a horn with an irregular opening, and representing, according to Baillon (*Nat. Hist. of Plants*, i. 13, 1871), "the lower or outermost stamens transformed into stamens." The stamens are very numerous, and are spirally arranged; and the carpels are variable in number, sessile or stipitate, and slightly united at the base, and delubse by ventral suture (vol. iv. 141, 149).

*Helleborus niger*, L., Black Hellebore, or, as from blooming in mid-winter it is termed, the Christmas Rose (Ger., *Schneeweiss Nieswurz*; Fr., *Rose de Noël*), is found in southern and central Europe, and with other species was cultivated in the time of Cæsar (see *Herball*, p. 977, ed. Johnson, 1538) in English gardens. Its knotty bracted rhizome is blackish-brown externally, and, as with other species, gives origin to numerous straight roots. The leaves are milky, coriaceous, smooth, distinctly petiole, dark green above, and lighter below, with 7 to 9 segments, and long petioles. The sepals, which end the branches of the rhizome, have a loose entire bract at the base, and terminate in a single flower, with two bracts,



*Helleborus niger*. 1, Vertical section of flower; 2, nectary, style and ovary, viewed from above.

from the axis of one of which a second flower may be developed. The flowers have 6 white or pale-rose, eventually greenish sepals, 16 to 18 lines in breadth; 8 to 18 tubular green petals containing a sweet liquid secretion; and 6 to 10 free carpels.

Varieties of Black Hellebore are *H. niger-minor*, or *H. angustifolius*, and Giant Hellebore, distinguished as *H. niger-major*, *maximus*, *giganteus*, and *grandiflorus*, or as a distinct species, *H. albefolius*, *H. foetidus*, &c. Striking Hellebore, in Westmoreland and Felson-grass, known also from the shape of its leaves, as Bear-foot (Fr., *Pied de Griffon*), is a native of England, where, like *H. viridis*, it is confined chiefly to limestone districts; it is common in France and the south of Europe. Its leaves have 7- to 11-toothed divisions, and the flowers are in panicles, numerous, cup-shaped, and drooping, with many bracts, and green sepals tinged with purple, alternating with the five petals.

<sup>1</sup> On the plants known as White Hellebore (*Veratrum album*) and American White Hellebore, commonly called "Green Hellebore" (*V. viride*), which are members of the natural order *Melanthaceae*, see *Veratrum*.

<sup>2</sup> On the development and structural relations of the leaves, see A. Trécul, *Ann. Sci. Nat., Bot.*, ser. iii., tom. xx., 260, 268, pl. 23, figs. 101-3, 1859; and also, *Bull. Soc. Bot. de France*, iii. 632, 1866.

<sup>3</sup> On the petals of the hellebores, see J. B. Payson, *Travail d'opercule comparée des fleurs*, pp. 256-260, 1857. In the opinion of Baillon (*op. cit.*, pp. 15-21), the groups *Branchia* and *Cypripis*, from the structure of their flowers, as do strictly *Isopyrum* and *Trillium*, should not be generically separated from *Helleborus*.

*H. viridis*, L., or Green Hellebore proper, ranges from England, where it is probably indigenous in some of the southern and eastern counties, to Spain and Italy, and even it is said to Turkey. It has bright yellowish-green flowers, 2 to 4 on a stem, with large leaf-like bracts. Brause and Boeck (19th century) regarded the plant as the Black Hellebore of the Greeks.

The radical leaves of *H. viridis* and its varieties, as also of *H. multifidus*, Visian, *H. yugoslavicus*, W. & K., *H. cyclophyllus*, Boiss., and several allied forms, wither in winter. In *H. caucasicus*, Aubl. (Boissier, *Fl. Orient.*, i. 60), a native of Syria, the flower-stem bears 4 to 6 flowers, and the carpels are much compressed laterally, and, when ripe, united half way up, as in certain *Nigella*. *H. Helicus*, Soland. (*H. erubescens*, Viv., *tripetalus* Mill., and *viridis* and *triphyllus*), Holly-leaved Hellebore, found in the Balearic Islands, and in Corsica and Sardinia, is remarkable for the handsomeness of its foliage. *H. andiqueorum*, Braun, which has purplish-white flowers, occurs in Bithynian Olympos. *H. olympicus*, Lindl., is perhaps a variety of it. *H. cyclophyllus* (Boiss., *Fl. Orient.*, i. 61), a Cretan species, has ovate-oblong green sepals. *H. orientalis*, Lindl., *Ency.*, iii. 93 (*H. yonkii*, Braun, see Boiss., *op. cit.*), indigenous to Macedonia, Thrace, the vicinity of Constantinople, and northern Asia Minor as far east as Trebizond, has leaves pubescent below, and of 7 to 9 segments, and sepals bearing 8 to 5 flowers, with white or rose sepals. Allied to it are *H. orienis*, W. & K., of which Koch regards *H. atrovirens* as a variety, and *H. caucasicus*, Koch, having green and purplish-green sepals respectively.

Hellebores may be grown in any ordinary light garden mould, but thrive best in a soil of about equal parts of turfy loam and well-rotted manure, with half a part each of fibrous peat and coarse sand, and in moist but thoroughly-drained situations, more especially where, as at the margins of shrubberies, the plants can receive partial shade in summer. For propagation, cuttings of the rhizome may be taken in August, and placed in pans of light soil, with a bottom heat of 60° to 70° Fahr; hellebores can also be grown from seed, which must be sown as soon as ripe, since it quickly loses its vitality. The seedlings usually blossom in their third year. The exclusion of frost favours the production of flowers; but the plants, if forced, must be gradually inured to a warm atmosphere, and a free supply of air must be afforded, without which they are apt to become much affected by greenfly. The flowers on one plant of *H. niger-major* in Mr B. Hooker's garden at Bradfield, Berks, about the end of January 1878, numbered nearly 500 (*Gard. Chron.*, 1878, i. 146). For potting, *H. niger* and its varieties, and *H. orientalis*, *atrovirens*, and *olympicus* have been found well suited. After lifting, preferably in September, the plants should receive plenty of light, with abundance of water, and once a week liquid manure, not over-strong. The flowers are improved in delicacy of hue, and are brought well up among the leaves, by preventing access of light except to the upper part of the plants. Of the numerous species of hellebore now grown, the deep-purple-flowered *H. colchicus* is one of the handsomest. *H. atropurpureus*, introduced in 1844, blooms in March or at the end of February, and may be effectively used in flower borders to succeed papaveras, acillas, and crocuses (Maund, *Bot. Gard.*, v. pl. cxxviii., fig. 2). Hellebores having variously coloured spreading or bell-shaped flowers, spotted with crimson, red, or purple, were grown by Sauer, late superintendent of the Berlin University Garden, about the year 1851, as the result of crossing *H. guttatus*, Braun, and *H. yugoslavicus*. Other fine varieties have been obtained by Bouché, his successor, from crosses with *H. olympicus*, and by Carl Heinemann from *H. guttatus* and *H. abachianus*.

The rhizome of *H. niger* occurs in commerce in irregular and nodular pieces, from about 1 to 3 inches in length,

<sup>4</sup> According to Regel, *H. orientalis*, *caucasicus*, *colchicus*, *andiqueorum*, *olympicus*, *guttatus*, and *abachianus* should all be reduced to one species. Koch (*Gard. Chron.*, 1874, i. 118) regards the Hungarian *H. yugoslavicus*, W. & K., and the Caucasian *H. colchicus*, Regel (= *H. porphyromedea*, Braun), as varieties of the last-named. The "*H. abachianus*" of Belgian florists is stated by M. J. L. Le Bêle ("Monog. des Helleb.", *Le Belge Horticult.*, vii. 331) to be merely a variety of *H. intermedius*, Guss.



slip from her seat, and to be carried away by the current, hence the name *Hellespontus*, or "Sea of Helle."

**HELLIN** (*Ilunium*), a town of Spain, in the province of Albarracín, is situated on the slope of the Sierra de Segura, 35 miles S E E of Albarracín. It is a clean and well built town, and possesses the remains of an old Roman castle and a beautiful parish church, the masonry and marble pavement at the entrance of which are worthy of special notice. The principal manufactures are sulphur obtained from the celebrated mines about 13 miles distant, earthenware, linens, cloth, hats, leather, and oil. Hellin was sacked by the French under Montbrun, and was the point where Joseph and Soult meted, with Suchet after Marmont's rout at Salamanca. The population is about 6000.

**HELMERS**, J. VAN FABRIK (1767-1813), Dutch poet, was born at Amsterdam, March 7, 1767. His early poems *Night* (1788) and *Socrates* (1790) were tame and sentimental, but he woke up after 1803 to the melancholy condition of the Fatherland, and determined, in company with his friend Cornelis Loois, to rouse national feeling by a burst of patriotic poetry. His poems, published in 1800 and 1810, but especially his great work *The Dutch Nation* (1812), created great enthusiasm and enjoyed immense success. Helmers died at Amsterdam, February 26, 1813. He was a fiery, somewhat turgid writer, by no means devoid of force, but owing his success mainly to the integrity of his nationalism and the opportunity afforded him, in which his soundly lay counterblast to the French oppression. His posthumous poems were collected in 1817.

**HELMET**, or **HELM** (Anglo-Saxon, *helm*, Italian, *Elmo*, French, *casque*, Icelandic, *halmr*), is the term used in a general sense to include the various forms of head defences which were either made in solid metal or of metal plates. The form of helmet used among the Assyrians, as shown by the monumental sculptures, was a close fitting skull-cap, round or conical, sometimes surmounted by a crest rising from the summit of the cone and curving forwards in a semicircular form. The Greek helmet was also in its simplest form a skull-cap, covering the head in front above the level of the eyes, but reaching down to the nape of the neck from ear to ear. Another form had this lower part prolonged and carried round so as to cover all above the shoulders with the exception of a slit in front, partly protected by a nose-piece. Occasionally hinged cheek-pieces were added to the skull-cap, and the upper part of the casque was sometimes prolonged into a conical shape with a crest curving forwards, or surmounted by a ridged prominence on which was fastened a flowing crest of horsehair. The Greek helmets are often represented as highly decorated, and many examples of the different forms and their varieties of decoration occur on the painted vases, the gems, and the coins. The Etruscan helmet differed but slightly from that of the Greeks. It was more conical in form, and often furnished with horns or wings in place of a crest. The Roman helmet was usually a skull cap, with or without crest, and often plain and undecorated. The Gaulish helmet, of which a beautiful specimen was obtained from an Iron Age burial at Barro in Maine in 1872, was of hammered iron, conical in shape, terminating in an ornamental apex, and having a richly decorated border round the lower part. Conical helmets of an earlier character found at Thell and Auxonne have been assigned to the Age of Bronze. A silver helmet of the Early Iron Age, consisting of a skull-cap with a mask for the face fastened together by a hinge, which was found in the Thorbyrigg Moss in South Jutland, is the only specimen known of the early Teutonic helmet. An Anglo-Saxon helmet of iron, shaped like a skull-cap, and formed of ribs or flat strips of metal, covered with plates of horn, and surmounted with the figure of a boar, was found in a tumulus

at Benty Grange in Derbyshire. Such horn-crowned helmets are referred to in the Anglo-Saxon poem of Beowulf. The helmets worn by the Normans and Saxons at the time of the Conquest, as shown in the Bayeux tapestry, were conical in shape with a projecting nasal. The earliest known example of a date subsequent to the Norman Conquest is one which was discovered in the church of Faversham, and is now in the Musée d'Artillerie at Paris. It preserves the conical top of the earlier Norman headpiece, but has a barrel-shaped body, covering all the head and face with the exception of a vertical slit partially protected by a projecting nasal, and having transverse apertures on either side for the eyes. This barrel shape, with flattened instead of conical top, continued in use during the 13th century in England, although the conical cap with the nasal appears on the great seals of the Scottish Kings down to the time of Alexander II. The helm of Edward the Black Prince (died 1370), which still hangs over his tomb in Canterbury Cathedral, has the top shaped like a truncated cone and the lower part more oval than barrel-shaped, the aperture for sight taking the form of a transverse slit between the upper and lower parts of the helm. In the lower portion the perforations for breathing are arranged in the form of a crown on both sides. The helm of Henry V. (died 1422), which hangs with his saddle and shield above his tomb in Westminster Abbey, is lower in the crown, more rounded to the shape of the head, and the center of the perforation for sight is protected by the projection of the lower part beyond the line of the upper. The helm of King Henry VI., which was suspended over his tomb in St George's Chapel, Windsor, has the lower part contracted to the form of the neck and rounded to the shape of the shoulders. The *oculorum*, which is wide, is protected by a series of curved bars riveted across it. The helm of Edward IV. (died 1483), which was also suspended in St George's Chapel, exhibits a still greater shaping to the form of the neck and shoulders, the top is rounded, and has a spike for a crest. In the end of the 15th century the great helm was superseded by the smaller headpiece with movable visor and beaver or claspings and neck guard, which is properly styled a helmet. Other varieties of headpieces were the basinet, of a plain oval form pointed at the top and somewhat compressed on the sides, having holes at the bottom for the attachment of the camail or gorget of chain mail. The basinet was sometimes worn alone and sometimes under the helm. It was succeeded in the 15th century by the salade, a lighter skull cap with the hinder part projecting, and occasionally a movable visor. The ainet, the burgonet, and the casque are varieties of the lighter form of headpiece, partaking more or less of the skull-cap form, while the morion and the chapeau de fer were distinguished by their flattened forms.

**HELMOND**, a town of the Netherlands, in the province of North Brabant, to the left of the river Aa, with a station (since 1866) on the state railway between Venlo and Eindhoven. The castle of Helmond remains a beautiful specimen of the architecture of the 15th century, and among the other buildings of note in the town are the spacious church of St Lambert, the Reformed church, and the town house. Cotton-weaving on a very extensive scale, dyeing, iron-founding, brewing, soap boiling, and tobacco dressing are the chief industries of the commune. The population of the town proper in 1870 was only 5280, but the commune, which includes several suburbs, had about 6600.

Helmond is first mentioned as a town in 1384, but it may possibly be identical with a certain Harimont or Harimont which appears in the 13th century. In the middle of the 13th century it was the favorite residence of Mary of Brabant, queen of the Romans. Fortified shortly after the attack of the people of Brabant in 1548, it continued a place of military importance till the

peace of Munster. The occupation of the town by the duke of Parma in 1679, its recovery by the states of Holland in 1681, its capture by the count of Holstein in 1688, and the seizure of the castle by Count Friedrich of Nassau are the chief events in its military annals. In 1814 the town received the rights of parliamentary representation, but it does not lose the privilege.

**HELMONT, JEAN BAPTISTE VAN (1577-1644)**, was born at Brussels in 1577. He was educated at Louvain, and began the study of natural science under the Jesuits in that city. Their hard and dry philosophy, however, had few attractions for a nature so ardent and imaginative as his. Turning for relief to other systems, he found no rest except in the mysticism of A. Kempis and Tauler. From them he learned that wisdom is the gift of the Supreme Being, that it must be obtained by prayer, and that we must renounce our own will if we wish to participate in the influence of the divine grace. From this time he began a life of exemplary meekness and humility, made over his property to his sister, and retired from the high society in which he had hitherto walked. He devoted himself to the study of medicine, read carefully all that had been written on the science, and felt dissatisfied with its method and results. He then turned to Paracelsus and the alchemists, and conferred a real boon on humanity by rescuing chemical science from the static absurdities of the post-Paracelsian alchemists, and applying to it more philosophical principles. He graduated as M.D. in 1599, and after travelling through France and Italy, Switzerland and England, married a rich lady of Brabant, by whom he had several children. He died in Holland in 1644, in the sixty-seventh year of his age. Science is under real obligations to Van Helmont, though the greater part of his speculations presents a curious mixture of mystical philosophy and acute chemical research. To him is due the invention, or at least the first application, of the term "gas" in the sense in which it is now used. He also discovered that gas was disengaged in abundance by the application of heat to various bodies, and during the solution of various carbonates and metals in acids.

Van Helmont's works were published at Amsterdam in 1648 by his son Moyses, a more accurate and complete edition is that of Blovin, 1652. The fullest account of his speculations is given in Bland and Siebel, *Essays on the History of the Philosophy* (1819-20). *Hft. vii.* See also *Spence, Helmont's System des Medicins*, 1840. *Rommessee, Biographie des J. B. v. Helmont*, 1868. Van Helmont's mystical philosophy and alchemy appeared in even greater confusion in the works of his youngest son, Franz Moyses, who was born in 1618 and died, after a somewhat adventurous and troubled life, at Berlin in 1696. His chief works are *Cabbalistic Denksätze*, 1677; *Paracelsus Discursus*, 1686; and *Opuscula Philosophica*, 1690.

**HELMSTADT, or HELMSTEDT**, a town of Germany in the duchy of Brunswick, is situated on the railway from Magdeburg to Brunswick, 23 miles E. of Brunswick. It is the seat of a circle directorate, and of a circle and a district court. The principal buildings are the Juleum in the Byzantine style, founded by Duke Julius of Brunswick in 1575 for the university which was abolished in 1809, and now containing an old library of 40,000 volumes, the church of St. Stephen's, dating from the 12th century, the Lutheran female institution, with a beautiful church in the Roman style, and the Catholic church and ruined monastery of St. Ludger. The educational institutions include a gymnasium, two city schools, an agricultural school, and a grammar school of the higher grade. The principal manufactures are yarn, soap, tobacco, sugar, vitrol, earthenware, and tobacco pipes. Not far from the town there is an iron mineral spring especially efficacious in gouty affections. Near it a monument has been erected to those who fell in the Franco-German war of 1870-71, and in the town there is also a monument to those who fell at Waterloo. The population in 1875 was 7788.

Helmsstedt originated in connexion with the Ludger monastery, founded by Ludger, the first bishop of Hamburg, and although the 8th century. It obtained town rights in 1089, and although destroyed by the cathedral of Magdeburg in 1180 it was soon

rebuilt. In 1457 it joined the Hanse, and in 1490 it came into the possession of Brunswick. See Kunhardt, *Beschreibung des Geschichts der Universität Helmstedt*, 1797; Lüdovig, *Geschichte und Beschreibung der Stadt Helmstedt*, 1832; *Geschichte des ehemaligen Hochschulschiffes Carolus zu Helmstedt*, 1870.

**HELOISE** See **ABELARD**.

**HELOTS**, in Grecian antiquity, were the serfs or bondsmen of the Spartans. The most probable of the various explanations of their origin seems to be that they were the early aborigines of Laconia, who at the time of the Dorian invasion were reduced to slavery by the conquerors. The name is perhaps best derived from the root *hēlo*, found in *hēlos*, *hēlos*, and other words. The Helots were the lowest class of the inhabitants of Sparta, but those of them who were emancipated formed the class of *Neodamodeis*, next in political rights to the Spartan citizens themselves. The *Mochores* or *Mochores* were domestic slaves who had been brought up along with the young Spartans, and afterwards liberated. The Helots were the property of the state, which alone had the right of emancipating them, although it made over their services to individuals. They were attached to the soil—*adēs vptē glōiō*—and could not be sold away from it. They tilled the land which was allocated to them in the proportion of one lot to several families, and for each lot they paid to their masters several annual cent of Spartan barley, and a quantity of wine and oil. They were also employed on public works, and performed all domestic service. In time of war the Helots generally served as light-armed troops, but when on special emergencies they fought as *hoplites*, they were usually rewarded with their freedom. The first occurrence of this kind was under Brasidas in 424 B.C. In the fleet the great bulk of the sailors were Helots. Although every care was taken to distinguish the serf from his lord, even in the matter of dress, the accounts of the cruel treatment of the Helots by the Spartans only hold true of the later history of Laconia. The condition of the Helot was better than that of a slave in other Greek states, for, being a sort of the soil, he was not wholly at the mercy of his master, and there was a legal way whereby, after many stages, he could eventually attain freedom and citizenship. After the Messenian war, however, when the multitude of the Helots made them formidable to the diminished numbers of the full citizens, there is no doubt that very cruel measures were adopted against them. The evidence is strong that the *Cypselus*, instituted ostensibly to inure the Spartan youth to hardship, was really intended to reduce the number of the full citizens by assassination, and we know from Thucydides (ii. 80) that on one occasion 2000 Helots were treacherously massacred by the Spartan citizens. At the close of the second Messenian war (688 B.C.), the conquered Messenians were classed with and treated as the Helots, till Epaminondas restored them to their native country after the battle of Leuctra (371 B.C.).

For further details see Plutarch's *Life of Lysander*, Thirlwall's *History of Greece*, Grote's *History of Greece*, Müller's *History of the Dorians*, and Heilmann's *Political Antiquities of Greece*.

**HELPS, SIR ARTHUR** (1813-1875), fourth and youngest son of Thomas and Ann Frisquett Helps, was born at Balham Hill, in the parish of Streatham and county of Surrey, on the 10th of July 1813. His father was then and for many years afterwards head of a large mercantile house in the city of London, and for the last thirteen years of his life treasurer of St. Bartholomew's Hospital. His mother was the only surviving child of John, fourth son of the Rev. Charles Flucknott, M.A., of Wincanton. After the usual preliminary training at Eton, young Helps went to Trinity College, Cambridge, passing as B.A. in 1835, when he came out 31st wrangler in the mathematical tripos, and taking his M.A. degree in 1839. Although he took no high honours at the university, and indeed he

had not health sufficiently robust, even if he had possessed the ambition, to achieve them,—he was recognized by the ablest of his contemporaries there as a man of superior gifts, and likely to make his mark in after life. They showed this by electing him as a member of the Conversazione Society, better known as the Apostles, a society which had been established in 1820 for the purposes of discussion on social and literary questions by a few young men attracted to each other by a common taste for literature and speculation. A body which in its early days included the names of Charles Bullock, Frederick Maurice, Richard Chenevix Trench, Monckton Milnes, Arthur Hallam, and Alfred Tennyson had in it every element to make its gatherings delightful as well as useful. To be elected into its limited circle was a distinction of which Arthur Helps was proud then and to the close of his life, and, familiar as he was with the best and most intellectual society of his time, the social hours passed year by year with the Cambridge Apostles were always counted by him among his happiest, both in anticipation and in remembrance.

In the discussions of these and later days Helps may have found the suggestions for the dialogues of the *Friends in Council*, in which his genius appears at his best. But his first literary effort, which appeared under the title of *Thoughts in the Closets and the Crowd* in 1835, the year he took his B.A. degree, assumes a very different but scarcely less ambitious form, that of a series of epilogues upon life, character, politics, and manners. As a rule, such things are only valuable when they come as the fruits of wide experience and matured thought. Still in this volume are to be found passages which may take their place beside the sayings of Vauvenargues, Chamfort, and other masters of aphorism of the second rank, and are quite equal in quality to the many pithy quotable sayings scattered through Helps's later works.

Soon after leaving the university, where he had established many valuable friendships, Arthur Helps became private secretary to Mr Spring Rice (afterwards Lord Monteagle), then chancellor of the exchequer in Lord Melbourne's administration. This appointment he filled till 1810, when he went to Ireland as the private secretary of Lord Moira (afterwards earl of Carlisle), then the chief secretary of state for Ireland, where he remained until his principal left Ireland in 1841, on the Government passing from Lord Melbourne into the hands of Sir Robert Peel. In the meanwhile (28th October 1836) Helps had married Miss Bessy Fullo, a young Irish lady. He was also appointed one of the commissioners for the settlement of certain Danish claims which dated so far back as the siege of Copenhagen, but with the fall of the Melbourne administration his official experience closed for a period of nearly twenty years. The character which he had established for himself by his tact, sagacity, and business habits was not, however, forgotten by his political friends. And combined as these qualities were with an admirable manner which invited confidence while it repelled intrusion, and with a reticence and discretion on which absolute reliance could be placed, his fitness for official life was unmistakable. When therefore the clerkship of the Privy Council became vacant in 1860, on the resignation of the Hon W L Bathurst, he was recommended for the appointment by his old friend Lord Granville, who knew that for ability, tact, and discretion it could not be in safer hands.

During his early official career Helps cultivated literature with varying success. His *Essays written in the Intervals of Business*, published in 1841, and his *Claims of Labour, an Essay on the Duties of the Employers to the Employed*, published in 1844, continue to interest, and are likely to keep their place in well-selected libraries. But two plays, *King Henry the Second, an Historical Drama*, and *Catherine*

*Douglas, a Tragedy*, both published in 1813, have no particular merit. Neither in these, nor in his only other dramatic effort, *Outlets the Sea*, published in 1858, a work far superior, however, to his earlier efforts of the same kind, are to be found the sense of dramatic situation and movement, the sharp outlines and contrast of character, or the fitness and concise force of diction which alone justify the selection by an author of the dramatic form as the vehicle for his thoughts. Helps possessed, however, just enough dramatic power to give life and individuality to the dialogues which he introduced with excellent effect to enliven many of his other books. His first effort in this direction was in *Friends in Council, a Series of Readings and Discussions thereon*, published in 1817 and 1851. The plan of this book seems to have been suggested by a passage in Bacon's essay *Of Discourse*, which appears as the motto of it: "It is good in discourse and speech of conversation to vary and intermingling speech of the present occasion with arguments, tales with reasons, asking of questions with telling of opinions, and jest with earnest, for it is a dull thing to tie, and, as we say now, to jade anything too far." The variety and conflict of opinion, the play of character, the flashes of humour, got by submitting the formal essays on social and moral questions which made the staple of these volumes to be criticized and pulled to pieces by the imaginary personages, who, under the names of Milverton, Ellesmere, and Dunsford, grew to be almost as real to Helps's readers as they certainly became to himself, gave a special charm to a book which, by its richness of suggestion, its sweetness of tone, and beauty of style, made for its author a high and enduring reputation. The same expedient was resorted to for the discussion of the ideas of social and philanthropic improvement on which Helps's mind was always at work, in a second series of *Friends in Council*, published in 1859, and again in *Conversations on War and General Culture*, published in 1871. The old familiar speakers, with others added, also appeared in his *Realms*, and finally in what certainly must always rank as the best of its author's later works, *Talks about Animals and their Masters*, published in 1873.

The subject of slavery was one which had a peculiar fascination for Helps. A long essay is devoted to it in the first series of *Friends in Council*. This was subsequently elaborated into a work in two volumes published in 1848 and 1852, called *The Conquerors of the New World and their Bondsmen*. Helps's interest in the subject led him into further investigations into the history of the conquest of America by the Spaniards, and he went to Spain in 1847 for the special purpose of examining the numerous MSS bearing upon the subject at Madrid. The fruits of these researches were embodied in an historical work based upon his *Conquerors of the New World*, and called *The Spanish Conquest in America, and its Relation to the History of Slavery and the Government of Colonies*. This appeared in four volumes during the years 1855, 1857, and 1861. No pains were spared by its author to secure the most scrupulous accuracy as to the facts with which he dealt. He had found, as most inquirers into the sources of history have found, that this accuracy is rarely to be met with in accepted histories. On this point he was determined that he should not be open to censure, and so anxious was he that fact should not be coloured or distorted by imagination that he deliberately resisted the temptation to use the picturesque method of treatment by which other writers on the same subject have secured popularity. The success of this work with the public was marred by other periphrasies. History, like fiction, will not bear to be written with an obtrusively moral purpose, as this book was written. Its merits in a literary point of view were also diminished by the author's tendency to suspend the onward movement of the narrative,

whilst he pauses to analyse character, to investigate motives, and to philosophize upon results.

This book, the result of years of research and meditation, was not a success. But the excellence of the studies of the great pioneers of Spanish conquest which it contained was quickly perceived when some years afterwards they were recast and published as separate biographies. Thus *The Life of Las Casas, the Apostle of the Indians*, appeared in 1868, *The Life of Columbus* in 1869, *The Life of Pizarro* in the same year, and *The Life of Hernando Cortes* in 1871. In this form all that is most important as well as attractive in the larger historical work has been placed within the reach of a wide circle of readers, to whom the result of Helps's researches otherwise would have been unknown.

From the time of his appointment as Clerk of the Council in 1860 to his death, Helps continued to add to the already considerable list of books, all dealing in one form or another with questions of social, sanitary, or political reform, which he had most earnestly at heart. No man felt more strongly that, in the words of Lamennais (*Œuvre du Peuple*, cap. 1), "things, in this world are not as they ought to be." No man was more eager to do what he might towards obviating or curing the folly, stupidity, ignorance, lethargy, and selfishness to which so much of the misery, the ill-health, the suffering, and the sin of the world is due. It was a relief of man's estate," by putting again and again before the world the results of his observation and thought upon its defective social and sanitary arrangements, and in this the season is to be found for nearly all his books. Besides those which have been already mentioned the following may be named to complete the list—*Organization in Daily Life*, an Essay (1862), *Realms* (2 vols 1869), *Cosmos*, *Mamma* (1870), *Brevia, Short Essays and Aphorisms* (1871), *Thoughts upon Government* (1872), *Life and Labours of Mr Thomas Brassey* (1872), *Joan de Byron* (1874), *Social Pressure* (1875).

His appointment as Clerk of the Council brought him into personal communication with the Queen, and also with the late Prince Consort. They were not slow to find how valuable a servant they had obtained in him. His powers of mind, his gentle, reserved manners, and his tender almost chivalrous devotion to the sovereign, not demonstrated yet subtly making itself felt, produced their natural effect in winning the confidence and respect of these high personages. After the Prince's death, the Queen early turned to Helps to prepare such a sketch of the prince's character as might make her people aware how much they as well as herself had lost by his early death. The task was undertaken by Helps, and performed with all the excellence which might have been anticipated from his sympathy with the great aims and objects of the Prince's life, and his practical skill in the analysis and portrayal of character. His introduction to the collection, published in 1862, of the Prince Consort's speeches and addresses was the first, and will probably always be the standard, attempt to sketch in clear and vivid outlines the varied characteristics of this remarkable man. Helps some years afterwards edited and wrote an introductory preface to the series of extracts from the Queen's diaries, which were published in 1868 under the title *Leaves from a Journal of Our Life in the Highlands*. In 1864 he received the honorary degree of D.C.L. from the university of Oxford. He was made a C.B. in 1871, and K.C.B. in the following year.

At no time of his life was he very strong, an obvious decline of vital strength, accelerated probably by anxiety from embarrassments in which his later years were involved by unfortunate speculations in the purchase of land, was visible to Sir Arthur Helps's friends for some years before his death.

This came after only a few days' illness, on the 7th of March, 1875.

Sir Arthur Helps was of middle height, slender, dark in complexion, with a high well defined forehead, deep set eyes, and a mouth the habitually grave expression of which was tempered by pleasant smile when his fancy was excited by the humorous suggestions of his own mind, or the playfulness or wit of others, to which he was peculiarly sensitive. Something of the debility of his frame entered into his manner and conversation, which was marked by an avoidance of anything approaching vehemence or even emphasis. He loved good talk, and his low vital tone and grave playfulness of mood was very pleasant, when among trusted friends he was tempted into taking in lively part the gay and wake of every conversation. But he was in no mood but late in youth, when we are told by one who knew him well, "he did not the physical force of the animal spirits which predisposed him to oral controversy." As a rule, he was more ready in general society to listen than to talk,—especially when people were present who a character was worth studying, or whose ideas were fresh and lived upon experience or comprehensive study. He was the yoking, and a new thought or pregnant suggestion dropped by a friend in conversation was often to be found, soon afterwards in his writings carefully developed, and illustrated from his own little stores of reading and research. As might be expected from his books, there was a sympathetic charm in his familiar intercourse, which was peculiarly fascinating. His sensitiveness to pain, especially to moral pain, was extreme, and would have unfitted him for much of the rough work and ways of the world. As in other, a character for which he had many intellectual qualities, he could scarcely have failed to attain a high rank. It was his self-notion, conscious of his gifts in this direction, but he was altogether too true to his fine for the hard hitting and the busy struggle of the political arena, in which also he would have excelled. He was, however, by that time, he made for himself, as we will say by a friend at the time of his death, "work of another sort, applying his gifts even he may mind to such discussion as politics, the thought, informs the eye, and confirms the foreman of mankind. He had his mind's trained its vigour as well as its delicacy of perception. No would he have regarded it as among the least happy circumstances of his lot on earth that he was taken away from the circle of these had been touched by the death of Sir Arthur Helps, swiftly and by no lingering illness to wait out the spirits of his self and those to whom he was dear." (I. M. A.)

**HELSINGBORG**, a town of Sweden, province of Skane and lan of Malmö, is beautifully situated at the narrowest part of the Sound—there only 3 miles wide—opposite Elsinore, and 83 miles N.W. of Malmö. It is connected with the Swedish railway by a branch line to Helsingholm and E.-hof, and it has regular communication with Denmark by steamer. The harbour, completed in 1832, is sufficient for vessels of an ordinary size. The inhabitants are chiefly engaged in fishing, commerce, and agriculture. Corn is the principal export. A short distance north-east of the town there is a mineral spring, and about 2 miles south-east are the more famous wells of Runö. The sea-baths to the north of the town are much frequented in summer. At Höganas, about a mile and a half north, there are extensive coal-mines and also a pottery. The population, which in 1800 was only 1701, in 1860 was 8063, and in 1876 had reached 10,066.

Helsingborg is one of the oldest towns of Sweden. The original site is marked by the tower of *Kanalen* (i. e. the channel), which was probably the strongest in the old fortress first mentioned in the year 1146. In the 14th century it was several times besieged. From 1370 it along with the other towns of Skane, was possessed by the Danes. In 1418, King Eric of Pomerania about 1225 built a new fortress near the sea, and caused the town to be transferred thither, bestowing upon it at the same time many privileges. Until 1658 it belonged to Denmark, and it was again occupied by the Danes in 1678 and 1677. In 1681 its fortifications were dismantled. It was retaken by Frederick IV. of Denmark in November 1709, but his troops, under General Lantzen, were soon driven off by General Stenbock, 10th March 1710, from which time it has remained in the possession of Sweden. In 1711 it was again bombarded by the Danes.

**HELSINGFORS** (Finnish, *Helsingi*), chief city of the grand duchy of Finland, and the government of Nyland, in the district of Hälsinge, on the Gulf of Bothnia, 274 miles by rail west of St Petersburg. The latitude of the observatory is 60° 9' 4" N., and longitude 24° 57' 39" E. from Greenwich.

The town is well laid out, with long and wide streets running at right angles. The houses are large and well built, and the principal square contains several fine buildings, as the senate-house, the university, and a magnificent church. Helsingfors has a colossal Russo-Greek cathedral, a-sembly-room, botanical gardens, an observatory well supplied with both astronomical and magnetic instruments, a beautifully decorated theatre, and other handsome public buildings. The university, removed from Åbo in 1827, has 4 faculties, 53 professors, and about 900 students, and possesses a museum with extensive natural history and mineralogical collections, an ethnological collection, and a chemical laboratory. There are scientific, literary, and other learned societies, a normal lyceum, polytechnic institute, school for the blind, school of navigation, asylum for the insane, hospitals, and other educational and charitable institutions. Helsingfors is the seat of the governor general of Finland, the imperial senate, and all the central offices of the grand-duchy. In the hall of the senate-house is a splendid throne for the emperor, in the interior-house the various branches of the assembly meet, and these also are the remains of the library saved from the fire of Åbo, and containing 16,000 volumes. Helsingfors has several machinery manufactures, (one with 850 workpeople), and produces at the rate of £100,000 per annum, it also produces porcelain, faience, sugar, and tobacco factories. There are two considerable harbours, with a handsome granite quay extending along the front of the town. In 1870 the population was 32,113, in 1879 about 10,000.

Helsingfors is the largest import place in Finland, consisting mainly of wool, colonial and architectural wares, silk, wine, &c., amounting in 1874 to £1,587,714, in 1875 to £1,718,487. The exports consist chiefly of wooden wares, the total amounting to £2,110,427 in 1878. Of the imports £187,100 came from, and of the exports £37,511 went to, England. In 1874 259 vessels of 178,717 registered tons entered the port, and in 1878 713 vessels of 73,297 tons, in 1874 960 of 120,510 tons cleared, and in 1878 825 of 122,170 tons. In 1870 the port possessed 43 vessels (18 of them of 500 tons) of 1129 tons.

Helsingfors was founded by Gustavus Vasa in the 16th century, about 4 miles N.E. of the present site, to which it was removed by Queen Christina of Sweden in 1642. In 1742 it was the scene of the capitulation of the Swedes under Lewnhipp, but in 1740 the fortress of Sveaborg was erected by the Swedish high admiral, Count Khenewick, who at his own request was afterwards buried within its walls. In 1808 Admiral Conislaad surrendered the place to the Russians under General Suckertien. A combined squadron of the French and English bombarded Sveaborg in 1808.

See *Bumme, Historisk Uppgifter om Helsingfors*, 1871.

HILST, BARTHOLOMEUS VAN DER, was born in Holland at the opening of the 17th century, and died at Amsterdam in 1670. The date and place of his birth are uncertain, and it is equally difficult to confirm or to deny the time-honoured statement that he was born in 1613 at Amsterdam. It has been urged indeed by competent authority that Van der Helst was not a native of Amsterdam, because a family of that name lived as early as 1607 at IJnaalem, and pictures are shown as works of Van der Helst in the IJnaalem Museum which might tend to prove that he was in practice there before he acquired repute at Amsterdam. Unhappily Bartholomew has not been traced amongst the children of Severyn van der Helst, who married at IJnaalem in 1607, and there is no proof that the pictures at IJnaalem are really his, though if they were so they would show that he learnt his art from Frans Hals and became a skilled master as early as 1631. Scheltema, a very competent judge in matters of Dutch art chronology, supposes that Van der Helst was a resident at Amsterdam in 1636. His first great picture, representing a gathering of civic guards at a brewery, is variously assigned to 1639 and 1643, and still adorns the town-hall of Amsterdam. His noble portraits of the burgomaster Bicker and Andries Bicker the younger, in the gallery of Amsterdam, of the same date no doubt as Bicker's wife

lately in the Ruhl collection at Cologne, were completed in 1642. From that time till his death there is no difficulty in tracing Van der Helst's career at Amsterdam. He acquired and kept the position of a distinguished portrait-painter, producing indeed little or nothing besides portraits at any time, but founding, in conjunction with Nicolaas de Holt Stokade, the painters' guild at Amsterdam in 1651. At some unknown date he married Constance Reynst, of a good patrician family in the Netherlands, bought himself a house in the Doelenstrasse, and ended by earning a competence. The likeness of Paul Pottet at the Hague, executed in 1654, and his partnership with Backhuysen, who laid in the background of some of his pictures in 1668, indicate a constant companionship with the best artists of the time. Waagen has said that his portrait of Admiral Rottenam, in the gallery of Amsterdam, betrays the teaching of Frans Hals, and the statement need not be gainsaid, yet on the whole Van der Helst's career as a painter was mainly a protest against the systems of Hals and Rembrandt. It is needless to dwell on the pictures which preceded that of 1648, called the Peace of Munster, in the gallery of Amsterdam. The Peace challenges comparison at once with the so-called Night Watch by Rembrandt, and the last is important but not less characteristic of the style and his work in a neighbouring room. Sir Joshua Reynolds was disappointed by Rembrandt, whilst Van der Helst surpassed his expectation. But Bürger asked whether Reynolds had not already been struck with blindness when he ventured on this criticism. The question is still an open one. But certainly Van der Helst attracts by qualities entirely differing from those of Rembrandt and Frans Hals. Nothing can be more striking than the contrast between the strong concentrated light and the deep gloom of Rembrandt and the contempt of chaos-into peculiar in his rival, except the contrast between the rapid sketchy touch of Hals and the careful finish and rounding of Van der Helst. The Peace is a meeting of guards, to celebrate the signature of the treaty of Munster. The members of the Doele of St George meet to feast and congratulate each other not at a formal banquet but in a spot laid out for good cheer, where De Wit, the captain of his company, can shake hands with his lieutenant Wavens, yet hold in solemn state the great drinking-horn of St George. The rest of the company sit, stand, or busy themselves around,—some eating, others drinking, others carving or sewing—an animated scene on a long canvas, with figures large as life. Well has Bürger said the heads are full of life and the hands admirable. The dresses and subordinate parts are finished to a nicety without sacrifice of detail or loss of breadth in touch or impact. But the eyes glides from shape to shape, arrested here by expressive features, there by a bright stretch of colours, nowhere at perfect rest because of the lack of a central thought in light and shade, harmonies, or composition. Great as the qualities of Van der Helst undoubtedly are, he remains below the line of demarcation which separates the second from the first-rate masters of art. His figures are very numerous, and almost uniformly good, but in his situations he is weak, and though still amazingly careful, he let some grey and woolly in touch. At Amsterdam the four regents in the Welkhuys (1650), four syndics in the gallery (1656), and four syndics in the town hall (1667) are masterpieces, to which may be added a number of fine single portraits. Besides, notwithstanding the fire of 1844, still boasts of three of Van der Helst's works. The *Hague*, as we saw, owns but one. St Petersburg, on the other hand, possesses ten or eleven, of various shades of excellence. The Louvre has three, Munich four. Other pieces are in the galleries of Berlin, Brunswick, Brussels, Caisenburg, Cassel, Darmstadt, Dresden, Frankfurt, Gotha, Stuttgart, and Vienna.

HELSTON, a municipal and parliamentary borough, and market town of England, county of Cornwall, is situated on the declivity of a hill on the river Ocker, 9 miles S.W.



of Falmouth. It consists of four main streets intersecting each other at right angles, at their junction in the centre stands the market house. The principal other buildings are the church dedicated to St Michael and built by the earl of Golphin in 1763, the town-hall, the old cottage hall, the literary institute, the grammar school and the union workhouse. The prosperity of the town is due to its being the centre of an extensive agricultural and mining district. The principal manufacture is shoes. At Porthleven, about 3 miles distant, a considerable export and import trade is carried on. Population of municipal borough (1871), 3797, of parliamentary borough (area 10,992 acres), 8760.

Helston is one of the original congre towns. It obtained its charter from King John, and the privilege was confirmed on it by Edward III of holding a market and fairs. It was made a port town by Elizabeth. Before the Reform Act of 1832 it returned two members to parliament, but it now returns only one.

HELVEITII. See SWITZERLAND.

HELVEITIIUS, CLAUDE ADRIEN (1715-1771), was descended from a family of physicians, the first of whom, John Frederic Schweitzer (Latinized into Helvetina), migrated from Germany to Holland about the year 1649, and became physician to the prince of Orange. His later years were spent in the study of alchemy. His son, John Adrien, also a physician, went to Paris in the hope of establishing a sale for his father's drugs. He failed in this attempt, but was so fortunate as to introduce with the greatest success the use of opesuantha, then an unknown drug. The duchess of Chaulnes, whom he had treated successfully, introduced him to Colbert, who recommended the young physician to the dauphin, after which his reputation was firmly established. His son, John Claude Adrien, who embraced the same career with even greater success, was appointed inspector-general of the military hospitals of Flanders and first physician to the Queen Marie Leszcinska. He was remarkable for the generosity with which he received and visited poor patients who could pay him nothing. His son, Claude Adrien, the future author of *De l'Esprit*, shored as a boy little aptitude for study, but was fond of desultory reading. His father, who destined him for finance, placed him for a few years with his maternal uncle, M. D'Aimancourt, "directeur des fermes" at Caen. There he learned all that was necessary for a profession so simple, and having plenty of spare time amused himself with writing verses and cultivating social graces. He was elected a member of the academy of Caen, and when he was only twenty-three years of age he had the singular good fortune to be appointed, at the queen's request, to a place as financier general, in other words, while still a very young man he was put into a post of great responsibility and dignity which was worth a hundred thousand crowns a year. Thus provided, young Helvetius proceeded to enjoy life to the utmost. He had every advantage except one, that of noble birth, he was the handsomest man of his time, he was possessed of a manner singularly charming, he was able to hold his own among the scholars and philosophers, and poets, he was skilled in all those arts cultivated by gentlemen, he was generous like his father, and his great fortune enabled him to gratify his love of giving, he had an inclination to letters, and was a friend of Fontenelle, Voltaire, and Montesquieu, besides being a patron of such writers as Marivaux, Saum, and Sabatier. Probably there was no young man in Paris in the years 1740 and 1750 who occupied a more enviable position or was more entirely contented with his lot than this spoiled child of fortune, on whose name there rested but one blot, an almost morbid desire to excel. So far indeed did he carry this passion for distinction that he once danced on the stage of the opera under the mask and name of the public favourite Javillier.

As he grew older, his social successes and *bonnes fortunes* naturally ceased, the splendour of his youth had vanished,

he began to dream of other and more lasting distinctions. Montesquieu, he observed, had put mathematics in fashion, he himself would be a mathematician. Voltaire was illustrious for poetry, he too would be a poet. Montesquieu had made so brilliant a success with his *Esprit des Loix* that he himself would become a philosopher. The mathematical dream seems to have produced nothing, his poetical ambitions resulted in his poem called *Le Bonheur*, in which he develops the idea that true happiness is only to be found in making the interest of one that of all, his philosophical studies ended in the production of his famous book *De l'Esprit*, the composition of which he occupied him for more than seven years. In the year 1761 he married, his wife being a niece of Madame de Giffigny, the author of *Lettres d'une Péruvienne*, and he spent eight months in the year at his newly purchased estate of Vauc in Le Pouché, the remaining four months were given up to Paris and his duties of *maître d'hôtel* to the queen. It was characteristic of the man that as soon as he thought his fortune sufficient for his wants he gave up his post of financier general. The history of his life in the country is full of anecdotes which illustrate his generous and kindly disposition. He relieved the poor, sent physicians to the sick, mediated between those who quarrelled, encouraged agriculture, developed industries, and found happiness in the patriarchal life of a French seigneur, being as great a stickler as any for his seigneurial rights. It was in 1758 that his book *De l'Esprit*, which was to be the rival of *L'Esprit des Loix*, appeared. It was so far successful at the very outset as to attract immediate attention and to move the most formidable opposition, at the head of which was the dauphin, son of Louis XV. The Sorbonne condemned the book, the priests persuaded the court that it was full of the most dangerous doctrines, and the author, terrified at the storm he had raised, wrote three separate retractions, yet, in spite of his protestations of orthodoxy, he had to give up his office at the court, and the book was publicly burned by the hangman. The violence of the attack upon the work, as much as its intrinsic merit, caused the whole world to read it, it was translated into almost all the languages of Europe, it was discussed in every literary circle. Yet the *Esprit des Loix* lives and is still studied with profit, while *De l'Esprit* has long since been forgotten. It is indeed difficult to understand that the work could ever have had any serious influence upon the thought of the time. Voltaire said that it was full of commonplace, Buffon maliciously said that "Helvétius aurait dû faire un livre de moins et un bon de plus dans les sciences du roi," Rousseau declared that the very benevolence of the author gave the lie to his principles, Grimm thought that all the ideas in the book were borrowed from Diderot, Madame du Deffand said that Helvetius had not such a atom by simply revealing the "great secret", Madame de Giffigny avowed that all the good things in the book had been picked up in her own salon.

As for the philosophy of the book, it belongs to the selfish school, the four dimensions of which it consists have been thus summed up—(1) all men's faculties may be reduced to physical sensation, memory, comparison, judgment, are only feeling, only only difference from the lower animals lies in our external organization, (2) our interest, founded on the love of pleasure and the fear of pain, is the only spring of our judgments, our actions, our affections; we have no liberty of choice between good and evil, there is no such thing as absolute right—ideas of justice and equity change according to customs, (3) the capacities of intellect do not depend on a more or less perfect organization, but have their source in the unequal degree of instruction, and these three springs from passions of which all men commonly well organized are susceptible to the same degree,

we can therefore all love glory with the same enthusiasm, and we owe all to education, (4) in this discourse the author treats of the ideas which are not attached to such words as *genius, imagination, talent, taste, good sense, &c.* It is sufficient to add that, although the book was republished after the author's death, it ceased to have any influence even during his own life.

In 1761 Helvetius visited England, and the next year, on the invitation of Frederick, he went to Berlin, where the king paid him marked attention. He then returned to his country estate and passed the remainder of his life in perfect tranquillity. He died in 1771 at the age of fifty six, leaving behind him a widow, who died in 1800, and two daughters.

A set of supplements to the *De l'Esprit*, entitled *De l'Homme, de ses facultés intellectuelles et de son éducation*, is found among his manuscripts after his death, and was published, but cited little interest. Editions of the work, however, appeared in 1774, 1775, and 1780. The complete works of Helvetius were published in 1774, 1777, 1781, 1791, 1795, and 1818. The best estimate of his work and place among the philosophers of the 18th century is that by Cousin (*Œuvres*, i.). (W. E. B.)

HELVIDIUS PRISCUS lived in the 1st century, during the reigns of Nero, Galba, Otho, Vitellius, and Vespasian. In those evil days, he won the respect of all good men by his fearless love of freedom. Among the cunning and obsequious senators of Rome he dared to be amicus and outspoken. Tacitus says of him (*Hist.* iv. 6) that in his early youth he devoted his great abilities to the highest pursuits, and made it his object to enter on public life with a spirit thoroughly fortified against all contingencies. It was natural that such a man should be a warm adherent of the Stoic school of philosophy. His father-in-law, Thrasea Pætus, had been the same, he had been driven to suicide in Nero's reign, and his first words to Helvidius were—"Young man, you have been born into times in which it is well to brace the spirit with examples of courage" (*Tacitus, Annals*, vi. 35). Although he repeatedly offended the emperor, he held several high offices. During Nero's reign he was quebec in the province of Achaia, he was also sent into Achaia in command of a legion, and by his good sense and moderation he succeeded in restoring peace and order in that country. By the provocation he was respected and trusted. His well-known sympathies with such men as Brutus and Cassius occasioned his banishment in 66 A.D., and he lived with his wife Pannia in Macedonia until Nero's death. Having been recalled to Rome by Galba in 68 A.D., he at once impeached Epirus Marcellus, one of the most villainous of the informers, and the very man who had been the accuser of Thrasea Pætus. After an angry debate he dropped the charge, as the condemnation of Marcellus would have involved a host of senators in like ruin. As prator died he had once the courage to oppose Vitellius in the senate, and again as prator in the following year he ventured to sign against the financial policy of Vespasian. Such matters, he maintained, ought to be left to the discretion of the senate. He proposed that the Capitol, which had been destroyed in the Roman conflagration, should be restored at the public cost. It would seem that he rather perversely went out of his way to insult Vespasian, saluting him by his private name, and not recognizing him as emperor in the edicts he had to publish as prator. There was very possibly in all this some of the affectation which often characterized the Stoics. The end of it was that he was banished, his wife Pannia, whose constancy and virtue as a highly commended by his friend the younger Pliny, got with him into exile. Shortly afterwards he was executed by Vespasian's order. His life was written at his widow's request by Helianthus Seneca, it took the form of a warm panegyric, and proved fatal to its author in the reign of Domitian.

HELVOETSLEUY'S (in Dutch, *Helvoetsluis*), a fortified town of the Netherlands, in the province of South Holland, situated in the south of the island of Voornse and Putten, on the shore of the IJsainghet. It possesses a good harbour, a dry and a wet dock, extensive wharves, and a naval arsenal, and among its more important public buildings are the communal chambers, the Reformed church dating from 1661-1684, the Roman Catholic church, the synagogue, and the naval college. The population was only 1208 in 1795, by 1840 it had increased to 2523, and by 1874 it was 4135.

Helvoetsluis was founded in the 17th century. The construction of the work was directed by the states of Holland, and the erection of the fortifications in 1628, but it was not till 1690 that the works were completed. The new harbour soon became an important rendezvous for the Dutch fleet, and in 1688 it was the landing point of William of Orange's expedition to England.

HELLOT, PIERRE (1660-1716), monastic historian, was born at Paris in January 1660, of supposed English descent. After spending his youth in study, he entered in his twenty-fourth year the convent of the third order of St Francis, founded at Picpus, near Paris, by his uncle Jérôme Helloy, canon of St Sulpice. There he took the name of Pius Hippolyte. Two journeys to Rome on monastic business afforded him the opportunity of travelling over most of Italy, and after his final return he saw much of France, while acting as secretary to various provincial heads of his order there. Both in Italy and France he was engaged in collecting materials for his great work, which occupied him about twenty-five years, *L'Histoire des Ordres Monastiques, Religieux, et Militaires, et des Congrégations Séculières, de l'un et de l'autre Sexe, qui ont été établies jusqu'à présent*, published in 8 volumes in 1714-21. Helloy died on January 5, 1716, before the fifth volume appeared, but his friend Maximilien Baillet completed the edition. This work, appearing at first anonymously, has been republished several times, and translated into German. Helloy's only other noteworthy work is *Le Chrétien Moderne* (1695).

HELMAN, FRANCES DOROTHY (1783-1838), was born in Duke Street, Liverpool, September 25, 1793. Her father, George Browne, of Irish extraction, was at the time of her birth a merchant in Liverpool, and her mother, whose maiden name was Wagner, was the daughter of the Austrian and Tuscan consul at Liverpool, and of united German and Italian descent. Felicia, the fifth of seven children, was scarcely seven years old when her father failed in business, and retired with his family to Gwylch, near Abergele, and there the young poetess and her brothers and sisters grew up in the wildest seclusion, in a romantic old house by the sea-shore, and in the very midst of the mountains and myths of Wales, the monotony of her young life being varied only by two visits to London, which she never revisited in after years. The little Felicia was a lovely, precocious child. Her education was desultory, and she may indeed be said to have educated herself, the only subjects in which she ever received regular instruction having been French, English grammar, and the rudiments of Latin. Books of chronicle and romance, and every kind of poetry, she read with avidity, and she studied Italian, Spanish, Portuguese, and German sufficiently to be able to read them with ease and enjoyment. She was also fond of music, and played on the harp and piano, her preference being for simple national and pathetic melodies, especially those of Wales and Spain. In 1808, when she was only fourteen, a quarto volume of her *Juvenile Poems* was published by subscription. Among the earliest of these were "Congratulatory Lines on her Mother's Birthday," "A Prayer," an "Address to the Duty," and some "Lines to Shakespeare,"—stiff, little, childish productions, which show, however, a good ear for rhythm and a considerable imitative faculty. The verses having been rather harshly

criticized in the *Monthly Review*, the little postess was for some days in tears, but the muse was soon reawakened. One of her brothers was fighting in Spain under Sir John Moore, and Felicia, fired with military enthusiasm, wrote *England and Spain, or Valour and Patriotism*, a poem of some length and much elaboration, which was afterwards published and translated into Spanish. Her second volume, entitled *The Domestic Affections and other Poems*, appeared in 1812, on the eve of her marriage to Captain Hemans, which took place in the summer of that year. She lived for some time at Daventry, where her husband was appointed adjutant of the Northamptonshire militia, but about this time her father went on some commercial enterprise to Quebec and died there, and, after the birth of her eldest son, she and her husband took up their abode with her widowed mother at Bronwylla. Here during the next six years four more children—all boys—were born, but in spite of domestic cares and uncertain health she still read and wrote indefatigably. Her poem entitled *The Restoration of Works of Art to Italy* was published in 1816, her *Modes in Greece* in 1817, and in the following year appeared her volume of *Translations from Camoens and other Poets*.

In 1818 Captain Hemans went to Rome, leaving his wife, shortly before the birth of their fifth child, with her mother at Bronwylla. No further explanation than that it was in the first instance for Captain Hemans's health has ever been offered of this step, but it seems to have been then merely a tacit agreement, perhaps on account of their limited means, that they should live for a time apart. Letters were interchanged, and Captain Hemans was often consulted about his children, but the husband and wife remained separate, and indeed never met again. Kind and influential friends—among them the bishop of St Asaph and Bishop Heber—clustered round the poetess and her children. Her health, however, began to fail her, and her beauty, which was of a peculiarly delicate type, is said to have faded rapidly, leaving behind it an habitually worn and harassed expression. She became subject, too, to paroxysms of beating of the heart. Yet for the next six years her literary industry never flagged. In 1819 she published *Tales and Historical Scenes in Verse*, and in the same year she gained a prize of £50 offered for the best poem on *The Meeting of Wallace and Bruce on the Banks of the Cayon*. The poem was published in *Blackwood's Magazine*. In 1820 appeared *The Sceptic and Scavrus to the Memory of the late King*. In June 1821 she won the prize awarded by the Royal Society of Literature for the best poem on the subject of *Dartmoor*; and during the same year she began her play, *The Vespers of Palermo*. She now applied herself to a course of German reading. Keats was her favourite German poet, and her lines on the grave of Keats were one of the first English tributes to the genius of the young soldier poet. *The Voice of Spring*, one of her best known lyrics, was written in 1822, the same year in which she began to contribute to the *New Monthly Magazine*, and in the summer of 1823 a volume of her poems was published by Murray, containing "The Siege of Valencia," "The Last Constantine," and "Belshazzar's Feast," which last had appeared previously in a collection edited for a charitable purpose by Joanna Baillie. *The Vespers of Palermo* was acted at Covent Garden, December 12, 1823, and Miss Hemans received £200 for the copyright, but, though the leading parts were taken by Young and Charles Kemble, the play was a failure, and was withdrawn after the first performance. It was acted again in Edinburgh in the following April with greater success, when an epilogue, written for it by Sir Walter Scott at Joanna Baillie's request, was spoken by Miss Henry Siddons. An interchange of notes on this subject was the beginning of a cordial friendship between Mrs Hemans and the novelist. In the same year she wrote *De Chastillon, or the Crusaders*,

but the manuscript was mysteriously lost, and the poem was not published till two years after her death, and then from a rough copy. In 1824 she began "The Forest Sanctuary," which appeared a year later with the "Lays of Many Lands" and miscellaneous pieces collected from the *New Monthly Magazine* and other periodicals.

In the spring of 1825 Miss Hemans, with her mother and children and an unmarried sister, removed from Bronwylla, which had been purchased by her brother, to Rhyllyn, another house belonging to him on an opposite height across the river Clwyd. The contrast between the two houses suggested her *Dramatic Scenes between Bronwylla and Clwyd*. The house itself was bare and unpicturesque, but the beauty of its surroundings had been elaborated in "The Hour of Romance," "To the River Clwyd in North Wales," "Our Lady's Well," and "To a Distant Scene." This time seems to have been the most tranquil in Miss Hemans's life. Her children were growing up about her, her own valuable health was at its best, her popularity was spreading, not only in England but in America, where Professor Norton of Harvard university undertook to superintend the publication of a complete edition of her works and to secure to her the profits. But the death of her mother in January 1827 was a second great breaking point in her life. Her own health began to decline, and though the nature of her illness, which after a while proved heart complaint, was not at first apparent, she was from this time an acknowledged invalid. In the summer of 1828 the *Records of Woman* was published by Blackwood, and in the same year the home in Wales was finally broken up by the marriage of Miss Hemans's sister and the departure of her two elder boys to their father in Rome. Miss Hemans therefore left Rhyllyn, and took a very small house in the village of Waverley, near Liverpool, where she hoped to obtain good schooling for her children and society for herself. But, although she had a few intimate friends there, among them her two subsequent biographers, Henry F. Chorley and Mrs Lawrence of Waverley Hall,—she was disappointed in her new home. She thought the people of Liverpool stupid and provincial, and they, on the other hand, found her uncommunicative and eccentric. In the following summer she travelled by sea to Scotland with two of her boys, to visit the Hamiltons of Chiswood. This visit to Scotland was one of the most daring feats, and perhaps the richest episode, in her uneventful life. She was cordially welcomed in Edinburgh, dined with Jeffrey and other celebrities, visited Henry Mackenzie, heard Alison preach, and stayed with Su David and Lady Wedderburn, and with Sir Robert Liston at Milburn, where she sat for a bust to Angus Fletcher. Above all, while she was at Chiswood, she enjoyed "constant, almost daily, intercourse" with Sir Walter Scott, with whom she and her boys afterwards stayed some time at Abbotsford. "There are some whom we meet, and should like ever after to claim as kith and kin, and you are one of those," was Scott's compliment to her at parting. One of the results of her Edinburgh visit was an article, full of pause, judiciously tempered with criticism, by Jeffrey himself for the *Edinburgh Review*. The poetess returned to Waverley to compose her *Songs of the Affections*, which were published early in 1830. In the following June, however, she again left home, this time to visit Wordsworth and the Lake country, and in August she paid a second visit to Scotland. She was resolved to leave Waverley, and wished to make Edinburgh her home, but the climate was pronounced too rigorous, and, as a brother and his family were already settled in Ireland, it was arranged that she should go to live in Dublin. In her new home kind friends and admirers gathered round the invalid, who now had with her only the youngest of her children. She was obliged

to lie constantly, and the exertion of writing began to be painful to her. Her poetry of this date is chiefly religious. Early in 1834 her *Hymns for Childhood*, which had appeared some years before in America, were published in Dublin. At the same time appeared her collection of *National Lyrics*, and shortly afterwards *Scenes and Hymns of Life*. She was planning also a series of German studies, to consist of translations from German authors, with introductions and explanatory notes, one of which, on Goethe's *Tasso*, was completed and published in the *New Monthly Magazine* for January 1834. In intervals of acute suffering she wrote the lyric *Dependancy and Devotion*, and dictated a series of sonnets called *Thoughts during Sickness*, the last of which, "Recovery," was written when she fancied she was getting well. After three months spent at Redesdale, Archbishop Whately's country seat, which had been placed at the disposal of the dying poetess, she was again brought into Dublin, where she lingered till spring. The use of her limbs was entirely gone, but her passion for reading remained to the last, and the table at her bedside was strewn with books, one of which always lay open. Her last poem, the *Sabbath Sonnet*, was dictated to her brother on Sunday April 26th, and she died on the evening of Saturday, May 16, 1836, at the age of forty-one. She was buried in a vault under St Anne's church, Dublin. Besides the bust of her by the sculptor, and the two series of portraits taken of her in 1827 by the American painter West, one of which has been engraved, and another portrait, an engraving of which is in Chorley's *Memoirs*, was painted in 1831 by a young Irish artist, Edward Robinson.

Mrs Hemans's poetry is the production of a fine imaginative and enthusiastic temperament, but not of a commanding intellect or very complex or subtle nature. It is the out-coming of a beautiful but singularly circumscribed life, a life spent in romantic seclusion, without much worldly experience, and warped and saddened by domestic unhappiness and real physical suffering. Feelings from these circumstances, aided by a course of self-instruction at best doubtful and ungrudging, the emotional in a sensitive and intensely feminine nature was unduly cultivated, and this undue preponderance of the emotional is a prevailing characteristic in Mrs Hemans's poetry, and one to which Scott alluded when he complained that it was "too poetical," that it contained "too many flowers" and "too little fruit." Her genius—beautiful and pleasing as it was—was not of a very high order. Like her favourite music, it lay within a small compass, and gave little opportunity for intricate harmonies. Thus her tragedies, and her longer and more complicated poems, such as *The Scripture and Forest Sanctuary*, though by no means devoid of striking passages, are the least notable of her works. It is not, however, as the writer of these more ambitious productions, which in her case at times were but doubtful successes and are now rarely read, but as the authoress of many short occasional pieces, and especially as a lyricist, that Felicia Hemans has earned so high a place among our poets. In her lyrics she could concentrate her strength on the perfect expression of simple themes. Her skill in versification, her delicate ear for rhythm, and the few ruling sentiments of her nature here found ample scope. In her lyrics Mrs Hemans is uniformly graceful, tender, delicately refined,—sometimes perhaps, even here, too fervent, too emotional,—but always pure and spiritual in tone, and in these too she occasionally displays those rare qualities which belong only to the finest lyric genius. Many of her poems, such as "The Treasure of the Deep," "The Better Land," "The Home of England," "Cassibanus," "The Palm Tree," "The Graves of a Household," "The Wreck," "The Dying Improvisator," and "The Lost Plund," have become standard English lyrics, and on the

strength of these, and others such as these, Felicia Hemans is ranked among our chief British lyrical poets.

An edition of Mrs Hemans's *Poetical Works* was published, 2 vols., in 1832, *Poetical Remains*, with Memoir by Delit, 1836, *Almanacs*, &c., by H P Chorley, 1838, *Recollections of Mrs Hemans*, by Miss Lawrence, 1886, *Works of Mrs Hemans, with a Memoir of her Life*, by her sister Mrs Anglish, 7 vols., 1889, and American reprint, 3 vols., 1817, *Early Blessings*, a Collection of Poems written between eight and fifteen years of age, with a Life of the Authoress, 1840, *Poems*, chronologically arranged, Edin., 1849, *Poems*, copyright edition, Edin. and London, 1873, *Poetical Works*, with a biographical memoir by W M Rossetti, London and Edin., 1874. (F M)

**HEMEL HEMPSTEAD**, a market-town of England, county of Hertford, is pleasantly situated on the declivity of a hill near the river Gade, 23 miles N W of London, 1½ miles from the Bortmoor station of the London and North Western Railway, and on a branch line of the Midland Railway. The town consists almost wholly of one main street about a mile in length. Among the principal buildings are the parish church, cruciform in shape, and partly Norman in style, surmounted by a lofty octagonal spire, and containing an old brass of the time of Edward III.; the town-hall, a long narrow building formerly supported on square wooden pillars, but whose open market place underneath has now been converted into a corn exchange, the union workhouse, and the West Herts infirmary. The chief industry is straw plaiting, but there are also manufactories of paper, an iron foundry, breweries, and tanneries. The population of the township in 1871 was 5996, and of the parish 8720.

From its name, meaning high stead or place, the town is apparently of Saxon origin. In Domesday it is written *Hemansstede* and *Hemanssted*. It received a charter of incorporation from Henry VIII, which was renewed by Cromwell. It still makes annual choice of a bull, but he possesses no magisterial authority.

**HEMEROBAPTISTS**, an ancient Jewish sect, so named from their observing a practice of daily ablution as an essential part of religion. Epiphanius, who mentions their doctrine as the fourth heresy among the Jews, classes the Hemerobaptists doctrinally with the Pharisees, from whom they differed only in, like the Sadducees, denying the resurrection of the dead. The name has been sometimes given to the Mendicans on account of their frequent ablutions, and in the *Clementine Homilies* (ii 23) St John the Baptist is spoken of as a Hemerobaptist. Mention of the sect is made by Hegesippus (see Euseb., *Hist. Eccl.*, iv 22) and by Justin Martyr in the *Dialogue with Trypho*.

**HEMINGFORD**, or **HEMMINGFORD**, **WALFORD**, a Latin chronicle of the 14th century, was a canon regular of the Austin Priory of Gisborough, now Guisborough, in Yorkshire. Leland calls him Hemengoburgus, and in one of the manuscripts of his chronicle his name appears as Hemingburgh. In a document of the priory the name is also given as De Hemingburgh, and in Gisborough Chantry mention is made of a neighbouring family of that name. Bala seems to have been the first to give him the name by which he is more commonly known. His chronicle embraces the period of English history from the Conquest (1066) to the nineteenth year of Edward III, with the exception of the latter years of Edward II. It ends with the title of a chapter in which it was proposed to describe the battle of Crécy (1346), but the chronicler seems to have died before the required information reached him. In compiling the first part, Hemingford apparently used the histories of Eadmer, Hoveden, Henry of Huntingdon, and William of Newbury, but the reigns of the three Edwards are original, composed from passages in the chronicles and infor-mation. There are several manuscripts of the history extant,—the best perhaps being that presented to the College of Arms by the earl of Arundel. The work is correct and judicious, and written in a pleasing style. One of its special features is the preservation in its pages of copies of





remedy. The medicinal and dietetic use of hemp spread through India, Persia, and Arabia in the early Middle Age. The use of hemp (hemp) in India was noticed by Girardin d'Orta in 1603. Barlet in his *Treasury of Drugs* (1690) described it as of "an infatigable quality and poisonous use." Attention was recalled to this drug, in consequence of Napoleon's Egyptian expedition, by De Saey (1809) and Rougey (1810). Its modern medicinal use is chiefly due to trials by Dr. O'Shaughnessy in Calcutta (1838-1842). The plant is grown partly and often mainly for the sake of its resin in Persia, northern India, and Arabia, in many parts of Africa, and in Brazil.

The hemp plant grows in some parts of the United States yields the active resin so freely that less than 1 grain of the extract is a full dose. But it is as a fibre producer that the hemp is now being more extensively cultivated in the United States. Hemp seeds were introduced for Plymouth col. in 1834, but the greater profit derivable from tobacco has always opposed the development of hemp-growing. The plant is chiefly grown in the States of Kentucky, Missouri, Tennessee, Ohio, Indiana, and New York. The produce of Kentucky in 1877 was 6140 tons. According to the census of 1870 the total production of the United States was 12,740 tons. In the northern part of the State of New York the crop is valued chiefly for the seeds, which are from 20 to 40 bushels or more per acre. The produce per acre in the United States is from 700 to 1000 lb of fibre, 4 to 6 pecks of seed being usually sown.

Although the hemp plant is grown in India chiefly for the production of its narcotic or intoxicating resin, yet a good deal of the hemp fibre is produced there. It is imported into England, however, chiefly from Russia, the United States, Italy, Holland, Germany, Hungary, and Turkey. It is grown in Ireland, and in some parts (Suffolk and Lincolnshire) of England. It thrives well in Algeria. It requires a rich deep soil and heavy manuring, and is an exhausting crop. In Great Britain about 6 pecks of seed per acre are sown, 18 inches apart, in the middle of April. The male plants are pulled from the end of July to the end of August, the female or seed-bearing plants being gathered in September.

The British reports of hemp cannot be examined with accuracy, as the official returns include under that name, the fibres of many hemp substitutes. The following statement of hemp imported into the United Kingdom must therefore be taken with all necessary reserve.

1873	1,247,354 cwt.	1876	1,174,850 cwt.
1874	1,210,108 "	1877	1,264,067 "
1875	1,860,768 "	1878	1,224,669 "

The following table gives the sources whence the supplies were chiefly drawn in the year 1877. But it must be again observed that the figures given for the imports from India, the Philippines, and other places to a lesser degree, include Manila hemp, Sunn hemp, and other spinous hems.

Imports of Hemp into the United Kingdom in 1877

From	Dressed	Rough	Pow or Cellulose
	Owts	Cwt.	Owts
Russia	4,679	947,008	18,326
Germany	7,088	189,741	20,889
Italy	19,477	161,632	44,802
Philippines		332,311	
United States		10,728	
Mexico		35,199	
India		62,827	
Other countries	8,857	18,888	4,568

There were sent out 11,780 cwt. dressed English grown hemp, more than half of this going to France. 1,676 cwt. of foreign and colonial dressed hemp were exported to British America and other countries, with 139,510 cwt. rough hemp, and 137 cwt. cellulose.

Newly all the hemp imported into the United Kingdom is landed at Liverpool, London, or at Leith, and is used in the manufacture of cables, ropes, cordage, twine, osenking, tar

papers, canvas, and sailcloth. The finest hemp comes from Italy, but it is almost equaled by the highest qualities of the Russian hemp. In hemp varies much in price, according to quantity and market fluctuations, its price in November 1879 was from £40 to £25 per ton. It is sold in a golden hemp fetching from £38 to £41.

In order to free the fibre of the hemp plant from the soft and weak pith and the tissues of the bark, the stems are submitted to nearly the same processes as those described in the article Flax. They are divided, broken, or crushed in a hemp mill, and furnished or *rotted*, judiciously in soft water, after which they are again beaten with wooden mallets, or in a specially constructed machine called a *break*. After this process the fibres are freed, and thus the separation of the fibres facilitated by the rubbing and striking to which they are subjected. The fibres are then *bad* or *combed*.

According to Villot, the average length of European hemp fibres is 80 inch, the extremes being 3 and 2 1/2 inches. Dr. M'N. gives 0005 to 0007 inch as the diameter of fibres, the actual weight being 0001 in breadth. Under the microscope hemp fibres resemble those of flax, both being best fibres, and differ widely from those of Manila hemp of New Zealand flax, they are lengthily situated cylinders, sometimes free and sometimes associated in small bundles. A hemp cord of 1 square millimetre section will be, according to Haberlandt, an average weight of 34 5 kilograms without the skin—sometimes as much as 60 kilos.

The chief constituent of the fibre of hemp is of course cellulose, but small quantities of other substances are in it. Its proximate composition, however, being reduced to cellulose. A fine sample of Italian hemp gave on analysis the following percentages—water 8.9, wax 0.6, ash 0.8, matters soluble in water 3.5, lignin, albuminoids, &c. 3.4, cellulose 77.7. An ordinary sample of flax in hemp contained no less than 10.5 per cent. of moisture, and 1.7 of mineral matter, with but 72 of pure cellulose. By boiling a portion of this sample for four hours with water in a sealed tube at 150 °C, a soluble extract amounting to 2.5th of the original hemp was obtained. Hemp grung 15.4 per cent. of moisture, and 1.7 of mineral matter, with but 72 of pure cellulose. Dilute solutions of iodine and sulphuric acid, successively applied, give to hemp fibre a greenish hue. The ash of hemp is rich in lime.

**Hemp resin**—Hemp as a drug or intoxicant for smoking and chewing occurs in the three forms of bang, ganja, and charas.

(1) *Bhang*, the Hindustani *sudha* or *gali*, consists of the dried leaves and small stalks of the hemp, a few fruits occur in it. It is of a dark brownish green colour, and has a faint peculiar odour and but a slight taste. It is smoked with or without tobacco, or it is mixed into a sweetmeat with honey, sugar, and aromatic spices, or it is powdered and infused in cold water, yielding a turbid drink, *sudha* *Itashish* is one of the Arabic names given to the Syrian and Turkish preparations of the resinous hemp leaves. One of the commonest of these preparations is made by heating the bang with water and butter, the butter becoming thus charged with the resinous and active substances of the plant.

(2) *Ganja*, the guara of the London brokers, consists of the flowering and fruiting heads of the female plant. It is a brownish green, and often has a reddish bloom, as in colour and taste. Some of the more esteemed kinds of hashish are prepared from this ganja. Ganja is met with in the Indian bazaars in dense bundles of 24 plants or heads apiece. The hashish in such extensive use in Central Asia is often seen in the bazaars of large cities in the form of cakes, 1 to 3 inches thick, 5 to 10 inches broad, and 10 to 15 inches long.

(3) *Chavus*, or *churru*, is the resin itself collected, as it exudes naturally from the plant, in different ways. The best sort is gathered by the hand like opium, sometimes the resinous exudation of the plant is made to stick fast of all to cloths, or to the leather garments of men, or even to their skin, and is then removed by scraping, and afterwards consolidated by kneading, pressing, and rolling. It contains both one third or one fourth its weight of the resin. But the churru prepared by different methods and in different countries differs greatly in appearance and purity. Sometimes it takes the form of egg-like masses of greyish-brown colour, having when of high quality a shining resinous

fracture. Often it occurs in the form of irregular friable lumps, like pieces of impure linseed oil-cake.

Hemp, however consumed, acts in a most strange way upon the nervous system, but its effects differ greatly with races as well as with individuals. Generally the first effect of a small dose is to produce increase of appetite and cheerfulness. Larger doses produce hallucinations, delirium, sleep, and sometimes cataplexy. During the dreamy state induced by an average dose of hashish, the patient becomes the sport of rapidly shifting ideas. Errors of perception as to time and place are a conspicuous characteristic of its effects on the mind. For the connexion of the name assassin with hashish, see vol. ii p. 723.

Extract of hemp has been repeatedly tried in modern European medical practice without very consistent or satisfactory results. It has antispasmodic and anodyne characters, and has been employed in tetanus, spasmodic cough, hydrophobia, and some forms of mania. It is a quietest of the nervous system, but does not cause constipation, check the appetite, nor diminish the secretions like opium.

Hemp is very largely used in Eastern countries as an intoxicant and narcotic—probably by nearly 300 millions of the human race. The amount consumed cannot be estimated. Of seed hemp and cannabis there was sent in 1870 not less than 10,000,000 worth through the Khzyber Pass into British India.

There are three substances in the hemp drug to which its activity has been attributed. Of these the resin, separated and investigated by Messrs T. & H. Smith, is the most abundant and probably the most important, and yet its chemical nature and properties are by no means certain. It is soluble in alcohol, and has a warm, bitter, acrid taste with a slight odour. It melts between 70° and 90° C., and has a pink brown colour. It is called *cannabin*. Cannabin is the volatile oil of Indian hemp obtained by distilling hemp, or cannabis with water. Its composition is represented by  $C_{14}H_{16}$ , it boils between 235° and 240°. Cannabin is accompanied by a crystalline hydrocarbon containing 84 per cent carbon and 16 per cent hydrogen. The supposed occurrence of nicotine in Indian hemp has not been confirmed, and would not in any way suffice to explain the properties of the drug. Moreover, tobacco is often added to hemp. That there is a volatile alkaloid in hemp, though in small quantities, is, however, established beyond doubt. The presence of picrotoxin in galls was found by Messrs T. & H. Smith to be 6 or 7 per cent. Gasterin gives 3 per cent, is obtainable from *Agropyrum* hemp. The volatile oil in fresh hemp probably does not exceed 3 parts in 1000. By treating the commercial substance extract of Indian hemp with strong nitric acid, Boles and Francis obtained (*Journ. Chem. Soc.*, vol. viii, p. 417) an oxidation product, soluble in alcohol and crystalline in long thin prisms. The formula  $C_{14}H_{16}O_2$  has been assigned to this substance, which is known as oxy-cannabin.

*Hemp Seed, Cakes, and Oil*.—The ripe seeds, really fruits, being nuts or achenes of the hemp plant, contain about 34 per cent of oil and 16 of albuminoids. When the crushed seeds have been submitted to pressure, the residual cake is found to retain about 7 per cent of oil. The value of hemp cakes as a cattle-food is lessened by its purgative property. The seeds are much used as a food for singing birds. A hundred parts of the seed yield from 70 to 75 of cake and 25 to 30 of oil. This oil has drying properties, though it is in this respect much inferior to linseed oil. Its specific gravity is 9307. The seeds are roundish ovate, about  $\frac{1}{8}$  inch in length, and of a dark grey colour, with a pale ash-coloured network of surface-markings.

See Bentley and Thorne's *Medicinal Plants*, No. 231, Vahl's *Exsiccata sur. flor. Indica*, pp. 72-77, Dickson's *Flora of India*, *Joynt's Fibrous Plants of India*, *Cultivation of Hemp in India*, Dr V. Shambaugh's *Preparation of Indian Hemp on Guyana*, *Yak's Treatise on Antiquaries*, Hugo Miller's *Pharmacopoeia*, the *Dispensatory of the United States*, *Kalm's Description of Novgorod*, Dr G. Marbach's *Studien über den Hanf*, and Johnston's *Chemistry of Common Life*, 1879. (A. T. C.)

HEMS, HEMS, or HEMS, a town of Syria, about 63 miles by road north-east of Tripoli (Taibulus), situated 1312 feet, according to Cernik, above the level of the sea, on the

eastern side of the valley of the Nahr el Ayy or Orontes, which about 4 miles further down forms the lake of Hems, Atun, or Kabas. *The Lake at* or castle, a great mound "still crowned with a tangle of ruin and ruined towers," forms a striking landmark well known to the caravans journeying north from Damascus. It is about 120 feet in height, and has a breadth of 135 feet and a width of 375. According to Captain Dutton, it probably occupies the site of the temple of the sun, which formed the glory of the ancient city not only does it contain colossal masses of syenite, grey granite, and white marble, but he found, apparently in position, a Doric palæstra. Though the ancient walls of Hems, with a circuit of about a mile and a half, are greatly dilapidated and even in many places practically demolished, the town is entered by regular gates, six in number, which in olden times bore the names of the planets. Within it presents little except narrow and tortuous streets, poorly paved and foul, with houses for the most part of the meanest description, but none the less it is the seat of a Turkish vice governor or mutessim, as well as of a Greek and a Maronite bishop, and its cavalry barracks are capable of containing two regiments. As the market-town of the neighbouring tribes it has some commercial importance. It trades in cotton, sesame, and oil, and among its craftsmen it numbers a body of skilful goldsmiths and about 8000 silk weavers, whose looms produce the finest kind of kadies or hand cloths. The population is estimated at from 20,000 to 40,000, and about 7000 are Christians. Jews are conspicuous by their absence, though one of the gates of the town in the quarter which they formerly occupied is still called the "Jews' Gate."

Hems is the *Emusa*, *Emusa*, or *Hemus* of the Romans, and by Ptolemy it is assigned to the district of Apamea. Its inhabitants are mentioned among the early opponents of the Rom. in Syria. It is mentioned in Berosus, declared emperor in 218 A.D., is mentioned in *Isidore*, and held office as a part of the sun. It was in the neighbourhood of the town that the army of Zenobia was routed by Aurelian. The first Christian bishop is said to have been St. Silvanus. About fourteen years after the H. g. Khalid bin Walid, who was to find his grave in one of its suburbs, made him his master of Hems, and from 1068 to 1187 it was in the hands of the crusaders. It was probably Saladin, by whom they were expelled, that turned the temple of the sun, which under Christian rule had been used as a cathedral, into the chief fortress of the place. In July 1831 Ibrahim Pasha, having defeated the governor of Aleppo at Hems, carried the fortress to be blown up.

The port Ka'ab el Akbar is named in the town, and the people show another grave which they wrongly believe to be that of J. d. al. l. T. Burton and T. W. L. Dike, *Unexplored Syria*, 1879.

HEMSTERHUIS, FRANKRUIS (1720-1802), writer on æsthetics and moral philosophy, was born at Franeker in Holland in 1720. He received an excellent education from his father, Theobaldus Hemsterhuis, noticed below, and completed his studies at the university of Leyden. There undoubtedly he was attracted towards the study of the Platonic philosophy, which exercised the greatest influence both on the form and on the matter of his own writings. He did not, however, devote himself to a lean and life after completing his university courses, but entered upon practical affairs, and for many years acted as secretary to the state council of the United Provinces. His interests were mainly philosophical, and partly by direct social intercourse with a few philosophical writers of other countries, mainly with Jacobi, he preserved the continuity of his philosophical work. His writings, none of which can be described as of high speculative worth, as distinguished by elegance of form and by the touch of refined sentiment which is not uncommon among the amateur or dilettante philosophers of the 18th century. Any direct contributions to philosophy made by him are in the department of æsthetics or the general analysis of feeling. He died in 1790.



His first work, published in 1769, was *Le Lettre sur les Sculptures*, written, like all the others, in French. It was followed in 1770 by the *Lettre sur les devoirs*, in 1772 by the *Lettre sur l'homme et ses rapports*, in 1778 by *Sophyie*, a dialogue on the relation between soul and body, in 1779 by *Alyssa*, a dialogue on the existence of the Divine Being, in 1787 by *Alce ou l'ame d'or*, by *Simon, ou des facultés de l'ame*, and by the *Lettre de Dactyle a Dactyle sur l'Alchimie*. Collected editions of his works have been published in 1792 (2 vols.), and more completely by Meyboom, in 1846-50 (6 vols.). See Guizot, *France sous Louis XVI*, in *Le siècle d'Or* (Paris, 1866).

**HEMSTERHUIS, Hermanus** (1685-1760), philologist and critic, was born on January 9, 1685, at Groningen in Holland. His father, a learned physician, recognizing the abilities of his son, gave him so good an early education that, when he entered the university of his native town in his fifteenth year, he speedily proved himself to be the best student of mathematics. After a year or two at Groningen, he was attracted to the university of Leyden by the fame of Leibnizius, and while there he was entrusted with the flattering duty of arranging the manuscripts in the library. Though he accepted an appointment as professor of mathematics and philosophy at Amsterdam in his twentieth year, he had already directed his attention to the study of the ancient languages. In 1706 he completed the edition of Pollux's *Onomasticon* begun by Lædellin, but the praise he received from his countrymen was more than counterbalanced by two letters of criticism from Bentley, which mortified him so keenly that for two months he refused to open a Greek book. In 1717 Hemsterhuis was appointed professor of Greek at Franeker, but he did not enter on his duties there till 1720. In 1738 he became professor of national history also. Two years afterwards he was called to teach the same subjects at Leyden, where he died, April 7, 1760. Hemsterhuis deserves special note for reinstating the study of Greek in its honorable place among his fellow-countrymen, while he was also the founder of a laborious and useful Dutch school of criticism, of which Valartenaer, Lomper, and Buhken are the most famous disciples.

His chief writings are the following:—*Latina Ologia et Thesauro*, 1708, *Antisthenis Platonis*, 1741, *Notæ, &c., ad Xeno phontis in Epicharmum in the Alcestrates Critas de Aristocleum*, vols. iii and iv, *Observationes ad Chrysostomi Homilias*, *Oratorum*, 1784, a Latin translation of the *Burks of Antisthenes*, in Kuster's edition, notes to Bursius's *Thomas Magister*, to Alberti's *May chus*, to Bursius's *Colloquia*, and to Bursius's *Prologus*. See *Etymolog. T. Hemsterhusii* (with Bentley), letters by Buhken, 1789, and *Supplementa Annotations ad Etymolog. T. Hemsterhusii*, &c., Leyden, 1814.

**HENNAULT, CHARLES JEAN FRANÇOIS** (1685-1770), French historian, was born in Paris 8th February 1685. His father, a farmer-general of taxes, was a man of literary tastes, and young Hénault obtained a good education at the Jesuit college and the College des Quatre-Nations. Captivated by the eloquence of Massillon, he in his fifteenth year entered the oratory with the view of becoming a preacher, but after two years' residence he changed his intention, and, inheriting a position which secured him access to the most select society of Paris, he at an early period achieved distinction by his gay, witty, and graceful manners, and by his literary talent as manifested in the composition of various light poetical pieces, and of two discourses which respectively gained a prize at the French Academy in 1707, and at the Académie des Jeux Floraux in 1708. In 1706 he became councillor of the parliament of Paris, and in 1710 he was chosen president of the court of *exequies*. He was admitted into the French Academy in 1723, and subsequently into the leading literary societies of Europe. After the death of Bernard de Clugnot he became superintendent of the household of Queen Maria Leszinska, whose intimate friendship he had previously enjoyed. On his recovery in his fifth year from a dangerous malady, he professed to have undergone religious conversion and retired into private life, devoting

the remainder of his days to study and devotion. His devotion was, however, according to the Marquis d'Argenson "exempt from fanaticism, persecution, bitterness, and rapture," and it did not prevent him from continuing his friendship with Voltaire, to whom it is said he had formerly rendered the service of saving the manuscript of *La Henriade*, when its author was about to commit it to the flames. The literary work on which Hénault bestowed his chief attention was the *Abégé Chronologique*, first published in 1744 without the author's name. It is a model of its kind, and is valuable both for popular use and as a work of reference. In the compass of a few volumes he has compassed the whole history of France from the earliest times to the death of Louis XIV. His information is for the most part drawn from original sources, and for such a work the number of errors committed by Hénault was remarkably small. The results of deep researches and lengthened disquisitions on public law are summed up in a few words. The moral and political reflexions are always subtle and generally as fresh and pleasing as they are just. A few masterly strokes reproduce the leading features of each age and the characters of its illustrious men, accurate chronological tables set forth the most interesting events in the history of each sovereign and the names of the great men who flourished during his reign, and his compressed thorough work is occasional chapters on the social and civil state of the country at the close of each era in its history. Continuations of the work have been made at separate periods by Fantin des Odoards, by Argus with notes by Walckenaer, and by Michaud. Besides some other historical works of minor importance Hénault wrote several dramatic pieces of no particular merit. He died at Paris, 24th November 1770. His *Mémoires*, published in 1854, are somewhat fragmentary and disconnected, but contain many interesting anecdotes and details regarding persons of note.

See the *Correspondence of Grimm*, of Madame de La Harpe, and of Voltaire, the notes by Walckenaer in the edition of the *Histoire Chronologique*, and Sainte-Beuve, *Critique des Hommes*, vol. vi.

**HENDANE** (in French, *gypsophyma*, from the Greek *gypsos*, *os*, or hog's-head, in Italian, *gipsophyma*, and in German, *Schwarz des Heubachs*, *art*, *Heubachs*, *Sindhu*, and *Zygumme*—*Korn* or "gipsy's corn") is the common name of the *Hyoscyamus niger*, a Solanaceous plant indigenous to Britain, found wild in waste places, on rubbish about villages and old castles, and cultivated for medical use at Mitcham and other places in Surrey, and in Bedfordshire, Cambridgeshire, and Hereford. It occurs also in central and southern Europe and in western Asia, and has long been naturalized in the United States. There are two forms of the plant, an annual and a biennial, which spring differently from the same crop of seed,—the one growing on during summer to a height of from 1 to 2 feet, and flowering and perfecting seed, the other producing the first season only a tuft of radical leaves, which disappear in winter, leaving underground a thick fleshy root, from the crown of which arises in spring a branched flowering stem, usually much taller and more vigorous than the flowering stems of the annual plants. The biennial form is that which is considered official. The radical leaves of this biennial plant spread out flat on all sides from the crown of the root, they are ovate oblong, acute, stalked, and more or less uncialy-toothed, of a greyish green colour, and covered with viscid hairs, these leaves push at the approach of winter. The flowering stem pushes up from the root-crown in spring, ultimately reaching from 3 to 4 feet in height, and as it grows becoming branched, and furnished with alternate sessile leaves, which are stem clasping, oblong, unequally-lobed, clothed with glandular clammy hairs, and of a dull grey-green, the whole plant having a powerful nauseous

odon. The flowers are shortly stalked, the lower ones growing in the fork of the branches, the upper ones sessile in one-sided leafy spikes which are rolled back at the top before flowering, the leaves becoming smaller upwards and taking the place of bracts. The flowers have an unequal calyx, which persists almost the fruit and is strongly veined, with five stiff, broad, almost prickly lobes, these, when the soft matter is removed by maceration, form very elegant specimens when associated with leaves prepared in a similar way. The corolla is obliquely funnel shaped, of a dirty yellow or buff, marked with a close reticulation of purple veins. The capsule opens transversely by a convex lid, and contains numerous seeds. Both the leaves and the seeds are employed in pharmacy. The Mohammedan doctors of India are accustomed to prescribe the seeds of *Henbane* yields a poisonous alkaloid, *hyoscyamine*, which is stated to have properties almost identical with those of atropine, from which it differs in being more soluble in water. It is usually obtained in an amorphous, scarcely over in a crystalline state. Its properties have been investigated in Germany by Husemann, Schrieff, Hohn, etc. Hohn finds its chemical composition expressed by  $C_{17}H_{23}NO_3$  (Compare Hellmann, *Beitrag zur Kenntnis der physiologischen Wirkung des Hyoscyamins*, &c., Jena, 1871).

In small and repeated doses *henbane* has been found to have a tranquillizing effect upon persons affected by severe nervous irritability. In poisonous doses it causes loss of speech, distortion, and paralysis. In the form of extract or tincture it is a valuable remedy in the hands of a medical man, either as an anodyne, a hypnotic, or a sedative. The extract of *henbane* is rich in nitrate of potassium and other inorganic salts. The smoking of the seeds and capsules of *henbane* is noted in books as a somewhat dangerous remedy adopted by country people for toothache. Accidental poisoning from *henbane* occasionally occurs, owing sometimes to the apparent edibility and wholesomeness of the root.

HENDERSON, ALEXANDER (1583-1646), a celebrated Scottish ecclesiastic, was born in 1583. He was educated at the university of St Andrews, where he was appointed professor of rhetoric and philosophy and lecturer of the faculty of arts in 1610. A year or two after this he was presented to the living of Leuchars by Archbishop Gladstones. As Henderson was forced upon his parish by an archbishop, and as he was known to sympathize with Episcopacy, his settlement was at first extremely unpopular, but he subsequently changed his views, and became a Presbyterian in doctrine and church government, and one of the most esteemed ministers in Scotland. He early made his mark as a church leader, and took an active part in polemics against Episcopal innovations. On the 1st of March 1638 the public signing of the "National Covenant" began in Greyfriars Church, Edinburgh. Henderson is mainly responsible for this document, and he seems always to have been applied to when any manifest of unusual ability was required. In July of the same year he proceeded to the north, to debate on the "Covenant" with the famous Aberdeen doctors, but he was not well received by them. "The voyd church was made fast, and the keys keeped by the magistrats," says Baillie. Henderson's next public appearance was in the famous Assembly which met in Glasgow on the 21st of November 1638. He was chosen moderator by acclamation, being, as Baillie says, "incomparable the ablest man of us all for all things." The marriage of Hamilton was the king's commissioner, and when the Assembly met on Monday morning with the trial of the bishops, he formally dissolved the meeting under pain of treason. Nothing daunted, however, they sat till the 30th of December, deposed all the Scottish bishops, excommunicated a number of them, repealed all acts

favouring Episcopacy, and reconstituted the Scottish Kirk on thorough Presbyterian principles. During the sitting of this Assembly it was carried by a majority of seventy-five votes that Henderson should be transferred to Edinburgh. He had been at Leuchars for about twenty three years, and was extremely reluctant to leave it. While Scotland and England were preparing for the "First Bishops' War," Henderson drew up two papers, entitled respectively—*The Remonstrance of the Nobility, and Instructions for Defensive Arms*. The first of these documents he published himself, the second was published against his wish by Corbet, a deposed minister. The "First Bishops' War" did not last long. At the Pacification of Berks the king had virtually to grant all the demands of the Scots. In the negotiations for peace Henderson was one of the Scottish commissioners, and made a very favourable impression on the king. In 1640 Henderson was elected by the town council rector of Edinburgh university—an office to which he was annually re-elected till his death. The Pacification of Berks had been wrung from the king, and the Scots, seeing that he was preparing for the "Second Bishops' War," took the initiative, and pressed into England so vigorously that Charles had again to yield everything. The maturing of the treaty of peace took a considerable time, and Henderson was again active in the negotiations, first at Upton, and afterwards at London. While he was in London he had a personal interview with the king, with the view of obtaining assistance for Edinburgh university from the money formerly applied to the support of the bishops. On Henderson's return to Edinburgh in July 1641, the Assembly was sitting at St Andrews. To suit the convenience of the parliament, however, it removed to Edinburgh, and Henderson was elected moderator of the Edinburgh meeting. In this Assembly he proposed that "a confession of faith, a catechism, a directory for all the parts of the public worship, and a platform of government, wherein possibly England and we might agree," should be drawn up. This was unanimously approved of, and the laborious undertaking was left in Henderson's hands, but the "notable motion" did not lead to any immediate results. During Charles's second state visit to Scotland, in the autumn of 1641, Henderson acted as his chaplain, and managed to get the funds, formerly belonging to the bishops of Edinburgh, applied to the metropolitan university. In 1642 Henderson was engaged in corresponding with England on ecclesiastical topics, and, shortly afterwards, he went to Oxford to mediate between the king and his parliament, but his mission proved a failure. A memorable meeting of the General Assembly was held in August 1643. Henderson was elected moderator for the third time. He presented a draft of the famous "Solemn League and Covenant" which was received with great enthusiasm. Unlike the "National Covenant" of 1638, which applied to Scotland only, this document was common to the two kingdoms. Henderson, Baillie, Rathford, and others were sent up to London to represent Scotland in the Assembly at Westminster. The "Solemn League and Covenant," after undergoing some slight alterations, passed the two Houses of Parliament and the Westminster Assembly, and thus became law for the two kingdoms. By means of it Henderson has had an extraordinary influence on the history of Great Britain. As Scottish commissioner to the Westminster Assembly, he was in England from August 1643 till August 1646, and the action of the Scottish commissioners gave a fresh impulse to English Presbyterianism. Early in 1645 Henderson was sent to Uxbridge to aid the commissioners of the two parliaments in negotiating with the king, but nothing came of the conference. In 1646 the king joined the Scottish army, and, after retiring with them to New-

castle, he sent for Henderson, and discussed with him the two systems of church government in a number of papers. Meanwhile Henderson was failing in health. He sailed to Scotland, and eight days after his arrival died on the 19th of August 1846. He was buried in Greyfriars Churchyard, Edinburgh, and his death was the occasion of national mourning in Scotland. An absurd story was at once invented to the effect that, after recanting to the king's views, he had died of remorse. A document was forged, purporting to be a "Declaration of Mr Alexander Henderson," and, although this paper was disowned, denounced, and shown to be false in the General Assembly of August 1848, the fiction was used by Clarendon, and still finds a place in professedly historical compilations.

Henderson is one of the greatest men in the history of Scotland, and, next to Knox, is certainly the most famous of Scottish ecclesiastics. He had great political genius, and his statesmanship was so influential that "he was," as Professor Masson well observes, "a cabinet minister without office." He has made a deep mark on the history, not only of Scotland, but of England, and the existing Presbyterian Churches in Scotland are largely indebted to him for the forms of their dogmas and their ecclesiastical organization. He is thus justly considered the second founder of the Reformed Church in Scotland.

For further information about Henderson reference may be made to *McClure's Life of Alexander Henderson*, 1810; *Aiton's Life and Times of Alexander Henderson*, 1836; *The Letters and Journals of Robert Brattle*, 1811-2 (an exceedingly valuable work, from an historical point of view); *Burton's History of Scotland*; *Masson's Life of Dr James Gordon of Haddinton*; and, above all, *Masson's Life of Milton*. (T. G.)

**HENDERSON, ERNEST WILHELM**, Scottish dissenting minister and theological and miscellaneous writer, was born at the Linn near Dunfermline, November 17, 1784, and died at Mortlake, May 17, 1858. He was the youngest son of an agricultural labourer, and after three years' schooling spent some time at watchmaking and as a shoemaker's apprentice. In 1803 he joined Mr Robert Haldane's theological seminary, and in 1805 was selected to accompany the Rev John (afterwards Dr) Paterson to India, but as the East India Company would not allow British vessels to convey missionaries to India, Henderson and his colleagues went to Denmark to await the chance of a passage to Serampore. Being unexpectedly delayed, they ultimately decided to settle in Denmark, and in 1806 Henderson was fixed at Elsinore. From this time till about 1817 he was engaged in encouraging the distribution of Bibles in the Scandinavian countries, and in the course of his labours he visited Sweden and Lapland (1807-8), Iceland (1814-15), and the mainland of Denmark and part of Germany (1816). During most of this time he was an agent of the British and Foreign Bible Society. In 1818, after a visit to England, he travelled in company with Dr Paterson through Russia as far south as Tiflis, but, instead of settling as was proposed at Astakhan, he had to retrace his steps, having resigned his connection with the Bible Society. In 1822 he was invited by Prince Alexander Galitzin to assist the Russian Bible Society in translating the Scriptures into various languages spoken in the Russian empire. After twenty years of foreign labour Henderson returned to England, and in 1825 was appointed tutor of the Mission College, Gowerport. In 1830 he succeeded Dr William Harewood as theological lecturer and professor of Oriental languages in Highbury Congregational College, and though in 1850, on the amalgamation of the colleges of Homerton, Coward, and Highbury, he was excluded from office through age, he was pastor in 1852-53 of a chapel at Mortlake. His last work was a translation of the book of Ezekiel. Henderson was a man of great linguistic attainment in the course of his

labours he made himself more or less acquainted, not only with the ordinary languages of scholarly accomplishment and the various members of the Scandinavian group, but also with Hebrew, Syriac, Ethiopic, Russian, Asiatic, Tatar, Persian, Turkish, Armenian, Manchoo, Mongolian, and Coptic. He organized the first Bible Society in Denmark (1814), and paved the way for several others. In 1817 he was nominated by the Scandinavian Literary Society a corresponding member, and in 1840 he was made D.D. by the university of Copenhagen. He was honorary secretary for life of the Theological Trust Society, and one of the first promoters of the British Society for the Propagation of the Gospel among the Jews. The records of his travels in Iceland (1818) were valuable contributions to our knowledge of that island. His other principal works are *Biblical Researches and Travels in Russia* (1826), *Divine Inspiration* (1836), and annotated translations of Isaiah (1840, 1857), the twelve minor prophets (1845), and Jeremiah (1851).

See *Memoirs of Ernest Henderson*, by Thulia S. Henderson (his daughter), London, 1859.

**HENGSTENBERG, ERNEST WILHELM** (1802-1860), for more than forty years one of the most conspicuous and able champions of the strictest Lutheran orthodoxy, was born at Frondenberg, a Westphalian village near Hamm and not far from the Ruhr, on October 20, 1802, received his entire school education under the roof of his father, who was a minister of the Reformed Church, and head of the Frondenberg Fräuleinstift, and entered the university of Bonn in 1819, shortly before the completion of his seventeenth year. There he attended the lectures of Freytag and Gieseler on Old Testament exegesis and church history, but his energies were principally devoted to philosophy and philology, and his earliest publication was an edition of the *Mouallakah* of Amīr Y. Kās (*Amirlicher Mouallakah ein scholastisches Gedicht, lateinisch, et illustret G. F. H.*, 1823), which gained for him the prize at his graduation on the philosophical faculty, and the public commendation of Sylvester de Sacy. This was followed in 1824 by a German translation of Aristotle's *Metaphysica*. On quitting Bonn it had been Hengstenberg's wish to complete his theological studies under Neander and Tholuck in Berlin, but finding himself without the means of doing so, he accepted for a year a situation at Basel as tutor in Oriental languages to J. J. Stahelin. Thence it was that, suffering much from ill-health and deeply mourning the loss of his mother, he began to direct his attention, with an ardent formerly unknown to him, to the spiritual truths of the Bible. His studies and experiences at this crisis resulted in a conviction, never afterwards shaken, not only of the divine character of evangelical religion, but also of the unique and irreplaceable adequacy of its expression in the Augsburg Confession. Taking as his motto Psalm cxviii. 17, he resolved therefore to devote himself to the uncompromising defence of that word. In the autumn of 1824 he joined the philosophical faculty of Berlin as a privat-docent, and in the following year he became a licentiate in theology, his thesis even then being remarkable for their evangelical fervour and for their emphatic protest against every form of "rationalism," especially in questions of Old Testament criticism. In 1826 he became professor extraordinary in theology, and in July 1827 appeared under Hengstenberg's editorship the first number of the *Evangelische Kirchenzeitung*, a "reactionary" journal which in his hands was destined to acquire an almost unique reputation as an organ of religious, theological, and ecclesiastical controversy. It did not, however, attain to great notoriety until in 1830 an anonymous article (by E. L. von Geisach) appeared, which openly charged Professor Geiswich and Wegscheider with infidelity and profanity, and on the ground of these accusations advo-

ated the interposition of the civil power, thus giving rise to the prolonged "Halleische Streit" as it was called, which was at least effectual in giving the public a due impression of the energy and zeal of the new "evangelical" school. In 1823 the first volume of Hengstenberg's *Christologie des Alten Testaments* passed through the press, in the autumn of that year he was promoted to the dignity of professor ordinarius in theology, and in 1829 he married. The remainder of his life, apart from the excitement which its various literary activities imparted to it, was uneventful. He died on the 28th of May 1869.

The following is a list of the principal works of Hengstenberg—*Christologie des Alten Testaments* (1829–35, 2d ed. 1864–57, Eng. transl. by Th. Krüth, 1835–39, also in Clavé, "Foreign Theological Library," by Th. Meyer and J. Mutin, 1864–68), a work of much ingenuity and considerable learning, but which will be differently valued according to the hermeneutical principles of the individual critic, *Beitrag zur Einleitung in das Alte Testament* (1831–39, Engl. transl.), "Dissertations on the Communion of Daniel and the Integrity of Zechariah," Köln, 1848, and "Dissertations on the Communion of the Pentateuch," Köln, 1847, in which his traditional view on each question is strongly upheld, and much capital is made of the absence of humanity among the negative critics, *Die Bücher Moses und Esdras* (1841), spoken of by Drost as "perhaps Hengstenberg's most important work," *Die Geschichte Israels in seiner Weissagungen* (1842, translated into English along with the Dissertations on Daniel and Zechariah mentioned above), *Commentar über die Psalmen* (1842–45, 2d ed. 1848–52, Eng. transl. by Paulus and Thomson, Edin., 1848), in which he shows the merits and defects of the *Christologie*, *Die Offenbarung Johannis erläutert* (1841–61, 2d ed. 1861–62, Eng. transl. by Paulus, also in Clavé, "Foreign Theological Library," 1861–63), *Das Hohle Land ausgelegt* (1860), *Die Propheten Salomo ausgelegt* (1859), *Die Evangelien Johannis erläutert* (1861–63, 2d ed. 1867–71, Eng. transl. 1866), and *Die Weissagungen des Propheten Ezechiel erläutert* (1867–68). Of minor importance are *De rebus Typicis commentatio academica* (1839), *Ueber den Tag der Herrn* (1859), *Das Parusie im Nöthig* (1853), and *Die Opfer des heiligen Schiffs* (1859). Several series of papers also, e.g., for example, on "The Institution of the Eucharist," "Feast-days," "Diet," and "The Relation between the Jews and the Christian Church," which originally appeared in the *Evangelical Union*, were afterwards printed in a separate form *Geschichte des Reichs Gottes unter dem Alten Bund* (1869–70), *Das Buch Zephania erläutert* (1870–75), and *Vorlesungen über die Luthers Geschichte* (1875) were published, from Hengstenberg's papers, posthumously. See Bachmann's *Ernst Hengstenberg* (1876–77), also his article in Herzog and Plitt's *Biographisches* (1879).

HENKE, HENRICH PHILIPP KONRAD (1752–1809), a learned German theologian of the broad school, best known as a writer on church history, was born at Hahlen, Brunswick, on July 3, 1752, was educated at the gymnasium of Brunswick and the university of Helmstedt, and from 1778 until his death, which occurred on May 2, 1809, held a professorship of theology in that university. His principal work (*Kirchen Geschichte*, in 6 vols., 1788–1804, 2d ed. 1793–1806) is commended by Baur for fullness, accuracy, and artistic composition, as one of the best in that class of literature. His other works are *Lineamenta institutionum Hæc Christiana*, *Historico-critica* (1783), *Opuscula Academicæ* (1802), and two volumes of *Prædicationes*. His son, Ernst Ludwig Theodor (1804–1873), has also left a name in the literature of theology and ecclesiastical history, having been the author of monographs upon *Georg Calixtus et seine Zeit* (1853–60), *Papst Pius VII.* (1860), *Konrad von Marburg* (1861), *Kaiser Pöppel u. Nib. Krell* (1866), *Jah. Fried. Fries* (1867), as well as of other works.

HENLEY, JOHN (1692–1759), an eccentric clergyman of the last century, commonly known as "Osiator Henley," was born August 8, 1692, at Melton-Mowbray, where his father was vicar. After attending the grammar schools of Melton and Oakham, he in his seventeenth year entered St John's College, Cambridge, and while still an undergraduate he addressed, on February 1719, under the pseudonym of *Deus*, a letter to the *Spectator* displaying no small wit and humour. After graduating B.A. he became assistant and then head-master of the

grammar school of his native town, uniting to these duties those also of assistant curate. His supererogatory energy was not, however, fully consumed by this plurality of offices, for besides publishing in 1714 a poem entitled *Esther, Queen of Persia*, containing many vigorous and eloquent passages, he also devoted his attention to the compilation of a grammar of ten languages entitled *The Complete Linguist* (2 vols., London, 1719–21). In his school he is said to have introduced many new methods of study, but whether it was that his innovations were not sufficiently appreciated, or that he desired a wider sphere for the exercise of his exceptional abilities, he resolved to place his services at the disposal of the metropolis, where he arrived with thirty recommendation letters from some of the most influential persons of his native county. He succeeded in obtaining the appointment of assistant preacher in the chapel of Ormond Street and Bloomsbury, and in 1723 was presented to the rectory of Chelmsford in Suffolk, but residence being insisted on, he resigned both his appointments, and on July 3, 1720, opened what he called an "oratory" in Newport Market, which he licensed under the Toleration Act. Into his services he introduced many peculiar alterations: he drew up a "Primitive Liturgy," in which he substituted for the Nicene and Athanasian creeds two creeds taken from the apostolical constitutions, for his "Primitive Eucharist" he made use of unleavened bread and mixed wine, he distributed at the price of one shilling medals of admission to his oratory, with the device of a man using to the maiden, with this motto *Ad summa*, and the words *Inveniam viam aut faciam* below. But the most original element in the services was Henley himself, who is described by Pope in the *Dunciad* as "Piercing at once and raving of his age."

He possessed some oratorical ability and adopted a very theatrical style of elocution, "tuning his voice and balancing his hands," and his addresses were a strange medley of solemnity and buffoonery, of clever wit and the wildest absurdity, of able and original disquisition and the worst artifices of the oratorical chicanery. His services were much frequented by the "thinkers," and he himself expressed his determination "to do a rational." Besides his sermons on Sunday he delivered on Wednesday lectures chiefly on social and political subjects, and he also projected a scheme for connecting with the "oratory" a university on quite a novel plan, and intended to be, in a sense too utopian to be realized, the foster-mother of the arts and sciences. For some time he edited the *Ilyp. Doctor*, a weekly paper established in opposition to the *Critic*, and for this service he enjoyed a pension of £100 a year from Sir Robert Walpole. At first the orations of Henley drew great crowds, but, although he never discontinued his services, his audience latterly dwindled almost entirely away. He died 13th October 1759.

Henley is the subject of several of Hogarth's prints. His life, professedly written by A. Walpole, but in all probability by himself, was inserted by him in his *Original Transactions*. See Nichol's *History of Leicestershire*, and Duncraft's *Calendar of Authors*.

HENLEY-ON-THAMES, a market-town of Oxfordshire, England, is situated on the left bank of the Thames and at the terminus of a branch of the Great Western Railway. It is 22 miles S. of Oxford and 35 W. from London by rail, and 47 miles from Oxford and 64½ from London by the river. It occupies one of the most beautiful situations on the Thames, at the foot of the finely wooded Chiltern Hills. The river is crossed by an elegant stone bridge of five arches, completed in 1736 at a cost of £10,000. The principal buildings are the parish church, a handsome Gothic structure recently restored at a cost of over £7000, possessing a lofty tower of intermingled flint and stone, which is attributed to Cardinal Wolsey, but which was more pro-

It was erected by Bishop Longland, the grammar school, in 1603, the town hall, a neat building supported by Doric columns, the reading-room and library, and several charitable institutions. Henley is a favourite resort, and also possesses some trade in corn, flour, and timber. It is celebrated for the Henley Royal Regatta, the principal gathering of amateur oarsmen in England, which usually takes place in July. The population of the parish in 1871 was 3736, and of the local board district 4623.

It only existed at a very early period, and according to some authorities was a Roman station. It obtained a charter of incorporation from Elizabeth, in which it is named *Henlynggyn or Henbury*. In 1643 it was occupied by the Parliamentary forces, who successfully repelled an attack made upon them by the Royalists.

See *History of Henley-on-Thames*, by John Southern, Bucks, London, 1861, and *An Account of the State of the Annual Henley Regatta from its commencement June 1859 to the year 1879*, Henley, 1879.

**HENNA** is the Persian name for a small shrub found in the East Indies, Persia, the Levant, and along the African coasts of the Mediterranean, where it is frequently cultivated. It is the *Lawsonia alba* of botanists, and from the fact that young twigs are spinules, while older ones have the bristles hardened into spines, it has also received the name of *Lawsonia spinosa* and *L. spinosa*. It forms a slender, bushy plant of from 8 to 10 feet high, furnished with opposite oval-lanceolate smooth leaves, which are orange to the margins, and bears small white four-petaled sweet-scented flowers disposed in panicles. The four spreading petals are obovate, and furnished with claws, and alternating with them are eight stamens approximating by pairs. Its Egyptian name is *Khenna*, its Arabic name *Al Alwanah*, its Indian name *Mendea*, while in England it is called *Egyptian mignonette*, and in the West Indies, where it is naturalized, *Jamaica mignonette*.

Henna or Henné is of ancient repute as a cosmetic. This consists of the leaves of the *Lawsonia* pressed and made up into a paste, this is employed by the Egyptian women, and also by the Mahomedan women in India, to dye their finger nails and other parts of their hands and feet of an orange red colour, which is considered to add to their beauty. The colour lasts for three or four weeks, when it requires to be renewed. It is moreover used for dyeing the hair and beard, and even the manes of horses, and the same material is employed for dyeing skins and morocco leather a reddish yellow, but it contains no tannin. The practice of dyeing the nails was common amongst the Egyptians, and not to conform to it would have been considered indecent. It has descended from very remote ages, and is proved by the evidence afforded by Egyptian mummies, some of which are most commonly stained of a reddish colour. It is also said to have been held in repute by the Hebrews, being considered to be the plant which is alluded to in the Bible (Song of Solomon iv. 13). "The custom of dyeing the nails and of the hands and soles of the feet of an unmarried woman," observes Dr. Royle, "exists throughout the Mediterranean to the Ganges, as well as from Africa. In some parts the practice is not confined to women and children, but is also followed by men, as in Persia. In dyeing the beard, the hair is treated by the application, which is then changed to black by infusion of indigo. In dyeing the hair of children, the tails and manes of horses and asses, the process is the same, and the hair is then dyed of a reddish colour which the henna produces. Mahomet, it is said, used henna as a dye for his beard, and the fashion was adopted by the caliphs. The henna," remarks Lady Calcott in her *Scripture and Tradition*, "is scarcely to be called a caprice in the East

There is a quality in the drug which gently restrains perspiration in the hands and feet, and produces an agreeable coolness equally conducive to health and comfort." She further suggests that if the Jewish women were not in the habit of using this dye before the time of Solomon, it might probably have been introduced amongst them by his wife, the daughter of Pharaoh, and traces to this probability the allusion to "camphire" in the passages in Canticles above referred to.

The preparation of henna consists in reducing the leaves and young twigs to a fine powder, catechu or lacca leaves in a pulverized state being sometimes mixed with them. When required for use, the powder is made into a paste with warm hot water, and is then spread upon the part to be dyed, where it is generally allowed to remain for one night.

It has been already noted that the flowers of the *Lawsonia* are very fragrant, whence they derive in the West Indies the name of *Jamaica mignonette*. According to Lady Calcott, they are often used by the eastern women to adorn their hair, and Mr. Summons states that the distilled water from the flowers is used as a perfume. The plant is further credited with the possession of vulnerary and astringent properties.

**HENNEBONT**, a town of France, arrondissement of Lorient, and department of Morbihan, is situated on the Blavet, not far from its mouth, about 15 miles N.W. of Vannes. It is a picturesque old town, and contains some remains of its former fortifications. The church of Notre Dame de Paradis, a beautiful building of the 16th century, possesses some fine wood carving. The town has an important corn-market, and considerable shipping trade in iron, corn, honey, wax, hemp, cider, and wine. Shipbuilding, sawing, and tanning are also carried on. Hennebont is famed for the resistance which it made, under the widow of John de Montfort, when besieged by the armies of Philip of Valois and Charles of Blois. The population in 1876 was 4544.

**HENNEQUIN, PHILIPPE AUGUSTE** (1763-1833), French painter, was a pupil of David. He was born at Lyons in 1763, distinguished himself early by winning the "Grand prix," and left France for Italy. The disturbances at Lyons, during the course of the Revolution, obliged him to return to Paris, where he executed the Federation of the 11th of July, and visiting his native town was at work there on a large design commissioned for the town hall, when in July 1794 he was accused before the revolutionary tribunal and thrown into prison. Hennequin escaped, only to be anew accused and imprisoned in Paris, and after running great danger of death, seems to have devoted himself thenceforth wholly to his profession. At Paris he finished the picture ordered for the municipality of Lyons, and in 1801 produced his chief work, *Orestes pardoned by the Furies* (Louvre, engraved by Landau, *Annales des Beaux-arts*, vol. i. p. 105). He was one of the four painters who completed when in 1802 Gros called off the official price for a picture of the Battle of Nazareth, and in 1808 Napoleon himself ordered Hennequin to illustrate a series of scenes from his German campaigns, and commanded that his picture of the Death of General Salomon should be engraved. After 1815 Hennequin retired to Laège, and there, aided by subventions from the Government, carried out a large historical picture of the Death of the Three Hundred in defence of Laège—a sketch of which he himself engraved. In 1821 Hennequin settled at Tournay, and became director of the academy, he exhibited various works at Lille in the following year, which took place in May 1833. The *Orestes* of the Louvre is his capital work, it shows a certain style and finish of draughtsmanship, but the attitudes are melodramatic, the composition stagy, and the colour false and violent.

HIENNERSDORF, or SEITENHENDERSDORF, a manufactory village of Saxony, in the circle of Bautzen, and 20 miles S.E. of the town of that name. The inhabitants are engaged in weaving and bleaching, and in the manufacture of woollen goods, satin, amette, machinery, buckles, and wooden shoes. There is also an iron foundry. Population (1875), 6366.

HELENETTA MARIA (1609-1660), queen of Charles I. of England, born November 25, 1609, was the daughter of Henry IV. of France. When the first overtures for her hand were made on behalf of Charles, prince of Wales, in the spring of 1623, she was little more than fourteen years of age. Her brother, Louis XIII., only consented to the marriage on the condition that the English Roman Catholics were relieved from the operation of the penal laws. When therefore she set out for her new home in June 1625, she had already pledged the husband to whom she had been married by proxy on May 1 to a course of action which was certain to bring unpopularity on him as well as upon herself.

That husband was now king of England. The early years of the married life of Charles I. were most unhappy. He soon found an excuse for breaking his promise to relieve the English Catholics. His young wife was deeply offended by treatment which she naturally regarded as unkind and one. The favourite Buckingham stirred the flames of his master's discontent. Charles at last determined to reduce her to submission. After the assassination of Buckingham in 1628 the barrier between the married pair was broken down, and the bond of affection which from that moment united them was never loosened.

For some years Helenetta Maria's chief interests lay in her young family, and in the amusements of a gay and brilliant court. She loved to be present at dramatic entertainment, and her participation in the private rehearsals of the *Shepherd's Pastoral*, written by her favourite Walter Montague, probably drew down upon her the savage attack of *Pyrrhus*. With political matters she hardly meddled as yet. Even her co-religionists found little aid from her till the summer of 1637. She had then recently opened a diplomatic communication with the see of Rome. She appointed an agent to reside at Rome, and a papal agent, a Scotchman named Con, accredited to her, was soon engaged in effecting conversions amongst the English gentry and nobility. Helenetta Maria was well pleased to become a patroness of so holy a work, especially as she was not asked to take any personal trouble in the matter. Protestant England took alarm at the proceedings of a queen who associated herself so closely with the doings of "the grim wolf with purry paw."

When the Scottish troubles broke out, she raised money from her fellow Catholics to support the king's army on the border. In 1639. During the session of the Short Parliament in the spring of 1640, the queen urged the king to oppose himself to the House of Commons in defence of the Catholics. When the Long Parliament met, the Catholics were believed to be the authors and agents of every arbitrary scheme which was supposed to have entered into the plans of Strafford or Laud. Before the Long Parliament had sat for two months, the queen was urging upon the pope the duty of lending money to enable her to restore her husband's authority. She threw herself heart and soul into the schemes for raising Strafford and coercing the parliament. The army plot, the scheme for using Scotland against England, and the attempt upon the five members were the fruit of her political activity.

In the next year the queen effected her passage to the Continent. In February 1643 she landed at Buntingford Quay, placed herself at the head of a force of royalists, and marched thence through England to join the king near Oxford. After little more than a year's residence there, on April

3, 1644, she left her husband to see his face no more. At Easter she gave birth to her youngest child, who was one day to be duchess of Orleans, and to negotiate the treaty of Dover. Helenetta Maria found a refuge in France. Richelieu was dead, and Anne of Austria was compassionate. As long as her husband was alive the queen never ceased to encourage him to resistance.

During her exile in France she had much to suffer. Her husband's execution in 1649 was a terrible blow. She brought up her youngest child, Henrietta in her own faith, but her efforts to induce her youngest son, the duke of Gloucester, to take the same course only produced discomfort in the exiled family. The story of her marriage with her actual servant Lord Fernyn needs more confirmation than it has yet received to be accepted, but all the information which has reached us of her relations with her children points to the estrangement which had grown up between them. When after the Restoration she returned to England, she found that she had no place in the new world. She received from parliament a grant of £20,000 a year in compensation for the loss of her dower-lands, and the king added a similar sum as a pension for herself. In January 1661 she returned to France to be present at the marriage of her daughter Henrietta to the duke of Orleans. In July 1662 she set out again for England, and took up her residence once more at Somerset House. Her health failed her, and on June 24, 1666, she departed in search of the climate of her native country. She died on August 31, 1666, at Calombe, not far from Paris.

HENRY I. (1068-1135), king of England, fourth and youngest son of William the Conqueror and Matilda of Flanders, was born some time in the autumn of 1068. Local tradition fixes his birthplace at Solby in Yorkshire. Little is known of his earlier life, except that he received an unusually good education, and attained a proficiency rare among the princes of his day. In 1086 he was dubbed knight. Next year his father bequeathed to him on his death-bed a sum of five thousand pounds, and he said to have foretold that he would eventually be king. Condemned, by the division of the Conqueror's territories, to a position of inferiority to his two brothers, he used his legacy to improve that position. Robert, being in need of money, sold him the districts of the Cotentin and the Avranchin, which he held of his brother as a fief. His relations with Robert were not always friendly, but he defended Normandy against Rufus, and aided his liege lord in putting down a revolt in Rouen. Nevertheless, in the treaty between William and Robert made in 1091, he was excluded from the succession, and soon afterwards was deprived of his lands in Normandy.

The treatment he met with from Robert was not likely to make him support the terms of the treaty of 1091. Immediately after the death of Rufus, he rode to Winchester, and seized the royal hoard in that city. Next day (August 3, 1100) he was elected king by such of the witan as were present, and on Sunday, August 6th, he was crowned at Westminster. In order to conciliate the clergy and the nation, he recalled Anselm, imprisoned Ranulf Flambard, and issued a comprehensive charter of liberties. Before the year was out he married Matilda, daughter of Malcolm and Margaret, and great-granddaughter of Edmund Ironside, a step which greatly strengthened his otherwise insecure title to the crown. The alliance thus contracted with the church and the nation was his constant support in the struggle with his brother and his unruly vassals, which began immediately. It resulted in the conquest of Normandy, the temporary suppression of feudalism, and the consolidation of royal power on both sides of the Channel. Robert, as soon as he returned from the Holy Land, attempted with the aid of a conspiracy in

England to wrest the crown from the usurper. He landed at Portsmouth (August 1, 1101), but before a blow was struck the brother came to terms. Robert recognized Henry as king of England, and returned to Normandy. Henry's vengeance fell upon his brother's partisans, and Robert of Belesme and several others were banished from the country and lost their English estates. Secure in England, Henry carried the war into the enemy's country. His brother's misgovernment gave him both pretext and opportunity. After two or three expeditions, the struggle was brought to a close by the battle of Tenchebraie (September 28, 1106), in which Robert was taken prisoner. He remained in captivity till his death in 1134, and Normandy passed into the possession of the English king. This conquest at once brought Henry into collision with France. Louis the Fat was a constant supporter of Henry's rebellious vassals, and of his rival and nephew, William, son of Robert. Henceforward Henry had to spend most of his time in the duchy. A war with France (1111-1113) ended in a peace which brought some advantages to Henry. Louis gave up his claim to the sovereignty of Maine and Brittany, and Henry was able to carry his old opponent, Robert of Belesme, to England, where he was imprisoned for the rest of his life. Henry had already, though in vain, attempted to secure the aid of Flanders by two treaties with Count Robert (1103, 1108), but the emperor, a mightier ally in the emperor, Henry V., to whom he married his daughter, Matilda (January 7, 1114). Another war with France, which broke out in 1116, and in which Louis took up the cause of William, son of Robert, against his uncle, was marked by the battle of Noyon (1119). At a council at Rheims (1119) Louis accused Henry before Pope Calixtus of rebellion and usurpation. Henry, however, pleaded his own cause before the pope at Gisors so persuasively that Calixtus brought about a peace between the two kings (1120) on the basis of a mutual restoration of conquests. During the war Henry had suffered a severe loss in the death of his queen Matilda. He now felt it more than ever necessary to take measures for securing the succession to his only son William. The barons of Normandy and England were made to do homage to the young prince (1119), who shortly afterwards married Matilda, daughter of Fulk of Anjou, an alliance by which Henry hoped to turn a dangerous foe into a firm friend, and to secure at least the chance of a rich inheritance. All these hopes were, however, shattered by the death of William (1120). Deprived of an heir to his throne, Henry now married Adeliza, daughter of Godfrey, count of Louvain (1121), but this marriage unfortunately proved childless. Shortly afterwards another rebellion, headed by Count Waleran of Meulan, broke out in Normandy (1123). The rebels were emboldened by the assault upon the king of France and the count of Anjou, but were entirely defeated at Boughtheuoult (1124). The terrible vengeance taken by Henry on this occasion, together with the death of William, son of Robert, in 1128, seems to have finally crushed the opposition in Normandy. The death of Duke Robert in 1134 removed the last object round which the schemes of rebellion or the intrigues of France could centre. Meanwhile Henry had recalled his daughter, Matilda, now a widow, from Germany. In default of an heir to the throne, he made the widow swear to accept her as Lady of England and Normandy (Christmas 1126). Next year he gave her in marriage to Geoffrey, son of Fulk, count of Anjou, hoping thereby to secure the objects frustrated by the death of his son Fulk, however, thwarted the immediate success of these schemes.

The annals of England, after the expulsion of Robert of Belesme, are uneventful. In his ecclesiastical policy Henry, without giving up the control over the church which

his father had asserted, was forced to recognize to a certain extent the advancing claims of Rome. His disputes with Anselm were conducted with good temper on both sides, and was brought to a satisfactory conclusion. Anselm had made no objection to the ecclesiastical supremacy claimed by Rufus, but the decrees of the Lateran Council (1059) obliged him to insist a similar claim when put forward by Henry I. He refused to do homage to his new king, or to consecrate the bishops whom Henry invested, according to ancient custom, with the symbols of ecclesiastical dignity. Neither side would give way. Henry continued to make bishops as before, and Anselm refused to consecrate them. In 1103 he left England. For the next three years the affairs of Normandy hindered the settlement of the question, but a compromise was effected in 1107. The pope, Paschal II., consented that homage should be done to the king, while Henry gave up his claim to investiture with the ring and staff. The question thus settled was not reopened till the days of Becket. In other respects Henry acquiesced in the tendency of the time towards ecclesiastical separatism, and countenanced the decrees of the synod of 1103, which forbade the marriage of the clergy and the tenure of temporal offices by ecclesiastics. He showed his care for the church by the establishment of two new sees, those of Ely (1109) and Carlisle (1113), taken respectively from the unwieldy dioceses of Lincoln and York. In the old quarrel between York and Canterbury, Henry supported the claims of the southern metropolitan against Archbishop Thurstan. On Anselm's death, Henry was guilty of leaving the see vacant for five years, but in his other dealings with the church he seems to have been actuated by worthy motives. He refused, however, to open her high places to Englishmen, and till near the end of his reign no native attained the dignity of prelate. The same exclusive spirit made itself felt in the appointments to temporal office. But although political liberty and influence were not given to Englishmen under Henry I., the English nation as a whole acquiesced gladly in his rule. Its chief wants were justice and order, and protection from feudal tyranny, and these blessings it obtained. The necessities of his position compelled Henry to rely mainly on his English subjects. As a counterpoise to the local influence of the baronage, he did his best to restore to activity the old popular institutions of the hundred and the county-court, of tithings and frankpledge, of watch and ward. His frequent progresses through the country, for judicial and other purposes, form a link between the annual courts held by the Conqueror and the regular circuits of the justices established by Henry II. In the administration of justice and the toils of government he relied on new men, raised from the ranks and dependent on himself for their position. The older baronage he habitually depressed, and every unsuccessful rebellion thinned the ranks of the feudal nobility, while it tightened the link between the king and the nation.

Thus secure at home, Henry was dreaded by his neighbours within the four seas. Over Scotland, Ireland, and Wales a sort of ecclesiastical supremacy was recognized. On the northern frontier there was peace throughout the reign, on the western there was more disturbance. Henry settled a colony of Flemings in Pembroke (1111), and made two expeditions into Wales (1114, 1121), in one of which he received the submission of several Welsh princes. The profound peace which England enjoyed for a period of thirty-four years is the best testimony to Henry's merits as a king. As a man his character was not admirable, not yet wholly to be condemned. He was harsh, merciless, and unforgiving, but not wantonly cruel. He sometimes displayed a grim humour which reminds one of his father, but he never gave way to the vices and brutality of Rufus, nor to the jovial good-humour which was so winning in his

eldest brother. Regarded as the "Lion of Justice" by his people, and bitterly regretted after he was gone, he was not a popular king. He died, after bequeathing his crown to his daughter Matilda, near Rouen (December 1, 1135). His body was carried to England, and buried in the abbey he had founded at Reading.

The following general authorities may be consulted for this and the next five reigns but not noted—*Statutes of the Realm*, Rymers *Flores*, the *Pope's Letters*, *Chronicon*, *Rolls*, *Liberum Portus* and *Clare* &c (ed. Hartley), Lappenberg and Pauli, *Geschichte von England*, Stubbs, *Constitutional History of England*, Stubbs, *Do univ. illustratio of English History* (for Henry I, II, III), Lingard, *History of England*, Clarendon, *History of the English People*.

For this reign, original authorities—*Anglo Saxon Chronicle*, Florence of Worcester, *Chronicon ex Chronica*, with its continuations, Simon of Dunham, *De Rebus Anglorum*, &c., Gislebertus Vitalis, *Historia Ecclesiarum*, William of Malmesbury, *Gesta Pontificum Anglorum*, Gesta Regum Anglorum, and *Historia Novella*, *hulmii*, *Vita Henrici* and *Historia Novissima*, Robert du Mont, *Chronica*, and continuation of William of Jumièges, the *Magnus Rotulus Scelerum*, 1133 A D (ed. Hunter).

Also a authorities—Freeman, *History of the Norman Conquest*, vol. v., Church, *Life of Anselm*, Palgrave, *History of Normandy and England* (G W P).

HENRY I (1133-1189), king of England, son of Geoffrey, count of Anjou, and Matilda, daughter of Henry I, was born at Le Mans, March 6, 1133. He was left in France during the first part of his mother's struggle with Stephen, but was sent over to England in 1141. There he remained four years, in the charge of his uncle, Robert of Gloucester. In 1147 he took a more active part in the war, but was not successful. He now sought the aid of David, king of Scotland, and was knighted by him (1149), but nothing came of the alliance with that prince. On his return to Normandy (1151), Louis VII conferred the duchy upon him, and later in the year he became, by his father's death, count of Anjou. In 1162 he married Eleanor of Aquitaine, and added Poitou and Guienne to his dominions. He again went to England in 1153, and the great position he had won on the Continent turned the scale in his favor. After a short struggle Stephen consented to negotiate by the treaty of Winchester (November 7, 1153) it was settled, among other things, that Stephen should reign undisturbed during the rest of his life, and that Henry should succeed him. A year later Stephen died, and Henry took quiet possession of the throne. He was crowned on December 19, 1154, and at once issued a charter of liberties, in which he confirmed the liberties of Henry I.

His reign falls into three main sections. During the first Henry was occupied in restoring and maintaining order. The second is that of the quarrel with Becket. The third is for the most part a period of rebellion and trouble, the consequences of that quarrel. Henry's first business was to fulfil the promises made in the treaty of Winchester, and to undo the work of his predecessor. Several of Stephen's ordinances were abolished, new sheriffs were appointed, the adulterous castles destroyed, the royal domains recovered. In this task the king met with little serious opposition, and his presence generally sufficed to ensure success. In 1166 Henry was able to go to France, where his brother Geoffrey was causing trouble by his claims on Anjou. He had to subdue him by force of arms, after which he allowed him to be chosen count of Nantes. He then exacted homage from his Continental vassals, and himself did homage to Louis VII. At Easter 1167 he returned to England, to complete the restoration of order there. Those of the great barons who had not yet given up their castles had now to do so, and the king of Scotland surrendered the three northern counties. An unsuccessful expedition to Wales followed. In 1168, on his brother Geoffrey's death, Henry secured his inheritance. At the same time he betrothed his second son Henry (the eldest, William, being dead) to Margaret, daughter of Louis. Next year he made an attack

upon Toulouse, which he claimed in right of his wife, but after some successes retired, owing to the opposition of the French king. In a peace made soon after, he retained Cahors, but gave up his claim to the rest of the county. Hostilities between him and Louis were, however, more or less continuous during this time, in spite of the efforts of Alexander III. In January 1163 Henry returned to England after five years' absence, and his quarrel with Becket immediately began.

Becket had been consecrated archbishop of Canterbury in June 1162. He at once resigned his temporal offices, and demanded the restitution of lands alienated from his see. At a council at Woodstock he refused to pay the tax of two shillings per hide demanded by the king. A little later the struggle was removed to still more dangerous ground. Becket refused his consent to the king's proposal for settling the dispute between the temporal and spiritual courts. Upon this Henry asked him and the bishops whether they would abide by the ancient customs of the realm. So vague a question met with an evasive answer. The bishops would only consent "saving their order." However, at the council of Clarendon (January 1164) the disputed customs were drawn up in the form of sixteen constitutions, and after considerable hesitation accepted by Becket. He nevertheless got abolition from the pope, who refused to confirm the constitutions. Henry now attacked Becket with a series of charges connected with his chancellorship, the result of which the latter evaded by leaving England. Henry took possession of the see, and expelled Becket's friends and relations. The greater part of the next five years he spent abroad. During this time he was occupied in maintaining order among his newly vassals, checking the intrigues of Louis, and negotiating with the pope. He also obtained possession of Brittany for his son Geoffrey, and betrothed Richard to Alice, daughter of Louis. With the object of securing the succession he had his son Henry crowned by the archbishop of York at Westminster (June 1170). The young king's wife was not crowned with him. Louis, taking this as an insult, invaded Normandy, and only made peace with Henry on condition that he would restore Becket to favor. A meeting between the king and the archbishop ended in a compromise, and the latter returned to England. His first step was to suspend the archbishop of York and other bishops who had taken part in the coronation of the young king, and Henry, on hearing of this, uttered the angry words that led to Becket's murder. The pope was, however, in too critical a position to quarrel seriously with Henry. Negotiations between them ended in a meeting with the legates at Avranches (1172), in which Henry received absolution, and promised to abolish all the bad customs introduced during his reign. He had employed the interval in making an expedition to Ireland, and appropriating the conquest made by Strongbow a few years before.

The ecclesiastical quarrel seemed to have died away, but its consequences were felt in the great rebellion of 1173. A confederacy was organized by the French king, the count of Flanders, the king of Scotland, and Henry's sons, with the object of placing the young Henry on his father's throne. The first campaign was indecisive, but on the whole favorable to the king. In view of a general attack which was to be made next year, Henry crossed over to England and did penance at Becket's tomb. Fortunately his justice, De Lucy, captured the Scotch king at Alnwick, and the rebellion in England was speedily put down. William the Lion was forced to buy his release by doing homage to Henry, the other confederates made peace, and Henry was left stronger than ever. He at once proceeded to secure his position by further legislative enactments, and henceforward he had no trouble in England. But he was



involved in constant difficulties with his sons and with the French king, owing to the mutual jealousies of the former and the intrigues of the latter, to which Henry's partiality for his youngest son John and his refusal to allow the marriage of Richard with Alice gave rise. A war between the brothers in 1183 was brought to an end by the death of the young Henry in the same year. The feud broke out again in 1184, and continued at intervals, in spite of the death of Geoffrey in 1186, to the end of the reign. At length Henry's apparent intention to name John as his successor forced Richard to ally himself with Philip II., and in the war that followed Henry was beaten at all points. He was forced to make a disgraceful peace, the terms of which, together with the discovery that John was among his enemies, broke his heart. He died at Chinon, July 6, 1189, and was buried at Fontevraud.

Henry's legislative activity, which was great and constant, deserves special notice. His aim was the consolidation of royal power by means of a centralized system of justice and administration. The Constitutions of Clarendon were an essential part of this scheme, designed to bring the clergy, as well as other classes of the nation, under the rule of law, and to prevent an ecclesiastical "imperium in imperio." Other enactments, as the Assize of Clarendon (1166), were intended to perfect the judicial system and to supersede the baronial by the royal courts. The system of recognition by jury took the place of trial by battle. The grand jury was organized for the presentation of criminals for trial. The jury system was further employed for the inquiry into the conduct of the sheriffs (1170), and for the assessment of the Saladin tithe (1188). The counts of the justices itinerant were, after repeated experiments, brought to something like perfection, and a high court of justice formed out of the Curia Regis, which was the origin of the Court of King's Bench. By the commutation of feudal services for scutage, and by the Assize of Arms (1181), which revived the national militia, Henry made himself independent of the baronage, and formed that alliance between king and people which was the surest basis of his power. Whatever may be said against his private character, the wisdom and steadiness with which he pursued these aims, and the permanence of the mark that he left upon the constitution, secure him the title of a great king.

*Original authorities*—William of Newburgh, *Historia R. Henrici Anglicani*, Ralph de Diceto, *Ingenium Historiarum*, Geoffrey of Monmouth, *Chronicon ad. C.*, *Chronicle of Benedict* (it is brought (so called), Roger of Hoveden, *Annals Anglie*, Jordan Fantosme, *Historia de la Guerre*, &c., Gualdus Cambrensis, *Expugnatio Iwerne*, *Historia de la Guerre*, &c., Ralph Glanville, *Tractatus de Legibus*, &c., Walter Map, *De Nugis Antiquum*, &c., *Letters and Lives of Becket* (ed. Giles), Robert de Mont, *Chronica*, *Dialogus de Scaccario*, the *Pope Rolls*.

*Modern authorities*—Stubbs, *Preface* to Benedict of Peterborough and Roger of Howden, *Robertson's Life of Becket*, Eyton's *Itinerary of Henry II.* (G. W. P.)

HENRY III. (1207–1272), king of England, eldest son of John and Isabella, was born on October 1, 1207, and was just nine years old on his father's death. Ten days after that event he was crowned at Gloucester (October 28, 1210). His long reign falls into four periods,—that of the regency, ending with the fall of De Buig, that of government by favourites, which led to the Mad Parliament, the period of the Barons' War, and the short period between the close of the war and Henry's death. At his accession the whole country was in rebellion, and Louis with his Frenchmen held the east and south. In this crisis it was fortunate that the government fell into the hands of such a man as William Marshall, and that the pope gave him all the assistance in his power. The acceptance of the charter at once recalled many to their allegiance, and the defeat and retirement of Louis broke up the opposition. The charter was confirmed (1217) and order rapidly restored. The legate

Guoaid aided the earl marshal and Archbishop Langton in the work. On Marshall's death (1219) Pandulf took Guoaid's place, and asserted the papal authority in a way which obliged Langton to make a personal protest at Rome. Pandulf was recalled, and Hubert de Buig, the justiciar, ruled with Langton till the latter's death (1228), and alone afterwards. The influence of Peter des Roches, bishop of Winchester, the head of the foreign party and guardian of the king's person, was successfully resisted. Meanwhile a last outbreak of pure feudalism under Falkes de Breauc was put down, and the charter again issued in its final shape (1227). But the worst plague of the reign, the influence of foreign favourites, had already made itself felt, while another great evil, the financial exactions of Rome, was causing much discontent. An expedition to Poitou, opposed by De Buig, caused the first quarrel between him and the king. Shortly afterwards Peter des Roches returned from a temporary banishment, and gained such influence over Henry that he dismissed De Buig with insult and ingratitude (1232). From this point his real reign may be said to have begun.

The bad promise of his youth was amply redeemed in the events of the next twenty-six years. Under the influence of Peter des Roches, foreigners began to flock to the court, and even foreign mercenarism was introduced into England. Richard, earl marshal, who openly rebuked the king for this conduct, was outlawed, but other barons took up his cause, and collisions between them and the king's troops took place. Civil war appeared imminent, when Archbishop Edmund persuaded Henry to dismiss Peter des Roches, and the danger was avoided for the time (1234). But the king's partiality for foreigners was a constant source of discontent. In 1236 he married Eleanor of Provence. Two uncles of the queen, William, bishop of Valence, and Peter of Savoy, came over with her, and were immediately placed in positions of honour and emolument. In 1238 Henry married his sister Eleanor to Simon de Montfort, an event which nearly produced an outbreak. Resistance directly ensued in the Great Council, which in 1239 had declined "to change the laws of England," and supported the bishop of Chichester in his refusal to give up the great seal at the king's demand. Henry's personal extravagance caused him much embarrassment, and the extortions of the papal see pressed heavily on the church. In 1242 the barons refused to give the aid demanded by the king for another expedition to Poitou, and when they met again after his return, they joined with the clergy in a general protest against his misgovernment (1244). In order to remedy this, "state of things," it was proposed that the king's advisers should be chosen by the parliament, as it now began to be called, but Henry found means of evading the demand. His brother Richard, earl of Cornwall, had been the leader of the opposition, but Simon de Montfort, earl of Leicester, was now becoming the centre of constitutional resistance. In 1246 the king's stepfather, the count of La Marche, died, and Henry's half-brother came to England, bringing with him a fresh crowd of hungry followers. The demands made upon the great cities, especially London, upon the Jews, and upon the clergy, to meet the expenses caused by the king's favourites, were constantly on the increase. Owing to the cessation of the office of justiciar since the fall of De Buig, the judicial system was falling into decay, and crimes of all kinds were rampant. At the same time the pope, engaged in his great struggle with Frederick II., regarded England as an "inextinguishable spring of wealth," and redoubled his demands. He won over most of the bishops by supporting them in their claim to inspect the monastic houses in their dioceses, and the church, deprived of its natural head,—for Boniface, an uncle of the queen, was archbishop of Canterbury,—was disunited and helpless.

Grosseteste, bishop of Lincoln, was almost alone in his efforts to follow in the steps of Stephen Langton. He and De Montfort were at one in their desire for reform, but the nation was not yet ready. Two mistakes on the part of Henry brought matters to a crisis. He had conferred the government of Gascony on De Montfort in 1248, and the latter had reduced the province to obedience. But accusations made against him found ready audience with the king, who feared and disliked his brother-in-law. The result was a bitter quarrel (1252), which Henry followed up by superseding De Montfort in his government, and sending his eldest son Edward to take his place. This had the effect of throwing the civil war once for all into the arms of the national party. A little later an event occurred which forced that party to take active measures. The pope persuaded Henry to accept the kingdom of Sicily for his second son Edmund, and to bind himself to pay the expenses of its conquest, together with a large debt already incurred (1255). This important scheme was entered into without the knowledge of the parliament, and the nation suddenly found itself pledged to an undertaking which had purely dynastic or papal objects. The coalition of pope and king produced a corresponding union of the church and the baronage, and the troubles of the year 1257, Scotch and Welsh invasions, together with a failure of the harvest, united the nation against the government.

A parliament which met at Westminster (April 1258) forced Henry to promise reform, and elected a committee of twenty-four to act for the king till a complete scheme could be drawn up. On June 11th the assembly, called afterwards the Mad Parliament, met at Oxford. A council of fifteen, of whom two-thirds were on the baronial side, was appointed, who, together with twelve representative members of the "community" were to take charge of the government and meet in parliament thrice a year. Hugh Bigod was named justiciar, other offices were filled up, the castles were entrusted to Englishmen, and four knights were summoned from each county to decide grievances. These reforms, together with certain general enactments, went by the name of the Provisions of Oxford. The king's authority was completely superseded, and the rule of a baronial oligarchy established. Next year, owing to the demands of the knighthood, who felt themselves neglected, a further series of Provisions was issued. The Sicilian project was formally repudiated, and a final peace made with France, in which the claim on Normandy and other districts was renounced. But beyond this the baronial Government did nothing. The nation testified its disappointment, and a quarrel took place between the earls of Leicester and Gloucester which divided the baronial party. The king took advantage of this state of affairs, and in 1261 obtained absolution from the Provisions at the hands of the pope. He then fortified the Tower, deposed the baronial justiciar, and soon began to rule as before. In this crisis the baronial party made a bid for popular favour by summoning representatives of the counties to a parliament, but the reaction was for the time complete, and Henry had leisure to go to France in order to win over Louis IX. to his side. In 1263 hostilities broke out on the Welsh border, and the barons seized the opportunity to renew their attack on the king. After some months of desultory warfare, it was agreed to submit to the arbitration of Louis. That king, in the *Miroir des Amours*, decided in favour of Henry, and annulled the Provisions. Leicester at once appealed to arms. The battle of Lewes (May 14, 1264) was a complete victory for him, and put the king and his eldest son into his hands. For a time he was master of the country, but the party he headed was not that which had been dominant six years before, and Henry now had many adherents among the

greater barons. Nevertheless, for more than a year he remained practically a prisoner in the hands of De Montfort. At a parliament which met in June 1264, and at which knights of the shire were certainly present, a constitution was drawn up, which, while preserving to the king a high position as head of the executive, placed supreme power in the hands of the "community." Early next year, in a parliament to which members from the boroughs as well as from the counties were summoned, this constitution was confirmed, and Henry swore to observe it. In accordance with the settlement made at Lewes, Edward was now to be released. His father was already supposed to be at liberty, but in reality both he and Edward were kept in constant Edward's escape (May 1265) caused an immediate renewal of the war, and at the battle of Evesham (August 4, 1265) De Montfort was killed and Henry set free. Two years later the war was practically concluded by the capture of Kenilworth. Henry had little to do with the conduct of the war, and acquiesced in the arrangements made by his son for the pacification of the country. His triumph was, however, complete, and for the rest of his reign the kingdom was at peace. He died on November 16, 1272, leaving behind him the memory of one whose virtues were of the pleasantly kind, and whose worst vices were those of indulgence, ill-temper, and prodigality. As a subject he would have been harmless, and even perhaps respectable, as a king he was weak, hasty, imprudent, equally incapable in the position of a ruler, an administrator, or a general.

*Original Authorities*—Roger of Wendover, *Flower of Histories*, Matthew Paris, *Historia Major* (with its *Addenda*), and *Historia Minor*, William Rishanger, *Continuation of Matt Paris*, and *De duobus Bellis*, &c., the *Annals* of Burton, Dunstun, Twinesbury, Waverley, Merton, and other places, Thomas Walsley, *Chronicon*, Nicolas Trevet, *Annals*, Walter of Gilmarie (of Hennebungh), *Chronicon*, Dacotus, *De Regibus Anglie*, Robert of Gloucestre, *Chronicon*, *Regal Letters* (ed. Simkins), *Letters of Gloucester* (ed. Leach), *Norman and Plantagenet* (ed. Bunt), *Letters of Antiquary Scripps* (Camd Soc.), *Political Songs* (ed. Wright).

*Modern Authorities*—*Transactions of the History of England*, vol. II, *Henry's Barons' War*, *Frederick's Life and Times of Simon de Montfort*, *Paul's Simon de Montfort*, *Brown's Preface to Henry's Barons' War*, *Lewis's Preface to Letters of Gloucester*. (G. W. F.)

HENRY IV. (1366-1413), king of England, only son of John of Gaunt and Blanche, daughter of Henry, duke of Lancaster, was born in 1366. At the age of fifteen he married Mary Bohun, and in 1385 was made earl of Derby. Two years later he was one of the five lords appellants who impeached the earl of Suffolk and others, and took part in the proceedings of the Merciless Parliament. He acquiesced, however, in Richard's return to power, supported the king in his coup d'état of 1397, and became duke of Hereford. His quarrel with the duke of Norfolk led to his banishment shortly afterwards, and on his father's death Richard denied him the succession to his title and inheritance (1398). Next year he took advantage of Richard's absence in Ireland to reassert his rights. He landed in Yorkshire, took Bristol, and seized Richard (August 19) near Conway Castle. At a parliament which met on September 30th, he claimed the throne on the ground of his descent from Henry III., the right of conquest, and the necessity of reform. He was accepted by the parliament, Richard was forced to abdicate, and Henry was crowned (October 13, 1399). The list of his three claims gives the explanation of his policy. He had won the favour of the church by pledges in favour of orthodoxy, the circumstances of his accession and the difficulties of his government forced him to make concessions to the House of Commons, which raised that body to a position it did not again attain for more than two centuries. The first part of his reign was occupied with the suppression of the revolt, not only of the defeated party, but also of his own discontented adherents. These troubles were complicated by hostile relations with

France, Scotland, and Wales. Charles VI was inclined to take up the cause of his daughter Isabella, wife of Richard II, and on the death of the latter (February 1400) demanded her and her dowry back. The duke of Albany in Scotland was hostile to Henry, and Owen Glendower raised a national revolt in Wales. The first attempt at insurrection was made by the earls of Richard's party early in 1400, but their plans were discovered, and their forces crushed piecemeal. Most of the leaders fell victims to popular vengeance. A more serious rebellion was that of the Percies (1403), hitherto Henry's staunchest supporters. Hotspur and his father thought themselves ill requited for their services, and made common cause with Glendower and other malcontents. A junction of the northern army with the Welsh was prevented by the battle of Shrewsbury (July 21, 1403), in which Hotspur was killed. Northumberland submitted and was pardoned. But the danger was not over. The north was still in a state of ferment, the war in Wales went on, and a French fleet ravaged the southern coast with impunity. Henry's vigilance and activity were, however, equal to the task. A plot to carry off the young earl of March (January 1405) was foiled, and a fresh outbreak in the north was crushed. Scrope, archbishop of York, and Mowbray, earl marshal, who led the rebels, were taken and executed. The king had already got into his power the son of the duke of Albany, he now captured James, the heir apparent to the Scotch crown, as he was on his way to France, and the murder of the duke of Orleans removed his chief enemy in that country. Thus secured from danger abroad, he put down a final rebellion in the north, drove Glendower back into his mountains, and henceforward had no trouble at home (1408). The late crisis had, however, compelled him to make important concessions to the House of Commons. He promised (1407) to act solely by the advice of a council nominated with their approval, and submitted to the appropriation of his revenue and to other limitations. Throughout his reign he was hampered by want of money, and the regular evasions by parliament of the right to withhold supplies gave that body great control over his actions. He had saved the crown as the champion of orthodoxy. He had therefore to pay for ecclesiastical support by presenting Lollards against his will, while he did not dare to act upon the suggestion of the Commons that church property should be converted to purposes of state. Thus limited, his foreign policy was not energetic. He had enough to do at first to defend his coasts, and though he afterwards seized the opportunity afforded by civil war to invade France (1411), his efforts were in general confined to strengthening his dynasty by foreign marriages. In his later years he was a confirmed invalid, and had to entrust much power to his eldest son, with whom he was not always on the best of terms. He died on March 30, 1413, and was buried at Canterbury. A cautious, crafty, resolute man, naturally inclined to fair dealing and clemency, but on occasion unscrupulous and cruel, he was successful in the great enterprise of his life, and has the credit of seeing that the power he had usurped could only maintain itself by resting on a constitutional basis.

**HENRY V (1387-1422)**, king of England, eldest son of Henry IV, and Mary Bohun, was born August 19, 1387. Early bled to arms, his first military effort was not successful, for at the age of thirteen he commanded an expedition to Wales which was defeated by Glendower. Three years later he was present at the battle of Shrewsbury, and in 1408 he revengeful himself on Glendower by driving him back to Snowdon. At the same time his position in the council, at the head of which he appears after 1410, gave him experience in affairs, and proves the confidence already felt in his political ability. The stories of his youthful extravagance

and dissoluteness are unfounded, and, as the above facts show, improbable. Although his father appears to have been jealous of his popularity, he was practically at the head of affairs for some years before the death of Henry IV. Three weeks after that event he was crowned (April 9, 1413), and entered upon his inheritance with the good will of all classes of the nation. So unanimous was the support he met with in parliament that constitutional affairs cease to have any interest during his reign. In his ecclesiastical policy he followed the lines laid down in 1101, with much greater heartiness than his father had shown. His persecution of heretics caused a conspiracy to surprise him and his brothers, which was discovered and put down with some severity (January 1414). St John Old castle, the head of the Lollards, was condemned to be burnt, and though he escaped for the time, he was again taken in 1417, and put to death. Henry's orthodoxy brought him into connexion with the emperor Sigismund, then engaged in settling the affairs of the church at the council of Constance, and his assistance was very instrumental in the healing of the great schism. But the great work of his life was the conquest of France. It was with this object that he issued a kind of general amnesty on his accession, and appealed to the nation as a whole to support him. War was resolved on by parliament, and the king had claim to the French crown. This demand was afterwards reduced to one for all the districts which the English kings had ever held in France. Such claims as these, of course, precluded all negotiation. The expedition was not delayed by a conspiracy to carry off the earl of March, which was discovered before it was ripe, and on August 14, 1415, the English army landed at Havre. Harfleur was soon taken, but the English losses were so great that Henry resolved to retreat to Calais. On October 25th the French army that opposed his march was cut to pieces at Agincourt. The next two years were spent in preparations for continuing the war. In 1417 Henry again invaded France, took Rouen (1419), and with the assistance of the Burgundian party forced Charles VI to grant his demands. By the treaty of Troyes (1420) it was arranged that he should marry Catherine, take the government in hand at once, and succeed on Charles's death. This disgraceful treaty had, however, the effect of reviving the national party in France, and during Henry's absence in 1421 the English began to lose ground. He hurried back to France, but before he had had time to recover his position, he died at the castle of Vincennes, August 31, 1422. A great soldier, an able politician, a skilful diplomatist, a generous, pure, and high-minded man, he was one of the noblest and most popular of English kings. But these good qualities should not blind one to the fact that he was a religious persecutor, and that he plunged his country into an unjust and hopeless war.

**HENRY VI (1421-1471)**, king of England, only son of Henry V and Catherine of France, was born on December 6, 1421, and was therefore only eight months old at his father's death. He can hardly be said ever to have reigned, for his long minority passed into another kind of tutelage, during which the influence of his wife and favourites prepared the way for civil war. Ten years of anarchy culminated in his dethronement, and ten years more of wandering and imprisonment fill the interval between that event and his death. The chief interest of the first thirty years of his life lies in watching the decay of English power in France, that of the last twenty in the fact that the civil wars which resulted from the misgovernment of the preceding period. Although the English had lost some ground towards the end of Henry V's reign, their position, when the duke of Bedford undertook the task of continuing his brother's work, was very favourable. They held the north

and centre of France, while Burgundy held the eastern districts. The alliance with Duke Philip was strengthened by a marriage between his sister Anne and the duke of Bedford. The Scotch king, James I, was released from captivity, in order that England might be relieved from danger on that side. Thus strengthened, Bedford was able to apply himself vigorously to the conquest of France, towards which the battle of Verneuil (1424) was an important step. But the English cause had already received its first great blow in the marriage of the duke of Gloucester with Jacqueline of Hainault, which destroyed the good understanding between Burgundy and England. Bedford for the time managed to stave off the quarrel, and after renewing his union with Burgundy, laid siege to Orleans, the key of southern France. The capture of the town seemed certain, when the appearance of Joan of Arc turned the scale. The relief of Orleans (1429) was followed by other French successes, and by the coronation of Charles VII at Rheims. The capture of Joan did little for England, for the spirit she had inspired survived her loss, and her death (May 1431) only moved the French to fresh efforts. It was in vain that Bedford had Henry crowned at Paris (December 17, 1431). The young king remained in France nearly two years (April 1430 to February 1432), but his presence did not turn the tide of French success. On the side of England the supply of men and money was falling short, while on that of France a new type of commander was coming to the front, who were not inclined to repeat the disastrous blunders of Crecy and Agincourt. The death of Bedford's wife (November 1432) broke the link that bound Burgundy to England, and negotiations for peace were set on foot. These culminated in a great congress at Arras (July 1435), but the demands of the two countries were found incompatible, and the war was renewed. Bedford's death (September 14, 1435) finally destroyed all hope of recovery in France. Burgundy at once made peace with Charles VII, and the English commanders who succeeded Bedford were constantly defeated. Paris was retaken, Normandy overrun. Repeated efforts on the part of England led only to further exhaustion. Meanwhile negotiations for peace had been continued at intervals, and led in 1444 to a truce, during which Henry was married (April 23, 1445) to Margaret, daughter of René of Anjou. It was hoped that this marriage, together with the cession of Anjou and Maine, would lead to a permanent peace, and save Normandy and Guienne. But though Anjou and Maine were actually surrendered in 1448, the truce was broken next year, and before the end of 1450 the whole of Normandy was lost. In 1451 Guienne was reconquered by the French, and in 1453 Calais alone remained to England. This was practically an end.

Its conclusion coincides with the period when the two parties that divided England were just about to appeal to arms. The civil war was in great measure the result of the defects abroad, as those defects themselves were in part the consequence of discord at home. Quarrels between the chief members of the reigning house were the origin of its weakness, financial embarrassment, a divided foreign policy, and a feeble administration brought disgrace on the king and his advisers, family feuds and a long tale of mutual injuries added bitterness to political differences. Eventually an outburst of popular discontent kindled the train so long prepared, and the champion of order and good government began a struggle in which the original objects were soon lost sight of, and which ended only with the death of the king whose innocent imbecility had caused the disorder. To check the rivalry of Henry's uncle, the duke of Gloucester, and his great-uncle, Cardinal Beaufort, was beyond the power of the council. Bedford alone could appease the quarrel, and Bedford's presence in England

meant disaster in France. The quarrel between them and their adherents was complicated by the existence of the Lollards, and the question of peace or war. In both matters Gloucester, as persecutor of the Lollards and head of the war-party, appears to have taken the more popular side. The coronation of the young king at Westminster (November 6, 1429) put a formal end to the regency of Bedford and Gloucester, but not to the intrigues of the latter. The House of Commons was unable to interfere with any effect, the Lords were mostly engaged on one side or the other. The death of Bedford removed the only guarantee of peace, and Gloucester attacked Beaufort with more violence than ever after his brother's death. In the midst of these troubles Henry VI came of age (1442). Had he been a great statesman, he would have found an almost hopeless task before him. But, unft as he felt himself to be, he naturally shrank from politics, and was much more intent on completing his foundations at Eton and Cambridge than on healing the disorders of his country. The work of government was left mainly in the hands of Cardinal Beaufort and the earl of Suffolk, who did their best to secure peace with France. On the other side the dukes of Gloucester and York headed the opposition, and took up the cry of reform, with the object of infusing vigour into the government at home and abroad. Suffolk, however, won a great victory in the truce with France (1444), and through the young queen Margaret, whose marriage was chiefly due to his exertions, he obtained complete influence over the king. The suspicious death of Gloucester (1447), followed in six weeks by the death of his rival Beaufort, together with the appointment of York to the governorship of Ireland, left Suffolk master of the situation. But such a position could not be long maintained in the face of the odium which always attaches to a favourite, and the complete failure of his foreign policy brought about his fall (1450). The king in vain attempted to save him, and by so doing shamed his unpopularity, while the partial concessions he made to the demands of the rebels under Jack Cade only postponed the inevitable outbreak. The duke of York now made himself the mouth-piece of popular discontent. When the final loss of France had exhausted the country's patience, and the birth of an heir to the throne had destroyed his hope of the succession, he took advantage of Henry's mental deangement to claim the protectorate (1453). It was granted him early next year, but in 1455 the king recovered his senses, and York was deprived of power. Unable to endure this he marched on London, and on May 22, 1455, the Wars of the Roses began in the battle of St Albans. The effect of the battle was to bring the question to the front as the leader of the royalists, and to make the quarrel between him and York irreconcilable. During the four years of uneasy quiet which followed the first collision, Henry tried hard to keep the peace. But all his efforts were vain. When the struggle broke out anew, and the Yorkists won the battle of Northampton, he was forced to consent to an arrangement by which his son was excluded from the succession and York recognized as heir to the kingdom (1460). This settlement was of short duration. York himself lost his life at Wakefield, but his son seized the crown and was acknowledged king (March 4, 1461). The battle of Towton brought the struggle to an end for ten years, and the capture of Henry in 1465 seemed to secure Edward IV. on the throne. Five years later a sudden revolution hushed him from it, and the battle of Barnet destroyed his hopes again. He had time to know that his son had died at Tewkesbury, that his wife was a prisoner, and that his cause was finally lost, before death released him from captivity on May 21, 1471. Gentle, pure, and generous, full of good intentions, enthu-

nastic in the cause of religion and learning, he was utterly without the qualities which were indispensable to a medieval king, and his paucity of incapacity in a meetable death and in the destruction of his house. But this very incapacity was an element of the utmost importance in the history of his time. The weakness of his character made him the puppet of contending factions, and his well-meant but misguided efforts to govern England as a constitutional king led only to anarchy and the temporary downfall of the constitution.

*Original Author* *titles for the above* *the reigns*—Thomas of Walsingham, *Hist. Anglicana*, and *Ypodigma Nestoris*, in *Annals Henrici Quinti*, *Observations Historiques*, *Chronique de France*, *Annals of St Albans's Abbey*, by John of Amundesham and John Whellan, *Regal and Historical Letters* (Henry IV), *Copie des Chroniques de l'Angleterre*, and *Libre des Rois de France*, *Memoirs de l'histoire de France*, *Letters*, &c., *Illustrations of Henry VI*, *Political Poems*. All the above are published in the Rolls series. Also, *Henricus V. Reg Angli Deus* (Eng. Hist. Soc.), *Life of Henry V.*, by T. Lavin, *Fourteenth and Fifteenth Centuries* (ed. Reuigne), *English Chronicle of the reigns of Henry IV.*, &c., and *Letters of Margaret of Anjou*, &c. (both in Camd. Soc.), *Chronicles of Henry IV.*, *Ottoboni*, *Adam of Usk*, *Polyan*, *Brill*, the *Paston Letters* (ed. Gairdner), *Original Letters Illustrative of Eng. Hist.* (ed. Ellis), *Rolls of Parliament*, *Parliamentary Papers*, &c., of the *Privy Council* (ed. Nicolas). *Modern Authorities*—Besides those already given above, Nicolas's *History of the Battle of Agincourt*, Gairdner's *Preface to the Paston Letters*.

HENRY VII. (1456–1509), king of England, was the founder of the Tudor dynasty. On his mother's side Henry belonged to the illegitimate branch of the house of Lancaster, being descended from John of Gaunt and Catherine Swinford, and it was only in the absence of nearer heirs that he was accepted as the representative of that house. On the father's side he was sprung from the marriage of Owen Tudor, a Welsh gentleman, with Catherine, widow of Henry V., and this family name became the name of the line of kings which he founded. On the complete overthrow of the Lancastrians, especially after Richard had won the throne by putting his nephews out of the way, Henry, under the name of the earl of Richmond, appeared as the centre of the opposition. From his exile in Brittany he planned the overthrow of Richard, and made an expedition to England to support the unsuccessful rising of Buckingham. The increasing unpopularity of Richard gave him greater success in his second enterprise. He landed at Milford Haven in order to profit by the good-will of his kinsmen the Welsh, and marching into Leicestershire defeated Richard at the battle of Bosworth, thus ending the Wars of the Roses (1456). Soon after he married Elizabeth daughter of Edward IV., and so the White Rose and the Red were united. Henry, however, was not allowed to enjoy the crown in peace. Two pretenders, one after another, led a rising against him. Lambert Simnel, personating the earl of Warwick, son of the duke of Clarence, gathered the Yorkists about him in Ireland, and landing in Lancashire advanced as far as Stoke in Staffordshire, where he was defeated and made captive (1487). Next arose Perkin Warbeck, a Fleming, who, pretending to be one of the princes murdered by Richard in the Tower, received much countenance abroad and in Scotland, and had many supporters among the discontented at home. But when he ventured to land in Cornwall, he was captured, and finally executed (1499). These risings troubled the reign of Henry, but did not shake his throne. He ruled with a firm hand, he took care to oppress the nobles, already almost exterminated in the civil war, in this case continuing the policy of Edward IV., he put down the practices of maintenance, by which they kept bodies of retainers ready to support them in battle, and in every way sought to concentrate in the person of the king the whole power of the nation. Henry was a parsimonious and

calculating ruler, who avoided war, gained by diplomacy what other sovereigns attempted by force, kept a well-filled treasury, and made two brief expeditions into France the occasion of amassing additional wealth. His avarice led him even to revoke old and forgotten statutes, and to exact heavy fines from those who had transgressed them, in which evil work he was assisted by the two well-known lawyers Empson and Dudley. His reign is marked also by two marriage arrangements which had great influence on subsequent history. His son Arthur was wedded to Catherine of Aragon. When Arthur died in 1502, a few months after the marriage, Catherine remained in England in order to be united to the younger son Henry, though the couple did not take place till after his accession to the throne. The other marriage was that of the young princess Margaret to James IV. of Scotland (1503), which a century after resulted in the union of the crowns. Henry VII. died in 1509, leaving, it is said, a treasure of two million pounds to his successor. He was by no means an amiable or popular sovereign, but did great service in settling and consolidating the kingdom after the long troubles.

The authorities for Henry VII. are—*Memoirs of Henry VIII.* (with which is published *Henricus VIII. de Vita Henrici VIII.*), *Letters and Papers illustrative of Henry VIII.*, both edited by Gairdner, and Bacon's *History of Henry VIII.*, edited by Spelman.

HENRY VIII. (1491–1547), king of England, was born in 1491, being the second son of Henry VII. and of his wife Elizabeth of York. On the death of his elder brother Arthur in 1502, he became heir apparent to the throne. As younger son Henry had been educated for the church, and it is said that his interest in theology was due to those early studies, but as he was only eleven when his brother died, they could not have been either extensive or profound. His training under the severe and methodical Henry VII. must have been a very careful one, and he was deeply interested in the new learning, and was a most accomplished scholar. During his father's lifetime we hear nothing of the young king except as the destined husband of Catherine of Aragon, the widow of his brother Arthur, a lady six years older than himself. It suited the plans of the old monarchs, their parents, that Catherine should be wedded to Henry, and so she remained in England during the seven years of her widowhood. Henry was only eighteen when the death of his father (1509) left the throne of England vacant, as well as set him free to shape his own career. His first important act was to fulfil the contract imposed upon him by his father to marry Catherine. His ministers, almost without exception, were in favour of the marriage. Henry expressed himself highly delighted with his wife. Catherine was fond of him to excess. The disparity of years was not so marked at that early period, Catherine was amiable, accomplished, of the blue blood in Europe, closely connected with the most powerful dynasties, a queen of whom England with her then diminished prestige might well be proud. For the time all went well, and no one saw in such a simple event the seeds of a great revolution.

Englishmen were not in the mood to anticipate evil at the accession of Henry. In the young king all the conditions requisite for a prosperous reign seemed to be combined in a rare degree. To the dull monotony, varied only by Yorkist rebellions, to the greed, suspicion, and jealousy which made the shady side of the previous reign, succeeded an era of splendour and enjoyment in which any free and generous impulses should have free scope. As Henry united in his own person the lines of the White Rose and the Red, there was no likelihood of a revival of the old broils. Those who grumbled to see his Lancastrian father on the throne were well pleased to see it occupied by a son of Elizabeth of York. The hated avarice of Henry VII. had

provided means for the popularity of his successor, and to Henry VIII fell the easy and generous role of squandering the treasure which his father had amassed. Nor was this the only respect in which the young Henry enticed on the fruit of other men's labours. In the Wars of the Roses, and by the policy of Edward IV and Henry VII, the old feudal nobility had been brought very low. When nothing more was to be feared from that quarter, it was Henry VIII's easy task to gather round him the broken remnants, to attach them to his person, and to make them the ready instruments of his will, in short, to convert the representatives of a brightly feudal but onerous into submissive courtiers. In character the young Henry was a king according to the people's heart, even in his faults he was exceptionally fortunate. He was handsome, frank, extravagant, of vast muscular strength, accomplished in all the manly exercises of the time and in the new learning, he was vain, thirsting for popularity, eager to relieve the old renown of England, the enemy of France, and dreamt always of renewing the conquests of the Plantagenets and Edwards. It is not surprising that Henry excited the highest expectations in all classes of his subjects, for his varied character offered an attractive side to all of them. The men of the new learning were charmed by his love of letters. Ecclesiastics saw with pleasure his punctual performance of the duties of religion. All good men were delighted with the excellencies and purity of his private life. His courtiers were struck by his capacity for business, his gaiety and frankness captivated the courtiers, the prospect of French conquest inspired the warlike and the ambitious. From the description of Henry by the Venetian ambassador, Guistiniani, in 1510, we can easily perceive what impression he must have made on England at his accession.—"His Majesty is twenty-nine years old, and extremely handsome. Nature could not have done more for him. He is much handsomer than any other sovereign of Christendom,—a good deal handsomer than the king of France,—very fair, and his whole frame admirably proportioned. On hearing that Francis I wore a red beard, he allowed his own to grow, and as it is reddish, he has now got a beard that looks like gold. He is very accomplished, a good musician, composes well, is a most capital horseman, a fine jouster, speaks good French, Latin, and Spanish, is very religious, hears three masses daily when he hunts, and sometimes five on other days. He hears the office every day in the queen's chamber,—that is to say, vesper and compline. He is very fond of hunting, and never takes his diversion without tiring eight or ten horses, which he causes to be stationed beforehand along the line of country he means to take, and when one is tired he mounts another, and before he gets home they are all exhausted. He is extremely fond of tennis, at which game it is the prettiest thing in the world to see him play, his fair skin glowing through a shirt of the finest texture." When we take all these facts into consideration, when we remember also that ere long he had raised England from a third-rate position to a level with the greatest powers of Europe, and that for twenty years nothing serious occurred to break the harmony of his reign, we cannot be surprised that Henry was a most popular king.

The reign of Henry falls naturally into two periods, separated by the question of the divorce. During the first period Henry is the splendid and jovial king at home, abroad a figure of the first magnitude in the wars and international diplomacy of the time. Both in home and foreign affairs, but particularly the latter, Wolsey was the right hand man of the king, ready, as occasion served, either to transact the whole business of the government, or to be the humble instrument of the king, when the royal hand did actually interfere. In point of fact Henry always was master, and took a keen interest in business. The events

of the first period were concerned chiefly with the foreign wars. At home, with the exception of the execution of Emrys and Dudley, the instruments of his father's extortion, who suffered, however, on a trumped-up charge of treason, nothing important occurred. There were Christmas revels, May festivals, tilting matches, in which Henry always shone victorious, and in which he squandered the treasures of his father. But the serious endeavours of the time were directed abroad, Henry joined his relatives Ferdinand and Maximilian in a league against France. Though Henry took a personal share in the campaign in France of 1513, and won the easy Battle of Spurs, and though Surrey, his general, gained the great victory of Flodden, no substantial result was attained by the war. Henry was duped and then abandoned by his allies. When he was undecided, he made peace (1514) with France, which was cemented by the marriage of his youthful sister Mary to the old and worn-out Louis XII. Soon after, when Louis was succeeded by Francis I (1515), and Charles V entered on the government of his hereditary dominions (1516), the three monarchs who figure so conspicuously as the contemporaries of the Reformation, and whose doings constitute so much of the history of the 16th century, found themselves face to face. With these two and with the successive popes Henry had to do during the rest of his life. Their relations at first were chivalrous and even friendly. Henry never had any chance of success in his career for the imperial crown. When it fell to Charles, it made him beyond a doubt the first monarch of the age, his success placed him in open rivalry to France, but to Henry, fortunate again, it gave the desirable prospect of being courted by the two rivals, and even of acting as arbiter in their disputes. Henry, however, descended from this lofty position to engage in quarrels which had no concern with the true interests of England. The chimes of French conquest again fascinated him and his people, so that when the false chivalry of the Cloth of Gold had degenerated into war, Henry took the side of Charles. In the campaign of 1525 the English forces advanced to within eleven leagues of Paris, but the war led to no durable and satisfactory results as far as Henry was concerned. The people grew sick of the heavy contributions they were called upon to make, and threatened revolt. After the battle of Pavia (1525), where the French were completely overthrown, and their king made prisoner by the armies of Charles, the policy of Henry was completely disturbed. Till that event it had been clear enough. The commercial interests of the country, which were bound up with the Flemish dominions of Charles, the ambition of Wolsey, who founded his hope of the papal crown on the good-will of the emperor, the predatory enmities and warlike instincts of the people, as well as the inclination of the king, concealed conveniently in requiring the imperial alliance. But now France was down, and the balance of power, already a working conception in politics, was destroyed, while Charles in his triumph ignored the claims of Henry, and had more than once disappointed the ambition of Wolsey. Under these circumstances English policy was forced out of its old groove, and an alliance was made with France. In a short time, moreover, interests and passions of a far more momentous nature entered. The dilettante politics of Henry's early career were to be superseded by occupations of a tragically earnest nature. Adventurous enterprises abroad were to give place to real interests at home, and the jovial young king was to be transformed into the stern, self-willed, and often cruel revolutionary. The serious and important part of Henry's life therefore is still to come, but before leaving the earlier period it is well to remark that it lasted twenty years, or more than half of his reign, that during these years Henry was popular in the highest degree, and especially that he

had gratified the national pride of his subjects by restoring England to a leading position in Europe. This should not be forgotten during the troubled and more questionable events that were to follow.

The year 1538 may justly be fixed as the turning point of Henry's life. By that time the divorce had become a national and even a European question, and Henry had decisively committed himself to the course which was to result in the separation from Rome. It is not clear when the plan of a divorce began to take shape in Henry's mind, it was the slow result of a variety of causes which were not clear to the king himself. We know, however, that Anne Boleyn returned to the court of England in 1529, that she made quite a sensation there as soon as she appeared, and that among other admirers, married and unmarried, Henry soon expressed a decided preference for her. On the other hand, he seems to have been alienated from Catherine long ere the question of divorce became public, if we may trust a statement of his own, he had abstained from her bed since 1524, and his coldness for her increased with his love for Anne. That his scruples regarding his marriage awoke about the same time was certainly a very convenient coincidence. The danger, however, of a disputed succession in the absence of male heirs was a real one. The situation probably justified such an extraordinary measure as a divorce, though we must recollect that the raising of a second family, rival to Mary the daughter of Catherine, might precipitate the very crisis which men feared. Still we must admit on the whole that the national interest and the inclination of Henry coincided, and that concern for his kingdom probably had a large part in the mixed motives which urged him to seek a divorce.

When the demand for a divorce was first formally laid before the pope in 1527, no one anticipated that it would encounter so many difficulties. The great opponent of it was Charles V., who loyally supported his aunt, and who, as the event proved, had the pope entirely in his power. But for the emperor, Clement would soon have arranged everything to the satisfaction of the English court. As it was, he sought safety in delay. Thus he declined giving any decisive answer himself, and when he delegated the case to Wolsey and Campeggio, he managed still further to defer the question and then to revoke it to Rome (1529). By that time Henry's patience was exhausted. As early as 1528, and as if sure of a speedy decision in their favour, the king and Anne were living familiarly together under the same roof. Their disappointment was natural, and Henry soon began to take more active measures. He appealed from the pope to the universities. Notwithstanding his life-long services Wolsey was discredited, because he was supposed not to have been sufficiently earnest about the divorce. The same year (1529) a parliament was called, which proved to be the ready auxiliary of the king in his new policy. This parliament, which sat at intervals from 1529 to 1538, had little independent or substantive power, it was made up largely of the nominees and creatures of the court, and seldom moved but at the royal initiative. Still it was well that the old forms should be recognized in the great changes that were coming, and significant that the strong-willed Tudor felt it safe to have the nation at his back. The changes themselves were gradual, and were by no means disagreeable to the advanced and influential part of the nation. Only a very small minority had any sympathy with the Lutheran movement, but many wished to see the church reformed, to have her power curtailed, and that England should take up a more independent attitude towards the pope. Under these circumstances Henry found it easy to carry the majority, especially the active and progressive part, of the nation with him. In no case was the parliament of 1529 conscious of its destiny, what it con-

templated was not a revolution but only some necessary reform, it, as well as Henry, would have been astonished to hear that they were working on the side of Luther. Yet the parliament soon proceeded to take some very decisive steps. In 1529 the probate duties and mortuaries (or burial fees) exacted by the church were curtailed, the clergy were prohibited from following secular employments, residence was enforced, and pluralities forbidden. In 1531 the clergy were laid under the charge of praemunire, which they bought off by the payment of £118,000, and the acknowledgment that the king was supreme head of the church. In 1532 the abuses of "benefices of clergy" were reformed, annates abolished conditionally, and the independent legislative power given up by convocation. Soon after the king took a step which precipitated the crisis, he married Anne Boleyn, an event which was quickly followed by the publication in Flanders of a threat of excommunication from Rome. After this the Act of Appeals was passed, forbidding appeals from the English ecclesiastical courts to Rome, and Cranmer, in a court at Dunstable, declared the marriage with Catherine null and void. In the following year (1534) the papal authority in England was annulled, and by the Act of Supremacy Henry was declared supreme head of the English Church. The next step was a sad one, but it convinced the world that the king was earnest. Sir Thomas More and Fisher, bishop of Winchester, the noblest champions of the old faith, two of the best and noblest Englishmen of the time, were executed for refusing to accept the Supremacy Act (1535). Such an event produced a deep sensation in Europe, but it was decisive, when the pope drew up the Bull of Deposition in 1536, which, however, was not published till 1538, the rupture with Rome was complete. In the same year (1536) the first Articles of religion, ten in number, were drawn up, in effect they were a great simplification of the old creed, though they gave little encouragement to Lutheranism. At the same time the Act for the dissolution of the smaller monasteries, which was based upon the report of a commission of inquiry, was passed, being the final important measure of the first Reformation parliament. With such events as the abolition of the papal power in England and the dissolution of the monasteries modern England begins, they inaugurate a fundamental change in the national policy and in the structure and habits of society. While the purpose, real or ostensible, of Henry had been merely to marry a younger woman and provide for the succession, he had effected the greatest revolution which England has undergone.

Henry had indeed succeeded in the task to which he had applied himself nine years before, but the enemies he had raised were formidable, and he was destined to many a bitter disappointment. He had excited the hostility of the pope and the emperor, worst of all, he had seriously hurt the feelings and prejudices of a large class of his subjects. The danger of foreign invasion was greatly increased by the discontent both in the north and west of England, where the love of use and wont in the church and in the national habits was strongest. The death of Catherine had indeed greatly relieved him, as it made reconciliation with the emperor practicable, and deprived the English opposition of a common centre. The rising in Ireland was suppressed without much difficulty, but the discontent in the north which broke out in the Pilgrimage of Grace was a formidable danger (1536). It was averted more by skillful statesmanship on Henry's part than by open show of force. The opposition in the west was nipped in the bud by the execution of its leaders, the marquess of Exeter and Lord Montague (1538). These measures of the king and of his minister Cromwell sometimes appeared cruel and unjustifiable, but they kept the country united, Charles was con-

vinced of the futility of an invasion, and the thunderbolts of the pope fell harmless to the ground. In all this crisis, when a wrong step or the appearance of vacillation might have occasioned a religious war, in which the conservatism at home would have been seconded by the aims of Spain, the energy and the commanding sagacity of Henry did more than ought else to save the country. To him the prince is chiefly due that this great revolution was comparatively free from blood and havoc.

Henry had debarred the emperor and the pope, and he had suppressed the conservative Catholic discontent at home with a high hand, but he was never disposed to be a Protestant. Instead of following the lead of the advanced Reformers he impressed upon the English Church his own moderate and substantially Catholic theology. At thirty he had defended the seven sacraments against Luther, he was thirty-six when he took up the question of divorce, and he was forty six his relations to the pope had hardened into alienation and hostility. All his life he was orthodox from conviction as well as from traditional assent. Such a man could not be a revolutionary in theology. He repudiated with a firm hand all excess in innovation, showing equal aversion to the iconoclastic mob and to iconoclastic preachers. The bill of the Six Articles, passed in the same year that saw the final dissolution of the monastic system of England, was the most remarkable exemplification of this spirit of Henry. It also proves that innovation in theology was a new thing to the mass of the English nation, and its penalties too clearly illustrate the fact that religion was not considered an individual and private matter, but a national interest, the violation of which was a capital offence. It is to the honour of Henry that the victims of the Bloody Statute were so few. Five hundred arrests were made by the angry Catholic party in a single fortnight after the passing of the bill, but the king intervened in time, and only twenty-eight suffered under the statute during the whole reign.

In the meantime Henry had been less fortunate in the matrimonial scheme which had been the occasion of all the changes and dangers we have noted. A few months after the death of Catherine, Anne Boleyn was sent to the scaffold. Anne may have been guilty of the crimes laid to her charge, but Henry himself had taught her to cast aside all feminine reserve and self-respect, and his fickle heart had been captivated by another, long before the disclosures which were the ground of his repudiation. Henry married his new love, Jane Seymour, the day after the execution of Anne (1536).

The birth of Edward in the following year gratified the king's desire for a male heir, but the early death of Jane left him again without a queen. After an interval of more than two years Cromwell undertook to procure a suitable wife at the Protestant courts of Germany, but his ruin was not less complete than that of his patron Wolsey on a similar occasion ten years before. Anne of Cleves found no favour in the king's eyes, she was divorced and pensioned off, while the enemies of Cromwell succeeded in sending him to the scaffold. Anne's place was occupied by Catherine Howard, till she, really queen, was also executed (1542). For his sixth and last queen Henry married (1543) Catherine Parr, who proved a patient wife and an excellent nurse. During the last few years of Henry's reign home affairs and the question of the religious revolution ceased to be the exclusive subject of interest. England and the neighbouring powers were constrained to acquiesce for the time being in Henry's arrangement of things. Even the emperor cultivated his alliance. His foreign politics ended very much as they began—with a war against Scotland and France. The former arose out of certain border quarrels, the Scots were beaten at Solway Moss, but defeated an English force at Ancrum Moor. After the death of James V

Henry's course was to arrange a marriage of the infant queen of Scots with his own son Edward. The plan failed through Henry's self-will, and Scotland was ravaged to no purpose. The war with France (1513-46) was equally fruitless. Its chief feature was a threatened invasion by a formidable French fleet, which for some time was master of the Channel.

At home the most important point of interest was the struggle between the two factions, Protestant and Conservative, which had now for some years confronted each other—Norfolk and Bishop Gardiner of Winchester being the leaders of the latter, while the queen, Cranmer, and the earl of Northampton, uncle of young Edward, were at the head of the former. Cromwell had already fallen under the machinations of the Conservative party. Cranmer and even the queen were not quite safe from its attacks. The heads of that party now suffered at the close of the reign. Surrey was executed, and Norfolk was saved only by the death of the king. The effect of such measures was to make the prospects of Edward secure by confirming the power of his uncle, the Earl of Hertford.

Henry was anxious to arrange affairs for the accession of his son, as he felt his own life waning away. Though only in his fifty-sixth year he was unwieldy with disease and incapacity, and required to be wheeled from room to room, an ulcer in the leg had troubled him for many years. In this as in so many other respects the contrast between the beginning and end of his career is striking: the young athlete is transformed into a helpless invalid, the joviality, the enthusiasm, and the unanimity of his earlier reign gave place to a long period of gloom and contention, repressed only by the savage and impetuous hand of the king. He died on the 28th of January 1547.

The character of Henry has long been a stumbling-block to historians, and will always be a puzzle to such as classify mankind under the two heads of good and bad without recognising the intermediate gradations to which the vast majority belong. To Henry it is all the more inexplicable, because the contrast between his youth and declining manhood is so apparently complete. Yet it was a perfectly consistent, though a mixed character, and the later phases of it are only a natural development of the earlier. He was always strong-willed to excess, capricious, and fickle, with the sensitive part of his nature predominating. In his youth his baser tendencies were controlled by his love of popularity, his regard for his excellent wife, his own sense of duty, and the vigorous animal spirits which found congenial play in physical exercise and in foreign war. In his maturer years he was more self-reliant and therefore less dependent on popularity, after losing his regard for Catherine he fell into baser companionship, as his health began to fail, his boisterous spirits declined. Worst of all, his constitutional fickleness took the form of disloyalty to his successive wives, and to his friends and ministers. In the time of Henry there was no sadder man than Sir Thomas More. His verdict may be accepted as final on this aspect of the king's character. In the height of his favour with the king, after walking an hour with him in the garden at Chelsea, the king holding his arm about his neck, More confessed that he had "no cause to be proud thereof, for if my head would win him a castle in France it should not fail to go." Such may have been the repulsive side of Henry. Much more important, however, than the consideration of his personal character is the question as to the nature and tendency of the historic work in which he took the initiative. Was that the outcome merely of misguided self-will concealing itself under the guise of duty, or was it the true and durable expression of the claims and aspirations of the time? The passions of Henry had certainly too much to do with it, the work he did was, like his character, mixed with baser elements. But the best answer to such



a question is to be found in the modern history of England. That history in its progressive spirit, in its gradual approximation to a sounder and better state of society, and in its liberal openness to the influence of truth, is only the continuation and development of the work of Henry. In his rupture with the pope, in his abolition of an idle and antiquated monasticism, and in his endeavour to establish a purified and simplified Catholicism as the permanent creed of England, he was fighting on the side of truth and light and progress. The English Reformation was too much alloyed with baser elements to serve as an ideal example of a great historic change, yet it succeeded better than any other in appropriating the good both of the old and the new, in avoiding a violent rupture with the past, in keeping the nation unanimous, and in escaping those fatal religious wars which desolated Europe for nearly a century and in Germany delayed the progress of civilization for a century more. This desirable consummation was due first of all to Henry, whose sagacity and unflinching resolution baffled the enemies of reform both at home and abroad, who repressed the hasty movements of either fanatical extreme in England, and who, with his real reverence for the teaching of the past, yet a hearty contempt for its abuses. He was no hero, no ideal man or king, he shared fully in the consciousness and indecision of the age, he was fickle in his personal attachments, and did not shrink from destroying those who crossed his plans; but he had a real and lofty sense of his duty as a king, he had a true insight into the men and things he had to deal with, and helped to lead the country into a new era.

*Source for the Life and History of Henry VIII.—Stude Page's essay on the reign of Henry VIII. (Record Commission), Calendar of State Papers, with introduction by Brewer, down to 1550 (Boak series), Gustavus's Few Years at the Court of Henry VIII., 1515-1519, Erasmus's Letters, Legend's Histoire du Duc de Clarence, the Life of Wolsey, Lopez's Life of More, Hall's Chronicle, Important Events in the History of Henry VIII.—F. Schlegel's History of England, vols. i-iv, Lingard's History of England, Italian's Constitutional History, vol. i, Burnet's History of the Reformation, Stubbs's Oxford Reformers, and his History of the Protestant Revolution (T. K.).*

German Kings and emperors

HENRY I. (876-936), German King, was born in 876 in Saxony, of which his father, Otto, was duke. He distinguished himself in early youth by the courage and energy with which he warred against the Slavonic tribes to the east of his native duchy. Otto, who died in 912, appointed Henry his successor, not only as duke of Saxony but as lord of Thuringia and part of Franconia. Conrad I., stimulated by certain ecclesiastical advisers whom Henry's independent bearing towards the church had deeply offended, raised the claims of the young duke, but he was ultimately left in possession of all the lands his father had ruled. After Conrad's death Henry was chosen king by the Franco-Saxon and Saxon nobles, and he had not much difficulty in securing the acquiescence of the rest of Germany. For some years Lotharing or Lorraine had held an uncertain position between the kingdoms of the East and the West Franks, as Germany and France were then called, but at this time Duke Gisbert, who was an old friend of Henry, quarrelled with Charles the Simple, and transferred his allegiance to the German king. For eight centuries afterwards Lorraine remained a part of Germany. From the time of Louis the Child, Germany had been torn by the Hungarians, who were still a savage race, and who had the advantage of doing from horseback while the Germans resented them on foot. In 922 an Hungarian chief was captured, and his people were compelled to purchase his release by agreeing to a nine years' truce, on condition that Henry should during this time pay an annual tribute. In the northern districts the Germans had hitherto lived for the most part in small villages or on separate settlements, after

the fashion described in the *Germania* of Tacitus. Henry, perceiving that so long as they continued thus exposed to attack they could never be safe, began the building of cities throughout Saxony and Thuringia, and in the other duchies, his example was extensively followed. He also trained his vassals to meet the enemy on horseback, thus giving a strong impetus to the movement which resulted in the institutions of chivalry. When his arrangements were complete he tried his new force in a contest with the Danes and with some Slavonic tribes, whom he utterly defeated. In 933 the Hungarians demanded as usual the tribute which had till then been punctually paid, and when it was refused invaded Thuringia with a great army. Henry twice defeated them, and they were so overwhelmed by this misfortune that they did not enter Germany for some years, and were never again seen in the northern duchies. Having thus broken the power of all the chief enemies of his country, Henry took precautions for the future by establishing the marches of Schleswig, of Meissen, and perhaps of Brandenburg. In his home government he acted with great caution and judgment. The dukes had become so powerful that there was some danger of their altogether overshadowing the throne. Instead of directly meeting this peril by forcing them into submission, as was afterwards done by his son Otto, he attached them to his interests by confirming them in many of their rights and by acting as a mediator in their disputes. Towards the close of his life his position was so secure that he resolved to go to Rome and claim the imperial crown. In the midst of his preparations he died in 936 at Memleben, and was buried in St Peter's church at Quedlinburg. He was one of the wisest and most energetic of the German kings, and through his encouragement of municipal life, and his powerful defence of Germany against her foreign enemies, his reign marks an epoch of the highest importance in early mediæval history. By his first wife, Harburg, he had a son Thankmar, who gave Otto I., his successor, much trouble. After she was put away he married Mathilda, the daughter of a Saxon count, and the gentle and noble character of this lady, who was universally beloved, was of essential service to him in his rule.

See Wätz, *Jahrbücher des Deutschen Reichs unter Heinrich I.* (Buda, 1837, 2d ed., 1863).

HENRY II. (972-1024), Holy Roman emperor, was born in 972. He was the son of Henry the Wrangler, duke of Bavaria, a grandson of King Henry I. In 996 he succeeded to the duchy of Bavaria, and six years afterwards went to Rome with the young emperor Otto III, to whom he rendered important services. When Otto III. died, Henry, as the chief surviving representative of the house of Saxony, took possession of the insignia of the empire, and was crowned German king at Mainz on the 7th of June 1002. Encouraged by disturbances in Germany, a rebellious party of nobles in northern Italy raised Margrave Hilduin of Ivrea to the throne of Lombardy, but Henry advanced against them, and, like his immediate predecessors, made himself master of the non-crown. His most determined enemy during the greater part of his reign was Boleslaus II. of Poland. This ambitious and strong-willed prince annexed Bohemia, and during the king's absence in Italy broke into Lusatia and Meissen. Henry hurried back, defeated Boleslaus in 1005, and granted Bohemia in fief to Jaromir, son of the pious duke Boleslaus, however, continued the war, which was not ended till 1018, when Henry was obliged to conclude peace on terms that were much more favourable to the Poles than he would have voluntarily granted. In the midst of this struggle he had to make war on Adalbero, his wife's mother, who seized the archbishopric of Trèves, and was protected in his claim by another brother of the

empress, the duke of Bavaria. Both were overcome and deprived of their dignities, although Bavaria was ultimately restored to the older of the two brothers. Henry also put down rebellions in Flanders and Meissen, and he concluded an important treaty with Rudolf III of Burgundy, whereby after Rudolf's death the country was to be united to Germany. In 1013 Henry went for the second time to Italy, where Hlaiduin had again raised himself to the throne. The emperor was displaced, and in 1014 Henry was crowned emperor at Rome by Benedict VIII, whom he had confirmed in the papal see in opposition to the antipope Gregory. At the request of Benedict the emperor returned to Italy in 1022 in order to drive back the Greeks, who were steadily pressing northwards. In this enterprise he associated himself with the Normans, who thus became one of the most important factors in the political life of Italy. Henry's health, which was always feeble, rapidly declined after this third visit to his southern dominions, and in 1024 he died. He was canonized by Pope Eugenius III, and at a later time his wife, Cunigunde, was also ranked among the saints. It was natural that they should be thus honored, not only because of their fervent piety, but because the church has rarely had a more splendid benefactor than Henry II, whose ruling policy was to balance the power of the great nobles by increasing that of the spiritual princes. He also founded the bishopric of Bamberg, which was placed under the immediate jurisdiction of the pope, and to which he left by will all his treasures and his magnificent ecclesiastical possessions.

See Henry, *Jahrbücher des Deutschen Reichs unter Heinrich II* (Berlin, 1862-78).

HENRY III (1017-1056), Holy Roman emperor, was the son of Conrad II, the founder of the Franconian dynasty. He was born in 1017, and his father, anxious to make the succession secure and to strengthen the authority of the crown, caused him to be elected German king in 1026, creating him in 1027 duke of Bavaria, and in 1038 duke of Swabia and king of Burgundy. He became the reigning sovereign of Germany in 1039, at the age of twenty-two. Of an upright and resolute temper, he soon made his power felt both in church and state. The policy he pursued was that which had been followed by Otto I during the early part of his reign; that is, he granted as many of the duchies as possible either to members of his own family or to vassals on whose loyalty he could rely. Duke Gottfried of Lower Lorraine, who laid claim to Upper Lorraine also, was the only prince who gave him serious trouble, and even this impetuous opponent could not effectually resist the great emperor. Henry was as distinguished in his wars as in his home government. Duke Bretislav of Bohemia, who gave signs of aspiring to an independent position, invaded Poland, plundered its chief cities, and as a mark of his triumph carried away the body of St. Adalbert from Gnesen to Prague. Henry proceeded against him in 1041, and forced him to appear in the following year at Ratibon in penitent's garb, and to accept Bohemia in fief of the German crown. Having settled this difficulty, he began in 1042 a series of campaigns in Hungary, where for the first time he asserted the supremacy of Germany. In Italy he was equally successful, not only maintaining his right to the Lombard crown, but establishing supremacy over the Normans in Apulia and Calabria. At this time the moral condition of the church was regarded with regret and concern by every serious nature, and Henry, who was of a deeply religious tendency, associated himself heartily with the movement for reform which proceeded from Cluny. At a council of prelates in Suza, in 1046, he caused the rival popes, Benedict IX, Sylvester II, and Gregory VI, to be deposed, and raised to the papal see, as Clement II, Suitger, bishop

of Bamberg. Three other German bishops, one after the other, were appointed to the same position, and as all of them were devout men and energetic administrators, they did much to purify the ecclesiastical system of Europe. During their rule the papacy was held in strict subjection to the empire, but the very earnestness with which Henry applied himself to the task of making the church worthy of its mission created grave dangers for the state, since it was improbable that a pope of proud and independent spirit would be content with a subordinate position. The magnitude of the peril soon revealed itself when Hildebrand became pope during the reign of Henry IV, Henry III's son and successor. Henry died in the prime of life in 1056 at Bamberg.

See Standford, *Jahrbücher des Deutschen Reichs unter Heinrich III* (Leipzig, 1874).

HENRY IV (1050-1106), Holy Roman emperor, son of Henry III, was born in 1050, and crowned German king at the age of four during his father's lifetime. After the death of Henry III in 1056, the government was undertaken by the empress Agnes, the young king's mother. Henry III's vigorous rule, while it had secured the prosperity of the nation as a whole, had created bitter discontent among the great nobles, and immediately after his death they began to make attempts to recover some portion of the independence he had taken from them. Agnes, who was of too refined a temperament to contend with them, sought to win their support by important concessions, and the evil effects of a feeble central authority were soon felt in every part of Germany. At last, in 1083, Anno, archbishop of Cologne, succeeded in gaining possession of the king by enticing him on board a boat on the Rhine. Agnes then resigned her position, and Anno ruled in her stead. He was a harsh, bigoted, and despotic prelate, and created Henry's latter hatred by the sternness of his discipline. In Adalbert, archbishop of Bremen, who was of an exactly opposite disposition—gay, worldly, and good-humored,—Anno had an influential rival. This prelate was at first estranged with some share in the training of Henry, but ultimately completely gained his affections and became his sole guardian. In his fifteenth year Henry was declared, in accordance with the Riparian Code, to have reached his majority, but the royal authority was really exercised by Adalbert, who aroused the jealousy of the princes both by his splendid style of living and by his opposition to their usurped powers. At a diet held in Tribur he was compelled to yield the first place once more to Anno. Trained under these diverse influences Henry became passionate and wilful, but he was endowed with considerable intellectual gifts, and when thoroughly aroused could pursue an object with unquenchable ardour. In order, if possible, to check the excesses of his private life Anno caused him to marry Beatrix, the daughter of the margrave of Silesia, to whom he had for some time been betrothed. At first he regarded her with strong dislike, but after she had borne him a son in 1071 she succeeded in gaining his affections, and was afterwards his most trusted friend and companion.

Henry's reign was one of the most troubled in German history. His chief anxieties began in consequence of Otto of Nordheim, duke of Bavaria, being charged with an intention of murdering him. Otto was declared to have forfeited his titles, and his lands were seized and overruled by Duke Magnus of Saxony. He rebelled, but both princes were quickly subdued. A new rebellion was organized by Otto of Nordheim, who suddenly, at the head of 60,000 men, appeared before the Harzburg, a strong Saxon fortress in which Henry resided. He escaped, but he was looked upon so coldly by the princes that he found it expedient to yield nearly all the demands of his enemies.

An opportunity of revenge was, however, created for him by the violence of a body of peasants, who destroyed a chapel connected with the Habsburg and violated the graves of the king's brother and infant son. He had then no difficulty in obtaining an imperial army, and after defeating the rebels at Hohenburg in 1076, he imposed on them his own terms, and seemed to be on the point of asserting the ascendancy which had been exercised by Henry III.

Meanwhile Hildebrand had become pope as Gregory VII., and had already indicated his design of making the papacy supreme over all earthly authorities. Henry appealed to him to degrade those prelates who had associated themselves with the rebels. Instead of responding favourably to the appeal, Gregory called upon the king to answer to certain charges preferred against him by his subjects. Failing to realize how much power the papacy had acquired through the reforms effected by his father, Henry summoned a council of German prelates at Worms in 1076, and declared the pope deposed. The reply was a sentence of excommunication. Henry's adherents so rapidly fell away that a reconciliation with the pope was soon perceived to be absolutely necessary. Escaping from his enemies he crossed the Alps in the depth of winter, accompanied only by his wife and child, and by a few faithful attendants. The noise of Lombardy was not unwilling to take up his cause, but he preferred to hurry forward to the castle of Canossa where Gregory was residing with his friend the Countess Matilda. There occurred the famous scene in which Henry, the highest of secular potentates, stood for three days in the courtyard of the castle, clad in the shirt of a penitent, and entreating to be admitted to the pope's presence. No historical incident has more profoundly impressed the imagination of the Western world. It marked the highest point reached by papal authority, and presents a vivid picture of the awe inspired during the Middle Ages by the supernatural powers supposed to be wielded by the church.

The ban was removed, nevertheless the German princes elected Duke Rudolf of Swabia as their king, and they were soon openly supported by the pope, who resented Henry's persistent opposition to his great scheme for the deliverance of the clergy from the system of feudal investiture. Henry renewed his sentence of deposition against Gregory, and raised Ghiberti, archbishop of Ravenna, to the papacy as Clement III. After the death of the anti-king Rudolf in 1080 he went to uphold his rights in Italy, and in 1084 he gained possession of Rome, where Clement III. crowned him emperor. In Germany Count Hermann of Luxembourg had been chosen as successor to Rudolf, but in 1085 defeated Henry near Wunsburg, but in 1087 he voluntarily resigned his position, and soon afterwards died. A third anti-king, Margrave Eckbert of Meissen, also died in 1089, and had Henry had no enemies outside his native kingdom these would then have been peace. But Victor III. and Urban II., the successors of Gregory VII. (who died in 1085), continued to oppose him, and in 1090 he was obliged to proceed to Italy for the third time to support Clement III., his own antipope. Whilst engaged in this struggle he learned that his son Conrad had been induced by the papal party to rebel against him. Stunned by this unexpected blow, the tired emperor withdrew in disgust to a remote fortress, where he remained inactive for several years. In 1096 he recovered his energy, returned to Germany, and by timely concessions managed to overcome the opposition of his leading enemies. A diet at Mainz decided that Conrad had forfeited his right to the throne, and his brother Henry was proclaimed the emperor's successor. Pope Urban II., the antipope Clement III., and Conrad, all died within two years, and Henry had reason to hope that

he would be able to end his life in quiet. But Paschal II., pursuing the policy of his predecessors, once more excommunicated the emperor, who was driven to despair by the fact of his son Henry putting himself at the head of the pope's supporters. The aged monarch, deceived by false promises, fell into his hands, and was detained as a prisoner. He ultimately fled to Lidge, where he might still have been able to bring an army together, but in 1106 he was relieved from his heavy cares by death. The bishop of Lidge buried him with a splendour becoming his position, but his enemies carried the body to Spire, where it was laid in an un consecrated chapel, and it was not properly interred until, after a delay of five years, he was delivered from the ban of excommunication.

Henry holds an honourable position in history because, notwithstanding many personal faults, he resisted the excessive pretensions both of the papacy and of the ambitious feudal lords of Germany. His life was unable, however, to make good his claims. Centuries passed before the secular power of the Roman see was seriously weakened, and amid the confused struggles of the time the princes obtained a secure possession of rights which they had formerly held by an uncertain tenure.

See Gieseler's *Geschichte der Deutschen Kaiserzeit* (3d ed., vol. 1, part 1, Brunswick, 1869), Floto, *Henry IV. and sein Zeitalter* (2 vols., Stuttgart, 1867), Mühlwirth, *Die Römische Kaiserzeit IV. die Canossa von dem Papste Gregor VII.* (3d ed., Leipzig, 1876).

HENRY V. (1081-1125), Holy Roman emperor, son of Henry IV., was born in 1081. In 1098, his elder brother Conrad having forfeited his right to the throne by rebellion, he was appointed his father's successor. Six years afterwards he himself rebelled against the emperor, towards whom he played the part of a thorough traitor. The papal party, with which he allied himself, took for granted that when he mounted the throne church and state would be instantly reconciled, but their hopes were disappointed. The main point for which Henry IV. had contended was the right of investing the bishops with ring and staff. When Henry V. succeeded him in 1106, Pope Paschal II. demanded that this right should be given up, but he replied that he could not resign powers which had been exercised by his predecessors, and the loss of which would imply that the ecclesiastical lands of Germany would be removed from secular control. In 1110 he entered Italy at the head of 30,000 men. Alarmed by this display of force, Paschal withdrew his claims, and a day was appointed for the coronation of Henry as emperor. The opposition of the Roman prelates made it impossible for the pope to proceed with the ceremony, whereupon he and his cardinals were made prisoners. Paschal then formally recovered the right of investiture, and Henry received the imperial crown. When the Germans had recrossed the Alps Paschal renounced the treaty he had concluded, and the emperor was excommunicated. As many of the princes were pleased to find this opportunity of rebelling, Germany again became the scene of confused contests like those which had brought misery upon it during Henry IV.'s long reign. In 1116 the emperor went a second time to Italy and drove Paschal from Rome, and after Paschal's death he caused Gregory VIII. to be appointed pope. The extreme papal party, however, selected Gelasius II., who renewed the sentence of excommunication against Henry. The latter returned to Germany in 1119, and at a diet in Tribur succeeded in allaying the hostility of the more important among his enemies. Pope Calixtus II., who succeeded Gelasius in 1119, now found it necessary to offer a compromise, and the controversy between the empire and the papacy was for the time closed by the concordat of Worms, which was concluded in 1122. By this treaty it was agreed that at every election of a prelate the emperor should have the right

of being present, either in person or through a representative, and that the chosen bishop, before being consecrated, should receive his lands and secular authority in fief of the crown. So far the advantage rested with the emperor, but the papacy gained by being recognized as a power which had the right of negotiating with the emperor on equal terms, and by the acknowledgment of the claim of the church to nominate its own rulers. Notwithstanding this settlement Germany did not long enjoy peace, for a number of petty wars broke out which Henry was not strong enough to quell. He died at Nimegueu in 1125, and with him was extinguished the Franconian dynasty.

See Giesbrecht, *Geschichte des Deutschen Kaiserthums* (3d ed., vol. II, pt. 2, Brunswick, 1869), Gervais, *Geschichte Deutschlands unter der Regierung Heinrichs V. und Lothars* (Leipzig, 1841-42), Kollie, *Die Kaiser Friedrich I. von Mainz und Hainrich II.* (Hildesberg, 1876).  
 HENRY VI (1135-1197), Holy Roman emperor, the son of Frederick I, was born in 1135, and received the German crown in 1169. When his father started for Palestine at the head of the third crusade, Henry was made imperial viceroy, and he succeeded to the throne after the news of his father's sudden death reached Germany in 1190. He shared the intellectual culture of his time, and was distinguished for the splendour of his political schemes, but he was of a vain disposition, and in order to attain his ends was sometimes guilty of horrible cruelty. Henry the Lion, who had been banished to England by Frederick I., returned to Germany after the departure of the latter for the Holy Land. Henry treated him, but on becoming the reigning sovereign he concluded peace, and hastened to Rome, where he was crowned emperor in 1193. Through his wife Constance he had a right to the throne of Sicily, but the Sicilian nobles had made Count Tancred, an illegitimate son of Constance's brother, king. After receiving the imperial crown Henry advanced against Tancred, and the whole of southern Italy except Naples was quickly in his possession. Before Naples his army was struck by pestilence, and he was forced to return to Germany. There he suppressed various private wars, and compelled Henry the Lion to acknowledge his supremacy. The great ransom which he received from Richard I. of England enabled him to fit out a fine army, and with this he descended upon Italy in 1194, and without much difficulty conquered the Sicilian kingdom. Tancred was dead, but he had left a number of relatives, who were so barbarously treated that the people were seared with terror, and not even a sentence of excommunication which the pope pronounced against Henry could induce any one to express dissatisfaction with his rule. On his return to Germany it was easy for him, with the prestige he had now acquired, to enforce submission, and so great was his authority that, in 1196, he made attempts to secure that the crown should be declared hereditary in his family. He might have succeeded had he lived some years longer, but in 1197 he died at Messina. Before his death he was engaged in checking disorder, which had arisen during his absence in Sicily, and he even obliged the Byzantine emperor Alexius to pay him tribute.  
 See Töschke, *Jahrbücher des Deutschen Reichs unter Heinrich VI.* (Leipzig, 1867), Mücke, *Kaiser Heinrich VI.* (Bamberg, 1876).

HENRY VII (1282-1313), Holy Roman emperor, was born in 1282. He was the son of Henry II, count of Luxembourg, and was elected king in 1308, seven months after the murder of Albert I. He owed his election partly to the fact that he was comparatively unimportant, which led the electors to suppose that under him the powers of the princes would be exposed to no great danger. When he came to the throne Bohemia was subject to Henry of Carinthia, whom the people extremely disliked. The king at once declared war and enriched his own family by granting Bohemia, at the request of the Bohemians themselves, to his son John, whose claims were rendered

secure by his marriage with Elizabeth, the daughter of Wenceslaus II. For some time no German king had sought the imperial crown, but Henry, who was of an imaginative temperament, could not forget the splendid dignities to which the wearers of the crown of Germany were entitled. He therefore resolved to revive the traditions which had begun to die out, and with a view to this result did what he could to compose the differences of the nobles and to gain their allegiance. At this time there were signs of rapid progress among the cities, and had a strong king devoted himself to their interests, he might have established his throne on a solid basis. Unfortunately the easiest way in which Henry could obtain immediate power for his plans in Italy was to ally himself with the princes against the cities, and this was in most instances the course which he adopted. His visit to Italy was looked forward to with eagerness by the Ghibellines, whose hopes were expressed in words of glowing eloquence by Dante. He held aloof at first from both the great parties in the state, and was in consequence liked by neither. In 1312 he was crowned emperor in Rome, having previously received the iron crown in Milan. But while he was in Rome, Robert of Naples was there also with a strong army, and in order to obtain adequate support it was necessary for Henry to declare himself on the side of the Ghibellines. He then resolved to conquer Naples, but while advancing on this expedition he died at Buonconvento, on the 24th of August 1313. It was generally believed at the time that he had been poisoned by a Dominican monk, but this is not proved by satisfactory evidence.

See Dümmler, *Acta Henrici VII.* (Berlin, 1840-41), and *Geschichte des Deutschen Kaiserthums im 14ten Jahrhundert* (Berlin, 1841), Thomm, *Die Königswahl des Grafen Heinrich von Lotharingen im Jahre 1308* (Stuttgart, 1870), Polheim, *Das Königtum Kaiser Heinrichs VII.* (Nürnberg, 1875).

HENRY I (1005-1060), king of France, son of King Kings Robert and Constance of Aquitaine, and grandson of Hugh Capet, came to the throne in 1031. On his accession his mother, who favoured her youngest son Robert, allied herself with the chief feudal nobles, and drove Henry to take refuge at the court of Duke Robert II. of Normandy. With the duke's help he soon broke up her league. Constance died in 1053, and Henry, by granting him the duchy of Burgundy, secured the goodwill of Robert's brother, who thus became head of the first house of Burgundy. After the death of Robert "the Devil," Henry, who had first supported William the Bastard, in 1053 and 1054, tried to weaken the power of the Normans. Leaguings himself with the count of Anjou, and calling his brother Eudes into the field, he invaded Normandy from Evreux. When, however, Eudes had been defeated at Mortemer, Henry drew back in haste, and left the Normans to themselves. In 1059 he had his eldest son Philip crowned as joint-king, and died in 1060. He was an active prince, with his sword rarely in the scabbard, being little more than a great feudal chief, who enjoyed the feudal pastimes of petty war. Henry's acts and character did little to strengthen the monarchy in its relations with its feudal neighbours. His political horizon was very narrow. The Normans were independent of him, with their frontier barely twenty-five miles west of Paris, to the south his authority was really bounded by the Loire, in the east the count of Champagne was little more than nominally his subject. Henry's first wife (if indeed she was more than affianced to him) Mand, daughter (or niece) of Conrad the Salic, died childless; his second, Anne, daughter of Jerusalem, grand-duchess of Russia, bore him two sons—Philip his successor, and Hugh, count of Vermandois.

See Robert Chenevix de Beaulieu, *Chron. Anjou-Angoulême, Histoire de Louis VII., Epist. Doussars*, Dom Bouquet, *Recueil*, tom. xi.

HENRY II (1510-1559), king of France, the second son of Francis I and Claude, succeeded to the throne in 1547. When only seven years old he was sent by his father, with his brother the dauphin Francis, as a hostage to Spain in 1526, whence they returned after the conclusion of the peace of Cambray in 1529. Henry was too young to have carried away any abiding impressions, yet throughout his life his character, dress, and bearing were far more Spanish than French. In 1533 his father married him to Catherine de' Medici, from which match, as he said, Francis hoped to gain great advantage, even though it might be somewhat of a misalliance. He did not then think that the dauphin would die so soon, and Catherine thereby became queen of France. Italian manners and politics entered with her into France, and long affected the history and fortunes of the country. Henry gathered round him a court which contrasted strongly with that of his father. Francis, with all his grave faults and selfishness, had fostered learning, had treated his people kindly, and had rarely checked even the Reformers. But Henry, under the influence of Diana of Poitiers, headed the strict Catholic movement, the escape of the learned from Paris to Geneva at his accession showed that not merely Huguenot doctrines but Renaissance studies were in peril. His court underwent an immediate change, the old officers were dismissed, and men whom Francis had disliked or banished returned. Immorality did not take flight, for Diana of Poitiers and Catherine de' Medici were at court, but it ceased to be gay and bright, men must be grave and severe, even in their voices. At first Diana of Poitiers and the grim old soldier Anne of Montmorency swayed the king, later, the two brothers Francis, duke of Guise, and Charles, cardinal of Lorraine, rose to power, with the marshal St André, everything was done and given through one or other of these men. Catherine de' Medici was as yet completely in the background.

The final union of Brittany with France marks the opening year of the reign. In 1548 Henry won a great diplomatic triumph over the ministers of Edward VI of England, by getting possession of Mary queen of Scots, then only six years old, he had her educated in France, and eventually married to his son the dauphin Francis. In 1549 he appeared in Paris for the first time, and marked his presence by a great burning of Calvinists, and soon after he claimed back Boulogne, which had been promised to Francis I by Henry VIII. After a successful campaign, he made the English Government, then extremely weak, cede Boulogne, and Henry entered the place in May 1550.

Heretofore he had not come into collision with Charles V., the time was now approaching when he would enter into contest with him, and permanently advance the borders of his kingdom, while he inflicted a great blow on the emperor. Though early in his reign he had dealt with the German Protestants, and with the Ottoman power, he had taken no active steps, now the league of German princes, headed by Maurice of Saxony, offered an opportunity not to be missed, Henry made a compact with the Swiss and Turks, and concluded a secret treaty (September 3, 1550) with the German princes, in 1552 by the league of Chambord he undertook to seize the three bishoprics—Metz, Verdun, and Toul. And so while Maurice drove the emperor from Innsbruck Henry sent Montmorency into Lorraine. The bishoprics were won almost without a blow, and Henry was acknowledged as "avenger of Germanic liberty", an attempt on Strasburg failed. After the siege of Metz by Charles V in the winter of 1552-53, this district, French-speaking, though feudally under the empire, remained in

French hands,—Metz till 1870, Toul and Verdun to this day.

In 1550 Henry, supporting the anti-Spanish policy of the "Theatine" pope, Paul IV., again made war with Spain. Francis of Guise was sent early in 1557 into Italy to oppose the duke of Alva. Anne of Montmorency went to the northern frontier, Gaspard of Coligny, who commanded in Picardy, was ordered to begin hostilities. These led to the disastrous battle of St Quentin, in which the French were utterly defeated (August 10, 1557), it was followed by the fall of the town, at that time the chief bulwark of France to the north. Francis of Guise, recalled in haste from Italy, redressed the balance at the expense of England by the capture of Calais (June 1558), and the triumph of the house of Guise seemed complete when Mary Stewart was married to the dauphin in the same year, then niece, with her claims on the Scottish and English crowns, would now ascend the throne of France. The defeat of the French at Gravelines, the desire of Montmorency to escape from captivity, the wish of the High Catholics to have leisure to extirpate heresy, the sympathy of Philip with that aim, the accession of Elizabeth of England—all these things made peace necessary, and the treaty of Cateau Cambresis (April 1559) closed the war. As a sequel to the peace, high Francis went to Paris to celebrate the marriage of Henry's two daughters, in a tournament he recovered his death-wound from the captain of his Scottish guards, Montgomerie. So united Henry II, in his forty-first year. Handsome, brave, and cold, he left little mark on his age, he is all but forgotten in the stormy days which followed. By Catherine de' Medici he had ten children, three of whom succeeded to the throne,—Francis II, Charles IX, and Henry III. The legislation of his reign was slight, he reduced the number of societies of state to four, and arranged their functions afresh, he issued an edict in behalf of a better coinage, reserved to himself the exclusive sale of salt, and permitted the foundation of the university of Rheims. In 1575 we find the first French Reformed churches established at Paris, these were quickly followed by others. The reign saw the close of the struggle between the crowns of Spain and France.

See *Mémoires de Montaigne*, *Mémoires de Turenne*, *Mémoires de Vieilleville*, *Mémoires de Sully*, *Archives de la Loire*, *Archives de la Seine*, *Archives de la Somme*, *Archives de la Vendée*, *Archives de la France*, *Commentaires de François de Robillot*, *Théâtre de l'Oratoire*, *Théâtre des Temples*, *Théâtre de l'Oratoire*.

HENRY III (1551-1589), king of France, third son of Henry II and Catherine de' Medici, succeeded to the throne of France in 1574. In his youth, as duke of Anjou, he was warmly attached to the Huguenot opinions, as we learn from his sister, Margaret of Navarre, but his unstable character soon gave way before his mother's will, and both Henry and Margaret remained as choice ornaments of the Catholic Church. Henry won two brilliant victories at Jarnac and Moncontour (1569), and thereby attracted the eyes of the Polish nobles, who elected him then king in 1573. He went to Warsaw, but, on the death of his brother Charles IX in 1574, came back to France and assumed the crown. He returned to a wretched kingdom, torn with civil war. Now began that "reign of favourites" which has made his career a byword. His mother, ever balancing between parties, first favoured the favourites, then went with the Huguenot chiefs. In those days the famous League was organized (see FRANCE, vol. ix, p. 562), and Henry declared himself its enemy. He took but a feeble part in the civil and several civil wars, and was little in earnest till, in 1584, the death of his younger brother, Francis, duke of Anjou, made Henry of Navarre next heir to the throne, and excited to the utmost the fierce passions of the Guises and the League. The

Parisian development of the League under the "sixteen" (1585), with its devotion to Henry, duke of Guise, and its determination to exclude the heretic of Navarre, to depose the wavering Henry III, and to make Cardinal Bourbon king,—thus, as well as the menacing attitude of Philip II of Spain, forced Henry III to draw towards his distant cousin Henry of Navarre. And so he was driven to desperation by the commanding position assumed by the house of Guise, and in 1588 Henry of Guise and his brother the cardinal were assassinated by his orders. Henry III now found himself powerless, early in 1589 he again joined Henry of Navarre, and with him laid siege to Paris. There he was murdered by one Jacques Clement, a priest. With Henry III ended the direct line of the house of Valois. In his young days he had been enthusiastic for learning and the new religious opinions, as he grew older he grew worse, and the last of the sons of Catherine de' Medici was perhaps the most debauched of the kings who hitherto had sat on the throne of France.

See *Memoirs du Tauxemont, Memoirs de Perleville, Memoirs de Cuchet, Buntome, Dances d'Herbes Françaises, Memoirs du Duc de la Force, Thomas (Du Thon), Hist. sui temp. Labr. CXV, Journal de l'Édoute, Memoirs de la Ligue, Art de regner, etc.*, in tom vi.

**HENRY IV (1553-1610)**, king of France, was born in the castle of Pau in 1553, being son of Antony of Bourbon, king of Navarre and duke of Vendôme, and Jeanne d'Albret. By his father he was tenth in descent from Saint Louis, and only a very distant cousin to his predecessor, Henry III. His mother, a grand and noble lady, brought him up as a Calvinist. His education was rough and hard, and he was without any regularity of character which so marked his life, his military training was under the great captain, Gaspard de Coligny. In 1571 he was wedded to the daughter of Catherine de' Medici, Margaret of Valois, and on his mother's death in 1572 he became king of Navarre.

The massacre of St Bartholomew found him in Paris, but his life was spared on his making a profession of Catholicism, which he succeeded in escaping from court in 1575. Thenceforward he became acknowledged head of the Huguenots, and by his daring bravery kept life in their despaired forces. No man was better fitted for such work, he had all the qualities of a guerrilla leader, though he was not a great general. His success at Coutras (1587) and the joyousness and generosity of his character endeared him to his followers, while it seemed the respect even of his opponents. After the death of Henry III he was recognized as king of France by only a portion of the army then besieging Paris (August 4, 1589), the Catholic "Politiques" in the army stood aloof and disbanded, the Huguenots formed the only solid nucleus of his power. At Angers (1590) and Ivry (1590) he brilliantly defeated the Leaguers, and resumed the siege of Paris, Alexander of Parma, however, prevented him from taking Rouen (1592), much less could he take Paris. Finding affairs hard, and desiring to be a king and not a guerrilla-captain, in 1593 Henry allowed himself to be converted to Catholicism. By this step he struck a deadly blow at the League and made powerless the intrigues of Philip II. For between the fanatical Catholics on one side and the Huguenots on the other lay the great bulk of Frenchmen, the "Politique" party had become more and more powerful, until at length it was felt to be the true national party. The only thing which kept it from Henry was the difference of faith, that barrier removed, all France at once joyfully accepted him as king. The Leaguers became almost a foreign body, the Huguenots gloomily accepted his triumph, bought, as they held, at cost of principle. After the battle of Fontaine-Française in 1595

the Spanish and Leaguers were driven out of Burgundy, and the recovery of Amiens from the Spaniards in 1596 secured Peace and the northern frontier. The *Satire Menippée*, published in 1593 and 1594, had already condemned the Leaguers as huiuslings of the Spanish king, and in April 1598 by the edict of Nantes Henry assured their position to his old Huguenot followers, while by the peace of Vervins (May 1598) he ended the Spanish war, and took from the League its last source of strength.

After 1598 the energies of Henry IV were given to the reorganization of his country, which in nearly forty years of civil war had suffered terribly, the organizing genius of Navarrian of Bethune, duke of Sully, restored the finances, agriculture, manufactures, and commerce made marvellous advances. Henry also upheld the authority of France, in 1601 he acquired Bresee, Dugey, and Valloire from Savoy. He supported the Netherlands against Spain, and he was preparing a great army, which, in combination with the Dutch under Maurice of Nassau, was to interfere in the tangled Cleves-Jules question, when he was assassinated by Ravaillac on the 14th of May 1610. For his character see FRANCE, vol ix, p 616.

Henry IV left no children by his first wife Margaret of Valois, by his second, Marie de' Medici, he had three sons and three daughters,—Louis, who succeeded him as Louis XIII, a child who died in 1611, Gaston, duke of Orleans, the meanest of the race, Elizabeth, wife of Philip IV king of Spain, Christina, wife of Victor Amadeus, duke of Savoy, and lastly Henriette Marie, queen of England, spouse of Charles I. He also left behind him several natural children, of whom the most celebrated was Anne, duke of Vendôme, son of the famous Gabrielle d'Estées.

See Pierre l'Estelle, *Journal du règne de Henri IV*, P. de la Haye, *Histoire du roi Henri le Grand, Xivry, Journal des lettres illustres de Henri IV* (1589-93), Palma Cayrol, *Chronologie neuve de Henri IV*, *Memoirs de Puyssierre, Memoirs de Cuchet, Sully, Lescomptes, Bayle, Combi and Denon, dictionnaire universel, Art de regner, la date, etc.* in tom vi. The reader is also referred to the documents cited by Von Raabe in his *Französische Geschichte*, and to Oliva de Saiz's *Théâtre d'agriculture et ménage des champs* (G W K).

**HENRY I (1112-1180)**, king of Portugal, born at Oporto Lisbon, January 31, 1112, was the third son of Emanuel the Fortunate, was destined for the church, and in 1133 was raised to the archiepiscopal see of Braga. In 1142 he received the cardinal's hat, and in 1178 when he was called to succeed his grandfather Sebastian on the throne, he held the archbishoprics of Lisbon and Combra as well as that of Braga, in addition to the wealthy abbacy of Alcobaz. As an ecclesiastic he was pious, pure, simple in his mode of life, chaste, and a learned and liberal patron of letters, but as a sovereign he proved weak, timid, and meagre. On his death in 1180 after a brief reign of seventeen months the male line of the royal family which traced its descent from Henry, first count of Portugal (c 1100), came to an end, and all attempts to fix the succession during his lifetime having ungraciously failed, Portugal became an easy prey to Philip II of Spain.

**HENRY I (c 1207-1217)**, king of Castile, son of of King Alfonso "the Noble," by Eleanor, daughter of Henry II of England, succeeded his father in 1214, and was killed by the falling of a tile in 1217, after a reign of only two years and nine months. He was succeeded by Ferdinand III, son of his sister Berenguela.

**HENRY II (1133-1170)**, king of Castile, surnamed *el Bastardo* or *de la Merced*, was one of the six illegitimate sons of King Alfonso "the Avenger," and consequently half-brother to Pedro the Cruel, who legally succeeded to the throne of Castile in 1180. His mother was Leonora

de Gusman. The extraordinary series of cold-blooded murders which earned for Pedro his unenviable surname encouraged Henry, then known as count of Trastámara, to lead repeated rebellions, in which, with the aid of the French under Du Guesclin, and in spite of the opposition of the English under the Black Prince, he was ultimately successful in 1369. He immediately proceeded to direct his arms against the most formidable of his numerous enemies, King Ferdinand of Portugal, and by four campaigns, during the last of which he forced his way to the very gates of Lisbon (March 1373), succeeded in establishing a favourable peace. At the same time he entered into a treaty with the king of Navarre, which sub jected, however, for only three years, in 1375 friendly relations with the king of Aragon were formed, which were cemented by the marriage of the daughter of the latter to Don Juan of Castile. The reign of Henry II, which was devoted rather to defensive than to aggressive warfare, was not marked by any of the usual exploits against the Moors, but it is distinguished in the annals of Castile by some noteworthy improvements in legislation and reforms in the administration of justice, sanctioned in the cortes of Toro in 1369 and 1372, and Spanish historians also mention with special pride the defeat of the English by the Spanish fleet at Rochelle in 1372. Henry died, of poison it is supposed, on May 30, 1379, and was succeeded by his son John (Juan) I.

HENRY III (1379-1406), king of Castile, surnamed *el Doliente* (the sickly), succeeded his father John I. in 1380, when only eleven years of age. During his minority, the question of the regency not having been very clearly settled by his father, the kingdom was in a constant state of disturbance, bordering upon civil war, unable to satisfy the rival claims of Don Fadrique, Don Alonso, and the archbishop of Toledo, Henry at last resolved, minor as he was, to take the reins of government entirely into his own hands (1393). By energetic measures he succeeded within two years in quelling the turbulence of his nobles, in establishing his own popularity with the body of the people, and thus in effecting the pacification of his kingdom. The only foreign war during this reign was that with Portugal, which terminated in the peace of 1399, a great expedition against the kingdom of Granada, for which extensive preparations had been made, and for which large grants from the cortes held in Toledo in 1406 had been obtained, was brought to an abrupt termination by the death of Henry at that city on December 25 of the same year. It was during this reign that the sovereignty of the Canary Islands was assumed by Castile, and an interesting indication of at least a widening interest in foreign affairs was afforded by the mission of a solemn embassy to Tamlulane in 1401. Henry III was succeeded by John II, his eldest son by Catherine of Lancaster, whom he had married in 1393. See Davila, *Historia de la Vida y Hechos del Rey Don Henrique Tercero de Castilla* (1638).

HENRY IV (1425-1475), king of Castile, surnamed *el Impotente* (the impotent) and sometimes *el Liberal* (the spendthrift), the eldest son of John II by his first wife Maria of Aragon, was born at Valladolid on January 6, 1425. As prince of Asturias he took a prominent and generally an unflattering part in most of the disturbances of his father's reign, in 1445 a pitched battle between the king and the prince was prevented only at the last moment by the intervention of the clergy and some of the nobles, and peace was not finally secured until 1450 when Pope Nicholas V issued his bull of excommunication against all those in the peninsula who, by perplexing the affairs of the sovereign, were disastrously helping the cause of the infidels. In 1440 Henry had in accordance with a treaty entered in 1436 been

united to Blanche of Aragon, but this marriage, which had not been happy and which had given cause to many scandalous reports, he dissolved in 1439 shortly before his accession to the throne on his father's death in July of that year. He began his reign with a great show of energy against the Moors, but the boldness of his intentions contrasted strangely with the feebleness of his execution, and the unsatisfactory character of the results obtained tended greatly to bring to a head the discontent which his indolent inattention to home affairs, his reckless extravagance, and the disorders of his private life had not failed to create. In 1468 occurred at Avila the extraordinary scene, so often described, of the king's deposition in favour of his brother Alphonso, this was followed in 1468, shortly after Alphonso's death, by the election of his sister Isabella, who, however, declined to accept the proffered crown. In the same year Henry was forced to repudiate his wife Joanna of Portugal and to disinherit his daughter Juana (Isabella) whom he had unsuccessfully attempted to put forward as also his, and thus the succession became fixed in favour of Isabella, who was married to Ferdinand of Aragon in the following year. Henry died at Madrid on December 12, 1474.

For the events of the reign of Henry IV the contemporary authorities are Alonso de Palencia and Diego Hurtado de Castillo, each of whom has left a *Crónica del Rey Don Enrique Quarto*, the best and at the same time the most accessible modern English account yet to be found in *Precursor of the reign of Ferdinand and Isabella*, part i, chaps. iii and iv.

HENRY I (c. 1210-1274), king of Navarre, surnamed *le Gros*, third count of Champagne, was the youngest son of Theobald I of Navarre by Margaret of Flanders, and succeeded his oldest brother Theobald II in December 1270. His proclamation at Pamplona, however, did not occur till March of the following year, and his coronation was delayed until May 1273. After a brief reign, characterized it is said by dignity and talent, he died in July 1274, after which, according to the generally received accounts, with his own fat. In him the male line of the counts of Champagne, kings of Navarre, became extinct. He was succeeded by his only legitimate child Joanna, born in 1270, by whose marriage to Philip le Bel in 1281 the crown of Navarre became for a time united to that of France.

HENRY II (1603-1655), or Henri d'Albret, titular king of Navarre, born at Sanguesa in April 1603, was the eldest son of Jean d'Albret by Catherine of Navarre, and on the death of the latter in exile in June 1616 succeeded his parents in all their claims against Ferdinand the Catholic, assuming under the protection of Francis I of France the title of king of Navarre. After the ill-fated conference at Noyon (1516) and at Montpellier 1518, an active effort was made in 1521 to establish him in the *de facto* sovereignty, but the French troops which, under André de Foex, had seized the country were ultimately expelled by the Spanish victory, the duke of Najera. Henry, who along with Francis was taken prisoner at the battle of Pavia (1525) but afterwards contrived to escape, married Margaret, the only sister of the latter, in 1526, and by her became the father of Jeanne d'Albret, the mother of Henry IV of France. He died at Pau on May 25, 1555.

HENRY III of Navarre. See HENRY IV of France. HENRY, PRINCE (1394-1460), of Portugal, surnamed "the Navigator," to whose enlightened foresight and perseverance the human race is indebted for the maritime discovery, within one century, of more than half the globe, was born at Oporto, on the 4th of March 1394. His father was João I., under whose reign Portugal first began to recover from her subjugation by the Moors, and to assume a prominent position among the nations of Europe, his mother was Philippa, daughter of John of Gaunt. Prince Henry and his elder brothers, Duarte and Pedro, were sent

ont in 1415 on an expedition against the important Moorish city of Ceuta, which, after much hard fighting, they succeeded in taking in one day. All the princes distinguished themselves at the siege, but Prince Henry so pre-eminently that, but for his own entreaties, his father would have knighted him in precedence of his brothers. His renown after this became so high that he was invited severally by the pope, the emperor, and the kings of Castile (Juan II) and England (Henry V) to take the command of their respective armies. The prince, however, had set his mind on other and larger plans, involving more than the hope of reaching India by the south point of Africa. To this end he had several encouragements: the geographical position of Portugal was in his favour, the large revenues of the order of Christ, of which he was grand-master, provided him with means, and he had contrived to gather important information from the Moors with regard to the coast of Guinea and the populous nations of the interior of Africa. Accordingly in 1418-19 he took up his abode on the extreme south-western point of Europe, the promontory of Sagres, in Algarve, of which kingdom he was made governor in perpetuity, with the purpose of devoting himself to the study of astronomy and mathematics, and to the direction and superintendence of the expeditions which he proposed to send forth. There he erected an observatory, the first set up in Portugal, and at great expense procured the services of one Mestre Jacomo from Majorca, a man very skillful in the art of navigation and in the making of maps and instruments, to instruct the Portuguese officers in those sciences. An account has already been given of his principal explorations in the article GEOGRAPHY, vol. x. p. 180 (q.v.). At first his efforts seemed to be crowned with little success, and his various expeditions called down upon him much obloquy from the nobles, who complained of such an amount of useless expenditure, but on the prince's reputation fell harmless. The king died in 1433, and this troubles which followed occupied Prince Henry until 1440. In the following year Cape Blanco was reached, and in 1443 intercourse was established with negro states in Senegal and Gambia. In 1442-3 Henry VI of England conferred on the prince the riband of the order of the garter. In 1444-5 were discovered the river Senegal, Cape Verde, Cape St. Anne, Cabo dos Maestros, and the Rio Grande. During the labor years of his life Gomez and others made important voyages of discovery in Prince Henry's service (see vol. x. p. 180). He died November 13, 1460, in his town on Cape St. Vincent, and was buried in the church of St. Mary in Lagos, but a year later his body was removed to the superb convent of Batalha. His great-nephew, King Dom Manuel, had a statue of him placed over the eastern column of the side gate of the church of Belem. On July 24, 1840, a monument was erected to him at Sagres at the instance of the Marquis de S. da Bandeira.

The glory attaching to the name of Prince Henry does not rest merely on the achievements effected during his own lifetime, but on the stupendous subsequent results in maritime discovery to which his genius and perseverance had lent the primary impulsion. The sovereigns loyally continued what the prince had begun. The inviolable results effected within a century from the founding of Cape Bonaville in 1419 formed one unbroken chain of discovery, which originated in the genius and the efforts of one man. They were the stupendous issue of a great thought and of indomitable perseverance, in a life of twelve years of bodily failure and distressing infirmity. As Mr. Major, in his *Life of Prince Henry*, has justly said, "If that failure and that infirmity produced on Prince Henry the effect which they ordinarily produce on other men, it is impossible to say what delays would have occurred before these mighty events would have been realized - for it must be borne in mind that the aid, not only of his own sailors, but of surrounding nations, owed its impulse to this persistency of purpose in him."

HENRY THE LION (1129-1195), duke of Saxony and Bavaria, son of Henry the Proud, was born in 1129. After the death in 1139 of his father, who had been deprived of his possessions by Conrad III, the bravery and energy of his mother Gertrude and his grandmother Richenza secured to him the duchy of Saxony. Shortly after coming of age he at the diet of Frankfurt in 1147 demanded also the restoration of Bavaria, but was refused, upon which, along with his uncle Welf VI, he made an unsuccessful attempt to seize it by force of arms. In 1154 he, however, received from Frederick I the formal recognition of his claims to his possession, and in 1156 Henry Jasomirgott was compelled to deliver it up to him. Besides distinguishing himself in the wars of Frederick in Italy, Henry now devoted his energies to establishing his power in his own dominions, both by conquest and by encouraging agriculture and trade. He extended the boundaries of Saxony beyond the Elbe by successful battles against the Slavs, founded Munich in Bavaria, colonized Mecklenburg and Holstein, and fostered the growth of Hamburg and Lubeck. His ambitious projects and his arrogant bearing awakened, however, the hostility of several of the secular and ecclesiastical potentates, who in 1166 concluded a league against him at Meissenburg, and a stubborn contest of two years' duration ensued, which was finally ended by Frederick in 1169, his death, and the accession of Henry's son Otto IV, who was elected at the council of Bamberg in Henry's favour. In February 1168 Henry, having previously divorced Clementia of Zahringen, married Mahide, daughter of Henry II of England, and, elated by such an influential alliance and by the increasing resources of his dominions, he shortly after his return from a pilgrimage to the Holy Land in 1172 began to manifest a tendency to treat the emperor with coldness and to revive the traditional rivalry of his race with the Hohenstaufens. He took no part in the Italian expedition of 1174, and in 1176 his sullen denotation of Frederick in the census of his states with the Lombard cities resulted in the disaster at Legnano. On Frederick's return from Italy in 1177 Henry was summoned to appear before him at the diet of Worms, and, declining to do so, he was placed under the ban of the empire, and his lands were divided among other princes. For more than a year he endeavoured to resist the execution of the imperial decree, but he found it necessary at last, in November 1181, to give in his submission to Frederick, who, on condition that he remained three years in England, agreed to reinstate him in the possession of Brunswick and Lüneburg. Having in 1189 refused to accompany Frederick on his crusade, he was again compelled to withdraw to England, but shortly after Frederick's departure he returned, and, concluding an alliance with the archbishop of Bremen, made a second attempt to recover his territories, but, though at first he gained several important victories, he was ultimately compelled in July 1190 to conclude a peace at Fulda, which secured to him scarcely any advantages from the contest. Emboldened by the hostile alliance formed against the emperor Henry VI in 1192, he again renewed the struggle, but after Richard of England fell into the hands of the emperor in the following year, he found it necessary again to give in his submission, and shortly afterwards a pledge of amity between the two houses was given through the marriage of the eldest son of Henry the Lion to Agnes, niece of Frederick I, and cousin of the reigning emperor. Henry died 6th August 1195 at Brunswick, and was buried in the church of St. Blasius. Otto, his second son, became emperor under the title of Otto IV. A colossal statue of Henry was unveiled at Brunswick 4th July 1874. Though ambitious, headstrong, and pugnacious, Henry showed that while he possessed no small skill in the art of war he could appreciate the arts of peace, and he gave



a powerful impetus to the development of many important cities, and furthered with judicious sagacity the material prosperity of his kingdom.

See Böttger, *Historie des Landes, Hanover*, 1819, Pütz, *Historie des Landes, Leipzig*, 1805, Wenzel, *Das Saechs. Herzogthum unter Lothar und Heinrich dem Ersten*, Greifswald, 1860; Philippson, *Geschichte Heinrich des Löwen*, Leipzig, 2 vols., 1867-8, and the various biographies of Frederick I.

HENRY THE DRAGON, variously called of Cluny, because he was at one time a monk of that rule, of Lausanne, because he is believed to have first appeared as a preacher of repentance there, and of Toulouse, because his later years were passed in that city and neighbourhood, — founder of the antinicean sect of *Henricians*, was of Swiss or Italian extraction (his birthplace is unknown), and was born towards the end of the 11th century. About the year 1115 he abandoned the cloister, where he had entered the diaconate, and, burning with righteous indignation against the dead mechanical ceremonialism of the dominant church and the hideous moral otiosity of its clergy, began to go about as an itinerant preacher. The neighbourhood of Lausanne was probably the scene of his earliest appearances, but he soon betook himself to France, where the soil had been prepared for him by Peter of Burs (leader of the Petricobrasians), and where he at once began to attract adherents. About the beginning of Lent in 1116 he asked and received permission of the bishop Hildebert of Le Mans (Cenoman) to visit that city, the fact that he was not only tolerated but received with some degree of honour at the same shows that he had not as yet fallen under serious suspicion of heretical pravity. Soon the extraordinary fascination of his character began to make itself felt, and the rude but convincing eloquence with which he exposed the immorality of the clergy rapidly alienated the people of the town from their spiritual guides, remonstrances and inhibitions by the local ecclesiastical authorities were equally vain, and when Hildebert, who had been absent in Rome, returned to his diocese, he found his episcopal blessing treated with contempt, and was bluntly told by his flock that they had found "a father, a priest, an intendant, more exalted in authority, more honourable in life, more eminent in knowledge." From the confused accounts of Henry's life and labours which have reached us it does not appear that even then he had come forward as the teacher of any new or strange doctrine, his efforts as a reformer of public and domestic morals are chiefly insisted on, especially the measures he took for the redemption of fallen women, for the encouragement of early and honourable marriage among the laity, and for the promotion of a higher standard of purity among the nominally celibate clergy. It was not as a heretic but merely as a somewhat inconvenient agitator that he was ordered by Hildebert at last to leave Le Mans. We next read of Henry as conspicuously active in Provence, especially after the burning in 1124 of Peter of Burs, with whose peculiar views he is alleged, upon evidence which has not reached us, to have entirely sympathized. In 1134 he was arrested by the bishop of Ailes and taken to the council of Pisa, there he was declared to be a heretic, and condemned to imprisonment. This captivity, however, does not appear to have lasted long. The scene of the third and concluding chapter of the recorded life of Henry is laid at Toulouse, where after ten years of uninterrupted activity with the result complained of by Saint Bernard (*Ep.* 241) — "the churches are without flocks, the flocks without priests, the priests are nowhere treated with due reverence, the churches are reduced to the level of synagogues, the sacraments are despised, the festivals disregarded" — it was found necessary by Pope Eugenius III to take active measures for the defence of the church. With this view the cardinal bishop Alberic of Ostia was sent as a legate to the disaffected

districts, and with him was associated Bernard of Clairvaux. Their efforts were ultimately successful, Henry died an obscure death in prison about the year 1148, and his sect soon afterwards ceased to have any separate existence.

The original authorities upon this subject are the *Acta Synodorum Cenomanensium* ("Gesta Hildeberti"), which have been published in Mabillon's *Annales*, Vol. I, and Henry's letters (*Ep.* 241) to Count Hildebrand of St Gilles, written in 1147. From these sources the distinctive tenets of Henry and the Henricians (if distinctive tenets there were) cannot be gathered with any clearness. The probability is that Henry was a disciplinarian, he had a definite system of doctrine to oppose to that of the Church, but was antiniceanist in pure and simple, "insurgents, who shook the established government, but did not attempt to replace it by any new form of system of opinions and discipline." See Milner, *History of Latin Christianity*, B. ix c. 8, and Halm, *Geschichte der Ketzer im Mittelalter* (1845).

HENRY OF GHENT. The scholastic writer generally known by this name was born probably about 1217 in the district of Made, near Ghent. His family name seems to have been Goetliens, but he is always described as Henry of Made or of Ghent. Little is known of the details of his life. He studied at Ghent and then at Cologne under Albertus Magnus. After obtaining the degree of doctor he returned to Ghent, and is said to have been the first to lecture publicly in that city on philosophy and theology. Like most of the great doctors of the age, he was drawn to Paris by the fame of the university there. In 1217 he is known to have taught at Paris, and he was distinguished by the title of *doctor solennis*. He took an active part in some of the many disputes between the orders and the secular priests, and warmly defended the latter. He died at Tournay, of which place he was archdeacon, in 1293. His most important works, *Quodlibeta Theologica* and *Summa Theologica* have been printed, the first in 1518, the second in 1520. Several other writings remain in MS. Henry of Ghent occupies a somewhat remarkable place in the history of scholasticism. A contemporary of the great Aquinas, he opposed several of the dominant theories of the time, and united with the current Aristotelian doctrines a strong infusion of Platonism and mysticism. Only a few of the salient points of his doctrine can here be given, the line of thinking by which they are reached is elaborate and complex. He distinguishes between knowledge of natural objects and the divine inspiration or intuition by which we cognize the being and existence of God. The first, according to Henry, throws no light upon the second. Individuals are not constituted by the material element in them, but by the fact of their independent existence, i.e., ultimately by the fact that they are created as separate objects. Universals must be distinguished according as they have reference to our minds or to the Divine mind. In the divine intelligence exist exemplars or types of the genera and species of natural objects. On this subject, however, Henry is far from clear, but it deserves notice that he defends Plato against the current Aristotelian criticism, and endeavours to show that the two views are in harmony. In psychology, his view of the intimate union of soul and body is truly remarkable. The body he regards as forming part of the very substance of the soul, though this union the soul is more perfect and complete.

There is a monograph on Henry by Fr. Huut, *Recherches historiques et critiques sur sa vie, ses ouvrages, et la doctrine de Henri de Ghent*, Paris, 1888. See also Wenzel, *Historie von Genui des Bepfandant des Christlichen Platonismus im 13ten Jothr.*, Vienna, 1878, Stuckl, *Phil d. Mittelalters*, v. 738-758, Tournay, *Phil de St Thomas d'Aquin*, v. 28-40, *Études littéraires de la France*, v. 144 seq., also Halm, *Cenomanen*, and the general literature.

HENRY OF HUNTINGDON, an English chronicler of the 13th century, born, it is likely, between 1080 and 1090, was the son of an ecclesiastic named Nicholas, who probably held the office of archdeacon of Huntingdon, to which Henry himself afterwards attained about 1120. The celebrity of

the clergy not being enforced in England till 1102, this patent was considered no disgrace, and our author in several passages of his writings refers to his father with much filial respect. Received as a male child into the household of Robert de Bloet, bishop of Lincoln, Henry not only continued to enjoy the advantages of its culture and affluence till the bishop's death in 1123, but he also secured the patronage and friendship of Alexander of Blois, who next succeeded to the see. There is reason to believe that he accompanied Alexander to Rome, probably in 1125 and 1111, and it was to him that he dedicated his *Historia Anglorum*, which was issued four times during the author's life, and in the last form came down to the accession of Henry II. (1154). The date of the author's death has not been preserved, but it is probable that the close of his life is approximately marked by the close of his history.

Henry of Huntington's *Historia* was first printed by Stukely, *Ramus Anglicanus*, *Reliquiae post Bedam* (London, 1686), and it was published at Frankfurt in 1693. Books i, ii, iv, v, and vi were edited by Mr. Patric for the Record Commission, vol. i, 1841, and the whole work has been reprinted for the Rolls Series by T. Arnold, 1880. An English translation by Thomas Forester forms a volume of Bohn's Standard Library (1855). Henry borrows from Henry's pen in Epistle to Henry I. on the succession of the Welsh, Assyria, Persia, Macedonia, and Roman kings and emperors (written in 1130), in Epistle to Warrin (one of his friends) containing an epitome of the British History of Geoffrey of Monmouth, which he had drawn upon in Norman and Anglo-Saxon times, and then, in an Epistle to his friend Walter on *Contempt of the World* (on *Bishops and other Illustrious Men of the Age*) (written in 1147, and edited by Warrin in his *Anglica Scripta*, 1691). Nor must Henry's poetical poems be forgotten, as they speak well for his culture and taste. Two thirty copies of his complete works preserved at Lumbeth were to be specially mentioned, and the British Museum possesses several important results of his history—Wright, *Diogenes*, *Dist*, and *Anglo-Norman Poets*, 1846; Ferguson & Pictet, J. J. Guizot, *Early Chronicles of Europe*, England (1871), and Arnold's, *Laboratory introductions*.

HENRY, JOSEPH (1797-1878), an eminent American physicist, was born in Albany, the capital of the State of New York, on the 17th of December 1797. He received his education at an ordinary school, and afterward at the Albany academy, which enjoyed considerable reputation for the thoroughness of its classical and mathematical courses. On finishing his academic studies he contemplated adopting the medical profession, and prosecuted his studies in chemistry, anatomy, and physiology with that view. He occasionally contributed papers to the Albany institute, in the years 1824 and 1825, on chemical and mechanical subjects, and in the latter year, having been unexpectedly appointed assistant engineer on the survey of a route for a State road from the Hudson river to Lake Erie, a distance somewhat over 300 miles, he at once embarked with zeal and success in the new enterprise. This diversion from his original bent gave him an inclination to the career of civil and mechanical engineering, and in the spring of 1826 he was elected by the trustees of the Albany academy to the chair of mathematics and natural philosophy in that institution. In the latter part of 1827 he read before the Albany institute his first important contribution, "On some Modifications of the Electro-Magnetic Apparatus." Struck with the great improvements then recently introduced into such apparatus by Mr. William Sturgeon of Woolwich, he had still further extended their efficiency, with considerable reduction of battery-power, by adopting in all the experimental circuits (where applicable) the principle of Schweigger's "multiplier," that is, by substituting for single wire circuits, voluminous coils. *Trans. Albany Institute*, October 10, 1827, vol. i, pp. 29, 28. In 1828 and in March 1829 he exhibited before the institute small electro-magnets closely and repeatedly wound with silk-covered wire, which had a far greater lifting power than any then known. Henry appears to have been the first to adopt

insulated or silk-covered wire for the magnetic coil, and also the first to employ what may be called the "spool" winding for the limbs of the magnet. He was also the first to demonstrate experimentally the difference of action between what he called a "quantity" magnet excited by a "quantity" battery of a single pair, and an "intensity" magnet with long fine wire coil excited by an "intensity" battery of many elements, having then resistances suitably proportioned. He pointed out that the latter form alone was applicable to telegraphic purposes. A detailed account of these experiments and exhibitions was not, however, published till January 1, 1831 (*Silliman's Am. Jour. Sci.*, art. 400-408). Henry's "quantity" magnets acquired considerable celebrity at the time, from their unprecedented attractive power,—one (August 1830) lifting 750 pounds, another (March 1831) 2300, and a third (1834) 3500.

Early in 1831 he arranged a small office hall to be tapped by the polarized terminals of an "intensity" magnet, whose coil was in continuation of a mile of insulated copper wire, suspended about the rooms of his academy. This was the first instance of magnetizing iron at a distance, or of a suitable combination of magnet and battery being so arranged as to be capable of such action. It was, therefore, the earliest example of a true "magnetic" telegraph, all succeeding experiments to this end having been on the galvanometer or needle principle. About the same time he devised and constructed the first electro-magnetic circuit with automatic polarizations (*Silliman's Am. Jour. Sci.*, July 1831, pp. 310-312, and *Silliman's Am. Jour. Sci.*, 1830, pp. 154, 155). Early in 1832 he discovered the induction of a current on itself, in a long helical wire, giving greatly increased intensity of discharge (*Silliman's Am. Jour. Sci.*, July 1832, art. 106). In 1832 he was elected to the chair of natural philosophy in the Albany College of Physicians. In 1831 he continued and extended his researches—"On the Influence of a Spinal Conductor in increasing the Intensity of Electricity from a Galvanic Arrangement of Single Pairs," a mention of which was made before the American Philosophical Society, June 6, 1835 (*Trans. Am. Phil. Soc.*, p. 223-231, n.s.). In 1835 he continued the short circuit of his magnetic circuit (of 1831) with the small "intensity" magnet of an electromagnet, and thereby establishing the fact that very powerful mechanical effects could be produced at a great distance by the agency of a very feeble magnet used as a current maker and breaker, or as a "trigger"—the practical utility of relay and repeating magnets. In 1837 he paid his first visit to England and Europe. In 1838 he made important investigations in regard to the conditions and range of induction from electrical currents,—showing that induced currents, although merely momentary, produce still other or tertiary currents, and thus on through successive orders of induction, with alternating signs, and with reversed initial and terminal signs. He also discovered similar successive orders of induction in the case of the presence of functional electricity (*Proc. Am. Phil. Soc.*, February 6, n.s.). Among many minor observations, he discovered in 1842 the oscillatory nature of the electrical discharge, magnetizing about a thousand needles in the course of his experiments (*Proc. Am. Phil. Soc.*, 1841). He traced the influence of induction on the rising distance, magnetizing needles in the lower story of a house through several intervening floors by means of electric discharges in the upper story, and also by the secondary circuit in circuit 250 feet distant from the wire of the primary circuit. The five numbers of his *Contributions to Electricity and Magnetism* (1835-1842) were sequentially republished from the *Transactions*. In 1848 he made some interesting original observations—"Phosphorescence" (*Proc. Am. Phil. Soc.*, pp. 33-44). In 1844, by experiments on the tenacity of soap-bubbles, he showed that the molecular cohesion of water is equal (if not superior) to that of ice, and hence, generally, that solids and then liquids have more cohesion than gases. In 1845 he showed, by means of a thermo-galvanometer, that the solar spots indicate less heat than the general solar surface (*Proc. Am. Phil. Soc.*, pp. 173-176).

In December 1846 Henry was elected secretary and director of the Smithsonian Institution, then just established. While closely occupied with the exacting duties of that office, he still found time to prosecute many of his original inquiries, as into the application of acoustics to public buildings, and the best construction and arrangement of lecture-rooms, into the strength of various building materials, &c. Having only devoted much attention to meteorology, he took up observing and recording observations, and predictions, he (among his administrative acts) organized a large and widespread corps of observers, and made arrangements for simultaneous reports by means of the electric telegraph, which was yet in its infancy. *Trans. Smithsonian Institution*, 1847, p. 1. In 1847 he was the first to apply the telegraph to meteorological research, to have

the atmospheric conditions daily indicated on a large map, and to utilize the greatest theories now in vogue for forecast, and the first to embrace a continent under a single system.—British America and Mexico being included in the field of observation. In 1865, on the reorganization of the American light-house system, he was appointed a member of the new board, and on the resignation of Admira! Shubrick as its chairman, Henry, in 1871, became the presiding officer of the establishment—a position he continued to hold during the rest of his life. His habit of investigations into the efficacy of various illuminants under differing circumstances, and into the best conditions for developing their several maximum points of brilliancy, while greatly improving the usefulness of the art of burning lamps, the extensive coast of the United States, situated at the same time a great economy of administration. His equally careful experiments on various acoustic instruments also resulted in giving to his country the most serviceable system of fog-signals known to maritime powers. In the course of these varied and prolonged researches from 1865 to 1877, he also made important contributions to the science of acoustics, and he established by several series of laborious observations, extending over many years and along a wide coast range, the correctness of Professor Stokes's hypothesis (*Report Brit. Assoc.*, 1877, part 2) that the wind exerts a very marked influence in reflecting sound beams. The complex conditions of such acoustic refraction, he found to be exceedingly variable and capricious (*Dep't. American Lighthouse Board*, 1874, 1876, and 1877). From 1868 Henry continued to be annually chosen as president of the National Academy of Sciences, and he was also president of the Philosophical Society of Washington from the day of its organization in 1871.

Henry was by general concession the foremost of American physicists. He was a man of varied culture, of large breadth and liberality of views, of great impulses, of great gentleness and courtesy of manner, combined with equal firmness of purpose and energy of action. He died at Washington, May 18, 1878 (8 F B).

HENRY, MATTHEW (1662-1714), the author of the well known and justly popular *Exposition of the Old and New Testaments*, was born at Broad Oak, a farm-house on the confines of Flintshire and Shropshire, on the 15th of October 1662. He was the son of Philip Henry, one of the 2000 ministers who were ejected from their livings in 1662 for refusing to conform to the Act of Uniformity. Unlike the majority of his fellow-sufferers, Philip Henry, who through his wife was the possessor of private means, was spared all personal privation or hardship as the consequence of his nonconformity, and was thus enabled to give a good education to his son. Having received his preliminary education from his father and a tutor named Turner, Henry was next removed to an academy at Islington, whence he proceeded to become a student of law at Gray's Inn. His legal studies, however, not advanced far when he relinquished them, the theology to which he thenceforth devoted himself. In 1686 he became minister of a Presbyterian congregation at Chester, whence in 1712 he was translated to Hackney. Two years later (June 22, 1714), he died suddenly of apoplexy at Nantwich while on a journey from Chester to London. Henry's *Exposition*, the work by which he is now chiefly remembered, is a commentary of a practical and devotional rather than of a critical kind, ranging over the whole of the Old Testament and extending into the New as far as to the end of the Acts. At this point it was broken off by the author's death, but the work was finished by a number of clergymen, whose names are recorded in most editions of the book. In a critical point of view, it may be said to be quite valueless, yet its unflinching good sense, its discriminating thought, its high moral tone, its simple piety, and its altogether singular felicity of practical application, combine with the well sustained flow of its easy English style to secure for it, and deservedly, the foremost place among works of its class.

Besides the *Exposition*, Matthew Henry wrote a *Life of Mr. Philip Henry*, *The Communicant's Companion*, *Directions for Daily Communion with God*, *Method for Prayer*, and *A Scriptural Catechism*, all of which, along with his numerous sermons (which are frequently reprinted, both separately and in complete editions of his *Miscellaneous Works*). His life has been written by W. Tong (London, 1816), by Davy (published as *Exposition*, ed. 1841), by Hamilton (*Obituary*, 1869), by G. Chapman (1860), and by J. B. Williams (1828, now ed. 1866).

HENRY, PATRICK (1736-1799), an American statesman and orator, was born at Studley, Hanover county, Virginia, May 29, 1736, the second son in a family of nine children. His father, John Henry, an emigrant from Aberdeen, Scotland, was a nephew of Robertson the historian, and had risen to some eminence in the county, filling the offices of surveyor and presiding magistrate. Patrick Henry was educated at a little school near his home, and, after the age of ten, by his father, who had opened a grammar school at his residence. In early life he showed no marked proficiency in his studies, except perhaps in mathematics, but was noted chiefly for his love of outdoor sports. At fifteen he became clerk in a country store, and at sixteen he entered into partnership as storekeeper with his elder brother, but the business was unsuccessful, and a second attempt at storekeeping ended likewise in failure. Meanwhile the indifference to learning which marked his boyhood was replaced by a love of history, especially that of Greece and Rome, and his habitual idleness was overcome by his admiration for Livy, whose history he thenceforth read through once every year. At twenty-four, by his admission to the bar, Henry entered on the career that eventually brought him fame and fortune, although his income for some years was in keeping with his lack of previous preparation. At twenty-six he was called to the bar, as counsel for the collector of the county, in what became known as "the poison case." His unexpected display of eloquence on the side of the people procured him an extravagant recognition and the title of "the orator of nature." Business poured in upon him, his popularity concealing his deficiencies, and his success was assured. In 1765 he was elected to the House of Burgesses, where he distinguished himself as the author of certain resolutions against the Stamp Act, the last of which,—providing that "the General Assembly of this colony have the sole right and power to lay taxes and impositions upon the inhabitants of this colony,"—though passed by a majority of only one, was the key note of the struggle for independence. In 1769 he was admitted to practice in the general court, where he attained eminence in criminal cases before juries. In 1773 he was a member of the "committee of correspondence for the dissemination of intelligence between the colonies." In the following year he was chosen delegate to the Virginia convention, which was the first public assembly to recommend an annual "General Congress," and to the "Old Continental Congress," but his success there as an orator failed to conceal his defects as a practical statesman. In 1775, in the Virginia convention, he delivered a remarkable speech in moving that the "colony be immediately put in a state of defence," and at the head of a body of militia he forced the royal officials to pay £380 for powder clandestinely removed by order of Governor Dunmore. He was appointed by the convention colonel of the first regiment and commander of all the forces to be raised in Virginia, but a misunderstanding with the "committee of safety" led to his resignation. He was a member of the second Continental Congress of 1775, and of the Virginia convention of 1776, which had been elected "to take care of the republic," the royal governor having fled. They framed a new constitution, and elected Henry the first republican governor, on the first ballot. He was re-elected in 1777 and 1778. In 1780 he became a member of the legislature, where he continued until he was again elected governor in 1784. In 1786 he withdrew through the pressure of debt, having "never been in easy circumstances." In 1787 he was chosen a delegate to the "Federal Constitutional Convention," but did not attend. He had resumed his practice to better his fortunes. In 1788 he was a delegate to the Virginia convention for ratifying the Federal Constitution, which he vehemently

opposed as dangerous to the liberties of the country. In 1791 he declined re-election to the legislature, continuing, "though necessity rather than choice," the practice of the law, but usually in great and remunerative cases only. Finally, in 1791, having not only paid his debts but secured affluence, he withdrew to private life. In 1795 he declined the position of secretary of state in Washington's cabinet, in 1796 the nomination for governor of Virginia, and in 1797 the mission to France, offered by President Adams. In 1799, however, he suffered himself to be elected to the State legislature, where he wished to oppose what he deemed the dangerous doctrine of the Virginia resolutions of 1798, but he did not take his seat, his death occurring on the 6th June. Henry's manners were plain, his temper cheerful, and his habits temperate. His eloquence, of which some fragmentary specimens have become household words among his countrymen, was vivid and statelike. Almost entirely a gift of nature, it was equal to every occasion, and, with the aid of a clear voice and perfect articulation, it was of marvellous power in bringing his hearers to a quick decision.

HENRY, ROBERT (1718-1790), the author of the *History of Great Britain written on a new plan*, was the son of a farmer, and was born in the parish of St Ninians near Stirling, 18th February 1718. He received his early education at the school of his native parish, and at the grammar school of Stirling, and after completing a course of study at Edinburgh University became master of the grammar school of Annan. In 1746 he was licensed to preach by the Annan presbytery, shortly after which he was chosen minister of a Presbyterian congregation at Carlisle, where he remained until 1760, when he was removed to a similar charge at Berwick-on-Tweed. It was during his stay at Berwick that the idea of his *History* first occurred to him, but the death of books and the difficulty of consulting original authorities compelled him to postpone the execution of his design till his removal to Edinburgh, as minister of New Greyfriars, in 1768. The first volume of his *History* appeared in 1771, and the others followed at irregular intervals until 1785, when the fifth was published, bringing down the narrative to the Tudor dynasty. The work was virulently assailed by Gilbert Stuart, but the attack was overdone, and although it for a time hindered the sale, the injury effected was only temporary. For the volumes published in his lifetime Henry realized as much as £3300, and through the influence of Lord Mansfield he was in 1781 rewarded with a pension of £100 a year from George III. In 1784 he received the degree of D.D. from the university of Edinburgh. He died in 1790 before his tenth volume was quite ready for the press. Four years after his death it was published under the care of Malcolm Laing, who supplied the entire chapters v and vi, and added an index. A life of the author by Sir Henry Wallwood Moncreiff was prefixed to the volume. The novel feature in Henry's *History* was that he combined with the narrative of the great political events of each era an account of the domestic state and social progress of the people within the same period. His researches were conducted with great care, and his work embodies much novel and curious information, but the comprehensiveness of his plan, and the limited character of the historical sources then available, greatly militated against the accuracy of his narrative. Notwithstanding also that the work is well arranged, and written with clearness and simplicity, its defects as an authority are not compensated for by any peculiar excellences of style, by originality or vigour of reflection, or by any special skill in the delineation of character.

*A Continuation of Henry's History to the Accession of James I.*, by J. Pettit Andrews, appeared in 1796. An account of the attack of Gilbert Stuart on Henry is given in Dunsell's *Colloquies of Authors*.

HENRY, WILLIAM (1775-1836), a distinguished chemist, son of Thomas Henry, an apothecary and author of some works on chemistry, was born at Manchester, December 12, 1775. After completing his education at an academy in Manchester, he was for some years private secretary to a physician, and in 1795 he began the study of medicine at the university of Edinburgh. Prudential considerations compelled him, however, to interrupt his studies at the conclusion of his first session, and he did not resume them till 1805, two years after which he received the diploma of M.D. For some time he practised as a physician in Manchester, but on account of delicate health, caused by an accident, he was ultimately compelled to retire from his profession. He nevertheless carried on his original researches in chemistry, for which he found great facilities in connexion with his father's business, and from 1797 till his death he continued to enrich the *Transactions* of the Royal Society with contributions on his favourite science, especially in regard to aeriform bodies. His first communication was an attempt, in opposition to Austin, Beddoes, and others, to establish the title of carbon to rank among the elementary bodies, but discovering afterwards a fallacy in his reasoning he corrected it in a subsequent paper. In 1800 he published in the *Philosophical Transactions* his experiments on muriatic acid gas, made with the view of disengaging an imaginary unknown element supposed to be associated with oxygen in the composition of the gas, but after the discovery of the real nature of the acid by Davy he was one of the earliest converts to the new theory. In 1803 he published his elaborate experiments on the quantity of gases absorbed by water at different temperatures and under different pressures, with the result of establishing the law that "water takes up of gas, condensed by one, two, or more additional atmospheres, a quantity which would be equal to twice, thrice, &c., the volume absorbed under the common pressure of the atmosphere." In 1808 he described in the *Philosophical Transactions* a form of apparatus adapted to the combustion of larger quantities of gases than could be fitted in eudiometric tubes. In the same year he was chosen a fellow of the Royal Society, and in 1809, for his valuable contributions to the *Transactions* of the society, he was awarded the Copley gold medal. For the next fifteen years he continued his experiments on the gases, making known the results of them from time to time to the society. In his last communication, in 1824, he claimed the merit of having conquered the only difficulty that remained in a series of experiments on the gaseous substances issuing from the destructive distillation of coal and oil, and proved the exact composition of the fire-damp of mines. But though Henry's experiments had reference chiefly to aeriform bodies, his acquaintance with general chemistry is proved by his *Elements of Experimental Chemistry*, a work which combines great literary elegance with the highest standard of scientific accuracy. He had also collected materials for a history of chemical discovery from the middle of last century, but did not live to carry out the project. It is indeed to be regretted that he did not contribute more to the literature of science. His biographical notices of Priestley, Wollaston, and Davy may be regarded as models in that species of composition. At intervals during his lifetime Henry suffered much from neuralgic pains. These became so severe as to render the extirpation of the principal nerves of the hand necessary, but this failed to afford the expected relief, and ultimately the irritation of the whole nervous system deprived him of sleep, and caused his death on September 2, 1836.

HENRYSON, ROBERT (c. 1425-1506), one of the early Scottish poets, and the author of the first specimen of the pastoral poetry of Scotland, is usually designated schoolmaster of Dunfermline, and according to tradition

he was the ancestor of the family of Henryson or Henderson of Fordell, in the county of Fife, one of whom, James Henryson, was king's poetaster and justice-clerk in 1494. Of the poet's parentage and early history, however, no certain information can be discovered. From various circumstances known about him he must have been born about the year 1425. He seems to have been educated abroad, as his name does not appear in the registers of the university of St Andrews, the only one then existing in Scotland, and from an allusion in one of his poems, his attention was probably given to the study of law. In 1462 his name appears in the list of members of the newly founded university of Glasgow as "Magister Robertus Henryson in artibus licentiatu8 et in decretis Bachalarius." Henryson seems, in addition to teaching, to have practised as Dunfermline as a notary public. His decease in or shortly before 1506 is alluded to by Dunbar, who, in his lament for the "makaris" or poets, says of Death—

"In Dunfermline he his dome took  
Gud Maister Robert Henryson"

Of the writings of Henryson that have come down to the present time, his *Treatise of Cresseid* may be considered the chief. It was composed as a continuation or supplement to Chaucer's *Probes and Cresseid*, which was one of the most popular poems in the English language. Henryson resumes the story where Chaucer leaves off, and completes it by inflicting a suitable punishment on the false Cresseid. This poem displays so much skill that it has been included in all the early editions of Chaucer, as if it had been the work of that poet himself. Another poem, *Robene and Makene*, though short, is remarkable, as it is the first known specimen of pastoral poetry in English, while his *Dirige to Sir John* is amongst the oldest examples of ballad poetry. His metrical version of thirteen of the *Fables of Aesop* is perhaps the best known of his works. To each fable is appended an application to mortal life. In these he alludes to the occupations of the people and the social state of the country during the feckle reign of James III. His occasional *Pole of Peppere*, though a linguistic performance, exhibits his familiarity with the school of Learning of his time. Some of the poems of Henryson have been preserved in the Aikton MS. in the Aikton Library, the Bannatyne MS. in the Advocates' Library, Edinburgh, the Midland MS. in the Pepysian Library, Cambridge, and the Bodleian MS. in the Bodleian Museum. His *Opheleus and Eurydice* was printed at Edinburgh by Clephane & Mylne in 1808. The *Treatise of Cresseid* was printed at Edinburgh by Henry Chaiters in 1803. The poem of *Robene and Makene* and the *Treatise of Cresseid* were reprinted for the Bannatyne Club in 1821. The *MS. of Probes* was printed at Edinburgh by Leitch in 1870, at London by R. Smith in 1877, and again at Edinburgh by Andrew H. in 1881. This last edition was reprinted for the Midland Club in 1882. A selected edition of the poems of Henryson, nothing to be desired, was printed at Edinburgh in 1886, under the editorial care of Dr David Laing.

HENSLOWE, THOMAS, a contemporary of Shakespeare, whose name continues of interest from his intimate association with the history of the theatre during the great dramatist's career. Originally, it would appear, a dyer and afterwards a starchmaker, and ready to turn to any profitable speculation, he probably began his connexion with the stage in 1584 by becoming "joint lessee of the Rose theatre on the Bankside, or of the ground on which it stood." From 1591 to his death in 1616 he was in theatrical partnership with the more famous Edward Alleyn, who in 1592 married his step daughter, Joan Woodward. In 1613 he was appointed sergeant of the king's bor'-garden, to take charge of a lion and certain other beasts presented by the duke of Savoy. Henslowe's business diary from 1593 to 1609 has happily been preserved in Alleyn's College at Dulwich, and, though evidently the work of an ignorant man, it is of prime importance for its miscellaneous store of items in regard to the first appearance of plays, the sums paid to the authors, the theatre receipts, and so on. It was edited for the Shakespeare Society in 1841 by J. Payne Collier, who, however, found that the MS. had suffered considerable mutilation at the hands of miscanthigraph hunters since the time when it was employed by its original discoverer Malone. See ALLEYN.

HENZADA, a district in Pegu division, British Burma, lying between 16° 49' and 18° 30' N lat., and between 94° 51' and 96° 7' E long., with an area of 4047 square miles. It is bounded on the N. by the Pegu mountains, on the E. by the Pegu Yomas, on the S. by Rangoon, Thonkwa, and Bassein districts, and on the W. by the Aitakun Yoma range. Henzada district stretches from north to south in one vast plain, forming the valley of the Irawadi, and is divided by that river into two nearly equal portions. This country is protected from inundation by immense embankments, so that almost the whole area is suitable for rice cultivation. The chief mountains are the Aitakun and Pegu Yomas. The greatest elevation of the Aitakun range in Henzada, attained in the latitude of Myan-oung, is 4003 feet above sea-level. Numerous torrents pour down from the two boundary ranges, and unite in the plains to form large streams, which fall into the chief rivers of the district, viz., the Irawadi, Hlaing, and Bassein. The forests comprise almost every variety of timber found in Burma.

The inhabitants of Henzada's district in 1876 numbered 501,213. The number of immigrants into the district during the ten years ending 1876 was 90,787. The chief occupation of the people is agriculture. Nearly all the large towns are on the right bank of the Irawadi. The chief towns have populations as follows—Henzada, 16,807; Kyau-kling, 8751; Myin-oung, 6788; and Mong-gy, on the left bank of the Irawadi, 16,770. The crops of the district are rice, sugar, cotton, and tobacco. The total value under cultivation in 1876 was 803,018 acres. The other products are cotton, indigo, oil seeds, pepper and pulses, corn, and betel nuts, gun vine, &c. The revenue in 1876-77 was £153,748. In 1876 the police force consisted of 400 men.

The district was once a portion of the Tiling kingdom of Pegu, afterwards annexed to the Burmese empire in 1755, and has no history of its own. During the second Burmese war, it, like the whole of the country, was under British occupation. It had been seized, the Burmese on the right bank of the Irawadi crossed the river and offered resistance to the British, but were completely routed. Meanwhile, in Thawadi, on the country east of the Irawadi, and in the north of Henzada, much disorder was caused by a revolt, the leaders of which were, however, defeated by the British, and their gangs dispersed.

HEPATITIS. See LIVERWORM.

HEPHESTION, son of Amyntor, a Macedonian king of Pella, is celebrated as the friend of Alexander the Great. The two, according to Quintus Curtius (iii. 12), were companions in childhood, but beyond this old-standing connexion we find no evidence of such qualities in Hephestion as deserved the passionate attachment of Alexander. The king, however, seems never to have been blind to his real character, and to have made a marked distinction between him, as the friend of his private life, and his services towards him, as such men as Cato, whom he could entrust with important enterprises. We do not hear again of Hephestion till 334 B.C., when he accompanied the king on his visit to Troy. Many tales are told of the close intimacy subsisting between them—for example, Plutarch says that, when a letter of very delicate and private nature from Olympias was handed to Alexander, Hephestion, according to his custom was reading it over his shoulder, when Alexander without uttering a word took his ring off his finger and pressed it on his friend's lips. In the later campaigns of Alexander in Bactria and India, we find Hephestion charged with important commands. He was rewarded with a golden crown and the hand of Dryopis, the daughter of Darius and sister of Alexander's own wife Statira (324 B.C.). In the end of the same year he died very suddenly at Ecbatana. Alexander tried to relieve his grief by paying the most extravagant honours to his friend. A general mourning was ordered over Asia, at Babylon a funeral pile was erected at a cost of 10,000 talents, and temples were erected to him as a hero.

HEPHESTION, a grammarian of Alexandria, author of a work on Greek metrics called *Ἐπεὶστικὴν τῆς μέτρης*. This work is most valuable as the only complete work on the subject that has been preserved. The author is pro-

hably the same as the grammian that acted as tutor to the emperor Vespasian about 150 A.D.

HEPHAËSTUS, a word of uncertain derivation but certainly pre-Greek in formation (Kuhn, *Zeitsch.*, v. 214), denotes among the Greeks a god who represents the power of fire and its appliance in the operations of daily life, corresponding to the Latin Vulcan. A clear distinction must be drawn between the Hellenic god and the deity worshipped by the Pelagic races. Though the word Hephæstus is used by Homer in the sense of fire, yet in the Hellenic god no elemental idea is at all prominent. The Hellenic religion had raised itself far above such conceptions of the divine power, and its gods were moral powers. Zeus, the ruler of the world, whose will, according to the finest Hellenic conception, is fate, is surrounded by a court in which Hephæstus appears as the divine artificer, an object rather of laughter than of respect to the other gods. No worship was paid him, for his altar at Olympia seems not to have been an ancient institution. The fire of the hearth, as the centre of family and city unity, is now personified under a purely Greek name, Hestia, but here again it is not the elemental but the moral conception that is the predominant idea in the goddess (see Hæstia). The similarity between the divine artificer of the Greeks and the Finnish Ilmari or the German Wieland, who has degenerated first into the Weyland Smith of Scott's *Kentworth*, has been often pointed out, and the standpoint of them all is the smith who makes the new sun every morning (see Manhardt, *Zeitsch. f. Ethnol.*, 1875, p. 221). The round disk of the sun has in poetic treatment become the shield of Achilles, whose fabrication is the great deed of Hephæstus in the *Iliad*. This artificer is naturally represented as married to the dawn, Aphrodite or Chæris (see Hæclys), as Wieland marries the Swan maiden, and the guild of Aphrodite which Hephæstus made is the halo of rays that heralds the rising sun. All wonderful works came to be attributed to the divine smith, in particular the house of the gods has been made by Ilmari and by Hephæstus, and they also, like Wieland, have made metal figures that move and almost equal living beings. In general the art of working metals by the hammer is under his patronage—a fact which points out this at as one of the very oldest known to the race (Conze, *Götter- und Helden-Gestalten*, s.v.). In local traditions a set of elfish creatures like the Idæan Dætyles or the dwarfs in German legend were often put in place of this divine smith. The belief which in Lipina and Strongyle was associated with Hephæstus, that any one that put a lump of iron in a certain spot at night found next morning the article he wished ready made, provided he paid the required price, is in some parts of Germany attached to a corresponding set of dwarfs. An ill-omened character often attached to the works of Hephæstus, as to that of the Telchines or the German dwarfs. Other points in the Hellenic Hephæstus can be explained only by a reference to the worship of the older Pelagic tribes. When Homer (*Il.*, i. 593) says that he was haled by his father Zeus down to the earth, the reference to the lightning is unmistakable (Welcker, *Gr. Gott.*, i. 601). Again the weak legs always attributed to Hephæstus remind us of the serpent legs of his son Euechthonius, and serpents occur often as symbols of lightning. Homer (*Il.*) says that Hephæstus fell on Lemnos, whose inhabitants tended him, he evidently considers that the Hellenic deity was identical with the Pelagic god. Whenever a Pelagic race is most certain, though the god is found, associated with the Cabiri, he is the Cabirus *per excellem* (*Hæclys*, iii. 37). Among these tribes the power of fire was considered the life-giving and reproductive power of nature, and the deity in whom it was embodied became the chief object of their worship.

Inance on the coasts of Imbros an idyllic Hephæstus appears. As Greek influence prevailed among the kindred Pelagic tribes, their native worship survived in the form of mysteries, and then proper gods, whose nature was revealed to the initiated, became in popular tradition heroic or demonic figures who were the founders of the mysteries (v. HARMONY, and comp. Lenormant in D'Alembert's *Dict. des Antiquités*, at "Cabeu"). This Hephæstus or Cabirus is the lightning that has descended to earth and become the origin of all life, and according to Pindar (*P.* 162) the first man. The original conception, vague and wide like all primitive ideas, is that the heavenly and the subterranean fire are identical with the fire on earth. In both thunderstorm and dawn the fire of the sun is relighted after being for a time extinguished. In both the alternation of light and darkness was the prominent fact. In the thunderstorm the sparks emitted from the sun descend as the lightning to earth. This original power of fire has been developed in various ways, the higher thought of the Greeks rejected such a naturalistic deity as the Pelagic found congenial, while in Athens, where the Pelagic element was very strong, Hephæstus occupied a correspondingly high place, and is in close relationship with Athens. In many ceremonies, as the Lampadephoria, they were associated, and at the Apollonian honour was paid to Zeus Phræstus, Athens, and Hephæstus. In the oldest traditions they were a pelagic married, and then son Euechthonius was the parent of the Athenian people. When the Hellenic conception of the maiden-goddess Athens prevailed, this connexion was transformed into an unsuccessful attempt of Hephæstus at a union with Athens. But the marvellous birth of Euechthonius is an ancient feature, as it occurs in Vedic tradition (Kuhn, *Zeitsch.*, i. 413).

Small images of Hephæstus stood on every hearth at Athens, and the Amphictyonians found the hearth his was the site whither the newly-born child was adopted into the family. In the oldest Greek art Hephæstus is a bearded man fully clad, carrying a hammer. This image, which the Cabirus of Thessalonica carries, is doubtless in its origin, like the hammer of Thor, the thunderbolt of hammer with which was shattered the tower when the sun was hid during the winter darkness. An undignified and comic character is, however, often apparent, when he wears short, workman's clothes, and is the dignity proper to a god. The ruling type is later, at a bearded man with a certain resemblance to Zeus, wearing a close cap, carrying the traditional hammer, and clad in short, girty tunic which leaves the left shoulder free. (W. M. R.)

HERA, a word of which many different derivations have been proposed, is the name of a Greek goddess, corresponding to the Latin Juno, who according to the conventional type is the wife of Zeus and queen among the gods of Olympus. In the literature of the Greeks Hera fills a very conspicuous place—the strong, haughty, and rebellious character, full of intense hatreds and likings, which was associated with her, made her a picturesque and dramatic figure. According to this conception of her, she was daughter of Cronus and Rhea, and at once sister and wife of Zeus. She was always the bitter enemy of all the heroines who were the successive objects of her husband's love, and her persecution of them and of their children often forms the theme of poems from the *Iliad* (xxiii. 119) downwards. This type, which is the familiar one in all literature, had never any real existence in religion, but had been gradually elaborated by poets from the actual deity worshipped in various parts of Greece, and from the legends transmitted to the Greeks from earlier races.

The most characteristic and fundamental point in the worship of Hera is the *tepos gámos*, her marriage with Zeus, and from this an explanation of the conception involved in the goddess must start. Again in Greek legend we learn that a close connexion exists between Hera and the cow, and that probably she was originally thought as the

form of a cow. These facts at once direct us to the ancient Aryan idea, described in detail by Gubernatis (*Zoolog Mythol.*, i.), that the divine power as the origin of all life is embodied in a pair of gods male and female, whose fertility leads to the conception of them as a bull and a cow. This pair, the bull and the cow, appear in various fantastic developments in Greek legend. For example, Zeus himself in the form of a bull carries off Europa, and we learn from Hesychius that Europa is an epithet of Hera. Looking at the matter from this point of view, we find that the question so much disputed among mythologists, whether the naturalistic conception out of which the Greek goddess has developed be earth or moon, is a mere matter of words, and that there is no real discrepancy between the two views. The fine and vague conceptions of primitive men refuse to be shut into the precise and unshakable terminology of modern thought. Ideas which to us are very different were once expressed by the same root (see Curtius, *Grundr.*, iii. 284, No. 415). Thus we have in the *Rig Veda*, vi. 51, 5, a clear trace of the view so common in all mythologies, whether in the theology of Hesiod or of the New-Zealanders, that Heaven and Earth are the primitive pair of deities, parents of all existence and first of the gods. This view is of peculiar importance in old Roman religion (cf. Schwegler, *Rom. Gesch.*, i. 328, 422, 460), and also among the older Pelagic tribes of Greece. But this same divine power the primitive Aryans beheld in all the great operations of nature in each they saw the prototype of all earthly works, and in seeking here the origin of life, they found it in the same divine pair, the bull and the cow. In particular, the various alterations of light and darkness appealed to their minds most strongly, and occupy great part of their mythology. In the transitions between light and darkness, and especially in the struggle between night and day, the idea of a pair is not so prominent, and in legends the marriage of moon and sun does not figure very conspicuously. Yet we sometimes find the marriage of the moon and sun described exactly in the way of this *leptos yámos*. In *Rig Veda*, x. 85, it is the type of all earthly marriage (see Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, v. 178). A Slavonic story makes the marriage of moon and sun annual they part every winter, and meet again in the first days of spring, and a Lettish song makes the marriage of moon and sun in spring (Mannhardt in *Zft f. Ethnol.*, 1875, p. 316). The moon too is often symbolized as a cow. The mystic union takes place in the spring when life returns to the earth, and the voice of the cuckoo is heard in the land. Hence in the legend Zeus, enamoured of his sister Hera, is said to have flown to her in the form of a cuckoo dipping wet, and to have been in pity received into her bosom. In various parts of Greece where traces of the older tribes are strongest, there remains a coarser conception of this union, and in the popular accounts the marriage customs of the country are reflected (see Welcker, *Gr. Götterl.*, i. 364 ff.). Lectum in the Trojan Ida and Ochia in Euboea, on the summits of which this union is placed by the legends of the countries, received their names from it. As we might expect, this idea is too purely naturalistic to form any part of the moral Olympian religion. Hera appears there as the wife of Zeus, but all deeper meaning has disappeared. The old tale remains in the mythological legends, which always cling as a degrading appendage to this religion, and we find it in Homer (*Il.*, xiv. 294) transformed into an incident of the Trojan war. In the popular religion, however, Hera, as first the virgin, then the sacred bride, and finally the lawful wife of Zeus and the patroness of all marriage, is a very prominent figure. Every year the festival of Hera was celebrated with special reference to this union in Argos, Samos, Elis, Plataea, and many other parts of Greece. The festival took place in a month named

*Targhmon* at Athens, *Hepaios* in some other parts of Greece. Hence we have such epithets of Hera as *Núμφη*, *νυμφεμένη*, *τελέια*, *γαμήλια*, and the bridal veil is one of her most frequent attributes. Hera was married to Zeus in early youth, and knew no other marriage. Hence also is the pation goddess of all married women, the protectress of the sanctity of marriage, and she demands the utmost purity from her votaries. In this respect Hera approaches closely to Demeter Thesmophoria. As the winter is a time of barrenness and separation, so we have in Arcadian, Argive, and Samian legend the angry Hera, the widow Hera, separated from her husband.

Other points in Hera again point directly to the moon. Like all other forms of the moon goddess (see *HEGATON*), she presided over child birth, and under the epithet *ἐλεθρῖνα* was invoked by women in labour. This idea arises from the moon's use as measure of time and number of the months. Then the epithet became gradually developed as a daughter, or set of daughters, of Hera, named *Ειλιθυῖε*. Beauty is another characteristic of all moon-goddesses, and of Hera also. In her festival at Lemnos prizes were assigned after a contest to the most beautiful woman. Large eyes were a part of the artistic type, and *βοόπις* is one of her most constant epithets in literature.

Euboea, the very word being an epithet of the goddess, was one of the chief seats of her worship. Here, so in Boeotia, her temples both at Thebes and at Plataea were famous. In the *Ilad*, Argos, Sparta, and Mycenae are the cities which she specially protects and loves. Argos was always one of the chief seats of her worship, and the Heraion there was one of the chief temples of Greece. At Olympia also was a very ancient temple, the Heraion, the ruins of which have been recently brought to view by the German exploring expedition. At the Laconian promontory Itea was the patroness of the union first of the Achaean cities and afterwards of a wider circle of the Greek colonies. But the Hera of Samos was perhaps the most famous and most characteristic appearance of the goddess. There the Greek goddess was amalgamated with another, who was worshipped by the kindred tribes among whom the Greeks settled, and who is clearly the same as the Artemis of Ephesus or Clazomenae, and so on coons of Samos we find Hera standing with the sun and moon on either side of her head, exactly like Artemis on coons of Ephesus.

We find such rude images of Hera as a plank at Samos, or a branch at Thebes. A very ancient statue by Smilis stood in her temple at Samos, the goddess, veiled, stood erect, clad in a long chiton, holding in each of her outstretched hands a *phaios*. In the earlier vase paintings she is hardly to be distinguished from Artemis. She appears, just like Artemis, (raising torch and bow, and using the knabos on the stephane), and several figures which either consider to be Artemis, are by Overbeck explained as Hera. In representations of the Judgment of Paris there is often nothing to distinguish her from Aphrodite. Her characteristic symbols are the veil or sceptre, and she often carries a fruit. Numerous vase paintings, representing a bridal procession, which Forster (*deus und Hera's Hochzeit*) believes to represent the *leptos yámos*, are by Julius Overbeck shown to be an earthly marriage escorted by duties sententious of this same event. The colossal statue by Polykles in the Heraion at Argos showed her enthroned, wearing the *ἐρετρόν*, holding in one hand a pomegranate and in the other a sceptre, on the top of which was a cuckoo. There is no evidence to determine what was the character of the face, nor whether it had in determining the ideal type of Hera (Overbeck, *l.c.* p. 51). The Faience bust at Naples represents a type more antient than the style of Polykles. Pausanias made this great statue of Hera, at Mycenae, Mantinea, and Plataea. The last, which represented Hera, taken standing, is known to us by many imitations in the Vatican and elsewhere. From the works of these two great artists we may suppose that the highest type of Hera was elaborated in the Athenian school about the middle of the 4th century. The famous statue of the Villa Ludovisi is it probable that we have the actual work in which this type was first attained. Thus bust, which has been often described, and especially by Goethe, was probably one of the head of a colossal seated statue. (W. M. R.)

HERACLEA, or HERACLEIA (in French, *Heracle*), the name of several ancient cities in various parts of the area of Greek colonization, so called in honour of Heracles or Hercules.

I HERACLEA, a city of Magna Græcia, which lay between the rivers Acus and Sius, not far from the shores of the Gulf of Tarentum, near the site of the modern village of Poliocto. It appears to have been a joint colony of the Tarentines and the Thurians, and to have risen after the destruction of the neighbouring city of Sius. That it attained to no small prosperity and became the seat of the great politico-religious assembly of the Italian Greeks is newly attested by the aid of its earlier history. By Alexander of Epirus it was deprived of this privilege in favour of Thurii. Pyrrhus was victorious in its vicinity in the first battle he fought with the Romans, 280 B.C., and two years later the city formed an alliance on advantageous terms with the conquerors. In the time of Cicero it was still comparatively prosperous. The *Tabulae Heracleenses*, found at Lucæ near the ruins of the city in 1753, are two bronze tablets, or rather fragments of tablets, containing on one surface a Greek inscription relating to temple domains and on the other surface a copy of the famous *Lex Julia Municipalis* published by Julius Cæsar in 45 B.C. They are preserved in the Museo Nazionale at Naples, and one of them is distinguished as the *Æ Britannicum* and the other as the *Æ Neapolitanum*. Both inscriptions are given in *Marzocchi, Commentaria in Legem Heracleensem Municipalem tabulas Heracleenses* (Naples, 1754-55), and the Latin one will be found in Munro, *Inscr. optones* (vol. II), and Manbold, *Monumenta legalia*. See also Savigny, *Zeitschrift für geschichtl. Rechtswiss.* (vol. IX) and *Vermischte Schriften* (vol. III, Berlin, 1850).

II HERACLEA, a city of Sicily, at the mouth of the Halycus (the modern Platani), not far from the promontory now known as Capo Bianco. It was distinguished from the other Heracleas by the surname of Minoe, which was explained as referring to its foundation by Minos of Crete. Its name frequently occurs in connection with the Carthaginian occupation of Sicily, and it was in the neighbouring sea that the Carthaginian fleet was routed by Regulus and Manlius in 256 B.C. The Romans introduced a colony.

III HERACLEA PONTICA, a city on the coast of Phrygia in Asia Minor, easily identified with the modern Bender Etegit or Erekit, at the mouth of the Kiliç-su on the Black Sea. It was founded by a Megarian colony, which soon subjugated the native tribe of the Madymagians, and extended its power to a considerable territory. The prosperity of the city, rudely shaken by the Galatians and the Bithynians, was utterly destroyed by Antiochus Cotta in the Mithridatic war. It was the birthplace of Heracleides Ponticus. The modern town is best known for its coal mines, from which Constantinople receives a good part of its supply. See Polakow, *De Rebus Heracleæ*, Brandenburg, 1833, and O. Kummel, *Heracleotica Beiträge zur alten Gesch. der griech. Colonisation im nordl. Klein Asien* (Progr. des Gymn. zu Plauen, 1860).

IV HERACLEIA SINTICA, a town in Thracian Macedonia, to the south of the Stroymon, the site of which is marked by the village of Zervochori, and identified by the frequent discovery of local coins.

V HERACLEIA, a town on the borders of Caria and Ionia, near the foot of Mount Latmus, whence it is usually distinguished as the Latman. In its neighbourhood was the burial cave of Endymion. See Rayet and Thomas, *Mémoires du Golfe Latmique*, Paris, 1877.

For Heraclea Trachina see TRACHIS, and for Heraclea Perinthia see PERINTHUS.

Heraclea was also the name of one of the Sporades, between Naxos and Ios, which is still called Raklia, and

bears traces of a Greek township with temples to Tycho and Zeus Lophites. See Baumeister in *Philologus*, vol. IX.

HERACLEON, a Gnostic who flourished about 125 A.D., probably in the south of Italy or in Sicily, is generally classed by the early heresiologists with the Valentinian school of heresy. In his system he appears to have regarded the divine nature as a vast abyss in whose pleroma were sons of different orders and degrees,—emanations from the source of being. Midway between the supreme God and the material world was Demingus, who created the latter, and under whose jurisdiction the lower, animal soul of man proceeded after death, while his higher, celestial soul returned to the pleroma whence at first it issued. Heracleon seems to have received the ordinary Christian Scriptures, and Origen has preserved fragments of a commentary by him on St John's gospel, while Clement of Alexandria quotes from him what appears to be a passage from a commentary on St Luke's gospel. These writings are remarkable for their intensely mystical and allegorical interpretations of the text. The portions of the commentary on St John's gospel have been brought together by Giabe in the second volume of his *Symbolicum*.

HERACLES. See HERACLES.  
HERACLES, surnamed PORCIRUS, a Greek miscellaneous writer who flourished the 4th century B.C. was born at Heraclea in Pontus. Removing to Athens, he is said to have been a disciple successively of Sporusippus, Plato, and Aristotle. According to Suidas, the second of these philosophers, on departing for Sicily, left his scholars in the charge of Heracles. The latter part of his life was spent at Heraclea. Of his private history we have few authentic details. He is said to have been vain and fat, and to have maintained such state in Athens that the wits changed his surname into Pompius, or the Showy. Various idle stories are related about him. On one occasion, for instance, Heracles was afflicted with famine, and the Pythiess at Delphi, bribed by Heracles, assumed his inquiring townsmen that the death would be stayed if they granted a golden crown to that philosopher. This was done, but just as Heracles was receiving his honour in a crowded assembly, he was seized with apoplexy, while the dishonest priestesses perished at the same moment from the bite of a serpent. On his death-bed he is said to have requested a friend to hide his body as soon as life was extinct, and, by putting a serpent in its place, induce his townsmen to suppose that he had been carried up to heaven. The truth was discovered, and Heracles received only ridicule instead of divine honour.

He wrote on a great variety of subjects, but only one fragment, *On States*, of 7, is now extant. This was published with the *Varia Historia* of Helian at Rome in 1546, but the best editions are those of Koller (Halle, 1804), Cony (Paris, 1806), and Müller. See Fr. W. Schmidt, *De Heracleida Pontica et Diacrisis Mæconis dialogus deperditus*, Breslau, 1857.

HERACLITUS of Ephesus, one of the most subtle and profound of the metaphysicians of ancient Greece, has only of late years had his true position assigned to him in the history of philosophy. To this the obscure and epigrammatic character of his style and the fragmentary condition of his works have in the main contributed, together with the fact that not only his immediate disciples but also his critics, including even Plato, have systematically laid stress upon those features of his doctrines which are least indicative of his real point of view. The true position of Heracitus is that of the founder of an independent metaphysical system, which sought to get rid of the difficulty, so prominent in the Eleatic philosophy, of overcoming the contradiction between the one and the phenomenal many, by enunciating, as the principle of the universe, "Becoming," implying, as it does, that everything is and at the same time, and in the same relation, is not.



The descendant of a family of leading importance in Ephesus, Heraclius was born about 585 a. d. His cast of mind was so intensely ascetic that, filled with contempt for the councils and capacities of his fellow citizens, he made over the hereditary office of *Basileus*, which had fallen to him in right of his birth, in favour of his younger brother, and betook himself to a life of solitary meditation. The date of his death was probably about 645 a. d.

To appreciate the significance of the doctrines of Heraclitus, it must be borne in mind that to Greek philosophy the sharp distinction between subject and object, which pervades modern thought, was foreign, a conclusion which suggests the conclusion that, while it is a great mistake to reckon Heraclitus with the materialistic cosmologists of the Ionic schools, it is, on the other hand, going too far to treat his theory, with Hegel and Lesslie, as one of pure Platonism. Accordingly, when he denies the reality of Being, and declares Becoming, or eternal flux and change, to be the sole actuality, Heraclitus must be understood to enunciate not only the validity of the latest notion of being, except as the contradictory of that of not being, but also the physical doctrine that all phenomena are in a state of continuous transition from non-existence to existence, and vice versa, without either distinguishing their positions or qualifying them by any reference to the relation of thought to experience. "Every thing is and is not," all things are, and nothing remains. With Heraclitus the principle of continuity is opposed to the principle of discrete change, by the Eternity and consequently for him "Being and Nothing," as well as "Union and Separation," are logically and physically inseparable of distinction. This being so, he naturally enough selects Fire, as according to him the most complete embodiment of the process, as being, as the principle of empirical existence, out of which all things, including even the soul, grow by way of a *quasi* condensation, and into which all things must in course of time be again resolved. But this is in itself a very difficult to divine rational process, the harmony of which constitutes the law of the universe. Real knowledge consists in comprehending this all-pervading harmony as embodied in the myriads of perception, and the senses are "blind witnesses," because they apprehend phenomena not as manifestation, but as "static and dead." In like manner, real virtue consists in the subordination of the individual to the laws of this harmony as the universal vision wherein alone true freedom is to be found. "The law of things is a law of eternal duration, but most men live as though they had a wisdom of their own." Ethics here stands in sociology in a close relation, similar, in many respects, to that which we find in Hegel and in Comte. For Heraclitus the soul approaches most nearly to perfection when it is not alien to the law's point out of which it was originally created, and as this is most so in death, "while we live our souls are dead in us, but when we die our souls are restored to life." The doctrine of immortality comes prominently forward in his ethics, but whether this must not be reckoned with the figurative accommodation to the popular theology of Greece which pervades his ethical teaching, is very doubtful.

The only extant work, purporting to have been written by Heraclitus, which can be regarded as genuine, is the treatise *Tetralogoi*, which has come down in a fragmentary condition. It has been edited by Hermann Diels (*Die Fragmente der Vorsokratiker*, 1897). The *Epistulae* are in all probability spurious. The school of disciples founded by Heraclitus flourished for long after his death, the chief exponent of his teaching being Cratylus. A good deal of the information in regard to his doctrines has been gathered from the later Greek philosophy, which was deeply influenced by it.

In the most complete expression of his system is that of Lesslie (*The Philosophical History of the Hellenic Age*, Berlin 1849) although his interpretation is decidedly too strongly dominated by modern Hegelian conceptions. See also Hegel, *Geist der Philosophie*, *Geist der Phil. d. Griechen*, *Stuttgart*, *Die Philosophie des Mittelalters*, Berlin, 1880, and Schopenhauer, *Die Welt als Wille und Vorstellung*, Leipzig 1878.

HERACLIUS (c. 575-641), emperor of the East, was born in Cappadocia about 575. He was brought into notice by his heading a successful revolt against the emperor Phocas in 610, when he usurped the usurper's throne. At that period the eastern provinces of the empire were being ravaged by the triumphant armies of Chosroes (Khosro) II., which in the first twelve years of Heraclius's reign continued their unceasing progress to the Bosphorus and the Nile, pillaging Asia Minor by cutting off its Egyptian corn supplies. In 618 the public distributions of grain, which had been carried on since Constantine had instituted them as a bribe to attract citizens to his new city in 330, were suspended, and the bankrupt emperor was badly dissuaded

by the almost imperative prayers of his people from quitting his capital in shame and fear for Caithage. Taking courage, Heraclius appears to have set himself to the task of reorganizing both state and army, a labour which had probably occupied him since his accession. He was menaced on the west by the fierce tribe of the Avars, who were casting longing eyes on the riches of the imperial city, but in 620 he succeeded in making a treaty with them, and interposed a human barrier against their further encroachments by inviting the Serbs and Croats to settle in the intervening regions, which they have never since left. In 621 Heraclius led an army to the quelling of his inexperienced troops. Every military manoeuvre, every useful campaign and even handship, was ordered and shared by the emperor.

He kindled the enthusiasm of his soldiers by his stirring words, and excited their admiration and affection by his deeds. Next year he led his forces against Persia, and within five years, in a series of brilliant campaigns that place him side by side with the greatest generals of the world, he overthrew the pride of that empire, drove its monarch a fugitive from his throne, and enriched his exulting troops with untold wealth. Success, the son of Chosroes, revolting against his unhappy father, put him to death in 628, and speedily made a peace with Heraclius, according to which the Persian empire was to be left for his limit. Prisoners were generally given up, and the true cross, carried from Jerusalem by the Persians, was restored to Christian hands. Heraclius returned in triumph to Constantinople, which had in his absence two years before successfully repulsed a combined assault by the Avars and Persians, and in 639 he proceeded to Jerusalem to restore solemnly the holy relic to its ancient place. But he was not long to enjoy the peaceful fruits of victory. A mighty power had been steadily growing up in the hot sands of Arabia, and was now coming to measure its strength with that of the Roman empire.

In 632 the Mahometans invaded Syria, and, overthrowing the armies sent to oppose them, in six years they made themselves masters of the country. Egypt next fell before Islam, and in 640 that fair province of the empire was Mahometan. The people of Asia Minor alone successfully resisted the advancing Saracens. Heraclius seems meanwhile to have sunk into a sort of lethargy, as though his efforts in Persia had completely exhausted him. While his generals and armies were being cut to pieces he was engaged at Constantinople, wherein he had retreated in 634, with speculative theological questions. In 638 his *Enchiridion* appeared, which, treated with the homogeneity of Monothelism, was probably drawn up by the patriarch Sergius. The energy of his earlier life never returned, and in 641 he sank under a long-continued disease. He had been twice married, the second time to his niece Marcella, an illicit union which he compelled the reluctant Sogians to celebrate. His eldest son, Heraclius, succeeded him, taking the title of Constantine III.

The character of Heraclius was a curious oddity, which it is not easy to solve. Personally brave, and possessed of tried ability as a diplomatist and a general, in his latter years he passively allowed his empire to fall to pieces before his eyes,—presenting in the periods of his life a contrast that would almost seem to argue the possession of not merely contrary but contradictory qualities. But we must not forget that our information regarding the inner details of his latter reign is very imperfect, and that possibly there may be some reason, though hardly an excuse, for his conduct. It would have been better for his fame if he had died immediately after his Persian campaigns.

See Gibbon's *Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, Le Beau's *Histoire des Bas Empires*, and the works of George of Pisidia (cf. vol. v. p. 432).

## HERALDRY

**H**ERALDRY, though etymologically denoting all the business of the herald, has long in practice been restricted to one part of it only, and may be defined as the art of blazoning or describing in proper terms armorial bearings. It treats also of their history, of the rules observed in their employment and transmission, of the manner in which by their means families and certain dignities are represented, and of their connexion with genealogies and titular rank.

Particular symbols have in all ages been assumed by the various families of mankind, civilized and uncivilized. Such were the lion of the tribe of Judah, the S P Q R upon the standards of ancient Rome and the eagle surmounting them, the tattoo marks of the savages of America and the Pacific, the Danish raven, and the white horse of Saxony, which still remains carved upon the chalk downs of Weymouth England.<sup>1</sup> Heraldry, however, is a purely feudal institution, coeval with close armour, devised possibly in Germany, adopted and improved in France, Spain, and Italy, and imported into England by the Norman invaders and settlers. Its figures have little or nothing to do with the older symbols, though these have occasionally been incorporated into its charges, and an apparent connexion thus established between them. These symbols, as has been well said, were the precursors and not the ancestors of heraldic bearings. The supposed connexion, however, misled the credulous heraldic writers of the 16th and 17th centuries, and caused them to attribute coats of arms to the heroes of sacred and profane history, who were certainly as ignorant of heraldry as even was Adam of genealogy.

"Arms" or "armories," so called because originally displayed upon defended armour, and "coats of arms" because formerly embrodered upon the embores of canvas worn over the armour, are supposed to have been first used at the great German tournaments, and to have reached England, though to a very moderate extent, in the time of Henry II and Count de Lion. To "blazon," now meaning to describe a coat of arms, is the German "blasen," to blow as with the horn, because the style and arms of each knight were so proclaimed on public occasions. The terms employed in heraldry are, however, mostly French or of French origin. Though now notions of form and ceremonial, and subject to the smile which attaches to such in a utilitarian age, armorial bearings were once of real use and importance, and so continued as long as knights were armed in plate, and their features thus concealed. At that time leaders were recognized in the field by their insignia alone, and these—both figures and colours—became identified with their fame, from personal became hereditary, were subject to certain rules of descent, and to the laws of property and the less certain rules of honour.

Froissart mentions a case in which a knight of the Scoope family could with difficulty be reclaimed from putting to death a prisoner because he wore the same bearings with himself. The last De Clain owed his death on the field of Bannockburn to his having neglected to wear his *cotte d'armes*, had he been recognized, his great value as a prisoner would have saved him. Also the loss of the battle of Barnet was in part attributed to the similarity between the royal cognizance of a sun and that of John

de Vere, a stat with streamers,—Warwick charging Oxford by mistake for the king.

The best if not the only absolutely safe evidence for the origin of armorial bearings is that afforded by seals. Seals were in common use both before and after the introduction of armorial bearings, and they are not so likely as rolls of arms or monumental effigies to be the work of a later age. These are said by Conzeilles to be extant, appended to charters of 1030 and 1037 A D, two seals of Adalbert, duke of Louiane, which bear on a shield an eagle with wings closed. This however wants confirmation, but Anna Comnena, describing the shields of the French knights who visited Constantinople about 1100, gives them surfaces as of metal only, polished but plain, nor have any decided traces of arms been discovered among the early crusaders. Louis le Jeune, who seems first of the French kings to have used the fleur-de-lys, caused it to be represented in gold over the azure mantle and chaucelure worn by his son at his coronation. Also, in 1180, he seals with a fleur-de-lys, but it is placed in a circle, not upon a shield. Blanché cites two seals of Philip, count of Flanders, one plain, in 1157, and another in 1164 charged with a lion, then subsequent bearing. Seton mentions the seal of John de Mundegumbri in 1170 as bearing a fleur-de-lys, which, like that of Louis, has two intermediate flower stems, as seen on Florentine coins. He also gives the seal of Falconer (1170) as bearing a falcon, and that of Corbet bore two ravens perched upon a fleur-de-lys, while his brother bore them upon a tree. This indeed was at a period when fleurs-de-lys, stars, and various animals were commonly represented as mere ornaments on seals, but the peculiarity of the instance named is that the falcon and the raven, like the fleur-de-lys of France, were afterwards the heraldic bearings of those families. The seals of the close of the 12th century, though not generally heraldic, certainly betray many of the elements of heraldry. No doubt, when once introduced, armorial bearings were felt to supply a real and serious want, and came rapidly into use, but Wace, the poet of the reign of Henry II, although he tells us that

"N'i a tiele home no baron,  
Ki n'ait le r son gonfeon,  
U gonfeon u alie emense,"

can scarcely be seriously held to mention armorial bearings.

It is uncertain at what period armorial bearings found their way into England. The Conqueror and his successors certainly did not use them, they do not appear upon their seals, nor are they shown upon the banners of the Bayeux tapestry. The monk of Malmesbury, probably a contemporary, describes Henry I, upon the marriage of his daughter to Geoffrey of Anjou in 1122, as hanging about the bridegroom's neck a shield adorned with small golden lions, "*leoneculos aureos*," and making mention of a combat in which Geoffrey was engaged, he describes him as "*pictos leones præfixos in clypeo*." It is true that the number, attitude, and position of these lions on the shield are not specified, but considering that not long afterwards two lions became the arms of Plantagenet, and so of England, thus very fairly be taken as their introduction. Stephen is said to have used a centaur, Sagittarius, as an emblem, because he landed in England when the sun was in that sign, but on his great seal his shield is quite plain, save a ridge down the centre, evidently a part of its construction. On the seals of the Conqueror, Rufus, and Henry I, only the hollow or under side of the shield is shown, so there probably was no design upon the front. There is no seal of Duke Robert, but William, earl of Flanders, his son, shows a

<sup>1</sup> The subject of ancient and especially of Greek "heraldry" is discussed by Curtius in a learned and interesting paper "*Wappenwesen und Wappentypen im Alterthum*" in the *Abhandlungen der Königl. Acad. d. Wissenschaften zu Berlin* (1874). See also article *Grav.* vol. c. p. 138.

plain shield on his seal. His monumental effigy (1198) bears a large pavese-shield, and upon it an escutcheon, apparently a highly ornamented clasp. The seal of Henry II also shows the hollow of the shield. The first great seal of Richard I bears a lion rampant, who from his position may be inferred to be fighting with a similar lion upon the surmount and concealed half of the shield, blazoned in a MS cited by Mr Wey as "two lions combatants."

Up to this time the kings, though represented on horseback and in full armour, have the face uncovered, and therefore their persons would be known. The seal of Richard I in 1189 shows a close helmet, and upon the shield two lions passant guardant in pale, "leones leopardis," as they were then or soon after called. On a later seal, after his return from captivity in 1194, Richard added a third lion. John, while earl of Mortmain, sealed with two lions, but his seal as king bears three, and the coat has so remained.

That the two lions were more than a mere ornament is evident from their having been adopted by John's natural son, Richard de Warren, who seals with two lions passant guardant. The seals of the great barons show the growth of the practice. Richard, constable of Chester, contemporary with Stephen, bears a shield covered over with small plates, regulated, like his armour, but Stephen, earl of Richmond, as early as 1137, seals with seven fleurs-de-lis, a very early heraldic seal. Walvern, earl of Moulain (died 1166), also used an heraldic seal. Duchesne gives a seal of Boucard de Montmorency (1182), a contemporary of Louis le Jeune, with a cross between four alerions on his shield, and another in which the cross is charged with roundels. Mathieu, his son, seals also with the cross and alerions, which had evidently become, as they remained, hereditary. In England, William, earl of Essex (died 1190), seals with the escarbuncle of his family. In 1187 Gervaise Pagnuel, a great Anglo-Norman baron, seals with two lions passant, which his family continued to bear.

With the 13th century arms came rapidly into use. The second seal of Mathieu de Montmorency in 1200 has introduced upon his horse's furniture, but the practice does not appear upon the seals of the kings of England until the second seal of Edward I. Baldwin de Bethune, earl of Albemarle (died 1214), sealed with three martlets in chief, and many other early examples of regular heraldic seals occur at this period attached to extant charters. The earliest roll of arms is of the reign of Henry III, of a second of the same reign a copy is preserved in the Harleian collection, and a third, in the next reign, is the roll of Carlewiock, 1300 A.D. So that for the reign of Henry and his son the evidence for armorial bearings is copious and excellent. Other rolls exist carrying the practice through the 14th and 15th centuries, before the middle of which there is no known work on heraldry, nor any traces of heraldic regulations save what may be deduced from recorded practice.

Coats of arms were not at first strictly hereditary, nor even always permanent in the same person. Thus William de Ferrars, 6th earl of Derby (died 1246), seems to have borne "argent, 6 fers de cheval, or horse shoes, 3, 2, 1, sable." William, his son, in consequence of a match with Peveril, who bore "vair," changed his bearing to "vair, or and gules, on a border azure 8 horse shoes argent." Robert his son, 8th earl (died 1278), dropped the horse shoes, and bore "vair, or and gules."

"Ferrars his tabard with red and vair spread."

After the match with Quincy, the Ferrars laid aside their own coat and bore that of Quincy, "gules, 7 masicles conjoined 3, 3, 1, or." Their male line through a younger branch, — Ferrers of Baddeley-Clinton, — commemorates these various changes by bearing "quarterly, — (1st) vair, or and gules, (2d) sable, 6 horse shoes, 3, 2, 1, argent, (3d)

gules, 7 masicles, 3, 3, 1, or, a canton ermine." Hugh Lupus, earl of Chester (died 1101), is fabled to have borne a wolf's head, and not improbably his surname arose from some such emblem. Richard, his son, is said to have borne "azure, semée of crosslets or, a wolf's head erased argent." Ranulph Meschines, 3d earl (died 1198), was sister's son to the first earl, and to him is assigned "or, a lion rampant gules." Hugh Cyfheuc, 5th earl (died 1180), certainly bore "azure 6 garbs of wheat, 3, 2, 1, or," and Ranulph Blondeville, his son, bore "azure, 3 garbs or." With him the line failed, but as the wheat shaft is a common Cheshire bearing, it is probable that arms came into general use in the palatinates in the time of the last two earls.

Sir Nicholas Cairn (died 1283) seals with a tuncipitate lion, but at Carlewiock in 1300 is found with a

"Bannet d'armes, ben pressail,  
O tior pressail lions de valde,

the arms of the Carews of our day. The fess and label of Saher de Quincy, earl of Winchester, in 1170, were changed by Roger his son for the masicles by which they were best known, and which he repeats upon his housings. The fact is that, at the close of the 13th century, arms, though on the whole hereditary, had not quite acquired that fixed character that belonged to them half a century later. That the changes were the exception rather than the rule is, however, clear from the roll of Henry III, and from the arms of the forty great barons which he caused to be painted on the walls of Westminster Abbey, almost all of which, so far as they are on record, are the same with those borne or quartered by their representatives. There exist also in England a few families of Norman origin, the period of whose arrival in England is known, and whose arms are the same with those of the present stock in the parent country. Such are Harcourt of Ankerwyke and D'Auligny, who therefore bore their arms before the separation from Normandy under Henry III.

Early bearings were usually very simple, the colours in strong contrast, and their form and outline such as could readily be distinguished even in the dust and confusion of a battle. They are mostly composed of right lined figures known in heraldry as ordinaries. The favourite beast is the lion.

The earliest and most valuable records relating to English armorial bearings are undoubtedly the rolls of arms of the reigns of Henry III and the first three Edwards, which have been well edited by Sir H. Nicolas. That of Henry III known as Glover's roll, drawn up between 1243 and 1246, describes or blazons 218 coats of arms, and therefore shows very sufficiently the heraldry of the period. Of these coats nearly one half are composed solely of the ordinaries and subordinaries, and other simple lines, and figures. About two score of them exhibit lions, chiefly rampant, and leopard, a form of the same animal. The only other beast is the "teste de sanglier," borne by Sunbune. Of birds there are but the eagle and the jay, and several martlets, and single examples of the raven, the cock, the heron, and the hoarle. The lucy or pike is the only fish. The cinquefoil and sexfoil, the fleur-de-lis, the rose, and the wheat sheaf, used very sparingly, represent the vegetable world. For the rest there are annulets, banicles, crescents, estoiles, scalloped, fers de cheval, mullets, and water budgets. There is one ray of the sun, and one whirlpool.

The coat of Mortimer "barre, a chief pale, a corner germaine d'or et d'azur, a ung escuillon d'argent," — or, in modern terms, "barry, a chief pale, its corner gyronny or and azure, an escutcheon argent" (fig. 63) — is the only one at all of a complex character, and this is composed of ordinaries and subordinaries, and though many of the ordinaries bear the smaller charges, or are placed between them, there are very few examples of an ordinary so charged also

placed between charges, a common usage in later coats. An exception is Chandos, who bears three estates on a pile, which again is placed between two others, but this stands alone.

The roll of Edward II. bears 957 coats of the bannerets of England, so that the use of arms had increased considerably. The lions have risen to 225, the eagles to 43, and there are 102 crosses of various kinds. Of new beasts, fabulous or real, there are the griffin, the wyvern, the stag, wolf, goat, and greyhound, of new birds, the falcon, of fishes, the dolphin. Of other objects the additions are the millrind, buckle, covered cap, chaplet, gambut, arrow, trumpet, hammer, battle-axe, palmer's staff, pots, winnowing fans or vane, pent, cushion, and chess-rook. The elements of the arms remain very simple, and the blazon employed agrees in the main with that still in use, and is in general perfectly intelligible. These rolls give various examples of changes of coats, either altogether or by the introduction of a difference to distinguish members of the same family, and it is observable that when the figures are altered the colours are usually adhered to, as though it were considered undesirable to change them. Thus Gilbert de Segrave (died 1254) bore "sable, 3 garbs argent." Of his grandsons John and Nicholas, John bore the paternal coat, but Nicholas, at Caeslwick, had exchanged the garb for a lion. This afterwards became the family bearing as "sable, lion rampant argent, crowned or," the colours being retained.

No sooner had the great barons assumed arms for themselves than they began to grant them to their followers. Arms so granted commonly bore some resemblance to those of the grantor, and hence certain charges prevailed in certain districts. Thus the chevron of De Clare was common in South Wales, in the Marches of Gloucester and Clare, and about Tonbridge. The garb or wheat-sheaf was found in Cheshire, the cinquefoils of the Bellomonts in Leicester-shire, the annulets of Vipont in Westmoreland, the lion all over England, and the treasure in Scotland, both from the royal arms. Some of these grants remain, others can with certainty be traced. Stephen Curzon, who held under the seals of Derby, bore "vair, with a border of 8 popinjays argent," and Richard, his brother, bore "vair, on a fess 3 horseshoes." Hubert, earl of Kent, bore "7 lozenges vair," and Anselm de Guise, on taking under him lands in Berks and Gloucester, assumed the same coat, with the addition of a canton or, charged with a mullet sable. In 1319 Robert Moles granted to Robert de Corby and his heirs the arms "d'argent, over un salient engraillé de sable," which he himself had inherited from Baldwin de Manoir. In 1376-7 William, baron of Greystock, who bore "bairry of argent and azur, 3 chaplets gules," granted to Adam de Blencowe and his heirs for ever "an escutcheon sable with a bord cinctured [or bordered] argent and azur, with 3 chaplets gules." In 1391-2 Thomas Grenville granted to William Moigno his heirs and assigns, "argent, on a cross azur, 5 garbs or," which, as cousin and heir, he himself had inherited from John Beaumays. Finally, in 1442, Humphrey, earl of Stafford, who bore "or, a chevron gules," granted to Robert Whitteaves "un escut d'azur, 3 quatre points d'or, quatre chevrons de gules," to him and his heirs of lineage, "in modern terms 'azur, a cross quarter-pieced or, on each limb a chevron gules.' A coat of arms was not only heritable, subject to certain heraldic customs, but could be willed or granted away, wholly or in part, like chattel property.

The crusades, by bringing together soldiers of different nations, tended to produce a certain assimilation in their heraldics, but that influence upon the arms themselves has been exaggerated. The stories as to bearings adopted to commemorate feats of arms in Palestine are mostly

inventions. The cross no doubt was a crusading bearing, but it was so because it was the emblem of Christianity, and primarily popular as such. The stars, torteaux, wafers, budgets, and other charges attributed to the crusaders, were of earlier date and of independent origin. There is no evidence that the crosses patée of the Berkeleys, or the crosslets of Beauchamp, Clinton, Windsor, and Howard, were added to their simple bearings in token of services in the Holy Land. The star of De Vere, already attributed to an adventure there, was evidently a mark of cadency, adopted by Robert de Vere, brother of Albric, 2d earl of Oxford. The fact appears to be that most of the additions to or alterations in the earlier coats of arms were made for some genealogical reason, to commemorate a match with some great family or to distinguish between the several branches from the parent tree. After, usually long after, the period of the crusades, arms were invented for "fabled knights in battles feigned," and but few of the Saracenic heads which figure so prominently in many coats of arms are contemporary with any Saracenic war.

The diversion of the tournament did even more than actual war to promote the glories of heraldry. On these occasions the presence of spectators, and especially of ladies, encouraged all sorts of heraldic display. At a tournament at Calais in 1381 Richard Beauchamp, earl of Warwick, one of the most accomplished knights of the reigns of Edward III., Henry IV., and Henry V., suspended on three shields three several coats of arms, representing three several knights who professed to be ready successively to meet all comers. Three French knights appeared to the challenge. Against the first the earl came forth as the green knight with a black quarter, bearing "silver, a mannikin gules," the arms of De Tony, a maternal ancestor, and so overcame his adversary and retired unknown to his pavilion. On the second day he appeared as the green knight, and bearing "silver, two bars gules," the arms of Mandout of Namplae, another ancestor, he met a second knight with equal success. On the third day he appeared in his proper person bearing the arms of Guy of Warwick and Beauchamp on his shield, and those of De Tony and Mandout on his caparisons, and thus with great honour won the third day also.

The shield, as the most obvious piece of the defensive armour, was that upon which arms were first displayed. The Norman shield was of wood covered with hide, and clamped and stiffened in a fashion which is thought to have given rise to the first simple bearings. It was 3 to 4 feet long, pointed below, and 18 inches broad. This shield is common on early monumental effigies armed in chain mail, and it is unusual to find it with armorial bearings. It was succeeded by the small triangular heater shield, and that, in the reign of Edward III., by a somewhat larger and full bottomed shield, which by degrees ceased to be used in war, and became more and more an architectural ornament. The arms were also displayed upon the breast-plate, and upon the carmine or surcoat that covered the armour, and were repeated upon the housings of horses both before and behind the saddle. When the Comte d'Artois fell at Damietta, the Saracens showed in triumph his "cotte d'armes toute dorée et fleur-de-lisée." The emperor Henry of Luxembourg is described in the *Chronicle of Flanders* as bearing "an eagle noir, sur un tonnel d'or qui pendoit jusq' a mi-jambe." Sir Alexander Neville appeared at Halidon Hill in a surcoat of his own arms, the quarters filled up with the arms of his friends. The flag of William de Valence at Westminster is decorated with small escutcheons of his arms on various parts of his dress and weapons. An actual remnant of the richly embroidered surcoat of William de Pontibus, earl of Albemarle (died 1261), is still preserved, and has been engraved in the

*As chasologia* It was against the embroidery of the surcoat that the severe sumptuous enactments of Richard and Philip Augustus were mainly directed.

The importance attached to armorial bearings is strongly shown in the uses to which they were applied. A sovereign who wished to assert his claim to a kingdom placed its arms upon his shield. In 1479 when Alphonso of Portugal resigned his claim to Castile, he was required to lay aside its armorial ensigns. It appears that when Edward III. assumed the French lilies, he at first did so simply as representing his mother, who was an heiress, and placed her arms in his second quarter, when, however, he claimed the kingdom of France in her right, he removed the lilies to the first quarter as representing the more important kingdom. A grant of arms at the hand of a sovereign had great value. Among the more solid bribes which Louis XI. bestowed upon the courtiers of Edward IV. occurs a grant of three fleurs-de-lis to a knight of the Crokes family. Thus also when Juan de Oñate captured Francis I. on the Tienno, he was rewarded by a grant of arms from Charles V., though of so complex a character as to do little credit to Spanish heraldry. In later times John Gibbon, the heraldic author, having a quarrel with two maiden ladies of his name, obtained a licence to convert the scallops in their common coat into the black balls called ogresses,—a most heraldic revenge.

Armorial bearings were largely painted, enamelled, and embroidered upon personal ornaments, furniture, and weapons. The sword of Edward, prince of Wales (died 1483), is a curious example of this; it bears on its pommel the words "aves foinces" and five shields—(1) England, (2) the duchy of Cornwall, (3) England and France with a label, (4) Mortimer quartering Ulster, (5) the earldom of Chester. In the middle is the cross of St. George. The citizens of London were bound to provide their banner bearers, Lord Fitz Walter, with "a saddle with his arms," and the seal of one of that family, about 1300, shows the arms upon the back of rest of his war saddle. The seal of Sir Hugh le Despenser, (1392) also shows his arms. Various bequests of plate and furniture with arms occur in the 14th century. In 1368 William, Lord Ferrais of Ghyby, bequeathed his green bed "with his arms thereon, and his furniture bearing the arms of Ferrais and Ufford, impaled." In 1380 Edward Mortimer devised "à notice des chies fuses John Gilbert, eveque de Hereford, une plate de argent upon espices et enamillés ove les armes de Mortimer en la face."

Richard, earl of Arundel, in 1392, bequeathed a canopy of the arms of Arundel and Warren quarterly. In 1399 Eleanor Bohun, duchess of Gloucester, had a psalter with her father's arms upon the clasps. In the Decorated and Perpendicular styles of a chasectinct shield of arms are common ornaments. These of benefactors were set up in church windows in glass, and those of a family in their houses. In the Scope roll is a list of sixty-six churches in which the Scropes arms were set up, and the histories of Dugdale and Buxton show us that nearly every church in Warwickshire and Leicestershire had a multitude of arms on its windows. Those still remaining in the east windows of Bristol cathedral are early and good examples of the arms of great barons, Berkeley, Clare, and Warren. They are also seen upon floor tiles of the same period.

As arms became hereditary, and then use ceased to be confined to the battle-field, but was largely extended to seals and ornaments, it was natural that some notice should be taken of the arms of females, and that the wife's coat should be combined in some way with that of the husband, especially when she was the last of, and represented, her family. This seems first to have been managed by giving the wife a separate shield. The kings of France so bore

the arms of Navarre after the marriage with the heiress of that kingdom. Another very early plan was to form a composite coat. Thus the old coat of Willoughby was fretty, but on their marriage with Dec of Evesby they adopted the coat of Dec, and Sir John Willoughby (15th Edward III.) bears the cross moline of Dec, but the wings of his crest are fretty for Willoughby, and on either side is a buckle taken from the arms of Roscelin, his wife. Rose of Kilravock bore "or, 3 water budgets sable," but on a marriage with the heiress of Chisholm they added "a boar's head couped gules" from her arms. So also Halibuton of Fitch, who bore "or, on a bend azure 3 longesses of the field," after a marriage with another Chisholm heiress, added to their coat "3 boar's heads erased sable." Bohun, who bore "azure, a bond argent, cutted or, between 6 lions rampant of the third," is thought to have added the bend on the occasion of a marriage with Maud, daughter and heir of Milo, earl of Hereford. As this, however, led to complexity and indistinctness in the bearings, and the introduction of a second shield was obviously inconvenient, the method of impalement was devised, by which the sinister half of the shield was appropriated to the lady's arms, at first under the process known as dimidiation. When, however, the lady was an heiress, a different plan was adopted which ultimately led to the quaranting on the marshalling of many coats in one shield. This practice, when resorted to any extent, quite inconsistent with the original use of coat armour. This also led to a corresponding alteration in the shape of the shield, which was expanded to contain the arms of each heiress who had married into the family, together with such other heiresses as her family had previously been allied with, so that when a Percy heiress married a Seymour, she added her heiress ancestors' arms with her own arms to those of her husband, expanded in a similar fashion by the previous matches of his family. Thus the great shield of a family became a compendium of the family pedigree which, to those who could read its language, conveyed a considerable mass of semi-historical information. The defect of this system was that it only took account of heiresses, and did not provide for the purity of the whole descent, so that under it the children of a man of no birth who married a great heiress, would display all her quarterings, and no account would be taken of the absence of any on his side, and further, if it happened, as was actually the case in the last century with the Rodney's of Rodney stone, that a family, though ancient, had never intermarried with an heiress, they could display no quarterings.

In France and Germany and to some extent in Scotland a far more perfect system was pursued. Their genealogical escutcheon included the arms of every ancestor and ancestor's, whether an heiress or not, thus one generation gave two coats, two generations four coats, and so on. "Seize quartiers" gave evidence of pure blood for four generations, and thirty-two quarters, the qualification for a canon of Strasburg, for five.

As the combinations out of which the early coats were formed were limited, it occasionally happened that two persons of the same nation bore the same arms, and this gave rise to disputes which, as matters connected with military discipline, came under the jurisdiction of the earl marshal. One of the earliest of these disputes is mentioned in the roll of Caeslavrock—

"Le beau Bryan de Fitz Alcyne,  
De courtoisie, et de honneur pür,  
Fu a braves barons  
De or et le goulx bien parce,  
Dont le chelaige estoit le pür,  
Fur entre lui et Rues Roynr,  
Ki portoit ed en plus en muny,  
Dont merveille oret meuns et meuns."

Cases of a similar character were decided between

Harding and St Loo in 1312, Warburton and Gorges in 1321, and Sytelyt and Fakenham in 1333, when Sir William Fakenham disputed the arms, "le champ de duse baizet argent et azurie, supportez de cinq coccochons sales, chargés ovesque tant de lyons pumeis rampant incensés grles." They were adjudged by a commission to Sytelyt Hugh Malby and Hamon Beckwith had a similar dispute in 1330. But by far the most celebrated dispute of this nature arose in 1384 between Sir Richard Scrope of Bolton and Sir Robert Grosvenor, for the right to bear the arms "azurie, a bend or." The greatest men in the country, including John of Gaunt, gave testimony on one side or the other, and it was shown that each family had used the coat beyond the memory of man. It was finally adjudged to Scrope, and Grosvenor was directed to bear "les ditz armes ove une playne bordie d'argent." Grosvenor, however, declined to accept the arms so differentiated, and assumed "azurie, a garb or," retaining his colours and making his connection with the old coats of Chester. It was proved, incidentally, that an ancestor of Grosvenor's had granted his coat, with a difference, to William Coton of Coton. It is remarkable that both disputants are still represented in the male line, and continue the arms as then settled. Both families had previously had disputes with other parties, and the Scropes long afterwards had a quarrel with the Stanleys for the right to bear the arms of the Isle of Man. The matter was compromised by Edward IV. The Hastings and Grey de Ruthyn case, which rises to the rank of a tragedy, illustrates still more forcibly the value attached to a coat of arms. On the death, childless, in 1380, of John de Hastings, earl of Pembroke, a dispute arose for his hereditary part between Reginald Grey, his heir-general, and Edward Hastings, the heir male and of the name, but of the half-blood. A court military decided in favour of Grey. Pending the trial Hastings had ceased to difference his arms as a cadet, and assumed them unbroken. He was, however, ordered to bear them with a label, and for contumacy was imprisoned for thirteen years. A suit for arms was decided as lately as 1720 in Blount *versus* Blount, in the earl marshal's court.

The same necessity that made it important to prevent the use of similar bearings by different families in the same country made it also necessary to distinguish between the bearings of different members of the same family, all of whom had a right to the paternal coat. As this right was strongest in the eldest son he alone bore the paternal arms unaltered (in French heraldry "sans bismes"), and the other sons were obliged to introduce some sufficient change, called in heraldry a "difference." This was at first managed by inverting the colours or substituting one ordinary or one interior charge for another, as a bend for a fess, martlets for mullets, and the like, and sometimes by the use of a coat compounded of the paternal bearing with that of an ancestor. A multitude of these early differences occur in the rolls of Henry III and Edward I, and in various early lists of arms. The family of Grey, always numerous, differentiated their cadets in at least fourteen different ways, almost all preserving in some tangible form the paternal coat, and this was also the case with the very numerous family of Basset. Generally no rule is followed, save that on the whole some reference is retained either to the charges upon, or the colours of, the paternal coat. Very frequently, even in the earliest times, the eldest son differentiated his father's coat by a label. In the roll of Henry III the label occurs fifteen times, though not always as a difference. Gradually, however, it came to be used almost entirely for that purpose, and finally a set of marks, called of cadency, were devised for each of the sons, the label being the mark of the eldest during his father's life.

All these rules and alterations were, however, the growth

of a later age, and came into use as the bold and simple heraldry of the 13th and 14th centuries began to be overlaid with florid fancies. So long as heraldry represented a real want, its expressions were simple and intelligible, but as "villanous salpêtres" came into use and closed helmets were laid aside, and as skill and strategy rather than personal valour became the attribute of a leader, armorial bearings fell into disuse in war, and were no longer worn upon the person, or upon the horse's trappings. But though armorial bearings ceased to be of actual use, they continued to be emblems of rank and family, and a mark of gentle blood. They became, however, exceedingly and often absurdly complex, partly because simplicity was no longer necessary, and partly because it was scarcely practicable, owing to the enormous increase in the number of the gentry, which produced a demand for new combinations.

The glories of heraldry reached their zenith in the reign of Richard II, with "youth at the plow and pleasure at the helm" of the vessel of the state, but it was not till the reign of Richard III that it was thought necessary to place under specific control the whole heraldry of the kingdom, and thus, in close imitation of the example of France, was done by the incorporation of the heralds into a college placed under the presidency of the earl marshal.

The office of the herald as the messenger of war or peace between sovereigns or between contending armies in the field is of far earlier date than the introduction of armorial bearings, but as these came into use they were gradually placed under his charge, and he took his specific name sometimes from that of the noble or leader who employed him, sometimes from one of his castles or titles of honour, and sometimes from one of his badges or cognizances, which the herald wore embroidered upon his dress and by which he was known. In the pages of Froissart and other chroniclers frequent mention is made of heralds at arms and their attendants the pursuivants, and we read of Somerset and York, Windsor, Chester, and Lancaster heralds, Clancieux, Arundel, Fleur-de-Lys, and Leopard, and of pursuivants, Antelope, Blanch Lion, Falcon, Portcullis, and many more. At an early period the principal heralds, and especially those attached to sovereigns, were called kings at arms, and as early as Edward I an officer, called from his jurisdiction, Noctory, was placed in charge of the heralds north of the Trent. It is probable that a herald was always attached to each order of chivalry, as Tossou d'ot to the Fleeca, and Garter to the chief English order. Garter, however, was only officially appointed by Henry V, when he seems to have been recognized as the principal king at arms—"Principalis rex armorum Angliænoium." At the institution of the college, or soon afterwards, it was decided that its officers should be Garter, principal king at arms, Norroy and Clarenceux, provincial kings north and south of Trent, six heralds, Windsor, Chester, Lancaster, Richmond, Somerset, and York, and four pursuivants, Rouge Croix, Blue Mantle, Rouge Dragon, and Portcullis, who constitute the present establishment, though some special officers have since been appointed, as a king at arms to the revived order of the Bath, and some others, not members of the college.

It became the duty of the new incorporation to take note of all existing arms, to allow none without authority, and to collect and combine the rules of blazoning into a system. To effect a supervision of the armorial bearings throughout the kingdom, it was necessary to visit the several counties. Such a commission of visitation seems to have been issued by Henry IV, as early as 1419, but the first regular commission acted upon was issued by Henry VIII, 1528-9, and the last early in the reign of James II. The visitations were taken about every thirty years, and for contemporary events are most valuable records. The provincial king, either

personally or by deputy, visited the capital town of each county in his division, and summoned the surrounding gentry to record their pedigrees, and show a title to their armorial bearings. The sail marshal's court survived the fall of the house of Stuart, and a few causes relative to a right to particular arms were decided in the course of the last century, but its powers fell into disuse, and not long since it was finally abolished, and with it fell any pretence on the part of the college to regulate, by compulsory authority, the heraldry of the kingdom. At present, however, notwithstanding the democratic tendencies of the age, armorial bearings are in greater demand than ever in England, and more or less coveted in the United States, and a good deal of the proper business of heraldry is still transacted within the college of arms, and a good deal more, irregularly and improperly, outside it. A considerable number of persons still bear arms derived from an ancestor who bore them before the institution of the college, others bear them under grants and patents from that body, and others still more numerous, who or whose fathers have risen from obscurity, have assumed arms according to their fancy, or under the unqualified advice of some silversmith or finder of arms. The Smiths, said a distinguished member of the family, had no arms, they sealed their letters with their thumbs. It is to avoid so inconvenient a signet that the new men have recourse to the demi-lions and demi-griffins now so much in vogue, and possibly because they are not aware that Garter and his colleagues are still willing to grant arms, crest, and motto, on terms within reach of almost every aspirant to chivalry.

There is no college or corporation of heralds in Scotland or Ireland, but in Scotland heraldry has been to the full as much considered, and at least as well regulated as in England. "Lyon-king-at-arms," "Lyon rex armorum," or "Leo fecialis," called from the lion on the royal shield, is the head of the office of arms in Scotland. When first the dignity was constituted is not known, but Lyon was a prominent figure in the coronation of Robert II. in 1371. The office was at first, as in England, attached to the sail marshal, but it has long been conferred by patent under the great seal, and is held direct from the crown. Lyon is also king-at-arms for the national order of the Thistle. He is styled "Lord Lyon," and the office has always been held by men of family, and frequently by a peer. His powers have been declared by statute, and extend to fine and imprisonment. He is supreme in all matters of heraldry in Scotland. Besides the "Lyon deputy," there are the Scottish heralds, Islay, Rothesay, Marchmont, Albany, Ross, and Snowdown, with precedence according to date of appointment, and six pursuivants, Kintyre, Dingwall, Caithness, Bute, Ormond, and Unicorn. Herald and pursuivants are appointed by Lyon.

In Ireland also there is but one king-at-arms, Ulster. The office was instituted by Edward VI. in 1553. The patent is given by Rymae, and refers to certain emoluments as "pæfictio officio ab antiquo spectantibus." The allusion is to an Ireland king-at-arms mentioned in the reign of Richard II. and superseded by Ulster. Ulster holds office by patent, during pleasure, under him are two heralds, Cork and Dublin, and four pursuivants, Athlone, and St. Patrick Nos 1, 2, and 3. Ulster is king-at-arms to the order of St. Patrick. He held visitations in parts of Ireland from 1568 to 1590, and these and other records, including all grants of arms from the institution of the office, are kept in the Birmingham Tower, Dublin, under the charge of the present most courteous and learned Ulster, Sir B. Burke. The precedence of the three chiefs has been the subject of dispute, but is now generally arranged, Garter being followed by Lyon, and he by Ulster.

Heraldry should be studied with reference to the period

in which it was a useful art, and in the simple examples of the 14th and 15th centuries. Before that period it was in a changing and elementary state, after it, it became merely ornamental, and its examples are complicated and debased. In a general treatise on the subject notice must of course be taken of the later as well as the earlier conditions of the art, but the greater number of the illustrations in the following pages are taken from the earlier and best examples.

A curious evidence of the vitality of heraldry, and of the desire of all mankind for ancestral distinctions, is afforded by its extension among the republics of the New World. The United States boast some excellent genealogical societies, and a great and very general desire is shown by individuals to trace their pedigrees to the stocks of the Old World, and to assume the arms proper to their name. The national emblem of the stars and stripes, now so widely and honorably known throughout the world, has been traced back to the paternal coat of the first and greatest president, George Washington, whose English ancestors bore "argent, 2 bars gules, in chief 3 mullets of the second." In Canada, Australia, and other English colonies, the assumption of arms by individuals and by the community is not less general, and the republics of South America, of Spanish origin, almost all have adopted coats of arms. The Peak of Tenerife, the Beaver, the Rod Indian, contribute to the list of changes, and the clear firmament of Chaco is indicated by a star "Coupé d'azur sur gules, à une étoile d'argent en abîme."

#### DIVISIONS OF ARMS

Arms or armorial bearings may be conveniently divided into those of dominion, of a community, of office, of consecration, family or paternal arms, and arms of alliance. To these may perhaps be added arms of attribution. There is also another division, or rather peculiarity, called canting arms, of which many of the former divisions present examples.

1. *Arms of Dominion* are those of a kingdom or a feudal lordship. The origin of such arms is often obscure. Those of the Isle of Man are three legs conjoined in triangle at the thigh (fig. 116), probably borrowed from the emblem of Sicily, the ancient Trinacria, found upon Greek vases. The Irish harp is an emblem probably allusive to the instrument of Brian Boromha. The origin of the lion of Scotland is also obscure, and of the treasure equally so, though failed to be

"First by Achaus borne."

Not unfrequently the arms of kingdoms were those of an early sovereign, adopted by succeeding dynasties to the exclusion of their own coat. The lions of England were certainly passed to the Plantagenet kings, if not to Henry I., but they have become national to the exclusion of the arms of the Tudor, Stuart, Brunswick, and Saxon dynasties, just as neither the arms of Babel, Buce, nor Stuart ever became the arms of Scotland. The lion rampant, armed, crowned gules, so long borne by the house of Hapsburg, and was not used by such of the early emperors as were not members of it, and the bend and aleions of Lorraine only became a part of the arms of the empire after the marriage of Francis of Lorraine with Maria Theresa. It seems indeed to have been the custom of elected sovereigns, as those of the empire and of Poland, to place their paternal arms on a shield of pretence over those of the dominion. Cromwell so placed his arms over those of the commonwealth, and William of Nassau over those of England, but they disappeared with the individual who introduced them. On the other hand the arms of kingdoms and lordships are sometimes continued to be used as personal arms by the descendants of their former lords. The great shield of Mary of Burgundy quarters the arms of a number of

duchies and provinces. Simon de Montfort thus used the arms of the Honour of Hunkley. Richard de Montchumer (who married the countess of Gloucester, and was, by courtesy, earl of that name) at Caerlaverock, while he bore on his shield his own arms, "or, an eagle displayed vert," on his banner displayed "or, three chevrons gules" for the earldom. So also Humphrey, duke of Gloucester, (died 1446), used on one of his seals the three fusils of Montacute, because he held lands which belonged to that barony. The *Book of St Albans* says that, if the king grant a lordship to a young man entailing him to bear arms, he may take those of that lordship.

Under this head may be described the armorial shield of Great Britain (fig. 1). The arms, gules 3 lions passant in pale or, are for England, and are so borne by the kings of England till the reign of Edward III., who in 1340 quartered with them, in the first quarter, the arms of France, azure, semée of fleurs-de-lys or. Thus they continued till the latter part of the reign of Henry IV., when the fleurs-de-lys were reduced to three. No alteration occurred in the royal achievement during any of the succeeding reigns till the accession of James VI. of Scotland to the throne of England, when that sovereign introduced the royal arms of Scotland into the second quarter, and the arms of Ireland into the third quarter. The royal arms were thus borne by all the monarchs of the house of Stewart till the reign of Anne, though William III. bore over the quarterings of the royal arms those of his Dutch dominions—the house of Nassau. In the



FIG. 1.—Arms of Great Britain.

reign of Anne a change again took place, occasioned by the union of England and Scotland; and the arms of these kingdoms were impaled in the first and fourth quarters (England on the dexter, Scotland on the sinister); France was removed to the second; and Ireland retained its former position. On the accession of the house of Brunswick in 1714, the fourth quarter in the royal shield gave place to the arms of his Majesty's German dominions, an arrangement which continued till 1st January 1801, when, upon the Union of Great Britain and Ireland, the arms of France were excluded, England occupied the first and fourth quarters, Scotland the second quarter, and Ireland its old position in the third quarter; while over all, on an escutcheon of pretence, were placed the arms of Hanover, ensigned with the electoral bonnet, in 1816 exchanged for the Hanoverian crown. On the death of William IV. Hanover passed away, and its arms were withdrawn, and the present arrangement introduced. In Scotland, and in

Scotch official documents, the Scottish coat is placed in the first quarter. It bears "or, a lion rampant, within a double tressure flory-counterflory, gules." There is no positive authority for any early coat of arms being used for Ireland, though the bearing "azure, 3 crowns in pale or" granted by Richard III. to De Vere has been so regarded. From the reign of Henry VII., "azure, a harp or, stings argent," has been regarded as the Irish coat, and as such is inserted into the imperial shield. There is no authority of any standing for a coat of arms for the whole of the principality of Wales, but the coat usually attributed to it is "quarterly azure and gules, 4 lions passant guardant, counterchanged." The ancient princes of Wales would scarcely have adopted the lions of England. Moreover, this coat was never used by any leading chief in either middle or south Wales.

In Scotland arms territorial are much recognized. The dukes of Athole quarter Man. The earls are quartered by the Erskines for the earldom of Bute. When Archibald Douglas was created duke of Tournaise, he placed the arms of that duchy, three fleurs-de-lys, on his first quarter, before those of Douglas, Annandale, and Galloway. The dukes of Richmond bear three buckles for the dukedom of Aungmy. "Fury of 6 argent and sable" are the reputed arms of the earldom of Athole, and "a saltire between 4 roses" those of that Lennox.

To this head belong arms of pretension, where a sovereign claims *de jure* a possession which he no longer holds, and sometimes never held, *de facto*. Thus the kings of England from Edward III. to George III. bore the French lilies, and claimed to be kings of France, and the kings of Sardinia and Naples used the arms of Cyprus and Jerusalem. In fact, nearly all the older sovereigns of Europe used arms of this character. The armorial shield of the house of Austria at the dissolution of the empire bears a number of curious examples of arms of pretension. Besides Hungary, Bohemia, Dalmatia, and Slavonia, it contained Aragon and Sicily, Brabant, Swabia, Antwerp, Flanders, Burgundy, Naples, Jerusalem, Lombardy, and Milan.

2. *Arms of Communities* are borne by corporations, religious houses, colleges, cities and boroughs, the cinque ports, guilds, and inns of court, some of which were allowed arms from an early period. These are very generally adopted in honour of some founder, great benefactor, or early and distinguished member of the body. Thus Birmingham bears the arms of the barons of that name, Manchester of the Byrons, Leicester of the Bellomonts, Cardiff of the De Clares. Of religious houses Atherton bore the arms of Basset; Garndon of the earls of Leicester; Kirby-Ballers of Ballers. Of colleges, Balliol and All Souls at Oxford, and Pembroke and Clare at Cambridge, so commemorate Balliol, Chichele, Valence, and De Clare. The Cinque Ports all bear a part of the arms of England. The arms of the guilds and city companies usually contain some allusion to their trade; those of the grocers are 9 cloves; of the fishmongers, 3 dolphins; of the blacksmiths, 3 hammers. Of the inns of court, the Inner and Middle Temples bear badges of that order; Lincoln's Inn uses the purple lion of the De Lacons, earls of Lincoln; Furnival's Inn the bend and martlets of the Barons Furnival. A bishop, as a corporation sole, represents his see and bears its arms. These usually contain some ecclesiastical emblem, keys, crosses, mitres, martyrs' crowns, or the like. Hereford bears the arms of Cantilupe, possibly from its canonized bishop of that family. The arms of Lichfield and Coventry are founded upon those of Jerusalem; London, Winchester, and Bath and Wells assert their temporal power by bearing swords. The English sees were early provided with arms, but in Scotland they were of very late introduction. Bishops before the 17th century seem



to have used their personal arms Thus Gawain Douglas, bishop of Dunkeld,

"Who gave fair Scotland Virgil's page,"

and Alexander Douglas, bishop of Moray in 1606, placed the Douglas arms upon their seals Sometimes, however, this seems to have been combined with some ecclesiastical emblem, for the archbishops of St Andrews placed the cross of St Andrew on their seals, while below were their paternal arms, and the bishops of Glasgow so bore a figure of St Menago

3 *Arms of Office* are not uncommon The electors and chief officers of the empire each bore some token of their office The crossed swords so well known on Dresden china were borne by the electors of Saxony, the sceptre by those of Brandenburg, the crown of Charlemagne by the electors of Hanover as arch-treasurers The ancestors of the dukes of Oimond were hereditary butlers of Ireland, and bore three covered cups The kings-at-arms bear arms of office Garter, the principal king, bears "argent, a cross gules, on a chief azure a crown or encircled with a garter of the order buckled and nowed between a lion of England and a lion of France," by no means such an example of heraldry as might be expected from the chief herald of England The knights of St John of Jerusalem augmented their paternal arms with a chief gules, charged with a cross or Several civic offices in France gave a right to bear arms Ménage observed of a mayor of Angers who died upon his election, and was buried with his newly acquired arms—

"Il étoit de bonne nature,  
Et ne fut armé qu'en peinture"

4 *Arms of Concession* were granted by a sovereign on some feudal superior, sometimes in memory of some great deed, but more frequently to indicate the connexion between the lord and his follower, when they are called arms of patronage Of the former character was the heart in the arms of Douglas, first used by William I, earl of Douglas, 1356, in memory of James Lord Douglas's mission with Robert Bruce's heart, and to this a crown was added in the time of William II, earl of Angus, in 1617 Also the families of De la Warr, Pelham, Yane, and Fane bear arms in allusion to the share of the ancestors of each in the capture of John of France at Poitiers Sir James Audley, after Poitiers, not only divided the Black Prince's present between his four squires, but allowed them to bear portions of his coat armour, "gules, a flet or," in memory of which the family of Delves still bear "argent, a chevron gules, fretty or, between 3 billets sable" (fig 82), and that of Darton, "quately argent and gules, on the 2d and 3d quarters a flet or." It was probably in memory of the same event that John Touchet, Lord Audley, granted to John and Thomas Mackworth, for services performed by their ancestors and themselves to his ancestors and himself, to bear "party denticle de sable et d'hermines, un chevron de gules fretty d'or,"—arms still used by the Mackworths, with a slight addition, and now blazoned "per pale indented sable and ermine, on a chevron gules 5 crosses pale or." Among many similar instances may be mentioned Tatton of Cheshire, who bears "quately argent and gules," evidently derived from Massey Harvey of Ickworth bears "gules, on a bend argent 3 hawks slipped vert," derived from Foliot, who bears "gules, a bend argent 3 chevrons of Longbridge, who held by the service of repairing a tower of Belvoir Castle, bore "argent, 2 chevrons within a border engrailed sable," derived from Albm of Belvoir, who bears "or, 3 chevrons and a border gules" Lowther and Musgrave derive their armulets from Vipont Moton of Peckleton, Bialford, Astley of Hillmorton, Besington, bears "argent, a cinquefoil azure," "or, a cinquefoil sable," "azure, a cinquefoil ermine," and "azure, a cinquefoil or,"

all derived from the bearings of the Bellomonts, "gules, a cinquefoil ermine" Hardies, who held under De Clare at Tonbridge, bore "gules, a lion rampant debased by a chevron or," and the lords of Avan, Welsh bairns under De Clare, bore the three chevrons Thus also Flamville and Whaiton used the maunch of Hastings "Ermine and chequy," from the Newburgh earls, were common in Warwickshire, and the "canton" in Westmoreland, derived from the Lancasters, barons of Kendal In Donghdale the "stars" of Douglas preponderate, and in Annandale the "saltire" of Johnstone

Arms also passed from one friend to another by deed or will, even when there was no blood relationship Henry de Lucy, the last earl of Lincoln, bequeathed to his friend and executor Sir H Scrope a lion passant guardant, in augmentation of his coat, and Sir Henry wore it accordingly, though for life only Maud Lucy, widow of his brother Anthony Lord Lucy of Cockmouthe, married Henry Percy, earl of Northumberland, 1414 She died childless, but bequeathed her lands to the Percys on condition they bore her arms, "gules 3 lucies," quately with Percy, which they continued to do, and indeed, though without any right, often styled themselves Barons Lucy To this class also belong arms of augmentation, sometimes called additions of honour Thus Richard II chose to impale with his own the impured arms of the Confessors "gules, a cross paltone between 5 martlets or," and he granted to Thomas Holland, duke of Surrey, to impale them with a border argent with his own arms Thomas Mowbray, duke of Norfolk, was also allowed to impale the entire arms of the Confessors, a fatal gift, as it was one of the charges brought against his ambitious descendant Henry Howard Richard also allowed De Vere, duke of Ireland, to bear for life "azure, 3 golden crowns within a border," which seems then to have been regarded as the arms of Ireland They are found on the marshalled quarterly with De Vere After the victory of Flodden, Henry VIII granted to the earl of Surrey to augment his arms with a "demi-lion gules paltone through the month with an eagle, within a double trevoise flowered of the same," to be placed on the Howard bend Henry used both the pile and the branch in his augmentations to the families of his English wives Seymour bore "quately, 1 and 4, or, on a pile gules between 6 flames-de-lys azure 3 lions of England, 2 and 3, Seymour" The augmentation to Catherine Howard includes 3 flames, that to Catherine Parr a pale Mannors of Bolbourn bore "or, 2 bars argent, a chief quately azure and gules, in the 1st and 4th quarters 2 fleurs-de-lys, in the 2d and 3d a lion of England, or" The bars were no doubt taken from the Muschamps The chief and its contents were an augmentation from Henry VIII

In Scotland an early Lord Seton had a concession from Robert Bruce of a sword supporting a crown, and his descendant in 1601 received as an augmentation "azure, a blazing star of 8 points within a double trevoise or"

Most of the earlier grants or concessions seem intended to commemorate some territorial or genealogical concession, those of later date some connexion with royalty, or some deed of arms in the field Thus Sir Cloudesly Shovel received 2 fleurs-de-lys in chief and a crescent in base in memory of two victories over the French and one over the Turks, and Nelson and other naval commanders received additions rather to be described as sea pieces than as heraldic augmentations

5 *Family and Paternal Arms* and arms of succession are such a descent by custom to the male heir. The descendants of females, however, save by special licence, can only quarter their arms This rule has indeed been much abused, and on every side are seen good maternal names and arms adopted to the exclusion of those less dis-

tinguished on the paternal side. Paternal arms are of very various dates and origin. There seem, however, always to have existed certain recognized rules which the earl marshal had power to enforce. One of the most important of these was that no two persons in the same kingdom should bear the same arms, a practice clearly subversive of the main use of such insignia. Many were the disputes and challenges that arose out of this regulation, of which two of the most remarkable have already been mentioned.

6. *Arms of Alliance* or *heirship* were used when those of a great heiress were allowed to supersede the paternal coat. Thus the heiress of Mandeville, earl of Essex, married Say, and their heiress, Beatrice de Say, married Geoffrey Fitz Piers. Geoffrey (died 14 John) became earl of Essex, and their descendants took the name and bore the arms of Mandeville exclusively. William II., earl Warren (died 1148), left a daughter and heiress Isabel, who married Hamelin, natural son of Geoffrey of Anjou and brother to Henry II. He became earl of Surrey, and bore the name and arms and continued the line of Warren. The De la Bisse family, who claimed to descend from the male stock of the De Cloues, bore the 3 chevrons differenced with a label of 3 points, though when, in the reign of Richard II., they intermarried with the Staffords, they laid this aside, and adopted "a chevron between three roses." When Gilbert Talbot (died 1274) married Gwendolyn, or Gwendoline, the heiress of the Welsh prince Rhys ap Griffith, he laid aside his paternal coat, "bendy of 10 pieces, argent and gules," and adopted that of the lady, "gules, a lion rampant or, within a border engrailed of the field," as still used by the earls of Shrewsbury.

7. *Arms of Attribution* are altogether fictitious, and such as the heralds of the 15th and 16th centuries indulged in to an absurd extent, providing every hero of antiquity with a coat of arms. The same age that represented the Virgin Mary as versed in the canon law declared that Solomon, as the wisest of men, must have been a good herald, and described the armorial bearings of Achilles and Hector. Perhaps the most extravagant example of this fashion is contained in the work of Dame Juliana Berners, who says: "Of the offspring of the gentleman Japhet, comes Habraham, Moyse, Aron, and the profetys, and also the kyng of the right lynne of Mary, of whom the gentillman Jhesus was borne, very God and man; after his manhode King of the londs of Jude, and of the gentylmen by his modere Mary, prynce of coat armure," and again, "The four doctors of holy chirch, Seynt Jeromy, Ambrose, Augustyn, and Gregori, var gentillmen of blode and of cotarmures." At an earlier period, in the reign of Richard II., it was believed that many of the bearings in use had been borne ever since the Conquest, as appears from the evidence in the Scrope and Grosvenor controversy. Almost all the older genealogists attribute coats of arms to ancestors long before they were in use. On the tomb of Queen Elizabeth are emblazoned the arms of William the Conqueror and Matilda of Flanders, and of Henry I. and Matilda of Scotland, all of course pure inventions. It is only of very late years, since a critical spirit has found its way even into heraldry, that these absurdities have been exposed.

8. *Canting Arms*, the "armes parlantes" of French heraldry, are common to all the preceding classes of arms, and most common in those of the earliest date. Such were the castle and lion for Castile and Leon, the fers de cheval of Ferrers, the lion (lwe) of Louvaine, the lucas of Lucy, the sharp-pointed row of fusils of Montacute, the corbeu or raven of Corbet, the herons of Heron, the falcon of Falconer, the greyhounds (levriers) of Mauleverer, the harnacles of Bernak, the castle of Chastell, the swine's head of Swinbourne, the pentateuchers of Compennie, the hironelles of Arundel, the storm-finsches of Tempest, the hammers of

Hamerton, the tyrwhits of Tyrwhitt, the hanks of cotton of Cotton, the fusils of Trefusis, the oxen of Oxenden, the fer de moline of Molyneux, the hazel leaves of Hazlerigge, the Danish axes of Hakluyt, the bozons or bird bolts of Bolteham and Bozon, the bend wavy of Wallop, or Well-hope, the wheel-shell of Shelley, and many more, mostly early coats, and borne by considerable persons and families. In fact the practice was introduced whenever the name admitted of it, and sometimes when the allusion is very far-fetched indeed, as in the boar pig "verres," the crest of De Vere, and the cock for Law, alluding to his cry, cock-a-leary-law! Canting arms were equally common in other countries. In Italy the Colonne, Frangipani, and Ursini families bore a column, a piece of broken bread, and a bear. They were also common in France, Spain, and Germany.

## TINCTURES.

Tinctures (in French, *émaux*) include metals, colours, and furs. The Metals are—

Or	Yellow	Topaz	Sol.
Argent	White	Pearl	Luna.

The Colours—

Azure	Blue, azur	Sapphire	Jupiter.
Gules	Red, gules	Ruby	Mars.
Purple	Purple, pourpre	Amethyst	Mercury.
Sable	Black, sable	Diamond	Saturn.
Vert	Green, shampe	Emerald	Venus.

The Furs—

Ermine, Vair, Ermines or Counter-ermine.  
 Ermine, Ermines, Pean, Vair-en-point, Counter-vair, Potent-counter-potent.

Gules is thought to come from the Persian *gula*, "a rose," but more probably from *gula*, "the throat." The other terms are French. To the older colours have been added "sanguine" or "tenné" or tawny, a compound of red and yellow. They are almost unknown in English heraldry, and are symbolized, the one by sardonyx and dragon's tail, and the other by jacinth and dragon's head. The blazoning by precious stones and planets, and even by the virtues, was a foolish fancy of the heraldic writers of the 16th century, and applied to the arms of peers and princes. Gwillim condescends to use it.

A shield is rarely of one tincture only. In the roll of Caerlaverock, however, Sir Euermonius de la Brette "La baniere ent toute rougeate."

The original bearing of the Gournays of Norfolk seems to have been sable. Do Bargo of Lorraine bore "azure." The Capital de Buch, who figures in Froissart as a Guyenne knight, bore "or," and Bogue, a Norman knight, bore "argent."

The furs (fig. 2) are all supposed to be formed of the skins of small animals fastened together. Ermine and vair were long the only furs acknowledged, and even now the rest are not common. Ermine (a) represents the skin of the animal of that name, and is white powdered with black spots.

In vair (b) the skins in shape resemble small escutcheons, the wings representing the forelegs and the point the tail. The fur is that of a sort of squirrel, bluish-grey on the back and white on the belly, and thence called "vairus." The skins are arranged alternately argent and azure, and if of other colours they must be specified. There are varieties of vair, as vair-en-

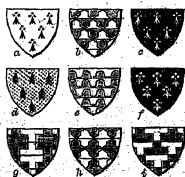


FIG. 2.—FURS

point, where the point of one escutcheon is placed opposite to the base of that below; counter-vair (*h*), where those of the same colour are placed base to base and point to point. At first the vair was drawn bell shaped (*c*).

In ermine (*c*) the field is sable and the spots white, in ermine (*d*) the field or and the spots sable; pean (*f*) is the reverse, having golden spots on a black field. Erminites resembles ermine, save that the two lateral hairs of each spot are red. This fur, however, is seldom if ever used in English heraldry. Guillem in blazoning a fur prefixed the word "purled."

Potent (*e*) is a variety of vair, and often blazoned as "vair-potent." There is also a form it called "potent-counter-potent" (*g*). Manchester, of the county of Stafford, bore "potent-counter-potent, argent and sable, a bend gules." The escutcheons or skins are T-shaped, and resemble a "potence," that is, a gallows or a crutch head. Ermine and vair are used almost to the exclusion of all other furs. Even ermine is very rare.

The dukes of Brittany, earls of Richmond, bore "ermine" (this was the coat of John de Montfort, duke of Brittany, whose widow married Henry IV.); Latin, "per pale argent and sable, a saltire engrailed ermine and ermine;" Beauchamp (old), "vair, a label gules;" Gresley of Drakelow, "vair, ermine and gules;" Calvert, "paly of 6 ermine and pean, a bend engrailed counterchanged."

Of the colours, gules, azure, and sable are by far the most common in early bearings. They contrasted strongly with each other and with the metals. To preserve this contrast, across the very early and general rule not to place metal upon metal, and upon colour. Scott takes the licence of a poet to break this rule in *Armistice*, whose falcon

"Scar'd sable on an azure field,"

and in *Isaiah*, where the black knight bears "a fetter lock and shackle bolt azure, on a field sable." He pleasantly defended himself by quoting the arms of the kingdom of Jerusalem, "argent, a cross potent between four crosses, all or," which thus violates this fundamental canon. The French call such coats "armés à enguerie." There are a few other less illustrious but early instances.

Venzon, warden of the Fleet, 1480, bore gules on a fess sable, five escallops or, 2, 2, 1.

Leycester of De Tablay: azure, a fess gules between three fleurs-de-lys or.

Sir Richard de Rokela, temp. Edward II.: "d'azur, a six lionscelles d'argent, a une fosse de gules."

When an object is given of its natural colour it is blazoned as "proper." Thus in the insignia of the order of St George and St Michael we have "the archangel encountering Satan, all proper;" though the German family of Teufel displays a teufel or devil gules. A very striking contrast of colour is produced by a process called "counterchanging," where a shield is divided between two colours, and a charge placed over the dividing line is also divided between the same colours transposed.

Chetwode of Chetwode: quarterly, argent and gules, four crosses patée counterchanged.

Poyte of Chesterton: Barry of six party per pale dancette, argent and gules counterchanged.

A very convenient practice of representing the tinctures by certain marks and lines arose in the 16th century, and is attributed to Padre Silvestro de Petro Sancto, an Italian. It was devised to allow of the representation of armorial bearings in drawings or engravings where it was inconvenient to colour them. Planché states the earliest known instance of the use of this method in England to be in an engraving of the seals of the regicides attached to the death warrant of Charles I. Sir E. Bysshe in Upton, 1664, gives a representation of these marks. Or (*fig. 3*) is represented by hatched points; silver is plain; azure is represented by horizontal lines, gules by vertical lines; those for purpure are drawn diagonally from sinister to dexter,

and those for vert from dexter to sinister. For sable, the lines are vertical and horizontal; for sanguine, diagonal,

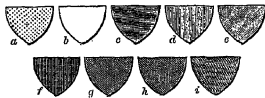


FIG. 3.—Representation of Tinctures. *a*, or; *b*, argent; *c*, azure; *d*, gules; *e*, purpure; *f*, sable; *g*, vert; *h*, sanguine; *i*, tenné.

or in saltire, from right to left and left to right, a compound of purpure and vert; and for tenné, diagonal from sinister to dexter, and horizontal, a compound of purpure and azure.

#### PARTS OF ARMS.

These are (1) the escutcheon; (2) the ordinaries; (3) partition lines; (4) charges.

#### The Escutcheon.

The *Escutcheon*, écu, or shield, called in blazon the field, upon which all lines are drawn and charges delineated, represents the shield borne in war upon which the arms of the knight were displayed. The figure of the shield varied in heraldry as in war. First came the long-pointed, kite-shaped shield or "pavese," slightly convex, and used with chain armour. As late as the reign of Richard I. and John

such may be seen on early effigies, commonly but by no means always without armorial bearings, which were not then generally in use (*fig. 4*). Varieties of these are the heart-shaped or pear-shaped shields (*fig. 5*), and sometimes a shield representing a third part of a cylinder with square top and bottom, much used in siege operations. Early in the 13th century was introduced the small heater-shaped shield, also triangular but narrow, short, and somewhat lancet-shaped. This was in use in the reign of Henry II., and in the Early English period of architecture (*fig. 6*). The three water budgets of Ros appear on a shield of similar form of the date of Edward I. in the Temple Church (*fig. 7*). As coats



FIG. 4.



FIG. 5.—From the Bayeux tapestry.



FIG. 6.



FIG. 7.



FIG. 8.

of arms were then simple, this shield was large enough to contain them without crowding, and therefore with sufficient distinctness. When drawn or carved in architecture it is suspended by its "gules" or shield straps, either upright or by the upper sinister angle, when it is said to be "couched." *Fig. 8* is from the great seal of Thomas de Beauchamp, earl of Warwick, and shows the form of shield in use during most of the Edwardian period.

As fitted and fancy plate armour came into fashion, the shield also altered its figure and became four-sided, and concave in the top and side edges, with a central point below; a notch also was cut in the upper dexter corner to

allow the lances to reach its rest, which projected from the breastplate, as in the shields upon the tower of the chapel of the Babingtons at Detthick, and on their tombhouse at Kingston (fig. 9). Such shields were called "chancrée," or "à la bouche." They are frequently carved as an ornament in the Perpendicular style of architecture. As the shield ceased to be used in war, and was only known as a representation upon tombs or in pedigrees, it was altered to suit the fashionable practice of introducing large numbers of quartered coats, frequently twenty or thirty, and sometimes a hundred, as in an escutcheon of the earls of Huntington in Burnham church.

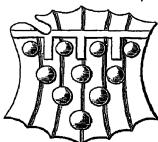


Fig. 9.

In the construction of the shield, while actually used in war, great strength had to be combined with as much lightness as possible, and this was attained by the use of cuirbouilli and plates of horn stretched upon a wooden frame. The cramps and cross pieces employed to stiffen the whole are sometimes seen upon early shields, and are supposed, with much reason, to have been painted or gilded as ornaments, and to have given rise to the bars or ordinaries which predominate in the first simple coats. Our acquaintance with the forms and fashions of the earlier shields is chiefly derived from their representations on tombs, but the actual shield of John of Gaunt was long preserved in old St Paul's, and that of the Black Prince still hangs above his tomb at Canterbury, as do those of his father and of Henry V. at Westminster. An unmarried woman did not place her arms upon an escutcheon, but, whether maiden or widow, upon a lozenge, an early practice in allusion probably to a fusil or distaff. When married she shared the shield of her husband.<sup>1</sup>

The lozenge is an ancient usage, being found in the seals of English ladies of the middle of the 14th century, and in Scotland a century later. In modern heraldry the shields of knights of an order are usually oval or circular, called "cartouches" shields, and encircled with a ribbon bearing the motto of the order. When married the knight's arms are blazoned alone within the ribbon, and again represented with those of his wife in a second shield encircled with a plain ribbon, and placed on the sinister side of the other. The dexter side of the escutcheon is that on the proper right of the bearer and therefore on the left of the spectator.

To secure due precision in blazoning, nine points, indicated by as many names, are taken on the surface of the shield. These (represented by the letters in fig. 10) are — at the top in a horizontal line three, the middle, dexter, and sinister chief; at the base three, also horizontal, the middle, dexter, and sinister base; and in the central or vertical axis also three, of which the upper is the honour point, the lower the nœmbil point, and the middle the fess point — the central point of the shield. The last three are of course in a line with the chief and base middle points.



Fig. 10.

Before passing to the ordinaries, it will be convenient here to mention a species of decoration applied to the shield, which, though not strictly heraldic, is often used in early heraldry and called "diaper." A shield "diapered," "bracteatus," is covered with a ground pattern usually in squares or lozenges with a flower or scroll work in each

compartment. The idea is said to be copied and named from the linen cloths of Ypres. An often-quoted example of diaper, and a very good one, is the shield of Robert de Vere upon his tomb at Earls Colne (fig. 4). Also the shield of William de Valence upon his effigy in Westminster Abbey is a very fine example of diaper. There the ground is divided into small squares, and each contains a pattern. The row of shields in the tabernacle work of the old chapel of St Stephen's, Westminster, exhibits some fine specimens of diapered work in squares, lozenges, and circles. The shield of Earl Warren at Castle Acre Priory is a good example of diaper, as is the counterseal of Thomas le Despenser affixed to a Kenig charter in 1397 (fig. 11).

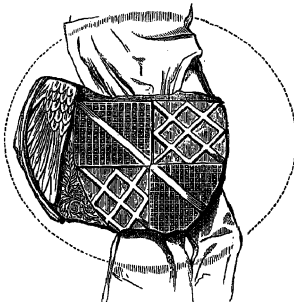


Fig. 11.—Counterseal of Thomas le Despenser.

#### Ordinaries and Partition Lines.

The Ordinaries, or, as they are called in most heraldic books, "the honourable ordinaries," have been supposed to represent the clamps or fastenings of the shield, converted into ornaments by painting or gilding. They may be regarded as nine in number—the chief, the pale, the fess, the chevron, the bend, the cross, the saltire, the pile, and the quarter. When charged they are drawn somewhat broader than when blank, and each has one or more diminutives. All were more or less in use in the earliest times of heraldry, and they were then drawn more boldly and narrower than is now the custom. When such of the ordinaries as admit of it are cut short so as not to reach to the margin of the field, they are said to be humettée or coupée.

**Partition Lines.** closely allied to the ordinaries named from them, are the lines by which shields may be divided, and which vary both in direction and pattern. It will be convenient to notice these before proceeding to a detailed account of the ordinaries, as the partition lines will be constantly referred to in the examples. When the field is divided in the direction of an ordinary it is said to be "party per." That ordinary, as party per fess or per bend. Party per chief is rare, party per pile or per quarter unknown; party per cross is called quarterly; party per cross and per saltire is gyronny. When the partition line is mentioned without qualification, it is a straight line, but it may be broken in a variety of ways, as indented, dancette, engrailed, invected, undy, nebuli, embattled, dove-tailed, and raguly. These partition lines in some cases, if not in all, have arisen from the outline of a charge or bearing. Thus Channels of Snareston at first bore eleven

<sup>1</sup> When an eminent geologist and proprietor of a well-known patent process left his business for the milline, and after a short time returned to civil life, it was said:

"So maidens who to Hyppon yield  
Exchange the lozenge for the shield,  
But, when they lose the base of men,  
Return to lozenges again."

lozenges conjoined in cross, which at a later date became a cross engrailed, and finally in the same way became converted into danette. In English heraldry the partition lines are per pale, per fess, per chevron, per bend dexter and sinister, quarterly, per saltire, and gyronny.

The annexed shield (fig. 12) represents these partition lines. It may be blazoned—quarterly of nine coats: 1. Butler: or, a chief indented azure; 2. Fleetwood: party per pale nabuly, azure and or, six martlets counter-changed; 3. Vavasour: or, a fess danette sable; 4. or, a chevron inverted azure; 5. Boyle: party per bend embattled, argent and gules; 6. Trevor: party per bend sinister, ermine and ermine; a lion rampant or; 7. Lawrence: argent, a cross raguly gules; 8. Botscourt: or, a saltire engrailed sable; 9. — party per fess dovetailed, or and sable. A good example of a cross raguly, not an armorial bearing, is found upon a 12th century tomb in the church of Llanthangel-y-Gwynn in Pembrokeshire.



Fig. 12.

The French use *parti* and *coupé* for per pale and per fess; they do not *parti* per chevron, but per bend and per bend sinister are *tranché* and *taillé*; quarterly is *écartelé*, and per saltire *écartelé en sautoir*; gyronny is *gironé*. Besides these the French have a number of other divisions, as "tierce," when the shield is divided into three parts, as "tierce en pal, tierce en fesse, &c." Tierce en pal is convenient when the coats of two wives are to be marshalled on the husband's shield.

Formerly such broken lines as were used were not mere margins, but affected the whole ordinary; a fess indented was a zigzag and called a *danette* or *danette*. This practice is still preserved with the line undy. A bend undy or wavy is not a mere bend with a wavy edge, but the whole bend is in waves, whereas a bend nebuly or raguly has merely a particular kind of edge.

Returning to the ordinaries, it may be remarked that very many both of these and of the subordinaries in heraldry are very frequent constituents in mouldings in the Norman style of architecture. The chevron and the billet are amongst the most common. The roundel forms the hood moulding of a door at Peterborough, and is inserted in a moulding in the intersecting arches of St. Augustine's, Canterbury. The fret, the billet, and the roundel or pallet are largely used in the oldest parts of Malmesbury, and on Lincoln tower is a good example of undy,—and this before the regular employment of heraldic bearings.



Fig. 13.



Fig. 14.



Fig. 15.

Fig. 16.

1. The *Chief*, chief, caput, is the upper part or head of the shield, covering one-third of it, and parted off by a horizontal line. It is found in the earliest examples of arms. In the roll of Henry III. it occurs fourteen times, in that of Edward II. twenty-one times. De Viroon *ermine*, a chief gules (fig. 19). Butler (see fig. 12).

Arton: argent, a chief undy (fig. 14). St. John of Mochbourne: *ermine*, a chief gules, two martlets placed or (fig. 10). Cornwall of Tattershall: party per chief, gules and argent, a bend azure (fig. 15). — might also be blazoned as *ermine*, a chief argent, and a bend azure (fig. 14).

Heraldic writers give the *Allee* as a diminutive of the chief. It was a narrow strip laid upon the chief, a little above its lower margin. Guillim mentions, but gives no example of it.

2. The *Pal*, pal, palme, is a vertical strip set upright in the

middle line of the shield, and one-third of its breadth. One of its earliest examples, if indeed it be not a mere gilt ornament, is ascribed to Gratiastus, Baron of Hinckley, who is reported to have borne gules, a pale or; but the banner of the barons of Hinckley carried by Simon de Montfort was per pale indented, gules and or. The "sable pale of Mar" is the well-known bearing of Eskine, argent, a pale sable (fig. 17), but when it was introduced into Scotland is not clear. In the roll of Henry III. there occurs no pale, but there are three examples of pale. Party per pale is also there found. In the roll of Edward II. there is also no pale, but pale or party per pale occurs thirteen times. The latter is called simply "party"—"Party, a party d'or et de gules."

Fig. 17.

Fig. 18.

Fig. 19.

Fig. 20.

The diminutives of the pale are the *pallet*, one-fourth, and the *endore*, one-eighth, of the breadth of the pale, both unknown anciently. This pallet may be used singly, the endore only in pairs, one on each side of the pale.

Waldgrave: per pale or and gules. Marshal, Earl Marshal and of Pembroke: party per pale or and vert, a lion rampant gules. Fleetwood (see fig. 12).

When the pale is repeated, it is blazoned as "paly," and the number of pieces specified. Kingdom of Aragon: paly of ten argent and gules (fig. 18). Gurney: or, two pellets azure.

Turner: or, paly; argent, on a pale endored sable three greyhounds' heads erased or, collared gules (fig. 19). Daniel of Cheshire: argent, a pale finelly sable.

Lighthold: azure, a pale rayonné or (fig. 20).



Fig. 21.



Fig. 22.

Fig. 23.

3. The *Fess*, fesse, fascia, is a strip placed horizontally across the middle of the shield. It occurs about twenty-five times in the roll of Henry III., and its diminutives about twenty-three times, or forty-eight times in all, against ninety in the roll of Edward II. Hastings: gules, a fess argent (fig. 21). Charlotte, queen of George III., on her shield of Mecklenburg-Strelitz placed a scutcheon of partition party per fess, gules and or, for Starburg.

Varaz (see fig. 12). Henry de Percy, ancient blazon: azure, a fess engrailed or (fig. 22). This is a way of describing what is better known as *ermine*, five tails conjoined in fess or.

The seal of Walter son of Alan, steward of Scotland, 1160, gives a fess chequy, probably the earliest trace of the chequy.

Wald of Louth: azure, a fess nabuly between three crescents ermine (fig. 23). De Planchen: argent, a fess embattled gules.

Turner: azure, a fess embattled counter-embattled, between three castles or. The Temple banner of "Beaumont" was party per fess sable and argent.

Nicholas de Criel: per fess or and gules. Swinburne (modern): party per fess gules and argent, three cinquefoils counter-changed.

Deaton: argent, a fess, quarterly, sable and or (fig. 24).

The diminutives of the fess are the *bar*, covering one-fifth of the shield; the *barraule*, one-half, and the *close*, one-quarter of the bar. The *close* is used in pairs only, usually called *gemelles*, and these are sometimes quadrupled, two pairs on each side, and sometimes are used without the bend between them. The bar is rarely used singly, the number must be specified, if above four, when the coat is "barry" of the given number. The term *fassy* is not used.

Harcourt of Ankerwyke: gules, two bars or. Harcourt of Tolly: or, three bars wavy gules.

Blount: barry noble eight pieces, or and sable.

Pitz Alan of Bedale: barry of six, argent and azure.

De la Cour: ermine, three bars hamely gules, fesswise in pale.

Dalricmore: argent, a fess gemellé, gules (fig. 25). This is from the roll of Carlisle, but the more usual blazon is—argent, a fess and two bars gemellé, gules, which might be given as a fess closest.

Peitrex of Denton: argent, three bars gemellé gules, surmounted by a lion rampant ermine or.

Hammerstone: ermine, two pale of gemelles gules.

Edmondson and some other writers describe the gemelles as *coilles*.

4. The *Chevron*, chevron, cantelier, from whatever source derived, seems to have been named from its resemblance to the main rafters or principals of a roof, a familiar sight in early buildings. It is common to find orders on the royal forests for so many pairs of chevrons. Mr. Flanché points out that in the earliest English examples of this ordinary, in the seal of Gilbert, Earl of Pembroke, in the reign of Stephen, the upper edge of the shield is pointed like a ridged roof, and the chevrons are parallel to it, and divide the



Caeclavrock latimer is described as bearing a cross patée, whereas the regular coat of the family was gules, a cross patace or. Wm. de Fortuna, before 1241: gules, a cross patace vair (fig. 48).

The cross floy or fleur-de-lis is copied in a similar way by fleurs-de-lis.

Lengthing of Lengthing: argent, a cross floy sable (fig. 49).  
Richard Savaut or Savard at Caerclavrock bore sable, a cross floy argent.

The cross moline is so called from the *fer de moline*, or millrind, the iron clamp of the upper millstone. When the millrind itself is borne it is pierced, but by the cross moline is not necessarily so. Its extremities are split, curved outwards, and cut off square. It is an early bearing. When pierced this must be specified.

See of Erastoy: gules, a cross moline argent.

Bartholomew of Sefton: azure, a cross moline quarter-pierced or (fig. 50).

The cross potent, potency, or crutch or gibbet headed, has its extremities T-shaped.

An early example is seen in the arms of Jerusalem, argent, a cross potent between four crosslets or (fig. 51). Originally, however, the arms of the cross ended in knobs like the handles of a pilgrim's staff, thence called "bourdoine."

The cross recordele has the ends split and curled outwards, but differs from the cross moline in having them pointed. The two bearings were occasionally confounded, and while the Baron Beaumont bore a cross moline, Bishop Antioch Bese, his brother, is described as bearing a cross recordele.

The cross voided is the outline only, called by the French "un croix faux;" the field is seen through it. This cross recordele is usually also voided.

The lords of Crocveur bore "d'or, une faux croix de gules, recordele" (fig. 52).  
Basing, temp. Edward III.: azure, a cross recordele and voided or.



The cross formée is peculiar among these varieties, inasmuch as its extremities reach the edge of the field. In other respects it resembles the cross patée.

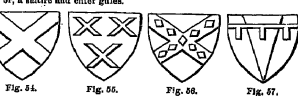
Lewsey of Spenshill: argent, a cross formée chequy, or and sable.

Among the other, later, and but little used varieties of the cross may be mentioned the avellane, ending in filbert hanks; the cross anchored, of which the limbs terminate in anchors; the cross of the crucifixion or of Calvary, mounted on steps. A cross with a narrow border of another colour is "fimbriated;" a cross pointed is where the ends are not out.

7. The *Saltire*, saltier, or saltior, is known as the cross of St Andrew, and is a common constituent in Scottish coats of arms. The origin is said to be a sort of stirrup or crossed loop suspended from the saddle by the stir of which the knight leaped into his seat. Such a stirrup certainly appears on the steed of Patrick, earl of March, on his seal, and on the seal of an early Despensier, and this is the only suggestion that accounts for the name. The saltire is in breadth one-third of the field.

The Scottish emblem is azure, a saltire argent; that of St Patrick, argent, a saltire gules. Now bear

"A saltire saltire upon marbled red,"  
that is, gules, a saltire argent (fig. 53).  
Balestrum: or, a saltire ensigned sable (fig. 54).  
Gage: party per saltire, argent and azure, a saltire gules (fig. 55).  
Gerville of Gathfronch: azure, three saltires humery or (fig. 56).  
Brace: or, a saltire and chief gules.



Common charges placed upon a horizontal or vertical ordinary, as a fess or chief or cross, are placed upright; if on an inclined ordinary, as a bend or saltire, their position should be specified; if upright, they are palewise; if inclined, bendwise or saltirewise. On the chevrons they are upright unless otherwise specified.

8. The *Pile*, pile, is a triangular strip, its base one-third of the breadth of the shield, and usually applied to its upper margin, the point coinciding with the lower point of the shield. It has been

derived from the Roman *pilum*, a military weapon, and from the *pila* of the engineer. The origin is obscure, but it is a very early bearing. It has no diminutive.

Sir John Chandos, as Froissart often tells us, bore "d'argent, un sceul de gules, un label d'azur" (fig. 57), and his ancestor Robert, temp. Henry III., bore or, on a pile gules three castles, between six of the same, counterchanged, an unusually complicated bearing for that age.

Waterhouse: or, a pile ensigned sable.

Frequently more piles than one were used, generally three, when they were to be blazoned as meeting in base.

Guillem: ermine, three piles sable meeting in base (fig. 58).

Hales: argent, three piles sable, one issuant from the chief between two from the base.

When the base of the pile is applied to any other part of the shield than the chief it must be specified. The pile was used by Henry VIII. as a vehicle for some of his grunts of augmentation.

9. The *Quarter* or franc-quarter covers the upper dexter quarter of the shield. If placed in the sinister quarter, this must be specified. Its distinctive is the *escanton*, of two-thirds its area. Both are early bearings, but in the roll of Henry III. the quarter appears in several coats which in later rolls are blazoned with the canton. Both are frequently charged.

When either occurs in conjunction with another ordinary or subsidiary, they are placed above it, and therefore blazoned after it, as further from the field. Both are used as early differences, as in the families of Zouch and Basset, and both are always borne with straight edges. A canton is also called a *crerar*, and a cross between a cross and a cross is said to be cantoned of them.

De Clare (old): or, a quarter gules (fig. 59).

Sibthorpe of Eastington: party of six or and azure, a quarter ermine.

Sutton of Sarwood: argent, a canton sable.

Samuel Clark, the martyrlogist: gules, a fleur-de-lis or, a canton ermine (fig. 60).



*Subordinaries Ordinaries.*—These are the border, the inescutcheon, the orle, the tressure, the fret, the gyron, the fesse, the lozenge, the fess, the mascle, the rustro, the roundel, gules or drops, the billet, and chequy.

The *border*, bordure, flimbria, or linbus, though a very old and independent bearing, was frequently used as a difference, and occasionally as a mark of illegitimacy. It is what its name expresses, and its breadth is one-fifth of the field. When used in an impaled coat the border is not continued round the inner side; in fact it is indented. In old examples this was not always attended to. In a quartered coat the border is borne complete.

Sir Perdreas d'Alenest, temp. Edward III.

"Who gaily shielded him his neck did sling,"  
"Wrought with coat bordure, after his liking,"  
bore "gules, a border indented argent."

Beaulieu: ermine, a border compound, or and sable (fig. 61).

Hamelin, illegitimate brother of Henry II., seems to have borne around his arms, on a border gules, eight lions passant or. This was before quartering came into use. The augmentation granted by Henry VIII. to Courtenay, marquess of Exeter, was a border quarterly of England and France, the fleurs-de-lis and lions enury, or in orle (fig. 62).



The *inescutcheon*, or cussen, is a small shield borne within and upon the greater one. It occurs in the earliest coats, and when voided becomes an orle.

Mentmore: Barry of 6 or and azure an inescutcheon argent, a chief of the first party of the second between two fesses of the same (fig. 63).

Rekley: ermine, an inescutcheon azure.

Allstree of Allstree: argent, a chief azure, on a bend gules three inescutcheons party per chief, vert and argent (fig. 64).

The arms of Marshall, Lord Hierles and earl of Northampton, afford a good example of this subsidiary. They are, argent, a single indented sable, beaked and membered gules, surmounted with an inescutcheon of the first, charged with a saltire of the second, surcharged with a bezelstone or for Jerusalem.

The *Orle* is the edge or hem, orisk, of the inescutcheon, voided, and is therefore blazoned by the French as a false inescutcheon.

Taken at a shot "The gentle" or "ung" furs, eschequer argent, that is, "gules, in salt argent" (fig. 65)

Warranted of "Nether" argent, an incuscheon voided, within an orb of mail (fig. 66)



Fig. 65



Fig. 66



Fig. 67



Fig. 68

The *Flour* is in fact a union of, almost always, borne double, and usually floured. It is a variant Scottish bearing, and is set with fleur-de-lis, placed alternately, the upper and the lower half on each side of the fess, when it is blazoned "fleur-counterfleur." This, in the Scottish royal arms, is said to denote the early alliance between that country and France. The bearing is, on, then rampant within a double tressure, fess counterfleur, gules (fig. 67). The tressure was a common grant of augmentation from the crown for services or in memory of an alliance. Scott of Thirlstane, but it from "fines" V, and bore of a bend argent, charged with a mullet point, between two quarters of the first, the whole within a double tressure, fleur counterfleur of the second—

"The tressure flus de lys is the charge to the shield"

The *Fist* was originally borne fretty, representing a fiddle. The angle fess is very late in ancient arms, but many of these families who at first bore fretty afterwards bore a fess. Fretty is usually composed of eight pieces

Maher, salt, netty, or, which soon became and continued sable, a fess or (fig. 69)

When nailed at the joints it is said to be clouded

Travel gules, a fess (fretty) clouded or

Baron of Sudbury, argent, a fess sable

The *Gyon*, also an old bearing, is the lower half of a quarter divided diagonally. It is a Spanish ordinary, and said to come from "guyon," a gully. It is common borne singly, and usually in gyronny, when the shield is divided per pale, per fess, per bend dexter, and per bend sinister into eight sections. If more, the number must be specified. In the earliest examples the divisions are twelve

Bevin, borne gyronny, argent, and sable (fig. 70)



Fig. 70



Fig. 71



Fig. 72



Fig. 73

The *Flaque*, or flaunch, is the segment of a circle taken out of the two sides or flanks of the shield, the margin of which forms the chief. They are always used in pairs, one on each side. This bearing is not of great age

The *Foules*, the diminutive of the flaque, has a flatter curve. The voids in defensive armor was a guard piece either of plate or of mail, used to cover a void or unprotected space at the elbow or knee joints

But gules, two pale faces between as many flanches or (fig. 71), blazoned in blanchette argent by Sir Housham Little, the arms he bore

When the letters were added to give some former descriptive of his arms to be placed at the head of a history of the family, his answer was—

"The flanches, on one side of gules, denote, by known heraldic rules, a race contented and abject, in mediocrity armed, by their pale faces, showing, by their chief, civil and military, by well judged patches and matches, in a fine condition and dexterity. Such was the life our fathers led, which homely life on, deep intellect in our whole moral composition, continues us to a like condition"

The lozenges, the mascles, and the rustles are all derived from the fess or fretty, and do not appear originally to have been used singly

The *Lozenge* is a square, set up diagonally like the diamond in playing cards. It is seldom used alone, and when the shield is covered with it, it is called lozengey

Thus fill the lozengey, argent and gules (fig. 72)

De Bouch, gules, borne lozengey with compound 3, 3

The *Mascul*, or author masculy, for originally it was so used, is said to represent a net

Rele of Suffolk, mascly, gules and argent

Lozes of Stal, argent, mascly, gules and gules

De Quincy, earl of Winchester, "gules, six mascles d'or, voyez, du champ," and the whole, gules, seven m'les or, ensigned 3, 3 (fig. 73)

The *Rustle* is of later introduction, and is not a common bearing. It is a lozenge placed in its centre by a round hole

Canstane, or, a rustle sable (fig. 74)



Fig. 74



Fig. 75



Fig. 76

The *Furze* is an elongated lozenge, from the branch of a spindle, and is supposed to represent a distaff charged with yarn. A very early example of its use is

Montacute, "argent, an axe upon a furze distaff, the handle of the axe, which is the handle, argent, three distaffs charged in fess gules" (fig. 75)

With an of Wyndale and William Paton, family, argent, sable, a furze or (fig. 76)

It has been suggested that the Percys derived their furze from their lordship of Spindilator

Rele of Trufus, argent, a chevron between three spindles, sable



Fig. 77



Fig. 78



Fig. 79

The *Roundel*, if of metal, is a simple disk, if of colour, it is convex, but a globe. It is seldom borne singly, and is named

specifically from its colour

If Or, a Rose  
If Argent, a Rose  
If Azure, a Rose  
If Gules, a Rose  
If Sable, a Rose  
If Argent, a Rose  
If Azure, a Rose  
If Gules, a Rose  
If Sable, a Rose

The last four are almost unknown in English heraldry. As to these is the fountain, a disk, borel wavy, argent and sable, to represent water. Although in arms, plates, banners, and locations we given in early rolls of arms, that names do not always carry their colours. They are blazoned as rounds d'or, plates d'argent, towers d'or. The tower is sometimes called a vase. The pullet often stands for the round, and the beam is called a talent, from a coin of that name current with the beaunt in the East

Alan is a Touch, Gules, beaunt. This was after his return to his beaunt, a tal, with a guile and some times a cant of Beifame, that is, "cuisse" (fig. 77)

Canney, or, on a chief gules three plates (fig. 78)

Wellesley, gules, a rose argent between twenty plates 5, 5, 5, 5

Revelation of old Whittington, argent, a chevron between nine harts (fig. 79)

Hinting, argent, ten harts, 4, 2, 1

Continous, or, three towers d'or

Robinson, argent, ten towers, 4, 2, 1, a label argent (fig. 79)

Allyn, salt, on a chief between twelve plates argent three golpes d'argent, towers d'or

Bridge man, argent, ten towers, on a chief a lion rampant of the second

Situation of blanchet, sable, a bend on between three fountain (fig. 81)



Fig. 80



Fig. 81



Fig. 82

In early times the annulet is blazoned as a false roundel, thus Vipont is said to bear gules, six false roundels

Guile or daisy are represented by a round shaped with a tul like a Rapet's heart, on the tower on funeral disparities. They are not found in the earliest coats. They, like roundels, are named from their colour, thus or—gutté d'or, gules—gutté d'argent, argent—gutté d'azur, sable—gutté de pour, argent—gutté de laimes, a cut—gutté d'huile

Moley, argent, a cross sable gules d'or

Whitebottom, argent, gules, d'azur

Alington, argent, gules, d'azur, on a chief azur three lions passant guardant

Alington, argent, gules, d'azur, on a chief azur three lions passant guardant

Alington, argent, gules, d'azur, on a chief azur three lions passant guardant

Alington, argent, gules, d'azur, on a chief azur three lions passant guardant

Alington, argent, gules, d'azur, on a chief azur three lions passant guardant



Somewhat akin to these subordinates is a division of the field known as *chequy*, where the field is divided into small squares like a chess-board. Their number is not specified, but usually is made up of seven squares in a line, and in depth according to the length of the shield. Hugh, earl of Vermandois, is said to have borne chequy; or and azure, and as his daughter married Warren, it is possible that the earls of Surrey thence derived their well-known coat.

Warren: chequy, or and azure (fig. 85).

Tatesall: chequy, or and gules, a chief ermine.



Fig. 82.



Fig. 83.



Fig. 84.

Chequy was not confined to the field, but was also applied to the charges upon it.

Stuart: or, a fess chequy, argent and azure.

Where there is but one row of squares, the bearing is called *gobony* or *compony*, if of two rows, *counter-compony*.

Gier: Barry of six, argent and azure, a bend compony of the first and gules (fig. 84).

The Roy: gules, a border quarterly, ermine and counter-compony, or and azure.

### Common Charges.

Next to the purely heraldic figures connected with the shield and their diminutives and subordinates, come those imported into heraldry as charges from all quarters, including an immense variety of objects, natural and artificial, beasts, birds, fishes, reptiles and insects, flowers, and the fruits of the field, chimerae, astronomical and celestial figures, man and his parts, arms and armour, implements of war and the chase, ships, articles of dress, and a miscellaneous budget far too heavy to enumerate.

The rules for the placing of these charges are simple. If single, they stand in the centre of the shield; if two, in pale, or one over the other; if three, 2 and 1; if the number is longer the order must be specified (see fig. 86). The French carry the unexpressed understanding much further. With them, four pieces are placed 3 and 2; five pieces, in saltire; six are 3, 2, 1; seven are 3, 1, 1; eight are in orle; and nine are 3, 3, 3.

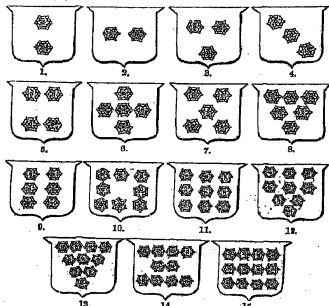


FIG. 86.—Different arrangements of charges upon a shield:—(1) 3 roses; (2) 3 roses in fess; (3) 3 roses in bend; (4) 3 roses, 2 and 1; (5) 6 roses in orle; (6) 6 roses in saltire; (7) 6 roses, 3, 2, 1; (8) 6 roses, 2, 2, 2; (9) 6 roses, 3, 2, 1; (10) 6 roses, 3, 2, 1; (11) 6 roses, 3, 2, 1; (12) 6 roses, 3, 2, 1; (13) 6 roses, 3, 2, 1; (14) 6 roses, 3, 2, 1; (15) 6 roses, 3, 2, 1.

### ANIMALS.

The following rules are applicable to the blazoning of animals. Generally, unless otherwise specified, they are shown in profile,

looking towards the dexter side; when to the sinister, the word counter is prefixed, "a lion counter-passant." Animals back to back are "addorsed"; face to face, "confronted"; facing the spectator, "guardant," or "affronted"; looking up, "reguardant"; when rising out of the edge of an ordinary, "issuant"; when out of the middle of it, "naissant." When the claws, horns, tongues, hoofs, or manes are shown of a special colour, the animal is "armed," "corneled," "lingued," or "langued," "augured," or "ermined." Sometimes he is crowned, royally or ducally, sometimes "collared," "gorgeled," or "accolled." When wounded he is "vulned."

When of its natural colour an animal is "proper," but if any be of any metal, colour, or fur, and tinctured by any previous lines, "When a head or member is torn off it is "erased." When cut off "couped." When men are clothed, they are "habited"; when nude, they are "salvage."

QUADRUPLES.—Of these the *Lion* is by far the most popular, nor is his popularity confined to England. He appears not only in the British arms, but in those of Spain, Holland, Denmark, Bohemia, and Saxony, and many lesser states. Of Edward II.'s 616 banners, 225 bear lions in some form or other. The favourite attitude is rampant, but he may be passant, salient, passant, sejant, couchant, or dormant. About thirty varieties of attitude are enumerated by writers; but most are rarely if ever used, and indeed it is seldom the lion is shown other than rampant or passant. Sometimes he is borne "demi," especially as a crest. His pawes or janets are also borne, and his tail. In one or two well-known instances on the Continent he is "addorsed," that is, his head and jaws, and the tuft of his tail are cut off. When a member is borne upright, it is "erected." As a set off to this dismemberment, in early rolls the lion is sometimes represented as two-tailed, or "queue fourché," and there are examples of bi- and tri-corporate and tri-corporate lions. When above three lions are shown, they become *lionsels* or *lions*, whelps, unless otherwise specified.

It has been shown that as early as 1127 Henry I. used the lion as an ornament upon the shield he gave to his son-in-law, who bore those animals upon his brocade, as did the early French kings the fleur-de-lys. Mr. Planche has investigated this early use of the lion by Henry with great accuracy. A prophecy of Merlin, held to apply to that king, designated him as the Lion of Justice; his favourite residence and death-place was in the forest of Leon or Lyons in Normandy; his wife Adeliza was a daughter of Godfrey, duke of Louvain or Löwen, a name which certainly gave rise to the lion as the arms of that family.

William, earl of Gloucester, Henry's grandson, sealed with a lion. Richard de Redvers, earl of Devon, who married a granddaughter of Henry, also bore a lion, as did Ranulph, earl of Chester, who married another grandchild. Willina d'Almain who married Henry's widow, used the same animal. All this occurred at a period when armorial bearings were by no means an established institution, and when every great noble was taking it up, and quite open to assume a bearing. On the whole, therefore, it seems probable that to Henry I. was due the introduction of the lion into English heraldry. It has been seen that under Richard I. and John the lion became the settled arms of England, and this will account for the general adoption of the royal beast in English coats of arms. In heraldry a "lion passant gardant" or "is always blazoned as "a lion of England."

The identity of the lion of England with the leopard has been the subject of much controversy, and when Napoleon talked of driving the leopards into the sea he evidently used the word in disparagement of our national bearing. The early heralds, who probably were not zoologists, seemed to have confounded the lion with the leopard, and to have used the names according to the attitude of the animal. When rampant he was a lion, when in any other attitude, as passant, he was *leo-pardé* or a *lion-leopard*, but never drawn spotted like a real leopard. As the lion came more generally into use, and was borne in various attitudes, the allusion to the leopard was gradually dropped, though as late as the reign of Edward III. and Richard II. the royal crest was described as a leopard, and Henry V. had a Leopard herald. Among the greater barons of the 13th and 14th century, the lion was borne by the earls of Arundel, Cornwall, Devon, Hereford, Leicester, Lincoln, the Earl Marshal and the earls of Salisbury, as well as by several of the lesser barons or knights. Sir Tristram, the knight of Itonwee, bore a lion when

"Mourning with his might,  
"With a lance unshaken,  
He smote him in the lion."



Fig. 86.



Fig. 87.



Fig. 88.



Fig. 89.

Lewis of Limesham and Cromwell their coat bore and bear still, a lion rampant argent, bearing his shield by their crests, the Lewises of Chesneyville, who migrated above two centuries ago.





put unum could lawfully keep a "game" of swans. The keeper who looked after them was the "gamester."

Phalaris of Sicily, a head engraved between two eagles royal crest, is charged on her crest with a swan, head and neck proper.

The *Tringa*, prong, is more common as a crest than in the shield. He is usually represented with his tail spread, and is then blazoned as a "peacock in his pride," as seen in the crest of Manners.

Perms argent, three peacocks in their proper poses.

Yeo of Devon, a pale argent, a chevron sable between three *Turkey Cocks*, tails expanded, proper.

The *Alouin* is the most common as a crest than in arms. When in profile, she is usually holding herself, and when full faced on her head, holding her comb. She is a "peacock in her pride."

Crest of New, gulls, a pelican in her piety, or (see 109).

Pelham argent, three pelicans valuing themselves proper.

The *Ostrich* is the better known as a crest, as borne by Digby, or as a supporter by the earls of Buchan. The plume of ostrich feathers, the well known cognizance of the Black Prince, gave rise to the arms of his maternal son, Sir Roger Chandless, who bore or, on a bend sable, three ostrich feathers argent, passing through as many scutels of the field.

Devie of Devon, argent, six ostriches feathers, 3, 2, 1, white.

The *Stork*

Stark of Humber, argent, a hand between two storks, sable.

The *Heard* is one of the few birds found in early coats of arms. Eton of Chipping, a red eagle in the tail of the lion. One of the family was the friend of St. William.

Winged of light, etc. "Tame"

at the court of James IV. they bore a gules, three herons argent.

The *Coronant*, or lion, appears with a double paw in the arms of Lorraine, argent, a lion sable, billed and legged gules, holding in his paw a bunch of lions vert.

The *Skeldine*, or lion, was introduced into heraldry by Sir Skeldine, mayor of London in 1678, who bore a chevron, a lion between two lions, his crest argent.

The *Leopard*, or lion, has been the bearing of Coibet from the beginning of heraldry.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

Coibet of Moston, argent, a lion, sable.

though this is not always expressed, when bent they are "embowed" is the dolphin in the crest of Countess.

The *Pike*, or hake, is the oldest example of a fish in heraldry. Lady of Gloucester, Shakespeare's "James Shallow" gules, embowed argent, a pike passant guardant (see 110).

The *Dolphin*, which in his zoological position may be, is heraldically a fish, as is also the *Walrus*. As the emblem of Dolphins, the dolphin was adopted with the name by the heralds of the old French monarchy, who quarrelled with the fishermen by virtue of a dolphin passant guardant.

Phalaris of Sicily, gules, a dolphin passant guardant embowed argent, a dolphin passant guardant.

Dean Swift says that his cousin Thomas Swift gave for his device a swif or dolphin twisted about an anchor with the motto "Hoc in lento." This, however, is the device of the painter Alden.

Woolley of Willey, argent, three whales, heads covered mantle sable.

The *Boat* was the earliest bearing, used by the counts of Bar, who bore argent, crumby sail, two barbed, erect embowed or, within a border engrailed gules, a bearing found in the quarrels of many German princes.

The *Harpor* occurs in the roll of Edward II.

Harpor, gules, three harpings argent argent.

The mayor of London, Norfolk, is upheld by the service of presenting annually at the exchequer certain herring pike.

Reuch—Peter de Rupibus or Des Roches, bishop of Winchester, bore three roaches.

Conger—Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, bore argent, a conger's head erect or.

Tout

Tout, argent, three heads fitted in a single argent.

The *Char*, a sort of gurnet, was used as a badge by the family of Bolton, Cheshire.

The *Scallop*, or oyster shell, is an old and popular charge, especially in Spain, as the emblem of St. James of Compostela, which led to its being the sign of a pilgrim. The seal of the fraternity of St. James at Walsby (about 1200) represents St. James as a pilgrim with a scallop upon his scap. Sir Walter Raleigh says—

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

"I like my scallop shell of gold,"

The dragon was a favourite standard with the Welsh princes, and used also by the Anglo-Norman sovereigns. He is drawn with four legs and wings, a long barbed tail usually knotted, and a body protected by scales. In English heraldry he is used chiefly as a crest. In Wales, Rhys Ap Tudor Mawr is said to have borne "argent, a dragon passant sable."

The *Gryphon* is popular both in romance and heraldry. He is an emblem of vigilance, and inhabited a mountain in Bactria and guarded much gold there. It was in defence of this that he "through the wilderness

Pursued the Arimasian."

He is drawn with the body and tail of a lion, the head of a cock, a pair of wings, and very long sharp claws. When on his hind legs he is rampant.

Murges of Tredegar; or, a gryphon argent sable (fig. 119).  
Reynia of Wotton; azure, a gryphon passant and a chief or.  
Cotton of Landwade; sable, a chevron between three gryphons' heads erased argent.

The gryphon was an early cognizance of Rodgers, earl of Devon, and was used stoutly by some branches of the Montagues in the time of Henry III.

The *Wyvern* is a two-legged dragon with the body passing off into a long tail barbed at the end and usually borne naked or knotted.  
Drake; argent, a wyvern statant, tail depressed and novered, gules (fig. 119).

#### Cockatrice.

Langley; argent, a cockatrice sable, combed gules.

The *Owls*, or *Hoarns* abounds in Scottish heraldry, and was made the sinister supporter of the arms of Great Britain by James I.

"Ceste merveilleuse beste,  
Qui une corne en sa teste  
Sente nostre seigneur.  
Iuant Ours nostre seigneur.  
C'est l'ensemble seigneur.  
Qui entre la vierge prait ouel."

Hasting; argent, a unicorn sejant sable, armed and unguled or.

#### The Minerva.

Ellis; argent, a mermaid gules, erised or, in her right hand a comb, in her left a mirror, argent.

The *Mermaid*, or *merlette*, a small bird without legs, and always represented close. It is one of the oldest and commonest of charges, but seldom if ever borne singly (see Fleetwood, fig. 12).

Furnival of Warham Royal; argent, a bend between six mermaid gules.  
Roger de Mortier, roll of Henry III.; barry of ten, argent and gules, on a border azure eight mermaid.

**FLOWERS AND FRUIT OF THE EARTH.**—Of these the palm was an emblem of victory; the laurel, of triumph; the oak, of strength; the olive, of peace; the cypress, of woe; the vine, of fecundity and joy; the lily, of purity; the daisy, of humility; while the holy

"Trofoil, St John's wort, and gill  
Hinder wickets of their will."

*Flour-de-lis*.—At the head of heraldic flowers, if flower indeed it be, is the *flour-de-lis* (fig. 60), the *Flos gladioli* of Upton, said to have been brought down by an angel for the arms of France, and was certainly used by Louis VII. and borne singly and in numbers by Philip Augustus. It may be allied to the lily—

"The lily, lady of the flowery field,  
Or four-de-lis, her lovely banner."

or its original designation may have been "Flour de Louis." It was not at first popular either in Normandy or in England, occurring but twice in the roll of Henry III., and only twenty times in that of Edward II., nor was it until its assumption by Edward III., that it came into general use in England. The Cantillines bore three flour-de-lis before they added the pearl's head (fig. 98).

Dietz of Colsholtz; azure, a flour-de-lis argent.  
Perrin of Orghard-Perrin; or, a flour-de-lis azure.  
Beaumont, to show his claim to descent from the blood-royal of France, bears azure, a fleur-de-lis argent, a lion rampant or.  
Harrist; argent, an azalee sable, a flour-de-lis argent.  
New College, Oxford; sable, three lilies slipped argent.

The *Rose* (*Ros florum*) is a very popular charge in English heraldry, though in the roll of Henry III. it occurs but once, and in that of Edward II. it is twice. Usually the flower is borne alone and full-fledged, with five petals, and in the seeds between them. If a stalk is shown, it is usually "slipped," that is, cut off obliquely.

Beaumont of Beaumont-Rose; ermine, a rose gules, barbed and seeded proper (fig. 114).  
Ellis, blazon of Wyke-Rose; azure, a rose and pomegranate impaled dimidiated, gules and or, barbed, seeded, stalked, and slipped counterchanged.

The rose is also used in the chaplet, a favourite head ornament of which a good example may be seen upon the conical helmet of Humphrey de Bohun, 7th, in Gloucester cathedral. After the gallant defence of Calais in 1557, in which Edward and the Black Prince served under Sir Walter Manny, the king was so pleased with the liberty shown by his prisoner Eustace de Ribemont that he took a chaplet from the king's head and gave it to Sir Eustace with his liberty, bidding him "wait for a year for the love of me." Grey-Rose; barry of six, argent and azure, three chaplets gules.

The *Trofoil*, *Quarterfoil*, *Cinqufoil*, and *Sixfoil* are all common charges, usually but not always borne, like the rose, without a stalk.

Harvey of Tewkesbury; gules, on a bend argent three trefoils slipped vert.  
Viscount of Broke D'Abernon; azure, three cinquefoils argent (fig. 115).  
Robert de Ballmoat, earl of Leicester (1191-1220), sealed with a cinquefoil, bearing on each foot a cinquefoil; and Robert de Quincy, the son of one of Earl Robert's sisters, bore "de gules une quaterfoil de hermyne." Unfamiliar of Denmark; gules, a sixfoil or.



Fig. 115.



Fig. 117.

The *Thistle*, which gives name to the Scottish order, is also an heraldic bearing in that country.

Leaves, foliage, are borne by Leveson and Foulis; hazel leaves by Hazlegrave of Noctley; strawbaw leaves, or fescue, by Fraser of Lovat; walnut leaves by Waller; oak leaves by Oakes; by Elmes of Liford, elm leaves; rye and barley or grain by Ilye and Crumlogh. Highland bears three oak of big.  
Wood and Borough bear three rooted up or eradicated.  
Borough of Chelmsley; gules, the stem and trunk of a tree eradicated and couped, spreading in two branches argent.

When Queen Elizabeth visited Worcester the citizens transplanted a pear tree laden with fruit into the market-place, for which attention she added pears to the city arms. Warden abbey, Beds, was famous for a pear that bore its name and constituted the arms—azure, three Warden pears or. The kingdom of Ormskirk bore argent, a pomegranate slipped proper. Serjeant baron argent, a saltire sable between twelve cherries slipped gules.

The *Garb*, or *sheaf*, was a common bearing, especially in Cheshire. Sometimes the garb is banded of a different colour.

Grosvenor; azure, a garb or.

Vernon of Shipbrook; or, on a fess three gules of the field.

**CELESTIAL FIGURES.**—The *Sun* was the cognizance of Louis XIV., with the overbearing motto, "Nec pluribus impar." In heraldry this was blazoned as "the sun in his splendour."

John de la Hay bore argent, the sun in his splendour gules.  
Baptist de la Hay temp. Henry II., differentiated this coat by bearing only a ray of the sun, "blanc, une ray de soleil de gules."  
Sir John de la Hay, temp. Edward III.; azure, a ray of the sun or. In both examples the ray comes from the dexter chief, and is borne bendwise. It is called a *pile ray*.

John de Fenbith, bishop of Ely, 1290-24, bore the sun, moon, and seven stars, 2, 1, 1, 1, 1.

The *Moon* is always borne as a crescent, and usually with the concavity upwards. If this be to the dexter it is *increcent*, if to the sinister, *decrecent*. It is an early and general charge, though seldom borne singly.

Chapman; per chevron argent and gules,

a crescent counterchanged.

Weld; azure, a fess nebulae between

three crescents ermine.

Baron of Cox, Lincoln; azure, a chief

two moons increcent and decrecent

argent in base an estoile or.

The seal of St. Lawrence of Blackrocks,

1824, bears a chevron between three

crescents (fig. 116).

The *Star*, or *estole*, is usually shown with six rays, wavy, and is thus, and by not being pierced, distinguished from the mullet. If there be more rays the number must be given.

Ingilly of Ripley; sable, an azule

argent.

One of the branches of De la Hay bore

argent, an estoile of sixteen rays gules.

Sir Francis Drake, in memory of his

voyages, bore nine stars wavy between

the ermine and an ermine pale

stars argent.

**MAN AND HIS PARTS.**—The full

human figure in very rare, borne

in coats of arms. In Scotland the

DeMulle bar sable, a naked man

with arms extended, proper; formerly he

was borne suspended from a

gibbet.

Wood; azure, three salvages men

ambulant in fess, proper; in their dexter hands

a shield argent charged with a cross gules, in their sinister a cross resting on

their shoulders, also proper.

Mr Wray mentions an MS. at Malton, in which two knights are

represented tilting before a French princess, one of whom bears for a

coat three damoiselles aged in a basket.

Garnet of Foxcote; argent, three blackmoors' heads couped sable, eared or

frizzy gules.



Fig. 116.



score and proclaimed it, with a valuable ruby, as a prize to be contended for. He saved himself won it, and the lady wore it for his sake. Fig. 123 is from the seal of John de Hastings, 1201.

The *Butterfly-rain* is borne by the Bertles, earls of Lindsey, sometime dukes of Ancaster, with the allusive motto, "Virtus alicui fortior" (fig. 122).

The *Escarbuncle* was a very early bearing of the Manbyvilles. It is a cross of eight rays, set with knolls and the cross ending in fleurs-de-lis. In another form the ends are connected by cross-bars. The escarbuncle of the reign of Henry III. resembles the iron work on doors of this period.

Mount of Bitten: argent, two bars azure, over all an escarbuncle of eight rays gules, fleurety and pommette or.

Among musical instruments the *Clarion* is borne by Granville, and is seen on tiles at South abbey. It resembles a pan-pipe. The *Trumpet* is seen on the fine Trumpington brass near Cambridge.

Williams of Thame: saur, two organ pipes saltirewise, the dexter over the sinister, between four mullets argent.

The *Water Budget* or bucket is an early charge identified with the names of Ros and Rose. Ros, however, got it from the Trustees of Belvoir, who possibly bore it as lords of Watre in Holderness. Mr Planché has discovered a drawing of a pair of water budgets in actual use. They were of leather, and carried in pairs on a stick over the shoulder.



Fig. 123.

#### DEBASED HERALDRY.

Of debased heraldry there is no lack of examples, and a few are ancient. Thomas de Insula, bishop of Ely (1345-81), bore gules, three bezants, on each a crowned king, robed sable, doubled ermine, sustaining a covered cup in his right hand and a sword in his left, both or. No doubt, like the arms of the sees of Clchester and Salisbury, this extraordinary coat was meant to be painted on a banner. Camden granted a great number of coats, mostly of a complex character, and since his time heraldic taste has not improved. Tetlow (granted 1760) bore "on a book erect gules, clasped and leaved or, a silver penny argent, thereon written the Lord's Prayer; at the top of the book a dove proper, in his beak a crowquill pen sable." Other grantees show negroes working in a plantation, Chinese porters carrying cinnamon, &c. The grants to Lord Nelson and his gallant captives, and to sister Herschel, are utterly unheraldic. It can scarcely be wondered at that Lord Chesterfield, correcting the Garter of his day, remarked, "You foolish man, you don't understand your own foolish business."

#### DIFFERENCES AND MARKS OF CADENCY.

The object of an armorial bearing having been to distinguish one iron-shaated warrior from another, it was necessary to provide bearings for the members of a family, all entitled to take the paternal coat. This was managed by the introduction of a difference (French, *brisure*), usually some slight but well-marked alteration, sometimes by inverting the tinctures, sometimes by changing an ordinary or a smaller charge, as a bend for a fess, or a crosslet for a martlet. Where an heiress had been married a part of her coat was often introduced. The object was with a sufficient difference to show the connexion with the head of the house. The following examples are from the families of Hastings and Zouch. Females, who wore no armour, did not need distinguishing marks, and bore the coat unbroken.

Sir John Hastings bore (see fig. 123) or, a martlet gules, called "le chien armé."

Sir William Hastings bore the same, with a label of Pembroke.

Sir John Hastings bore the same, with a border of Valencia.

Sir Edmund Hastings bore the same, with a label vert.

Sir Nicholas Hastings bore the same, with a label azure.

Sir Miles Hastings bore or, a fess and a chief, three mullets gules.

Sir Philip Hastings bore the same, with a label azure.

Sir Robert Hastings bore ermine on a chief azure, three mullets or.

The label of Pembroke and border of Valencia show the match with the heiress of Valencia, earl of Pembroke. Sir Miles formed a distinct branch, that of Daylesford, probably before armorial bearings were fixed; his descendants, however, returned to the main line.

Sir Alan la Zouch bore gules, bezanty.

Sir William la Zouch bore the same, with a quarter ermine.

Sir William la Zouch bore the same, with a label azure.

Sir Oliver la Zouch bore the same, with a chevron ermine.

Sir Amory la Zouch bore the same, with a bend argent.

Sir Thomas la Zouch bore the same, on a quarter argent a mullet sable.

The quarter ermine is to show the descent from the dukes of Brittany.

Those and many others of an early date are suitable for their purpose; but, as armorial bearings became less actually useful, alterations of a different character crept in. The label, however, retained its place. It closely resembles the strap with pendants which from the saddle crossed the horse's chest. The earliest example of its use is said to be by Geoffrey, son of Henry II., in 1153, but a more certain case is the seal of Salher de Quincy, though whether there borne as a charge or as a difference is uncertain. At Caslebroock Maurice de Berkeley bore a blue label "parque que per se voit." In Scotland William Fraser, in 1295, used a label of three points and on each three roses or mullets, probably meant for "fraises" or strawberry leaves. The mullet, crescent, and fleur-de-lis are used as differences about the same time. The label, even then, was most frequently used by the eldest son, but occasionally he used the crescent, and the label was taken by the second son. The royal house generally used the label, but occasionally the border. Edward I., as prince, bore a label of five points azure; Edmund Crouchback his brother, who married a French princess, charged the label with fleurs-de-lis. His second son, Henry, bore England with a bendlet ermine. Thomas and Edward, second and third sons of Edward I., used labels. Edward IV., as prince, bore on his great seal a label of three, and on his countersal one of five points. John of Eltham, his brother, bore England with a border of France. The Black Prince, who bore France and England quarterly, added a label argent, and Richard, during his father's life, placed a cross of St George on the middle point. Lionel, third son of Edward III., having married the heiress of De Clare and De Burgh, used a label and on each point a canton gules, said to be the original arms of De Clare, and on his seal as earl of Ulster each point bore a cross for De Burgh. The number of points was matter of indifference, though usually confined to three. The label itself was, on the whole, and has continued to be, a mark for all the princes of the royal house.

Setting aside the royal family, a new system of differences came into use, and is touched upon by Upton early in the 15th century, though then but imperfect. It gives the crescent to the eldest son, and to the others the label with three or more points in succession. Dame Berners, in 1486, besides employing the billet, crosslet, and other marks, describes a method of differing by "gorrattung," that is, powdering the field with billets or other charges, but the good lady's coats are often mere fancies. The first regular appearance of the modern system is on the effigies of seven Beauchamp cadets in St Mary's windows at Warwick. There the label, annulet, crescent, martlet, fleur-de-lis, and mullet indicate the several cadets. The label is placed in chief, the rest on the fess point of each surcoat.

The modern marks now regularly admitted are—(1) the label of three points; (2) the crescent; (3) the mullet; (4) the martlet; (5) the annulet; (6) the fleur-de-lis; (7) the

rose, (8) the cross moline, (9) the octofoil (fig 124). The elder son of the elder son places a label upon a label, the second a crescent, and so on, so that the ninth son of a ninth son would bear an octofoil upon an octofoil, pointing out the relationship of each member to the parent stock. Practically, however, marks of cadency are but seldom

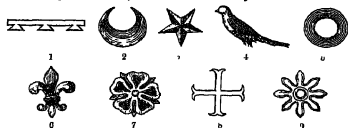


FIG. 124.—Mail of Cadency

used. The ems of Harrington indeed, descending from the second son of a second son, place a crescent upon a crescent. Lords Abingvony and Baybrooke difference their Neville saltire with a rose, as springing from the seventh son of Ralph, earl of Westmorland. On the other hand Lord Derby, though in cadet, bears his arms unbroken. *Arms of Harrington* are very various, and on the cadets could not be distinguished from differences. Probably the earliest English example is afforded by Wm Long-ue, natural son of Henry II, who bore six hooncks, no doubt derived from his father, though usually attributed to his wife Ela, heiress of the earldom of Salisbury. His countess bears the long sword whence he derived his name. The sons of Richard, brother of Henry III, bore their father's lion of Poitou, inverting the colours, until Sir Geoffrey Cornwall took prisoner the duke of Brittany, when he changed his field to ermine. In the roll of Edward II, Sir John Lovel is bastard hose Lovel, usually on and gules, with "an label d'azur." Sir Roger Clarendon, son of the Black Prince, has already been mentioned (page 701). John Beaufort, son of John of Gaunt, bore pale argent and azure on a bend gules three lions of England, with his father's label. After his semi-legitimation he bore England with a bendi gonny argent and azure, the Lancaster colours. Arthur, Viscount Lisle, son of Edward IV, placed a baton over his father's arms. Sometimes the father's coat was altered. Sir John Stanley bore a coat compounded of Stanley and Lathom. Sometimes a baton sinister was added, sometimes a bordure. Strictly a natural son does not adopt his father's quarterings, unless such as are habitually borne conjoined, as the royal arms. The descendants of Charles II bear the whole arms with a baton sinister on border, those of William IV the label. With the house of Bourbon the baton marked the cadets, the baton sinister the bastards. Sir Gilbert Talbot (1569), son of a bastard son of Sir Gilbert Talbot, was allowed Talbot and the usual five quarterings of the family, with a bend sinister over the whole, but this is unusual.

#### RULES OF BLAZON

To blazon a coat of arms is to describe it in the technical language of heraldry, and, although the works of the fathers of heraldic lore contain much irrelevant matter, and some confusion of arrangement, the rules of blazon, by whomsoever devised or perfected, are remarkable for their precision, brevity, and completeness. Great and successful one has been taken to produce clear and simple order, to avoid repetition, and to preserve a certain uniformity of arrangement through much complexity of detail. The technicalities arise in great measure from the use of terms once well known, and the language, as was to be expected, shows traces of the French and Franco-Norman channels through which the "gentle art" reached England.

First comes the description of the field, its colour, or the arrangement of the colours (if more than one), and the character of the partition lines when parted. Thus the "parma inglorius alba" would be blazoned "he beareth argent." The coat of Walgrave is *per pale argent and gules*, that of D'Ebouens, earl of Gloucester, was "per pale dancette argent and gules."

Next follow the charges, and first those of most importance and nearest the field, their name, number, and position (if an animal, its attitude), and finally the colour. The principal charge is that which occupies the principal position. Thus Beekhouse of Kellet bore *paity per saltire, azure and or, a saltire ermine, a lion of England, azure, two ears of hagg or*. Where the principal charge is an ordinary placed between smaller charges, it follows the field. Foliot, —or, a fess between two chevrons gules. The same rule holds where the ordinary is charged, as in Bantlaw of High Wyke, —gules, on a chevron argent three cross crosslets fitchy, or, when the two are conjoined, as Keil of Cessford, —vnt, upon a chevron between three unicorns' heads erased argent, hooned and eined or, as many mullets sable. Where the ordinary may be charged, but does not admit of being placed between charges, it is blazoned thus. Russel, —argent, a lion rampant gules, on a chief sable three callows of the field. If the field be some of figures (*e.g.* bespoken with them in regular order) they follow it. Ponsopont, —argent, semée of anquefoils gules, a lion rampant sable. Had the anquefoils been on the lion instead of on the field the blazon would have run, argent a lion rampant sable, semée of anquefoils gules.

The arrangement of common charges has already been explained (page 698, fig 85) —if one, central, if two, pale, if three, 2 and 1, if more, as must be specified, as in Babbington (fig 9). Such diminutives as *as borne in pairs* follow their ordinary. Cludiva, —argent, a bend between four crosses sable. To avoid repetition, if a charge occurs twice reference is made to the first. Scott of Abbotsford, —or, two mullets in chief and a crescent in fess, azure, within an orle of the last, and so if the same number of charges occurs twice, the words "as many" are used. Maling of Seaborough, —ermine, on a chevron vert between three hawks' jesses as many isses argent. Upton, who wrote in Latin, is put to strange shifts to express his meaning. He thus blazes the arms of Mortimer (fig 63) —

"Portant arma barit, et erant scut palatium et et angulum de azuro bino, cum quodam serpe simplici et et angulo hauriente flammam et, "Il portoit entre un chef pale, cunetes d'azur et d'or, et ung asu simple d'argent."

The following, from Menestrier, is the full blazon of the arms of the old kings of France —

D'azur a trois fleurs de lys d'or 2 and 1. Escu timbré d'un casque surmonté d'un pinces de front, surmonté de ses lambrequins d'or et d'azur, couronné de la couronne impériale Française, entouré des colliers des ordres du St Esprit et St Michel, soutenu par deux anges vêtus en Levites, la dextérité des deux de l'esu tenant chacun un bannier de France, le tout placé sous un grand pavillon d'azur fleurdelys d'or double d'armes, le cimble rayonné d'or et couronné de la couronne impériale Française. Le dit pavillon attaché à la hampe ou oriflamme du Royaume. Chacun des deux, "Montagne St Denis." Devise, "Lion non laborant neque micat," alluding to the operation of the Sable law.

#### MARSHALLING ARMS.

Marshalling is the disposing or arranging of such coats of arms as have to be included in one shield. Blazoning deals with the particulars of each coat, marshalling with its position as regards other coats. Arms may be arranged *per pale* or *impaled*, or the shield may be divided into as many squares as may be required, when it is said to be *quartered*. The first coat, that of the bearer, may or may not be repeated in the last quarter as may be required to make up an even number of squares, which, though not necessary, is desirable.



For a time armorial bearings were purely personal, and intended to supply a want only felt by the wearer of armour. Hence, at first, females do not seem to have used them, and when a place was found for them on armorial seals, the coat was regarded as that of their father, and therefore not differentiated. For a time they seem to have had a separate shield. On one of the seals of Margaret of France, queen of Edward I., his three lions are displayed upon the point of her tunic, and on her right hand is a shield of France, on her left, one with a lion rampant. On the reverse is a shield of England, and around it, outside, a border of France. Margaret Bruce of Skelton married Robert de Ros. Her seal (1280) bears her effigy, somewhat defaced, so that nothing can be distinguished on her dress, but on her right is a shield of Ros, on her left, one of Bruce.

A well-known seal, date about 1347, is that of Joan, daughter of Henry count of Bar, by Eleanor daughter of Edward I. by Eleanor of Castile. Joan was widow of Warren, earl of Surrey. Her seal is circular, with nine compartments. In the centre is Warren for her husband; above and below, England for her grandaunt; right and left are two bars for her father. These four are on lozenges. In the four corner compartments are—(1) and (4) a lion for Leon, and (2) and (3) a castle for Castile, for her grandmother. This is a sort of nebulous quartering.

To this succeeded the allotment to the wife of the sinister half of the husband's shield, displayed as though two shields had been divided vertically and united, omitting therefore the adjacent half of each coat. This is called dimidiation, and the shields so joined constitute an impalement. Another seal of Margaret of France illustrates this practice. In it half of England impales half of France. There is a good example of dimidiation in the tomb of William de Valence at Westminster, where Valence impales Clermont-Nesle, both dimidiated. An early German seal combines half an eagle with half a lion in this way. The arms of the Cinque Ports are remarkable examples of dimidiation. In each, the lions of England are dimidiated with the arms of the special Port. That of Hastings (fig. 126) is partly per pale dimidiated, Dexter, gules, three lions passant guardant or; Sinister, azure, three demi-bulks of ships argent. Sometimes one of the coats only was dimidiated. Eleanor (Montendré) was widow of Guy Fureu. Her seal (1348) has a shield of Fureu, a bend moline and over it a bâton, dimidiated, impaling Montendré, a lion within an orle of trefoils. The lion is whole. The seal of Elizabeth, wife of Sir Lawrence Berkeley (fig. 126),—azure, a chevron or, between three crescents argent, impaling a lion rampant,—is a good example of an impalement without dimidiation (date 1392).

Usually the lady has the sinister side, but in the seal of Marjorie, wife of Sir William Dalsiel (1392) this is reversed, as it is in the impaled shield of John of Gaunt, where his wife, a daughter of Peter of Castile and Leon, has the dexter side. Dimidiation is not applicable to all coats. A canton on the sinister coat would be lost, and a chevron be converted into a bend. The treasure, orle, and border were usually, not always, dimidiated; and although this form of im-

palement has fallen into disuse, these charges are still borne dimidiated, as may be seen with the border and treasure on the tomb of Mary, queen of Scots.

When the lady was the last of her race, various modes were devised for the conservation of her name and arms. Thus on the death (1193) of Robert de Lacy, last of the line of Pontefract, John, constable of Chester, half-brother to Robert by his mother, took the name and arms of Lacy, and was ancestor of the earls of Lincoln of that name. In the same century Isabel, heiress of Earl Warren, married Hamelin Plantagenet, who took the name, and their children bore the arms of Warren; and so with the Mandevilles, earls of Essex.

Sometimes a coat was compounded of the two families. Thus Mr Planché is of opinion that the bend was added to the paternal coat of Bohun, on the marriage with the heiress of Milo, earl of Hereford. Scottish seals show many examples of such composition. Eustacea Colville, widow of Reginald le Chein, in 1316, bore a cross moline, square pierced, for Colville, between four cross crosslets fitchy for Chein. About the middle of the 14th century began the practice of placing the arms of females upon a lozenge. As early as 1347 Elizabeth D'Arcy so bears her arms, as in 1356 does Maud Fitz Payne. The seal of Joan Beaufort, widow of James I., affords the earliest Scottish example.

The first step towards a regular method of preserving heraldically the memory of a family extinct in the male line seems to have been taken in Spain by a process now known as quartering. Eleanor of Castile, queen of Edward I., has upon her tomb a shield divided into four quarters, in the first and fourth of which is Castile, and the second and third Leon. The practice, though not finally regulated, was approved, for on the seal of the "She-wolf of France," queen of Edward II., the shield is quartered (1) England, (2) France, (3) Navarre, (4) Champagne, striking up confusedly the arms of husband and wife, as they also are upon the shield of Philippa of Hainault, queen of Edward III., who bore quarterly, (1) and (4) England, (2) and (3) Hainault and Holland. A very early instance of regular quartering occurs in the will of Humphrey Bohun, earl of Hereford, dated 11th August 1319, by which he bequeaths a court-point quartered with the arms of England and Bohun. This is five years before the accession of Edward III., and makes it probable that the quartered coat of William de Foix at Winchester is original.

Under Edward III. quartering came into general use. The King led the way by quartering France and England, and the earl of Pembroke followed, quartering Hastings and Valence. John Hastings, his son, commemorated on his shield his father's match with Ann daughter of Margaret, duchess of Norfolk, a co-heir of Thomas of Brotherton, and this affords an early instance of the precedence often given in quartering to the royal arms. John Hastings bore quarterly of four—(1) and (4) Brotherton (Plantagenet), (2) Hastings, (3) Valence; and, on another example—(1) and (4) Brotherton, (2) and (3) Hastings quartering Valence. This latter arrangement of sub-quartering shows a considerable advance in the system. Henry IV. combined quartering with dimidiation in a shield long preserved in the window of Christ Church, Newgate, which bore France and England quarterly, impaling France with a bend gobony, and Navarre quarterly, dimidiated, for Joan of Navarre. In this case the 1st and 3d quarters were removed, and the sinister bearings thus reduced to what may be better blazoned as party per fess, (1) Navarre, (2) France. The French sometimes quartered diagonally, called "scartile on sautoir." The old kings of Sicily thus divided their shield: party per saltire, (1) and (4) Aragon, (2) and (3) Swabia. This plan never found favour in England, where



FIG. 126.



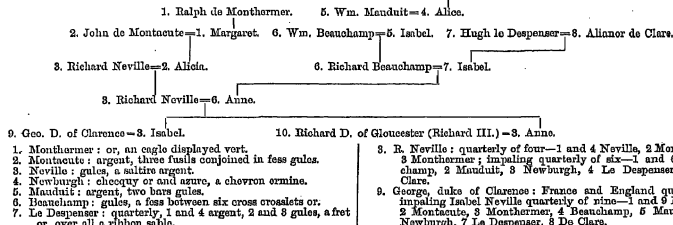
FIG. 126.

a regular system of quartering sprang up, and has continued in use. A quartered shield, though of no special family, is shown by fig. 12.

At first the arms of an heiress were impaled by her husband, but latterly they were placed on a central inescutcheon designated an escutcheon of pretence. The

children divided the shield into four quarters, and placed the paternal coat 1 and 4, the maternal 2 and 3. If a second heiress came in, she was placed in No. 3; if a third, in No. 4; if more, the shield was divided as required. The following pedigree will explain the system. In it all the descents that did not bring in an heiress are omitted.

4. Waleran de Newburgh



The armorial bearings of each generation will be as follows:—

1. Monthermer alone.
2. Montacute impaling Monthermer.
3. Neville impaling quarterly, 1 and 4 Montacute, 2 and 8 Monthermer.
4. Newburgh alone.
5. Manduit impaling Newburgh.
6. Beauchamp impaling quarterly, 1 and 4 Manduit, 2 and 8 Newburgh.
7. Le Despenser impaling De Clare.
8. Beauchamp: quarterly of four—1 and 4 Beauchamp, 2 Manduit, 8 Newburgh; impaling quarterly of four—1 and 4 Le Despenser, 2 and 8 De Clare.

3. R. Neville: quarterly of four—1 and 4 Neville, 2 Montacute, 8 Monthermer; impaling quarterly of six—1 and 6 Beauchamp, 2 Manduit, 8 Newburgh, 4 Le Despenser, 6 De Clare.
9. George, duke of Clarence: France and England quarterly, impaling Isabel Neville quarterly of nine—1 and 9 Neville, 2 Montacute, 8 Monthermer, 4 Beauchamp, 6 Manduit, 6 Newburgh, 7 Le Despenser, 8 De Clare.

The above, being a well-known and very noble pedigree, has been selected to illustrate the system of quartering, which is explained by the shield (fig. 127), thus emblazoned:—

1, George, duke of Clarence; 2, Neville, who brings in 3, Montacute; 4, Monthermer; 5, Beauchamp, who brings in 6, Manduit; 7, Newburgh; 8, Le Despenser; 9, De Clare.  
Unfortunately the several bearers of these arms were fanciful, and sometimes gave precedence to one and sometimes to another coat, and indeed never used the whole, which would have crowded their shields and caparisons. The four woodcuts, figs. 128-31, will illustrate this.



Fig. 127.

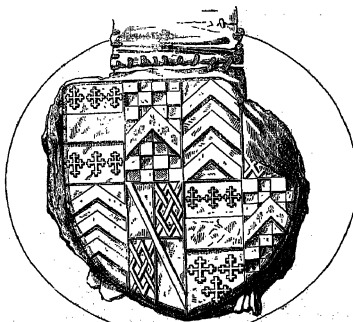


FIG. 128.—Seal of Richard Beauchamp, earl of Warwick.

They represent the great seals of Richard Beauchamp, earl of Warwick, who married Isabel le Despenser, and Richard Neville, earl of Warwick, who married Anne Beauchamp.

Beauchamp quarters the arms of his wife, but makes De Clare impale Le Despenser, while he himself impales Newburgh. The

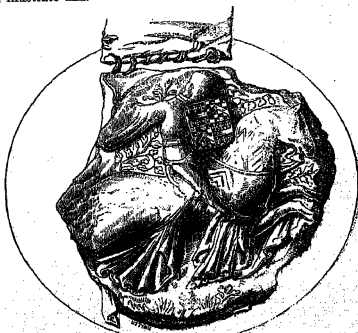


FIG. 129.—Countersign of Richard Beauchamp, earl of Warwick.

blazon would thus be quarterly of four grand quarters—1. and IV. Beauchamp impaling Newburgh; II. and III. De Clare impaling Le Despenser (fig. 128). On the countersign (fig. 129) the earl bears on his shield Beauchamp and Newburgh quarterly, and on his caparison Beauchamp, Newburgh, De Clare, and Le Despenser also quarterly.

The other is the seal of the king-maker. As lord of Glamorgan he gives precedence to De Clare and Le Despenser, and bears quarterly of four grand quarters—1. and IV. quarterly, De Clare and Le Despenser; II. and III., Montacute and Monthermer; Neville not appearing at all. The crests are those of Beauchamp and Montacute. The remaining supporter is the Neville bull-muzzled, and below are ragged staves for Beauchamp (fig. 130).



FIG. 130.—Seal of Richard Neville, earl of Warwick.

The rules were also departed from where the royal arms were quartered, as by Devereux, Hastings, and Stafford, when it was usual to place them in the first or second quarter out of their genealogical order. Also in certain cases the quarterings of an heiress are not broken up, but borne combined as a sub-quarter, sometimes called a grand quarter. Thus the royal arms always form a special quarter, and probably the arms of Howard, quartering, as they always do, Brotherton, Mowbray, and Warren, would be so treated.

The English mode of quartering is defective, inasmuch as it affords no proof of purity of descent on both sides. A new man whose father married a Talbot or Clinton heiress would combine their ancient quarterings with his new coat, and few would be the wiser. On the Continent and in Scotland the system is far more perfect, and the quarterings include all ancestors and ancestors of every kind. There a man who can prove the arms of his father and mother has two quarters; if his grandfather and grandmother, four; and so on. The following scheme, supplied from the family records of Mr C. J. Middleton, registrar of the prerogative court, the representative in the male line of a Scottish family, the Middletons of Fettercairn, two of whom were earls of Middleton, will explain this. It gives, or nearly gives, the well-known "seize quartiers," without which, in former days, scarcely any important office was ever to be obtained.

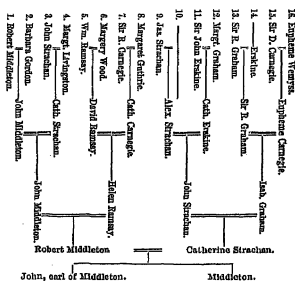
1	2	3	4
5	6	7	8
9	10	11	12
13	14	15	16

FIG. 132.

The countereasel gives on the shield Neville above with a label, and the swan crest on the helmet. The caparisons are quarterly of four grand quarters: 1. quarterly—1, effaced; 2 and 3, Newburgh charged with five pale heads, *jeant fleur-de-lys* for Cantelupo; 4, Beauchamp; 11. and 111.—1 and 4, De Clare; 2 and 3, Le Despenser; IV.—1 and 4, Beauchamp; 2 and 3, Newburgh (fig. 131).



FIG. 131.—Countereasel of Richard Neville, earl of Warwick.



The arms are thus marshalled (fig. 132):—

Quarterly of 16:—1, Middleton; 2, Gordon; 3, Strachan; 4, Livingston; 5, Ramsay; 6, Wood; 7, Carnegie; 8, Guthrie; 9, Strachan; 10, —; 11, Erskine; 12, Graham; 13, Graham; 14, Erskine; 15, Carnegie; 16, Wemyss.

When John de Foix, count of Candale, was about to marry Joan, daughter of William de la Pole, duke of Suffolk, by Alice Chancer, the "probatio nobilitatis" was sought for, though with little success, in England:—

"1. *Patritu informatio lines De la Polo, et primo quoniam fuit matris dñe de la Polo, 2da Quoniam inest quidem ptra et matris, 3da Quoniam inest uxor Thomas Chaucer et mater Alane, 4da Quia inest gentilitas familiarum Polo, Chaucer, et Alane, 5ta apponitur in superioribus localitatibus, indicatur aut patris cum debitis coloribus, aut scriptura, per amicum huius et coloris."*

This sort of escutcheon at once placed before the eye the heraldic history of the family for four generations.

Bishops, deans, kings at-arms, and the heads of certain corporations wear their paternal arms impaled by those of their office. No provision is made for the wife.

Single women or widows bear their arms upon a lozenge. Widows, and possessors use their husband's supporters. Females, in their own right use their own. But no lady uses crest or motto.

A commoner who marries a peeress in his own right uses two shields. On the dexter side his own arms with those of his wife on a scutcheon of pretence engrafted with her coronet, on the sinister the lady's arms alone on a lozenge with supporters and coronet. If the lady be only a dowager peeress, and not an heiress, there are also two shields. On one the husband impales her arms in the ordinary way, on the other are the lady's arms, &c., as a widow, impaled by those of her first husband, with his supporters and coronet, but no crest, and the arms in a lozenge.

A baronet of England or Ireland bears a sinister hand couped gules on an inescutcheon or a canton. It is blazoned "argent, a sinister hand, couped at the wrist and appaumée, gules." Those of Nova Scotia bear argent on a shield of pretence, Scotland ensigned with a crown.

Baron of Ridgrave, the premier baronet, bears gules, on a chief argent two mullets placed sable (fig 138).

A knight of an order surrounds his shield, usually a cartouche, with the ribbon and motto of the order. If married he takes a second and sinister shield, and thereon impales his wife's arms, the whole within a plain ribbon.

A widower marrying a second wife divides his shield twice per pale, and places his own arms in the centre, his first wife's on the dexter, his second's on the sinister side. For a greater number there is no stricture. A certain Sir George Clifton who survived seven wives, placed himself in the centre of the shield, and his wives around him. The widow of two husbands may divide her lozenge twice per pale, and place her first husband on the dexter side, her second in the centre, and herself in the sinister place, or she may divide the dexter half on her former per fess, and place the arms of the first husband above, and those of the second below.

## APPENDAGE 28

These include whatever is borne outside the shield, as the crest, badge, motto, supporters, helmet, coronet, and some other additions. Strictly speaking, armorial bearings are confined to the contents of the shield, and heralds have never regarded the appendages as of the same importance.

The *Crest* was the ornament of the horridities, and afforded protection against a blow. In early rolls of arms it is not noticed. In early seals when it appears it is rarely heraldic. Richard I wears a sort of fan-shaped ornament, but has a lion passant gardant on the front of his helmet. Edmund Crouchback in 1296 uses distinctly a crest. Of fourteen seals of horsemen in complete armor appended to the barons' letter to the pope in 1301, three only have regular crests, although many have plumes. The three are—Thomas earl of Lancaster and Ralph earl of Gloucester, men of high rank, and Sir John St John, a great military commander. In the 14th century they became general. In 1355 the count of Hainault presented to Edward III. "unam galeam

pietiosam cum apparatu quam idem comes solebat in capite suo gestare." This was the crest of the eagle seen on the count's seal, and which the king regnated as the fons of Annan to Montagu, earl of Salisbury. Edward himself used the lion, which has continued to be the crest of the English sovereigns. Adam de Blencowe (1356-7) had a grant of arms and crest of the Greyhound bearings from William, lord of Greytoste.

Richard Beauchamp, earl of Warwick (died 1439), rests his feet upon the crests of the bear and griffin for Warwick and Montagu. His paternal crest, the swan's head out of a ducal coronet, is placed upon his helmet, beneath his head. The dragon and wyvern were common crests, and the plume of feathers is still used by Scope and Courtenay. Ralph, Lord Neville of Raby, used the bull's head in 1558, Hastings, a bull's head in 1547. Crests were, like arms, allusive. Grey of Wilton used a "gray" or badge, Lord Welles, a bucket and chain, Botreaux, a buttrick. The crest was sometimes placed on a ducal coronet, sometimes uses out of a wreath or tress of the colours of the arms. The coronet below the crest is not a mark of rank. In Chichester cathedral is the crest of Davidson, a bird rising out of an earl's coronet. This, however, is rare, the coronet so used is generally ducal. Crests were granted and bequeathed. In Germany it is usual to bear the crests of the "seize quarters" or some of them. This of course is inconsistent with the actual use of the crest in war. At first crests were confined to persons of rank, but they have long been included in every grant of arms. In England two or more can only legitimately be borne when the bearer has from the crown a grant of name and arms in addition to his own, as Chetwynd-Talbot, Fitz Alan-Howard.

With the crest is usually combined some flowing drapery known as the "panache," "mantling," or *lambequin*. This seems to have served to protect the helmet from heat and dust, and was also ornamental. It is represented in great perfection on tombs of the 15th and 16th centuries, commonly of some brilliant colour with a lining and issele. The tilting helmet which supports the head of the effigy of Humphrey de Bohun (died 1287), at Gloucester, is accompanied by a grand early specimen of the lambequin.

The *Badge* or *Cognizance* was not worn on the helmet, but displayed upon the persons of the retainers of great barons, and sometimes used to ornament the shield or seal. At the celebrated judicial combat at Coventry before Richard II in 1398, Henry of Lancaster appeared with his housings of blue and green embroidered with swans and antelopes, his badges, and Mowbray had housings of crimson velvet, embroidered with silver lions and mulberry trees, his badges. The bear was the Beauchamp badge, derived possibly from Ugo D'Abbot. They also used the ragged staff and the combination of the two.

The seal of Richard III, 1481, as lord of Glamorgan, exhibits the bear as a supporter, and the countess seal repeats it as a badge (figs 134, 135). This seal well illustrates various heraldic points. Its blazon is per pale, baron and femme, baron, France modern and England quarterly, over all a label of three points, femme, per fess, Beauchamp, and chequy, on a chevron five pairs' heads passant fleurs-de-lis, for Newburgh combined with Cantilupe. The same arms are repeated on the shields and caparisons of the countess seal. Richard married Anne Neville, but the Neville saltire does not appear, only the arms of Beauchamp and Newburgh, both of whom were earls of Warwick.

"The rampant bear chained to the ragged staff" was inherited by the Nevilles and Dudleys, and granted about 1759 to the Orevilles as the owners of Warwick castle. Pelham used a buckle, Percy a crescent, Boucher, Bowen, Daers, Homeage, Hungerford, Lacy, Stafford, Wake, and



Fig 139

Harrington used the knots that bear their names. Gower designates the great nobles of his day by their badges, as is done in the following satirical lines written about 1449:—

The robe is ded, the swan<sup>1</sup> is goon,  
The fiery crescent<sup>2</sup> hath lost his light,  
Therefore Ingland may mak greuous,  
Were not the helpe of God Almight.  
The castell<sup>3</sup> is womne, where care begoun  
The portecoyse<sup>4</sup> is leyde a don;  
Yclosed we have oure Velvetts hatte<sup>5</sup>,  
That keppe us from many stormys browne.  
The white linn<sup>6</sup> is leyde to slepe,  
Through the envy of the ape dogges<sup>7</sup>,

and so on, through interminable further instances.

The Scottish clans were native plants for their badges: Chisholm, the alder; Menzies, the ash; M'Intosh, the box, &c.

*The Motto.*—In times when each chief tenant under the crown brought his own tenants into the field, and led them,

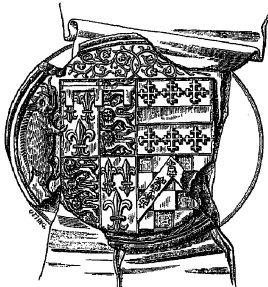


FIG. 134.—Seal of Richard III.

was under seal. It was given to his son, who adopted as a motto "*Fides servata cinere*."

*Supporters* are now placed on either side of the shield, and are usually animals or human figures. They seem to have arisen from the ornaments introduced by the seal engraver, and became heraldic by the practice of quartering. The seal of Edmund Crouchback bears a shield flanked by two wyvrens, probably ornaments. That seal (1388) and the seal of Henry of Lancaster in 1300 contain both crest and helm, lambrequin and supporters. The seal of Catherine, queen of Henry IV., has two antelopes, and her husband as prince used two swans. At Naworth the family supporters, of gigantic size, support the principals of the roof of the hall. Under the house of Tudor many families of knightly rank, as Babington, Stanhope, and Luttrell, used supporters, but at this time supporters are only granted to peers, knights of the garter, grand crosses of the bath, Nova Scotia baronets, and a few private persons who hold them by prescription. In Scotland they are used by heads of clans and by a few lowland families. Fletcher of Saltoun uses two griffins.

Another appendage is the *Eagle*, upon which some North Wales families place their shields, and the double-headed variety so used by nobles of the Holy Roman empire.

<sup>1</sup> Duke of Bedford.

<sup>2</sup> Bohun, for duke of Gloucester.

<sup>3</sup> Duke of Exeter.

<sup>4</sup> Rouen.

<sup>5</sup> Beaufort, dukes of Somerset.

<sup>6</sup> Cardinal Beaufort.

<sup>7</sup> Duke of Norfolk.

<sup>8</sup> Duke of Suffolk.

distinct war-cries were common. The royal cry was "St George for England." The French cried, "Montjoie St Denis;" the *cri de guerre* of Bauffremont was their name; that of Barr, "Au feu"; Seyton, "St Bennet and Set on." The common Highland cry or slogan was "Claymore"; that of the Medici, "Palle, palle," alluding to their arms. The motto succeeded to this (1291); Bruce of Annandale used "Esto fortis in bello"; Courtenay, "Passez bien devant"; Hastings, "Honorantes me honorabo"; Kirkpatrick used the crest of the bloody dirk with the motto "I mak sicker." The Warren motto, alluding to the earls' resistance to the "quo warranto," was "tenelo;" Vernon, "God save the Vernon," ill exchanged for the "Vernon saupper vint." The Scottish borderers, who lived by harrying their neighbours by moonlight, used stars and crescents for their arms, and such mottoes as "Reparabit cornus Phœbe" for Scott of Harden, or "Watch weel" of Halyburton. In modern times Sir Dudley Ryder died while his patent of peerage

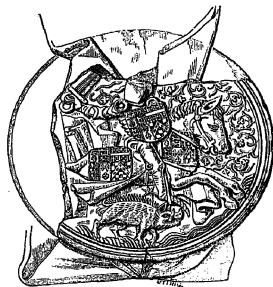


FIG. 135.—Counterseal of Richard III.

The *Livery* has long lost its early signification, and is used only for the dress of the retainers in their lord's colour. At Richard III.'s coronation 8000 badges of the white boar were wrought upon liveries of fustian. A statute of Henry IV. forbade the use of liveries under heavy penalties, but they reappeared in the Wars of the Roses. Richard III. used "collars of livery," but these were for persons of rank. One remains upon a Neville cfigy at Brancepeth.

*Crowns, Coronets, and Symbols of Rank.*—The crown is the head attire of a sovereign prince. It is usually closed at the top by four arched bars called diadems, and surmounted by a globe and cross. Edward IV. is said to have first closed the English crown. That now in use is a circle of gold, jewelled, edged above with crosses patée and fleurs-de-lis alternate, and closed above with four bars and the cross and globe called in Germany the Reichsapfel (fig. 136). Since the Restoration the crown of the Princes of Wales has been surmounted by two bars, also with the Reichsapfel (fig. 137). They also use the plume of three ostrich feathers, with the words "Ich dien," adopted by the Black Prince (fig. 138). Figs. 139 and 140 give representations of the imperial crown of Austria and the crown of the old kings of France. The Pope places three crowns over his mitre or tiara (fig. 141), said to have been severally assumed in 1205, 1335, and 1411. The crown imperial of Charlemagne may be seen on a scutcheon of pretence on the arms of Hanover, as the

elector's badge of arch-treasurer. The doges of Venice and Genoa bore a peculiar cap or toque, seen in Greek statuary, and upon the figures on the arch of Constantine



FIG. 116—Crown of England



FIG. 117—Crown of the Prince of Wales



FIG. 118—Crown of Austria



FIG. 119—Crown of Austria

The coronet is the head attire of a noble. In England those of princes of the blood are bordered with crosses



FIG. 120—Crown of Lucca (old)



FIG. 141—The Pope's Crown



FIG. 142—The Sultan's Head

patée and fleurs-de-lis under a regulation of 13 Charles II (fig. 143). The princesses alternate the same ornaments with star-shaped leaves (fig. 144).

The coronet of a duke is bordered with eight star-shaped leaves (fig. 145), that of a marquess with four alternating with four pearls placed on low points (fig. 146). An earl's coronet has eight star-shaped leaves, alternating with eight pearls upon tall points (fig. 147). The viscount borders his coronet with an indefinite number of pearls,



FIG. 143



FIG. 144



FIG. 145



FIG. 146

set close upon the rim (fig. 148). The baron's coronet, granted to the order by Charles II, carries six pearls placed on the rim at equal intervals,—four being seen at once (fig. 149). These coronets are all lined with crimson, and enriched with jewels. On occasions of state, when not worn by the peer, they are carried before him on a cushion.

The eldest sons of peers above the rank of viscount wear the coronet due to their father's second title. The crowns of the kings, at arms are of gold, bordered with and encircled by the motto "Misereatur, Domine." The ducal, as an ancient form of coronet, is often used without reference to rank, as the base for a crest. It was so used by Sir Simon de Felbregge in 1442.

A bishop has neither crest nor coronet, but surmounts his arms with a mitre. The bishops of Durham, while platinists, placed their mitre in a ducal coronet, as—though without authority—do the archbishops (fig. 150). The Berkeley crest is a mitre. The ancient mitre was low, and of linen stiffened with vellum. The central band and the margin, embroidered with fleurs-de-lis or other patterns, were called the ophreys. The pendulous side ribbons were the "infule." Prelates of the church of Rome enwigh their shields with a hat, the tassels of which indicate their rank. A cardinal has four rows of red tassels, arranged 1, 2, 4, 8, or 15 on each side, an archbishop the same, but green. A bishop has three rows, an abbot two, the abbot's hat is black. Prelates and legates place a patriarchal cross in pale behind their shield.

The *Helmet* also indicates the rank of the wearer. It

is placed above the shield, and beneath the crest. The sovereign and the royal family bear the helmet full-faced or affrontée with six bars, all of gold (fig. 151). Those of dukes and marquises are of gold with five steel bars (fig.



FIG. 151



FIG. 152



FIG. 153



FIG. 154

152). The lesser nobles have silver helmets borne in profile with gold ornaments and four silver bars. Those of barons and knights are of steel, full-faced and open (fig. 153). An esquire's helmet is of steel, represented in profile, with the visor closed (fig. 154). These distinctions were probably introduced after the Restoration.

The *Mantling* is a sort of cloak or mantle of fur extended behind the shield, and sufficiently ample to include the whole achievement. Those of sovereigns are of gold doubled with ermine, and are called "pavillons." Peers' mantlings are of crimson velvet, doubled with white fur and barred with ermine spots, a duke has four bars, a marquess three and a half, an earl three, a viscount two and a half, and a baron two. Commoners use red mantlings lined with white fur. The prior of St John, whose place was on the right of the temporal barons, used a sable mantling doubled with murrey. The pavilion of France was of blue velvet, powdered with gold fleurs-de-lis, and lined with ermine. Such a mantling may be seen behind the arms of Beaumont in Rothley Temple chapel, in right of their descent from the blood-royal of France.

Certain officers of state accompanied their armorial shields with exterior marks of their rank. The Earl Marshal placed two tunccheons saltwise behind his shield, tipped above with the arms of England, and below with his own arms. His deputy places one tunccheon in bend dexter.

In Scotland the Lord High Constable, the earl of Eriol, places on either side of his shield an arm issuant from a cloud, and grasping a sword. Under the old monarchy the French colours commandant placed the standards of their regiments saltwise behind their shields.

The Lords High Admiral have been variously distinguished. Thomas de Berkeley bears on his brass a collar of tritons. Thomas, duke of Exeter, sealed with a ship and his arms on the mainsail. The anchor in some form or other was a common emblem.

Merchants' marks are scarcely heraldic, though they took the place of arms with the trading classes. They were usually monograms of the name or initials. They were protected by law as marks on goods, and are seen on merchants' tombs and sometimes in architecture.

#### FUNERAL ESCUTCHEONS

Some of the most valuable records in the College of Arms are the certificates of funerals conducted under their superintendence and authority. These gorgeous and expensive ceremonies have happily fallen into disuse, save on very rare occasions, and for royal persons or eminent public characters. The last private funeral conducted with anything like the ancient ceremonial was that of Charles, earl of Shrewsbury, in 1828. All that is now usual is the suspension of a shield of arms in a large black lozenge-shaped frame called a hatchment or achievement against the wall of the house of the deceased. It is usually placed over the entrance at the level of the second floor, and remains for from six to twelve months, when it is removed to the parish church. Even this custom, scarcely consistent with living in hired houses and burying in cemeteries, is falling into disuse, though still not uncommon.



FIG. 150

If for a bachelor, the hatchment bears upon a shield his arms, crest, and other appendages, the whole on a black ground.

If for a single woman her arms are represented upon a lozenge, bordered with knotted ribbons, also on a black ground. If the hatchment be for a married man (as in fig. 156), his arms upon a shield impale those of a wife; or if she be an heiress they are placed upon a scutcheon of pretence, and crest and other appendages are added. The dexter half of the ground is black, the sinister white. For a wife whose husband is alive the same arrangement is used, but the sinister ground only is black. For a widower the same is used as for a married man, but the whole ground is black; for a widow the husband's arms are given with her own, but upon a lozenge, with ribbons, without crest or appendages, and the whole ground is black. When there have been two wives or two husbands the ground is divided into three parts per pale, and the division behind the arms of the survivor is white. Colours and military or naval emblems are sometimes placed behind the arms of military or naval officers. It is thus easy to discern from the hatchment the sex, condition, and quality, and possibly the name of the deceased.

In Scottish hatchments it is not unusual to place the arms of the father and mother of the deceased in the two

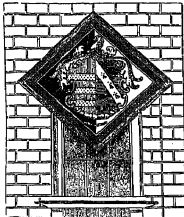


Fig. 155.

lateral angles of the lozenge, and sometimes the 4, 8, or 16 genealogical escutcheons are ranged along the margin.

Undertakers are fond of substituting "In oculo quies" or some such commonplace for the family motto. This is irregular.

The literature of heraldry commences with the treatises of Sassoferrato about 1358, De Fosse in the reign of Richard II., and Upton about 1441, all written in Latin and printed by Sir E. Dymoke in 1654. They are followed by the *Revue de St Albans*, written by Dame Juliana Berners, prioress of Boywell, and printed in 1480. These, especially those of Upton and Dame Juliana, are valuable. The lady writes in a mixture of early English and Latin, but her descriptions are intelligible and copious. These writers were followed by a crowd of others, of whom the chief were Gerard Leigh, Ferne, and Morgan, who wrote in the latter half of the 16th century. Their great aim was to elevate their subject by tracing back the use of armories to the patriarchs and heroes of Jewish and pagan antiquity, whom they invested with coats of arms on the type of those used by Norman barons. There are traces of this folly in Dame Juliana, but it reached its height in the writings of her successors, and was not quite extinguished when Guillim wrote his *Display of Heraldry* in 1610. Guillim, whose work is still a standard, wrote in English, but as late as 1654 and 1688 Spelman, in his *Aspilogia*, and John Gibbon strove hard to restore the use of a dead language upon a subject to which it was eminently unsuitable. In 1722 and 1789 were published the excellent volumes of Nislet, chiefly relating to Scotland, and of Edmondson, whose list or ordinary of bearings was long very useful to those who seek to identify the name to which a coat belongs, until superseded by the very laborious and far more complete work of Papworth.

Recently the same critical spirit that has pervaded the works of our historians has been applied, with equal diligence to the whole subject of heraldry; a number of authors, led by Pakenot, Boutell, Seton, Nichols, and Lower, have set aside all the fabulous pretensions and baseless assertions of the earlier writers, have sifted the old evidence and adduced much that is new. The whole subject of heraldic and quasi-heraldic seals has been brought under notice by the publication of Laing's fine plates of Scottish seals; and it may truly be said that the real origin and growth of the use of armorial bearings is placed before the reader in the books of these writers in a truthful and most attractive form. (G. T. C.)



FIG. 156.—Arms of the Dukes of Marlborough.

The above figure represents the armorial achievement of the dukes of Marlborough, princes of the Holy Roman Empire and of Mindelheim in Swabia. The arms are quarterly—1 and 4, Churchill, white, a lion rampant, and on a chief a castle; 2 and 3, Spencer, quarterly argent and gules in the first, a cross, charged with six inescutcheons azure, 3 fairs-de-lion or; the whole contained within the quarter, ensigned with a ducal coronet, and placed upon the breast of an imperial eagle. Crests—1, Churchill, a lion couchant guardant argent, supporting with his dexter paw a banner gules, between a dexter hand combed, assumed of the first, staff or; 2, Spencer, out of a ducal coronet or a griffin's head argent, armed or, gorged with a bar gemelle gules, between two wings expanded of the second. Between the crests the closed crown of a prince of the empire. Supporters—two wyverns argent, wings expanded. Motto—"Fideli pro desidichon".

HERAT is a city of great interest both historically and geographically, and is of even greater interest politically, its importance at the present day being indicated by its popular designation of the "key of India." Its origin is lost in antiquity. The name first appears in the list of primitive Zoroastrian settlements contained in the *Vendidad Sade*, which, however, like most of the names in the same list,—such as *Sughda* (Sogdian), *Mouāb* (Meiv or Margus) *Haraguts* (Achaemenes or Arghandab), *Haetmant* (Ectyminda or Helmand), and *Rugha* (or Argha stān),—it seems to apply to the river or river basin, which was the special centre of population. The name of *Haraguts*, as it is written in the *Vendidad*, or *Haraguts*, as it appears in the inscriptions of Darius, is a cognate form with the Sanskrit *Sarasvati*, which signifies "a river," and its resemblance to the ethnic title of Aryan (Sansk. *Ārya*) is purely fortuitous, though from the circumstance of the city being named "Aria Metropolis" by the Greeks, and being also recognized as the capital of Ariana, "the country of the Aryans," the two forms have been frequently confounded. Of the foundation of Herat (or Hērat, as it is still often called) nothing is known. We can only infer from the colossal character of the earth-works which surround the modern town, that, like the similar remains at Bost on the Jel-mān and at Ulān Robāt of Achaemenes, they belong to that period of Central-Asian history which preceded the rise of Achaemenian power, and which in Grecian romance is illustrated by the names of Bactrus, of Hercules, and of Semiramis.

The natural advantages of Herat are mainly due to its river, which, rising in the high uplands 350 miles to the eastward, where the Koh-i-Bābā, the prolongation of the Hindu-kūh, bifurcates into the two parallel ranges of the Sufid-koh or "white mountains" to the north and the Syāh-koh or "black mountains" to the south, passes in the upper part of its course through a succession of rolling downs of the finest pasture land, and lower down traverses a more contracted valley, unlined, however, throughout with smiling villages and orchards, till it reaches the eastern limit of the alluvial plain of Herat. Here at the present day nine large canals (in former times there were twenty) carry off the waters of the Herat-rūd for the irrigation of the circumjacent plain, which on a rough calculation may be said to contain nearly 400 square miles of land available for cultivation. M. Khémkoef, who visited Herat in 1908, observes that nowhere in the East,—not even at Samarcand or Bokhara or Tashkent, where the art of canalization is supposed to be carried to perfection—had he seen water-conduits constructed with so much skill, or maintained with so much care, as in the valley of the Herat-rūd, and he adds that, although at the period of his visit nine tenths of the villages of the plain, which in ordinary times amount to nearly 500, were partially in ruins and the adjoining fields laid waste, the cereal produce of the remaining lands was still far in excess of the wants of the settled inhabitants. The Herat-rūd, passing between 3 and 4 miles to the south of Herat, where it is spanned by a magnificent bridge of twenty three arches, called the *Fāhā-Māda*, continues its course westward to the extremity of this rich and fertile plain. It then turns north through an arid country for some 200 miles to Saikha, leaving two small streams from the west, the Ab-i-Jām and Ab-i-Meshed, and forming the territorial boundary between Persia and Afghanistan. As the Herat-rūd is formed of the converging drainage of the Sufid-koh and Syāh-koh ranges, and its volume thus depends on the extent of snow that falls in the mountains, it is impossible to define with any exactitude the limit of its northern course, but in ordinary seasons water is rarely found in the river bed beyond Saikha, and never does the stream penetrate to the northward of a line uniting Abrevrd and Merv,

and it is of the more importance to note this geographical feature, as in many of our modern maps the line of the Herat-rūd, or Teyend, as it is called in its lower course, is prolonged through the desert 200 miles to the north-westward of Saikha.

The city of Herat is in 31° 22' N lat and 62° 9' E long. It is very centrally situated, great lines of communication radiating from it in all directions—southward to Seristan (200 miles), south-eastward to Kandahar (370 miles), eastward to Cabul (550 miles), northward by Mymenel to Bokhara (600 miles) and by Merv to Khiva (700 miles), while to the westward four routes lead into Persia by Tībat to Meshed (315 miles), and by Buzend to Kermān (400 miles), to Yazd (500 miles), or to Ispahan (600 miles). The city forms a quadrangle of nearly a mile square (more accurately about 1600 yards by 1500 yards), on the western, southern, and eastern faces the line of defence is almost straight, the only projecting points being the gateways, but on the northern face the contour is broken by a double outwork, consisting of the *Ak* or citadel, which is built of sun-dried brick on a high artificial mound within the enceinte, and a lower work at its foot, called the *Ak-i-nov*, or "new citadel," which extends 100 yards beyond the line of the city wall. That which distinguishes Herat from all other Oriental cities, and at the same time constitutes its main defence, is the stupendous character of the earthwork upon which the city wall is built. This earthwork averages 250 feet in width at the base and about 50 feet in height, and as it is crowned by a wall 25 feet high and 14 feet thick at the base, supported by about 150 semi-circular towers, and is further protected by a ditch 45 feet in width and 10 in depth, it presents an appearance of imposing strength. Whether the place is really as strong as it looks has been differently estimated. General Ferrier, who resided for some time in Herat in 1846, states that the city is nothing more than an immense suburb, and gives it as his opinion that as the line of wall is entirely without flanking defences, the place could not hold out for twenty days against a European army, and M. Khémkoef, who, though not a professional soldier, was a very acute observer, further remarks that the whole interior of the city is dominated from the rising ground at the north-east angle, while the water supply both for the ditch and the city would be at the mercy of an enemy holding the outside country, the wells and reservoirs inside the wall, which would then be alone available, being quite inadequate to the wants of the inhabitants, but on the other hand all experience testifies to the defensibility of the position. Not to speak of the sagas which Herat sustained at the hands of Jenghiz Khan, of Timur, and of Ahmed Shah, we have only to remember that in 1837 the Afghans of Herat beat off the continuous attack for nearly ten months of a Persian army of 35,000 regular troops, supported by 50 pieces of artillery, and in many cases directed and even commended by Russian officers. The truth seems to be that Herat, though in its present state quite unfit to resist a European army, possesses great capabilities of defence, and might by a skilful adaptation of the resources of modern science be made almost impregnable. A British engineer officer, Major Sanders, calculated in 1840 that at an outlay of sixty or seventy thousand pounds, which would include the expense of deepening the ditch, clearing the glacis and esplanade, providing flanking defences and repairing the walls, &c., throughout, Herat might be rendered secure against any possible renewal of the attack by Persia, but of course if an attack by a well appointed European army were anticipated, more extensive preparations for defence would be required, including probably the erection of two independent forts on the high ground at Mosallā and Thaleh-beng.



The city possesses five gates, two on the northern face, the Kutab-chak near the north-east angle of the wall, and the Malik at the 18° entering angle of the Ark-naw; and three others in the centres of the remaining faces, the Irak gate on the west, the Kandahar gate on the south, and the Khushk gate on the east face. Four streets called the *Chakab-sah*, and running from the centre of each face, meet in the centre of the town in a small dotted quadrangle. The principal street runs from the south or Kandahar gate to the market in front of the citadel, and is covered in with a vaulted roof through its entire length, the shops and buildings, of this bazai being much superior to those of the other streets, and the merchants' caravanserais, several of which are spacious and well built, all opening out on this great thoroughfare. Near the central quadrangle of the city is a vast reservoir of water, the dome of which is of bold and excellent proportions. It is stated by General Fozier to have been constructed by command of Shah Abbas, and to be a *chef d'œuvre* of its kind. It is supposed to contain about a twelve months' supply of water for the entire city, but, as M. Khankoff observes, it is within easy motor range of the high ground at the north-east angle of the city, and might thus be destroyed by a few well directed shells, in which case the ruins of the dome would fill up the basin and the water supply would be lost. The only other public building of any consequence in Herat is the great mosque or *Meydan-i-Nawa*, which comprises an area of 800 yards square, and must have been a most magnificent structure. It was erected towards the close of the 15th century, during the reign of Shah Sultan Hussein of the family of Timur, and is said when perfect to have been 465 feet long by 375 feet wide, to have had 408 cupolas, 180 windows, 444 pillars, and 6 entrances, and to have been adorned in the most magnificent manner with gliding, carving, precious metals, and other elaborate and costly embellishments. Now, however, it is falling rapidly into ruin, the ever changing provincial governors who administer Herat having neither the means nor the inclination to undertake the necessary repairs. Neither the palace of the Chirbagh within the city wall, which was the residence of the British mission in 1840-41, nor the royal quarters in the citadel deserve any special notice. At the present day, with the exception of the *Chakab-sah*, where there is always a certain amount of traffic, and where the great diversity of race and costume imparts much liveliness to the scene, Herat presents a very melancholy and desolate appearance. The mud houses in rear of the bazai are for the most part uninhabited and in ruin, and even the burnt brick buildings are becoming everywhere dilapidated. The city is besides one of the filthiest in the East, as there are no means of drainage or sewerage, and garbage of every description lies in heaps in the open streets.

With regard to the population, it fluctuates so rapidly, according to the circumstances of the period, that it is impossible to give any estimate of its normal strength. When Christie visited the city in 1800 it was in a very prosperous condition, having been undisturbed for fifty years, and was supposed to contain 100,000 inhabitants. A Conolly in 1828 reduced the numbers to 45,000. Before the Persian siege in 1837 the population was estimated at 70,000, but at the close of the war 6000 or 7000 were all that remained. In 1845, at the time of General Fozier's visit, the numbers had increased again to 22,000, and continued to increase to the time of the capture of the place by Dost Mahomed Khan in 1863, when there was at least 50,000 inhabitants within the walls. Since that time Herat has been a mere provincial city governed from Kabul, and its average population has ranged between 20,000 and 30,000, within which limits must be confined its present estimate.

The maximum population of which the accounts would seem to be capable may be put at Christie's estimate of 100,000, and it is manifest therefore that when Herat contained a population of one million and a half, as is assumed by some contemporary authorities, the present city could have been only the citadel of this vast metropolis, the great mass of buildings lying along the slopes of the northern hills, where for a space of some 4 miles in length by 3 miles in breadth the surface of the plain, strewn over its whole extent with pieces of pottery and crumbling bricks, is also taken here and there by earthen mounds and tumuli walls, the details of which are not described. The ruins of the old city are everywhere to be seen. One of these structures and one of the most striking to the present day is a sufficiently perfect state to bear witness to the grandeur and beauty of the old architecture of Herat. The mosque of the Afshars, for instance, originally built in 1200, certainly, but restored within a few years of the end of the 15th century, and intended for the reception of the body of the Imam Riza who fled from Sultra Hussein wished to remove from Meshed to Herat, is, even in its present state of ruin and decay, one of the most imposing and elegant structures to be seen in Asia. "The mosque," says General Fozier, "is completely covered with a mosaic of glazed bricks in varied and beautiful patterns, and the cupola is of varying dimensions. Several minarets supported by pillars in brick and elegant minarets that surround it may be said to be intact, for the upper part of them only is slightly injured." Scarcely inferior in beauty of design and execution, though of more modest dimensions, is the tomb of the saint Abdallah Anvari, in the same neighbourhood. This building, which was erected by Shah Sultan Mirza, the grandson of Timur, nearly 600 years ago, contains some exquisite specimens of sculpture in the style of the 15th century. Adjoining the tomb also are many numerous and beautiful, the sepulchres of princes of the house of Timur, and especially deserving notice is a royal building tastefully decorated by an Afghan artist named Gerdah, who was in the service of the British. The locality, which is further enhanced by gardens and running streams, is named *Gard-i-Gard*, and is a favourite resort of the Heratis. It is held in high veneration by all classes, and the famous Dost Mahomed Khan, who died in 1863, was buried in the tomb of the saint. Two other royal princes named respectively *Dughlat Shah* and *Tahiri Sefir*, who sat upon the same rising ground somewhat further to the west. The buildings are now in ruins, but the view from the top of the hill, and the fine plantations on the terraced gardens formed on the slope of the mountain, is said to be very beautiful.

The population of Herat and the neighbourhood is of a very mixed character. The original inhabitants of Aftania were the dwellers of the Aryan family, and immediately cognate with the Persian race, but they were probably intermingled at a very early period with the Scythic and Mongolic, who seem to have left the mountains from Chel to Herat from the first days of history, and to whom must be ascribed—rather than to an invasion of Timur a further blood introduced by the names of Tughlar and Timur—the peculiar blood of the Afghans and British command which distinguishes the high spirits of the Heratis, Scythians, and the sturdy warriors of Persia from their contemporary tribes to the west. Under the government of Herat, however, there are a very large number of tribes, ruled over by separate and semi-independent chiefs, and which are probably of different nationalities. The principal groups of tribes are called the *Chakab-sah*, or "four tribes." The constituent parts of which, however, are variously stated by different authorities both as to strength and non-dependence. On the spot, however, the far the best general authority on Afghan questions gives the original form tribes as the Taimurees, the Heratis, the Taimurees, and Zais, Khankoff, on the other hand, whose list was a chronography, and who made his inquiries on the spot, describes the *Chakab-sah* as the Kirghiz (300,000) lambs, the Taimurees (12,000), the Taimurees (60,000), and the Kirghiz (10,000 to 12,000), while Pottinger substitutes the Sooni Heratis of Baluchistan for the Kirghiz of Khankoff. Dost Mahomed Khan, in his *Amir's* to 80,000 lambs. These tribes all dwell in the mountains to the north-east, the east, and the south-east of Herat, and number in the aggregate perhaps a million souls. Major Taylor, who made special inquiries on the subject in 1876, found that the government of Herat could use for fighting purposes, from the tribes and the allied Taimurees of Herat 47,000 horse and 25,000 foot, but matters have very much changed since Herat came under the government of Kabul in 1863, the recent policy being to leave the government of the south independent chiefs, and to substitute infantry regiments raised and paid by the central authority. At present there are perhaps ten such regiments, which is not supplemented by about 10,000 horse and 20,000 men raised from the tribes.

The trade of Herat is the subject of general fluctuation. From its central geographical position it must naturally be an emporium of commerce between Persia, Turkistan, Afghanistan, and India, while owing to the richness of the valley, which can supply large supplies for 150,000 men over and above the consumption of

the fixed inhabitants, as well as to the mineral wealth of the adjoining mountains and the industrial activity of the city population, especially in regard to silk and woollen manufactures (the exports of Hérat being famous throughout the East), the country usually recovers from the effects of war, and its normal condition may be said to be that of prosperity and abundance.

In actual territory Hérat extends east and west from near the sources of the Helmand about 300 miles to the Persian frontier beyond Herat, and north and south from the Merv boundary, in about 36° lat. 200 miles to the northern limit of Sistan. The inhabitants of the city of Hérat are for the most part Shikhs, and in regard to language and habits, as well as religion, are Persians rather than Afghans. There are, however, both in the town and in the neighbouring villages a certain number of Afghan colonists, who have been settled there—the greater part by Nadir Shih—during the last 150 years, as well as Hazarehs, Pushtuns, and Tumangs, with a few sprinkling of Hindus and some forty families Jews. The net revenue of the valley and its immediate dependencies in ordinary times is under £100,000 per annum, but the value of the Helmand Khan is supposed in the plenty of his power, and when he had for a time brought a great part of Sistan under his sway, to have realized double that amount from the entire province.

To give in any detail the fortunes of Hérat would be to write the modern history of the East, for there has hardly been a dramatic revolution, or a foreign invasion, or a great civil war in Central Asia since the time of the Prophet, in which Hérat has not played a conspicuous part and suffered accordingly. Under the Tribunes of Khosroos, the Saffarids of Sistan, and the Samanids of Bokhara, it flourished for some centuries in peace and progressive prosperity, but during the succeeding rule of the Ghaznavids, through its metropolitan character, was for a time obscured by the celebrity of the neighbouring capital of Ghazni, until finally in the reign of the Tughlaks of Delhi about 1157 the city was entirely destroyed by an invasion of the Ghors, the predecessors, in 1258 as well as in 1260, of the modern Tatars. Hérat gradually recovered under the enlightened Ghoriya kings, who were not only rulers of the province, though they preferred to hold their court amid their ancestral abodes in the mountains of Ghazni, so that at the time of Feroz Khan its invasion equalled or even exceeded populations, and with the successive capitals of Delhi, Meerut, and Calcutta, the mind of strength of the four cities being estimated at three millions of inhabitants. But this Mongol invasion was most calamitous, forty persons, indeed, are stated to have alone survived the general massacre of 1212, and as the descendants of the conquerors, the city was the hands of Timur in 1368, when the local dynasty of Kant which had succeeded the Ghoris in eastern Khosroos was put an end to, it is astonishing to find that it only in the 17th century Hérat was again flourishing and populous, and the favoured seat of the art and literature of the East. It was indeed under the patronage of the house of Timur that most of the noble buildings were erected, of which the remains still exist on almost all sides, and it was here that the great historian of India, referred to above, and the *Shah-nama*, the *Tahd-e-Asrafi*, *Maish-e-Ashraf*, the *Maish-e-Ashraf*, &c., date from the same place and the same age. Four times was Hérat sacked by Tatars, and it was again almost entirely destroyed by the Afghan monarchs, the Timurid princes, and the rise of the Afghan power, and it is now, in modern times, almost to everything its old importance. Afghan tribes, who had originally dwelt far to the east, were first settled in Herat by the Afghans, and it was the Afghans who have monopolized the government and formed the dominant element in the population. It will be needless to trace the revolutions and counter-revolutions which have followed each other in quick succession at Hérat since the Afghan conquest of the Persian monarchy about the middle of the last century. Let it suffice to say that Hérat has been throughout the seat of an Afghan government, sometimes in subordination to Kabul and sometimes independent. It was included for many years, now a strong dependence to recognize the supremacy of Herat which was exercised by the Sultans of Herat, but that in this, disapproving of the advance of Persia towards the city in its turn, steadily resisted the encroachment, and, indeed, after helping the Heratians to drive off the attack of the Persians in 1818, the British at length compelled the Shah in 1857 at the close of his war with them to sign a treaty recognizing the future independence of the place, and pledging Persia against any further interference with the Afghans. In 1860 Herat, which for fifty years previously had been independent of Kabul, was incorporated by Dost Mahomed Khan in the Afghan monarchy, and such is the present condition of the municipality, the actual Government of Herat being the same as the actual Government of Kabul, which is recognized with the Government of India: the famous treaty of Gandamak. (H. C. R.)

HERAULT, a department in the south of France, formed from parts of the old province of Languedoc, is bounded on the N.E. by Gard, N.W. by Arroyon and Tarn, and S. by Aude and the Gulf of Lyons. It has an area of 2444 square miles, and is situated between 43° 10' and 44° N

lat. 2° 30' and 4° 10' E long. Its greatest length is 84 miles, and its greatest breadth 60. About a third of the department consists of moorland, heath, and common, a fourth of arable land, a sixth of vineyards, and an eighth of wood. The southern prolongation of the Cevennes mountains forms the north boundary of the department. The highest point is about 4260 feet above the sea level. The ridge forms the watershed between the waters of the Atlantic and the Mediterranean, and from it there flow the Vidouille, Mosson, Hérault, Livron, and Orb. Of these the Hérault, 80 miles long, is the chief, and gives name to the department. The Vidouille forms the boundary between the department and that of Gard. The high mountains of the north are partly barren, partly wooded. In the extensive plains of the centre the vine and olive flourish, and figs, mulberries, and other fruit-trees are to be met with nearly in all parts. Grain is chiefly produced in the south. The soil of the north is chalky clay, of the centre light gravel, and of the south a strong rich loam. The "garigues" are considerable portions of waste land, covered with heath and shrubs. St. Loup, Conques, and St. Thibéry, the first of which is 750 feet high, are extinct volcanic cones. The greater part of the south coast consists of a series of salt marshes, separated from the sea by a narrow strip of land. The marsh of Thau, the largest, stretches from the mouth of the Hérault, and communicates, through the marsh of Frontignan, with that of Mangrove on the eastern coast of the department. The Canal du Midi, after stretching about 30 miles into the department, terminates at Agde. From Agde the navigation is kept up through the marshes by the canals of Agde and Radelle to Arles. The coast line of the department is 66 miles long. In the valleys and at the foot of the mountains the climate is delightfully mild. Fish abound in the salt marshes. The vegetable productions comprise aromatic and dyeing plants, the oleum prevails in the forests. The mineral wealth of the department is considerable. Mines of lignite, coal, iron, copper, and lead are wrought. It produces magnificent blocks of marble, also alabaster, gypsum, granite, sandstone, pottery, clay, alum, and the marshes supply France with salt. At Gahian there is a petroleum well. Wine and oil constitute the chief agricultural wealth of the department. The red wines of St. Georges, St. Didier, St. Christol, and the white wines of Frontignan and Lunel, are held in high estimation. Considerable quantities of wheat, oats, and potatoes are grown. There is a large amount of excellent pasturage, and horses and sheep are extensively reared. Mulberries, pomegranates, figs, raisins and other dried fruits, and olives are prepared for exportation. The chief manufactures are woollen and cotton cloth, silk, paper, tin, soap, and chemical substances. The department has Montpellier for its capital, and is divided into the arrondissements of Montpellier, Béziers, Lodève, and St. Pons, with 36 cantons and 331 communes. The population was 420,878 in 1872, and 448,053 in 1876.

HERBARIUM, or *HERBARIUM*, a collection of plants so dried and preserved as fully to illustrate their several specific characters. Since the same plant, owing to peculiarities of climate, soil, and situation, degree of exposure to light, and other influences, may vary greatly according to the locality in which it occurs, it is only by gathering together for comparison and study a large series of examples of each species illustrative of the flora of different regions that the laws of vegetable morphology, and many more points of scientific interest, can be satisfactorily determined. Thus, from the herbarium may be acquired a knowledge of those details concerning the minute structure of individual plants which are of necessity omitted in works of systematic botany, as also of the relative taxonomic importance of the characters to be met with in large groups of forms.

Commencing with British herbaria, the collection of the Royal Herbarium at Kew, generally acknowledged to be at once the most extensive and the best preserved and most orderly in the world, comprises some 100,000 species, many of them represented by numerous specimens. It is arranged, for easy reference, in cases situate between the windows of the building containing it, the atmosphere of which is kept dry by means of hot-water pipes. In the intervening spaces are tables for the purpose of study, which is further facilitated by the presence in the same building of a large and valuable botanical library. Next in importance is the herbarium of the British Museum, which comprises assemblages of specimens gathered by numerous eminent botanists. The collection of Dillenius is deposited at Oxford, and that of the late Professor Harvey at Trinity College, Dublin. The original herbarium of Linnaeus is in the possession of the Linnæan Society of London. With the more important British herbaria are to be ranked also those of Cambridge and Edinburgh. The collections of Jussieu and St Hilaire are included in the large herbarium of the Jardin des Plantes at Paris, and in the same city is the extensive private collection of Dr Cosson. At Geneva are three large collections,—De Candolle's, containing the typical specimens of the *Prodromus*, Delessert's fine series, and Boissier's Mediterranean and Oriental plants. The university of Göttingen has had bequeathed to it the largest collection (exceeding 40,000 specimens) ever made by a single individual,—that of the late Professor Gisebach. At the herbarium in Brussels are the specimens obtained by the traveller Martius, the majority of which formed the groundwork of his *Flora Brasiliensis*. Other national herbaria sufficiently extensive to subserve the requirements of the systematic botanist exist at Berlin, St Petersburg, Vienna, Leyden, Stockholm, Upsala, Copenhagen, and Florence. Of those in the United States of America, the chief, formed by Asa Gray, is the property of Harvard university; others are to be seen at Yale and Columbia colleges and at New York and Michigan universities. The herbarium at Melbourne, Australia, under Baron Müller, has attained large proportions, and that of the Botanical Garden of Calcutta is noteworthy as the repository of numerous specimens described by writers on Indian botany.

Specimens of flowering plants and vascular cryptogams are, at Kew, generally mounted on sheets of stout smooth paper, of uniform quality, and in most cases 17 inches long by 11 inches broad, the palms and then allies, however, and some ferns, require a size of 22 by 14 inches. The tough but flexible coarse grey paper (German *Fließpapier*), upon which on the Continent specimens are commonly fixed by gummed strips of the same, is less hygroscopic than ordinary cartridge paper, but has the disadvantage of affording little room in the inequalities of its surface to a minute insect, *Athrips pulsatoris*, L., which commits great havoc in damp specimens, and which, even if noticed, cannot be dislodged without difficulty. The majority of plant specimens are most suitably fastened on paper by a mixture of equal parts of gum tincture and gum arabic made into a thick paste with water. Rigid leathery leaves are affixed by means of glue, or, if they present too smooth a surface, by stitching at their edges. Where, as in private herbaria, the specimens are not liable to be handled with great frequency, a stitch here and there round the stem, tied at the back of the sheet, or slips of paper passed over the stem through two slits in the sheet and attached with gum to its back, or simply strips of gummed paper laid across the stem, may be resorted to. A new adhesive substance, a kind of fish glue, has lately come into use for this purpose, and is highly spoken of. To preserve from insects, the plants, after mounting, are brushed over with

a liquid formed by the solution of 1 lb each of creosote sublimate and carbolic acid in 1 gallon of methylated spirits. They are then laid out to dry on shelves made of a network of stout galvanized iron wire. After this is written, usually in the right hand corner of the sheet, or on a label there affixed, the designation of each species, the date and place of gathering, and the name of the collector. Information as to economical or medicinal properties may either be added thereto, or mentioned on the back of the sheet. It is especially important to attach to the name of the plant the initials or abbreviated name of the author by whom it was first described, e.g., *Ulex latifolius* alone, might signify either of two distinct plants, the one described by Linnaeus, the other by Agardh. When the generic name has been altered, but the specific name has been retained, the name of the original describer of the plant is placed in brackets before the name of the later author. Thus the *Entromorpha Grevillei* of Thuret, having been renamed, has become *Ulex Grevillei* (Thur.). Le Jolis. The value of specimens in private herbaria is greatly enhanced by briefly stating on the lower left-hand corner of the sheet the characters that distinguish it from the plants most nearly resembling it. Other particulars as to habit, local abundance, soil, and claim to be indigenous may be written on the back of the sheet, or on a slip of writing paper attached to its edge. It is convenient to place in a small clip, gummed to an upper corner of the sheet any flowers, seeds, or leaves needed for dissection or microscopic examination, especially where from the fixation of the specimen it is impossible to examine the leaves for microreceptacles, and whose seed is apt to escape from ripe capsules and be lost. The addition of a careful dissection of a flower greatly increases the value of the specimen. To ensure that all shall lie evenly in the herbarium the plants should be made to occupy as far as possible alternately the right and left sides of their respective sheets. The species of each genus are then arranged either systematically or alphabetically in separate covers of stout, usually light brown paper, or, if the genus be large, in several covers with the name of the genus clearly indicated in the lower left hand corner of each, and opposite to the names or reference numbers of the species. Undetermined species are relegated to the end of the genus. Thus prepared, the specimens are placed on shelves, or movable trays, at intervals of about 6 inches, in an air tight cupboard, on the inner side of the door of which, as a special protection against insects, is suspended a muslin bag containing a piece of camphor.

The systematic arrangement varies in different herbaria. The works usually followed are,—for dicotyledons, De Candolle's *Prodromus*, and Endlicher's or Benlham and Hooker's *Genera Plantarum*, for monocotyledons, Kunth's *Enumeratio*, for ferns, Hooker and Baker's *Synopsis Filicum*, for mosses, Muller's *Synopsis Muscorum Fructuosorum*, for algae, Kützinger's *Phænotogus generis*, for hepatics, Gotsche, Landenberg, and Nees & Eberbach's *Synopsis Hepaticarum*, and for other groups of cryptogamic plants the treatises of various authors scattered through numerous scientific publications. In certain herbaria, as in those of Boissier and Delessert at Genoa, the authority of the *Prodromus* is accepted only in the absence of any more recent treatise, or of a complete monograph on a family. For the members of large genera, e.g., *Papav.* and distributed species is comparatively few, a geographical grouping is found especially convenient by those who are constantly receiving parcels of plants from known foreign sources. The ordinary systematic arrangement possesses the great advantage, in the case of large genera, of readily

indicating the affinities of any particular specimen with the forms most nearly allied to it in type. In the United States the species in the genera, and the genera in the orders, are usually arranged alphabetically, and the orders serially, sometimes, however, the genera are placed alphabetically throughout without reference to the orders. The alphabetical arrangement, provided works on systematic botany are referred to for the identification of particular plants, possesses the advantage of permitting ready reference to any given species, and also of being independent of changes of classification, but in Europe it is rarely adopted, on account of the counterbalancing practical inconveniences it is considered to present. Instead of keeping a catalogue of the species contained in the herbarium, which, owing to the constant additions, would be almost impossible, such species are usually ticked off with a pencil in the systematic work which is followed in arranging them, so that by reference to this work it is possible to see at a glance whether the specimen sought is in the herbarium, and what species are still wanted. The custom commonly prevalent in Continental, especially German, herbaria of placing the dried specimens loosely between sheets of paper is not always of uniform character is liable to lead to the admixture of nearly allied forms in intricate genera, such as *Rubus*, *Rosa*, *Hieracium*, *Salix*, &c., unless a label is attached to each specimen, a precaution not always observed. In German and English systems much followed for flowering plants, with the exception of palms, for which Martius's arrangement is preferred. At Geneva De Candolle's original herbarium is arranged in exact accordance with his *Prodromus*. In the other large herbaria in that city, the mounting and arrangement of the specimens are conducted much as in England, with the exception that smaller-sized sheets of paper are used for cryptogams.

Specimens intended for the herbarium should be collected when possible in dry weather, care being taken to select plants or portions of plants in sufficient number and of a size adequate to illustrate all the characteristic features of the species. When the root-leaves and roots present any peculiarities, they should invariably be collected, but the roots should be dried separately in an oven at a moderate heat. Roots and fruits too bulky to be placed on the sheets of the herbarium may be conveniently arranged in glass-covered boxes confined in drawers. The best and most effective mode of drying specimens is learned only by experience, different species requiring special treatment, and some presenting several peculiarities. The chief points to be attended to are to have a plentiful supply of botanical drying paper, so as to be able to use about six sheets for each specimen, to change the paper at intervals of six to twelve hours, and to turn each leaf or flower with another, and to increase the pressure applied only in proportion to the dryness of the specimen. To preserve the colour of flowers pledges of cotton wool, which prevent bruising, should be introduced between them, or, as, if the stamens are thick and succulent, as in *Digitalis*, between these and the corolla. A flower dissected and gummed on the sheets will often retain the colour which it is impossible to preserve in a crowded inflorescence. Before placing in a screw press, should that be used, the whole or the dead or some other suitable weight should be laid upon the top of the pile of specimens, so as to keep up a continuous pressure. Succulent specimens, as many of the *Cruciferae*, and sedges and various other *Cyperaceae*, require to be killed by immersion in boiling water before being placed in drying paper, or, instead of becoming dry, they will grow between the sheets. When, as with some plants like *Persea*, the thick dead stems are liable to cause the leaves to wrinkle in drying by removing the pressure from them, small pieces of bibulous paper or cotton wool may be placed upon the leaves near their point of attachment to the stem. When a number of specimens have to be submitted to pressure, ventilation is secured by means of slanes corresponding in size to the drying paper, and composed of strips of wood or wire laid across each other so as to form a kind of network. Another mode of drying is to keep the specimens in a box of dry sand in a warm place for ten or twelve hours, and then press them in drying paper. A third method consists in placing the specimen within bibulous paper, and enclosing the whole between two plates of closely patterned zinc supported in a wooden frame; the zinc plates are then drawn close together by means of straps,

and suspended before a fire until the drying is effected. By the last two methods the colour of the flower may be well preserved. When the leaves are finely divided, as in *Cornus*, much trouble will be experienced in lifting a half-dried specimen from one paper to another, but the plant may be placed in a sheet of thin blotting paper, and the sheet containing the plant may be placed in a plate, and then be moved. Thin straw coloured paper, such as is used for biscuit bags, may be conveniently employed by travellers unable to carry a quantity of bibulous paper. It offers the advantage of fitting closely to thick succulent specimens, and of resisting drying. A light but strong netting, to which pressure by means of straps can be applied, and a few quires of this paper, if the paper be changed night and morning, will be usually sufficient to dry all except very succulent plants. When a specimen is too large for one sheet, and it is necessary, in order to show its habit, &c., to dry the whole of it, it may be divided into two or three portions, and each placed on a separate sheet for drying. Specimens may be judged to be dry when they no longer cause a cold sensation when applied to the cheek, or assume a rigidity not evident in the initial stages of preparation.

Each class of low-lying cryptogamic plants requires special treatment for the herbarium. Marine algae are usually mounted on tough smooth white cutlery paper in the following manner. Growing specimens of good colour and in fruit are if possible selected and cleaned as much as is practicable from adhering foreign particles, either in the sea or on a rocky pool. Some species rapidly change colour, and cause the decay of any others with which they come in contact. This is especially the case with the *Edmon* and *Leptocarpus* and *Ulva*, which should therefore be brought home in a separate vessel. In mounting the specimen is floated out in a flat white dish containing sea water, so that foreign matter may be detached, and a piece of paper of suitable size is placed upon it, and held either by the fingers of the left hand or by a palette. It is then pinned, in order closely to show the mode of branching, and is spread out as naturally as possible with the right hand. If the specimen possess a bone knitting needle answers well for the coarse species, and a camel's hair pencil for the more delicate ones. The paper with the specimen is then carefully removed from the water by sliding it over the edge of the dish so as to draw it up as much as possible. If during this process part of the specimen is torn, the beauty of the specimen may be restored by dipping the edge into water, so as to float out the part and allow it to subside naturally on the paper. The paper, which is now dry, is then laid on bibulous paper for a few minutes to absorb as much as possible of the superfluous moisture. When freed from excess of water, as laid on a sheet of thick white blotting paper, and a piece of smooth veined paper is placed upon it (unvarnished calico, on account of its "facing," adheres to the sea weed). Another sheet of blotting paper is then laid over it, and a number of similar specimens being found into a pile, the whole is submitted to pressure, the paper being changed every hour or two at first. The pressure is increased, and the papers are changed less frequently as the specimens become dry, which usually takes place in thirty six hours. Some species, especially *Desmarestia*, *Leptocarpus*, and *Ulva*, contract so much in drying that without strong pressure the edges of the paper become puckered. Other species of a gelatinous nature, like *Desmarestia* and *Dactylopusia*, may be allowed to dry on the paper, but they will need not be submitted to pressure, so long as they present a gelatinous appearance. Large coarse algae, such, for instance, as the *Phaeococcus* and *Laminaria* us, do not readily adhere to paper, and require soaking for some time in fresh water before being pressed. The less robust species, such as *Sphaerococcus vagans*, which do not adhere well to paper, may be made to do so by brushing them over either with milk carefully skummed, or with a liquid formed by placing sugar (4 oz.) and water (1½ oz.) in a warm place, and the liquid, when it has become thick, being kept continuing cold water, heating until solution is effected, and then adding 1 oz. of rectified spirits of wine, the whole is next stirred together, and when cold is kept in a stoppered bottle. A few drops of this mixture is mixed to each specimen, and applied by means of a camel's hair brush to the under side of the specimen, which is then laid neatly on paper. For the more delicate species, such as the *Callithamnion* and *Desmarestia*, it is an elegant plan to place the whole specimen in a small glass slide, carefully sealed out in water, or in a piece of mica of the size of an ordinary microscopical slide, and allow it to dry. The plant can then be at any time examined under the microscope without injuring the mounted specimen. A few species, however, which form a mass of small plants, such as *Palmella ovata*, may be placed in a vessel of water, while after a time they float like a scum, the earthy matter settling down to the bottom, and may then be mounted by dipping a mass of blotting paper into the water, and by drawing it out, the water may be mounted by laying a position on a silver coin placed on a piece of paper in a plate, and pouring in water until the edge of the coin is just covered. The alga by its own peculiar arrangement will soon form a spreading circle, perfectly free from dirt around the coin, which may then be removed.



impositions,  $A$  and  $B$ , then either these are reducible to one, which is the true quality, or they are not, when each is conditioned by the other and their position is no longer absolute. (3) All quantitative conceptions are excluded, since quantities are qualitative, and their incompatibility with simplicity. (4) But these may be a plurality of "realities," albeit the meta conception of being can act as nothing as such. This doctrine has developed in the first cardinal point of Heibaut's system, and has obtained for it the name of "plurivale realism."

The contradictions he finds in the common sense conception of substance, or of "a thing with several attributes," will now become obvious. Let us take some thing, say  $A$ , having  $n$  attributes,  $a, b, c$ . We are led to posit each of these because each is present in intuition. But in conceiving  $A$  we make, not  $n$  positions, but only one  $n$ -position, but only one position simply, for common sense removes the absolute position from its original source, sensation. So when we ask, "What is the one posited?" we are told—the possessor of  $a, b, c$ —or in other words, their seat or substance. But if so, then  $A$ , as a real, being simple, must— $a$ , simultaneously it must be  $b$ , and so on. Now this would be possible if  $a, b, c$  were but "contingent aspects" of  $A$ , as  $e, g, 2$ ,  $4, 6, 8, 4+3+1$  are contingent aspects of  $B$ . Such, of course, is not the case, and so we have  $n$  many conditions,  $n$  these are attributes, for we must say  $A$  is  $a$ , is not  $a, c$  is not  $b, c$ . These must then, according to the method of relations, be several  $A$ s. For let us assume  $A_1, A_2, A_3, A_4, \dots$  for  $b, c, \dots$  and so on for the rest. But now what relation can time be among these several  $A$ s, which will restore to us the unity of our original  $A$  or substance? There is but one, we must assume that the first  $A$  of every radius is identical with the same  $A$  in every radius. By way of concrete illustration Heibaut instances "the common observation that the properties of things exist only under certain conditions, we have really a series of two, but colour is nothing without light, and nothing without eyes. They sound, but only in a vibrating medium, and for healthy ears. Colour and tone present the special case of influence, but on looking closely we find that colour and tone are things but rather presuppose a communion among several." The result then is briefly thus—In place of the one absolute position, which in some unthinkable way the common understanding substitutes for the absolute positions of the  $n$  attributes, we have really a series of two or more positions for each attribute, every sense, however, beginning with the sense (as it were, control) real (hence the unity of substance in a given radius), and which is being continued by different radii (hence the plurality and dilution of attributes in unity of substance). Where there is the appearance of influence, therefore, there is always a plurality of reals, no such conclusion to substance as attribute or condition can be admitted at all. Substantially is impossible without causality, and to this as its true correlative we now turn.

The common sense conception of change involves at bottom the same contradiction of opposing qualities in one real. The same  $A$  that was  $a, b, c$  becomes  $a, b, d$ , and thus, which expects these things upon us, proves on reflection unthinkable. The meta-physical supplementation is also fundamentally as before. Since  $a$  depended on a series of reals  $A_1 + A_2 + A_3 + \dots$  in connexion with  $A$ , and  $d$  may be said similarly to depend on a series  $A_4 + A_5 + A_6 + \dots$ , then the change from  $a$  to  $d$  means, not that the content of  $A$  has actually changed, but that it is now in connexion with  $A_4, A_5, A_6$ , and no longer in connexion with  $A_1, A_2, A_3$ .

But to think a number of reals "in connexion" (*Zusammenhang*) will not suffice as an explanation of phenomena, something or other must happen when they are in connexion, what is it? The answer to this question is the second large point of Heibaut's theoretical philosophy. What "actually happens" as distinct from all that seems to happen, when two reals  $A$  and  $B$  are together is, first, causality, and then to differ in quality, they tend to disturb each other to the extent of that difference, at the same time that each preserves itself intact by reacting, as it were, the other's disturbance. And so by coming mutually into different radii the "self preservation" of  $A$  will vary accordingly,  $A$  remaining the same through all, just as, by way of illustration, hydrogen remains the same in water and in ammonia, or as the same line may be now a normal and now a tangent. But to think this process in the qualities of the reals  $A, B$ , we must substitute for these symbols others, which, though only "contingent aspects" of  $A$  and  $B$ ,  $e, f$ , representing their relations, not themselves, yet like similar devices in mathematics enable thought to advance. Thus we may put  $A = \alpha + \beta - \gamma$ ,  $B = m + n + \gamma$ ,  $\gamma$  then represents the character of the self-preservation in this case, and  $\alpha + \beta + m + n$  represents all that could be observed by a spectator, and which we know the sample qualities, but was himself involved in the relations of  $A$  to  $B$ , and such is exactly our position.

Having thus done what really is and what actually happens, our philosopher proceeds next to explain theoretically the objective semblance (*der objektive Schein*) that results from these. But if this construction is to be truly objective,  $\alpha, \beta$ , valid for all intel-

ligences, ontology must furnish us with a clue. This we have in the forms of Space, Time, and Motion which we involved whenever we think the reals as being in, or coming into, connexion, and the process of these forms then cannot be merely the products of our psychological mechanism, though they may be determined in these. Meanwhile let us call them "intelligible," as being valid for all who comprehend the real and actual by thought, although no such form as presentation may be in the mind of the subject. The elementary spatial relation Heibaut conceives to be "the contiguity (*Aneinander*) of two points," so that every "pure and independent line" is discrete. But an investigation of dependence, as we have seen, is often inconceivable, forces us to adopt the contradictory action of mutually overlapping,  $e, f$ , divisible points, or in other words, the conception of Continuity. But the contradiction we cannot immediately by the method of relations, because it does not involve anything real, and in fact a necessary outcome of an "intelligible" form, the fiction of continuity is valid for the "objective semblances," and no more to be discarded than  $\sqrt{-1}$ . By its help we are enabled to comprehend what actually happens among reals to produce the appearance of matter. When three or more reals are together, each distinct hence and self-preservation will (in general) be ruptured,  $e, f$ , of less intensity than when only two reals are together. But "objective semblance" corresponds with reality, the spatial or external relations of the reals in this case must, therefore, tally with their inner or actual states. And if the conservations been perfect, the coexistence in space would have been complete, and the group of reals would have been inviolable, or had the several reals been simply contiguous,  $e, f$ , without connexion, then, as nothing could actually have happened, nothing could appear. As it is we suppose  $A$  to be a series of reals manifesting attractive and repulsive forces, attraction corresponding to the tendency of the self-preservation to become perfect, repulsion to the frustration of that tendency. Motion, even more evidently than space, implicates the contradictory conception of continuity, and this, therefore, is a real predicate, though valid as an intelligible form and necessary to the comprehension of the objective semblance. For each of the reals as such is a self-preservation, and thus is entering into connexions. This we can only do by conceiving them as originally moving through intelligible space in rectilinear paths and with uniform velocities. For such motion no cause need be supposed, motion, in fact, is no more a state of the moving body than rest is, both also being but relations, with which, therefore, the real has no concern. The changes in this motion, however, for which we have no explanation, are, as we have seen, the self-preservation of the self-preservation that actually occurs when reals meet. Further, by means of such motion these actual occurrences, which are in themselves timeless, fall for an observer in a definite time—a time which becomes continuous through the partial coincidence of events.

But in all this it has been assumed that we are spectators of the objective semblance, it remains to make good this assumption, or, in other words, to show the possibility of knowledge, this is the problem of which Heibaut terms Epistemology, and forms the transition from metaphysics to psychology. Here, again, a contradictory conception blocks the way, that viz., of the ego as the identity of knowing and being, and as such, a stronghold of idealism. The contradiction becomes more evident when the ego is defined to be a subject (and so a real) that is its own object. As real and not merely formal, this conception of the ego is amenable to the method of relations. The solution this method furnishes is, that there are several objects which mutually modify each other, and so constitute that ego we take for the presented real. But to explain this modification is the business of psychology, a branch more than metaphysics, and which is necessarily unknown, and that, therefore, the idealist's theory of knowledge is unsound. But though the sample quality of the subject or soul is beyond knowledge, we know what actually happens, and we know the self-preservation of other's reals, for its self-preservation then as what we call sensations. And these sensations are the sole material of our knowledge; but they are not given to us as a chaos but in definite groups and series, whence we come to know the objects, and the objects, though themselves unknown, our sensations compel us to posit absolutely.

In his *Psychology* Heibaut rejects altogether the doctrine of mental faculties as one refuted by his metaphysics, and tries to show that all psychical phenomena whatever result from the action and interaction of elementary ideas or presentations (*Psychisierungen*). The soul bears one and simple, its separate acts are self-preservation or primary presentations must be simple too, and its several presentations must become united together. And this they can do at once and completely when, as in the case, for example, with the several attributes of an object, they are not of disparate quality. But otherwise that a ensues a conflict in which the opposed presentations combat themselves like forces and mutually suppress or obscure each other. The act of presentation (*Fortstellung*) them-

<sup>1</sup> Hence Heibaut gives the name Synecology to this branch of metaphysics, instead of the usual one, Cosmology.

becomes partly transformed into an effort, and its product, the *vitalis*, becomes in the same proportion less and less intense till a position of equilibrium is reached, and then at length the *unanimis* coincide. We have thus a statics, and a mechanics of mind which investigate respectively the conditions of equilibrium and of movement among presentations. In the statics two magnitudes have to be determined—(1) the amount of the suppression or inhibition (*Hebungsgrösse*), and (2) the ratio in which this is shared among the opposing presentations. The first must obviously be  $\propto$  as small as possible, thus for two totally opposed presentations  $a$  and  $b$ , of which  $a$  is the greater, the *inhibitiones*  $= b$ . For a given degree of opposition this balance will be obtained between the competing presentations in the inverse ratio to their strength. When its commensurate inhibition  $= 0$ , a presentation is said to be on the threshold of consciousness, for on a small diminution of the inhibition the "effort" will become actual presentation in the same proportion. Such total exclusion from consciousness is, however, manifestly impossible with only two presentations, though with three or a greater number the residual value of one may even be negative. The first and simplest law in psychology, mechanics of statics to the "sinking" of inhibited presentations. As the presentations yield to the pressure, the pressure itself diminishes, so that the velocity of sinking decreases, i.e., we have the equation,  $(S - e) dt = da$ , where  $S$  is the total *inhibitiones*, and  $e$  the intensity actually inhibited after the time  $t$ . Hence  $t = \log \frac{S}{S - e}$ , and  $\sigma = S(1 - e^{-t})$ .

From this law it follows, for example, that equilibrium is never quite obtained for those presentations, which continue above the threshold of consciousness, while the rest which are *inhibited* or *conscious* are very speedily driven beyond the threshold. More important is the law according to which a presentation freed from inhibition and rising away into consciousness tends to raise the other presentations with which it is commensurate. Suppose two presentations  $a$  and  $b$  united by the *inhibition*  $\mu$ , then the amount of  $\mu/a$  "help" to  $b$  is  $\mu$ , the portion of which appropriated by  $b$  is given by the ratio  $\mu/b$ , and thus the mutual help is  $\frac{\mu^2}{b}$ .

But after a time  $t$ , when a portion of  $\mu$  represented by  $w$  has been actually brought into consciousness, the help afforded in the next instant will be found by the equation

$$\frac{dp}{dt} = \frac{e - w}{a} = da,$$

from which by integration we have the value of  $w$ ,

$$w = a(1 - e^{-\frac{t}{a}}).$$

So that if there are several  $\mu$  connected with  $p$  by smaller and smaller parts, there will be a definite "series" in order in which they will be revived by  $p$ , and on this fact Herbart rests all the phenomena of the so-called faculty of memory, the development of spatial and temporal forms, and much besides. Emotions and volitions, he holds, are not directly self-presentation of the soul, so that presentations are, but variable states of such presentations resulting from their interaction when above the threshold of consciousness. Thus when some presentations tend to force a presentation into consciousness, and others at the same time tend to drive it out, that presentation is the seat of painful feeling, on the other hand, its entrance is favoured by all pleasurable results. Denies are presentations struggling into consciousness against hindrances, and when accompanied by the suppression of success, become volitions. Transcendental freedom of will in Kant's sense is an impossibility. Self-consciousness is the result of an interaction essentially the same in kind as that which takes place when a comparatively simple presentation finds the field of consciousness occupied by a long formed and well consolidated "mass" of presentations—a *long* formed and well sent into the field, the theatre, &c., which promptly inhibit the isolated *self*, call *self*, above all, such a central mass, Herbart seeks to show by what great ingenuity and detail how to themselves is not. What we call *self* by the body, then by the seat of ideas and desires, and finally by that first personal self which includes the past and resolves on "completing the figure." But at every stage the actual constituents of this "completion" are variable, the concrete presentation of *self* is never twice the same. And, therefore, finding no satisfaction in any but the most concrete facts, contingent, we abstain from the position from which such occupies it, and so reach the speculative notion of the pure Ego.

*Efficiency* elaborates the "ideas" involved in the expression of taste called forth by the situations of object which acquire for them the attribution of beauty or the reverse. The beautiful (*schön*) is

1. Thus, taking the case above supposed, the share of the *inhibitiones* falling to the smaller presentation  $b$  is the fourth term of the proportion  $a + b : a :: b : \frac{ab}{a+b}$ , and so  $b$ 's remainder is  $b - \frac{ab}{a+b} = \frac{b^2}{a+b}$ , which only  $= 0$  when  $a = \infty$ .

to be carefully distinguished from the allied conceptions of the useful and the pleasant, which vary with time, place, and person, whereas beauty is predicated absolutely and involuntarily by all who have attained the right standpoint. Ethics, which is but one branch of aesthetics, although the chief deals with such relations among volitions (*Willensbestimmungen*) as thus unconditionally place or displace. These relations Herbart finds to be reducible to five, which do not admit of further simplification, and corresponding to them are as many moral ideas (*ethische Begriffe*), viz—(1) *Internal Freedom*, the underlying relation being that of the individual's will to his judgment of it; (2) *Perfection*, the relation being that of his several volitions to each other in respect of intensity, variety, and concentration; (3) *Disinterestedness*, being in between his own will and the thought of another's; (4) *Right*, in case of actual conflict with another; and (5) *Justice*, or *Equity*, for intended good or evil done. The idea of a final society, a system of rewards and punishments, a system of ultimate taxation, a system of culture, and a "unanimous society" all corresponding to the ideas of law, equity, benevolence, perfection, and internal freedom respectively, itself when we take account of the number of individuals. Virtue is the perfect conformity of the will with the moral laws, of this the single virtues need not special expressions. The conception of duty arises from the existence of hindrance to the attainment of virtue. A general scheme of principles of conduct is possible, but the subsumption of special cases under them must remain in title of fact. The application of these to things as they are with a view to the resolution of the moral ideas is moral sociology (*ethische Soziologie*), of which the chief divisions are Paedology and Politics.

In *Theory* Herbart build the argument from design to be valid for divine reality as for humanity, and to justify the belief in a responsible deity, concerning which he holds that no religion is metaphysically attainable nor on practical grounds defensible.

Among the post-Kantian philosophers Herbart doubtless ranks next to Hegel in importance, and this without taking into account his very great contributions to the science of psychology. His disciples speak of them as the "exact philosophy," and the term well expresses their master's chief excellence and the character of the chief influence he has exerted upon succeeding thinkers of his own and other schools. His characteristics are his method of his constructions, indeed for exactness and penetration of thought he is quite on a level with Hume and Kant. His merits in this respect, however, can only be appreciated by those who have followed him. But we are most of all indebted to Herbart for his continuous advance psychology has been enabled to make, thanks to his first full treatment of it, albeit as yet but few among the many who have appropriated and improved his master's system do admit his metaphysical and mathematical foundations. (J. W. W.)

HERBELOT, BARTHELEMY D' (1659-1695), Orientalist, was born December 4, 1635, at Paris. As soon as he had completed the ordinary course in classics and philosophy at the university of his native city, he devoted himself to the study of the Oriental languages, and went to Italy to perfect himself in them by converse with the Orientals who frequented its seaports. There he made the acquaintance of his fellow-servants Lucas Holstenius and Leo Allatius, and attracted the favourable notice of the cardinals Gualdimi and Bambeini. On his return to France after a year and a half, he was received into the house of Fouquet, superintendent of finance, who gave him a pension of 1500 livres. Losing this on the death of Fouquet in 1661, he was appointed secretary and interpreter of Eastern languages to the king. A few years later he again visited Italy, when the grand duke Ferdinand II of Tuscany presented him with a large number of valuable Oriental MSS, and tried to attach him to his court. Herbolt, however, was recalled to France by Colbert, and received from the king a pension equal to the one he had lost. In 1692 he succeeded D'Arvigne in the chair of Syriac, in the Collège de France. He died at Paris, December 8, 1695. His great work is the *Bibliothèque Orientale, ou catalogue universel contenant tout ce qui fait connaître les peuples de l'Orient*, which occupied him nearly all his life, and was published in 1697 by Galland. It is based on the immense Arabic dictionary of Hagi Khalfa, of which indeed it is largely an abridged translation, but it also contains the substance of a vast number of other Arabic and Turkish compilations and manuscripts. With all his learning, the author seems to have been deficient in critical

signity, and there is consequently a want of minute accuracy in many of its details, and of harmony between its various parts. It is, however, even yet the one available source for much information to others than Oriental scholars, and as such it retains its importance.

The *Bibliothèque* has been reprinted at Maccaboth (fol 1776), and at the Hague (4 vols 4to, 1777-99). The latter edition is enriched with the contributions of Schulz, Rusko, and others. Herbert's other works, none of which have been published, comprise an *Oriental Anthology*, and an *Arabic, Persian, Turkish, and Latin Dictionary*.

HERBERT, GEORGE (1593-1633), one of the best of English religious poets, was born near the town of Montgomery on the 3d of April 1593. He was a brother of Lord Herbert of Cheshire, noticed below. Educated privately till the age of twelve, he was then sent to Westminster School, and in 1608 he became a student at Trinity College, Cambridge, where he was made B.A. in 1611, M.A. and major fellow of the college in 1615, and orator for the university in 1619. In his capacity as orator he was several times brought into contact with King James. About the same time also he appeared as the champion of Anglicanism against Andrew Melville, the famous Scotch Presbyterian. He numbered among his friends Dr. Donne, Sir Henry Wotton, Isaac Walton, Bishop Andrews, and Francis Bacon, who consulted Herbert about several of his works, and dedicated to him his translation of the Psalms. During his youth he was a courtier, dancing attendance on King James, and "enjoying his genteel humour for clothes", and the king rewarded his attentions by the gift of a sapphire worth £120 a year. The death of his patrons the duke of Richmond, the marquis of Hamilton, and King James, approaching ill-health, and the influence of his mother finally induced him, not without a struggle, to take holy orders. In July 1626 he was appointed prebendary of Leyton Ecclesia, in the county of Huntingdon. Shortly before his induction (1630) to the parsonage of Bemerton, near Salisbury, he married Miss Jane Danvers after three days' acquaintance. Mr. Danvers had been set on the marriage for a long time, and had often spoken of his daughter Jane to Herbert, and "so much commended Mr. Herbert to her, that Jane became so much a Platonic as to fall in love with Mr. Herbert unseen." The story of the poet's life at Bemerton, as told by Walton, is one of the most exquisite pictures in literary biography. He devoted much time to explaining the meaning of the various parts of the Prayer-Book, and held services twice every day, at which many of the parishioners attended, and some "let their plough rest when Mr. Herbert's service bell rung to prayer, that they might also offer their devotions to God with him." Next to Christianity itself he loved the English Church. He was passionately fond of music, and usually went twice a week to attend the cathedral service at Salisbury. Walton illustrates Herbert's kindness to the poor by many touching anecdotes. He had not been three years in Bemerton when he succumbed to ill health. He died in 1633.

Herbert's works are—*The Temple* (1633), a few miscellaneous poems, a collection of sacred music called *Præmeditationes* (1646), and *The Country Parson*, which did not appear till 1692. *The Temple* is a collection of religious poems marked by unity of sentiment and imagination. The chief faults of the book are obscurity, verbal conceits, and a forced imagery which shows itself in grotesque puns, odd metaphors, and occasional want of taste. In spite of these drawbacks, the quaint beauty of Herbert's style and his genuine poetical feeling give *The Temple* a high place in literature. The following poems are the gems of the collection—"The Church-Porch," "The Agony," "Sin," "Sunday," "Virtue," "Man," "The British Church," "The Gyn," "The Collar," "The Pilgrimage," "The Flower," "Anson," and "The Elm." The finest of all is his poem on "Man," which is Miltonic in its sublimity of conception, and shows how poets, in their loftier moods, often anticipate the discoveries of science and the most far-reaching speculations of philosophy. Herbert and Keble are the poets of Anglican

theology. No book is fuller of devotion to the Church of England than *The Temple*. No poem in our language exhibits more of the spirit of true Christianity. Every page is marked by transient sincerity, and reflects the beautiful character of "holy George Herbert."

Among recent editions of Herbert's works the following may be mentioned—*Works in Prose and Verse*, with life by Isaac W. Hutton, and notes by S. T. Coleridge, 1846; Gilliland's edition, in his *Library of the British Poets*, 1868; Wallcut's edition, 1866; Professor Nichol's edition, 1868, and the Aldine edition by the Rev. Dr. A. B. Grosart. For further information consult Walton's *Life*, and England's *Antiquary*, by George MacDonald, 1871.

HERBERT, HENRY WILLIAM (1807-1858), novelist and writer on sports, son of the Hon. and Rev. William Herbert, dean of Manchester, a son of the first earl of Carnarvon, was born in London, April 7, 1807. He was educated at Eton and at Caius College, Cambridge, where he graduated M.A. in 1828. Having become involved in debt he emigrated to America, and from 1831 to 1839 was teacher of Greek in a private school in New York. In 1833 he commenced the *American Monthly Magazine*, which he edited till 1835. In 1834 he published his first novel, *The Brothers*, a *Tale of the Fronde*, which was followed by a number of others, all of them obtaining a certain degree of popularity. He was also successful in a series of historical studies, such as *The Cavaliers of England*, *The Knights of England*, *France, and Scotland*, *The Chevaliers of France*, and *The Captains of the Old World*, and wrote numerous contributions to magazines, but he is best known for his works on sporting, published by him under the pseudonym of Frank Forester. These include *The Field Sports of the United States and British Provinces* (1849), *Frank Forester and his Friends* (1849), *The Fish and Fishing of the United States* (1850), *The Young Sportsman's Complete Manual*, and *The Horse and Horsemanship in the United States and British Provinces of North America* (1855). Herbert was a man of varied accomplishments, but of somewhat dissipated habits. He died by his own hand at New York, May 17, 1858.

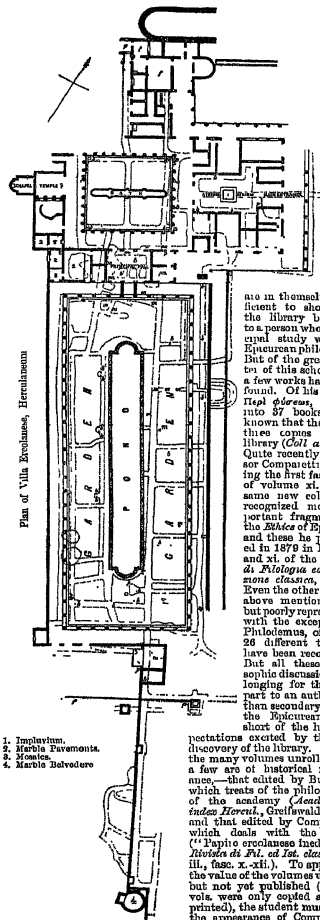
HERBERT, SIR THOMAS (1606-1682), traveller and author, was born at York in 1606. Several of his ancestors were aldermen and merchants in that city, and they could trace their connexion with the great Herbert family represented by the earl of Pembroke. His grandfather, Alderman Herbert, who died in 1614, left him real estate of considerable value. He went to Oxford in 1621, and became a commoner of Jesus College, but afterwards removed to Cambridge at the invitation of his maternal brother, Dr. Ambrose Akeley. Having gone to London, he was introduced to the earl of Pembroke, through whose influence he obtained an appointment in the suite of Sir Dromore Cotton, who was about to leave as ambassador for Persia in company with Sir Robert Shirley. Sailing in March 1627, they visited the Cape, Madagascar, Goa, and Surat, having landed at Gombroon, they travelled inland to Ashaoff, and thence to Casheen, where both the chiefs of the expedition died. Herbert reached England again in 1628, and in 1630, to his great disappointment, he parted the earl of Pembroke died suddenly. After this he travelled on the Continent for more than a year. From his return in 1631 till about two years after his marriage in 1632 he retained his ambition for court favour, but failing in this he retired, probably to his estate of Trimin in Monmouthshire, till the outbreak of the civil war, when he sided with the parliament. In 1646 he was appointed to attend the king with his other servants. Becoming a devoted royalist, he continued with his majesty during the last two eventful years of his life, and at the Restoration he was rewarded with the title of baronet (1660). He resided at Westminster till the great plague, when he returned to York and bought Fetebergate House, where he died on the 1st March 1682.











Plan of Villa Ercolano, Heracleum

1. Impluvium.
2. Marble Pavements.
3. Fountains.
4. Marble Balvedere.

are in themselves sufficient to show that the library belonged to a person whose principal study was the Epicurean philosophy. But of the great mass of this school only a few works have been found. Of his treatise *Περὶ βίτης*, divided into 37 books, it is known that there were three copies in the library (*Gell. alt. vi*). Quite recently Professor Compagnotti, studying the first fasciculus of volume xi. of the same work collection, recognized most important fragments of the *Stoica* of Epicurus, and these he published in 1879 in Nos. ix. and xi. of the *Rivista di Filologia ed Istruzione classica*, Turin. Even the other authors above mentioned as but poorly represented, with the exception of Philodemus, of whom 26 different treatises have been recognized. But all these philosophical discussions, belonging for the most part to an author less than secondary among the Epicureans, fall short of the high expectations excited by the first discovery of the library. Among the many volumes unrolled only a few are of historical importance,—that edited by Bucheler, which treats of the philosophers of the academy (*Acad. phil. index Heron.*, Göttingen, 1890), and that edited by Compagnotti, which deals with the Stoics (*"Papiri ercolanesi inediti," in Rivista di Fil. ed. let. class. anno III, fasc. x-xii.*). To appreciate the value of the volumes unrolled, but not yet published (for 146 vols. were only copied and not printed), the student must await the appearance of Compagnotti's

paper, "Relazione sui papiri ercolanesi," read in the Reale Acad. dei Lincei, which will appear in the "Proceedings" of the academy for 1879. Contributions of some value have been made to the study of Heracleum fragments by Spongel ("Die Hercl. Rollen," in *Philologus*, 1863, suppl. vol.), and Compagnotti (*Hercl. Studien*, Leipzig, 1865-66, cf. *Zeitschr. f. klass. Philol.*, 1867-1872). There are in the library some volumes written in Latin, which, according to Boet (*Notae sur les manuscrits trouvés à Herculaneum*, Amsterdam, 1843), were found tied up in a bundle apart. Of these we know 18, but they are all so damaged that hardly any of them can be deciphered. One with verses relating to the battle of Actium is believed to belong to a poem of Virgilian. The numerical preponderance of the works of Philodemus led some people to believe that this had been the library of that philosopher. But quite recently Professor Compagnotti has come to the conclusion that the library was collected by Lucius Pius Cessantius (see *Tempi e in Regione Sotterranea dal Vesuvio*, Naples, 1879, p. 150 sq.). A new support to the theory of Professor Compagnotti is furnished by the eugraphy fragment edited by De Petra (*ib.*, p. 261 sq.); but Dr. Mai takes up a counter position,—he is the first to do so,—and shows that the fragment must have another interpretation (*Phil. Inst. de Corr. Arch.*, 1880). Professor De Petra has also published the official notices upon the antiquities unearthed in the sumptuous villa, giving the plan executed by Weber and executed by chance by the director of excavations, Michele Ruggiero. This plan, which is here reproduced from De Petra's monograph,<sup>1</sup> is the only satisfactory document for the topography of Heracleum, for the plan of the theatre published in the *Bibliotheca archaeologica italica* (Naples, 1881, i. p. 63, tab. m.) was executed in 1747, when the excavations were not completed. And even for the history of the "finds" made in the *Villa Sotterranea*, the necessity for further studies makes itself felt, since there is a lack of agreement between the accounts given by Alenberis and Weber and those communicated to the *Philosophical Transactions* (London, vol. x.) by Cumilio Paderni, conservator of the Portici Museum. It is hoped, therefore, that among the papers recovered by Ruggiero there may be others which will shed light on what remains dark in the topography of the buried city.

Among the other works relating to Heracleum, in addition to those already quoted, may be mentioned De Brosses, *Lettre sur l'état actuel de la ville souterraine d'Hercule*, Paris, 1760; Seignosse, *Recherches sur la découverte de l'antiquité d'Hercule*, Paris, 1760; Yvenden, 1770; David, *Les antiquités d'Herculaneum*, Paris, 1780; D'Ancona Gaetano, *Prospetto storico-fisico degli scavi di Ercolano e di Pompei*, Naples, 1803; Vassetti, *Primo Sotterraneo di Ercolano*, Rome, 1745; and Romanelli, *Piaggio ad Ercolano*, Naples, 1811. A full list will be found in vol. i. of *Museo Borbonico*, Naples, 1824, pp. 1-11. (F. B.)

**HERCULES** (Old Latin, *Hercules*, *Hercles*) is the Latinized form of the mythical *Heraclēs*, the chief national hero of Hellas, who has part in all the most important myths of the generation before that which embraces the Homeric warriors at Troy. The name *Ἡρακλῆς* is compounded of *Hērā*, the goddess and sister of *Δῖος*, "glory." The thoroughly national character of *Hēraklēs* is shown by his being the mythical ancestor of the Dorian dynastic tribe, while revered by Ionian Athens, Lelegian Opus, and Aeolo-Phenician Thebes, and closely associated with the Achaean heroes Peleus and Telamon. The Perseid Alcmene, wife of Amphitryon of Tiryns, was *Hēraklēs*'s mother, Zeus his father (see *ALCMENE*). After his putative father he is often called Amphitryonides, and Alcides too, after the Perseid Alcmene, father of Amphitryon. His mother and her husband lived at Thebes in exile as guests of King Creon. By the craft of Hera, who, for rough life, his birth was delayed, and that of Eurytheus, son of Sthenobolus of Argos, hastened, Zeus having in effect sworn that the elder of the two should rule the realm of Perseus, Hera sent two serpents to destroy the new-born *Hēraklēs*, but he strangled them. He was trained in all manly accomplishments by heroes of the highest renown in each, until he slew Linus, his instructor in music, with the lyre. Thereupon he was sent to tend Amphitryon's oxen, and at this period slew the lion of Mount Cithæron. By the suggestion of the Minyans of Orchomenus he won Creon's

<sup>1</sup> The diagram shows the arrangement and proportions of the Villa Ercolano, 2 indicating pictures, 3 bronzes, 4 marble statues or busts, 5 papyrus, and 7 fountains. The dotted lines show the course taken by the excavations, which began at the lower part of the plan.

daughter, Megara, to wife. Her children by him he killed in a frenzy induced by Hera. After punishment he was sent by the Pythia to save Eurythius. The episode of Eurythius on the *Chioses of Hercules* between pleasure and virtue was founded on his obedience to the oracle. Thus began the cycle of the twelve labours —

- 1 Wrestling with the Nemean lion
- 2 Destruction of the Lernaean hydra
- 3 Capture of the Alcmena hind (a day in an)
- 4 Capture of the boar of Erymanthus, while chasing which he fought the Centaurs and killed his female Chian and Pholus, this homelike leading to Demeter's institution of *symposia*
- 5 Cleansing of the stables of Augeas
- 6 Shooting the Stymphalian birds
- 7 Capture of the Cretan bull subsequently slain by Theseus at Marathon
- 8 Capture of the mauling mares of the Thracian Diomedes
- 9 Seizure of the girdle of Hippolyte, queen of the Amazons
- 10 Binding the oven of Geyraon from Erythra in the far west, which episode involved many adventures in the coast lands of the Mediterranean, and the setting up of the "Pillars of Hercules" at the Straits of Gibraltar
- 11 Binding the golden apples from the garden of the Hesperides
- 12 Carrying Cerberus from Hades to the upper world

Most of the labours lead to various adventures called *περίεργα*. Their common order and selection, due to Apollodorus and Diodorus Siculus, are later than Euripides, who omits 5, 6, and 7, and seems to count the victory over Cycnus in Philoctetes, the bearing of the heavens for Atlas, and the freeing of the seas from dangerous monsters. In Homer we read of unspecified labours for Eurystheus, of the struggle with the sea monster of the Troad, and of what Herodotus mentions labours 1, 2, and 10, and the freeing of Prometheus. It is a mistake to suppose that legends of Hercules' struggles with monstrous embodiments of evil are not of high antiquity, though we cannot say positively which are old and which comparatively late. Some enumerations give only 10 labours. The late lists probably rest partly on astronomical ideas.

On Hercules' return to Thebes he gave his wife Megara to his friend and character Iolaus, son of Iphicles, and by beating Eurytus of Cephallenia and his sons in a shooting match won a claim to the hand of his daughter Iole, whose family, however, except his brother Iphitus, withheld their consent to the union. Iphitus persuaded Hercules to search for Eurythius's lost oxen, but was killed by him at Thyrea in a frenzy. He consulted the Pythia about a cure for the consequent madness, but she declined to answer him. Whereupon he seized the oracular tripod, and so entered upon a contest with Apollo, which Zeus stopped by sending a flash of lightning between the combatants. The Pythia then sent him to serve the Lydian queen Omphale. He then with Telamon, Peleus, and Theseus took Troy. He next helped the gods in the great battle against the giants. He took part in the Argonautic voyage and the Calydonian boar hunt, made war against Augeas, and against Nestor and the Pylians, and restored Tyndareus to the sovereignty of Lacedaemon. He sustained many single combats, one very famous struggle being the wrestling with the Libyan Antaeus, son of Poseidon and Gaia (Earth), who had to be held in the air, as he grew stronger every time he touched his mother, Earth. Hercules withstood Ares, Poseidon, and Hera, as well as Apollo. The close of his career is assigned to Euboea and Trachis. He wrestles with Achelous for Deianira ("Destructive to husband"), daughter of Ceneus, king of Oedreum, vanquishes the river god, and breaks off one of his horns, which as a horn of plenty is found as an attribute of Hercules in art. Driven from Calydon for homicide, he goes with Deianira to Trachis. On the way he slays the centaur Nessus, who persuades Deianira that his blood is a love charm. From Trachis

he wages war again against the Dryopes and Lapithae as ally of Agamemnon king of the Dorians, who promised him a third of his realm, and after his death adopted Hyllus, his son by Deianira. Finally Hercules attacks Eurytus, takes Cephallenia, and carries off Iole. Theseus on Deianira, prompted by love and jealousy, sends him a tunic dipped in the blood of Nessus, and the unsuspecting hero puts it on just before sacrificing at the headland of Ceneum in Euboea. Mad with pain, he seizes Lichas, the messenger who had brought the fatal garment, and hurls him on the rocks, and then he wanders in agony to Mount Oeta, where he mounts a pyre, which, however, no one will kindle. At last Peas, father of Philoctetes, takes pity on him, and is rewarded with the gift of his bow and arrows. The unusual part of Hercules passes to Olympus, where he is reconciled to Hera and wedd his daughter Hebe.

In one aspect Hercules is clearly a sun god, being identified, especially in Cyprus and in Thasos (as Makar), with the Tyrian Melkart. He is again a representative of endurance and effort in the cause of Hellenic civilization and enterprise. Scarcely of his exploits may be based on actual achievements of tribes and leaders of men, but it is impossible to unravel satisfactorily the tangled strands which make up this highly elaborate myth, though the separate existence of some is clearly discernible. The close connection of the hero with Thebes and Argos suggests actual relations between the two states. The Lydian episode shows traces of Eastern influence. The second, fifth, and sixth labours may be solar, but yet they suggest reclamation of marsh land. The third and twelfth are the most obviously solar, the horned hind representing the moon, and the carrying of Ceneus to the upper world an eclipse. It may be admitted as highly probable that the last episode of the hero's tragedy is a complete solar myth developed at Trachis. The winter sun is seen rising over the Cenean promontory to toil across to Mount Oeta and disappear over it in a bank of fiery cloud. The fatality by which Hercules kills so many friends as well as foes recalls the destroying Apollo, while his career frequently illustrates the Delphic views on blood guiltiness and expiation. As Apollo's champion Hercules is Daphniphoros, and fights Cycnus and Amyntor to keep open the sacred way from Tempe to Delphi. As the Doiran tutelary hero, Tyndareus and Agamemnon as patron of maritime adventure (*ηγούμενος*) he struggles with Nerous and Triton, slays Eurytus and Busiris, and perhaps captures the wild horses, and oven, which may stand for pirates. As a god of athletics he is often a wrestler (*παλαίμαχος*), and founds the Olympic games. In comedy and occasionally in myth he is depicted as voracious (*βουφάγος*). He is also represented as the companion of Dionysus, especially in Asia Minor. The "Resting" (*ἀναπαύσας*) Hercules is, as at Thermopylae and near Himera, the natural tutelary of hot springs in conjunction with his protectress Athena, who is usually depicted attending him on ancient vases. The glorified Hercules was worshipped both as a god and a hero. In the Attic deme Melite he was invoked as *ἀλλεῖλαιος* ("Heliain ille"), at Olympia as *καλλίνικος* ("Nobly-victorious"), in the rustic worship of the Ceteans as *κορυστοῖον* (*κάρυστος*, "loosest"), by the Erythraeans of Ionia as *ἰπποκύνος*, "Canker worm-slayer." In Italy he was, like Apollo, *Musagetes* ("Leader of the Muses"). He was *σωτήρ* ("Saviour"), i.e., a protector of voyagers, at Thauri and Smyrna, and in Italy, where titles were vowed to him to be spent in entertainment. Games in his honour were held at Thebes and Marathon. In early poetry, as often in art, he is an archer, afterwards a club-wielder and fully-armed warrior. In early art the adult Hercules is bearded, but not long-haired. Later he is sometimes youthful and beardless, always with short curly hair and thick neck, the lower

part of the brow prominent. A lion's skin is generally worn or curled. Lysippus worked out the finest type of sculptured Hercules, of which the Farnese by Glycon is a grand specimen. The infantine struggle with serpents was a favourite subject.

Quite distinct was the Idoan Hercules, a Crotan Daedyl connected with the cult of Ithra or Cybele. The Greeks recognized Hercules in an Egyptian deity *Chom* and an Indian *Dor vanas*, not to mention personages of other mythologies. Hercules is supposed to have visited Italy on his return from Erythra, when he slew Cacus, son of Vulcan, the giant of the Aventine mount in Rome, who had stolen his oxen. To this victory was assigned the founding of the *Is macanum*. With respect to the Roman traditions of the hero, it is manifest that the native myths of Romulus, or Saneus, or Dnus Fidius, were transferred to the Hellenic Hercules.

The best account of the Hercules myth and cult is by L. Feller, *Griechische Mythologie*, 2d ed., Berlin, 1875. See also Hulten, *Die Helden Romani, fabulae et cultus*, Münster, 1850, and Bionet, *Hercules et Cacus*, Paris, 1863. (C. A. M. F.)

HERDER, JOHANN GOTTFRIED VON (1744–1803), one of the most prolific and influential writers that Germany has produced, was born in Mohlenburg, a small town near Königsberg, in 1744. Like his contemporary Lessing, with whose literary views his own had so much in common, Herder had undergone his latest struggles against adverse circumstances. His father was poor, having to put together a subsistence by uniting the humble offices of sexton, choir singer, and petty schoolmaster. Gottfried seems to have got some rudimentary instruction from his father, after which he was sent to the grammar school (gymnasium) of his native town. The mode of discipline practised by the pedantic and upright old man who stood at the head of this institution was not at all to the young student's liking, and the impression made upon him stimulated him later on to work out his projects of school reform. The hardships of his early years drove him to introspection and to solitary communion with nature, and thus favoured a more than proportionate development of the sentimental and poetic side of his mind. When quite young he expressed a wish to enter the church, but his aspirations were somewhat rudely discouraged by the local clergyman. In 1762, at the age of eighteen, he went up to Königsberg with the intention of studying medicine, but finding himself unequal to the operations of the dissecting-room, he abandoned this object, and by the help of one or two friends and his own self-supporting labours, followed out his earlier idea of the classical profession by joining the university. There he came under the influence of Kant, who was just then passing from physical to metaphysical problems. Without becoming a disciple of Kant, the young Herder was deeply stimulated to fresh critical inquiry by that thinker's revolutionary ideas in philosophy. To Kant's lectures and conversations he further owed something of his large interest in cosmological and anthropological problems. Among the writers whom he most carefully read were Plato, Horace, Shaftesbury, Leibnitz, Diderot, and Rousseau. Another personal influence under which he fell at Königsberg, and which was destined to be far more permanent, was that of Hamann, "the northern Mage." This writer had already won a name, and in the young Herder he found a mind well fitted to be the receptacle and vehicle of his new ideas on literature. From this vague, incoherent, yet clever writer our author acquired some of his strong feeling for the natural raw element in poetry, and for the earliest developments of natural literature. Even before he went to Königsberg he had begun to compose verses, and at the age of twenty he took up the pen as a chief occupation. His first published writings were occasional poems

and articles contributed to the *Königsberg Journal*. Soon after this he got a double appointment at Riga, as assistant master at the cathedral school, and as curate to the suburban churches. In this busy commercial town, in somewhat improved pecuniary and social circumstances, he developed the main ideas of his writings. In the year 1767 he published his first considerable work *Fragmente über die neuer deutsche Literatur*, which at once made him widely known and secured for him the favourable interest of Lessing. From this time he continued to pour forth a number of critical writings on literature, art, &c. His bold ideas on these subjects, which were a great advance even on Lessing's doctrines, naturally excited hostile criticism, and in consequence of this opposition, which took the form of aspersions on his religious orthodoxy, he resolved to leave Riga. He was now carried away at this time by the idea of a radical reform of social life in Livonia, which (after the example of Rousseau) he thought to effect by means of a better method of school-training. With this plan in view he began (1769) a tour through France, England, Holland, &c., for the purpose of collecting information respecting their systems of education. It was during the solitude of his voyage to France, when on deck at night, that he first shaped his idea of the genesis of primitive poetry, and of the gradual evolution of humanity. Having received an offer of an appointment as travelling tutor and chaplain to the young prince of Ester-Holstein, he abandoned his somewhat visionary scheme of a social reconstruction of a Russian province. He has, however, left a curious sketch of his projected school reforms. His new duties led him to Strasbourg, where he met the young Goethe, on whose poetical development he exercised so potent an influence. At Darmstadt he made the acquaintance of Caroline Flachsland, to whom he soon became betrothed, and who for the rest of his life supplied him with that abundance of consolatory sympathy which his sensitive and rather querulous nature appeared to require. The engagement as tutor did not prove an agreeable one, and he soon threw it up (1771) in favour of an appointment as court preacher and member of the consistory at Buckeburg. Here he had to encounter bitter opposition from the orthodox clergy and their followers, among whom he was received as a free-thinker. His health continued poor, and a fistula in the eye, from which he had suffered from early childhood, and to cure which he had undergone a number of painful operations, continued to trouble him. Further, pecuniary difficulties, from which he never long managed to keep himself free, by delaying his marriage, added to his depression. The correspondence between Herder and Caroline Flachsland indicates a relationship which offers a curious parallel and contrast to that of Lessing and his future wife under very similar circumstances. Notwithstanding these trying circumstances he resumed literary work, which his travels had interrupted. For some time he had been greatly interested by the poetry of the north, more particularly Percy's *Reliques*, the poems of "Osian" (in the genuineness of which he like many others believed), and the works of Shakespeare. Under the influence of this reading he now finally broke with classicism and became the leader of the new "Sturm und Drang" movement. He co-operated with a band of young writers at Darmstadt and Frankfurt, including Goethe, who in a journal of their own sought to diffuse the new ideas of Herder. His marriage took place in 1773. In 1776 he obtained through Goethe's influence the post of upper court preacher and upper member of the consistory at Weimar, where he passed the rest of his life. There he enjoyed the society of Goethe, Wieland, Jean Paul (who came to Weimar in order to be near Herder), and others, the patronage of the court, with whom as a preacher he was very popular, and an opportunity of carrying out some of

his pet ideas of school reform. Yet the social atmosphere of the place did not suit him. His personal relations with Goethe again and again became embittered. He had not the poet minister's liking for the elegant frivolities of court life, while the efforts of Goethe and Schiller to make Weimar a dramatic centre repelled his austere moral nature. All this, added to ill-health, served to intensify a natural irritability of temperament, and the history of his latter Weimar days is a rather dreary page in the chronicles of literary life. He had valued more than anything else a teacher's influence over other minds, and as he began to feel that he was losing it he grew jealous of the success of those who had outgrown this influence. Yet while presenting these unlovely traits, Herder's character was on the whole a worthy and attractive one. This seems to be sufficiently attested by the fact that he was greatly liked and esteemed, not only in the pulpit but in private intercourse, by cultivated women like the countess of Bukeburg, the duchess of Weimar, and Frau von Stein, and, what perhaps more, was exceedingly popular among the gymnasium pupils, in whose education he took so lively an interest. While during the last years of his life he produced much that is of little value, he wrote also some of his best works, among others his collection of popular poetry, *Stimmen der Völker*, his most notable original poem, the *Cid*, his celebrated work on Hebrew poetry, *Vom Geist der hebräischen Poesie*, and his *opus magnum*, the *Ideen zur Philosophie der Geschichte*. Towards the close of his life he occupied himself like Lessing with speculative questions in philosophy and theology. The boldness of some of his ideas cost him some valuable friendships, as that of Jacobi, Lavater, and even of his early teacher Hamann. He died in the year 1803, full of new literary plans up to the very last.

Herder's writings were for a long time regarded as of temporary value only, and fell into neglect. Recent criticism, however, has tended very much to raise their value by tracing out their wide and far-reaching influence. The number of publications relating to Herder that have appeared during the last few years shows that there is a revival of interest in this writer. His writings are very voluminous, and to a large extent fragmentary and devoid of artistic finish, nevertheless they are nearly always worth investigating for the brilliant suggestions in which they abound. His place in German literature has already been faintly indicated in tracing his mental development. Like Lessing, whose work he immediately continued, he was a pioneer of the golden age of this literature. Lessing had given the first impetus to the formation of a national literature by exposing the folly of the current imitation of French writers. But in doing this he did not so much call his fellow countrymen to develop freely their own national sentiments and ideas as send them back to classical example and principle. Herder on the contrary fought against all imitation as such, and bade German writers be true to themselves and then national antecedents. As a sort of theoretic basis for this adhesion to national type in literature, he conceived the idea that literature and art, together with language and national culture as a whole, are evolved by a natural process, and that the intellectual and emotional life of each people is correlated with peculiarities of physical temperament and of material environment. In this way he became the originator of that genetic or historical method which has since been applied to all human ideas and institutions. Herder was thus an evolutionist, but an evolutionist at a time when the influence of Rousseau, and its attendant in tracing back the later acquisitions of civilization to impulses which are as old as the dawn of primitive culture, he did not, as the modern evolutionist does, lay stress on the superiority of the later to the earlier stages of human development, but rather became enamoured of the simplicity

and spontaneity of those early impulses. which, since they are the oldest, easily come to look like the most real and precious. Yet even in this way he helped to found the historical school in literature and science, for it was only after an excessive and sentimental interest in primitive human culture had been awakened that this subject would receive the amount of attention which was requisite for the genetic explanation of the later acquisitions of the species. This historical idea was carried by Herder into the regions of poetry, art, religion, language, and finally into human culture as a whole. It colours all his writings, and is intimately connected with some of the most characteristic attitudes of his mind, a quick sympathetic imagination, a fine feeling for local differences, and a scientific instinct for seeing the sequence of cause and effect.

Herder's work easily ranges themselves in an ascending series, corresponding to the way in which the genetic or historical idea was developed and extended. First come the works on poetic literature, art, language, and religion as special regions of development. Secondly, we have in the *Ideen* a general account of the process of human evolution. Thirdly, there are a number of writings which, though inferior in interest to the others, may be said to supply the philosophic basis of his leading ideas. (1) In the region of poetry Herder sought to persuade his countrymen, both by example and precept, to return to a natural and spontaneous form of utterance. His own poetry is voluminous, and as a whole has but little value. Herder was a skilful verse maker, but hardly a true poet. His best poetry consists of a translation of some poems, in which he shows a rare sympathetic insight into the various feelings and ideas of peoples unlike his Greek and Latin originals, but many and both in the *Phrygians* he aims at a translation along German poetic lines, and it is from an extraneous influence. In his article on the imitation of German writers to be classic, as Lessing had ridiculed the use of Greek to be French. "Let us," he says, "be idiomatic writers, adapting ourselves to the peculiarities of our people and our language, whether we are classic poetry may find out." In his sweeping condemnation of contemporary writers, he does not exempt even Klopstock, with whose feelings for a time he is so much in sympathy, but whose poems appear to him to be too much in the manner of Greek. He looked at poetry as a kind of "prose among the people," which changes its form according to language, manners, habits, according to temperament and climate, may even according to the extent of difficult customs. The fact of the idiosyncrasy of a national poetry, he illustrated with great fulness and richness in the case of Homer, the nature of whose works he was one of the first to elucidate, the Hebrew poets (*Vom Geist der hebräischen Poesie*), and the poets of the north as typified in "Osian." This same idea of necessary relation to national character and circumstance is also applied to dramatic poetry, and more especially to Shakespeare. Lessing had done much to make Shakespeare as known to Germany, but he had regarded him in contrast to the French classic. Herder, on the contrary, contrasted the Greek dramatic poets, and accordingly did not bring out his essentially modern and Teutonic character. Herder does this, and in doing so shows a far deeper understanding of Shakespeare's genius than his predecessors. Herder's own literary criticisms of *Hamlet*, *Othello*, and other plays are worthy of being read along with those of later German critics. (2) The view of art contained in Herder's *Stimmen der Völker*, &c., and chiefly valuable as a correction of the excesses into which it was for a time led by betrayed Winkelmann and Lessing, by help of his fundamental idea of national idiosyncrasy. He argues against the setting up of classic art as an unchangeable type, valid for all peoples and all times. He was one of the first to bring to light the character and excellences of Gothic art. Beyond this, he eloquently pointed the ways of painting as a distinct art, which Lessing in his day sought to make the formative arts from poetry and music had been confounded with sculpture. He regarded this as the art of the whole, which was not rather the art of the organ of touch. Painting being less so, it is sculpture, because lacking the third dimension of space, and a kind of dream, admitted of no greater freedom of its form than this last. Herder had a genuine appreciation for early German paintings, and helped to awaken the modern interest in Albrecht Dürer. (3) His work on language (*Über den Ursprung der Sprache*) has been said to have laid the first real foundations of the science of comparative philology, and that despite the errors of the ethnological origin of language. It was specially directed against the supposition of a divine communication of language to man. Its main argument is that speech is a necessary outcome of the special arrangement of the mental forces which distinguishes us from other animals, and is a by-product of his higher reflection. "If," Herder says, "it were impossible to others how a human mind could invent language, it is as incomprehensible to me how a human mind could be what it is without discovering language for itself." The writer does not make that

use of the fact of man's spiritual endowments which one might expect from his general conception of the relation of the physical and the mental in human development. (4) Haeckel's services in laying the foundations of a comparative science of religion and mythology are even of greater value than his somewhat less philosophic speculations. In opposition to the general spirit of the 18th century he saw, by means of his historic sense, the naturalness of religion, its relation to man's wants and impulses. Thus with respect to early religious beliefs he rejected those notions of a religion springing out of the fancies of primitive man, in favour of the theory that it represents the first attempts of our species to explain phenomena. He is especially associated with mythology and primitive poetry. As to later forms of religion, he appears to have held that they owe their vitality to their embodiment of the deep spiritual feelings of our common humanity. His high appreciation of Christianity, which contrasts so much with the contemptuous estimate of the contemporary rationalists, rested on a firm belief in its essential humanity, to which fact, and not to conscious deception, he attributed its success. His exposition of this religion in his  *Cosmos*  and  *Mysteries*  were simply an unfolding of its moral side. In his later life, as we shall presently see, he found his way to a spiritual basis for his religious beliefs. (5) Haeckel's masterpiece, the  *Atlas* , has the ambitious aim of explaining the whole of human development in its close connection with the entire of man's physical development. Man is viewed as a part of nature, and all his vital differing forms of development as strictly natural processes. In this it ends in sharing the same category of Kant, which opposes human development conceived as the gradual manifestation of a growing faculty of rational life will to the operations of physical nature. Haeckel divides human history as "a page in the story of the history of nature, which is regulated by laws of the same kind and place." The  *Atlas*  shows us that Haeckel is an evolutionist like the majority of Leibnitz, and not after that of more modern evolutionists.<sup>1</sup> The lower forms of life progress man in several degrees of imperfection, but the process of evolution has not been regarded as necessitating antecedent conditions of human existence. The genetic method is applied to varieties of man, not to man as a whole. It is to be thought, however, that Haeckel in his profoundly tentative way of thinking cannot now and again very justly be made familiar to us by Mr Spencer and Mr Darwin. There is a passage in book x, chap. 1, which unfortunately favours Mr Darwin's view, a sentence, we read, "Among millions of creatures whatever could preserve itself abides, and still after the lapse of thousands of years remains in the great harmonious order." Will animals and man, carnivorous and gregarious, insects, birds, fishes and men are adapted to each other." With this may be compared a passage in the  *Ueberweg der Species* , where there is a curious admission of Mr Spencer's idea that intelligences are distinguished from instinct, even from a growing complexity of action, or, to use Haeckel's words from the substitution of a man for a less complicated species. Haeckel is more successful in tracing the early developments of particular peoples than in constructing a scientific theory of evolution. His aim may be said to have laid the foundations of the science of primitive culture as a whole. His account of the first dawnings of culture, and of the older Oriental civilizations, is marked by genuine insight. In the older lands of those times science is traced with a less skillful hand. Altogether this work is rich in suggestion to the philosophic historian and the anthropologist, though marked by his vagueness of conception and his want of generalization. (6) Of Haeckel's property the most important is his little work in his own life. It was too much under the sway of feeling and concrete imagination to be capable of great things in abstract thought. It is generally admitted that he had no accurate knowledge either of science, whose mottoes he advertised, or of Kant, whose ethical philosophy he so fiercely attacked. His sympathy with the one and his antipathy to the other was intimately connected with the essential character of his nature, which was more sensitive than analytic, regarded things in their concrete soundings rather than in abstract isolation. It was but one step more to the man who had learnt to view poetry, art, language, &c., in their connection with social and physical surroundings, and to conceive of human history in its relation to physical events, to bring together the great aggregates of material and spiritual phenomena under one total conception of a single substance or God. Haeckel's  *Spinozismus* , which is set forth in his little work,  *Von Spinoza und Einigkeit der verschiedenen Religionen* , is much less logically concerned than Lessing's. It is the religious aspect of it which attracts him, the pre-occupation in that of in whose activities the feelings and the intellects unite. With respect to his attacks on the critical philosophy in the  *Metaphysik* , it is easy to understand how his concrete mind, ever alive to the unity of things, instinctively labelled against that analytic separation of the mental processes which Kant attempted

However crude and hasty the author's investigation, it helped to direct philosophic reflection to the unity of man, and so to develop the post-Kantian line of speculation. Haeckel was much attracted by Schelling's writings, but appears to have disliked Hegelism because the latter's abstractness seemed to him to involve. In the  *Cultus* , a work directed against Kant's  *Critique of Judgment* , Haeckel argues for the close connection of the beautiful and the good. To him and the content of art, which he conceived as human feeling, and human life in its completeness, was more valuable than the form, and so he was naturally led to emphasize the moral element in art. Thus his theoretic opposition to the Kantian aesthetics is but the reflexion of his practical opposition to the idealism of the German poets.

The most valuable original sources of information on Haeckel, next to his own works (of which a new edition, critically revised by P. Sappin, is just appearing), are the  *Dissertations aus dem Leben*  of G. von Herder, by Herder, by G. von Herder's  *Lebensbilder* , by his son Emil, and his letters, edited by Duncker in 1864. The general reader will find a sufficient account of Haeckel in a number of recent biographical works. Among these the fullest are Ch. de la  *Vieille*  de la  *Biographie Littéraire*  in  *Allemagne*  (which unfortunately does not deal with the latter part of his life) and R. Hay's  *Haeckel nach seinen Leben und seinen Werken* . The accounts of Haeckel in Richter's  *Leben eines gelehrten Mannes*  are very full and satisfactory. (G. B.)

HEREFORD, an inland English county on the south Point Welsh border, is bounded on the N by Salop, S by XIV Monmouthshire and Gloucestershire, E by Worcestershire, and W by Radnorshire and Brecknockshire. Its ecclesiastical shape is indented by spurs of adjacent counties, and its outlying parts have by an Act of William IV 7 and 8 been incorporated with the counties in which they are situated. Its greatest length from Ludlow to the Downard Hills, near Monmouth, is 98 miles, its greatest breadth from Cradley to Clifton, near Hay, 35. Its area according to the census of 1871 is 532,898 statute acres, or 822 square miles. It is divided into 11 hundreds and 221 parishes, and is a bishop's see, of which the cathedral city is the centre of the county.

Its chief rivers are the Wye and Lug. The former, rising near the source of the Severn on the summit of Pimlincon, flows between the boundaries between Brecon and Radnor, and enters Herefordshire near Clifton, and, flowing past Hereford, Ross, and Monmouth, falls into the Severn near Chepstow. A striking feature of the Wye is its sinuosity, especially between Hereford and Monmouth. Its never very effectual navigation has been put on end to by railway enterprise, and its salmon fisheries are now so protected by legal enactment that there is no longer a danger of Hereford apprentices being fed on salmon "ad nauseam." The Lug, a first-rate trout stream, rising in Radnorshire, enters Herefordshire near Prestegyn, and, passing by Aymestry, Kington, and Leominster, joins the Wye below Moldford Bridge, south east of Hereford. The Arrow also rises in Radnorshire, and flowing past Kington and Pembroke joins the Lug near Monkland, and the Frome, having its source near Bumyard, joins the same river near Moldford, while the Ladden runs past Ledbury to join the Severn near Gloucester. All these, as well as the Teme, a boundary line of the north-east of the county, are more or less famous trout streams.

The soil is generally main and clay, but in various parts contains calcareous earth in mixed proportions. Westward the soil is tenacious and retentive of water, on the east it is a stiff and often reddish clay. In the south is found a light sandy loam. The subsoil is mostly limestone, in some parts the Old Red Sandstone, and a species of red and white veined marble. Where the soil does not rest on limestone, it is sometimes a siliceous gravel, or contains fuller's earth and yellow ochres. Limestone, quarried at Aymestry and Nash to the north west of the county, and at Ledbury, Woolhope, and elsewhere, is successfully applied as a manure for arable land and pasture. For the physical history of the county reference must be made to the  *Memoirs of the Surveyors* , or Symonds's  *Record of the Rocks* , where the upheaval and denudation in the Woolhope valley and over the central dome of Haughwood and similar questions are discussed.

<sup>1</sup> See article  *Evolutionism* , vol. viii pp. 760, 761.

<sup>2</sup> Haeckel's relation to modern evolutionism is dealt with in F. von Baur's  *Die Haeckels als Vorläufer Darwin's* .



The climate is variable, owing to the damp and foggy which moisten the earth and account for its great verdure, as well as to its large proportion of timber, not only in parks and on landed estates, but almost on every hedgerow. In spite, however, of the prevalence of rheumatism, Herefordshire is reckoned healthy, ranks high in the statistics of longevity, and enjoys a comparative immunity from diseases of the respiratory organs.

The surface of the county is undulating in long ridges, as if by subterranean ripples. Ash and oak coppices and larch plantations clothe its hill sides and crests. Its low lands are studded with peas and apple orchards, of which Herefordshire is sometimes, as well as Kent, in the garden of England. The apple crop, generally large, is enormous one year out of four. Twenty hogheads of cider, which is the county beverage, have been made from a ton of orchard, twelve being the ordinary yield. Hops are another staple of the county, the vines of which are planted in rows on ploughed land. As early as Camden's day a Herefordshire village coupled Woolley as with Leominster land, interesting the county's capacity to produce fine wheat and barley, as well as hops. On the Worcestershire border about 10,000 acres are taken up in hop plantations, and about Ludbury the clay lands are noted for wheat and hops.

Herefordshire is also famous as a breeding county for its cattle of bright red hair, with mottled or white faces and sleek silky coats. The Herefords are stalwart and healthy, and though not good milkers, put on more meat and fat at an early age, in proportion to food consumed, than almost any other variety. They produce the finest beef, and are more cheaply fed than Devon or Durham, with which they are advantageously crossed as a dairy county. Herefordshire does not rank high in wool. The small, white-faced, hornless, symmetrical breed of sheep known as "the Ryelands," from the district near Ross, where it was bred in most perfection, make the county long famous both for the flavour of its meat and the texture of its wool. Tails, six of which it was best known as "Lampeter cut," and the finest in all England. In its original form the breed is extinct, crossing with the Leicester having improved size and stamina at the cost of the fleece, and the chief breeds of sheep on Herefordshire farms at present are Shropshire Downs, Cotswolds, and Radnor, with their crosses. Agricultural horses of good quality are bred in the north, and saddle and coach horses may be met with at the fairs, especially at Hereford, Brampton, Bryan, and Huntington. Herefordshire has progressed greatly in farming within the last half century. Turnip and green crop husbandry, with improved tillage, is the general rule, and an average yield of wheat is from 28 to 30 bushels in one, while, about Ross and the "Old Red" districts a yield of 40 bushels is obtained. Breeders' names from the county are famous at the national cattle shows, and the number, size, and quality of the stock are seen in their supply of the metropolitan and other markets. Pigs Herefordshire are constantly exported to the colonies.

The county has no manufactures to speak of. Woollen goods have never been a successful staple of trade at Hereford, yarn and coarse woollens are, however, in small quantities at Leominster and Kingston. There are iron foundries for agricultural implements at Kingston and Ross.

The agricultural returns of Great Britain for 1879 give the following statistics for Herefordshire:

Corn crops (two thirds being wheat and barley)	108,262 acres
Green crops (of which two thirds are turnips and swedes)	84,671 "
Grasses under rotation	40,082 "
Permanent pasture	246,638 "
Hops	5,547 "
Barley, fallow, and uncropped arable land	11,098 "

	Value Stock
Horses	21,200
Cattle	77,402
Sheep	340,711
Pigs	34,100

In all but the last item the live stock presents a marked increase in 1878, in corn crops there is a decreased average, in green crops and permanent pasture a considerable increase, and the area in hops is the same as in the previous year.

According to the preliminary return of 1878 the county was divided among 13,781 proprietors, owning a total area of 596,659 acres, with a rental of 2,921,640. Of the proprietors, 9085 (66 per cent.) held less than 1 acre, and 2478 (18 per cent.) between 1 and 10 acres. The owners of the largest holdings are—J. A. Winkley, Hampton Court, Leominster, 10,559 acres; A. B. Bingham, Knight, Downton Castle, 10,081; R. D. Harley, Brampton Bryan, 8908; Sir George H. Conyngham, Moccas, 8646; Lord Bateman, Sheldon Court, 6600; Lord E. Cecil, 6600; Lord Ashburton, 6688; Major Mervyn Chiche, Whitfield, 5799; Lady

Emily Foley, Stoke Edith Park, 5690; Sir Henry Cottrell, Gunons, 5066; Sir Henry E. Sturminster, Stunhouse, Holm Lacy, 5039; Alcyon Peppoe, Gunstone, 4928.

In Herefordshire inland navigation was represented in the early part of the century by the Gloucester and Worcester and Ludbury canals, but this has been bought up for railway purposes, and the canal from Leominster to Woodlinton, and thence eastward to Tenbury and Stourport, has been closed to exist. Hereford is an important railway centre, the Hereford, Ross, and Gloucester line is here amalgamated with the Great Western, the Shrewsbury and Hereford railway traverses the county eastward from Woodlinton, via Leominster, to Hereford. The Worcester line from Hereford, via Merton, connects the county from north with Oxford and London by an alternative route of the Midland and Great Western, and the west of the county is served by the Midland line from Hereford to Bacon, while the Hereford, Abingdon, and Oxford line connects the south-west. Branch lines run from Eardisley to Kingston and Prestegze, from Ross to Monmouth, from Woodlinton to Bromyard, and from Leominster to Kingston.

The latest statistics of public elementary schools show about 135 Churches of England national or parochial schools, 6 board schools, 3 British and Foreign and 3 Roman Catholic schools in the county. Its population, which was 115,489 in 1851, had increased in 1871 to 125,370. Herefordshire is represented in parliament by 6 members—3 for the county, 2 for Hereford city, and 1 for the borough of Leominster. Its towns, besides Hereford, are Ross, Leominster, Ludbury, Kingston, and Bromyard, of these, Ross and Leominster are the most considerable, though Kingston, from its position on the Welsh border, drives a brisk trade. In Kingston, Bromyard, Ludbury, and Ross, and such larger villages as Woolley and Orlton, survive many picturesque timber and plaster houses of the 15th and 16th centuries.

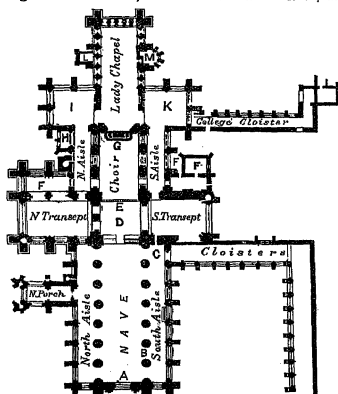
**History.**—The earliest known inhabitants of the county were the Silures, whose stout resistance to the Romans provided the famous Clutha to the war of extermination in which Julius S. Suetonius took 40,000 Roman prisoners. Suetonius Paulinus, and others, fought, contest the claim to have been the final stand-point against the Romans. Traces of the Druces are found at Wigmore, and in 812 they expelled the Danes, and carried off from Aachenland the bishop of St. David's, who had to be redeemed with a huge ransom. By the Normans the county was held on the terms of repelling the Welsh, and for centuries the Bishops of Wales were a detestable ground for the Welsh, who were at war between Maud and Stephen, there was fighting in and round Herefordshire. When the barons rose against Henry III. their hostilities affected this county, and it was the scene of a plot of the earl of Gloucester, Roger Mortimer, and others to dethrone Edward's escape out of De Montfort's hands that led to his flight to Wigmore, and the subsequent defeat of the barons at Evesham in the Wars of the Roses a battle was fought on February 2, 1461, at Mortimer's Cross, in a marshy, low-lying, lowland, east of March (afterwards Farnham), and J. Roger Pender and James Butler, earls of Pembroke and Wiltshire, in hall of Queen Margaret, which resulted in the victory of the Yorkists. The March was so impetuous in its progress that in 1483 the war between Charles I. and his parliament at Herefordshire culminated severely for its loyalty, and Hereford, Goodrich, and Ludbury, in 1646, all but the last ending in disaster to the king's party. The only place here mentioned in the county is the cloister of Athlum's Stone on the hill above Badbury. A line of British entrenchments stretches from the Severn and from Malvern, where an entrenchment is still known as the "Hundredshire (Gloum) to Watney, Graft Ambury, and Crosswall Knoll, in the north of the county. A branch of the Watling Street runs from Uriconium and South Shropshire crosses Herefordshire from Marlow to Longtown. Another Roman road runs direct from Hereford to Watney, Graft Ambury, and Crosswall Knoll, and there by a short route under Coppul Hill to Migma or Kuchstet, but by a longer route to Monmouth, Usk, Abingdon, and so through Magna to Shrewsbury. Old's line, the line of defence against the Welsh, is still to be seen at Monmouth, in a Lyemahall, and beyond Kingston. Old's is traditional place, the scene of his murder of Ethelbert, was at Sutton Walls, a little north of Hereford. The house of one of the Normans who held out at Wigmore, Clifford, Goodrich, and Brampton Bryan, among the most interesting churches of that period are one of two remarkable structures of true Irish Norman architecture, viz., Kilpeck, Moccas, and the Abbey of old Shilton church, it is said the Cistercian church of Alby Dore, and the fine old churches of Ludbury and Leominster.

**Hereford**, the capital city of the above county, is situated on the left bank of the Wye, which is crossed there by a bridge of six arches. The seat of Hereford was detached from Ludford in 673, Puto being its first bishop. The removal of murdered Ethelbert's body from Marden





to Hereford led to the foundation of a superior church, reconstructed by Bishop Athelstan, and burnt by the Welsh in 1055. Recommended in 1079 by the first Norman bishop, Robert of Lorraine, it was carried on by Bishop Reynelm, and completed in 1148 by Bishop R. de Beiton. The lady chapel, clerestory of the choir, and north transept date between 1226 and 1269, while successive additions and reconstructions have extended over 450 years. In 1786 the great western tower fell and carried with it the west front and the first bay of the nave, since which date there have been two modern restorations, in 1842 and 1893. The total length of the cathedral is 342 feet, inside 327 feet 5 inches, the nave outside is 158 feet 6 inches, the choir from screen to piers



Plan of Hereford Cathedral.

- |                       |                      |                       |
|-----------------------|----------------------|-----------------------|
| A. West Door.         | E. Choir Screen.     | L. N.E. Transept.     |
| B. Font.              | F. Vestibule.        | M. S.E. Transept.     |
| C. Door to Cloisters. | G. Altar.            | N. Entrance to Crypt. |
| D. Central Tower.     | H. Bishop's Chamber. | O. Audley Chapel.     |

75 feet 6 inches, and the lady chapel 93 feet 5 inches. The breadth of the nave (span of roof) is 31 feet 4 inches, the nave and aisles, internally, 73 feet 4 inches, and the central transept 146 feet 2 inches. The height of choir is 62 feet 6 inches, of nave 64 feet, of lantern 96 feet, of tower to top of the leads 140 feet 6 inches, and to the top of the pinnacles 165 feet. The pillars and arches of the nave, the north and south arches of the choir, and the triforium are Norman in their architecture, as is also the font; the lady chapel, the clerestory, and stone vaulting, Early English. The north transept is of the date of Bishop Aquablanca (1245-56), the south-east transept of Late Decorated. As the late Sir Gilbert Scott pointed out at Hereford to the Archaeological Institute, but for the fall of the western tower, the consequent curtailment of the nave, and other solecisms, few cathedrals could offer so complete a field of progressive architectural study from Early Norman to latest Perpendicular. The cathedral can boast some fine monuments, notably St Thomas of Cantilupe's shrine in the north transept, and Bishop Aquablanca's tomb. The "Mappa Mundi," compiled in 1300

or thereabouts by a monk of Lincoln, one of the largest and most curious of all the old maps, is preserved in the south choir aisle. The bishop's palace overlooks the Wye on the south of the cathedral, and to the left of it lies the castle green, the site of the historic castle, which is utterly effaced. One only of the six gates of the old walls is still to be seen, but there are ruins of the Black Friars' Monastery in Widemarsh, and a mile out of Hereford on the Brecon Road, the White Cross, erected in 1347 by Bishop Charlton, and restored by Archdeacon Lord Saye and Sele, commemorates the departure of the Black Plague. For its loyalty and sufferings in the civil war Charles I. gave the city its motto "Invicta fidelitatis premium." It was incorporated in 1189 by Richard I., and is governed by a municipal council, consisting of a mayor, 6 aldermen, and 18 councillors. It has no manufactures. Its population at the census of 1871 numbered 18,355, or an increase of more than a third in twenty years; its area was 4969 acres. Its public buildings are the shire hall in St Peter's Street, in the Grecian Doric style, with a statue of Sir George Cornwall Lewis in front of it; the corn-exchange (1858), the Rankin free library and Woolhope Club museum in Broad Street, and the Herefordshire middle-class college. The most noteworthy churches are All Saints and St Peter's.

For the bibliography of the city and county of Hereford, see Duncumb's *Collections for a History*; Robinson's *Castles, Monasteries, and Mansions*, 2 vols., 1860 and 1878; Webb's *History of the Civil War in Herefordshire*, 1879; Haverall's *Plati Herefordenses*; Quarterly Review, art. "Herefordshire," July 1879; and the *Woolhope Transactions*. (J. D.A.)

**HERENCIA**, a town of Spain in the province of Ciudad Real, New Castile, is situated in a fertile, hilly region, near the junction of the rivers Gíguela and Valdespino, about 80 miles south of Madrid. Soapmaking is the chief industry; coarse cloth, wax, and chocolate are also manufactured. Wheat, barley, vines, and olives are grown in the neighbourhood, where also there is excellent pasturage. Population about 7300.

**HEREROLAND**, or **DAMARALAND**, a region of South-Western Africa, stretching north from the Kuisip to the Cunene, so called from the native race known to the Namaqua as Herero or to the Cape colonists as Damara (Damra, or Dama). The north-west portion is also known as Kaokoland.

According to the treaty of Okahandja, by which, in 1876, the country came in some sort under British protection,<sup>1</sup> the boundary line is fixed as coinciding in the south with the line of latitude passing through Rehoboth or Annas (a mission station in 17° 5' E. long. and about 165 miles from the coast), thence in a straight line to Otyimbinda (Tunobisa or Rist Fontein), in 20° 53' E. long. and 22° 5' S. lat., thence northwards to Otyindarmia, and finally from that place westwards along the Omurumba Ovambo to the Cunene. The territory thus defined has an estimated area of 100,000 square miles; and of this about 35,000 square miles were marked out as a British reservation, bounded by a line drawn from Rehoboth to Otyimbinda, thence north-west to Otyitua, about 19° E. long. and 20° S. lat., thence west to Otyahavita, and south to the neighbourhood of Mount Erongo. According to Palgrave the total population of Hereroland is 121,150, of whom 85,000 are Herero proper, 30,000 Hill Damara, 3000 Bushmen, 1800 Namaqua, 1500 Bastards, and 150 Europeans. In a paper in *Petersmann's Mittheilungen*, 1878, based on information from the Rhenish missionaries, the total is given as 184,000, of whom 110,000 are Herero (80,000 Ova Herero and 30,000 Ova-mbanderu).

<sup>1</sup> See *Damara and Namaqua Land: Report of W. Coates Palgrave, Esq., special commissioner to the interior north of Orange River, of his mission to Damaraland and Great Namaqualand in 1876*, Cape Town, 1877.

50,000 Hill Damara, 2500 Namaqua, 2000 Bastards, 20,000 Bushmen, and 300 whites.

Hereroland has a coastline of 400 miles, but the only port where it offers shelter and access to ships is Walvis Bay, a safe but comparatively shallow harbour formed by Pelican Point immediately to the south of the mouth of the Kunap. The country consists of three distinct physical regions—first, a long and narrow coast district backed by a very regular line of hills, of which the highest point appears to be Mount Messum or Dourvass, secondly, a broad mountainous tract, containing in the south such peaks as Omatako, 8800 feet, Ombotzou (Diambotzou), 7800, Etyo, 4000, and far in the north Etendeka, 4000, and thirdly, a steppe region which stretches away into the Kalahari desert. The rivers of Hereroland, of which the most important, passing from south to north, are the Tsochambu, the Ekwab or Omaruru, the Ugab, and the Huab, are more wadies, which only at intervals succeed in bringing water as far as the sea. Except in the half-dry river-beds, the coast district is almost destitute of vegetation, the only edible fruit being the *naia* which grows on the sand-dunes, and is, according to Anderson, eaten by oxen, mice, men, ostriches, and lions. In the mountainous tract there are places of considerable fertility, large trees, as acacias, &c., grow along the river-beds, and euphorbia, tamarisks, and a variety of stung-spined bushes prevail. In a few favoured spots wheat can be cultivated, and from a single grain as many as 150 stalks may be produced. The coast range and many of the mountains, such as Okonyonyo and Amatako, are composed of granite and gneiss, broken by intrusive quartz and porphyry, further east limestone formations, both Carboniferous and Oolitic, are predominant, and these again give place to sandstone strata, which are weathered into table-shaped eminences. The granite and gneiss are being disintegrated with great rapidity. Both iron and copper are said to occur in considerable abundance, though the mineral exploitation of the country has had no satisfactory result. About 25 mineral springs, both hot and cold, are known to exist among the mountains.

An interesting sketch of the climate was contributed by Dr. A. von Danckelmann to the *Zetsche's de sena's Gesellsch. für Naturw.*, 1878. Owing, it would appear, to the cold current in the north bounding sea, the coast region is almost ruinous, though occasionally, in the rainy season of the interior, storm-clouds with thunder and lightning come from the east, and from September to March south west winds laden with heavy mist blow almost without intermission. In the interior the year is divided into a regular dry and wet season, the former running from May to November. From September onwards the air is so clear that the planet Venus can be distinguished at midday, and every object looks so distinct that it is almost impossible to estimate distances correctly. Even during the rainy season the nights are usually calm. Not infrequently before the beginning of the rains "and spouts," as they are called by the natives, Kumb'uhena or "rain beggars," drive across the country. No support is afforded by the observations in Hereroland to the theory of the probability of African rain in accordance with the changes of the sun's spots, but these would seem to be a gradual decrease of atmospheric precipitation. From September to December the east wind rarely blows in the morning, but it passes round to the north west in the forenoon. From December to April the east is decidedly predominant. Snow is extremely rare, but night frosts occur several times a year, and ice has been found on the Herero. In the dry season the daily range of the thermometer is from 82° in the day to 70° or 75°, in the rainy season from 80° or 85° to 65° or 68°.

The Herero are the dominant race. They are well formed, of good stature, and of regular features. Their complexion is usually dark but not black, but there is sufficient variety to lead them to classify themselves into the Ovaherero or "red folk" and the Ovhererendu or "dark folk." Their scanty clothing consists mainly of skins and leather thongs, and the women and their bodies are thickly smeared with ochre and grease. The women's head-dresses are either three eared helmets, assegais, bows and arrows, and knobsticks or kleras are the native weapons, but guns and even breechloaders are growing not uncommon. The whole race is in the pastoral stage, and some of the chiefs possess very extensive herds of cattle. The various clans or "wandas" have each its own totem,

and thus to one man it is a sin to partake of the flesh of a red cow and to another a one horned sheep is equally sacred. By their language (Otjiiherero) the Herero belong to the great Bantu family. For our acquaintance with it we are mainly indebted to the Herero missionaries, and more particularly to Dr. Hahn, who published *Grundzüge des Otjiiherero* at Halle, Berlin, 1867. A spelling book (*Ojje Ton*, 1848) appears to be the earliest work printed in the tongue.

The Herero would seem to have come from the north, and they probably first appeared to the south of the Cunene about 150 years ago, to the district of the Hill Damara (Houqoun, Huukou, Ovaherero, or Ghoudimou), a peculiar race who now occupy the first masses of the country, and speak the Nama or Otjiiherero language with a foreign accent, though there is no tradition of their having used any other. The Herero were subjugated by Jonker Arikuan, and for a time were settled among the Namaqua tribes, but about 1665 they recovered their independence. They are still uniformly to the Hill Damara, who steal their cattle, and they are beginning to hunt down the Bushmen. A single tribe of the Namaqua, which sided with them in their war of liberty, is still settled near Mount Erongo.

Besides the works already mentioned and the travels of Baines, Gellon, and Anderson, see Hahn, "Die Otjiiherero in *Reisen von Lothar*, Berlin, 1868 and 1869, and "Reise in *Landes des Herero*, in *Petersmann's Mittheilungen*, 1873.

HERESY is the English equivalent of the Greek word *aisiropis*, which has had a somewhat varied ecclesiastical use. The first employment of the word in the New Testament is to denote a sect or school of opinion among the Jews. We read of the heresy of the Sadducees (*aisiropis τῶν Σαδδουκαίων*, Acts x 17), the heresy of the Pharisees (*aisiropis τῶν Φαρισαίων*, Acts xv 5), and St. Paul speaking to Apg. says, "Alas the stratagem heresy of our religion I lived a Pharisee" (*κατὰ τὴν ἐκδοκαστικὴν αἰσίρῳ τῶν Φαρισαίων*, Acts xxvi 5). Christianity itself was in the beginning looked upon as one of those sects or schools of Jewish opinion, and the "heresy" of the Nazarenes (Acts xxiv 5) is spoken of as well as the heresy of the Pharisees (*cf* Acts xxiv 14, Acts xxvii 22). This use of the term is plainly borrowed from classical Greek, where *aisiropis* frequently means a school of Roman jurists or a school of philosophy (*cf* Cic, *Epist. ad Fam.* v 10, Diog. Laert., *Proem.*, 18). In the New Testament the word is used in another sense which is purely ecclesiastical. Thus in Titus in 10 the apostle says "A man who is an *aisiropis* after the first and second admonition reject," in 2 Pet. i 1 the church is warned against false teachers, "who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them," and these heretics and false teachers are evidently the same as those of whom Paul, in the Epistle to the Galatians, says that they are to be anathematized. They are men who in the name of Christ preach such doctrines as tend to frustrate the grace of Christ, who preach "another gospel" (Gal. i 8, 9), they are compared to the false prophets of the Old Testament Scriptures, they cause divisions, and schisms in the church (1 Cor. x 18, 19), and the heresies they are guilty of are classed along with grave moral offences (Gal. v 20). In this second New Testament use of the word which was taken over into ecclesiastical terminology, and it is in this sense that the early Christian writers speak of heresy and heretics. This early ecclesiastical use has continued down to the present, save that in earlier times when was generally included under heresy, the names and the things not being separated by definition. It is interesting, however, to notice that the earlier New Testament use of the word seems to have lingered on. Tertullian (*Apology*, c. 1) calls the church a sect, which is the Latin equivalent for *heresy*, (*Eusebius*, II. *Ec.*, c. 5, §§ 21-22) *αἰσίρῳ* *ἢ καθολικῆς* *ἢ ἐκκλησιαστικῆς*.

Heresy means a grave error in matters of faith, but it is much more than a theological or ecclesiastical term. From the days of the emperor Theodosius at the late-8, the Christian religion has been intimately connected with law, and heresy is a legal term, with a definite meaning attaching

to it, a heresy was a crime with punishment annexed, and therefore was capable of legal definition. It was an offence in canon law, and it was also for long an offence according to civil law. The theological meaning, and the definitions according to canon law and according to civil law respectively, are all different from each other and must be separately explained.

1 *The Theological Sense of the Term*.—The early Christian writers say a great deal about heresy, but commonly refrain from telling what it is. They describe heresies, but they only denounce heresy. It is vain to look for a definition of it in Irenæus's *Against Heresies*, in Hippolytus's *Reputation of all Heresies*, in Tertullian's *Prescription Against Heretics*. It is possible, indeed, to collect from these one or two leading tests of heresy, but no definition is to be found. The common features of heresy are too well known to call for specific enumeration. We can gather from Irenæus that heretics are those who reject Scripture, who refuse to accept the "doctrina tradita," who deny the authority of the clergy who have come in regular succession from the apostles, who keep aloof from the Catholic Church, the sole depository of apostolic doctrine (*Against Heresies*, in 2-4). Tertullian, in his usual succinct manner, calls every man a heretic who does not at once accept the "Regula Fidei," and he refuses to argue with such a man even though the heretic proceeds to adduce arguments from Scripture. "A controversy over Scripture with heretics can clearly produce no other effect than to help to upset either the stomach or the brain" (*Against Ilium*, 16). In the Eastern Church, after the period of the œcumenical councils, Tertullian's test was the touchstone of heresy. The church had her rule of faith expanded into the Nicæo-Constantinopolitan creed, with the various explanations added in the symbols of the remaining œcumenical councils, and a heretic was one who denied this creed in whole or in part. In the Western Church, on the other hand, theologians were accustomed to define heresy in a vague way. Thus Jerome calls heresy "perversum dogma," a heretic, with him, is one who interprets Scripture in other fashion than according to the witness of the Spirit of God, and Augustine summarily defines heresy to be the invention or retention of new and false opinions. But whatever the definition, the rough and ready test was always nonconformity to the "formula fidei præscripta ab ecclesia Romana." Instead of definition the Eastern Church simply points to the creed and the œcumenical councils, the Western Church to the rule of faith enjoined by Rome.

These vague definitions, extracted from the writings of early theologians, all of them going back in the last resort to the recognized creed of the church for the time being, imply, in spite of their vagueness, that there is a certain essential kernel of doctrine in Christianity, which cannot be denied or challenged without involving the destruction of Christianity itself, and they all point the way to a fuller description of what is meant by heresy in the theological sense of the word. Heresy is a doctrine which, with the appearance of Christian doctrine, is really contradictory to the essential nature of Christianity, and, if persisted in, would in the end make Christianity something very different from what it really is. In order, therefore, to say what heresy is, it is necessary to know what the essential nature of Christianity is, and therefore heresy is generally described by reference to the fundamental nature of Christianity, while the real nature of Christian doctrine is commonly brought out by contrasting it with heresy.

When we look at the matter historically we see that Christianity has always taken the shape of a community thinking and acting for the most part together, and that it has always implied a common life, common work, common

ideas. Christianity appears in history as a community whose common work is to confess and to adore God because of what He has done for His people in salvation. This twofold work of confession and worship has manifested itself in a double organization,—an organization of thought and an organization of work,—doctrine and polity. These may be the church without a creed, and the heart-church without the *congregatio*, but that is not the way in which Christianity has taken actual historical shape. It is possible to conceive the entrance of a heterogeneous element into this organization on either side. A heterogeneous element, something really foreign to it, may become organized with the church's doctrine, or may have become incorporated in the church's polity, and whenever this happens there is a doctrine, apparently Christian, which is really subversive of Christianity, there is a polity which, apparently Christian, is really opposed to the real life of the *congregatio*. This possibility is the historical root of the origin both of heresy and of schism, for heresy is just a heterogeneous element imbedded in the organized dogmatic of the church, and schism is a foreign element which has found its way into church polity. This description, however, is somewhat misleading, because it may happen that an element which seems heterogeneous is not really so, but is on the contrary a true part of the organization. Heresy is not only apparently but really foreign to the system in which it has become incorporated. Its nature is different, and its source is different. Men's apparent inconsistency, therefore, does not prove heresy. A doctrine must be seen to be really contradictory to the fundamental facts of Christianity, and to have come from a different source, before it can be called a heresy. It has frequently happened, accordingly, that doctrines have been judged heretical which a better acquaintance with the nature of Christianity would have pronounced orthodox.

Christianity, under the many forms which it assumes, has always implied the reconciliation of God and man through the person and work of Christ. It implies that Jesus Christ the Saviour has so brought it about that He has established a new kingdom of God which will last, in which men have communion with God through His Spirit. Christianity is complete when the kingdom of God is fully established. "Thy kingdom come" is its aspiration. It therefore implies a moral separation between God and man—a separation which is overcome by the work of Christ the Mediator. The idea of reconciliation is the central thing in Christianity, the essential part in its description. God, man unable to approach God until reconciliation has been made, Christ the Mediator who reconciles, and His people brought again into communion with God,—all Christian doctrine rings the changes on these four fundamental ideas. Whatever contrivance or tends to destroy these, or their relations to each other, is incompatible with Christianity. Whenever any of these four ideas—God, man, Christ, and the kingdom of God—also so misread as to introduce notions incompatible with the relations in which they stand to each other in Christianity, then heresy enters. Theology therefore (and Protestant theology only carries the idea somewhat further) has usually recognized four kinds of heresy, corresponding to the four fundamental ideas on which Christian doctrine rests. The nature and character of God and of His relation to the universe and to man may be so misread as to make reconciliation an impossible thing, and so also may the nature of Christ, the nature of man, and the nature of the results of Christ's work among men. Hence arise heresies about God, about the person of Christ, about the nature of man, and about the results of Christ's work—all of them being doctrines which are incompatible with the idea of reconciliation.

I Reconciliation implies that man has been separated by sin from God, and that God can overcome this separation. All descriptions of God, of His nature, character, and works, which contradict this fact may give rise to heresies. Thus God cannot overcome the separation if it be impossible for Him to make Himself beyond Himself for salvation. The nature of the Godhead may be so described as to contradict the idea of reconciliation, as, e.g., in the Arian heresy. Again, all descriptions of God's relations to the universe which imply that the universe and all things are not absolutely dependent on Him, which imply that His gracious purpose can be thwarted, contradict the idea of reconciliation, and so may give rise to heresies, e.g., the Gnostic doctrine that matter is independent of God. Misstatements about God's relation to Himself and about His relation to the universe give rise to two different kinds of heresy.

II Reconciliation implies a real mediation which can accomplish the reconciliation on both its sides, and so heresies may arise about the nature of Christ. The Saviour may be so described that there is no real mediation, and no real reconciliation. These errors may arise in two ways, as on either side of the mediation is described. The Saviour may be represented so that He has no real relation to God on the one hand or to man on the other. He may be described in such a way that there is no solidarity between Him and God, as, e.g., in the Eutychian heresy, or He may be described in such a way that there is no solidarity between Him and man, as in the Docetist heresy. Misstatements about the relation of Christ to God and the relation of Christ to man give rise to two different kinds of heresy.

III Reconciliation implies that man is so separated from God by sin that there is real need for salvation, and yet not so separated that he cannot be brought into communion with God again, and the nature of man and sin, and especially the nature of sin, may be so described as to set aside these requirements. The fact of sin and sin's presence in man may be so explained away as to leave little ground for the necessity of reconciliation, e.g., in the Pelagian heresy. Again, on the other hand, the fact and presence of sin may be so described that there is no sin in man for salvation, it may be alleged that sin belongs to the essential nature of man and cannot be removed, e.g., in the Manichean heresy. Thus two misstatements about the connection between man and sin give rise to two kinds of heresy.

IV The results of the reconciliation effected by Christ may also be misstatements. The reconciliation between man and God, which is the formal occasion of the reconciliation, was caused by sin, and the distance between God and man is a moral one. It is not such a separation as might arise from the difference between the divine and the human nature, or from the inevitable distance between Creator and creature. And so reconciliation has for its effect, not mere absorption into God, but the restoration of moral communion between God and His people. The intercourse was broken by sin, and the result of reconciliation must be moral, it must take effect in a change of will, in the creation of a life of new obedience. False ideas arise when this is misrepresented, and these misrepresentations can arise in two ways—when it is said that the new representations can arise in two ways—when it is said that the action of divine grace impregnates the nature in a magical way, instead of taking effect on the will in a moral fashion, e.g., the magical idea of sacramental efficacy, or when it is said that the result of the reconciliation is to raise man above the necessity of living a moral life and of conforming to the laws of morality, e.g., the Antinomian heresy.

Thus theology finds at least eight separate kinds of heresy, arising from the entrance of foreign elements into the four fundamental ideas of Christianity. All heresies may be reduced to one or other of these eight classes. In point of fact, however, most heresies which have actually arisen cannot be said to belong purely to any one of them. The class only denotes the type, for one error is apt to bring others in its train, and so most heresies are mixed, and do not in all respects conform to their type.

Theologians, however, have not rested content with the mere theoretical or genetic description of heresy and heretics, and have commonly borrowed distinctions first laid down by jurists in canon law to distinguish more narrowly the characteristic marks of heresy. Thus a false doctrine to be a heresy must be an intellectual error, it must be held *voluntarily*, it must contradict a doctrine already defined by the formula of the church, it must be held *pertinaciously*, and the heretic must be professedly *within the church*, but these distinctions belong properly to the legal aspect of heresy, and must be referred to again.

Many theologians, Schleiermacher among others, have

attempted to describe the actual origin of heresies, and a common mode of explanation is as follows. Heresies arise in that province of theology called dogmatic, and commonly appear during the definition of some important part of dogmatic theology. Dogmatic theology is the rationale of the spiritual events and forces which have called Christianity into being. In the attempt made by the church to understand these events and forces which have called it into being, its attention has commonly been confined to the more outstanding portions. The history of dogmatic shows us that from time to time the church has endeavored to master one doctrine, not the whole round of doctrines, it has endeavored to make distinct single points, instead of working at the various relations of all the doctrines to each other. This very natural mode of work has the one disadvantage that it concentrates attention on isolated portions of doctrine rather than on the whole mass, and between the consecutive portions there are gaps. The mind of man, however, like nature, abhors a vacuum, and summarily fills these vacua up with material usually drawn from the prevailing philosophical or scientific theories of the day. These summary explanations or theories may or may not be in accordance with the spirit of Christianity, and when they are not they become a fruitful source of heresies. One of the best illustrations of this is the introduction into theology of the Aristotelian doctrine of *τὸ ἐκόνον*, which gave the church the Pelagian heresy along with some others.

So much for the general theological conception of heresy, of its nature, divisions, and sources, but before proceeding to describe the use of the term in canon law, it should be observed that the theological does not always correspond with the ecclesiastical meaning of the word. It is generally acknowledged that Holy Scripture is the source of doctrine, and that for the due understanding thereof the enlightening guidance of the Holy Spirit is required, though, of course, the precise meaning of this statement varies in different systems of theology. Holy Scripture and the witness of the Spirit of God are thus the touchstone of heresy. In the Roman Catholic and Greek Churches, however, it is held that the enlightening guidance of the Holy Spirit in this respect is restrained within the limits of certain ecclesiastical machinery (the oecumenical council, the pope, *et cetera*, &c.), which are the only channels through which the Spirit comes to the church, and hence the creed of the church rather than Scripture is the real touchstone of heresy. Protestant theologians, on the other hand, do not believe either that the guidance of the Spirit is always present within this ecclesiastical machinery or that it is given in this way only, and so they make a distinction between mere ecclesiastical and real theological heresies. Ecclesiastical heresies arise when a fundamental statement made in the creed or confession is contradicted. But it may happen, since creeds and councils may err, that the error is not in the contradiction but in the creed, and therefore there is always an appeal from the creed to the Scripture. The ecclesiastical idea of heresy has always the theological idea behind it, and may at any time be corrected by it. Roman Catholic and Greek theologians, on the other hand, do not admit any going behind the record, they do not allow any appeal from the creed to Scripture. According to their ideas the creed is the infallible digest of Scripture, and therefore heresy is to be tested by the creed and not by Scripture—that is, the ecclesiastical and theological ideas of heresy are exactly the same.

2 Heresy according to Canon Law.—Canon law was the ecclesiastical law of mediæval Europe, and is still the law of the Roman Catholic Church, and its description of heresy and of heretics is almost more important than the theological in the investigation of the matter from the historical side. Canon law regards heresy

from the practical side of ecclesiastical procedure and legal enactment. Its view is much narrower than the theological, but much more precise. Orthodoxy is the doctrine maintained by the inflexible Roman Church and assented to by all its faithful members, heresy is dissent from the articles of faith established by the Roman pontiffs and by the councils of the Roman Church. Canon law also is mainly concerned with heresy in order to punish it, and therefore is obliged to treat the whole subject with severe legal accuracy of statement. It proceeds from strict definitions. Perhaps the commonest definition is the following:—heresy is "error intellectus voluntarius contra aliquam propositionem catholicam cum pertinacia assertus ab eo qui baptismum accepit." Trusts are accustomed to expand this general definition in a variety of qualifying statements.

(a) All heresy is error, but every error is not a heresy. It is an error according to canon law to take usury, it is heresy to say that to take usury is not a sin, but taking usury is no heresy. Heresy is intellectual error. It is intellectual error believed to be truth, and that in spite of predominant opinion. Canonists distinguish between members of the Roman Church who refuse, *e.g.*, to accept the "filioque" clause in the creed, and members of the Greek Church who make the same refusal. The refusal is in both cases an error, but it is a heresy only in the Roman Church, for there only is the predominant opinion against the error. (b) An error also only becomes heresy when it is held voluntarily. To be a heretic a man must stick to his error, although he knows that it has been condemned by the church. A heretic not only errs, but knows that he errs, and wishes to err. (c) Not is every voluntary error a heresy, the heretic must contradict a doctrine which has been clearly stated in the creed and has become part of the defined faith of the church. (d) Not is an erroneous opinion voluntarily professed in opposition to the creed of the church heresy, unless the heretic persists in it. Furthermore, all canonists insist, is an essential element in heresy, and unless it is present no process for heresy can lawfully proceed. (e) And lastly, a heretic must be a member of the church. He must have been baptized. Neither a Jew, a Mahometan, nor a heathen can be a heretic. They may be unbelievers, they may hold erroneous opinions, but their opinions are not heresies.

From the first qualification, that heresy is an intellectual error, canonists deduce the ground of their enactments against the suspicion of heresy and against those suspected. Canon law uniformly proceeds on the idea that heresy is not merely an error but a crime. It is a crime, however, which belongs to the invisible part of man, to his intellect. It is not something done with his hands or his feet which witnesses can see, and they argue that direct proof is therefore almost impossible, and that the commission of the crime must almost always be proved from suspicions. This suspicion of heresy occupies a very large space in the dissertations of canonists, and the weakness of their position has made them bring in a very great number of reasons which they seem to think strengthen it (see especially Dandinius, *De suspectis de hæresibus*). They carefully define the degrees of suspicion with the conduct appropriate to each: whose the suspicion is only "light," the suspected are simply to be watched, where it is "vehement," they are to be denounced, where it is "violent," they are to be treated as heretics. Canonists have carefully analysed and arranged what are reasonable grounds of suspicion. Pope Innocent III. declared that to lead a solitary life, to refuse to accommodate one's self to the prevailing manners of society, and to frequent unauthorised religious meetings were abundant grounds of suspicion, while later canonists were accustomed to give lists of deeds which made the道士 suspect.—a priest who did not celebrate mass, a lay-

man who was seen in clerical robes, those who favoured heretics, received them as guests, gave them safe conduct, tolerated them, trusted them, defended them, fought under them, or read their books, were all to be suspect. The canonist rules for suspicion became a sort of inquisitor's *vide mecum*, and when really practised produced a reign of terror.

Since canon law regarded heresy with such honor and detestation, it is not surprising that it gives many directions, which have the force of legal enactments, whereby men may avoid the dangers of heresy. Pope Alexander IV. prohibited laymen from arguing about matters of faith. The council of Toledo (1129), anxious to put down the Albigenses, ordained that every man above fourteen and every woman above twelve years of age should solemnly swear to abjure every heresy and to maintain in its completeness the Catholic faith. Pope Pius IV. ordered the laity to abstain from reading the Scriptures in the vulgar tongue. The promiscuous reading of books was forbidden, and an index of prohibited books believed to be dangerous to faith or morals was formed.

Canon law regards heresy as a crime, and while it recognizes that the power of the church is spiritual, and that the church visits offences with spiritual punishments such as excommunication, it proceeds on the idea that the state should assist the church in suppressing heresy, and visit heretics with civil pains and penalties, including torture and capital punishment, but this side of the history of heresy belongs as much to civil as to canon law. The church, however, did what it could against heretics. The council of Laodicea (can. 6-9) prohibited them from attending service, though from subsequent acts this could not have been enforced. They were not allowed to give evidence in an ecclesiastical court, a father was prohibited from allowing his son or daughter to marry a heretic, social intercourse with them was prohibited, &c.

3 *Heresy according to Civil Law*.—Civil law treats heresy in a still simpler fashion. The legal idea seems to have been that, since the state approved of one creed and gave it public recognition, to profess any other creed was in some sense civil disaffection or a kind of treason, and manifested lack of loyalty. This notion, however, was supplemented by another and much deeper one in the public law of the mediæval empire. According to the ideas of the earlier mediæval jurists, civil government and ecclesiastical government were equally and in the same sense ordinances of God, and this thought found expression in the twin conceptions of world king and world-priest, emperor and pope, who were God's vicars, and ruled in His name over church and state. God was the king of the world, the emperor was His viceroy, and treason, therefore, included treason against God, or heresy, as well as treason against the emperor. This idea lingered long, and indeed still lingers, and complicates the simpler civil notion of heresy. For all practical purposes, however, the deeper thought may be discarded. In civil law, heresy is *pernicious dissent from the creed approved of for the time being*. For example, the Lutheran creed, the *Confessio Augustana*, was heresy in all parts of Germany up to the peace of Augsburg, when it was recognized as a creed which might be professed. It then became orthodox in the civil sense of the term, in the same way that the Roman Catholic creed was orthodox, while the Calvinist creed, still unrecognized, was heresy.

Civil punishment followed religious offences as early as the time of Constantine, who enacted severe penalties against the Donatists, and ordained that all possessing Arian books should burn them on the pain of death. Laws against the reading of heretical books became very frequent during and after the 4th century. Arius made the



reading of books written by the Eunomians a capital offence. Theodosius and Valentinian proscribed the Nestorian books, and Valentinian and Marcian the books of Eutyches and Nestorius. The custom became so common that the condemnation of any heresy by the church was followed by the proscription of the writings of members of the sect. The *Codex Theodosianus*, bk. xvi. tit. 5, "De hæreticis," enumerates a great variety of laws against heresy with penalties more or less severe. They had the practical effect of declaring heretics outlaws, who could not hold offices of dignity or value, receive or bequeath money, enforce contracts, &c. In some cases death was the punishment for heresy. Justinian made it impossible for any heretic to bear witness in the civil courts of the land. This legislation may all be traced back to the action of Theodosius, who imposed the Nicene creed upon all his subjects, and made it a law of the land. It continued in force during the Middle Ages, and in consequence heretics who could not accept the Nicene creed were outlaws also. This perhaps explains the curious fact that almost all the mediæval heretics were also revolutionists. During the Middle Ages, especially from the time of Innocent III. onwards, civil interference in cases of heresy was much increased. In the early church the power of discipline belonged to the presbytery, and was afterwards usurped by the bishops, who continued to exercise it in matters of heresy until Innocent III. appointed the Inquisition to deal with heretics. So long as the empire was not Christian, the civil law had nothing to do with the punishment of erroneous opinions, but as soon as Christianity became the authorized religion of the state, the old pagan idea that the state has power to punish *religiones novæ et illicitæ* was revived. The state, either instructed by the church or, as in the Theodosian code, without instruction, visited with civil pains and penalties all such opinions. This came to a height when the Inquisition was established, and civil courts and national assemblies one after another decreed that whatever penalties were imposed by the Inquisition should be imposed by the state, or else handed over to the state for the Inquisition to be dealt with as matters deserving the infliction of civil penalties, fines, imprisonment, torture, and death. There is no sadder page in the history of the church than her alliance with the state for the purpose of torturing men out of opinions different from her own. Since the Reformation the persecuting spirit, although tenacious of life, has been gradually dying out.

*Principal Heresies*.—Early Christian theologians wrote a great many books against heresies in which they enumerated the various heresies which had sprung up in the church up to their own time. St. Augustine tells us (*Ep. 222*) that Philastrius, bishop of Brescia, had discovered 28 heresies among the Jews before the coming of Christ, and 128 in the Christian Church afterwards, and many other orthodox writers have given very long lists of these erroneous opinions. It was natural that the early centuries of the Christian era, especially the first five, should be some what prolific in heresies, because that was the very period when the church was occupied in defining the principal doctrines of Christianity. A history of heresies must spend most time upon the early centuries. The first dogmatic work of the church was to define the nature of Christ, who occupied the central place in its thought, and it had to clear its way between two opposite views, both of which interfered with the full dogmatic expression of the nature of the Mediator. On the one hand, many of the Jewish converts never rose to the height of the Christian idea of the person of Christ, and it is evident that these must have been very numerous from the emphasis with which it is insisted that Christians should *θεολογῶν τὸν υἱόν*. These Jewish converts preferred to regard the Saviour as the last

of the prophets, one who bore the same relation to God and to man as the prophets did. They shrank from the idea of the incarnation, they seemed to feel no need for the divine Saviour. This theory was of course accompanied by other views about the nature of Christianity, but the main element was opposition to the Christian doctrine of the real divinity of Christ, God who has become man. This Ebionite heresy has been maintained by men who wish to call themselves Christians since these early days, and has taken a great variety of shapes, but whether it is held by Jew or Unitarian, there is the same outline of opinion and the same steadfast repugnance to the doctrine of the incarnation. On the other hand, the philosophic doctrine of the repugnance between matter and spirit, the idea, which runs through all Greek philosophy, that matter is the source of evil, induced many of the early Gentile converts to Christianity to think of the incarnation as a metaphor rather than as a fact. Christ, they thought, did not take, but only seemed to take, a human body. These Docetists, as they were called, had a whole series of successors in the early church. When Christian theology advanced step by step in the definition of the doctrine of the person of Christ, it was this old idea of the repugnance between the divine spirit and human nature embodied that lay at the root of the Apollinarian, Eutychian, and Monophysite heresies. Apollinarius denied that the *Thēanthrōpos* had a "rational" soul, he denied the full humanity of the *Saviour*. Eutyches denied that the *Thēanthrōpos* had a human nature, and the Monophysites, in their various theories, held strongly by the same idea. All these theories, however different in form and expression, denied the full and true humanity of Christ, and so contradicted the church's yearning for a Saviour truly man as well as truly God. These heresies, along with the Nestorian, were all finally condemned at the council of Chalcedon (the fourth œcumenical).

But long before the church had definitely set forth the doctrine of the person of Christ, its attention was turned to the doctrine of the essential nature of the Godhead. At first this doctrine was scarcely considered apart from Christology. It is impossible to separate the history of the doctrine of the Trinity from the doctrine of the person of Christ, for long the two separate problems were mechanically mixed. At length it became evident to the mind of the church that there were two doctrines, and Christian theology turned aside to discuss, and if possible settle, the doctrine of the essential nature of the Godhead before it proceeded to exhaust the doctrine of the person of Christ. For the real problem in the Arian controversy was not the divinity of the Mediator but the nature of God. Is God to be thought of as a Trinity or as a Unity? what is the relation of the Second Person in the Trinity to the First Person? The real gain to Christian theology which came from the discussions in the Arian controversy was to thrust out the Greek conception of Deity as the Absolute who cannot be described save by negations, and to put in its stead a Christian conception which shows that there are motions within the Deity which, however inconprehensible, enable us to know that God may be in sympathy with men, and that all things may live, move, and have their being in Him.

The philosophical idea that matter is the source of evil, that matter has always some stubborn element in it by which it can defy the ideal, gave rise to a whole series of ancient and mediæval heresies. The Gnostics in all their various sects distinguished between God and the Creator. The good God, they held, could not defile Himself by contact with matter, and therefore could not be the God of creation and providence. Christian theology, on the other hand, has always confessed God to be the Almighty Maker

of heaven and earth, and all things seen and unseen, and the necessity for such a doctrine of creation consists in the fact that the Christian consciousness demands the absence of any thing that might come in between God and the furtherance of His plan of salvation. It demands that life may be thought of as dependent on God, in order that He may be able to make all things work together for the good of His people, and so it has strenuously asserted the doctrines of creation and providence in opposition to an independent matter and the reign of fate. The Gnostic ideas were rejected by the Manicheans and by several medieval sects, such as the Paulicians and Messalians, and, in the Eastern Church, by the Bogomils.

The Pelagian and Manichean heresies principally concern the Christian doctrine of man and of the presence of sin in man, and contended the church's creed, because they do away with the Christian doctrine of reconciliation. Pelagianism, it was held, denied the need of God's grace by insisting that man was free from indwelling sin at the beginning of his career, and followed good, when he did follow it, by the power of his own will, while Manicheism, by asserting that sin belonged to the essential nature of man, seemed to paralyze the whole divine action in reconciliation. Eng. 1861-62, the Gnostic and Manichean heresies, and his opinions really implied that there was no real need for the Saviour and the salvation which Christianity describes, and that semi-Pelagianism, although much nearer orthodox doctrine, very inadequately comprehended that sinfulness in man which rendered reconciliation indispensable ere there could be a restoration of communion with God.

The Antinomian and various kinds of mystical theories about the Christian life all proceed upon a view of the effects of Christ's work which is at variance with fundamental Christian ideas. Christian doctrine teaches that men recommended to God will strive to live a life of new obedience to Him, and it holds that this life of new obedience comes under the same moral laws as the ordinary life of man. But many Christian sects have professed theories about this life of new obedience which seem to imply that it is not under the laws of ordinary morality, that Christian freedom means licence to do what ordinary morals forbid. The Epistles to the Corinthians seem to say that such theories were held in the apostolic church, and were denounced by the apostles, many of the Gnostic and Manichean sects undoubtedly professed them. The same views occur again and again in medieval heresy, and were held by many of the enthusiastic sectaries in Reformation times and later. The Brethren of the Free Spirit in the 13th and 14th century, the Anabaptists during the Reformation period, and some of the followers of Molinos are examples. The mystical theories which so largely entered into the medieval church, and which have continually clung to the skirts of Christianity, have in many instances proceeded on the principle that the new life is implanted in man in a physical way, and magical ideas of the means of grace have been very destructive to the moral theory of the Christian life.

The history of the medieval heretical sects is by far too complicated to be entered on here. Many of them did no more than protest against the hierarchical constitution of the church of the Middle Ages. Most of them only sought room to carry out to the full their ideas of a true "Imitatio Christi," but it is also certain that a good many Gnostic and Antinomian tenets were held. The Friends of God, the Faticicelli, the Boghards, were all mystics, but their mysticism was of a very harmless description, while the Brethren of the Common Law were worthy forerunners of the pietists of the 18th century (see MYSTICISM).

The heretics of the Reformation Church scarcely call for separate remark. The Zwickau prophets and the Ana-

baptists held opinions at variance with the ordinary notions of what is meant by the Christian life. Schwenkfeld, the Quietists, the followers of Madame Bourignon, all revolved types of mysticism which had appeared long before, and the Quakers had then forerunners in medieval times. Many of these sects, though called heretical, seem to have arisen simply from the desire to live pure and more spiritual lives than the church organization of their times permitted, and in order to do so were led to lay stress upon the idea of personal guidance by the Spirit of God, and on the necessity of the "house and heart church" in opposition to the external church life of their time, on the need of personal as opposed to official religion.

In this article Christian heresy alone has been described. Heresy, however, arises wherever there is doctrine, and there are Mahometan and Buddhist heresies and sects as well as Christian.

The best history of sects and heresies from the sympathetic side is Gottfried Arnold's *Urgeschichte der christlichen Ketzer und Heterodoxen*, 1699-1709 (best ed. that of Schaffhausen, 1740). A very good list of writers on heresy, ancient and medieval, is given in Burton's *Dispensary Lecture on Heresies of the Apostolic Age*, 1829. The various Trinitarian and Christological heresies may be studied in Denon's *History of the Doctrine of the Person of Christ*, 1846-66, Eng. 1861-62, the Gnostic and Manichean heresies, and his opinions really implied that there was no real need for the Saviour and the salvation which Christianity describes, and that semi-Pelagianism, although much nearer orthodox doctrine, very inadequately comprehended that sinfulness in man which rendered reconciliation indispensable ere there could be a restoration of communion with God.

The Antinomian and various kinds of mystical theories about the Christian life all proceed upon a view of the effects of Christ's work which is at variance with fundamental Christian ideas. Christian doctrine teaches that men recommended to God will strive to live a life of new obedience to Him, and it holds that this life of new obedience comes under the same moral laws as the ordinary life of man. But many Christian sects have professed theories about this life of new obedience which seem to imply that it is not under the laws of ordinary morality, that Christian freedom means licence to do what ordinary morals forbid. The Epistles to the Corinthians seem to say that such theories were held in the apostolic church, and were denounced by the apostles, many of the Gnostic and Manichean sects undoubtedly professed them. The same views occur again and again in medieval heresy, and were held by many of the enthusiastic sectaries in Reformation times and later. The Brethren of the Free Spirit in the 13th and 14th century, the Anabaptists during the Reformation period, and some of the followers of Molinos are examples. The mystical theories which so largely entered into the medieval church, and which have continually clung to the skirts of Christianity, have in many instances proceeded on the principle that the new life is implanted in man in a physical way, and magical ideas of the means of grace have been very destructive to the moral theory of the Christian life.

<sup>2</sup> Stephen's *Co-mendations*, bk. iv. c. 7.

the devil or eternal punishment is consistent with membership of the church. The right of every man to the offices of the church is established by statute, without reference to opinions, and it is not possible to say what opinions, if any, would operate to disqualify him.

The case of clergyman is entirely different. The statute 13 Eliz. c. 12, § 2, enacts that "if any person ecclesiastical, to which shall have an ecclesiastical living, shall adversely maintain or affirm any doctrine directly contrary or repugnant to any of the said articles, and by conversation before the bishop of the diocese, or the ordinary, or before the queen's highness or commissaries in matters ecclesiastical, shall persuade them or not revoke his said, or after such revocation effractions affirm such articles or doctrine," he shall be deprived of his ecclesiastical offices. The Act it will be observed applies only to clergyman, and the punishment is strictly limited to deprivation of benefice. The judicial committee of the privy council, in the last case, appear, as we several occasions previously mentioned, by which the scope of the Act has been confined to its narrowest legal effect. The court will construe the Articles of Religion and formularies according to the *spirit*, *rule* for the interpretation of *scriptures* and *ecclesiastical instruments*. No rule of doctrine is to be ascribed to the church which is not distinctly and expressly set out or plainly involved in the *written law of the Church*, and where there is no rule, a clergyman may express his opinion without fear of penal consequences. In the *Loved and Beloved* (Williams v. the Bishop of Salisbury, and Wilson v. Feild) it was held to be not penal for a clergyman to speak of merit in itself as a "fiction," or to express a hope of ultimate pardon of the sinner, or to affirm the efficacy of any part of the Old or New Testament, however unconnected with religious faith or moral duty, was not within the intemperance of the Fifth Spirit. In the case of Noble v. Voysey in 1871, the committee held that it was not bound to affirm a statement of worldly dubious import, as it would have been in cases affecting property. At the same time, any manifest contradiction of the Articles, or any obvious evasion of them, would subject a clergyman to the penalties of the statute. In some of the cases the question has been used how far the doctrine of the church could be ascertained by reference to the opinions generally expressed by divines belonging to its communion. Such opinions, it would seem, might be taken into account as showing the extent of liberty which had been in practice, disused and evaded on the interpretation of the articles, but would certainly not be allowed to increase their stringency. It is not the business of the court to pronounce on the absolute truth or falsehood of any given opinion, but simply to say whether it is formally consistent with the legal doctrine of the Church of England. Whether conviction lies in jurisdiction in cases of liberty is a question which is occasionally some difference of opinion among lawyers. Hale, as quoted by Phillimore, says that before the time of Richard II, this was, before any Acts of Parliament were made, about heretics, it is without question that in conviction of the clergy or ministers and "they might and frequently did here in England proceed to the sentencing of heretics." But later writers, while adhering to the statement that conviction might be given, seem to be inclined to doubt whether it could proceed to punish the offender, even when he was a clerk in orders. Phillimore states that there is no longer any doubt, on an appeal from the effect of the Clergy Discipline Act, 3 and 4 Vict. c. 11, that conviction lies no longer to condemn a clergyman for heresy. The supposed right of conviction to stamp heretical opinions with its disapproval was recently exercised on a somewhat remarkable occasion. In 1861, on the occasion of the printing of Cuddeback's *Living* containing the opinion of two of the most eminent lawyers of the day (Sir Hugh Cairns and Mr. Balfour) passed judgment upon the volume entitled *Reason and Reason*. The judgment pronounced that the work contained many valuable as containing teaching contrary to the doctrine received by the United Church of England and Ireland, in common with the whole Orthodox Church of Christ. These proceedings were challenged in the House of Lords by Lord Hatherly, and the lord chancellor (Westbury), speaking on behalf of the Government, stated that if there was any "judicial judgment" it would be a violation of the law, subjecting those concerned in it to the penalties of a *procurator*, but that the sentence in question was "simply nothing, literally no sentence at all." It was thus at least doubtful whether conviction has a right even to express an opinion unless specially authorized to do so by the crown, and it is certain that it cannot do anything more. In fact, as we have seen, the resort, like all other ecclesiastical questions, is decided by the judicial committee of the council.

The English lawyers, following the Roman law, distinguish between *heresy* and *apostasy*, and in letters often to be met with an Act which still stands on the statute book, although it has long been virtually obsolete—the 9 and 10 Will. III. c. 36. If any person who has been educated in or has professed the Christian religion shall, by writing, printing, teaching, or any speaking, assert or maintain that there are more Gods than one, or shall deny

any of the persons of the Holy Trinity to be God, or shall deny the Christian religion to be true or the Holy Scriptures of the Old and New Testament to be of divine authority, he shall for the first offence be declared incapable of holding any ecclesiastical, civil, or military office or employment, and for the second incapable of bringing any action, or of being guardian, executor, legatee, or trustee, and shall suffer three years imprisonment without bail. Offences were added from those stated in this Act by 14 Geo. III. c. 160, which permits Christians to deny any of the persons of the Trinity without penal consequences. (E. R.)

HERFORD, a town of Prussia, capital of a circle in the government district of Minden, province of Westphalia, is situated in a beautiful and fruitful district at the confluence of the Weira and An, and on the Minden and Cologne railway, 19 miles south-west of Minden. It possesses five evangelical churches, among which may be mentioned the Marienkirche, a Romanesque building with a Gothic apse of the 16th century, the Marienkirche, in the Gothic style, and the Johanniskirche, with a tower 280 feet high. The other principal buildings are the Catholic church, the synagogue, the gymnasium founded in 1510, the agricultural school, and the theatre. The industries include cotton and flax spinning, and the manufacture of linen cloth, furniture, sugar, tobacco, and leather. The population of the town in 1875 was 11,997.

HERFORD, once its origin to a man who is said to have been founded in 1510, and was continued by the Prussian king. From the emperor Frederick I. the abbey obtained primary rank and a seat in the imperial diet. The foundation was secularized in 1805. Herford was a member of the Hanseatic League, and was a free imperial town, but in 1617 it was subordinated by the elector of Brandenburg. It came into the possession of Westphalia in 1807, and in 1813 into that of Prussia.

#### HERIOT, See COPLEY

HERIOT, GEORGE (1603-1633), the founder of Heriot's Hospital, Edinburgh, was descended from an old family of some consideration in the county of Huntingdon, and his father, a goldsmith in Edinburgh, for some time represented the shire in the Scottish parliament. George was born in 1603, and after receiving a good education was apprenticed to his father's trade. In 1636 he married the daughter of a deceased Edinburgh merchant, and with the assistance of her patrimony set up in business on his own account. At first he occupied a small "bath" at the north-east corner of St. Giles's Church, and afterwards a more pretentious shop at the west end of the building. To the business of a goldsmith he joined that of a money lender, and in 1697 he had acquired such a reputation that he was appointed goldsmith to Queen Anne, consort of James VI. In 1601 he became jeweller to the king, and on the removal of the court to London, he followed his royal master thither, and occupied a shop opposite the Exchange. Heriot was largely indebted for his fortune to the extravagance of the queen, and to the mitigation of his extravagance by the nobility. Latterly he had such an extensive business as a jeweller that on one occasion a Government proclamation was issued calling upon all the magistrates of the kingdom to aid him in securing the workmen he required. He died in London, 10th February 1633. In 1608, having some time previously lost his first wife, he married Alison Primrose, daughter of James Primrose, grandfather of the first earl of Rosebery, but she died in 1612, by mutual marriage had he any issue. The surplus of his estate, after deducting legacies to his nearest relations and some of his more intimate friends, was bequeathed to found a hospital for the education of fourteen sons of the town of Edinburgh, and his value afterwards increased so greatly as to supply funds for the erection of several Heriot foundation schools in different parts of the city. For a notice of Heriot's Hospital, see EDINBURGH, vol. vi. p. 606.

Heriot takes a leading part in Scott's novel, *The Fortunes of Nigel* (see also the Introduction). *A History of Heriot's Hospital, with a Memoir of the Founder*, by William Strick, D.D., appeared in 1897, 2d ed. 1899.

**HERISAU**, the largest town in the Swiss half-canton of Appenzell auser-Rhoden, is situated at the confluence of the Glatt and Dullbach, 7 miles north-west of Appenzell, and about 2550 feet above sea level. The town is irregularly built, and extends over a large area. The church-tower, in which the archives are kept, is referred to the 7th century. Herisau has a public library, an arsenal, a new town-house, and a hospital, and is the seat of the cantonal council and of a district court of justice. The manufactures comprise muslin, cotton, and silk. Christianity was introduced at Herisau (a name during the Middle Ages Latinized as Angia Domini) about the beginning of the 7th century. The nobles of Herisau were its first seigniors, but their power passed in 1390 into the hands of the abbots of St Gall, from whose somewhat oppressive rule the people bought themselves free in 1403. The population in 1870 was 9736. In the neighbourhood beautiful walks lead to the interesting ruins of the castles of Rosenberg and Rosenberg. The baths and goat's-whey cure of Heimenbach are about 1 mile to the north east.

**HERISTAL**. See **HERISTAL**.

**HERITABLE JURISDICTIONS**, in the law of Scotland, were grants of jurisdiction made to a man and his heirs. They were a usual accompaniment to feudal tenures, and the power which they conferred on great families, being recognized as a source of danger to the state, led to frequent attempts being made by statute to restrict them, both before and after the Union. They were all abolished by the Act 20 Geo II c 43, which enacts (§ 1) that all heritable jurisdictions of justiciary, and all regalities and heritable bailiwicks, and all heritable constabularies, other than the office of high constable of Scotland, and all stewardships, being parts only of shires and counties, and all sheriffships and deputy sheriffships of districts, being parts only of shires and counties, belonging to or possessed by any subject or subjects, shall be taken away and totally dissolved and extinguished. At the same time, constabularies and other jurisdictions having been recognized as rights of property by the Treaty of Union, the Act provides that compensation shall be awarded to all persons lawfully possessed of such jurisdictions, and the sum of £150,000 was afterwards voted by parliament to pay the claims for compensation for loss of jurisdiction, as settled by a report of the Court of Session (see *Eskine's Institutes*, by Nicholson, p. 92).

**HERLEN**, Franz, of Nördlingen, was an artist of the early Swabian school, who tempered the rudeness of his native art with some of the delicacy of the masters of Bruges. The date and place of his birth are unknown, but his name is on the roll of the tax-gatherers of Ulm in 1410, and in 1467 he was made citizen and town painter at Nördlingen, "because of his acquaintance with Flemish methods of painting." One of the first of his acknowledged productions is a shrine on one of the altars of the church of Rothenburg on the Tauber, the wings of which were finished in 1466, with seven scenes from the lives of Christ and the Virgin Mary. In the town-hall of Rothenburg is a Madonna and St Catharine of 1467, and in the choir of Nördlingen cathedral a triptych of 1488, representing the Nativity and Christ amidst the Doctors, at the side of a votive Madonna attended by St Joseph and St Margaret as patrons of a family. In each of these works the painter's name certifies the picture, and the manner is truly that of an artist "acquainted with Flemish methods." We are not told under whom Herlen laboured in the Netherlands, but he probably took the same course as Schongauer and Hans Holbein the elder, who studied in the school of Van der Weyden. His altarpiece at Rothenburg contains groups and figures, as well as forms of action and drapery, which seem copied from those of Van der

Weyden's or Memling's disciples, and the votive Madonna of 1488, whilst characterized by similar features, only displays such further changes as may be accounted for by the master's constant later contact with contemporaries in Swabia. Herlen had none of the genius of Schongauer. He failed to acquire the delicacy even of the second-rate men who handed down to Maitais the traditions of the 15th century, but his example was certainly favourable to the development of art in Swabia. By general consent critics have assigned to him a large altarpiece, with scenes from the gospels and figures of St Florian and St Florian, and a Crucifixion, the principal figure of which is carved in high relief on the surface of a large panel in the church of Dinkelsbühl. A Crucifixion, with eight scenes from the New Testament, is shown as by in the cathedral, a Christ in Judgment, with Mary and John, and the Resurrection of Souls in the town hall of Nördlingen. A small Euphany, once in the convent of the Minorites of Ulm, is in the Holschulter collection at Augsburg, a Madonna and Crucifixion in the National Museum at Munich. Herlen's epitaph, preserved by Rathgeber, states that he died on the 12th of October 1491, and was buried at Nördlingen.

**HERMANN**, the popular modern name in Germany for the ancient German hero Alaminus. See **GERMANY**, vol. x p. 478.

**HERMANN**, commonly distinguished as Hermannus Contractus, or Hermann of Reichenau, the Lamp of the German chronicles and scholars, was born in 1018, a son of the Swabian Count Wolrad (Wolff) of Veltheimingen (Vellingon or Vörlingen), and died in 1054, at the family residence of Aldehusen near Biberach. Educated at the monastery of Reichenau, and afterwards admitted a member of the fraternity, he added greatly to that reputation for learning which the establishment had maintained from the time of Abbot Beato. Besides the ordinary studies of the monastic scholar, he devoted himself to mathematics, astronomy, and music, and constructed watches and instruments of various kinds.

His chief work is a *Chronicon ab anno conditi ad annum 1054*, which in its earlier portion consists of a compilation from previous chronicles, but between 1044 and 1054 furnishes important and original material for the history of Henry III. The first edition, from a MS no longer extant, was printed by Elhard at Basel in 1529, and reprinted in 1630; another edition appeared at St Blasien in 1690 under the supervision of Usseimann, and a third, from a Rachenau MS, forms part of vol. v of Pütz's *Monumenta Germaniae Antiqua*. A German translation of the last portion of the work is *Die Geschichtsbücher des deutschen Volkes*. The separate lives of Conrad II and Henry III, often ascribed to Hermann, appear to have passed through his hands. *De mensura septuaginta* and *De utilitate astronomie* (to be found on the authority of Schilling, 1858, in *Pez, Theaurus anecdotorum novissimus*, in) being the first contributions of moment furnished by a European to this subject, Hermann was for a time considered the inventor of the astrolabe. A didactic poem from his pen, *De arte et ratione per seculum*, is printed in Hampt's *Brichsel's 17te für deutsche Alterthümer* (vol. xii), and he is sometimes credited with the composition of the Latin hymns *Veni Sancte Spiritus*, *Sabaoth Regina*, and *Agnus Dei*.

**HERMANN, FRIEDRICH BENEDICT WILLIAM VON** (1705–1868), one of the most distinguished of modern writers on political economy, was born on 5th December 1795, at Dinkelsbühl in Bavaria. After finishing his primary education he was for some time employed in a draughtsman's office. He then resumed his studies, partly at the gymnasium in his native town, partly at the universities of Erlangen and Würzburg. His attention seems principally to have been given to mathematics and political economy. In 1817 he took up a private school at Nürnberg, where he remained for four years. After filling an appointment as teacher of mathematics at the gymnasium of Erlangen, he became in 1823 privat-docent at the university in that town. His inaugural dissertation was on the notions of political economy among the Romans (*Disserta-*

to *erhaltens sentimentis Romanorum ad economiam politiceam pertinentes*, Erlangen, 1823. He probably did not remain long at Erlangen, for a year or two after this date we find him acting as professor of mathematics at the gymnasium and polytechnic school in Nuremberg, where he continued till 1827. During his stay there he published an elementary treatise on arithmetic and algebra (*Lehrbuch der Arith u. Algeb.*, 1826), and made a journey to France to inspect the organization and conduct of technical schools in that country. The results of his investigation were published in 1826 and 1828 (*Ueber technische Unterrichtsanstalten*). Soon after his return from France he was made professor extraordinarius of political science at the university of Munich, and in 1835 he was advanced to the rank of ordinary professor in the same subject. In 1839 appeared the first edition of his great work on political economy, *Staatswirtschaftliche Untersuchungen* (Economic Researches). In 1835 he was made member of the Royal Bavarian Academy of Sciences.

From this time onward Hermann's life was one of great and varied practical activity. From the year 1836 he acted as inspector of technical instruction in Bavaria, and made frequent journeys to Berlin and Paris in order to study the methods there pursued in the state service of Bavaria, to which he devoted himself, he rose gradually but rapidly. In 1837 he was placed on the council for superintendence of church and school work. In 1839 he was entrusted with the direction of the bureau of statistics, in 1845 he was one of the councillors for the interior, in 1848 he sat as member for Munich in the national assembly at Frankfurt. In this assembly Hermann, with Heckscher and Sommerau, was mainly instrumental in organizing the so-called "Great German" party, and was selected as one of the representatives of their views at Vienna. Warmly supporting the customs union (Zollverein), he acted in 1851 as one of its commissioners at the great industrial exhibition at London, and published an elaborate report on the woollen goods. Three years later he was president of the committee of judges at the similar exhibition at Munich, and the report of its proceedings was drawn up by him. In 1855 he became councillor of state (Staatsrath im ordentlichen Dienst), the highest honour in the service to which he could attain.

It is hardly surprising that in the midst of such varied and weighty practical occupations Hermann did not find time for carrying on systematically his work in the pure science of economics. At the long series of reviews, mainly of works on economical subjects, published in the *Munchener Gelehrte Anzeigen* from 1835 to 1847, attest his unabated industry and constant interest in the subject on its theoretical side, while his more elaborate papers in Rau's *Archiv der politischen Oekonomie* and in the *Arbeiten Allgemeine Zeitung* show the wide extent of his practical knowledge. As head of the bureau of statistics he published a series of annual reports (*Berichte zur Statistik des Konigreichs Bayern*), Heft 1-17, 1850-1867 which are of very high value, especially as regards the growth of population. His only complete work in economic science, the *Researches*, had gone out of print a very few years after the book was published, but not until near the close of his life did Hermann find an opportunity of undertaking a revision of it. Upon this task he was engaged at the time of his death, 23d November 1868, and he had recast, enlarged, and amended nearly two-thirds of the volume. The second edition, prepared from his MS., and including those parts of the first edition which had not been revised or superseded, was published in 1870 by his friends Dr Halferich and Dr Mayr. There have since been several reprints.

Although the *Staatswirtschaftliche Untersuchungen* is not a systematic treatise on political economy, it must nevertheless be regarded as in many respects the most important contribution to the science since the *Wealth of Nations*. It cannot, indeed, be said to contain many principles which are in themselves novel or original. Hermann's merits are not so much those of a discoverer as of a most subtle and subtle critic. Like Ricardo he excels in abstract analysis, in resolution of complex phenomena into their simple elements, but he has a more firm hold than Ricardo upon the historical aspect of the true nature of these elementary facts, and a remarkable power of precisely stating and comprehensively combining them. The peculiar value of the *Researches* consists in the strictness with which the primary notions of economic science are viewed in the general conception of the method and plan of the science which emerges from this analysis, and in the masterly way in which fundamental principles are carried out in the detailed problems of the science. Only in the fulfiling of this aim does Hermann can we hope to render clear the position of a pure theory of economic facts as an indispensable and independent branch of social science. The historic method of inquiry, fatal to much that has been regarded as destructive of the abstract or English school of political economy, harmonizes perfectly with the theory of the elementary facts from which economical development takes its start, as stated by Hermann and those Continental writers who have followed him.

The *Researches*, in the 2d edition, consists of ten separate essays, of which the first, on the fundamental notions of economics ("Grundlegung," pp. 1-77), the fifth (pp. 148-249, on "Production"), the sixth (pp. 250-406, on "Prices"), the eighth (pp. 416-531, on "Product"), and the ninth (pp. 532-698, on "Revenue") are of the greatest importance. In the "Grundlegung," a clear and lucid description is given of the simple phenomena, in family, community, and state, upon which economic inquiries are founded. The method of inquiry is so distinct to be obtained for them by labour exhausted on natural agents as is recognized as the primary facts. But in the strict action of wants there are two aspects, the technical and the economic. Technically, the consumer solely the product by which commodities of a quality suited to satisfy want are obtained. Economically we have always to estimate the ratio between the effort expended and the result obtained. An "economic" fact is a technical fact of force, that the result, satisfaction, may be obtained with the least expenditure of effort, with least loss of utility. The influence of this economic principle, the institutions to which it gives rise, the conditions under which it is possible, and the consequences which follow, are, of course, in contrast, it is treated with reference to the individual, the family, the community, and the state or nation. The increasing complexity of the phenomena does not alter the nature of the principle which lies at the base of them, and it is the business of economic theory to carry these phenomena under guidance of the general principle. Economics is therefore defined by Hermann as the "quantitative theory of goods," and, though he is sparing in the use of symbols, his method of treatment is throughout mathematical. In carrying of attention is the manner in which he points out the influence of collective feeling and collective wants as giving rise to social institutions (government, defence) in the community. To this his fundamental essay the three succeeding papers ("Production," "Prices," "Product," pp. 78-142) are appendices. The treatment of the first, the classifications given, the detailed discussion of particular points, e.g., the productivity of labour, and the distinction drawn between economic estimates from the individual and the collective point of view, make up a solid contribution to the science.

The fifth essay is an elaborate treatise on the theory of production, treating the agents of production—land, labour, and capital—separately, then the interests of the several parties engaged, and the changes due to variations in the cost of producing. Under "Labour" is given the most complete and systematic discussion separation of employment. Capital is treated so as to include land, but careful reference is made to the distinction peculiarities of this form of wealth. Especially remarkable is Hermann's treatment of what he calls *fixed capital* (e.g., machinery), with regard to which he assumes that it is not a cost of production. Under fixed capital a very elaborate treatment of the nature and economic influence of machines is given, with the handling of changes in the cost of production, both here and in the essay on "Product." It is scarcely necessary to say that the sixth and eighth essays analyze the factors which underlie the supply and demand. These are stated to be—(a) on the side of the purchaser—(1) his desire for the commodity in question, or its utility to him, (2) his means, (3) the competition of other buyers, (4) the side of the seller—(1) cost of production, (2) competition of other buyers, (3) the value of the medium of exchange. The same considerations are shown to hold good in the case of the price of labour, though, unfortunately, the seventh essay, on "Wages," is incomplete. The eighth essay, on "Product," discusses minutely the rate of return on the various species of capital and the circumstances that determine it, distinguishing interest from profit in general, and making a special form the point of the *rent* (*Ueber die Rente*).

The ninth essay, on "Revenue," is a special form of the point of the *rent* (*Ueber die Rente*). This last, in regard to estimate from wage of

superintendence, and from insurance for risk. The ninth and tenth essays, on "Revenue" and "Consumption," are particularly interesting in testifying from the clear media in which the theory, afterwards called that of the wages fund, is rejected, and from the precision with which the decisive points of view for estimating net revenue are discerned.

This brief analysis is sufficient to show the high value of Heilmann's work as a contribution to pure economics. On practical questions, those of economic legislation, his opinions are only to be gathered with difficulty from the papers in the *Gesichte Anzeigen*, and generally were expressed with such reference to special circumstances as to render doubtful their full import. It seems probable, however, that his views on production were, like from clear, and that he was somewhat under the sway of the dangerous principle that the best financial policy is unconcerned of national industry. It is difficult, however, to speak directly on this subject.

See *Heilmann's Gesichte Anzeigen*, pp. 400-79. (H. A. H.)

HEIMANN, JOHANN GOTTFRIED JAKOB (1773-1848), classical scholar and philologist, was born at Leipzig on November 23, 1772. Entering the university of his native city at the precocious age of fourteen, Heimann at first studied law, but his inclination to classical learning was too strong to be resisted, and accordingly, after a session spent at Jena in 1793-94, he became a lecturer on classical literature in Leipzig. In 1798 he was appointed professor extraordinary of philosophy at the university there, and after refusing an invitation to proceed to Kiel as rector of a school, he was in 1803 chosen professor of eloquence. In 1809 he received the chair of poetry in addition. He died, senior of the university, on December 31, 1848.

Heilmann devoted his only attention to the classical portion of letters, and published on this subject *De metrica Græcorum et Latinarum poetarum*, in 1796, *Handbuch des Metrik*, in 1798, *De in his doctis non inveniuntur*, in 1816, of which an *Expositio* appeared in 1818, and *De Metris Plauti*, in 1817, attached to Heyne's edition of that author. Of his undervalued and valuable writings on Greek grammar the chief are *De nominibus Græcorum grammaticis*, 1801, *Notæ et Brevia notæ in Virgii*, "De præteritis Græcorum dictionibus," 1808, and *De præteritis in Virgii*, 1861. His *Lexicon of Plautus* appeared in 1808. His editions of the classics comprise several of the plays of Euripides (see vol. viii p. 680), the *Clonius* of Aristophanes, 1799, *Thesmophoria* of Plautus, 1800, *Fæstus* of Aristides, 1804, *Hymns* of Orpheus, 1806, and the *Homeric Hymns*, 1816. In 1826 Heimann finished the edition of Sophocles begun by Ewald. His editions of Bion and Moschus were published posthumously in 1819, and of all the plays of Æschylus in 1852. The *Oxyrhynchus*, a collection of Heimann's smaller writings in Latin, appeared in seven volumes between 1827 and 1877.

HEIMANN, KARL FRIEDRICH (1801-1860), one of the leading representatives of classical investigation in Germany, was born August 4, 1804, at Frankfurt-on-the-Main. His early education was received partly at Frankfurt and partly at Weilburg, and his university studies were carried on at Heidelberg and Leipzig. On his return from a tour in Italy he habilitated in 1826 as privat-docent in Heidelberg, in 1832 he was called to Marburg as professor ordinarius of classical literature, and in 1842 he was transferred to Göttingen to fill the chair left vacant by the death of Ottfried Müller. Both at Marburg and Göttingen he likewise held the office of director of the philological seminary. He died at Göttingen on the 8th of January 1860. Heimann's scholarship took in a wide and ever-widening horizon, but his vision was clear and steady, and he knew well how to portray for other eyes the scenes that shaped themselves with new life before his own. Among his more important publications are the *Lehrbuch des griechischen Antiquitäten*, of which the first portion (Heidelberg, 1841) deals with political, the second (1846) with religious, and the third (1862) with domestic antiquities, the *Geschichte und System des Platonischen Philosophies* (Heidelberg, 1839), an edition of the *Platonische Dialogues* (9 vols., Leipzig, 1861-62), and *Collegienverhandlungen der Griechischen Litteratur* (Göttingen, 1857-58, 2 vols.), published after his death by G. Schmidt. A collection of *Abhandlungen und Beiträge zur class. Alterthumskunde* appeared in 1840, but the great mass of his essays and brochures,

which deal with a vast variety of a chronological, ætætical, critical, and philosophical subjects, are still unarranged. See Lescher, *Zur Erinnerung an K. F. Heimann* (Berlin, 1861).

HERMANNSTADT (Hungarian *Nagy-Szeben*, Latin *Cibinium*), chief town of an Hungarian county of the same name, is advantageously situated on the Szeben, an affluent of the Aluta, about 72 miles S.E. of Kolosvár (Klausenburg), and is the terminus of the Kapus and Nagy-Szeben branch line of railway, in 46° 48' N. lat. and 24° 9' E. long. It is the see of a Greek Orthodox bishop, the meeting place of the Lutheran consistory for the Transylvanian circle, and the headquarters both of the honvéd (or "defence militia") and of the regular infantry and artillery of the district, and it also possesses royal courts of law and assizes, and offices of finance, assay, state survey, and engineering. Hermannstadt has a somewhat mediæval appearance, the streets being often narrow, and the houses built in the old German style. Of the squares the most striking is the large quadrangular market-place. The public buildings comprise Roman and Greek Catholic, Greek Orthodox, Calvinist, and Lutheran churches, a royal law academy, both Roman Catholic and Lutheran gymnasia, a Greek Orthodox seminary for priests, a hospital for the insane, foundling and orphan homes, Franciscan and Ursulan retreats, a house of correction, civil and military hospitals, county and town halls, the infantry and large new artillery barracks, the theatre, the "Transylvanian" assistance office, the "Alina" bank, and, above all, the Buckenbach place with its fine museum and library. Among the industrial establishments are factories for the preparation of soap, candles, soda, sulphuric acid, bone-dust, paper, cloth, linen, leather, caps, boots, combs, and building materials. There are also printing houses, tanneries, and rope walks, several distilleries, and a large brewery. A brisk trade is carried on both at the regular weekly markets and at the special fairs. The civil population in 1870 was 18,998, of whom about two-thirds were of German (Saxon) and the remainder of Roumanian and Magyar extraction.

The German name of the town is *Freiburg*. Heimann, a citizen of Munsberg, who about the middle of the 12th century established a colony on the spot. In the 12th century it bore the name of *Villa Hermanni*. Under the last monarchs of the native Magyar dynasty Hermannstadt enjoyed exceptional privileges, and soon became a thriving centre of commerce, its connection with the East rising to considerable importance. In the course of the 16th and 17th centuries it was several times besieged by the Turks. In 1610 it suffered at the hands of the Transylvanian prince Gabriel Bethlen. At the beginning of 1849 it was the scene of several engagements between the Austrians and Hungarians, and later in the year it was several times taken and retaken by the Russians and the Hungarians, the latter having eventually forced it to yield to overwhelming numbers, August 6.

HERMAS. See APOLOLOGO FATHERS, vol. ii p. 197. HERMENEUTICS, BIBLICAL, is that branch of theological science which treats of the principles of Scripture interpretation. Various descriptions as the theory of the discovery and communication of the thoughts of Holy Scripture (Lange), the science of attaining clearness both in comprehending and in explaining the sense of the Biblical authors (Ernesti), the methodological preparation for the interpreter and for exegesis (Deedes), the science of the removal of differences between us and the sacred writers (Immer), it has for its task to determine the laws of valid exegetical practice. Schleiermacher and Klausen have limited it to the doctrine of what the interpreter has to observe in order to put himself in possession of the mind of Scripture. The former defines it as a discipline which looks simply to the reader's own apprehension, not to the conveyance of the meaning ascertained to others, which latter is to be regarded, he thinks, as but a particular division of the art of speaking and writing. It has been

generally taken, however, to have respect to the communication as well as the acquisition of the thoughts of the Biblical writers. This larger definition, which is as ancient at least as Augustine's statement of the two things "quibus nititur omnis tractatus Scripturæ, modus inveniendi quæ intelligenda sunt et modus profertendi quæ intellecta sunt" (*De Doct. Christ.*, i, 1), has been formally accepted or practically acted on by most modern authorities. It is consonant with the currency of the terms *ἐρμηνεία*, *ἐρμηνεύω*, *ἐρμηνεύω* (connected it may be with *ἑρμεῖς*, but not derived from that, such use of a deity's name being probably unexampled)<sup>1</sup>. These in the classics express both expounding (Pindar, *O.*, 2, 153) and interpreting or translating a foreign language to others (Xen., *Anab.*, i, 2, 17, Herod., ii, 126), while in the New Testament *ἐρμηνεύω* means to translate (John i, 39, 43) and *ἐρμηνεύω* to expound, interpret, or translate (Luke xxiv, 27, i Cor. xii, 30, Acts iv, 38). The definition is in harmony too with the Protestant idea of exegesis as an art which brings the contents of Scripture to the general understanding, and the Protestant conception of the direct approach of God's word to man's heart by Scripture. As the theory of the interpreter at hermeneutics is usually taken to be an historical science, forming a subdivision of historical theology. Where, however, a fourfold, instead of a threefold, distribution of theological science is adopted, it is assigned to literary theology. It presupposes such disciplines as textual criticism and Biblical introduction, while it may exercise a reflex influence on some of the discussions with which these are conversant. Although practice precedes theory, and only through the use of the art of interpretation can the principles of interpretation be reached, as it is out of Scripture itself that the laws of Scriptural exposition must be drawn, theoretically this science proceeds exegesis and forms an indispensable preparation for Biblical theology. Much which it has been the custom to embrace within it belongs really to general hermeneutics. The limits properly assignable to it are comparatively narrow, its immediate object being to decide how the laws of general hermeneutics are related to the particular records known as Scripture. The propriety of a special Biblical hermeneutic is established so far as Scripture is proved to be more than an ordinary literature. The Christian who comes to the Bible with the conviction that it is the record of divine communications, and with the experience that it is the medium through which God has spoken to him and led him into new relations to Himself, has to ask whether the principles of ordinary hermeneutics have to be modified or supplemented when applied to these books. Neither the Christian recognition of the spiritual character of Scripture nor the Protestant assertion of the right of private judgment, the perspicuity of Scripture, and the laity's direct interest in the Bible, warrants the extreme position assumed among some sects, that a scholarly interpretation and, therefore, a science of hermeneutics are superfluous. Being a literary record composed in languages which demand the exegetical *praxis* of translation, and produced under circumstances, by writers, and for readers widely removed in date and character from our present acquaintance, Scripture requires a scientific process for its exposition, and the laws of that process must be verified. This peculiar value which attaches to it as a holy literature makes this the more needful, the exceptional position assigned it rendering its interpretation open to the invasion of prepossession and private religious ideas. The exclusive authority ascribed to these books by the Protestant, who accepts them as the only rule of faith and life, gives him a special interest in hermeneutics. The concrete and historical form in which their spiritual teaching appears, the figurative, typical, and symbolical terms

so largely used in them, the numerous presuppositions on which their statements of religious truth and fact proceed, suggest the necessity of such a discipline. The qualities of Scripture which render its appeal to the common understanding distinct and immediate are arguments for scientific intelligence in educing from its declarations nothing more and nothing less than their exact intention. The interpreter's function being, not to develop some meaning which the words might bear to present students or which the first readers may have seen in them, but simply to ascertain with precision and completeness the ideas which the writers themselves meant to convey, it may be said with Schleiermacher that in a certain sense the interpreter has to educe more than the author introduced. The formula has to bring out into clearness that influenced the latter half-unconsciously in his composition, and to give objective expression to much that underlies his definite statements. Hence the special need for a scientific hermeneutic in the case of a book like the Bible, in which there is so much that is implicit. The vast variety of results reached in critical passages, and the wide diversities of method which have been pursued among individual exegeses and in exegetical schools, make the propriety and utility of such a science the more apparent.

Since Christopher Wölff (*Hermeneutica Novi Testamenti ac annotationes dogmaticæ et historicæ de criticâ philologicâ per in usum corroborationis eristicæ omnes ad Theophrastum, de scripturâ usibus universis*, Lipsiæ, 1736) the hermeneutics of the New Testament, for the sake of convenience or on grounds of scientific distinction, has often been separated from the hermeneutics of the Old Testament. The scientific union or disjunction of these disciplines depends on the view entertained of the mutual relations of the Hebrew Scriptures and the Christian. Where the Bible is seen to constitute an organic whole, the hermeneutical principles applicable to the two Testaments are treated in connection. It then becomes one great object of the science to grasp the differences which are discovered within the unity of Scripture, and exhibit what account it is to be taken of these in the art of interpretation. A distinct position, however, naturally belongs to Jewish hermeneutics, which dealt with the Hebrew Scriptures as at once the entire written revelation of God, and the repository of the highest wisdom on all subjects of human inquiry. The results of the scientific study of the Old Testament, which was carried on with vast activity from Ezra's time by numerous scribes and in great schools and colleges (Jerusalem, Tiberias, Sana, Pumbeditha, Nahardea, &c.), are seen in the Talmudical writings, the *Mishna* giving authoritative enlargements and explanations of the law, and the *Gemara*, in its twofold form of *Tiberias* and *Pumbeditha* edited at Tiberias, and *Babylonian Talmud* proceeding from Sana, containing further commentaries, fantastic definitions, and explanations of prior explanations (see TALMUD). The most ancient Jewish interpretation of Scripture, the *Mishna* ("study," "investigation"), which assumed a fixed character during the period of the second temple and gradually formed a literature, ran out into two great branches, logical or legal exposition, and practical or homiletical exposition. The former, designated "*Halacha*" ("rule by which to walk," "binding precept"), brought the law to bear upon points of religious or general interest on which there was no explicit declaration. It confined itself chiefly to the Pentateuch, extracting from it by numerous exegetical expedients a body of "*Halachoth*" or *or* *sophistic precepts* (cf. Matt. vi, 2, Mark vii, 3), which were held authoritative. These, after a long period of oral transmission, gradually assumed written form, and passed finally through a process of compilation, classification, and redaction which extended perhaps from about two centuries before to two centuries after Christ. The latter,

<sup>1</sup> See article HERMES, and compare Curtius, *Greek Etymology*, § 860.

styled "Hagada" ("opinion," "free exposition"), was meant for edification, traversed the entire Old Testament, and occupied itself with the application of Scripture to the purposes of practical instruction in all manner of subjects, ethical, political, metaphysical, theosophical, as well as religious. Its expositions were conveyed in forms, symbolical, poetic, parabolic, such as were most likely to attract attention, and, though of no binding authority, it made itself so attractive to the people that it was often known as "the Mishnah" distinctively. The hermeneutical laws followed in those two lines of exposition are sufficiently well known. Elazar ben Jose, the Galilee, a distinguished rabbi of the 3d century of our era, has embodied the results of a final reduction of the principles of the Hagadic exegesis in a series of thirty-two rules. Some of these are sound, although, e.g., with the use of brachylogy, repetition, parable, the reconciliation of two discrepant texts by a third, &c. Many of them are wholly fantastic, prescribing how explanations are to be sought by reducing the letters of a word to their numerical value, by the transposition of letters, by the substitution of another word of the same numerical value for one which yields no worthy sense, by studying the introduction of superfluous particles, &c. Such principles held a much smaller place in the Hagadic exegesis, which, as it aimed at something higher than applications of Scripture, could not be so fettered by formalisms in certain directions, so far as it was true to its idea. In the field of the Hagadic hermeneutics Hilfel I (chad 8 or 10 A.D.) occupies a conspicuous place. He reduced the traditional legal tradition of the Jews, with its bewildering multiplicity of laws, from the 600 or 700 sections over which it is said previously to have spread, to six capital "Sedarim" or orders, forming a manageable basis on which his successors 'Akiba, Simon III., and Juchin III. could work on to the final codification of the *Mishnah*. He was also the first to formulate definite rules by which the rabbinical development of the law should proceed. These canons of interpretation were seven in number, afterwards increased by Rabbi Ismael to thirteen by the addition of seven new rules and the omission of the sixth, and looked to the construction of Biblical warrant for precepts which it was wished to prove implicit in the law. These "Midloth" were instructions to reason (1) *a minori ad maius*, (2) *ex analogia*, (3) by derivation of a principal proposition from a single passage, (4) by derivation of a principal proposition from two passages, (5) by limitation of the general through the particular, (6) by explanation of one passage through another, (7) by the use of the context. The idea that the Old Testament, pre-eminently the law, held hidden in it the highest wisdom on all subjects, was naturally natural to the rights of the literal sense. The rabbinical hermeneutics drew inevitable distinctions between the proper or innate sense (*שמע*), which again was described as either verbal (*שמע*), figurative (*שמע*), and the derivative or studied sense (*שמע*), which was to be sought either by inference (*שמע*) or by artificial conjunction (*שמע*). The natural sense, however, though practically robbed of its dues, was not positively ignored. This regard for it, which was never wholly disowned, ultimately took shape in the improved rabbinical hermeneutics of the Middle Ages. In the writings of such rabbis as Sadeias Gaon, Jachai, Rashi, Kimchi, Maimonides, Abarbanel (a line of expositors extending from the 10th to the 16th century), we find, alongside the traditional rules and explanations, a scientific recognition of the interpreter's duty to give the literal sense as well as a practical application of the principles of grammatical and historical exegesis to the Old Testament.

The hermeneutics developed among the Hellenistic Jews had marked characteristics of its own. These interpreters, departing from the exclusiveness of rabbinical devotion to

the Old Testament revelation, and from the pure Hebraism of native Jews, brought to the study of the sacred books a range of ideas derived from Hellenic culture. They had to devise a hermeneutical procedure which would harmonize their new ethnic leaning with the traditional estimate of the Jewish Scriptures. To the theosophic Hellenist, and specially to the Alexandrian Jew, acceptance of the plain sense was often an impossibility. A reconciliation was sought by the use of allegorical interpretation. This method was also pursued by the Rabbinical exegesis. It is embraced in the Hagadic hermeneutics, and is seen in the distinctions drawn by Palestinian Jews between the body and the soul of texts. But while the allegorical interpretation of native Jews, in consonance with their priestly estimate of the Hebrew revelation, moved in the direction of the typical, that of the Hellenists became almost mystical. The corypheus in this hermeneutical practice was Philo (born perhaps about 30 B.C.), although he had predecessors, in Aristobolus, pseudo-Josephus, and others. He devoted himself mainly to the exposition to the Pentateuch, with the view of explaining the realism and anthropomorphism of the Old Testament in a way to suit the philosophy of the time. Wishful to retain the Alexandrian Jew's regard for Moses as the supremely inspired prophet of God and the oracle of all mysteries along with adherence to the current Platonism and theosophy, he supposed that the Mosiac writings contained a twofold mode of teaching, a popular representation of God and divine things and a spiritual. It was the task of wisdom to penetrate through the envelope of the literal history to the secret sense which it shielded. The verbal sense was acknowledged, but held to be for the ultimate. The outstanding facts in the records of the creation, the drudge, the careers of the patriarchs and Moses, were accepted in an historic sense, but the details of all these narratives were spiritualized. Sometimes the figurative meaning was made the only meaning, but in other cases the objective meaning was allowed to be the intended meaning. The hermeneutical rule, however, was to use by allegory from the superficial anthropomorphic sense (*רצ* *הפסוק*) to the higher or spiritual sense (*רצ* *המאמר*). The simple histories were symbols of abstract truths. To the enlightened they were so many modes of soul (*רצ* *הנפש*)—Adam the figure of the sensuous nature, Rebecca of patience, Leah of despised virtue, Egypt an emblem of the body, and Canaan of perty.

Two later chapters in the history of Jewish hermeneutics deserve notice. On the one hand the rabbinical procedure was decisively departed from by the Karaites, among whom Japhet ben Heli, of Buseirah, belonging to the close of the 10th century, and Aaron ben Joseph, of the 13th century, are notable. In their case interpretation again sought the *ex media* between bald literalism and arbitrary spiritualizing. It was pre-occupied on the principles of renouncing the quiet after a variety of senses, abiding by the natural sense, accepting metaphor where the figurative was intended, and conserving the religious interest. On the other hand an extraordinary development was given to the rabbinical hermeneutics by the Kabbalists of the Middle Ages, who used the devices of artificial interpretation in order to find an Old Testament basis for their mixed Neo-Platonist, Gnostic, and Sabaean cultism. The Kabbala ("what has been received," "tradition," see KABBALA) had its roots in the ancient doctrine of numbers, for which the Jews were probably indebted to the Chaldeans. The use of the numerical power of letters as a key to mysteries, which the Palestinian Jews had early favoured and which formed a not inconsiderable element in the Hagadic exposition, expanded into a vast system of fantastic Hebrew Gnosticism in the 8th century of the Christian era. The written Word was regarded as a depository of secret doctrine



and absolute truth which could be entered only by the initiated. The mysteries hidden in its letters required for their discovery processes of exchange, more or less intricate, between literal and numerical values. By the combinations and permutations of letters, the interchanges of words of equal numerical value, and similar artifices, new meanings were extracted where the proper sense seemed poor, and acceptable meanings found where offence was felt. While the text, *eg.*, states (Numbers xii 1) that Moses married an Ethiopian woman, the veiled sense was shown to be that he married a woman of *beautiful countenance*, and the offence against the law was thus removed. For the letters of משה and מרים added together make the sum 736, the letters in the expression משה ושרה, "beautiful of countenance," yield the same sum, and the enlightened are able to read the latter idea in the former appellative. Distinct titles came to be applied to different branches of the art. The process of reaching hidden truths by the numerical equivalence of letters (as when from the circumstance that occurs six times in the first and last verses of the Old Testament it is inferred that the world is to last 6000 years) was styled "Gematria." The process of forming new words out of the several letters of some solemn term, or one new word by combining the first letters of several words (as when the answer קרב, "circumcision," is discovered in the question in Deut xxx 12, "Who shall go up for us to heaven?") by bringing together the letters with which the several words in the query commenced, was called "Notarikon." The use of the anagram or permutation (as when by transposition of משה into משה it is ascertained that "mine angel" of Exod xxiii 23 was the angel Michael) was known as "Temulah." The hermeneutical practice of the Kabbalists increased in subtlety as the theosophic system itself grew. Rules were elaborated for exchanging the powers of letters, reading them in a variety of orders, and otherwise conjuring with the literal sense.

The course which Biblical hermeneutics has run outside the purely Jewish pale has been not less changeful or remarkable. The New Testament writings show at large how the apostles and first followers of Christ viewed, interpreted, and quoted the Old Testament. They give little in the shape of formal hermeneutical principles, but allow much to be inferred from usage and example. Conclusions as to authoritative canons of interpretation, so far as these are drawn from New Testament employments of Old Testament Scripture, are weighted with the question whether or how far currency is followed. It is affirmed on the one hand that Paul, *eg.*, in his hermeneutics, was a pure rabbinist, while on the other the equally extreme position is held that his training is in no way reflected in his use of the Hebrew Scriptures. The citation of the Old Testament in the New, which forms a question by itself and one of great intricacy, takes a variety of modes. Passages are reproduced as direct prophecies of the Messiah and His kingdom (Acts ii 34, Heb i 13), as mediate references to the same through partial realizations of their idea (Heb ii 6-9, 12, 13), as illustrations or applications of principles common to both economies (Rom x 6-8, I Tim v 18), as apt expressions, without the character of explicit quotation, in which New Testament statements naturally embody themselves (I Pet i 24). The proper and immediate sense is adhered to. The application of typology and symbolism (Heb viii 5, ix 6) is at the same time exemplified, and the existence of secondary or higher meanings in allegorical or other forms (Col iv 24, Eph v 32) is to a certain extent recognized. The typical relation of the Old Testament to the New is everywhere presented. It is exhibited both in the histories and in the institutions, and is developed alike in ethical, didactic, and prophetic significance (I Cor x 6, 11, Rom vi 17, v

14). The Hebrew revelation is interpreted as a divine preparation for the Christian and as a continuous prophecy bearing onwards towards Christ (Acts ii 29). Its official personages and its saints, its ordinances and its events, are real though imperfect exhibitions of Messiah and the Messianic kingdom. Even its minor occurrences and incidental utterances are anticipations or expressions of the purposes of Jehovah realized in the Christian dispensation (Matt ii 15, Heb iv 7, Eph iv 8-12). How far Biblical hermeneutics within the Christian Church has gathered its principles from Scripture itself, and what use it has made of the New Testament *parva* will appear from its history. It will be enough here to deal with the spiritual to which the various conflicting methods seem capable of being reduced. We indicate which of these prevailed on the whole in important schools and periods, without attempting a chronological statement or detailing the exact relations of each great name to this subject. It is not to be supposed, however, that any single mode was exclusively dominant at any one time, or that the interpreters whose names are connected with some particular procedure held by that only. On the contrary, in the long continued absence of a definite settlement of principles the best writers swung remarkably from method to method, and men who are largely identified with various modes exhibit at the same time admirable examples of the opposite. It may be said that these distinct hermeneutical tendencies have been followed. These may be conveniently designated the subjective, the dependent, the historical.

1. The first, which we have distinguished as the *Subjective* tendency, embraces all those widely diverse schemes which agree in passing beyond the objective intention of the words and seeking veiled or underlying meanings. To this belong the different forms of the allegorical method, by which is meant the imposition of a sense not designed by the writer. It is the adding of a meaning foreign to the intention, rather than the substitution of an improper for the proper sense. The first Christian interpreters were under special temptations in this direction. The idea of the need of exceptional principles of exposition in order to reach the deep significance of divine communications had a great hold of the ancient mind, Greek, Roman, Oriental, and Hebrew. The spell of this idea and the powerful influence of the Rabbinical tradition, acting on the Christian conviction that the Bible is a divine message, readily induced the notion that the ordinary laws of interpretation are made quate, and that Scripture is honoured when the natural or "lower" sense is made the stepping-stone to a "higher" sense for which special processes are required. Early Christian literature, although its mysticism may sometimes be otherwise explained, adheres decidedly to this idea. The apostolic fathers and the Apologists, while not entire strangers to sound spiritual interpretation, are adhered to the allegorical. The *Epistle of Barnabas* contains faith and perfects *visions* by spiritualizing the details of such narratives as that of the two goats in Leviticus xvi. The *Shepherd of Hermas* contains various examples. Clement of Rome gives the figurative application of the scroll laid suspended from Rahab's window, which is adopted by so many of the fathers. In this connection great interest belongs to Justin Martyr, who exhibits acquaintance with several of the distinct senses which were subsequently formulated. Embracing Christianity as the only certain philosophy, and carrying much of its old Platonism with him into his new faith, he dealt with the Scriptures very much as he dealt with the classics. The history of the Old Testament (the seldom expounded the New) were a dramatic covering broad spiritual truths. As the ruins of Babylon and Oreb was a Greek version of the building of the tower of Babel, so Jacob's marriage with Leah and Rachel denoted

Jehovah's revelation in the Jewish Church and the Christian. Every particular in prophetic passages like Gen xix. 9-12 had a mystical reference to Christ and His salvation, His passion being signified by the washing of the garments in wine, the Jews by the ass, the Gentiles by the colt.

The allegorical method, which offers itself as a natural expedient for harmonizing difficulties between religious faith and philosophical feeling, and which had been freely applied to Homer by Plato, found a most congenial home in Alexandria, where Philo's influence was strong. It became a recognized principle with the entire catechetical school, firmly rooted in the distinction which there prevailed between *mythos* and *logos*. Clement of Alexandria, who seems to have been the first to bring the New Testament no less than the Old under its scope, finds a parabole meaning in all Scripture, and affirms that the literal sense carries us simply to the elementary stage of Christian knowledge called faith, while it is only through the allegorical or mystical interpretation that we can reach that higher wisdom which implies insight into the essence, reason, and real relations of faith's objects. He speaks of a "tradition of the church," an "ecclesiastical canon," or "canon of the faith," which gives the key to the true understanding of Scripture, and is identified with the *mythos* or spiritual apprehension of divine mysteries as that was that communicated by Christ to the apostles in oral form, and by them transmitted to their successors. This canon is described as "the consent and harmony of the law and the prophets with the covenant delivered during the Lord's presence." In accord with this Clement discovers in the Mosaic law three senses in addition to the natural. The terms in which the precepts are expressed are images of other things, rules for the direction of life, and predictions of the future. The high priest's robe is an emblem of the world of sense, the bells upon it, as a symbol of the acceptable yoke of the Lord. The decalogue itself is spiritualized, the fifth commandment being taken to refer to the Heavenly Father, and that divine Wisdom which is the mother of the just.<sup>1</sup>

A position of commanding importance must be claimed for Origen, whose genius secured wide and long continued acceptance for his greatest extravagances. Exact grammatical exegesis is by no means alien to his homilies and commentaries, and many of his strangest uses of Scripture may be viewed as practical applications rather than scholarly explications. Fancifulness, however, as so predominant that he has been commonly regarded as the chief allegorist of the Christian Church. Yet the disservice thus done by his example cannot cloud the lustre of his merits in Biblical studies. His Platonism, his adhesion to the Alexandrian idea of *logos*, his wish to defend and elucidate the Christian religion by reason and philosophy, his exaggerated notion of inspiration, combined to commend a mystical style of interpretation. In terms of the Platonic division of man into body, soul, and spirit, he held that Scripture had a threefold sense, *σωματικός, ψυχικός, πνευματικός*. The first, or obvious, sense was meant for the edification of the simple. The second, which was to be sought for under the letter, and embodied the soul of Scripture, exhibited the bearing of the word upon the practical needs of the moral life, and addressed itself to the more advanced. The third, which lay still deeper, and imparted the spirit of Scripture, disclosed pure unmixed truth, exercised the speculative powers, and was intended only for the perfect, such as are described in 1 Cor. ii. 6, 7. He has been sometimes credited with the promulgation of the fourfold distinction afterwards so current, especially in the Latin Church, and expressed in the couplet (given, e.g., by Lyra) —

*Latere gesta docet, quod allegoria docet,  
Moralis quod agitur, quod tondus in allegoria*

Such terms, however, as topological, mystical, allegorical, pneumatic, analogical, are rather interchangeable with him. The literal sense, too, is so far from being dispensed with that he has even been regarded (e.g., by Eusebius) as the first who secured for it its primary value, particularly in New Testament exegesis. But, while he maintains that the spirit and the letter are generally to be taken together, and admits that no small portion of the contents of Scripture (e.g., the decalogue, precepts of universal obligation, even many of the narratives) may not be allegorized, his practice is greatly in the direction of esteeming the literal sense only as the protecting shell of secret treasures. Wherever the letter yields a meaning which seems to him unworthy, or opposed to reason and possibility, a mystical sense is discovered. He stumbles at the record of creation when it introduces the sun after the third day, at many of the Mosaic ordinances, at the realism of Christ's temptation. He finds mysteries or figures of spiritual things in Eden, Abraham's wives, Rebecca's visit to the well, the water pots at Cana, and many other narratives. The later type of Alexandrian hermeneutics is seen in Cyril, who, without wholly abandoning the literal sense, carries typical interpretation into unqualified allegorical extremes in dogmatic and polemic interests.

The Western Church exhibited the same tendency, not only in the marked artificialities of such teachers as Hippolytus, Hilary, and Ambrose, but in the eminent instance of Augustine. Though not the first to attempt a statement of hermeneutical canons (having before him, for instance, the seven rules of Theodorus, which he states and criticizes at length), he constructed more of a system in this line of inquiry as in some others. Many of the principles which are enunciated in different parts of his writings, and most distinctly in his *De Doctrina Christiana*, are of permanent value. He conceives the object of interpretation to be the discovery of the thoughts of the writer exactly as he meant to express them. He shows that the real sense is often not to be got by resting merely on expressions as they stand by themselves, that they must be compared with the immediate context, with similar passages elsewhere, and with the essentials of Christian doctrine, that faith and the aids of the Holy Spirit cannot supersede the use of science, that a reverent and sympathetic mind is indispensable. But, along with such rules as these, he propounds others which served as grounds for his allegorical procedure. He affirms, e.g., that whatever cannot clearly be seen to bear upon honesty of morals or the truth of faith must be taken figuratively. He speaks of several different modes of interpretation,—the historical, the etiological, the analogical, the allegorical. He usually practices the first and the last of these. His profound spiritual experience gave him a true insight than his canons indicated into many parts of Scripture, and above all into the Pauline epistles. Yet over most even of the New Testament he allows his allegorical fancy to range freely. His influence perpetuated the reign of the allegorical method for many centuries throughout the Western Church. In Gregory the Great, the Venerable Bede, Rabanus Maurus, Hugo de S. Caro, and many others, we see it steadily extending rather than merely maintaining its sway, until in Bonaventura we find the current four senses—historical, topological, allegorical, analogical—enlarged to seven by the addition of the symbolical, synecdochical, and hyperbolical.

The second great hermeneutical tendency, which we call the *Dependent*, has an equally instructive history. It is easy to understand how extreme allegorizing would lead to a counter movement, and how this would be helped by the exigencies of dealing with heretics who were themselves

<sup>1</sup> See especially Adom., vi. p. 676-89; also Baur, *Die Christliche Genese*, and Kavi., *Neue Account of the Writings and Opinions of Clement of Alex.* i. c. 11.

advocates of *privatis*. The appeal soon came to be made to a rule of faith which may at first have meant nothing more than the harmony of Scripture teaching, but which was speedily identified with something outside Scripture, with the contents of doctrinal summaries, or with the verdict of exegetical tradition. The East and the West grew way alike to this bias, but the West first and most positively. In both we find early mention of an ecclesiastical canon or norm of truth. In the Church of the East, indeed, that took originally the form of an authoritative *privatis* or private exposition of the esoteric meaning of Scripture handed down by careful tradition from Christ and the apostles, while in the Church of the West it was rather the voice of the church itself, and that soon the voice as formulated. Both churches, however, more or less distinctly recognized an ecclesiastical tradition represented in compends of doctrine which were used for catechetical and other purposes, and an interpretative tradition embodied in the expositions of influential doctors. Thus heumenetical independence was sacrificed. In Irenaeus and Tertullian we see how a very natural reaction took this direction. The necessity of meeting *eristotists* who were greater adepts in arbitrary spiritualizing than any whom the church could present led them to protest against the practice. They saw the propriety of looking to Scripture itself for heumenetical guidance, and of rescuing it from the despotism of a mystical philosophy which threatened the life of its cardinal truths. They adopted a simpler reading of its message, and so far they deserve the name of pioneers in real historical interpretation. But, as appears in their gross christic expositions, their literalism was carried to excess. It came into conflict with the deeper declarations of Scripture, and this conflict they were tempted to compose by a relapse into fanciful methods. It created difficulties in their controversy with Gnostic opponents, and these they thought to remove by a final appeal to an authoritative tradition fixing the sense in which the sacred books which both parties used as witnesses to their doctrine were to be understood. This was to be found in its integrity in those ancient churches which had enjoyed direct apostolic teaching, and, as Irenaeus conceived, in some special way in that of Rome. Gradually the idea of a normative analogy of faith discovered within Scripture was externalized, and the standard of interpretation was looked for in ecclesiastical symbols and the formal decisions of the heads of the church. In this process, which issued in the Tridentine definition of the ultimate determination of the interpretation of Scripture as resident in the church, and the more recent declaration of the infallibility of the pope as the voice of the church, Vincent of Lérins claims particular notice. In his *Commonitorium*, for which we are indebted to the Semi-Pelagian controversy, he lays down rules for the attainment of certitude in belief. Faith is to be settled by two things, the authority of Scripture and the tradition of the church. The former is a perfect and adequate foundation. Yet the caprices of interpretation require it to be supplemented by the latter. The sense of Scripture is the sense in which the church understands it, and this tradition of the Catholic Church, which is to be accepted as the canon of hermeneutics, is defined as "quod ubique, quod semper, quod ab omnibus creditum est." This treatise, still retained in singular honour by large sections of the Christian Church, exhibits the hermeneutics which had been winning acceptance since the times of Irenaeus and Cyprian, and by which the Latin communion was led to bind itself. The result of the defence paid to the fathers in both churches, and especially in the West, was the renunciation of independent exegesis and the production of compilations of patristic comments. These *crepae* or *Catenae* epitomized the interpretations of most of the great expositors, particularly Origen, Chrysostom,

Jerome, and Augustine, and were on the whole more successfully executed in the Greek Church than in the Latin. They were in use by the end of the 5th or beginning of the 6th century. Andrias of Caesarea, who belongs to the former period, or Olympiodorus, whose date is about the beginning of the 7th century, has sometimes been recognized as the earliest epitomizer, but the position is to be assigned rather to Procopius of Gaza, who comes between these two. For many centuries the most current divines took part in the preparation of *Catenae*, such as Cassiodorus (also a literalist), Bede (already cited as an allegorist), Alouin, Hrabannus Maurus (often honoured as the most learned interpreter of the 8th and 9th centuries), Haymo, Benignus, Sedulius, Theophylact, Oecumenius, Basil van Rodbertus, and Aquinas. The *Catenae* of Aquinas on the gospels was of great value. Redactions of the *Catenae* were also made in course of time. These were the *Glossae*, which were known as *marginales* or *extrinsecas* when the comments were given on the margin, and *intertextuales* or *intertextuales* when these were introduced in the text. The most influential glossa of the second class was that of Anselm of Laon, who belongs to the end of the 11th and the beginning of the 12th century. Of the former the most important was the *Glossa ordinaria* of Valentin Strabo, which was esteemed the chief exegetical manual for some six centuries. Throughout the Middle Ages, till as late as the 16th century, dogmatic and polemical heumenetics became more and more a tradition. The less the Bible was studied in a free spirit, the more it became the subject of stained penitence. Aquinas, indeed, though his practice was often in conflict with his theory, could still speak of the literal sense as that on which all the senses of Scripture are founded, and of argument as to be drawn only from that one literal sense and not from those senses which are expressed according to allegory (*Somma*, i, 1, art. 10). But at last independence was so completely resigned that John Gerson, the illustrious chancellor of Paris, was only the exponent of the prevalent opinion, when he declared that those who did not take the literal sense as the church defined it ought to be dealt with not by censure or excommunications, but by statutory penalties.

3. But alongside these two hermeneutical tendencies there can be traced from the earliest times, however obscurely or fitfully, a third which we term the *Historical*. Men like Irenaeus, Origen, Augustine, &c., were not wholly unappreciated for the exercise of a better method by their allegorical or dogmatic bias. There has been a line of interpreters, slender enough as that line has been at times, who have recognized it to be the exegetical object to discover the one sense intended by the writer himself, who have allowed allegory therefore only where the writers themselves indicated their mystical design, and who have laid the first importance on the grammatical sense and on the capacity of transporting oneself into the writer's position. Even Alexandria presents in the great Athanasius, and in Isidore notable instances of interpretation, who, though given to occasional spiritualizing, proceeded on the principle of the *abstraction* of Scripture (this specially in the case of Athanasius), and on the necessity of consulting the occasion of each writing. But in direct antithesis to the allegorizing school of Alexandria stood the school of Antioch, which was grammatical and historical, with a tendency to an extreme literalism which yielded in not a few cases a jejune and uninspired exegesis. Theophilus and Julius Africanus may claim a place in this order. But the acknowledged representative of the Antiochene school are Lucian of Samosata, who is sometimes acknowledged its founder, Diodorus of Tarsus, Theodore of Mopsuestia, and above all John Chrysostom and Theodoret of the Syrian Cyprian. The last two, while not less careful of the

objective sense, surpassed the others in spiritual insight. Chrysostom abundantly in sound hermeneutical statements which strike a happy mean between Alexandrian arbitrariness and the untheological superficiality into which extreme Antiochene interpretation sank. He withstands the imposition of foreign senses as a practice dishonouring to the Word of God, and yet shows how much there is that must be taken otherwise than as it stands. He insists upon the importance of ascertaining the "scope" of a writing in order to a correct judgment of its separate declarations, on the necessity of the revelation of the Spirit, on the respect due to the harmony of Scripture with itself. He lays it down as a general principle that, when allegory is employed, the Bible also gives its interpretation as a check upon the unbridled desire of those who wish to allegorize (*Rom. in Genes v*). Theodoret exhibits a kindred sobriety, and, though occasionally guilty of seeking a secondary sense where the obvious sense seems too bald, ranks deservedly among the very best of ancient exegotes. Principles similar to the Antiochene prevailed for a long period also in the schools of Edessa and Nisibis. The objective tendency found representatives, too, in men like Basil of Cesarea, Gregory of Nazianzus, Gregory of Nyssa (although he was less decidedly historical, and strongly advocated a non-historical reading of Canticles in particular), Eriugena, and the laborious Jacomo Tola, last named omnivorous of the Latin Church, although he too often drifted into fanciful and even pseudo interpretations, was strongly opposed both to the allegorists and the extreme literalists. Against the former he affirmed that the grammatical and historical sense must be held the fundamental thing. Against the latter he insisted that the figurative interpretation is not necessarily equivalent to the allegorical, and that the gospel is to be sought not in the words but in the sense of Scripture, not in the surface but in the marrow, not in the leaves of discourses but in the root of the idea (*Comm. in Iacob. in 14, in Epist. ad Galat. 11*). In the unproductive centuries which followed, this pure hermeneutical tendency appears occasionally in such instances as those of Druthmar, "the grammarian," CR monius, bishop of the Thesaurian Treves, who belongs to the 10th century, Theophylact, bishop of Achrida in Bulgaria, "the last of the fathers", Rupert of Deutz and Bartholomaeus Zigabenus, who carry us into the 12th century.

A great impetus was given to independent hermeneutics by the Humanists and the precursors of the Reformation. An eminent position is occupied by Nicolaus de Lyra, to whose *Postille*, or brief commentaries on the whole Bible, Luther and the Reformers owed a debt expressed in the familiar dictum, "Si Lyra non lyresset, Lutherus non saltasset." The current fourfold division of the sense of Scripture still appeared in his writing, but for the most part only as a didactic device. He allowed occasional spiritualizing, but that mostly in the form of professed practical application of the proper sense. He declared anew the necessity of adhering to the plain objective meaning, likening the mystical interpretation which departs from the solid basis of the literal sense to a building which deviates from its foundation and inclines to its fall. On the side of grammar and philology the reaction was helped by Livinecius Valla and other Humanists, although the services of Rutechius in particular, great as they were in the assertion of exegetical freedom and in the restoration of linguistic sciences, were impaired by cabalistic productions (cf. especially his *De verbo mystico*). On the religious side, Wesel, who all perceived the primary importance of the grammatical method, and Faber Stapulensis (Lefèvre d'Étaples), who affirmed the sufficiency of the Word, and practised an independent, non-dogmatic exegesis. It is

matter of course that Erasmus should claim special notice in this connection. In this consummate scholar and versatile genius, who continued and vastly excelled all that had been attempted by Valla and others, and whose guidance the Reformers were wise enough to follow, notwithstanding the frequent deficiencies of his exegesis in depth and spiritual insight, we come at length upon a master hand that marks a great epoch. Indecision clings indeed to his utterances on some subjects. He speaks with caution on the infallibility of the church and the church's head, although he lets us see that he rejects it. He admits the existence of occasional inaccuracies in the Scriptures. But he declares that these are so far from being disadvantageous to the gospel that they are turned by the Spirit into a help to faith. He adds at the same time that if the authority of the entire Scripture should be supposed to be impaired by the presence of the smallest error in it, it is more than probable that none of the copies now used by the Catholic Church is so perfect as to be free from the intrusion of all mistakes, accidental or intentional (cf. *Annot. in Matt. 11 6*). But his clear enumeration of the interpreter's independence and the inquirer's obligation to become bound by the authority of no one (*Li. Lum. 11 36*), his advocacy of the translation and free circulation of the Scriptures, his repudiation of any other sense than what was meant to be conveyed, his sagacity in dealing with the figurative sections of both Testaments, his recognition of the need of a "pia curiositas" and a "cautious pietas" in the exposition of the divine word (cf. *Pref. to Euang. in Evang.*), his practice of the true exegetical art in his *Paraphrases* and *Annotationes*, contributed powerfully to the diffusion of better hermeneutical ideas.

The mightiest impetus was given by the Reformers. They were the heirs of what was best in the ancient school of Antioch and in the Humanistic revival. But they added to the philology, the grammar, the history, and the independent sense which were illustrated in these the spiritual insight and the personal religious interest which were so often wanting. The process by which they won their own way to a freer faith lifted them above tradition, mysticism, and unspiritual literalism. Their profound religious experiences, intensified by the forces at work in an unexampled mental upheaval, made the Bible a new thing to them. It came to them as God's message, and they received it as the only rule of faith and life. It spoke immediately to their souls, and they saw it was to be interpreted by itself. They found it a message conveyed in historical form, and recognized the need of the appliances of language and history in order to read it. They perceived it to be a spiritual message, and discovered that the full recognition of it could come only by spiritual enlightenment. Viewing it to be a message meant for all, they held it precious to the general intelligence of the prayerful in all that concerns faith and morals, and affirmed, with Melancthon, "nam et certum est simplicem sententiam ubique quiescentem esse juxta precepta grammaticæ, dialecticæ, et rhetoricæ." Each of the great Reformers did something to advance this true hermeneutical movement. Luther, Zwingle, and Calvin were alike imbued with the historic sense, Luther excelling in spiritual genius and a bold originality which carried him at times to extremes in the independence of his treatment of Scripture, Zwingle in an incisive perception which inclined strongly at times to subjective interpretations, Calvin in a union of qualities which distinguished him as the foremost exegete of the Reformation. Profoundly reverencing Scripture as God's word, submitting to it as authoritative, yet not binding himself to any theory of its inspiration which would preclude the possibility of circumstantial inaccuracies (cf. on Matt xxvii 9, Acts vii 16), the Reformer of Geneva excelled all in freedom from arbitrary exposition, in reading

the Biblical statements in the light of historical occasion and intention, in laying the foundations of a truer typology, and in exhibiting with its Christward testimony the historical basis of Messianic prophecy. The cycles of Protestant exegesis were aided by Beza, Bucer, Bullinger, Oecolampadius, and others. At length the hermeneutics of the Reformation found symbolical expression in the Protestant definitions of the exclusive sufficiency of Scripture, its perspicuity under the use of the ordinary means and with the teaching of the Holy Spirit, its possession of a sense which is one and not manifold, and its interpretation by itself. In the *Clavis Scripturæ Sacræ* of M. Flacius Illyricus it was cast for the first time into systematic form, and dealt with theoretically.

With the Reformation objective exegesis may be said to have been firmly established. The conditions were also laid for further hermeneutical progress. Since then the principles of true grammatical-historical interpretation have been gradually coming to be better understood and more successfully applied. This has not been the case, however, without frequent lapses. In various schools there have been revivals of old errors. There has been a return to the subjective tendency, e.g., in the "moral interpretation" of Kant, as well as in various forms of rationalistic and Socinian exegesis. In accordance with his ideas of the empiric and local order of an historical faith, and his definition of morality as the essence of religion, Kant held that the judgments of the pure reason must be the test of religious faith, and that the literal sense, when it seems to convey a meaning adverse to morality, inconsistent with reason, or unworthy of God, must have a new meaning found for it. His hermeneutics, therefore, did not profess to rest with the sense intended by the writer, but reckoned it legitimate to adopt any possible sense which should be conformable to the interests of perfect morality. To the same tendency belong the "psychological interpretation" of Paulus and Eichhorn, and the mythical interpretation of Weiss and Strauss. Of these the former proposed to hermeneutics the task of distinguishing the realities from the inward impressions formed of facts by the sacred writers, while the latter sought principles by which the idea might be disentangled from the narrative vesture which it had worn for itself. Pietism, too, although its leaders, Spener and Francke, were of a better spirit, degenerated through its stanning after "edifying" interpretation into mystic and chiloastic licence. The dependent tendency, again, formulated in the symbolical definitions on the subject of the Vulgate as the basis of exegesis, the church as the authoritative interpreter, and the pope as the infallible exponent of the church in official declarations on faith and morals, has become so firmly seated in the Roman Catholic communion that the interpreter's attitude to the church is capable of being compared by a Catholic author to that of a diplomatist acting in the spirit and interest of his prince.<sup>1</sup> It is followed, too, by that section of the English Church, which defects to primitive tradition or the consent of the fathers of the first four centuries. Even among those who adhere to the Protestant positions there has been partial reaction in both directions. The subjective tendency has reasserted itself, e.g., in the artificial typology of the Occian school, although Cocceus himself rather deserves the credit of making Protestant theology, after it had entered its scholastic period, again more Biblical, and of enforcing the importance of a literal, contextual interpretation. The dependent tendency has reappeared where the "analogy of faith," instead of being kept to the original idea of the general contents of Scripture as gathered from the inward passages and used for a help to the understanding of the

obscure, has been identified with the creeds and employed as an external standard of interpretation.

But with partial retrogression there has been an advance on the whole in Protestant hermeneutics. To this interpreters of very different schools have contributed. Among these are to be mentioned Sal. Glasius, the author of the *Philologia Sacra*, Hugo Grotius, Abr. Calov, G. Calixtus, J. J. Rambach, whose *Institutiones Hermeneuticæ Sacræ* exercised a salutary influence, notwithstanding his inclination to the pietist principle of "emphasis" in interpretation, J. A. Bengel, in whose *Gnomon* a happy union was effected between pietism and science, and J. S. Semler, who did much for the expansion of historical interpretation, notwithstanding the injurious results of his theory of accommodation. Of still greater importance are J. A. Ebrachi, to whose celebrated *Institutio Interpretis Novi Testamenti* last century was indebted for the scientific presentation of the soundest hermeneutical principles on the philological side, Friedr. Schleiermacher, whose *Hermeneutik* abounds in fertile suggestions, and brings out for the first time the necessity of recognizing a specially Christian element in the language of the New Testament, and F. Lucke, who illustrates the just combination of the strictest scientific method with the primary qualification of spiritual sympathy with the Word in the true interpreter. Exile from hermeneutical method has been attacked, in the form of defining a special "psychological" (Staudlin), "theological" (Klausen, Landeet), or "dogmatic" (Döder) interpretation, or in the form of proposing new modes of interpretation, such as the "æsthetical" of Friesen, the "pneumatical" of Beck, the "panharmonic" of Geinai. But whatever is valid in these schemes comes within the ordinary grammatical-historical method. Properly understood, the historical side of that method covers all that concerns the transcription of the exegete, not only into the times and circumstances of the composition of the books, but also into the position and personality of the author. It embraces therefore that subjective quality which, however variously designated as the religious preparation, sympathy with the writers and their message, spiritual tact, or the illumination of the Holy Spirit, has been recognized by the best interpreters to be a primary and essential requisite. The development of these principles has been greatly helped by the grammatical studies of men like Gesenius, Fwald, Olshausen, and Böttcher in Hebrew, and Vinet and Bittmann in Greek, by the literary, historical, critical, and theological investigations of Heider, Baur, Rottke, Hofmann, and many others, and above all by the exegetical practice of scientific expositors such as De Wette, Bleek, Hupfeld, Lucke, Meyer, Godet, Elliott, Lightfoot, and Dührsen. Results are thus being gathered which will result in new enlargements of hermeneutical method. A direct insight is being gained into the genius of the language, which has already rescued New Testament Greek from pietist and Hebraist extremes, and into the nature of typology, the laws of prophecy, the relation of the two Testaments to each other, the historical delivery and development of their contents, the unity (so distinguishable from uniformity) which animates those different sections. In these directions there is the promise of further progress in hermeneutics. More exact inquiry into the presuppositions which underlie the Biblical doctrines will also tell upon the laws of interpretation. Differences in hermeneutical method, however, run up finally into differences of conception on the origin of the sacred literature, its intention, and the spirit which animates it. Uncertainty of view on the subject of what Scripture is and what its inspiration means, as seen in the symbols of the churches and in the widely divergent positions affirmed by representative theologians of different schools (cf., e.g., those expounded respectively by Chemnitz,

<sup>1</sup> Loeblich, *Gründzüge des biblischen Hermeneutik und Kritik*, p. 161, Gießen, 1839.



so frequently attached to him. The god with which he lulls men to sleep is the same scepter that the ruler of the dead, Yama or Rhadamanthus, Minos or Hades, always bears (Kuhn in *ZfA*, iv p 123). He is also the sender of dreams, we find him worshipped among the Chthonian deities at Chidus, and on vases accompanied by the Chthonian dog. We are now able to understand a fact which is perhaps the most interesting point connected with Hermes. Kuhn first pointed out the identity of the Greek *Ἑρμῆας* with the Sanskrit *Saramēyas*, and though the connexion has been doubted by various writers, as Mannhardt (*Wald- und Feld-Kulte*, i p 167) and others, yet no valid objection has even been raised on etymological grounds (see Benfey in *Abhandl. Gott. Ges.*, 1877). Amid the difficulties which still envelop the translation and the mythology of the Vedas, it is, however, even more difficult to discover the original character of the two *Sāramaya* and their mother *Saramā*, than it is to determine the nature of Hermes. The two *Sāramaya* are mentioned twice in the *Rig Veda* (vi 55, x 14), they as two dogs, are said both to guard the way to the abode of the dead and refuse a passage to the impious, and also to act as the messengers of Yama, carrying away the souls when the time of death has arrived. *Saramā* also seems to be regarded as the messenger of the dog of India, and hence appears regularly as the companion and helper of all the great heroes on their adventures. One epithet of these dogs is *Varuṇa*, spotted, which in its Greek form *Cerberus* (Benfey, *Vedea*, p 149) is the name of the dog that guards the gate of the lower world. Now we find in Rome that two *lucres praestites*, children of Mercury and Egria, are said to guard dwellings, and streets in the form of dogs, and in the German legend the dog who attends the wild huntsman Wuotan, i.e., the sun hidden during the seven winter months, is closely related to the dwarfs or spirits of the dead, and is called by their name (Kuhn, *West. Sagen*, i p 69). So Hermes, whom we have seen as king of the dead, is as *ψυχομαχός* also the conductor of souls to their future home, we may therefore count the dog (or dogs) as ultimately identical in character with the king of the dead. Some (on Chiris in Kuhn's *ZfA*, x) has pointed out how these primitive conceptions commonly pass through the stage of animals before reaching that of gods, and in mythology we have the two stages preserved side by side as distinct beings. The Hindu Kubera, lord of the treasures of the lower world, who may be identified with Pluto or with Hermes, is styled "Lord of the hosts of the dogs."

In this account there has been no room left for the idea of Hermes as connected with the wind. The sun, after he has set at night, is the same as the sun hidden during the seven months of winter, who then rides abroad in the tempest. The wind is then easily conceived as his servant and messenger, and is often considered to carry away the souls of the dead (see HARNER). From his connexion with the wind, Hermes is represented with winged shoes. Bat with Roscher (*Lesmes des Wind Gott*) to see in Hermes simply the wind is to take a narrow view and to ignore the character of primitive Aryan thought.

In art, besides the Hermes already described, Hermes is in the archaic time represented as a man with pointed beard, wearing a chlamys and the hood has called petasus, his symbols are the staff (*ῥαβδος*) and the winged shoes (*talaiia*). The ideal type of Hermes was probably modelled after the statue by Praxiteles in the Heraion at Olympia. This statue, which was recently discovered by the German expedition, represented the god leaning with his left arm on a rock and supporting on it the infant Bacchus. The right arm, which is lost, probably held the caduceus. The form shows a perfect combination of agility and strength.

See the works on mythology or religion by Wikket, Gerhard, Ruck, Stahl, Schwane, O Muller, Beckmann, H D Muller, Lauer, Schwartz, Max Muller, Prullen, Fritung, Hum, Müny, &c., also Lehrs, *Populäre Mythologie*, Schumann, *Heid. Theog.*, Götting in *Heimce*, xxx, Michels, *Erkenntnis des Herms*, Münchhausen, *Athena*, Haupt in *ZfA f. Alterth.*, 1842, Oestermann, *Herms Olympeum*, H D Muller in *Philologus*, xix, Kuhn in Haupt's *ZfA f. d. Alterth.*, vi, Von Hahn, *Segensreich. Studien*, Roscher, *Hermes*. As usual, the fullest list of ancient authorities is to be found in Jacoby, *Handbuch der Mythologie* (W M K).

HERMES, GERM (1775-1831), a distinguished Catholic theologian, born on 22d April 1775, at Dreyewald, in Westphalia, was educated at the gymnasium and university of Münster. His life presents no facts of importance. After completing his course of study at Münster, he acted for some time as lecturer at the gymnasium and then as professor at the university. In 1820 he was called, as professor of theology, to the university of Bonn, where he remained till his death on 26th May 1831. Hermes was peculiarly adapted for the life and work of the professoriate. He had great gifts as a lecturer and teacher, and gathered round him at Bonn a devoted band of adherents. His works were *Untersuchungen über die innere Wahrheit des Christenthums*, Münster, 1805, and *Einführung in die christlich-katholische Theologie*, of which the first part, a philosophical introduction, was published in 1819, the second part, on positive theology, in 1820. The *Einführung* was never completed. His *Christlich-katholische Theologie* was published, from his lectures, after his death, by two of his scholars, Achtenfeld and Biam, 3 vols 1831-4.

The *Einführung* is a remarkable work, both in itself and in its effect upon Catholic theology in Germany. Few works of modern times have excited a more keen and bitter controversy. Hermes himself was very largely under the influence of the Kantian and Fichtean ideas, and though in the philosophical portion of his *Einführung* he criticises both these thinkers severely, rejects their doctrine of the moral law as the sole guarantee for the existence of God, and condemns their restricted view of the possibility and nature of revelation, enough remained of purely speculative material to render his system obnoxious to the Catholic Church. A very few years after his death, the contest between his followers and their opponents grew so heated that reference of the dispute was made to the papal see. The judgment consequent upon a review of Hermes's writings, undertaken in Rome in 1833, was adverse, and on 25th September 1835 a papal bull condemned both parts of the *Einführung* and the first volume of the *Dogmatik*. Two months later the remaining volumes of the *Dogmatik* were likewise condemned. The controversy did not cease with this condemnation, but not till 1846 was there any systematic attempt on the part of Catholic theology to examine and refute the Hermean doctrine. In that year was published anonymously, by F. W. Meier, the most complete survey of the principles of the works of Hermes as contrasted with the orthodox catholic faith (*Der Hermeanismus*, 1845). In 1847 the condemnation of 1835 was confirmed by Pius IX. A sufficient account of Hermes and the dispute raised by him will be found in K. Werner, *Geschichte des katholischen Theismus*, 1866, pp 405-409.

HERMES TRISMEGISTUS. The Egyptian "Hmhi, Tawut, or Tat (see vol vii p 718), who was identified by the Greeks more or less completely with their own Hermes, which occurs that of "the great great" or twice great, with an added hieroglyphic (a lot) also signifying "great." To him as scribe of the gods, "Lord of the divine words," "Scribe of truth," was attributed the authorship of all the strictly sacred books generally called by Greek authors Hermetic. These, according to Clement Alexandrinus, our sole ancient authority (*Strom.*, vi. p 268 et.), were forty-





shaped summit, is 20 miles long, extending north-east and south-west. The formation is a hard dark-grey crystalline limestone belonging to the Neocomian period, and full of fossils. The spurs consist in some cases of white chalk covering the limestone, and on the south there are several basaltic outcrops. The mountain in spring is covered with snow, but in autumn there is occasionally none left, even in the ravines. To the height of 500 feet it is clothed with oaks and brush, while luxuriant vineyards abound. Above the snow limit the mountain is bare and covered with fine limestone shingle. The summit is a plateau from which three rocky knolls rise up, that on the west being the lowest, that on the south-east the highest. On the south slope of the latter are remains of the small temple or *aeolium* described by St Jerome. A semicircular dwarf wall of good masonry runs round this peak, and a trench excavated in the rock may perhaps indicate the site of an altar. On the plateau is a cave about 25 feet square, with the entrance on the east. A rock column supports the roof, and a building once stood above. The view from Hermon is very extensive, embracing all Lebanon and the plains east of Damascus, with Palestine as far as Carmel and Tabor. On a clear day Jaffa may also be seen. Other small temples are found on the sides of Hermon, of which twelve in all have been explored. They face the east, and are dated by architects about 800 A.D. The most remarkable are those of *Deir el-Makayn*, *Ilbun Iyeh*, *Hon Neha*, and *Tell Thatha*. At the ruined town called Rukhbeh on the northern slopes are the remains of a temple, the stones of which have been built into a church. A large medallion 5 feet in diameter, with a head supposed to represent the sun god, is built into the wall. Several Greek inscriptions occur among these ruins. Foxes, wolves, and the Syrian bear are commonly found on Hermon, with various kinds of game. In the 13th century Psalm lxxxix 12 was supposed to indicate the proximity of Hermon to Tabor. The conical hill immediately south of Tabor was thus named Little Hermon, and is still so called by some of the inhabitants of the district.

**HERMOSILLO**, a town of Mexico, state of Sonora, is situated at the entrance to a valley of remarkable fertility near the river Sonora at its confluence with the Hocesitas, 40 miles south-west of Ures. Some of the principal houses are built of stone, but most of the dwellings are of adobe. The town possesses two churches, a prison, and a mint. Its rise and early prosperity were due to the discovery of gold mines in Sonora, but it now depends wholly on the fertility of the surrounding country, of which the principal products are cotton, wheat, grapes, and a great variety of fruits. The town is the commercial centre of Sonora. It has cotton manufactories, flour mills, and brandy distilleries, and carries on a considerable foreign trade by means of the port of Guaymas, which is 100 miles distant. The population is about 14,000.

**HERMSDORF**, generally known as Niederhermsdorf, a town of Prussia, in the government district of Bieslau and circle of Waldenburg. There are coal and iron mines and lime quarries in the vicinity, and in the town there is a large iron-works. The population in 1875 was 5981.

**HERMUPOLIS** See SYRA.

**HERNIA** (a Latin term commonly derived from *hernia*, a sprout, but this origin is doubtful) is the protrusion of any viscus from its normal cavity, for example, *hernia cerebri* is the name given to a protrusion of the brain substance, *hernia pulmonum* a protrusion of a portion of the lung. The word may here be restricted to its most usual meaning, a protrusion of part of the contents of the abdomen from their normal position in the abdominal cavity—in common language a "rupture." A rupture may occur at any weak point in the abdominal wall. The common situations are the groin (inguinal hernia), the upper part of the thigh

(femoral hernia), and the umbilicus or navel (umbilical hernia). The contents of a rupture may be any of the abdominal viscera, the more movable the viscera the more tendency there is to protrusion, and therefore we generally find that the small intestine and the omentum are most frequently displaced. The tumour may contain intestine alone (enterocoele), omentum alone (epiplocele), or a combination of intestine and omentum (enteroepiplocele). The predisposing cause to rupture is any weakness of the abdominal wall due (1) to natural conformity, as in inguinal hernia, which descends along the inguinal canal, a canal in which the cord lies in the male and the round ligament in the female, or in femoral hernia, in which the hernia descends along the femoral canal along with and on to the inner side of the femoral vessels, (2) to any cause which weakens the wall locally, as an abscess or wound, (3) to general laxity of the tissues, as in weakly people, or after repeated pregnancies. This third cause only predisposes to hernia in so far as it may weaken an already weak part under the first and second heads. The exciting cause of hernia is generally some strain or over-exertion in any powerful effort, as lifting a heavy weight, jumping off a high wall, straining, as in difficult micturition or in consequence of constipation, or excessive coughing, as in chronic bronchitis. The pressure of the diaphragm above and the anterior abdominal wall in front acting on the abdominal viscera tends to cause their protrusion at the weakest point. Rupture is either congenital or acquired. A child may be born with a hernia in the inguinal or umbilical region, the result of an arrest of development in these parts, or the rupture may be acquired, first appearing perhaps in adult life, the result of one or other of the accidents referred to above. Ruptures are most frequent at the extremes of life. Men suffer more frequently than women, because they are more liable to those accidents, being frequently exposed to intermittent work, such as the lifting of heavy weights.

At first the rupture is small, and with more or less rapidity it gradually increases in size, it varies from the size of a small marble to that of a child's head or even larger. The swelling which appears is spoken of as consisting of three parts,—the coverings, sac, and content. (1) The "coverings" are composed of the different structures which form the abdominal wall at the part where the rupture occurs. In femoral hernia the coverings are formed of the structures at the upper part of the thigh. These structures are stretched and may be thinned, in some cases they are condensed and matted together, the result of pressure, in others there is an attack of inflammation. (2) The "sac" is composed of the peritoneum or thin membrane lining the abdominal cavity, in some very rare cases the sac is wanting. The neck of the sac is the term used to designate the narrowed portion where the peritoneum forming the sac becomes continuous with the general peritoneal cavity. Very frequently the neck of the sac is thickened, indurated, and adherent to surrounding parts, because here the tendency to local inflammatory action is most marked, the pressure being great at this point. (3) The "contents" have already been defined. There are three distinct conditions in which we may find the contents of a hernial tumour. It may be either reducible, irreducible, or strangulated. A "reducible" hernia is one in which the contents can be pushed back into the abdomen. In some cases this is done with ease, in others it is a matter of great difficulty. At any moment a reducible hernia may become "irreducible," that is to say, its contents cannot be pushed back into the abdominal cavity. This may suddenly occur in consequence of an attack of constipation, or slowly, the irreducibility being at first partial and gradually becoming more

and more complete. Generally this is due to an increase in the size of the oromatum, accompanied by inflammatory induration. A "strangulated" hernia is one in which the circulation of the blood through the hernial contents is interfered with. The interference is at first slight, but very rapidly tends to become more pronounced. At first there is congestion, this congestion may go on to inflammation, if unrelieved, the inflammation will end in mortification. The rapidity with which the change from simple congestion to mortification takes place will depend on the tightness of the constricting cause, as a rule the more tightly a hernia forms, in other words, the less time the surrounding tissues have to accommodate themselves to the protruding swelling, the greater the rapidity of the changes in the conditions of the contents. The constricting agent may be one or other of the structures which form the boundaries of the openings through which the hernia has travelled in its gradual course through the abdominal wall, or it may lie in the neck of the sac, which has become thickened in consequence of inflammation.

**Reducible Hernia**—The symptoms of reducible hernia show themselves in a soft compressible tumour (obscure) which contains elasticity and doughiness when both are present, its size increasing in the day, and diminishing in the horizontal position, whereas in a rule it grows in size by the mere motion of the bowels, and is troublesome in the daytime, more especially towards evening. There is a more or less distinct impulse on coughing, and when the intestinal contents are pushed back into the abdomen a gurgling sensation is perceived by the finger. The tumour is connected with in any part of the abdominal wall, but the chief situations are—(a) the inguinal region, in which the neck of the tumour lies immediately above Poupart's ligament (a cord like ligamentous structure which runs along the inner part of the iliac space, the process of the ilium to the spine of the pubis immediately above the genital orifice), (b) the femoral region in the upper part of the thigh, which is the neck of the sac immediately below the inguinal or Poupart's ligament, (c) the umbilical region, in which the tumour appears as at the navel. As the inguinal hernia increases in size it tends to press into the scrotum in the male, into the labium in the female, while the femoral hernia, appearing first below Poupart, tends gradually as it increases in size to pass upwards superiorly to Poupart's ligament.

The treatment of reducible hernia consists in pushing back the contents of the tumour into the abdomen, and applying a truss or elastic bandage in order to prevent the contents from again escaping. The younger the patient the more chances there is of the truss acting as a curative agent, as the natural tendency to contraction of the channel through which the hernia protrudes is greater. The truss is frequently put on at night, because in the horizontal position the tendency of the contents to descend is greatly lessened. The truss is put on just before, however, be worn day and night. If, after the hernia is once reduced, it never again allows to come down, there is a probability of a cure taking place, but if it is allowed to come down occasionally, as it may do even during the night, in consequence of cough or some tarting exercise, or bed, the truss is attached, and the contracting process which may have been going on for weeks is undone.

It is unnecessary to describe the multitudinous varieties of trusses. When the truss is applied, the surgeon has to see that it is suitably, the necessary amount of pressure being obtained by means of a steel spring, to which a pulley is attached. The pulley should be so arranged as to press, not into the opening through which the hernia has come, but in a sulcus, so that it does not interfere with the contraction and permanent closure. The main pressure should be in the neighbourhood of the neck of the sac, if the pulley presses into the opening, the tendency is to keep the opening patent. The principle of the multiple sherd pads have been recommended for umbilical hernia, is evil, a flat pad properly applied and held in position by an elastic bandage is the proper arrangement for restraining an umbilical hernia. No truss is to be applied until the hernia is completely reduced, it will only do harm by pressing on the contents of the unreduced hernia. In some hernias, generally those of large size, it is found impossible to keep them up by means of a truss, in such cases an elastic bandage will sometimes effect the object, in other hernia operations have been recommended. They are spoken of as "the radical cure of hernia," in contradistinction to the so called "palliative treatment by means of a truss." An attempt has been made to show that the operation may radically cure a hernia. The procedure involved in the operations described are (1) obliteration of the neck of the sac, (2) obliteration of the channel through which the hernia has de-

scended, (3) obliteration of the sac itself, (4) plugging of the channel by invaginating the loose skin. The first and second are specially important, as in them the surgeon imitates nature's way of attempting to cure the tendency to hernial protrusion.

**Irreducible Hernia**—Here the main symptoms are a tumour in one or other of the situations already referred to, of long standing and generally of large size, in which the contents of the tumour, as a whole or in part, cannot be pushed back into the abdomen. The irreducibility is due either to its large size or to changes which have taken place in the contents, either adhesions or adhesions. Such a tumour is a constant source of danger, its contents are liable, from their exposed situation, to injury from external violence, it is constantly tending to increase in size, and the contents may become strangulated, or the contents may inflame, and strangulation may occur secondary to the inflammation. It is accompanied by dragging sensations referred to the abdomen, colic, dyspepsia, and constipation, which may in its turn lead to obstruction, that is to say, a stoppage of the passage of the contents of the portion of the intestinal canal which lies in the hernial tumour. When an irreducible hernia becomes painful and tender, a local peritonitis has occurred, which is common in many of its symptoms a case of strangulation.

The treatment of irreducible hernia may be palliative, a bog truss may be worn to prevent the swelling from getting larger, the bowels must be kept open, and all irregularities of diet avoided. A person with such a hernia is in constant danger, and more than palliation is required. An attempt should be made to reduce the hernia, (1) by laying the patient on his back, rubbing the buttocks, administering purgatives, and starving him (preventing attention to these points may so reduce the size of the contents that the hernia may be reduced), (2) by the use of the finger, or by means of a screw, as to press continuously on the tumour, and gradually push it back into the abdominal cavity. By this simple means large irreducible hernia, which have withstood all attempts at reduction, have been reduced, and the abdominal side of the hernia is kept open, and continuously applied for a few days. (3) The surgeon may cut down on the hernia, and stick antiseptic precautions, open the sac, divide any osseous adhesions, ligature and cut away in directed incision, return the bowel into the abdominal cavity, and close the sac. Such an operation is unquestionable unless other means have been fairly tried and failed, and unless the hernia is giving rise to such symptoms that the usefulness of the patient is interfered with.

**Strangulated Hernia**—In this the contents are constricted, and the flow of blood into the tumour and from the tumour is stopped. The symptoms are—nausea, vomiting, flatulence, distension, after a time of focal tension, a twisting, burning pain generally referred to the umbilicus, intestinal obstruction, a quick wiry pulse, pain on pressure over the tumour and in the abdomen near the tumour, the abdomen tense and tympanitic, and no impulse on coughing, because the contents of the tumour are practically cut off from the general abdominal contents. The patient has an anxious expression. Soon or later, from eight hours to eight days, if the strangulation is unrelieved, the tumour will become livid and gangrenous, mortification has occurred, and gangrene of the bowel at the neck of the sac will take place, followed by extravasation of the intestinal contents into the abdominal cavity, the patient becomes delirious, and dies.

The treatment of a strangulated hernia admits of no delay, delay is fatal. If the symptoms are not very acute, and if the case is seen early, attempts may be made by hand, or by the application of cold to the tumour to reduce the congested condition and relieve the strangulation. But these attempts must not be persevered with for more than two or three hours. If the strangulation continues, the patient should be told that his case is one in which the chance of no delay. Chloroform should be administered, another attempt to return the contents by pressure (named "the taxis") should be made. If this has already been fairly tried, and if the symptoms are not relieved, no prolonged attempts at taxis are justifiable, because the condition of the hernial contents may be such that they cannot bear the pressure. The taxis to be successful should be made in a direction opposite to the direction of the bowels. If the hernial hernia should be pressed upwards, outwards, and backwards, the femoral hernia downwards, backwards, and upwards. The larger the hernia the greater is the chance of success. The slightest gurgling indicates that the contents are not done, and when the surgeon must cut down on the tumour, carefully dividing the different coverings until he reaches the sac. The sac is then opened, the constricted divided, care being taken not to injure the bowel, and the contents are removed, the sac is examined, and if it is glistening, how ever black it may be, it is returned into the abdomen. If it has lost its glistening aspect, it is like "wet parchment." Then the case is very dangerous, and the doctor should relieve the constriction by leaving the bowel in the sac. Never open the bowel, however bad it looks, it may recover, and if it does not burst for some hours afterwards, the chances are that adhesions may form at the neck of the sac and lessen the risk

of extravasation into the abdominal cavity—a fecal fistula will be the result. The omentum, if healthy, may be returned, or it can be ligated and indurated, it may be ligatured and cut off. After the bowel is returned the wound is sown up, and a pad and flannel bandage applied. A dose of opium should be given to prevent movement of the bowels. On the third day a dose of castor oil is administered if the bowels do not open naturally. A leech is applied after the wound is healed before the patient is allowed to get out of bed. Many complications which may or cannot have to be feared. Any one suffering from hemorrhoids should take great care to obtain an intimately fitting anus, and should remember that, whenever any symptoms resembling in any degree those of strabismus are met, any delay in the treatment is not only dangerous, but may prove fatal. A medical man should at once be communicated with. It is his duty to remember that when a patient asks his advice, complaining of symptoms resembling strangulation, he must examine all the situations where hemorrhoids may occur, because the hemorrhoidal tumor may be so small that it has escaped the notice of the patient. Any attention on the patient's part that he does not suffer from hemorrhoids is a great weight. The surgeon must satisfy himself by careful inspection and a careful examination. If an operation is necessary, he may with confidence say that the operation is not in itself a dangerous one, while, on the other hand, he can assure the patient that any delay is most certainly exceedingly dangerous. (P. C.)

**HERNOSAND**, chief town and seat of the administration of the Lää of Western Norland on the east coast of Sweden, is built on the island of Herno (connected with the mainland by bridges), about 3 miles south of the mouth of the Angerman river, and 230 miles north of Stockholm. It is the seat of a bishop and possesses a fine church, erected in 1843-46. There are engine works, timber-yards, saw mills, and various manufactures in the town. The harbor is good. In 1878, 35 vessels, chiefly engaged in the timber trade, with a total burden of 7098 tons, entered and cleared at the port. Tax is also exported, and there is an institution for pisciculture in the town. Herno was founded in 1884, and received its first town privileges from John III. in 1587. The population in 1870 was 4912.

**HERO AND LEANDER** Hero, the beautiful priestess of Venus at Sestos, was there seen by Leander, a youth of Abydos, at the celebration of the festival of Venus and Adonis. He became deeply enamoured of her, and found that day an opportunity of declaring his passion, which she returned, and as her position rendered their marriage impossible, they agreed to carry on a clandestine intercourse. Nightly Hero placed a lamp in the top of the tower where she dwelt by the sea, and Leander, guided by it, swam the dangerous Hellespont. One stormy night the lamp was blown out, and Leander perished. On finding his body next morning on the shore, Hero flung herself into the waves.

Reference is made to this famous tale by Virgil (*Georg.*, in 355) and by Statius (*Theb.*, iv. 638). *See also* *Ulys.* vi. 117. The story is composed in epistle form by Leander, and one from Hero to Leander. But the story is best known from the work of Muscous (see *MUSCOW*), which has been repeatedly translated into modern languages. *See also* *Leander and Hero* of Malou and Chapman is an imitation and expression of the tale of Muscous.

**HEROD** was the name of a family of Idumean origin, which displaced the Ammonians as the rulers of Judaea. The founder of the dynasty, and its most notable representative in every way, was Herod the Great, who was king of the Jews for about thirty-seven years, from 40 to 4 B.C. Herod's father was Antipater, when during the troubles which broke out in the family of Alexander Jannæus, attached himself to Hyrcanus, the weak-minded son of Alexander. In this way Antipater, though an Idumean, soon became the most powerful man in Judaea, and in the Alexandrian war gave such effectual help to Julius Cæsar that the dictator made him procurator of Judaea, Hyrcanus being high priest (47 B.C.). The same year, at the age of twenty-five, Herod was appointed governor of Galilee by his father. He soon gave proof of the remarkable energy of his character in rooting out the bandits

who infested his province, but his summary measures gave a handle to the enemies of his house at Jerusalem, and he was summoned before the sanhedrin. There he appeared, not in the garb of an accused person, but gorgeously attired, and attended by a guard of soldiers. He found it expedient, however, to withdraw from Jerusalem without awaiting the sentence. He retired to Syria, where he met with a gracious reception from Sextus Cæsar, who appointed him governor of Coele-Syria. Herod now marched with an army against Jerusalem, but at the persuasion of his father and brother was induced to depart without exerting vengeance on his enemies. After the death of Cæsar, the fortunes of Herod were affected by all the changes which befell the Roman state. When Cassius took the command in the East, and began to gather his strength for the final struggle which was decided at Philippi, Herod managed to win his favour by the readiness with which he raised his share of the heavy exactions imposed upon the East. About the same time his father was poisoned, and to Herod fell the task of avenging his death, as well as of supporting the interests of his house in Palestine. After Philippi the great Antony over by large presents of money. He and his brother Phasael were appointed tetrarchs of Judaea. In 40 B.C. the Parthians appeared upon the scene, overran the whole of Syria, and placed on the throne of Judaea Antigonus, son of Antiochus, and representative of the royal branch of the Ammonian house. Herod was completely overpowered, and, after placing his relatives in safety, so far as he could, he hastened to Rome to lay his case before Antony and Octavianus. He succeeded by his expectations, for, while he meant only to advocate the claims of Hyrcanus the Ammonian, the two heads of the state made him king of Judaea. Herod returned home without delay, and set about the task of winning the kingdom allotted to him. Owing chiefly to the slackness of the Roman generals who should have helped him, it was three years before he succeeded in taking Jerusalem. (P. C.) Before that event he had married the beautiful Mariamne, a princess of the Ammonian house, a granddaughter both of Antiochus and Hyrcanus. Herod's early measures were cruel, he put to death all the members of the sanhedrin except two, and spared no one that was likely to stand in his way. Antiochus, the youthful brother of Mariamne, whom he had appointed high priest, he caused to be treacherously drowned because he was too popular with the patriotic party. On this occasion Alexandria, mother of Antiochus, induced Cleopatra to take her part, and Herod had to appear before Antony to answer the charge of murdering the prince. Again Herod knew how to gain the Roman, and he returned home with confirmed power. During the war of Actium, Herod had the good fortune to be engaged in a war with the king of Arabia on Antony's behalf, and so escaped the risk of fighting against Octavianus. Yet he recognized the danger of his position as the friend of Antony, and faced it with his usual courage and foresight. Hastening to Rhodes (30 B.C.), he appeared in the presence of the conqueror, and avowing his loyalty to his friend Antony, professed the same faithful service to Octavianus. Octavianus was gracious, and remained the constant friend and patron of Herod to the end. Thus was the last crisis of Herod's life, he was heretofore undisturbed king of Judaea, and next to Agrippa the most trusted friend of Augustus. But while the friend of the great, and prosperous in all external relations, Nessus pursued him in his family. When summoned to answer for himself before Antony, and again on his journey to Rhodes, he left the beautiful and beloved Mariamne in charge of one of his friends, but with the cruel injunction that she should be put to death should anything serious befall himself. On both occasions Mariamne discovered the secret, and, instead

of regarding the command as a proof of his jealous love, abhorred it as another instance of the cruelty which had not spared so many of his nearest relatives. A horrible tragedy ensued. Mariamne openly expressed her disgust, and Herod, furious with rage, jealousy, and rejected love, ordered her death. The violence of his feelings threw him into a dangerous malady, and even drove him to the verge of insanity. His mind never recovered its healthy tone, and in later years the avenger again overtook him. In the meantime his government was marked by the greatest magnificence and apparent success. His turbulent subjects were kept tolerably quiet in spite of heavy taxes. He managed to gratify his love for Greek and Roman life, and yet he avoided wounding too deeply the susceptibilities of the Jews. The magnificent buildings which he raised were the most brilliant products of his reign. He rebuilt Samaria, calling it Sebaste, from the Greek name for Augustus. He converted the small town of Strato's Tower into a magnificent seaport with an artificial harbour, under the name of Caesarea. These and other towns which he built were furnished with temples, theatres, aqueducts, and all the other ornamental and useful appliances of Greek and Roman life. In the city of Jerusalem even he built a theatre, and an amphitheatre outside of it. A more patriotic work was the rebuilding of the temple (began 20 a. c.), which had nearly perished during the late troubles, and it was on a very magnificent scale and lasted nine years and a half, even then being unfinished. Equally necessary and equally significant of his relation to his subjects was the construction of strong fortresses in various parts of the country. The last years of Herod's life were darkened by the return of those family troubles which had previously overtaken it. His two sons by Mariamne had been educated at Rome, and returned, 17 a. c., to Judea. Their Asmonean descent, their youth, beauty, and accomplishments, and their too interesting history gained them the most enthusiastic popularity among the Jews. Their father himself was proud of them. But Phelaeas and Salome, brother and sister of Herod, did all they could to sow jealousy and suspicion. Herod's mind was too painfully open to dark insinuations, and he recalled his eldest son Antipater to counterbalance the influence of the Asmonean princes. After the arrival of Antipater, who was a most unscrupulous plotter, there was no more peace or security at the court of Herod, things went from bad to worse, till after many years of the darkest intrigue and the bitterest domestic contention, the two sons of Mariamne were strangled at Sebaste. Soon after the clearest proof was discovered of a conspiracy which Antipater had formed with Phelaeas against the life of Herod himself. The order for the death of Antipater was given by Herod from his death-bed. His health had long been failing, after the cruellest tortments of both mind and body, he died 4 a. c. The birth of Christ took place in the same year as Herod's death, but this, as is well known, occurred four years before the date fixed as the beginning of the Christian era. The massacre of the little children at Bethlehem is not mentioned by Josephus among the horrors of Herod's last days. He was buried with great magnificence. His will, by which the greater part of his dominions was bequeathed to his sons by Malthea, a Samaritan, was confirmed by Augustus.

Herod's name is doubtless one of the most repulsive in history. He was a man of wonderful energy and sagacity. He saw clearly that Rome was the hinge on which everything turned, and that no policy could be successful which did not depend upon her leading men. His skill in understanding these men, in conciliating them, and making himself useful to them, was very great. Thus he made the successive masters of the world his willing friends, and out of all the crises of his fate emerged victo-

rious. But his hands were red with the blood of his own household, when his position or his interests were touched, no scruple could arrest him. All that can be said in his favour is that many of his cruel measures cost him unspeakable agony of mind, and that he was simply more expert than his rivals at the weapons which were in common use in the political life of the time.

The great source for the life of Herod is Josephus, but such writers as Strabo in *Dion Cassius* set of service in further illustrating it. Useful modern works are: Haase's *Neu-entdeckte Zeugnische*, the work of the same name by Schürer, *Bildl. Geschichte des Volkes Israel*, vol. iv., Kuhn, *Urschichte Jenseits von Aelia*, vol. 1, and Milman's *History of the Jews*, vol. 2 (P. K.).

HEROD ANTIPAS, son of Herod the Great by the Samaritan Malthea, and full brother of Archelaus, received as his share of his father's dominions the provinces of Galilee and Peraea. Like his father, Antipas had a turn for architecture. He rebuilt and fortified the town of Sepphoris, he also fortified Betharamph, and called it Julias after the wife of the emperor. Above all he founded the important town of Tiberias on the west shore of the Sea of Galilee, with institutions of a distinctly Greek character. Antipas is mentioned more than once in gospel history under the name of Herod. He it was who was called a "fox" by Christ. He is erroneously spoken of as a king in Mark vi. 14.

It was to him that Jesus was sent by Pilate to be tried. But it is in connexion with his wife Herodias that he is best known, and it was through her that his misfortunes arose. He was married first of all to a daughter of Aretas, the Arabian king, but, making the acquaintance of Herodias, the wife of his brother Philip (not the tetrarch), during a visit to Rome, he was fascinated by her and arranged to marry her. Meantime his Arabian wife discovered the plan and escaped to her father, who made war on Herod, and completely defeated his army. John the Baptist condemned his marriage with Herodias, and in consequence was put to death in the way described in the gospels and in Josephus. When Herodias's brother Agrippa was appointed king by Caligula, she was determined to see her husband attain to an equal eminence, and persuaded him, though naturally of a quiet and unambitious temperament, to make the journey to Rome to crave a crown from the emperor Agrippa, however, managed to influence Caligula against him. Antipas was deprived of his dominions, and banished to Lyons, Herodias voluntarily sharing his exile.

HEROD PHILIP, son of Herod the Great by Cleopatra of Jerusalem, received the tetrachate of Ituraea and other districts to the N. E. of the Jordan. He is a different person from the first husband of Herodias, also called Philip by St. Mark (vi. 17), and was married to Salome the daughter of Herodias. Philip is described as an excellent ruler, who loved peace, and was careful to maintain justice, and spent his time in his own territories. He was also a builder of cities, one of which was Caesarea Philippi, and another was Bethesda, which he called Julias. He died after a reign of thirty-seven years, and his dominions were incorporated in the province of Syria.

HERODIAN'S (*Ἡροδιανός*), a sect or party mentioned in Scripture as having on two occasions—once in Galilee, and again in Jerusalem—manifested an unfriendly disposition towards Jesus (Mark xii. 6, xii. 13, Matt. xxiii. 6, cf. also Mark viii. 15). In each of these cases their name is coupled with that of the Pharisees. According to many interpreters the courtiers or soldiers of Herod Antipas ("Milites Herodis," Jerome), "Domus Herodis," Luthardt are intended, but more probably the Herodians were a public political party, who distinguished themselves from the two great historical parties of post-exilic Judaism by the fact that they were and had been sincerely friendly to Herod the Great and to his dynasty (cf. such formations as "Caesariani," "Pompeiani"). For the evidence which goes

to show that neither the Pharisees nor the Sadducees as such could in consistency have been really thus friendly, reference may be made to Harnack (especially his *Neu-Testamentliche Evangelienkunde*, and article "Herodianer" in Schenck's *Bibel-Lexikon*), and to Wellhausen (*Pharisæer u. Sadduceer*, 1873). It is possible that, to gain adherents, the Herodian party may have been in the habit of representing that the establishment of a Herodian dynasty would be favourable to the realization of the theocracy, and this in turn may suggest some explanation of Tatullian's (*De Præcæ*) palpably absurd allegation that the Herodians regarded Herod himself as the Messiah.

**HERODIANUS**, the author of a Greek history of the period extending from 180 to 238 A.D. Of his origin and condition in life very little is known. He was in Rome in 203, and seems to have held some public office. It has been conjectured that he was first "promotus Cæsaris" and afterwards "legatus" of the Sicilian provinces, and that, while fulfilling his official duties, he wrote at intervals his history which bears his name. It is entitled *Ἡρωδιανῶν τῆς περὶ Μάρκου Βασιλέως ἱστορίων βιβλία δέξια*, and it narrates the events of the fifty-eight years that intervened between the death of Marcus Aurelius and the proclamation of Gordianus III. The narrative is of special value for the reigns of the emperors subsequent to Alexander Severus, with whom the work of Dion Cassius ends. As an historian Herodianus has prominent merits and defects. His work has the value that attaches to a record written by one chronicling the events of his own times, gifted with respectable powers of observation, indubitable candour, and independences of view. But he prefers the interest of style to the interest of truth, and is thus led into exaggerations and errors. The inner life and thought of Rome, the formidable barbarian pressure on her borders, are alike unheeded, that he may blazon his pages with the dazzling vicissitudes of the purple. Though the somewhat sobriety of declamations which he introduces are apt to become tedious, his story is on the whole clear, graceful, and vivacious. The frequent antitheses and studied tricks of phrase savour of the rhetorical schools. Imitations of Thucydides and Latinisms are frequent. Yet in the main his style retains an original cast, a genuine unborrowed beauty, and contrasts favourably with the thin, affected Atticism of the period. Extensive use has been made of Herodianus by later chroniclers. His history was first translated into Latin in the end of the 15th century, by the famous Angelo Poliziano.

**HERODIANUS, ÆLIUS**, a famous grammarian of antiquity, called by Prætorius "maximus auctor artis grammaticæ." He was the son of the grammarian Apollonius, was born at Alexandria, and resided at Rome. He was patronized by the emperor Marcus Aurelius (161–180 A.D.), to whom he dedicated his great treatise on prosody. This was a work in twenty books, called *Καθολαὶ ὑπορρίθμια*, which included also an account of the etymological part of grammar. An epitome of it has been preserved. Abstracts of a treatise on difficult words and peculiar forms, called *Ἑρμηνευτικὰ*, are also extant. Besides these, Herodianus wrote various other treatises, but of the large number of titles quoted, some are probably merely names for parts of larger works. Only one of them has come down complete—a treatise on monosyllables (*περὶ μονοσύλλαβων λέξεων*). Numerous quotations, however, and considerable fragments still exist.

*Tabularius* (*Bibl. Græc.* vi. 278 agg.) enumerates his works and the passages where they are quoted. *Lehrs* (*Herodiani technicae reliquiae*, Lips. 1867–70) has collected and thoroughly edited all the remains.

**HERODOTUS**, according to the best authorities, was born in or about the year 484 B.C. He was a native of Halicarnassus, a city which belonged originally to the Dorian Hexapolis, situated towards the south-western corner

of Asia Minor, but which from a date considerably anterior to the birth of Herodotus had been excluded from the confederacy, and was an isolated Greek town, dependent upon the Persians. Herodotus was thus born a Persian subject, and such he continued until he was thirty or five-and-thirty years of age. At the time of his birth, Halicarnassus was under the rule of a queen called Artemisia, who had been allowed by the Persians to succeed to the sovereignty of her husband, and was mistress, not only of Halicarnassus, but also of Cos, Nisyrus, and Calydna. The year of her death is unknown, but she left her crown to her son Pisindelus (born about 498 B.C.), who was succeeded upon the throne by his son Lygdamis about the time that Herodotus grew to manhood. The family of Herodotus belonged to the upper rank of the citizens. His father was named Lyxes, and his mother Rheos, or Dyo. He had a brother Theodote, and an uncle or cousin called Panyasis, who was an epic poet, and a personage of so much importance that the tyrant Lygdamis, suspecting him of treasonable projects, put him to death. It is likely that Herodotus derived from this near relative that love of letters which led him at an early age to the careful study of the existing Greek literature, and determined him ultimately to engage in the composition of his great work. It is probable also that he shared his relative's political opinions, and was either exiled from Halicarnassus, or quitted it voluntarily, at the time of his execution.

Of the education of Herodotus no more can be said than that it was thoroughly Greek, and embraced no doubt the three subjects essential to a Greek liberal education—grammar, gymnastic training, and music. There is no reason to suppose that he went beyond the walls of his native city for instruction in this, the ordinary, curriculum or that he enjoyed any special advantages in respect of these early studies. They would be regarded as completed when he attained the age of eighteen, and took rank among the "ἐφεβῆ" or "ἐγναῖοι" of his native city. Under ordinary circumstances a Greek of this age began at once his duties as a citizen, and found in the excitement of political life sufficient employment for his growing energies. But when a city was ruled by a despot or tyrant, this outlet was wanting, no political life worthy of the name existed, and youths of spirit, more especially those of superior abilities, had to seek about for some other field in which to distinguish themselves. Herodotus may thus have had his thoughts turned to literature as furnishing a not unsatisfactory cure, and may well have been encouraged in his choice by the example of Panyasis, who, whether his cousin or his uncle, was certainly his elder, and had already gained a reputation by his writings when Herodotus was still an infant. At any rate it is clear from the extant work of Herodotus that he must have devoted himself early to the literary life, and commenced that extensive course of reading which rendered him one of the most instructive as well as one of the most charming of ancient writers. The poetical literature of Greece was in his time already large, the prose literature was more extensive than is generally supposed, yet Herodotus shows an intimate acquaintance with the whole of it. He has drunk at the Homeric cistern till his entire being is impregnated with the influence thence derived. The *Iliad* and the *Odyssey* are as familiar to him as Shakespeare to the most highly educated of modern Englishmen. He is acquainted with the poems of the epic cycle, the *Cypria*, the *Iliad*, &c. He quotes or otherwise shows familiarity with the writings of Hesiod, Alcaeus, Musæus, Bacchylides, Archilochus of Paros, Alcman, Sappho, Solon, Egeus, Aristæus of Phocæa, Simonides of Ceos, Phrynicus, Æschylus, and Pindar. He quotes and criticizes Hecataeus, the best of the prose writers who had preceded him, and makes numerous allusions to other authors

of the same class. It may be questioned whether there was any single work of importance in the whole range of extant Greek literature with the contents of which Herodotus had not made himself acquainted by the time that he undertook the composition of his "History."

It must not, however, be supposed that the great Hellenic man was at any time a mere recluse student. There can be no reasonable doubt that from a very early age his inquiring disposition led him to engage in travels, both in Greece and in foreign countries, which must have been continued year after year for a considerable period, and which made him as familiar with men as with books. He traversed Asia Minor and European Greece in all directions, probably more than once, he visited all the most important islands of the Archipelago,—Rhodes, Cyprus, Delos, Paros, Thasos, Samothrace, Chios, Samos, Cythra, and Ægina. He undertook the long and perilous journey from Sardis to the Persian capital Susa, passed some considerable time at Babylon, and went a voyage to Colchis, and another along the western shores of the Black Sea as far as the estuary of the Danube; he travelled in Scythia and in Thrace, visited Zante and Magna Græcia, explored the antiquities of Tyre, coasted along the shores of Palestine, saw Gaza, and made a long stay in Egypt. At the most moderate estimate, his travels covered a space of thirty-one degrees of longitude, or 1700 miles, or twenty-four of latitude, or nearly the same distance. Nor was he content, like the modern tourist, with hasty glimpses of the countries which he visited. At all the more interesting sites he took up his abode for a time, he examined, he inquired, he made measurements, he accumulated materials. Having in his mind the scheme of his great work, he gave ample time to the elaboration of all its parts, and took care to obtain by personal observation a full knowledge of all the various countries which were to form the scene of his narrative.

The travels of Herodotus seem to have been chiefly accomplished between his twentieth and his thirty-seventh years (464–417 B.C.). It was probably in his early manhood that as a Persian subject he visited Susa and Babylon, taking advantage of the Persian system of posts which he describes in his fifth book. His residence in Egypt must, on the other hand, have been subsequent to 460 B.C., since he saw the skulls of the Persians slain by Inarus in that year. Skulls are rarely visible on a battlefield for more than two or three seasons after the fight, and we may therefore presume that it was during the reign of Inarus (460–454 B.C.), when the Athenians had great authority in Egypt, that he visited the country, making himself known as a learned Greek, and therefore receiving favour and attention on the part of the Egyptians, who were so much beholden to his countrymen. On his return from Egypt, as he proceeded along the Syrian shore, he seems to have landed at Tyre, and from thence to have gone to Thasos, which lay off the coast of Thrace. His Scythian travels are thought to have taken place prior to 450 B.C.

It is a question of some interest from what centre or centres these various expeditions were made. Up to the time of the execution of Panyasis, which is placed by chronologists in or about the year 457 B.C., there is every reason to believe that Hæliarnassus was the historian's home, and thus we may assume that, for some seven or eight years, that city was the point from which he started and to which he returned. His travels in Asia Minor, in European Greece, and among the islands of the Ægean probably belong to this period, as does also his journey to Susa and Babylon. We are told that when he quitted Hæliarnassus on account of the tyranny of Lygdamis, in or about the year 457 B.C., he took up his abode in Samos. That island was an important member of the Athenian confederacy, and in making it his home Herodotus would have

put himself under the protection of Athens. The fact that Egypt was then largely under Athenian influence may have induced him to proceed, in 457 or 456 B.C., to that country. The complete knowledge that he has of the whole of Egypt indicates a stay there of some years, and it was perhaps not till 454 B.C. that he returned to his Samian home. The stories that he had heard in Egypt of Sesostris may then have stimulated him to make voyages from Samos to Colchis, Scythia, and Thrace. When he had seen these countries, he had made acquaintance with almost all the regions which were to be the scene of his projected history, and could apply himself to the task of its composition with the comfortable feeling that he possessed all this local knowledge requisite for graphic and telling description.

After Herodotus had resided for some seven or eight years in Samos, events occurred in his native city which induced him to return thither. The tyranny of Lygdamis had gone on from bad to worse, and at last the citizens rose in rebellion against him, and he was expelled. According to Suidas, Herodotus was himself an actor, and indeed the chief actor, in the enterprise, but no other author confirms this statement, which is intrinsically improbable. It is certain, however, that a revolt broke out, that Lygdamis was dethroned, and that Hæliarnassus became a voluntary member of the Athenian confederacy, to which it continued thenceforth attached. Herodotus would now naturally return to his native city, and enter upon the enjoyment of those rights of free citizenship on which every Greek set a high value. He would also, if he had by this time composed his history, or any considerable portion of it, begin to make it known by recitation among his friends and acquaintance. There is reason to believe that these first attempts to push himself into notice were not received with much favour,—the prophet did not obtain honour in his own country,—his countrymen ridiculed the work which they had been expected to admire, and the disappointed author, chagrined at his failure, precipitately withdrew from his native town, and sought a refuge in Greece proper (about 447 B.C.).

A writer of late date (125–300 A.D.) and low credit, Lucian of Samosata, in one of his rhetorical pieces, declares that on quitting Hæliarnassus Herodotus proceeded straight to Olympia, and finding the quadrennial festival in progress recited his work to the assembled multitudes, who were highly delighted with it, and freely expressed their admiration. The statement, however, is improbable, and is rejected by most critics, who point out with reason the unsuitability of the work for recitation before an assemblage of persons from all parts of Greece, and call attention to the suspicious circumstance that the story is first told 600 years after the time of its supposed occurrence. From earlier and better writers we learn that Athens was the place to which the disappointed author betook himself, and that he appealed from the verdict of his countrymen to Athenian taste and judgment. By recitations held in that city he made his work known to the best Grecian intellects, and won such approval that in the year 445 B.C., on the proposition of a certain Anytus, he was voted a sum of ten talents (£2400) by decree of the people. At one of the recitations Thucydides was present with his father, Olorus, and was so moved that he burst into tears, whereupon Herodotus remarked to the father—"Olorus, you son has a natural enthusiasm for letters."

Athens was at this time the centre of intellectual life, and could boast a galaxy of talent such as has rarely been gathered together either before or since. The stately Peisaces, his clever rival Thucydides the son of Melesandros, the fascinating Aspasia, the eloquent Antiphon, the scientific musician Damon, the divine Phidias, Protagoras the subtle disputant, Zeno the inventor of logic, the jovial yet bitter

Cratinus, the gay Oates, Euripides the master of pathos, Sophocles the most classic even of the ancients, formed a combination of which even Athens might be proud, and which must have charmed the literary aspirant. Accepted into this brilliant society, on familiar terms with all probably, as he certainly was with Oloius, Thucydides, and Sophocles, he cannot but have found his Attic sojourn delightful, and have been tempted, like many another foreigner, to make Athens his permanent home. It is his credit that he did not yield to this temptation. At Athens he must have been a dilettante, an idler, without political lights or duties, a mere literary man. As such he would have soon ceased to be respected in a society where literature was not recognized as a separate profession, where a Socrates soared in the infancy, and a Sophocles commanded fleets, and a Thucydides was general of an army, and in Antipater was for a time at the head of the state. Men were not men according to Greek notions unless they were citizens, and Herodotus, aware of this, probably sharing in the feeling, was anxious, having lost his political status at Halicarnassus, to obtain such status elsewhere. At Athens the franchise, jealously guarded at this period, was not to be attained without great expense and difficulty. Accordingly, in the year 444 B.C., on the scheme of sending a colony to Thurii in Italy being broached by Peucetes, Herodotus was among those who gave in their names, and in the spring of the following year he sailed from Athens to Italy with the other colonists, and became a citizen of the new town.

From this point of his career, when he had reached the age of forty, we lose sight of Herodotus almost wholly. He seems to have made but few journeys, one to Clotona, one to Metapontum, and one to Athens (about 430 B.C.) being all that his work indicates. No doubt he was employed mainly, as Pliny testifies, in retouching and elaborating his general history. He may also have composed at Thurii that special work on the history of Assyria to which he twice refers in his first book, and which is quoted by Aristotle. It has been supposed by many that he lived to a great age, and argued that "the never-to-be-mistaken fundamental tone of his performance is the quiet talkativeness of a highly cultivated, tolerant, intelligent, old man" (Dahlmann). But the indications derived from the later touches added to his work, which form the sole evidence on the subject, would rather lead to the conclusion that his life was not very prolonged. There is nothing in the nine books which may not have been written as early as 430 B.C.; there is no touch which, even probably, points to a later date than 424 B.C. As the author was evidently engaged in polishing up his work to the last, and even promises touches which he does not give, we may assume that he did not much outlive the date last mentioned, or, in other words, that he died at about the age of sixty. The predominant voice of antiquity tells us that he died at Thurii, where his tomb was shown in later ages.

In estimating the great work of Herodotus, and his genius as its author, it is above all things necessary to conceive aright what that work was intended to be. It has been called "a universal history," "a history of the wars between the Greeks and the barbarians," and "a history of the struggle between Greece and Persia." But these titles are all of the histories of Plutarchus, Cæsar, and Ælianus, three of the most important among the states existing in his day, cannot have intended to compose a "universal history," the very idea of which belongs to a later age. He speaks in places as if his object was to record the wars between the Greeks and the barbarians, but as he omits the Trojan war, in which he fully believes, the expedition of the Teucrians and Mysians against Thrace

and The-saly, the war connected with the Ionian colonization of Asia Minor, and others, it is evident that he does not really aim at embracing in his narrative all the wars between Greeks and barbarians with which he was acquainted. Nor does it even seem to have been his object to give an account of the entire struggle between Greece and Persia. That struggle was not terminated by the battle of Mycale and the capture of Sestos in 479 B.C. It continued for thirty years longer, to the peace of Callinus. The fact that Herodotus ends his history where he does shows distinctly that his intention was, not to give an account of the entire long contest between the two countries, but to write the history of a particular war—the great Persian war of invasion. His aim was as definite as that of Thucydides, or Schiller, or Napier, or any other writer who has made his subject a particular war, only he determined to treat it in a certain way. Every partial history requires an "introduction," Herodotus, untrammelled by examples, resolved to give his history a magnificent introduction. Thucydides is content with a single introductory book, forming little more than one eighth of his work, Herodotus has six such books, forming two thirds of the entire composition.

By this arrangement he is enabled to treat his subject in the *grand way*, which is so characteristic of him. Making it his main object in his "introduction" to set before his readers the previous history of the two nations who were the actors in the great war, he is able in tracing their history to bring into his narrative some account of almost all the nations of the known world, and has room to expatiate freely upon their geography, antiquities, manners and customs, and the like, thus giving his work the "universal" character which has been detected in it, and securing for it, without trenching upon unity, that variety, richness, and fulness which are a principal charm of the best histories, and of none more than his. In tracing the growth of Persia from a petty subject kingdom to a vast dominant empire, he has occasion to set out the histories of India, Media, Assyria, Babylon, Egypt, Scythia, Thure, and to describe the countries and the peoples inhabiting them, their natural productions, climate, geographical position, monuments, &c., while, in noting the contemporaneous changes in Greece, he is led to tell of the various migrations of the Greek race, their colonies, commerce, progress in the arts, revolutions, internal struggles, wars with one another, legislation, religious tenets, and the like. The greatest variety of epical matter is thus introduced, but the propriety of the occasion and the mode of introduction are such that no complaint can be made—the episodes never entangle, encumber, or even unpleasantly interrupt the main narrative.

The most important quality of a historian is trustworthiness, for a professed history is of no value unless we can place reliance upon its truth. It has been questioned, both in ancient and in modern times, whether the history of Herodotus possesses this essential requisite. Several ancient writers call his veracity in question, among them the crasse of conscious and intentional untruthfulness. Moderns generally acquit him of this charge, but his severer critics still urge that, from the inherent defects of his character, his credulity, his love of effect, and his loose and inaccurate habits of thought, he was unfitted for the historian's office, and has produced a work of but small historical value. It is impossible, within the limits of an article such as the present, to enter fully upon this controversy. Perhaps it may be sufficient to remark that the defects in question certainly exist, and detract to some extent from the authority of the work, more especially of those parts of it which deal with remote periods, and were taken by Herodotus on trust from his informants, but that





the next fifteen years in rapid succession it is unnecessary to give a detailed account. Only the names of some of the more important may be mentioned here.—*Le Clochette* (1817), *L'Adieu mort et vivant* (1820), *Marie* (1826), and the ballets *La Fille mal Gardée* (1828) and *La Belle au bois dormant* (1829). Hérold also wrote a vast quantity of piano-forte music of a more or less ephemeral kind, in spite of his time being much occupied by his duties as accompanist at the Italian opera in Paris. In 1831 he produced one of the two works which have given immortality to his name, the romantic opera *Zampa*, which has met with immense success not only in France but also in Germany, where it has kept the stage till the present day, and is considered Hérold's masterpiece. In France that eminence is justly accorded to the *Le Pré aux Clercs* (first performance December 15, 1832), in every way a representative work of the French school, in which French spirit and French chivalry find their most perfect embodiment. Grace, liveliness, and true dramatic spirit are Hérold's best qualities, and secure him a prominent place amongst the composers of *opéra comique*, in the more refined sense which has been lost by most composers of modern France. Hérold died January 19, 1833, of the lung disease from which he had suffered for many years, and the effects of which he accelerated by incessant work.

HERON, or HERO, a mathematician and natural philosopher of Alexandria, was the pupil of Otesibius, and flourished probably about a century or a century and a half before Christ. His name has been preserved in the well-known experiment of Hero's fountain, in which, by means of condensed air, water is made to spring from a jet in a continuous stream. Several of Heron's writings are entirely lost, and of those that remain some have never been printed. His most valuable work is that on *Pneumatics*, in which are given his experiments on the elasticity of the air and of steam. His *Mechanics* and *Barolus* treat of the subjects which would now be comprised in an elementary book on dynamics. At the end of his *Catoptrica* or *Belopoitica*, which are probably the same, occurs Heron's solution of the ancient and much discussed problem to find two mean proportionals between two given straight lines. *Chetrobolstra*, *Cambestria*, *Camaricos*, *Automates*, are the titles of some of his other physical works. His mathematical works (see Hultsch's *Heronis Alexandrini Geometricorum et Stereometricorum Reliquiae*, Berlin, 1864) are very fragmentary, and it is difficult to determine whether several of them are not to be attributed to later and anonymous writers. Heron seems to have been the first to show how the area of a triangle may be found from its three sides. See two papers by Vincent and Boncompagni in *Bullettino di bibliogr. e di storia delle scienze matematiche*, v. fascio, iv.

HERON, called the younger, to distinguish him from his namesake of Alexandria, was, like him, a mathematician and natural philosopher. By some he is supposed to have flourished in the first half of the 7th century A.D.; by others, with more probability, to have lived at Constantinople in the 10th century. He wrote a treatise on *Constructing Engines* which still exists, and another on the *Construction of Sundials*, which is now lost. Some mathematical writings assigned to him should perhaps be referred to Heron the elder (see *Mémoires Présentés à l'Académie des Inscriptions*, 1<sup>re</sup> série, tome iv., Paris, 1854).

HERON—French, *Héron*; Italian, *Aghirone*, *Avrone*; Latin, *Ardeus*; Greek, *Ardeios*; Anglo-Saxon, *Eragra*; Icelandic, *Haggr*; Swedish, *Hejra*; Danish, *Heir*; German, *Heiger*, *Reiker*; Dutch, *Reijer*—a long-necked, long-winged, and long-legged bird, the representative of a very natural group, the *Ardeidae*, which through the neglect or ignorance of ornithologists has been for many years

belonging truly to the Cranes, *Gruidæ* (see vol. vi. p. 546), and Storks, *Ciconiidae*, whose structure and characteristics are wholly distinct, however much external resemblance some of them may possess to the Herons. Eliminating these intruders, it is difficult or even impossible to estimate with any accuracy the number of species of *Ardeidae* which exist. Professor Schlegel in 1863 enumerated 61, besides 5 of what he terms "conspicuous," as contained in the collection at Leyden (*Mus. des Pays Bas, Ardeæ*, 64 pp.).—on the other hand, G. R. Gray in 1871 (*Hand-list*, &c., iii. pp. 26-34) admitted above 90, while Dr. Reichenow (*Journ. für Ornithologie*, 1877, pp. 232-278) recognizes 67 as known, besides 15 "subspecies" and 3 varieties, arranging them in 8 genera, *Nycticorax*, *Botaurus*, and *Ardea*, with 17 subgenera. But it is difficult to separate the Family, with any satisfactory result, into genera, if structural characters have to be found for these groups, for in many cases they run almost insensibly into each other—though in common language it is easy to speak of Herons, Egrets, Bitterns, Night-Herons, and Boobills. With the exception of the last, Professor Schlegel retains all in the

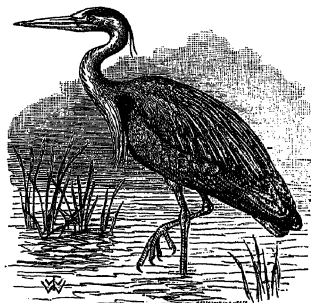


FIG. 1.—HERON.

genus *Ardea*, dividing it into eight sections, the names of which may perhaps be Englished—Great Herons, Small Herons, Egrets, Semi-egrets, Rail-like Herons, Little Bitterns, Bitterns, and Night-Herons. It may be expedient here to adopt this arrangement, though the present writer would guard himself against being supposed to give it more than partial and provisional assent.

The common Heron of Europe, *Ardea cinerea* of Linnaeus, is universally allowed to be the type of the family, and it may also be regarded as that of Professor Schlegel's first section. The species inhabits suitable localities throughout the whole of Europe, Africa, and Asia, reaching Japan, many of the islands of the Indian Archipelago, and even Australia. Though by no means so numerous as formerly in Britain, it is still sufficiently common to render a description of it almost unnecessary,<sup>1</sup> and there must be few persons who have not seen it rising slowly from some river-side or marshy flat, or passing overhead in its lofty and

<sup>1</sup> In many parts of England it is generally called a "Hormer" being a corruption of "Heronsway," which, as Professor Skeat states (*Etymol. Dictionary*, p. 284), is a perfectly distinct word from "Heronshaw," commonly confounded with it. The further corruption of "Hormer" into "handsaw," as in the well-known proverb, was easy in the mouth of men to whom hawking the Heronsway was unfamiliar.

leisurely flight on its way to or from its daily haunts; while they are many who have been entertained by watching it as it sought its food, consisting chiefly of fishes (especially eels and flounders) and amphibians—though young birds and small mammals come not amiss—wading midge in the shallows, swimming occasionally when out of its depth, or standing motionless to strike its prey with its formidable and sure beak. When sufficiently numerous the Heron breeds in societies, known as Heronries, which of old time were protected both by law and custom in nearly all European countries, on account of the sport their tenants afforded to the falconer. Of late years, partly owing to the withdrawal of the protection they had enjoyed, and still more, it would seem, from agricultural improvement, which, by draining mores, fens, and marshes, has abolished the feeding-places of a great population of Herons, many of the larger Heronries have broken up—the birds composing them dispersing to neighbouring localities and forming smaller settlements, most of which are hardly to be dignified by the name of Heronry, though commonly accounted such.

Thus the number of so-called Heronries in the United Kingdom, and especially in England and Wales, has become far greater than formerly, but no one can doubt that the number of Herons has dwindled. Mr Harting, after being at great pains to collect statistics on the subject, gave, in 1873 (*Zoologist*, s.s. pp. 3261-3272; with additions and corrections, pp. 3404-3407), a list of those existing in the three kingdoms, more than 200 in number, of which a little over one-half are in England and Wales, more than 60 in Scotland, and nearly 50 in Ireland. The sites chosen by the Heron for its nest vary greatly. It is generally built in the top of a lofty tree, but not unfrequently (and this seems to have been much more usual in former days) near or on the ground among rough vegetation, or on an island in a lake, or again on a rocky cliff of the coast. It commonly consists of a huge mass of sticks, often the accumulation of years, lined with twigs, and in it are laid from four to six sea-green eggs. The young are clothed in soft flax-coloured down, and remain in the nest for a considerable time, therein differing remarkably from the "pipers" of the Crane, which are able to run almost as soon as they are hatched. The first feathers assumed by young Herons in a general way resemble those of the adult, but the fine leaden-grey back, the pure white breast, the black throat-streaks, and especially the long pendulous plumes, which characterize only the very old birds, and are most beautiful in the cocks, are subsequently acquired. The Heron measures about 3 feet from the bill to the tail, and the expanse of its wings is sometimes not less than 6 feet, yet it weighs only between 3 and 4 lb.

Large as is the common Heron of Europe, it is exceeded in size by the Great Blue Heron of America, *Ardea herodias*, which generally resembles it in appearance and habits, and both are smaller than the *A. sumatrana* or *A. typhos* of India and the Malay Archipelago, while the *A. goliath*, of wide distribution in Africa and Asia, is the largest of all. The Purple Heron, *A. purpurea*, as a well-known European species having a great range over the Old World, also deserves mention here. Of the species included in Professor Schlegel's second section, little need now be said. They inhabit the tropical parts of Africa, Australasia, and America. The Egrets, forming the third group, require more notice, distinguished as they are by their pure white plumage, and, when in breeding-dress, by the beautiful dorsal tufts of decomposed feathers that ordinarily droop over the tail, and are so highly esteemed as ornaments by Oriental magnates. The largest species is *A. occidentalis*, only known apparently from Florida and Cuba; but one not much less, the Great Egret, *A. alba*, belongs to the Old World, breeding regularly in south-eastern Europe,

and occasionally straying to Britain. A third, *A. egretta*, represents it in America, while much the same may be said of two smaller species, *A. garzetta*, the Little Egret of English authors, and *A. candidissima*; and a sixth, *A. intermedia*, is common in India, China, and Japan, besides occurring in Australia. The group of Semi-egrets, containing some nine or ten forms, among which the Buff-backed Heron, *A. bubulcus*, is the only species that is known to have occurred in Europe, is hardly to be distinguished from the last section except by their plumage being at certain seasons varied in some species with slaty-blue and in others with rufous. The Rail-like Herons form Professor Schlegel's next section, but it can scarcely be satisfactorily differentiated, and the epithet is misleading, for its members have no Rail-like affinities, though the typical species, which inhabits the south of Europe, and occasionally finds its way to England, has long been known as *A. rallioides*.<sup>1</sup> Nearly all these birds are tropical or sub-tropical. Then there is the somewhat better defined group

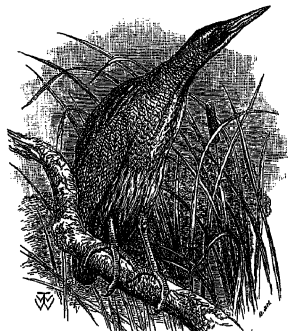


Fig. 8.—Bittern.

of Little Bitterns, containing about a dozen species—the smallest of the whole family. One of them, *A. minuta*, though very local in its distribution, is a native of the greater part of Europe, and has bred in England. It has a close counterpart in the *A. exilis* of North America, and is represented by three or four forms in other parts of the world, the *A. pusilla* of Australia especially differing very slightly from it. Ranged by Professor Schlegel with these birds, which are all remarkable for their skulking habits, but more resembling the true Herons in their nature, are the common Green Bittern of America, *A. virescens*, and its very near ally the African *A. atricapilla*, from which last it is almost impossible to distinguish the *A. fuscicollis*, of wide range throughout Asia and its islands, while other species, less closely related, occur elsewhere as *A. navicollis*,—one form of which, *A. gouldi*, inhabits Australia.

The true Bitterns, forming the genus *Botaurus* of most authors, seem to be fairly separable, but more perhaps on account of their wholly nocturnal habits and correspondingly adapted plumage than on strictly structural grounds, though some differences of proportion are observable. The

<sup>1</sup> It is the "Squacco-Heron" of modern British authors—the distinctive name, given "Squacco" by Willughby and Ray from *Aldrovandus*, having been misapplied by Latham.



**HERRERA, FRANCISCO** (1576-1656), surnamed el Viejo (the old), historical and fresco painter, studied under Luis Fernandez in Seville, his native city, where he spent the most of his life. Although so rough and coarse in manners that neither scholar nor child could remain with him, the great talents of Herrera, and the promptitude with which he used them, brought him abundant commissions. He was also a skilful worker in bronze, an accomplishment that led to his being charged with carving base money. From this accusation, whether true or false, he sought sanctuary in the Jesuit college of San Hermenegildo, which he adorned with a fine picture of his patron saint Philip IV, on his visit to Seville in 1624, having seen this picture, and learned the position of the artist, pardoned him at once, warning him, however, that such poets as his should not be degraded. In 1650 Herrera removed to Madrid, where he lived in great honour till his death in 1656. Herrera was first to imbrue the timid manner of the old Spanish school of painting, and to imitate the free, vigorous touch and style which reached such perfection in Velazquez, who had been for a short time his pupil. His pictures are marked by an energy of design and freedom of execution quite in keeping with his bold, rough character. He is said to have used very long brushes in his painting, and it is also said that, when pupils failed, his servant used to dash the colour on the canvas with a broom under his directions, and that he worked them up into his designs before they dried. The drawing in his pictures is correct, and the colouring original and skilfully managed, so that the figures stand out in striking relief. What has been considered his best work, the Last Judgment, in the church of San Donato at Seville, is an original and striking composition, showing in its treatment of the nude how ill-founded the common belief was that Spanish painters, through ignorance of anatomy, understood only the draped figure. Perhaps his best fresco is that on the dome of the church of San Buenaventura, but many of his frescos have perished, some by the effects of the weather, and others by the artist's own carelessness in preparing his surfaces. He has, however, preserved several of his own designs in etchings. For his novel works Herrera often chose such humble subjects as fairs, carnivals, ale-houses, and the like.

See Stirling's *Annals of the Artists of Spain*, 3 vols., 1818.

**HERRERA, FRANCISCO** (1622-1685), surnamed el Mozo (the young), historical and fresco painter, son of the subject of last notice, was also a native of Seville. Unable to obtain his father's cruelty, the younger Herrera, seizing what money he could find, fled to Rome. There, instead of devoting himself to the antiquities and the works of the old Italian masters, he gave himself up to the study of architecture and perspective, with the view of becoming a fresco-painter. He did not altogether neglect canal work, but became renowned for his pictures of still life, flowers, and fruit, and from his skill in painting fish was called by the Italians *Lo Spinguello degli pesci*. In later life he painted portraits with great success. He returned to Seville on hearing of his father's death, and in 1660 was appointed subdirector of the new academy there under Murillo. His vanity, however, brooked the superiority of no one, and throwing up his appointment he went to Madrid. There he was employed to paint a San Hermenegildo for the breasted Carmelites, and to decorate in fresco the roof of the choir of San Felipe el Real. The success of this last work procured for him a commission from Philip IV to paint in fresco the roof of the Atocha church. He chose as his subject for this the Assumption of the Virgin. Soon afterwards he was rewarded with the title of painter to the king, and was appointed superintendent of the royal buildings. He died at Madrid in 1685. Herrera, el Mozo was of a somewhat similar temperament to his father, and

offended many people by his inordinate vanity and suspicious jealousy. His pictures are inferior to the older Herrera's both in design and in execution, but in some of them traces of the vigour of his father, who was his first teacher, are visible. He was by no means an unskilful colourist, and was especially master of the effects of chiaroscuro. As his best picture St. Edmund Head in his *Handbook* names his San Francisco, in Seville Cathedral. An elder brother, known as Herrera el Rubio (the ruddy), who died very young, gave great promise as a painter.

See Stirling's *Annals of the Artists of Spain*, 3 vols., 1818.

**HERRERA Y Tordesillas, Antonio** ne (1549-1626), Spanish historian, was born in 1549, at Cañillas, in the province of Segovia in Spain. His father, Rodrigo de Tordesillas, and his mother, Agnes de Herrera, were both of good family. After studying for some time in his native country, Herrera proceeded to Italy, and there became secretary to Vespasiano Gonzaga, with whom, on his appointment as viceroy of Navarre, he returned to Spain. Gonzaga, sensible of his secretary's abilities, commended him on his death-bed to Philip II of Spain, and that monarch, no less discerning, appointed Herrera first historiographer of the Indies, and one of the historiographers of Castile. Placed thus in the enjoyment of an ample salary, Herrera devoted the rest of his life to the peaceful pursuit of literature, retaining his offices till the reign of Philip IV, by whom he was appointed secretary of state, very shortly, however, before his death, which took place at Madrid on March 29, 1626. Of Herrera's writings, the most valuable is his *Historia General de los Illos de los Castellanos en las Islas y Tierra Fina del Mar Océano* (Madrid, 1601-15, 4 vols fol.), a work which relates the history of the Spanish-American colonies from 1492 to 1554. The author's official position gave him access to the state papers and to other authentic sources not attainable by other writers, while he did not scruple to borrow largely from other MSS., especially from that of Las Casas. He used his facilities carefully and judiciously, and the result is a work on the whole accurate and unprejudiced, and quite indispensable to the student either of the history of the early colonies, or of the institutions and customs of the aboriginal American peoples. Although it is written in the form of annals, mistakes are not wanting, and several glaring anachronisms have been pointed out by Quintana. "If" to quote Dr. Robertson, "by attempting to relate the various occurrences in the New World in a strict chronological order, the arrangement of events in his work had not been rendered so perplexed, disconnected, and obscure that it is an unpleasant task to collect from different parts of his book and piece together the detached shreds of a story, he might justly have been ranked among the most eminent historians of his country."

Herrera's other works are the following—*Historia de la Sucesión en Escocia e Inglaterra en quarenta y quatro años que vivió la reyna Maria Estuarda* (Madrid, 1589), *Cinco Libros de la Historia de Portugal, y Conquista de las Islas de los Açores*, 1589 y 1594 (ib., 1592), *Historia de la Sucesión en Francia*, 1585-1594 (ib., 1598), *Historia General del Mundo del tiempo del Señor Rey Don Felipe II, desde 1579 hasta su muerte* (ib., 1601-12, 8 vols fol.), *Precedido, Interim, y Causa de la sucesión de los reyes* (ib., 1619), *Comentarios de los Illos de los Españoles, Franceses, y Portugueses en Italia, &c.*, desde 1281 hasta 1600 (ib., 1624, fol.).

**HERRICK, Robert** (1691-1674), English poet, was born in Chappels, London, and baptized on the 24th of August 1591. He was the seventh child of Nicholas Herick, goldsmith, of the city of London, who died in 1592, leaving by his second wife, Ursula, the children, was brought up by their uncle, Sir William Herick, one of the richest goldsmiths of the day, to whom in 1607 Robert was bound apprentice. In 1618 he proceeded to Cambridge, and it was no doubt between these dates that the young poet was introduced to that circle of wits which he

was afterwards to adorn. He seems to have been present at the first performance of *The Alchemist* in 1610, and it was probably about this time that Ben Jonson adopted him as his poetical "son." He entered the university as fellow-commoner of St John's College, and he remained there until, in 1616, upon taking his degree, he removed to Trinity Hall, in 1620 he became master of arts. From this date until 1629 he entirely lost sight of him, it has been variously conjectured that he spent these nine years preparing for the ministry at Cambridge, or in much looser pursuits in London. In the latter year his mother died, and, taking orders, he was presented to the rural living of Dean Prior, not far from Totnes in Devonshire. He entered upon this new career on October 2, 1629, being in his thirty-ninth year. At Dean Prior he resided quietly until 1648, when he was ejected by the village was dull and remote and he felt very bitterly that he was cut off from all literary and social associations, but soon the quiet existence in Devonshire soothed and delighted him. He was pleased with the rural and semi-pagan customs that survived in the village, and in some of his most charming verses he has immortalized the morris dances, wakes, and quintains, the Christmas mummers and the Twelfth Night revellings, that diversified the quiet of Dean Prior. Herrick never married, but lived at the vicarage surrounded by a happy family of pets, and tended by an excellent old servant named "Evidence Baldwin." His first appearance in print was in some verses he contributed to *A Description of the King and Queen of France*, in 1635. In 1640 a volume of *His Recreations* contained sixty-two small poems afterwards acknowledged by Herrick in the *Hesperides*, and one not reprinted until our own day. These partial appearances make it probable that he visited London from time to time. We have few hints of his life as a clergyman. Anthony Wood says that Herrick's sermons were florid and witty, and that he was "beloved by the neighbouring gentry." A very aged woman, one Dorothy King, stated that she once threw his sermon at his congregation, cursing them for their inattention. The same old woman recollected his favourite pig, which he taught to drink out of a tankard. In 1648 he published his celebrated collection of lyrical poems, entitled *Hesperides, or the Works both Humane and Divine of Robert Herrick*, only a few weeks, it would seem, after his ejection from his living by the Puritans. That he was reduced to great poverty in London has been stated, but Dr Gosart shows this to be very unlikely. In August 1652 Herrick returned to Dean Prior, supplementing his own supplanter, Dr John Syme. He died in his eighty-fourth year, and was buried at Dean Prior, October 15, 1634. A monument was erected to his memory in the parish church in 1857.

As a poetical lyrist Herrick stands first among English poets. His genius is limited in scope, and comparatively unambitious, but in its own field it is unrivalled. His tiny poems—and of the thirteenth hundred that he has left behind him not one is long—are like jewels of various value, heaped together in a casket. Some are of the purest water, radiant with light and colour, some were originally set in false metal that has tarnished, some were rude and repulsive from the fist. Out of the unarranged, heterogeneous mass the student has to select what is not worth reading, but, after he has cast aside all the rubbish, he is astonished at the amount of excellent and exquisite work that remains. Herrick has himself summed up, very correctly, the themes of his sylvan muse when he says—

I sang of brooks, of blossoms, birds and bowers,  
Of April, May, of June and July flowers;  
I sang of My-pole, buck-corns, vernal, vernal, vernal,  
Of bridle-grooms, brides, and of their bridal cakes

He saw the picturesque of English homely life as no one before him had seen it, and he described it in his verse with a certain purple glow of Arcadian romance over it in tones of immortal vigour and freshness. His love poems are still more beautiful, the best of them have an idiom and tender sweetness which give them a place in the fore front of modern lyrical poetry, and remind us of what was best in Horace and in the poets of the Greek anthology.

After suffering complete extinction for more than a century, the fame of Herrick was revived by Mr. Nichols (Sydney Urban), who introduced his poems to the readers of the *Gentleman's Magazine* of 1796 and 1797. Dr. Drake followed in 1798 with considerable enthusiasm. By 1810 interest had so far revived in the forgotten poet that Dr. Norton ventured to print a selection from his poems, which situated the favourable notice of the *Quarterly Review*. In 1828 the *Hesperides* and the *Abolition Numbers* were for the first time edited by Mr. T. Mitford, afterwards Lord Dunsborough. Other editions followed in 1839, 1844, 1846, 1850, 1852, and 1879. A more complete collection, by Mr. W. G. Weyl, was brought out in 1869. In 1878 followed Dr. Gosart's exhaustive and authoritative edition in three vols., and in 1877, under the title of *Chrysomela*, a very elegant selection by Mr. T. F. Vignati, with a preface every year. There are therefore few English poets of the 17th century whose writings are now more accessible to every class of readers than those of Herrick.

**HERRING** (*Clupea haengus*, *Haeng* in German, *Le Haeng* in French, *Sill* in Swedish), a fish belonging to the genus *Clupea*, of which more than sixty different species are known in various parts of the globe. The pilchard or salmon, and shad are species of the same genus. Of all sea fishes *Clupea* are the most abundant, far although other genera may compose a greater variety of species, they are far surpassed by *Clupea* with regard to the number of individuals. The majority of the species of *Clupea* are of greater or less utility to man, it is only a few tropical species that acquire, probably from their food, highly poisonous properties, so as to be dangerous to persons eating them. But no other species equals the Common Herring in importance as an article of food or commerce. It inhabits in innumerable numbers the German Ocean, the northern parts of the Atlantic, and the seas north of Asia. The herring inhabiting the corresponding latitudes of the North Pacific is another species, but most closely allied to that of the eastern hemisphere. Formerly it was the general belief that the herring inhabits the open sea close to the Arctic Circle, and that it migrates at certain seasons towards the northern coasts of Europe and America. This view has been proved to be erroneous, and we now know that this fish lives throughout the year in the vicinity of our shores, but at a greater depth, and at a greater distance from the coast, than at the time when it approaches land for the purpose of spawning.

Herrings are readily recognized and distinguished from the other species of *Clupea* by having an ovate patch of very small teeth on the vomer (that is, the centre of the palate). In the dorsal fin they have from 17 to 20 rays, and in the anal fin from 16 to 18, there are from 53 to 69 scales in the lateral line, and invariably 55 vertebrae in the vertebral column. They have a smooth gill cover, without those radiating ridges of bone which are so conspicuous in the pilchard and other *Clupea*. The gill cannot be confounded with the herring, as it has no teeth on the vomer, and only 47 or 48 scales in the lateral line.

Herrings grow very rapidly, according to H. Meyer's observations, they attain a length of from 17 to 18 mm. during the first month after hatching, 31 to 36 mm. during the second, 45 to 50 mm. during the third, 53 to 61 mm. during the fourth, and 65 to 72 mm. during the fifth. The size which they finally attain and their general condition depend chiefly on the abundance of food (which consists of crustaceans and other small marine animals), on the temperature of the water, on the season at which they have been hatched, &c. Their usual size is

about 12 inches, but in some particularly suitable localities they grow to a length of 15 inches, and instances of specimens measuring 17 inches are on record. In the Baltic, where the water is gradually losing its saline constituents, thus becoming less adapted for the development of marine species, the herring continues to exist in large numbers, but as a dwarfed form, not growing either to the size or to the condition of the North-Sea herring. The herring of the American side of the Atlantic is especially identical with that of Europe. A second species (*Clupea leachii*) has been supposed to exist on the British coast, but it comprises only individuals of a smaller size, the produce of an early or late spawn. Also the so-called "white-bait" is not a distinct species, but consists chiefly of the fry or the young of herrings, and is obtained "in perfection" at localities where these small fishes find an abundance of food, as in the estuary of the Thames. The important subject of herring fishing has already been treated in the article FISHING (see vol ix pp 251, 257, &c.)

Several excellent accounts of the herring have been published, as by V. Linnæus in the 20th vol of the *Histoire naturelle des Poissons*, and more especially by Mr J. M. Mitchell, *The Herring, its Natural History and Natural Importance*, Edin. 1864. Other treatises, viz—P. Neumann, *De Haringe*, Lubek, 1651; J. S. Dault, *Essay towards a Natural History of the Herring*, Lond. 1769; T. Soler, *Essay towards a Natural History of Herring*, Bath, 1784; *Fischerei einer selbstigen Natur- und Handels Geschichte des Haringen*, Kongsberg, 1769.

HIERNHUT, a town of Saxony, in the circle and 18 miles south east of the town of Bautzen, and situated on the Luban and Zittau Railway, is chiefly known as the principal seat of the Moravian or Bohemian Brotherhood, styled on the Continent Hiernhuter, a colony of whom, fleeing from persecution in their own country, settled at Hiernhut in 1722, on a site presented by Count Zinsendorf. The buildings include houses for the brethren, the sisters, and the widowed of both sexes. The town is remarkable for its regularity, cleanliness, and stillness. Linen, paper (to varieties of which Hiernhut gives its name), tobacco, and various minor articles, are manufactured. The Huthaus commands a pleasant view. The population in 1875 was 1128. Bauthendorf, a village about a mile distant, has been the seat of the directorate of the community since about 1789.

HERSCHEL, CAROLINE LUCRETIA (1750–1848), sister of Sir William Herschel, the eighth child and fifth daughter of her parents, was born at Hanover on the 16th March 1750. On account of the piquancies of her mother, who did not desire her to know more than was necessary for being useful in the family, she received in youth only the first elements of education. After the death of her father in 1767 she, in order to fit herself to earn her bread, obtained permission to learn millinery and dressmaking, but continued to assist her mother in the management of the household until the autumn of 1772, when she accompanied to England her brother William, who had established himself as a teacher of music in Bath. At once she became a valuable co-operator with her brother, both in his professional duties and in the astronomical researches to which he had already begun to devote all his spare time. She was the principal singer at his oratorio concerts, and acquired such a reputation as a vocalist that she was offered an engagement for the Birmingham festival, which, however, she declined. When her brother accepted the office of astronomer-royal, she became his constant assistant in his observations, and also executed the laborious calculations which were connected with them. For these services she in 1787 received from the king a salary of £50 a year. Her chief amusement during her leisure hours was to sweep the heavens with a small Newtonian telescope planted on the lawn. Besides detecting by this means many of the small nebulae included in Sir William Herschel's catalogue,

she succeeded in discovering seven comets, in the discovery of five of which she could lay claim to priority, viz. those of 1786, 1788, 1791, 1792, and 1795. In 1797 she presented to the Royal Society a catalogue of 560 stars taken from Flamsteed's observations, and not included in the British catalogue, together with a collection of erata that should be noticed in the same volume. Though she returned to Hanover in 1822 she did not abandon her astronomical studies, and in 1828 she completed the reduction, to January 1800, of 2500 nebulae discovered by her brother. In 1835 the Astronomical Society, to mark their sense of the benefits conferred on science by such a series of laborious exertions, unanimously resolved to present her with their gold medal, and also elected her an honorary member of the society. In 1846 she received a gold medal from the king of Prussia. She reserved the use of her intellectual faculties, and also preserved her interest in science, to the close of a long life. Her death took place on 9th January, 1848. *The Memoirs and Correspondence of Caroline Herschel*, by Miss John Herschel, appeared at London in 1876.

HERSCHEL, SIR FREDERICK WILLIAM (1738–1822), generally known as Sir William Herschel, one of the most illustrious of astronomers, was born at Hanover, Novem. ber 15, 1738. His father was a musician employed as hautboy player in the Hanoverian guards. The family had emigrated from Bohemia in the early part of the 17th century, on account of religious troubles, they themselves being Protestants. Herschel's earlier education was necessarily of a very limited character, chiefly owing to the troubles in which his country at that time was involved, but, being at all times an indomitable student, he, by his own exertions, more than repaired this deficiency of his youth. He became a very skilful musician, both theoretical and practical, while his attainments as a self-taught mathematician were fully adequate to the prosecution of those branches of astronomy which, by his labours and his genius, he so eminently advanced and adorned. Whatever he did he did methodically and thoroughly, and in this methodical thoroughness lay the secret of what Arago very properly terms his astonishing scientific success.

In 1755, at the age of seventeen, he joined the band of the Hanoverian guards, and with his detachment visited England, accompanied by his father and oldest brother, in the following year he returned to his native country, but two years later, impelled by the troubles that surrounded him, he finally quitted Hanover to seek his fortunes in England. As might have been expected, the earlier part of his career in his adopted country was attended with formidable difficulties and much privation. We find him engaged in several towns in the north of England as a organist and teacher of music, but these were occupations not attended with any lucrative results. In 1766 the tide of his fortunes began to flow, inasmuch as he obtained the appointment of organist to the Octagon Chapel in Bath; at that time the resort of the wealth and fashion of the city, and of its numerous distinguished visitors.

The next five or six years of his life were spent in establishing his reputation as a musician, and he thereby eventually became the leading musical authority in the place, and the director of all the chief public musical entertainments. His circumstances having thus become easier, he revisited Hanover for the purpose of bringing back with him his sister Caroline, with the view of her rendering him such services as she could in his multifarious undertakings. She arrived in Bath with her brother in August 1772, being at that time in her twenty-third year. She thus describes her brother's life soon after her arrival—"He used to retire to bed with a basin of milk or a glass of water, with Smith's *Harmonics* and Ferguson's

*Astronomy*, &c, and so went to sleep buried under his favourite authors, and his first thoughts on waking were how to obtain instruments for viewing those objects himself of which he had been reading." It is not without significance that we find him thus reading Smith's *Optics*, to that steady loyalty to his profession would impel him, as a reward for his thoroughness this led him to Smith's *Optics*, and thus, by a natural sequence, again led him to astronomy, for the purposes of which the chief optical instruments were devised. It was in this way that he was introduced to the writings of Ferguson and Keill, and subsequently to those of Lalande, whereby he was educating himself for an astronomer and for undying fame. In those days, telescopes were very rare, very expensive, and not very efficient, for the Dollond's had not as yet perfected even their beautiful little achromatics of  $\frac{7}{8}$  inches aperture. So Herschel was obliged to content himself with having a small Gregorian reflector of about 2 inches aperture, which he had seen exposed for loan in a tradesman's shop. Not satisfied with this implement, he procured a small lens of about 18 feet focal length, and set his sister to work on a pasteboard tube of that length, so as to make him a telescope. A tube of this construction naturally bent, and it was useless for all purposes but for the determined eyes of William Herschel. This material was soon displaced for tin, and thus a sorry sort of vision was obtained of Jupiter and Saturn and the moon. If then sought for a reflector of much larger dimensions from artists in London. No such instrument, however, was for sale, and the terms demanded for the construction of a reflecting telescope of 5 or 6 feet focal length he regarded as too exorbitant even for the gratification of such desires as his own. So he was driven to the only alternative that remained, he must construct a large telescope for himself. His first step in this direction was to purchase the debris of an amateur's implements for grinding and polishing small mirrors, and thus, by slow degrees, and by indomitable perseverance, he in 1774 had, as he says, the satisfaction of viewing the heavens with a Newtonian telescope of 6 feet focal length constructed by his own hands. But he was not a man to be contented with viewing the heavens as a mere stargazer, on the contrary, he had from the very first conceived the gigantic project and the hope of surveying the entire heavens, and, if possible, of ascertaining the plan of their general structure on a settled and systematic mode of procedure, if only he could but provide himself with adequate instrumental means. With this view he, his brother, and his sister toiled for many years at the grinding and polishing of hundreds of specula, always retaining the best, and rejecting the others, until the best of the numerous performances had been surpassed. This was the work of the daylight in those seasons of the year when the fashionable visitors of Bath had quitted the place, and had thus freed the family from professional duties. After 1774 every available hour of the night was devoted to the long hoped for scrutiny of the skies. In those days no machinery had been invented for the construction of telescopic mirrors, the man who had the hardihood to undertake the polishing doomed himself to walk leisurely and uniformly round an upright nest for many hours, without removing his hands from the mirror, until his work was done. On these occasions Herschel received his food from the hands of his faithful sister. But his reward was rich.

In May 1780 his first two papers containing some of the results of his astronomical observations during the last six years were communicated to the Royal Society through the influential introduction of Dr. Watson. Herschel had made the acquaintance of this excellent man and skilful physician in a characteristic manner. In order to obtain a sight of the moon the astronomer had taken his telescope

into the street opposite his house, the physician happening to pass at the time, and seeing his eye removed for a moment from the instrument, requested permission to take his place. The mutual courtesies and intelligent conversation which ensued soon ripened this casual acquaintance into a solid and enduring regard.

The subject of this first memoir was the varying lustre of several of the stars, and especially that of *Mira* in the constellation of *Cetus*. It had been long known to fade in brightness from nearly that of a star of the first magnitude down to invisibility in such telescopes as then existed. Herschel had examined it, and many other variable stars, for himself, it was not, however, a simple isolated phenomenon that engaged his attention, but, regarding the stars as so many suns, he examined similar phenomena as possibly leading him to some intelligent conception of what might be occurring in our own sun. The sun, he knew, rotated on its axis, and he knew that dark spots often exist on its photosphere, the questions that he put to himself were—Are there dark spots also on these variable stars? do the stars also rotate on their axes? or are they sometimes partially eclipsed by the intervention of some opaque and invisible bodies? And then he asked himself—What are these singular spots upon the sun? and have they any practical relation to, or the influence of, this planet? To these questions he applied his telescopes and his thoughts, and as light from time to time dived upon his apprehension, he communicated the results to the Royal Society in no less than six memoirs occupying very many pages in the *Philosophical Transactions*, and extending in date from 1780 to 1801. It was in the latter year that these remarkable papers culminated in the inquiry whether any relation could be traced in the recurrence of sun spots, regarded as evidences of solar activity (allied to volcanic), and the varying seasons of our planet, as exhibited by the varying price of corn? Herschel's solution of the question was sensibly final, and the question has since rarely cropped up again, with more than a renewal of its famous mischiefs.

In the following year (1781) he communicated to the Royal Society the first of a series of papers containing the results of his telescopic inquiries in relation to the rotation of the planets and of their several satellites. The object which he had in view was not so much to ascertain the velocities or times of their rotation, as rather to discover whether those rotations are strictly uniform. From the result he expected to gather, by analogy, the probability of an alteration in the length of our own day. These inquiries occupy the greater part of seven memoirs extending from 1781 to 1797. In the course of these his optical observations lighted on the curious appearance of a white spot near to each of the poles of the planet *Mars*. On investigating the inclination of its axis to the plane of its orbit, and finding that it closely resembled that of our earth, he concluded that its changes of climate also would resemble our own, and that these white patches were probably polar snow. Modern investigations have confirmed his conclusion. He also discovered that, as far as his observations extended, the times of the rotations of the various satellites round their axes are in analogy with our own moon, viz., equal to the times of their revolution round their primaries. Here again we observe that his discoveries arose out of the complete and systematic and comprehensive nature of the investigation in which he was engaged. Nothing with such a man is accidental.

In the same year (1781) Herschel made a discovery which, as we shall see, soon completely altered the character of his professional life. In the course of his systematic examination of the heavens with a view to the discovery of the plan of their constitution, he lighted on an object which at first he supposed to be a comet, but which, by its subse-

quent motions, and appearance, turned out to be a new planet, moving outside of the orbit of Saturn. To this planet he in due time assigned the name of Georgium Sidus, but this name has by general consent been laid aside in favour of Uranus. It was discovered with a favourite 7 foot reflector having an aperture of 6½ inches, subsequently, when he had provided himself with a much more powerful telescope, of 30 feet focal length, he discovered what he believed to be no less than six satellites. Modern observations have shown this gloomy planet of fume of these supposed attendants, but at the same time have added two others apparently not observed by Herschel. No less than seven memoirs on the subject were communicated by him to the Royal Society, extending from the date of the discovery in 1781 to 1815. There is a peculiarity worthy of notice in Herschel's mode of observation which led to the discovery of this planet. He had observed that the spurious diameters of stars are not much affected by increasing the magnifying power, but that this was different with other celestial objects, hence if anything in his telescope field attracted his notice by peculiarity of appearance, he immediately varied the magnifying power in order to decide the nature of the object. Thus Uranus was discovered, and had a similar method been applied to Neptune, that planet would have been discovered at Cambridge some months before it was recognized at Berlin.

We now come to the commencement of Herschel's most important series of observations, culminating in what ought probably to be regarded as his most capital discovery. A natural part of the task which he had set himself as the work of his astronomical life embraced the determination of the relative distances of the stars from our sun and from each other. Now, in the course of his scrutiny of the heavens, he had observed many stars in apparently very close contiguity, but often greatly differing in their relative brightness. He concluded that, on the average, the brighter star would be the nearer to us, and the smaller enormously more distant. He considered that an astronomer on the earth, in consequence of its immense orbital displacement of some 180 millions of miles every six months, would see such a pair of stars under different perspective aspects, and this variety of perspective aspect observed and measured would, he thought, lead to an approximate determination of their distance. With this view he mapped down the places and aspects of all the double stars that he met with, and communicated in 1782 and 1785 very extensive catalogues of the results. Indeed, the very last scientific memoir that he ever wrote, sent to the Royal Astronomical Society in the year 1822, at the time when he was its first president and already in the eighty-fourth year of his age, related to these investigations. In the first of these memoirs he throws out the hint that these apparently contiguous stars must, if constituted after the material laws of our solar system, circulate round each other through the effects of gravitation, but he significantly adds that the time had not yet arrived for settling the question. Thus the philosopher abides his time in patience and confidence, and a dozen years afterwards (1793) he resumes the relative positions of many of these contiguous pairs, and we may conceive what his feelings must have been at finding the verification of his prediction. For he found that some of these stars had circulated round each other, after the manner required by the laws of gravitation. Thus Herschel had demonstrated the action of the same mechanical laws among the distant members of the stellar firmament which bind together the harmonious motions of our solar system. This sublime discovery would of itself suffice to immortalize his memory in the respectful homage of all future races of intelligent men. If only

Herschel had lived long enough to learn the approximate distances of some of these binary combinations, he would at once have been able to calculate their masses when compared with that of our own sun, and thus, knowing, as we now do, that these stars in their weights are strictly comparable with the weight of our own sun, he would have found another of his analogical conjectures realized.

In the year 1782, in consequence of his fame, Herschel was invited to Windsor by George III, and then accepted the offer made by the king to become his private astronomer, and henceforth devote himself wholly to a scientific career. The salary offered and accepted was £200 per annum, to which an addition of £50 per annum was subsequently made for the astronomical assistance of his faithful sister Dr. Watson, to whom alone the amount of this salary was mentioned, made the natural remark, "Never before was honour purchased by a monarch at so cheap a rate." In this way the great philosophical astronomer removed from Bath first to Datchet and soon afterwards permanently to Slough, within the easy access of his royal patron at Windsor.

The old pursuits at Bath were soon resumed at Slough, but with renewed vigour and without the old professional interruptions. The greater part, in fact, of the papers already referred to are dated from Datchet and Slough, for the magnificent astronomical speculations in which he was engaged, though for the most part commenced in the earlier portion of his philosophical career, required years of patient observation before they could be fully examined and realized.

It was at Slough in 1783 that he wrote his first memorable paper on the "Motion of the Solar System in Space,"—a sublime speculation, yet through his genius realized by considerations of the utmost simplicity. It returned to the same subject with fuller details in 1805. It was also after his removal to Slough that he published his first memoir containing his speculative ideas on the construction of the heavens, which from the first had been the chief aim of his toils both of mind and body. In a long series of remarkable papers, addressed as usual to the Royal Society, and extending from the year 1784 to 1818, when he was eighty years of age, he demonstrated the fact that our sun is a star situated not far from the bifurcation of the Milky Way, and that all the stars visible to us are more or less in clusters scattered throughout a comparatively thin stratum, but in the other two dimensions stretching immeasurably further into space. At one time he imagined that his powerful instruments had pierced through this stellar stratum of the Milky Way, and that he had approximately determined the form of some of its boundaries. In the last of his memoirs he had convinced himself of his error, and he admitted that to his telescopes our stratum of stars is "fathomless." Over this stratum of stars and their planetary attendants, the whole being in ceaseless motion round some common centre of gravity as the resultant point of the combined gravitation, Herschel discovered on either side a canopy of discrete nebulous masses, from the condensation of at least a part of which the whole stellar universe had been formed,—a magnificent conception, pursued with a force of genius and put to the practical test of observation with an industry almost incredible. It was the work of a single mind, carried to its termination with no assistance beyond that of a loyal sister, almost as remarkable a personage as himself.

Hitherto we have said nothing about that grand reflecting telescope, of 40 feet focal length and 4 feet aperture, which is too often regarded as the chief effort of his genius and his perseverance. The full description of this celebrated instrument will be found in the 85th volume of the *Transactions* of the Royal Society. Gigantic as it really



was, we are disposed to regard it as among the least of his great works. On the day that it was finished (August 28, 1789) Herschel saw at the first view, in a grandeur not witnessed before, the Saturnian system with all its six satellites, five of which had been discovered long before by Huygens or Cassini, while the sixth, latterly named Enceladus, he had, two years before, sighted by glimpses in his exquisite little telescope of 6½ inches aperture, but now saw in unmistakable brightness with the towering grant he had just completed. On the 17th of September he discovered a seventh, which proved to be the nearest of all the satellites of Saturn. It has since that time received the name of Mimas. It is somewhat remarkable that, notwithstanding his long and repeated scrutines of that planet, the eighth satellite, Hyperion, and the crane ring should have escaped him.

Herschel married the widow of Mr. John Pitt, a wealthy London merchant, on May 8, 1788, by whom he had an only son, John Frederick William. The prince regent conferred a Hanoverian knighthood upon him in 1816. But a far more valued and less tardy distinction was the Copley medal assigned to him by his associates in the Royal Society in 1781.

He died at Slough on August 25, 1822, in the eighty-fourth year of his age, and was buried under the tower of St. Laurence Church, Upton, within a few hundred yards of the old site of the 40-foot telescope. A mural tablet on the wall of the church bears a Latin inscription from the pen of the late Dr. Goodall, provost of Eton College. A collected edition of his astronomical memoirs would speak of his genius in unmistakable language, but this has not yet been published.

(O P)  
HERSCHEL, SIR JOHN FREDERICK WILLIAM, BART (1792-1871), the illustrious astronomer, the only son of Sir F. William Herschel, was born at Slough, Bucks, in the year 1792. His early home was a singular one, and eminently adapted to nurture into greatness any child born, as he was, with natural gifts capable of wide development. The examples about him were those of silent but ceaseless industry, busied about things which, at the first view, seemed to have no apparent connexion with the world outside the walls of his abode, but which, at a mature period of his life, he, with rare eloquence, taught his countrymen to appreciate as foremost among those influences which satisfy and exalt the noblest instincts of our nature.

His scholastic education commenced at Eton, but maternal fears or prejudices soon removed him to the house of a private tutor. Thence, at the early age of seventeen, he was sent to St. John's College, Cambridge, and the form and method of the mathematical instruction he there received exercised a maternal influence on the whole complexion of his scientific career. In due time the young student acquired the highest academical distinction of his year, graduating as senior wrangler. It was during his undergraduateship that he and two of his fellow students who subsequently attained to very high eminence in their respective careers of life, Dean Peacock and Mr. Babbage, entered into a sort of moral compact that they would "do their best to leave the world wiser than they found it"—a compact loyally and successfully carried out by all three to the end. As a commencement of this laudable attempt we find Herschel associated with these two friends in the production of a work on the differential calculus, and on cognate branches of mathematical science, which changed the whole style and aspect of mathematical learning in England, and brought it up to the level of the Continental methods. Two or three memoirs communicated to the Royal Society on new applications of mathematical analysis at once placed him in the front rank of the cultivators of

this branch of knowledge. Of these his father had the gratification of introducing the first, but the others were presented in his own right as a fellow.

His first intention had been to study for the bar, and with this view he left the university, and placed himself under the guidance of an eminent special pleader of that day. Probably this temporary choice of a profession arose from the extraordinary success which for some time had attended the efforts of so many eminent Cambridge mathematicians in legal pursuits. Be that as it may, an early acquaintance with Dr. Wollaston in London soon changed the direction of his studies. In 1820, assisted by his father, he completed a mirror of 18 inches diameter and 20 feet focal length, for a reflecting telescope. Thus, subsequently improved by his own hands, became the instrument which enabled him to effect the astronomical observations which, more than any other of his great works, form the basis of his fame. In 1821-23 we find him associated with Mr. South in the examination of his father's double stars, by the aid of an achromatic telescope and other appliances, the like of which for excellence and power had not hitherto been collected. For this work in 1826 he received the recognition of the Astronomical Society by the award of their gold medal, the French Institute also presented him with the Lalande medal for the same contribution to astronomical science. It was also to be mentioned that in 1821 the Royal Society had presented him with the Copley medal for his mathematical contributions to their *Transactions*. From 1821 to 1827 he held the distinguished and responsible post of secretary to that society. In 1827 he was elected to the chair of the Astronomical Society, which office he also filled on two subsequent occasions. In the course of the discharge of his important offices in the last-named society he enriched its literature by his memorable presidential addresses and obituary notices of deceased fellows, which, it is not too much to say, are, in their combination of eloquence and wisdom, the chief adornments of their printed memoirs. In 1831 the honour of knighthood was conferred on him by William IV., and two years later he again received the recognition of the Royal Society by the award of one of their medals for his memoir "On the Investigation of the Orbits of Revolving Double Stars." There is a significance in this award, the father had been the original discoverer of the extension of gravitation to the remotest boundaries of the visible universe, and the son had now put the crowning stone to this edifice of discovery by the invention of a graphical method whereby the eye could as it were see the two component stars of the binary system revolving before us, after the regularity of the Newtonian law.

Before the end of the year 1833, being then about forty years of age, Sir John Herschel had examined all his father's discoveries of double stars and nebulae, and had added many similar bodies to his own list, this alone constituted a gigantic work even for the lifetime of any astronomer in that day. For it should be remembered that the astronomer was not as yet provided with those curious and valuable automatic contrivances for observing and for recording observations which at present most materially abridge the labour and increase the accuracy of astronomical work such as that in which Sir John had been engaged. And he had no assistant. Elemental clocks for timing the telescope, electrical chronographs for recording the times of the phenomena observed, were at that date unknown.

His scientific life now entered another and very characteristic phase. The bias of his mind, as he subsequently was wont to declare, was towards chemistry and the phenomena of light, rather than towards astronomy. Indeed, very shortly after taking his academical degree at Cambridge, he proposed himself as a candidate for the vacant

chair of chemistry in that university, but, as he said with some humour, the result of the election was that of the votes he had a glorious minority of one. In fact Herschel had become an astronomer from a sense of duty, just as his father had become one by fascination and fixed resolve, hence it was by filial loyalty to his father's memory that he was now impelled to undertake the completion of that work which at Slough had been so grandly commenced. William Herschel had explored the northern heavens, John Herschel determined to explore the heavens of the south, as well as to explore the north. "I resolved," he said, "to attempt the completion of a survey of the whole surface of the heavens, and for this purpose to transport into the other hemisphere the same instrument which had been employed in this, so as to give a unity to the results of both portions of the survey, and to render them comparable with each other." In accordance with this resolution, he and his family embarked for the Cape on the 13th November 1833, they arrived in Table Bay on the 15th January 1834, and, proceeding, he says, "were pushed forward with such effect that on the 22d of February I was enabled to gratify my curiosity by a view of  $\kappa$  Crucis, the nebula about  $\gamma$  Argus, and some other remarkable objects in the 30-foot reflector, and on the night of the 4th of March to commence a regular course of sweeping."

To give an adequate description of the vast mass of labour completed during the next four busy years of his life at Paddisview would require the transcription of a considerable portion of the *Cape Observations*, a volume which is not only a work of vast interest and of astronomical importance by any scientific work in existence, although it might perhaps be equalled by a judicious selection from Sir William's *Memoirs*, now scattered in some thirty volumes of the *Philosophical Transactions*, was published in the sole expense of the late Duke of Northumberland, but not till 1817, nine years after the author's return to England, for the very simple reason assigned by himself in the title of the observations, that, as well as the entire work of reducing, arranging, and preparing them for the press, he has been excited by myself. There are 161 pages of catalogues of stars in nebulae and clusters of stars. There is then careful and elaborate description of the southern appearance of the great nebula in Orion, and of the region surrounding the remarkable stars of Argos. The labour and the thought bestowed upon some of these objects are almost incalculable, several months were well spent upon a minute spot in the heavens containing 1216 stars, but which an ordinary spyglass, held at a distance of an unbroken night, would eclipse. These catalogues and charts being completed, he proceeds to discuss their significance, which in the view of some philosophers is absorbing interest. He confirms his father's hypothesis that these wonderful masses of glowing vapours are not irregularly scattered, and without apparent law, hither and thither in the vast ether, but are the result of a regular canopy, whose vertex is at the pole of that vast system of stars in which our solar system holds its position,—based in it, as he supposes, at a depth not greater than that of the average distance from us of an  $\alpha$  Centauri magnitude at the distance of 250,000 years. He assigns positions and magnitudes of the southern double stars. And he applies to one of them,  $\gamma$  Virginis, that beautiful graphical method invented by himself, whereby he determines the orbit of the two components round each other, and he had the satisfaction of witnessing with his own eyes the fulfilment of a prediction he had made many years before, viz., that the two stars would, in the course of their orbital movements, appear to lose up into a single star, in a partial binary conjunction. The delicate stars and their steadily volubilities and luminous colours described, in the next chapter he proceeds to describe the observations which he had made on them varying and relative brightness. It has been already stated how his father's numerous and his scientific eye for similar observations on the varying magnitudes of many stars, and how his remarks culminated years afterwards in the question whether the variation of the lustre of our stars is due to the presence or absence of sun spots, or actual outbursts and the pure of coin. The son carries his speculations backwards to a still more philosophical depth. The variation from time to time, he remarks, in the lustre of our sun, to the extent of half a magnitude, would account for those strange aberrations of a semi erect and semi trochoid character which geological researches have disclosed as having occurred in various regions of our globe.

Herschel returned to his English home in the spring of 1838. As was natural and honourable to all concerned, he was welcomed with an enthusiastic greeting. By the queen

at her coronation he was created a baronet, and, what to him was better than all such rewards, other men sought the contagion of his example, and laboured in fields similar to his own, with an adequate portion of his success. In particular Mr Lassell transported a telescope as large as the celebrated Herschelian telescope to Malta, where with excellent results he "minded the heavens" for the space of four years. He was rewarded there, and at his own English residence near Liverpool, by the discovery of new satellites of Saturn and of Uranus, constituting what Sir John Herschel, animated by a paternal sympathy, well called an epoch in astronomy. Mr De La Rue also, at Islington and at Ormsford, followed eagerly and successfully in the wake of the same infectious enthusiasm.

Herschel was a highly accomplished chemist. His discovery of the solvent power of hyposulphites of soda on the otherwise insoluble salts of silver, in 1819, exercised a most important influence on the practical applications of photography twenty years afterwards, and in 1839, the natal one of that valuable art, he, independently of Mr Fox Talbot, had discovered the means of taking and multiplying photographic pictures, and early in the spring of that year exhibited more than twenty photographic pictures to the Royal Society, including one of the 40 foot telescope. He was the first person to introduce the now well-known terms *positive* and *negative* in photographic images, and to deposit upon glass a sensitized film for the reception of the picture. He also paved the way for Professor Stokes's important discovery of the change which luminous waves may suffer in their period of oscillation, by his addition of the lavender rays to the spectrum, and by his announcement of "epiploic dispersion," as exhibited by sulphate of quinine. Several other important and successful researches of his, connected with the undulatory theory of light, are scattered through the pages of his treatise on "Light" published in the *Encyclopædia Metropolitana*.

To the other varied accomplishments of his gifted mind we must add the graces of a deep poetic feeling. Perhaps no man can become a truly great mathematician or great philosopher, if unendowed with the versatile powers of the imagination. John Herschel possessed this endowment to a large extent, and he had reserved for himself as a solace and enjoyment in old age the translation of the *Iliad* into verse. He had at an earlier period of life translated in a similar manner Schiller's *Wallenstein*. The main work of his declining years was the collection of all his father's catalogues, combined with his own observations and those of other astronomers of nebulae and double stars, each into a single volume. He lived to complete the former, and to present it to the Royal Society, who have published it in a separate form in the *Philosophical Transactions*. The latter work he had not fully completed at his death, but he bequeathed as much of it as was finished to the Astronomical Society. That society has printed a portion of it, which serves as an index to the observations of various astronomers on double stars up to the year 1866.

A complete list of his various contributions to learned societies will be found in the Royal Society's great catalogue, and from them may be gathered most of the records of his busy scientific life. Sir John Herschel met with an amount of public recognition which was unusual in the time of his illustrious father. Naturally he was a member of almost every important learned society in both hemispheres. For five years he held the office of master of the mint, the same appointment which, more than a century before, had been occupied by Sir Isaac Newton, his friends also offered to propose him as president of the Royal Society and again as a member of parliament for the university of Cambridge, but neither office was within the scope of his own desires.

In private life Sir John Herschel was a firm and most ardent friend, he had no jealousy, he availed all scientific facts, he gladly accorded a helping hand to those who consulted him in scientific difficulties, he never discouraged, and still less despised, men younger than or inferior to himself, he was pleased when his own work was appreciated, but that was never an object of his solicitude—it was said of him by a discriminating critic, and without extravagance, that "his was a life full of the serenity of the sage and the docile innocence of a child."

He died at Collingwood, his residence near Hawkhurst in Kent, May 11, 1871, in the seventy-ninth year of his age, and his remains are interred in Westminster Abbey close to the grave of Sir Isaac Newton.

Sir John Herschel, independently of the labours connected with his *Cape Observations*, was the author of several books, one of which at least, *On the Study of Natural Philosophy* (1830), possesses an interest which no future advances of the subjects on which he wrote can oblige us to the statement of thoughtful men in any age. In 1840 came the *Outlines of Astronomy*, of which it is enough to say that, notwithstanding the obvious disadvantage arising from the practice of stereotyping text books which relate to progressive sciences, there is no more instructive volume extant on the subject of which it treats. His articles, "Meteorology," "Physical Geography," and "Telescope," contributed to the 8th edition of the *Encyclopædia Britannica*, and also were published separately. There is also another very valuable little book, which originated from a happy peculiarity of Sir John Herschel's dignified simplicity and truthfulness of mind. When he was at the Cape he more than once assisted in the attempts there made to diffuse a love of knowledge among men not versed in literary culture. In one of his addresses he, with a kindly and far seeing wisdom, told his audience that the advance of a nation's intelligence or a nation's fame did not depend upon a few superficial philosophies looking in their lonely studies, and gathering great reputations for their leaning on their elbows, but that a nation's progress rather lay in the diffusion of their knowledge among the masses of the population. Acting practically on this principle, he, on his return to England, published, in *Good Words* and elsewhere, a series of papers on interesting points of natural philosophy, which have since been collected in a volume called *Popular Lectures on Scientific Subjects*. None but a deep thinking philosopher could have written this book, none but a clear thinking mystic of his subjects could have made it what it is, so entirely intelligible. Another volume of his, not so widely known to the public as any of the above series, is his *Collected Addresses*, in which he is seen in his freest and most instructive mood, talking, as it were, at liberty among sympathizing associates, in his own fields, and enamoured of their beauties. (C. P.)

HERSENT, LOUIS (1777-1860), French painter, was one of David's most distinguished pupils, and became one of the most noted painters of the Restoration. He was born at Paris on 10th March 1777, and obtained the Prix de Rome in 1797, in the Salon of 1802 appeared his *Metamorphosis of Narcissus*, and he continued to exhibit with rare interruptions up to 1831. His most considerable works under the empire were Achilles pining from Diomedes, and Atala dying in the arms of Chactas (both engraved in Landon's *Annales du Musée*), an Incident of the life of Fénélon, painted in 1810, found a place at Malmaison, and Passage of the Bridge at Landshut, which belongs to the same date, is now at Versailles. Hersent's typical works, however, belong to the period of the Restoration, Louis XVI. relieving the Afflicted (Versailles) and Daphnis and Chloe (engraved by Langier and by Gélès) were both in the Salon of 1817, at that of 1819 the Abduction of Gustavus Vasa brought to Hersent a medal of honour, but the picture, purchased by the Duke of Orleans, was destroyed at the Palais Royal in 1848. The second and the engraving by Henriquel-Dupont is now its sole record. Rich, produced in 1829, became the property of Louis XVIII., who from the moment that Hersent rallied to the Restoration zealously patronized him, made him officer of the Legion of honour, and pressed his claims at the Institute, where he replaced Van Spaendonck. He continued in favour under Charles X., for whom was executed Monks of Mount St. Gotthard, exhibited in 1824. In 1831 Hersent made his

last appearance at the Salon with portraits of Louis Philippe, Maria Amalia, and the duke of Montpensier, that of the king, though good, is not equal to the portrait of Spontini (Berlin), which is probably Hersent's *chef-d'œuvre*. After this date Hersent ceased to exhibit at the yearly salons. Although in 1846 he sent an excellent likeness of Delphine Gay and one or two other works to the rooms of the Société d'Artiste, he could not be tempted from his usual reserve even by the international contest of 1855. Five years later, on 2d October 1860, he died. His work shows every artistic merit which can be attained by steadily directed intelligence and labour, his skill an engagement, delicacy of line, and certainty in execution are points which have excited the admiration even of those who find him wanting in feeling, in interest, and in sense of colour. Louis XVI. relieving the Afflicted, the treatment of which indicates the approach of the realistic movement, is less theatrical than Daphnis and Chloe, which combines, in the true spirit of the Restoration, drawing-room graces with a pseudo-classic style, but both show the same dryness and hardness of manner which Hersent had acquired under the influence of the first empire, and from which he never was able to free himself.

HEILSFELD, a town of Prussia, capital of a circle in the government district of Cassel, and county of Hesse-Nassau, is pleasantly situated at the confluence of the Cava and Fenne with the Fulda, on the railway from Frankfurt to Berlin, 10 miles N. E. of Fulda. The greater part of its old fortifications remain, but the ramparts and ditches have been laid out as promenades. The principal buildings are the ancient town house, the parish church, completed in 1320, in the Gothic style, with a fine tower and a large bell, the ruins of the collegiate church in the Byzantine style, erected in the beginning of the 12th century on the site of the cathedral, but burnt down by the French during the Seven Years' War, and, outside the town, the ancient monastery with its surrounding grounds. Among the public institutions are a gymnasium, a higher town school, an orphanage, and a district infirmary. The town has important manufactures of cloth and leather, as well as dye works, wetted mills, and soap boiling works. The population in 1875 was 6929.

Heilsfeld owes its origin to a Benedictine abbey which, founded by Illing, abbotship of Munz, about 760, was richly endowed by Charlemagne, and became in the 12th century an archbishopric in principle. In 1870 the town came under the protection of its see, and in 1825 it gave in its former allegiance to it. The abbey was secularized in 1618, but Heilsfeld retained the capital of a prince bishopric until 1802.

HERSTAL, or in its older form HIRTSAL, a market town of Belgium, on the left bank of the Meuse, 5 or 1 miles north east of Liège, and skirting the road which leads from that city to Maastricht. Its population, which in 1876 numbered 11,136, is mainly supported by its coal mines and iron industries. Herstal probably derives its name from being a "Heerstelle" or permanent camp of the Franks. It is well known as the birthplace and family seat of Pippin, the mayor-domo of the Austrasian kingdom, some few traces of whose castle are still pointed out above the town. And though it cannot maintain its claim to be the birthplace also of Charlemagne, it was undoubtedly a frequent place of residence for this greatest of the Carolingians, and in 870 it gave its name to the treaty by which Charles the Bald and Louis the German decided the partition of Lotharing. The lordship of Herstal passed to the house of Nassau in 1414, and in 1702, on the death of William III. of England, its possession was disputed between the house of Orange and the king of Prussia. The decision of the courts was given in 1714 in favour of Prussia, but the new possessors, finding the feelings of the people of Herstal against them, sold the lordship to Liège.

for 140,000 thalers. Another Horstall, distinguished as the Saxon, was the place where Charlemagne had his winter quarters in the year 797. It is now the village of Horstall on the Weser, in the government of Minden.

**PIXTON** **HERTFORD, COUNTY OF, HERTFORDSHIRE, OR HERTS,** an inland county in the south east of England, is situated between 51° 36' and 52° 5' N lat and 0° 13' E and 0° 46' W long. It is bounded on the N by Cambridgeshire, N W by Bedfordshire, E by Essex, S by Middlesex, and S W by Buckinghamshire. The area comprises 391,141 acres or 611 square miles.

The aspect of the county is pleasant and picturesque, its surface being broken by gentle undulations which in some parts form a quick succession of hills and valleys. The highest summit is Kensworth Hill on the border of Bedfordshire, about 910 feet above sea-level. Fine oak and other trees are grown in the hedges, and from being planted obliquely they form high walls of living timber shading narrow winding lanes. The noble and fertile lands of the fairs are intermingled with the parks and ornamental woods of the country seats which are scattered thickly throughout the county. These features, varied by its winding rivers, impart to it a peculiar beauty, while in luxuriance it is not surpassed by any county in England.

The principal rivers are the Lea, which, rising some miles beyond Luton in Bedfordshire and entering Hertfordshire at Millmill, flows south east to Hatfield and then east by north to Hatfield and Wat, whence it bends southward, and passing along the eastern boundary of the county falls into the Thames a little below London, having received in its course the Marston, the Beane, the Rib, and the Stort, which all flow southward in the north-eastern part of the county, the Stort for some distance forming the boundary between it and Essex, the Colne, which, flowing through the south western part of the county, falls into the Thames at Banford, having received in its course the Ver, the Dulwade, and the Gule, the Ivel, which, rising in the north-west of the county, soon passes into Bedfordshire. The New River, one of the water supplies of London, made by Sir Hugh Myddelton (1607-13), has its source in some springs, near Wat, and runs parallel for many miles with the Lea. The Grand Junction Canal from London to Birmingham traverses the south-west corner of the county, passing by Watford and Hemel Hempstead. There are mineral springs in the parishes of Chipping Barnet, Northaw, and Watton.

Geologically the county consists of Cretaceous and Tertiary rocks, the greater part being Lower, Middle, and Upper Chalk, which in the south eastern part of the county are covered by Tertiary deposits belonging to the London basin. Over a large part of the eastern side of the county there are superficial deposits of glacial origin, and on the western side there are traces of the Lower Tertiary beds having formerly extended over a much wider area, outliers of the beds being of not infrequent occurrence, and the drift deposits on the chalk hills being largely composed of them debris. The vales traversed by the rivers and streams exhibit in the bottoms a rich sandy loam, the sloping sides are covered by loams of inferior quality, and the flat surface of the high ground is generally formed of a loam of reddish hue tending towards common clay, with which it is often confounded.

The climate is mild, dry, and remarkably salubrious. On this account the London physicians were accustomed to recommend the county for persons in weak health, and it was so much coveted by the noble and wealthy as a place of residence, that it was a common saying—"He who buys a home in Hertfordshire pays two years' purchase for the air."

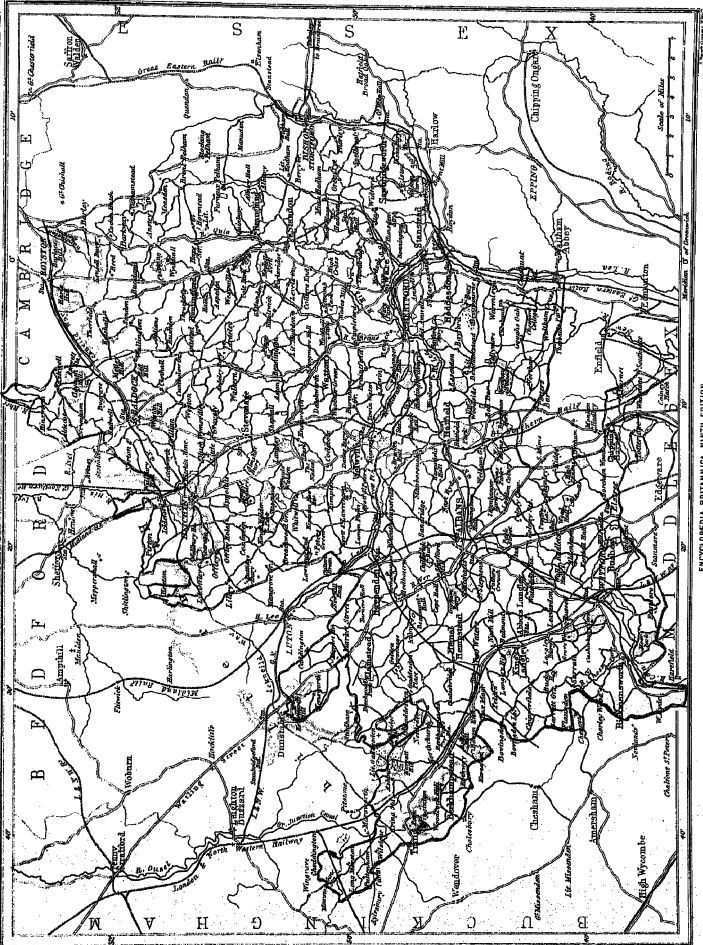
According to the agricultural returns for 1870, the total area of arable land was 239,187 acres, of which 146,686 acres were under corn crops, 39,443 under green crops, 33,416 under rotation grasses, 97,548 permanent pasture, and 13,111 fallow. The area under woods was 20,714 acres. It will thus be seen that the actual produce of Hertfordshire is corn. The principal crop is wheat, which in 1870 occupied 99,363 acres. The varieties mostly grown are white, and they are not surpassed by those of any county in England. Wheat is sown on the river Lea, and the quality of the wheat grown in this district. Of barley, which is largely made use of in the county for malting purposes, there were 45,129 acres in 1870, and of oats only 25,779. Little or no clover is grown, and of ryegrass and lucerne together there was in 1870 a little over 11,000 acres. Of green crops, turnips and Swedish turnips occupied in 1870 an area of 21,778 acres, while potatoes in only 2,767. Vetches are largely grown for the London stables, extending to 8,191 acres in 1870. The greater part of the permanent grass is made use of for hay. There are some very rich pastures on the banks of the river Stort, extending from Hatfield to Hemel Hempstead on the borders of the river Colne, and also near Rickmansworth, where they are watered by the river Colne. The percentage of cultivated area in 1870 was 86.7 instead of 85.1 in 1870, of arable under corn crops 37.2 instead of 38.5, under green crops 10.1 instead of 11.5, under rotation grasses 9.8 instead of 10.2, and of permanent pasture 21.9 instead of 22.9. The most common system of rotation is the five-course—turnips or fallow, barley, clover, wheat, oats. In the south west part of the county large quantities of cherries and apples are grown for the London market. On the best soils near London extensive vegetable gardens are found by the aid of manure, and more than one crop are sometimes obtained in a year. Generally speaking, the quantity of stock kept is small. Not much attention is paid to the breeds of cattle, but among them the Suffolk variety is the most common. The number of cattle in 1870 was only 31,754, or an average of 9.8 to every 100 acres under cultivation, the average for England being 11.9, and for the United Kingdom 21.0. Of these the number of cows in 1870 was only 11,802. The number of horses in 1870 was 15,022, or an average of 4.1 to every 100 acres, the average for England being 4.5 and for the United Kingdom 4.1. The horses used for agricultural purposes are chiefly Suffolk punches. The number of sheep in 1870 was 171,133, or an average of 60.4 to every 100 acres under cultivation, the average for England being 75.3, and for the United Kingdom 68.0. The principal kinds are the Southdown and Wiltshire, and crosses between Lotswolds and Leicesters. There were in 1870 30,461, or an average of 8.9 to every 100 acres under cultivation, the average for England being 7.2, and that for the United Kingdom 6.7.

In Hertfordshire the number of resident proprietors is very large, which circumstance, as well as the proximity to London, has doubtless greatly aided the development of agricultural enterprise. The average extent of the farms is about 200 acres, and the modern improvements are everywhere adopted. According to the returns of owners of land for 1872-73, the soil was divided among 13,387 proprietors, holding land the gross annual rental of which was £2,168,195. Of the owners 77 per cent held less than one acre, and the total area of land for the county was 42,175 843 per acre. There were only eight noblemen who held upwards of 4000 acres, viz., Marquis of Salisbury, Hatfield, 18,899, Abbot Smith, Watton, 10,212, Earl Grey, Parkborough, 10,122, Earl of Devon, 8,625, Lord Salisbury, 8,625, Earl Brownlow, Ashridge Park, 8571, Lord Deane, The Hoe, Welwyn, 7100, Charles O'Hale, King's Walden, 5568, and Earl of Essex, Chesham Park, Watford, 6167. W. R. Baker, Bedfordshire, comes next with 5111 acres.

The staple trade of the county is in coal and malt, most of which is sent to the metropolitan. There are numerous flour-mills, as well as breweries, tanneries, the works, and coach factories, but the principal manufactures are paper and glass. Hertfordshire is so much intersected by railways that no place in any part of the county is more than 5 miles distant from a station. On the eastern border there is the Great Eastern, with branches to Hatfield and Buntingford. The middle of the county is traversed by the Great Northern, with branches from Hatfield to Hatfield, Luton, Dunstable, and St Albans, and from Hitchin to Royston, and thence to Cambridge. The Midland passes through St Albans, with branches to the Great Northern and London and North Western. The London and North-Western traverses the south western corner.

The county comprises 8 hundreds, and the municipal boroughs of Hatfield and St Albans. The municipal towns are the municipal and parliamentary borough of Hatfield (municipal borough, 7160), the city of St Albans (8298), Hitchin (7680), Watford (7481), Bishop Stortford (6260), Hemel Hempstead (6242), Ware (4017), Berkhamstead (4088), Tring (4048), and Bushey (3722). For parliamentary representation the county is an undivided constituency, and returns three members, while one member is returned for the borough of Hatfield. Hertfordshire is in the south eastern circuit. There were formerly two courts of quarter sessions, one for the







Sixth king attended. The castle was erected about 905 by Baldu the Elder, who at the same time rebuilt the town, which had in all probability been devastated by the Danes. Its custody and the government of the town were given by William, the Companion to Peter de Valognes. Subsequently it was surrendered to the crown. In the reign of John it was captured by the revolted barons headed by the duc de Flanders. By Edward III. the castle was made the occasional prison of John II. king of France and David king of Scotland. Hertzog is recorded as a borough in Denmark. It received its first charter from Queen Mary in 1557, and this was renewed and modified by Elizabeth, and continued and enlarged by James I. and Charles II. The borough sent two members to parliament from the reign of Edward I. to the 50th of Edward III., when the privilege was suspended until the reign of James I. Since the Reform Act of 1907 it has returned only one member.

**HERTZ, PERNIK (1798-1870)**, Danish poet, was born of Jewish parents in Copenhagen, August 25, 1798. At that date it was unusual for Jews to enjoy a professional education, but young Hertz showed such marked literary bias that in 1817 he was sent to the university. His father having died in his infancy, and the family property having been destroyed in the bombardment of 1807, the boy was brought up by his relative, M. L. Nathanson, for many years editor of the principal Danish newspaper. Young Hertz was destined for the law, and passed his juridical examination in 1825. But his taste was all for polite literature, and in 1827 he came forward as a dramatic author by the production of two plays, *Herz, Enchanted and his Family* and *Love and Policy*, the latter enjoyed considerable success on the stage. In 1828 followed the comedy of *Flytledagen*, which occupied itself with the humours of moving house on quarter-day. In 1830 he brought out what was a complete novelty in Danish literature, a drama in rhymed verse, *Amor's Strokes of Genius*. In the same year Hertz published anonymously *Gjenganger-bjerner*, or Letters from a Ghost, which he pretended were written by Baggensen, who had died in 1826, and which were full of satirical humour and fine critical insight. The success of this book was overwhelming. Copenhagen talked of nothing else for a whole season, but Hertz preserved his anonymity, and the secret was not known until many years later. In 1832 he published a didactic poem, *Nature's Law*, and *Four Poetical Epistles*. *A Day on the Island of At* was his next comedy, followed in 1835 by *The Only Fault*. Hertz passed through Germany and Switzerland into Italy in 1833; he spent the winter there, and returned the following autumn through France to Denmark. In 1836 his comedy of *The Savings Bank* enjoyed a great success. But it was not till 1837 that he developed his most important talent by writing the romantic drama of *Queen Dym's House*, a beautiful and original piece, which still holds the stage. His historical tragedy *Valdemar Atterdag* was not so well received in 1839, but in 1845 he achieved an immense success with his lyrical drama *King René's Daughter*, which has been translated into almost every European language, and successfully acted all over the civilized world. To this succeeded the tragedy of *Nimrod* in 1848, the romantic comedy of *Tonietta* in 1849, *A Storm* in 1853, *The Youngest* in 1854. His lyrical poems appeared in successive collections, dated 1852, 1850, and 1844. From 1858 to 1859 he edited a very interesting literary journal entitled *Weekly Leaves*. He died in 1870. Hertz is one of the first of Danish lyrical poets. His poems are full of colour and passion, his versification has more witchcraft in it than any other poet's of his age, and his style is grace itself. He has all the sensuous fire of Keats without his proclivity to the antique. As a romantic dramatist he is scarcely less original. He has been quoted in the Danish theatre, in *Queen Dym's House* and *King René's Daughter*, two pieces which have survived the vicissitudes of forty years, and which are as popular as ever. He is a troubadour by instinct, he has little or

nothing of Scandinavian local colouring, and succeeds best when he is describing the scenery or the emotions of the glowing south.

**HERTZEN, ALEXANDER (1812-1870)**, was born at Moscow in 1812, a very short time before the occupation of that city by the French. His father, Ivan Yakovlev, after a personal interview with Napoleon, was allowed to leave, when the invaders arrived, as the bearer of a letter from the French to the Russian emperor. His family attended him to the Russian lines. Then the mother of the infant Alexander (a young German Protestant of Jewish extraction from Stuttgart, according to A. von Wunzsch), only seventeen years old, and quite unable to speak Russian, was forced to seek shelter for some time in a peasant's hut. A year later the family returned to Moscow, where Herten passed his youth,—remaining there, after completing his studies at the university, till 1834, when he was arrested and tried on a charge of having assisted, with some other youths, at a festival during which verses by Sokolovsky, of a nature uncomplimentary to the emperor, were sung. The special commission appointed to try the youthful culprits found him guilty, and in 1835 he was banished to Viatska. There he remained till the visit to that city of the hereditary grand duke (afterwards Alexander II.), accompanied by the poet Joukovsky, led to his being allowed to quit Viatska for Vladimir, where he was appointed editor of the official gazette of that city. In 1840 he obtained a post in the ministry of the interior at St. Petersburg, but in consequence of having spoken too frankly about a death due to a police officer's violence, he was sent to Novgorod, where he led an official life, with the title of "state councillor," till 1842. In 1846 his father died, leaving him by his will a very large property. Early in 1847 he left Russia, never to return. From Italy, on hearing of the revolution of 1848, he hastened to Paris, whence he afterwards went to Switzerland. In 1852 he quitted Geneva for London, where he settled for some years. In 1864 he returned to Geneva, and after some time went to Paris, where he died, January 21, 1870.

His literary career began in 1842 with the publication of an essay, in Russian, on *Utilitarianism in Science*, under the pseudonym of "Iskander," the Turkish form of his Christian name,—convicts, even when pardoned, not being allowed in those days to publish under their own names. His second work, also in Russian, was his *Letters on the Study of Nature* (1845-6). In 1847 appeared his novel *Kto Vinovat?* (Whose Fault?), and about the same time were published in Russian periodicals the stories which were afterwards collected and printed in London in 1854, under the title of *Prisvannye Russkimi* (Interrupted Tales). In 1850 two works appeared, translated from the Russian manuscript, *Vom anderen Ufer* (From another Shore) and *Leti et de France et d'Italie*. In French appeared also his essay *Du Développement des idées révolutionnaires en Russie*, and his memoirs, which, after being printed in Russian, were translated under the title of *Le Monde russe et la Révolution* (3 vols. 1850-62), and were in part translated into English as *My Exile to Siberia* (2 vols., 1855). From a literary point of view his most important work is *Kto Vinovat?* a story describing how the domestic happiness of a young tutor, who marries the unacknowledged daughter of a Russian sensualist of the old type, dull, ignorant, and genial, is troubled by a Russian sensualist of the new school, intelligent, accomplished, and cunning, without there being any possibility of saying who is most to be blamed for the tragic termination. But it was as a political writer that Herten gained the vast reputation which he at one time enjoyed. Having founded in London his "Free Russian Press," of the fortunes of which, during ten years, he gave an interesting account in a book published (in Rus-



man) in 1863, he issued from it a great number of Russian works, all levelled against the system of government prevailing in Russia. Some of these were essays, such as his *Baptized Property*, an attack on serfdom; others were practical publications, the *Polynaya Zvezda* (or Polar Star), the *Kokolod* (or Bell), and the *Golos iz Rossii* (or Voice from Russia). The *Kokolod* soon obtained an immense circulation, and exercised an extraordinary influence. For three years, it is true, the founders of the "Free Press" went on printing, "not only without selling a single copy, but scarcely being able to get a single copy introduced into Russia," so that when at last a bookseller bought ten shillings' worth of *Baptized Property*, the half sovereign was set aside by the surprised editors in a special piece of honour. But the death of the emperor Nicholas in 1855 produced an entire change. Herzen's writings, and the journals he edited, were smuggled wholesale into Russia, and then were reprinted throughout that country, as well as all over Europe. Their influence became overwhelming. Evil deeds long hidden, evil deeds who had long prospered, were suddenly dragged into light and disgrace. His bold and vigorous language aptly expressed the thoughts which had long been secretly stirring Russian minds, and were now beginning to find a timid utterance at home. For some years his influence in Russia was a living force, the circulation of his writings was a vocation seriously pursued. Stories tell how on one occasion a merchant, who had bought several cases of sundries at Nym Norvegsk, found that they contained forbidden paint instead of fish, and at another time a supposititious copy of the *Kokolod* was printed for the emperor's special use, in which a telling attack upon a leading statesman, which had appeared in the genuine number, was omitted. At length the sweeping changes introduced by Alexander II greatly diminished the need for and appreciation of Herzen's assistance in the work of reform. The freedom he had demanded for the serfs was granted, the law courts he had so long denounced were reformed, and by law was established, liberty was to a great extent conceded to the press. It became clear that Herzen's occupation was gone. When the Polish insurrection of 1863 broke out, and he pleaded the insurgent's cause, his reputation in Russia received its death-blow. From that time it was only with the revolutionary party that he was in full accord, and it is by that section of Russian Liberals alone that his opinions are now considered of authority. For the great reforms, however, which followed the Crimean War, Russia is much indebted to the outspoken utterances of Alexander Herzen, and will be so in all probability for the constitutional changes which are likely to follow the repressive measures of 1879.

In 1873 a collection of his works in French was commenced in Paris. A volume of posthumous works in Russian was published at Geneva in 1870. His *Memoirs* supply the principal information about his life, a sketch of which appears also in A. von Wulff's *Zwischenzug*, pt. 7, Vienna, 1871. See also the *Revue des Deux Mondes* for July 15 and Sept. 1, 1854. His *Personality* has been translated into German under the title of *Wille und Schicksal* in Wolfsohn's *Russische Novellenscheiter*, vol. III. The title of *My State in Siberia* is misleading; he was never in that country. (W R S.)

HERULI, ERULI, or ERULI, a nomadic and warlike German tribe who inhabited the northern shores of the Black Sea, but afterwards divided into various sections and wandered into different parts of Europe. They made their first appearance in history in the 3d century, not taking part with the Goths in their incursions against the eastern provinces of the Roman empire. In the 4th century they acknowledged the overlordship of the Gothic king Ermanaric, but when Attila, king of the Huns, made his descent upon Gaul, they joined his standard. After the overthrow of the Huns, in which they suffered considerably, they established an organized and distinct confederacy on the banks

of the Danube, and under the leadership of Odoacer, assisted in 476 in the overthrow of the Western empire. Under their king Buldo they in the beginning of the 6th century attempted the subjugation of the Longobards, but were defeated and dispersed, some of them proceeding to Scandinavia, and others being allowed by the emperor Anastasius to settle on the south bank of the Danube. In the time of Justinian some of them embraced Christianity. A large portion of them afterwards joined the Gepids, in their wars against the Eastern empire, but others who remained afforded Justinian important assistance in his wars against the Vandals and East Goths, so that they frequently fought against one another. About the end of the 6th century they became submerged and lost in other nations, and disappeared from historical records. The Heruli were bold, hairy, and extremely pugnacious. For a considerable period they retained intact their strong individuality, and presented a firm resistance to the influences of surrounding civilizations. They put to death without mercy the sick and the aged, and also said even to have offered human sacrifices.

HERVEY, JAMES (1711-1788), a popular religious writer of the 18th century, was born at Haddington, near Northampton, on February 20, 1711, and was educated at the grammar school of Northampton, whence in 1731 he passed to Lincoln College, Oxford. At the university he came under the influence of John Wesley and others of that school, and for some time manifested an inclination towards their theology, ultimately, however, while retaining his regard for the men and his sympathy with their religious aims, he adopted a thoroughly Calvinistic creed, and resolved to retain connexion with the Established Church. Having taken holy orders in 1737, he became curate to his father in the family living of Weston Favell and Collingtree, to which he himself succeeded in 1752. There, under the disadvantage of very weak health, he laboured with great diligence in the discharge of his pastoral duties, and also wrote numerous religious works, which, though of but slight literary or theological value, rapidly became highly popular, and in many English and Scottish houses, especially of the humbler class, took a place on the same shelf with the *Pilgrim's Progress* and the *Whole Duty of Man*. His earliest work, *Meditations and Contemplations*, containing "Meditations among the Tombs," "Reflections on a Flower Garden," and a "Descent on Creation" (1716), and a "Contemplation on the Night and Early Mornings" (1717), said to have been modelled on Boyle's *Occasional Reflections on various Subjects*, within fourteen years passed through as many editions. *Thou art Aspiring, or a Series of Letters upon the most important and interesting Subjects*, which appeared in 1755, and was equally well received, called forth some adverse criticism even from Calvinists, on account of tendencies, which were considered too late to antinomianism, and was strongly objected to by Wesley in his *Preservative against unscriptural Doctrines in Religion*. Besides carrying into England the theological disputes to which Fisher's *Mirror of Moralen Divinity* had given rise in Scotland, it also led to what is known as the Sandemanian controversy as to the nature of saving faith. Hervey died on December 25, 1788. A "new and complete" edition of his *Works*, with a memoir, appeared in 1797. See also *Collection of the Letters of James Hervey, to which is prefixed an account of his Life and Death* (1740).

HERVEY, JOHN ILARVEY, LOAN (1696-1743), the "Narrative," "Sports," and "Lord Fanny" of Temple nature, a nobleman of political and social distinction in the reign of George II, was son of John first earl of Bristol, and was born on October 18, 1696. Educated and trained for public life at Westminster and Clare Hall, Cambridge, he became a

favorites at the court of the prince and princess (afterwards George II. and Queen Caroline), to which Pope, Gay, Arbuthnot, Chesterfield, and other wit resorted, and which was celebrated for the beauty and accomplishments of its ladies, such as Miss Bellenden (afterwards duchess of Argyll), Miss Howe, Miss Lepell, and Miss Howard, whose names will live for ever in the poetry of Pope, Gay, and Swift, and in the lively memoirs and correspondence of that brilliant circle. Harvey was married to Miss Lepell in 1730.

Having entered the House of Commons as member for Duty (1735), he in 1730 received the appointment of vice-chamberlain to the king, in 1733 Sir Robert Walpole called him up to the House of Lords, where he proved a frequent and effective speaker, and in 1740 he succeeded Lord Godolphin as lord privy seal, which office he held until the Walpole administration was driven from power in 1743. Notwithstanding miserable health he continued to take an active part in politics until his death, which occurred on August 8, 1743. He was survived by four sons, three of whom became successively earls of Bristol. Distinguished as any commanding talents or solid principle, a sceptic in religion and a prodigal in morals, Lord Harvey was yet far above the intellectual rank assigned him by his merciless satirist, Pope. He wrote and spoke vigorously on public questions, was studious and laborious, a fair scholar, and a writer of pleasing occasional verse. The origin of the hostility which led to the allusion in the *Dunciad* (iv. 104) in 1728, and afterwards to the attacks in the *Prologue* and *Epilogue to the Satires*, remains obscure. "It would be now idle," as Mr. Croker remarks, "to seek for a cause of quarrel which the parties were, a hundred years ago, unable or unwilling to explain, but may it not be sufficiently accounted for by the jealousies almost inevitable between persons of such similar and therefore discordant tastes and tempers, living together in a circle of little tattle, scandal, and piquineries?" Political differences had probably something to do with it, Lord Harvey and Lady Mary Wortley Montague (who shared with him the poet's enmity) living at the accession of George II. adhered to Walpole, while Pope and his brother wits were chiefly associated with the opposition. Lord Harvey left behind him *Memoirs of the Reign of George the Second, from his Accession to the Death of Queen Caroline*, which were not published until 1848, when they appeared in two volumes, edited, with a biographical notice, by Mr. Croker. This work throws much light on the interior of the court—its courtesies, dulness, and immorality, but it is as degrading to the author as it is to the English monarchy, for Lord Harvey appears rather in the light of a court parasite and malignant gossip than in that of a fair historian or an English gentleman.

**HERZEGOVINA**, an Illyrian province, ethnographically belonging to the Serbo-Croatian nationality, under the titular dominion of the Turkish sultan, but since 1878 administered by Austria-Hungary. The Turks included it in the vilayet of Bosnia. It is bounded N and E by Bosnia, S by Montenegro, and W by Dalmatia, only touching the Adriatic by the narrow enclaves of Klek and Sutouna. The province extends about 117 miles in a south-east direction between 17° 10' and 20° 15' E long. By the treaty of Berlin the Herzegovinian districts of Niksch and Dornator have been placed under the government of the prince of Montenegro.

**Population**—The Austrians have not yet (1879) had time to complete trustworthy statistics as to the population and resources of the province, and those published in the days of Turkish administration must be received with great reserve. The best statistical accounts of Herzegovina are those collected for the Austrian Government by the staff-

officers Majors Roskiewicz and Thoemmel, and their discrepancy is the best proof of the difficulties which have hitherto prevented an exact calculation.

According to Roskiewicz the population of Herzegovina amounted in 1868 to 230,000 souls. Thoemmel (in 1867) gives it as 207,970, of whom 101,348 were Pravoslava or adherents of the Orthodox Greek Church, 56,000 Mahometans, 49,217 Roman Catholics, 1340 Gipsies, and 65 Jews. Dr. Blas (late Prussian consul-general at Sarajevo) fixes the Herzegovinian population in 1872 approximately at 230,000, viz., 130,000 of the Orthodox Greek Church, 55,000 Mussulmans, 42,000 Roman Catholics, 2800 Gipsies, and 600 Jews. Klatsch, however, the most recent Slavonic authority on the province (1878), reduces the total population to 165,421. During the troubles that ensued on the insurrection of 1875, about two thirds of the Christian population fled beyond the Dalmatian and Montenegrin borders, and the fearful mortality among these refugees has largely diminished the Herzegovinian population during the last three years.

With the exception of the Gipsies, the Jews, and a small sprinkling of Osmanli officials, the whole population is Slavonic, the Mahometans being for the most part renegade descendants of the feudal nobility that had formed itself here before the Turkish conquest. Much of the old Slavonic customs and family life still holds among the Herzegovinian Mussulmans, and here as in Bosnia polygamy is unknown. The Herzegovinians are tall, broad, and darker, and of greater personal bravery than the Bosnians, they are brachycephalic. In frame as well as character they approach very nearly to the Montenegrin type, and in the mountain districts they are divided, like the Montenegrins and Albanians, into clans or nahias, whose loyalty is reserved for their own warlords or military chiefs. Their temperament is pre-eminently poetic, in so much that the recent insurrection has already given rise to many epic lays, which are recited to the sound of the guzla or Serbian lute by the national minstrels. The Serbo-Croatian language is spoken in its purest form in Herzegovina, and the Neretva valley has been called the Serbian Val d'Aino. The Orthodox Greek population is chiefly settled in the district east of the Neretva, to the west of that river the population is mostly Roman Catholic, and the Mahometans inhabit the larger towns. According to the *Schematismus* of the Franciscan P. Bakula, the population of the capital Mostar amounted in 1873 to 29,116, of whom 20,806 were Mahometans, 5008 Greeks, and 2821 Roman Catholics. Of the other towns, Ijubaski has, according to Klatsch, a population of about 3000 souls, Stolats 5800, Troska 10,000, Dubrick (now under Montenegro) 4000, and Trebing 3000.

**Natural Features**—Herzegovina, which has been described as the Turkish Switzerland, is divided into a variety of mountain plateaus by the parallel ranges of the Dinara Alps, and the whole country is bisected by the river Neretva, which cleaves its way through the mountains from the Bosnian frontier towards the Adriatic. The valley of the Neretva and its tributaries form the main artery of the province. There is situated the capital Mostar, and a fine highroad, the only avenue of communication between Sarajevo (Bosnia) and the Adriatic, follows the river from the Dalmatian frontier to the Bosnian. The "polyes" or mountain plateaus are the most characteristic feature of the country. The smaller towns and villages group themselves on their level and comparatively fertile surfaces, and the districts or cantons thus formed are walled round by a natural rampart of white limestone mountains. These "polyes" may be described as oases in what is otherwise a desert expanse of mountains. The surface of some, as

notably the great Mostarsko Blato, is marshy, and in spring forms a lake, others are watered by streams which disappear in swallow-holes of the rock, and make them way by underground channels, either to the sea or the Neretva. The most conspicuous example of these is the Tebinstica, which disappears in two swallow-holes in Popovogorje, and after making its way by a subterranean passage through a range of mountains, wells up in the mighty source of Ombla near Rogusa, and issues in undiminished volume to the Adriatic. The climate of Herzegovina is cold in winter and oppressively hot (maximum 100° Fahr in shade) in summer. The sunococe is a prevalent wind, as well as the bora, the fearful north-north-east of Illyria, which, sweeping down the lateral valleys of the Dinaric Alps, overwhelms everything in its path. The snow-fall is slight, and, except on a few of the loftier peaks, the snow soon melts. In the valleys, as that of the Neretva, the flora approaches that of Dalmatia and Southern Italy, and olives, mulberries, figs, melons, pomegranates, grapes, rice, and maize flourish. The Dinaric Alps, which stretch across the province from N W to S E, are as a rule bolder and loftier than those of Bosnia. To the west of the Neretva, indeed, they flanks are in places covered with the forest growth of beech and pine, but north-east of that river they present for the most part a scene of lunar desolation. They are of the Tertiary formation, common to the Adriatic marine geological zone, but their limestone has more dolomitic character than that of the Bosnian ranges. The group of mountains in the north-west end of the Neretva, the Krabac, Lijeta, and Porim Planina, attain altitudes varying from 4000 to 5000 feet, the dolomitic peaks of Oroba, Samoten, and Veliki Cap rise over 6000, Orjen on the Dalmatian Montenegrin frontier 6300, and Mount Domitor, in the tract of Herzegovina now ceded to Montenegro, reaches a height of 8500 feet. The river Neretva is navigable for small steamers as far as Metkovich, the Dalmatian frontier station, and for *trabucos* as far as Chaplina beyond Gabella, but the narrow and rocky bed of the stream beyond this point makes it doubtful whether the navigation can ever be extended as far as Mostar.

**Produce and Industries.**—In mineral wealth Herzegovina cannot compete with Bosnia. Lignite exists in considerable abundance in the Neretva valley near Mostar, at Konjica, and at Stolac. Mineral springs occur near Ljubuska, asphalt towards Metkovich and Drazovo on the Dalmatian frontier. Rice is cultivated in the Trebusat valley and about Ljubuska. Mulberry is the tree raised here by the famous vignerons, which were introduced here by the famous vigner Ali Pasha, but the culture is at present small. The wine of Konjica and Mostar resembles Dalmatian, and might be excellent, and the Trebusat tobacco is celebrated. Previous to the insurrection the chief wealth of the inhabitants consisted in cattle. Roskiewicz estimates the numbers as 100,000 horned cattle, 1,200,000 sheep and goats, and 100,000 swine, but there has been a terrible decrease during the three years of anarchy. Before the insurrection the annual value of the exports of the province, consisting principally of sheep's wool, hides, wax, wine, and tobacco, amounted to about 18,170,000 *pastres* (£163,530). The imports, principally cloth and woollen goods, were estimated at 17,500,000 *pastres* (£157,500).

**History.**—The old Serbian prince of Chelm of Zaslav was incorporated in the banat of Bosnia by the *brn* Stephen in 1398. Afterwards exchanged for Primorje with the King of Hungary, it was annexed by the *brn* Stephen Tvrtko, afterwards first king of Bosnia, who granted it as a fief to his distinguished general Vuk Brankovic. Vuk's grandson, known as Stephen Cosmoza from his birthplace Cosma, took advantage of the weakness of King Tvrtko III. of Bosnia to transfer the immediate suzerainty of his county to the emperor Frederick IV. who in 1440 created him *vojvoda*, or, as his Slavonic subject, borrowing the German word, expressed it *Zemlja*, of St. Sava. Thus and the further title of keeper of St. Sava's

sepulchre he derived from the tomb of the patron saint of Serbia in his monastery of Milasevo. From this time the Slav population of Illyria begins to know the dominions of Cosmoza as the "Herzegovina" or duchy, a general term which included besides the houses Louis of Chelm, the two counts of Slavonia, the counts of Primorje, also governed by the "Herzege". The original *Herzege* govern thus extended from the sea coast of Dalmatia to the confines of Russia. The dukedom was provided on it the pulchritude of Konjica to recognize the suzerainty of the Bosnian king, but it was situated at Mostar, which he greatly enlarged, and which his sons increased the capital of Herzegovina. The third policy of Stephen Cosmoza, which effected an union for the Bogomils on the Turkish frontier, bounded from that house by the identity of a great public king, was greatly instrumental in warding off for a while from the duchy the blow that overwhelmed Bosnia. The duke managed with Bogomil in help to defend Herzegovina from the Turkish invasions, though in 1446 the country was overrun and remained tributary to the sultan's hordes, it was not till 1483, twenty years after the final conquest and extinction of the Bosnian kingdom, that the Turkish Beglerbeg succeeded in dispossessing Stephen Cosmoza's son and successor Duke Vukoslav. The whole country was now incorporated in the Sandjakate of Bosnia. At different times the Venetians succeeded in recovering for Christendom parts of Herzegovina, and by the peace of Covento in 1699 and that of Passarowitz in 1718 Primorje on the Herzegovinian coast land, Castelmoro, and Mirano were finally merged in Venetian Dalmatia, and thus descended to the Austrians. The only remaining strips of Herzegovina on the coast, the narrow enclaves of Kikla and Metkovich, were left to the Turks by Russian dread of Venetian conflict, supported by the good offices of England. The history of Herzegovina under the Turks is to a great extent a blank, the victims of Herzegovina who were not Moslems motivated by their quest and the Moslems of Bosnia suspicious the defiant attitude adopted by the duke of St. Sava to his Bosnian suzerain. Feudalism under a Moslem government continued to survive here. The scribes, begis, or the *metkovich* of the Moslem who had apostrophized to Islam. They kept their medieval castles, their banners, their medieval titles and patents of nobility. They exacted feudal services from their vassals and tax farmers. They indulged in the medieval prison for hawking. One of the Malakmetan nobles, Ali, aga of Stolac, did such good service for Sultan Mahmud in his struggle with the Moslem magnates that he was made *voivode* of Herzegovina, which was held for a while from despotism and on the Bosnian government. The reform Sultan Mahmud did not by any means remove the grievances of the Slav population of Herzegovina. The sultan had now to satisfy the extortion of imperial tax farmers and taxmen as well as the demands of the feudal lords. The begis and agas continued to exact their lord of labour and a third of the produce, the central Government levied a tithe which at the date of the outbreak had become an eighth. These kinds of cattle tax, the tax for exemption from military service levied on every adult in arms, forced labour on the roads, forced loan of horses, a heavy excise on grapes and tobacco, and a variety of lesser taxes combined to burden the Christian peasants, but what was more galling than the amount, was the manner in which these various taxes were collected—the imposition of a part of tax farmers and execution, and the brutal forms of the scribes who were quartered on the smallest villages. Meanwhile the Moslems, the scribes, the tax farmers, and the scribes, and the position of his minister's hand on the cross. The public bankruptcy of Turkey put the last nail on the taxid's coffin. On July 31, 1878, the villagers of Novosvij, which gives its name to a mountain plateau east of Mostar, upon which the village of the tax-farmers, and goaded to madness by the outrage inflicted on them by the scribes and basha beaus, rose against the oppressors. The manifestation rapidly spread through Herzegovina and thence to Bosnia. The Herzegovins, the *metkovich* of Pavlovich, Socca, Ljubanichitch, and others held out for a year against all the forces that Turkey could dispatch against them, and in two struggles in the gorge of Muskotitsa alone the Turks lost over 8000 men. In July 1878 the Turkish sultan, in the midst of the struggle, the Russo-Turkish war followed, and in the treaty of Berlin the government of Bosnia and Herzegovina was ceded to Austria-Hungary, while Nikitch and the country about Mount Domitor were detached from Herzegovina and given to Montenegro. On July 31, 1878, the Austrian troops crossed the *Herzege* govern frontier, and the news caused the Malakmetan fanatics to a desperate effort. On August 31 the Malakmetan of Mostar, and its the example of Sarajevo, and when they themselves were joined by the Turkish Government, 1000 *metkovich*, murdered the Turkish governor and officials, and proclaimed a *velia* head of a provincial government. The Austrians, however, pressed forward, and crushing some inefficient efforts at resistance entered the city of Mostar. By the 29th of September the reduction of Herzegovina was completed by the capture of the hillfort of Klobuk. Since the completion of the occupation, the government of the province has been under the military government of Sarajevo, controlled by the foreign office at Vienna. The sultan still remains sovereign *de jure*, not

have the Austro-Hungarian administrations as yet been able to regulate the agrarian difficulty which lies at the root of all the evils that have afflicted the province.

*Admiral's Memoirs* *Contado dei Cheloni* (in his *Storia degli Stati*, Paris, 1801), *Spaziergänge, &c.*, *de Bononia Bayna*, Leyden, 1717, Schumacher, *Politisches Geschichte des Königreichs Bosnien u. Herzegovina*, Vienna, 1787, *Palazzo, Illyrisches Archivum*, vol. IV, Anna Bonn, *Les Princes d'Europe*, Su G. Volkmar, *Zeitschrift und Monatshefte*, London, 1848, Korybutovich, *Bosnia, Belgrade*, 1861, Thomsen, *Beziehungen der Illyrischen Provinzen*, Vienna, 1867, Roskovec, *Wieder unter Bosnien u. Herzegovina*, Vienna, 1868, *Le Bonheur*, *Le Progrès*, Paris, 1875, and "Illyrische u. Herzegovina" in *Zeitschrift des Vereins der Wiss.*, 1876, *Evans, Thomsen Bosnien und Herzegovina*, London, 1876, and *Illyrische Provinzen*, London, 1878, Stülpnagel, *Herzegovina und die lateinische Sprache*, London, 1877, In *Die Provinzen von Bosnien u. Herzegovina*, Berlin, 1877, Klich, *Bosnia, Agium*, 1878, *Pravda, Die Occupirten Provinzen u. d. Herzegovina*, Vienna, 1878, *Correspondence respecting affairs in Bosnia and Herzegovina*, issued by the English Foreign Office, 1876, &c., and Reports of Consuls Holmes and Bismarck.

(A. J. B.)

HEINZICHENBUSCH, or HILFENROSENBUCH See BOWEN.

HIPPEKTEL, GEORGE LOUIS (1818-1874), German author and journalist, was born August 12, 1818, in Halle, where his father, a man of considerable distinction, was a preacher and inspector of schools. Hesiakel studied history and philosophy in Halle, Jena, and Berlin, and devoted himself in early life to journalism and literature. In 1848 he settled in Berlin, where he lived till his death, February 26, 1874, achieving a considerable reputation both as a writer of books and as editor of the *Neu Preussische Zeitung*. He attempted many different kinds of literary work, the most ambitious being perhaps his patriotic songs, of which he published a volume during the revolutionary excitement of 1848-49. Another collection—*Neue Preussische Lieder*—appeared in 1864 after the Danish war, and there was a third in 1870—*Gegen die Franosen, Preussische Kämpfe und Kriegerlieder*. Among his novels may be mentioned *Der Finkler* (1864) and *Der Schultheiss vom Zeyst* (1875). By far the best known of his works is his life of Prince Bismarck—*Das Buch vom Fürsten Bismarck* (3d edition, enlarged, 1873). This biography, which has been translated into English by R. R. H. Mackenzie, is written from the point of view of an ardent admirer of the great chancellor. It is of no value as an estimate of his political importance, but it has acquired a certain popularity because of the mass of more or less interesting anecdotes which the author has brought together respecting both the public and the private life of his hero. It has lately, however, been raised down into the shade by the more unusual revisions of Herr Bismarck.

HIPODAMI, the father of didactic poetry in Greece, is placed by Hesiodos after Homer, but not more than 400 years before his own epoch, and, though the settlement of the question must depend on the internal evidence of the Hesiodic poems, this testimony is corroborated by the Parian marble and the historian Ephoros. He probably flourished about nine centuries before Christ. His father had migrated from Cyme in Aolia to Boeotia, exchanging there a seafaring life for agriculture, and Hesiod and his brother, a scapegrace named Perses, were born at Aeneia, near the base of Helicon and under the mountains which enclose Boeotia. Of this locality—where claim to be his birthplace was disputed by the city Orchomenos on the score of possession of his relics—Hesiod's description differs from that of modern topographers in pronouncing the climate unequal, with alternations of excessive heat and cold, but the poet's prejudices may have been influenced by the injustices of Boeotian law-courts, and it was at any rate here, as he fed his father's flocks beside Helicon, that he received his commission from the Muses to be their prophet and poet—a commission which he recognized by dedicating to them an earnest tripod won by him in a contest of song at funeral

games in Encheon, and extant at Helicon in the age of Pausanias (*Theog.* 20-34, Pausan. ix, 31, § 3). But to this call were linked, no doubt, literary antecedents in Aolia, as well as local associations of music and poetry in Hellas. His earliest poem, the famous *Works and Days*, embodies the experiences of his life as a field, and interwoven with episodes of fable, allegory, and personal history, forms a sort of Boeotian shepherd's calendar. The first portion is an ethical enforcement of honest labour and disavowal of stifle and idleness (1-383), the second consists of hints and rules as to husbandry (384-764), and the third is a religious calendar of the months, with remarks on the days most lucky or the contrary for rural or nautical employments. The connecting link of the whole poem is the author's advice to his brother, who appears to have heeded the corrupt judges to deprive Hesiod of his already scanty inheritance, and to whom, as he wasted his substance lounging in the agora, the poet more than once returned good for evil, though he tells him there will be a limit to this unmerited kindness. In the *Works and Days* the episodes which rise above an even didactic level are the "Creation and Equipment of Pandora," the "Five Ages of the World," and the much admired "Description of Winter" (by some critics judged post-Hesiodic). It is in the *Works and Days*, especially there, we glean indications of Hesiod's rank and condition in life, that of a stay-at-home farmer of the lower class, whose sole experience of the sea was a single voyage of 40 yards across the Euripus, and an old-fashioned bachelor whose misgiving views and prejudices against matrimony have been conjecturally traced to his brother Perses having a wife as extravagant as himself.

The other poem attributed to Hesiod or his school which has come down in great part to modern times is *The Theogony*, a work of grander scope, inspired alike by older traditions and abundant local associations. It seems that no more congenial task could have suggested itself to the Aeanian shepherd than to work into system, as none had essayed to do before, the floating legends of the gods and goddesses and then offspring. This task Herodotus attributes to him, and he is quoted by Plato in his *Symposium* (p. 178 B) as the author of this *Theogony*. The first to question his claim to this distinction was Pausanias, the geographer (200 A D). The Alexandrian grammarians had no doubt on the subject, and indications of the hand that wrote the *Works and Days* may be found in the severe structure and woman, in the high esteem for the wealth-giver Pluto, and in coincidences of verbal expression. If, too, as commentators assert, the proper beginning of the *Works and Days* is at verse 11—

Ὀφείδ' ἀνὰ μύθων ἔθνη Ἐπίχρον γένος, ἀνὰ τῇ γαῖᾳ  
ἔλκε δέω,

it is laid to avoid the conclusion that the poet there corrects a statement made in his *Theogony* (225), where he had described Eris, the daughter of Night, as one and indivisible. One thing is clear, that, as Mr Grote puts it, it was the aim of Hesiod, or the member of his school who composed the *Theogony*, "to cast the divine functions into a systematic sequence,—so welding into intelligible coherence the genealogies and genealogies of the deities of Hellas, whom Homer had dealt with in passing and scattered notices only. The *Theogony* consists of three divisions—(1) a cosmogony, or creation, (2) a theogony proper, recounting the history of the dynasties of Zeus and Cronus, and (3) a brief and abruptly terminated herogony, or generation of heroes by immortal sire from mortal mothers, the starting-point not improbably of the Hesiodic poem, the *Evans*, or "Catalogue of Women," of which all but a few fragments are lost. Prefaced by an account of the Muses' visit to their land, the *Theogony*

proceeds, from the spontaneous generation of Erebos and Night from Chaos, to detail a cosmogonic order at first corresponding with the Mosiac. The first rule of creation, Uranus, is dissolved and destroyed by Cronus, and Cronus in turn by his sixth son by Rhea, Zeus, but the chrouching of Titans and Cyclopes, of Neleids and Oceanids, divine rivers and water nymphs, defies even the briefest enumeration. The poet has interwoven several episodes of rare merit, such as the contest of Zeus and the Olympian gods with the Titans, or the description of the prison house in which the vanquished Titans are confined, with the Giants for keepers and Day and Night for janitors (735 seq.) Notable also is the version of the legend of Pandora given in the *Theogony* as compared with that in the *Works and Days*. The *Theogony* omits the part played in the earlier poem by Epimetheus in accepting Pandora at Jove's hands in spite of the counsel of Prometheus, as well as the mention of the basket of evils from which in the *Works and Days* Pandora lifts the lid with such woeful results.

The only other approach to a poem of Hesiod is the so called *Shield of Hercules*, a piece of patchwork with which interpolators have done their worst. The opening verses are attributed by a nameless grammarian to the fourth book of *Eclogæ*. The theme of the piece is the expedition of Hercules and Iolus against the robber Cycans, but its main object apparently is to describe the shield of Hercules (141–317). C. O. Müller does not think this description worthy of a place beside Homer's shield of Achilles in *Il. vii.*, and recognizes in it the genuine spirit of the Hesiodic school. Trifles and fragments of other lost poems of Hesiod have come down to us didactic, as the *Mæxims of Chiron*, or genealogic, as the *Ægymnis*, and mythic, as the *Marriage of Cyge* and the *Descent of Theseus to Hades*.

A strong characteristic of Hesiod's style is his sententious and proverbial philosophy (as in *Works and Days*, 24–5, 40, 218, 345, 371). There is naturally less of this in the *Theogony*, yet there too not a few sentiments, like the form of the saw or adage. With the poet's history, apart from the evidence of his poems, we have little acquaintance. There is reason to suppose that in later life he removed from Ascra to Oichomenus, where, according to Pausanias, were his sepulchre and epitaph. Tradition has assigned a tragical ending to a life seemingly placid and unemotional, but the story that he met a violent death near the Locrian Cicones in the territory of Naupactus, by reason of an intrigue with a sister of his host, or a guilty knowledge of such intrigue, is probably valueless except as evidence of the long-windedness of Hesiod in Locris and Boeotia of Fœdel, *Die Sage vom Tode Hesiods*, Leipzig, 1879). The poet will be remembered as the first of didactic poets, the accredited systematizer of Greek mythology, and the rough but not unpoetical sketched of the lines on which Virgil wrought out his exquisitely finished *Georgics*.

Among the older editions of the Hesiodic poems may be mentioned those published at Venice in 1495 and 1537, and those of Housman (Leipzig, 1822), Schenkl (Leipzig, 1840), Gervinus (Amst. 1701), Robinson (Ox. 1737), Lohm (Leipzig, 1840, new ed. 1868), Schumann (Bail. 1869), Kochly and Kinkel (Leip. 1870), Flach (Bail. 1871). The *Works and Days* has been edited separately by Spolin (Leip. 1819), Vollhart (Kiel, 1844), Lennep (Amst. 1847), and the *Theogony* by F. A. Wolf (Halle, 1788), Lennep (Amst. 1838), Schumann (Bail. 1869), and Flach (Bail. 1879). The fragments were collected by Matthiæ (Leip. 1846). The many disputed questions associated with the name of Hesiod have given rise to a vast critical and polemical literature. In regard to the language of the poems the student may consult W. Gernm, "Krit. Beiträge zur Lehre vom Dialecten" in *Chiron, Studien*, i. Dr. H. Flach, *Die dialektische Dignamie des Hesiodos* (Bail. 1876), Ann. Bach, *Die Dialect des Hesiodos* (Leip. 1876). The composition and system

of the *Theogony* have been investigated by Kock (Bail. 1812), Gaidard (Kiel, 1856), Wolkow (Kilbat, 1857), Lottschütz (Wien, 1867), Schumann (Bail. 1868), Flach (Leip. 1871), Fritz (Bail. 1871), and Flach (Leip. 1879), and special studies on the *Works and Days* have been contributed by Thesle (Bail. 1815), Hanka (Götting. 1838), Stütz (Leip. 1869), Bette (Münster, 1873), and Cramer (Leip. 1874). Works of more general criticism are Cramer, Thesle, *Über die Geschichte des Hesiodos* (Halle, 1817), and Henmann, *Belege über Homer und Hesiod* (Halle, 1817), Thesle, *Über die Geschichte des Hesiodos* (Münster, 1813), 1. p. 1. Mühlhoff, "Studies in Greek Literature," in *Philologus*, iv. The MSS are discussed by Flach, *Die beiden ältesten Handschriften des Hesiodos* (Leip. 1877), Kinkel, *De Hesiodi nominibus et ætate* (Halle, 1860), Wobke, "Über eine neue Hesiod-schrift" in *Stimmen* of Vienna Academy, 1879. There are English translations of the Hesiodic poems by Cooke (Leip. 1728), Litten (Leip. 1818), and Brink (Leip. 1866), German translations by J. F. Voss (Halle, 1806) and Ullrich (Bail. 1867), French translations by Leconte de Lisle (Paris, 1869) and Vitet (Paris, 1879–81), and Italian by Chiodi (Cosenza, 1867) and Parzola (Milan, 1878).

**HYPERBIDES**, maidens whose number is variously given as three, four, or seven, who guarded the golden apples which Eath gave Hera at her marriage to Zeus. They live far away in the west at the borders of Ocean, in other words at that point of heaven where the sun sets. Hence the sun (according to Minneius) sails in the golden bowl that Hephestus made from the abode of the Hyperbides to the land where he rises again. According to other accounts they dwell among the Hyperboreans, who live in quietude and calm, i. e., the land of the ever-blooming scents of them that have died on earth. The golden apples grow on a tree which is guarded by an ever-watchful dragon. The sun is often in German and Latinian legends described as the apple that hangs on the tree of the nightly heaven, like the fleece of the sunman that was sacrificed and skinned, and the dragon, the envious power, keeps the light back from men till some beneficent power takes it from him. Hercules is the hero who hangs back the golden apples to mankind again. Laila, i. e., the sea, he first applies to the Nymphs, who help him to learn where the garden is. Arrived there he slays the dragon and carries the apples to Argos, and finally, like Pegasus, he gives them to Athens. The Hyperbides are, like the Sirens, beautiful singers, *Λυγροὶ ὄντες*. They are said to be the daughters of Atlas, or, according to other accounts, they are the children of Erebos and Night, or Phrynos and Ceto, and are thus sisters of the Gæas, who also receive into their care the setting sun. Hyperbides are introduced into the Argonautic legend, but it is doubtful if this is really antique, or only a poetic embellishment of the wanderings of the Argonauts.

**IIESS**. Amongst numerous German artists of this name, the following particularly deserve attention:

**HEINRICH MARIA IISS—VON IISS**, after his received a patent of personal nobility—was born at Bruchsal in 1798, and brought up to the profession of art by his father, the engraver Karl Ernst Christoph IISS. Karl IISS had already acquired a name when in 1806 the elector of Bavaria, having been raised to a kingship by Napoleon, transferred the Düsseldorf academy and gallery to Munich. Karl IISS accompanied the academy to its new home, and there continued the education of his children. In time Munich IISS became sufficiently master of his art to attract the attention of King Maximilian. He was sent with a stipend to Rome, where a copy which he made of Raphael's *Parasceus*, and the study of great examples of monumental design, probably caused him to become a painter of ecclesiastical subjects on a large scale. In 1825 he was made professor of painting and director of all the art collections at Munich. He decorated the Altar, the Glyptothek, and the Allerheiligenkapelle at Munich with figures, and his cartoons were selected for glass windows in the cathedrals of Cologne and Ratisbon. Then came the grand cycle of frescos in the basilica of St. Boniface at Munich,

and the monumental picture of the Virgin and Child enthroned between the four doctors, and reserving the homage of the four patrons of the Munich churches (now in the Pinakothek). His last work, the Lord's Supper, was found unfinished in his atelier after his death in 1863. Before testing his strength as a composer Heinrich Hess tried gone, an example of which is the Pilgrims catering Rome, now in the Munich Gallery. He also executed portraits, and twice had sittings from Thorwaldsen (Pinakothek and Schack collections). But his fame will rest on the frescos representing scenes from the Old and New Testament, in the Allerheiligenkapelle, and the episodes from the life of St Boniface and other German apostles in the basilica of Munich. Here he holds rank second to none but Overbeck in monumental painting, being always true to a truth though mindful of the traditions of Christian art, earnest in its simple in feeling, yet lifelike and powerful in expression. Through him and his pupils the sentiment of religious art has been preserved and extended in the Munich school, and will not easily die out.

PETER HESS—afterwards Von Hess—was born at Dusseldorf in 1793, and accompanied his younger brother Heinrich Maria to Munich in 1806. Being of an age to receive vivid impressions, he felt the stirring impulses of the time, and became a painter of skirmishes and battles. In 1813-15 he was employed on the staff of General Wrede, who commanded the Bavarian troops in the military operations which led to the abdication of Napoleon, and there he gained novel experiences of war and a taste for extensive travel. In the course of years he successively visited Austria, Switzerland, and Italy. On Prince Otto's election to the Greek throne King Louis sent Peter Hess to Athens to gather materials for pictures of the war of liberation. The sketches which he then made were placed, forty in number, in the Pinakothek, after being copied in wax on a large scale (and little to the edification of German feeling) by Nitzsch, in the northern galleries of the Hofgarten at Munich. King Otto's entrance into Nafpion was the subject of a large and crowded canvas now in the Pinakothek, which Hess executed in person. From there, and from battleships on a scale of great size in the Royal Palace, as well as from military episodes executed for the emperors Nicholas, and the battle of Waterloo now in the Munich Gallery, we gather that Hess was a clever painter of horses. His conception of subject was lifelike, and his drawing invariably correct, but his style is not so congenial to modern taste as that of the painters of touch. He finished almost too carefully with thin medium and pointed tools, and on that account he lacked to a certain extent the boldness of Hippolyte Varot, to whom he was not unaptly compared. He died suddenly, full of honour, at Munich, in April 1871. Several of his genre pictures, horse hunts, and brilliant scenes may be found in the gallery of Munich.

KARL HESS, the third son of Karl Christoph Hess, born at Dusseldorf in 1801, was also taught by his father, who hoped that he would obtain distinction as an engraver. Karl, however, after engraving one plate after Adrian Ostade, turned to painting under the guidance of Wagenbauer of Munich, and then studied under his elder brother Peter. But historical composition proved to be as contrary to his taste as engraving, and he gave himself exclusively at last to illustrations of peasant life in the hill country of Bavaria. He became clever alike in representing the people, the animals, and the landscape of the Alps, and with constant means of reference to nature in the neighbourhood of Reichenhall, where he at last resided, he never produced anything that was not impressed with the true stamp of a kindly realism. Some of his pictures in the museum of Munich will serve as examples of his manner. He died at Reichenhall on the 16th of November 1874.

HESSE, or HESSIA (in German *Hessen*), an old country of Germany situated on both banks of the Rhine and Main, north and south of Frankfurt, has had different boundaries at different times. Its greatest length was about 95 miles, while its breadth has varied considerably. Several detached portions of territory were also included in Hesse.

The earliest recorded inhabitants of the district were the Chatti, whose chief settlement Mattium, probably near Gudensberg, was destroyed by Germanicus in 15 A.D. The Chatti, merged in the Fianke, migrated westward, and that place in Hesse was taken by the Saxons. Among these, when conquered by the German kings, several "gans" or earldoms were founded, some of whose possessors after the death of Charlemagne rose to great power. Two families—those of Wernze and of Giso, count of Gudensberg—became later the most important. In 1130 the heiress of the Gisos married the landgrave of Thuringia, who thus became the overlord of Hesse. In 1247 the Thuringian male line became extinct, and Hesse, along with the other possessions of the landgrave, was involved in a prolonged war of succession. In 1263 Sophia, duchess of Brabant and niece of the last landgrave, received by treaty the landgraviate of Hesse, as it was from that time called, and two years later resigned it in favour of her son, Henry the Child, the ancestor of the present house of Hesse. Till the death of Philip the Magnanimous in 1567, Hesse continued to be regarded as one state, though sometimes shared by two rulers, but at that date Philip's four sons divided the landgraviate into Hesse-Cassel, Hesse-Marburg, Hesse-Rheinfels, and Hesse-Darmstadt. Of these the second and third lapsed by inheritance in 1583 and 1604 to the others, which became the chief lines. The small landgraviate of Hesse-Homburg was formed in 1596 of part of Hesse-Darmstadt. Hesse-Darmstadt, since the annexation of the other two to Prussia in 1866, has been the only independent part of Hesse left, and generally receives the common name.

Hesse-Nassau is a province of Prussia, formed in 1866 from parts of Hesse-Cassel and the dukedom of Nassau. Hesse-Philippsthal was a collateral line of the house of Hesse-Cassel, founded in 1530, and extinct in 1820. Hesse-Darfeld, Hesse-Butzbach, Hesse-Rothemann, Hesse-Rumpenheim, and Hesse-Wanfried were collateral lines of little importance.

For further information see Tschudi, *Aufschlüssliche Geschichte des Hessens, 1777-80*; Wernke, *Hessische Landeshauptstadt, 1788* and 1800; Pflaume, *Ueber den Hessischen Staat und die alte und alte Geschichte des Chattiischen Stammes*, 1868; Hoffmeister, *Historisch-geographisches Handbuch über alle Linien des Regenten Hauses Hessens, 1874*; Rommel, *Geschichte von Hesse*, 1820-58, 10 vols.; Heyne, *Hessische Kirchen- und Klostergeschichte*, 1876.

HESSE-CASSEL, in German KURHESSEN, &c., Electoral Hesse, now forming the government district of Cassel in the Prussian province of Nassau, was till 1866 a landgraviate and electorate of Germany, consisting of several detached masses of territory, to the N.E. of Frankfurt-on-the-Main. It contained a superficial area of 3699 square miles, and its population in 1864 was 745,063.

The line of Hesse-Cassel was founded by William IV., surnamed the Wise, eldest son of Philip the Magnanimous. On his father's death in 1567 he received one half of Hesse, with Cassel as his capital, and thus formed the landgraviate of Hesse-Cassel. Additions were made to it by inheritance from his brother's possessions, while, as compensation for losses sustained in the Thirty Years' War, a large part of the countship of Schaumburg and other territory was acquired towards the middle of the 17th century. Charles I., who succeeded the throne in 1670, was the first ruler who adopted the system of hiring his soldiers out to foreign powers as mercenaries, as a means of supporting the national finances. Frede- rich, the next landgrave, and became by marriage king of Sweden, and on his death was succeeded in the landgraviate by his brother, William VIII., who fought as an ally of England during the Seven Years' War. Frederick II., who had become a Roman Catholic, 22,000 Hessian troops were hired by

England for about 23,191,000, to assist in the war against the North American colonies. The sign of the next Landgrave, William IV., was an important epoch in the history of Hesse-Cassel. Ascending the throne in 1786, he took part in the war against France a few years before, but in 1796 was obliged to give the treaty of Basel. For the loss in 1801 of his possessions on the left bank of the Rhine he was in 1803 compensated by some of the former French territory round Mainz, and at the same time was raised to the dignity of Elector by Napoleon I. In 1807 he made a treaty of neutrality with Napoleon, but after the battle of Jena the latter, suspecting William's designs, occupied his country, and expelled him. Hesse-Cassel was then added to Jerome Bonaparte's new kingdom of Westphalia, but after the battle of Leipzig in 1813 the French were driven out and the elector restored. By the Vienna congress, which he intrigued in vain to be recognized as a king, several changes in the extent of his dominion were made. On his return to his sovereignty, William promised to give his people a new and popular constitution, but just as the draft was ready to become law by his signature, he died back, dissolved the diet, and continued to rule without again summoning it. His son, William II., who succeeded in 1821, pursued the same line of policy, and ruled on the government without reference to the diet. The discontent which this conduct created was intensified by the elector's shameless connexion with the countess of Bentheim. His daughter took place, and the elector, after attempting to pacify his people, appointed his son as regent in 1831, and withdrew to Frankfurt, where he died in 1847. The regent, becoming Elector Frederick William I., studied the Constitution of 1848, made many promises to the people, and carried some of them into effect, but on the rejection of 1850, which spread over all Germany, watched at the last instant for returning to the former order of things. He attempted to hurry the new constitution, but was opposed by his chambers, but the emotion thus excited was so great that he was fain to retire to Wilhelmshaus, along with his very unpopular minister, Hasenpflug. He induced the elect of princes then assembled at Frankfurt to support his claims, and he began to threaten that Hesse-Cassel to enforce obedience. Prussia, in alarm, immediately crossed the northern part of the country, and a civil war was busily avoided by arrangement. The elector, however, seriously changed his policy, and the next summer was obliged to resign in dispute between the chambers and the Government. In 1866 Hesse-Cassel joined Austria against Prussia. Prussian troops immediately overran the country, and the treaty with Austria was annulled. He annexed to the Prussian kingdom. The elector was created a prisoner to Steinfurt, and was only released on resigning his claims to the throne of Hesse-Cassel. He died in 1875.

See Wappenstein, *Einleitung zu den Preussischen regeln*, 1850, Roth, *Geschichte von Hessen-Kassel*, 1836; *Graf, Die Verfassungs-Laufe in Kassel*, 1851, and works under Hesse.

**HESSÉ-DARMSTADT**, GRAND-DUCHY or, the actual Hesse of the present day, is a state of Germany situated on the Rhine and Main, between Prussia on the north and Baden on the south. It consists of two large and several small detached portions of territory. The more northerly of the large portions forms the province of Oberrheessen, and is completely surrounded by Prussia. The other, divided by the Rhine into the provinces of Starkenburg and Rheinhessen, is bounded on the N. by Hesse Nassau, on the W. by the Rhine Palatinate, on the E. by Prussia, on the S. by Baden, and on the E. by Baden and Bavaria. The extent of the duchy is about 2355 square miles. Oberrheessen is mountainous, having the Vogelsberg in the east with Taunstein (2879 feet) as the highest summit in the country, and the Haunsberg, a branch of the Taunus, in the south west. In the south east of Starkenburg is the Odenwald. Rheinhessen is occupied by fertile hills. The chief rivers are the Rhine, Main, Neckar, Lahn, and Fulda, with their tributaries. There are no lakes, but mineral springs abound in all the provinces. The climate is pleasant and mild in the river valleys and plains, but severe on the heights, especially in Oberrheessen. Besides the usual domestic animals, deer of various kinds, wild swine, foxes, martens, and others are found. Agriculture, including the breeding of horses and cattle, is actively encouraged by Government, and is the principal industry of the people. Forestry and vine-growing are also important, the latter being practised almost exclusively in Rheinhessen. The principal crops are millet, buckwheat, oats, and potatoes, but rape (for oil), hemp, flax, tobacco,

and fruit are also cultivated. The manufactures embrace leather (enamelled and coloured), tobacco, cigars, shoes, furniture, pocket books and similar goods, chemicals, matches, machinery, and various textile fabrics. Mining is carried on chiefly in Oberrheessen. Iron, copper, manganese, graphite, lignite, salt, marble, and clay are the principal minerals, which are worked for home consumption.

In 1878 there were produced in Hesse 45,300 tons of lignite, 91,724 tons of iron ore, and 13,200 tons of salt, representing in value about £62,100. Trade is tolerably important in the various industries, and is shown in the industrial census of 1875—Ironfoundries, 292; shohmen, 65; miners, 1550; workers in stone, clay, glass, 4715; in metals, 8266; in machines, instrument, &c., 7202; in chemical industries, 2151; in lighting materials, soap, resins, &c., 1190; in textile industries, 8274; in paper and leather, 7600; in wood, 11,112; in food and drink, 10,923; in dress and washing, 21,629; in building, 1291; in polygraphic industries, 1291; in artistic industries, 412; in mercantile business, 17,593; in conveyance, 2273; in lodging and boarding, 6016—total, 134,383. The people are well educated, of the recruits in 1878-79 only 21 per cent were unable either to read or write. There is a university at Giessen, and the schools, ordinary, technical, and theological, throughout the country are very numerous. The Protestant religion predominates, though the Roman Catholic faith is also recognized by the state. Darmstadt is the capital, Offenbach is the chief manufacturing town, Mainz has perhaps the most active trade. The other chief towns are Alsfeld, Lauterbach, Friedberg, Jungen, Bensheim, and Worms. The population in 1875 was 843,218. The government since 1820 has been a constitutional hereditary monarchy, assisted by two chambers, modified in 1856—the one of its members, mostly from among the nobility, the other of popular representatives, elected indirectly. The chambers must meet at least once every three years. The ministry of three is responsible to the nation. Hesse is represented in the imperial federal council by 3 votes, and in the reichstag by 9. The annual revenue for the finance period 1876-78 was £272,375, and the expenditures £273,481. The estimated annual revenue for the period 1879-82 is £1,011,762, and the estimated expenditure £857,121. The public debt in 1879 was £2,041,397, chiefly incurred for railways. For additional statistics see GERMANY.

George I., youngest son of Philip the Magnanimous, received on his father's death in 1567 the appointment of *Kaiserlicher Rat*, and, selecting Darmstadt as his residence, became the founder of the Hesse-Darmstadt line. Additions to the territory were made both in his reign and in that of his son, Louis V. The landgraviate, as it was at first styled, suffered severely from war and its attendant famines and plagues. The Thirty Years' War was a source of occasion with Hesse-Cassel, and the Seven Years' War did little to blow it to its prosperity. Louis X., who succeeded his father in 1790, involved it in further contests. Joining at first the allies against France, he was compelled in 1793 by the latter power to sign a treaty of neutrality. By the treaty of Lunéville he gave up his possessions on the left bank of the Rhine, receiving in compensation 15,000 men's larger district on the right bank. From 1805 till 1813 he was compelled to supply Napoleon with a contingent of troops against the other Germans. In 1806, as member of the Confederation of the Rhine, he assumed the title of grand duke. Louis I. of Hesse. After the battle of Leipzig in 1813, when Napoleon was defeated, Louis again joined the allies. By the decision of the Vienna congress in 1815 considerable changes in his dominions were made, but though he was forced to recognize the independence of Hesse-Rhomberg, which since the beginning of the century had been incorporated with Hesse-Darmstadt, his title of grand duke was confirmed. Within his country a great desire for political liberty had been making itself apparent, and in 1820 the grand duke promulgated a new constitution. This was rejected by the people, and attempts were made in vain by successive diets to frame a constitution pleasing alike to the ruler and the ruled. Louis II.

succeeded his father in 1830. His policy in no degree lessened the popular discontent. His son Louis III., who succeeded in 1848, floundered by the events in Paris of that year, and by commotions in his own country, gave way a little, but under the reaction of 1850 he again returned matters to their old state. Since that time, although no radical change has been effected, the liberal party in the state has been steadily gaining ground. In 1866 Hesse-Darmstadt supported Austria against Prussia, with the result that it had to pay a heavy indemnity and cede certain provinces, including the lately acquired Hesse-Homburg, to Prussia. In 1867 it withdrew the North German Confederation, and in 1870 the German Confederation. Louis IV. succeeded his uncle in 1871.

A list of works on Hesse that is found in Wagner's *Lebens- und Handbuch für Geschichte und Landeskunde von Hessen*, 1811; H. von Klenze, *Geschichte des Grossherzogthums Hessen*, 4 vols., 1844-45; T. Müller, *Hessen, geologische und statistische Beschreibung*, 1819-20; Hübner, *Geschichte des Grossherzogthums Hessen*, 1817; Dittmerich, *Das Grossherzogthum Hessen im Vergleich mit Frankreich*, 1875; Volz, *Überblick des geologischen Verhältnisses des Grossherzogthums Hessen*, 1872; and works under HESSE.

**HESSE-HOMBURG**, a former landgraviate of Germany, consisted of two parts, the province of Homburg von der Höhe, on the right bank of the Rhine, and the lordship of Merseburg (added in 1815), on the left bank, to the north of Frankfurt-on-the-Main. It comprehended an area of 106 square miles, and its population in 1864 was 27,374. Homburg now forms part of the Prussian government district of Wiesbaden, and Merseburg of the government district of Coblenz.

It or Homburg was formed into a separate fief in 1066, by Frederick I., son of George I. of Brunswick. By his terms it was divided into the parts Hesse-Homburg and Hesse-Homburg-Burgheim, but the latter returned by inheritance to the original line in 1501. In the reign of Frederick V. (1751-1820) Hesse-Homburg was in 1806 incorporated with Hesse-Darmstadt, but that state was obliged by the Vienna congress to recognize the independence of Hesse-Homburg, which at the same time was increased by the district of Merseburg. Frederick V. became a member of the German Confederation in 1817. After his death, his five sons successively filled the throne. The last, Ferdinand II., died, leaving a childless constitution to his people, but in the reign of his son, Louis IV., who died in 1836, the landgraviate devolved by inheritance to the grand duke of Hesse-Darmstadt, but in September of the same year that ruler was forced to cede it to Prussia, in consequence of having supported Austria in the Seven Weeks' War.

**HESSEIAN FLY**, a name originally given in the United States in 1776 during the War of Independence to a small fly very destructive to wheat, supposed to have been brought over in straw by the Hessian troops employed on the British side. It is a species of *Ceratomyza*, described under the name of *crataeva* by the American entomologist Say, and belonging to the Dipterous family *Ceratomyzidae*, the numerous members of which produce galls, distortions, and other injuries in the plants they attack. It was often thought that this insect occurred in England, but the indigenous English wheat-midge, also very destructive, is an allied species, *Diplosis tritici*. A species found in Hungary and Germany, where it has committed great damage, has been supposed to be the true Hessian fly, which has also been recorded from Minorca and Naples. Cohn notices its ravages in Silesia, and Kunster in Austria, and Kilenbach (who identifies *C. crataeva*, Loew, with it) says it is much less common in Germany, and that it originally came from Europe. Nevertheless, many good authorities have considered that the destructive European fly is not identical with the North American insect, though closely allied to it, and of similar habits. In the United States this minute midge has been a deadly scourge at times, even to the extent of causing local famines. The female lays 20 or 30 eggs in a crevice of the leaf of the young plant, and the larva when hatched works their way between the leaf and the stalk, till they come to a joint, a little below the surface, where they remain, head down, sucking the sap, and thus pump enclosed in a covering, this is known as the "flax-seed" condition. The injury occasioned is not detected until the plant grows higher. There are

two broods every year, one reaching the fly state in May, the other in August or early in September, as the fly only lives a few weeks, whilst that is sown so late as not to come up until the second brood has disappeared excepted harm. The usual result of the attack is that small aborted ears only are formed, the few grains of which shrivel and will scarcely ripen, the straw also being of inferior quality. The perfect insect is smaller than the common gnat, which it somewhat resembles, and from which its size and more simple antennae distinguish it. The larva are spindle-shaped and reddish white, with the intestinal canal showing through the skin when full grown, they are about one-seventh of an inch long, and are provided with small hooks near the head, at this stage they group themselves in regular rings round the stem attacked. A very minute natural parasite, *Semotilus detritator*, belonging to the division *Pteromalidae* of the Hymenoptera family *Chalcididae* is, luckily for agriculturists, usually so plentiful as to be able to keep down the fly, on the larva and pupae of which its own larva feed.

Besides the original account by Say (in the *Journal of the Academy of Natural Sciences*, Philadelphia, 1817), his countryman, Dr. A. S. Fitch, has published a history of this insect in the *Trans. of the New York State Agricultural Society*, 1846, and in England the celebrated entomologist Kirby gave an account of it in the *Magnesian of Natural History*, 1826. It is figured in the *American Naturalist*, vol. II., p. 165. A map showing its distribution will be found in Hayden's Report of the United States Geological and Geographical Survey for 1875.

**HESSEUS, HELIUS EOBANUS** (1488-1540), a distinguished German humanist of the 16th century, was born January 6, 1488, at Bockendorf near Frankenberg in Hesse. His family name is not known the baptismal name Eoban he owed to a local saint, Hesseus merely indicates the land of his origin, while the phenomenon Helius was assumed by himself partly with reference to the sun god, patron of poets, and partly also, it is said, with reference to the fact that he had been born on a Sunday. His early education was received in the monastery of Haina, where his father held a monial position, and afterwards at Frankenberg, in 1503 he entered the university of Erfurt, where in 1505 Crotus Rubianus and Ulrich von Hutten became his fellow-students and his firm friends. Though devoting himself enthusiastically to the composition of Latin verse, in which he soon became an acknowledged master, he was far from neglecting the other studies of the place, and shortly after his graduation he held a chair as a lecturer in the room of rector of the St Severus school. Compelled by disturbances to leave Erfurt in 1510, he for five years led a somewhat wandering life, in the course of which he passed some time in Leipzig as a student of law, in 1515 he returned to his former post at Erfurt, and in 1516 became professor of belles-lettres. He was now prominently associated with Reuchlin, Peutingger, Mutianus, as well as with Crotus Rubianus and Hutten, and from the first he fully identified himself with the cause of Luther and the Reformation. In 1526 he went as teacher of rhetoric and poetry to Nuremberg, but in 1534 returned to Erfurt, whence in 1535 he was called to the chair of poetry and history in Marburg. There he died October 5, 1540.

Hesseus was generally regarded by his contemporaries both in Germany and elsewhere as the foremost Latin poet of the age, "if Erasmus was the modern Cicero, Eoban was Virgil and Ovid." His most popular works were a translation into Latin dactylic hexameter, which passed through more than forty editions, and Latin hexameter translations of Theocritus and of the *Iliad*. He also published *Silvae*, a collection of epigrams, elegiacs, and occasional poems, and a series of Christian *Herodes*, in imitation of the *Herodes* was edited by his friend Josiah Camerarius, who also published his *Life* (1558). See the monographs of Hena (*St. H. Hesse, ein Lehrer u. Dichterleben aus der Reformationszeit*, 1880), Schenck (*St. H. Hesse, ein Lebensbild aus der Reformationszeit*, 1874), and Krause (*St. H. Hesse, sein Leben u. seine Werke*, 1879), also Strauss, *Ulrich von Hutten* (1858; 2d ed. 1871, Engl. transl. 1874).



**HESTIA**, a Greek goddess, who is probably the latest in origin of the greater deities. She seems to belong to a particular stage in the advance of civilization, and to embody the religious sanction that confirmed the social system then reached. When we compare her worship with that of Agni, the nearest parallel in the Vedic period, we see that the Greeks made this advance after they had separated from the Aryan conquerors of India. Agni is invoked in the *Rig Veda* as the brother, friend, and helper of men, as dwelling with them and mediating between them and the gods. But beyond this Hestia is the hearth-fire as the centre of an association, wider or narrower, which meets in common at the hearth. She is not mentioned in Homer, in the *Odyssey* sometimes one swears by Zeus, the table and the hearth, i. e., by Zeus as the god of the family both in its external relation of hospitality and its internal unity round its own hearth. Hence we have the Zeus *ἑστιαῖός τε*, *ἑστιαῖος*, *ἑστιαῖος*. The former of these two ideas is too delicate and fine even to become more than a mere aspect of Zeus, but the second gradually formed itself into a distinct worship, in which the already existing worship of the fire was merged. The fact that Hestia is not mentioned in Homer shows that her worship was not so universally acknowledged at the time which these poems reveal to us. Perhaps we may see in the connexion of the Latin Jupiter and Vesta at Lavinium a relic of the original connexion of the two, and the fact that the worship of this same goddess under the same name (they are only two forms of the fortune of the passive participant of the act *est, burn*) is found in Latium and Greece affords strong evidence of a specially close connexion between the two races. We find therefore in Hestian ideas of the old pre-Greek worship, she is the altar-fire, presiding over all sacrifices, and sharing in the honours of all the gods. The opening sacrifice was offered to Hestia, to her at the sacrificial meal the first and the last libations were poured. The fire of Hestia was always kept burning, or if by any mischance it was extinguished, only sacred fire made by friction, or got direct from the sun, might be used to rekindle it (see Kühn, *Ita alibi*). But beyond this she is the goddess of the family union, the personification of the idea of home (see Welcker, *Gr. Gott.*, ii. 694), the protectress along with Zeus of the suppliants who fled for refuge to the hearth. To her therefore is ascribed the art of housebuilding. Hestia and Hermes are often united as the representatives of home and private life on the one hand, and of all business and outdoor life on the other. The city union, moreover, is just the family union on a large scale, it has its centre in the prytaneum, where the common hearth fire round which the magistrates meet is always burning, and where the sacred rites that sanctify the council of city life are performed. From this fire, as the representative of the life of the city, was taken the fire wherewith that on the hearth of a new colony was kindled. As patroness of the deliberations held in the prytaneum, Hestia is surnamed *Βουλευαία*. Even larger unions than the city had their central fire in Argos was the Hestia of the Argivians, and it is probable that the Achæans had theirs at Argium. In the later mystic philosophy Hestia became the hearth of the universe, the eternal fire at the centre of the world.

As Hestia had her home in the prytaneum, special temples to her rarely occur. There was one in *Hermione*, where the only symbol of the goddess was a fire always burning on the hearth. We also hear of her house at Olympia. Her statue stood in the prytaneum at Athens beside that of Peace. Though many statues of the Roman Vesta are preserved, more or less based on the Greek conception of Hestia, yet no really Greek representation of the goddess has come down to us.

**HESYCHASTS** (*ἡσυχασταί* or *ἡσυχαστές*, also called *ἀσκησασταί*, Umbilicantini, and sometimes referred to as Euchites, Massalians, or Palamites), a quietistic sect which arose among the monks of the Greek Church, and especially of Mount Athos, during the later period of the Byzantine empire, and owing to various adventures circumstances, came into great prominence politically and ecclesiastically for a few years about the middle of the 11th century. Their opinion and practice will be best represented in the words of one of their early teachers (quoted by Gibbon, *Decline and Fall*, c. 63) — "When thou art alone in thy cell shut thy door, and seat thyself in a corner, turn thy mind above all things vain and transitory, let thine ear and thine eye be closed, turn thine eyes and thy thoughts towards the middle of thy belly, the region of the navel, and search the place of the heart, the seat of the soul. At first all will be dark and comfortable, but if thou persevere day and night, thou wilt feel an ineffable joy, and no sooner has the soul discovered the place of the heart than it is involved in a mystic and ethereal light." About the year 1337 this Hesychasm, the affinity of which with certain well-known forms of Oriental mysticism is obvious, attracted the attention of the learned and versatile Basilian, a Calabrian monk, who at that time held the office of abbot in the Basilian monastery of St. Saviour's in Constantinople, and who had visited the first monasteries of Mount Athos on a tour of inspection. Amazed much that he disapproved, what he specially took exception to as heretical and blasphemous, was the doctrine entertained as to the nature of this divine light, the fruition of which was the supposed reward of Hesychastic contemplation. It was maintained to be the pure and perfect essence of God Himself, that eternal light which had been manifested to the disciples on Mount Tabor at the transfiguration. This Basilian held to be polytheistic, inasmuch as it postulated two eternal substances, a visible and invisible God. On the Hesychastic side the controversy was taken up by Gregory Palamas, afterwards archbishop of Thessalonica, who intended to establish a distinction between eternal *θεός* and eternal *ἁγίος*. In 1341 the dispute came before a synod held at Constantinople, the decision of which no doubt was to a large extent determined by the excessive veneration in which the writings of the pseudo-Dionysius were held in the Eastern Church, was adverse to Basilian, who in consequence returned to Calabria, and afterwards became bishop of Thessalonica in the same communion. Three other synods in relation to the same subject were subsequently held, and at the last of these, held in 1351 under the presidency of the emperor John Cantacuzenus, the unqualified light of Mount Tabor was established as an article of faith for the Greeks, who ever since have been ready to recognize it as an additional ground of distinction from the Roman Church. The contemporary historians Cantacuzenus and Nicephorus Gregoras have both dealt very copiously with this subject, which is also more or less discussed in all the church histories. See Pierbald's article on the Ascetics and Hesychasts in *Herzog's Zeitschrift für Theol.*, viii. 48, and the account of the Hesychasts in *Herzog's Encyclopædie*. It may be mentioned that in the time of Justinian the word Hesychast was applied to monks in general simply as descriptive of the quiet and contemplative character of their pursuits.

**HESYCHIUS** was a grammarian of Alexandria, as we learn from a letter prefixed to his great work. From the fact that he was apparently unknown to Hesychius the Milesian and other writers of the time of Justinian, M. Schmidt considers that he must have flourished later than 530 A.D. On the other hand he cannot have been later than 642 A.D., when the school of Alexandria was scattered by the Saracen conquest. Many bid Greek words occur

ing in his book show that he belonged to this late period Wolke (*Re Mus.* 11 209) places him in the latter part of the 14th century. Belonging to the school of Alexandria, he was probably a pagan, and the explanations of words from Gregory Nazianzen and other Christian writers (*glossæ vaticæ*) are interpolations of a later time. He has left a Greek dictionary, containing a copious list of peculiar words, forms, and phrases, with an explanation of their meaning, and often with a reference to the author who used them or to the district of Greece where they were current.

Hence the book is of great value to the student of the Greek dialects, while in the restoration of the text of the classical authors generally, and particularly of such writers as *Æschylus* and *Theophrastus*, who used many unusual words, its value can hardly be exaggerated. The explanations given of many epithets and phrases reveal to us numberless facts about religion and social life, which are of the highest importance in the study of antiquities. In a prefatory letter addressed to his friend Eudæmus (who is probably the Eudæmus Scholasticus mentioned in the *Platynologion* *Magnum* and elsewhere), Hesychius mentions that his work is based on the lexicon of Diogenianus, but that he has also used similar works by *Anistatichus*, *Amon*, *Holudorus*, &c. (about whom see M. Schmidt's edition, vol. v.) The text is very corrupt, and the order of the words has often been disturbed. There is no doubt that many interpolations, besides the Christian glosses, have been made.

**HETTSTADT**, or **HETTSTRET**, a town of Prussian Saxony, in the circle of Mansfeld, and the government district of Merschburg, is situated on both banks of the Wipper, about 23 miles N W of Halle. It is the seat of a court-mun of justice, and has manufactures of machinery, pinpointes, and artificial manure. The population in 1875 was 5988. In the neighbourhood are mines of argentiferous copper, and the surrounding district and villages are occupied with smelting and similar works. Silver and sulphur are the other chief products, nickel and gold are also found in small quantities. Hettstadt is mentioned as early as 1016, in 1220 it possessed a castle, and in 1540 it received the privileges of a town. When the countship of Mansfeld was sequestered, Hettstadt came into the possession of the Saxons, from whom it passed to the Prussians in 1815.

**HEUGLIN**, **THOMAS VON** (1821-1876), an eminent African and Arctic traveller, was born 20th March 1824 at Hirschlanden near Leonberg in Württemberg, and died at Stuttgart, 5th November 1876. His father was a Protestant pastor, and he was originally planned to be a mining engineer, but his own early ambition was to contribute to scientific progress by his personal explorations, and he prepared himself for his task by careful and multifarious discipline, studying the natural sciences, and more particularly zoology, acquiring the more serviceable of the modern languages, strengthening his physique by gymnastic exercises, and learning to use with equal skill his pencil and his gun. Supplied with funds by his mother's liberality, Heuglin went to Egypt in 1851, and till 1865 the north-eastern regions of Africa were the main scene of his labours. In 1852 he accompanied Dr Reitz, the Austrian consul at Khartum, in his fatal journey to Abyssinia, in 1853, having been appointed Dr Reitz's successor in the consulate, he visited Kordofan and the lower course of the White Nile, and in 1857, on his return after about two years' absence in Europe, he was commissioned by the grand-duke Ferdinand Maximilian of Austria to explore the countries along the west coast of the Red Sea. From the latter part of 1858 to the latter part of 1860 he was again in Europe, but in 1861 he was placed at the head of the Vogel search expedition, which included Munzinger,

Steudner, Kinzelbach, &c., and was expected to make its way to Waddar. Having reached Madschehs, however, the explorers broke up into three parties, Heuglin turning along with Steudner and Schubert in the direction of Adoa, Gondar, and the Galla lands. At Khartum they joined Miss Tünne's party, and proceeded to Lake Rey and the Kosang river, but Steudner died on 10th April 1863, and Heuglin was compelled by sickness to retrance his steps. He returned to Europe in 1865. In 1870 and 1871 he made a valuable series of explorations in Spitzbergen and Novaya Zemlya, but 1875 found him again in North-East Africa, in the country of the Beni Amer and Habab. An invitation from the khedive took him abroad again in 1876, but receiving no definite appointment he returned to Europe. Later in the same year he was engaged in preparing for an exploration of the island of Socotra, when he was suddenly carried off by inflammation of the lungs. He was buried beside Mauch, the African traveller, and a statue has been erected over his grave.

His principal works are *Systematische Vögel-sicht der Vogel Nord-Afrika's*, 1855, *Reisen in Nordost-Afrika*, 1855-1858 (Götting, 1857), *Spät Ueberblick der Sammlungen in Nordost-Afrika's* (Vienna, 1867), *Reise nach Abessinien, den Galla-Ländern, &c.* 1861-62 (Jena, 1868), *Reise in das Gebiet des Nils*, 1862-1864 (Leipzig, 1865), *Reisen nach dem Nordpolarme*, 1870-71 (Bismarck, 1872-74), *Gründungsreise nach Ost-Afrika's* (Cassel, 1864-70), *Reise in Nordost-Afrika* (Brunswick, 1877, 2 vols.) It is principally by his zoological, and more especially his ornithological, labours that Heuglin has taken rank as an independent authority. A list of the most important of his numerous contributions to *Feuilleton's Mittheilungen* will be found in that serial for 1877 at the close of the zoological notice.

**HEUSCH**, **WILHELM** or **GUILLIAM** DR., a landscape painter in the 17th century at Utrecht. The dates of this artist's birth and death are unknown. Nothing certain is recorded of him except that he presided over the guild of Utrecht, whilst Cornelis Poelenburg, Jan Both, and Jan Weenix formed the council of that body, in 1649. According to the majority of historians, Heusch was born in 1638, and was taught by Jan Both. But each of these statements seems open to doubt, and although it is obvious that the style of Heusch is identical with that of Both, it may be that the two masters during their travels in Italy fell under the influence of Claude Lorraine, whose "Arcadian" at they imitated. Heusch certainly painted the same effects of evening in wide expanses of country varied by rock formations and lofty trees as abscissness as Both. There is little to distinguish one master from the other, except that of the two Both is perhaps the more delicate colourist. The guild of Utrecht in the middle of the 17th century was composed of artists who clung faithfully to each other. Poelenburg, who painted figures for Jan Both, did the same duty for Heusch. Sometimes Heusch sketched landscapes for the battlepieces of Mulken. The most important examples of Heusch are in the galleries of the Hague and Rotterdam, in the Belvedere at Vienna, the Stadel at Frankfurt, and the Louvre. His pictures are signed with the full name, beginning with a monogram combining a G (for Guiliam), D, and H. Heusch's etchings, of which thirteen are known, are also in the character of those of Both. After Guiliam there also flourished at Utrecht his nephew, Jacob de Heusch, who signs like his uncle, substituting an initial J for the initial G. He was born at Utrecht in 1657, learnt drawing from his uncle, and travelled early to Rome, where he acquired friends and patrons for whom he executed pictures after his return. He settled for a time at Berlin, but finally returned to Utrecht, where he died in 1701. Jacob was an "Arcadian," like his relative, and an imitator of Both, and he chiefly painted Italian harbour views. But his pictures are now scarce. Two of his canvases, the Ponte Rotto at Rome, in the Brunswick Gallery, and a lake harbour with

shipping in the Lichtenstein collection at Vienna, are dated 1696. A harbour, a tower and distant mountains, in the Belvedere at Vienna, was executed in 1699. Other examples may be found in English private galleries, in the Hermitage at St Petersburg, and the museums of Rouen and Montpellier.

HEYELIUS, HUYLT, HOWIT, HUYWELS, or HUYELKS, JOHANN (1611–1687), astronomer, was born at Dantzig on January 28, 1611, and died there on January 28, 1687 (see *ASTRONOMY*, vol. II p. 754).

HEXHAM, a market-town of England, county of Northumberland, is situated on the south bank of the river Tyne, crossed there by a handsome stone bridge of nine arches, 20 miles west from Newcastle and 36 east from Carlisle, and on the line of railway connecting those towns. It is somewhat irregularly built, and consists chiefly of several narrow streets diverging from the market place, a spacious square. Its defects in architecture and arrangement are, however, compensated for by its pleasant situation and the imposing remains of the old priory church. This church, begun by Wilfrid in 674, and completed by Aeon, his successor, remained unimpaired till 875, when every part of the monastery but the stone work was destroyed by the Danes. It was built of stones used in an earlier work, and many of them bear Roman inscriptions. Originally in dimensions and splendour it was unsurpassed on this side of the Alps, and doubtless had no small influence on ecclesiastical architecture in various parts of England. The building as renovated in the 15th century consisted of nave and transepts, choir and aisle, and a massive central tower, but the nave was burned by the Scots in 1296, and has never been rebuilt. The style is Early English with Transitional details. The crypt, discovered in 1726, is a fine example of Saxon architecture, of which there appear also to be some traces in the choir. Among the interesting old monuments which have been collected in the transept is a sculptured stone slab of Oswulf, king of Northumbria, of the date 788. To the west of the church there are still some remains of the conventual buildings. Near the market place there are two old castle-towers. A vessel containing about 8000 Saxon coins was discovered in the churchyard in 1832. The "Seal," formerly the park of the monks, is now used as a promenade, and from an eminence within its bounds a fine view is obtained. Hexham possesses a new town hall and coin exchange, erected in 1866 in the Italian style, and a large board school. A hydropathic establishment has recently been opened. Leather gloves are the principal manufacture of the town, and it has tanneries, wool-splend's yards, a brewery, and an iron and brass foundry. In the neighbourhood there are extensive market gardens and nurseries. The population of the township in 1871 was 5381, and of the parish 6137.

Hexham is supposed by some to have been the Avalonnum of the Romans, but although in all probability it was a Roman station, the ambiguity in the names is too slight to establish the identity. By the Saxons it was called *Hexham*, and *Hexham* in 875 the town was plundered by the Danes and the monastery destroyed. In 1138 the monastery was plundered by the Scots, and in 1296 they again attacked the town and destroyed the nave of the conventual church. In the reign of Henry VIII. the last prior of Hexham was in 1536 hanged at the gate of the monastery for being concerned in the rebellion called the Pilgrimage of Grace.

See the old *History of the Church of Hexham*, by Prior Richard, *Roman Hexham and Hexham Church*, in *Archæologia Æliana*, new series, vol. v., Wright's *History of Hexham*, 1823, *The Priory of*

*Hexham, its Chronicles, Endowments, and Annals*, edited for the Sussex Society by James Raine, 1864–66, *Hexham, a Handbook to Hexham and its Antiquities*, Hexham, 1879.

HEYDEN, JAN VAN DER, was born at Gouven in 1637, and died at Amsterdam on the 12th of September 1712. He was an architectural landscape painter, a contemporary of Hobbema and Jacob Ruysdael, with the advantage, which they lacked, of a certain professional versatility, for, whilst they painted admirable pictures and sketched, he varied the practice of art with the study of mechanics, improved the fire engine, and died superintendent of the lighting and diesel of the firemen's company at Amsterdam. Till 1672 he painted in painting-ship with Adriaen van der Velde. After Adriaen's death, and probably because of the loss which that event entailed upon him, he accepted the office, to which allusion has just been made. At no period of artistic activity had the system of division of labour been more fully or more constantly applied to art than it was in Holland towards the close of the 17th century. Van der Heyden, who was perfect as an architectural draughtsman in so far as he painted the outside of buildings, and thoroughly mastered linear perspective, seldom turned his hand to the delineation of anything but brick houses and churches in streets and squares, or towns along canals, or "moated granges," common in his native country. He was a travelling man, had seen the Helder, Ghent and Brussels, and had ascended the Rhine past Xanten to Cologne, where he copied over and over again the tower and crane of the great cathedral. But he cared nothing for hill or vale, or steam or wood. He could reproduce the law of bricks in a square of Dutch houses sparkling in the sun, or stunted trees and lines of dwellings varied by steeples, all in light or thrown into passing shadow by moving cloud. He had the art of painting microscopically without loss of breadth or keeping. But he could draw neither man nor beast, nor ships nor cars, and this was his disadvantage. His good genius under these circumstances was Adriaen van der Velde, who enlivened his compositions with spirited figures, and the joint labour of both is a delicate, minute, transparent work, radiant with glow and atmosphere, and most pleasant to look at. Almost all Van der Heyden's pieces are inscribed with his name alone, as if Van der Velde had been but a sleeping partner in his work. Like Heusch, he formed the first letter of his name into a monogrammatic interlacement. Very few of his pictures are dated. One, a street in a Dutch town, of 1666, is in the Hope collection in London. Two of 1667, a bridge on a canal, hoth with houses casting their reflections into the water, and the town-house at Amsterdam, are in the galleries of the Hague and Florence. Another view of the dam and town-hall at Amsterdam, dated 1668, is in the Louvre. A church and house in the museum of Dresden is inscribed 1673. In all these are seventy or more of Van der Heyden's works fairly accessible to the public—those which are least so being chiefly in English private collections. Eight capital examples are in the Hermitage at St Petersburg, two of which are views in Cologne. Four are in the London National Gallery, four at Amsterdam and Dresden. Munich and Cassel have two apiece, and two very fine ones are in Buckingham Palace. The rest are in public and private galleries in Vienna, Paris, Frankfurt, and Karlsruhe.

HEYDUKE. See HANDEY.  
HEYLYN, PERCE (1599–1692), an historical and polemical writer, born at Burford, Oxfordshire, 29th November 1599, was the second son of Henry Heylyn, gentleman, who belonged to an old Montgomeryshire family. Heung of a studious turn of mind, Heylyn was entered at Magdalen Hall, Oxford, in 1613, was of Magdalen College, 1615, B.A., July 1617, M.A., 1620, B.D., 1629, D.D., 1633. In July

1618 he began to read college lectures on cosmography (i.e., geography) with such acceptance that his associates made him fellow of Magdalen. The lectures, under the title of *Microcosmos*, were published in 1621, and many editions of this useful book, each somewhat enlarged, subsequently appeared, until scarcely any scholar's library was without a copy. In 1626 he published his observations on a journey to France. This book—which was frequently reprinted—Southey termed "one of our liveliest books of travel in its lighter parts, and one of the wisest and most replete with information that was ever written by a young man." After obtaining the patronage of Laud, whose life he wrote, Heylin was made chaplain to Charles I. His legendary and learned *History of St. George of Cappadocia* procured for him the rectory of Hemmingford, Herts, his hearty attachment to the High-Anglican party brought many other preferments, and his analysis of Prynne's *Histriomastix* was rewarded by the rectory of Isip. He was also made a prebendary of Westminster (9th November 1631), and wrote to the chapter (1637), and subsequently sat down. Here he was the bitter opponent of the rule of Bishop Williams, the commendatory dean. With great ardour Heylin entered into the religious controversies which preceded the war, being equally hostile to the Puritan element within and without the church. He was consequently singled out for punishment by the committees of the Long Parliament, who deprived him of benefices worth £800, and heavily fined him. An amusing anecdote he tells affords proof of his unpopularity in London, and at the same time shows how his *Cosmography* was appreciated. As he passed along the street a fellow "shouldered" him with the remark, "Geography is better than Divinity." For seven years, he says, his name was in almost every label. He returned to his Hampshire mansion of Alford until William's army disturbed him. Robbed thereof of his library, valued at £1000, and his property, he went to Oxford, where from 1st June 1643 he edited *Mercator's Annotations*, a valuable new sheet which greatly annoyed the Parliamentarians. His *Britannica Populans*, written against L'Estrange (who wittily retorted that a parrot should be "no stouter"), refers to his sufferings and hardships. The necessary quiet for his literary pursuits was ultimately found at Lady's Court, Abingdon, whence were dated several books and pamphlets against those of his own communion whose opinions were as repudiating as his, i.e., the agents of the Presbyterian and other controversies in which Usher, Fuller, Baxter, and Tillingham were concerned. His works, all more or less marred by political or theological lameness, were upwards of fifty in number, and they comprise his *History of Episcopacy*, of the Reformation, and of the Presbyterians, with a useful *Help to English History*. Some traces of merit also came from his active pen, and his posthumous memorial of Bishop Wrenn was published by the Caxton Society in 1861. Heylin was a diligent writer and investigator, a good ecclesiastical lawyer, and had his learning always at command. His principles, to which he was honestly attached, were defended with ability, but his efforts to uphold the church passed unacknowledged at the Restoration. His sight began to fail him, yet he rejoiced that his "old bad eyes" had seen the king's return. Upon that event he preached a jubilee sermon in Westminster Abbey to a great audience, 20th May 1661. He died on 8th May in the following year, and was buried two days after under his son-dan's seat.

Lives of Heylin were written by Dr John Barnard, his son-in-law, and by George Vernon Barnard, his son, who carefully reprinted, with notes, in the *History of the Reformation*, published, 1849, by the Ecclesiastical History Society.

HEYNE, CHRISTIAN GOTTLIEB (1729–1812), one of the most distinguished critics and archaeologists of the modern

school of which Ebnesti and Gesner were the founders, was born on the 25th of September 1729, in a suburb of the city of Chemnitz in Saxony, where his father, who had been compelled by some religious persecutions to abandon his native country of Silesia, earned a precarious support for his family by exercising the trade of a weaver. It was only by the liberality of his godfathers that Heyne was enabled to obtain his primary instruction in the elementary school of Chemnitz, and afterwards to prosecute his classical studies in the gymnasium of that city. In 1748 he entered the university of Leipzig, with the professed intention of studying for the legal profession. There he was so warmly supported by those on whose assistance he relied that he was frequently in want even of the common necessaries of life, and was sometimes indebted for food to the generosity of a maid servant in the house where he lodged. In this situation, without even the hope of future distinction, he continued to struggle on against every difficulty and disappointment in the acquisition of knowledge. For months he is said to have allowed only two nights in the week to sleep, and he was at the same time forced to endure his godfathers' reproaches for negligence in the prosecution of his studies. This distress had almost amounted to despair, when he procured the situation of tutor in the family of a French merchant resident in Leipzig. He was thus enabled to continue his studies, though with much interruption,—the emolument of his appointment being sufficient to support him in what was at least comparative comfort. Under Ebnesti he was initiated into the criticism of the classical authors, from the prelections of the celebrated Bach he acquired a competent knowledge of Roman jurisprudence, and by Christiani, who lectured on archaeology, his attention was strongly directed to the works of ancient art. Even after he had finished his studies at the university, he was exposed for many years to all the accumulated distresses of poverty and neglect. The first situation he was able to procure was that of copyist in the library of Count von Buhl in Dresden, with a salary of somewhat less than twenty pounds sterling, which he obtained in the year 1753. From the necessity of adding something to this scanty pittance, he was forced to employ himself in the dudgey of translation, and, besides some French novels, he rendered into German the Greek romance of Chantoin. He published his first edition of *Thucydides* in 1756, and in 1758 his *Strabon*. The next year the Seven Years' War broke out. Dresden was entered, and the Saxon archives seized, the Buhl ministry fell, and Heyne was once more in a state of absolute destitution. In 1757 he was offered a tutorship in the household of Frau von Schonberg, and there he first became acquainted with Teresa Weiss, whom he subsequently married. In January 1759 he accompanied his pupil to the university of Wittenberg, at which more than a year was spent in the study of philosophy and German history, but from which he was driven in 1760 by the Prussian cannon. The bombardment of Dresden (to which city he had meanwhile returned) on July 18, 1760, destroyed not only his humble lodging but also all his worldly possessions, which included amongst other valuable papers an almost finished edition of Lucian based on a valuable codex of the Dresden Library. In the summer of 1761 he married, although still without any fixed means of support, and for some time he found it necessary wholly to suspend his literary pursuits that he might devote himself to the duties of the office of land-steward, to which he had been charitably appointed in the household of the Baron von Loben in Lusatia. He was enabled, however, to return to Dresden in the end of 1762, where he was commissioned by Lippert to prepare the Latin text of the third volume of his *Zustimmung*. At length, in the commencement of the year 1763, Heyne's



**HEZEKIAH** (חִזְקִיָּהוּ, חִזְקִיָּהוּ, חִזְקִיָּהוּ or חִזְקִיָּהוּ "Jehovah makes strong", *Ḥēzekas, Ḥēzekas, the Ha-ai-yah-ha a Ha-ah-ah-ha* of the Assyrian inscriptions), one of the greatest and best of the kings of Judah, succeeded his father Ahaz when still a young man (at the age of twenty five according to 2 Kings xvii 2, and this is probably correct if the LXX be followed in reading "twenty five" instead of "twenty" in 2 Chr. xvi 1, cf. 2 Kings xvi 2). The year of his accession was most probably 717 B.C., and he ruled for twenty-nine years with a vigour and a success that deeply impressed later historians, "he trusted in the Lord (God of Israel), so that after him was none like him among all the kings of Judah, nor any that was before him" (2 Kings xvii 5, cf. *Ezekias* xvi 17-25). The way out of his reign was marked by a complete reversal, both in foreign and in domestic affairs, of the policy which had been so disastrously followed by his weak and foolish predecessor. While Ahaz had shown distinctly paganistic tendencies in religion, Hezekiah was ardent in his zeal for the exclusive worship of Jehovah, which he sought to simplify, centralize, and refine even at the expense of abolishing many cherished institutions which had the sanction of ancient usage. "He removed the high places, and broke the pillars, and cut down the Asherah, and broke in pieces the brazen serpent that Moses had made, for unto those days the children of Israel did burn incense to it, and he [or, perhaps, they] called it Nehushtan" (cf., according to the A.V., "bronze"), but, if this was the popular name, it is probably derived from *nahash*, serpent, see 2 Kings xvii 4). How great was the strength of conviction and the courage which were necessary to such reforms as these are incidentally shown by the appeal to conservative feeling which some years afterwards could still be made by a kingly diplomatist with at least some hope of success (2 Kings xviii 22). The details of the reforming activities of Hezekiah, extending even to the northern kingdom, as given with characteristic fulour and minuteness by the compiler of the book of Chronicles, are not now accepted by the majority of critics as absolutely trustworthy, a prevalent opinion being that actions have been attributed to Hezekiah which ought really to have been assigned to Josiah, and that some at least of the chronology is imaginary, but it is obvious that the influence of such prophets as Isaiah and Micah must have been powerful enough to bring about in any thoughtful going changes even during the earlier reign. As in the reign of his father, all the theocratic kingdom was in its relations with foreign powers, Hezekiah nationed itself conspicuously on the policy of his father, although not less entirely on the lines laid down by the great contemporary prophet. Confirmed in the conscious policy of military strength by a successful war against the Philistines (2 Kings xviii 8), and having no longer anything to fear either from Damascus or from Samaria, he began to cherish the hope (at least with Egyptian support and the active co-operation of Egyptian cavalry) of being able to shake off entirely the yoke of Assyria, and with this view he set about extensive fortifications and other engineering works in and about Jerusalem. "He made

the pool and the conduit and brought the water into the city," "stopping the upper outlet of Gihon and bringing it straight by an underground way," he also "built up all the wall that was broken, and raised thereupon towers" (2 Kings xx 20, 2 Chr. xxvii 1-8, and cf. Isa. xvi 8-11, which also has been referred by the sagacity of Ewald to this period). It is not clear from the sacred historians how far Judah was affected by the successful expedition of Sargon against Ashlud in 711 B.C., which is mentioned in Isa. xv 1 (and in which possibly Sennacherib may have held the rank of a rabakki or general), but Ewald's brilliant conjecture, to the effect that Isa. xvi 1-8 alludes to hardships suffered by the people of Hezekiah at that time, is remarkably confirmed by the cuneiform inscriptions. It was not, however, until after the accession of Sennacherib (705) and the resolution of that monarch to direct one of his great expeditions against Egypt (cf. 701), that matters were brought to a sharp and immediate crisis between Nineveh and Jerusalem. The capture of all his "fenced cities," Jerusalem excepted, coupled with the ineffectivity of Egypt, convinced Hezekiah of the uselessness of a struggle with the greatest military power of his century, in a way that Isaiah, with often repeated admonitions, had failed to do, and the payment of a large sum of money by way of tribute readily purchased a temporary relief. But when Sennacherib sent from Lachish his "tairan," or commander-in-chief, along with the "iab asars," or head eunuch, and the "chaf cup bears," or chief of the staff (the rendering "chief cup bearers" seems based on a wrong etymology), with a large force to demand the surrender of Jerusalem itself, it was felt by king and prophet alike that the time for resistance to the utmost had come. Probably the resolution thus formed was in part, at least, due to the fact that the main body of the Assyrian army was already finding it necessary to fall back before Tirhakah, the Ethiopian king of Egypt, from Lachish to Libnah, it was at all events justified, not only by the indecisive battle at Alaka near Elkon, but also by the pestilence (2 Kings xix 35) which speedily compelled the withdrawal of Sennacherib with the remains of his army from Libnah to Nineveh. The relation between the accounts of this relief given by Hezekiah himself, by the sacred historians, and by Herodotus (ii 141) will be considered in the article SENNACHERIB. The sickness and recovery of Hezekiah, recorded in 2 Kings xx 1-11 and (with additional details) in Isa. xxxviii, seem to have preceded the invasion of Sennacherib by three years at most, they were almost immediately followed by the arrival of the messengers of Merodach (not Merodach) Baladan, the son of Baladan, who for some six months, until repressed by Sennacherib, occupied the throne of Babylon about the year 703. The excessive courtesy shown to these ambassadors gave occasion, it is recorded (2 Kings xx 17, 18), to a prediction by Isaiah of the Babylonian exile, which took place more than a century afterwards. Of the later portion of Hezekiah's reign no details have been preserved, but it appears to have been characterized by peace and prosperity. He was succeeded in 688 by Manasseh, his son by Hephzibah, born apparently about 702. Besides being a patron of literature (Prov. xxv 1), Hezekiah was himself a poet, and his sole remaining production (Isa. xxxviii 10-20), if somewhat deficient in originality, abounds in depth and tenderness of religious and poetic feeling.

**HIBERNATION** (frequently, but less correctly, written *Hibernation*) is the term employed by naturalists to denote the peculiar state of torpor in which many animals which inhabit cold or temperate climates pass the winter in hot and dry countries, on the contrary, various animals pass into a similar condition during the hottest season of the year; and this state is called "Estivation." Several

of the animals which hibernate during the winter are liable to fall into a similar state at intervals during mild weather, and Dr Marshall Hall has applied the term "Diurnation" to the day-sleep of bats, which he regards as precisely analogous to hibernation.

**MAMMALS.**—Although comparatively few mammals hibernate, the phenomena of hibernation and similar conditions have been better studied in this class than in any other. Dr Marshall Hall has laid down the principle that the amount of respiration is inversely as the degree of irritability of the muscular fibre. Every gradation may be met with between ordinary sleep, the imperfect or abnormal hibernation of some animals, and the profound hibernation of others, in which all the functions of life are almost suspended. Such a condition is always accompanied by reduced respiration, and increased irritability of the muscular fibre. If the respiration is reduced without this irritability being increased, death results from toxæmia and asphyxia, whereas, if the respiration is increased simultaneously with increased irritability (as when an animal is aroused too suddenly), death likewise results from too great stimulation of the vital powers. The well-known danger of suddenly awakening a patient from a state of somnambulism is doubtless due to a similar cause.

Hibernation, however, is a physiological condition, and not produced simply by cold, though it is favoured by it, because cold induces sleep, which may afterwards pass into hibernation. It is an error to suppose that hibernating animals are capable of resisting any amount of cold, though their capacity of doing so must vary according to their species and to the climate which they inhabit. They always seek secure hiding-places where they may be protected from too great a degree of cold, as well as from interference. During hibernation the temperature of their bodies sinks to a point corresponding nearly to that of the surrounding atmosphere, but if they are exposed to an unusual amount of cold, they are first awakened by it, and then sink into a fatal torpor like other animals. Many hibernating animals perish in this manner during severe winters.

Respiration being almost suspended during hibernation, the maintenance of vitality depends almost wholly on the action of the heart, which will continue for a long time after an hibernating animal has been decapitated. Animals may also be placed in carbolic acid or under water for several hours, without injury, when in this condition, though they would die in a very few minutes if they were in their normal state.

**Man.**—Long continued suspension of consciousness in man, whether voluntary or otherwise, is rare in temperate climates, but it is more frequent in India, where some religious ascetics are stated on unimpeachable authority to possess the power of throwing themselves into a state closely resembling hibernation for an indefinite period. Many curious cases have been recorded by Mr Braid in his small treatise on *Human Hibernation*, published in 1850, the most celebrated of which is that of a fakir who was actually buried alive at Lahore, in 1837, in the presence of Runjeet Singh and Sir Claude Wade, and who was dug up and restored to consciousness several months afterwards, after every precaution had been taken to prevent any one from disturbing the grave in the interval.

**Bats.**—Dr Marshall Hall says that the hibernating bat never wakes at all, except from warmth or excitement, and that the digestive functions are suspended to a far greater degree than in the dormouse or hedgehog. Respiration is also suspended, and when the animal is disturbed it quickly subsides again into total quiescence, after a few feeble respirations. It is to be regretted that Dr Hall has not stated to which species of bat his remarks refer, as the

habits of the various species differ. Earlier or later in autumn, according to the species, they retire to caves, hollow trees, and similar hiding places, where they cluster together, hanging head downwards by their hinder claws, and clinging to each other, as well as to the walls and sides of their retreat, so that a great number can crowd themselves into an amazingly small space. Although such assemblies frequently consist of more than one species, yet the various species do not all retire to their winter quarters at the same period, the noctule is rarely seen abroad later than July, whereas the pipistrelli may be seen flying on mild evenings almost every month in the year. It is only natural to suppose that the hibernation of the former species is much more profound than that of the latter, which doubtless feeds in winter as well as summer, for though insects are far less numerous in winter than in summer, yet some species appear only at that season of the year.

**Beas and Badgers.**—These animals retire to winter quarters in northern climates, and pass the greater part of their time in sleep, but the brown bear and badger do not fall into a state of genuine hibernation. When the bear retires for the winter, he is very fat, and it is said that the black bear will not hibernate if this is not the case. Digestion is suspended, and his intestines become stopped up with an indigestible mass chiefly composed of pine leaves, which is now discharged all spring, the bears of both Europe and Siberia is very dangerous if disturbed during the winter, but the black bear of America can scarcely be accused from his torpor, which there is this reason to believe is a state of true hibernation, differing from that in which the former species passes the winter.

**Hedgehog.**—This animal hibernates more completely than almost any other. In the autumn it retires to a hole among rocks or under the roots of a tree, where it remains for the winter, seldom or never awakening till spring, and of course taking no food until then. If a sleeping hedgehog is disturbed, it merely stirs, and then coils itself up more closely, but if a hibernating hedgehog is interfered with, it takes a deep convulsive spasm, followed by a few feeble respirations, and then by total quiescence. The tenrec, an allied animal found in Madagascar, sleeps for three months in its burrow during the hottest period of the year.

**Rodentia.**—Several animals belonging to this order hibernate more or less completely, among which we may mention the hamster, the porcupine, the dormouse, the squirrel, and the marmot. Several of these awake at intervals to feed, and therefore lay up a store of provisions before they retire, although they all become very fat before winter. Other species of this order hibernate so perfectly, or only occasionally, like the beaver, which will lie beneath deep snow in a small cavity, just large enough to receive her body, for some weeks unharmed. But this is not true hibernation, as respiration is maintained during the whole time, a small air-hole being always kept open by the warm breath of the animal. In a similar manner sheep (though belonging to a very different order of animals) have sometimes been buried in snow drifts in Scotland for several weeks without sustaining any injury. The dormouse not only hibernates in the strict sense of the term, but will sleep at intervals for several days together during mild weather. When a *Myotis*, an allied animal inhabiting Africa, was brought to Europe, it hibernated as if this were its normal habit. Whether it hibernates in its native country is not known, but its hibernating in Europe shows a greater power of adapting itself to changed conditions of life than we should have been inclined to suspect.

**AVES AND FISHES.**—It was formerly supposed that various species of swallows hibernated, and it was even asserted that the sand martin was accustomed to bury itself

in the mud at the bottom of the water; but this has long been regarded as an exploded error. For the hibernation of fish, compare the article on ICHTHYOLOGY.

**AMPHIBIA AND REPTILIA.**—All the animals belonging to these classes hibernate in cold or temperate climates. Land tortoises bury themselves in holes in the ground, and fresh-water tortoises in the banks or at the bottom of lakes and rivers. Lizards and snakes retire to holes in trees, under stones, or among dead leaves, where many species congregate in large numbers, and pass the winter closely entwined, and in a still more torpid condition than that of the hibernating mammals, their digestion and respiration being entirely suspended. Many tortoises, crocodiles, and serpents bury themselves in mud in both South America and Africa, and aestivate in the hard-baked ground during the dry season of the year. When the viper is disturbed during the winter its bite is harmless; but this is not the case with the venomous serpents which aestivate in tropical countries.

Frogs generally hibernate in masses in the mud at the bottom of the water, and if awakened from hibernation by warmth can remain eight times longer under water without drowning than frogs in the breeding season. We should hardly expect the habits of such an animal as the frog to be greatly affected by domestication, but Professor Bell was acquainted with a gentleman living at Kingston, whose kitchen was built on the banks of the Thames, and whose servants made a pet of a frog which had his hole in the skirting. It was unnecessary for the frog to hibernate, and instead of doing so he came out of his hole every evening to bask before the kitchen fire for three successive winters. It is impossible to say how long frogs and toads may continue to retain a dormant life, if the mud in which they bury themselves should become hardened around them during hibernation. Too many circumstantial accounts of the discovery of live toads in the embolden in sand rock, and even in coal, have been published to allow us to dismiss them all as fabulous, notwithstanding the difficulty and obscurity in which this subject is still involved.

**MOLLUSCA.**—Many species hibernate. The land-snails bury themselves in the ground, or conceal themselves under the bark of trees, in holes in walls, or even in the stems of large umbelliferous plants. They close the mouth of the shell with a calcareous plate, technically called an epiphragm, which they secrete by means of their mantle, and which is perforated by a small hole to admit the air. In winter they bury themselves with the head upwards, and do not grow at all during the winter; but while growing they bury themselves in summer, with the head downwards, at occasional intervals, for several days together, and then grow very rapidly. Snails are not considered in season at Paris till after the first frost, when they are closed with a white epiphragm. In dry weather, and during the heat of summer, snails also close their shells with an epiphragm, to protect themselves from drought, but this covering is thinner than that which they construct during the winter. In the British Museum is preserved the shell of a specimen of *Helix desertorum*, from Egypt, which revived after having been gummed to a board for four years in the Museum, and lived for two years afterwards.

Other instances of the revival of land-snails after a still longer period are equally well authenticated. Some species retire to winter quarters earlier than others, and their pulsation, which ranges from 30 to 110 during summer, ceases entirely in winter. Slugs also bury themselves in

the ground, and become torpid during frosts or droughts, but it is doubtful whether their condition is that of genuine hibernation. The fresh-water mussels (*Anodonta*) hibernate before the close of autumn, and bury themselves in the mud till the beginning of spring. It is believed that many of the marine *Mollusca* also hibernate, but very little is known of their habits at present.

**INSECTA.**—Most of the insects which pass the winter as larvae or perfect insects hibernate during the period that they can obtain no food. Larvæ which are full grown in autumn frequently lie dormant during the winter, and do not assume the pupæ state till spring. In the case of insects which have more than one brood in the year, the last brood generally hibernates, sometimes retiring to winter quarters quite early in the autumn, while the perfect insects of the previous brood are still flying about, and while the weather is still fine and warm. Insects which hibernate in the perfect state do not pair till spring, and are probably not fully developed till after hibernation. Hive-bees probably do not hibernate, and it is well known that they require food during the winter. It is asserted that the aphides, on whose sweet secretion ants chiefly subsist in inclement weather, become torpid at exactly the same low temperature as the ants themselves.

**CONCLUDING REMARKS.**—The seeds of many plants, and the eggs of many of the lower forms of animal life, may remain dormant for years in cold or dry climates, until heat or moisture awakes them to vitality. Many plants die down in winter, the roots remaining in the ground, while many trees then shed their leaves, the sap retiring to the roots. Similar phenomena take place in tropical countries during the hot, dry season, wherever the amount of humidity in the atmosphere is insufficient to maintain a perennial vegetation during the year. These phenomena in the vegetable world are regarded as analogous to those of hibernation in animals, and the term "hibernation of plants" is sometimes applied to them.

Dr Marshall Hall, in Todd's *Cyclopaedia of Anatomy and Physiology*, art. "Hibernation"; Bruid's *Observations on Trances or Human Hibernation*; Bull's *British Quadrupeds and British Reptiles*; Humboldt's *Views of Nature*; Owen Jeffery's *British Conchology*; Tait's *Land and Fresh-water Mollusca*; Kirby and Spence's *Introduction to Entomology*, &c. (W. F. K.)

**HICKES, GEORGE** (1642–1715), a learned English divine of the nonjuring party, and an eminent Anglo-Saxon scholar, was born at Newsham near Thirsk, Yorkshire, on June 20, 1642. In 1659 he entered St John's College, Oxford, whence after the Restoration he removed first to Magdalen College and subsequently to Magdalen Hall. In 1654 he was chosen fellow of Lincoln College, and in the following year proceeded M.A. On his return from a Continental tour in 1673 he graduated in divinity, and in 1675 he was appointed rector of St Ebbe's, Oxford; in the following year he as private chaplain accompanied the duke of Lauderdale, the royal commissioner, to Scotland; and shortly afterwards he received the degree of D.D. from the university of Glasgow. In 1680 he became vicar of All Hallows, Barking, London; and after having been made chaplain to the king in 1681, he was in 1683 promoted to the deanery of Worcester. At the revolution of 1688, having declined to take the oath of allegiance to William and Mary, he was first suspended and afterwards deprived, he meanwhile applying to the cathedral deans "for protection and claim of right" that he was, and still did "continue to be the only rightful and legal dean of this cathedral church of Worcester." After remaining some time in confinement in London, he was employed by Sancroft and the other nonjurors on a mission to the Continent on matters connected with the proposed action of his party relative to the continuance of their episcopal succession; upon his return he was himself consecrated by Lloyd, White, and



*Helix Desertorum.*



Turner suffragan bishop of Theford in 1694. His later years were largely occupied in controversies the interest of which has now almost wholly passed away; but to them we owe the two works which constitute his chief claim to an enduring reputation, the learned *Institutiones Grammaticae Anglo-Saxonicae et Mosco-Gothicae* (1689), and *Linguarum veterum Septentrionalium Thesaurus grammatico-criticus et archaeologicus* (1703-1705). In 1713 he united with Bishops Campbell and Gadderar to consecrate Jeremy Collier, Samuel Hawes, and Nathaniel Spinkes to be bishops in the nonjuring church. He died December 15, 1716.

Even apart from these two weakly acknowledged, Hickeys was a very voluminous and laborious author. His earliest performances, which were anonymous, were suggested by contemporary events in Scotland that gave him great satisfaction,—the execution of Mitchell on a charge of having been implicated in the murder of Archbishop Sharp, and that of Kid and King, Presbyterian ministers, "for high treason and rebellion" (*Rassilas Rottivus*, 1678; *The Spirit of Popery speaking out of the Mouths of Phanatical Protestants*, 1680). In his *Jovius* (an answer to Johnson's *Jutius the Apostate*, 1683), he endeavoured to show that the Roman empire was not hereditary, and that the Christians under Julian had recognized the duty of passive obedience. His *Two Treatises*, one "On the Christian Priesthood" and the other "On the Dignity of the Episcopal Order," originally published in 1707, have been more than once reprinted, and form three volumes of the *Library of Anglo-Catholic Theology* (1847). In 1705 and 1710 were published *Collections of Controversial and Letters*, in 1711 a collection of *Sermons*, and in 1726 a volume of *Pious Devotional Discourses*. Other treatises, such as the *Apologetic Pindication of the Church of England*, are to be met with in Gibson's *Preservative against Popery*.

**HICKORY.** The hickory trees are natives of North America, and belong to the genus *Carya* of botanists. They are closely allied to the walnuts (*Juglans*), the chief or at least one very obvious difference being that, whilst in *Carya* the husk which covers the shell of the nut separates into four valves, in *Juglans* it consists of but one piece, which bursts irregularly. The hickory trees are of lofty growth, and are held in high estimation, both on account of their durable timber and from the excellent nuts which some of the species produce. The timber is both strong and heavy, and remarkable for its extreme elasticity, but it is not much used either for shipbuilding or for architectural purposes, as it decays rapidly when exposed to heat and moisture, and is peculiarly subject to the attacks of worms. It is very extensively employed in manufacturing musket stocks, axle-trees, screws, rake teeth, the bows of yokes, the wooden rings used on the rigging of vessels, chair backs, axe-handles, whip-handles, and other purposes requiring great strength and elasticity. Its principal use in America is for hoop-making; and when it is remembered how large a proportion of the productions of the United States is packed in barrels, some estimate may be formed of the consumption of hoops and of the consequent demand for hickory wood, which is the only American wood found perfectly fit for that purpose.

The wood of the hickory is of great value as fuel, on account of the brilliancy with which it burns and the ardent heat which it gives out, the charcoal being heavy, compact, and long-lived. The species which furnish the best wood are *Carya alba* (shell-bark hickory), *C. tomentosa* (mockernut), *C. oliviformis* (pecan or pecan nut), and *C. porcina* (pig-nut), that of the last-named, on account of its extreme tenacity, being preferred for axle-trees and axe-handles. The wood of *C. alba* splits very easily and is very elastic, so that it is much used for making whip-handles and baskets; the whip-handles are greatly esteemed for their suppleness, and considerable numbers of them are annually imported into England. The wood of this species is also used in the neighbourhood of New York and Philadelphia for making the back bows of Windsor chairs. The timber of *C. amara* and *C. aquatica* is considered to be of inferior quality.

Most of the hickories form fine-looking noble trees of from 60 to 90 feet in height, with straight, symmetrical

trunks, well-balanced ample heads, and bold, handsome, pinnated foliage. When confined in the forest they shoot up 50 or 60 feet without branches, but when standing alone they expand into a fine head, and produce a lofty round headed pyramid of foliage. They have, observes Downing, all the qualities which are necessary to constitute fine graceful park trees, and are justly entitled to a place in every considerable plantation. The most ornamental of the



FIG. 1.—Shell-bark Hickory (*Carya alba*) in flower (1 nat. size). 1, Female flower (nat. size); 2, portion of male inflorescence (nat. size).

species are *C. oliviformis*, *C. alba*, and *C. porcina*, the last two also producing delicious nuts, and being worthy of cultivation for their fruit alone.

The husk of the hickory nut, as already stated, breaks up into four equal valves or separates into four equal portions in the upper part, while the nut itself is tolerably even on the surface, but has four or more blunt angles in its transverse outline. The hickory nuts of the American markets are the produce of *C. alba*, which is called the

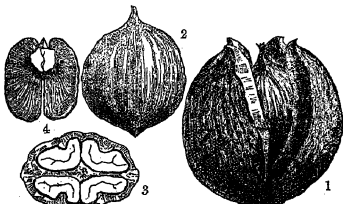


FIG. 2.—1, Fruit of *Carya alba*; 2, hickory nut; 3, cross section of nut; 4, vertical section of the wood. All natural size.

shell-bark hickory because of the roughness of its bark, which becomes loosened from the trunk in long scales bending outwards at the extremities and adhering only by the middle. The nuts are much esteemed in all parts of the States, and are exported in considerable quantities to Europe. The pecan-nuts, which come from the Western States, are from an inch to an inch and a half long, smooth, cylindrical, pointed at the ends, and thin-shelled, with the kernels full, not like those of most of the hickories divided by partitions, and of delicate and agreeable flavour. The thick-shelled fruits of the pig-nut are generally left on the ground for swine, squirrels, &c., to devour. In *C. amara* the kernel is so bitter that even the squirrels refuse to eat it.

HICKS, ELIAS (1748-1830), founder of the Hekates, one of the two great sects into which the Society of Friends in America has since 1828 been divided (see *QUAKERS*), was born at Hempstead, Long Island, on March 10, 1748. During the earlier part of his life he followed the business of a carpenter and housebuilder, but this occupation he latterly exchanged for that of farming. Related in a Quaker family, he began, when about twenty-seven years of age, to "have openings leading to the unity," and to be "deeply engaged for the right administration of discipline and order in the church." In the intervals of business, accordingly, he began to visit the meetings and families of Friends throughout an extensive range of country, and soon he established a very considerable reputation as an efficient and popular itinerant preacher. His first literary effort seems to have been made no earlier than 1811, when he published *Observations on Slavery*; those doctrinal divergences from the received orthodox creed of the Friends, by which his name was brought into the prominence it now possesses, appear not to have become visible until 1820, when he wrote a *Doctrinal Epistle* (published in 1824), which was followed by much controversy, and resulted in 1828 in the formal separation from the Hicksites of those more orthodox Quaker brethren. The separation involved no jury considered to affect the fundamental doctrines of the Christian religion, such as those of the Trinity, the Incarnation, and the supreme authority of Scripture. Hicks died at Teicho, Long Island, on February 27, 1830. See *Journal of the Life and Labors of Elias Hicks* (Philadelphia, 1828).

**HIERAPOLIS** Of the many cities in the Greek world bearing this name the following are the most important.

1. A city of Syria. Cynhestion, situated on some hills about 16 miles south-west from the junction of the Euphrates and the Sajur. Besides the natural strength of its position, it was important as lying on the line of intercourse between Northern Syria and Mesopotamia, and was always a great trading city. Its early history is quite unknown. It is not mentioned during the Assyrian wars in this part of Syria (see Sayce, *Academy*, October 1874). Abul Fatah asserts that Josiah was defeated there by Pharaoh Necho (611 B.C.) on his march towards Carchemish, but according to 2 Chron. xxv. 20 the battle took place at Carchemish, which lay on the Euphrates a little further north on the site of the modern Jebelbis, or Jerabis, and probably Abul Faras confounded the two cities. The same confusion perhaps has caused the statement of Ammianus that Hierapolis was identical with Ninus Vetus, on the Euphrates. Jebelbis is clearly a corruption of Hierapolis, by which name therefore Carchemish must at some time have been styled by the Greeks, but it is surprising to find two great cities of the same name so near one another. No proof exists that Hierapolis was an important city before the time of the Seleucids, and Professor Sayce suggests that it then succeeded to the trade and name of the older city, which had now decayed. Its original name is given in Greek as *Babylon*, which points back to a form *Bambyg* or *Mambg*, while the Syrian form is given by Ptolemy as *Mabog*, *s. e.*, *Mabog* for *Mambog*. The romance of trade by which this name has become naturalized in many European languages deserves a passing notice. As the city lay on the highway to the East, cotton and silk were important branches of its trade. Probably cotton plantations existed there in old times, and after the cultivation of silk was introduced to western Asia in the time of the Sassanians, large groves of mulberry trees surrounded the city. The name *Mambe* was afterwards confounded with the Persian word *pambe*, silk, and the Greek form *Βαμβύκη* also was similarly mixed up with the

word *Βαμβύξ*,<sup>1</sup> which originally denoted the fly supposed to spin on trees the cotton or silk (for the two substances were confused by the Greeks and Romans) which men then gathered off the trees (*Vag. Geog.*, i. 121). Hence the "Bombycine vestes" of the Roman writers, while the city itself is called "Bombycina uibe." In Asia cotton seems to have been known as a distinct article, and was named after the city which was the chief seat of its manufacture, as mulian is from Mosul. By the crusaders the stuff and the name were carried to Europe, and the latter exists in English in the form "bombazine." The Syrian goddess Atargatis, called by the Greeks Derceto, a personification of the native power worshipped under different names over the whole of western Asia, had one of her most famous temples in the city, and perhaps *Mambe* may have been a local name of the goddess. Hence in the 3d century B.C., when, under the Seleucid kings, *Bambyce* became a great Greek city and the most important station named after Antioch and Seleucia, it was called Hierapolis or Hieropolis. The latter form is found on coins, the former is used in classical literature. The coinage of Hierapolis begins under the Seleucids. The autonomous coins, probably for commercial reasons, imitate closely the coins of Antioch. The temple was plundered by Cissus on his Parthian expedition (53 B.C.). Under Diocletian or Constantine, Hierapolis became the capital of the new province of Euphratensis, a name which soon gave place to the older name Commagene. As paganism decayed, Hierapolis ceased to be the sacred city, and recovered its ancient name, at the same time its importance and population declined. In the time of Julian, who concentrated there the Roman troops for the fatal Parthian campaign, it was still one of the greatest cities of Syria, but under Justinian, who made some attempt to restore it, great part of its site was a desert, and the once strong fortifications were so decayed that the place was not defensible against the Parthian king Chosroes. As the Arab conquest it passed into the hands of the caliph Haroun-al-Raschid (786-808) restored it and strengthened its walls, and it is mentioned about 1150 by Edrisi as a strong city. As the empire of the caliphs dwindled, *Mambdy* became a frontier post in the struggle between Christians and Mahometans, and its possession carried with it the rule in this part of Syria. The emperor Romanus Diogenes captured it in his gallant struggle against the Turks (1068). Recaptured by the Seljuk Turks, it soon afterwards fell into the power of the crusaders, until it was stormed by Saladin (1175). It was for some time the headquarters of the Mongol host under Haisag Khan, and, as with many other Syrian cities, its desolation dates from that time. The name which still exists called *Kara Bambeche* or *Buyuk Mambdy*, have been described by Pococke and others, and most carefully by Chesney (*Euphrates Expedition*, i. 420).

Stabo (xvi. p. 748) confuses this Hierapolis with Edessa in Mesopotamia. A very full account of the city to supplement the brief outline here given may be found in Ritter, *Erkenntnis*, x. 1041-45.

2. A city in Phrygia, at the junction of the Lycus and Meander, on the road from Apamea to Sardis. In it there were warm springs which had and still have a remarkable power of forming concretions. Its name Hierapolis is due to the sanctity conferred on it by these hot springs, and by the Plutonium, a small cave under a projecting rock, from which there constantly emanated a dark vapour deadly to man and beast (Stabo, xii. 629; Vitruv., viii. 3; Apuleius, *De Mundo*, p. 65). In reference to this we find sometimes on its coins Pluto carrying off Proserpine.

<sup>1</sup> *Βαμβύξ* is borrowed from the Persian word (Bentley, *Wurzel*, i. 118), though the form it has taken in Greek is influenced by the word *Βαμβύς* to buzz. It is used by Aristotle, &c., to denote a great fond in Asia Minor, which has certainly nothing to do with silk.

The water was also much used for dyeing. Nothing is known of the origin of the city, from the legend *Ἀπόκρυφος* on coins, with a radiate head of the sun-god, Eckhel concludes that a Greek foundation was made under the guidance of Apollo, but a native city may have already existed there. The native name of the sun-god was *Ἀσκληπιός*, which often occurs on coins, he was probably a Phrygian form of the Greek Zeus. The goddess of healthful drinking, Hygieia, is also seen on coins. Cybele also, who is found on the coins, was one of the chief deities of the place. Little is known of the history of the city. The philosopher Epictetus was born there, and there St. Paul founded a church (Coloss. iv 13). The very considerable ruins which still exist, called Pambuk Kalesi ("Cotton Castle"), have been described by Pococke, Leake, &c. The ancient theatre and gymnasium are in a state of remarkable preservation.

**HIERARCHY** From *ἱεράρχης*, meaning a steward or guardian of holy things, is derived *ἱεραρχία*, naturally signifying the office of such a steward or guardian (not a "rule of priests" or "priestly ruler," see Doehlig, *Corp. Inscr. Gr.*, No. 1370), but most commonly used in ecclesiastical language to denote the aggregate of those persons who exercise authority within the Christian Church,—the patriarchate, episcopate, or entire threefold order of the clergy. The word, which does not occur in any classical Greek writer, owes its present extensive currency to the celebrated writings of Dionysius Pseudo Areopagita, which, originating probably in the age of Justinian, exerted during the 9th and following centuries so remarkable an influence on the current of theological speculation, both in the Eastern and in the Western Church. Of these the most important are the two which treat of the celestial and of the ecclesiastical hierarchy respectively. Defining hierarchy as the "function which comprises all sacred things," or, more fully, as "a sacred order and science and activity, assimilated as far as possible to the godlike, and elevated to the imitation of God proportionately to the Divine illuminations conceded to it," the author proceeds to enumerate the nine orders of the heavenly host, which are subdivided again into hierarchies or tridies, in descending order, thus—Seraphim, Cherubim, Thrones, Dominations, Virtues, Powers, Principalities, Archangels, Angels. These all exist for the common object of raising men through ascending stages of purification and illumination to perfection. The ecclesiastical or earthly hierarchy is the counterpart of the other. In it the first or highest triad is formed by baptism, communion, and chrism. The second triad consists of the three orders of the ministry, bishop or hierarch, priest, and minister or deacon (*ἱεράρχης, ἱερεὺς, λειτουργός*), this is the earliest known instance in which the title hierarch is applied to a bishop. The third or lowest triad is made up of monks, "unmarried," and catechumens. To Dionysius may be traced, through Thomas Aquinas and other Catholic writers of the intervening period, the definition of the term usually given by Roman Catholic writers—"cognatus ordo presbiterii et sacerdotum ministrorum ad regendam ecclesiam quendamque in hominibus sanctitatem divinitus institutus."<sup>1</sup> Although it immediately rests upon the authority of the sixth canon of the twenty-third session of the council of Trent, in which anathema is pronounced upon all who deny the existence within the Catholic Church of a hierarchy instituted by divine appointment, and consisting of bishops, priests, and ministers.<sup>2</sup> This definition, however, relates only to what is called the "hierarchy of orders," to which hierarchy, it must further

be borne in mind, belong the lesser orders of sub-deacon, acolyte, exorcist, lector, and doorkeeper (to which that of singer is sometimes added), though these are to be regarded as institutions of ecclesiastical authority only, while the other three are of divine right, and therefore pre-eminently "holy." The "hierarchy of jurisdiction," as distinguished from that of "orders," is represented by the Roman pontiff alone, who enjoys supreme authority over all bishops, even when these are assembled in general council. This supreme authority he holds by divine right as the successor of Peter, who received immediately from Christ the primacy of honour and of jurisdiction over the universal church. Between the pope and the bishops occur the metropolitans or archbishops and the patriarchs, but these intermediate grades are not regarded as essential, and, for the present at least, the rank of patriarch may almost be said to be, in the Roman communion, purely titular. The Greek Church, like the Roman, recognizes a threefold clerical order, distinct *juxta divinum* from other Christians, of bishops, priests, and deacons. The five patriarchs, of equal dignity, hold the highest rank in the episcopate, and the episcopal body united in a general council represents the church, and infallibly decides, under the guidance of the Holy Ghost, all matters of faith and ecclesiastical life. The Anglican Church acknowledges the ecclesiastical life. The Anglican Church acknowledges the superior and divinely conferred authority of the episcopal order, but, seeking its hierarchical doctrine in the records of a comparatively early period of church history, holds the substantial equality of all bishops, and, while acknowledging the validity, does not maintain the necessary infallibility, of their decisions when met in general council. Thus in form of government the Roman Church may be said to be a hierarchical monarchy, the Greek in some sense a patriarchal oligarchy, and the Anglican an episcopal aristocracy. For historical and other details relating to the growth and development of the hierarchical system the reader is referred to the articles APOSTLE, ARCHBISHOP, BISHOP, CARDINAL, CHURCH, CLERGY, COUNCIL, DIOCESE, EPISCOPE, EXARCH, PATRIARCH, POPE, &c.

Some kind of hierarchy, both of orders and of jurisdiction, may, from the nature of the case, be looked for in every religious system that has attained any considerable degree of visibility and external organization. The ancient Jewish and Egyptian hierarchies, for example, find parallels in Paganism and Mahometanism, while in some regions Buddhism has attained a degree of complexity in its ecclesiastical government strikingly suggestive of many features of the present Roman hierarchy.

**HIERAX**, or **HIRACAS**, a learned ascetic who flourished about the end of the 3d century at Leontopolis in Egypt, where he lived to the age of ninety, supporting himself by calligraphy and devoting his leisure to scientific and literary pursuits, especially to the study of the Bible. He was the author of Biblical commentaries both in Greek and Coptic, and is said to have composed many hymns. He ultimately became leader of the so-called sect of the Hiacantes, an ascetic society from which persons living in the married state were excluded, and of which one of the leading tenets was that only the celibate could enter the kingdom of heaven. This doctrine was based on a somewhat too literal interpretation of the parable of the ten virgins, on other points, however, Hiacax followed Origen in allegorizing Scripture, thus he thought that the narrative of the fall and the doctrine of the resurrection ought both to be taken in a spiritual sense. It is upon this apparently Manichean view of matrimony, taken along with his denial of the resurrection and of a viable paradise, and his assertion that infants are incapable of "striving lawfully," can-

<sup>1</sup> *Personæ, De Locus Theologorum*, pt 1, sec 1, cap 2.

<sup>2</sup> Si quis dixerit in ecclesiis catholicis non esse hierarchiam divinitus ordinatam archiepiscopalem, quæ consistit ex episcopis, presbyteris, et ministris anathema sit.

<sup>3</sup> *Personæ, De Locus Theologorum*, pt 1, sec 1, cap 2, 3.

not inherit the kingdom of God, that his reputation as a heretic chiefly depends.

HERO, the name of two rulers of Syracuse.

HERO I, displacing his infant nephew, succeeded his famous brother Gelon as tyrant of Syracuse in 478 B.C. His rule was more tyrannical than Gelon's had been, and his jealousy of his more popular brother Polyzelus (who was at the head of the army, and had married Gelon's widow Domarette, daughter of Theon of Argiuntum) ended in an open quarrel, in which Theon sided with Polyzelus. The brothers, however, were reconciled, and Hiero married Theon's sister. From this slight information extant regarding Hiero, his influence seems to have been very great. He removed the inhabitants of Naxos and Catana to Leontini, and peopled Catana, which he renamed *Atina*, with Dorians. He was also an important factor in the history of Argiuntum, of Rhegium, and of Locri, and he saved the Greeks of Campana from the Etruscans, whose naval power he destroyed by his great victory at Cumæ (474 B.C.). Though despotic in his rule, he was a hearty patron of literature, and numbered among his friends such names as *Æchylus*, *Bacchylides*, *Epicharmus*, *Simonides*, and *Pindar*—the last of whom celebrated his victories in the Grecian games. He died at Catana in 467 B.C.

HERO II, king of Syracuse, was the illegitimate son of a Syracusan noble, Hierocles, who claimed descent from Gelon (see *Gelon*). His birth must have taken place before the year 306 B.C. On the departure of Pyrrhus from Sicily (in 275 or end of 276 B.C.), the Syracusan army and citizens alike marked their approval of Hero's military and popular qualities by placing him at the head of the troops, and he materially strengthened his position by marrying the daughter of Leptines, the leading citizen. A body of Campanian mercenaries, who had been employed by King Agathocles of Syracuse, had taken the designation of Mamertines, and occupied Messina. From this stronghold they harassed the Syracusans. Hiero led his army against them, and in the engagement that ensued he abandoned to the enemy his mercenary troops, whose sullen disposition he distrusted, and retreated with the rest of his soldiers to Syracuse. There he raised a native force, with which he drove the Mamertines into the corner of the island, defeated them in a pitched battle, and was prevented from capturing Messina only by Carthaginian interference. His grateful countrymen then chose him king (270 B.C.). In 264 he again returned to the attack, and the Mamertines called in the aid of Rome. Hiero at once joined the Punic leader Hannibal, who had newly landed in Sicily, but being defeated by the consul Appius Claudius, he withdrew to Syracuse. Pleased by the Roman forces, he was in 263 compelled to conclude a treaty with Rome, by which he was to rule over the south-east of Sicily and the eastern coast to Tauro-menium. From this time till his death in 216 he remained the fast friend of Rome, rendering frequent and valuable service during the First Punic War by supplying men, material, and provisions. Presents were sent him in acknowledgment of these good offices, but the strong desire of the Romans to occupy Sicily prevented his receiving any accession of territory at the close of the war. When the Second Punic War broke out, he was faithful as ever, joined his fleet to that of Scipio, and offered supplies of food and clothing. At home, he was a wise and just ruler. He retained the republican senate, and governed as a constitutional monarch. Munificent in his gifts to foreigners—winning his presents to Olympia, to the Rhodians, to King Ptolemy, and above all to the Romans—and in the erection of public buildings within his own domain, he was exceedingly simple in his personal tastes, he wore a citizen's dress, and was not attended by guards. So wise were his financial arrangements that they were re-

tained by the Romans after the reduction of Sicily. He kept up a powerful fleet for defensive purposes, and employed his famous kinsman Archimedes in the construction of those engines that, at a later date, played so important a part during the siege of Syracuse by the Romans. His only son, Gelon, predeceased him, and he was succeeded by his grandson Hieronymus.

HEROCLES, a Roman provincial, first of Bithynia and afterwards of Alexandria, flourished during the reign of Diocletian (284-305 A.D.), and is said to have been the instigator of the fierce persecution of the Christians under Galerius Cæsar in 303. He was a man of considerable intellectual culture, and wrote a work entitled *λόγοι θεολογικοί*, *πρὸς τοὺς Χριστιανούς* in two books, in which he endeavoured to persuade the Christians that their sacred books were full of contradictions, and that in moral influence and miraculous power Christ was inferior to Apollonius of Tyana. For our knowledge of the nature of this treatise, which has not come down to our times, we are dependent on Lactantius (*Inst. Div.*, v. 2), and still more on Eusebius, who is the author of a refutation entitled *ἀντιρρητικός πρὸς τὸν Τερκόλεον*.

HEROCLES, a Neo-Platonic writer of the 5th century A.D., was apparently a native of Alexandria. He was born most probably about the beginning of the 5th century, studied under the celebrated Neo-Platonist Plotinus at Athens, and taught for some years in his native town. He seems to have been banished from Alexandria and to have taken up his abode in Constantinople, where he endured some persecution for his religious opinions. His death must be referred to the closing decade of the 5th century, probably about 490. The only complete work of his which has come down to us is the commentary on the great Pythagorean *Curmen Arismet.* but several other writings, especially one on Providence or Foreknowledge, are quoted or referred to by Plotinus and Proclus. The commentary contains several remarkable utterances, and is written with much elegance. Philosophy is there regarded in its practical aspect, as a discipline for purifying or elevating the mind by inculcating virtue and leading to truth. The most curious doctrines contained in the work are those bearing on providence and the human soul. The activity of the Divine Being, the supreme God, although eternal and all-reaching, is viewed as extending specially or immediately only to spiritual existences, or rather to the genera of such existences. The individuals are not directly the objects of his foreknowledge, but are rather the objects of his will. In divine operation, but are left to natural chance or law. In more modern phraseology, these are only, according to Hierocles, general, not particular, providence. As against divine foreknowledge, perfect freedom of individual will is maintained. All that is preordained is but the connection between volitions and their natural consequences. As regards the human soul, the teaching of Hierocles in the main resembles Neo-Pythagoreanism. He states the doctrine of transmigration and pre-existence, holds that there is an ethereal body which is purified by trial along with the soul, and regards the world as the means by which judgment upon the past actions of the individual spirit is carried out.

The earliest edition of the commentary is the Latin translation by Anserius in 1474, the Greek text was first given by Dintinus in 1688. The fragments of the works on Providence and Fate were published in 1698 by Moellius. Later editions of all that is preserved appeared in 1854-5, 1878, and 1709. The commentary alone has been edited by Ashton (1742), by Wolf (1710), by Gaisford in his edition of *Solomon* (1850), and finally by Mullach (1868). The best book entitled *Arismet.* (edited by Solmer, 1768, and Eberhard, 1869), though frequently attributed to this author, is certainly the work of a later hand. The most complete information regarding Hierocles is to be found in Mullach's edition, and in the relative portions of his *Fragmenta Phil. Græcæ* vol. 1860, p. 408 ff. Cf. Zeller, *Phil. d. Griechen* (2d ed.), iii. 2, pp. 681-2.

## HIEROGLYPHICS

## INTRODUCTION

THE term hieroglyphics is used, with others, by Greek and Latin writers to describe the sacred characters of the ancient Egyptian language in its classical phase. It is used by the moderns for various systems of writing in which figures of objects take the place of conventional signs. This article is limited to an account of Egyptian hieroglyphics, with some notice of the derived systems called hieratic and demotic.

It is no longer necessary in an article like the present to give a history of the interpretation of hieroglyphics and a sketch of the grammar of ancient Egyptian. What students need is a statement of the main results, as to the Egyptian characters themselves and a systematic bibliography.

The written language of the ancient Egyptians remained the same from the date of the earliest monuments (Third Dynasty) until the age of the Ptolemæan Kings (B.C. 300), when a vulgar dialect expressing the common speech is first found in written documents. Then, if not earlier, the older phase of the language became the classical Egyptian, sometimes called the sacred dialect, to distinguish it from the vulgar dialect. The classical Egyptian was used almost as late as the fall of paganism generally for all documents but legal and commercial ones, for which the vulgar dialect was used.<sup>1</sup>

It is necessary to observe that although Egyptian is not proved to be a Semitic language, it contains in its oldest known form undoubted Semitic elements, both in structure and roots. The constant comparison with the Semitic languages which is here necessary is therefore not merely employed for the sake of the analogies that may be discovered, but on the ground of partial affinity, which, however, must not be strained.

It must also be borne in mind that the grammar of ancient Egyptian is in its infancy. We know many of its principal facts, but we do not know them accurately. For instance, we know the forms of many tenses of the verb, and can perhaps place these tenses in groups, as past, present, and future, but we cannot define the different senses of the various tenses of each group. Similarly, in Coptic we do not always know the shades of difference within a group of tenses. It may be that in Coptic these shades have disappeared through the decay of the language, but it would be rash to affirm this of the classical Egyptian. Thus this essential part of the grammar will not be understood until the verb has been thoroughly worked downwards from the oldest texts through the classical language, then through the demotic, and then the Coptic, and again in inverted order from the Coptic upwards. The same labour has to be performed for the whole grammar in each of the three phases of the language, before we can speak with any certainty of Egyptian grammar. This is said in no disparagement of the admirable work already done, but as a necessary caution to the student.

<sup>1</sup> As early as the time of the Ptolemæan influences of dialect due to differences of speech in Upper and Lower Egypt had crept into our correspondence (Buzgeon, *Gram. Hist.*, 93). Ultimately vulgar forms and constructions are distinctly visible in the sacred language (Id. *Id.*, of Id. *Geogr. Hist.*, 94, 95). There are also natural changes due to development or decay on both, and artificial changes due to fashion. Modifications of grammatical forms and the growth of style are instances of vital changes, and the direct borrowing of Semitic words by the scribes of the Ptolemæan, and what is still more remarkable, the actual Semitization of Egyptian words, are examples of artificial changes (Maspero, *Hist.*, 387, 388).

The following sections are abridged (to p. 803, end of section on "Secret Writing"), with additions and modifications, which are noted by then being included in parentheses, from M. de Rougé's *Chrestomathie Égyptienne*, Abrogé Grammatical.

## THE SYSTEMS OF WRITING

The elements of Egyptian writing are composed of a certain number of actual objects, natural or artificial, imitated by drawing or engraving.

Egyptian writing falls into three systems—(1) hieroglyphic, (2) hieratic, (3) demotic or enchorial, the hieratic being a simplified form of hieroglyphic, and the demotic of hieratic. The complete designing of hieroglyphics required skill and time. They thus came to be reduced in writing to the simplest forms which retained the leading characteristics. These were called by Champollion linear hieroglyphics. The linear forms not lending themselves with sufficient readiness to very rapid writing, a further abbreviation was made, by which the forms became almost conventional,—the original type usually ceasing to be immediately recognizable. This cursive system Champollion called hieratic. The demotic writing is a new abbreviation of the hieratic gradually departing so far from the original types as to appear to consist of arbitrary signs.

Hieroglyphics are written either in horizontal lines or vertical columns, and are ordinarily read from the right. The heads of animals and the like show from what direction to begin reading. Hieratic and demotic are written from right to left, in horizontal lines. In very early times hieratic is sometimes written in vertical columns.

(The hieroglyphic is a lapidary system, the hieratic and demotic purely systems for common writing. Consequently the hieroglyphic is the most difficult of the three to read, as the engraver or painter paid great attention to the symmetrical appearance of each group of signs, and grammatical forms were hence often omitted. In hieratic and demotic the signs follow each other without interruption of the natural order, and the grammatical forms are usually given, and even more fully.)



## CHARACTERS IN RELATION TO THEIR USE IN WRITING

Egyptian writing is composed of a mixture of signs of two distinct classes—(1) ideographic, each sign representing an idea, (2) phonetic, representing a sound, either (a) a simple articulation (syllabic) or (b) a complete sound, i.e., a complete syllable (syllabic). The two classes were combined according to fixed rules in writing words.

## IDEOGRAPHIC SIGNS

This class may be best divided into (a) representative signs and (b) symbolic (tropical).

The representative signs exactly express the idea of the object of which they present an image, as a star a star.

The symbolic (tropical) signs represent an idea by the aid of certain analogies which the mind seeks between the symbol and the idea attached to it. A simple symbol presents a single object, as the sun  when used in the symbolic sense "day." A symbol is complex when uniting more objects than one to convey to the mind a single idea, thus a star suspended beneath the celestial vault  represented "night." Under

complex signs should be placed figures of divinities in which the human form has special headresses or insignia

The value of ideographic signs may be discovered in various ways. The representative signs only need that the thing represented should be determined. The symbolic signs are often (rather, sometimes) explained by classical authors, they may also be explained by careful study of bilingual documents, as the Rosetta Stone (and the Decree of Canopus). The sense, and more certainly the reading, can be discovered by an exact knowledge of the words written by phonetic combined with ideographic signs, and above all by the variants allowed in writing the same word with signs of different classes (The result may be thus tabulated)

Ideographic Signs		Phonetic Signs	
Representative	Symbolic	Alphabetic	Syllabic
Dj. Bugseli in his <i>Gram</i>		Hân (p 3) gives the following scheme	
Phonetic Signs		Ideographic Signs	
Alphabetic	Syllabic	Semiotic	General

Here the ideographic signs are classed, not according to their nature but according to their use, which will be later noticed. M de Rougé's seems the more logical classification.)

#### PHONETIC SIGNS

As the phonetic signs represent either (α) a simple articulation or (β) a complete sound, *et c.*, a complete syllable, the hieroglyphic method comprehends (a) an alphabet and (β) a syllabary.

Champollion held that the alphabet originated from giving to each object the phonetic value of the initial of its name: thus the mouth "◀" "no" would become "n." This probable principle cannot now be tested for a great part of the alphabet, probably in consequence of the loss of many native words.

The alphabet of the Greek and Roman periods presents a great number of homophones for each articulation. The more we advance towards antiquity the more the method simplifies, and the alphabet of primitive times admits but a very small number of homophones. Dr Lepsius (*Letter d. Hier. III.*) first scientifically treated this distinction.

#### ARTICULATIONS OF THE EGYPTIAN LANGUAGE

The determination of the exact number of articulations which the scribes distinguished in the Egyptian language presents great difficulties. Comparison with the articulations of languages which occur in bilingual texts cannot give sufficiently precise results, for the shades of sound are far from being the same in the languages thus placed in juxtaposition. The Romans and Greeks had many letters which, though quite distinct in their languages, the Egyptians confounded in their transcriptions. On the other hand, there were some Egyptian articulations preserved in the Coptic language which had no special representative in Greek or Latin, hence certain letters derived from the demotic were added to the Greek alphabet on its adoption by the Copts. (It must also be remarked that the Greek and Roman rule was an age of literary decay and ruin for classical Egyptian, in the depression of which little effort seems to have been made to represent accurately foreign sounds. The student must not be misled by the greater accuracy at this time in rendering the vowels, which was merely due to the decay of the system of

writing, by which the Egyptian vowels usually following certain consonant signs came to be disregarded.) Happily those Egyptian articulations which were unknown to the Greeks and Romans have at least analogues in the Semitic languages. Moreover, the many transcriptions of Semitic words (made while the Egyptian was in full vigour), joined to the traditions of the Coptic language (which has lasted for a hundred years to be a living speech), enable us to appreciate sufficiently those articulations unknown to the Greeks and Romans (and this indication may be followed in the cases of the rest of the letters).

The words common to Egyptian and Semitic in the earliest known condition of the Egyptian language must be omitted from comparison, the more exact transcriptions of the scribes of the Ramessides (Dynasties XIX, XX) must take precedence of the looser ones of the earlier period of the Empire (Dynasty XVIII). Coptic, having long existed in a languishing state and under the influence of Arabic, whence the colouring of the latest dialect, the Bashmuic (Revilleut ap. Rossi, *Gram. Copto. Ier.*, 30, n. 1), and certain peculiarities of the present pronunciation, is not an absolutely safe guide.

It might be thought that the study of the various modes in which words are written would furnish an exact table of homophones, and give us at once the list of distinct articulations, thus we might suppose that variants shewing two characters might enable us to assume their identity, as when in reading Greek we assume that θ is the same as θ. But in Egyptian, as in other written languages, there are certain licensed irregularities of orthography, and also oscillations between the different shades of sound in the same class of letters when used for the same word. A small number of variants between two letters therefore does not prove their perfect homophony. Hence certain differences of opinion among Egyptologists, according to the weight, greater or less, which they give to this or that series of variants. Thus the number of letters under the "u" group differs with different scholars.

Without denying that there may have been some shades of sound in the different signs here called homophones, as in the sounds represented by the English "th," the chief guide should be the estimate the Copts made of the elements of their language, when they adopted the Greek alphabet, completing it for their purpose by adding six special letters taken from demotic writing.

The Egyptian Christians in adopting the Greek alphabet, which had vowels with fixed sounds made their writing undergo a radical change up to that time they had only vague vowels which were, as in the Semitic alphabets, simple aspirates, susceptible of being coloured by the sounds of different vowels (but this vague character must be limited by the vowels filling, as in Semitic, into three groups of sounds, the vagueness was therefore not unlimited. This characteristic of the old Egyptian influenced the Coptic, which presents in the vowels varieties of orthography of the same word, these varieties, however, usually falling within the three ancient groups. It is only in the Coptic helping vowel that absolute vagueness is found, like that of the primitive "ahwa" of Hebrew.)

Following these indications we find 16 leading articulations in Egyptian, the shades of sound which may be most certainly distinguished would indicate an alphabet of 21 divisions. They are transcribed by letters taken, one, x, not to be confused with the Coptic x, excepted, from the Latin alphabet, according to the principles of the Standard Alphabet. Of Lepsius, *Standard Alphabet*.














that one often finds in Coptic the **ⲉⲗ** added to an ancient root as a kind of fuel, which slightly modifies its signification thus, **ⲟⲩⲱⲉ**, "to add," **ⲟⲩⲱⲉⲗ**, "to report," **ⲥⲱⲡ**, "to strew," **ⲥⲱⲡⲉ**, "to wander," &c. (cf also the Hebrew **ו** added to the root). This peculiarity has not yet been noticed in the ancient language.

It was regularly "unsubscribed" and, in undoubted exception shows the change of ל into ן in the word  *Shenahem*, "grasshopper," שָׁנְהֵם. The example justifies us in searching for ל under the transcription ן, which is more easily explained as the ancient Egyptians originally had not any sign to express the articulation *l*.



The Coptic **Ⲛ** transcribes the ancient *n*, but in course of time the liquid *l*, **Ⲛ**, had gained a footing in the pronunciation, a part of the Coptic words in which it figures derive it from the ancient *n*, thus, **Ⲛⲉⲥ**, *nes*, "tongue," became **Ⲛⲁⲥ**.

The novel presents many peculiarities worthy of remark in the Egyptian writing and language. It influenced our consonants, in the direction of modifying the pronunciation, thus it softened *n*, as in the group *nn* for writing *nn*. The *s*, preceded by a nasal, seems to have been also analogously modified, for the Greeks transcribed the particle *ns*, *nes*, which begins our proper names, by *ns*, as we have seen in *Neferibet*. The similar action of *n* on *h*, which was thus modified enough for the Salmu dialect to have sometimes rendered it by *ʔ*, has been previously observed. *N*, as already remarked, sometimes became *h*, the Coptic *Ⲣ*, the combination *nn* must have more frequently given occasion to the pronunciation *l* through the softening of *n*, *n* is often written *nnnnnn*, where *nnnnnn* represents a rounding *n*. The group *nnnn*, which has the value *nn*, is a syllabic *n* as of no force in the pronunciation. In illustration of the modification of *nn* (where the *n* was originally sounding), the Coptic word, *ⲛⲟⲩⲛ*, "outside," may be cited, it comes from the Egyptian *ⲛⲟⲩ*, *ḥunac*, of the same sense.

The Egyptian grammarians evidently considered the nasal a simple variant of the vowel, so it was indicated or omitted at will in writing. Thus the same person's name is written


 /*fenn*, and  /*fēnn*. In such cases a bar above the vowel may be used to note the omission of the nasal. Thus the papyrus  may be transcribed *pē*, when we find it written under the form  which would be difficult to recognize without this note in transcription. The examples of this custom's peculiarity are frequent; it is a grammatical stamp analogous to the "ancestral" of the Indians, in that it shows that the omission of the nasal has been retained in the pronunciation of some of the words.

The Egyptians used very readily the nasals *vowels*; they also sometimes introduced it into Semitic words which they adopted, or even only inscribed thus they wrote

	
TOTAL	TEEN

*Sesant*, the

name of the king called in the Bible *peru*, *Sisag*, a name apparently of Semitic origin (Hence the nasal helps to express the sound of the Hebrew *n*).

The Coptic possesses the two letters **p** and **ϣ**. It is difficult to ascertain if the ancient dialect of the Egyptian language knew the distinction of these two liquids, but it is certain that the hieroglyphs admitted but one type, represented by the sign  and **p**, which serves indifferently to transcribe the Greek **p** and **ϣ**, only at **ϣ** in the case of the word **ⲉⲣⲱⲛ** (Greek **ἑρως**) and **ⲉⲣⲱⲓ** (Greek **ἑρως**), but without regularity, and it is not until the last stage of demotic writing that the letters derived from this sign serve to attach itself regularly to the liquid **l**. In Egyptian words **ⲉⲣⲱⲓ** is **lue**, it is sometimes joined to **ⲉ** as a doubled letter: **ⲉⲣⲱⲓⲉ** like the groups **ⲉⲣⲱⲓⲉ** and **ⲉⲣⲱⲓⲉ**. So it is frequently employed in the transcription of Roman words. In the dialect of the Egyptians of the Delta, **ⲉⲣⲱⲓ** is the word **green**, hence by **ϣ** thus the ancient ascertainment was **ϣ**.

The Coptic derived forms are divided between **p** and **ʾ**—See also above for the combination **nr**—The Bashmuric dialect is characterized

above all by the exclusion of  $P$  (and use of  $\Sigma$  in its stead, from the influence of  $\Delta$  in it)

This liquid approached the semi-vowels in its nature, hence was sometimes permissible to omit it in writing, like the nasal thus  $\text{L}$ ,  $\text{k}\alpha$ , for  $\text{L} \diamond$ ,  $\text{k}\alpha\text{r}$ ,  $\text{R}$ ,  $\text{R}$ ,  $\text{R}$ , for  $\text{R}$ ,  $\text{R}$ ,  $\text{R}$ . "fine" By a frequent exception find i (and l in Dismukim) obliterated in Coptic words, thus the particle  $\epsilon\tau$ , has become E

## SEPTILAM

The two signs  $\eta$  and  $\theta$  are homophones. The Greek  $\eta$  inscription has always  $\eta$ , and the Samitic under  $\eta$  by  $\eta$  or  $\theta$ , an exception which is common enough in the Egyptian  $\eta$  equivalent to  $\theta$ , but probably this is only apparent. We know how easily the pronunciation varies between  $\eta$  and  $\theta$  in the Samitic languages. The celebrated story of the word shibboleth שִׁבּוּלֵת (Judges viii) shows it first among the Hebrews the pronunciation  $\eta$  according to the tribes, and then the Ephraim, which declares itself one of the different peoples estranged from the rest. It is always  $\eta$  sometimes an Egyptian  $\eta$  in relation to  $\theta$  Hebrew, particularly in the names of Egyptian towns or natives. (This should be qualified, for Ephraim was in middle lands rather than northern Palestine, and it is possible that  $\theta$  is in fact always anciently  $\eta$ .) The Coptic derivatives of the Egyptian  $\eta$  fall under  $\zeta$ , but there are many exceptions to this rule, the recent  $\eta$  sometimes becoming  $\eta$ , and more rarely  $\theta$ . It seems to have passed into  $\theta$  in some roots. We also find the substituent  $\eta$  in Coptic MSS by  $\zeta$ , but the instances are so few, as to be unimportant. It has been already remarked that  $\eta$  was used by the Ali words in Greek to inscribe the combination  $\eta$ .

HUNGING LATTEE (*Chumtante*)

(The term M de Rouge uses is important in distinguishing this letter from the vibrant. We can only suggest the English "hushing" as here equivalent.)

The letter  $\text{Ⲛ}$  (*zai*, French) having no representative in the Greek alphabet, the Copts preserved the demotic  $\text{Ⲛ}$ , regularized as  $\text{Ⲛ}$  it comes from the hieratic  $\text{Ⲛ}$ , hieroglyphic  $\text{Ⲛ}$ . The Greek ordinarily rendered  $\text{Ⲛ}$  by  $\sigma$ , sometimes by  $\chi$  and  $\sigma\chi$ . The exact sound of  $\text{Ⲛ}$  is found in Ptolemaic and the Semitic languages, it is constantly rendered by  $\text{Ⲛ}$  in the names of Ptolemaic kings, we also find it in the cuneiforms of Darius and Artaxerxes. For the Hebrew we find equally  $\text{Ⲛ}$  a little often than  $\text{Ⲛ}$ .

The Coptic derivatives are very regular, they use  $\omega$ , some exceptions show the ancient  $\delta$  passing into  $\alpha$ ,  $\sigma$ , and rarely  $\epsilon$  and  $\phi$ .

[illegible]

### ASPIRATED GUTTERAL

The aspirated guttural, here rendered by the Greek  $\chi$ , is represented in the alphabet by  $\Theta$  and  $\text{X}$ . These letters sometimes interchange and are found grouped as a double letter  $\Theta\text{X}$ , a reduplication analogous to those noted above.  $\text{X}$  is a third homophone, of little value as yet very old. The Greek transcribed the aspirated guttural by  $\chi$ , this was but an approximate value, for the Copt who adopted the  $\Theta\text{X}$  for the aspiration of  $\text{K}$  in the Memphis dialect, judged it necessary also to take their  $\text{X}$  from the demotic alphabet, in which the  $\text{L}$  represented  $\text{S}$ , hence of  $\text{X}$ .



minative of sound from the ordinary use as determinative of sense)

Syllables are divided into two classes—1, an articulation and one or more vowels, 2, two articulations (usually with a medial binding vowel unexpressed). All are, no doubt, monosyllables, although a syllable like *an* has the appearance of a dissyllable, here, either the first *a* has no force, or the two indicate a long vowel.

The first class of syllables, an articulation and a vague vowel is scarcely distinguishable from the letters of the alphabet. The distinction is thus determined: 1, the simple letters were used as phonetic complements, 2, the syllables do not seem to have been used quite indifferently for all kinds of vowels. We frequently find allusions, relations direct or remote, which have originally induced their choice for the purpose of writing this or that radical. (This is strictly analogous to the principle of the syllabary of Assyrian Babyloian in its Akkadian and Semitic developments, though in its application that principle led to wide polyphony, in consequence of an ideograph taking different sounds according to the cognate senses in which it was used.)

It is also possible that the syllables were sometimes employed to give an idea of the sound of the vowels. But if they had this use primitively, they did not retain it, for we cannot establish this property in a constant manner in the hieroglyphic inscriptions of Greek or Semitic words. (It is indeed the converse use of the vowel most affected by a consonant or of the syllable with its vowel which we can detect abundantly in the readings of Semitic transcriptions.)

There were also some signs corresponding to three articulations which could be used in syllables. Here the cases of homophony are much more rare, we have to do with different acceptations, rather than different radicals, but the ideal bond between these, different acceptations may escape us now. (These are still monosyllables.)

## POLYPHONY

There are characters which had various pronunciations. There are three kinds of polyphones.

1 A sign can answer to various words which belong to the same class of ideas, thus, the calf's ear, answers to the words *met'ei*, *ankh*, and *at*, which seem to have all signified the ear or some special part of this organ. The words *sem*, and *setem*, "to hear," are two new values, on the same principle. One might add to this first class the very neat values produced by variants of pronunciation or writing for the same word, such as *ta*, *taa*, *ta*, *at*, *ant*, *ant*, *antu* for *ta*, and the forms more or less developed of a single root, but these are rather extensions of a word than true instances of polyphony.

2 The same sign might have been chosen as symbol of a certain number of ideas without any true bond between them, at least to our view. Thus answers to the phonetic *nen*, "largeness," to *ob*, "offering," and *hent*, "regent" (*sem*).

3 A sign may have become syllabic and be used for several purely phonetic values taken from the words in which it figures, on the two principles explained. Thus in the syllabary, the sign which symbolizes the idea "gift," answers to two roots, *tu* and *ma*, these give in their turn to the values *tu*, and *ma*, even in words where the idea of gift no longer exists.

Such is the series of facts which has produced Egyptian polyphony. The number of figures suitable to design and with which one could reasonably charge the memory being limited, we should expect to find polyphony more or less developed in every system of writing originally ideographic. The syllabic polyphony of Assyrian seems to have been produced by wholly analogous circumstances, though the change from the original language habitually veils the connection of values.

Polyphony is a source of great difficulty, and science has still much to do to fix the different phonetic values of the polyphones. Often our decision is made on the evidence of phonetic complements, and in hieratic it is seldom that this aid is wholly omitted.

Thus is easily recognized as *ma*. But our ignorance is not always thus aided, and the choice of the suitable word sometimes can only be indicated by a profound study of analogous texts.

The following list gives an abridgment of De Rouge's list of syllables, and contains the most common signs, the important polyphones being indicated by asterisks, and their principal varieties of sound being given in the fourth column. The method is varied from that of the *Chrestomathie*.

TABLE OF THE MOST COMMON SYLLABIC SIGNS

SIGN	SOUND	SIGN	SOUND
1	<i>aa</i>	11	<i>ta</i>
2	<i>aa</i>	12	<i>tu</i>
3	<i>ab, ab</i>	13	<i>tu</i>
4	<i>ab</i>	14	<i>tu</i>
5	<i>ap</i>	15	<i>tu</i>
6*	<i>at</i>	16	<i>tu</i>
7	<i>am</i>	17	<i>tu</i>
8	<i>am</i>	18	<i>tu</i>
9*	<i>ta</i>	19	<i>tu</i>
10	<i>an, an</i>	20	<i>tu</i>
11	<i>an</i>	21	<i>tu</i>
12	<i>as</i>	22	<i>tu</i>
13	<i>na</i>	23	<i>tu</i>
14	<i>na</i>	24	<i>tu</i>
15	<i>na</i>	25	<i>tu</i>
16	<i>na</i>	26	<i>tu</i>
17	<i>na</i>	27	<i>tu</i>
18	<i>na</i>	28	<i>tu</i>
19	<i>na</i>	29	<i>tu</i>
20	<i>na</i>	30	<i>tu</i>
21	<i>na</i>	31	<i>tu</i>
22	<i>na</i>	32	<i>tu</i>
23	<i>na</i>	33	<i>tu</i>
24	<i>na</i>	34	<i>tu</i>
25	<i>na</i>	35	<i>tu</i>
26	<i>na</i>	36	<i>tu</i>
27	<i>na</i>	37	<i>tu</i>
28	<i>na</i>	38	<i>tu</i>
29	<i>na</i>	39	<i>tu</i>
30	<i>na</i>	40	<i>tu</i>
31	<i>na</i>	41	<i>tu</i>
32	<i>na</i>	42	<i>tu</i>
33	<i>na</i>	43	<i>tu</i>
34	<i>na</i>	44	<i>tu</i>
35	<i>na</i>	45	<i>tu</i>
36	<i>na</i>	46	<i>tu</i>
37	<i>na</i>	47	<i>tu</i>
38	<i>na</i>	48	<i>tu</i>
39	<i>na</i>	49	<i>tu</i>
40	<i>na</i>	50	<i>tu</i>

TABLE OF THE MOST COMMON SYLLABIC SIGNS—continued

SYLL.	SYLL.	SYLL.	SOUND
8		an	ʾan
9		an, am, ʾan	ʾan
10		an	ʾan
11		an	ʾan
1		an	ʾan
2		an	ʾan
3		an	ʾan
4		an	ʾan
5		an	ʾan
6		an	ʾan
7		an	ʾan
8		an	ʾan
9		an	ʾan
10		an	ʾan
11		an	ʾan
12		an	ʾan

## DETERMINATIVES

Champollion described as determinatives certain ideographic signs which were placed after words phonetically expressed. The use of each of these signs is more or less extended. The greater part are used for one radical, or at least for one and the same idea. For such determinatives the proper place is the dictionary. But there is a class of determinatives placed after different words, often many in number, and therefore called generic determinatives. The determinative is attached to the radical, and has nothing to do with the grammatical use of a word as noun or verb (M. de Rougé gives a list of above a hundred as necessary for the student of Egyptian grammar, leaving out those of more restricted use). Science has not yet wholly accomplished its task in this section (Necessarily the exact definition of the range of a determinative requires a careful induction from its use).



(The table which follows is but slightly abridged from M. de Rougé's, after comparison with Dr. Bunsen's in his *Géographie Hieroglyphique*, where a somewhat fuller but less logical list is given, apparently founded on that of the French savant. The reason for here giving a larger proportion of determinative than of syllabic signs is that the sense of the determinative when logically arranged, as by M. de Rougé, present a key to the whole construction of the Egyptian system of ideographic signs, and afford us a remarkable insight into the genius of the language.)





TABLE OF GLANCING DETERMINATIVE SIGNS

SYLL.	SYLL.	SYLL.	SOUND
1		an	ʾan
2		an	ʾan
3		an	ʾan
4		an	ʾan
5		an	ʾan
6		an	ʾan
7		an	ʾan
8		an	ʾan
9		an	ʾan
10		an	ʾan
11		an	ʾan
12		an	ʾan
13		an	ʾan
14		an	ʾan
15		an	ʾan
16		an	ʾan
17		an	ʾan
18		an	ʾan
19		an	ʾan
20		an	ʾan
21		an	ʾan
22		an	ʾan
23		an	ʾan
24		an	ʾan



























TABLE OF GRAPHIC DETERMINATIVES SIGNS—continued				TABLE OF GRAPHIC DETERMINATIVES SIGNS—continued			
SIGN	VARIANTS	REPRESENTING	DETERMINING IDEAS	SIGN	VARIANTS	REPRESENTING	DETERMINING IDEAS
25		(seated, holding out)	time, standing on staff	48		cult's face, head	nose, nostrils, lungs, to swallow, breathe, sleep, pleasure, to separate, shut up, revolt
26		man, holding club (or staff)	force in general, violence	49		herd of oxen on support (?)	throat, gullet, lungs, &c. to eat, breathe
27		child, hand to mouth	infancy, youth, to suckle, education, knowing	50		piece of skin	quadrupeds, objects in leather
28		mummy	embalming, mummies, images, types, forms	51		bone with flesh?	members in general
29		woman sitting	mummies, death, disease, embalming, to lie down, rest	52		Nile duck	larks, flying insects
30		woman squatting	women, goddesses, femur, papyrus and papyrus	53		wagtail	smallness, vile, wicked
31		head of man in profile	head, superiority	54		wing	wings, feathers, to fly, rise
32		column	him, black, columns in general, grief, tears	55		egg	egg, oviparous animals, race, descent, lineage
33		human eye, iris, pupil	to see, to awake, to know, cunning	56		crocodile	crocodiles of different kinds, divinites, magical, threatening, to conceal oneself, to spy, destruction
34		eye weeping	tears, grief	57		kind of fish	fishes, fishing, impunity, prohibition
35		nose, calf's head	to breathe, small, joy, pleasure	58		serpent	serpents, worms, sacred serpents, names of certain gods
36		tooth	biting, speech, hard objects, stones, &c., rigorous, directions, everything relating to the mouth and holds	59		kind of tree	trees of all kinds
37		hand holding small club	all actions implying the use of any force	60		dry branch?	different kinds of wood, objects made of wood
38		hand, the palm below, foot of bird lying down	arms, shoulders, sides, directions, gentle actions, rest, gentleness, account, songs	61		palm shoot?	season, year, time, youth, to renew
39		a man and two women, arms and face, names	to embrace, unite, to agree, embrace, crush, for time	62		bunch of flowers	plants, flowers, objects composed of plants
40		extended arms	negation, prohibition, asylum	63		bush, pouring out grain, vase full of grain	cereals of different kinds; harvest, tribute, to measure, bushel
41		phallus	male, generation, pollution, to pour out, parts of generation, in front, veins	64		ground plan of a room	shades, places in general
42		bent leg	leg, foot, knee, &c., walk, diminution and enlargement, measure of length	65		wall, fortifications, enclosure	walls, fortifications, enclosure
43		same and knife	to carry off, leap over, surpass, diminish, annihilate, violate	66		stone	to stagger, crumble, decay
44		legs walking	locomotion	67		mountain	to stand, to mount, to approach, foot of a monument
45		the same reversed	return, send back, repel	68		fortified enclosure	names of fortified cities (written within the determinative)
46		hand's hand pointing back	behind, to follow, to revolt, refuse, force, violence	69		basin	waters, rivers, seas, canals, streams, to fill, gate, cultivate
47		Typhonian animal	revolt, violence, disorder, tempests, storms	70		basin	waters, rivers, seas, canals, streams, to fill, gate, cultivate



it forms the group  1, not only for the substantive *ha*, *ha*, "face," but also for the particle *ha*, "upon," &c. In hieratic, *h* is attached to many characters, probably to distinguish them from very similar ones, thus  for

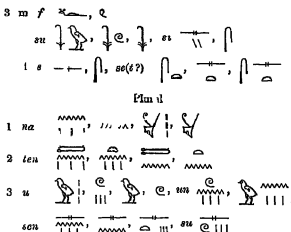
 is clearly distinguished from  for . It is thus used as a disjunctive sign, though very variably. At the end of words we find, above all in late times, the expletive 

#### EXPLETIVE VOWELS AND COMPLEMENTS OF SIMPLE LETTERS

Although the vowels were often omitted, sometimes they are added in a wholly expletive manner, which their vagueness can only aid us to understand. This is easily proved from certain words transcribed, such as *bar*, the Egyptian                             



















































It will be remarked that all the phonetic forms but one are written with alphabetic signs, that the introduction of ideographic signs, either as determinatives or independent symbols, gives the common first person singular a feminine in writing but not in sound, and further confuses the feminine and the true feminine of the second person singular when represented by the same symbol only. The principle of writing an ideograph to determine the use of the pronoun, phonetically expressed or only represented by that symbol, is capital fault in the first person singular than the table shows, there being special signs for a goal, &c.

In the case of the articles and the pronouns of more common use alphabetical signs are employed with ideographic signs for the pronouns when the necessity occurs. Syllabic signs are used for some of the less common pronouns, and ideographs for substantives employed as pronouns. The fuller forms of pronouns so produced by alphabetic signs, the same is usually the case with the compounds that introduce new elements.

very much identical with that of the noun, expressed in every mode, in which this morphology can be used. It is, however, otherwise with the derivative forms, the inflexions, and the substantive verb, which in its various expressions is really an inflexional word employed in tense formation. The derivative forms are produced by prefixes which are always alphabetic or by repetition of the radicals (reduplication, sometimes *afixation* is apposed). The inflexions are *infixes* and *supfixes* and are never alphabetic. The substantive verb, however, these affixes being almost always placed before the pronominal ones, for the mood and tense, here again the expressions are alphabetic with the exceptions afforded by the pronominal affixes as already shown. The

forms of the substantive verb are phonetic, either alphabetic,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*,  *pa*

These words written in the above manner show the same phenomena. The prepositions are expressed phonetically, the majority, including nearly all the most common, alphabetically. The simple adverbs, including the negatives, are written phonetically, with perhaps not an equal use of alphabetic and syllabic forms. The few interjections are written alphabetically in consequence of this mode of writing, particles of different sense use sometimes identical in form. Thus *am*, *em*, is both "and" and "not," but most apparent instances of this kind are due to the use of a particle as both conjunction and conjuncture on adverb.

The bearing of these results on the problems of the formation of the Egyptian hieroglyphic writing, and the growth and origin of the language is significant.

The earliest Egyptian writings, which are hieroglyphic, show a predominant use of ideographic signs. The phonetic signs gradually grow in importance until the full development of the cursive and language. We are thus led to ask whether there was a period in Egyptian writing when it was wholly ideographic, the supposed first stage of all such systems, when the figure of each object conveyed its name or name and nothing more.

A stage of pure picture writing would express a language in the condition which is supposed to have been the earliest in the case of all monoeyllabic languages, the condition before grammar. It is precisely to such a condition that the linguistic phenomena of Egyptian seem to point. For its simple necessities ideographic alone would be sufficient, and the phonetic signs wanted for grammatical machinery would be introduced when a higher civilization was reached.

[illegible]

It would thus appear that the Egyptian language was originally purely monosyllabic without inflexion and written by ideographic signs, that the first stage towards inflexion was the use of substantives in the plural, and that the next stage was the use of ideographic signs being still sufficient for the purpose of writing, and the second stage was attained by borrowing from Semitic, so far as the language is concerned, its manner and practice, with perhaps some verbal additions. The third stage was the use of phonetic signs, and the fourth stage was the use of phonetic signs because absolutely necessary. The importance of the phonetic signs in expressing grammatical forms could tend to their production in the whole category, except where the inflexion class was concerned. In the latter case the use of the 'hook' in such proportion to the plural as in the case of the verb, and the administration, &c. This view is put forward as a mere hypothesis, to be sustained or refuted by the study which the subject requires. It is not intended to be taken as a final conclusion, but will mainly tend to determine whether the 'hook' belongs to an early stage of Semitic, as has been conjectured on very insufficient grounds. In the previous remarks it is assumed that such a view may be maintained, and, on the other hand, we could not speak of the early Semitic.

THE SUPPOSED DERIVATION OF THE PHœNICIAN  
FROM THE EGYPTIAN ALPHABET

M de Rougé endeavored to show that the Phœnician alphabet was derived from the Egyptian in its hieratic form. The hypothesis has been accepted by M. François Lenormant in his *Essai sur la Propagation de l'Alphabet Phœnicien*, 2d ed., of which the first Plato presents a comparative table of hieratic and ædicine Phœnician. The latter will be found in the Appendix. The following conclusion, however, is fully established. It must be remembered that the Egyptian alphabet presents one or more alternative forms of more than half its letters. Most of these correspond to a single Phœnician letter. Thus there is in half the Phœnician alphabet a choice between two or more hieratic forms. This diminishes the force of the comparison. Again the hieratic forms are all well known, and the number of variants is small for each symbol. Consequently the writer who desires to establish their identity with Phœnician can scarcely avoid straining the evidence. Any one who will compare M. Lenormant's plate with M. de Rougé's hieratic alphabets in the *Chrestomathie*, Pls I seq., will see that the signs chosen for comparison by M. Lenormant do not agree throughout with the signs of the three types given by M. de Rougé. It may be remarked in illustration that if we attempted to connect the demotic in its latest form

with the Arabic Koofoo in its earliest, which is of course absurd, it would be possible, by selecting the demotic variety nearest in form to the typical Koofoo of cuneiform inscriptions, to show a very good apparent agreement of many letters. Any one may try the experiment with the Koofoo alphabet in Scott's *Namumutunne* *Manuscript*, Pl. I and M de Rouge's demotic in the *Chronosaurus* (10), taking care to use only one type where it was repeated by the Arabs for other letters, and in the case of their alphabet to compare only the isolated or final forms. The result would show the great caution needed in the inquiry.

There are two objections to the proposed derivation of the Phœnician alphabet which must have great weight against any but the strongest evidence of resemblance. The Egyptian letters represent objects, the names of which begin with these letters, similarly the Phœnician letters had names indicating an origin from a hieroglyphic system on the same principle of acrophony. It would be supposed if the Phœnician letters were derived from the Egyptian ones that their names would describe the original signs. This, however, is not the case in a single instance. Aleph signifies an ox and not an eagle, Beth a house and not a bird, Gimel a camel and not a basket, and so, as far as we know, to the end. It is difficult to imagine the complete loss of the original form, and the naming of letters from a supposed resemblance to another form, which form can scarcely be traced in the most ancient Phœnician. Yet, if the derivation from hieratic be true, we are not to this achieve form on account of its apparent similarity to the hieratic, and any deviation to explain the Semitic names of the letters would weaken, it not destroy, the foundation of the theory.

Again, it is very noteworthy that the oldest monuments of the Phœnician alphabet are to be found not in Egypt but in Palestine and Assyria. These are the Stele of Meshia, king of Moab, and the inscriptions on the Nemzool bronze lion-eagles. These weights take us a step farther in the argument, for they show us on official documents of a palace of Assyrian kings the use of this alphabet, side by side with the Assyrian character, as a kind of demotic or perhaps commercial writing, of necessity well-known in Assyria itself. Of course it is not to be supposed that the languages expressed were the same, but they were so closely allied that their joint use in Assyria was natural, and particularly to a nation accustomed to the Turaanic Akkadian. This appearance of the Phœnician alphabet in Assyria would suggest that it had its origin rather from Assyrian than Egyptian writing. Is there, however, any evidence that any such alphabet was derived from cuneiform?

Among the systems of writing which present a sufficient similarity to the Phœnician, and its descendant the Greek, to justify our conjecturing their common derivation, though not necessarily their later connexion, is the Cyprian. This is radically different from the Phœnician in being syllabic, and thus having a much larger list of characters, but the formal resemblances suggest the same source. In the case of the Cyprian, Dr Deoche has endeavoured to show the source to be the Assyrian cuneiform in its later form. His arguments are very strong, here it is only necessary to mention the syllabic character of the Cyprian, the agreement in form of many signs, without the requirement of their elements suggested as theoretically possible by the Median and Armenian variants, and the striking fact that the Cyprian is found in two inscriptions written in cuneiform, each stroke having the Assyrian typical shape (Deoche, *Der Ursprung der Aegyptischen Sylbenschrift*, Strassburg, 1877).

This probable solution of the Cyprian problem suggested to Dr Deoche the comparison of the Phœnician alphabet with Mesopotamian cuneiform. The result, published in the *Zeitschrift der Deutschen Morgenländischen Gesellschaft* (xxvi 102 seqq.), is well worthy the attention of scholars. The inquiry was founded on the comparison of forms and sounds in cuneiform. The forms were much less numerous than the extent of the list of signs would lead us to expect, for the great majority of these signs are far too complex to have been the prototype of such simple signs as the Phœnician letters. The sounds on the same side present no little difficulty, as the adoption by the Babylonians and Assyrians of the Akkadian system of writing produces a confusion of kindred sounds and excludes some proper to the Semitic alphabets. A further difficulty arises from the polyphony of the Assyrian-Babylonian cuneiform signs, whether ideographic or syllabic, which gives a variety of sounds to the same group and thus greatly diminishes the degree of probability in an agreement. These signs are all conventional transcriptions of original hieroglyphics. These hieroglyphics can sometimes be traced in the cuneiform forms, and even occasionally in the regular cuneiform types. When we know the original form we can sometimes select the radical sound, but when we find more than one cognate sense with a different sound, the selection becomes difficult, if not impossible. Supposing such a sign to be represented by the English *h* and *l*, standing for "one" and "last," the discovery of the radical sound would be apparently hopeless. It would be obviously so if the sign also stood for "beginning" and "union." The result seems satisfactory to the extent of about one third of the Phœnician alphabet, signs like the Phœnician having like sounds. This result would have little force did it not seem to be supported by the meaning of some of the signs as compared with the names of the Hebrew letters, of which we know the meaning, seventeen in number. But the difficulty in discovering the original radical sound and sense in cuneiform shakes this conclusion. Consequently the five agreements which might be accepted were we certain of the original Assyrian sound and sense seem to have much weight. There are also some probable agreements which, of course, have still less strength. It is, however, to be noted that the syllable *had*, &c., taken as the origin of *heth*, and *tip*, as that of *teth*, have forms in the hieratic cuneiform agreeable to the meaning of the words from which these syllables are supposed to be abbreviated, *hattu*, a "grave," and *thibn*, a "writing-table." This explanation of the signs *heth* and *teth*, consecutive, be it remembered, and without certain corroboration, in the Hebrew alphabet, is very remarkable as a confirmation of the theory. For the present it is no more than a theory, but perhaps it is as probable as the derivation of the Phœnician alphabet from Egyptian hieroglyphics, though the hieratic types.

It is of course possible that the old Semitic alphabet had an origin independent of Egyptian hieroglyphics or the conventional hieratic forms of Assyrian-Babylonian cuneiform. The discovery of a new hieroglyphic character in the Hittite inscriptions, containing, in a list of greater extent, certain of the forms indicated by the names of the Hebrew letters, is a new factor in the problem, and must be defined before its true value can be ascertained. All that can be said at present is that the Hittite characters, with the aspect of an Egyptian origin. Considering the geographical position of this mode of writing, its *prima facie* evidence is in favour of M de Rouge's derivation of the Phœnician alphabet from Egyptian.





in this article on the entrance of the Pentateuch and of its legislation, see *PENTATEUCH*.

**HIGHWAYS.** A highway is a public road over which all persons have full right of way—walking, riding, or driving. See *ROADS*. Such roads in England for the most part either are of immemorial antiquity or have been created under the authority of an Act of Parliament. But a private owner may create a highway at common law by dedicating the soil to the use of the public for that purpose, and, apart from any special dedication, the using of a road for a number of years, without interruption, will support the presumption that the soil has been so dedicated, and the road will be to all intents and purposes a public highway. At common law the parish is required to maintain all highways within its bounds, but by special custom the obligation may attach to a parochial township or district, and in certain cases the owner of land is bound by the conditions of his holding to keep a highway in repair. Breach of the obligation is treated as a criminal offence, and is prosecuted by indictment. Bridges, on the other hand, and so much of the highway as is immediately connected with them, are as a general rule a charge on the county, and by 22 Henry VIII. c. 5 the obligation of the county is extended to 300 yards of the highway on either side of the bridge. A bridge, like a highway, may be a burden on neighbouring land *at tithes tenement*. Private owners, so burdened, may sometimes claim a special toll from passengers, called a "toll traverse."

Extensive changes in the law of highways have been made by the recent Highway Acts, viz. The Highway Act, 1835 (5 and 6 Will. IV. c. 50), and the amending Acts of 1862 and 1864. It is no longer possible for a private owner, by dedicating a highway to the public, to make the charge of maintaining it a burden on the parish in all cases. To create a new highway of this character he must give three months' notice of his intentions to the parish surveyor, and a meeting of vestry must then be called to consider whether the proposed highway is worth the expense of maintenance. Should the vestry decide against it, the charge of maintenance will not fall on the parish, unless the justices of the peace at the next highway sessions decide otherwise.

The leading principle of the Highway Act, 1835, is to place the highways under the direction of parish surveyors, and to provide for the necessary expenses by a rate levied on the occupiers of land. Two or more parishes may unite to form a district under a district surveyor, and large parishes may appoint more than one surveyor. It is the duty of the surveyor to keep the highways in repair, and if a highway is out of repair, the surveyor may be summoned before justices and convicted in a penalty not exceeding £5, and ordered to complete the repairs within a limited time. The surveyor is likewise specially charged with the removal of nuisances on the highway, or any obstruction or injury rendering it less commodious to the public. A highway nuisance may be abated by any person, and may be made the subject of indictment at common law. The Act contains provisions simplifying the process by which a highway may be widened, enlarged, diverted, or stopped. The amending Acts, while not interfering with the operation of the principal Act, authorize the creation of highway districts on a larger scale. The justices of a county may convert it or any portion of it into a highway district to be governed by a highway board, the powers and responsibilities of which will be the same as those of the parish surveyor under the former Act. The board consists of representatives of the various parishes, called "way wardens," together with the justices for the county residing within the district. Salaries and similar expenses incurred

by the board are charged on a district fund to which the several parishes contribute, but each parish remains separately responsible for the expenses of maintaining its own highways.

The Highway Act of 1835 specifies as offences for which the driver of a carriage on the public highway may be punished by a fine, in addition to any civil action that may be brought against him,—riding upon the cart or upon any horse drawing it, and not having some other person to guide it, unless there be some person driving it, negligence causing damage to person or goods being conveyed on the highway, quitting his cart, or leaving control of the horses, or leaving the cart so as to be an obstruction on the highway, not having the owner's name painted up, refusing to give the same, and not keeping on the left or near side of the road, when meeting any other carriage or horse. This rule does not apply in the case of a carriage meeting a foot-passenger, but a driver is bound to use due care to avoid driving against any person crossing the highway on foot. At the same time a passenger crossing the highway is also bound to use due care in avoiding vehicles, and the mere fact of a driver being on the wrong side of the road would not be evidence of negligence in such a case. When there is a public crossing in a street, the driver is bound to use special care, and the expression has been used that a crossing is the special property of the foot passengers.

The "rule of the road" given above is peculiar to the United Kingdom. Cooley's treatise on the *American Law of Torts* states that "the custom of the country, in some States enacted into statute law, requires that when teams approach and are about to pass on the highway, each shall keep to the right of the centre of the travelled portion of the road." The same appears to be the general rule on the continent of Europe.

The excessive use of the highway by acts which in moderation are lawful becomes a nuisance if it interferes with the public enjoyment of the roadway. Thus when a carrier, having warehouses on a public street, occupied one side of the street in loading and unloading his waggons several hours at a time, so that foot passengers were incommoded and no carriage could pass on that side, although there was room for two carriages on the opposite side, this was held to be a nuisance, and Lord Ellenborough held it to be a nuisance for stage coaches to stop in the street for three quarters of an hour taking up and setting down passengers, for the "king's highway was not to be used as a stable-yard." In the same way, at common law a tramway laid along a highway is a public nuisance, although it may be shown to be a common convenience. The construction of tramways is now authorized by 35 and 36 Vict. c. 78.

The Acts 24 and 25 Vict. c. 76, and 28 and 29 Vict. c. 83, regulate the use of locomotives on tramways and other roads. No engine, so constructed as to be a public or private nuisance, is protected by these Acts. When horses had been frightened by a traction engine, and the jury found that it was likely to frighten horses and that the defendant knew it, he was held liable in damages.

**Turnpike Acts.**—Many of the more important highways are placed under the management of boards of commissioners or trustees. The number of local and general turnpike acts is very great. No fewer than thirty-three general acts are mentioned in the index to the statutes,—the first and principal Act being 3 Geo. IV. c. 126. The trustees are required and empowered to maintain, repair, and improve the roads committed to their charge, and the expenses of the trust are met by tolls levied on persons using the road. The various grounds of exemption from toll on turnpike roads are all of a public character, *e.g.*, horses and carriages attending the sovereign or royal family, or used by soldiers or volunteers in uniform, are free from toll. In general horses

and carriages used in agricultural work are free from toll by the Highways and Locomotives Act of 1878 (41 and 42 Vict c 77) distinguished roads are to become "main roads," and half the expense of maintenance is to be paid out of the county rate. Ordinary highways may be declared to be "main roads," and "main roads" may be reduced to the status of ordinary highways.

In Scotland the highway system will in future be regulated by the Roads and Bridges Act, 1878, which comes into operation at the latest on the 1st of June 1883, but may be adopted sooner in any county. From and after the commencement of the Act in each county, the management and maintenance of the highways and bridges shall be vested in the county road trustees, viz., the commissioners of supply, certain elected trustees representing taxpayers in parishes, and others. One of the consequences of the commencement of the Act is the abolition of tolls, statute labour, cartway mail, and other exactions for the maintenance of bridges and highways, and all turnpike roads shall become highways, and all highways shall be open to the public free of tolls and other exactions. The county is to be divided into districts under district committees, and county and district officers are to be appointed. The expenses of highway management in each district (or parish), together with a proportion of the general expenses of the Act, shall be levied by the trustees by an assessment on the lands and houses within the district (or parish).

Highway, in the law of the States of the American Union, generally means a lawful public road, over which all citizens are allowed to pass and pass on foot, on horseback, in carriages, and waggons. Sometimes it is held to be restricted to country roads as opposed to town ways. In statutes dealing with offences connected with the highway, such as gaming, negligence of carriers, &c., "highway" includes navigable rivers. But in a statute punishing with death robbery on the highway, railways were held not to be included in the term. In one case it has been held that any way is a highway which has been used as such for fifty years.

(P. 2.)

HILARION, Sr, abbot, the first to introduce the monastic system into Palestine, was born of heathen parents at Tabitha, about 5 miles to the south of Gaza, about the year 288, was sent when very young to Alexandria to be educated, and there became a convert to the Christian religion. Attracted by the fame of St Anthony, he went to visit that saint in his solitude, and forthwith became a disciple. Returning to Palestine with some companions who he still but a lad of fifteen, he gave away all the property he had inherited by the death of his parents, and then withdrew into loneliness in the desert between the sea and the marshes on the Egyptian border. In this solitude he observed the most rigid asceticism, and (to quote the quaint remark of Butler) "thought himself at liberty to practise certain mortifications which the respect we owe to our neighbour makes unreasonable in the world." Twenty years of patient continuance in the way of life he had chosen for himself were rewarded, we are told, with miraculous gifts and with rapidly growing fame, disciples and imitators multiplied to the number of two or three thousand, and all owed the spiritual oversight of Hilarion. Informed by revelation when sixty-five years old of the death of Anthony, he undertook an extended tour into Egypt, where he visited all the scenes of that saint's labours, after which he removed in the company of a favourite disciple, Hesychius, into Sicily, where, however, his popularity rendered impossible the quiet and retirement which were congenial to his habits, a further migration to Epidauros thus became necessary, and ultimately he found a resting-place in Cyprus, the diocese of his old friend Epiphanius, where in a lonely cell amongst some almost inaccessible

rocks he died in 371. According to Sozomen his festival was observed in Palestine with great solemnity as early as the 5th century, he is now commemorated by the Roman Church on October 21st. His earliest biographers were Epiphanius and Jerome.

HILARIUS, or HILARUS (HILARUS), bishop of Rome from 461 to 467, who according to some authorities had attained to the archiepiscopate as early as the year 417, is known to have been a deacon and to have acted as legate of Leo the Great at the "robber" synod of Ephesus in 449. There he so vigorously defended the conduct of Flavian in deposing Eutyches that he was thrown into prison, whence he had great difficulty in making his escape to Rome. Chosen to succeed Leo on November 12, 461, he assumed a brief *de jure catholice*, in which he anathematized Eutyches, Nestorius, and Dioscorus, and reaffirmed the decisions of the councils of Nice, Ephesus, and Chalcedon. In 465 he held at Rome a council which put a stop to some prevalent abuses, particularly to that of bishops appointing their own successors. His pontificate was also marked by a successful encroachment of the papal authority on the metropolitan rights of the French and Spanish hierarchy, and by a resistance to the toleration of Anthemius, which ultimately caused it to be recalled. Hilarius, who died November 17, 467, was succeeded by Simplicius.

HILARIUS, Sr, of Ailes (c. 403-449), an eminent prelate and an able if unsuccessful defender of the liberties of the Gallican Church, was born about 403, and in early youth entered the abbey of Loin, then presided over by his kinsman Honoratus (St Honoré). Having succeeded Honoratus in the bishopric of Ailes in 429, he set about the discharge of his episcopal functions with unusual energy and zeal. Following the example of St Augustine, he is said to have organized his cathedral clergy into a "congregation," devoting a great part of their time to social exercises of ascetic religion. As bishop of Ailes he held the rank of metropolitan of Vienna and Narbonne, and in this capacity he came into collision in 444 with Leo the Great on the question of the deposition of one of his bishops (Chlodinus), this quarrel resulted in his being deprived of his rights as metropolitan to consecrate bishops, call synods, or exercise ecclesiastical oversight in the province, and in the edict of Valentinian III, so important in the history of the Gallican Church, "ut episcopus Gallicanus omnibusque pro lege esset quidquid apostolicæ sedis auctoritas sancisset." He died in 449, and his name was afterwards introduced into the Roman martyrology for commemoration on the 6th of May. Hilarius enjoyed during his lifetime a high reputation for learning and eloquence as well as for piety, his extant works (*Vita S. Honorati Arelatensis Episcopi* and *Metum in Germanum*) compare favourably with any similar literary productions of that period. A poem, *De Providentia*, usually included among the writings of Prosper, is sometimes also attributed to Hilary of Ailes.

HILARIUS, Sr, bishop of Pictavium (Poitiers), an eminent "doctor" of the Western Church, sometimes referred to as the "malleus Annianorum" and the "Athanasius of the West," was born at Poitiers about the end of the 3d century A.D. His parents, who were pagans of distinction, afforded him every means of acquiring a good education, and to the ordinary accomplishments of an educated gentleman there was added in his case what had even then become somewhat rare in the West, some knowledge of Greek. After he had attained to manhood his attention was directed to the Old and New Testament writings, with the result that he became conversant of the truth of Christianity, and along with his wife and his daughter received the sacrament of baptism. We have no means of knowing the nature or duration of the services which he rendered the church during the period which im-

mediately followed his admission within its pale, but he appears to have continued to reside in Pottius, and so great was the respect in which he came to be held by the citizens there that about 353, although still a married man, he was by the unanimous voice elected bishop. At that time Arianism, which under imperial protection had over-spread the Eastern, was now under similar auspices threatening also to overrun the Western Church, to resist and repel the intrusion was the great task which Hilary now set himself to achieve. One of his first steps was to secure the excommunication, by those of the Gallican hierarchy who still remained orthodox, of Saturninus, the Arian bishop of Arles, along with Ursicinus and Valens, two of the most prominent of the supporters of that prelate. About the same time he wrote to the emperor Constantine a remonstrance against the persecutions by which the Arians had sought to crush their opponents (*Ad Constantium Augustum Liber Primus*, of which the most probable date is 355). His labours for the triumph of orthodoxy were not in the first instance, however, crowned with success, for at the synod of Bilelio (Doliers), summoned in 356 by Constantius with the professed purpose of settling the long-standing disputes, Hilary was by an imperial rescript banished along with Rhodanus of Toulouse to Phrygia, in which exile he spent nearly four years. From this hostile region, however, he continued to govern his diocese without undue difficulty, no success having been nominated to the see, while at the same time he found leisure for the preparation of two of the most important of his contributions to dogmatic and polemical theology, the *De Synodo*, or *De Fide Orientalium*, an epistle addressed in 358 to the bishops in Gaul, Germany, and Britain, expounding the true views (sometimes veiled in ambiguous words) of the Oriental bishops on the Trinitarian controversy, and the *De Trinitate Libri XII*, composed in 359 and 360, in which, for the first time, it was successfully attempted to express in the Latin tongue the theological subtleties and refinements which had been elaborated with the aid of the more flexible language of Greece. The former of these works was not entirely approved by some of the members of his own party, who thought he had shown too great forbearance towards the Arians, and had expressed himself too hopefully as to the possibilities of an ultimate reconciliation of the contending views, to their criticisms he replied in the *Apologetica ad Reprehensores Libri de Synodo Responsio*. In 359 Hilary attended the convocation of bishops at Seleucia in Isauria, whither, along with the Egyptian Athanasians, he joined the Homoiousian majority against the Arianizing party headed by Acaecius of Caesarea, thence he betook himself to Constantinople, and, in a petition (*Ad Constantium Augustum Liber Secundus*) personally presented to the emperor in 360, repudiated the personal calumnies of his enemies and sought to vindicate his Trinitarian principles. His urgent and repeated request to be permitted a public discussion with his opponents, especially with Ursicinus and Valens, proved at last so inconvenient that he was sent back to his diocese, which, accordingly, he appears to have reached about 361, within a very short time of the accession of Julian. Though he was received in his diocese with every demonstration of joy, he yet found Arianism strong enough there to demand his best energy and skill for the next two or three years, but in 364, extending his efforts once more beyond Gaul, he impeached Auxentius, bishop of Milan, and a man high in the imperial favour, as heretic. Summoned to appear before the emperor (Valentinian) at Milan and there maintain his charges in person, Hilary had the mortification of hearing the supposed heretic give answers entirely satisfactory to all the questions which were proposed, nor did his (doubtless sincere) denunciation of the metropolitan as a hypocrite save himself from an

ignominious expulsion from Milan as a disturber of the peace of the church. In 365 he published the *Contra Arianos vel Auxentium Mediolanensem Liber*, in connexion with the controversy, and also (but perhaps at a somewhat earlier date) the *Contra Constantium Augustum Liber*, in which he pronounced that lately deceased emperor to have been Antichrist, a rebel against God, "a tyrant whose sole object had been to make a gift to the devil of that world for which Christ had suffered." The later years of Hilary's life were spent in comparative quiet and retirement, devoted in part to the preparation of his expositions of the Psalms (*Tractatus super Psalmos*), for which he was largely indebted to Origen, of his *Commentarius in Evangelium Matthei*, a work of no exegetical value, and of his no longer extant treatise on the book of Job. He died 13th January 368. His great energy and zeal, courage and perseverance, rendered him a very influential ecclesiastic during his life, while, in virtue at once of the depth and acuteness of his intellect and of the wide extent of his knowledge, he holds the very highest rank among the Latin writers of his century. Designated already by Augustine as "the illustrious doctor of the churches," he by his works exerted an increasing influence in later centuries, and by Pius IX. he was formally recognized as "universal ecclesiastical doctor" at the synod of Bordeaux in 1851. Hilary's day in the Roman calendar is January 14, the English "Hilary Term" begins on the 11th and ends on the 31st.

Of Hilary's works, which include, besides those already mentioned, some minor treatises, that have been several editions, of which the most worthy of mention is that of Erasmus (Basel, 1528, 1529, 1538), the Benedicte by Contant (Paris, 1693, reprinted by Melin, Verona, 1780), and that of Migne in the *Patrologia Cursus Completus*. His biography by Pontanus probably dates from about the middle of the 8th century, other sources for the facts of the life of Hilary are the numerous incidental notices to be met with in his own writings and in those of Jerome, Sulpicius Severus, and Gregory of Tours. See *Revue de Théologie*, Hilarius (1864).

HILDA, or HILD (614–680), usually called St Hilda, a Saxon lady whose name is intimately associated with the history of the early English church and of early English literature. She was a member of the royal family of Northumbria, her father Hæric being a nephew of King Edwin, and it was along with her royal kinsman that, as a girl of fourteen, she received baptism at the hands of Paulinus. During the pagan reaction which followed Edwin's defeat and death, Hilda was tempted to settle with her widowed sister Hærswith at the monastery of Chelles, 12 miles from Paris, but she was recalled to England by Bishop Aidan, the missionary from Iona, and in 649, two years after her consecration as a nun, she was appointed to succeed Heru the abbess of Hartlepool or Hildespool. When, in fulfilment of the vow which he had made before the decisive battle with Penda, Oswy came to dedicate his daughter to God, it was to the care of Hilda that he entrusted her. In 658 the abbess founded the famous monastery on the cliffs at Streonshalh or Whitby, and for the next twenty-two years she ruled with rare ability and virtue over the double community of monks and nuns which gathered round her. Among those who shed the most abiding lustre on the establishment were St John of Beverley and the Saxon poet Cedmon. Hilda died, full of years, in 680, mourned by her nuns as their common mother. There is a St Hilda's church both at South Shields and at Hartlepool, and the latter preserves her effigy on its ancient seal. At Whitby the tradition long lingered that on a summer forenoon, when the sun shone in the highest windows of the north part of the abbey, a figure of Lady Hilda could be discerned, and the fossil ammonites of the neighbourhood are popularly known as St Hilda's snakes. See Bede, *Ecc. Hist.*, xxiv., Dr G. Young, *Hist. of Whitby*, 1817, Sir Outhbert Sharp, *Hist. of Hartlepool*, 1816.



**HILDBURGHUSEN** (an old record: *Hilpershusen* and *Ylter Hilperth*), the chief town of a circle in the duchy of Sax-Meiningen (Germany), is situated in a wide and fruitful valley on the river Werra and on the Werra railway, 19 miles south-east of Meiningen by rail. It is the seat of a circle court, of a court of appeal, and of the jury court for the duchy. The streets are wide and regular, and the principal buildings are the former castle of the duchy, erected 1643-57, now used as barracks, with a park in which there is a monument to Louis Louisa of Prussia, the old town house, the Government buildings, the gymnasium erected in 1877, the normal seminary, and the lunatic asylum. A monument has been erected to those of the citizens who died in the Franco-Prussian War of 1870-71. The manufactures are very various, and include linen fabrics, cloth, paper mills, toys, buttons, optical instruments, agricultural machines, knives, mineral water, condensed soups, and condensed milk. The population in 1875 was 5162.

Hildburghausen belonged in the 11th century to the counts of Thuringia, from whom it passed into the possession of the dukes of Saxony. In 1641 it became the capital of a principality, which in 1840 was united to Sax-Meiningen.

**HILDEBERT** (Hilvulf, Hilvulf, Hilvulf, Hilvulf) of Lo Man, and afterwards of Tours, a prominent church leader, and one of the best Latin writers of his century, was born about 1055 at Landavin near Vendôme, became a pupil of the famous Berengar of Tours, and made so great progress in all the learning of the time that he was made head master of the school, ecclesiastical, and finally, in 1097, bishop of Lo Mans. In the beginning of his episcopate much trouble was caused him by the jealousy of his dom, (Adolf), who had accused him of immorality, but finally he succeeded in fully vindicating his innocence. He next had to encounter the persecutions of William Rufus, who had captured the city, and those pursued so harassing that he ultimately felt it necessary to withdraw to Rome, with the intention of resigning his charge, but Pope Paschalis II declined to give him his release. On his return to Lo Mans, Hildebert found the diocese in a state of great commotion, which had been caused by the preaching of Henry the Deacon, but he speedily succeeded in restoring order after he had banished the agitator. About 1125 he was translated, much against his will, to the see of Tours, and soon afterwards he held the important synod of Nantes, convened for the purpose of correcting the abuses and banishing the discord which had so long prevailed in Brittany. A dispute with Louis the Fat about the rights of ecclesiastical patronage brought him into much disrepute with that monarch, but their mutual relations had much improved before the death of Hildebert, which took place on December 18, 1134. From some writers he has received the name of Saint, but his name occurs in no martyrology.

The works of Hildebert, which include letters, sermons, and poems, as well as formal contributions to philosophy and dogmatic theology, have been edited by Bouquet (Paris, 1796), and in part both by Baluze and Muratori (See also Galland's *Bibliothèque Patrum*, vol. xiv). The poems, which are on very various subjects, are distinguished by many faults of metre and defects of style, but nevertheless enjoyed great popularity in their time, and were frequently used as exercises in the schools of France and Italy, as also were the letters, of which the literary merit is greater (129 in 8 books). The sermons are often elegant and instructive, but generally overladen with imagery and digression by an excessive use of the allegorical method of interpretation. The tendency to Mysticism is strongly developed in them, and the *De Civitate Dei* has an historical interest, as exhibiting the first instance of the use of the word *transubstantiation*. The *Tractatus de generatione et infirmitate carnis et animae* is an imitation of Boetius, and the *Metaphysica Philosophia* has its sources in earlier Latin authors, and especially in Cicero and Seneca. The *Tractatus theologici* appears to have determined the form of Latin theology, and thereby has an importance in the history of dogmatic theology. His method is first to

lay down the thesis, which is then supported by scripture proofs and by passages from the fathers, especially from Augustine, he finally proceeds by detailed argument to dispose of difficulties and objections with considerable acuteness, and without that excessive subtilty which distinguished later scholastic writers.

**HILDEBRAND** See GRALLOFF VII

**HILDEBRANDSLIED** This invaluable example of Old German alliterative poetry is contained in a MS originally belonging to the library of Fulda, and now preserved at Cassel. It is written on the first and last pages of a volume of Biblical and theological contents by two contemporary hands apparently belonging to the beginning of the 9th century. The conclusion of the poem is unfortunately wanting, evidently from want of space. From such mischances as *Runen* or signs sometimes used here as in Old English MSS), it is manifest that our text was not written down from memory,—as has often been assumed,—but is a transcript from an older original. This conclusion is confirmed by the state of the language of the fragment, which shows a curious mixture of Low and High German forms that can never have existed in any living dialect of Germany, but can only be explained as the result of an attempt made by a Low German scribe to adapt the forms of a High German original to his vernacular idiom.

The fragment is mostly taken up with a dialogue between Hildebrand and his son Hadubrand. When Hildebrand followed his master Theodoric the Great, exiled from Italy by Odoacer, he left his young wife and an infant child behind him. At his return to his old home, after thirty years' absence at the Hunnic court, he is met by a young warrior and challenged to single combat. Before the fight begins, Hildebrand, asking for the name of his opponent, and discovering his own son in him, tries to avert the fight, but in vain. "Then they let their horses run with their sharp spears, and then they hewed their white shields until they were beaten to pieces with their weapons." With these words the fragment stops abruptly, giving no clue as to the issue of the combat. It is certain, however, from allusions to the tale made in the Old Norse *Amundus* Saga, that it must have been fatal to Hadubrand.<sup>1</sup> But in the later traditions both of the Old Norse *Thidrik* Saga (13th century), and the so-called *Jungere Thidrik* and *advised*,—a German popular song preserved in several versions dating from the 15th to the 17th century, but evidently originating at an earlier time,<sup>2</sup>—Hadubrand is represented as defeated simply, and obliged to recognize his father.

The *Hildebrand* was discovered and published for the first time as a poem in 1799, as early as 1812 that its metrical character was recognized by the brothers Grimm.<sup>3</sup> Since that time numerous editions and critical editions have been published, among which Lechmann's text<sup>4</sup> holds the foremost rank as to critical exactness and sagacity, although some of the metrical rules laid down by Lechmann, and followed in his text, have since been shown not to be applicable to the Old German alliterative verse in which the *Hildebrand* is written.

**HILDEBRANDT, EDWARD** (1817-1868), was born in 1817, and served his term as apprentice to his father, a house-painter at Dantzig. He was not twenty when he came to Berlin, where he was taken in hand by Wilhelm

<sup>1</sup> See Müllenhoff and Scherer, *Deutsches*, p. 284.

<sup>2</sup> See Grimm's edition, and Uhlig, *Alle hoch und nieder deutsche Volkslieder*, i. 380 fol.

<sup>3</sup> See J. G. Schmidt, *Commentarius de rebus Francorum orientalibus*, Würzburg, 1864 fol.

<sup>4</sup> *Die beiden Altnordischen Gedichte aus dem 9ten Jahrh.*

<sup>5</sup> Given in Müllenhoff and Scherer, *Deutscher Poesie und Prosa*, ed. Berlin, 1873. The *Thidrik* saga assumes the MS was published by W. Grimm, Göttingen, 1850, and a photograph by E. Sievers, Halle, 1872.

<sup>6</sup> See especially F. Vetter, *Zum Altnordischen*, Vienna, 1872, and M. Ruge, *Die alt und neuhochdeutsche Poesie*, Halle, 1876 (reprinted in the *Sammlung für deutsche Philologie*, II.).

Krause, a painter of sea pieces. Like other artists who have owned a name for subtle and rapid execution, he worked at first in a formal, smooth, and timid fashion. Several early pieces exhibited after his death—a breakwater, dated 1838, ships in a breeze off Swinsmunde (1840), and other canvases of this and the following year,—show Hildebrandt to have been a careful student of nature, with inborn talents kept down by the conventionalisms of the formal school to which Krause belonged. It is difficult to say what the outcome of his art would have been if Hildebrandt had not felt other influences than those of his native schools. Accident made him acquainted with masterpieces of French art displayed at the periodical exhibitions of the Berlin Academy, and these awakened his curiosity and envy. He made up his bundle and wandered to Paris, where, about 1842, he entered the atelier of Isabey and became the companion of Lepoittevin. In a short time he sent home pictures which might have been taken for copies from these artists. Gradually he mastered the tricks of touch and the mysterious secrets of effect in which the French at this period were already so perfect. He also acquired the necessary skill in painting figures, and having done this he returned to Germany, unsurpassable in technical execution, and well skilled in the rendering of many kinds, of landscape forms. His pictures of French street life, done about 1843, are impregnated with the stamp of the Paris school, but they reveal at the same time a spirit eager for novelty, quick at grasping, equally quick at rendering, momentary changes of tone and atmosphere in varying space and medium. After 1843 Hildebrandt, under the influence of Humboldt, extended his travels, and in 1864-65 he actually went round the world. But whilst his experience became enlarged his powers of concentration broke down. He lost the taste for detail in seeking for scenic breadth, and a fatal facility of hand diminished the value of his works for all those who look for composition and harmony of hue as necessary concomitants of tone and touch. In oil he gradually produced less, in water colour more, than at first, and his fame will probably rest on the sketches which he made in the latter form, many of which are known to the general public by means of chromo-lithography. His colour may best be compared to that of a meteor, being breathlessly rapid, brilliant, and charged with colour. No other had the same art of combining elements singly unpicturesque into a picturesque and striking whole, and this chiefly by contrasts of tint and observation of natural phenomena. Fantasies in red, yellow, and opal, sunset, sunrise, and moonshine, distances of hundreds of miles like those of the Andes and the Himalaya, narrow streets in the bazaars of Cairo or Suez, panoramas as seen from mastheads, wide vistas like Bombay or Peking, narrow strips of desert with measureless expanses of sky,—all alike display the *diversa* of a master who had innumerable admirers in his day on account of this facility, and deserved all the admiration he received, subject to the merited reproach that all these fine works would have been more satisfactory if combined with deeper meditation on the art of composition and more patient study of detail. Hildebrandt died young at Berlin, on the 25th of October 1868. His pictures are scattered in vast numbers throughout Germany. But good selections are accessible in the royal palaces and in the collections of Borsig, Rabe, and Ravene at Berlin.

**HILDEBRANDT, THEODORE** (born at Stettin 1804, died at Dusseldorf 1874), was a disciple of the painter Schadow, and, on Schadow's appointment to the presidency of a new academy in the Rhinish provinces in 1826, followed that master to Dusseldorf. Bred in the academy of Berlin, and finished under Schadow (1820-24), Hildebrandt began by painting pictures illustrative of Goethe and Shakespeare, but in this form he followed the traditions of the stage

rather than the laws of nature. His artificial modes of thought were not, however, without admirers, and he produced rapidly Faust and Mephistopheles (1824), Faust and Margaret (1825), and Lear and Cordelia (1828). He visited the Netherlands with Schadow in 1829, and wandered alone in 1830 to Italy, but travel did not alter his style, though it led him to cultivate alternately eclecticism and realism. At Dusseldorf, about the year 1830, he produced Romeo and Juliet, Tancréd and Clorinda, and other works of the same kind which deserved to be classed with earlier ones, but during the same period he exhibited (1829) the Robber and (1832) the Captain and his Infant Son, examples of an affected but kindly eclecticism which captivated the public of the time, and marked to a certain extent an epoch in Prussian art. The picture which made Hildebrandt's fame is the Murder of the Children of King Edward, of which the original, afterwards frequently copied, still belongs to the Spiegel collection at Hallestadt. It challenges comparison with a similar composition by Paul Delaroche, though rather to Hildebrandt's disadvantage. Hildebrandt chose the moment when the children are asleep, and the murderers pause ere they smother their victims with a pillow. Delaroche with subtler sense of artistic propriety represented the princes seated on their bed, unconscious of the near approach of their assassins, whose vicinity is betrayed by a streak of light at the bottom of the door and the watching of a dog. The execution of Delaroche is spirited and delicate, that of Hildebrandt finished and smooth. But the German master, who was below Schadow in power, is also naturally far below his French competitor. Comparatively late in life Hildebrandt tried his powers as an historical painter in pictures representing Wolsey and Henry VIII., but he lapsed again into the romantic in Othello and Desdemona, a fair replica of which, in Schütz's collection at Dusseldorf, gives a good idea of his shiny, ineffective, technical execution. After 1847 Hildebrandt gave himself up to portrait painting, and in that branch succeeded in obtaining a large practice.

**HILDEGARD** (1098-1179), commonly referred to as St Hildegard, abbess, "prophetess," and a figure of some consequence in the history of mediæval mysticism, was born of noble parents at Disibodenheim in the county of Sponheim, diocese of Mainz, in 1098 (or 1099), and from her eighth year was educated at the Benedictine cloister of Disibodenberg (Mons Disibodi) in the principality of Zweibrücken, now in Rhensish Bavaria, where Jutta, sister of the count of Sponheim, was at that time abbess. From earliest childhood, we learn from Hildegard herself, she was accustomed to see visions which increased in frequency and vividness as she approached the age of womanhood, these, however, she for many years, though with great pain, kept almost wholly secret, nor was it until she had reached her forty-third year (1141) that she felt constrained at last to divulge them. Committed to writing by her intimate friend the monk Godefridus, they now form the first and most important of her painted works, entitled *Scenes* (probably an abbreviation for "scena vias" or "nostra vias Domini") a *Speculum et Revelatorium Libri III*, and completed in 1151. In 1147 St Bernard of Clairvaux, having come to Bingen while engaged in preaching the new crusade throughout Germany, chanced to hear of Hildegard's revelations, and on inquiry became so convinced of their reality that he not only wrote to her a letter cordially acknowledging her as a prophetess of God, but also successfully advocated her recognition as such. Her friend and former pupil Pope Eugenius III. in the synod of Trèves (1148). In the same year Hildegard, who meanwhile had succeeded Jutta as abbess at Disibodenberg, and had attracted overflowing numbers to that

cloister, migrated along with eighteen of her nuns to a new convent at Rupertsberg near Bingen, over which she presided during the remainder of her life. By means of voluminous correspondence, as well as by extensive journeys, in the course of which she was unwearied in the exercise of her gift of prophecy, she wielded for many years an increasing influence upon her contemporaries,—an influence doubtless due to the fact that she herself was so fully imbued with the most widely diffused feelings and beliefs, fears and hopes, of her time. Amongst her correspondents were Popes Anastasius IV and Hadrian IV, the emperors Conrad III and Frederick I, and also the theologian Guibert of Gembloux, who submitted numerous questions in dogmatic for her determination. It deserves to be specially mentioned to her credit that, though zealously opposed to the Catholics, she stood almost alone in maintaining that the image of God ought to be respected even in them, and that therefore they ought not to be killed. She died in 1179, but has never been canonized, her name, however, was received into the Roman martyrology in the 15th century, September 17th being the day fixed for her commemoration. Her biography, which was written by two contemporaries, Godefridus and Theodoricus, was first printed at Cologne in 1566, and has frequently been reproduced in various forms since that date.

The works of Hildegard, in addition to the *Scivias*, already mentioned, include *Disputationes contra similes hominum filios*, a treatise to unpublished treatises containing later visions and revelations, many of them relating to physical and medical questions, *Vita meritorum*, also unpublished, *Liber of St Ruprecht*, and *Epistolarum de vita et moribus*. The *Churchman's creed*, *Letter to the Emperor*, and *Exhortations*. While her "visions" on such themes of the Christian religion as God and His kingdom, the church and its mission to Christ, must be regarded as crude and extravagant even to us, it is impossible to deny all ethical or religious value to her earnest denunciations of the corruptions of the clergy and mendicant orders, or to the intense expiations (however ignorant and imperfect) of the life long expiations of a soul so singularly unaltered and unworldly. The *Scivias* were printed in 1513 and again in 1628. The *Epistolarius Liber* (first published in 1760) appears with some other *Opuscula* in the *Acta Bibl. Pfa. Pat.*, vol. xviii, and in *Migne's* and *Darwin's* *Antiquissima Collectio*, vol. ii. The *Opera Omnia* form vol. xxviii of *Migne's Patrologia Graeca Completa*. See *Memeri, De Sancta Hildegardis vita, scriptis, et rebus* (1795). *Dahl, Die heilige Hildegard* (1832). *Conrad, Die Ch. adeliche Apokal.*

**HILDEN**, a town of Prussia, in the government and circle of Düsseldorf, on the Itterbach. It is a station on the Rhineish railway, and has a considerable manufacture of silks, both pure and mixed, calico, and machinery, it also possesses a deaconess institute. During the last half century its growth has been rapid. While in 1816 the population numbered only 2056, it amounted in 1875 to 6789. Hilden was constituted a town in 1861.

**HILDESHEIM**, the chief town of a district in the province of Hanover, Prussia, is beautifully situated on the right bank of the Innerste, 18 miles south-east of Hanover by railway. It has a very antique and quaint appearance, and is surrounded by old ramparts which have been converted into shady alleys and promenades. The streets are for the most part narrow and irregular, and contain many old houses with overhanging upper stories and richly and curiously adorned wooden façades. The town is the seat of a district governorship, a high court of justice, two justice courts, a general superintendency of the Evangelical Church, and a Roman Catholic chapter. The Catholic cathedral, which occupies the site of a building founded by Louis the Pious in 838, dates from the middle of the 13th century. It is chiefly remarkable for the antiquities and notable works of art connected with it, including the bronze doors executed by Bishop Bernward, with reliefs from the history of Adam and Christ, the so-called *Irmsausale*, at one time believed to have been

erected, before it was transferred to its present site, in honour of the Saxon idol Irmin, but now regarded as belonging to an old Roman aqueduct, the Christ column by Bishop Bernward, adorned with reliefs from the history of the Saviour, a brazen font of the 13th century, two candelabra of the 12th century, the sarcophagus of St Godchaud, the tomb of St Epiphanius, and an immense number of minor articles of ecclesiastical furniture. The rose-bush on the wall of the crypt is alleged to be a thousand years old. Among the other churches those of special interest are St Godchaud's church, completed in 1172 and restored in 1863, a remarkably fine specimen of the Romanesque style, with three massive pyramidal towers, the church of St Michael, an almost equally fine specimen of Romanesque, founded by Bishop Bernward, and restored in 1860 after injury by fire, containing a beautiful painted ceiling of the 12th century, and the tomb and monument of Bishop Bernward, St Magdalene's church, which possesses various works in metal by Bishop Bernward, St Martin's church, now used as a museum and library, the Lutheran church of St Andrew, with very lofty towers, and the fine columnar basilica of the abbey church of Moutburg, a suburb half a mile south-west of the town. The other principal buildings are the town house, dating from the 15th century, and containing the archives of the town, the houses in the late Gothic style said, but erroneously, to have been built by the Knights Templars, the Michaels monastery, now used as a lunatic asylum, and the old Cistercian monastery. The educational establishments include a Catholic and a Lutheran gymnasium, a Catholic normal school, a weaving school, and an agricultural school. The other principal public institutions are the Geogestift for daughters of state servants, the maternity hospital, two orphanages, and several other hospitals and infirmaries. The town has iron foundries, manufactures of cloth, damasks, linen fabrics, thread, sail-cloth, wadding, leather, machines, earings, stoves, glass, tobacco, alcohol, perfumery, chocolate, and starch. The population in 1875 was 22,681.

Hildesheim, though previously in existence, owes its rise and prosperity to the translation to it in 822 of the bishopric instituted by Charlemagne at Lim in 812. In the 10th century its importance was largely increased under Bishop Bernward, who, if he did not introduce, greatly stimulated by his example and patronage the art of working in metals, for which the town retained a high reputation until the close of the Middle Ages. It also obtained considerable fame by its cathedral school, in which several sons of the emperors received their education. In 1241 it joined the Hanseatic League, and in 1248 received town rights. It was frequently at feud with its bishops, and in the 14th century placed itself more than once under the protection of the house of Brunswick-Lüneburg. The bishops in the course of time had acquired considerable territory, but their feuds with the neighbouring princes resulted in 1523 in the annexation of a great part of their possessions to Brunswick-Lüneburg, however, took place in 1648, and in the beginning of the present century the principality amounted to 862 square miles. The last bishop of Hildesheim possessed also the bishopric of Paderborn, acquired by his predecessor. Both bishoprics were secularized and added to Prussia in 1803. In 1807 they were incorporated with the kingdom of Westphalia, or a county in 1813 annexed to Prussia, which ceded Hildesheim to Hanover, retaining only Paderborn. In 1866 the principality was united, along with Hanover, to Prussia.

On October 9, 1868, a unique collection of ancient plates was discovered on the Galgenberg near Hildesheim, about 10 feet below the surface. This *Hildesheimer Silberfund*, as it is usually called, has excited great interest among classical archaeologists, comprising, as it does, no less than 60 plates, or a complete service for three persons—plates, dishes, mixing bowls, &c. The workmanship evidently belongs to the Augustan age, and by some authorities it is conjectured that we have nothing less than the plate that belonged to Drusus himself. The most noteworthy figures are a *ador* richly ornamented with arabesques and figures of children, a patera with a representation of Minerva, and others with a boy Hercules, a Cybele, and a Deus Lunus. The whole collection is preserved in the Royal Museum. For details see Wislauer, *Der Hildesheimer Silberfund*, Bonn, 1868.

**HILDRETH, RICHARD** (1807-1865), an American journalist and author, was born at Deerfield, Massachusetts, June 28, 1807. He was educated at Harvard College, where he graduated in 1826, and after studying law at Newburyport, he was called to the Boston bar in 1830. He had, however, already conceived a predilection for literature, and in 1832 he became joint founder and editor of a daily newspaper, *The Boston Atlas*. Having in 1834 gone to the south for the benefit of his health, he was led by what he witnessed of the evils of slavery to write the anti-slavery novel *Atchy Moore*, which, chiefly on account of its subject, met with considerable success in America and England. An enlarged edition of it appeared in 1852 under the title of *The White Slave*. In 1837 he wrote *Bank, Banking, and Paper Currency*, a work which had some influence in fostering the growth of the free banking system in America. In 1838 he resumed his editorial duties on the *Atlas*, but in 1840 he found it necessary on account of his health to remove to British Guiana, where he was editor of two weekly newspapers in succession at Georgetown. He published in the same year *Despotism in America*, and he also made the columns of his newspapers the medium for the dissemination of anti-slavery opinions. In 1849 he published the first three volumes of a *History of the United States*, a work which, if its narrative is rather bald and tame, is characterized by perfect fairness and candour, and displays great industry and care in the representation of facts. Other three volumes, completing the work, appeared in 1855. His *Japan as it was and is* is a valuable digest of the information contained in other works on that country. He also wrote *Theory of Morals* (1844), and *Theory of Politics* (1853), as well as *Lives of Atrocious Judges*, compiled from Lord Campbell's two works. For some time Hildreth was on the editorial staff of the *New York Tribune*, and he was also a frequent contributor to periodicals. In 1861 he was appointed United States consul at Trieste, but ill health compelled him to resign his office and remove to Florence, where he died July 11, 1866.

**HILL, ARNOLD** (1686-1749 or 1760), an English poet and miscellaneous writer, was born in London, 10th February 1685. Though left by his father in necessitous circumstances, he was educated first at Barnstable and then till his fourteenth year at Westminster School, after which he went out to Constantinople, where Lord Paget, a relative of his mother, was British ambassador. Under the care of a tutor he then travelled through Palestine, Egypt, and a great part of the East, returning to England about 1703. Having subsequently quarrelled with his patron, he again went abroad as travelling companion to a Yorkshire baronet. On returning home he published in 1709 his *History of the Ottoman Empire*, which, according to his own admission, had far more success than it deserved. About the same time appeared his poem of *Camillus*, in honour of the famous Charles Mordaunt, earl of Peterborough, and in the same year he was made manager of Drury Lane Theatre, and afterwards of the Haymarket. Both these offices he soon after lost through his indiscretion, and the remainder of his life was spent partly in literary pursuits and partly in commercial speculations, which were all un lucky. One of these schemes called him to the Highlands of Scotland, and while there he wrote *The Progress of Wit, being a Caveat for the use of an eminent Writer*. The "eminent writer" was Pope, who had introduced Hill into the *Dunrad*, though in a way that was in fact complimentary. Hill died in 1740 or 1750, and was buried in Westminster Abbey. Two only of his seventeen dramas are now remembered, *Zaira* and *Merope*, both adaptations from the French of Voltaire. His poetry is stilted and commonplace, and even the

*Progress of Wit* never rises above a suppart smartness. Though a poor and tasteless poet, and afflicted with an overwhelming sense of his own importance, Hill was an honourable man, and his letters to Savage, on whom he conferred many benefits, show his character in a very amiable light. *The Miscellaneous Works of Hill* were published in 1753 in 4 vols 8vo, and his *Dramatic Works*, to which a *Life* was prefixed, appeared in 1759 in 2 vols 8vo.

**HILL, MATTHEW DAVENPORT** (1792-1872), was born August 6, 1792, at Birmingham, where his father, T. W. Hill, was at that time assistant in a charity school. He made such rapid progress in his education that in his thirteenth year he entered his father's office, and in his seventeenth year he became the principal teacher. Resolving, however, to adopt the legal profession, he in 1814, while still continuing his scholastic duties, became a student of Lincoln's Inn, and in 1816 began to devote his uninterrupted attention to legal studies. He was called to the bar in 1819, and went upon the Midland circuit, where his ability was soon generally recognized, although for various reasons his acquisition of a profitable practice was not so rapid. In 1852 he was elected one of the Liberal members for Kingston-upon-Hull, but he lost his seat at the next election in 1834. On the incorporation of Birmingham in 1839 he was chosen recorder, and in 1851 he was appointed commissioner in bankruptcy for the Bristol district. Having in the course of his professional duties had his interest excited in questions relating to the treatment of criminal offenders, he in his charges to the grand juries, as well as in special pamphlets, ventilated opinions which have been the means of introducing many important reforms in the methods of dealing with crime. One of his principal contributions in these reforms was his book, *Medical Hill*, whose *Amateur, Causes, and Remedies of Crime*, the result of his experience as inspector of prisons for Scotland, may be said to mark an era in the methods of prison discipline. Hill was one of the chief promoters of the Society for the Diffusion of Useful Knowledge, and the originator of the *Penny Magazine*. He died 7th June 1872.

His principal works are *Practical Suggestions to the Founders of Reformatory Schools*, 1856, *Suggestions for the Suppression of Crime*, 1857, consisting of charges addressed to the grand juries of Birmingham, 1845, *Poems on the Penal Servitude Act*, 1864, *Journal of a Tour to Visit the Convict Gaols, Refuges, and Reformatory of Dublin*, 1865, *Address delivered at the Dr. King and Sons' Meeting*, 1867, and *Life of Matthew Davenport Hill*, by his daughter Rosewood and Florence Davenport Hill, 1878.

**HILL, ROWLAND** (1744-1838), an eccentric and popular English preacher, sixth son of Sir Rowland Hill of Hawkstone, was born there 23d August 1744. After receiving his early education at the grammar school of Shrewsbury and at Eton, he in 1764 entered St John's College, Cambridge. While at the university he made the acquaintance of the Methodist preacher Whitfield, and stimulated by his example he soon afterwards evangelized the university authorities and his own friends by preaching, before he had obtained holy orders, in the surrounding villages, and conducting religious services in the houses of the sick and poor. After graduating with distinction he took orders, and in 1773 was appointed to the parish of Kingston, Somersetshire, where he began to indulge his favourite taste for open air preaching, and soon attracted great crowds to the services which he held nearly every day of the week. Having on the death of his father in 1780 inherited considerable property, he built for his own use *Smyth Chapel*, in the Blackfurns Road, London. The chapel was opened on the 8th June 1783. Though now practically occupying the ecclesiastical position of a dissenter, Hill conducted his

service, in accordance with the forms of the Church of England, in whose communion he always remained. From the beginning his success was complete, and his chapel soon came to be filled with an audience such as no other preacher in London could boast. During the summer months he met what he called "gospel tours," into all parts of the country, sometimes extending them to Scotland and Ireland, and attracted wherever he went audiences as numerous and as interested as those which had crowded to hear Whitfield. After these tours he always returned with increased enthusiasm to his duties at Surrey Chapel, where he continued to officiate almost to the day of his death, 11th April 1833. The oratory of Rowland Hill, like that of Whitfield, was specially adapted for loud and uncultivated audiences, and it was equally effective although by more varied means. He possessed a voice of great power, and, according to Southey, "his manner" was "that of a performer as great in his own line as Kern or Kembler." Not unfrequently he violated the laws of good taste in the eccentricities of his wit and humour, but the intensity and purity of the purpose by which he was actuated enabled him always to retain unimpaired his moral influence over his audience. Among the various publications of Rowland Hill the best known is his *Village Dialogues*, which first appeared in 1810, and reached a 24th edition in 1839.

See *Life*, by H. F. Halliday, 1839, *Memorial*, by W. Wilkin Jones, 1831, and *Memories* by Rev. James Sulistman, 1887.

HILL, SIR ROWLAND (1795-1879), author of the penny postal system, a younger brother of Matthew Dawson Hill, and third son of T. W. Hill, who named him after Rowland Hill, the preacher, was born December 3, 1795, at Kiddleminster, to which town his father had lately removed from Dunningham. For some years of his childhood his health was very feeble, and as, on account of an affection of the spine, he had to maintain a recumbent position, his principal method of relieving the monotony of his situation was by repeating figures aloud consecutively until he had reached very high totals. A similar habit of mind was manifested when he entered school in 1802, his aptitude for arithmetic and mathematics being quite exceptional. But if he owed his subsequent eminence to a peculiar natural talent for figures, he was indebted for the direction of his abilities in no small degree to the guidance of his father, a man of great force of character and of advanced political and social views, which were qualified and balanced by the strong practical tendency of his mind. At the age of twelve Rowland began to assist in teaching arithmetic and mathematics in his father's school at Hilltop, Birmingham, and later, he had the chief management of the school. On his suggestion the establishment was removed in 1819 to Hazelwood, a more commodious building in the Hagley Road, in order to have the advantages of a large body of boys, for the purpose of properly carrying out an improved system of education. That system, which was devised principally by Rowland, was expounded in a pamphlet entitled *Plans for the Government and Education of Boys in large numbers*, the first edition of which appeared in 1822, and a second with additions in 1827. The principal feature of the system was "to leave as much as possible all power in the hands of the boys themselves," and it was so successful that, in a circular issued six years after the experiment had been in operation, it was announced that "the head master had never once exercised his right of veto on their proceedings." This doubtless was in no small degree due to the powerful personality of Rowland Hill, which made itself felt whether he was present or not. The system, it must be admitted, had several features of too utopian a character for the present constitution of society, but on the whole Rowland Hill, as an educationist, is entitled to a place side by side with Arnold of

Rugby, and was equally successful with him in making moral influence of the highest kind the predominant power in school discipline. After his marriage in 1827 Hill removed to a new school at Bruce Castle, Tottenham, which he conducted until failing health compelled him to retire in 1833. About this time he became secretary of Gibbon Wakefield's scheme for colonizing South Australia, the objects of which he explained in 1832 in a pamphlet on *Home Colonies*, afterwards partly republished during the Irish famine under the title *Home Colonies for Ireland*. It was in 1835 that his zeal as an administrative reformer was first directed to the postal system. The discovery which resulted from these investigations is when stated so easy of comprehension that there is great danger of its originality and thoroughness, and its greatness as an element in human progress, being lost sight of. A fact which also enhances its merit was that he was not a post-office official, and possessed no practical experience of the details of the old system. After a laborious collection of statistics he succeeded in satisfying himself and in demonstrating to the world that the principal expense of letter carriage was in receiving and distributing, and that the cost of conveyance differed so little with the distance that a uniform rate of postage was in reality the fairest to all parties that could be adopted. The discovery of this deficiency in the postal rate would be made up by the immense increase of correspondence, and by the saving which would be obtained from prepayment, from improved methods of keeping accounts, and from lessening the expense of distribution, he in his famous pamphlet published in 1837 recommended that within the United Kingdom the rate for letters not exceeding half an ounce in weight should be only one penny. The employment of postage stamps is mentioned only as a suggestion, and in the following words:—"Perhaps the difficulties might be obviated by using a bit of paper just large enough to bear the stamp, and covered at the back with a glutinous wash which by applying a little moisture might be attached to the back of the letter." Proposals so striking and novel in regard to a subject in which every one had a special personal interest could not fail to command general attention, and perhaps no pamphlet that ever issued from the press has caused so much and such widespread discussion, or been so speedily effective in promoting reforms in any degree so beneficial to the human race. So great became the pressure of public opinion against the opposition offered to the measure by official prepossessions and prejudices that in 1838 the House of Commons appointed a committee to examine the subject. The committee having reported favourably, a bill to carry out Hill's recommendations was brought in by the Government. The Act received the royal assent in 1839, and after an intermediate rate of fourpence had been in operation from December 5th of that year, the penny rate commenced January 10, 1840. Hill received an appointment in the Treasury in order to superintend the introduction of his reforms, but he was compelled to retire when the Liberal Government resigned office in 1841. In consideration of the loss he thus sustained, and to mark the public appreciation of his services, he was in 1846 presented with the sum of £13,360. On the Liberals returning to office in the same year he was appointed secretary to the postmaster general, and in 1854 he was made chief secretary. In these positions, his ability as a practical administrator made itself felt in every department of the postal system, and enabled him to supplement his original discovery by practical expedients realizing its benefits in a degree commensurate with continually improving facilities of communication, and in a manner best combining cheapness with efficiency. In 1860 his services were rewarded with the honour of knighthood,

and when failing health compelled him to resign his office in 1864, he received from parliament a grant of £20,000, and was also allowed to retain his full salary of £2000 a year as retiring pension. In 1864 the university of Oxford conferred on him the degree of D.C.L. and on the 6th June 1879 he was presented with the freedom of the city of London. The presentation, on account of his infirm health, took place at his residence at Hampstead, and he survived the ceremony only a few weeks, dying on the 27th August following. He was buried in Westminster Abbey.

**HILL, Rowland (1772-1842)** Rowland Hill, nephew of the Rev Rowland Hill, was born at Free, Shropshire, 11th August 1772. After receiving his early education at Ighfield and Ochester, he was gazetted to the 88th regiment, obtaining permission at the same time to improve himself in the knowledge of his profession in a military academy at Strasburg, where he continued after removing into the 53d regiment with the rank of lieutenant. In the beginning of 1793 he raised an independent company, and was promoted to the rank of captain. The same year he distinguished himself at the siege of Toulon, and after serving for some time on the Continent he, in 1797 set out as colonel of the 90th regiment with Sir Ralph Abercromby's expedition to Egypt, where he acquired great distinction, and was wounded at the battle of Alexandria. Having in 1803 been gazetted brigadier general, he in 1808 accompanied Sir Arthur Wellesley to Spain, and from Vimiera to Vittoria, in advance or retreat, he proved himself the most indefatigable coadjutor of the great captain. In 1800 he was gazetted lieutenant general, and in the following year was appointed to the independent command of the second army corps of Wellington in Portugal, in 1811 he annihilated the French army under Gudin at Arroyomolinos (Caçete), in recognition of which he received the order of the Bath, and for his capture of the forts of Almona, which cut off the communication between the French armies on the north and south sides of the Tagus, he was in 1814 rewarded with the title of Baron Hill of Almaraz. In 1813 he held temporarily the command of the English and Hanoverian troops in Belgium, and two years later crowned the glories of his noble career by his conduct at Waterloo, where he was at the head of the brigade which resisted and repulsed the last effort made in behalf of the French by the imperial guard. When Wellington became premier in 1828 Hill received the appointment of general commanding-in-chief, and on resigning this office in 1842 he was created a viscount. He died on the 10th December of the same year. Lord Hill was, next to Wellington, the most popular and able soldier of his time in the British service, and was so much beloved by the troops, especially those under his immediate command, that he gained from them the honourable title of "the soldier's friend." "With Hill," they used to say, "both victory and life may be ours." On the other hand, the strategic skill and military capacity he displayed in the Peninsula secured for him the not less honourable title of "the right arm of the duke of Wellington." From the first day he entered the army he displayed the germs of those qualities that afterwards secured for him fame, rank, and power—boldness that amounted to daring and was yet always under the control of calm judgment, skill equal to independent commands of the most difficult kind, and a regard for the moral and physical welfare of the army such as had never before been shown by any commander-in-chief.

The *Life of Lord Hill, G.C.B.*, by Rev Edwin Sidney, A.M., appeared in 1846.

**HILLAH**, a town of Asiatic Turkey in the pashalik of Baghdad, from which town it lies 60 miles to the south. It is picturesquely situated, in the midst of a very fertile

district, on both banks of the Euphrates, which are connected there by a floating bridge 450 feet in length. The estimated population, which includes a large number of Jews, varies from 6000 to much above 10,000. The bazaars are large and well supplied, and tanning, dyeing, and silk manufacture are carried on to a considerable extent. The house built has recently declined in repute. Hillah occupies the site of the ancient Babylon, and is to a large extent built of bricks obtained from the ruins.

**HILLARD, GEORGE STILLMAN** (1808-1879), an American author, was born at Machus, State of Maine, September 22, 1808. After graduating at Harvard College in 1828, he became joint rector of the Round Hill Seminary at Northampton. In 1833 he was called to the Boston bar, where he soon obtained a good practice. He was chosen a member of the common council of Boston in 1846, and he was for six months its president. In 1849 he was elected a member of the State legislature. The engrossing character of his professional and other engagements did not, however, prevent him from devoting a large portion of his time to literature. Besides editing successively the *Christian Register* (a Unitarian paper), *The Jurist*, and the *Boston Courier*, he published an edition of Spenser's works (in 5 vols., 1839), and a selection from the works of Walter Savage Landor (1856), and wrote *Six Months in Italy* (2 vols., 1835), *Life and Campaigns of George D. McClellan* (1865), a series of school books, which have met with wide acceptance, and various articles in periodicals and encyclopædias. In addition to this he made frequent successful appearances as a public lecturer. From 1867 to 1878 he was United States district attorney for Massachusetts. He died 27th January 1879.

**HILLEL**, a famous Jewish rabbi, sometimes called for distinction's sake *HIL*, "the elder," or "the old," flourished about the time of Herod the Great. According to the Talmudists he was born of a poor Davidic family, at Babylon, apparently about the year 75 B.C. In his zeal for the study of the law he went, when already of mature age, to Jerusalem, where Shammai and Abtalion were at that time the leading teachers. While supporting himself and his family there by working as a day labourer, he was not always able to earn the fee which the porters of the Beth-Mishnah or house of instruction is said to have required, but such was his ardour for learning that on one occasion on a cold December morning, having failed to obtain admission, he climbed up to the window of the classroom, where some time afterwards he was found quite buried and half frozen to death under a heavy fall of snow. He was now made free of the schools, and so great were the attentions with which his diligence was ultimately rewarded that, according to the tradition, he understood all languages, including those of the hills and the valleys, the trees and the flowers, the beasts and the demons. In his later years he succeeded the "sons of Bathyias" in the presidency of the sanhedrin, and in this high position he became the author of several important rules of interpretation (the so called seven "middoth," see *HERMENEUTICS*), and also of some authoritative legal decisions. A contemporary, and perhaps a pupil of his, was Shammai, who became the head of a rival and at times bitterly hostile school. Dying about the year 10 A.D., Hillel was succeeded in his official position by his son Simon, and afterwards by his grandson Gamaliel I.

There is evidently a good deal of what is incredible in the above Talmudic account, for example, it is not recognized on all hands that the Talmudic statement as to Hillel's presidency over the sanhedrin is absolutely irreconcilable with what we learn from the New Testament writers and from Josephus, and must be regarded as wholly untrue. But after every reasonable deduction has been duly made, we still have ample traces of a strong personality, characterized by unusual sweetness and light, bent on supporting



original genius. In 1835 he succeeded Fuseli as keeper of the Academy, and he died in London on 30th December 1839, a widower without children. Some of his best pictures remained on his hands at his decease,—such as the Angel releasing Peter from Prison (life size), painted in 1831, Una with the Lion entering Coceus's Cave (1833), the Murder of the Innocents, his last exhibited work (1838), Comus, and Amphitrite. The National Gallery now contains Edith finding the Body of Harold (1834), Cupid Dismayed, Rebecca and Abraham's Servant (1839), and St Calixtus rescuing Sienna (from the *Fusee Queen*) (1831). Hilson's excellence as an artist is relative to the state of art in his country at the time. In a great school or period he could certainly not count as more than a respectable subordinate, but in the British school of the earlier part of this century he had sufficient elevation of aim and width of attainment to stand conspicuous and praiseworthy, and, comparatively speaking, above the level of mediocrity.

**HILVERSUM**, a village and commune in the Netherlands in the province of North Holland, about equally distant from Amsterdam, Utrecht, and Amersfoort, with all of which it is connected by railways. The village is well situated on the west and north west by a range of hills, and since 1874 it has been the seat of a hospital, the Trompenberg, for convalescents. The public buildings comprise a town-house and four churches and a synagogue, and there is a very handsome railway station. The weaving of floor cloths, horse blankets, and Hilversum stripe is the principal industry. In 1433 Hilversum was separated from Laren. In 1505 it suffered at the hands of the people of Gnsdelstein, in 1629 from the Cossacs, and in 1672 from the French. The population of the village in 1840 was 5,160, and in 1870 5611, while that of the commune in the same years was 5314 and 6815. Of this last number 3463 were Roman Catholics, 2327 belonged to the Dutch Reformed Church, and 236 were Jews.

## H I M A L A Y A

**HIMALAYA** is the name given to the mountains which form the northern boundary of British India, between the 75th and 95th meridians east of Greenwich. The word is Sanskrit, and literally signifies "snow abode," from *him*, "snow," and *alaya*, abode, and is well translated "snowy range," though that expression is perhaps more nearly the equivalent of *Himadri*, another Sanskrit word, derived from *him*, snow, and *dakṣi*, mountain, which is practically synonymous with Himalaya, and probably as often used in conversation by natives of northern India. The letter *y* in the last syllable of Himalaya is purely a consonant, and the last two syllables should be pronounced *la-yā*, the conversion of the *ay* into a diphthong being quite erroneous. The name, by transformations such as are common to all times and nations in the use of foreign words, was converted by the ancient Greeks into *Emosios* and *Imos*.

Although the term Himalaya is applied by the natives of India only to the ranges which they see covered with perpetual snow, it has been long used by European geographers to designate the whole mountain region for which the Indian has no other name than *pārdā*, *see*, "the mountains," of which the snowy ranges constitute but a small portion. The first mere cursory examination of these mountains by the older geographers rightly convinced them of the general physical unity of the mountainous region to the north of India, which in length extends from about 72° to 95° E long, that is, between the rivers Indus and Brahmaputra, and in breadth includes the ranges between the plains of Hindustan and the upper parts of the main branches of these two great rivers. To these ranges the designation of Himalaya has by degrees been specially attached, and there is a certain convenience in still restricting the name to that part of the mountains which is accessible from British India, for this is the practical signification of it now commonly accepted.

Though it is to the area thus limited that the present article is mainly designed to refer, it will be necessary, for the correct apprehension of some of its main characteristics, to understand aright the relation which the Himalaya bears to the great mountain region beyond it, and a general description of that region thus becomes requisite.

Scientific investigation has clearly shown that, so far as the main characteristic features of the mountains are concerned, the natural boundaries of the Himalayan system must be carried much farther than had at first been recognized. Considerable obscurity still involves the eastern portion of these mountains, and there is great want of precise knowledge as to their connexion with the ranges of western China,

from which are thrown off the great rivers of China, Siam, and Burmah. On the west, however, it has been completely established that a continuous chain extends beyond the Indus along the north of the Oxus, and ends in that quarter about 65° E long. In like manner it is found that no separation can be established, except a purely arbitrary one, between the Himalaya as commonly defined and the greatly elevated and rugged table-land of Tibet, not between this last and the mountain ranges which form its northern border along the low-lying desert regions of Central Asia.

It thus appears that the Himalaya, with its prolongation west of the Indus, constitutes in reality the broad mountainous slope which descends from the southern border of the great Tibetan table-land to the lower levels of Hindustan and the plains of the Caspian, and that a somewhat similar other mountain face, descending from the northern edge of the mountainous table-land, leads to another great plain on the north, extending far to the eastward, to the northern borders of China. Towards its north-west extremity this great system is connected with other mountains,—on the south, with those of Afghanistan, of which the Hindu-Kush is the chief, occupying a breadth of about 250 miles between Peshawar and Kunduz, and on the north, with the mountains that flank the Jaxartes or Sir on the north, and the Tian-shan or Celestial Mountains. The eastern margin of Tibet descends to western China, and the south-eastern termination of the Himalaya is fused into the ranges which run north and south between the 95th and 100th meridians, and separate the rivers of Burmah, Siam, and western China.

Nor can any of the numerous mountain ranges which constitute this great elevated region be properly regarded as having special, definite, or separate existence apart from the general mass of which they are the component parts, and Tibet cannot be rightly described, as it has been, as lying in the interval between the two so-called chains of the Himalaya and the Kowenlin or Kara Koram. It is in truth the summit of a great protuberance above the general level of the earth's surface, of which these alleged chains are nothing more than the south and north borders, while the other ranges which traverse it are but corrugations of the mass more or less strongly marked and locally developed.

The average level of the Tibetan table-land may be taken at about 15,000 feet above the sea. The loftiest points known on the earth's surface are to be found along its southern or Himalayan boundary, one of them falls very little short of 30,000 feet in elevation, and peaks of 20,000

Plate.  
XVI.  
Himalaya  
signified  
by the  
name

How  
signified  
by  
the  
name

Extent  
of  
geographical  
system



feet abound along the entire chain. The plains of India, which skirt the Himalayan face of the tableland, for a length of rather more than 1500 miles, along the northern border of British India, nowhere rise so much as 1000 feet above the sea, the average being much less. The low lands on the north, about Kashghi and Yarkand, have an elevation of from 3000 to 1000 feet, and no part of the Central Asiatic desert seems to fall below 2000 feet, the like of this not being somewhat above that level. The greatest dimension of the Tibetan mountain area from east to west may be about 2000 miles, while its average breadth somewhat exceeds 500 miles, about 100 miles on either side constitute the sloping faces, the central tableland having a width of about 200 miles on the west and probably 500 miles at its eastern border.

The southern portion of the Tibetan tableland throws off its waters to the north-west and south-east from a central line almost on 82° E long, the Indus flowing in the former direction, and the Brahmaputra in the latter. These two rivers maintain their courses for a great distance in opposite ways, longitudinally, along the summit of the tableland, they receive as they proceed the drainage of a large portion of its surface, and their accumulated waters are at length discharged by two openings in the Himalayan slope across the plains of Hindustan into the Indian Ocean. With the one exception of the basin of the Sutlej, the Tibetan area that discharges itself southward as points intermediate between the debouchure of the Indus and that of the Brahmaputra is comparatively insignificant. No important part of the drainage of the tableland, so far as is yet known, passes in the opposite direction through the northern slope to join the rivers which flow from that slope to the Central-Asiatic plains. The waters of the southern slope, together with the drainage of the exceptional Tibetan area above referred to, traverse the Himalaya north or less directly, and constitute the main tributaries of the Indus, the Ganges, and the Brahmaputra.

Thus the northern border of the tableland, or the summit of its northern slope, so far as it is known, seems to form the real watershed between the rivers that flow to the Indian Ocean and those that lose themselves in the plains of Turkestan and Mongolia. The summit of the Himalayan slope forms a subordinate watershed, separating the rivers that fall into the Indian Ocean into two classes, those that pass directly through the Himalaya to the plains of India, and those that are collected on the summit of the tableland and discharged, also through the Himalaya, but by two concentrated streams at distant points towards the opposite ends of the chain. It has been proposed to call these dividing lines, respectively, the Turkish and the Indian watershed.

The waters that issue from the Himalaya to the west of the 77th meridian combine to form the Indus. Between the 77th and 83th meridians all the streams fall into the Ganges, and eastward of the 88th meridian into the Brahmaputra. Of the continuity of the Brahmaputra, beyond the point up to which it has been explored from Assam, with the Tibetan river called on the maps Saspoo, Tsoua tsangpo-tchou, and so forth, there is no room for doubt. The correct Tibetan name for the river is Tschok tsangpo, i.e., "Horse-river," or simply "Tsangpo," i.e., "Great river,"—the word "tsangpo" being applied exactly like the corresponding Indian term "ganga," or the Chinese "kyang," as a generic affix to the name of any large river. In the mountains on the border of Assam the river is called "Dihong," but on entering the plain it receives the waters of the sacred stream locally called "Lohit," which is also believed to have a Tibetan source, and this name the united river retains throughout the greater part of its

course in Assam, Brahmaputra being a classical Sanskrit name not commonly used. In its course through Bengal local names are given to the various branches into which it then divides, and this is also the case with the Ganges, which unites with the Brahmaputra about 100 miles from the sea. That part of Tibet which lies north of the 30th parallel of latitude and between the 82d and 92d meridians east is believed to have no escape open for its waters, which are consequently collected in lakes occupying depressions on its surface. The region east of the 92d meridian, excluding the comparatively small tract which drains into the Brahmaputra, feeds the great rivers of

western China, Siam, and Burma. At the western extremity of the Tibetan tableland two transverse watershed lines are established in connexion with it, by mountain ranges nearly at right angles to what may be regarded as its general direction in this region,—first, on the south by the mountains which under the name of Hindu Kush form the north-east angle of the high land of Afghanistan, and from the north-west of which the waters flow into the Oxus (the true Turki name of which is "Anu"), and thence to the Aial Sea, while those from its south-eastern face join the Indus through the Cabul river, and second, on the north by the Teek-tag, which unites the Tibetan system with the mountains of northern Turkestan, and separates the Jaxartes (or Turki "Sir") from the basin of Yarkand. The Oxus and Jaxartes flow off to the Aial Sea in a north-westerly direction, having between them a range which probably represents the extremity of either the Tibetan or the Thian-shan mountains, and which falls away into hills of minor importance beyond the 70th meridian.

Some further particulars of the relations of the Tibetan Himalayan region with the contiguous mountain systems, and of its influence both physical and political on the Asiatic continent in the heart of which it is situated, are contained in the article Asia, to which reference may be made. A more detailed account of Tibet will be given under that heading, and the remainder of this notice will be confined to the description of the restricted Himalayan area, as already defined.

The northern provinces of British India occupy the great plain which flanks the Himalaya on the south, along its whole extent from the issue of the Brahmaputra on the east to the ranges that lie along the Indus. The whole tract, excepting Assam, i.e., the valley of the Brahmaputra, India is highly cultivated and populous, and with the same exception the population throughout is of the race known as Aryan, being almost exclusively Hindu in religion on the east, but passing into Mahomedan on the west.

The most eastern portion of the Himalayan mountain range, as far as the 92d meridian, is occupied by wild tribes of which, or of the country they occupy, little is known. They are in small communities under petty chiefs, and their languages, which vary considerably in detail, are to some extent allied to Tibetan and monosyllabic. Between the 92d and 89th meridians is the small state of Bhötän, the local name of which is "Lhopot." It approximates in language, customs, and religion to Tibet proper, and its government is carried on by two separate chiefs, temporal and spiritual. Its northern border, where it is met by Tibet, has along the 28th degree of north latitude. The small British district of Sikkim succeeds, occupying the lower part of the basin of the Tsoua river, and having Darjeeling as its chief settlement. The native state of Sikkim, or Tibetan called "Demogong," extends north of British Sikkim to Tibet, it is almost as Tibetan as Bhötän, and still less important. Its western border falls nearly on the 88th meridian.

From the 88th nearly to the 80th meridian the whole Nepäl southern slope is occupied by the kingdom of Nepäl, which

Drainage  
of the  
summit

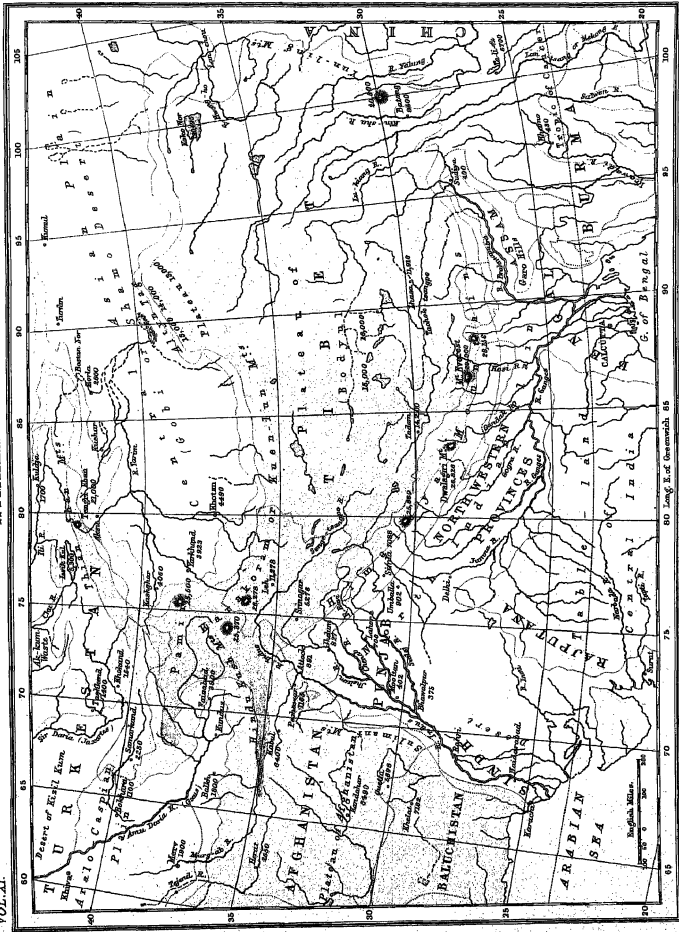
Water  
shed  
lines

Principal  
rivers  
of the  
chain

Oxus  
and  
Jaxartes

Aral Sea  
and  
Caspian

Pashtu  
Hindu  
Laya  
Bhotan,  
Sikkim



Shaded Map showing the connection between the Himalaya Mountains and the Tibetan Plateau, and their relation to the adjacent plateaus and mountains. The lighter shaded areas represent the Tibetan Plateau and the darker shaded areas represent the Himalaya Mountains. The lines indicate the boundaries of the various countries and provinces. The names of the countries and provinces are written in capital letters. The names of the mountains and ranges are written in italics. The names of the cities and towns are written in small capital letters. The names of the rivers and lakes are written in small capital letters. The names of the seas and oceans are written in small capital letters. The names of the deserts and steppes are written in small capital letters. The names of the forests and mountains are written in small capital letters. The names of the islands and archipelagos are written in small capital letters. The names of the straits and gulfs are written in small capital letters. The names of the bays and harbors are written in small capital letters. The names of the canals and rivers are written in small capital letters. The names of the lakes and ponds are written in small capital letters. The names of the mountains and ranges are written in small capital letters. The names of the cities and towns are written in small capital letters. The names of the rivers and lakes are written in small capital letters. The names of the seas and oceans are written in small capital letters. The names of the deserts and steppes are written in small capital letters. The names of the forests and mountains are written in small capital letters. The names of the islands and archipelagos are written in small capital letters. The names of the straits and gulfs are written in small capital letters. The names of the bays and harbors are written in small capital letters. The names of the canals and rivers are written in small capital letters. The names of the lakes and ponds are written in small capital letters.

UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO, CHICAGO, ILL.



since the wars with the British in 1814-16 has retained complete independence. The jealousy with which its government has excluded Europeans from most parts of the country leaves us with little precise knowledge of any part of it except its eastern border and the neighbourhood of the capital, Káshmír.

The people pass from the Tibetan and Buddhist type, which prevails on the east, into almost pure Hindú, speaking a Hindú dialect, on the west. The rivers Kosi, Gandak, Rapti, and Karnali are the principal streams that issue from this part of the mountains. The northern border of Nepal follows the main watershed, and its western angle reaches the 30th parallel of north latitude in the vicinity of the well-known Tibetan lakes Rakas tál and Manasarovar, where the general direction of the mountains has, from east and west, become nearly south-east and north-west.

Kumaon,  
Kashmir,  
to India

The Kásh or Síáda river forms the boundary between Nepal and the British provinces of Kumaon and Garhwal, the chief town in which is Almora, and which occupy the entire mountain face, from the watershed to the plains, as far as the main stream of the Ganges, for a distance from east to west of about 100 miles. Thence, an equal distance brings us to the Sutlej, the intermediate tract being occupied by many small principalities, independent in their civil government, but entirely under the political control of the British. In this region is situated Simla, the summer capital of the government of British India, on one of the outer ranges overlooking the Sutlej. Other small districts and principalities, partly British, occupy the Himalayan slope as far as the 76th meridian, beyond which we reach the territories of Jammu and Kashmir, which extend to within 50 miles of the Indus, a narrow band bordering on which river is mainly in the possession of Afghan tribes but partly under British rule. From the portion of the mountains west of the 79th meridian issue the rivers Ganges and Jumna, also the five rivers of the Punjab,—the Sutlej, the Rávi, the Chenab, the Jhelum, and the Indus, besides the Byas which unites with the Sutlej. The valley of Kashmir is the upper part of the basin of the Jhelum.

People of  
Western  
Himalayas

The population of the whole of the mountain districts west of Nepal maintains to a great extent its Hindú type, though the Mahometan religion gradually becomes more prevalent as we approach the Indus, where it is found to have superseded Hindúism. In the more remote and elevated valleys an infusion of Tibetan race, religion, and language is found, diminishing as we pass to the west, but otherwise the dialects spoken are everywhere Páinkti, and closely allied to Hindí. As a rule the people are short in stature, muscular, as is common among mountaineers, fatter than the inhabitants of the plains, and in the western regions, where the Hindú or Aryan stock prevails, women of remarkable beauty are often seen. At the lower altitudes cotton clothing is usual, at the greater elevations hempen and woollen materials prevail, but an utter disregard of personal cleanliness is universal. Gottre is frequent in both sexes, and cretinism seems to occur much in the European form.

General  
climate

The eastern ranges are wetter, the climate generally warmer and more equable, and the vegetation more rank and of a more tropical character, the mountains are more copiously covered with forest, and the extent of cultivation is less, and the population probably less also. To the west, with a drier atmosphere and greater variations of temperature, the climate above 5000 or 6000 feet becomes more like that of southern Europe, and the main features of the scenery become more conspicuously similar to those of European mountains.

Customs

On the east the customs of the people differ little from those of the neighbouring Tibetan or semi-Tibetan provinces. On the west there is no great distinction between the people of the hills and of the plains in their customs, agriculture, or other occupations.

The summit of the table land from the borders of China Tibet to the 75th meridian, where the Indus suddenly turns off to the south, is comprised in Tibet, or as it is called in the language of its inhabitants "Dod", or "Bodjal", the latter word being equivalent to "Dod land." Of the eastern half of Tibet very little is known, and that little chiefly relates to the most southern portion which borders on the Himalaya, and the most eastern which abuts on China. The table-land here has its greatest development, and is perhaps as much as 500 miles from north to south. At its north-western end its breadth is reduced to something under 200 miles. The physical features of Tibet, from its great elevation, are so peculiar, and it is so cut off by nature from communication with its neighbours, that it is not surprising to find in it a distinct race with a language of their own, and habits widely different from the surrounding nations. The extreme cold and drought make Tibet essentially poor, and the character of its inhabitants approaches that of the denizens of the Arctic regions, who live under somewhat similar physical conditions. The people are broadly built, with a strongly marked Mongolian physiognomy, dark hair, little or no beard, oblique eyes, and prominent cheek bones. In the warmer valleys they are mainly agricultural, and live in houses, in the higher regions they are shepherds, living in tents, thinly scattered over a large area. They are clothed in woollens or sheep skins. The practice of polyandry prevails, a woman marrying a whole family of brothers. The government at Lhasa is nominally administered by the Tibetans themselves, but in reality is altogether under the control of a Chinese resident. The authority of the Lhasan Government extends to about 78° E. long., west of this as far as the Indus, the country was conquered some forty years ago by the sovereign of Kashmir and remains under him. In the most western province of Tibet, called "Balti," the Buddhist religion ceases to prevail, the population is exclusively Mahometan, and that religion only is known beyond the Indus.

To the west of Tibet the mountains are prolonged to the 70th meridian at an elevation not greatly less than that which prevails eastward, and the table-land there ends in the region known as Pamir, which has all the characteristics of the higher parts of Tibet. Beyond this we pass into Turkistan and reach the limits by which the scope of the present article is restricted.

The difficulty of accomplishing with any approach to physical success such a task as that of giving a sufficient account of the chief physical and other characteristics of mountains like the Himalaya is much diminished by the remarkable uniformity in many points of structure and other important peculiarities, which prevails along the whole length of the chain. The perception of such general characteristics among mountains so vast is, indeed, too often overshadowed and obscured by the magnitude of their parts, the multitude of their details, and the variety of their forms, yet when the idea of the subordination of all these elements to common laws has once been duly conceived, it obtains constantly growing confirmation from what at first only produced impressions of hopeless confusion.

The great plain of northern India stretches with an almost unbroken surface along the foot of the Himalaya from the upper Indus to the head of the delta of the Ganges, and thence has a narrow prolongation along the Brahmaputra up the valley of Assam. Including its extensions to the sea, along the Indus on the west, and along the Ganges on the east, its area is about 500,000 square miles. It nowhere rises to more than 1000 feet above the sea-level, and to the unassisted eye it appears a perfectly dead flat. That part of the plain which lies along the foot of the mountains, and more particularly the central and eastern portion, is well watered, being intersected by the numerous streams

that flow from the mountains, and under the full influence of the postglacial rains, and it comprises the best cultivated, the richest, the most populous, and most civilized districts of India

The  
Taru

The snowy peaks of the Himalaya are, under favourable conditions, visible from the plains at a distance of about 200 miles. It is not, however, till the traveller is within 30 or 40 miles of the foot of the mountains that the outlines of the great peaks become well defined and their grandeur appreciable. At about the same distance, too, the lower ranges begin for the first time to attract attention. At about 40 or 55 miles from the outer hills the cultivation of the plain commonly becomes less complete, and the villages more sparse, an open grey tract is entered, often traversed by shallow, sluggish streams, along which are formed moraines, or ridges of glacial reeds and grasses, frequently occupying very large areas. This tract is known as the "Taru," or "Tariyan." Where most strongly developed it has a width of 10 or 15 miles, but its extent is manifestly greatly dependent on the local conditions of drainage and of rainfall, and to the west of the point where the Ganges leaves the mountains the Taru is not formed. It has been erroneously described as a depression along the foot of the mountains, but there is no foundation for such a view, and the causes that lead to the formation are not far to seek.

The  
Bhabar

To explain these it is necessary to take a further step towards the mountains. Just as the Taru somewhat suddenly appears along a certain definite line, so it suddenly ceases, and is replaced by a band of forest of about equal breadth, known as the "Bhabar." This tract is almost waterless, and the soil is seen to be chiefly sand or shingle, more or less filled with boulders. The streams that issue from the outer hills on entering the Bhabar are for the most part rapidly absorbed, and finally disappear in their sandy or shingle beds, the water they pour into the soil being again discharged along the outer and lower border of the tract, and collecting once more in the streams which characterize the Taru.

How  
formed

The Bhabar and Taru slope continuously from the foot of the mountains to the cultivated plain. The inclination is so uniform as to be hardly perceptible, but becomes gradually less as the distance from the mountains becomes greater. Observation leads us to suppose that the upper part of this tract, lying along the foot of the outer hills, is composed of a coarser material, and the lower part, which comes into view at a greater distance, of a finer and less permeable soil, and that, the latter having a smaller inclination and extending further than the former, the water absorbed by the upper beds will naturally be brought to the surface at their termination, where the finer materials forming clayey strata make their appearance. That the swampy Taru is not developed in the western part of the range is doubtless due to the smaller rainfall in that region, while its more marked occurrence to the east of the Ganges at irregular intervals arises from the local peculiarities of the surface drainage, which at some places is carried off directly into the larger rivers without check, and in others is forced to follow a line nearly parallel to that of the mountains for considerable distances, through a tract from which there is no free escape for the water, and which, thus becoming water-logged and covered with a rank development of vegetation, acquires its peculiarities, among which has to be reckoned a climate in which several of a deadly character are frequently induced, rendering its permanent occupation and cultivation difficult or impossible.

The transition from the plains to the mountains is sudden and well-defined along a line that is almost continuous. The ranges to which geologists have given the name of

"Swakile," and "sub Himalayan," rise abruptly, and with out any intermediate undulating ground from the apparently on sub-level surface of the plain. These hills, which from recent geological investigation we learn to be formed of deposits of various periods of the Tertiary epoch, attain elevations from a few hundred to 3000 or 4000 feet. The dip of the strata composing them is usually at a low angle towards the mass of the mountains, so that they present a steep face to the plains, while a comparatively easy declivity slopes inwardly, and frequently, by meeting a corresponding but longer and more gradual talus descending from the foot of the internal line of mountains, forms a shallow, narrow valley which runs generally parallel to the outer range.

These valleys, which are very characteristic of the outer Dunns or border of the mountains, have by some writers been erroneously confounded with the Taru. They are termed "Dun" in the western regions, in Nepal they are known by the name of "Mara." Their floors consist of deposits of gravel and boulders, having a maximum elevation of about 2000 or 2500 feet above the sea. Their continuity is broken at intervals by low, transverse, watershed lines, from which the drainage is thrown off along their longitudinal axis, and falls into some of the larger streams which cross them from the inner ranges, though less frequently it finds an independent exit into the plains by a sudden bend to the south through a rupture in the line of outer hills. At intervals these valleys are entirely wanting, and the outer hills which form them elsewhere are undistinguishable from the general mass of mountain within, except through the aid of their geological character. From the considerable elevation of the duns above the plains, down to the level of which the streams which drain them descend in a very short distance, the unconsolidated strata which form the floors of these valleys are often deeply cut into by the watercourses, and present a surface worn into terraces descending in steps of various heights. These conditions lead to a peculiarity which characterizes large parts of the duns, the almost complete impossibility of getting water from wells, due no doubt to the thorough denudation of the subsoil.

The sub Himalayan ranges have a well-defined distinct geographical existence along the greater part of the chain, and their geological continuity is established, although no valley is formed between them and the inner ranges, and where they cannot be otherwise distinguished from the general mass of mountains. To the west of the Sutlej river these ranges and the valleys connected with them have an unusual development, the width over which they extend increasing from 10 or 15 miles to as much as 50 miles, with a series of two or three dūn-like valleys one within another. West of the river Indus, again, the aspect of the outer Himalaya is entirely modified by a small table-land, which is formed to the north of the line of elevation known as the Salt range, and extends to the Indus. Its general surface lies at about 1000 feet above the general level of the plain, having a maximum elevation of about 1800 feet, and being remarkable for the extraordinary manner in which it is broken up by ravines, the number, gigantic dimensions, and intricacy of which are alike puzzling and astonishing—the extremely dry climate leading to an almost total want of vegetation, and the absence of any such concealment exhibiting a picture of confusion and desolation not often seen.

The ranges which lie immediately within the external outer band of the Swakile, or sub-Himalaya, rise abruptly above even of it to much greater elevations, and constitute the first masses which in such a region we can with propriety dignify with the name of mountains. Their ordinary elevation is about 7000 feet, and the highest summits on them reach 8000

or 9000 feet above the sea. It is on them that sanitary stations have been established for the convenience of the European residents in the neighbouring provinces of India, as affording the nearest sites to the plains at which a temperate climate can be reached. These ranges cover a breadth of about 60 or 70 miles, within which the magnitude of the mountains does not very greatly vary, their crests rarely going above 10,000 feet or falling below 5000 feet. Beyond this again another great change is observed, and the mountains rise rapidly and attain those surpassing heights which place the snow-clad summits of the Himalaya in the foremost rank of all the mountains of the earth.

Chute  
to  
the  
west  
of  
Sutlej

A remarkable deviation from the normal character of this zone of the mountains is observed to the west of the Sutlej, where, combined with the exceptional extension of the sub-Himalayan ranges already noticed, is found what may perhaps be best described as an outlier of the great central axis of snowy mountains. With a marked change in respect to elevation, as well as in respect to its mineral constituents, the range locally known as the "Dhinda-dhinda," or White Mountain, rises directly from the dun of Kangra, the elevation of which is about 2500 feet, into the regions of perpetual snow, its highest points reaching an elevation of 16,000 to 17,000 feet. The same features are prolonged still further to the west beyond the Ravi, and this line of elevation forms the great snow-clad range that shuts in the valley of Kashmir on the south, there known as the Pir panjal, the general elevation of which is from 14,000 to 15,000 feet, and the passes over it not lower than 10,000 feet.

Snowy  
ranges  
begin  
to  
project

With this exception the ranges covered with perpetual snow are first met with on the southern slope of the great Indo-Tibetan table-land, along a line between 80 and 90 miles south of the foot of the outer mountains, and 20 or 30 miles south of the Indian watershed, and from this line northward snowy peaks abound everywhere over the summit of the table-land. The highest yet measured are near the Indian watershed, but as it is only in this region of the western Himalaya, and in northern Ladakh, that any complete survey has been made, it is necessary to be cautious in making statements as to absolute maximum elevation, for the known in these mountains still bears far too small a proportion to the unknown to afford sufficient ground for safe speculation on such a subject.

Line  
of  
highest  
peaks

On the Himalayan slope the loftiest peaks are usually met on the first ranges that enter the limits of perpetual snow, advanced some 20 or 30 miles south of the Indian watershed, and not on a continuous ridge, but grouped in masses separated from one another by deep depressions, through which is discharged the drainage of the tract lying between them and the watershed.

Heights  
of  
peaks

The highest known peak in the Himalaya, and indeed in the world, is that in Nepal known as Mount Everest, which rises to 29,002 feet. Kinchinjunga, in Sikim, on the east, reaches 28,156 feet, and another peak more recently measured, in the extreme west, reaches 28,278 feet. Dhawalagiri, in Nepal, is stated to be 26,826 feet, and Nanda-devi, in Kumaon, to be 26,700 feet above the sea. But many other points have been measured exceeding 25,000 feet in elevation, two of which are to the north of Kumaon, and the enumeration of all known peaks over 20,000 feet would be wearisome. These statements have reference to the particular zone along the Indian watershed above described, beyond which, as was before said, few measurements have been made (excepting in Ladakh), but there is every reason to believe, from such scanty facts as are available for forming an opinion, that mountains rising considerably above 20,000 feet are of frequent occurrence throughout Tibet.

To give a more precise idea of the character of the snowy Num zone, it will be worth while to state somewhat in detail the best of distribution of the great peaks which lie between the 78th and 81st meridians, in the provinces of Kumaon and Garhwal, which have been far better surveyed than any other part of the range. On a line of something less than 150 miles in length are found six great snowy groups, with five great rivers passing between them—(1) on the east is the cluster of Annapurna in Nepal, with a peak of 22,700 feet, (2) Yirnyang, between the Dama river and the Kali, rising to 21,300 feet, (3) the Panch chuli group, between the Dama river and the Gori, with a maximum of 22,700 feet (4) the great compound mass which lies between the Gori and the Dhaul rivers, consisting of Nanda-devi, Nanda-kot, Duna-giri, and Thaul, the first reaching 25,700 feet, the second 22,600 feet, the third 23,300 feet, and the last, having a length of more than 10 miles, no part of which is under 20,000 feet, its central point reaching 23,400 feet above the sea, (5) the peaks between the Dholi and Vishnuganga rivers, three of which lie between 22,300 and 25,600 feet, (6) the great group of Badarnath, Kedarnath, and Gangotri, between the Alaknanda and Bhagirathi, the chief feeders of the Ganges, the first mass rising to 22,400 feet and the second to 22,900 feet, while the third has five points varying in height between these. All these masses are connected with the main watershed by ridges more or less covered with perpetual snow. It has been measured two other peaks rising above 25,000 feet, several others reaching 23,000 feet, and many more between 19,000 and 20,000 feet. There is no reason for thinking that this gives an exaggerated idea of the vast scale on which these mountains are developed. There can be little doubt that as precise knowledge is advanced the number of peaks between 25,000 and 30,000 feet will be found to be very much extended, nor will it be surprising if points are eventually discovered exceeding 30,000 feet in altitude.

The average elevation of the crest of the Indian watershed, between the points where the Indus and Rakhman-pata cross it, a distance of some 1500 miles, most probably exceeds 18,000 feet. At a comparatively few points only its continuity is broken, and it allows the passage of rivers that rise on its northern flank, but at all other parts its summit must be crossed to enter Tibet from the south. The passes over it, in ordinary use for men and animals, are frequently more than 18,000 feet above the sea, and except where it is broken through as just mentioned, one point only is believed to exist at which it can be so mounted under 10,400 feet. This pass, which leads directly from Kashmir into the Tibetan district of Dikar, is only 11,300 feet, and is quite anomalous, such a depression elsewhere would have been sufficiently deep to open a passage for the drainage of the table-land, but the great depth of the valley further north, in which the Indus flows, here gives the waters a more favourable escape in that direction.

The valleys which traverse the mountains between the Valley plains and the great watershed are for the most part little more than gigantic ravines, at the bottom of which flows the river each contains, in a very contracted bed which at rare intervals opens out into a narrow alluvial flat capable of cultivation. The level of the river beds is necessarily very various. Valleys only 2000 or 3000 feet above the sea are often opened up into the very heart of the mountains, and many with them the heat and vegetation of the tropics among ranges the summits of which are capped with eternal snow. In tracing up the larger streams it is usually found that on arriving within 10 miles of the line of the great peaks the rivers are flowing at an elevation of little more than 4000 or 5000 feet, but on crossing that line the acclivity suddenly and rapidly increases, and the

river beds in a very few miles are found to be at an altitude of 9000 or 10,000 feet, indicating that the sudden increase to the height of the mountains along this line is not confined to the peaks alone, but consists of a general elevation of the whole surface. Having once crossed the line of great peaks, the inclination of the valleys again becomes much less, and they thus continue for some miles, those that are fed from the larger glaciers frequently emerging from the ice at a level no more than 12,000 feet above the sea in the western mountains, 1000 or 2000 feet higher on the east.

Then slope

The slope of the larger Himalayan rivers may be estimated to range from 20 feet per mile near the plains to between 100 and 200 feet per mile where they approach the snowy mountains. In these regions, though, these inclinations increase to as much as 700 or 800 feet in the mile, but to the north is again reduced to 150 or 300 feet. Like all Indian rivers, they vary greatly in volume at different seasons of the year, and among the higher mountains are liable to special fluctuations from the more or less rapid melting of the snow from which they are fed. In the summer their waters increase and decrease with the varying temperature of the day or power of the sun, and in the winter they contract to a small fraction of their summer volume as the permanent frosts set in. In the lower parts of their courses the rivers commonly present an alternation of sparkling rapids and long reaches of deep, clear, tranquil water, in which the action of the current is often hardly visible, as we ascend, the rapids become by

degrees more frequent and more impetuous, till in passing among the snowy mountains we find only the most furious torrents, pouring their turbid glacier waters over boulders of gigantic dimensions among which they are at times almost lost to view, and filling the valleys with their incessant roar.

The valleys of Kashmir and Kathmāndu, by their exceptionally large extent and comparatively level character, offer such remarkable deviations from the normal character of Himalayan valleys as to require some comment. But the differences are after all rather in degree than in kind, and it would not be difficult to find somewhat similar areas, though on a much smaller scale of development. In Kashmir, too, is found one of the very few lakes which occur in the Himalaya. The almost complete absence of such collections of water is among the circumstances which serve to give a special character to the scenery of the Himalaya, and to distinguish it from that of European mountains.

On crossing the Indian watershed into Tibet, the general character of the country completely changes. The summit of the table land, though deeply corrugated with valleys and mountains in detail, is in its general relief laid out horizontally at a mean height little inferior to that of the watershed itself. The valleys of central Tibet are commonly long, flat, and open, of no great breadth, perhaps 1 to 3 miles, with a bottom of alluvial soil laid out nearly horizontally, from which the mountains rise abruptly on either side. The plateau of Gugu, immediately to the north of Kumaon,

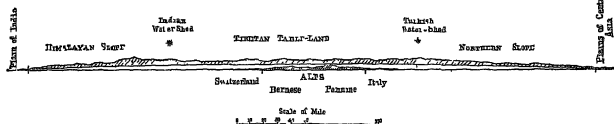


FIG. 1.—Sketch of the Alps and of the Himalayas on the same scale.

the average elevation of which is not less than 12,000 feet above the sea, and at the extremity of which lie the two lakes of Rakshital and Manasowari, the waters of which are also nearly at that level, is a remarkable expansion of the ordinary Tibetan valley, and calls for special notice. It varies in breadth from 15 to 60 miles, and its extreme length is 120 miles, lying along the upper course of the Sutlej, which runs throughout at the bottom of a stupendous ravine furrowed out of the alluvial matter of which the plateau is formed, to a depth of 2000 or 3000 feet. Into this run, across the western part of the plain, numerous other similar ravines in every gradation of size, often for miles together as even and straight as a railway cutting, and so extraordinary is their magnitude for some cases that, in his account of a journey across the plateau, Moorcroft, a traveller of great accuracy in general, describes these slopes as those of mountains.

Tibetan rivers and lakes

The main valleys are everywhere remarkable for their gentle slope, and in the central parts of the table-land the inclination at length frequently becomes so small as to give rise to the accumulation of the drainage in lakes, invariably salt when there is no efflux, and as invariably fresh when there is. The upper Indus has a slope as little as 3 feet per mile. Further to the west, as it approaches its great bend to the south, the inclination becomes greater, averaging about 24 feet per mile, and the width of its valley floor is reduced. It descends to a level of little above 4000 feet before it finally leaves Tibet.

It may aid in conveying a clear conception of the magnitude of these Himalayan masses, to compare them with the Swiss Alps, which will be familiar to many English readers. The above diagram represents on the same scale sections of the Alps and of the Himalayas, the curved line from which the latter are shown to rise representing the curvature of the earth. The Alps, measured across from the Lake of Thun to the plains of Lombardy, have a width of about 75 miles, the Tibetan-Himalayan mountains on a line drawn through Simla being about 400 miles across. To complete the comparison a few further explanations may be offered. The range that has already been noticed as the Dhauladhar, which rises from the Kinna dūn, if measured in breadth from Kinna to the upper Ravi, and in length between that river and the Rivas in Kullu, is about equal to the whole of the Swiss Alps comprised between Aletsch and Mont Blanc in length, and laterally between lines drawn along the Rhone and Reuss on one side, and through the Lakes of Lucerne and Thun to the Lake of Geneva at Vevey on the other. The area covered in both cases is rather less than 100 miles in length by 20 or 25 in breadth, the highest peaks being in the Alps the Finsteraarhorn, 14,100 feet, and in the Dhauladhar a point 17,100 feet above the sea. The prolongation of the Himalayan ridge just spoken of, which bounds Kashmir on the south, known as the Pir-pangal, would in like manner compare with the Pennine Alps and their continuation as far as St Gothard. Here the peak

of Mont Blanc, 15,750 feet, slightly exceeds the highest point of the Pu-pangal, which is but little over 15,600 feet, though, with this single exception, the Kashmir range certainly much exceeds in general mass that of the portion of the Alps compared with it. To obliterate these two ranges from the Himalaya would make no very sensible inroad on it, though they surpass in bulk the whole of the Swiss Alps, and it is no exaggeration to say that, along the entire range of the Himalaya, valleys are to be found among the higher mountains into which the whole Alps might be cast without producing any result that would be discernible at a distance of ten or fifteen miles. And it is important to bear in mind these relations of magnitude, for the facts at our disposal in the description of mountains are so limited that it is necessary to employ the words chain, range, ridge, spurs, &c., rather with reference to relative than to absolute importance, so that the scale of our nomenclature changes with the extent and altitude of the mountains of which we speak.

An examination of the maps of the Himalaya indicates that throughout their whole extent a constant tendency is discernible for the rivers to flow either parallel to the general direction of the part of the chain through which they run, or perpendicular to it,—many or perhaps most of them combining both tendencies, and running first in the one direction and then in the other. The conclusion is hence suggested that the system of surface drainage is determined by a series of longitudinal and transverse lines of rupture along and across the mountains. The study of the rivers and mountains themselves confirms this view. In many cases an apparent diagonal direction is found to be really due to a succession of short abrupt bends, though no doubt the rivers at times actually take an oblique course across the mountains. Frequently, too, where a river changes from a longitudinal to a transverse direction, another longitudinal stream meeting the first flows down from an exactly opposite direction. The same disposition is otherwise often exhibited by the occurrence of both transverse and longitudinal lines of drainage, or valleys, straining in opposite directions from the same point on the main ranges, while a depression occurs in the ridge at the point whence such valleys take their departure.

As the rivers and ridges that separate them must be laid out on the same general plan, it is natural to find in these last the same tendency to follow lines perpendicular, or parallel, to the general direction of the chain. There is no part of the mountains in which these peculiarities may not be traced, the longitudinal character prevailing on the summit of the table-land, and the transverse being dominant on the Himalayan slope. By the combination of these tendencies the rivers flow to the plains along a line generally oblique to the component parts of their actual course, and the watershed ridges that separate them follow corresponding directions. But such watershed lines rarely have any true structural continuity, however strongly they may be marked on our maps, and great caution must be exercised in inferring physical relations among such features of the mountains without obtaining some knowledge of their geological structure.

Considering the vast extent of these mountains, and the material and political difficulties in the way of the traveller who visits them, it is not surprising that the knowledge of their geological structure is still very imperfect. From causes which are not very obvious, important parts of the deposits of which they consist have till now not yielded any fact remains by which their age can be determined. The visits of qualified geologists to the more remote parts of the chain have been very rare, and it is only within the last few months that any connected memoir on the subject has been published. Much that has been

written on it is of too speculative a nature to find place in such an account as the present, and all that can be attempted is a brief outline of the main conclusions that seem established.

Of the great Indian plain nothing very definite can be said. It is an alluvial deposit of sandy clay, on the surface of which nothing in the shape of a public can be found excepting in the immediate vicinity of the hills that rise from it. In one place alone, in the north-west, on the Jumna river, have fossil remains been found imbedded in it, at some depth below the surface. They belonged to terrestrial mammals, with fish and crocodiles, which seem to be of the post Tertiary epoch. A few borings have been made to depths of some hundreds of feet, but they throw no great light on the subject of the origin of the plain. There is no direct evidence either for or against its having been laid out by the sea, on the one side it seems difficult to understand how so even a surface could have been produced otherwise than under the sea, while on the other there is a complete want of marine remains both in the alluvium itself and in the most recent deposits which form the hills that rise from it. It seems to be admitted that some parts of the alluvial plain of the Indus have been submerged, and in any case, if it was produced by river action, it must have been by rivers having a very small inclination, and in a delta, or at a low elevation.

The outermost ranges of the sub-Himalaya are also geologically the most recent. They are composed of grey micaceous sandstones, generally very soft and often quite unconsolidated, with beds of red and blue clays and marls interspersed, and boulder and gravel beds, at times hardly to be distinguished from those formed in the existing rivers, and often cemented by calcareous lime into conglomerate. Though these formations are most strongly developed to the west, they have been observed in Nepal and also in Bhutan. It is from the ranges in the vicinity of the Jumna river that the characteristic Siwalik fossils have chiefly been obtained. They consist of numerous species of mammals and reptiles, with a few fish, birds, and molluscs,—all, however, remains of land or fresh-water animals, with no certain trace of marine creatures. Lagune occurs in thin isolated beds in small quantities. It had been commonly supposed that the Siwalik fauna was of Miocene age. The latest views rather point to its being Pliocene. Sixteen genera among the fossil remains have not been found in any beds older than Pliocene, and of the many genera which continue to the present time, some of the forms preserved in these fossils are remarkably similar to existing species, all of which indicates a closer relation to the more recent than to the older Tertiary.

In close juxtaposition with this external band, but continuing geologically in a manner that has not been very clearly established, is an older series of beds, the lowest of which is nummulitic and of the oldest Tertiary epoch. The fossils found in these beds are as markedly marine as those of the other series are terrestrial. The junction of the new with this more ancient series is concealed by disturbances, and the former has not been found overlying the latter, but only abutting upon it. This older section of the Tertiary beds of the sub-Himalaya has only been properly made out to the west of the Jumna, though it is likely that it is also represented in the central and eastern parts of the chain by certain sandstones which occur there at the foot of the higher mountains. It may be surmised also that the nummulitic beds of these ranges are connected on the one side with those which are found to the west of the Indus extending to Sindh, and on the other with the nummulitic rocks of the hills south of Assam.

A complete change of geological character occurs on

Swiss  
range  
of Hima-  
laya  
has  
been  
examined

At the  
mount  
of num-  
mulitic  
is situated

(Geology)  
Impre-  
sion  
of date

Swedish

con-  
tinues  
Hima-  
laya



The  
outlet  
parts of  
the  
chain

passing from these outer and lower ranges to those higher mountains, which extend to the line of snowy peaks. On the west of the chain the first of these ranges consists of argillaceous shales, and schists, gneiss and limestones, intersected by several lines of igneous action, and all devoid of fossil remains. True slates also occur. The stratification is everywhere well marked, the dip being usually towards the interior of the chain at an angle of from  $10^{\circ}$  to  $20^{\circ}$ . Portions of the mountains are found in which the dip is quite reversed, or towards the plains, a result no doubt of absolute rupture and partial dislocation. The lines of igneous action follow generally the line of strike, the type of the rock being greenstone, and conglomerates or breccias, being often associated with it.

Protrude  
up and  
in them

How far these beds extend to the eastward is somewhat in doubt. Suggestions have been made that they are the representatives of the Silurian or other fossiliferous beds found to the north of the great snowy mountains, but the evidence for this is hardly conclusive. The occurrence at the foot of the mountains in Sikim and Bhutan of a deposit containing fossil coal plants, which are apparently identical with those of the Bengali coal field, renders it probable that the rocks there are of the age of that coal, that is to say, of the lower Trias, a conclusion which somewhat serves to corroborate the speculation as to the age of the western beds just referred to.

Lines of  
gneiss  
and  
other  
igneous  
rocks

In certain parts of this outer region of the mountains granite also occurs, accompanied by gneiss and mica schist, the latter often abounding in garnets. In mineralogical character this granite and its accompanying schists differ greatly from those of the great peaks, which are also formed of granite and schists, this has suggested a possible difference of age, and it remains uncertain whether any or what connexion exists between them.

The  
snowy  
mount  
range

As we approach the line of great peaks the rocks pass into highly crystalline gneiss or mica schist, and another more continuous line of granite intrusion occurs, divided into several branches, but distributed generally on the line of strike, that is, along the principal direction of the chain itself. It is chiefly in veins, though it extends at times into masses of considerable size, and more rarely into outbursts large enough to constitute whole mountains. The general dip of the strata continues throughout this area to be directed inwardly, its angle being increased to as much as  $45^{\circ}$ , though seldom to more than that. Beds of highly crystalline limestone, some pure, and some not easily distinguished from the gneiss or mica schist among which they occur, are common along a band following the direction of the strike. The vein granite is usually large grained, hornblende or mica replaces the mica, the feldspar is invariably white, and crystals of schist and kyanite are frequently seen in it.

Great  
peaks

The great peaks are, with few exceptions, composed of schistose rock, though granite veins may be seen in the mountain faces to very great elevations, one of these exceptions is the great peak of Khamet in Kurnon, which rises to about 25,000 feet in what appears to be a mass of grey granite.

Fossil  
limestones  
in the  
Tibetan  
border

Passing to the north of the line of great peaks the metamorphosed schists are suddenly replaced by slates and limestones, which are in many places highly fossiliferous, exhibiting what appears to constitute in the aggregate a fairly continuous series from the Lower Silurian to the Cretaceous formations, though the complete sequence has not been observed in any one locality. The western region of the Himalaya alone has been sufficiently explored to admit of any positive statements, but the indications gathered from such imperfect accounts and other data as exist relative to the eastern parts of the mountains leave little doubt that the change observed in the west on approaching and enter-

ing Tibet holds good on the east also, and that the general physical features of the whole tract are much alike, though doubtless with many differences in detail.

The fossiliferous strata of western Tibet are continued, though perhaps with some breaks, to the Tertiary period. In certain localities mammulitic rocks, probably Eocene, have been observed, and from the great alluvial deposit which forms the plain of Gugh, already noticed, the remains of mammals, apparently of Siwalik age, have also been obtained. Among these were bones of the elephant and the rhinoceros, the existence of which, in the present condition of these regions, would be wholly impossible, so that there is no room to doubt that these deposits have been raised from a comparatively low level to their existing great elevation of upwards of 15,000 feet, since they were laid out. As in the case of the plain of India, we here, too, have no complete proof of the origin of these great nearly horizontal deposits, but it seems clear from the materials of which they are formed, that they must have been laid out by water, either by the sea of some great inland lake. They are largely composed of boulder deposits, and large boulders are strewn over the surface imbedded in the ground in a manner that seems only explicable as the result of the action of a considerable body of water.

Several lines of granite and eruptive rock occur in western Tibet, of which all that need here be said is that they appear all to be older than the Tertiary alluvium, but some of them are possibly contemporaneous with the nummulitic and older formations.

The general conclusion that may be drawn from the facts of structure thus briefly indicated is that the elevation of the Himalaya to its present great height is of comparatively recent occurrence. An area of land must have existed where the main line of snowy peaks now stand, which has not been submerged since the Palaeozoic period, and which then had its northern boundary somewhere along what has been termed the Indian watershed. Evidence of a similar ancient sea on the south also exists, but in a less definite shape, and whether it was united with the northern sea or not is still a matter of conjecture, though the distinctive character of the fossils rather indicates that there was no direct union. The possible connexion of this ancient Himalayan land area with the pre-Tertiary land of the peninsula of India is also only a matter for speculation.

There is further reason to infer that the existence of the great line of peaks is rather due to some previous line of elevation on the ancient land, which has continued to retain its relative superiority while the whole area has been raised, rather than to any special line of energy of upheaval of recent date, and that the fundamental features of its former configuration of surface in mountain and valley have been preserved throughout. There is evidence for the conclusion that the chief rivers of the pre-Tertiary land issued from the mountains where the present main streams are found, and this embryo Himalaya may have been of such moderate height as to have permitted the passage across it of the Siwalik mammals, the remains of which appear both on the border of the Indian plain and in Tibet. It is after the middle Tertiary epoch that the principal elevation of these mountains must have taken place, and about the same time also took place the movements which raised the table lands of Afghanistan and Persia, and gave southern Asia its existing outline.

The best answer that can be given to an inquiry as to how changes of level could have arisen, such as those to which we are observed in the Himalaya, is that they should be regarded as due rather to secondary actions consequent on the general contraction of the cooling terrestrial sphere than to direct elevating forces, for which no action

Known origin can be assigned. The contraction of the cooling but now solid crust of the earth must have set up great horizontal strains, partly of tension and partly of compression, which would necessarily have been followed by rupture or crushing along lines of least resistance, and the movements on such lines are marked by the great mountain ranges that traverse the surface. A dislocation of the solid crust of the earth once having taken place, it would probably continue to be a line of least resistance ever after, and a succession of movements during past geological periods may thus be reasonably expected along such lines. Somewhat in proportion as the disturbing forces are intense, and the thickness of the crust on which they act is great, will be the tendency for the lines of rupture to be continuous for a considerable distance, and as the disturbed area is extended in its dimensions, the probability will increase of a repetition of a series of similar dislocations on lines approximately parallel to, or at right angles to, one another, and to the line on which the greatest compression and consequent tension take place. In a disturbed area, one transverse dimension of which is sensibly greater than the rest, the longitudinal ruptures will predominate in the interior and the transverse towards the borders. Almost all mountains give indications of having been shaped by forces thus related, and to the action of such forces may be the main characteristics of the structure of the Himalayas, and the arrangement of its ridges and valleys, be attributed. Whatever may be the power of rivers in general as instruments of erosion, and whatever effect the Himalayan rivers have had in removing the fragments of the rocks over and among which they took their courses, it is hardly possible to doubt that their main directions were determined by the anterior lines of dislocation which opened up hollows down which they could flow, and which must invariably have been accompanied by a destructive and crushing action on the rocks along them, which has enabled the waters the more readily to sweep away the obstacles in their path. The parallelism of many of the great Tibetan and Himalayan rivers for hundreds of miles together, amid such mountains, seems wholly inexplicable in any other manner.

Although the loftiest mountains when compared to the earth's diameter are insignificant in their dimensions, and the irregularities of the surface would hardly be perceptible on any sphere, however large, that could be made to represent the earth, yet in relation to the depth of the atmosphere even moderate elevations become of great importance, and such heights as those reached by the Himalayas introduce modifications of climate in ascending over its slopes that are not surpassed by those observed in moving from the equator to the poles. One half of the total mass of the atmosphere and three-fourths of the water suspended in it in the form of vapour lie below the average elevation of the Himalayas, and of the residue one half of the air and virtually almost all the vapour come within the influence of the highest peaks.

Micro-  
logy  
effects of  
mount  
tains on  
atmo-  
sphere

The general changes of pressure of the atmosphere indicated by the barometer extend in a modified but well-marked manner to the greatest elevations to which observation has been carried, and the annual and diurnal oscillations are not less regular in Tibet than in the plains of India, though somewhat reduced in amount. With the increase of elevation the diminution of the quantity of vapour held in suspension is very marked, and at the greatest heights reached there is found not more than one-sixth or one-seventh part of that observed at the foot of the mountains, and the proportion is sometimes as low as a tenth, or less. As is well known, the maximum quantity of water that can be suspended in the air in a state of vapour depends on the temperature of the air, and observa-

tion has established that the actual quantity at all elevations is approximately proportional to this maximum, and is thus determined by the temperature, which in turn is regulated by the elevation. The theoretical view once held that watery vapour was distributed in the atmosphere in accordance with the laws of pressure of elastic fluids is manifestly inconsistent with observed facts, which indicate that the diffusion of vapour is powerfully obstructed by the air particles, and that it by no means behaves as an independent elastic fluid, but rather as though it were merely mixed up with or entangled among the air particles.

The great elevations to which the Himalaya ascends, and the broad zone which it covers in respect to latitude, and its varying distance from the sea necessarily lead to correspondingly great variations of climate in its different parts, including the temperature and the degree of humidity in the atmosphere, and the amount of rainfall. The general position of the whole tract between the 25th and 35th degrees of north latitude renders it subject to high summer temperatures. The heat of the great plain of northern India is not surpassed at any other part of the earth, the air temperature rising in the hottest months to more than 110° Fahr., the fall of temperature in the winter is considerable, the thermometer reading at times to the freezing point, or even a little below it, the mean temperature varies from 78° Fahr. in the east or southern portion to 73° in the west or north. On the mountains every altitude has its corresponding temperature, an elevation of 1000 feet producing a fall of about 3½°, on 1° Fahr. to 300 feet. The mean winter temperature at 7000 feet is about 44° Fahr., with a mean minimum of 32° Fahr., and the summer mean about 65° Fahr. At 9000 feet the mean temperature of the coldest month is 32° Fahr., at 12,000 feet the thermometer ceases to fall below freezing point from the end of May to the middle of October, and at 15,000 feet it is seldom above that point at the coldest part of the day in the height of summer. There seems to be less variation of temperature at equal altitudes on the mountains in passing from east to west than might have been expected from the greater winter cold of the western part of the plains. This is probably due to the greater relative humidity and heavier rainfall of the eastern regions, and the denser vegetation which covers them. These influences tend to keep down the day temperature on the eastern mountains, while the clearer skies and more open character of the west operate in the opposite direction. On the more woody and rainy mountains in the outer parts of the chain the mean summer temperature will be 60° at 10,000 or 11,000 feet, but it will still be as much as that up to 12,000 feet, or even to a greater elevation, in the bare and sunny valleys near the Indian watershed.

In Tibet the thermometrical conditions vary considerably from those of the Himalayan slope. At 12,000 feet the maximum temperature is perhaps 70° Fahr. and the absolute minimum 5° Fahr. The ordinary winter temperature is from 0° Fahr. to 30° Fahr., with a mean of the coldest month of 10°. The mean of the hottest month is about 60°, and of the year 35°. At 15,000 feet the frost is permanent from the end of October to the end of April, and the lakes are usually frozen over for nearly five months in the year. Between 15,000 and 18,000 feet the diameters will fall below the freezing point every night of the year. At heights of 17,000 or 18,000 feet it rises considerably above that point in the summer months. From 13,000 to 18,000 feet it thaws only in the afternoons of July and August, and at 20,000 feet there is probably perpetual frost in the shade, though in the sun the air no doubt rises above the freezing point to much greater elevations.

Temper-  
ature of  
Hima-  
layas

Freezing  
of rivers.

All the rivers in Ladakh are frozen over every winter down to 8000 feet, a phenomenon that has been nowhere seen in the Himalaya, the rivers that are accessible during winter being at the small an elevation to be ever frozen, and the main streams probably everywhere too rapid.

Diurnal  
and  
other  
degrees  
of  
temper-  
ature.

The diurnal range of temperature is directly dependent on the condition of the surface and the state of the sky. On all well wooded ranges it is very small, particularly in the cloudy and rainy months, when it will not exceed 5° or 6°. In the dry months of April or May, before the summer rains begin, and in the autumn when clear skies again prevail, the variation is greatest. In Tibet it is greatest in summer and least in winter, which is the most cloudy season. The annual variation follows a similar law, 20° being about the minimum mean monthly range on the wooded Indian mountains, while in Tibet it amounts to as much as 80°.

Con-  
parison  
of  
temper-  
ature  
and  
western  
parts  
of  
China.

The difference of temperature between ranges densely clad with forest and the Indian plains may be twice as much in April and May as in December or January, and the differences between the temperatures of a well-wooded hill top and an open valley below have been observed to vary as much as from 9° in the coldest to 24° in the hottest hour. Precisely the converse may be found to hold good in comparing greater altitudes in Tibet with lesser in the Himalaya, where the humidity is greater.

Gen-  
eral  
direc-  
tion  
of  
temper-  
ature  
to  
the  
trade.

It is generally true, as we have seen—(1) that the decrease of temperature with altitude is most rapid in summer, (2) that the annual range diminishes with elevation, and (3) that the diurnal range also diminishes with elevation. But the greater quantity of cloud and the more dense covering of forest between 9000 and 10,500 feet render comparisons between this zone and the more open and less cloudy regions above and below anomalous for reasons that will be apparent after the above remarks.

Rainfall  
possibil-  
ity, how  
curved.

The chief rainfall on the Himalaya, like that of India generally, occurs in the summer months between May and October, the remainder of the year being comparatively dry. The physical causes which give rise to the south-west monsoon, under which name is known the season of summer rain as well as the south-westerly winds which accompany it, have been sufficiently explained in the article on Asia, to which the reader is referred for further details.

General  
direc-  
tion.

The fall of rain over the great plain of northern India gradually diminishes in quantity, and begins later, as we pass from east to west. At the same time the rain is heavier as we approach the Himalaya, and the greatest falls are measured on its outer ranges, but the quantity is again much diminished as we pass onward across the chain, and on arriving at the border of Tibet, behind the great line of snowy peaks, the rain falls in such small quantities as to be hardly susceptible of measurement.

Mon-  
soon  
winds  
their  
course.

An important agent in distributing the rain which falls over the Himalaya, if indeed it be not the essential one, is found in the diurnal currents of wind which are established from the plains towards the mountains, and *vice versa*, blowing up the valleys towards the main watershed from about 8 A.M. to 8 P.M., and in the opposite direction during the corresponding hours of the night. These diurnal winds, which are a very striking phenomenon, and blow in the afternoon with great force along the Himalayan and the Tush watershed and the neighbouring parts of the plain of Tibet, are common to all mountains, and are no doubt due to the disturbances of the planes of equal atmospheric pressure in a direction transverse to the mountains, caused by the unequal diurnal expansion and contraction of the columns of air respectively over the plains and mountains, the former being obviously longer than the latter, so that the planes of equal pressure are lifted by expansion higher over the plains during the day, and depressed by contraction

during the night, thereby setting up currents to and from the highest region of the mountain, as these alternating actions take place.

The condensation of vapour from the ascending currents thus set up across the Himalaya from the Indian plain, and their gradual exhaustion by repeated precipitations, as they cross successive ranges, is manifested to the traveller on the face of the mountains themselves, by the changes observed in the vegetation on passing to leeward of any important range, and most especially the line of great snow peaks. In the rainy months in the higher parts of the chain the southern face of each ridge is clothed by the day upwind with a crest of cloud, which hangs upon it, the northern face being often left entirely free, thus showing how large a portion of the vapour is arrested, and showing also that it is only up the deeper gorges that a small supply of moisture finds its way to the Tibetan table land.

Quantities  
of rain  
meas-  
ured.

The yearly rainfall, which amounts to between 60 and 70 inches in the delta of the Ganges, is reduced to about 40 inches where that river issues from the mountains on the 78th meridian, and is no more than 30 inches near the foot of the mountains at the issue of the Indus. At Deojing, at about 7000 feet on the east, on the outer border of the mountains, it amounts to about 120 inches, at Nainital, at about the same elevation and similarly situated in 70° 12' E. long, it is about 90 inches, and farther west it is still more reduced in quantity. In passing from the exterior to the interior of the chain the quantity greatly diminishes. In Kumaon, while in three months 49 inches was registered at Nainital on the outer range, only 19 inches fell at Almora, at 5600 feet, 30 miles further in. At Joshimath, 50 miles onward and close under great snowy peaks, at 6500 feet, 22 inches were measured in the same period, while at Nith, 11,500 feet behind the snowy peaks, the fall did not exceed 8½ inches. In a week of rainy weather, when 1½ inches fell at Joshimath, half an inch was measured at Nith, while beyond the Tibetan watershed during the same period the rain fell in a very faint drizzle which could not be measured at all. Similar facts might be quoted from the eastern mountains.

In the eastern Himalaya the ordinary winter limit of snow is 6000 feet, and it is rare for even 3 inches to remain as fall many days on the ground on a southern exposure at 7000 feet. In Kumaon, on the west, it is pretty certain that snow will fall every year at about 6500 feet, and at 5000 feet it will not fall one year out of ten, the lowest level to which sporadic snowfalls are known to descend is about 2500 feet, of which two or three instances have occurred in the present century. At Peshawar, at an elevation of a little above 1000 feet, snow occasionally falls, but very rarely. At Ld, in western Tibet, the results of two years' observations indicate that the depth of snow that falls is less than 2 feet, the heaviest continued fall measuring 8 inches and lasting three days, at an elevation of 12,500 feet. Depths of 3 feet have been measured on passes between 17,000 feet and 19,000 feet above the sea. On the Indian watershed the falls are much heavier, and even in September the passes are sometimes quite blocked by the falls which commonly occur after the equinox, and they are not usually open again till the middle of June.

It is now satisfactorily established that the snow line, or the level to which snow reaches in the course of the year, ranges from 16,000 to 18,000 feet on the southern ex- line posures of the Himalaya that carry perpetual snow, along all that part of the chain that lies between Sikim and the Indus. It is probably not till December that the snow begins to descend for the winter, though after September light falls occur which cover the higher mountains down to 12,000 feet, but these soon disappear. On the Indian

watershed the snow line is not lower than 18,500 feet, and on the summit of the table land it reaches a height of about 20,000 feet. On all the higher passes into Tibet the vegetation reaches to about 17,500 feet, and in August they may all be crossed in ordinary years, even up to 18,400 feet, without finding any snow upon them, and it is as impossible to find snow in the summer on the great plain of Gogé in western Tibet, at 15,500 feet above the sea, as on the plains of India.

There was at one time much discussion as to the true cause of the level of the snow line being higher in Tibet than on the outer ranges of the Himalaya. But the reason is obvious, namely, the greater quantity of snow that falls on the exterior ranges. The snow line marks the limit beyond which some snow always remains unmelted, that is, the point where on the average of years the summer heat will destroy the winter's snow. The main element in determining such a point will evidently be the quantity of winter snow that falls, the summer heat being not very different over the whole area. That the fall of snow on the outer ranges is greater than it is nearer the watershed at the same elevation is beyond doubt, and the smaller quantity of snow is more easily and earlier melted.

It was long affirmed that there were no true glaciers in the Himalaya, and ingenious arguments were adduced to account for their absence. But, in fact, they abound along all the higher ranges, especially in those countries under which they are found elsewhere, and all the phenomena observed elsewhere in connexion with them are reproduced in those mountains.

The level to which the Himalayan glaciers descend is very various, being greatly dependent on local conditions, principally the extent and elevation of the snow basins which feed them, and the slope and position of the mountain on which they are formed. A glacier formed on the southern face of the Himalaya may readily be in a position in which it might, with a length of 10 miles, descend from 18,000 feet to 11,500 feet. But in Tibet, or in the highest valleys, it might as readily happen that in 10 miles no lower level than 18,000 feet could be reached. With a larger snow basin on the south the greater waste in reaching the lower level might easily be compensated, while no conceivable supply would enable the Tibetan glacier to reach 11,500 feet, to do which it must extend perhaps 100 miles. These considerations will sufficiently explain the fact that the glaciers on the outer slopes of the Himalaya descend much lower than is commonly the case in Tibet, or in the most elevated valleys near the watershed. The glaciers of Sikkim and the eastern mountains are believed not to reach a lower level than 13,500 or 14,000 feet. In Kumaon many of them descend to between 11,500 and 12,500 feet. In the higher valleys and Tibet 15,000 and 16,000 feet is the ordinary level at which they end, but there are exceptions which descend far lower. In Europe the glaciers descend between 3000 and 5000 feet below the snow line, and in the Himalaya and Tibet about the same holds good. The summer temperatures of the points where the glaciers end on the Himalaya also correspond fairly with those of the corresponding positions in European glaciers, viz., for July a little below 60° Fahr., August 58°, and September 55°.

Measurements of the movement of Himalayan glaciers have been made which also give results according closely with those obtained under analogous conditions in the Alps, viz., rates from  $\frac{3}{4}$  to 141 inches in twenty-four hours. The motion of one glacier from the middle of May to the middle of October averaged 8 inches in the twenty-four hours. The average yearly motion of the glacier of the Aar is said to be  $\frac{7}{8}$  inches in twenty-four hours. The dimensions of the glaciers on the outer Himalaya, where

as before remarked, the valleys descend rapidly to lower levels, are fairly comparable with those of Alpine glaciers, though frequently much exceeding them in length—8 or 10 miles not being unusual. In the elevated valleys of northern Tibet, where the destructive action of the summer heat is far less, the development of the glaciers is enormous. At one locality in north-western Ladakh there is a continuous mass of snow and ice extending across a snowy ridge, measuring no less than 64 miles between the extremities of the two glaciers at its opposite ends. Another single glacier has been surveyed 36 miles long.

In connexion with almost all the Himalayan glaciers of former times precise accounts are forthcoming are found even now beyond present limits. moiranes indicating some previous condition in which their extent was much larger than now. In the case these moiranes are very remarkable, extending 8 or 10 miles. In the west they seem not to go beyond 2 or 3 miles, and they have been observed on the summit of the table-land as well as on the Himalayan slope. The explanation suggested to account for the former great extension of glaciers in Norway would seem applicable here. Any modification of the coast line which should submerge the area now occupied by the North Indian plain, or any considerable part of it, would be accompanied by a much wetter and more equable climate on the Himalaya, more snow would fall on the highest ranges, and less summer heat would be brought to bear on the destruction of the glaciers, which would receive larger supplies and descend lower. Such an explanation is not inconsistent with what is known of the geological formation of the mountains, and appears to be otherwise supported by the evidence of a greater former extension of the lakes of Tibet, and of the former existence of rivers flowing from the Himalaya between the Jumna and the Sutlej, the dry beds of which are now to be traced, in which water is never seen. Till now no geological evidence has been adduced to indicate in this region anything corresponding to the glacial epochs of northern Europe, to which these former extensions of the glaciers could be attributed.

Speaking broadly, the general type of the flora of the lower, hotter, and wetter regions, which extend along the great plain at the foot of the Himalaya, and include the valleys of the larger rivers which penetrate far into the mountains, does not differ from that of the contiguous Malayan peninsula and islands, though the tropical and insular character gradually becomes less marked as we pass from east to west, where, with a greater elevation and distance from the sea and higher latitude, the rainfall and humidity diminish and the winter cold increases. The vegetation of the western part of the plain, and of the hot, arid, to, or almost identical with, that of the drier parts of the Indian peninsula, more especially of its hilly portions, and, while a general tropical character is preserved, forms are observed which indicate the addition of an Afghan as well as of an African element, of which last the gay lily *Gloriosa superba* is an example, pointing to some previous connexion with Africa.

The European flora, which is diffused from the Mediterranean along the high lands of Asia, extends to the Himalaya, many European species reach the central parts of the chain, though few reach its eastern end, while genera common to Europe and the Himalaya are abundant throughout and at all elevations. From the opposite quarter an influx of Japanese and Chinese forms, such as the rhododendrons, the tea plant, *Aucuba*, *Hedera*, *Alnus*, *Adiantum*, *Gonolobus*, and others, has taken place, these being more numerous in the east and gradually disappearing in the west. On the higher and therefore cooler and less rainy ranges of the Himalaya the conditions of

Course of  
highest level in  
Tibet than on  
Himalaya

Glaciers

Elevations to  
which  
found

Their  
movement

even  
now  
beyond  
present  
limits

Botany  
General  
characteristics  
of flora

Relation  
to high  
mountain  
regions

temperatures requisite for the preservation of the various species are readily found by ascending a descending mountain slope, and therefore a greater uniformity of character in the vegetation is maintained along the whole chain. At the greater elevations the species which are identical with those of Europe become more frequent, and in the alpine regions many plants are found identical with species of the Arctic zone. On the Tibet plateau, with the increased dryness, a Siberian type is established, with many true Siberian species and more genera, and some of the Siberian forms are further disseminated, even to the plains of Upper India. The total absence of a few of the more common forms of northern Europe and Asia should also be noticed, among which may be named *Tilia*, *Fagus*, *Arbutus*, *Erica*, *Asclepias*, and *Crataegus*.

In the more humid regions of the east the mountains are almost everywhere covered with a dense forest which reaches up to 12,000 or 13,000 feet. Many tropical types here ascend to 7000 feet or more. To the west the upper limit of forest is somewhat lower, from 11,500 to 12,000 feet, and the tropical forms usually cease at 5000 feet.

In Sikkim the mountains are covered with dense forest of tall umbelliferous trees, commonly accompanied by a luxuriant growth of under shrubs, and adorned with climbing and epiphyllal plants in wonderful profusion. In the tropical zone large figs abound, *Ternstroemia*, *Shorea* (41), laurels, many *Leguminosae*, *Bombax*, *Alseodaphne*, bamboo, and several palms, among which species of *Calamus* are remarkable, climbing over the largest trees, and this is the western limit of *Cycas* and *Melastoma* (nutmeg). Plants ascend to 7000 feet. *Pandanus* and tree ferns abound. Other forms, *Santalum*, orchids, and climbing *Azadirachta* are very numerous, the last named profusely adorning the forests with their splendid dark-green foliage. Various oaks descend within a few hundred feet of the sea-level, increasing in numbers at greater altitudes, and becoming very frequent at 4000 feet, at which elevation also appear *Auricularia*, *Magdalenia*, chenices, *Pyrus*, maple, alder, and birch, with many *Salicaceae*, *Holboellia*, *Silene*, *Daphne*, *Myrica*, *Symplocos*, and *Rubus*. *Rhododendrons* begin at about 6000 feet and become abundant at 8000 feet, from 10,000 to 11,000 feet forming in many places the mass of the shrubby vegetation which extends some 2000 feet above the forest. Epiphyllal orchids are extremely numerous between 6000 and 8000 feet. Of the Coniferae, *Podocarpus* and *Pinus longifolia* alone descend to the tropical zone, *Abies* *Sinensis* and *Smithiana* and the larch (*Larix*) genus are absent in the western mountains; are found at 8000, and the yew and *Pinus Walbatana* at 10,000 feet. *Pinus excelsa*, which occurs in Bhutan, is absent in the wetter climate of Sikkim.

On the drier and higher mountains of the interior of the chain, the forests become more open, and are spread less uniformly over the hill-sides, a luxuriant herbaceous vegetation appears, and the number of shrubby *Leguminosae*, such as *Demodolium* and *Indigofera* *a*, increases, as well as *Ranunculaceae*, *Rosaceae*, *Umbelliferae*, *Labatae*, *Gramineae*, *Cyperaceae*, and other European genera.

The alpine flora of Sikkim closely resembles that of the western Himalayas, and so far as generic forms are concerned, that of the alpine regions of Europe and western Asia. The vegetation of the Tibetan region appears on rising above 14,000 feet, and its last representatives reach even to 18,000 feet.

Passing to the westward, and viewing the flora of Kumaon, which province holds a central position on the chain, on the 80th meridian, we find that the gradual decrease of moisture and increase of high summer heat are accompanied by a marked change of the vegetation. The

tropical forest is characterized by the trees of the hotter and drier parts of southern India, combined with a few of European type. Among them are *Moringa*, *Bombax*, *Butea*, *Anogeissus*, *Erythrina*, *Acacia*, *Bumhaya*, *Nauclea*, and *Ulmus integrifolia*. *Pinus longifolia* descends almost to the level of the plains. Among the more common shrubs are *Zizyphus*, *Adiantum*, *Calotropis*, *Caesalpinia*. Ferns are more rare, and the tree-ferns have disappeared. The species of palm are also reduced to two or three, and bamboo, though abundant, are confined to a few species.

The outer ranges of mountains are mainly covered with the forests of *Pinus longifolia*, *Rhododendron*, oak, and *Pteris* At Nainital cypresses are abundant. The shrubby vegetation ranges forest. *Salicaceae*, *Rubus*, *Indigofera*, *Demodolium*, *Barbarea*, *Delphinium*, *Fritaria*, *Clematis*, with an *Arundinacea*. Of herbaceous plants species of *Ranunculus*, *Potentilla*, *Geranium*, *Thalictrum*, *Pyrola*, *Gentiana*, and many other European forms are common. In the less exposed localities, on northern slopes and sheltered valleys, the European forms become more numerous, and we find species of alder, birch, ash, elm, maple, holly, hornbeam, *Pyrus*, &c. At greater elevations in the interior, besides the above are met *Corylus*, the common walnut, found wild throughout the range, horse chestnut, yew, also *Picea Walbatana*, *Pinus excelsa*, *Abies Smithiana*, *Cedrus Deodora* (which tree does not grow spontaneously east of Kumaon), and several junipers. The dense forests are commonly found on the northern faces of the higher ranges, or in the deeper valleys, between 8000 and 10,500 feet. The woods on the outer ranges from 3000 up to 7000 feet are more open, and consist mainly of evergreen trees.

The herbaceous vegetation does not differ greatly, generally, from that of the east, and many species of *Primulaceae*, *Ranunculaceae*, *Cruciferae*, *Labiatae*, and *Scrophulariaceae* occur, balsams abound, also beautiful forms of *Campulidaceae*, *Gentiana*, *Meconopsis*, *Saxifraga*, and many others.

Cultivation hardly extends above 7000 feet, except in the valleys behind the great snowy peaks, where a few fields of wheat and Tibetan barley are sown up to 11,000 or 12,000 feet. At the lower elevations rice, maize, and millets are common, wheat and barley at a somewhat higher level, and buckwheat and amaranth usually on the poorer lands, or those recently reclaimed from forest. Besides these, most of the ordinary vegetables of the plains are reared, and potatoes have been introduced in the neighbourhood of all the English stations.

As we pass to the west the species of *Rhododendron*, oak, *Pinus* and *Magnolia* are much reduced in number as compared to the eastern region, and both the Malayan and Japanese forms are much less common. The herbaceous tropical and semi-tropical vegetation likewise by degrees disappears, the *Santalum*, epiphyllal and terrestrial *Orchidaceae*, *Asclepias*, *Cyrtanthus*, and *Begonia* only occur in small numbers in Kumaon, and scarcely extend west of the Sutlej. In like manner several of the western forms suited to drier climates find their eastern limit in Kumaon. In Kashmir the plane and Lombardy poplar flourish, though hardly seen further east, the cherry is cultivated in orchards, and the vegetation presents an eminently European cast. The alpine flora is slower in changing its character as we pass from east to west, but in Kashmir the vegetation of the higher mountains hardly differs from that of the mountains of Afghanistan, Persia, and Siberia, even in species.

The flora of western Tibet is essentially European in its character. The juniper and poplar are the only trees that are seen, excepting fruit-trees, which include apricot, pear, and grape. The shrubby plants include small forms of willow, elm, *Lonicera*, rose, *Myrica*, *Ephedra*, and

1 (s) 2 (s) 3 (s) 4 (s) 5 (s) 6 (s) 7 (s) 8 (s) 9 (s) 10 (s) 11 (s) 12 (s) 13 (s) 14 (s) 15 (s) 16 (s) 17 (s) 18 (s) 19 (s) 20 (s) 21 (s) 22 (s) 23 (s) 24 (s) 25 (s) 26 (s) 27 (s) 28 (s) 29 (s) 30 (s) 31 (s) 32 (s) 33 (s) 34 (s) 35 (s) 36 (s) 37 (s) 38 (s) 39 (s) 40 (s) 41 (s) 42 (s) 43 (s) 44 (s) 45 (s) 46 (s) 47 (s) 48 (s) 49 (s) 50 (s) 51 (s) 52 (s) 53 (s) 54 (s) 55 (s) 56 (s) 57 (s) 58 (s) 59 (s) 60 (s) 61 (s) 62 (s) 63 (s) 64 (s) 65 (s) 66 (s) 67 (s) 68 (s) 69 (s) 70 (s) 71 (s) 72 (s) 73 (s) 74 (s) 75 (s) 76 (s) 77 (s) 78 (s) 79 (s) 80 (s) 81 (s) 82 (s) 83 (s) 84 (s) 85 (s) 86 (s) 87 (s) 88 (s) 89 (s) 90 (s) 91 (s) 92 (s) 93 (s) 94 (s) 95 (s) 96 (s) 97 (s) 98 (s) 99 (s) 100 (s)

1 (s) 2 (s) 3 (s) 4 (s) 5 (s) 6 (s) 7 (s) 8 (s) 9 (s) 10 (s) 11 (s) 12 (s) 13 (s) 14 (s) 15 (s) 16 (s) 17 (s) 18 (s) 19 (s) 20 (s) 21 (s) 22 (s) 23 (s) 24 (s) 25 (s) 26 (s) 27 (s) 28 (s) 29 (s) 30 (s) 31 (s) 32 (s) 33 (s) 34 (s) 35 (s) 36 (s) 37 (s) 38 (s) 39 (s) 40 (s) 41 (s) 42 (s) 43 (s) 44 (s) 45 (s) 46 (s) 47 (s) 48 (s) 49 (s) 50 (s) 51 (s) 52 (s) 53 (s) 54 (s) 55 (s) 56 (s) 57 (s) 58 (s) 59 (s) 60 (s) 61 (s) 62 (s) 63 (s) 64 (s) 65 (s) 66 (s) 67 (s) 68 (s) 69 (s) 70 (s) 71 (s) 72 (s) 73 (s) 74 (s) 75 (s) 76 (s) 77 (s) 78 (s) 79 (s) 80 (s) 81 (s) 82 (s) 83 (s) 84 (s) 85 (s) 86 (s) 87 (s) 88 (s) 89 (s) 90 (s) 91 (s) 92 (s) 93 (s) 94 (s) 95 (s) 96 (s) 97 (s) 98 (s) 99 (s) 100 (s)

1 (s) 2 (s) 3 (s) 4 (s) 5 (s) 6 (s) 7 (s) 8 (s) 9 (s) 10 (s) 11 (s) 12 (s) 13 (s) 14 (s) 15 (s) 16 (s) 17 (s) 18 (s) 19 (s) 20 (s) 21 (s) 22 (s) 23 (s) 24 (s) 25 (s) 26 (s) 27 (s) 28 (s) 29 (s) 30 (s) 31 (s) 32 (s) 33 (s) 34 (s) 35 (s) 36 (s) 37 (s) 38 (s) 39 (s) 40 (s) 41 (s) 42 (s) 43 (s) 44 (s) 45 (s) 46 (s) 47 (s) 48 (s) 49 (s) 50 (s) 51 (s) 52 (s) 53 (s) 54 (s) 55 (s) 56 (s) 57 (s) 58 (s) 59 (s) 60 (s) 61 (s) 62 (s) 63 (s) 64 (s) 65 (s) 66 (s) 67 (s) 68 (s) 69 (s) 70 (s) 71 (s) 72 (s) 73 (s) 74 (s) 75 (s) 76 (s) 77 (s) 78 (s) 79 (s) 80 (s) 81 (s) 82 (s) 83 (s) 84 (s) 85 (s) 86 (s) 87 (s) 88 (s) 89 (s) 90 (s) 91 (s) 92 (s) 93 (s) 94 (s) 95 (s) 96 (s) 97 (s) 98 (s) 99 (s) 100 (s)

1 (s) 2 (s) 3 (s) 4 (s) 5 (s) 6 (s) 7 (s) 8 (s) 9 (s) 10 (s) 11 (s) 12 (s) 13 (s) 14 (s) 15 (s) 16 (s) 17 (s) 18 (s) 19 (s) 20 (s) 21 (s) 22 (s) 23 (s) 24 (s) 25 (s) 26 (s) 27 (s) 28 (s) 29 (s) 30 (s) 31 (s) 32 (s) 33 (s) 34 (s) 35 (s) 36 (s) 37 (s) 38 (s) 39 (s) 40 (s) 41 (s) 42 (s) 43 (s) 44 (s) 45 (s) 46 (s) 47 (s) 48 (s) 49 (s) 50 (s) 51 (s) 52 (s) 53 (s) 54 (s) 55 (s) 56 (s) 57 (s) 58 (s) 59 (s) 60 (s) 61 (s) 62 (s) 63 (s) 64 (s) 65 (s) 66 (s) 67 (s) 68 (s) 69 (s) 70 (s) 71 (s) 72 (s) 73 (s) 74 (s) 75 (s) 76 (s) 77 (s) 78 (s) 79 (s) 80 (s) 81 (s) 82 (s) 83 (s) 84 (s) 85 (s) 86 (s) 87 (s) 88 (s) 89 (s) 90 (s) 91 (s) 92 (s) 93 (s) 94 (s) 95 (s) 96 (s) 97 (s) 98 (s) 99 (s) 100 (s)

1 (s) 2 (s) 3 (s) 4 (s) 5 (s) 6 (s) 7 (s) 8 (s) 9 (s) 10 (s) 11 (s) 12 (s) 13 (s) 14 (s) 15 (s) 16 (s) 17 (s) 18 (s) 19 (s) 20 (s) 21 (s) 22 (s) 23 (s) 24 (s) 25 (s) 26 (s) 27 (s) 28 (s) 29 (s) 30 (s) 31 (s) 32 (s) 33 (s) 34 (s) 35 (s) 36 (s) 37 (s) 38 (s) 39 (s) 40 (s) 41 (s) 42 (s) 43 (s) 44 (s) 45 (s) 46 (s) 47 (s) 48 (s) 49 (s) 50 (s) 51 (s) 52 (s) 53 (s) 54 (s) 55 (s) 56 (s) 57 (s) 58 (s) 59 (s) 60 (s) 61 (s) 62 (s) 63 (s) 64 (s) 65 (s) 66 (s) 67 (s) 68 (s) 69 (s) 70 (s) 71 (s) 72 (s) 73 (s) 74 (s) 75 (s) 76 (s) 77 (s) 78 (s) 79 (s) 80 (s) 81 (s) 82 (s) 83 (s) 84 (s) 85 (s) 86 (s) 87 (s) 88 (s) 89 (s) 90 (s) 91 (s) 92 (s) 93 (s) 94 (s) 95 (s) 96 (s) 97 (s) 98 (s) 99 (s) 100 (s)

*Hippophae*. The ordinary *huwwood* of the more elevated tracts is supplied by bushes of *Cotoneaster*, the fruit of travellers, and dwarf *Loasea* a willow. Species of *Astragalus*, *Urtica*, *Allium*, many *Cruciferae* and saxifages, *Saussurea*, and *Rheum* are common. *Asplenium* and many salt plants, with *Glaux maritima* and *Typhlocha*, are found, especially on the borders of the salt lakes. Mosses and ferns are very rare. Many European grasses and *Carex* occur in the pastures. The herbaceous vegetation ascends freely to 10,000 feet, and isolated plants may be found as high as 19,000 feet, but excepting in the close neighbourhood of small streams the growth is very scanty, and not one-twentieth of the surface is commonly clothed with vegetation. Barley is cultivated up to 15,000 feet, wheat, millet, and rape, with buckwheat, being common up to 12,000 feet. Apples and apricots grow up to 11,000 and 12,000 feet, and grapes to 9000 feet.

Number of species and genera of timber trees. The total number of flowering plants inhabiting the large amounts probably to 6000 or 8000 species, among which may be reckoned several hundred common English plants chiefly from the temperate and alpine regions, and the characteristics of the flora as a whole is that it contains a general and tolerably complete illustration of almost all the chief natural families of all parts of the world, and has comparatively few distinctive features of its own.

Timber trees.

The timber trees of the Himalayas are very numerous, but few of them are known to be of much value, and the difficulties of transport are so great as to render their removal to a distance in many cases impracticable. The "Sal" is one of the most valuable of the trees, with the "Toon" and "Sissoo," it grows in the outer ranges most accessible from the plains. The "Deodar" is also much used, but the other pines produce timber that is not durable. Bamboos grow everywhere along the outer ranges, and, taken to the eastward, and are largely exported for use in the plains of India. Other vegetable products of economic value, including the ordinary cereals and esculent plants, are not numerous, and the primitive condition of the people and the difficulties and expense of carriage are so great as to render the trade in such articles very insignificant.

Tea.

Though one species of coffee is indigenous in the hotter Himalayan forests, the climate does not appear suitable for the growth of the plant which supplies the coffee of commerce. The cultivation of tea, however, is now carried on successfully on a large scale, both in the east and west of the mountains, and has already become an important item of the export trade of India. In the western Himalayas the cultivated variety of the tea plant of China has been introduced, and succeeds well, on the east the indigenous tea of Assam, which is not specifically different, and is perhaps the original parent of the Chinese variety, is now almost everywhere preferred. The produce of the Chinese variety in the hot and wet climate of the eastern Himalayas, Assam, and eastern Bengal is neither so abundant nor so highly flavoured as that of the indigenous plant, and therefore not so commercially valuable.

Cinchona.

The cultivation of the cinchona, several species of which have been introduced from South America and naturalized in the Sikkim Himalayas, is still in its infancy, but promises to yield at a comparatively small cost an ample supply of the precious barks that is extracted from its bark. At present the manufacture is almost wholly in the hands of the Government, and the drug prepared is all disposed of in India. The progress of cinchona cultivation on the Nilgiris is not less promising than on the Himalayas.

Zoology. General characteristics.

The general distribution of animal life on these mountains is manifestly determined by much the same conditions that have controlled the vegetation. The connection with Europe on the north-west, with China on the north-east, with Africa on the south-west, and with the Malayan region on the

south-east, is manifest, and the greater or less prevalence of the European and Eastern forms varies according to more western or eastern position on the chain. So far as is known these remarks will apply to the extinct as well as to the existing fauna. The Palaeozoic forms found in the Himalayas are very close to those of Europe, and in some cases identical. The Tertiary fossils are still more closely allied, more than a third of the species being identical. Among the Jurassic Mollusca, also, no many species that are common in Europe. The Miocene fossils contain 84 species of mammals of 45 genera, the whole bearing a marked resemblance to the Miocene fauna of Europe, but containing a large number of genera still existing, especially of mammals, and as before stated now held to be of Pliocene age.

The fauna of the Tibetan Himalayas is essentially European, but, rather than of the northern half of the old continent, which region has by zoologists been termed Palearctic. Among the characteristic animals may be named the yak, from which is reared a cross breed with the ordinary horned cattle of India locally called "zebu," many wild sheep, and two antelopes, as well as the muskdeer, several hares and some burrowing animals, including pikas (*Lepus*) and two or three species of marmot, certain notable forms of carnivorous—fox, wolf, hyena, ounce, marten, and ermine, also wild ass. Among birds are found bustard and species of sand-grouse and partridge, water-fowl in great variety, which breed on the lakes in summer and migrate to the plains of India in winter, the raven, hawk, eagle and owl, a magpie, and two kinds of chough, and many smaller birds of the passerine order, amongst which are several finches. Reptiles, as might be anticipated, are far from numerous, but a few lizards are found, belonging for the most part to types, such as *Phrynosoma*, characteristic of the Central Asiatic zone. The fishes from the head waters of the Indus also belong, for the most part, to Central-Asiatic types, with a small admixture of purely Himalayan forms. Amongst the former are several peculiar small-scaled carps, belonging to the genus *Schizothorax* and its allies.

The ranges of the Himalayas, from the border of Tibet or Hindustan to the plains, form a zoological region which is one of the richest of the world, particularly in respect to birds, to which the forest-clad mountains offer almost every range of temperature.

Only two or three forms of monkey enter the mountain ranges, the langur, a species of *Simulapithecus*, ranging up to 8000 or 9000 feet. No lemur occurs, although a species is found in Assam, and another in southern India. Bats are numerous, but the species are for the most part not peculiar to the area, several European forms are found at the higher elevations. Moles, which are unknown in the Indian peninsula, abound in the forest regions of the eastern Himalayas at a moderate altitude, and shrews of several species are found almost everywhere, amongst them are two very remarkable forms of water-shrew, one of which, however, *Nectogale*, recently discovered, is probably Tibetan rather than Himalayan. Bears are common, and so are a marten, several weasels and otters, and cats of various kinds and sizes, from the little spotted *Felis bengalensis*, smaller than a domestic cat, to animals like the clouded leopard rivaling a leopard in size. Leopards are common, and the tiger wanders to a considerable elevation, but can hardly be considered a permanent inhabitant, except in the lower valleys. Civets, the mungoes (*Ichneumon*), and tree-cats (*Felis adamsi*) are only found at the smaller elevations. Wild dogs (*Canis*) are common, but neither foxes nor wolves occur in the forest area. Besides these carnivorous some very peculiar forms are found, the most remarkable of which is *Arctos*, sometimes called the cat bear, a type

peculiar to the Himalaya. Two other genera, *Hedysium*, an aberrant bilgeon, and *Protholobium*, an aberrant liver, are representative of Malaya in type. Amongst the rodents squirrel abundant, and the so-called flying squirrels with a membranous expansion of parachute between their fore and hind legs, are represented by several species. Bats and muscivorous, both kinds and individuals being numerous, but few present much peculiarity, a bamboo rat (*Rhizomys*) from the base of the eastern Himalaya being perhaps most worthy of notice. Two or three species of vole (*Arvicola*) have been detected, and porcupines are common. The elephant is found in the outer forests as far as the Jumna, and the rhinoceros as far as the Sarda, the spread of both of these animals as far as the Indus and into the plains of India, far beyond their present limits, is authenticated by historical records, they have probably retreated before the advance of cultivation and fire arms. Wild pigs are common in the lower ranges, and one peculiar genus of pigmy hog (*Porcula*) of very small size inhabits the forests at the base of the mountains in Nepal and Sikkim. Deer of several kinds are met with, but do not ascend very high on the hill sides, and belong exclusively to Indian forms. The musk deer keeps to the greater elevations. The chevrotains of India and the Malay countries are unrepresented. The gaur or wild ox is found at the base of the hills. Three very characteristic mammals, having some affinities with goats, inhabit the Himalaya, these are the "snow", "goat", and "tahr," the last named ranging to rather high elevations. Lastly, the pangolin or manis is represented by two species in the eastern Himalaya. A dolphin living on the Ganges ascends that river and its affluents to their issue from the mountains.

**Birds.**—Almost all the orders of birds are well represented, and the marvellous variety of forms found in the eastern Himalaya is only rivalled in Central and South America. Eagles, vultures, and other birds of prey are soon waiting high over the highest of the forest clad ranges. Owls are numerous, and a small species, *Glaucidium*, is conspicuous, breaking the stillness of the night by its monotonous though musical cry of two notes. Several kinds of snouts and nightjars, are found, and gorgeously-coloured trogons, bee-eaters, rollers, and beautiful kingfishers and barbets are common. Several large hornbills inhabit the highest trees in the forest. The parrots are restricted to parakeets, of which there are several species, and a single small lory. The number of woodpeckers is very great, and the variety of plumage remarkable, and the voice of the cuckoo, of which there are numerous species, resounds in the spring in Europe. It is impossible to do more than indicate some of the chief passerine birds, their number is immense. Amongst them the sun-birds resemble in appearance and almost rival in beauty the humming-birds of the New Continent. Chats, nuthatches, shrikes, and their allied forms, flycatchers and swallows, thrushes, dippers and babblers (about fifty species), bulbuls and outlaws, peculiar types of redstarts, various sylviads, wrens, tits, crows, jays, and magpies, weaver-birds, avadavats, sparrows, crossbills, and many finches, including the exquisitely coloured rose finches, may also be mentioned. The pigeons are represented by several wood-pigeons, doves, and green pigeons. The gallinaceous birds include the peacock, which everywhere adorns the forest bordering on the plains, jungle fowl, and several pheasants, partridges, of which the chukor may be named as most abundant, and snow pheasants and partridges, found only at the greatest elevations. Waders and waterfowl are far less abundant, and those occurring are nearly all migratory forms which visit the peninsula of India,—the only important exception being two kinds of solitary snipe, and the red billed curlew.

Of the reptiles found in these mountains many are Reptiles peculiar. Some of the snakes of India are to be seen in the hotter regions, including the python and some of the venomous species, the cobra being found as high up as 8000 or 9000 feet, though not common. Lizards are numerous, and as well as frogs are found at all elevations from the plains to the upper Himalayan valleys, and even extend to Tibet.

The fishes found in the rivers of the Himalaya show the same general connexion with the three neighbouring regions, the Palearctic, the African, and the Malayan. Of the principal families, the *Acanthopterygii*, which are abundant in the hotter parts of India, hardly enter the mountains, two genera only being found, of which one is the peculiar amphibious genus *Ophiocephalus*. None of these fishes are found in Tibet. The *Siluridae* or scaleless fishes, and the *Cyprinidae*, or carp and loach, form the bulk of the mountain fish, and the genera and species appear to be organized for a mountain torrent life, being almost all furnished with suckers to enable them to maintain their positions in the rapid streams which they inhabit. A few *Siluridae* have been found in Tibet, but the carps constitute the larger part of the species. Many of the Himalayan forms are Indian fish which appear to go up to the higher streams to deposit their ova, and the Tibetan species, as a rule are confined to the rivers on the plateau, as to the streams at the greatest elevations, the characteristics of which are Tibetan rather than Himalayan. The *Salmonidae* are entirely absent from the waters of the Himalaya proper, of Tibet, and of Turkistan east of the Tekelgik. On crossing the watershed that leads from the streams flowing into the Indus to those falling into the Oxus, a trout is reported to have been found, though it is said not to live in the Jaxartes or its affluents.

No such general or connected account of the Mollusca, Other insects, or other lower forms of life, of these mountains exists as will admit of anything but very vague statements regarding them. It is, however, understood that the same relations with the neighbouring European, Asiatic, and African regions are found to exist as have been noticed as characterizing the other forms of life.

Of the land Mollusca, one half appear to belong to the genera *Helix* and *Bulimus*, and about one-third to the family of *Cyclostomidae*, the species appear to be for the most part very local, and of about 120 species in all, only about one-tenth are recorded as being found in Tibet at the highest Himalayan valleys.

The Himalayan butterflies are very numerous and brilliant, for the most part belonging to groups that extend both into the Malayan and European regions, while African forms also appear. There are large and gorgeous species of *Papilio*, *Nymphalidae*, *Morphidae*, and *Danaidae*, and the more favoured localities are described as being only second to South America in the display of this form of beauty and variety in insect life. Moths, also, of strange forms and of great size are common. The cicada's song resounds among the woods in the autumn, flights of locusts frequently appear after the summer, and they are met far within the mountains, carried by the prevailing winds even among the glaciers and eternal snows. Ants, bees, and wasps of many species, and flies and gnats in great variety of form, and possessed of equal variety of powers of annoyance, abound, particularly during the summer rainy season, and at all elevations.

Apart from the connexion which subsists between the Himalaya and the earliest developments of the Hindu religion, there is little in these mountains that is of interest as throwing light on the earlier history of our race. The mythical geography of the Hindus represents the peak of Kailas, the snowy mountain north of the Tibetan lake

Belation of Him  
alaya to  
Himala  
mytho-  
logy  
mythical  
geo-  
graphy

of Manasarawa, as the centre of the world, around which its visionary kingdoms are spread out. The sanctity of the Himalaya, in Hindu mythology, is known to all, and thousands of pilgrims from all parts of India still continue to seek salvation in the holy waters of the Ganges, and at its sacred sources in the snowy Himalaya. "He who thinks on Himachal," says the *M'tas khanda*, one of the *Purānas* or holy books of the Hindus, "though he should not behold him, is greater than he who performs all worship at Kāshī (Benares). In a hundred ages of the gods I could not tell of the glories of Himachal. As the dew is dried up by the morning sun, so are the Sins of mankind by the sight of Himachal." And to those who have performed such a pilgrimage the wondrous snow-clad peaks of the Himalaya, though seen through the atmosphere of the 19th century, seem still to be surrounded with the same halo of glory as of old.

Highly  
valley  
and  
the  
Ganges

The Ganges, which issues from the mountains at Haridwar, is fed by two principal tributaries which unite about 40 miles higher up, the Alaknanda, far the larger, and the Bhagirathi, the more sacred. The source of the last-named river is in the glacier above the temple at Gangotri, which lies to the north of a great cluster of snowy peaks, on the south of which is found the temple of Kedarnāth, and on the east that of Badrināth. Large glaciers exist near both of these temples, that near Kedarnāth feeding the Mandakini, and that near Badrināth feeding the Vishnuganga, which river gives the main supply of water to the Alaknanda. Both the valley above Gangotri and that above Badrināth lead to Tibet, passing through a region of snowy peaks of first-class magnitude. To the west of Gangotri and the Bhagirathi lies the hardly less sacred source of the Jumna and the temples of Jamnōtī.

Hindu  
myth and  
Himala-  
myth

The temple at Badrināth, on the Vishnuganga, as the latter name suggests, is dedicated to Vishnu, and is served by priests of the Vishnuvānśa sect, presided over by a "Rikswal" or chief, who is invariably a Brahman from South India. The temple at Kedarnāth is dedicated to Shiva, symbolized by the Lingam, and is more especially venerated by the Śaiva sect, and the chief priest here, too, is a Brahman from Malabar in the same part of India. The origin of this connexion of the holy places in the Himalaya with southern India is very obscure, possibly, however, it dates back to the 8th or 9th century, to the time of Śaṅkara Achārya, a native of Malabar, the chief expositor of the Śaiva doctrines, who is said to have died at Kedarnāth. That the Himalaya and the sources of the Ganges, however, were regarded as holy, and had become places of pilgrimage for Hindus long before this event, or before the development of the two sects that have been here specially named, there can be no reasonable doubt, but how or when the Aryan races of India first developed for themselves a system of mythology so intimately bound up with these mountains must ever remain a subject of mere speculation.

Buddhist  
and  
Hindu  
monas-  
teries  
in  
western  
Tibet

Remains of Buddhist monasteries and temples on a great scale, the majority of which are believed from inscriptions found on them to date back to about the commencement of the Christian era, are met with along the foot of the western end of the Himalaya, in the Yusafzai country bordering on the Indus, and similar ruins are seen as far west as Jellalabad in Afghanistan. Some of the buildings are doubtless of much greater age, and may go back to the earliest days of Buddhism, about six centuries before our era, and the discovery in this locality of what is probably a contemporaneous copy of Asoka's well known inscription, cut into the face of a great rock, testifies to the development of a great centre of Buddhism in his days, that is, about 260 B.C. Among these ruins are found fragments

of sculpture bearing the impress of the Greek art introduced by the successors of Alexander, and other relics of the Greek Syriac Kings, in the form of numerous coins, have been obtained from the same quarter. The exact point at which Alexander entered India is still a subject of discussion among antiquaries, but it probably was on the line following the skirt of the north-west Himalaya along which the road now runs, and which is known to have been the chief line of traffic for centuries. How the influence of Greek architecture was carried forward both in time and place is illustrated by the curious temple of the sun, or "Maitland," in the valley of Kashmir, the date of which is about 400 A.D.

It would be a task, certainly fruitless, and probably com-  
impossible, to endeavour to estimate aright the com-  
parative claims to admiration of the scenery of the Him-  
Himalaya and other great mountain ranges. If some  
elements of the picturesque be better found elsewhere, and  
if the softer features of hill, valley, and lake be absent,  
yet nowhere can the Himalaya be surpassed in the mag-  
nificence and variety of its forest, or in the wealth and  
beauty of its alpine flora, which offer to the traveller  
ever changing and ever-renewed pictures, combining the  
charm of former memories with fresh conceptions of the  
wonderful never failing profusion of nature, and to the  
student of natural phenomena of every description surely  
no grander field will ever be open than that presented  
by these mountains.

In many circumstances mere magnitude may not be grandeur  
effective in adding to the apparent grandeur or sublimity of  
of mountain scenery, for everywhere the features nearest  
to the eye, though absolutely smaller, may cut off from  
view those of far greater importance which are further  
removed. And this is often conspicuously true in the  
valleys of the Himalaya. But the extraordinary scale on  
which every part of the mountains is developed, the actual  
vast dimensions of the main features, the apparently  
endless succession of range after range, of ascent and  
descent, of valley and mountain top, of river, torrent,  
and brook, of precipitous rock and glacial slope, of forest  
and cultivated land, cannot fail to produce impressions of  
wonder, which are not likely to be equalled and certainly  
will not be exceeded on any other chain. Upon these  
mountains alone, of all on the earth, can the traveller,  
as he climbs their slopes, obtain at a glance a range of  
vision extending 5 miles in vertical height, from 2000 or  
3000 feet to 28,000 feet above the sea, and see spread  
out before him a compendium of the entire vegetation of  
the globe from the tropics to the poles. Here may the eye  
as it sweeps along the horizon embrace a line of snow-  
clad mountains, such as exist in no other part of the  
world, stretching over one-third of the entire circle, at  
a distance of 40 or 50 miles, their peaks towering over  
a sea of intervening ranges piled one behind another,  
whose extent on either hand is lost in the remote  
distance, and of which the nearest rises from a gulf far  
down beneath the spectator's feet, where may be seen the  
silver line that marks a river's course, or common fields  
of amaranth and the dwellings of man. Sole representa-  
tive of animal life, some great eagle floats high overhead  
in the pure dark-blue sky, or, unused to man, fearlessly  
sweeps down within a few yards to gaze at the stranger  
who intrudes among these solitudes of nature. As the sun  
sets the cold grey shadow of the summit where we stand  
is thrown forward, slowly stealing over the distant hills,  
and, veiling their glowing purples as it goes, carries the  
night up to the feet of the great snowy peaks, which still  
rise radiant in rosy light above the now darkening world.  
From east to west in succession the splendour fades away  
from one point after another, and the vast shadow of the



oath is rapidly drawn across the whole vault of heaven. One more departing day is added to the comical series which has silently witnessed the death like change that passes over the eternal snows as they are left yawning their cold pale fronts against the now leaden sky, till slowly

with the deepening night the world of mountains rises again, as it were to a new life, under the changed light of the thousand stars which stud the firmament and shine with a brilliancy unknown except in the cloot raised an of these sublime heights (s. a)

**IIIMERA**, a city on the north coast of Sicily. It was founded in 648 B.C. by the Chalcidian inhabitants of Zancle, but with them were many Syracusan exiles who gave to the language of the city a Dorian character. Early in the 5th century the tyrant Thrasybulus, being expelled by Theron of Agriguntum, evoked the aid of the Carthaginians. They gladly availed themselves of the pretext, but their general Hamilcar was defeated at Himera by the Greeks under Gelon of Syracuse (480 B.C.). Thrasydæus, son of Theron, brought a large body of Dorian immigrants to the city in 476, but was not long after expelled by Hiero. It seems to have enjoyed great prosperity during the rest of the 5th century. In 415 it refused to admit the Athenian fleet, and was a zealous ally of Syracuse. In 408 the Carthaginians sent another great army under Hamilcar, grandson of Hamilcar, who razed the city to the ground. A new city called Thome Himerenses was founded in 407 close to the former site. This name was derived from the famous hot springs, in which Hierocles was said to have bathed. The new city was in Carthaginian hands till it was annexed by the Romans in the Second Punic War. It was treated with peculiar favour by them, and was left a free city under its own laws. In the time of Cicero it was a flourishing town, though not very large. Under Augustus it became a "colonia." We hear little of it from that time, though the site was never deserted, and the town still exists under the name of Termini Ergateles, an Olympian victor celebrated by Pindar (P. vi. 1), was a citizen of Himera. Strabo states the poet was a native of the city, and his statue was preserved at Thermae in the time of Cicero. Agathodes, also was a native of Thome.

**IIIMMER, FRIDRICK HINRY (1765-1814)**, a German composer of music, was born November 20, 1765, at Treuenbütten in Brandenburg, Prussia, and originally studied theology at Halle. During a temporary stay at Potsdam he had an opportunity of showing his self-acquired skill as a pianist before King Frederick William II., who thereupon made him a yearly allowance in order to enable him to complete his musical studies. This he did under Neumann, a German composer of the Italian school, and the style of that school Immer himself adopted in his serious operas. The first of these, a pastoral opera *Il Primo Navigatore*, was produced at Venice in 1794 with great success. After his return to Berlin in 1795 Immer became court chapel master to the king of Prussia, and in that capacity wrote a great deal of official music, such as cantatas, a coronation to Deum, and the like, now justly forgotten. The same fate is shared by his Italian operas, successively composed for Stockholm, St. Petersburg, and Berlin, and all received with great applause in their day. Infinitely more important than these is an operetta to German words called *Funkion*, the popularity of which has seldom been surpassed. Although antiquated, it still remains an admirable specimen of the primitive form of the musical drama known in Germany as the "Singspiel." Immer's gift of writing genuine simple melody, to which the operetta owed its success, is also observable in his songs, amongst which one called "To Alexia" is the best. It may be found in the first volume of the *Musical Library*. Immer died at Berlin, June 8, 1814.

**HINCKLEY**, a market town of England, county of Leicester, is situated 13 miles S.W. of Leicester, on a branch

line between that town and Nuneaton, which connects the London and North Western and the Midland railways. The principal buildings are the church of St. Mary, a Gothic structure lately restored, with tower and spire 120 feet high, the town-hall, the parsonage and Roman Catholic academy named St. Peter's Priory, and the union workhouse, erected in 1838, with accommodation for 400 inmates. There are a grammar school, a national school, and board schools. Hinckley is the centre of the stocking-weaving district, and its speciality is circular hose. It also possesses breweries, brick and tile works, and lime works. There are several mineral springs in the neighbourhood, and at one of these baths have been erected. The population in 1871 was 6903.

Hinckley was created a barony soon after the Conquest, when it was held by Hugh de Grentmeint, who created a castle, the ruins of which are still traceable, and also founded a priory of Benedictine monks. Originally the town had the privileges of a borough, but these were annulled by Edward IV. Mention is made of "Hinckley Priory" in the second part of *Henry IV.*, act v. sc. 1.

**IIINOMAR** (c. 806-882), archbishop of Rheims from 845 to 882, a prominent figure in most of the theological and ecclesiastical struggles of his day, and perhaps the most vigorous and influential prelate France has ever produced, belonged to a noble West Frisian family, and was born about the year 806. Other forms of the name are Ingumer, Ingmar, and Igmur. His early education was received at the abbey of St. Denis under Hilduin (the author of *Asopographia*), whom he followed to Corvey, Westphalia, when banished by Louis the Pious in 830 for having joined the party of Lothar. Returning about two years afterwards along with his superior to St. Denis, of which he had become a canon, he resided partly there and partly at court, where he rapidly rose high in the royal favour. He was with Louis at the "Field of Falschod" (Campus mendacium) in Alaise, and was one of the few who remained faithful when the majority of the prelates and nobles went over to the other side. After the death of Louis (840), he equally gained the confidence of Charles the Bald, through whose influence, after he had successively held the abbacies of St. Mary's of Compiègne, and of St. Germain, he was in 845 elected to succeed the deposed Ebo or Eloi in the archiepiscopal see of Rheims. Having exorted from Charles a full restitution of all the church property which had belonged to the diocese, and a further promise that it should never again be alienated, he at once entered on the duties of his office, and took a leading part in the council of Meaux (C. Meldense), the reforming decrees of which so strongly roused the opposition of the king. Some attempt having been made to revive the claims of Ebo, Ilinomar's title to the archbishopric was confirmed by a synod of French bishops at Paris, and ultimately settled by Leo IV.'s transmission of the pallium in 847. Apart from the ordinary affairs of his diocese, which included the completion and adornment of the cathedral begun by his predecessor, he now became deeply involved in the discussions which arose out of the predilection of Gottschalk (see GOTTSCHALK), whom Hlabbannus Maurus, at the synod of Mainz (848) had caused to be relegated to Hincmar as his metropolitan. At a synod held at Quierzy on the Ouse (Carisiacum), in the diocese of Soissons, in 849, Ilinomar had united with Wenilo of Sens and other prelates in condemning the refractory monk to degradation, scourging,

and imprisonment, but in a short refutation of the "predestinarian heresy," which he himself shortly afterwards wrote and circulated, he so failed to do justice to the orthodox faith as to elicit the censure of Ratamnus of Corvey, who was afterwards supported by Pudentius of Troyes, Lupus of Ferrières, and a large Augustinian party (850). Hincmar now summoned the dialectic skill of John Scotus Erigena to his aid, and the controversy became general. Another synod held at Querry in 853 passed the four "Capitula Carissaca," which in substance taught that there is but one divine predestination, that free will, lost by the fall, is restored by the preventing and assisting grace of Christ, that God wills generally that all men should be saved, and that the blood of Christ was shed for all. These were answered by the six canons of the (Lotharingian) synod of Valence, which elected from Hincmar, two years afterwards, the *De Predestinatione Dei et Libero Arbitrio Libres*, of which all that is now extant is the prefatory letter to the king. By the synod of Langres (S. Longomensis, 859), however, the articles of Valence were confirmed,—a decision which was afterwards supported by the general synod held at Savona or Savonnières, otherwise known as the Concilium Tullense (859). Hincmar now published the *Posterior de Predestinatione Dei et Libero Arbitrio Dissertatio*, but without influencing the voice of the church, and he was more successful in his controversy with Gottschalk on the Trinity, his *Collectio ex Sanctis Scripturis et Orthodoxorum Doctorum* against the phrase "Tria Datas" having been totally disregarded, he had, however, the satisfaction of preventing the release of Gottschalk, who died in prison in 868. While these speculative controversies were doubtfully lagging, Hincmar found scope for his greater practical talent in the events which followed the death of the emperor Lothar in 855, and which chiefly resulted in the strengthening of clerical ascendancy. Having saved Charles from the hands of his own nobles and of the German, the great metropolitan was in a position at last to say, "If kings rule after God's will, they are subject to none, if they be great sinners then is their judgment in the hands of the bishops." In 860 began the divorce suit in which the interests of Thietberge, the oppressed queen of Lothar II, were involved, and here, undoubtedly, the whole weight of Hincmar's influence was thrown into the scale of morality and right. His contribution to the discussion is still extant in the treatise *De Divortio Lotharii et Thietbergæ Reginæ* (860). While this controversy still remained unsettled, Hincmar became involved in a struggle with the pope (Nicholas I), which is of very considerable historical importance from the part which was played in it by the newly introduced "Iordanian" decrees, and from the effect which it had in limiting the rights of metropolitans. Rothad, bishop of Soissons, having been deposed for acts of insubordination and violations of duty at a synod of Soissons presided over by Hincmar in 863, had appealed to Rome, the appeal had been sustained, and ultimately in 865 orders were given that the judgment of Hincmar should be reversed, and that his suffragan should be restored to his office. The decision, which, though not without murmuring and contentions, was acquiesced in by Hincmar, was an important step in the development of the hierarchical monarchy of Rome. Hincmar was somewhat more successful when he found himself in opposition to the successor of Nicholas, Adrian II. This pope, who highly disapproved of the action of the archbishop in crowning Charles as the successor of King Lothar of Lorraine in 869, had fulminated threats of excommunication against all who had been concerned in that action, Hincmar replied that the Roman see had no right to interfere in such a matter, and that the impending ban would have no validity, and the actual result was that, notwithstanding

also the protest of the emperor and the prohibition of the pope, Charles the Bald and Louis the German quietly divided the dominions of their nephew Agan, when Hincmar of Laon, his nephew and suffragan, had died his authority and appealed to the pope, a long controversy resulted in the appellant's being imprisoned, degraded, and sentenced to the loss of his eyes (871). Of the remaining years of Hincmar's life few incidents are recorded, in 882 he was compelled by Norman invasion to transfer his see to Epernay, where in the same year he died.

The works of Hincmar, which include, besides the already mentioned, a variety of capitula and other occasional pieces, were first edited by Binnard in 2 vols. fol. (1694). They are reprinted in *Migne's Cours des Comp. Les Annales de France* from 861 to 882 as also by Hincmar. See *Gloss. Mai und Gregoriana aus dem Leben und Schriften Hincmars* (1806), Trithem, *De Scriptoribus et Tempore Hincmar* (1849), and Noorden, *Hincmar, Schicksal von Rheims* (1863).

HINDLEY, a manufacturing town of Lancashire, is situated on the Lancashire and Yorkshire railway, 3 miles south-east of Wigan. Cotton spinning and the manufacture of cotton goods are the principal industries, and there are extensive coal mines in the neighbourhood. Hindley possesses a grammar school, and among its places of worship may be mentioned the old parish church, and St Peter's church, erected in 1864 in the First Pointed style. In the time of the Russian revolution Hindley church was entered by the Cavaliers, who played at cards in the pews, pulled down the pulpit, and tore the bible in pieces. The population in 1871 was 10,627.

HINDOL, one of the tributary states of Orissa, India, situated between 20° 29' 30" and 20° 49' 30" N lat, and between 85° 8' 35" and 85° 31' 15" E long. It is surrounded on all sides by native states, being bounded on the N and E by Dhankhal, on the S by Baranah and Nainpur, and on the W by Angul. Area, 312 square miles, population (1872), 28,025 (Hindus, 23,346, Mahomedans, 142, and "others," 4568). The Cuttack and Sambalput highroads run through the state. Only five villages contain upwards of 100 houses. Hindol consisted originally of three or four petty states, completely buried in jungle, and ruled by separate chiefs, till two Marhatta brothers, belonging to the family of the Kumbh Rājā in Madras, drove them out, and formed these territories into one principality. The present chief maintains a military force of 83 men, and a police force 138 strong. His estimated annual revenue is returned at £2082, tribute, £55.

HINDÚ KŪSH is a title applied to the line of Alps watershed stretching W S W from the southern margin of Pamir, the Caucasus of Alexander's historians, which divide Afghanistan in a general sense from Afghan Turkestan, and the basin of the Cabul river from the basin of the Oxus. Looking towards the heart of a map of Asia, the eye is caught by that remarkable point where the great highland seems cleaved as it were to a knot, whence expand in different directions (1) to east and south-east the great Tibetan plateau, (2) to north that of Pamir, and (3) to west that of Khorassan and Persia. Between the diverging masses run up the great basins of the Indus, the Yarkand river, and the Oxus. Some dim memory of these great features perhaps, transformed and transplanted further east, appears in the cosmography of the Persians, in which the mythical Ganges falling on Mount Mau divides into four great rivers flowing to the cardinal points.

This is the first impression. But, imperfectly as we yet know the mountain structure, the more we learn the more evanescent becomes this idea of triplicity as typifying the true skeleton. This node is in fact the place of contact or intersection of two great elevations,—(1) of the Himalayas,

of which the axial lines approach in a direction from S E to N W, and (2) of the Thian Shan and allied ranges, of which the axial lines run from E N E to W S W. The parallelism of Hindu Kush seems to attach it to the latter system.

The definition of geographical features must often be in part arbitrary, but that of Hindu Kush fairly coincides with natural limits. On the east we take it as commencing at the Daroghi Pass, leading from the high valley of Little Pamir south into the valley of Kāshghar or Chitral. Just east of this is a cluster of peaks of great altitude, but their alignment attaches them to the great Gilgit range of the Himalaya (Múntagh of some maps, *Drapang* of Richthofen). On the west we regard Hindu Kush as including and terminating at the Hajigak Pass, those most commonly used between Cabul and Turkestan West of this the range continues as a watershed of considerable altitude, but with a partial change of direction and loss of true alpine character. In maps this prolongation is styled Koh-i-Baba. Properly Koh-i-Baba is the name of a conspicuous three peaked mountain rising over the Hajigak Pass, to a height of at least 16,500 feet, which we regard as the terminal prominence of Hindu Kush, though it is in truth also isolated from the higher summits to the eastward, which especially claim that name, by a considerable interval of lower mountain, rounded and mixed.

The total length of Hindu Kush as thus defined is 365 miles. Towards the eastern extremity the watershed perhaps emerges little from the table-land, for the Daroghi Pass is of singularly even acclivity on both sides, and no prominent summits adjoin it on the west. But for the rest of its extent the mountain tract of Hindu Kush realizes the popular idea of an alpine chain, *sc.*, of an unpeiced mountain barrier whose passes are never far below the line of perpetual snow, and whose highest peaks are never very far from the watershed.

The general altitude of the "cols" or passes runs from 13,000 to 13,000 feet. We give those that have been calculated (besides which some 20 or 22 are known more vaguely), beginning from the east —

	long	Feet
1 Daroghi Pass	73° 28'	12,000
2 Nishan "	71° 37'	17,000
3 Pan "	71° 24'	16,000-16,500
4 Kishmak "	69° 29'	13,200
5 Shulung "	68° 42'	12,000
6 Kushan "	68° 10'	15,000
7 Lak "	67° 52'	13,900
8 Kulu " (on Ilugrak Road)	67° 45'	12,480

The three highest (2, 3, 6) do not rest upon any observations of barometrical or boiling point, but on other and looser data. Of the height of the peaks we have nothing definite. Captain Burnes, who ascended Koh-i-Baba with Lieutenant Smith in 1840, speaks of seeing the lofty peaks to the eastward "many thousand feet" above, and Burnes uses similar language. The great peak near the Kushan Pass, sometimes especially called Hindu Kush, which is seen at once from Cabul on the south and from Kundur on the north, is probably not less than 20,000 feet high. Much farther east the estimated heights of passes 2 and 3 indicate probable summits of as great altitude. A great mountain due north of Chitral, called Tūch Mī, and said to be visible from a great part of Kafiristan and from Zebak in Badakhshan, is estimated by Major Biddulph, who alone has seen it, at the enormous height of 27,000 feet, but General Walker reduces this to 23,000, with a (?).

Apart from this exceptional peak we shall form a just conception of the calibre of Hindu Kush among the ranges of the world if we class it with the French and Swiss Alps in extent and mass, but with greater average altitude. We have only one report of a glacier, *viz.*, on the Nūksan Pass, No. 2 in the list of heights above.

The idea of a distinct southern range running parallel to Hindu Kush, north of the Cabul river, which Wood calls, "the Himalaya," is founded on misconception. But peaks have been measured on the spurs which run south on both sides of the Kunar river. They rise to near 10,000 feet on the left bank, east of Chitral, descending to 11,800 near the Afghan boundary. In Kafiristan there are peaks on these spurs of 16,000 and 16,800 feet, and even within 25 miles of the Cabul river as some as high as 14,000 feet.

On the south side of Hindu Kush the earliest sources of the Helmand are in the gorges up which the Koh-i-Baba passes mount. All the rest of the range drains on that side to the Cabul river, and so to the Indus. On the north all the drainage reaches the Oxus.

Both hydrographic features and the limits of our knowledge conveniently divide the Hindu Kush into three sections.

(1) Beginning from the east, in the first section, drainage southward is into the Chitral valley, and forms the great, perhaps greatest, contributory to the Cabul river, known as the Kunar or Belam (probably *Changpas* and *Malaman* of the ancients). The highest part of this basin is known as Chitral Zask (supra), and is politically united to Yaman in the Gilgit basin (see Gilgit). It consists of two or three confluent valleys, some of them thick with villages, whose continuous cultivation, supported by copious springs, extends far up the hill sides. At Chitral, the first peak, stands 7600 feet high, in 86° 10' N lat. Twenty miles farther down is the boundary of Lower Chitral or Kuluja. This forms a sort of at which the chief rock (and the style "Baluch") is used at Chitral town (height 9200 feet, 85° 58' N lat.). The people, in modern, apparently a converted section of the neighbouring Kāshghar, and speaking a kindred dialect of Sanskrit affinity. Fruit is good, including fine grapes, and the vine is once famous. Chitral is the focus of Chinese geography, the limit of most of which so long perplexed and vitiated the geography of the Panu highlands. The name *Baluch* more obviously covered a larger tract, probably the whole of the then present Baluchistan, *sc.*, the Indians. Below Chitral the valley narrows, and is shut in by Kāshghar in nominal subjection to the small state of Amsai (26° 4' N lat.). Afghan territory begins at Muzoon, 20 miles farther down. On the north of this section most part of the drainage flows directly into the Little Pamir stream of the Oxus, or into the Pūnjā, the union of the streams from Little and Great Pamir. We have accounts of no passes immediately west of Baluchistan, though certainly they exist. From Amsai, near the boundary of Upper and Lower Kāshghar, a pass occurs (about 72° E long) to Ishirghar on the Pūnjā. At the western limit of the section are the lofty passes of Nukhrin, Khutur, Agrom, and Doh, which lead through the Badakhshan and Wakhan to the Vaidgi branch of the Kokcha or river of Badakhshan. On the "Nukhrin" (quasi *Pas Malak*) in descending towards Chitral the traveller is girt with a leather girdle, and slides down the snow. Passes, with feet tread, are rolled out, by these processes, says the native authority, "both men and beasts generally reach the bottom in safety."

(2) The next section is that of which we know least. It embraces on the south Kafiristan, never yet penetrated by European travellers. This is a pass south to Kafiristan from Zebak and Sanghish, and one from Kuram, probably several more. The chief streams southward are that of Pūch, joining the Kunar river at Chigra Sans (*Changpas* as of Saktin Baba), and the Alingra and Alshang, which unite in Leghman, formerly Lemgha (*Lamgha* of Ptolemy), and join the Cabul river at Chabugh above Jalalabad. West of Kafiristan are the Afghanistan valleys of Tagro and Najaro, hardly better known, and occupied largely by the same races, seemingly akin to the Kāshghar. On the north side the valleys form min ships or cantons among the confines of small states, occupying little use in Badakhshan, and several of them having their peculiar dialect of old Pasgari affinity. One of these valleys is the Chirchik, which flows the Jam branch of the Kokcha. It is a wild glen near the borders of Kafiristan, occupied in a local rhyme with the runs of ball, but which in the 18th century was an important sub-division as a state to send a mission of homage to the Chinese court — a dispositionate pretensions being probably due to its containing the mines of lazuli, famous for ages, communicated by Marco Polo, and visited by Lieutenant Wood in 1838. Adjoining this are the Mangun and Argunghin, high valley cantons of the same race, who knew the names. Their streams chiefly bear north west, and join the river of Tāshkan, which carries them to the river of Kunlun, and so into the Oxus about 68° 18' E long.

(3) The last section extends from the borders of Kafiristan to the

Koh-i-Baba. On the south the drainage is received by two estab-  
lished channels flowing parallel to the watershed in opposite direc-  
tions,—the Panjshir (or Panjshir) from the east, and the Ghorband  
river from the west, meeting near Chitral and flowing S S E to  
meet the river from Chitral. The Panjshir valley is populous and  
fruitful, with irrigated orchards and mulberry gardens, the chief  
support of the people, though these, of Pashu kindred, have for  
ages borne a reputation for ruthless turbulence. It contains silver  
mines, worked as an early date, and early Mahometan coins bear  
the mint marks of secluded towns like Panjshir and Andakh.  
The latter place lies of the mountains, head of a canon subject of  
Kundur. From Panjshir to the Andakh valley lead at least  
seven passes. The chief of these is Khawak, crossed by Wood  
from the north in 1888, and nearly 1200 years ago before (841) by Hven  
Tsang from the south. The Tul Pass, a loop to this, was crossed by  
the great Timu in his advance to India (1398). From the Ghori  
himal valley there are also seven or more passes, two issued from  
Pawin, one of which, Sar ulung, was attempted unsuccessfully by  
Wood and Lord in November 1847,—since crossed and surveyed by  
Herivel Hyde Shah (1870). South of this, and the same day,  
pass, was ascended by Leach and Lord in October 1857. Four of  
the Ghorband passes descend on the lower Andakh valley, two  
more on the Sulikhi river, coming from the valley about Baman.  
The last, the pass of Shahr, ascends from the top of Ghorband  
valley, and descends on that of Baman near the castle of  
Zohak. This was crossed by Hven-Tsang in approaching India  
(840), and by Timu on his return (1399), and was commonly used  
by Babur, who calls it Shibut. There remain the Koh-i-Baba  
passes of Ilik, Hajigak, and Pusht-i-Hajigak. These are all  
approached from Chitral by the upper valley of the Chitral river  
and headwaters of the Hindkush. The first Buzgirdi Damm's  
pass, crossed to Kundur in 1847, before finding the Koh-i-Baba  
on that famous site, Burnes (1833), Wood and Lord (1837),  
Griffith (1840), and others at this time crossed the Hajigak,  
the best known of the passes. South of the mountains, the  
Andakh river and the Sulikhi form catchments like Panjshir  
and Ghorband rivers on the south. Unting near Ghori they  
join the river of Kundur or Akseka (called by Babur *Daghak*)  
flowing north to the Indus. South of this, the mountain, the  
chief occupants of this section in its western portion. Further  
east on the north side the higher valleys are occupied by tribes  
of old Turkic lineage, mixed more and more with Uzbeks and other  
Turki people as the Kokcha is approached (see also vol. 1 p. 241 sq.)

**Geology.**—Information is most scanty, and applies only to  
the western extremities of Hindu Kush. On the Kushan  
Pass Lord speaks of the lower parts as consisting of  
micaceous schist, black slate with occasional bursts of  
granite, then mica slate and gneiss, and the summits of the  
pass and range of a granite core shooting up in precipitous  
peaks. On the Koh-i-Baba, also, Griffith speaks of the lower  
masses as predominantly of slaty formations, the summits  
of coarse quartzose grey granite, and of very compact brown  
quartzose rock. In the Irak Pass, and at Zohak, are masses  
of conglomerate. Limestone occurs in the upper part of  
the valley of Pawin, exhibiting large cavities, in one of  
which the stream is engulfed for two miles, also higher up  
the Ghorband valley, where a magnificent natural cavern  
occurs. Limestone occurs also on the Hajigak Pass, and  
we hear of another great cavern near Doab, north of Baman.  
Eruptive deposits occur in Ghorband valley towards Char-  
doh, and there occur at Baman. Much of the has sup-  
posed, from Chinese analogies, that the multitude of arti-  
ficial caves and cave dwellings about Baman indicate a  
loose deposit, such details as we have seem hardly to  
corroborate this.

The region is rich in minerals. Iron is abundant and  
widely diffused. Villages called *Ahangardi* (of the "iron-  
workers") are numerous. There is a rich black ore on the  
Hajigak Pass, but fuel is entirely absent. Iron is also  
made at several places in Badakhshan, and of excellent  
quality in Bajaur, east of the Kunja river. The districts  
adjoining the four great Varday rivers are called Yungshan,  
which is popularly interpreted as *Hanah-Kan* ("All-Mines")  
from its various mineral wealth. Copper mines (not worked)  
exist here and also in Chitral. Antimony is found in  
Ghorband, and accurate Griffith speaks of ore of antimony  
forming boulders and even "a large mountain" on the top  
of Hajigak. Lead is found in Ghorband and in Yungshan

Sulphate of zinc occurs in Ghorband, silver, as above  
mentioned, at the head of Panjshir, rock salt on the borders  
of Badakhshan and Kandahar (mentioned by Marco Polo),  
sulphur in Yungshan and Sanggh (north of the Doab  
Pass), sal ammoniac in Kurin. Opium is exported from  
Chitral, a fact mentioned also by Hven Tsang. The  
lazuli of Kurin has been spoken of.

**Zoology.**—Of this we have not space to speak, nor  
accurate material. Afghanistan lies on the borders of the  
Oriental and Palaearctic regions (vol. vi p. 269), and pre-  
sents in degree of both, but the Hindu Kush is to a  
certain extent a boundary between them. Thus it limits  
the genus *Salmo*, which is found in no Indian or Persian  
stream, but immediately on crossing the passes. The late  
esteemed Russian traveller Fedchenko thought he had first  
discovered trout in Turkestan, but they were frequently  
caught by English officers at Baman in 1840, and Marco  
Polo mentions them in Badakhshan.

**Vegetation.**—The only basis for a view of this world be  
Griffith's collections near Koh-i-Baba and in the Kunar  
valley, but they have not been analysed in such a sense.  
These general remarks by Hooker and Thomson are, how-  
ever, apposite:—"The collections of Griffith, besides con-  
taining an immense number of Persian and European plants  
which find their eastern limits within the British territory,  
are such in Himalayan forms as advance us no farther  
west, and, what is of still greater importance, they contain  
many species common both to Europe and the Himalaya,  
but which, from mere differences induced by local causes  
in these two distant countries, might not be imagined to  
have a common origin, did not the Afghanistan specimens  
blend their characters or show the transition between them."  
—*Flora Indica*, i. 85, 86.

**Historical Notices.**—We have said that Hindukush is the  
Caucasus of Alexander's historians. It is also indicated by the  
Ptolemaean, though the latter term emphasizes more. Crucius  
has apparently used only when the name is in question.  
Whether the name was given in reality to the barrier which  
Alexander passed (as Arabian and others repeatedly alleged), or was  
founded also on some verbal confusion, we cannot say. It was  
no doubt regarded (and perhaps not altogether untaken) as a part of  
a great alpine zone believed to traverse Asia from west to east,  
whether called Caucasus, Caucasus, or Imass. Arabian history  
applies Caucasus distinctly to the Himalaya also. The applica-  
tion of the name Taurus to the Sn seems to indicate a real confusion  
with Colchian Caucasus. Alexander, after building an Alexandria  
at its foot (probably at Hupnuk near Chitral), crossed into  
Bactria, first reaching Diapance, or Adipsa. This has been  
interpreted as Andakh, in which case he probably crossed the  
Khwak Pass, but the identity is uncertain. An ancient Zend  
name is, according to Rawlinson, *Parsaena*, the country of  
Parsaenians, this accounts for the great Asiatic *Parsaenians* of  
Aristotle, and the *Pho-lo-an-a* of Hven Tsang.

The name Hindukush does not appear, so far as we can ascertain,  
in any of the earlier Arab geographers. But it is used by  
Ibn Bututa, who crossed (c. 1332) from Andakh, and he gives the  
explanation of the name which, however doubtful, is still popular,  
as (Pau.) Herodotus, "because of the number of Indian slaves  
who perished in passing," its words. Babur *chirya* calls the range  
Hindu Kush, and the way in which he speaks of it shows clearly  
that it was a range that was meant, not a solitary pass or peak  
(according to modern local use, as alleged by Edmonstone and  
Burnes). Probably, however, the title was confined to the section  
from Khawak to Koh-i-Baba (see Baber, pp. 186, 187). The  
name has by some later Oriental writers been modified into Hinduk  
Koh (mountain), but this is fictitious, and throws no more light on  
the origin of the title. The name seems to have become known to  
European geographers by the Oriental translations of the two Perts  
de la Gorge, and was taken up by Delisle and D'Arville. Herodotus  
and Euphratesian familiarized it, and Wilford Wilfordized about  
it. Burnes first crossed the range (1832). A British force  
was stationed at Baman beyond it in 1840, with an outpost at  
Saddozai.

The Hindu Kush, formidable as it seems, and often as it has been  
the limit between petty states, has hardly ever been the boundary  
of a considerable power. Greeks, White Huns, Samanids of  
Bokhara, Chagatais, Mongols, Deluts and Turanians, Herizis  
Saddozais and Baktars, have ruled both sides of this great alpine  
chain.

(H. Y.)

HINDUR, also called NALAGARI, one of the Punjab hill states, under the government of the Punjab, India, lying between 30° 54' 30" and 31° 14' 15" N lat., and between 76° 39' and 76° 56' 45" E long. Area, 256 square miles. The country was overrun by the Ghorkas for some years prior to 1815, when they were driven out by the British, and the raj was confirmed in possession of the territories. The estimated population in 1875 was 70,000, the estimated revenue £6000, and tribute £500. The principal products are opium and the usual grains.

#### HINDUSTĀN. See INDIA

HINDUSTĀNĪ, or URDŪ, is a dialect of the Hindi, one of the seven languages of Aryan stock spoken at the present day in North India, the others being the Panjabī, Śindhī, Gujarī, Marāṭhī, Bangālī, and Oriyā. The area over which it is spoken in North India may be said to be co-extensive with that of the Hindi, which is estimated at about 250,000 square miles, extending from the river Gāndak in the east to the Sutlej in the west, and from the Himalays in the north to the Vindhya mountains in the south. It is also extensively used, though in a somewhat different phase, in a great part of the Deccan, and is more over the *lingua franca* of most parts of India.

As the Hindi language consists of many dialects, it is necessary to state that it is the Braj dialect, or the dialect that is spoken in the districts of Agra and Mathura, and in the neighbourhood of Delhi, the ancient capital of the Mahometan empire, which is generally regarded as the parent of Hindustānī. The grammatical structure and also a vast number of the commonest vocabularies of the Braj were incorporated in the new dialect, and to these were added a vast number of Persian, Arabic, and even Turkish words. "Such words, however, in no wise altered or influenced the language itself, which, as regards its inflectional or phonetic elements, remains still a pure Aryan dialect, just as pure in the pages of Walt or Spenser, as it is in those of Tukī Dās or Bihār Lal."<sup>1</sup> Peculiarities of composition, such as reversing the positions of the governing and the governed word (e.g., *bat mānā* for *mañā bat*), or of the adjective and the substantive it qualifies, or such as the use of Persian phrases with the preposition *ba* instead of the Hindi postposition of the ablative case (e.g., *ba-khusht* instead of *khusht se*, or *ba-himān* *sañā* *le*, instead of *sañā le himān se*), are no doubt to be met with in many writings, and these, perhaps, combined with the too free indulgence on the part of some authors in the use of high-flown and pedantic Persian and Arabic words in place of common and yet expressive Hindi words, and the general use of the Persian instead of the Nagari character, have induced some to regard Hindustānī or Urdū as a language distinct from Hindi. But such a view betrays a radical misunderstanding of the whole question.

<sup>1</sup> Hindustānī (*hu* "Of or belonging to Hindustān") is the English name for the language. The natives generally call it *Urdū* or *Urdū Zibā*, "the camp language" (the word *zibā* meaning, in Turkish, "a camp"), and the poets, *Zibā*, "muted," while the phrase of the dialect which is peculiar to southern India is termed *Drāvidi*, or "southern." The term *Zibā*, on the other hand, is derived from the Persian *Zibā*, "India," and strictly speaking it applies only to the modern language of the Hindus. The old language, prior to the invasions of the Mussalmāns, is termed *Indiā*, and is derived from the so-called High Hindustānī, which differs considerably from the vulgar speech. This, in some parts of the area mentioned in the text, bears but little resemblance to the unaltered language, except in the possession of a few Persian or Arabic words. The High Hindustānī is that which is uniformly employed in literature over the whole of the specified area. It is, moreover, the language in which the proceedings of the various Government courts and offices are carried on, and is spoken in its purity in all the large towns by the educated classes generally, by Hindus as well as Mussalmāns.

<sup>2</sup> Beames, *Comparative Grammar of the Modern Aryan Languages*, vol. 1 p. 32.

As regards the introduction of foreign words into the various dialects of Hindi, it seems highly probable that it had its origin at an early period, perhaps as early as the 8th or 9th century of our era. But there is good ground for the opinion that, although the Hindi area was overrun as early as the 12th century, the Hindustānī was not formed till the 16th century. "For many generations after the victories of Kutub-d-din Aibak, the first Mussalmān sovereign of Delhi, the conquerors retained their own Persian, and the conquered then Hindi. The Mussalmāns had long been accustomed to speak pure Hindi, and it was not they who introduced Persian words into the language, but the Hindus themselves, who at the epoch above mentioned were compelled by Todar Mal's new revenue system to learn Persian."<sup>2</sup> And we learn from Mir Amman of Delhi (whose brief account of the origin of Urdū in the preface to his well-known *Dagh-o-Bahār* bears on the face of it every convincing mark of probability, and scanty as it is, is remarkable as, perhaps, the only attempt at a critical discussion in the whole range of Hindustānī literature) that at the date of the composition of his work (1802) the Mussalmān dynasties had endured for a thousand years, and that as intercourse increased the languages of the Hindus and Mussalmāns became to a certain extent mixed. By the arrival and stay of the Amir Tīmūr the camp or *laḥā* of the army was introduced into the city, whence the city *laḥā* is called Urdū, a Tartar word signifying "camp." "When Akbar ascended the throne, various races from all quarters, on hearing the kind patronage and bounty of that incomparable house, came and assembled in the royal presence, but the speech and dialect of each was different. From then being collected together, and owing to the trade, traffic, and intercourse which they carried on with one another, a single language, that of the Urdū (or Hindustānī), was established."

The epoch of Akbar, which first saw a regular revenue system established, with toleration, and the free exercise of their religion granted to the Hindus, was, there can be little doubt, the period of the formation of the language. But its final consolidation did not take place till the reign of Shah Jahān. After the date of this monarch the languages are comparatively immutated until we come to the time when European sources began to mingle with those of the East. Of the contributions from these sources there is little to say. Like the greater part of those from the Arabic and Persian, they are chiefly nouns, and may be regarded rather as excrescences which have sprung up casually and have attached themselves to the original trunk than ingredients duly incorporated in the body. In the case of the Persian and Arabic element, indeed, we do find not a few instances in which nouns have been furnished with a Hindi termination, e.g., *khawādnā*, *badalnā*, *ghasalnā*, *dāghnā*, *baḥalnā*, *kamīnapan*, &c. But the European element cannot be said to have at all woven itself into the grammar of the language. It consists, as has been observed, solely of nouns, principally substantive nouns, which on their admission into the language are spelt phonetically, or according to the corrupt pronunciation they receive in the mouths of the natives, and are declined like the indigenous nouns by means of the usual postpositions or case affixes.<sup>3</sup> A few examples will suffice. The Portuguese, the first in order of seniority, contributes a few words, as *kamārā* or *lamārā* (camera), "a room," *mātrōk*, "a hammer," *nādmā*, "anction" (often corrupted

<sup>2</sup> Beames, *Ibid.*, vol. 1 p. 80, note.

<sup>3</sup> It is supposed, however, that the strange dialect in which the Lucknow "native sermons," and the Dhrāmī, or "hottish," hold converse, and in which orders are given to a native crew regarding the working of a ship, is compounded of Portuguese words assimilated to their terminations and inflections. Of this there is no positive proof, and until the matter has been properly and satisfactorily investigated it would be injudicious to pronounce a decided opinion.









ception of a fragment by Jaidoo (the author of the Sanskrit *Gita Govinda*), preserved in the *Adi-Granth*, the oldest specimen of Hindi which we possess - but it is impossible to suppose that he was the first to attempt poetical composition in that language. The metrical perfection of his verse alone shows that he must have had many predecessors, and rude and rough though his utterance is, it abounds in poetic conventionalisms which must have been the common stock of many singers of his class. The story is told in sixty-nine books, of which some are interludes and digressions, but most are occupied with the exploits of the hero and his warriors. Considering the early date of the poem, and the opportunities of knowing the truth which the author (if he was really Pithwitrāj's bard) possessed, it is remarkable how much legend and fiction is mixed up with history in the chronicle. The repeated conflicts between the Rājā and Sultan Shihabuddin of Ghor, in which the latter always, except in the last great battle, comes off the worst, and is released on payment of a ransom, seem to be entirely unhistorical, our authorities knowing only one encounter (that of Tirauri near Thanesar, fought in 1191) in which the sultan was defeated, and there even he escaped uncaptured to Lahore. The Mughals (Book xv) are brought on the stage more than thirty years before they actually set foot in India (1232), and are related to have been vanquished by the redoubtable Pithwitrāj. These and other points make it questionable whether we have here, at least in its entirety, a genuine contemporary work, but we may concede, as indeed we are justified in doing by the language of the poem, that it is one of our earliest documents in Hindi.

It is very difficult for us now to form a just estimate of Chānd's poem the language, essentially transitional in character, abounds in strange forms which have long since died out of the vernacular speech, few if any Hindus, even the most learned, are able to interpret him, and his meaning must be sought by investigating the pictures by which Sanskrit and Prakrit words have been transfigured in their progress into Hindi. But upon the whole he may be said to exhibit both the merits and defects of ballad chronicles in general. There is much that is lively and spirited in his descriptions of fight or council, and the characters of the Rājā's warriors who surround his hero are not infrequently sketched in their own words with skill and animation. The sound, however, too often predominates over the sense, and we find abundantly exemplified in his poem the wearisome iteration, uninventive sameness of machinery, and tedious unfolding of familiar themes and images which distinguish nearly the whole of Indian narrative poetry. His value, for us at least, is linguistic rather than literary.

The other class of composition which is characteristic of the period of Old Hindi, the literature of the *Bhagavats*, both possesses more intrinsic interest and has exercised a more important influence on subsequent literary endeavour. The heroic chronicles, with perhaps the single exception of a famous saga relating the history of Padmāvatī, wife of Ratan Sen Rājā of Chitor, who in 1303 at the taking of that fortress by Sultan 'Alā' ud din burnt herself and (so says the tale) 18,000 other women rather than fall into the hands of the conqueror, which has been several times handled by poets outside the pale of Rājput traditions, and especially in a still highly esteemed work by Jaiṇ under Sher Shāh (1540), had only a local currency, and contributed but little to the furtherance of literature outside the limits of Rājputāna. The Vaishnava reformers, on the other hand, exercised the most powerful influence both upon the national speech and upon the themes chosen for poetic treatment. Nearly the whole of subsequent Hindi literature is impressed with one or

other form of Vaishnava doctrine, a very large proportion of the poets whose works are still current among the people were Vaishnava saints or *bhagats*, and to their initiative is due the almost exclusive use as a poetic dialect of that form of archaic Hindi known as *Diya bhākhi*. Vaishnavism was essentially a reaction against Brahmanical influence and the chains of caste, a claim for the rights of humanity against the monopoly which the "twice-born" asserted of learning, of worship, of righteousness. As Śiva was the peculiar deity of the Brahmans, so was Viṣṇu of the people, and while the literature of the Śaivas and Śāktas is almost entirely in Sanskrit, and exercised little or no influence on the popular mind, that of the Vaishnavas is mainly in Hindi, and in itself constitutes the great bulk of what has been written in that language.

The Vaishnava doctrine is commonly carried back to Rāmānuja, whose appearance is placed by Wilson about the middle of the 12th century. He was a native of Southern India, and had few immediate followers in the north. In the latter region the new opinions were spread by Rāmānand, whom the *Dhātamālā* makes the fourth head of the sect, and other authorities the fifth, both Wilson and Trumpp place him about 1400 of our era. Nothing in Hindi by Rāmānuja has come down to us, of Rāmānand we have one short poem in the *Granth* (Introduction, p. cxiv). Between Rāmānuja and Rāmānand (though not in the line of teachers descending direct from the former) we may place Jaidoo (about 1260) and Nāmdoo (about 1300), of the first of whom we have a fragment in the *Granth*, and of the second six pieces have been similarly preserved. Jaidoo was a Brahman, and well acquainted with Sanskrit, but Nāmdoo (or Nāmā) was a *chēṭī* or *calico printer*, a very despised class, and was perhaps the first to proclaim among the followers of the new doctrine the essential unity of mankind as worshippers of Hari. Kābi comes next, and is incomparably the greatest, in the order of Vaishnava teachers. He was a warrior by caste, and in all probability originally a Muslim. He is counted among the twelve disciples of Rāmānand, but he seems himself to trace his spiritual paternity rather to Jaidoo and Nāmā.<sup>1</sup> He dwelt first at Benares, and afterwards at Maghar, in the present district of Gorakhpur, during the reign of Sikandar Shah Lodi (1488-1517), and was probably dead before the end of the 15th century. Nāmā, the first Guru of the Sikhs, whose *Granth* is little more than a paraphrase of Kābi's writings, was born in 1469 and died in 1538, and from the relation between the two it seems necessary to suppose that Kābi was several years the senior.

The works attributed to Kābi are very numerous, they are preserved complete at the headquarters of the sect, the *Kābi chavā* at Benares, and many portions of them have been separately printed and lithographed in India. The best known are those entitled the *Sākhī*, *Solohā*, and *Rekhtes*, which have a wide popularity even among those who are not professed disciples of the saint. Several of the compositions enumerated under the name of Kābi are, however, not by him, but by his disciples as the lesser *Biyāl*, by Bhagō-Dās, the *Sākh-Nikhān*, by Sant-Gopal, &c., it was the custom (as also that of Kābi's religious heirs, the Sikh (Gurus) for the successors in the guruship to speak in the name of him whose successors they were. The doctrine of Kābi<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> This may be concluded from a short poem in the *Granth* (p. 460), where Kābi says (verses 4, 5) — "Let each one seek the Mind, O brother when the body falls away, where shall the Mind be absorbed? By the favour of the Guru Jaidoo and Nāmā through the love of Path attained to knowledge of Him" (*The Mind* is the underlying theme, *dhama*, *paradise* here).

<sup>2</sup> A tolerably full account will be found in II of Wilson's *Lectures on the Religious Sects of the Hindus* (Voices, vol. 1 pp. 68 seq.), Dr Trumpp's *Essay on the Religion of the Sikhs* (*Granth*, Introduct., pp. xxvi-xxx) may also be consulted.

was philosophically a form of pantheism, accounting for the existence of phenomena (the reality of which was denied) by the agency of a *Māyā*, or illusion, emanating from the Supreme. The varied lot of men in life, their differences of faith and aim, their desires, fears, hopes, loves, are all the work of this *Māyā*, to know which, and to recognize beneath all the Supreme, is the only means of emancipation from the chains of illusion. Neither austerities, ritual, nor works of any kind are necessary to obtain the highest end, this is only to be gained by *bhakti*, "faith," and poetical meditation on the Supreme—His name, *Hari*, *Rām*, *Govind*, being ever on the lips and in the heart. The highest end is absorption in the Supreme, in union with Him from whom all proceeded and who exists in all. Little place is left in this somewhat barren doctrine for a social code, since works are naught, but negatively, at least, it is inoffensive, commanding respect for all forms of life, and quiet performance of duty without self-seeking or desire for gain.

Of the spiritual followers of Kabir many have left memorials in literature, one of the most eminent of these was Dādī, founder of a sect very prevalent in Rājpūtānā. A translation of two chapters from the *Granth* or scripture of this *Bhagat* will be found in a note to Wilson's *Religious Sects of the Hindus*, pp. 106-113, and will repay perusal. But those whose compositions, if not most excellent from a literary point of view, have at any rate wrought most in history, were the Gurus or spiritual heads of the Sikhs of the Panjab. The *Adi Granth*, or Book of the first five Gurus (from Nanak, who died in 1538, to Arjun, who died in 1601), is described by its translator as "perhaps the most shallow and empty book that exists, in proportion to its size," and certainly the translation is not attractive reading. But the doctrines, reiterated with the most painful diffuseness, are essentially those of Kabir, much of whose writings has been incorporated in the volume. The language is rather Old Hindi than Old Panjabi, and thus the work falls within the scope of this article, though Panjabi words and idioms frequently occur, the grammar is Hindi, and the authors evidently aimed at propagating their tenets rather among the Hindi-speaking races of Hindustan proper than (as actually happened) among the Panjabi-speaking tribes of the West and South-West. The *Granth* consists of six parts. I, the *Japji*, the only portion as yet published in Europe in the original Hindi, II, III, and IV, arrangements for devotional purposes of extracts from Part V, the *Rāgs* or body of the *Granth*, of those *Rāgs* there are thirty-one, but only four, *Sir Rāg*, *Mīth*, *Gauri*, and *Asā*, have been rendered by a stamp, the remaining twenty-seven are merely offered themselves, no gathering or gleaming, as materials offered themselves, no attention being paid to the contents, but only to the bulky size of the *Granth*, VI, the *Mani* or conclusion, containing verses by various authors, among them Kabir and Sheikh Farid of Pakpattan, a famous Indian *Sūfi*, and panegyrics of the five Gurus, by fifteen *bhakti* or bards. At the end of each *Rāg* is a collection of sayings of the *Bhagats*, chiefly of Kabir, in confirmation of the doctrines set forth by the Gurus, and it is in these additions that the literary importance of the work, as a treasure of specimens of early Hindi, mainly consists.

Another of the following of Rāmānand, though considerably later in time than Kabir, was Śrī-Dās. Of his life little is known, as some of his verses are included in the *Granth*, he must have lived before its redaction (about 1600), if he be the same as a saint of that name mentioned in the *Bhaktamālā*, as is probable, he was a Brahman, *amān* or revenue collector of the *pargana* of Sandilā in Oudh during the reign of Akbar, who is related to have appropriated the collections of his district for the service of the

temple of Madan-Mohan at Brindāban, sending to the treasury instead chests filled with stones. When his delinquency was discovered, he was pardoned by Akbar, but thenceforth abandoned the world, and, becoming blind, led a wandering life as a singer of the praises of Vishnu. His stanzas, generally of four lines (*padas*), are said to number no less than 125,000, they are collected in a huge volume entitled the *Sūr Sāgar*, and are extremely popular.

While the sects of which Rāmānand may be considered the spiritual father adore the Deity chiefly under the names of *Rāma*, *Hari*, *Govind*, and dwell but little on the *avatars* or human incarnations of the Hindu god whom they have selected as the type of the Supreme, there is another division of the Vaisnavas which is not less important in Hindi authorship, and counts its adherents by millions, whose worship is of a different character. The sects belonging to this division take Krishna as their favourite type of the godhead, and, accepting the whole mass of legends (most of them probably of comparatively late origin) relating to this incarnation, inspire themselves with fervour by the contemplation chiefly of Krishna's childhood and his youth in the society of the herd maidens of Brāj. As the doctrine and object of worship are, so also is the mode of life. The Rāmānandis are for the most part men of ascetic and unworldly life, not indeed given to self-torture or needless rigor, but earning nothing for the wealth of the world, and living quietly and soberly in the possession of what they deem the truth. The worshippers of Krishna and his mistress Rādhā, or of the infant Bāl-Gopal, on the other hand, are no ascetics, but persons of luxurious and often opulent lives, among women especially this form of devotion is widespread. The chief sect of this denomination is the *Vallabhāchārya*, or the following of the *Golukāthā Gosvītis*. Their founder was one Vallabha Swāmī, a Brahman from the south, who settled at Gokul near Mathurā, probably about the beginning of the 16th century. The best known works of this sect are the *Brāj-bāṭā*, a description of Krishna's sports with the maidens of Brindāban by Braj-bāṭ-Dās, and the *Vārītā*, a collection of legends regarding eighty-four teachers of the following, resembling the *Bhaktamālā*, which deals chiefly with the other division of Vaisnavas. The popularity of the *Brāj-bāṭā* is immense, and it is to be found in a lithographed form for sale in every bazar. Its contents (as indeed many other productions of the worshippers of Krishna) have been condemned by Europeans as indecent, but although containing much that seems at least outwardly lecherous and purgent, it is a work the study of which is indispensable to one who would understand the religious temper of the Hindus. The mystic dwelling on the amours of Krishna and the *Gopīs* of Brāj has been often compared to the mystical interpretation of the *Song of Solomon*, and in most religions we shall perhaps find at least one phase in which the sensual is curiously mingled with the spiritual, and faith and love towards the heavenly stimulated by thoughts and phrases drawn from earthly scenes of passion. Of the *Vārītā* we shall speak under the next division of our subject.

2 Middle Hindi reaches from about 1570 to 1750. To this age belong the best poets of Hindi literature, Keshav-Dās, Bihārī Lal, and Tulsi-Dās, whose writings are no less remarkable for skill and subtlety of language than for perfection of metrical form. The labours of their predecessors had wrought the language of western Hindustan into a medium worthy of being put to the highest poetic use, and we accordingly find in the poets of this period large borrowings from Bīja, even where (as with Tulsi-Dās) that idiom is not the dialect of their own region. From their day onward Bīja-bhāṣā has been esteemed (in the words of Lalit-Lāl) "the standard language of sentiment

(*nāḥāi asa-nāḥāi*), and equal to the speech of the gods" (i.e., Sanskrit).

Kesav Dās was a Brahman who lived under Jahāngīr and Shahjāh in . He was the author of a poem on Rāma, entitled the *Rāmcaṇḍīkā*, written in 1603, the *Kumāravyas*, written in the same year, a treatise on the poetic art of much celebrity, the *Rasik-prīya*, on rhetoric, written in 1593, the *Bhaktā-tīkāmṛta*, an exposition of the doctrine of Rāmānandī Vaiṣṇavism, and several other works. Kesav Dās's compositions are widely popular, and have been frequently lithographed in Northern India.

Bihārī Lal is renowned as the author of the *Sat-saṭ*, a collection of 700 distichs, which is perhaps the most celebrated work of Hindi poetic art, as distinguished from narrative and simpler styles. They are inspired by the Krishna cult of Vishnu-worship, and take the form of amorous dialogues between Rādhā and the other *Gopīs* and their lover. The author was a native of Gokūlyār, and lived at Ambā during the early part of the 17th century. Editions of this work, one of the most difficult in Hindi and abounding in subtle conceits, are very numerous. It has been commented on by a crowd of scholars, among them, strange to say, more than one Musalmān,—a sufficient proof of the value set by natives of India, irrespective of their creed, on its perfection of language. It has even been translated into Sanskrit.

Tulsī-Dās, though perhaps inferior in poetic skill to the two last mentioned, is undoubtedly the most popular Hindi poet. His *Rāmāyan* (originally named by the author *Rāmcaṇḍī-māvaṇa*, or "the Lake of Rām's deeds") is perhaps better known among Hindus in Upper India than the Bible among the rustic population of England. He was a Kanaujī Brahman, and probably (from his language) a native of Oudh. The greater part of his life he spent at Benares, he died in 1631. His *Rāmāyan* was commenced at Ayodhyā in 1573. Besides this great work, he is the author of six other poems, all bearing more or less on the history and worship of Rām, called the *Rām-gītavāt*, the *Dohavāt*, the *Kāśī-aṇṇamālā*, the *Jaunpūr-poṭī*, the *Pad-Rāmāyan*, and the *Chhandavāt*. Seven other minor works are attributed to him, but their authenticity is doubtful.

Tulsī's *Rāmāyan* is a rehashing of the great theme of Valmiki, but in no sense a translation of the Sanskrit poem, real translations are scarcely to be found in original Hindi literature, the vernacular authors permitting themselves great liberty of excision, adaptation, and addition. It consists of seven books, of which the first two, called the *Bal-kāṇḍ* and *Ayodhyā-kāṇḍ*, make up more than half the work, and relate the birth and boyhood of Rāma and his brethren, his marriage with Sītā, their dwelling together in the forest, his abduction by Rāvaṇa, the expedition to Lanka and the overthrow of the rhyler, and the life at Ayodhyā after the return of the reunited pair. It is written chiefly in *dohās*, *soṭahās*, and *chamṛpāṭī*, with here and there a *dhanda* interspersed, the style is very even and well sustained, and the language, while fundamentally the Old Pāli of eastern Hindustan, borrows largely from Braj. The most admired portion of the work is the second book, *Ayodhyā*, which tells of the mischief wrought by Kaikeyī, one of the queens of Dasarath, Rām's father, who had bound himself by a vow to grant her what boon she should ask, and whom by this bond she compelled to command Rāma and Sītā to go into exile in the great forest north of the Jumna, and to give the throne to her own son Bharat. In this trouble Dasarath dies, and his son obediently goes forth with his wife and his brother Lachhman to the southern wilderness. The sorrow of Dasarath, the sweet filial piety and perfect manhood of the divine Rāma, the valour and prompt affection of Lachhman, the sincerity and humility of Bharat, the purity and wifely obedience of Sītā, are

themes which a Hindu reader is never tired of dwelling upon in Tulsī's pages. And unlike though the treatment be to our own standards of taste, overgrown with theological digressions and explanations, and stocked with conventional images and stereotyped phrases as the poem is, even a European may find in it something of literary achievement which appeals to him, however distantly, as the work of a master of the heart. The first two books of the *Rāmāyan* have been admirably rendered into English prose by Mr F S Growse (Allahabad, 1877-78).

Tulsī, though essentially a Hindu and a Brahman in religious feeling, yet belongs to the class of Vaiṣṇavas who count among them Rāmānand and Kabir. He has little or nothing of the sensual passion of the devotees of Krishna and Rādhā, and in the commentary on the *Bhaktamālā* it is related that, when in his old age he paid a visit to Brindāvan, the centre of the Krishna-cult, he refused to render homage to any other form of the god than Rāma. According to the legend, he was beguiled into a temple of Krishna, and bidden there to worship Rāma, he answered that he would only bow his head before one who should bow in his hand the bow and arrows of the king of Ayodhyā, hearing his speech, the image of the god, standing till then as Krishna with the flute (*Vanashūrah*), suddenly changed to the similitude of Rāma with the bow.

The *Bhaktamālā*, or "Roll of the *Bhaktas*," is a collection of the despatched caste called *Doms* or *Domās*, who lived during the reign of Jahāngīr, and was a contemporary of Tulsī Dās. The *Bhaktamālā*, in the form in which it is commonly met with, consists of a *māl*, or original text, ascribed to Nābhājī, and a *tīkā*, or commentary, of which there are two, due respectively to Krishna Dās and Prīya-Dās, both stated to have been written in 1713, in verse, and many more in prose. The *māl* is a short *stāva* (*chheppas*) for each saint, the first line of which is repeated again at the end, stating, in the briefest and most obscure language, his characteristics. The original work of Nābhājī was amplified and added to by Nārāyan-Dās, who lived during the reign of Shahjāh. Mr Growse justly says of it—"The style (of the *māl*) might be described as of unparalleled obscurity, were it not that each separate portion of the text is followed by a *tīkā*, or gloss, in which confusion is still worse confounded by a series of the most disjointed and inept allusions to different legendary events in the saint's life." A considerable portion of the *Bhaktamālā* was printed in 1817 in Major Price's *Hindu and Hindoo Legends Selections*, and it has been largely drawn upon by Wilson in his account of the religious sects of the Hindus. The saints tented in it are chiefly of the class of Vaiṣṇavas addicted to the worship of Rāma, and the anecdotes of them contained in the work are generally meagre and extravagant in the extreme. "Such as it is," however, it exercises a powerful influence in Upper India on popular belief, and holds a similar place in the superstitions of this country to that which was occupied, in the darkest ages of the Roman Catholic faith, by the *Golden Legend* and *Acts of the Saints*" (Wilson).

The other side of Vaiṣṇavism, that devoted to the cult of the infant or youthful Krishna, with or without his mistress Rādhā, is represented by a work similar in character to the *Bhaktamālā*, called the *Vāṇī*, or *Chamṛpāṭī Vāṇī*, already mentioned. Specimens of its contents will be found in Wilson's *Religious Sects of the Hindus*, p. 182. Its legends are of the most trivial and childish description, but, with the tenth chapter of the *Bhāgavata Pūāna*, rendered into Braj bhāṣā by Chaturbhūy Mīra, and into modern Hindi in 1804-10 by Lalā Lal, they are nevertheless the inspirers of the greater part of the popular worship throughout the whole of Northern India. The universality

of the cult of the infant Krishna may be judged by the enormous number of Hindu proper names which end in *Lakṣ*, meaning "child," all of which embody some reference to this deity in his youthful form. In Bengal especially the sect is extremely numerous, having there arisen out of the teaching of Chaitanya, who is said to have married a daughter of Vallabha-chakravarty, and is believed by his followers to have been himself an incarnation of Krishna.

Such, in the briefest outline, is the character of Hindi literature during the period when it grew and flourished through its own original forces. Founded by a popular impulse in many respects similar to that which gave rise to Buddhism nearly 2000 years before, and cultivated chiefly (though by no means exclusively) by authors not belonging to the Brahminical order, it was the legitimate descendant in spirit, as Hindi is the legitimate descendant in speech, of the Prakrit literature which preceded it. Entirely in verse, it adopted and elaborated the Prakrit metrical forms, and carried them to a pitch of perfection which is too often overlooked by those who concern themselves rather with the substance than with the form of the works they study. The language of these compositions strikes us often as rude, abrupt, and ambiguous, undoubtedly in its earlier specimens it is wanting in clearness and definiteness of grammatical form, but the shackles of metre are frequently the explanation of uncouth forms of speech, and the necessity of hitting out a metrical scheme led in too many cases to irregularities and amplifications which had perhaps no representatives in the unimpelled utterances of the vernacular tongue. Interesting when regarded in the mass, its attractions in detail are few. As in all Oriental literature, repetition and shallowness of ideas overcome it, and render an extensive course of reading intolerable to a European. Conventional images, platitudes exalted to the utmost degree of tenuity, barren philosophical and theological themes which in their wisdoms entirely overlook the study of detail,—such are, with few exceptions, its leading features, and one who has read two of these books has in truth made himself master of the whole secret of original Hindi literature.

3 The *origines* of Urdu as a literary language are extremely obscure. The popular account refers its rise to the time of Timur (1398). Some authors even claim for it a higher antiquity, asserting that a *divān*, or collection of poems, was composed in *Rekhtah* by Mas'ūd, son of Sā'id, in the last half of the 11th and beginning of the 12th century, and that Sā'id of Shīrāz and his friend Amīr Khwārazmī of Dehli likewise made verses in that dialect before the end of the 13th century. This, however, is very questionable, and the better opinion appears to be that these ancient compositions, if they existed at all, were written in Hindi according to the metrical forms of that language, rather than in what is properly called Urdu. That Muhammadas composed in Hindi, and used that language as their vernacular, is certain, and in many passages of Kabir, which are nevertheless pure Hindi compositions, Persian words are used almost as freely as in the modern dialect. Much of the confusion which besets the subject is due to the want of a clear definition of what Urdu, as opposed to Hindi, really is.

Urdu, as a literary language, differs from Hindi rather in its form than in its substance. The really vital point of difference, that in which Hindi and Urdu are incommensurable, is the prosody. Hardly one of the metres taken over by Urdu poets from Persian agrees with those used in Hindi; in the latter language, it is the rule to give the short *a* inherent in every consonant or group of consonants its full value in resonance, except occasionally at the metrical pause. In Urdu this is never done, the only somewhat analogous rule providing for the enunciation of a short *a*

(the *nin-fathah*) after a nexus of consonants which would otherwise be pronounced without it, the great majority of Hindi metres are counted by the number of syllabic instants or *mātrās* (the value in time of a short syllable) in Urdu the metres follow a special order of long and short.

The question, then, is not—When did Persian first become intermixed with Hindi in the literary speech?—for this process began with the first entry of Muslim conquerors into India, and continued for centuries before a line of Urdu was composed,—nor, When was the Persian character first employed to write Hindi?—for the written form is but a subordinate matter. We must ask—When was the first verse composed in Hindi, whether with or without foreign admixture, according to the forms of Persian prosody and not in those of the indigenous metrical system? Then, and not till then, did Urdu come into being. If, then, it is really the case that poems were so composed as early as the 11th or the 13th century, the origin of Urdu literature must be carried back to that period. But Hindi itself was at that date, and for many decades later (as we see from Chand and our other earliest specimens of the language), in an unsettled and transition stage. Neither in its case inflexions nor in its verbal forms did it resemble the language which we know as Urdu. It abounded in short vowels and hiatuses, which could not accommodate themselves either to the Persian character (without the free use of vowel signs and *hamzahs*, which were seldom employed) or to Persian prosody, and its syntactical order was loose and unsettled. Urdu, as we know it, is the Hindi of the end of the 16th century enriched from Persian, not the Hindi of Chand and the early *Bhagats*.

The whole of Urdu poetry follows Persian models of composition, its themes are those which had already been worked (some might say, worked out) by writers in that language, and neither in form nor substance do we find the faintest flavour of originality from its commencement to the present day.

The paucity of themes and want of originality in Urdu verse has led to a most elaborate development of the system of rhetoric. Where the substance of what a poet has to say is identical with that which has been said by hundreds, nay thousands, of poets before him, it is of the highest importance that the way of saying it shall if possible be peculiar to himself. Rhetoric, accordingly, rather than poetic feeling, is the distinguishing feature of composition in Urdu. Pleading hyperbole, ingenious comparison, antithesis, alliteration, carefully arranged gradation of noun and epithet, as the means employed to obtain variety, and few of the most eloquent passages of Urdu verse admit of translation into any other language without losing that which in the original makes their whole charm. Even in the *masnavis*, or narrative poems, the story is usually quite a subordinate matter, it has in most cases been handled time after time, and is familiar to the reader in its minutest detail. Even when the names chosen for the actors are new, the intrigue is old, and the mode in which it is unfolded is the only thing which distinguishes one poem from another. The descriptions thus, confined within a narrow circle of incident and epithet, repeat each other with a monotony which to a European is unexpressly fatiguing, but which in the East is deemed rather a merit than a defect. Differences of school, which are made much of by native critics, are to us hardly perceptible, they consist in the use of one or other range of metaphor and comparison, clasped, according as they repeat the well-worn poetical stock-in-trade of the Persians or seek a slightly fresher and more Indian field of sentiment, as the old or the new style of composition.

These being the nature and features of Urdu poetry, it will be manifest that such an account of it as can

be given here must be little more than a list of names and dates.

The earliest Urdu authors lived and wrote in the Dakhn, at the courts and under the patronage of the Muhammadan dynasties of Golkonda and Bijapur, shortly before these dynasties were overthrown by the campaigns of Aurangzeb in the south. Shajjad Husain, a native of Gujarat, a friend of Jinnah and contemporary of Akbar, is mentioned by the native biographers as the most ancient Urdu poet after Amir Khusrau. He was tutor of the son of the *shah* of Sultan Ali Hasan Qutb Shah of Golkonda, and several *ghazals* by him are said to survive. Qutb Qutb Shah of Golkonda, who reigned from 1581 to 1686, and his successor Abdullah Qutb Shah, who came to the throne in 1611, have both left collections of verse, including *ghazals*, *rubais*, *masnawis*, and *ghazals*. And during the reign of the latter, the Shikhs wrote two works which are still famous as models of composition in Dakhn, they are *masnawis* entitled the *Zul-i-nunah*, or "Tales of a Prisoner," and the *Phul-ban*. The first, written in 1630, is an adaptation of the Persian by Nizami, but derives intimately from a Samakist original entitled the *Saka-wajals*, this collection has been frequently imitated in Urdu, both in verse and prose, and is the original of the *Toldi Khatun*, one of the first works in Urdu prose, composed in 1601 by Mulk-un-nad Mirza Ibrahim Mirza of the Fort William College. The *Phul-ban* is also taken from the same source, and to be in its kind from a Persian work entitled the *Shadist*. Another famous work which probably belongs to the same place and time is the *Story of Kamsup and Kadi* by 'Abdullah, a *masnawi* which has been published (1846) by M. Guein de Tassy, which makes this poem remarkable is that it, though the work of a Musalman, is in the language of Hindu. Kamsup, the hero, is the son of the king of Oudh, and the heroine, Kadi, daughter of the king of Ceylon, the incidents somewhat resemble those of the tale of the *Sandwich* in the *Thousand and One Nights*, the hero's love for the girl, the adventures of the hero, the hero's love for his beloved, his wanderings take him to many strange countries and through many wonderful adventures, ending in a happy marriage.

The court of Bijapur was not less distinguished in literature. Ibrahim Adil Shah (1579-1686) was the author of a work in verse on music entitled the *Nat-i-as* or "Nine Savours," which, however, appears to have been in Hindi rather than Urdu, the three preceding (*shikhs*) to this poem were rendered into Persian prose by Mirza Zakariya, and under the name of the *Sik-nasir*, which, as we know, models of style. A successor of this prince, 'Ali Adil Shah, who had his court poet, a Brahmin known popularly as Bhat, who in 1677 composed a *masnawi* of some repute entitled the *Gulshan-i-Ishq*, or "Rose-garden of Love," a romance relating the history of Prince Manohar and Adilshahi, like the *Kamsup*, an Indian theme. The same poet is author of an extremely long *masnawi* entitled the *Ali-nasir*, celebrating the monarch under whom he lived.

These early authors, however, were but pioneers and feelers of the way, the first generally accepted standard of form, standard which has suffered little change in two centuries, was established by Wali of Aurangabad (about 1680-1720) and his contemporary and fellow-contemporary Siraj. The former of these is commonly called "the Father of Urdu Poetry," and all subsequent writers agree that the immense development attained by Urdu poetry in Northern India during the 18th century was due to his example and initiative. Very little is known of Siraj's life, he is believed to have visited Delhi towards the end of the reign of Aurangzeb and is said to have there received instruction from Shah Gulshan in the art of clothing in a variety of the ideas of the Persian poets. His *Andaz* or compendium was by him published by M. Guein de Tassy, with notes and a translation of selected passages (Paris, 1834-36), and may be commended to readers desirous of consulting in the original a favourable specimen of Urdu poetical composition.

The first of the Delhi school of poets was Zuhri-ud-din Haim, who was born in 1680 and died in 1738. In the second year of Muhammad Siraj (1719), the *shah* of Wah reached Delhi, and extended the invitation to scholars to settle in the city. Siraj was invited to the Urdu of the north, and was followed by his friends Najib, Marthin, and Abu. Two *duwans* by him survive. He became the founder of a school, and one of his pupils was Rafi-us-Sani, the most distinguished poet of Northern India. Akbar Ali (1689-1758) was another of the fathers of Urdu poetry in the north. This author is chiefly renowned as a Persian scholar, in which language he not only composed his poetry, but one of the best of Persian lexicons, the *Shik-i-Taqat*, but his compositions in Urdu are also highly esteemed. He was the master of Mir Taqi, who

<sup>1</sup> The late M. Guein de Tassy's *Histoire de la Littérature Hindoue et Hindoustane*, and his annual summaries of the progress made from 1850 to 1877, afford all the materials which can be desired on this subject by one who is not conversant with the language. In the latter works, the peculiarities of the latter can be learned only from long-continued study and familiarity with Oriental modes of thought.

runs next to Siraj as the most eminent Urdu poet. Akbar died at Lakhnau (Lahore), whether he betook himself after the devastation of Delhi by Nadir Shah (1739). Another of the early Delhi poets who is considered to have surpassed his fellows was Mirza Asaf Khan Yagub, who died during the reign of Akbar Ali (1718-24), and left twenty-five. Another was Mir Dard, pupil of the same Shah Gulshan who is said to have imitated *Wali*, his *duwan* is not long, but extremely popular, and especially admired for the skill with which it develops the theme of mysticism. In his old age he became a *darwish* of the *Naghabad* following, and died in 1738.

Siraj and Mir Taqi are beyond question the most distinguished Urdu poets. The former was born at Delhi about the beginning of the 18th century, and studied under Mirza. He left Delhi after its devastation, and settled at Lakhnau, where the Nawab Asaf-ud-Daulah gave him a *shah* of his 8000 a year, and which he died in 1780. His poems are very numerous, and cover all the styles of Urdu poetry, but it is to his satire that his fame is chiefly due, and in these he is considered to have surpassed all other Urdu poets. Mir Taqi was born at Agra, but early removed to Delhi, where he studied under Akbar. He was still living there at the time of Siraj's death, but in 1789 migrated to Lakhnau, where he lived until he died at a very advanced age in 1810. He was a very voluminous writer, including no less than six *duwans*. Mir is counted the superior of Siraj in the *ghazal* and *masnawi*, while the latter excelled him in the *satire* and *ghazal*. Seyyid Ahmad, an excellent contemporary authority, and himself one of the best of modern authors in Urdu, says of him in his *Adab-i-Sandak*—"Mir's language is so pure, and the expressions which he employs so suitable and natural, that to this day all are unanimous in his praise. Although the language of Siraj is also excellent, yet he is superior to Mir in the point of his allusions, he is nevertheless inferior to him in style."

The numerous misstatements which befell Delhi at the hands of Nadir Shah (1739), Ahmad Shah Durrani (1746), and the Marathas (1789), and the rapid decay of the Moghul empire, Siraj, who betook himself to the refuge and ended there, they were followed in their new residence by a school of poets who followed in the footsteps of Siraj. In the first half of the century after his death, as pointed by Mir Taqi (died 1780), Mirza Asaf Khan and Qalandar bakhsh Mirza (died 1810), who like themselves refugees from Delhi, and illustrious poets. Mir Hameed was a friend and collaborator of Mir Dard, and first established himself at Fuzli and subsequently at Lakhnau. He excelled in the *ghazal*, *rubai*, *masnawi*, and *masnawiyat*, and is counted the third, with Siraj and Mir Taqi, among the most eminent of Urdu poets. His famous chiefest rests upon a much admired *masnawi* entitled the *Shik-i-Taqat*, or "Mystic of eloquence," a romance relating the loves of Prince Benazir and the Princess Badi-i-Munir, his *masnawis*, like the *Gulshan-i-Ishq* ("Rose garden of Iran"), the *Andaz* ("Adab-i-paradise in Southern Arabia"), in prose of *Andaz*, is likewise highly esteemed. Mir Muhammad, a contemporary of Mir Taqi, is remarkable for the success with which he composed in the dialect of the harem called *Zakhi*, but somewhat iterations in his verse, he became *darwish* and renounced the world in his later years. His was also a prolific poet, but like Siraj, his *masnawis* are lucubrations and full of double meanings. He imitated Siraj in satire with much success, he also cultivated Hindi poetry, and composed *dozabs* and *shikhs*. Mirza Asaf Khan was another. I think in the same period, whose *masnawis* are especially admired, one of them, that on the death of Mirza and his two sons, is considered a masterpiece of this style of composition. The school of Lakhnau, so founded and maintained, was a very active one, continued to flourish till the discomposure of the empire. Mirza Asaf Khan, in 1850. Akbar and Nafis, who died respectively in 1847 and 1841) are the best among the modern poets of the school in Urdu. Mirza Asaf Khan, a grandson of Mirza Asaf Khan, who lived at Delhi, the former who whom I have mentioned, died after a few months later, excelled in the *masnawiyat*. Najib Ali Beg Sarfaraz, who died in 1869, was the author of a much admired *duwan* in which he composed entitled the *Shik-i-Taqat* ("Adab-i-Tale of Mirza"), besides a *duwan*. The dethroned prince a Wajid Ali himself, poetically styled Akhtar, is no mean poet, he has published three *duwans*, among them a quantity of poetry in the rustic dialect of Oudh, the language of many of his contemporaries.

Though Delhi was thus deserted by its brightest lights of literature, it did not altogether cease to cultivate the poetic art. Among the late Mughals several poems were themselves creditable poets. Shah Akbar (1761-1866) wrote a *duwan* in the name of *Andaz*, and was the author of a romance entitled *Manav-i-Sayyid*, a *duwan* of Mirza Sultan-ah-shah, brother of Akbar Shah II, who had at first, like his brother authors, migrated to Lakhnau, returned to Delhi in 1818, and died in 1838. He also left a *duwan*. Lastly, his nephew Bahadur Shah II, the last ruler emperor of





greater number merely act as middle-men between the ultra-  
violet and the large merchants. The municipal committee  
have opened a large gravelled market-place and storage-  
yard, with raised platforms, and scales for weighing the  
cotton. The place consists of Old and New Hinganghat,—  
the former, a straggling town, liable to be flooded by the  
river Wan', the latter, in which the better classes reside,  
laid out in broad streets and avenues.

HINOJOSA DEL DUQUE, a town of Spain, in the  
province of Cordova, from which city it is distant about  
58 miles N by W. The manufacture of linens and woollens  
is carried on to some extent, the population is estimated  
at about 8500.

HINTON, JAMES (1822-1875), aural surgeon and author,  
son of John Howard Hinton, Baptist minister and author  
of the *History and Topography of the United States* and  
other works, was born at Reading in 1822. He was edu-  
cated at his grandfather's school near Oxford, and at the  
Nonconformist school at Harpenden, and in 1838, on his  
father's removal to London, was apprenticed to a woollen-  
draper in Whitechapel, where he came into contact with a  
phase of human life in its miserable and degraded forms  
which influenced powerfully the whole cast of his after-  
thought. After retaining this situation about a year he  
became clerk in an insurance office. The most of his  
evenings were spent by him in intense study, and thus,  
joined to the ardour, amounting to morbidness, of his  
interest in moral problems, so affected his health that in  
his nineteenth year he resolved to seek refuge from his own  
thoughts by running away to sea. His intention having,  
however, been discovered, he was sent, on the advice of  
the physician who was consulted regarding his health, to St  
Bartholomew's Hospital to study for the medical profession.  
After receiving his diploma in 1847, he was for some time  
assistant surgeon at Newport, Essex, but the same year he  
went out to Sierra Leone to take medical charge of the free  
labourers on their voyage thence to Jamaica, after which  
his interest in their welfare prompted him to remain a  
year on the island. After his return to England in 1850,  
he entered into partnership with a surgeon in London,  
where he soon had his interest awakened specially in aural  
surgery, and gave also much of his attention to physiology  
and to problems bearing on the relation between mind and  
body. In his practice he became convinced that in the  
immense majority of cases of ill-health it was the hope of  
cure rather than the drug that effected the remedy, a fact  
which explained to him much of the success of homoeop-  
athy, and induced him to lay the principal stress on moral  
methods of cure. He made his first appearance as an  
author in 1856 by contributing a series of papers on physio-  
logical and ethical subjects to the *Christian Spectator*, and  
the success of his work *Mind and its Dwelling Place*, which  
appeared in 1858, determined him, notwithstanding that he  
had married in 1852, to give up his medical practice in  
order to devote his whole attention to writing on those  
practical moral problems which chiefly occupied his  
thoughts. A series of papers entitled "Physiological  
Riddles," which he contributed to the *Cornhill Magazine*,  
and afterwards published under the title *Life in Nature*,  
as well as another series entitled *Thoughts on Health*,  
written for the same periodical and collected and published  
separately in 1871, gave evidence of great aptitude in  
popular scientific exposition, but his interest in speculation  
was too absorbing to permit him to apply himself with  
sufficient pertinacity to literary work, and after a year's  
trial of it he found it necessary to resume his profession.  
In 1863 he obtained the appointment of aural surgeon to  
Guy's Hospital, after which he speedily acquired a lucrative  
west-end practice, and the reputation of being the most  
skilful aural surgeon of his day, a reputation fully borne

out by his works, *An Atlas of Diseases of the Membrana  
Tympani*, and *Questions of Aural Surgery*, which are  
regarded as the chief authorities in this branch of surgery.  
The skill he had now obtained in his profession seemed to  
justify him in 1869 in resuming his philosophical studies,  
but the mental excitement thus produced, added to his pro-  
fessional labours, appears to have inflicted permanent injury  
on his brain, and, although by giving up his practice  
in 1874 he obtained partial relief, he began to suffer from  
sleeplessness and depression, and died of acute inflammation  
of the brain, 16th December 1875.

In addition to the works already mentioned, Hinton was the  
author of the *Mysteries of Man*, and *The Places of the Universe*. On  
account of their fresh and vigorous discussion of many of the im-  
portant moral and social problems of the time, his writings have  
had a wide circulation on both sides of the Atlantic. He con-  
tributed also several papers to the *Contemporary Review* and other  
periodicals. His *Life and Letters*, edited by Ellice Hopkins, with  
an introduction by Sir W. W. Gull, appeared in 1878.

HIOGO, or FOGO, a seaport town of Japan, in the  
island of Nipon and province of Setzu, on the western  
shore of the Iddzumi Sea, or Bay of Osaka, about 40 miles  
S W of Kioto, with which it has had railway commu-  
nication since 1874. It was opened to foreign commerce  
in 1860, and since that date it has risen, with the maritime  
suburb of Kobe (the Gate of God) to be a place of 50,000,  
or, according to other authorities, 80,000 or 90,000 inhabi-  
tants. Its harbour, formerly dangerous, has by the con-  
struction of a costly breakwater been rendered one of the  
most serviceable in the kingdom. The best anchorage is  
found in front of Kobe, which has been chosen as the locale  
of the foreign settlement. Since the opening of the port  
great improvements have been effected in the native town,  
and the value of land and house property has greatly in-  
creased. The settlement, which consists of 163 lots, has  
been regularly laid out, its streets are macadamized and  
lighted with gas, and it possesses a bank, municipal build-  
ings, and the largest warehouses ever erected by foreigners  
on Japanese soil. There is a recreation ground open to  
both natives and foreigners, with a cricket field and a  
croquet lawn. The population of the settlement was 169  
in 1876, that of Kobe in 1874 was upwards of 8500. The  
trade of Hiogo consists mainly in the exportation of tea  
(1,599,199 dollars in 1877), silk, copper, camphor, wax,  
tobacco, ginseng, uanglans, and dried fish, and the importation  
of European manufactured goods—cotton, iron, glass, &c.  
Most of the tea goes to New York, very little  
to London. The total value of the imports in 1874, 1875,  
1876, and 1877 was respectively 6,080,239, 5,554,917,  
3,748,967, and 4,813,641 dollars (the dollar being worth  
about 4½), and the corresponding figures for the exports  
were 4,956,724, 2,813,102, 3,401,280, and 4,618,670.  
The industrial establishments comprise a shipbuilding yard,  
an iron-foundry, and a factory for the manufacture of  
paper pulp or "half stuff." There is a busy traffic main-  
tained by ferry steamers between Hiogo and Osaka. The  
number of foreign ships that entered and cleared from the  
port in 1875 was 335, with a burden of 453,958 tons.  
Hiogo was built in the days of the glory of the Tan family,  
and its name is equivalent to arsenal. At Minato Gawai near Kobe a  
small temple marks the spot where Kusunoki Masashige, the mirror  
of Japanese loyalty, met his death, and in Kobe itself there is a  
temple erected on the site of the ancient fane built by Jingū Kōgo  
on his return from Corea.

HIPPARCHUS, the founder of mathematical astronomy,  
was born at Nicaea in Bithynia. The years of his birth  
and death are both unknown, but the period of his activity,  
according to the evidence of his observations, which have  
been preserved by Ptolemy, must have been between 160  
and 125 B.C. Of his writings only one has come down to  
us, *Tὰ Ἀπὸ τῶν Ἑλλήνων φαινόμενα ἡμερήσια*, B.E.D.A.  
γ', published by Vittorini at Florence, 1597, and by





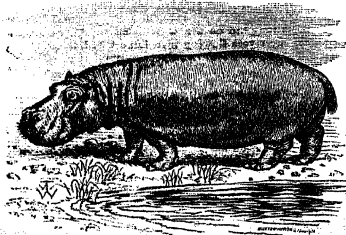




HIPPOLYTUS, Sr., according to the Roman breviary, was one of St Lawrence's converts, who, when summoned before the emperor Valerian on account of the practice of his religion, made a public profession of Christianity. First beaten with rods, he was finally delivered over along with all his family to death, the mode of execution in his case being similar to that by which Hippolytus the son of Theseus perished. The mythical character of this legend, which, however, can in part be traced as far back as to Prudentius (*Hymn*. 11), is recognized by Döllinger (see his *Hippolytus u. Kallistus*, chap. II.). This saint, along with Cassianus, is commemorated by the Roman Church on August 13. He is the patron of Mexico.

HIPPONAX, of Ephesus, a poet placed third, after Archilochus and Simonides, among the classic iambic poets of Greece. Expelled from Ephesus in 540 B.C. by the tyrants Athanagoras and Comas, he took refuge in Clazomenæ. There his deformed figure and malicious disposition exposed him to the caricature of the Chian sculptors Bupalus and Athenais; and he revenged himself by issuing against them a series of satires. These, though keen and bitter, are in thought and execution much inferior to the similar works of his predecessor Archilochus. His coarseness of thought and feeling, his rude vocabulary, his want of grace and taste, and his numerous allusions to matters of merely local interest prevented his becoming a favourite in Attica. He invented epic parody, and the four opening lines of a parody on the *Iliad* have been preserved in Athenæus (xv. 698 B). He was also the inventor of a peculiar metre, used after him by many writers, called the *sestos* or *cholambus*, which substitutes a spondee for the final iambus of an iambic senarius. His works, which were annotated by Hermippus of Smyrna, were at an early date mingled and confused with those of Ananus, for whom some even claim the invention of the cholambus.

HIPPOTAMUS, a family (*Hippopotamidae*) of artiodactyls; ungulate mammals comprising two genera, each containing a single living species. Of those the best known is the hippopotamus (*Hippopotamus amphibius*), occurring



Hippopotamus.

only in Africa, where it abounds in many of the river courses. It is a huge unwieldy creature, measuring in the largest specimens fully 14 feet from the extremity of the upper lip to the tip of the tail, while it ordinarily attains a length of 12 feet, with a height of 5 feet at the shoulders, and a girth round the thickest part of the body almost equal to its length. Its remarkably small ears are exceedingly flexible, and are kept in constant motion when the animal is seeking to catch a distant sound. Its eyes are placed high up on the head, and but little below the level of the ears; its gape is wide, and its upper lip thick and

bulging so as to cover over even the largest of its teeth when the mouth is closed. It is provided with a considerable number of molar teeth adapted for grinding vegetable substances, and a formidable array of long spear-like incisors and curved chisel-edged canines or tusks which, according to Baker, root up the rank grass like an agricultural implement. Its legs are short, so that the body is but little elevated above the ground; and its feet, which are small in proportion to the size of the animal, terminate in four short toes each bearing a small hoof. With the exception of a few tufts of hair on the lips, on the sides of the head and neck, and at the extremity of the short robust tail, the skin of the hippopotamus, some portions of which are 2 inches in thickness, is entirely destitute of covering. It is usually of a dark fleshy red colour, irregularly marked with blackish spots. The hippopotamus is a gregarious animal, living in herds of from 20 to 40 individuals on the banks and in the beds of rivers, in the neighbourhood of which it most readily finds its appropriate food. This consists chiefly of grass and of aquatic plants, of which it consumes enormous quantities, the stomach of one of those creatures being capable of containing from 5 to 6 bushels. They feed principally by night, remaining in the water during the day, although in districts where they are little disturbed by man they are less exclusively aquatic. In such remote quarters they put their heads boldly out of the water to blow, but when rendered suspicious by man's persecution, they become exceedingly cautious in this respect, only exposing their nostrils above the water, and even this they prefer doing amid the shelter of water plants. In spite of their enormous size and uncouth form, they are expert swimmers and divers, and can, it is said, remain easily under the water from five to eight minutes. They are also said to walk with considerable rapidity on the bottoms of rivers, beneath at least 10 feet of water. At night, fall they come on land to feed; and when, as often happens on the banks of the Nile, they reach cultivated ground, they do immense damage to growing crops, destroying by their ponderous tread even more than they devour. To scare away those unwelcome visitors the natives in such districts are in the habit of kindling great fires at night. Although they do not willingly go far from the water on which their very existence depends, occasionally they have been found to travel long distances by night in search of food, and in spite of their clumsy appearance they are able, according to Baker, to climb up steep banks and precipitous ravines with astonishing power and ease. Of a wounded hippopotamus which that traveller once saw leaving the water and galloping inland, he says, "I never could have imagined that so unwieldy an animal could have exhibited such speed. No man could have had a chance of escape." The hippopotamus does not confine itself to rivers only, but when opportunity occurs of exercising choice it has been known to prefer the waters of the ocean as its home during the day. Of a mild and inoffensive disposition, it seeks to avoid collision with man; when wounded, however, or in defence of its young, it is wont to exhibit the greatest ferocity, and the native canoes are frequently capized and occasionally demolished by its infuriated attacks, its usual bellowing grunt then becoming loud enough to be heard a mile away. As among elephants, so also among hippopotami there are "rogues"—old bulls which, having been expelled from the herd, have become sored in solitude; these are at all times dangerous. Assuming the offensive on every occasion, they attack all and sundry without shadow of provocation; the natives, therefore, are careful to avoid the haunts of those *soldats*, which are usually well known.

The rifle of the European has proved the most potent destroyer of the hippopotamus; but to prove effective it

must be aimed at the head, the most vulnerable points in that region being immediately behind the ear and in the eye. Everywhere regarded as a valuable prize, the natives employ a variety of methods in order to secure it, the most common of these being the use of an iron harpoon attached to a line. Allowing themselves to float down stream on a raft, the hippopotamus hunts no sooner reach the sleeping herd than the expertest of them plunges his harpoon deep into the body of the selected victim. The light canoes are then launched from the raft, and with all speed the hunters make for the shore, bearing with them the line attached to the harpoon, which they further secure by firing it a turn round the trunk of a tree. Unable to free itself, the hippopotamus wastes its strength in impotent rage, its persecutors meanwhile assailing it with a shower of javelins under which its life blood gradually ebbs away, until at last it is hauled up dead or dying on the shore. Another native method of destroying these animals is by means of a trap known as the "downfall" consisting of a heavy wooden beam armed at one end with a poisoned spear-head and suspended by the other to a forked pole or overhanging branch of a tree. The cord by which the beam is suspended descends to the path beneath, across which it lies in such a manner as to be set free the instant it is touched by the foot of the passing hippopotamus, the beam thus liberated immediately descends, and the poisoned weapon passes into the head or back of the luckless beast, whose death in the adjacent stream takes place soon after. Such "downfalls" are placed over the paths by which the animals are in the habit of reaching their nightly feeding grounds. They are also occasionally taken by means of ordinary pitfalls, so dexterously concealed as often to entrap the unwary traveller. Although inferior in sagacity to the elephant, the hippopotamus is very far from being stupid, as is frequently proved by its remarkable adroitness in the discovery and avoidance of traps and pitfalls, as well as in its timely migration from localities which, owing to the prevalence of the rife, have become no longer tenable. It is said to be possessed of a remarkably tenacious memory, so that, according to Sir Andrew Smith, when once it has been assailed in its watery dwelling and injured through incautiously exposing itself, it will rarely be guilty of the same indiscretion a second time, even although a very long period should elapse before its haunts are revisited. The female is less in size than the male, and is exceedingly sly, taking to the water with her young, which she usually carries astride on her neck, on the slightest alarm. It is only after long practice that the young become able to remain as long under the water as their parents, and for this reason the females while tending them come much oftener to the surface than their own necessities require. The period of gestation, as observed in females confined in the Zoological Gardens of London and Paris, extends to nearly eight months, the young reach maturity in five years, and the full term of life in the species is believed to extend to thirty years. The male hippopotamus which recently (1878) died in the Zoological Gardens, London, was captured in August 1849 when

only a few days old, it had thus nearly attained the age of twenty-nine, while an examination of its dead body disclosed, says Professor Owen, "no special morbid appearance to suggest that death from old age had been anticipated." (*Annals and Magazine of Nat. Hist., September 1879*). The flesh of the hippopotamus is generally considered a delicacy both by natives and colonists, although according to Livingstone there are certain tribes on the Zambesi who have as great an abhorrence of hippopotamus meat as Mahometans have of swine's flesh. The fatty matter lying between the skin and the muscles is one of the purest of animal fats, and was formerly in great request among the Cape colonists when as yet those amphibians abounded in the rivers of that colony. The skin of the hippopotamus is turned to profitable account in the manufacture of elastic whips, which are in great demand throughout the African continent. The skin, according to Schweinfuth, when fresh is cut into long quadrilateral stripes, which when half-dried are trimmed with a knife and afterwards hammered out, like non on an anvil, into round whips. As several hundreds can be made from a single hide, that part is of considerable commercial value. Still more valuable are the tusks and molar teeth, which, from their extreme hardness and the fact that they do not readily become yellow, are now largely used in the manufacture of artificial teeth. The hippopotamus formerly abounded in such rivers as the Nile, the Niger, the Senegal, and most of the rivers of South Africa. It is now, however, becoming gradually more restricted in its distribution, having disappeared altogether from the Egyptian Nile, although still abundant in its Abyssinian tributaries,—as well as from the rivers of Cape Colony.

The Liberian hippopotamus (*Chacopsa liberiensis*), the only other existing member of the family, is exceedingly rare, having been only known until recently from the two skulls on which the genus and species were founded. It differs from the common species in possessing only one pair of incisors in each jaw instead of two, and in several other minor points. A few years ago a young specimen of this rare species was brought alive to England from the Scarcia river, north of Sierra Leone, but it died soon after landing. The species is found on the west coast of Africa and on certain of the rivers flowing into Lake Chad.

Although there are thus only two living species, both of which are confined to Africa, the hippopotamus family was both larger and more widely distributed in former periods of the earth's history, fossil remains of at least nine species having been found in the Tertiary deposits of Europe and the south of England, but they are found nowhere in such abundance as in the island of Sicily, from which they were formerly exported in shiploads to England and France, where they were used in the manufacture of lamp black and manure. The occurrence of these animals in a place which they could not possibly have reached had it always been an island, is regarded as one of the many proofs that dry land existed during some portion at least of the Tertiary period between Italy and Africa.

(J. G.)

END OF VOLUME ELEVENTH.

SMITH AND COMPANY, PRINTERS, PENNSYLVANIA.

# Encyclopædia Britannica.

VOL. XI —(GOU—HIP).

## PRINCIPAL CONTENTS.

GOUT Dr J O ARTHUR  
GOVERNMENT EDWARD ROBINSON, M A, Pro  
fessor of Roman Law, University College, London  
GRADUATION Prof JAMES BRYAN  
GRANT THOMAS ARNOLD  
GRAMMAR Rev A H SAUER  
GRANITE F W HURDIS, Registrar, &c, Royal  
School of Mines, London  
GRASSES Dr H THOMAS  
GRAVITY T F HENDERSON  
GRAVELLIES R S BATE, LL D, F R S, Royal  
Anatomical of Ireland  
GRIERSON—  
GRIERSON JOHN RAY  
GRIERSON Prof J H F TUPPER, and J DONALD  
SON, LL D  
GRILLATI A S WILKINS, Professor of Latin in  
Owens College, Manchester  
GRILLATI Prof J H and J DONALDSON, LL D  
GRILLATI GRILLATI Rev T M JENNINGS, D D, The  
Jesuit of Divinity, Ball Church College, Glasgow  
GRILLATI WILLIAM RICH, Editor of *The Tribune*,  
New York  
GRILLATI ROBERT BROWN, Ph D  
GRILLATI Mrs LILLIAN  
GRILLATI PAUL E J PARRIS  
GRILLATI LADY JANE JAMES GARDNER  
GRILLATI HENRY BRYAN  
GRILLATI D W PARRIS  
GRILLATI F R H R LARSEN, D D  
GRILLATI WILLIAM SMITH, D C L, Editor of "The  
History of Greek and Roman Biography," &c, &c  
GRILLATI Rev MARK PARRIS, B A, Rector of  
Lancaster College, Oxford  
GRILLATI ALAN WILSON, F R S, Professor of  
Zoology, &c, Cambridge  
GRILLATI Professor A H CHURCH  
GRILLATI J L CHURCH and H A WILSON  
GRILLATI J L CHURCH and H A WILSON  
GRILLATI Mrs L LILLIAN SMITH  
GRILLATI Rev G W BRYAN, M A  
GRILLATI HENRY BRYAN, C B  
GRILLATI Dr J RICHARD  
GUN COTTON F A ARTHUR, C B, F R S, Director of  
Chemical Establishment, War Department, Wool  
wich  
GUNMAKING AND GUNNERY Col E MAILLARD,  
R A  
GUNPOWDER Major W H WARDEN, Royal Gun  
powder Factory, Waltham Abbey  
GUTTA PERCHA JAMES COLLINS  
GUTTA PERCHA Rev J S BLACK  
GYMNASIUMS Dr J S HURDIS  
GYMNASIUMS JAMES BRYAN, Professor of Natural  
Philosophy, Andersonian University, Glasgow  
GYMNASIUMS Rev W L ALEXANDER, D D  
HABRIAN'S WALL JAMES MACDONALD, LL D  
HAIR E H PATTERSON, M A, Lord Almoner's Pro  
fessor of Aialia, Cambridge  
HAGGAI W ROBINSON SMITH, M A, Professor of  
Oriental Languages, Free Church College, Aberdeen  
HALL ROBERT  
HALL F E SAWYER  
HAMBURG H A WILSON  
HAMILTON ALEX HON GEORGE SEBA, Chief  
Justice, Marine Court, New York  
HAMILTON, Sir WILLIAM Miss E HAMILTON  
HAMILTON, Sir W ROWAN F G TATE, Professor  
of Natural Philosophy, Edinburgh University  
HAMMER O P B SHILLER, Professor of Manufac  
turing Art, &c, King's College, London  
HAMMERTON S R GARDNER, Professor of Modern  
History, King's College, London

HANDEL F HUITT, Author of "Musical Studies"  
HAND TOOLS Prof J HURDIS  
HANDBOOK Rev W J BROOKING  
HANOVER Dr E JUNG and JAS SIMS  
HANSA TO LEAGUE THOMAS LONDON  
HARBORS THOMAS LONDON  
HARBOUR JOHN GIBSON  
HARMONIC ANALYSIS Prof J CLERK MAXWELL  
HAROLD E A FRITMAN, D C L  
HARP A J HICKMAN  
HARVARD Dr F H PARRIS, M D, Lecturer on  
Physiology, &c, Guy's Hospital, London  
HASTINGS WARREN J S COLEMAN  
HASTINGS, MARQUIS OF Sir ALEX GIANI, Bait,  
Physiologist of Edinburgh University  
HAWAIIAN ISLANDS J Y JOHNSON  
HAWTHORNE R H SIDDARD  
HAYDON F HURDIS  
HAYDON W M ROSSITER  
HAYDON JOHN D CHAMBERLAIN, Jun  
HAYDON RICHARD GARDNER, British Museum  
HEART DISEASES Dr G W BRYAN  
HEAT Sir WILLIAM THOMSON, F R S, Professor of  
Natural Philosophy, Glasgow University  
HEATING Capt DOUGLAS GILSON, C B, F R S  
HEBREW LANGUAGE AND LITERATURE Prof  
W ROBINSON SMITH  
HEBREW, EPISTLE TO THE Prof W R SMITH  
HEGEL W WALLACE, LL D  
HEINE J W PARRIS  
HEINGOLD ROBERT BROWN, Ph D  
HELEBORE F H BRYAN, M A  
HELEBORE Sir THOMAS MARTIN, K C B  
HELMANS Mrs M FLORENCE MASON  
HEMP Prof A H CHURCH  
HENRY I-VIII G W PROTHRO and T KIRBY  
HENRY JOSEPH Prof SUTCLIFFE P BATE, LL D  
HERALDRY G T CLARK  
HERAT Major Gen Sir H O RAWLINSON, K C B,  
F R S  
HERBARIUM E M HOLMES  
HERBERT JAMES WARD  
HERCULEANUM Prof E BARNABEE, Government  
Archæological Department, Rome  
HERCULEANUM O A M FENNELL  
HERDER JAMES BULLY  
HERFORD Rev Prebendary DAVIES  
HERSEY Professors LINDSEY and E ROBERTSON  
HERMANT R ADAMSON, Professor of Logic, &c,  
Owens College, Manchester  
HERMENUTICS Rev S D F SALMOND, Professor  
of Systematic Theology, F C College, Aberdeen  
HERMES W M BARNABEE, M A  
HERNIA JOHN CHURCH, Surgeon, Royal Infirmary,  
Edinburgh  
HERODOTUS Rev Canon RAWLINSON, Professor of  
Ancient History, Oxford  
HERON Prof WILSON  
HERSCHEL Rev G PARRIS, M A, F R S,  
Savilian Professor of Astronomy, Oxford  
HERZEGOVINA ARTHUR J EVAN  
HERIOD Rev Prebendary DAVIES  
HIBERNATION W F KIRBY, Joint-Author of  
"Introduction to Entomology"  
HIEROGLYPHICS ROBERT S POOLE, British  
Museum  
HIMALAYA Mount Gen R STRACHAN, R E, O S I,  
F R S  
HINDU KUSH Col YULE, C B  
HINDUSTANI J P PARRIS  
HINDUSTANI LITERATURE O J LYALL, O S I  
HIPPOCRATES Dr J BATEX TUXE  
HIPPOPOTAMUS JOHN GIBSON









PROPERTY OF UNIVERSITY  
OF WASHINGTON LIBRARIES  
GRADUATE READING ROOM  
NON-CIRCULATING





3994